UMASS/AMHERST
312066008425402

DATE DUE			
MAR 2 0 1995		LL: 739 0613	2/2

UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

UNIVERSITY OF MASSACHUSETTS
AT
AMHERST

F
72
E7
H9
v.1

PUBLISHERS' PREFACE.

Nearly four years ago the attention of the publishers, who have long made a specialty of this class of work, was called to the fact that a history of Essex County was needed. After mature deliberation the work was planned, and its compilation commenced. The best literary talent in this section of the commonwealth for this especial work was engaged, whose names appear at the head of their respective articles, besides many other writers on special topics. These gentlemen approached the work in a spirit of impartiality and thoroughness, and we believe it has been their honest endeavor to trace the history of the development of the territory embodied herein from that period when it was in the undisputed possession of the red man to the present, and to place before the reader an authentic narrative of its rise and progress. The work has been compiled from authenticated and original sources, and no effort spared to produce a history which should prove in every respect worthy of the County represented.

THE PUBLISHERS.

PHILADELPHIA, January 24th, 1888.

CONTENTS.

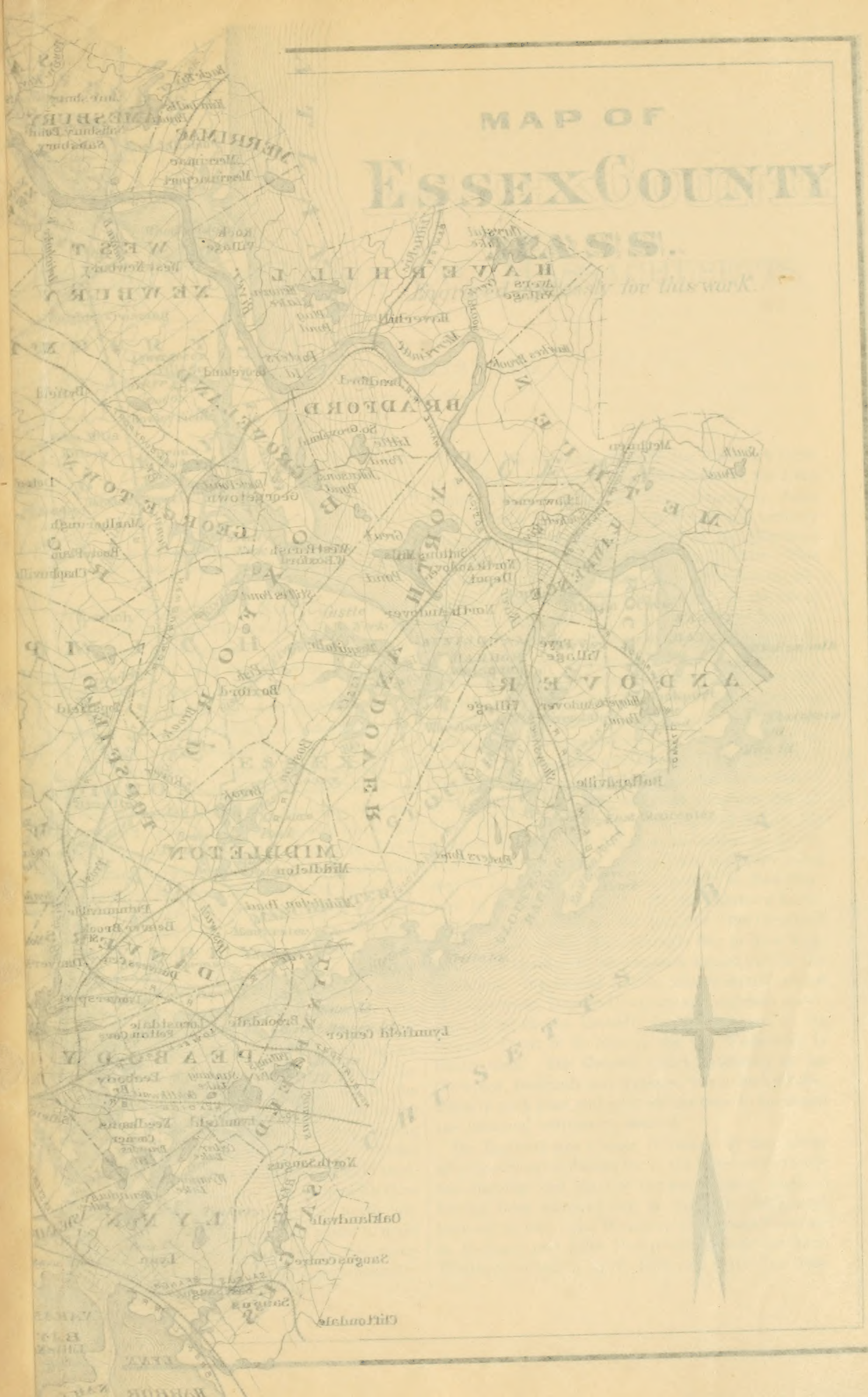
GENERAL HISTORY.

VOLUME I.

Chapters.		Page.
I.	Introductory,	i.
II.	Bench and Bar,	xv.
III.	Old Modes of Travel,	lx.
IV.	Science in Essex County,	lxxvi.
V.	Spirit of the Early Lyceums,	lxxxiv.
VI.	Miscellaneous,	xcvii.

CITIES AND TOWNS.

Chap.			Page.
I.	Salem,		1
II.	" continued.	Ecclesiastical,	17
III.	" "	Commercial,	63
IV.	" "	Banking,	114
V.	" "	The Press,	115
VI.	" "	Educational,	129
VII.	" "	Literature,	135
VIII.	" "	Manufacturing,	154
IX.	" "	Miscellaneous,	161
X.	" "	Societies, etc.,	166
XI.	" "	Military,	184
XII.	" "	Civil History,	225
XIII.	Lynn,		249
XIV.	" continued.	Ecclesiastical,	263
XV.	" "	Schools, Libraries, Newspapers	272
XVI.	" "	Industrial Pursuits,	280
XVII.	" "	Military,	291
XVIII.	" "	Burial Places,	299
XIX.	" "	Old Families, etc.,	306
XX.	" "	Taverns—Modes of Travel,	320
XXI.	" "	Miscellaneous,	330
XXII.	" "	Short Notes,	337
XXIII.	Lynnfield,		377
XXIV.	Saugus,		391
XXV.	" continued,		394
XXVI.	" "	One Hundred Years Ago,	396
XXVII.	" "	Religious,	399
XXVIII.	" "	Manufacturing,	407
XXIX.	" "	Taverns, Modes of Travel, etc.,	415
XXX.	" "	Miscellaneous,	419
XXXI.	" "	Military,	421
XXXII.	Danvers,		424
XXXIII.	" continued.	Revolutionary,	444
XXXIV.	" "	Ecclesiastical,	452
XXXV.	" "	Educational,	475
XXXVI.	" "	Villages,	483
XXXVII.	" "	Miscellaneous,	495
XXXVIII.	" "	Industrial, Societies, Physicians,	518
XXXIX.	" "	Civil History,	525
XL.	" "	Civil War,	531
XLI.	Ipswich.	Pre-historical,	566
XLII.	" continued.	Municipal,	569
XLIII.	" "	Ecclesiastical,	579
XLIV.	" "	Educational,	604
XLV.	" "	Military,	612
XLVI.	" "	Legal and Penal,	625
XLVII.	" "	Business,	633
XLVIII.	Beverly,		674
XLIX.	Methuen,		769
L.	Georgetown,		794
LI.	" continued.	Early Grants,	798
LII.	" "	Early Settlers,	811
LIII.	" "	Parish Organization,	817
LIV.	" "	Educational,	821
LV.	" "	Religious Movements,	825
LVI.	" "	General Town History,	830
LVII.	" "	Religious,	835
LVIII.	" "	Manufacturing,	843
LVIX.	" "	Military,	848
LX.	" "	Conclusion,	852
LXI.	Lawrence,		861
LXII.	Middleton,		929


MAP OF
ESSEX COUNTY
MASS.
HAVERHILL
BRADFORD
MERRIMAC
METHUEN
ANDOVER
NORTH ANDOVER
LAWRENCE
MIDDLETON
BOXFORD
GEORGETOWN
GROVELAND
NEWBURY
NEWBURYPORT
WEST NEWBURY
BOXFORD
TOPSFIELD
DANVERS
PEABODY
SALEM
LYNN
SWAMPSCOTT
NAHANT
MARBLEHEAD
SALISBURY
AMESBURY
Oakland Vale
Lynnfield Center
Middleton
Boxford
Georgetown
Groveland
Haverhill
Bradford
Merrimac
Methuen
Andover
North Andover
Lawrence
Danvers
Peabody
Salem
Lynn
Swampscott
Nahant
Marblehead
Salisbury
Amesbury
Newburyport
West Newbury
Newbury
Topsfield
Boxford
Middleton
Lynnfield Center
Oakland Vale
Swampscott
Marblehead
Salisbury
Amesbury
Merrimac
Bradford
Haverhill
Methuen
Andover
North Andover
Lawrence
Danvers
Peabody
Salem
Lynn
Nahant
Georgetown
Groveland
Newburyport
West Newbury
Newbury




MAP OF
ESSEX COUNTY
MASS.
Engraved expressly for this work.
SALISBURY
AMESBURY
MERRIMAC
WEST NEWBURY
NEWBURY
NEWBURYPORT
PLUM ISLAND
ATLANTIC OCEAN
BRADFORD
GROVELAND
GEORGETOWN
BOXFORD
METHUEN
NORTH ANDOVER
ANDOVER
LAWRENCE
IPSWICH
HAMILTON
WENHAM
MANCHESTER
MIDDLETON
TOPSFIELD
DANVERS
BEVERLY
PEABODY
LYNNFIELD
LYNN
SWAMPSCOTT
MARBLEHEAD
SALEM
SALEM HARBOR
BEVERLY HARBOR
MANCHESTER HARBOR
GLOUCESTER HARBOR
ESSEX
GLOUCESTER
ROCKPORT
ANNISQUAM HARBOR
SANDY BAY
MASSACHUSETTS BAY
LYNN HARBOR
NAHANT BAY
Haverhill
Merrimac
Newburyport
Salisbury
Amesbury
Rowley
Ipswich
Hamilton
Wenham
Manchester
Middleton
Topsfield
Danvers
Beverly
Peabody
Lynnfield
Lynn
Swampscott
Marblehead
Salem
Gloucester
Rockport
Essex
Andover
North Andover
Lawrence
Methuen
Boxford
Georgetown
Groveland
Bradford
Plum Island
Great Neck
Annisquam
Sandy Bay
Nahant
Little Nahant

THE

HISTORY OF ESSEX CO., MASSACHUSETTS.

GENERAL HISTORY.

CHAPTER I.

INTRODUCTORY.

BY WILLIAM T. DAVIS.

The Plymouth Council—Massachusetts Colony—Colonial Courts—Essex County Created—County Courts—Barristers—County Officers—Lawyers.

ON the 20th of April, 1606, King James issued letters-patent dividing between two companies, popularly called the Northern and Southern Virginia companies, a strip of land one hundred miles wide along the Atlantic coast of North America, extending from the thirty-fourth to the forty-fifth degree of north latitude, a territory which then went under the name of Virginia, so called after Elizabeth, the virgin Queen. The Southern Company was composed of knights, gentlemen, merchants and adventurers of London, and received a grant of all the lands between the thirty-fourth and forty-first degrees, while the Northern Company was composed of persons of the same description in Bristol, Exeter and Plymouth, and received a grant of the lands between the thirty-eighth and forty-fifth degrees. That portion lying between the thirty-eighth and forty-first, which was included in both grants, was open to the company first occupying it; and it was stipulated that neither company should make a settlement within one hundred miles of any previous settlement of the other company. On the 3d of November, 1620, Sir Ferdinando Gorges and his associates, the members of the Northern Virginia Company, received a new patent, which passed the seal on the 3d of the following July, under the title of "The council established at Plymouth, in the county of Devon, for the planting, ordering, ruling and governing of New England in America." Under this patent the company was authorized to hold territory extending from sea to sea, and in breadth from the fortieth to the forty-eighth degree of north latitude. This patent or charter conferred power to make laws, appoint Governors and other officers, and generally to establish all necessary forms of government.

On the 19th of March, 1627–28, the Plymouth council granted a patent to Sir John Roswell, Sir John Young, Thomas Southcoat, John Humphrey, John Endicott and Simon Whitcomb, covering a territory extending from three miles north of the Merrimac River to three miles south of the Charles River. This patent was afterwards confirmed by letters-patent under the broad seal of England, issued on the 4th of March, in the following year. Sir Henry Roswell, Sir John Young and Thomas Southcoat subsequently sold their interest to John Winthrop, Isaac Johnson, Matthew Cradock, Thomas Goff and Sir Richard Saltonstall, who, with John Humphrey, John Endicott and Simon Whitcomb, the remaining original patentees, formed a new association. The pecuniary interests of the company were managed in England, and Matthew Cradock, who had been named in the charter by the King as Governor, was there chosen to that office. John Endicott was, however, sent out in the summer of 1628, and began a plantation at Salem. The charter was made in duplicate, one copy being sent to Endicott and the other brought to New England by Winthrop in 1630. By this charter a corporation was created under the name of "the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England," and twenty-six persons were named in it as the patentees. It provided that the officers should consist of a Governor, Deputy-Governor and eighteen assistants, to be chosen annually by the freemen at the General Court to be held on the last Wednesday in Easter term. The General Court, consisting of the Governor, assistants and freemen, was to be held four times in each year, and by it officers were to be chosen and laws and ordinances enacted.

Mr. Endicott was chosen Governor by the colony after its arrival at Salem, but in the latter part of 1629, the character and plans of the associates in England having been changed and an extensive emigration been set on foot, John Winthrop was chosen Governor in England, and John Humphrey Deputy-Governor. Winthrop sailed in April, 1630, and arrived in Mas-

sachusetts Bay on the 12th of June, at once assuming power as Governor under the charter, which he had brought with him. The first General Court was held at Boston, October 19th, and at its first session the freemen of which it was composed made an important change in the form of government contemplated in the charter, surrendering to the assistants the election of Governor and Deputy-Governor; to the Governor and deputy and assistants the enactment of laws, reserving to themselves only the election of the assistants. Soon after, however, they resumed the privilege of choosing the Governor and deputy as well as the assistants, and in 1636 the General Court also assumed the exclusive power of making the laws. In 1634, in order to obviate the inconvenience of convening the whole body of freemen, a law was passed providing for the choice of delegates with all the powers of the freemen, except those relating to the election of officers. For this election the whole body of freemen met annually in the meeting-house in Boston; but the inconvenience of this arrangement was felt also, and it was provided that Salem, Ipswich, Newbury, Saugus, Weymouth and Hingham might retain as many of their freemen at home at the annual elections as the safety of the towns required, and that the votes of these might be sent by proxy. A general law was afterwards passed to the same effect, applicable to all the freemen in all the towns.

At first the assistants and deputies met together; but in 1644,—in consequence of a dispute in which the deputies claimed that a majority vote of the whole court should rule, while the assistants claimed concurrent jurisdiction,—it was finally agreed that the two branches should sit apart, and that each should have a negative on the other. The Governor presided at the Court of Assistants, and a new office of Speaker was established for the Deputies' Court.

Until 1639 the whole judicial power was vested in the Court of Assistants. In that year, on the 9th of September, it was enacted that "for as much as the businesses of the ordinary Court of Assistants are so much increased as they cannot be despatched in such season as were fit, it is therefore ordered that such of the magistrates as shall reside in or near to Boston, or any five, four or three of them, the Governor or Deputy to be one, shall have power to assemble together upon the last fifth day of the eighth, eleventh, second and fifth months every year, and then and there to hear and determine all civil causes, whereof the debt or trespass and damages shall not exceed twenty pounds, and all criminal causes, not extending to life or member or banishment, according to the course of the Court of Assistants, and to summon juries out of the neighbor towns, and the marshal or necessary officers are to give their attendance as at other courts."

On the 3d of March, 1635–36 it had already been enacted that "there shall be four courts kept every quarter,—one at Ipswich, to which Newbury shall belong; two at Salem, to which Saugus shall belong; two at Newtown, to which Charlton, Concord, Medford and Waterton shall belong; four at Boston, to which Roxbury, Dorchester, Weymouth and Hingham shall belong.

"Every of these courts shall be kept by such magistrates as shall be dwelling in or near the said towns, and by such other persons of worth as shall from time to time be appointed by the General Court, so as no court shall be kept without one magistrate at the least, and that none of the magistrates be excluded who can and will intend the same; yet the General Court shall appoint which of the magistrates shall specially belong to every of the said court. Such persons as shall be joined as associates to the magistrates in the said court shall be chosen by the General Court out of a greater number of such as the several towns shall nominate to them, so as there may be in every of the said courts so many as (with the magistrates) may make five in all. These courts shall try all civil causes whereof the debt or damage shall not exceed ten pounds, and all criminal causes not concerning life, member or banishment. And if any person shall find himself grieved with the sentence of any of the said courts, he may appeal to the next great Quarter Court, provided that he put in sufficient caution to present his appeal with effect, and to abide the sentence of the magistrates in the said great Quarter Court, who shall see that all such that shall bring any appeal without just cause be exemplarily punished.

"There shall be four great Quarter Courts kept yearly at Boston by the Governor and the rest of the magistrates; the first the first Tuesday in the fourth month, called June; the second the first Tuesday in September; the third the first Tuesday in December; the fourth the first Tuesday in the first month, called March."

It must be remembered that the term magistrate was synonymous with that of assistant, and that therefore, under these various enactments, the assistants retained judicial power. On the 25th of May, 1636, the following magistrates and other persons were appointed by the General Court to hold the courts referred to in the above enactment of the previous March, to wit: For Salem and Saugus, John Humphrey, John Endicott, magistrates or assistants, Captain Turner, Mr. Scrugge and Mr. Townsend Bishopp, associates, and Ralph Fogg, clerk; for Ipswich and Newbury, Thomas Dudley, Richard Dummer, Simon Bradstreet, magistrates, and Mr. Saltonstall and Mr. Spencer, associates, and Robert Lord, clerk; for Newtown, Charlestown, Medford and Concord, John Haynes, Roger Harlakenden, Increase Nowell, magistrates, and Mr. Beecher and Mr. Feakes, associates; for Boston, Roxbury, Dorchester, Weymouth and Hingham, Richard Bellingham, William Coddington, mag-

istrates, and Israel Stoughton, William Hutchinson and William Heath, associates. Under this law the first Quarter Court of Salem was held June 27, 1636, and the records of that session are well-preserved in the first volume of the Court Records in the office of the clerk of the courts in Salem. At that court one magistrate, John Endicott, and three commissioners—Nathaniel Turner, Townsend Bishopp and Thomas Scrugge—were present. The following certificate is a part of the record:

"Thes three, viz., cp. Nathaniel Turner, mr. Towenshend Bishop and mr. Tho: Scrugge, did the day and yeare above written take the oath of Commissioners."

On the 6th of June, 1639, it was enacted that "for the more speedy dispatch of all causes, which shall concern strangers, who cannot stay to attend the ordinary courts of justice, it is ordered that the Governor or deputy, being assisted with any two of the magistrates (whom he may call to him to that end), shall have power to hear and determine (by a jury of twelve men or otherwise as is used in other courts) all causes which shall arise between such strangers, or wherein any such stranger shall be a party, and all records of such proceedings shall be transmitted to the Secretary (except himself be one of the said magistrates, who shall assist in hearing such causes) to be entered as trials in other courts at the charge of the parties. This order to continue till the General Court in the seventh month come twelve month and no longer."

On the 2d of June, 1641, it was enacted that "whereas it is desired by this Court to ease the country of all unnecessary travels and charges, it is ordered that there shall be four Quarter Courts kept yearly by the magistrates of Ipswich and Salem, with such others to be joined in commission with them as this Court shall appoint, not hindering any other magistrates that will help them; this order to take effect after the next Quarter Courts shall be ended at Salem and Ipswich, two of these Quarter Courts to be kept at Salem and the other two at Ipswich; the first Court to be kept the last third day of the seventh month at Ipswich (and the next at the same time the former Courts were), the next quarter at Salem, the third quarter at Ipswich, the fourth at Salem, and the magistrates of Ipswich and Salem to attend every of these Courts, but no jurymen to be warned from Ipswich to Salem, nor from Salem to Ipswich; to each of these places a grand jury shall be warned once a year, and these Courts to have the same power both in civil and criminal causes the Court of Assistants hath at Boston, except trials for life, limbs or banishment, which are wholly reserved to Boston Court; provided it shall be lawful to appeal from any of these Courts to Boston. And it shall be in the liberty of any plaintiff that hath an action of above an hundred pounds principal debt to try his cause in any of these Courts or at Boston; the fines of these Courts to defray the charges of the same, and the overplus to be returned to the treasurer for the public. And Salisbury and Hampton are joined to the jurisdiction of Ipswich, and each of them to send a grand juryman once a year to Ipswich."

These enactments show the precise arrangement and distribution of judicial powers at the time of the division of the Massachusetts Colony into counties, in 1643. On the 10th of May in that year it was enacted that "the whole plantation within this jurisdiction is divided into four shires, to wit:

"Essex Shire.—Salem, Linn, Enon, Ipswich, Rowley, Newbury, Gloucester and Chochicawick.

"Middlesex.—Charlestown, Cambridge, Watertown, Sudbury, Concord, Woburn, Medford, Linn Village.

"Suffolk.—Boston, Roxbury, Dorchester, Dedham, Braintree, Weymouth, Hingham, Nantasket.

"Norfolk.—Salisbury, Hampton, Haverhill, Exeter, Dover, Strawberry Bank."

These, of course, were at that time all the incorporated towns in the Massachusetts Colony. In the shire of Essex, Salem was incorporated June 24, 1629, as a town, and March 23, 1836, as a city; Lynn, in November, 1637, as a town, and April 10, 1850, as a city; Enon (afterwards Wenham), was incorporated May 10, 1643; Ipswich, August 5, 1634; Rowley, September 4, 1639; Newbury, May 6, 1635; Gloucester, May 22, 1639, as a town, and May 26, 1871, as a city; and Chochicawick (afterwards Andover), May 6, 1646, after the incorporation of Essex County,

In Middlesex, Charlestown was incorporated June 24, 1629; Cambridge, September 8, 1633; Watertown, September 7, 1630; Sudbury, September 4, 1639; Concord, September 2, 1635; Woburn, May 18, 1642; Medford, September 28, 1630; Linn village (afterwards incorporated as Reading), May 29, 1644.

In Suffolk, Boston was incorporated September 7, 1630, as a town, and February 23, 1822, as a city; Roxbury, September 28, 1630, as a town, and March 12, 1846, as a city, and annexed to Boston June 1, 1867; Dorchester, September 7, 1630, and annexed to Boston June 4, 1869; Dedham, September 8, 1636; Braintree, May 13, 1640; Weymouth, September 2, 1635; Hingham, September 2, 1635; and Nantasket (afterwards incorporated as Hull), May 29, 1644.

In Norfolk, Salisbury was incorporated October 7, 1640; Hampton, September 4, 1639; Haverhill in 1645, as a town, and March 10, 1869, as a city; Exeter and Dover and Strawberry Bank (now Portsmouth) became afterwards a part of New Hampshire.

In addition to the towns above mentioned as a part of Essex County, Amesbury was incorporated April 29, 1668; Boxford, August 12, 1685; Beverly, October 14, 1668; Bradford, in 1675; Danvers, 1757; Essex, 1819; Georgetown, 1838; Groveland, 1850; Hamilton, 1792; Lawrence, incorporated as a town April 17, 1847, and as a city March 21, 1853; Lynnfield, July 3, 1782; Manchester, May 14, 1645; Marblehead, May 2, 1649; Merrimac, April 11, 1876; Methuen, Decem-

ber 8, 1725; Middleton, June 20, 1728; Nahant, March 29, 1853; Newburyport, January 28, 1764, as a town, and May 24, 1852, as a city; North Andover, April 7, 1855; West Newbury, as Parsons, February 18, 1819, and under its present name June 14, 1820; Peabody, March 18, 1855, as South Danvers, and its present name given April 13, 1868; Rockport, February 27, 1840; Saugus, February 17, 1815; South Danvers, May 18, 1855; Swampscott, May 21, 1852; Topsfield, October 18, 1650; West Newbury, June 14, 1820. As the towns of Amesbury, Haverhill and Salisbury were the only towns in Norfolk County, outside of the territory of New Hampshire, which became a royal province in 1679, the following act was passed by the General Court on the 4th of February, 1679–80:

"This Court being sensible of the great inconvenience and charge that it will be to Salisbury, Haverhill and Amesbury to continue their County Court, now some of the towns of Norfolk are taken off, and considering that these towns did formerly belong to Essex County, and attended at Essex courts, do order that these towns that are left be again joined to Essex and attend public business at Essex courts, there to implead and be impleaded, as occasion shall be; their records of lands being still to be kept in some one of their own towns on the North of Merrimack, and all persons according to course of law are to attend in Essex County."

By this act Norfolk County, as incorporated in 1643, was extinguished, to be revived in another section of the State by an act of incorporation dated March 26, 1793. The act above quoted alludes to a former union of Amesbury, Haverhill and Salisbury with Essex, which never actually existed. The allusion is probably to old court connections, which existed before the incorporation of the county, in 1643. Amesbury was a part of the old town of Salisbury, Boxford of the old town of Rowley, Beverly a part of Salem and afterwards of Danvers, Bradford a part of Rowley, Danvers a part of Salem, Essex a part of Ipswich, Georgetown a part of Rowley, Groveland a part of Bradford and Boxford, Hamilton a part of Ipswich, Lawrence a part of Andover, North Andover and Methuen, Lynnfield a part of Lynn, Manchester a part of Salem, Marblehead a part of Salem, Merrimac a part of Amesbury, Methuen a part of Haverhill, Middleton a part of Salem, Topsfield, Boxford and Andover, Nahant a part of Lynn, Newburyport a part of Newbury, North Andover a part of Andover, Peabody formerly South Danvers and a part of Danvers, Rockport a part of Gloucester, Saugus a part of Lynn and Chelsea, Swampscott a part of Lynn and Salem, Topsfield was New Meadows, Wenham was Enon, mentioned in the act incorporating the county; and West Newbury was a part of Newbury, incorporated as Parsons and changed to its present name June 14, 1820.

Since the addition to the county of the towns of Amesbury, Salisbury and Haverhill, in 1679–80, the only change in the boundaries of the county is that already referred to, caused by the annexation of a part of Chelsea, in Suffolk County, to Saugus. On the 22d of February, 1841, it was enacted that "so much of the town of Chelsea, with the inhabitants therein, as is embraced within the bounds hereafter named is hereby set off from said town of Chelsea and annexed to the town of Saugus, to wit: beginning at the southerly side of the Newburyport turnpike on Malden line and running south 26 east 51 rods and 18 links on said Malden line to a stake and stones; thence north 52 east to Saugus line; thence by the line of Saugus South Reading and Malden to the bounds first mentioned; provided, however, that the inhabitants thus set off shall be holden to pay all taxes heretofore assessed in the same manner as if this act had not been passed; provided, also, that all persons who shall have gained a settlement upon said territory, and who are now chargeable to the said town of Chelsea, shall remain and continue to be supported by said town of Chelsea, saving and excepting one John Burrell, who shall hereafter be considered as belonging to and shall hereafter be supported by said town of Saugus.

"If any persons who have gained a legal settlement in said town of Chelsea by a residence on said territory, or by having been proprietors of any part thereof, or who may desire such settlement from any such residents or proprietors, shall come to want and stand in need of relief and support, they shall be relieved and supported by the said town of Saugus in the same manner as if they had gained a settlement in said town."

Essex County, of which Salem, Lawrence and Newburyport are the shires, is situated in the northeast corner of Massachusetts, and is bounded on the northeast by the Atlantic Ocean, on the southeast by Massachusetts Bay, on the southwest by Suffolk and Middlesex Counties, and on the northwest by New Hampshire. It contains about five hundred square miles of territory, traversed by the Merrimac River, which enters the county between Andover and Methuen and flows into the ocean at Newburyport; the Shawsheen, which enters the Merrimac at Lawrence; the Parker River; Bass River, navigable to Danversport; and the Ipswich River, which is navigable to Ipswich. The business of the county is chiefly that of manufactures and the fisheries, though a by no means insignificant portion of its inhabitants gains a livelihood from agriculture and general commerce. Statistics relating to these industries will be included in the town histories. The following table shows the population, valuation and number of schools in each town according to the last published returns:

	POPULATION.	VALUATION.	PUBLIC SCHOOLS.
Amesbury	4,403	$1,569,835	20
Andover	5,711	5,053,079	22
Beverly	9,186	10,170,780	35
Boxford	840	655,285	6
Bradford	3,106	1,338,230	10
Danvers	7,048	3,761,596	20
Essex	1,722	963,121	9

	POPULATION.	VALUATION.	PUBLIC SCHOOLS.
Georgetown	2,299	1,018,494	10
Gloucester	21,713	9,897,446	80
Groveland	2,272	880,771	10
Hamilton	850	662,433	4
Haverhill	21,795	11,918,280	75
Ipswich	4,207	2,097,482	16
Lawrence	38,845	26,670,644	104
Lynn	45,861	25,056,583	116
Lynnfield	766	564,496	3
Manchester	1,638	3,827,635	7
Marblehead	7,518	3,964,927	15
Merrimac	2,378	1,169,368	14
Methuen	4,507	2,777,610	19
Middleton	899	527,771	4
Nahant	637	6,524,446	4
Newbury	1,590	1,059,405	7
Newburyport	13,716	8,321,954	29
North Andover	3,425	2,620,179	16
Peabody	9,530	7,188,290	33
Rockport	3,888	2,077,044	14
Rowley	1,183	545,095	7
Salem	28,084	27,765,824	84
Salisbury	4,840	2,227,043	21
Saugus	2,855	1,368,602	13
Swampscott	2,471	3,955,202	10
Topsfield	1,141	766,875	5
Wenham	871	540,277	5
West Newbury	1,899	1,159,471	11
Total	263,694	$180,665,573	328

It has been already stated that at the time of the formation of the counties, in 1643, judicial power was vested in the General Court, the Court of Assistants (or Great Quarter Court) the Quarter Courts (held in specified towns) and the Strangers' Courts. After the formation of the counties the above courts continued, though the Strangers' Courts were modified, and the Quarter Courts, in their respective counties, were called County or Inferior Quarter Courts. It had also been provided by an act passed September 9, 1639, that records be kept of all wills, administrations and inventories, of every marriage, birth and death, and of all men's houses and lands. It had, before the above date, been provided by a law passed April 1, 1634, "that the constable and four or more of the chief inhabitants of every town (to be chosen by all the freemen there at some meeting there), with the advice of some one or more of the next assistants, shall make a surveying of the houses, backside, cornfields, mowing-ground and other lands improved or inclosed on, granted by special orders of the court, of every free inhabitant there, and shall enter the same in a book (fairly written in words at length, and not in figures), with the several bounds and quantities by the nearest estimation, and shall deliver a transcript thereof into the court within six months now next ensuing; and the same so entered and recorded shall be a sufficient assurance to every such free inhabitant, his and their heirs and assigns, of such estate of inheritance or as they shall have in any such houses, lands or frank tenements. The like course shall be taken for assurance of all houses and town lots of all such as shall be hereafter enfranchised, and every sale or grant of such houses or lots as shall be, from time to time, entered into the said book by the said constable and four inhabitants or their successors (who shall be still supplied upon death or removal), for which entry the purchasers shall pay six pence and the like sum for a copy thereof under the hands of the said surveyors or three of them."

A further provision of law had been made on the 7th of October, 1640, as follows:

"For avoiding all fraudulent conveyances and that every man may know what estate or interest other men may have in any houses, lands, or other hereditaments they are to deal in, it is therefore ordered that after the end of the month no mortgage, bargain, sale, or grant, hereafter to be made of any houses, lands, rents, or other hereditaments, shall be of force against any other person except the grantor and his heirs, unless the same be recorded as is hereafter expressed; and that no such bargain, sale, or grant, already made in way of mortgage, where the grantor remains in possession, shall be of force against any other but the grantor or his heirs, except the same shall be entered as is hereafter expressed, within one month after the end of this court, if the party be within this jurisdiction, or else within three months after he shall return. And if any such grantor, &c., be required by the grantee, &c., to make an acknowledgement of any grant, &c., by him made, shall refuse so to do, it shall be in the power of any magistrate to send for the party so refusing and commit him to prison, without bail or mayneprise, until he shall acknowledge the same.

"And the grantee is to enter his caution with the recorder, and this shall save his interest in the meantime; and if it be doubtful whether it be the deed or grant of the party, he shall be bound with sureties to the next court and the caution shall remain good as aforesaid.

"And for recording of all such bargains, &c., it is further ordered that there shall be one appointed at Ipswich, for which Mr. Samuel Symonds is chosen for that court, to enter all such bargains, sales, &c., of all lands, &c., within the jurisdiction of that court; and Mr. Emanuell Downing is chosen in like sort for the jurisdiction of the court of Salem; and all the rest to be entered by Mr. Stephen Winthrop, the recorder at Boston."

The recorder was the clerk of the court. In 1641 it was provided that in every town "a clerk of the writs" should be appointed, and a part of his duties was to record all births and deaths, and yearly deliver to the recorder of the court a transcript thereof. It was also provided that every married man shall bring a certificate, under the hand of the magistrate who married him, to the clerk of the writs, to be recorded and returned by him to the recorder. Thus it will be seen how extensive the jurisdiction of the County Court was made. Aside from its ordinary judicial powers, it had charge of the records of deeds of probate matters and the laying out of highways, and included the departments now held by the judge and register of probate, the register of deeds, the clerk of the courts and county commissioners.

With regard to treasurers, their duties, up to 1654, were performed by the treasurer of the whole colony or of the country, as he was called. In that year it was provided "that henceforth there shall be treasurers annually chosen in every county, provided that no clerk or recorder of any County Court shall be chosen treasurer of the county." The officer now called sheriff was, in the days of the colony, called marshal. There was a marshal of the General Court alone up to the formation of the counties, in 1643, and after that date each court apparently appointed

its own marshal, though it is possible that even before that time every Quarter Court had its own officer bearing that name. So far as Essex County is concerned, it is proper to state that the present registry of deeds contains the entire records from 1638, and that the original probate records prior to 1671 are to be found in the office of the clerk of the courts, where they were originally kept. The registry of probate was located in Ipswich until 1851, when, under general powers conferred by law, the county commissioners removed it to Salem.

There is another court which should be mentioned to complete the colonial judicial system so far as it concerned the county. On the 6th of September, 1638, it was ordered "that for avoiding of the country's charge by bringing small causes to the Court of Assistants that any magistrate in the town where he may hear and determine by his discretion all causes wherein the debt, or trespass, or damage, etc., doth not exceed twenty shillings, and in such town where no magistrate dwells, the General Court shall, from time to time, nominate three men; two thereof shall have like power to hear and determine all such actions under twenty shillings; and if any of the parties shall find themselves grieved with any such end or sentence, they may appeal to the next Quarter Court, or Court of Assistants. And if any person shall bring any such action to the Court of Assistants before he hath endeavored to have it ended at home (as in this order is appointed), he shall lose his action and pay the defendant's costs." The jurisdiction of this petty court was afterwards extended to matters involving a sum not exceeding forty shillings. It should be added, however, concerning this petty court, that the selectmen of a town were authorized to try offences against their own by-laws where the penalty did not exceed twenty shillings, provided the by-laws did not extend to anything criminal. They were also competent to try cases where only one magistrate lived in a town and he was an interested party, and where there was no magistrate and one or more of the commissioners were concerned.

Up to 1685 the judicial system of Massachusetts Colony and its counties remained as has been traced above, as follows: 1st, the General Court with legislative powers and a limited appellate jurisdiction from the Court of Assistants; 2d, the Court of Assistants or Great Quarter Court, with exclusive jurisdiction in all criminal cases involving neither life, limb nor banishment, and concurrent jurisdiction with the County Courts in civil cases involving not more than one hundred pounds, and appellate jurisdiction from the County Courts; 3d, the County Courts or Inferior Quarter Courts, with jurisdiction in civil and criminal cases, except cases of divorce and crimes involving life, limb or banishment, having power to summon grand and petit jurors, and to appoint their own clerks and other necessary officers, to lay out highways, license taverns, to see that a proper ministry was supported, to prove wills, grant administration and have general control of matters in probate, and have appellate jurisdiction from the Commissioners' Courts; 4th, Strangers' Courts, held at first by the Governor or Deputy-Governor and two magistrates, or, in the absence of the Governor and deputy by three magistrates with the same jurisdiction as the County Courts so far as strangers are concerned, where judgments were final; 5th, Petty Commissioners' or Selectmen's Courts in the various towns.

On the 18th of June, 1684, a judgment vacating the colonial charter was issued, and a copy was received by the colonial secretary, Edward Rawson, on the 2d of July in the next year. Joseph Dudley was thereupon appointed, by the King, President of Massachusetts Bay, Maine, New Hampshire and the Narraganset country, and received the commission May 15, 1686. The Council appointed by the King were Simon Bradstreet, Robert Mason, John Fitz Winthrop, John Pynchon, Peter Bulkley, Edward Randolph, Wait Winthrop, Richard Wharton, John Usher, Nathaniel Saltonstall, Bartholomew Gedney, Jonathan Tyng, Dudley Bradstreet, John Hicks and Edward Tyng, of whom Simon and Dudley Bradstreet and Nathaniel Saltonstall declined. The Governor and Council possessed no legislative power, except to establish such courts as might be necessary. They were a court of themselves for the trial of causes, and had authority to appoint judges. They established a Superior Court, with three sessions a year, at Boston, and "Courts of Pleas and Sessions of the Peace" in the several counties. The President assumed probate jurisdiction, but in some counties appointed judges of probate. William Stoughton was appointed to preside in the County Courts of Middlesex, Suffolk and Essex, and John Richards and Simon Lynde were appointed his assistants. These appointments were made July 26, 1686. Appeals could be taken from these courts to the President and Council.

But the administration of Dudley was of short duration. Governor Andros arrived in Boston on the 19th of December, 1686, and as Governor assumed jurisdiction over the whole of New England, including the Plymouth Colony, which was not included in the commission of Dudley. He appointed thirty-nine members of his Council, and the Governor and Council possessed the exclusive power of making and executing the laws, subject to royal approval. He gave to justices of the peace civil jurisdiction in cases not affecting lands and not involving a sum exceeding forty shillings. He established next the "Quarterly Sessions Court," held by the several justices in their respective counties, and next an "Inferior Court of Common Pleas," to be held in each county by a judge assisted by two or more justices of the county. Their jurisdiction was limited to cases in which not more than ten pounds were involved and no question of

freehold, except in Boston, where the limit was twenty pounds. Above these courts was the Superior Court of Judicature, in which no action could be commenced involving less than ten pounds, unless it related to a question of freehold, and which was to be held in Boston, Cambridge, Charlestown, Plymouth, Bristol, Newport, Salem, Ipswich, Portsmouth, Falmouth, Northampton and Springfield. Joseph Dudley was appointed chief justice of this court.

In 1691 a new charter was issued, embracing Massachusetts, Plymouth, Maine, Nova Scotia and the intervening territory in one government, under the name of the "Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England." This charter reached Boston May 14, 1692, and under its provisions the government consisted of a Governor, Deputy-Governor and secretary appointed by the King, and assistants or Councilors chosen by the General Court, and a House of Representatives chosen annually by the people. The Governor had the power of veto, and all acts and elections by the General Court must be transmitted to England and approved or disallowed by the King. The General Court was authorized "to erect and constitute judicatories and courts of records or other courts," and the Governor and Council could appoint udges, sheriffs, justices of the peace and other officers of the courts. The regulation and management of probate matters were given to the Governor and Council, and delegated by them to judges in each county. Under this charter the General Court no longer possessed judicial power. The first court established under the charter was a special Court of Oyer and Terminer, organized by Governor William Phipps, the first Governor of the province, before any aw had been passed authorizing it, for the purpose of trying, chiefly in Essex County, persons charged with witchcraft. On the 2d of June, 1692, the Governor issued his commission appointing Wm. Stoughton chief justice, and Nathaniel Saltonstall (who declined and was succeeded by Jonathan Curwin), John Richards, Bartholomew Gedney, Wait Winthrop, Samuel Sewall and Peter Sergeant associate justices; Stephen Sewall, clerk; Thomas Newton, attorney-general (succeeded July 22d by Anthony Checkley); George Corwin, sheriff. The first meeting of this court was held at Salem on the 2d of June, 1692, and its last meeting on the 17th of September following, after which the court was dissolved. During this time the expense of the court to Essex County was one hundred and thirty pounds, and nineteen persons were tried, condemned and hung, and one was pressed to death.

On the 25th of November, 1692, a law was passed establishing Courts of Justices of the Peace, four Courts or Quarter Sessions of the Peace in each county, an Inferior Court of Common Pleas for each county, a Superior Court of Judicature for the whole province, and a High Court of Chancery for the province. This act was disallowed. On the 19th of June, 1697, another act was passed establishing County Courts, which was also disallowed. On the 26th of June, 1699, three acts were passed, establishing in each county a Court of General Sessions of the Peace and an Inferior Court of Common Pleas, and a Superior Court of Judicature for the province. The Court of General Sessions of the Peace was authorized to be held at specified times and places "by the justices of the peace of the same county, who are hereby empowered to hear and determine all matters relating to the conservation of the peace and punishment of offenders." The Inferior Court of Common Pleas was to be held at specified times and places "by four substantial persons, to be appointed and commissionated as justices of the same court in each county, who shall have cognizance of all civil actions arising or happening within such county, provided that no action under the value of forty shillings shall be brought into any of the said Inferior Courts, unless where freehold is concerned or upon appeal from a justice of the peace." The Superior Court of Judicature was to be held at specified times and places in the province, by "one chief justice and four other justices, to be appointed and commissionated for the same, who shall have cognizance of all pleas,—real, personal or mixt,—as well as all pleas of the Crown and all matters relating to the conservation of the peace and punishment of offenders," etc. This court was ordered to be held for the county of Suffolk, at Boston, on the first Tuesdays in November and May; for the county of Essex, at Salem on the second Tuesday in November, and at Ipswich on the third Tuesday in May; for the county of Middlesex, at Cambridge on the last Tuesday in July, and at Charlestown on the last Tuesday in January; for the county of Hampshire, at Springfield, on the second Thursday in August; for the county of York, at Kittery, on the Thursday before the Ipswich court; for the counties of Plymouth, Barnstable and Dukes County, at Plymouth, on the last Tuesday in March; and for the county of Bristol, at Bristol, on the second Tuesday in September.

Jurisdiction in probate matters had, during the colonial period, been exercised by the common law courts. During the administration of Andros it was exercised by the Governor, but, by the charter of the province, it was conferred on the Governor and Council. Claiming, however, the power of substitution, the Governor and Council appointed a judge of probate in each county, reserving to themselves appellate jurisdiction.

The judges of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas for Essex County were as follows:

Appointed December 7, 1692.—Bartholomew Gedney, Samuel Appleton, John Hathorne, Jonathan Corwin.

1696.—Wm. Browne, in place of Samuel Appleton.

1698.—Daniel Peirce, in place of Bartholomew Gedney, deceased.

1699.—Same appointed.

1702.—Nathaniel Saltonstall, in place of Jonathan Corwin; Jonathan Corwin, in place of John Hathorne.

1704.—John Appleton, in place of Daniel Peirce.

1707.—Thomas Noyes, in place of Nathaniel Saltonstall.

1708.—John Higginson, in place of Jonathan Corwin, appointed to the Superior Court.

1715.—Samuel Brown, in place of his father, Wm. Browne.

1720.—John Burrill, in place of John Higginson.

1721-22.—Josiah Wolcott, in place of John Burrill.

1729.—Timothy Linall and John Wainwright.

1733.—Theophilus Burrill and Thomas Berry, in place of Samuel Brown and John Appleton.

1737.—Benjamin Marston, in place of Theophilus Burrill.

1739.—Benjamin Lynde, in place of John Wainwright, deceased.

1745-46.—John Choat, in place of Benjamin Lynde, transferred to the Superior Court.

1754.—Henry Gibbs, in place of Timothy Linall, resigned; John Tasker, in place of Benjamin Marston, deceased.

1756.—Benjamin Pickman, in place of Thomas Berry, deceased.

1759.—Caleb Cushing, in place of Henry Gibbs, deceased.

1761.—Stephen Higginson, in place of Benjamin Pickman; Nathaniel Ropes and Andrew Oliver, in place of Stephen Higginson, deceased, and John Tasker, deceased.

1766.—William Bourn, in place of John Choat.

1770.—William Browne, in place of William Bourn, deceased.

1772.—Peter Frye, in place of Nathaniel Ropes, transferred to the Superior Court.

1775.—John Lowell, Caleb Cushing, Benjamin Greenleaf and Azor Orne.

1779.—Caleb Cushing, Benjamin Greenleaf, John Pickering, Jr., Samuel Holten.

1782.—Samuel Phillips, in place of Caleb Cushing.

1798.—Ebenezer March, in place of Benjamin Greenleaf.

1799.—John Treadwell, in place of John Pickering.

1808.—Samuel Holten retired, and was appointed chief justice of the General Court of Sessions.

The Inferior Court of Common Pleas continued until July 3, 1782, when the Court of Common Pleas was established, to be held within each county at specified times and places, with four judges appointed by the Governor from within the county.

Those in the above list, after 1779, were judges of this court. This court continued until June 21, 1811, when an act was passed providing that the commonwealth, except Dukes County and the county of Nantucket, should be divided into six circuits, as follows: the Middle Circuit, consisting of the counties of Suffolk, Essex and Middlesex; the Western Circuit, consisting of the counties of Worcester, Hampshire and Berkshire; the Southern Circuit, consisting of the counties of Norfolk, Plymouth, Bristol and Barnstable; the Eastern Circuit, consisting of the counties of York, Cumberland and Oxford; the second Eastern Circuit, consisting of the counties of Lincoln, Kennebec and Somerset; and the third Eastern Circuit, consisting of the counties of Hancock and Washington. It further provided that there shall be held in the several counties, at the times and places now appointed for holding the Courts of Common Pleas, a Circuit Court of Common Pleas, consisting of one chief justice and two associate justices, to whom were to be added two sessions justices from each county, to sit with the court in their county. The history of this court is so mingled with that of the General Court of Sessions that both should be sketched together. The Court of General Sessions of the Peace remained substantially the same during the provincial period, and up to June 19, 1807, when it was enacted that it should consist of one chief justice, or first justice, and a certain number of associate justices for the several counties, to be appointed by the Governor with the consent of the Council. These justices were to act as the General Court of Sessions in the place of the justices of the peace in each county. On the 19th of June, 1809, the powers and duties of the General Court of Sessions were transferred to the Court of Common Pleas, and two years later, on the 25th of June, 1811, it was enacted, "that from and after the first day of December next, an act made and passed the 19th day of June, 1809, entitled 'an act to transfer the powers and duties of the Courts of Sessions to the Courts of Common Pleas,' be and the same is hereby repealed, and that all acts, or parts of acts, relative to the Courts of Sessions which were in force at the time the act was in force which is hereby repealed, be and the same are hereby revived from and after the said first day of September next."

Again, on the 28th of February, 1814, it was enacted that the act of June 25, 1811, above quoted, "be repealed, except so far as it relates to the counties of Suffolk, Nantucket and Dukes County, and that all petitions, recognizances, warrants, orders, certificates, reports and processes made to, taken for or continued or returnable to the Court of Sessions in the several counties, except as aforesaid, shall be returnable to, and proceeded in, and determined by the respective Circuit Courts of Common Pleas," already referred to as having been established on the 21st of June, 1811, in the place of the old Court of Common Pleas. It further provided, "that from and after the first day of June next, the Circuit Courts of Common Pleas shall have, exercise, and perform all powers, authorities and duties which the respective Courts of Sessions have, before the passage of this act, exercised and performed, except in the counties of Suffolk, Nantucket and Dukes County; and it was further provided that the Governor, by and with the advice of the Council, be authorized to appoint two persons in each county, who shall be session justices of the Circuit Court of Common Pleas in their respective counties, and sit with the justices of said Circuit Court in the administration of the affairs of their county, and of all matters within said county of which the Courts of Sessions had cognizance." The management of county affairs was controlled by this court until February 20, 1819, when it was enacted, "that from and after the first day of June next, an 'act to transfer the powers and duties of the Courts of Sessions to the Circuit Courts of Common Pleas,' passed on the 28th of February, 1814, be hereby repealed; and it was further provided, that from and after the first day of June next the Court of Sessions in the several counties shall be held by one chief jus-

tice and two associate justices, to be appointed by the Governor, with the advice and consent of the Council, who shall have all the powers, rights and privileges, and be subject to all the duties, which are now vested in the Circuit Courts of Common Pleas relative to the erection and repairs of jails and other county buildings, the allowance and settlement of county accounts, the estimate, apportionment and issuing warrants for assessing county taxes, granting licenses, laying out, altering and discontinuing highways, and appointing committees and ordering juries for that purpose."

The Court of Sessions continued in the management of county affairs until March 4, 1826, when that part of their duties relating to highways was vested by law in a new board of county officers, termed "commissioners of highways." The act creating this board provided "that for each county in the Commonwealth, except the counties of Suffolk and Nantucket, there shall be appointed and commissioned by His Excellency, the Governor, by and with the advice and consent of the Council, to hold their offices for five years, unless removed by the Governor and Council, five commissioners of highways, except in the counties of Dukes and Barnstable, in which there shall be appointed only three, who shall be inhabitants of such county, one of whom shall be designated as chairman by his commission." The act further provided that the doings of the commissioners should be reported to the Court of Sessions for record, and that said court should draw their warrants on the county treasury for expenses incurred by the commissioners in constructing roads located by them.

On the 26th of February, 1828, an act was passed providing "that the Act entitled, 'An Act to establish Courts of Sessions,' passed on the 20th day of February, 1819; also the Act in addition thereto, passed on the 21st day February, 1820; also the Act entitled, 'An Act increasing the numbers and extending the powers of Justices of the Court of Sessions,' passed on the 6th of February, 1822; also the Act entitled, 'An Act in addition to an Act directing the method of laying out highways,' passed on the 4th day of March, 1826, be and the same are hereby repealed." It further provided that "there shall be appointed and commissioned by His Excellency, the Governor, by and with the advice and consent of the Council, four persons to be county commissioners for each of the counties of Essex, Middlesex, Norfolk and Worcester, and three persons to be county commissioners for each of the other counties of this Commonwealth, except the county of Suffolk," "that the Clerks of the Courts of Common Pleas within the several counties shall be clerks of said county commissioners," and "that for each of the counties in the Commonwealth, except the counties of Suffolk, Middlesex, Essex, Worcester, Norfolk and Nantucket, there shall be appointed and commissioned two persons to act as special county commissioners."

On the 8th of April, 1835, it was provided by law that in every county except Suffolk and Nantucket the judge of probate, register of probate and clerk of the Court of Common Pleas should be a board of examiners, and that on the first Monday of May, in the year 1835, and on the first Monday of April, in every third year thereafter, the people should cast their votes for three county commissioners and two special commissioners. The law remained unaltered until March 11, 1854, when it was provided, that the county commissioners now in office in the several counties, except in Suffolk and Nantucket, shall be divided into three classes; those of first class shall hold their offices until the day of the next annual election of Governor; those of the second class until the same election day in 1855; and those of the third class until the same election day in 1856, the commissioners now in office determining by lot to which each shall belong, and that at such annual election each year thereafter, one commissioner be chosen for three years. It was also provided that at the annual election in 1856, and each third year thereafter, two special commissioners be chosen.

Since the passage of the law of 1828 establishing Boards of County Commissioners the following persons have been appointed members of the Essex County Board:

1828–33.—Asa W. Wildes, of Newburyport; Joseph Winn, of Salem; Stephens Baker, of Ipswich; Wm. B. Breed, of Lynn.

1834.—John W. Proctor, of South Danvers, in place of William B. Breed.

1835–37.—Moses Newell, of West Newbury, in place of Asa W. Wildes.

1838–40.—Asa T. Newhall, of Lynn, in place of John W. Proctor.

1841–43.—Charles Kimball, of Ipswich; Robert Patten, of Amesbury; Wm. Whipple, of Rockport.

1844–46.—Asa W. Wildes, of Newburyport, and Benj. F. Newhall, of Saugus, in place of Robert Patten and Wm. Whipple.

1847–49.—John I. Baker, of Beverly, in place of Charles Kimball.

1850–54.—Benjamin Mudge, of Lynn, in place of Benjamin F. Newhall.

In this last year—in accordance with the law passed March 11, 1854, providing for the division of the commissioners by lot into three classes, one going out each year, and another chosen by the people for a term of three years—John I. Baker drew the first class, Benjamin Mudge the second, and Asa W. Wildes the third. At the election of 1854, and at subsequent elections, the following were chosen:

1854.—Stephens Baker, of Beverly, in place of John I. Baker.

1855.—Eben B. Currier, of Lawrence, in place of Benjamin Mudge.

1856.—George Haskell, of Ipswich, in place of Asa W. Wildes.

1857.—Stephens Baker, rechosen.

1858.—Eben B. Currier, rechosen.

1859.—Abram D. Wait, of Ipswich, in place of George Haskell.

1860.—James Kimball, of Salem, in place of Stephens Baker.

1861.—Jackson B. Swett, of Haverhill, in place of Eben B. Currier.

1862.—Abram D. Wait, rechosen.

1863.—James Kimball, rechosen.

1864.—Jackson B. Swett, rechosen.

1865.—Abram D. Wait, rechosen.

1866.—James Kimball, rechosen.

1867.—Jackson B. Swett, rechosen.
1868.—Charles P. Preston, of Danvers, in place of Abram D. Wait.
1869.—James Kimball, rechosen.
1870.—Jackson B. Swett, rechosen.
1871.—Charles P. Preston, rechosen.
1872.—James Kimball, rechosen.
1873.—Zachariah Graves, of Lynn, in place of Jackson B. Swett.
1874.—Joseph O. Proctor, of Gloucester, in place of Chas. P. Preston.
1875.—James Kimball, rechosen.
1876.—Zachariah Graves, rechosen.
1877.—Joseph O. Proctor, rechosen.
1878.—John W. Raymond, of Beverly, in place of James Kimball.
1879.—Geo. J. L. Colby, of Newburyport, in place of Zachariah Graves.
1880.—Zachariah Graves, in place of Joseph O. Proctor.
1881.—John W. Raymond, rechosen.
1882.—Edward B. Bishop, of Haverhill, in place of Geo. J. L. Colby.
1883.—Geo. J. L. Colby, in place of Zachariah Graves.
1884.—John W. Raymond, rechosen.
1885.—Edward B. Bishop, rechosen.
1886.—David W. Low, of Gloucester, in place of Geo. J. L. Colby.

The Circuit Court of Common Pleas, which was established in 1811, was abolished on the 14th of February, 1821, and the Court of Common Pleas established with four justices, one of whom it was provided by law should be commissioned chief justice. On the 1st of March, 1843, the number of judges was increased to five; March 18, 1845, it was increased to six; May 24, 1851, to seven. On the 5th day of April, 1859, the Court of Common Pleas was abolished, and the present Superior Court established, with ten judges, which number was increased, May 19, 1875, to eleven.

The Superior Court of Judicature, which was established June 26, 1699, received no appointments to its bench after 1775. During its existence the following judges were appointed:

1692.—Wm. Stoughton (Chief Justice), Thomas Danforth, Wait Winthrop (Chief Justice, 1708), John Richards, Samuel Sewall (Chief Justice, 1718).
1695.—Elisha Cooke.
1700.—John Walley.
1701.—John Saffin.
1702.—Isaac Addington (Chief Justice, 1703), John Hathorne, John Leverett.
1708.—Jonathan Curwin.
1712.—Benjamin Lynde (Chief Justice, 1728), Nathaniel Thomas.
1715.—Addington Davenport.
1718.—Edmund Quincy, Paul Dudley (Chief Justice, 1745).
1728.—John Cushing.
1733.—Jonathan Remington.
1736.—Richard Saltonstall.
1738.—Thomas Graves.
1739.—Stephen Sewall (Chief Justice, 1752).
1745.—Nathaniel Hubbard, Benjamin Lynde (Chief Justice, 1771).
1747.—John Cushing.
1752.—Chambers Russell.
1756.—Peter Oliver (Chief Justice, 1772).
1760.—Thomas Hutchinson (Chief Justice).
1767.—Edmund Trowbridge.
1771.—Foster Hutchinson.
1772.—Nathaniel Ropes.
1774.—William Brown.
1775.—William Cushing (Chief Justice, 1777), John Adams (Chief Justice), Nathaniel P. Sargeant, William Reed, Robert Treat Paine.
1776.—Jedediah Foster, James Sullivan.
1777.—David Sewall.

Of these, Judges John Hathorne, Jonathan Curwin, Richard Saltonstall, Stephen Sewall, Benjamin Lynde, Nathaniel Ropes, William Brown, David Sewall, Jedediah Foster and Nathaniel P. Sargeant were Essex County men. On the 20th of February, 1781, an act was passed establishing the Supreme Judicial Court as the successor of the Superior Court of Judicature. It was established with one chief justice and four associates, but in the year 1800 the number of associates was increased to six, and the State was divided into two circuits, the East including Essex County and Maine, and the West including all the remainder of the State, except Suffolk County. In 1805 the number of associates was again fixed at four, and so remained until 1852, when their number was increased to five. In 1873 the number of associates was increased to six, and of one chief justice and six associates the court is now constituted. Those in the above list after 1774 were judges of the Superior Court of Judicature of the State of Massachusetts, and not of the province. Of the judges of the Superior Court since its organization, in 1781, the following have been Essex County men: Theophilus Parsons, Charles Jackson, Samuel Putnam, Caleb Cushing, Wm. C. Endicott and Otis P. Lord, who will be referred to in another chapter containing sketches of the bench and bar.

The administration of probate affairs, as has been already stated, was in the hands of the County Court during the colonial period up to the accession of President Dudley, in 1685. It has also been stated that he assumed the jurisdiction to himself, but delegated it in one or more counties to a judge of probate appointed by him. Under the administration of Andros the Governor personally attended to the settlement of estates exceeding fifty pounds, and it is presumed that smaller estates came within the rules established by Dudley. After the deposition of Andros the old colonial method was resumed and continued until the charter of the province went into operation, in 1692. Under the provincial charter jurisdiction in probate affairs was conferred on the Governor and Council, who claimed and exercised the right of delegating it to judges and registers of probate in the several counties. During the provincial period there was no Probate Court established by law, but the judge and register exercised their powers under authority derived only from the Governor and Council. On the 12th of March, 1784, a Probate Court was established, of which the judge and register were appointed by the Governor until, under an amendment of the Constitution ratified by the people May 23, 1855, it was provided after some previous legislation that in 1856, and every fifth year thereafter, the register should be chosen by the people for a term of five years. In 1856 a Court of Insolvency was established for each county, with a judge and register, and in 1858 the offices of judge and register of this court were abolished, as well as those of judge and register of probate, and the offices of judge and register of probate and insolvency estab-

lished. In the same year it was provided that the register of probate and insolvency should be chosen by the people, for a term of five years, at the annual election in that year and every fifth year thereafter. In 1862 the Probate Court was made a court of record. The offices of judge and register have been held by the following persons since the provincial charter went into operation, in 1692:

App.	JUDGES.
1692.	Bartholomew Gedney.
1698.	Jonathan Curwin.
1702.	John Appleton.
1739.	Thomas Berry.
1756.	John Choate.
1766.	Nathaniel Ropes.
1762.	Benjamin Lynde.
1779.	Benjamin Greenleaf.
1798.	Samuel Holten.
1816.	Daniel A. White.
1854.	Nathaniel S. Howe.
1857.	Abner C. Goodell, Judge of Insolvency.
1858.	Henry B. Fernald, Judge of Insolvency.
1859.	George F. Choate, Judge of P. and I.

App.	REGISTERS.
1692.	Stephen Sewall.
1695.	John Croade.
1698.	John Higginson.
1702.	Daniel Rogers.
1723.	Daniel Appleton.
1762.	Samuel Rogers.
1773.	Peter Frye.
1779.	Daniel Noyes.
1816.	Nathaniel Lord (3d).
1852.	Edwin Lawrence.
1854.	George R. Lord.
1856.	James Ropes.
1857.	Jonathan Perley, Jr.
1858.	Abner C. Goodell, Register of Insolvency.
1858.	Charles H. Hudson, Register of P.
1859.	Abner C. Goodell, Register of P. and I.
1878.	Jeremiah T. Mahoney, Register of P. and I.

The executive officer of the court was, in colonial times up to 1685, called marshal, except in the very earliest years, when he was called beadle. As early, however, as 1634 the records show that James Penn was chosen marshal. Under President Dudley he was called provost marshal, under Andros he was called sheriff, and after Andros, until the province was established, in 1692, he was again called marshal. As nearly as can be ascertained, the marshals in Essex were as follows:

1663. Samuel Archard.	1686. Jeremiah Neale.
1670. Henry Sherry.	1691. John Rogers.
1685. Robert Lord.	1692. John Harris.

The sheriffs have been as follows:

1692. George Corwin.	1766. Richard Saltonstall.
1696. William Gedney.	1779. Michael Farley.
1702. Thomas Wainwright.	1792. Bailey Bartlett.
William Gedney.	1831. Joseph E. Sprague.
1708. Daniel Denison.	1852. Frederick Robinson.
1710. William Gedney.	1854. Thomas E. Payson.
1715. John Denison.	1856. James Cary.
1722. Benjamin Marston.	1867. Horatio G. Herrick.
1746. Robert Hale.	

Under a law passed in 1831 the Governor was authorized, with the power of removal, to appoint sheriffs for the several counties for five years. Under the nineteenth article of amendments of the Constitution, ratified in 1855, a law was passed in 1856 providing that in that year, and every third year thereafter, a sheriff should be chosen by the people of each county at the annual election.

The clerks of the courts were appointed by the courts during the colonial period. During the provincial period the clerks of the County Courts and those of the Superior Court of Judicature, and afterwards of the Supreme Judicial Court, were distinct until 1797, and the clerk of the latter two courts had his office in Boston. The appointment lay with the courts until 1811, when the Governor and Council were made the appointing power. In 1814 the appointment was given to the Supreme Judicial Court, and there remained until 1856, when it was provided by law that in that year, and every fifth year thereafter, clerks should be chosen by the people in the several counties. As nearly as can be ascertained, the following is a correct list of the clerks of the courts in Essex County:

1637. Ralph Fogg.	1783. Isaac Osgood
1647. Henry Bartholomew.	1795. Thos. Bancroft.
Robert Lord.	1797. Samuel Holten.
1653. Elias Stileman.	1798. Thos. Bancroft.
1658. Hilliard Veren.	1804. Ichabod Tucker.
Bart. Gedney.	1812. Jos. E. Sprague.
1683. Benj. Gerrish.	1813. Ichabod Tucker.
1692. Stephen Sewall.[1]	1828. John Prince, Jr.
1727. Mitchell Sewall.	1842. Ebenezer Shillaber.
1750. Jos. Bowditch.	1852. Asahel Huntington.
1771. Wm. Jeffrey.	1872. Alfred A. Abbott.
1774. Jos. Blaney.	1885. Dean Peabody.
1779. Samuel Osgood.	

During the colonial period the clerks of the courts were registers of deeds, and so continued until 1715, when it was provided "that in each county some person having a freehold within said county to the value of at least ten pounds should be chosen by the people of the county." In 1781 a law was passed renewing and continuing this practice, and the law remained in force until 1855, when it was provided that in that year, and every third year thereafter, a register of deeds should be chosen for the term of three years. The list of clerks, therefore, above given will cover the registers up to 1715. Since that date they have been as follows:

1692. Stephen Sewall.	1870. Ephraim Brown, South.
1727. Mitchell Sewall.	1870. Gibert E. Hood, North.
1774. John Higginson.	1875. Ephraim Brown, South.
1780. John Pickering.	1875. Abiel Morrison, North.
1807. Amos Choate.	1878. John R. Poor, North.
1832. Ralph H. French.	1879. Chas. S. Osgood, South.
1852. Ephraim Brown, Jr.	

Up to 1869 the registry of deeds for the whole county was kept at Salem. But on the 22d of June, in that year, an act was passed providing that the city of Lawrence and the towns of Andover, North Andover and Methuen should constitute a district for the registry of deeds, under the name of the Northern District of Essex, and that the other towns in the county should constitute the Southern District. It also provided that the Governor and Council should, on or before the 1st day of the following October, appoint a register for the Northern District to hold office until a regis-

[1] Was also clerk during the administration of Dudley, and probably during that of Andros.

ter should be chosen by the people of the towns in the district at the annual election in 1870. It further provided that the register of deeds then in office should continue until a register for the Southern District should be chosen by the people of the district in 1870, and that he should deliver on demand to the register of the Northern District all original deeds or other instruments recorded and remaining in his office conveying or relating to land or estates in said Northern District.

After the formation of the counties it was provided by law, in 1654, that each county should annually choose a treasurer. This provision was renewed by an act passed in 1692, after the formation of the province, and continued, it is believed, up to 1855, when it was provided that a county treasurer should be chosen in that year, and every third year thereafter, for the term of three years. Up to 1654, when provision was made for the election of county treasurers, the treasurer chosen by the General Court was the treasurer of the whole colony. These were as follows:

May 13, 1629, George Harwood.[1]
Dec. 1, 1629, Samuel Aldesy.
1632. William Pynchon.
1634. William Coddington.
1636. Richard Dummer.
1637. Richard Bellingham.
1640. William Tyng.
1644 to 1654. Richard Russell.

No further record of county treasurers is accessible before 1774. From that date they have been as follows:

1774. Michael Farley.
1792. Stephen Choate.
1813. Bailey Bartlett.
1814. Nathaniel Wade.
1852. Daniel Weed.
1853. Allen W. Dodge.
1878. Edward K. Jenkins.

The only courts connected with the county remaining to be mentioned are the Police and District Courts. Of the Police Courts there are five—those in Gloucester, Lawrence, Lynn, Haverhill and Newburyport. That of Gloucester is for that city alone, and its officers are James Davis, justice; Ellridge G. Friend and Wm. W. French, special justices; and Sumner D. York, clerk. That of Lawrence is also for that city alone, and its officers are Nathan W. Harmon, justice; Wilbur F. Gile and Charles U. Bell, special justices; and Albert A. Tyler, clerk. That for Lynn is for that city alone, and its officers are Rollin E. Harmon, justice; Ira B. Keith and John W. Berry, special justices; and Henry C. Oliver, clerk. The Police Court of Haverhill comprises within its jurisdiction Haverhill, Bradford and Groveland, and its officers are Henry Carter, justice; Ira A. Abbott and Henry N. Merrill, special justices; and Edward B. George, clerk. That of Newburyport comprises Newburyport and Newbury, and its officers are John N. Pike, justice; David L. Withington and Horace I. Bartlett, special justices; and Edward F. Bartlett, clerk. The only district court is the First District Court of Essex, which comprises within its jurisdiction Salem, Beverly, Danvers, Hamilton, Middleton, Topsfield and Wenham, and is held at Salem. Its officers are Joseph B. F. Osgood, justice; Daniel E. Safford and Nathaniel I. Holden, special justices; and Samuel P. Andrews, clerk. Police Courts were originally established in Salem, 1831; Newburyport, 1833; Lawrence, 1848; Lynn, 1849; Haverhill, 1854; Gloucester, 1858. That of Haverhill was re-established in 1867, taking Bradford and Groveland within its jurisdiction, and the jurisdiction of the Newburyport Court was enlarged by the addition of Newbury, in 1879. The first Essex District Court was established in 1874.

Little can be said in this chapter of the early history of the Essex bar. Of those who were early called to the bench were Nathaniel Saltonstall, of Haverhill, born in 1639, and a graduate of Harvard in 1659; Bartholomew Gedney, of Salem, born in 1640; Thomas Berry, of Ipswich, a graduate of Harvard in 1712; Andrew Oliver, of Salem, a graduate of Harvard in 1724; Samuel White, of Haverhill (Harvard), 1731; John Hathorne, of Salem, born in 1641; Jonathan Curwin, of Salem, born in 1640; Richard Saltonstall, of Haverhill, born in 1703 (Harvard), 1722; Stephen Sewall, of Salem, born in 1702 (Harvard), 1721; Benjamin Lynde, of Salem, born in 1700 (Harvard), 1718; Nathaniel Ropes, of Salem, born in 1726 (Harvard), 1745; William Brown, of Salem (Harvard), 1855,—all of whom were on the bench of the Superior Court of Judicature, but not all educated in the law. The bar was divided into two classes—barristers and attorneys, and this division continued until 1836, though after 1806 under a rule of court counselors were substituted for barristers.

The term "barrister" is derived from the Latin word *barra*, signifying bar, and was applied to those only who were permitted to plead at the bar of the courts. In England, barristers, before admission, must have resided three years in one of the Inns of Court if a graduate of either Cambridge or Oxford, and five years if not. These Inns of Court were the Inner Temple, the Middle Temple, Lincoln's Inn and Gray's Inn. Before the Revolution this rule seems to have so far prevailed here as to require a practice of three years in the Inferior Courts before admission as barrister. John Adams says in his diary that he became a barrister in 1761, and was directed to provide himself with a gown and bands and a tie wig, having practiced according to the rules three years in the Inferior Courts. At a later day the period of probation seems to have been four years, and at a still later seven years.

With regard to the continuance of barristers after the Revolution, the following entry in the records of the Superior Court of Judicature may be interesting:

"Suffolk, SS. Superior Court of Judicature at Boston, third Tuesday of February, 1781, present William Cushing, Nathaniel P. Sargeant, David Sewall and James Sullivan justices: and now at this term the following rule is made by the court and ordered to be entered, viz.: whereas, learning and literary accomplishments are necessary as well to promote the happiness as to preserve the freedom of the people, and the learning of the law when duly encouraged and rightly directed being

[1] Chosen in England.

as well peculiarly subservient to the great and good purpose aforesaid, as promotive of public and private justice: and the court being at all times ready to bestow peculiar marks of approbation upon the gentlemen of the bar, who, by a close application to the study of the science they profess, by a mode of conduct which gives a conviction of the rectitude of their minds and a fairness of practice that does honor to the profession of the law shall distinguish as men of science, honor and integrity, Do order that no gentleman shall be called to the degree of barrister until he shall merit the same by his conspicuous bearing, ability and honesty; and that the court will, of their own mere motion, call to the bar such persons as shall render themselves worthy as aforesaid; and that the manner of calling to the bar shall be as follows: The gentleman who shall be a candidate shall stand within the bar; the chief justice, or in his absence the senior justice, shall, in the name of the court, repeat to him the qualifications necessary for a barrister-at-law; shall let him know that it is a conviction in the mind of the court of his being possessed of those qualifications that induces them to confer the honor upon him; and shall solemnly charge him so to conduct himself as to be of singular service to his country by exerting his abilities for the defence of her Constitutional freedom; and so to demean himself as to do honor to the court and bar."

The act establishing the Supreme Judicial Court, July 3, 1782, provided that the court should and might from time to time make record and establish all such rules and regulations with respect to the admission of attorneys ordinarily practicing in the said court, and the creating of barristers-at-law. Under the provisions of this act the following rule was adopted and entered on the records of the Supreme Judicial Court:

"Suffolk SS. At the Supreme Judicial Court at Boston the last Tuesday of August, 1783, present William Cushing, Chief Justice, and Nathaniel P. Sargeant, David Sewall and Increase Sumner, Justices, ordered that barristers be called to the Bar by special writ to be ordered by the Court, and to be in the following form:

"COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS.

"*To A. B., Esq., of* ——, *Greeting:* We well knowing your ability, learning and integrity, command you that you appear before our Justices of our Supreme Judicial Court next, to be holden at ——, in and for our county of ——, on the — Tuesday of ——, then and there in our said Court to take upon you the state and degree of a Barrister-at-Law. Hereof fail not. Witness ———, Esq., our Chief Justice at Boston, the — day of ——, in the year of our Lord —— and in the —— year of our Independence ——. By order of the Court. ———, Clerk.

"which writ shall be fairly engrossed on parchment and delivered twenty days before the session of the same Court by the Sheriff of the same county to the person to whom directed and being produced in Court by the Barrister and there read by the Clerk, and proper certificate thereon made, shall be re-delivered and kept as a voucher of his being legally called to the bar: And the Barristers shall take rank according to the date of their respective writs."

It is believed that no barristers were called after 1784, and the following rule adopted in 1806 seems to have substituted counselors in their place:

"Suffolk SS. At the Supreme Judicial Court at Boston for the counties of Suffolk and Nantucket the second Tuesday of March, 1806, present Francis Dana, Chief Justice, Theodore Sedgwick, George Thatcher and Isaac Parker, Justices, ordered: First. No Attorney shall do the business of a Counsellor unless he shall have been made or admitted as such by the Court. Second. All Attorneys of this Court who have been admitted three years before the sitting of this Court shall be and hereby are made Counsellors and are entitled to all the rights and privileges of such. Third. No Attorney or Counsellor shall hereafter be admitted without a previous examination, etc."

In 1836 the distinction between counselor and attorney was abolished. The rule of court adopted in 1783 by the Supreme Judicial Court was issued under the provisions of the law passed the year before. The rule adopted in 1781 by the Superior Court of Judicature seems to have been provided for by no previous law, and it is even doubtful whether before that time any rule had ever been made by the New England courts providing for barristers. Precisely how early they were introduced into our courts it is impossible to discover. It is known, however, as is stated by Washburne, in his history of the judiciary, that as early as 1768 there were twenty-five in Massachusetts, of whom Daniel Farnham, William Pynchon, John Chipman, Nathaniel Peaselee Sargeant and John Lowell were of Essex. It is possible that before the year 1781, during the provincial period, the English rule was followed and that the rule of that year was adopted in consequence of the new order of things brought about by the Revolution.

It has been stated that the court termed "the Court of General Sessions," which consisted of the justices of the peace in each county and had existed during the provincial period, was changed to "the General Court of Sessions" in 1807. The judges appointed to this court for Essex County were Samuel Holten (chief justice), Josiah Smith, Wm. Pearson, Thomas Kitteridge, John Saunders, Henry Elkins (justices), and John Punchard (clerk). In 1809 this court was abolished, and its powers and duties transferred to the Court of Common Pleas. In 1811, however, it was re-established, and its officers consisted of Sam'l. Holten (chief justice), Thomas Kitteridge, Henry Elkins, John Prince and Joseph Fuller (justices) and Joseph E. Sprague (clerk).

The sessions of the Supreme Judicial, Superior and Probate Courts, as now provided by law, are,—

Supreme: Law term at Salem on the first Tuesday in November. Jury terms at Salem on the third Tuesday in April and the first Tuesday in November.

Superior: Civil terms at Salem on the first Mondays in June and December; Lawrence on the first Monday in March; Newburyport on the first Monday in September. Criminal terms,—Salem on the fourth Monday in January; Newburyport on the second Monday in May; Lawrence on the fourth Monday in October.

Probate: Salem on the first Monday in every month and on the third Monday in every month, except August; Lawrence on the second Monday in January, March, May, June, July, September, November; Haverhill on the second Monday in April and October; Newburyport on the fourth Monday in January, March, May, June, July, September, November; Gloucester on the fourth Monday in April and October.

The record of admissions to the bar in Essex County begins in 1795, and the following is believed to be a correct list up to 1887, inclusive:

1795. Ichabod Tuker
1796. Charles Jackson
1801. Joseph Story
1804. Joseph Dana
Ralph H. French
Daniel A. White
John Prince, Jr.
Samuel Swett
1805. Ebenezer Moseley
1806. Leverett Saltonstall
John Pickering
1807. Henry A. S. Dearborn
Wm. B. Sewell
John Pike
Joseph Sprague (3d)
Benj. R. Nichols
Wm. S. Titcomb
Elisha Macke
Moody Noyes
Samuel L. Knapp
1808. Ebenezer R Beeckford
Nathaniel Sawyer
Joseph Hovey
1809. B. L. Oliver, Jr.

David Cummings
John Maurice O'Brien.
1810. Jacob Gerrish
Larkin Thorndike
Samuel Merrill
Jos. B. Manning
R. W. Swett
John Gallison
Stephen Hooper
1812. Timothy Hammond
James C. Merrill
Wm. Birley
Jacob Willard
John Glen King
Frederick Howes
Ebenezer Everett
Theodore Ames
1813. Geo. Newton
Edward Andrews
Thos. Stephens, Jr
Octavius Pickering
John Scott
1814. Henry Peirce
1815. Jas. H. Duncan
Elisha F. Wallace
W. A. Rogers
1816. Wm. Thorndike
Rufus V. Hovey
1818. Andrew Dunlap
Solomon S. Whipple
John Foster
1819. Ebenezer Shillaber
John W. Proctor
1820. A. W. Wildes
1821. Isaac R. How
E. H. Derby
Jos. G. Waters
1823. Robt. Cross
G. C. Wilde
Wm. Oakes
John A. Richardson
Rufus Choate
Thornton Betton
Robt. Rantoul, Jr.
1824. Jos. H. Prince
John Walsh
1825. Benj. Tucker
1826. A. Huntington
Moses Parsons Parish
Gilman Parker
Stephen P. Webb
J. C. Stickney
David Roberts
W. S. Allen
1827. Samuel Phillips
1828. David Mack
Nathaniel J. Lord
Geo. Wheatland
Ellis Gray Loring
John Tenney
Edward L. Le Breton
Nathaniel P. Knapp
N. W. Hazen
1830. John Codman
John S. Williams.
1831. Alfred Kittridge
Chas. Minot
Francis B. Crowninshield
Henry Field
Chas. A. Andrew
1832. N. Devereux
Ephraim T. Miller
Joshua H. Ward
Geo. H. Devereux
Wm. G. Woodward
1833. John W. Browne
Geo. Lunt
1834. Francis Silsbee
1835. Wm. Fabens
Jonathan C. Perkins
Otis P. Lord
1837. Thos. B. Newhall
1838. Joseph Couch
Wm. Taggart
Nathl. F. Safford, Jr
Francis Cummins
1839. Wm. O. Moseley
Edward P. Parker
Richard West
Francis H. Upton
Jos. G. Gerrish
1840. H. F. Barstow
Wm. Williams
Simon F. Barstow
1842. Frederick Merrill
Luther A. Hackett
Horace Plumer
1843. Geo. Haskell
1844. Alfred A. Abbott
Jos. F. Clark
Wm. L. Rogers
1845. Moses Foster, Jr.
Wm. F. C. Stearns
David Kimball
Benj. Barstow
Jeremiah P. Jones
Wm. D. Northend
1846. Augustus D. Rogers
Daniel Weed
Isaac Ames
Horace L. Conolly
1847. W. Augustus Marston
1848. Louis Worcester
George R. Lord
A. G. White
Geo. F. Choate
N. S. Howe
1849. Wm. H. P. Wright
Jairus W. Perry.
Nathaniel Pierce
B. Frank Watson
1850. Wm. C. Endicott
E. W. Kimball
Geo. Andrews
Dean Peabody.
1851. Philo L. Beverly
Wm. C. Prescott
Stephen G. Wheatland
John B. Clarke
Stephen B. Ives, Jr.
Ammi Brown
Jacob W. Reed
Daniel E. Safford
1852. Sidney C. Bancroft
Caleb Lamson
J. A. Gillis
Joseph H. Robinson
Abner C. Goodell, Jr.
John N. Pike
1853. Chas. J. Thorndike
Chas. H. Stickney
1854. Michael B. Mulkins
Hiram O. Wiley
1855. Francis S. Howe
C. W. Upham
Wm. G. Choate
G. A. Peabody
Robt. S. Rantoul
1856. Harrison G. Johnson
Jos. H. Bragdon
C. Osgood Morse
Edward L. Sherman
Geo. W. Benson
Benj. Bordman
E. P. G. Marsh
1857. Jacob Haskell
Wm. H. Parsons
Harrison Gray
Jos. Eastman
H. N. Merrill
P. S. Chase
John James Ingalls
John B. Stickney
Henry Carter
1858. Amos Noyes (2d)
Edgar J. Sherman
Ephraim A. Ingalls
Wm. M. Rogers
Chas. Kimball
David B. Kimball
1859. Geo. P. Burrill
Wm. P. Upham
Benj. H. Smith
B. T. Hutchinson
John F. Devereux
John S. Driver
Wm. L. Peabody
Chas. Sewall
Arthur A. Peterson
Thorndike D. Hodges
1860. Henry W. Chapman
John K. Tarbox
John C. Sanborn
Wm. G. Currier
Wm. Fisk Gile
Thos. A. Cushing
Wm. Cogswell
1861. John Millikin
Francis H. Berick
Micajah B. Mansfield
Alphonso J. Roberson
Geo. A. Bousley
1862. Edward P. Kimball
Henry G. Rollins
Geo. Foster
Geo. Wheatland, Jr
1863. Nathaniel J. Holden
Caleb Saunders
Frank Kimball
Minot Tirrell, Jr.
Chas. S. Osgood
1864. R. B. Brown
H. L. Sherman
A. R. Sanborn
John W. Porter
Geo. H. Poor
H. W. Boardman
W. H. Dalrymple
Chas. A. Sayward
Solomon Lincoln, Jr.
N. Mortimer Hawkes
1865. David M. Kelly
Elbridge T. Burley
Porter T. Roberts
John P. Adams
Eben A. Andrews
Wm L. Thompson
1866. Wm. E. Blunt
John W. Berry
C. A. Phillips
Walter Parker
Thos. F. Hunt
Wm. S. Knox
Warren H. Mace
1867. Wm. C. Fabens
Andrew C. Stone
Geo. W. Cate
Robt. W. Pearson
Jas. L. Rankin
Jas. L. Young
1868. Henry P. Moulton
Henri N. Woods
Geo. Holman
Horace C. Bacon
Benj. E. Valentine
Geo. W. Foster
Chas. Webb
J. Kendall Jenness
1869. Jeremiah T. Mahoney
Jos. C. Goodwin
Nathan N. Withington
John Edwards Leonard
1870. Chas. E. Briggs
Fred. D. Burnham
John S. Gile
Hiram P. Harriman
Chas. G. Saunders
1871. Wm. S. Huse
Samuel A. Johnson
James H. Giddings
1872. Ira Anson Abbott
Chas. W. Richardson
Fred. P. Byram
Ira B. Keith
Wm. Henry Gove
Leverett S. Tuckerman
Josiah F. Bly
Wm. W. Wilkins
1873. Arba N. Lincoln
Jos. E. Buswell
Chas. Upham Bell
Frank P. Ireland
Chas. A. Benjamin
Andrew Fitz
Chas. D. Moore
1874. Amos E. Rollins
Louis W. Kelley
Chas. H. Parsons
A. L. Huntington
Fred. A. Benton
Arthur F. Morris
Chas. Roberts Brickett
1875. John P. Sweeney
Willis E. Flint
Frank W. Hale
N. D. A. Clarke
Thos. Huse, Jr.
1876. Edward B. George
Wilson S. Jenkins
Samuel H. Hodges
David L. Withington
Francis H. Pearl
Frank P. Allen
Jerome H. Fiske
Henry F. Chase
1877. Henry T. Croswell
David C. Bartlett
Jas. E. Breed
Wm. F. M. Collins
Peter W. Lyall
Newton P. Frye
Chas. F. Caswell
Moses H. Ames
Eben F. P. Smith
Geo. F. Means
Thos. C. Simpson, Jr.
Geo. Galen Abbott
Chas. A. Tobin
Boyd B. Jones
1878. John A. Page

Geo. J. Carr
Hiram H. Browne
Wm. H. Moody
Dennis W. Quill
Thos. F. Gallagher
Wm. F. Moyes
John C. M. Bayley
Horace I. Bartlett
Daniel N. Crowley
Patrick I. McCuskin
Geo. B. Ives.

1879. Frank H. Clarke
Edward P. Usher
Joseph V. Sweeney
Michael J. McNeirny
Joseph V. Hannan
Forrest L. Evans
Charles Leighton
Edwin F. Cloutman
Charles D. Welch
Frank V. Wight
Jacob Otis Wardwell
Charles G. Dyer
Charles H. Symonds
Edward E. Frye
Theodore M. Osborne
N. Sumner Myrick
Daniel J. M. O'Callaghan
Charles A. Russell
Charles Howard Poor

1880. Benj. Newhall Johnson
Josiah F. Keene
Jonathan Lamson
Wm. W. Butler
Frank C. Skinner
Charles S. Wilson
Frank E. Farnham
Henry C. Durgin
Alden P. White
Charles E. Todd
William Perry
Calvin B. Tuttle
G. M. Stearns
John R. Baldwin
Samuel Merrill
Benj. K. Prentiss, Jr.
Frederick G. Preston
Edward C. Battis

1881. Charles A. De Courcy
Albert Birnay Tasker
John Milton Stearns
Alfred L. Baker

1882. Wm. F. Noonan
Wm. H. Lucie
Charles F. Sargent
Wm. D. T. Trefry
James W. Goodwin
Edward H. Browne
Benjamin C. Ames
Edward H. Rowell
John C. Pierce
Nathaniel C. Bartlett
Edwin A. Clark
George L. Weil
Tristram F. Bartlett
Nathaniel N. Jones
Isaac A. Lamson

1883. Marshman W. Hazen
Charles A. Weare
Thomas H. Ronayne
Sumner D. York
Frank C. Richardson
Wm. A. Pew, Jr.
George E. Batchelder
Melville P. Beckett
Edmund B. Fuller

1884. Samuel A. Fuller
Eugene T. McCarthy
Wm. T. McKone
Joseph F. Quinn

1885. John R. Poor
George H. Eaton
Warren B. Hutchinson
John J. Flaherty
Jeremiah E. Bartlett
Byron E. Crowell
Robert O'Callaghan
Cornelius J. Rowley
Robert T. Babson
Thomas Keville, Jr.
Richard E. Hines
John C. Donavan

1886. Harry J. Cole
Winfield S. Peters
Edward P. Morton
Horace M. Sargent
Wm. O'Shea
Wm. C. Endicott, Jr.
Wm. R. Rowell

1887. George H. Williams
Benjamin G. Hall
Andrew Ward
Rufus P. Tapley, Jr.
Archibald N. Donahue

There remains little to be included within this sketch of Essex County. The details concerning the jails of Ipswich, the first of which was built in 1652; of the court-house and probate building in that town, the latter of which was built in 1817, and held the records until they were removed to Salem; of the erection of a jail and house of correction in Lawrence in 1853, and of the erection of a court-house in that city in 1859, and of the county buildings in Newburyport and Salem, consisting in the latter city partly of a granite court-house, built in 1841, and a brick court-house built in 1861, will be included in the town histories. There are various corporations, associations and societies which would properly come within the scope of these histories, but in case they may be omitted it may, perhaps, be well to refer to them at least by name. Those best known are the Essex Institute, at Salem, established in 1821 and incorporated in 1848; the Essex County Natural History Society at Salem, incorporated in 1836; the Peabody Academy of Science, established at Salem in 1867 with a fund of $140,000, of which the sum of $40,000 was expended in the purchase of the hall and museum of the East India Marine Society; the Essex Agricultural Society, founded by Colonel Timothy Pickering, in 1818; the Essex North and Essex South Medical Societies, and the Essex County Homœopathic Medical Society; the Merrimac Valley Dental Association; the Veteran Odd Fellows' Association, of Essex County; the Teachers' Association, incorporated in 1827, and Unitarian Conference and Congregational Club.

This sketch, feared by the author to be imperfect, more especially in its enumeration of the early offices and their incumbents, concerning whom the records are often confused, will close with a list of the present officers of the county:

Judge of Probate and Insolvency, George F. Choate, of Salem; Register of Probate and Insolvency, Jeremiah T. Mahoney, of Salem; Clerk of the Court, Dean Peabody, of Lynn; County Treasurer, E. Kendall Jenkins, of Andover; Sheriff, Horatio G. Herrick, of Lawrence; Register of Deeds (North District), John R. Poor, of Lawrence; (South District), Charles S. Osgood, of Salem; County Commissioners, John W. Raymond, of Beverly, until 1887; Edward B. Bishop, of Haverhill, until 1888; David W. Low, of Gloucester, until 1889; Special Commissioners, Aaron Sawyer, of Amesbury, until 1889; Ivory Emmons, of Swampscott, until 1889; Commissioners of Insolvency, Sherman Nelson, of Georgetown William L. Thompson, of Lawrence; Horace I. Bartlett, of Newburyport; Trial Justices, J. Scott Todd, of Rowley; Nathaniel F. S. York, of Rockport; William M. Rogers, of Methuen; Orlando B. Tenny, of Georgetown; George H. Poor, of Andover; George W. Cate, of Amesbury; Amos Merrill, of Peabody; Orlando S. Bailey, of Amesbury; William Nutting, Jr., of Marblehead; Wesley K. Bell, of Ipswich; Stephen Gilman, of Lynnfield; and Joseph T. Wilson, of Nahant.

CHAPTER II.

THE BENCH AND BAR.

BY WILLIAM T. DAVIS.

THE preceding chapter contains matter which might, perhaps, properly be included in this. That chapter contains, in connection with a sketch of the courts of Essex County, a list of persons admitted to the bar, chiefly copied from the records in the clerk's office in Salem. The present chapter will be devoted principally to sketches of the bench and bar, many of them necessarily short, but, perhaps, sufficient, if not to do justice to the subjects themselves, to at least demonstrate the fruitfulness of the county from its organization, in 1643, in eminent men. It is not too much to say that no county in the State can furnish so distinguished a list of men educated to the law among its native citizens.

Among those on the bench in the colonial and early provincial periods few of the judges were lawyers. Up to the Revolution only four judges, educated in the law, had been appointed to the bench of the Superior Court of Judicature,—Benjamin Lynde, Paul Dudley, Edmund Trowbridge and William Cushing. Few lawyers found their way across the ocean, and fewer still pursued a professional study here. A prejudice against them existed, and the inducements to enter the profession were small. The General Court of the Massachusetts Colony reflected this prejudice by ordering, on October 21, 1663, "that no usual and common attorney in any Inferior Court shall be admitted to sit as Deputy in this Court." In 1685, or immediately after that date, during the reign of James II., Edward Randolph wrote to England that there were only two attorneys in Boston, and asked to have sent "two or three honest attorneys, if any such in nature."

A Bar Association was formed in 1806, and at that time there were probably only twenty-three members of the bar in Essex County, while to-day, as the list at the end of this chapter shows, there are two hundred and three. These twenty-three were John Pickering, Timothy Pickering, Benjamin Pickman, John Prince, Jr., Samuel Putnam, Leverett Saltonstall, Joseph Story, William Prescott and Samuel Swett, of Salem; Joseph Dana, Michael Hodge, Edward Little, Edward St. Loe Livermore, Ebenezer Moseley and Daniel A. White, of Newburyport; Stephen Minot and John Varnum, of Haverhill; Nathan Parks, of Gloucester; Ralph H. French, of Marblehead; Asa Andrews, of Ipswich; Nathan Dane, of Beverly; and Samuel Farrar, of Andover.

This association probably dissolved about the year 1812, and in 1831 another association was formed, whose records show that at the time of its formation there were fifty-two members of the bar. Leverett Saltonstall was the first and probably its only president, as it existed only a few years. Ebenezer Shillaber was its secretary, and Ebenezer Moseley, Jacob Gerrish, John G. King, Rufus Choate and Stephen Minot composed its standing committee. The present Bar Association was formed at the court-house in Lawrence October 20, 1856, and its constitution was adopted at a meeting held at the court-house in Salem December 16, 1856. Its presidents have been Otis P. Lord, Asahel Huntington, William C. Endicott, Stephen B. Ives and the present incumbent, William D. Northend.

Samuel Appleton, born in Waldingfield, England, in 1624, came to New England with his father, Samuel, in 1635 and resided in Ipswich. He was named in the charter of 1692 as one of the Council, and was one of the first judges appointed in 1692 to the bench of the Court of Common Pleas for Essex, holding his seat until his death, May 15, 1696. He married Hannah, daughter of William Paine, of Ipswich, and for a second wife, Mary, daughter of John Oliver, of Newbury.

Daniel Pierce is believed to have been a native of Newbury. In 1698 he was appointed judge of the Essex Court of Common Pleas, and held his seat until his death, January 22, 1704.

William Browne was the son of William Browne, and was born perhaps in Salem in 1639. In 1689, after the accession of William and Mary, he was one of the Committee of Safety. He was appointed to the bench of the Essex Court of Common Pleas in 1696, and died while in office, February 14, 1716.

John Appleton, nephew of Samuel Appleton above-mentioned, and son of John, was probably born in Ipswich in 1652. He was town clerk of that town in 1697; deputy to the General Court in 1697; a member of the Council from 1698 to 1702, from 1706 to 1715 and from 1720 to 1722. He was appointed to the Essex Common Pleas bench in 1704 and removed by Governor Belcher in 1732. He was in the same year made judge of probate for Essex, and held that office until his death, in 1739. He married, November 23, 1681, Elizabeth, daughter of John Rogers, president of Harvard College.

Thomas Noyes was probably born in Newbury in 1649. He was appointed to the bench of the Essex Court of Common Pleas in 1707, and held that office until 1725. He died April 12, 1730.

John Higginson, the son of Rev. John Higginson, and grandson of Rev. Francis Higginson, of Salem, was a merchant by profession, and appointed to the Essex Common Pleas bench in 1708, and held that office until his death, in 1720, at the age of seventy-three years.

John Burrill was born in Lynn in October, 1658. He represented that town for many years in the General Court and during ten years was Speaker of the House. He was crown counselor and appointed to the Common Pleas bench in 1720, and died December 10, 1721.

Samuel Browne, son of Judge William Browne already mentioned, was born in Salem, October 8, 1669. He succeeded his father on the Common Pleas bench in 1716, and as associate and chief justice continued on the bench until his death, June 16, 1731.

Bartholomew Gedney was a physician, and probably born in Salem in 1640. He was one of the justices of the Court of Oyer and Terminer, organized in 1692 by Governor Phipps, for the trial of the witches. He was appointed in 1692 judge of probate for Essex County, under the authority assumed by Governor Phipps to delegate probate power vested in him. In the same year he was appointed one of the judges of the Court of Common Pleas. He seems to have mingled military with judicial occupations, and commanded an expedition against the Indians in 1696. He died February 28, 1698–99.

Jonathan Corwin was a native of Salem, born in

November, 1640. In 1692, on the resignation by Nathaniel Saltonstall of his seat on the bench of the Court of Oyer and Terminer, organized by Governor William Phipps for the trial of the witches, he was appointed in his place. After the union of the colonies he was appointed one of the judges of the Court of Common Pleas for Essex County, and in 1715 was appointed to the bench of the Superior Court of Judicature, holding the office until his death, in June, 1718.

WILLIAM HATHORNE came in the "Arbella" with Winthrop in 1630, and first settled in Dorchester. In 1636 he received a grant of lands from Salem, and took up his residence there. He was commissioned speaker of the House, counsel in court, judge and soldier.

Johnson, in his "Wonder-Working Providence," says: "Yet, through the Lord's mercy we still retaine among our Democracy the Godly Captaine William Hathorne, whom the Lord has imbued with a quick comprehension, strong memory and Rhetorick, and volubility of speech, which has caused the people to make use of him often in Public Service, especially when they have had to do with any foreign government." He was the American ancestor of Nathaniel Hawthorne.

JOHN HATHORNE, son of William Hathorne abovementioned, was born in Salem August 4, 1641. Befor the union of the Massachusetts and Plymouth Colonies he was a representative or delegate to the General Court, and one of the assistants. At the accession of William and Mary to the throne, after the deposition of Andros, he was one of the Council assuming the government of the colony. When the Court of Common Pleas for Essex County was established he was appointed one of its judges, and in 1702 was promoted to the bench of the Superior Court of Judicature. While on the bench he was a member of the Council, and, under the direction of Lieutenant-Governor Stoughton, commanded an unsuccessful expedition against the French and Indians on the Penobscot River. He continued on the bench of the Superior Court until his resignation, in 1712, and died on the 10th of May, 1717.

BENJAMIN LYNDE was born in Boston September 22, 1666, and graduated at Harvard in 1686. He studied law at the Temple in London, and was admitted as a barrister before his return to America. Washburn, in his "Judicial History of Massachusetts," says that he was the first regularly educated lawyer ever appointed to the bench of the Superior Court. In 1699, or thereabouts, he removed to Salem, and made that place his residence until his death, on the 28th of January, 1749. He was appointed one of the justices of the Superior Court of Judicature in 1712, and in 1728, on the resignation of Samuel Sewall, was appointed chief justice.

BENJAMIN LYNDE (2d) was the son of the abovenamed Benjamin Lynde, and was born in Salem October 5, 1700. He graduated at Harvard in 1718, and, though not a lawyer, was appointed in 1734 a special justice of the Court of Common Pleas for Suffolk, and in 1739 one of the standing judges of that court for Essex. He was appointed to the bench of the Superior Court in 1745, and on the appointment of Chief Justice Thomas Hutchinson to the office of Governor, in 1771, he was commissioned in his place, resigning his seat in 1772. He was then appointed judge of probate for Essex County, which office he held until his death, October 9, 1781.

RICHARD SALTONSTALL was the son of Richard Saltonstall, of Haverhill, and was born in that town June 14, 1703. He was the grandson of Major Nathaniel Saltonstall, great-grandson of Richard Saltonstall, and great-great-grandson of Sir Richard Saltonstall, one of the original patentees of the colony of Massachusetts Bay. The subject of this sketch graduated at Harvard in 1722, and at the age of thirty-three was appointed a judge of the Superior Court of Judicature. It is not known that he was educated to the law, nor was it in either the days of the Massachusetts Colony or of the province the custom to confine judicial appointments to those of the legal profession. At the age of twenty-three he held a commission as colonel of the provincial troops, and in 1737, while on the bench, he was the commander of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company. He was a man of scholarly habits, of considerable learning, of refined tastes and was conspicuous for the generous hospitality which his ample means enabled him to dispense.

Judge Saltonstall held his seat on the bench until his death, which occurred at his residence in Haverhill, October 20, 1756. He married three wives, the last of whom was a daughter of Elisha Cooke, one of the judges of the Court of Common Pleas for Suffolk County, and granddaughter of Judge Elisha Cooke, one of the judges of the Superior Court of Judicature, who married a daughter of Governor John Leverett. He left three sons—Richard Saltonstall, a graduate of Harvard in 1751, who died in England in 1785; Nathaniel, a physician, living in Haverhill, a graduate of Harvard in 1766, who died in 1815; and Leverett, a captain under Cornwallis, who died in New York in 1782. He left also two daughters, one of whom, Abigail, was the first wife of Colonel George Watson, of Plymouth, and the other the wife of Rev. Moses Badger, of Providence.

CALEB CUSHING, of Salisbury, was made Common Pleas judge in 1759, and after the Revolution, when the Common Pleas Court was reorganized, he was appointed chief justice.

STEPHEN HIGGINSON was born in Salem in 1716. He was appointed judge of the Common Pleas in 1761, and died in the same year.

ANDREW OLIVER, of Salem, was one of the "Mandamus Counsellors." He graduated at Harvard in 1749, and was appointed Common Pleas judge

in 1761, and held office until the Revolution. He died in 1799.

WILLIAM BOURNE was the son of Sylvanus Bourne, of Barnstable, and graduated at Harvard in 1743. He settled in Marblehead, and was made judge of the Court of Common Pleas in 1766, holding his office until his death in August, 1770.

PETER FRYE was born in Andover in 1723, and graduated at Harvard in 1744. He was register of probate and judge of the Common Pleas Court, to which office he was appointed in 1772, and which he held until the Revolution. He died in England in 1820.

WILLIAM BROWNE was born in Salem February 27, 1737, and graduated at Harvard in 1755. In 1764 he was appointed collector of Salem, and in 1770 was made a judge of the Court of Common Pleas for Essex. He was confirmed as judge of the Superior Court of Judicature June 15, 1774, and in the same year was made a "Mandamus Counsellor." He was a Loyalist, and, retiring from the country in 1778, was made Governor of Bermuda in 1781, and died in England February 13, 1802.

SAMUEL SEWALL was born in Bishop-stoke, England, March 28, 1652, and died in Boston January 1, 1730. His grandfather, Henry Sewall, born in 1576, came to New England and lived in Newbury, where he died about 1655. His father, Henry Sewall, came to New England in 1634, and after beginning a settlement in Newbury, returned to England. In 1659 he again came to New England, and after making a permanent settlement in Newbury, was followed by his wife and children in 1661. The son, Samuel, graduated at Harvard in 1671, and after studying divinity preached for a time. On the 28th of February, 1676, he married Hannah, daughter of John Hull, a goldsmith of wealth in Boston, by whom he secured ample means of support without the drudgery of a minister's life. He was made an assistant in 1684, and continued in office until the arrival of Andros. In 1688 he went to England, resuming on his return, in 1689, the office of assistant, and from 1692 to 1725 was a member of the Council. In 1692 he was made a judge of the Court of Oyer and Terminer and subsequently an associate judge of the Superior Court of Judicature, which position he held until 1718, when he was made chief justice. He was also judge of probate for Suffolk, and resigned both offices in 1728 on account of old age. He had been a firm believer in witchcraft, and was one of the judges before whom the alleged witches were tried, but on the 14th of January, 1697, Rev. Samuel Willard read a "bill," as it was called, before his congregation, in which the judge expressed his abhorrence of the acts in which he had been engaged, and penitently asked the forgiveness of God and man.

STEPHEN SEWALL, son of Major Stephen Sewall, was born in Salem December 18, 1704, and graduated at Harvard in 1721. He was for a short time tutor at Harvard, and afterwards taught school in Marblehead. He was appointed associate judge of the Superior Court of Judicature in 1739, and in 1752 was promoted to chief justice. He held his seat until his death, which occurred September 10, 1760.

SAMUEL SEWALL was born in Boston December 11, 1757, and graduated at Harvard in 1776. In 1808 he received the degree of LL.D. from his *alma mater*. He studied law with Francis Dana, of Cambridge, and practiced in Marblehead, which town he represented in the Legislature. He was a member of Congress from 1797 to 1800, and in the latter year was appointed associate justice of the Supreme Judicial Court. In November, 1813, he was made chief justice, and died in Wiscasset, Me., June 8, 1814. He married, December 8, 1781, Abigail, daughter of Dr. Humphrey Devereux, of Marblehead.

JOSIAH WALCOTT, a merchant in Salem, was appointed to the bench of the Essex Court of Common Pleas in 1722. He continued on the bench until his death, February 2, 1729.

TIMOTHY LINALL was born in Salem November 4, 1677, and graduated at Harvard in 1695. He was Speaker of the House of Representatives in 1720, and in 1729 was appointed to the Common Pleas bench. He held his seat until 1754, and died October 25, 1760.

JOHN WAINWRIGHT was a merchant of Ipswich, and graduated at Harvard, in 1709, at the age of eighteen. He was appointed to the Common Pleas bench in 1729, and held his seat until his death, September 1, 1739.

THEOPHILUS BURRILL, of Lynn, was a nephew of Judge John Burrill, and was appointed to the Common Pleas bench in 1733, and died in office in 1737.

THOMAS BERRY, a physician of Ipswich, was born in Boston and graduated at Harvard in 1712. He was judge of probate of Essex County, as well as judge of the Common Pleas Court, to which office he was appointed in 1733, and which he held until his death, in 1756.

BENJAMIN MARSTON was born in Salem, but in his later years lived in Manchester. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Isaac Winslow, of Marshfield, and great-granddaughter of Governor Isaac Winslow, of the "Mayflower." He was sheriff of Essex County, and was appointed to the bench of the Court of Common Pleas in 1737, which office he held until his death, in 1754. He graduated at Harvard in 1689.

JOHN CHOATE, of Ipswich, was judge of probate for Essex County, and chief justice of the Court of Common Pleas. He died while in office, in 1766.

HENRY GIBBS, a native of Watertown, was born in 1709, and graduated at Harvard in 1726. He settled in Salem as a merchant, and was appointed to the Common Pleas bench in 1754, and continued on the bench until his death, in 1759.

JOHN TASKER, of Marblehead, was made Common

Pleas judge in 1755, and died in office November 9, 1761.

Benjamin Pickman, of Salem, was born in 1708, and was a merchant. He was appointed to the Common Pleas bench in 1756, holding his office until 1761. He died August 20, 1774.

William Prescott was born in Pepperell August 19, 1762, and was the son of Colonel William Prescott, who distinguished himself at the battle of Bunker Hill. He graduated at Harvard in 1783, and after teaching school for a time in Brooklyn, Conn., he entered the law-office of Nathan Dane, in Beverly, where he afterwards began to practice. He subsequently removed to Salem and married a daughter of Mr. Hickling, American consul at St. Michael's, from whom the late distinguished historian, William Hickling Prescott, the son of William Prescott, derived his middle name. While in Salem he was a member of both the House and Senate in the State Legislature. He removed to Boston in 1808, and before his removal, in 1806, and afterwards, in 1813, he was offered a seat on the bench of the Supreme Judicial Court, which he declined. He was a member of the Executive Council from Suffolk County, a delegate to the Hartford Convention in 1814, and in 1818 accepted the appointment of judge of the Court of Common Pleas for the county of Suffolk. He died in Boston December 8, 1844, and at his death a meeting of the bar was held in the Supreme Court room, at which Mr. Webster offered resolutions of respect, which were responded to by Chief Justice Shaw, at that time holding the court.

Nathaniel Saltonstall, son of Richard and grandson of Sir Richard Saltonstall, one of the six patentees of the colony of Massachusetts Bay, was born in Ipswich in 1639, and graduated at Harvard in 1659, afterwards settling in Haverhill, on an estate still known as the "Saltonstall seat." He was chosen an assistant in 1679, and on the arrival of President Dudley, in 1685, was offered a place as member of his Council, which he declined. He took an active part in deposing Andros, and under the charter of 1692 was appointed one of His Majesty's Council. At the breaking out of the witchcraft delusion, Governor William Phipps, without authority of law, established a special Court of Oyer and Terminer to try the witches, and by commissions dated June 2, 1692, appointed Wm. Stoughton chief justice, and Nathaniel Saltonstall, John Richards, Bartholomew Gedney, Wait Winthrop, Samuel Sewall and Peter Sergeant associate justices.

Judge Saltonstall, like many other judges of the time, was not bred to the law, but he was a man of strong mind and sound sense, and not easily imbued with the bigotry and fanaticism prevailing at the time. He left the bench evidently disgusted with the work it was called on to perform, his place being taken by Jonathan Corwin. He married a daughter of Rev. John Ward, of Haverhill, and died May 21, 1707, leaving three sons,—Gurdon, the Governor of Connecticut; Richard, the father of Richard, whose sketch is given below; and Nathaniel, who graduated at Harvard in 1695, and died young.

James Cushing Merrill was the son of Rev. Giles Merrill and Lucy (Cushing) Merrill, and was born in Haverhill September 27, 1784. He married Anna, daughter of Dr. Nathaniel Saltonstall, of Haverhill, and died in Boston October 4, 1853. He fitted for college at Exeter and graduated at Harvard in 1807. He studied law with John Varnum, of Haverhill, and was admitted to the bar in 1812 at the September term of the Circuit Court of Common Pleas, held at Salem. He not long after removed to Boston, where he continued to reside until his death. For many years he was a justice on the bench of the Police Court of Boston, resigning in 1852 on account of feeble health. Previous to his appointment to the bench he was a member of the Senate and House of the State Legislature. He was a scholar as well as a jurist, and his proficiency in Greek literature was recognized by his *alma mater* by his continuance for thirty years on its examining committee for Greek.

Joseph Gilbert Waters was born in Salem July 5, 1796, and was the son of Captain Joseph and Mary (Dean) Waters. He graduated at Harvard in 1816, and after completing his law studies in the office of John Pickering, was admitted to the bar at Salem at the October term of the Supreme Judicial Court in 1821. In 1818 he went to Mississippi, where he spent several years, and returned to Salem, where for a short time he was the editor of the Salem *Observer*. In 1825 he married Eliza Greenleaf, daughter of Captain Penn Townsend. He was appointed special justice of the Police Court in Salem in 1831, and afterwards held the office of standing justice of the same court from 1842 until 1874. In 1835 he was a member of the State Senate, and died in 1878.

Benjamin Merrill was born in Conway, New Hampshire, in 1784, and fitting for college at Exeter, graduated at Harvard in 1804. He studied law with Mr. Stedman, of Lancaster, and was admitted to the bar in Worcester County. Removing to Lynn in 1808 to enter into practice, he was required under the court rules to study one year within the county, and entered the office of Samuel Putnam, whose partner he afterwards became. He received the degree of LL.D. from Harvard in 1845, and died at Salem July 30, 1847, at the age of sixty-three. When he settled in Lynn he was the first lawyer who had ever opened an office in the town, and after a few months' residence there, it is said that he was told that the presence of a lawyer would be prejudicial to the interests of the community, and that he was requested to leave.

Joseph Perkins was born in Essex July 8, 1772, and graduated at Harvard in 1794. In 1801 he was appointed county attorney, and died in Salem February 28, 1803.

Asahel Huntington was born in Topsfield July 23, 1798, and graduated at Yale in 1819. He was county and district attorney, clerk of the courts and twice representative from Salem to the General Court. In 1853 he was mayor of that city, and died September 5, 1870.

Theophilus Parsons.—Among the eminent lawyers of the last century, Chief Justice Theophilus Parsons stands pre-eminent, and to his autobiography by his son, Theophilus Parsons, we are indebted for this sketch of his life as a lawyer, statesman and judge. His judicial knowledge and legal acumen won for him the title of "giant of the law," and his intimate knowledge of the structure of the Greek language, and acquaintance with its literature, in which he delighted, and to which he turned for recreation from his legal duties, caused Mr. Luzac, the then Professor of Greek in the University of Leyden, to say of Mr. Parsons, that he should be called "The giant of Greek criticism."

Chief Justice Theophilus Parsons was born in Byfield, Massachusetts, 1750, and his father, Rev. Moses Parsons, was a settled minister in that place. His first youth was passed at Dunmer Academy, of Byfield, under the Rev. Mr. Moody, and he entered Harvard College in 1765. The minister's stipend was small, and his family large, so that when the young Theophilus was ready to enter college pecuniary difficulties stood in his way. So general, however, was the accepted idea, that his natural ability promised great things, great exertions were made to send him; one of the maid servants offered to give him a year's salary, twelve pounds, to help him. This offer was of course refused, but the assistance proffered by friends and parishioners was gladly accepted. Theophilus was an insatiable student, but after his lessons were learned would turn for recreation, to a novel or self-imposed mathematical problem with equal relish, which practice he followed in after years, adding a devotion to scientific studies. He graduated in 1769, and went to Portland, Maine, then called Falmouth, where he taught a grammar school; when not occupied with his school duties, he studied in the office of the eminent lawyer, Judge Theophilus Bradbury. Here he applied for admission to the bar. The committee for examination to whom he referred himself, construed the rule that three years of preparatory study, meant three years of consecutive study, and that his employment of school-teaching prevented that from being so considered. However, the committee yielded to his solicitations, and his examination proved so entirely satisfactory, he was admitted to practice in Falmouth. This was in 1774.

The following year Admiral Graves, commander of the British squadron in Boston Bay, despatched some ships of war to Falmouth with orders to destroy it, and it was almost totally burned. Mr. Parsons then returned to his home, greatly disappointed and cast down; but he found at his father's house, Judge Trowbridge, and his learned help and counsel was as eagerly sought and received by Mr. Parsons as he was ready to give it. The latter remained in Byfield a considerable time, and when he found that Mr. Parsons was to be his companion and student, he ordered thither all his library, which was not only the best, but probably the only thoroughly good one, then in New England.

He found in Mr. Parsons an intelligent student, of devoted industry prepared by previous habits, as well as by previous knowledge, to profit by this golden opportunity.

Edmund Trowbridge died in Cambridge, in 1793, at the age of ninety-four, and during half of his long life, he was, by common consent, regarded as the most learned lawyer of New England. In the seventh volume of the Massachusetts Reports (page 20), Mr. Parsons speaks of his excellence as a common-law lawyer, and says: "The late Judge Trowbridge was an excellent common-law lawyer, of whose friendly assistance in my early professional studies I cherish the most grateful remembrance," and Chancellor Kent, in his commentaries calls him "the oracle of the common-law of New England."

About the time of the Declaration of Independence the formation of a Constitution became a matter of much moment to many of the colonies which had just become States. In Massachusetts the system of government went on with few alterations, although the charter had lost all force. In June, 1776, it was proposed in the general court to prepare a form of government, or constitution,—to be presented to the people. In 1778, a constitution was agreed upon by the General Court, and offered to the people, but was rejected by them by a vote of five to one. These were the reasons for its rejection:

The draft was imperfect, evidently drawn up without due care and consideration; the people preferred that it should be made by a committee chosen for that express purpose and not by the Legislature. A Bill of Rights, clearly defining to the people what were their inalienable rights, was not prefixed, and lastly, the constitution so carefully avoided a strong government, the power of the executive was a mere cipher. It was this last objection which weighed most with many people.

The conflict for the adoption or rejection of the constitution seemed to be the early manifestation that a new question was brought before the minds of men which threatened, or seemed to threaten, the disruption of civil society, and has continued to this day to divide, not politicians only, but the whole people; and will ever do so. This question is, which shall prevail of the two great parties, into one or the other of which every man is forced by nature, habit, taste, education or circumstances. These are the parties of progress and conservatism; of those who love the "largest liberty" with more regard to its quantity than its quality, and those who desire only the best



Theop. Parsons

liberty, and dread, as the greatest of evils, its corruption into license. To all men of this last class the constitution offered to the people was wholly worthless; and to this large party Mr. Parsons belonged. His home was in Essex County, and there he was sustained by the warm sympathy of excellent men, and perhaps, young as he was, strengthened their love of order or their fear of anarchy. A meeting of these men took place in Essex County, in 1778, in Newburyport; a committee was appointed and then it adjourned to Ipswich; and there it met in the last week of April of that year, when a term of the Supreme Judicial Court was held there. At this adjourned meeting a pamphlet was presented by the committee, approved and adopted by it and by its order published.

It contained eighteen distinct articles, setting forth the leading objections to the Constitution proposed. Its title was: "The result of the Convention of Delegates holden at Ipswich, in the County of Essex, who were deputed to take into consideration the Constitution and form of government proposed by the Convention of the State of Massachusetts Bay." It was called the "E-sex Result." It went very fully into the consideration of the objects and principles which should be regarded in the formation of a constitution; it not only made the rejection of the proposed constitution far more decisive, but exerted an important influence on the structure of that Constitution which was soon after framed and adopted by the people.

Mr. Parsons wrote this pamphlet, which is now very rare, but is reprinted in the Appendix to his autobiography. The proof that he wrote it lies in the assertion of Chief Justice Parker, who says in his address to the grand jury after Judge Parsons' death: "The Report was undoubtedly his, though he was probably aided by others, at least, with their advice." This elaborate Report is called "The Essex Result." No doubt, he obtained all the assistance, by advice and suggestion, which could be rendered to him in a matter of this importance by the wise men with whom he acted. But he wrote every word of it, and this, perhaps, proved that the young man was already recognized by them, who were certainly among the ablest and most venerable men of the county, as one with whose work they were satisfied, and one whom they could trust to speak for them. Among the most distinguished peculiarities of the actual institutions and government of this country is the singular blending of the progressive and conservative principles in such a way that they do not so much neutralize each other as promote each other's activity, while they compensate for each other. While our fathers were making history, there were some whose love for liberty had degenerated into a love of license, and whose idea of happiness was to run riot through the fields of life; they balanced and checked and were balanced and checked by the stern lovers of order, who appeared, in their extremity of opinion, to think that the first use of legs is to wear fetters, while walking is but a secondary and conditional purpose. Happily, there were wise men who were able to bring these extremes into compromise, and, by means of compromise, into union. The "Essex Result" was regarded as a very early encounter with the great question then dawning upon this country and upon the world. It was an earnest endeavor to discover and declare how progress and conservatism, liberty and order, might be so adjusted in human institutions, that freedom should be secure, and peace and happiness be the children of freedom.

The Old Confederation of the United States was formed November 15, 1777, in the midst of war and danger and effort; and while these lasted their pressure kept it together. But with the relaxation of peace its debility and insufficiency became apparent. In May, therefore, 1787, a convention of delegates from the states assembled at Philadelphia for the purpose of forming a Federal Constitution, and at once the new parties of the country—the Liberty party and the Government party—started into full life.

The two antagonistic principles entered into immediate, constant and energetic conflict; and the good sense and caution and love of peace, and the profound conviction that union would be impossible if not then consummated, and that without union there must be destruction—all these were in perpetual requisition, and were only able to reconcile these hostile sentiments and principles so far as to produce the Constitution, which was throughout, and in almost every paragraph and every provision, a compromise. After the Constitution was framed, the man who most loved peace and union labored strenuously to procure for it the signatures of all the delegates, that it might go to the people with the advantage of their unanimous consent. And all did sign but three—Randolph and Mason, of Virginia, and Elbridge Gerry, of Massachusetts, afterwards governor of the State. The Constitution contained a provision that it should go into effect as soon as nine states should accept it. It was adopted by the Convention that framed it on the 17th of September, 1787; then by Delaware, December 7, 1787; by Pennsylvania, December 12, 1787; by New Jersey, December 18, 1787; by Georgia, January 2, 1788; and by Connecticut, January 9, 1788. Then came the question whether the Commonwealth of Massachusetts should accept it. It was feared that Massachusetts would be hostile, and that her example would operate with much power upon New York, Maryland and Virginia for good or for evil. January 9, 1788, the convention of delegates from the towns of Massachusetts assembled in Boston to determine whether the Constitution should be adopted or rejected by that State. The debates of this convention were republished by the Legislature of Mas-

sachusetts in 1856. The editorial care of this volume was entrusted to Messrs. Bradford K. Pierce and Charles Hale. In their preface these gentlemen say: "The proceedings of the Convention were of great importance, and were so regarded throughout the country at that time. It is quite certain that, if Massachusetts had refused her assent to the Constitution of the United States, that well-devised scheme of government, the careful work of the patriots and statesmen of the last century, under which the nation has enjoyed so large a degree of prosperity, would have failed."

John Hancock and Samuel Adams were two of the most important members of the convention. Both were doubtful, but it was generally supposed that while they were not friendly to each other, they agreed in a decided leaning against the Constitution. General Knox, after the Constitution was adopted, writes to Washington as follows: "The opposition has not arisen from a consideration of the merits or demerits of the thing itself, as a political machine, but from a deadly principle levelled at the existence of all government whatever. . . . It is a singular circumstance that, in Massachusetts, the property, the ability and the virtue of the State are almost solely in favor of the Constitution. . . ." The Massachusetts convention was of the opinion that certain amendments and alterations in the Constitution would remove the fears and quiet the apprehensions of the people of the commonwealth and more effectually guard against an undue administration of the Federal Government. These amendments were often called in the histories of the times, the "Conciliatory Resolutions," and they were eminently so. It was their purpose to reconcile conflicting opinions and to procure the adoption of the Constitution. Samuel Adams at once arose and declared himself satisfied with the Constitution with these amendments, and seconded them, and Hancock withdrew his opposition. They were referred to a committee and reported with little change. After some discussion, in which one or two of the opponents of the Constitution spoke of the amendments as reconciling them to it, the Constitution was adopted by a vote of one hundred and eighty-seven yeas to one hundred and sixty-eight nays. Mr. Parsons wrote these amendments, and it is always said that these "Conciliatory Resolutions" saved the country.

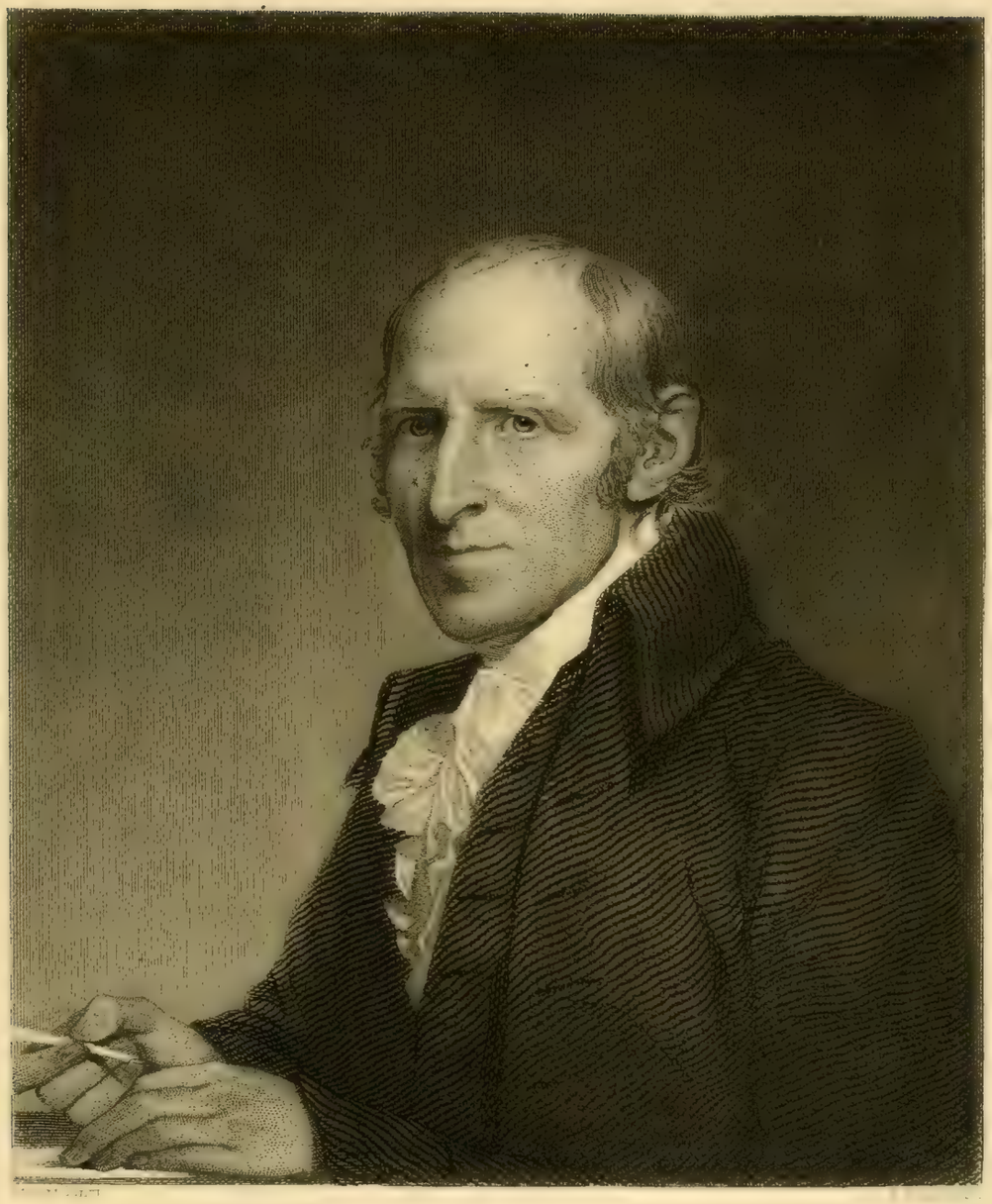
Mr. Parsons was now living with his wife in Newburyport in Green Street. He married Elizabeth Greenlief, daughter of Judge Greenlief, and he used to say that the suit in which he won his wife was worth all the others he ever gained. In 1800 he removed to Boston. When he left Newburyport for Boston, gentlemen in the town gave him a farewell dinner, at which Robert Treat Paine gave him an enthusiastic toast: "Theophilus Parsons, the oracle of law, the pillar of politics, the bulwark of government." To which Mr. Parsons replied: "The town of Newburyport; may the blessing of Heaven rest upon it as long as its shores are washed by the Merrimac." I will pause here to mention a trait of character in which he did not stand alone in his profession. He made it an imperative rule, from which he never swerved during his professional career, never to make any charge against or accept any fee from *a widow* or *a minister of the gospel.*

In 1806 Chief Justice Dana resigned on account of the infirmities of age, and Mr. Parsons was invited to become the Chief-Justice, which office he accepted and held until his death, which occurred in 1813.

The last words of a distinguished man are often worthy of commemoration, for they not only frequently witness that his thoughts are occupied with the duties of his profession, but sometimes seem to bear a certain relation to the life upon which he is about to enter. Judge Parsons' were: "Gentlemen of the jury, the case is closed and in your hands. You will please retire and agree upon your verdict." Judge Parsons always maintained that the authenticity of the gospels was proven by the fact of their unanimity in all essentials and disagreement in unessential details. After death his face wore an expression of triumph. It was that which he might have worn when he exhibited to a jury indisputable evidence of some great fact which he had asserted and others had denied. The expression was as if he said in words like these: "See there the proof. I have believed; and when I could not believe I have hoped; and throngh all objection, uncertainty and despondency I have kept my belief and my hope; and now there is the proof that I was right."

Benjamin Pickman, the son of Benjamin and Mary (Tappan) Pickman, was born at Salem September 30, 1763, and married, October 20, 1789, Anstiss, daughter of Elias Hasket and Elizabeth (Crowninshield) Derby. He studied law with Theophilus Parsons at Newberyport, and settled permanently at Salem. He was at various times Representative and Senator in the State Legislature, a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1820, a member of the Executive Council, and from 1809 to 1811 a member of the national House of Representatives. He died at Salem August 16, 1843.

Timothy Pickering was born in Salem July 17, 1745, and was admitted to the bar in 1768. He was a graduate of Harvard in 1763, and received a degree from New Jersey College in 1798. He commanded a regiment in the Revolution, was adjutant-general of the army in 1777, and was quartermaster-general in 1780. After the war he settled in Pennsylvania, and between 1791 and 1800 was Postmaster-General, Secretary of War and Secretary of State. He returned to Salem in 1801, was chief justice of the Essex County Court of Common Pleas, United States Senator from 1803 to 1811, and a Representative in Congress from 1815 to 1817. He died in Salem January 29, 1829.



Timothy Pickering.

JOHN PICKERING was born in Salem February 17, 1777. He was a son of Colonel Timothy Pickering, and graduated at Harvard in 1796. After several years' residence in Europe, he returned to Salem in 1801, and was admitted to the Essex bar in 1806. In 1827 he removed to Boston, and in 1829 was appointed city solicitor, and held that office until his death, at Boston, May 5, 1846. He was equally distinguished as a lawyer and a scholar, achieving in the latter capacity, however, his chief fame. His Greek and English Lexicon, his studies and publications in philology, his proficiency in the languages, with more than twenty of which he was familiar, including Hebrew, Chinese and the Indian languages of America, made him an authority universally respected, and whenever appealed to, considered decisive. He received the degree of LL.D. from Bowdoin College in 1822, and from his *alma mater* in 1835.

THEOPHILUS BRADBURY, a descendant from Thomas Bradbury, of Salisbury, was born in Newbury November 13, 1739. He graduated at Harvard in 1757, and for a time taught a grammar school in Falmouth (now Portland) Me., where he afterwards opened a law-office and practiced law from May, 1761, to 1779. He then removed to Newbury, where he resided until his death, September 6, 1803. He was at various times Senator and Representative in the State Legislature, a member of Congress from 1795 to 1797, and in the latter year was appointed associate justice of the Supreme Judicial Court.

NATHAN DANE was born at Ipswich, in the parish then called the "Hamlet," now the town of Hamilton, on the 29th of December, 1752. He was descended from John Dane, of Berkhamstead, England, who came to New England before 1641, and died at Roxbury in 1658. The American ancestor, by a first wife, whose name is unknown, had John, probably born in Berkhamstead about 1612; Elizabeth, who married James Howard; Francis, born about 1616, who had three wives, Elizabeth Ingalls, Mary Thomas and Hannah Abbot. The son John had a first wife, Eleanor Clark, and a second named Alice. His children were John and Philemon, who married Mary Thompson and Ruth Converse. He died in Ipswich September 29, 1684. His son, John, married Abigail Warren and had John; Daniel; Susan, born March, 1685–86; Nathaniel, born June, 1691; Abigail; Rebecca; and Elizabeth. Daniel married (1st) Lydia Day, and (2d) Mary Annable, and had Daniel, born about 1716; John, about 1719; Mary, about 1721; Lydia, about 1725; and Nathan, about 1727. His son Daniel, born in Ipswich, probably in 1716, married, in 1739, Abigail Burnham, and was the father of the subject of this sketch. He worked on his father's farm until he was of age, when he prepared himself for college, and entered Harvard with the class which graduated in 1778. He then taught school at Beverly, pursuing at the same time his law studies in the office of Judge Wetmore, of Salem. In 1782 he began the practice of law in Beverly and made that town his residence until his death, February 15, 1835. He was a member of the Massachusetts House of Representatives from 1782 to 1785, of Congress from 1785 to 1787 and for five years, between 1790 and 1798, a member of the Massachusetts Senate. He was a member of the Electoral College in 1812, and a member of the State Constitutional Convention in 1820. In 1794 he was appointed justice of the Court of Common Pleas for Essex County, but resigned his place almost immediately after its acceptance. In 1814 he was a member of the Hartford Convention.

Mr. Dane was one of the founders of the Massachusetts Temperance Society, and for several years its president. He was a member of the Massachusetts and Essex Historical Societies, and of the American Antiquarian Society, and received the degree of LL.D. from Harvard in 1816. In 1829 he founded, in Harvard University, the law professorship that bears his name, and at a later date was a liberal contributor for the erection of the Dane Law College. He was a diligent student and his authorship of "A General Abridgment and Digest of American Law" gave him a fame in the profession which time has not dimmed. As a statesman, the identification of his name with the ordinance of 1787 for the government of the territory northwest of the Ohio, drafted by him, will give him a place in history as long as the institution of slavery, whose spread and power that ordinance checked, has a record in the annals of the land.

So long, too, as the famous speech of Mr. Webster in reply to Robert Young Hayne, in the United States Senate, January 26 and 27, 1830, shall be read, Mr. Dane will be kept in memory by the eulogy which Mr. Webster uttered in his splendid effort. He said:

"In the course of my observations the other day, Mr. President, I paid a passing tribute of respect to a very worthy man, Mr. Dane, of Massachusetts. It so happens that he drew the ordinance of 1787 for the government of the northwest territory. A man of so much ability and so little pretence, of so great a capacity to do good and so unmixed a disposition to do it for its own sake, a gentleman who had acted an important part forty years ago in a measure the influence of what is still deeply felt in the very matter which was the subject of debate, might, I thought, receive from me a commendatory recognition. But the honorable Senator was inclined to be facetious on the subject. He was rather disposed to make it matter of ridicule that I had introduced into the debate the name of one Nathan Dane, of whom he assures us he had never before heard. Sir, if the honorable member had never before heard of Mr. Dane, I am sorry for it. It shows him less acquainted with the public men of the country than I had supposed. Let me tell him, however, that a sneer from him at the mention of the name of Mr. Dane is in bad taste. It may well be a high mark of ambition, sir, either with the honorable gentleman or myself, to accomplish as much to make our names known to advantage and remembered with gratitude as Mr. Dane has accomplished."

Those readers of this imperfect sketch of Mr. Dane who may wish to know what he said himself concerning his connection with the ordinance of 1787, are referred to an interesting letter from him to Daniel Webster dated Beverly, March 26, 1830, which may be found in the "Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society from 1867 to 1869," page 475.

WILLIAM WETMORE was born in Connecticut in

1749, and graduated at Harvard in 1770. He was admitted to the bar in 1780, and began to practice in Salem. After a few years, having property in Maine, which came to him through his wife, who was a Waldo, he removed to Hancock County, where for some years he held the office of judge of probate. In 1804 he removed to Boston, where he held a seat on the bench of the Circuit Court of Common Pleas, and died in 1830. The wife of Judge Joseph Story was a daughter of Judge Wetmore.

DANIEL FARNHAM was born in York, Me., in 1719, and was the son of Daniel Farnham, a native of Andover, Mass. He was fitted for college by Rev. Samuel Moody, of York, and graduated at Harvard in 1739. He studied law with Edmund Trowbridge, of Cambridge, who was considered the best lawyer of his time, and who, in 1759, became chief justice of the Superior Court of Judicature. Only a year after leaving college, in July, 1740, he married Sybil Angier, daughter of Rev. Samuel Angier, of Watertown, and granddaughter of Uriah Oakes, the fourth president of Harvard College. Soon after marriage Mr. Farnham took up his permanent residence in Newburyport, and began practice. At that time there was no lawyer east of Salem in Essex County, and the field was one in which a man of less ability would have won success. But Mr. Farnham was a man not only of learning, but of indomitable energy and activity, and soon stood in the front rank at the Essex bar. In 1768 he was one of five barristers in Essex County, the others being Wm. Pynchon, John Chipman, Nathaniel Peaselee Sargent and John Lowell. The house which he built and occupied was a fine specimen of that style of domestic architecture which Harrison, the English architect, who came to this country with Bishop Berkely, inspired, and which was freely adopted in Salem, Marblehead, Portsmouth and Newburyport. The house stood where the Kelly School-house now stands, and is remembered by many of the present generation.

Mr. Farnham, or, as he is better known, Colonel Farnham, having received a commission from Governor Bernard in 1769 as lieutenant-colonel of the Essex Regiment, continued in active and successful practice until the Revolution. His attachment to the King was strong, and after all hope of a peaceable adjustment of the controversy with Great Britain was abandoned, though he had taken an active part in opposing the Stamp Act and other measures of the home government, he remained a persistent, earnest and outspoken adherent of the crown. He was the only one in Newburyport who had the courage to avow loyal sentiments, and after his death, which occurred in 1776, it was the boast of the town that it had been purified. There is some ground for the suspicion that his death was the result of abusive treatment at the hands of the patriots. Dr. Samuel Peters, in a letter dated June 19, 1783, says: "Messerve (collector of Portsmouth) and Porter, a lawyer of Salem, agree that there never was known to be in Newburyport more than four loyal subjects, one of whom went off to Scotland, Colonel Farnham was killed by the rebels, and Mr. Bass and Dr. Jones gave satisfaction to the rebels and remained there."

Though the patriotic citizens of Newburyport looked upon the death of Colonel Farnham as a purifying event, it is certain that during his long residence in that town, up to the Revolutionary period, he was an honored lawyer and citizen, prominent in every good work, and a means of purification to all who came within the sphere of his example and influence. In his domestic relations he was a loving husband and a tender father. After his death the copy of a prayer which was found in his pocket-book, and which he was in the daily habit of repeating, shows him to have been a devout and faithful Christian.

WILLIAM PYNCHON was born in Springfield in 1725, and graduated at Harvard in 1743. In 1745 he removed to Salem, where he studied law with Stephen Sewall, one of the judges of the Superior Court of Judicature. He died in Salem in March, 1789.

JOHN CHIPMAN was the son of Rev. John Chipman, of Marblehead, and graduated at Harvard in 1738. He died in Falmouth (now Portland) in July, 1768.

NATHANIEL PEASELEE SARGENT was born in Methuen November 2, 1731, and graduated at Harvard in 1750. He practiced law in Haverhill. He was the son of Rev. Christopher Sargent, of Methuen. In 1776 he was appointed judge of the Superior Court of Judicature, and in 1789 chief justice of that court, holding the place until his death, in October, 1791.

JOHN LOWELL, the last of the five Essex County barristers in 1768, was not long identified with his native county. He was born in Newbury in 1743, and graduated at Harvard in 1760, receiving the degree of LL.D. in 1792. He studied law in Boston in the office of Oxenbridge Thacher, and after a short term of practice in Newburyport removed to Boston, and finally to Roxbury, where he died in May, 1802. In 1781 he was chosen a member of Congress, and in 1782 was appointed one of the three judges of the Court of Appeals from the Court of Admiralty. In 1789 he was appointed judge of the United States District Court, and in 1801 was made chief justice of the First Circuit of the United States Court, and held the office until the law establishing the court was repealed, in 1802.

NATHANIEL ROPES was born in Salem May 20, 1726, and graduated at Harvard in 1745. In 1766 he was appointed judge of probate for Essex, and chief justice of the Court of Common Pleas for the same county. He lived in Salem until his death, which occurred March 19, 1774.

TRISTRAM DALTON, son of Michael Dalton, was born in Newburyport May 28, 1738, and graduated at



Harvard in 1755. He studied law in Salem and married a daughter of Robert Hooper, of Marblehead. He was a representative from Newburyport and Speaker of the Massachusetts House of Representatives, and a member of the State Senate. With Caleb Strong, he represented Massachusetts in the United States Senate from 1789 to 1791 in the first Congress after the adoption of the Constitution. He invested largely in property at Washington, and removed to that city, but eventually sustained serious losses. He was appointed, in 1815, surveyor of the ports of Boston and Charlestown, and died in Boston May 30, 1817. The house in which he lived in Newburyport is still standing on State Street, a gambrel-roof house, a little above the Public Library, on the opposite side of the street.

Octavius Pickering, son of Colonel Timothy Pickering, was born in Wyoming, Pa., September 2, 1792, during the temporary residence of his father in that place. His father returned to Salem, his native town, in 1801, and Octavius was a Salem youth of fourteen years when he entered Harvard, in 1806. He was admitted to the bar at Salem at the October term of the Circuit Court of Common Pleas in 1813, but very soon removed to Boston, where he was admitted to the Suffolk bar March 6, 1816. From that time until his death, October 29, 1868, he was no longer identified with Essex County. He published, in 1867, the life of his father, and engaged in other literary works, but his twenty-four volumes of Massachusetts decisions, known as "Pickering's Reports," are his best title to a lasting remembrance.

John Gallison was born in Marblehead in October, 1788, and graduated at Harvard in 1807. He was admitted to the bar at Salem in 1810, at the September term of Court of Common Pleas. After a short practice in Marblehead he removed to Boston, where he published, in 1807, two volumes of Circuit Court reports and engaged in literary work. He died December 25, 1820.

Hon. Daniel Appleton White, for thirty-eight years judge of probate for Essex County, was born in Methuen, on ground now at the heart of the present city of Lawrence, June 7, 1776. He was the sixth son and eleventh child of John White, a gentleman farmer of that day, and was descended in the sixth generation from William White, one of the founders of Newbury and, in 1640, one of the original grantees of Haverhill, his mother being Elizabeth, daughter of Joseph Haynes. It was a happy country home of the best class in which his early years were passed, abounding in comfort, plenty, intelligence and affection, with high-minded parents and a large family of brothers and sisters united by ties of unusual strength, and amid surroundings of natural beauty, on a noble farm of nearly three hundred acres, bounded by the Merrimac and the Spicket Rivers. As in most New England families, the boy of less physical strength and of a studious bent was selected by these qualities for an education, and he entered the academy at Atkinson, N. H., in June, 1792, and Harvard College in the freshman class of 1793, having completed his preparation in seven and a half months of actual study of from fourteen to sixteen hours a day. Although Cambridge has reared a host of loyal students, the college has rarely trained so devoted a son as he proved to be. Learning was, indeed, at a low ebb there in the last years of the eighteenth century, the apparatus of knowledge small and the opportunities were scanty, and in morals and religion the unsettling effect of the French Revolution was marked; but it was a place to train a strong character and to knit worthy friendships. In a class of exceptional talent, young White graduated the first scholar, in 1797, and, after two years spent in teaching the public grammar-school in Medford, in August, 1799, returned to Cambridge as tutor in Latin, a position then of great responsibility and influence, in which he was enabled to be of much service to the college. Perhaps the four years thus occupied were the happiest part of his life, with his marked academic tastes and aptitudes. In September, 1803, however, resigning his tutorship, he removed to Salem to complete, in the office of Mr. (afterwards Judge) Samuel Putnam, the studies for the bar, which he had been pursuing while tutor. Here, with Mr. John Pickering, eminent later as a philological scholar, he prepared an edition of Sallust, "the first edition of an ancient classic ever published in the United States which was not a professed re-impression of some former and foreign edition," the sheets of which were unfortunately destroyed by fire on the eve of publication, in 1805. Having been admitted to the bar in June, 1804, Mr. White began the practice of his profession in Newburyport with success and distinction as a lawyer and citizen, residing in that town for thirteen years. Of strong political convictions as a Federalist, he became prominent in that party in Massachusetts during the administrations of Jefferson and Madison, being a member of the State Senate from 1810 to 1815, and taking a leading part in public affairs, and in November, 1814, being nominated for Congress as the Federal candidate in the Essex North District, he was elected by a nearly unanimous vote, the expression of a constituency not of his own party alone of the general respect and trust in which he was held. At this juncture, on the threshold of a conspicuous public career, the offer by Governor Strong of the office of judge of probate for the county of Essex altered the course of his life. He accepted this position, and resigned his commission as Representative in the spring of 1815, against the judgment of many friends, who felt that he did not estimate his qualifications for high public service at their full worth; but he was led to this decision by considerations such as appealed with peculiar force to a lofty and unworldly character. Devoted to the principles of his party, he yet could not

be its slave; his strong taste for literary studies and for a life of scholarly freedom from engrossing professional cares found an opportunity for satisfaction; but the controlling motive with him was due to the bereavement of his home. He had married Mrs. Mary Van Schalkwyck, daughter of Dr. Josiah Wilder, of Lancaster, May 24, 1807, whose early death, June 29, 1811, had left him with two young daughters, a care and duty which the life of a public man at Washington would have compelled him to sacrifice. In giving up the opportunity of a conspicuous public career he did not, however, turn aside from a large sphere of honorable service. The office of judge of probate, when held for the length of time during which Judge White exercised its duties, brings its holder into important relations with the whole community, and enables him to stand to the widow and the orphan for the justice of the commonwealth in their hour of need. Moreover, a special reason for the appointment of a judge of such weight of character and high reputation had been the fact that the methods of several of the probate courts, and particularly that of Essex County, needed revision and reform. To this task Judge White addressed himself with results which made the court a model of administration, which was followed in the other probate courts of the State. Still, the necessary changes which he introduced led to serious misunderstandings for a time in a public accustomed to loose and easy-going methods, and the feeling culminated in 1821 in a memorial addressed to the Legislature by sundry persons in complaint against the judge and the register of probate in Essex County. His former political opponents found this a favorable occasion of attack, and the special committee appointed by the House of Representatives held an *ex parte* investigation, without giving the officers who were thus assailed any opportunity to vindicate their action. Yet the committee were compelled to do so in their own report, unanimously adopted by the Legislature, which stated that the changes which had been introduced were "some of them expressly required by different statutes, others by the Supreme Court adjudged to be necessary, and, as far as they could find, all of them useful." Judge White took this occasion to publish, in 1822, a careful historical account of the course of probate law and procedure from the earliest times in this commonwealth, with an account of the former practice in Essex County and the changes which had been introduced. This little work, entitled "A View of the Jurisdiction and Proceedings of the Courts of Probate in Massachusetts, with Particular Reference to the County of Essex," and which concluded with a dignified and just animadversion upon the mode in which the legislative investigation had been conducted, became an authority on the subject. The reforms which he had introduced were adopted in the courts of other counties, while fixed salaries were substituted for fees. When Judge White resigned his office, July 1, 1853, in his seventy-eighth year, but with his physical and mental powers unabated, nearly every estate in the county had passed under his care, and his fidelity and justice in the administration of his duties had been crowned with universal respect and honor. The opportunities of leisure which his judicial position afforded enabled him to meet the demands for those services which naturally devolve on a public-spirited citizen holding such a position in the community. He was one of the founders of the Essex County Lyceum, the pioneer in the system of public lectures which promised and, for a time, fulfilled the promise to be potent among the educational and moral influences of the time, being its president, and also the first president of the Salem Lyceum. Of the Essex Institute he was president from its formation, in 1848, until his death. Addresses on public occasions, as at the dedication of Harmony Grove Cemetery, and the eulogies on Dr. Bowditch, in Salem, and Hon. John Pickering, in Boston, were given by him. Harvard College he served with unwearied devotion for many years in the board of overseers and on various committees, receiving from the university in 1843 the honorary degree of LL.D., and in 1844 delivering the address before its Association of Alumni. But his delight was in his noble library, rich especially in the ancient classics, historical works and English *belles-lettres*, where his happiest hours were spent in his favorite studies. These bore fruit especially in his writings concerning theological subjects and congregational polity. His early bent had been to the profession of the Christian ministry, from which he had been deterred by the difference of his convictions from those of his honored parents, who were earnest members of the Baptist communion, while his own sympathies were with the liberal Christian movement, which took form in the Unitarian denomination, in which he became one of the most prominent laymen; and his special interest in studies more congenial to the sacred profession than to that of the law never waned. In the earnest debate between the two branches of the Congregational body he took part with his pen, publishing in 1832 an elaborate work, marked by much learning, entitled "Correspondence Between the First Church and the Tabernacle Church, in Salem, in which the Duties of Churches are Discussed, and the Rights of Conscience Vindicated," and the studies of many years were gathered up by him in his old age in his volume on "New England Congregationalism in its Origin and Purity," published in 1861, just before his death. In these studious labors, however, he was no recluse, but his fine old mansion was the seat of a large and wide hospitality to friends and kindred and strangers. This had become his home when, after his removal to Salem, he had married, August 1, 1819, Mrs. Eliza Wetmore, daughter of William Orne, Esq., a prominent merchant, whose early death, March 27, 1821, again

darkened his domestic happiness. His subsequent marriage, January 22, 1824, to Mrs. Ruth Rogers, daughter of Joseph Hurd, Esq., of Charlestown, placed once more at the head of his home a refined and charming lady, who shared and graced its hospitalities, surviving him to die November 28, 1874, at the age of more than ninety years.

In such serene and happy occupations the closing years of Judge White's life were spent after the resignation of his judicial office, which he continued able to have filled, if he had so chosen, to his death, March 30, 1861, near the close of his eighty-fifth year, with undimmed powers of body and mind, and with a spirit ever young. His brethren of the Essex bar expressed the feeling of the community in resolutions adopted at a meeting called for the purpose after the death of Chief Justice Shaw and of Judge White, which recorded their "appreciation of" his "fine intellectual and moral traits, of that elegant and varied scholarship, and that thorough and exact learning of which a brilliant university career gave promise, and which the experience of so long a life did not disappoint; of his fidelity to his professional and judicial duties; of the services which he has rendered to the probate law by his faithful administration and his published treatise; of the pure and simple course of his daily life; of the unswerving integrity, the exquisite religious sensibility, the large philanthropy and the unbounded and generous sympathy for all around him, which ennobled his life, even to its extremest close," and commemorating, "with affectionate pride," "the influence of his example." Two enduring memorials in gifts ampler than are often bestowed by men of far larger estate remain to perpetuate his memory. The first is that by which he bestowed on the Essex Institute, in Salem, the greater part of his library, amounting in all to over eight thousand books and ten thousand pamphlets. The other is the noble White Foundations in the city of Lawrence, which now covers the green fields of what was his father's farm in Methuen. In selling to the Essex Company his portion of this territory, he had reserved six acres, including a family burial lot, with the restriction that it should not be built upon without the consent of that company. With this consent, in 1852, he vested this property in three trustees, who were directed to make proper provision for the burial-place, after which the proceeds of sales of the land were to be invested and the income applied to the establishment and support of an annual course of lectures and in the purchase of books for the Public Library, any further surplus to be used "in such manner as they, in the exercise of a sound judgment and discretion, shall consider best adapted to promote the moral, intellectual and Christian advancement and instruction of the inhabitants of the town of Lawrence, earnestly requesting the said trustees constantly to bear in mind that the great object intended to be promoted and accomplished is the education and training up of the young in habits of industry, morality and piety, and in the exercise of true Christian principles, both in thought and action." From the income of this fund annual courses of lectures since 1864–65 have been given in Lawrence, free to the industrial classes, and filling the largest hall in the city to overflowing, and since 1872 a regular appropriation of one thousand dollars annually has been applied to the purchase of carefully-selected books for the Public Library, while it is estimated that the principal of the fund will eventually amount to one hundred thousand dollars,—a worthy fulfillment of a wise and comprehensive plan for enduring public benefit. The two daughters of Judge White by his first marriage were married to Hon. William Dwight, of Springfield, and Hon. Caleb Foote, of Salem, while two sons survived him, the children of his second and third marriages,—Rev. William Orne White and Dr. Henry Orne White. All of these children have descendants.

Simon Greenleaf was born in Newburyport December 5, 1783, and educated at the Latin school in that town. While he was a boy his father removed to New Gloucester, Maine, where he received his early education at the common schools. Without the advantage of a college career, at the age of eighteen he entered the law-office of Ezekiel Whitman, of Portland, and after a five years' course of study was admitted to the bar of Cumberland County in 1806. He began to practice at Standish, Maine, removing, after a short time, to Gray, and from thence, in 1818, to Portland.

In 1820 he was appointed reporter of decisions of the Supreme Judicial Court of Maine, and held office twelve years, during which time he issued nine volumes of reports, which laid the foundation of his reputation and future distinguished legal career. He published at an early day a volume of "Overruled Cases," and later in life a treatise on the "Law of Evidence." This work, with his "Reports," assures him a lasting fame.

In 1817 he received from Bowdoin College the degree of Master of Arts, the degree of Doctor of Laws from Harvard in 1834, and from Amherst in 1845. In 1834 he was appointed Royal Professor of Law in Harvard University as the successor of Professor Ashmun, and after the death of Judge Story he was appointed to the Dane Professorship in 1846. He was induced by ill health to resign in 1848, when he was honored with the title of Emeritus Professor of Law in the University. He died at Cambridge October 6, 1853.

Asa Waldo Wildes was born (1786) in Topsfield and graduated at Dartmouth in 1809. After leaving college he taught school in Newburyport and Washington, and finally returned to Newburyport and entered as a student the law-office of Stephen W. Marston. He was admitted to the bar in 1820, and began in Newburyport the practice of law, which he continued

until 1826. In that year that part of the duties of the Court of Sessions which related to highways was transferred to a new board, "called commissioners of highways," consisting of five members appointed by the Governor. Mr. Wildes was appointed by Governor Lincoln a member of the board, with Robert Rantoul, of Beverly; Stephen Barker, of Andover; Joseph Winn, of Salem; and William B. Breed, of Lynn, as his associates.

In 1828 the Board of Highway Commissioners was abolished, and the Board of County Commissioners established. Mr. Wildes was appointed by the Governor chairman of the new board, and held office by successive appointments until 1835, when the office was made elective; and again by election until 1856, with the exception of one term of three years, from 1842 to 1845.

Mr. Wildes was peculiarly fitted for the place he so long occupied, and his prolonged incumbency was as creditable to the people of Essex County as to himself. They appreciated his legal knowledge and sound judgment, and did not hesitate to call him into their service. He died in Newburyport, December 4, 1857.

Stephen W. Marston was born in Fairlee, Vt., in 1787. He graduated at Dartmouth, and after completing his law studies with Judge White, of Salem, settled in Newburyport. He was well read in the law, and at an early day took high rank at the Essex bar. He was one of the junior counsel in the celebrated Goodridge robbery case, in which Daniel Webster was senior. Had it not been for the masterly management and skill of Mr. Webster, aided by the thorough work of his assistants, the Kenistons, Jackman and Pearson, the defendants would doubtless have been convicted of a crime which had never been committed. There had been no robbery, but Goodridge had been so ingenious in the arrangement of his plot and of the evidence to sustain it, that the proof against the parties charged seemed almost conclusive. An account of this trial, perhaps the most remarkable one in the annals of the State, was published in a pamphlet, and is worthy of examination by all who are interested in the administration of criminal law.

In 1833 Mr. Marston was appointed justice of the Police Court at Newburyport, and continued in office until 1866, when the increasing feebleness of age induced him to resign. His duties on the bench were conscientiously performed, and his decisions, which were rarely reversed, were always marked by a sound judgment as well as an exact perception of legal principles. He was a member of the Legislature in early life, and the Whig candidate for Congress in opposition to Caleb Cushing in that gentleman's first great contest for the national legislature. He died at his residence August 27, 1873.

Samuel L. Knapp was a native of Newburyport. He was graduated at Dartmouth College, and studied law at Newburyport with Theophilus Parsons, and became a practicing lawyer in his native town. He afterwards removed to Boston, where he edited the *Boston Galaxy*, and for a short time the *Commercial Gazette*. He again removed to Washington, where he was engaged as editor of the *National Journal*, and finally to New York, where he edited the *Commercial Advertiser*. He was one of the junior counsel with Daniel Webster in the famous Goodridge robbery case, and would have attained high rank at the bar had not a fondness for general literature enticed him away from his profession. He died at Hopkinton Springs in July, 1838.

Henry Alexander Scammell Dearborn, son of General Henry Dearborn, of the Revolution, was born in Exeter, N. H., March 3, 1783, and died in Portland, Me., July 29, 1851. He graduated at the College of William and Mary in 1803, and studied law with Joseph Story, in Salem, where he entered into practice, having been admitted to the bar in 1807. He was brigadier-general in command of troops in Boston harbor in the War of 1812, collector of the ports of Boston and Charlestown from 1812 to 1829, a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1820 and a member of Congress from 1831 to 1833. In 1834 he was made adjutant-general of Massachusetts by Governor John Davis, and removed, in 1843, by Governor Marcus Morton, for loaning the State arms to Rhode Island to suppress the rebellion. He was mayor of Roxbury from 1847 to 1851, the year of his death. He was the author of several works which added materially to an already well-established reputation.

Gayton Pickman Osgood was born at Salem, July 4, 1797, and was the son of Isaac and Rebecca T. (Pickman) Osgood. He graduated at Harvard in 1815, and studied law with Benjamin Merrill. He began practice in Salem, and afterwards removed to Andover, at which place his parents had, while he was young, taken up their residence. He was in the Legislature, and was a member of Congress from 1833 to 1835. He married, March 24, 1859, Mary Farnham, of North Andover, and died in that town June 26, 1861.

Rufus King, son of Richard and Isabella (Bragdon) King, was born in Scarboro', Me., March 24, 1755, and graduated at Harvard in 1777. His father had removed to Scarboro' from Watertown, Mass., in 1746. He studied law with Theophilus Parsons, of Newburyport, whose office was on the corner of Green and Harris Streets, and commenced practice in that place.

From 1784 to 1786 he was a member of Congress, and it is said that in consequence of his disappointment at the selection of Tristram Dalton for United States Senator in 1788, removed to New York. His career there is well known, and forms no part of the history of Essex County. He died at Jamaica, Long Island, April 29, 1827. William King, the first Governor of Maine, was the son of Richard King, by

his first wife, Mary, daughter of Samuel Blake, of Scarboro', and half brother of Rufus.

Nathaniel Cogswell, son of Thomas Cogswell, was born in Haverhill January 19, 1773, and graduated at Dartmouth in 1794. He studied law with Ebenezer Smith, of Durham, N. H., and began practice in 1805. In 1808 he established himself at Newburyport, and died at the Rapids of the Red River August, 1813.

Ichabod Tucker was born at Leicester April 17, 1765, and graduated at Harvard in 1791. He received a degree from Yale in 1804, and from Bowdoin in 1806. He began the practice of law in Haverhill, having been admitted to the bar in 1795, and removed to Salem, where he held the office of clerk of the courts for Essex County for many years. He was the son of Benjamin and Martha (Davis) Tucker, of Leicester, and was twice married,—first, September 16, 1798, to Maria, daughter of Dr. Joseph and Mary (Leavitt) Orne, and second, October 13, 1811, to Esther Orne, widow of Joseph Cobat and daughter of Dr. William and Lois (Orne) Paine. He died at Salem October 22, 1846.

William Cranch, son of Richard Cranch, who was born in England in November, 1726, was born in Weymouth, Mass., July 17, 1769, and graduated at Harvard in 1787, receiving the degree of LL.D. from his *alma mater* in 1829. After his admission to the bar he practiced first in Braintree, and afterwards in Haverhill. In October, 1794, he removed to Washington, and was appointed in 1801, by President Adams, associate judge of the Circuit Court of the District of Columbia, of which he was chief justice from 1805 to his death, which occurred September 1, 1855. He published nine volumes of reports of the United States Supreme Court, and six volumes of reports of the Circuit Court of the District of Columbia.

Joseph E. Sprague was the son of William and Sarah (Sprague) Stearns, and took his mother's maiden-name. He was born at Salem September 9, 1782, and graduated at Harvard in 1804. He studied law, and was postmaster of Salem from 1815 to 1829. In September, 1830, he was appointed sheriff of Essex County, and continued in office until 1851. He was, at various times, Senator and Representative in the State Legislature, and died February 22, 1852.

Joseph Story was born in Marblehead September 18, 1779, and was the son of Dr. Elisha Story, a native of Boston and a surgeon in the Revolution. He graduated at Harvard in 1798, and received degrees of LL.D. from Brown (1815), Harvard (1821) and Dartmouth (1824). Among his classmates were Wm. Ellery Channing, John Varnum, and Sidney Willard. His education before entering college was received in Marblehead, under the direction of Rev. Dr. William Harris, afterwards president of Columbia College. He began his law studies in the office of Chief Justice Samuel Sewall, in Marblehead, but on his appointment to the bench he entered the office of Judge Samuel Putnam, and was admitted to the bar of Essex County in July, 1801. He was a Democrat in politics, and as such stood almost alone among the lawyers of the county. He was a member of the Massachusetts House of Representatives in 1805, '06, '07, a member of Congress in 1808, again a member of the Legislature from 1809 to 1812, and was chosen Speaker of the House of Representatives in January, 1811.

In 1806 he advocated in the Legislature an increase of the salaries of the Supreme Judicial Court in opposition to the prejudices of his party against high judical salaries, and more especially against Theophilus Parsons, whom it was proposed to place on the bench, but who could not afford to relinquish a practice of ten thousand dollars for a position having attached to it the paltry salary of twelve hundred dollars. Mr. Parsons was especially obnoxious to the Democrats, but Mr. Story, with that sturdy independence which always characterized him, advocated and carried a bill to increase the salary of the chief justice to two thousand five hundred dollars, and of the associates to two thousand four hundred dollars, and Mr. Parsons was appointed and accepted the appointment. In 1809 he advocated and was largely the means of securing a further increase of the salaries of the chief justice and the associates to three thousand five hundred dollars and three thousand dollars, respectively.

On the 18th of November, 1811, he was appointed by Madison associate justice of the Supreme Court of the United States, to fill the vacancy caused by the death of William Cushing, which occurred on the 13th of September, 1810. The appointment had been previously offered to John Quincy Adams, who declined it. Mr. Story was then only thirty-two years of age, and his appointment reflects credit on the sagacity of Mr. Madison, who discovered in so young a man the signs of promise which his career afterwards fully verified. In 1820, at the time of the separation of Maine from Massachusetts, he was a delegate from Salem to the Constitutional Convention. In 1828 Nathan Dane, who, in founding the Law School at Cambridge, had reserved to himself the appointments to its professorships, appointed Judge Story Dane professor of law and John Hooker Ashmun, Royal professor of law, and in the next year, 1829, he removed from Salem to Cambridge, where he continued to reside until his death, on the 10th of September, 1845.

Aside from his learning in the law and that wonderful fluency in the use of language, both spoken and written, which made his learning available, nothing distinguished him more than his industry. With the labors of the judge constantly pressing upon him and the cares of his professorship, the press was kept busy in supplying the law libraries of the land with his commentaries and treatises and miscellaneous pro-

ductions. His first publication seems to have been a poem entitled the "Power of Solitude," published in Salem in 1804. In 1805 appeared "Selection of Pleadings in Civil Actions with Annotations." In 1828 he edited the Public and General Statutes passed by Congress from 1789 to 1827, and in 1836 and 1845 supplements to these dates. In 1832 appeared "Commentaries on the Law of Bailments, with Illustrations from the Civil and Foreign Law;" in 1833, "Commentaries on the Constitution;" in 1834, "Commentaries on the Conflict of Laws, Foreign and Domestic, in Regard to Contracts, Rights and Remedies, and Especially in Regard to Marriages, Divorces, Wills, Successions and Judgments." In 1835 and 1836 appeared "Commentaries on Equity Jurisprudence as Administered in England and America;" in 1838, "Commentaries on Equity Pleadings and the Incidents Thereto, according to the Practice of the Courts of Equity in England and America;" in 1839, "Commentaries on the Law of Agency as a Branch of Commercial and Maritime Jurisprudence, with Occasional Illustrations from the Civil and Foreign Law;" in 1841, "Commentaries on the Law of Partnership as a Branch of Commercial and Maritime Jurisprudence, with Occasional Illustrations from the Civil and Foreign Law;" in 1843, "Commentaries on the Law of Bills of Exchange, Foreign and Inland, as Administered in England and America, with Occasional Illustrations from the Commercial Law of the Nations of Continental Europe;" in 1845, "Commentaries on the Law of Promissory Notes." His decisions in the First Circuit, from 1812 to 1815, are in "Gallison's Reports;" from 1816 to 1830, in "Mason's Reports;" from 1830 to 1839, in "Sumner's Reports;" and from 1839 to 1845, in Story's "Reports." Among his numerous other publications were an "Eulogy on Washington at Salem," 1800; "An Eulogy on Captain James Lawrence and Lieutenant Ludlow," 1813; "Sketch of Samuel Dexter," 1816; "Charges to Grand Juries in Boston and Providence," 1819; "Charge to Grand Jury at Portland," 1820; "Address before the Suffolk Bar," 1821; "Discourse before the Phi Beta Society," 1826; "Discourse before the Essex Historical Society," 1828; "Address at his own Inauguration as Professor," 1829; "Address at the Dedication of Mount Auburn," 1831; "Address at the Funeral Services of Professor John Hooker Ashmun," 1833; "Eulogy on John Marshall," 1835; "Lectures on the Science of Law," 1838; "Address before the Harvard Alumni," 1842; and his "Charge to the Grand Jury of Rhode Island on Treason," in 1845. In addition to this long list of his works might be mentioned a large number of essays and articles in magazines and reviews, and three unprinted manuscript volumes, finished just before his death, entitled "Digest of Law Supplementary to Comyns," which are deposited in the Harvard College library.

JOHN VARNUM was born in Dracut in 1783, and graduated at Harvard in 1798. He practiced law in Haverhill, and there married, October 9, 1806, Mary Cooke, daughter of Dr. Nathaniel Saltonstall, of Haverhill. He represented Haverhill in the State Legislature, and was also a member of the Senate. He was a member of Congress from December 5, 1825, to March 3, 1831. His law studies, before admission to the bar, were pursued in the office of Judge Smith, of Exeter. He died July 23, 1836.

JOHN GLEN KING, son of James and Judith (Norris) King, was born in Salem March 19, 1787, and graduated at Harvard in 1807. He studied law with William Prescott and Joseph Story, and was admitted to the bar in 1812, at the November term of the Supreme Judicial Court, sitting at Salem. He was Representative and Senator and the president of the first City Council of Salem after its incorporation as a city, in 1836. Aside from legal attainments, which were universally recognized as of a high order, he was proficient in historical study, and was a member of the Massachusetts Historical Society, and one of the founders of the Essex Historical Society. He married, November 10, 1815, Susan H., daughter of Frederick Gilman, of Gloucester, and died July 26, 1857.

Mr. King's baptismal name was John King, but by an act of the Legislature passed June 21, 1811, it was changed to John Glen King. He was descended from William King, who came from England in the "Abigail" in 1635. Though he graduated in 1807, he did not receive his degree until 1818, having been one of those engaged in the famous Commons Rebellion, which occurred in his senior year. While a member of the House of Representatives he was appointed in the Prescott impeachment case to make the impeachment at the bar of the House, in the name of the House and the people, and also one of seven members to conduct the impeachment before the Senate. He was chairman of the committee and made the opening argument.

A letter from Boston, in the *Salem Gazette*, at the time of his death, paid the following tribute to his memory: "The Hon. John Glen King, whose death, at the ripe age of seventy years, has been announced, was a gentleman universally respected for his private worth and public services and example. All who have had the pleasure of an intimate acquaintance with him have been blest by his social qualities, his urbanity of manner and his kindness of heart. The odor of his virtues will long endure among his friends. Truly a good man has departed."

NATHANIEL LORD, JR., though not a member of the bar, was so long register of probate of Essex County, and came in such close contact with lawyers in the performance of their professional duties, as to deserve an honorable place in this record. He was descended from Robert Lord, who came to New England in 1636 and settled in Ipswich. Robert had five sons—Robert, Thomas, Samuel, Joseph and Nathaniel. Of



Nath. Lord jr



these, Robert had six sons,—Robert, 1657; John, 1659; Thomas; Joseph, 1674; Nathaniel, about 1675; and James, 1676. Of these, James had James, Joseph and Nathaniel. Of these, Nathaniel married Elizabeth Day, and had Nathaniel, 1747; Abraham, 1751; Isaac, 1753. Of these, Isaac, by wife, Susanna, had Isaac, 1777; Joseph, 1778; Nathaniel, the subject of this sketch, September 25, 1780; and Levi, 1794. Of these Nathaniel, by his wife Eunice, had Nathaniel, James, Otis Phillips, Isaac, and George Robert. Of these, George Robert, by his wife Mary, had George Robert and four daughters, Mary L., Anna M., Ella K., and Elizabeth F.

Mr. Lord graduated at Harvard in 1798, and became first connected with the probate office as clerk of Daniel Noyes, who had been register many years. In May, 1815, he was appointed register by Governor Caleb Strong, and continued in office until he was removed by Governor Boutwell, in 1851. In 1851 Edwin Lawrence succeeded him, and in the next year the registry was removed to Salem.

After leaving college and before going into the registry as clerk he taught school a few years in York, Me., and was also for a short time an assistant in the Dummer Academy. He married, in December, 1804, Eunice, daughter of Jeremiah and Lois (Choate) Kimball, of Ipswich, and sister of Colonel Charles Kimball, of that town. His three sons, Nathaniel James, Otis Phillips and George Robert, of whom only the last is living, owed many of their strong mental and physical traits to their father. Sketches of the first two may be found in another place in this record. To George Robert Lord, who, at one time, was register of probate, and is now the courteous and efficient assistant clerk of the courts at Salem, the writer of these sketches is indebted for facilities in the examination of records, which he most generously afforded.

Too much praise can scarcely be awarded to Nathaniel Lord for the fidelity, thoroughness and courtesy with which he performed the duties of register during his incumbency of thirty-six years. Very many now living have cause to remember his kindness of heart, his timely counsel and his honorable deportment, both in business and social life, and the admirable method and system of the office under its present management is largely due to the high standard which he set up, while it was occupied by him.

David Cummins was the son of David and Mehitabel (Cave) Cummins, of Topsfield, and was born in that town August 14, 1785. He graduated at Dartmouth in 1806, and after completing his law studies in the office of Samuel Putnam, of Salem, was admitted to the Essex bar at Salem in 1809, at the September term of the Court of Common Pleas. He began practice at Salem, afterwards removing to Springfield, and finally to Dorchester, where he died March 30, 1855. He was appointed justice of the Court of Common Pleas in 1828, and remained on the bench until 1844. He was twice married,—first, August 13, 1812, to Sally, daughter of Daniel and Sarah (Peabody) Porter, of Topsfield; and second, to Catherine, daughter of Thomas Kittridge, of Andover.

Samuel Porter, of Salem, was admitted to the bar of Essex County before the Revolution. He studied law with Daniel Farnham, of Newburyport, and became a Loyalist refugee and ended his days in England.

Nathan W. Hazen was born in Bridgeton, Maine, July 9, 1800. He there received his education in the public schools and in the Bridgeton Academy. He studied law with Leverett Saltonstall, of Salem, and was admitted to the bar in 1828. He settled in Andover, where he secured a large practice. He was a member of the Massachusetts House of Representatives in 1834, and at a later day a member of the Senate. He died in Andover, March 19, 1887, the oldest member of the Essex bar.

Benjamin Ropes Nichols, son of Ichabod and Lydia (Ropes) Nichols, was born in Portsmouth, New Hampshire, May 18, 1786, and graduated at Harvard in 1804. He was admitted to the bar of Essex County in 1807, and for many years practiced law in Salem. He married, April 12, 1813, Mary, daughter of Colonel Timothy and Rebecca (White) Pickering, of Salem. She was born in Philadelphia November 21, 1793, during her father's temporary residence in that city, and outliving her husband many years, died in West Roxbury March 22, 1863. Mr. Nichols removed to Boston in 1824, where he died April 30, 1848. He was a man of culture, and as an antiquary won more than common distinction. In 1820 he was appointed by the General Court on a commission, with Rev. James Freeman, of Boston, and Samuel Davis, of Plymouth, to superintend the work of copying such a portion of the New Plymouth records as they might think desirable. Under the direction of this commission, six volumes of court proceedings, one volume of deeds, one volume of judicial acts and one volume of laws were copied, and the copies were deposited in the office of the secretary of the commonwealth, where they still are. The original records were also put in proper condition for preservation, and to the intelligent performance of the duties of the commission the present state of the Old Colony records is largely due.

Rufus Choate, the son of David and Miriam (Foster) Choate, was born on Hog Island, in the town of Essex, October 1, 1799. He began the study of Latin in 1809 with Dr. Thomas Sewell, and continued his studies with Rev. Thomas Holt, Wm. Cogswell and Rev. Robert Crowell. He afterwards spent seven months at Hampton Academy, then in charge of James Adams, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1819, from which college he at a later day received the degree of LL.D. Degrees were also awarded to him by Yale in 1844 and Harvard in 1845. After leaving college he studied law in the office of William Wirt, at Washington, and at the Dane Law School in Cam-

bridge, and was admitted to the Essex bar, in Salem, at the September term of the Court of Common Pleas in 1823. He began practice in Danvers, where he remained until 1834. During his residence in Danvers he was a State Representative in 1825, State Senator in 1827, and member of Congress from 1832 to 1834. In the latter year he removed to Boston In 1841 he succeeded Daniel Webster in the United States Senate, when that gentleman resigned his seat to become Secretary of State under President Harrison. In 1853 he succeeded John H. Clifford as attorney-general of Massachusetts, and in the same year was a member of the Constitutional Convention. In 1858, in consequence of ill-health, he gave up professional labor, and in 1859 sailed for Europe. At that time the Cunard steamers from Boston touched at Halifax, Nova Scotia, and when reaching that port he was too feeble to proceed, and landing, died in that city July 13, 1859.

Mr. Choate, before he removed to Boston, had been distinguished at the bar; and after the death of Mr. Webster, in 1852, he was universally recognized as standing at the head of the bar of Massachusetts. In legislative fields he seemed out of his element. In the dominion of law, to which he gave his heart and soul and strength, he was supreme. Though an orator of the first class, his greatest forensic efforts were before a jury, and no gladiatorial show ever exceeded in interest the continuous exhibition of logic entwined with wreaths of eloquence in which he indulged before a reluctant jury, until one after another of the panel yielded to him his judgment and was ready, as he triumphantly saw, to give him his verdict. The writer has seen him address himself for an hour to a single juryman, until he saw at last that he, with the rest, was secure. He was a man of large frame, broad shoulders and upright figure, surrounded by a head and face which it is as impossible to describe as the flash of the lightning in the cloud or the aurora in the sky.

Though contrasting strongly with Mr. Webster in every movement and feature, he was perhaps as striking in appearance, and in an uncovered crowd would have been as likely to arrest the attention of the stranger. There was a fascination about him which always won the sympathy of visitors to the court-room where he was engaged for the side in whose interest he was acting. The juror could no more easily escape this fascination than the visitor, and to this may be attributed a part of his success. The writer was in court at Mr. Webster's last appearance before a jury in Boston, and Mr. Choate was opposed to him. It was one of the many contests in which the heavy-moulded dray-horse, which would only exhibit his strength when he had tons to draw, was pitted against the racer. The racer won the case because there were no tons to draw, and because activity, alertness, swiftness and grace alone were needed.

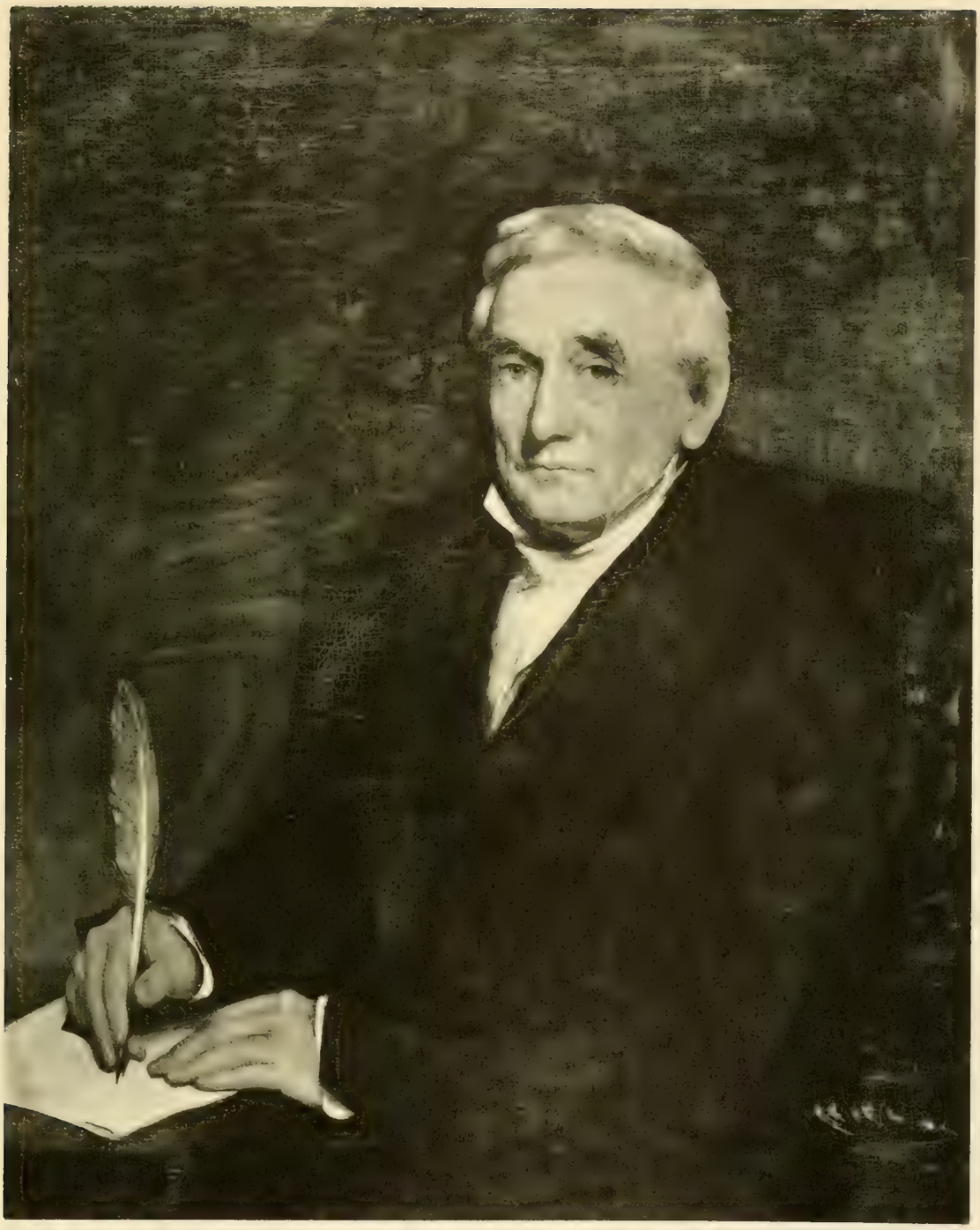
Few lawyers in Massachusetts have been so much beloved as Mr. Choate. To the young members of the bar he was always courteous and kind; to his peers he was always considerate and liberal. His death was felt as a public loss, and not only the various societies and the bar to which he belonged put on record their tributes to his memory, but the citizens of Boston met in Fanueil Hall and passed resolutions in his honor.

Charles Jackson, born in Newburyport May 31, 1775, graduated at Harvard in 1793 and received the degree of LL.D. from his *alma mater* in 1821. He was a son of Jonathan Jackson, of Newburyport, who afterwards removed to Boston and there died March 5, 1810. He studied law with Theophilus Parsons and was admitted to the Essex bar in 1796. In 1803 he removed to Boston and attained very soon a high rank. In 1813 he was appointed by Governor Strong associate justice of the Supreme Judicial Court, and left the bench in 1823. He was a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1820, and in 1833 was appointed one of the commissioners to codify the State laws. He died in Boston December 13, 1855.

Stephen Minot was born in Concord, Mass., September 28, 1776, and graduated at Harvard in 1801. He studied law with Samuel Dana, of Groton, and was admitted to the bar in Middlesex County in 1804. He practiced for a short time in New Gloucester and in Minot, Maine, and finally settled in Haverhill. He was, from December, 1811, to June, 1821, judge of the Circuit Court of Common Pleas, and county attorney from 1824 to 1830. He died in Haverhill April 6, 1861.

Samuel Putnam, LL.D., A.A.S.[1]—"Samuel Putnam was born in Danvers, on the 13th of April, 1768. He was the son of parents of superior intelligence and worth, the line of his ancestry in that place running back into our greatest American antiquity. His father, Deacon Gideon Putnam, amid the emergencies of an early settlement, seems to have exercised a variety of those needful functions which devolved upon men of most native sense and energy. His mother, who united to keen wit most acute feelings, having, of ten children, only this one spared, would often betray the smile and tear in the same moment, and this only one left of her offspring was naturally of so very slender constitution that faintly indeed in his youth could his after career have been anticipated, and only a bold casting of the horoscope have meted out to him his coming years or attainments. Samuel went to school in Beverly, whither for a time the family removed, and afterwards, at the age of ten years, he studied in the academy at Andover. He saw the soldiers under Arnold as they were going down to attack Quebec, and they were pleased that the little boy—who appears to have had melody born

[1] This sketch is taken almost wholly from a sermon delivered in 1853, by Rev. A. C. Bartol, D.D. (Contributed.)



SAMUEL PUTNAM.

in him, even at his tender age, so rarely cultivated was his faculty—could play the fife for them as they marched by.

"Before the Revolution, too, he had seen a regiment of soldiers in command of General Gage, the British governor. He was himself distantly related to the celebrated General Israel Putnam. But his vocation was not to the turbulence of battle, but to the serener air of peaceful studies, and having entered Harvard College, with others, a class-mate of John Quincy Adams, he received his graduation in July, 1787, and continued an enthusiastic friend of his *alma mater* to the end of his days.

"His father had destined him to be a teacher, but, moved by the inspiration and other destiny of his own nature to a different sphere of greater intellectual study among men, he went to Newburyport to study law with the distinguished Judge Parsons, yet was by him—his class of pupils being full—directed to Master Bradbury, as he was called, a sound and learned lawyer. He established himself in the practice of his profession, soon very extensively at Salem; held a leading rank as an advocate, and, against eminent opponents, was prompt, acute, ready, and able, with all the ingenuity at command needful, to serve his client. No advocate of the time is understood to have been better versed than he in the principles of the common law. He had peculiar skill and fame in the branch of mercantile or commercial law, which was a rare reputation at that period, so that the great Samuel Dexter, in an important case sent his client to Essex, to Mr. Putnam, as the man to consult in that early school of the law in Massachusetts."

So late as the year 1885, Lord Esher, the present distinguished Master of the Rolls, pronouncing the judgment of the Court of Appeals of England in an important commercial case said: "The first case to be dealt with is the American case of *Brooks vs. The Oriental Insurance Co.* It came before a judge whose decisions I have often read with admiration, and from whom I have certainly received great assistance, Mr. Justice Putnam."

"The renowned Justice Story, who had been his scholar, dedicated one of his works to his former teacher, with a high tribute to his sagacity and knowledge, as well as unspotted integrity. He took a decided and ardent part in the political questions of the time, but it is believed, in all the fire of parties that during his early manhood so hotly blazed out, he had no zeal that was not matched by his fairness, or at the core and in the seed outdone by his charity. But so did he retain his earnestness, and so determined was he in his opinions, that he always, to the close, considered it a duty, even at personal inconvenience, to cast his vote.

"Upon the death of Chief Justice Sewall, in 1814, he was, by Governor Strong, for whom he had a great reverence, appointed judge of the Supreme Judicial Court of this Commonwealth, and he continued to exercise this high office for twenty-eight years. I state what is in the cognizance of those familiar with the subject, in saying he had the respect of all good men for the manner in which he performed its solemn and responsible duties. No man ever held the scales of justice more even. None was ever more intent on making righteous decrees; none ever more fearless and independent in his decisions; none more solicitous for the deliverance of the wrongfully accused, and none more indignant against all trickery, lying and fraud. Members of the bar join with his compeers on the bench to declare that no opinions or judgments of a high tribunal were ever more likely to be sound, sober, practical, and to the point, than his, as they are recorded in the books.

"He adhered with great conservative firmness and inflexibility to his principles; but one of his associates told me his principles were good to adhere to. It is the award of another sincere observer of his course that, engaged as he had been in politics, with his whole heart espousing one side, on his becoming judge he put the politician entirely off, and, in his place, knew no distinction of fellow or foe. It is an unequivocal sign of the goodness of his heart, that, while nobody could suspect he was at all influenced by any regard to human favor—so clearly and evidently above all personal regards and consequences was he in his duty—he yet carried into the execution of that duty the singular urbanity which stamped his whole deportment in private life.

"In 1825 he received from the University in Cambridge the title of Doctor of Laws. In 1842, while still able to accomplish well the work falling to him in his lofty sphere, he retired into private, there to prove completely that no role of office, but what was solid and genuine, gave him his real consequence in the world. I am persuaded from every quarter will be confirmed the assertion, that he bore himself with admirable fidelity and acceptance in all the relations he sustained. He was exceedingly hospitable, kept open door, cordially invited his friends to come in, delighted to serve them at his table, and forgot not—how could he with his inclination?—to send a portion to the stranger and the poor, or to some humble neighbor, after whose comfort his benevolence yearned. He was glad to go with his guests over his old paternal estate, which it was a special pleasure to him to increase and improve. He cherished and fondled his farm, but had not the ambition of some to accumulate wealth. He loved to set out trees, whose growth and full flourishing only his posterity could see. I remember he once showed me how much a limb had grown on one of his trees; he had, I think, brought the branch to town, assuring me it afforded him as much satisfaction as another man would derive from a dividend.

"He desired kindly constructions of the deeds and motives of others, and would allow no ill intent to be ascribed where any excuse was possible, while all

unfairness everywhere met his steady disapproval. Respecting harshness of remark he often quoted a saying of his own father: "That may be true, my son, but you should not say so." This love of all that is spiritually accordant was naturally connected with or issued in a great love of music, especially of sacred music, under his own roof or in the temple. He had a very sensitive ear to the precision of the note; could scarce abide any falseness of tune, was never more pleased than when some beloved old hymn rang up to heaven, and when not listening to the anthems of the sanctuary, or the voices kindred and dear to him, found, what was to him, a delicious feast in the minstrelsy of the birds. There was, in truth, an infinite sweetness in him; his face was favor, his look an invitation, and he could not keep his hand from blessing the head of a child as he went along. He was, I think, a very happy man, not exempt from trial, tasting some pain and sadness as the springs of health and life were broken up, but finding in existence a large boon for overrunning thanksgiving. He had favorite books and authors, and found in reading, and in hearing his friends read, the pleasant occupation of much time. The enjoyment which a good old age has of youth was his to an uncommon degree. The first time I saw him was with the young all around, evidently both attracted by his love for them, and overflowing him with the tokens of their own, so that in their looks and motions they seemed to make one life together; and I remember well his presence, like a blessing, once, on occasion of the usual gathering of the children of our own society on the afternoon of Fast Day. I have heard it repeatedly said, in gratitude to him or commendation of him, that he loved to encourage young men in their commencing efforts, and by a word or a line from the desk of his tribunal would cheer and stimulate them.

"During the stormy period of our public affairs, before and after 1812, he was among the stirring spirits. He repeatedly represented, in both branches of the Legislature, his section of the State, and, we may not doubt, uttered always, without compromise, the deliberate conclusions of a thoughtful mind, and the deep sentiments of a guileless heart."

Judge Putnam was married October 28, 1795, to Sarah Gooll, of Salem, who survived him by eleven years. He had three sons and five daughters, who lived to grow up. All were married, and all but one survived their father. He died July 3, 1853, in his 86th year.

Leverett Saltonstall was born in Haverhill June 13, 1783. It is probable that no native of Essex County who has held his residence through life within its limits has been so conspicuous and so universally respected and beloved. It may be said, too, with perfect truth, that no family in New England can boast of a more extended pedigree or more genuine blood than that whose name he bore and whose fame he contributed so much to maintain. He was the son of Dr. Nathaniel Saltonstall, of Haverhill, and Anna, daughter of Samuel White, of Haverhill, a descendant of William White, a settler in Ipswich in 1635, and one of the first settlers of Haverhill in 1640. Dr. Nathaniel Saltonstall, born February 10, 1746, was the son of Richard Saltonstall, of Haverhill, and his third wife, Mary, daughter of Elisha Cooke, whose wife, Jane Middlecott, was a great-granddaughter of Governor Edward Winslow, of the Old Colony. Mary Cooke was also great-granddaughter of Governor John Leverett. Richard Saltonstall, born June 24, 1703, was the son of Richard Saltonstall, of Haverhill, and Mehitabel, daughter of Captain Simon Wainwright, of Haverhill. The last-mentioned Richard Saltonstall, born April 25, 1672, was the son of Nathaniel Saltonstall, of Haverhill, who was appointed in 1692, by Governor William Phipps, one of the judges of the Oyer and Terminer Court to try the witches, and refused to serve, and his wife, Elizabeth, daughter of Rev. John Ward, of Haverhill. Nathaniel Saltonstall, born in Ipswich in 1639, was the son of Richard Saltonstall and Muriel, daughter of Brampton Gurdon and Muriel (Sedley) Gurdon, of Assington, County of Suffolk, in England. Richard Saltonstall, born at Woodsome, County of York, England, in 1610, came to New England with his father, Sir Richard Saltonstall, in 1630, returned in 1631, married in England about 1633, and coming back to New England in 1635, settled in Ipswich. He died on a visit to England, at Hulme, April 29, 1694. Sir Richard Saltonstall, of Huntwick, Knight, baptized at Halifax, England, April 4, 1586, was lord of the manor at Ledsham. He was the son of Samuel Saltonstall, and his first wife, Anne, daughter of John Ramsden, of Longley. He married three wives,—first, Grace, daughter of Robert Kaye, of Woodsome, who was the mother of the son Richard; second, Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Thomas West, Baron de la Warre; and third, Martha Wilford. He was one of the original patentees of the colony of Massachusetts Bay, and after his first wife died he came to New England with Winthrop in 1630, bringing his children. He began the settlement of Watertown, returned to England in 1631, and there died about 1658, giving in his will a legacy to Harvard College. Samuel Saltonstall, the father of Sir Richard Saltonstall, the date of whose birth is unknown, died January 8, 1612–13, and was buried in Holy Trinity Church, Hull. He married three wives,—first, Anne Ramsden, above mentioned, who was the mother of Sir Richard Saltonstall; second, Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Ogden; and third, Elizabeth Armine, widow of Hugh Armine, mayor of Hull. Gilbert Saltonstall, the father of Samuel, had a seat at Rooke's Hall, in Hipperholme. He died in 1598 and was buried at Halifax December 29th. In his will he mentioned his wife, Isabel, and left legacies to the Halifax Church and the



Lewis H. Sutton Stall

Halifax Grammar School. It is unnecessary to follow the pedigree further in detail. It is sufficient to say that beyond Gilbert, above mentioned, through two Richards, another Gilbert and two other Richards, it goes back to either John or Richard, the sons of Thomas De Saltonstall, of the West Riding of Yorkshire, who flourished about the year 1300. Every generation has been distinguished for the eminent men it has produced, and in the direct line of the subject of this sketch, every ancestor back to Richard, who came with his father in 1630, has been a graduate of Harvard. To this list of graduates the names of Mr. Salstonstall himself, and of his son, Colonel Leverett Saltonstall, the present collector of the port of Boston, may be added.

Nor is the Saltonstall pedigree the only ancient one to which the family of Mr. Saltonstall may lay claim. The family of Gurdons, one of whom, Muriel, daughter of Brampton Gurdon, married Richard Saltonstall, who came to New England with his father in 1630, has a recorded pedigree in the hands of Sir William Brampton Gurdon reaching back to Sir Adam Gurdon, who lived in the thirteenth century. The mother of Muriel Gurdon was Muriel Sedley, and the Sedley family, too, has a pedigree which is only lost in the reign of Edward the First. And still another family mingles its blood with that of the Saltonstalls. Sir Richard Saltonstall, who came to New England with his son in 1630 and returned to England in 1631, married for his first wife, from whom the Essex branch of the family sprang, Grace, daughter of Robert Kaye, of Woodsome, and the pedigree of the Kaye family, as taken from the Yorkshire visitation, published by the Harleian Society, reaches through a plain channel back to the time of William the Conqueror. Thus it will be seen that Mr. Saltonstall, besides the blood of his own immediate family, carried in his veins not only that of the Winslows and Leveretts of New England, but that of some of the most ancient families in Great Britain.

Mr. Saltonstall pursued his preparatory studies at Phillips Academy, and graduated at Harvard in 1802. In 1838 he received from his *alma mater* the degree of LL.D., the degree of A.B., from Yale, in 1802, and of A.M. from Bowdoin in 1806.

He studied law with Ichabod Tucker, of Haverhill, and afterwards with William Prescott, and after a short term of practice in his native town, removed to Salem in 1806. At that time the Essex bar contained on its rolls the names of Nathan Dane, William Prescott, Samuel Putnam, Joseph Story, John Pickering and Daniel A. White. By the side of these eminent men, with whom he came constantly in competition, he grew step by step, until he became their professional peer. Samuel Putnam was called to the bench of the Supreme Court in 1814, Joseph Story was appointed to the bench of the United States Supreme Court in 1811, Nathan Dane gradually relinquished practice, Daniel A. White was made judge of probate and John Pickering finally removed to Boston. As these early rivals, one after another, left the field, Mr. Saltonstall attained the position, which he held for many years and until his death, of leader of the Essex bar. He possessed every qualification for a successful lawyer, especially in a county like Essex, made up of small towns with honest, plain, matter-of-fact people, among whom the character and life of a professional man were criticised and prized as much as his acumen and learning. The character and life of Mr. Saltonstall were singularly pure. Every man in Essex County knew it, and, when involved in difficulties, felt sure that his counsel would be wise and his services discreet and honest. For many years the Essex bar has had a reputation for fair and honorable dealings not possessed by that of every county in the State, and that reputation Mr. Saltonstall did much to establish and maintain. The confidence of his fellow-citizens of both the city of Salem and of the county was many times and in various ways manifested. By Hon. Stephen C. Phillips, who knew him well, it was said, that "at an early age he took his seat in the Massachusetts House of Representatives, and in that body at different periods, even to the very close of his public life, he rendered perhaps his most valuable services, and was distinguished and honored beyond almost any of his cotemporaries. He was an effective debater and in the committee-room none could surpass him in the faithful, patient and intelligent performance of all his duties. He was a member of the Massachusetts Senate in two most important political junctures, and as a leader of the majority he assumed a full share of responsibility for its acts. As president of the Senate, too, he performed his duties with admirable dignity and to universal acceptance. In the political service of Massachusetts he felt himself at home, and the State never had a citizen who maintained her character with a nobler pride or labored for her welfare with a purer zeal." On the incorporation of Salem as a city, March 23, 1836, her citizens did him and themselves the honor of making him their first mayor, and in that capacity he served until 1838. In the latter year he was chosen Representative to Congress, and remained in office until 1843. In the discharge of his duties as Representative he was singularly faithful, useful and earnest.

During the latter half of his Congressional life he was chairman of the Committee on Manufactures, and on his shoulders fell the burden of the investigation and inquiry, and of the preparation of the report and bill, which finally resulted in the passage of the tariff of 1842. He was an active and honorable member of the old Whig party, conscientiously devoted to its interests at a time when party policies were continuously distinct; and sincerely believing that the success of the policy of that party would best promote the welfare of the country. He was not a partisan in the sense in which so many are partisans to-day, and would have indignantly refused to follow his party

into the support of new measures devised purely for party purposes, without reference to the public good. When he advocated a measure, therefore, he spoke with a conviction behind his words, with a heart pouring out its fullness from the tongue, and hence the impressive and convincing eloquence of which he was a master.

Mr. Salstonstall was conspicuous in other than legislative and legal fields. He was president of the Bible Society, president of the Essex Agricultural Society and of the Essex Bar Association, a member of the Massachusetts Historical Society and the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, and of the board of overseers of Harvard University.

The relations of Mr. Saltonstall with his family were to the last degree confiding and tender. To say that he was beloved is only to repeat what may be said of nearly every husband and father. To say that he was worthy to be beloved is a better and a juster tribute. The affection which is merely incident to relationship fades with time. The tears of his children, though forty years have elapsed since his death, still start when they recall the virtues of their father, and exemplar, and friend.

Mr. Saltonstall married, March 7, 1811, Mary Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Sanders, of Salem, and died in Salem May 8, 1845. On the 8th of May a meeting of the Essex bar was held at Ipswich, at which Benjamin Merrill was chosen president, and Ebenezer Shillaber secretary; and resolutions offered by Joseph E. Sprague, and seconded by Nathaniel J. Lord, were passed as a tribute to his memory. On the same day, in the Supreme Court, Mr. Merrill presented the resolutions of the bar, and addressed the court. Judge Wilde replied, expressing "his sympathy with the feelings of the bar, and his regret at the loss of so useful and excellent a citizen as Mr. Saltonstall, whose worth and excellence he had known and highly esteemed for forty years."

On the 10th of May, at a special meeting of the City Council of Salem, Mr. Roberts submitted resolves concerning the loss sustained by the city in the death of Mr. Saltonstall, which were unanimously passed.

The Massachusetts Historical Society took appropriate notice of his death by eulogies spoken by various members, and at a later day by a memoir in its published proceedings. On Sunday, the 18th of May, Rev. Dr. John Brazier delivered, in the North Church in Salem, a discourse on his life and character; and a commemorative sermon was also preached in the East Church by Rev. Dr. Flint.

Isaac Ridington How, son of David How, was born in Haverhill March 13, 1791, and graduated at Harvard in 1810. He studied law with William Prescott and continued through life in the practice of law in his native town, where he died January 15, 1860.

Samuel Merrill was born in Plaistow, New Hampshire, in 1776. His preparatory studies were pursued at Phillips Academy under the instruction of Joseph S. Buckminster, and with his brother, James Cushing Merrill, he graduated at Harvard in 1807. He studied law with John Varnum in Haverhill and began practice of the law in Andover in partnership with Samuel Farrar. He was at various times a member of both branches of the Legislature, and, aside from his law studies, was through life a diligent scholar, and especially proficient in Greek and Latin literature. He died in Andover December 24, 1869.

Michael Hodge was born in Newburyport in 1780 and graduated at Harvard in 1799. He studied law in his native town and there followed his profession. Samuel L. Knapp describes him in his personal sketches as a man "who was never perfectly satisfied with his profession, for in his character was exhibited that moral enigma which has so often perplexed the metaphysicians,—great personal intrepidity united to a painful and shrinking modesty; a fearlessness of all the forms of danger to a diffidence in the discharge of professional duties." He married, in 1814, Betsey Hayward, daughter of Dr. James Thacher, of Plymouth, Mass., and widow of Daniel Robert Elliott, of Savannah, Georgia, and had James Thatcher, a graduate of Harvard in 1836, who was lost on Lake Michigan with a career in the paths of science already brilliant, but yet full of hope and promise. Mr. Hodge died in Plymouth on the 6th of July, 1816.

Jedediah Foster was born in Andover October 10, 1726, and graduated at Harvard in 1744. He finally established himself in Brookfield and married a daughter of Brigadier-General Joseph Dwight. He was appointed judge of the Superior Court of Judicature in 1776 and died October 17, 1779.

Charles Amburger Andrew was born in Salem in 1805 and graduated from the Harvard Law School in 1832. He also studied in the office of Leverett Saltonstall and was admitted to the bar in 1831. He died at Salem June 17, 1843.

Benjamin Lynde Oliver was born in Salem in 1789 and studied law with Joseph Story and Samuel Putnam. He was admitted to the Essex bar in June, 1809. He died in Malden June 18, 1843.

Ebenezer Mosely, son of Ebenezer and Martha (Strong) Mosely, was born in Windham, Conn., Nov. 21, 1781, and graduated at Yale College in 1802. He studied law with Judge Chauncey, of New Haven, Judge Clark, of Windham, and Judge Hinckley, of Northampton. In 1805 he settled in Newburyport, and at various times had as students in his office John Pierpont, afterwards a clergyman; Governor Dunlap, of Maine; Robert Cross, Asa W. Wildes and Caleb Cushing. In 1813–14 he was the colonel of the Sixth Regiment, and, as chairman of the Board of Selectmen, welcomed Lafayette on the occasion of his visit to Newburyport. From 1816 to 1820 and from 1834 to 1836 he was a member of the House of Representa-



C Cushing

tives, and in 1821 and 1822 a member of the Senate. In 1832 he was a Presidential elector and threw his vote for Henry Clay. On the 17th of June, 1811, he married Mary Ann, daughter of Edward Oxnard, and died at Newburyport August 28, 1854.

LONSON NASH came to the bar in 1807 and settled in Gloucester, his native town. He was a Representative in 1809 and Senator in 1812. He retired in 1860 and died at Great Barrington February 1, 1863.

WILLIAM FABENS, son of William and Sarah (Brown) Fabens, was born in Salem April 14, 1810, and graduated at Harvard in 1832. He early settled in Marblehead and was engaged in law practice until his death, March 11, 1883. He was trial justice from 1860 to 1878, a State Senator in 1859, a trustee of the Nautical School during the entire period of its existence, and for many years an active member of the School Board of Marblehead.

CALEB CUSHING.—Newburyport, from the first settlement of the country, has been greatly distinguished for the eminence attained by her sons, daughters and citizens, in letters and active life. She can point to a long list of statesmen, orators, poets, jurists, divines, inventors and merchants, who do her honor. One of the least of our cities in territory and population, she has made herself famous at home and abroad, in the States of the Union and the nations of the globe. Among the names of her jurists she counts Bradbury, Parsons, Jackson, Lowell, Greenleaf, Wilde and a host of others famous for their knowledge of common law and international law, as well as for their legal opinions and decisions uttered in our courts; but no one of them in his varied acquirements and duties has done more credit to himself and the place of his birth or residence than Caleb Cushing. There have been in this century, or in this country, few to compare with him. It has been said that no man is great in everything or great at all times; but as we look back on his career, from youth to old age, we discover no dimness, no weakness. As a polygon presents in its many sides and angles, in its roofs and towers, its lights and shadows, the evidence of its own strength and beauty and the skill and genius of its designer and builder, so he, in deeds and words, through a long life and under varied circumstances, in success and in defeat, stands as an illustrious example of what a man may be and may do, when he puts a human will and indomitable persistency in what he undertakes to accomplish. He was a scholar lofty in his attainments; an author and an orator equally expert with pen or voice; a lawyer attractive at the bar, profound on the bench and celebrated as minister of justice—attorney-general for the country, uttering opinions which nations were bound to respect. He was a statesman the compeer of Webster, John Quincy Adams and Charles Sumner, who were his friends and admirers, and no man has shown greater knowledge of the science of government—of the principles on which are based our own and foreign institutions. He was a diplomatist of high rank, negotiating treaties in South America, Spain, China, in pressing our claims before the extraordinary tribunal at Geneva, where sat the distinguished commissioners from Germany, Italy, Spain, England and America, who listened to no other man more gladly.

It did not matter where he was placed, what duties he was to perform or with whom he was to act, he never failed in courage, capacity or power and perseverance. He was equal to the occasion. The late Isaac O. Barnes, many years United States marshal for the district of Massachusetts, who knew Mr. Cushing intimately, and was himself a scholar and a wit, being one day in the Public Library of Boston, was approached by a young man, who inquired where he could find an encyclopædia. Mr. Cushing passing at the moment, Colonel Barnes, pointing to him, replied: "There is a living, self-moving cyclopedia, from whom you can obtain information upon every question that has interested any people in any age of the world." This seems almost a literal truth. He had made himself personally acquainted by his travels with all the continents of our globe, he had crossed the oceans and great seas, climbed the Rocky Mountains, the Alps and the Andes and sat on the foot-hills of the Himalayas; had conversed with the Russian at St. Petersburg, the German at Berlin, the Italian on the Bay of Naples, the Frenchman at Paris, the Spaniard at Madrid, the Tartar in Eastern Asia, each in his own tongue, and at the reception of foreign ministers by President Pierce, surprised them all in his facility of language. He studied religions with the preachers of Geneva, the priests of Rome and the Brahmins of India, and he had discussed politics and international law with the highest minister of state in China. The schools had found him a most enthusiastic student, the forum an eloquent advocate, and to his reading of books there was no end. He was literally the devourer of books and the digester of their contents. He was the only man we ever knew who could read a dictionary and delight in the study of every word; and that did Caleb Cushing on the first appearance of Webster's Unabridged, containing one hundred and fourteen thousand words, and, more than that, unsolicited and without remuneration, like a proof-reader, he marked every error or mistake; so he could study a volume of abstract principles because he could surround each statement with the children born from it, and thus evolve from naked truths passages of beauty. This single fact of his reading we may cite: "When called to the Supreme Bench he had long been out of the practice of law, and to prepare himself for duty, read fifty-seven volumes of the Massachusetts Reports—all up to that date—in nineteen days, or three full volumes per day, and so thoroughly did he the work that he was familiar with every decision they contained. This he could do because he was untiring in labor and needed little sleep. He often read eighteen hours a day

through many successive days, and what he received into the mind he retained there. It was not a mere reading by the eye, but it was absorbed in the mind, —transcribed upon the tablet of memory, and ever ready of use. He had a most remarkable power of abstracting himself from the material world in which he lived and concentrating all his force in the world of thought. This gave him seasons when he was uncommunicative, followed by others when he was the most affable of men.

Coming to the consideration of such a person, the details of his life will be not uninteresting. He was born in Salisbury, a town at the mouth of the River Merrimac, January 17th, 1800, and removed with his family to Newburyport two years later. He was the eldest son of Captain John N. Cushing by his first wife, Lydia Dow, of Salisbury. It is not always clear how much one inherits from his ancestors, and how much he is of himself; therefore, we add that he was from an old colonial family, not previously unknown to fame, whose tendencies in professional life were to the pulpit and the bar. Among those bearing the same family-name was William Cushing, who succeeded his father, John, as a justice of the Superior Court of Massachusetts before the Revolution of 1776, whom President Washington raised to the Federal Supreme Court on the organization of the government in 1789. He was of Scituate, which may be termed the "home-nest" of the family, and thence came to Salisbury, Rev. Caleb Cushing accepting the pastorate of the first parish of that town, in whose line the subject of this sketch appears. His father, though at his death the largest ship-owner of the State and the most wealthy merchant of Newburyport, at the birth of his son was a seaman, poor in estate and much absent on long voyages at sea. Caleb Cushing, therefore, in boyhood owed nothing to his surroundings save what he inherited from his father,—a love of labor and a desire to be self-supporting and independent. He was exceedingly fortunate, however, in being a pupil at school of a distinguished teacher and mathematician, Michael Walsh, who took pride in him and, admiring the robustness of the lad, who then had within him the man to be developed, Master Walsh shaped his course, inspired his ambition and prepared him for college. He graduated at Harvard at the early age of seventeen, third in a class of sixty-two, which included many others of future fame, and so did he excel in his rhetoric and oratory that he, one of the youngest, was selected to make the address to President Monroe, when he visited the university in 1817. After that, for two years, in the same institution, he was tutor of mathematics and natural philosophy.

Leaving college he studied law, first at the Harvard Law-school, and later at the office of the Hon. Ebenezer Moseley, at Newburyport. Admitted to the bar in 1822 he rose rapidly and soon acquired a lucrative practice. At that time the Essex bar rivalled that of Boston, in the learning and skill of its members, and Caleb Cushing and Rufus Choate stood at its head, their friends often disputing which should be first. It was a generous rivalry, in which each held the other in the highest esteem; Cushing thinking Choate unsurpassed in his magnetic eloquence, and Choate declaring that in law he feared no opposing counsel so much as Cushing.

In 1823, Mr. Cushing married Miss Caroline, daughter of Judge Wilde of the Supreme Court: a lady of rare intellectual endowments and much literary culture. She accompanied him on his two years tour of Europe, and after her return published a very popular volume of letters on France and Spain. Her death, which occurred in 1832,was an irreparable loss, and he remained a widower and childless for nearly a half-century to his own decease. It was during his European travels—a tour of inspection and study of the institutions, laws, manners and monuments of the old world, that he formed a strong attachment to Spain—a love for its literature and people, that went with him through life. On his return he wrote his best book, "Reminiscences of Spain," in two volumes. He was so interested that he became as familiar with its language as with his own, so that later, when introduced to the Court of Madrid, as American minister, he surprised the King by the purity of the Spanish tongue in which he addressed him. The same thing was noticeable in the trial of cases in the courts at Washington. At the commencement of President Pierce's administration, as Attorney General, he had to deal with Mexican claims where the documents were in Spanish, and the court-room would be crowded by ladies and gentlemen who understood not a word of the language, but gladly listened to the music of his clear, rich voice, as he pronounced the sonorous words; the same may be said, however, of his exact and thorough training in all the languages used by him. He would never allow himself to mispronounce. After he was seventy years old, he spent months in Paris to improve his pronunciation of French, preparatory to addressing the convention of Geneva, in which that was the common tongue. Indeed, if he could have given time to it, he would have appeared as one of the greatest philologists of the age.

In 1825, Caleb Cushing entered political life, being elected representative to the State legislature from Newburyport. He was then in the pride of his early manhood, fully equipped for the battle of life. He was well-formed, about the ordinary height, of commanding presence, with black hair, bright eyes, and in cold weather wore a loose cloak, falling from the shoulders, after the fashion of the ancient toga, showing him the Roman he was. His appearance was impressive, and no one failed to perceive that he was no ordinary person. He was the most brilliant man in the house, and the next year passed to the Sentae. He was again a member of the legislature in 1833 and

1834. Twelve years after, when war was pending with Mexico, and his services were needed, he was a fifth time elected, and subsequently in 1850 and in 1859. Indeed as often as other duties would permit, the people of Newburyport, who were proud of him, and never failed him in any emergency, sent him to represent them in the General Court. They always rejoiced in his success, and always welcomed him home with open arms. There was never an hour when he had not so the confidence and affection of neighbors and townsmen, that they would not have elected him to any office within their gift. It was said that Napoleon appeared greatest at a distance; Mr. Cushing had it to his credit that he appeared greatest to those who knew him longest and best.

In 1834 he was elected to congress, from the district then called Essex North. For colleagues, he had the venerable ex-president, John Quincy Adams, who became much attached to him, and whom in some respects, especially in independent politics, he much resembled; Robert C. Winthrop, who alone of the ten survives, Levi Lincoln, Leverett Saltonstall and others, making in the whole, the most distinguished delegation that Massachusetts or any other state ever sent to Washington. They were all opposed to General Jackson, then president, though Mr. Cushing surprised some of his constituents who declared Jackson an ill-bred and vulgar frontiersman, by saying that he was one of the most polite and gentlemanly persons he had ever met at home or abroad.

In Congress Mr. Cushing immediately took high rank. He was appointed on the Committee of Foreign Affairs with John Quincy Adams, and they alternately were the head of that committee, and probably no two men in Congress were so well versed in international law or in the history of our foreign relations. Daniel Webster said "that Mr. Cushing had not been six weeks in Congress, before he was acknowledged to be the highest authority on what had been the legislation of congress on any given subject." He held his seat for eight years, and entered heartily and fearlessly into the discussions of that day. It was, in the era of duelling, the frequent habit of opposing parties to badger new members, in hopes to break them down, but when it was attempted on Mr. Cushing, and he turned face to face with his opponent, rough old Ben Hardee, of Kentucky, who was the terror of weak and diffident minds, Mr. Cushing spoke in the severest tones the rules of the House would permit, and closed by giving notice that he held himself, responsible for his words there or any where else. The House rang with applause and the galleries so vociferated—the ladies waving their handkerchiefs and the men clapping their hands and shouting, that a motion was made to clear the galleries, but that was not necessary, for the people filled with admiration that this young member—it was his second speech—had dared to beard the old lion in his den, that they retired of themselves, and it was the talk of Washington and the time. There was no duel but the many added their belief that Mr. Cushing meant all his words implied.

Mr. Cushing at that early day, in 1836, if ever, had no sympathy with the Abolitionists, but he protested against the idea of suppressing or restricting Liberty that slavery might widen and deepen; and when Henry A. Wise, then representative from Virginia, discussing the admission of Arkansas, threatened to plant slavery in the heart of the Northern States, Mr. Cushing broke loose upon him in a burning torrent of words: "Introduce slavery into the heart of the North!"—here he hesitated and gazed scornfully into the face of Wise—"Vain idea! invasion, pestilence, civil war may conspire to exterminate a people. This, in the long lapse of ages incalculable, is possible to happen. You may raze to the earth the thronged cities, the industrious villages, the peaceful hamlets of the North. You may plant its soil with salt and consign it to everlasting desolation. You may transform its beautiful fields into a desert as bare as the blank face of Sahara. You may reach the realization of the infernal boast with which Attila, the Hun, marched his barbarous hosts into Italy. . . . All this you may do, it is within the bounds of physical possibility, but, I solemnly assure every gentleman within the sound of my voice, I proclaim it to the country and the world, that you can not, and *you shall not*, introduce slavery into the North." Here he stood immovable from first to last. He believed in self-government and in local State government, as the basis of American freedom and constitutional liberty, and he would preserve the rights of the States and the liberties of the republic at the same time.

Mr. Cushing was in favor of extending the area of freedom, of enlarging the republic west to our natural boundary, the Pacific Ocean, and north and south as circumstances should require. Hence his plea for Arkansas, his defense of our rights in Oregon, and his readiness to annex Texas. And what he advocated he was ready to defend in the field if the occasion demanded. Therefore, in the face of the severest opposition to the Mexican War, in Massachusetts, he not only urged the measure in debate, but himself volunteered, assisted to raise the regiment called for, and when the Legislature refused an appropriation of twenty thousand dollars to assist them to reach their destination, he advanced the funds from his own resources. He led the regiment as colonel and was appointed a brigadier-general soon after landing in Mexico.

In the great struggle of John Quincy Adams for the right of petition—the heroic and the last contest of the venerable sage of Quincy—Mr. Cushing was his faithful friend and active coadjutor, and uniformly in congress was on the liberal and progressive side. Robert C. Winthrop, on a recent occasion, referring to Mr. Cushing's congressional career, spoke of "his varied ability, vast acquirements, unwearied applica-

tion and his fame and skill as a writer and debater." "Nor will I forget," added he, "his very amiable traits of character, which prevented difference of opinion or of party, sundering the ties of social intercourse. He knew how to abandon a policy or quit a party without quarrelling with those he left behind." Thus we see him, a Democrat, in the most friendly relations with Charles Sumner, at Washington, spending an evening of every week in discussing public affairs and inquiring what might be done for their common country. Like relations held he with Secretary Seward, and with all the Republican presidents from Lincoln to Grant inclusive.

He retired from politics, after the Rebellion broke out, and spent most of his time at Washington, where every administration during his life had the benefit of his well-formed opinions; nor was there a single branch of the government that did not avail itself of his service. When not connected officially with them he was held in reserve for any emergency that might occur. Nothing personal or political prevented his serving his country. He was intensely loyal and patriotic; never man more so; ready to sacrifice anything for the unity and perpetuity of the government. We recall his words in dismissing the national Democratic convention, over which he was called to preside at Charleston, S. C., when we stood on the brink of the Rebellion: "I pray you, gentlemen, in returning to your constituents and the bosoms of your families, to take with you, as your guiding thought, the sentiment, the Constitution and the Union." Those were the waymarks and the guides of his life.

After leaving Congress he at once entered upon the duties of minister to China, to which he had been appointed by President Tyler to negotiate a treaty. This he did, going east to China and returning in the same direction, *via* Mexico, with the best treaty to that date ever made with that ancient people; perfecting his work and circumnavigating the globe in fourteen months. The treaty was submitted to the Senate that had, on political grounds, three times rejected him as secretary of the treasury, and was so satisfactory as to be ratified without a dissenting voice

His next important service was as attorney-general under President Pierce, to which he was called from the Supreme Bench of Massachusetts, which occasioned one of his associate judges to pay him this compliment, "when he came to the bench we didn't know what we could do with him; and when he left, we didn't know how we could do without him." As Attorney-General, he perhaps appeared to the country at large, better than in any position he had before held; and when he retired, carried with him a higher reputation for profound knowledge, than any of his predecessors. He was then at his maturity, in the fulness of physical and mental strength, and his labors were the most arduous and varied. It was not uncommon, for weeks in succession, for him to be in his office from four o'clock in the morning till midnight, and every conceivable question on our relations to matters at home and abroad, wsa submitted to him. His opinions fill three volumes, of the fifteen in the whole, to the date of his retirement; and no less authority than William Beach Lawrence, in his edition of Wheaton, declares "they constitute in themselves a valuable body of international law." They show also his fidelity to the principles of the fathers of the republic.

In the short space allowed this sketch, we may not go into particulars. That he had the confidence of the country may be seen in this: President Lincoln appointed him a commissioner to adjust claims pending between this country and Mexico, Spain and other peoples; President Johnson made him a special envoy to the United States of Colombia; President Grant appointed him minister to Spain, counsel for the United States to Geneva and would have made him chief justice of the Supreme Court, had not Mr. Cushing asked him to withdraw the nomination, not made at his solicitation, upon the dissent of a single Senator; and at every point his action was endorsed by the country, the public press applauding.

He now retired to his home. Though still strong, but pressing hard upon four-score years, he could see that the end was near, and he heard the message: "What thou hast to do, do quickly." He obeyed, turned his attention to his private affairs and sought rest with personal friends, in the town and by the river he had loved so well, and where he had been loved. His mission was finished; he had all the honors desired; his fortune was ample; he had really nothing more to do, than to be himself, as he was to the end, and utter his last prayer for his country. He died January 2, 1879, and was gathered to his fathers. He sleeps on the western slope of the hill, where the rays of the setting sun longest linger on the marble that bears his name, and the name of her who was dearest of human kind to him. He had built the tomb for his wife, and in it prepared his own resting place—a place for one; he determined at her decease, forty-five years before, there should be no more.

DANIEL P. KING, though never admitted to the bar, passed through a course of study in law and deserves a place in this record. He was born in Danvers January 8, 1801, and was the son of Daniel and Phebe (Upton) King, of that town. He fitted for college at Phillips Academy and graduated at Harvard in 1823. In 1824 he married Sarah P., daughter of Hezekiah and Sally (Putnam) Flint, and finally settled down at Danvers as a farmer, following the occupation of his father before him. He was a Representative to the Legislature from his native town in 1835, Speaker of the House in 1840 and 1841, president of the Senate in 1843, and was chosen in the last year Representative to Congress, continuing in office until 1849. His natural gifts, cultivated by his collegiate and legal studies, specially fitted him for legislative duties, and more particularly for that class of them



R. Rantoul Jr

which attaches to the responsible position of presiding officer. He died in Danvers July 25, 1850.

Elias Hasket Derby was born in Salem September 24, 1803, and graduated at Harvard in 1824. He studied law in the office of Daniel Webster, and appears on the official list of lawyers admitted to the bar to have been admitted at Salem in the year of his graduation from college. He settled in Boston, and by an increasing practice in railroad cases soon became identified with railroad interests, in the promotion of which he was far-seeing and bold. He was a prolific writer for newspapers and magazines, having in all his productions an eye to the advancement and prosperity of Boston. He was at one time president of the Old Colony Railroad, and died in Boston, March 31, 1880.

George Lunt, son of Abel and Phœbe Lunt, was born in Newburyport December 31, 1803, and graduated in Harvard in 1824. He was admitted to the Essex bar in 1833, and until 1848 practiced law in Newburyport. In that year he removed to Boston, and in 1849, under the new Whig national administration, was appointed district attorney for Massachusetts, succeeding Robert Rantoul. During the four or five years which preceded the war he was one of the editors of the Boston *Courier*, and was earnest in his opposition to all the measures on the part of the North which tended to dissatisfy and estrange the South. His convictions were doubtless as sincere and pure as those who denounced him, but his love for an unbroken union mingled with a timidity which shrunk from a test of its strength, made him appear at times what he was not, an advocate of slavery and its attendant evils.

Outside of the columns of newspapers, Mr. Lunt's publications were chiefly poetical, while the newspapers themselves contained many a poetical gem from his pen, which eventually found its way into a public collection. A volume of his poems was published in 1829, another in 1843, another in 1851 and still others in 1854 and 1855. The last few years of his life Mr. Lunt spent in comparative retirement in Scituate, and died in Boston May 16, 1885.

Stephen Palfrey Webb, son of Captain Stephen and Sarah (Putnam) Webb was born in Salem March 20, 1804, and graduated at Harvard in 1824. He studied law with John Glen King, of Salem, and was admitted to the bar in 1826. He settled in practice in Salem, and was, before 1853, Senator, Representative and mayor. In that year he went to San Francisco, where he was also chosen mayor in 1854, and returned to Salem, again to be chosen mayor in 1860, '61 and '62. He was city clerk of Salem from 1863 to 1870, and finally removed to Brookline, where he died in 1879. He married, May 26, 1834, Hannah Hunt Beckford Robinson, daughter of Nathan and Eunice (Beckford) Robinson.

Robert Rantoul, Jr.,[1] the son of Robert and Joanna (Lovett) Rantoul, was born in Beverly, August 13, 1805. In his childhood he gave no doubtful promise of the traits of mind and character that were prominent in his maturer years. Happy in home influences, and in those of his earliest school-life, he not only learned with wonderful facility, but manifested a power of thought and reasoning so unusual for his age, that there was never any purpose other than of securing for him the best means of education attainable. He was fitted for college at Phillips Academy in Andover, and entered Harvard in 1822, graduating in 1826. His college life was one of untiring industry. Fourteen hours out of the twenty-four were, oftener than not, spent in study. He paid little attention to the college curriculum, easily reading Latin and Greek at sight, and in mental, moral and political science reciting from his own "inner consciousness," in words of which the professor could find no trace or analogue in the text-book. He devoted a great deal of time to the higher literature of continental Europe. The French language he learned by reading it, and it early became as familiar to him as the English. In German, under the tuition of Dr. Follen, he belonged to the first class in Cambridge that ever studied that tongue. His chief aim was to become conversant with the political history and institutions of the European nations, and with the history and science of government and legislation. He was as intimately acquainted with Grotius and Puffendorff, Machiavelli and Beccaria, Montesquieu and Jeremy Bentham, as the foremost of his classmates were with their required class-work. But, notwithstanding his incessant labor, he was not indifferent to college society, though he took part in it mainly in behalf of the interests which he held in the highest regard, and with the view of raising the standard of general culture. "The Institute of 1770" was formed by the union of three pre-existing societies, one of which, while surrendering the distinctive portion of its name, insisted on retaining the index of its birth-year. This new society was organized, virtually by him, for the sole purpose of literary and scientific work, and in its earlier years was among the most efficient educational forces in the university. Mr. Rantoul's high place in the esteem of his classmates was manifested in his election as class-poet, and, although in after years he wrote but little verse, he had already shown, and certainly showed by that very poem, a talent which, with adequate cultivation, might have given him no inconspicuous place among American poets. Mr. Rantoul, on leaving college, entered the law-office of John Pickering, and at a later period that of Leverett Saltonstall.

He was admitted to the bar in 1829, and established himself for a time in Salem, where his principal business was as junior counsel for the Knapps in the celebrated White murder trial, in which he collected and prepared the evidence for the defense. In 1831 he removed to South Reading, and in 1833 to Glou-

[1] By Dr. A. P. Peabody.

cester, which town he represented in four successive Legislatures. In 1835 he was appointed on a committee for revising the statutes of Massachusetts, and in the three following years he served and performed very efficient service on the Judiciary Committee. He first distinguished himself in the Legislature by his opposition to the charter of a "ten million bank," at a time when paper money, often of difficult and doubtful currency, flooded the country, and shortly before the suspension of specie payment by the New England banks. His action was with the Democratic party; but it was universally admitted that it was his able argument (which might stand now as an independent treatise on the philosophy of finance), that won over a sufficient number of the Whig majority in the House, though it was regarded as a party measure, to defeat the scheme. There was hardly an important subject before the House on which he remained silent; and his speeches were not harangues, but thorough arguments, based on facts, statistics and principles, and requiring, in order to answer them, if not an ability equal to his own, at least an amount of diligent study and careful elaboration which few legislators were, or ever are, willing to bestow.

The subject of capital punishment, commended to him by his father's lifelong interest in it, was among those which he early and often urged on the attention of the Legislature. As chairman of committees he made three reports in as many successive years in favor of the abolition of the death-penalty, besides as many carefully prepared speeches, and not a few shorter ones in the progress of debate. He afterward wrote "Letters on the Death-Penalty," addressed to the Governor and Legislature of Massachusetts, which were reprinted by order of the Legislature of New York. He also embraced every available opportunity for delivering lectures and addresses on this subject. His writings upon it probably contain all that has been or can be said in opposition to capital punishment, and they have been largely quoted wherever the question has been discussed on either side of the Atlantic.

In 1839 Mr. Rantoul opened an office in Boston, having his home in Beverly. In 1843 he was appointed Collector of the port of Boston and Charlestown, and in the following year United States Attorney for the District of Massachusetts, which latter office he resigned in 1849.

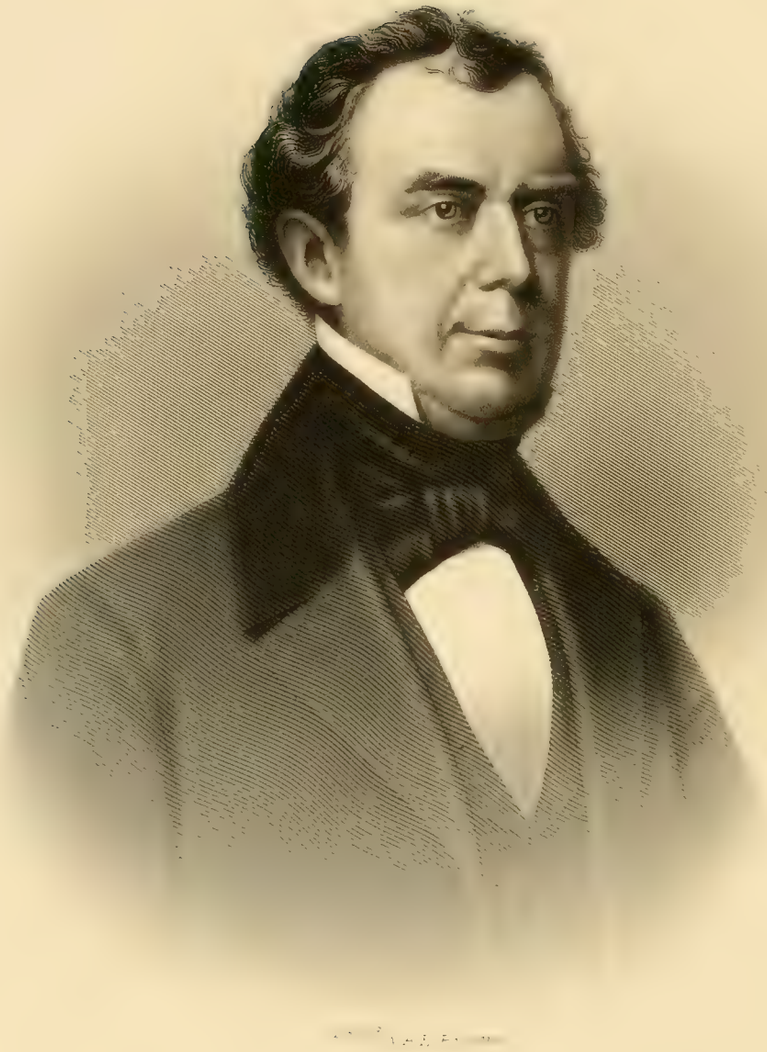
During the period of his legal practice in Boston he had the management of a singularly large number of cases of prime importance, both for clients of his own and in behalf of the government, and in several instances he not only gained his cause against the strongest possible array of opposing counsel, but won their hearty applause; and when he lost a case he seldom failed to have the verdict of an intelligent public for what he had made to appear the better side. One of his most remarkable cases was that of Sims, the fugitive slave, whose defence he was called to undertake without an hour's previous notice, yet in whose behalf he made an argument to which, as we read the report of it to-day, it seems as if nothing could have been added, whether on the score of constitutional law or of natural right. A large proportion of the cases in which he appeared as an advocate were, like this last-named, such as he espoused with his whole heart, equally from feeling and from principle, so that he identified himself fully and entirely with the person or cause under trial.

Mr. Rantoul, at the outset of his public life, attached himself to the Democratic party from sincere conviction, and with full knowledge that this was not the way to obtain place or office, or even the recognition of ability or merit, in Massachusetts. But he never bore any part, nor felt any sympathy, with the pro-slavery sentiment, in which, for many years, the two great political parties had vied with each other in that sordid sycophancy to the South which culminated in the Fugitive-Slave Law. The passage of this law roused intense indignation in Massachusetts, and led to the building up of the Free-Soil party, with which the leaders of the Democracy were free to form a coalition, while loyalty to Mr. Webster restrained the opposing party from giving unanimity of expression to the feeling which, beyond a question, was universal throughout the State. Mr. Rantoul had several times before been nominated for Congress and had received a very large minority of votes. In 1851 he was elected by the Massachusetts Legislature, in which the Free-Soil party held the balance of power, to fill out Mr. Webster's unexpired term in the United States Senate, on his becoming Secretary of State, and in the same year he was chosen as a member of the House of Representatives for the Essex South District.

During the brief period of his Senatorship there was no occasion which called upon him for more than a few short speeches, on matters of no permanent importance. But in the House he at once took a prominent part in debate, not wholly in connection with the slavery issue, but on other subjects of national interest. On the occasions on which he addressed the House he showed himself armed at all points, whether for defence or for assault, and was probably the man above all others, whom the abettors of such wrongs as had assumed to their view the aspect of right most dreaded to encounter.

His vast learning, his tenacious memory and his prompt command of its resources, made him a most formidable opponent, while the same qualities fitted him for the efficient advocacy of measures conducive to the national progress and well-being.

But his career was cut short at the moment when he was winning the highest distinction, and when especially the friends of freedom were depending on his already well-proved strength as their champion. He was preparing a speech on the fisheries, a subject which he doubtless understood better than any other



man in Congress, when he was arrested by an attack of erysipelas, which, after a very brief illness, terminated fatally on the 7th of August, 1852.

In our summary narrative of Mr. Rantoul's professional and official life, we have described but a small portion of his work in and for the community of which he was a citizen. He was pre-eminently a public servant, unselfish and philanthropic, deeming it his highest privilege to advance the true interest and well-being of his country and his race. This was his ruling ambition, and it was an ambition that gave him no rest. He cared not for station or office, except as a post of usefulness. He would not have accepted the highest position in the world had it impaired the liberty of speech and pen; while he was content to remain a private citizen so long as he could make himself heard and felt by multitudes.

Mr. Rantoul bore no small part in the creation of facilities for travel and transportation. When the extension of the Boston and Worcester Railroad to Albany was first agitated, and the crossing of the mountain-spine in Western Massachusetts seemed an almost hopeless enterprise, he undertook the advocacy of this measure, and had large influence in procuring subsidy for it from the State and in winning for it the favor of private capitalists.

Illinois was indebted to him for like service, attended with no small personal loss and sacrifice, in the construction of her Central Railroad, and his name, so beneficially connected with her history, is kept in enduring memory, and has been given to a town that has sprung into being since his death.

In the cause of education Mr. Rantoul held a foremost place. He was among the founders of the system of Lyceum lectures, and lectured himself whenever he could find opportunity, in those early times when the lecturer sought only to instruct, not to amuse, his hearers, and had no compensation other than their gratitude. He started the publication of a series of Lyceum lectures and other popular tracts, in successive numbers, under the title of "The Working Men's Library."

He was one of the earliest movers in the establishment of the Massachusetts Board of Education, and was intimately associated with Horace Mann, as his defender and coadjutor in the reform of the common schools of the State. He procured the publication of two series of many volumes, which he virtually edited, under the name of "The Common-School Library,"—one series for the older, the other for less advanced pupils,—both consisting chiefly of standard works in various departments of knowledge, which in their ordinary editions were beyond the reach of common readers. He was an earnest advocate of the temperance cause, and, while conforming himself to the purest moral standard, he spared no effort when, by public address or by private influence, he could hope to bring his fellow-citizens up to the same elevated views. Indeed, his high tone of character, his friendly interest in whatever was of real moment to those around him, his perpetual propagandism of the primal truths and great causes that were dearer to him than success, prosperity or fame, gave him a commanding and beneficent influence over men of all classes and conditions with whom he was brought into relations, more or less intimate.

In 1831 Mr. Rantoul married Jane Elizabeth Woodbury, of Beverly. He had two sons, both living,—Robert Samuel, of Salem, a lawyer, who has been a member of both branches of the Massachusetts Legislature; and Charles William, now a resident of Florida.

Nathaniel James Lord was born in Ipswich October 28, 1805, and graduated at Harvard in 1825. He studied law in the law school at Northampton, under Judge Howe and Professor Ashmun and in the office of Leverett Saltonstall, at Salem, and was admitted to the bar in September, 1828. He was associated with Mr. Saltonstall in business until 1835, and afterwards, until the autumn of 1853, was actively engaged alone in the practice of the law. After the death of Mr. Saltonstall, in 1845, he was the acknowledged leader of the Essex bar. In his earliest professional life, as the junior partner of Mr. Saltonstall, he had little opportunity as junior counsel to show his extraordinary ability, but as soon as he launched his own boat and assumed command, he only waited for the death of his old venerable partner and the removal of Mr. Choate to Boston to become identified with his native county as its greatest lawyer. Besides these two eminent men, he had to cope with John Glen King, Joshua Holyoke Ward, Caleb Cushing, Robert Rantoul and Ebenezer Mosely, but his repeated trials of strength with these skillful antagonists, vindicated his claim to the first honors of his profession. He died at Salem June 18, 1869. On the 21st a special meeting of the Essex Bar Association was held, to take notice of the death of their late associate, at which William C. Endicott, the president of the association, delivered an address, analyzing and eulogizing the character of the deceased. He was followed by Asahel Huntington, Jonathan C. Perkins, Thomas B. Newhall and William D. Northend. At an adjourned meeting, held June 28th, Alfred A. Abbott, in behalf of a committee appointed at the previous meeting, presented a memorial on the life and character of Mr. Lord, which was accepted and ordered to be entered on the records of the association.

On the 2d of July, 1869, Mr. Abbott, in behalf of the Association, read the memorial in the Supreme Court, in session at Salem, and moved that it be placed on the records of the court. The motion was seconded by William C. Endicott, who was followed by Mr. Huntington in a motion that a copy be sent to the family of Mr. Lord. Chief Justice Brigham then addressed the bar, and in respect to the memory of Mr. Lord, the court adjourned.

JEREMIAH CHAPLIN STICKNEY, son of John and Martha (Chaplin) Stickney, was born in Rowley January 6, 1805. He pursued his education at the Bradford Academy and at the Salem Latin School, and graduated at Harvard in 1824. He studied law with David Cummins, and was admitted to the bar in 1826. He was postmaster of Lynn under President Jackson, Representative to the State Legislature in 1839 and 1840, reappointed postmaster of Lynn by President Pierce in 1853, and continued in office until 1858. He married, December 25, 1829, Mary, daughter of John Frazier, of Philadelphia, and died August 3, 1863.

JONATHAN COGSWELL PERKINS was born in Essex November 21, 1809, and graduated at Amherst in 1832, of which institution he was chosen a trustee in 1850. He studied law at the Dane Law School and in the office of Rufus Choate, and was admitted to the Essex bar, at Newburyport, in 1835. In 1845 and 1846 he was a member of the Massachusetts House of Representatives, in 1847 and 1848 a member of the State Senate, in 1848 president of the Salem Common Council, in 1853 a member of the Constitutional Convention, and in 1848 was appointed by Governor Briggs an associate judge of the Common Pleas Court, holding his seat until the abolition of that court and the establishment of the Superior Court in 1859. He received from his *alma mater* the degree of LL.D. in 1867. He edited and annotated "Daniels' Chancery Practice, with American Forms," "Sugden on Vendors," "Arnold on Insurance," "Benjamin on Sales," "Williams on Executors and Administrators," "Pickering's Reports," "Vesey's Reports," "Abbott on Shipping," "Angell on Watercourses," "Jarmin on Wills," and the several works of Chitty on Contracts, Bills, Criminal Law and Pleading. He died December 12, 1877, in Salem, where he had always lived after his admission to the bar in 1835. After he left the bench he was city solicitor of Salem.

JOSHUA HOLYOKE WARD was a native of Salem, where he died June 5, 1848, at the age of thirty-nine. He graduated at Harvard in 1829, and pursued his law studies in the office of Leverett Saltonstall at Salem, and at the Dane Law School at Cambridge, receiving the degree of LL.B. in 1832. In 1844 he was appointed one of the justices of the Court of Common Pleas, and remained on the bench until his death. He was a man of exceptional ability, with a promise universally recognized of a brilliant judicial career.

OTIS PHILLIPS LORD, brother of Nathaniel James Lord, was born in Ipswich July 11, 1812, and having fitted for college at Dummer Academy, entered Amherst with the class which graduated in 1832. He was the son of Nathaniel and Eunice (Kimball) Lord, and descended from Robert Lord, who came from Ipswich, England. He studied law with Judge Oliver B. Morris, judge of probate in Hampden County and in the Dane Law School at Cambridge, from which he graduated in 1836. He was admitted to the bar in Salem in December, 1835, and began practice in his profession in his native town. In 1844 he removed to Salem, where he resided until his death, March 13, 1884. He was a member of the House of Representatives in 1847, '48, '52, '53, '54, in which last year he was Speaker. In 1849 he was a member of the Senate, and in 1853 a delegate to the Constitutional Convention. Upon the organization of the Superior Court, in 1859, he was appointed by Governor Banks an associate justice, and held this position until he was appointed by Governor Gaston, December 21, 1875, an associate justice of the Supreme Judicial Court. The latter position he resigned December 8, 1882, and he died in Salem on the 13th of March, 1884.

On the 22d of March, only a few days after his death, a meeting of the members of the bar of the commonwealth was held in Boston, at which sentiments were expressed containing a just and deserved tribute to his character and services as a jurist and a man. Attorney-General Edgar J. Sherman, in presenting resolutions on that occasion, said that "for nearly a quarter of a century Judge Lord served the commonwealth as a judge of the highest tribunals with distinguished ability, and it was only when infirmities became inexorable that he reluctantly abandoned the position which was dear to him both as the post of duty and of honor. . . . He had a natural instinct for the law. His learning was not extensive, and his temperament was always too impatient for much research; but he could recognize a distinction or detect a fallacy at a glance. In his power to grasp and enunciate principles, to analyze and marshal evidence, to seize upon and with remorseless clearness and logic to present the controlling elements of a case, he was seldom, if ever, surpassed. . . His personal character was one of marked individuality, but it is no flattery of him to say that its most prominent features were the warmth and sincerity of his friendship, his rugged honesty, and a courage which never paltered with his convictions."

Chief Justice Morton, in the course of his response, said, "Judge Lord was a rapid thinker, and quickly formed impressions upon any questions of law presented to him. Whether his views were right or wrong, he saw them clearly and strongly; and such was his power of forcible expression, that there was at times danger that he might make the worse the better reason. But he had such control over his mind that he could grasp and appreciate any fair argument which tended to refute his views, and had the candor to abandon at once his position when convinced that he was in error. . . . In every relation of life he was a man of marked individuality and force. In every aspect of his character he was a strong man. He was strong in his intellect, strong in his emotions, strong in his friendships, strong in his dislikes and



Otis P. Lord

prejudices, strong in thought and strong in language, and, above all, strong in his integrity."

Nothing need be added to show what manner of judge and lawyer and man Otis Phillips Lord was believed by his contemporaries to be.

GEORGE MINOT, son of Judge Stephen Minot, of Haverhill, was born in that town January 5, 1817. He graduated at Harvard in 1836, and studied law with Rufus Choate, preparatory to his admission to the Suffolk bar in 1839. He is best known for the "Digest of the Decisions of the Supreme Judicial Court of Massachusetts," which he published in 1844, and to which he added a supplement in 1852. He died at Reading, Mass., April 16, 1858.

ROBERT WORMSTED TREVETT was born in 1789, and graduated at Harvard in 1808. He studied law and settled in Lynn in 1813, where he died January 13, 1842.

STEPHEN BRADSHAW IVES was born in Salem March 9, 1827, and was the son of Stephen B. Ives, of that city. He received his early education in the public schools and graduated at Harvard in 1848. After leaving college he taught school one season in Newbury, and afterwards had charge as principal of one of the Salem grammar schools. He studied law in the office of Northend & Choate, in Salem, and was admitted to the bar at Salem at the March term of the Court of Common Pleas in 1851. For a year or two he was clerk of the Salem Police Court, and in 1853 began active practice. By his eminent qualifications for his chosen profession, guided and spurred by an unusual enthusiasm in its pursuit, he early secured a large business and won an enviable reputation. He died at Salem February 8, 1884, and on the next day a meeting of the Bar Association of Essex County was held in the court-house, in Salem, and a committee consisting of William D. Northend, George F. Choate, A. A. Abbott, Daniel Saunders and Charles P. Thompson was appointed to prepare resolutions of respect to be presented to the court.

In the Supreme Judicial Court, sitting at Salem on the 24th of the following April, a worthy memorial was read by Alfred A. Abbott, who was followed in appropriate remarks by Mr. Northend, Mr. Thompson, Mr. Saunders, Charles A. Benjamin and Leverett S. Tuckerman.

Chief Justice Morton, presiding, accepted the memorial in behalf of the court and added his testimony to the high character, indomitable energy and professional skill of Mr. Ives. The whole bar acknowledged the truth of Mr. Abbott's statement that for "thirty years he pursued a career which has had few parallels in the history of the Essex Bar."

ALFRED A. ABBOTT, son of Amos Abbott, was born in Andover May 30, 1820. He was educated at Phillips Andover Academy and entered Yale College in 1837. At the end of his junior year he left Yale and entered Union College, from which he graduated in 1841. In 1843 he graduated also from the Dane Law School at Cambridge. His law studies were finished in the office of Joshua Holyoke Ward, and he was admitted to the bar in 1844. He commenced practice in that part of Danvers which is now Peabody, and made that his residence until his death, October 27, 1884. He represented the town of Danvers in the Legislature in 1850–52, and the county of Essex in the Senate in 1853. In the latter year he was a member of the Constitutional Convention, and was appointed district attorney for the Eastern District. He held office as attorney until 1869. In 1870 he was appointed, upon the death of Mr. Huntington, clerk of the courts, and in the same year he was chosen for Mr. Huntington's unexpired term. He continued in office until his death, having been twice re-elected.

In a memorial read by William D. Northend, president of the Essex Bar Association in the Superior Court at Salem, December 8, 1884, Mr. Northend said: "Mr. Abbott was something more than a lawyer or clerk of the courts; he was a man of broad culture and large knowledge and experience outside his profession. He read the best books and was a thorough student of English literature. His occasional public addresses were models of excellence. His style was elegant and graceful and his language most felicitous. . . . He had a very sympathetic nature, his delivery was forcible and impressive and as an orator he had no equal in the county since the days of Rufus Choate. If he had sought distinction in the general practice of his profession, there was no place at the bar or on the bench to which he could not have justly aspired; or if he had cherished political ambition, he had the qualities which would have insured him a high position and reputation as a statesman."

JOHN K. TARBOX was born in that part of Methuen which is now Lawrence May 6, 1838. His parents, of Huguenot extraction, were poor, and at the age of eight years he was left an orphan under the guardianship of Rev. Bailey Loring, of North Andover. He was educated in the public schools of Methuen and Lawrence and the Franklin Academy of North Andover, and while still a youth, entered as clerk the drug-store of Henry M. Whitney, of Lawrence. In 1857, at the age of nineteen, he became a student in the law-office of Colonel Benjamin F. Watson, of Lawrence, whose attention had been attracted by his exhibition of mental activity and who advised him to prepare himself for the profession of law. In 1860 he was admitted to the bar and also to a partnership with Colonel Watson, and at a later day was a partner of Edgar J. Sherman, the present attorney-general of the commonwealth. During a part of the war he was a paymaster's clerk, and on the 28th of August, 1863, was mustered out of the service as lieutenant of Company B, Fourth Massachusetts Regiment.

After leaving the service he became the political editor of the *Lawrence American*, and in 1864 was a delegate to the Democratic National Convention. In

1868, '70, '71, he was a Representative from Lawrence, in 1873 Senator and in 1873–74 mayor of that city. In 1870,'72,'76,'78, he was an unsuccessful candidate of the Democratic party for Congress, but in 1874 was chosen and sat in the Forty-fourth Congress. In 1879 he presided at the Democratic State Convention, and, in 1883, while city solicitor of Lawrence, was appointed by Governor Butler insurance commissioner. He was reappointed by Governor Robinson in 1886, and won a deserved reputation, not only for the faithful and thorough performance of the duties of that office, but also for his exhaustive labors in the revision and codification of the insurance laws of the State, in obedience to a resolve of the General Court. He died in Boston, May 28th, 1887.

NATHAN W. HARMON was born in New Ashford, January 16, 1813. His early life was spent on a farm with the educational advantages of the common schools. He fitted for college at Lenox and graduated at Williams in 1836. In 1839 he was admitted to the bar in Berkshire County, and his name is on the list of admissions to the Essex bar in 1842. After practising law a few years in Berkshire County, a part of the time as partner of George N. Briggs, afterward Governor of the Commonwealth, he removed to Lawrence and made that place ever afterward his residence. In 1857 he was a member of the House of Representatives, and at a later time a member of the State Senate. In 1876 he was appointed Judge of the Police Court of Lawrence and held office until January of the present year (1887), when, on account of enfeebled health, he resigned. He died September 16th, 1887, leaving two daughters, Harriet and Cornelia, and one son, Rollin E. Harmon, Judge of the Police Court of Lynn.

HON. JAMES HENRY DUNCAN was born in Haverhill, Mass., December 5, 1793. On the paternal side he was of Scotch-Irish descent. His great-grandfather, George Duncan, was one of the colony that came from Londonderry, Ireland, and settled in Londonderry, N. H., 1719. His grandfather, James, came to Haverhill about 1740, where he established himself as a merchant. He died in 1818, aged ninety-two years. He had ten children, the sixth of whom was James, who married Rebecca White, and died January 5, 1822, aged sixty-two years. He left two children—Samuel White, who died October 21, 1824, and James Henry, of this sketch.

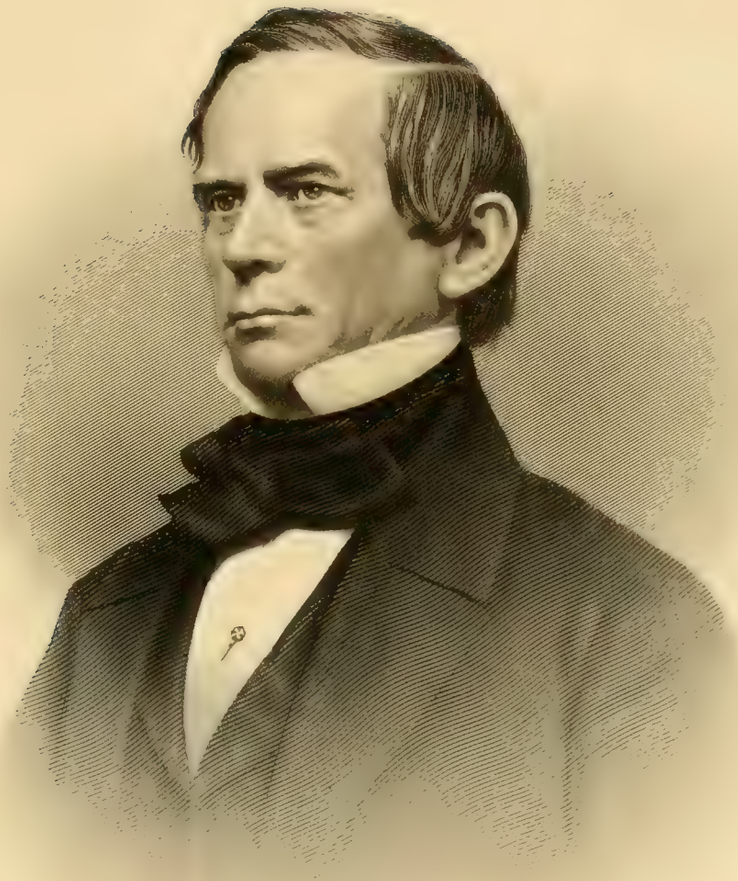
On the maternal side the family of Mr. Duncan covers the entire history of Haverhill, a period of more than two centuries, and on the paternal side the three generations cover more than half of this period.

Mr. Duncan early evinced a fondness for books, and at the age of eleven years he was sent to Phillips' Academy at Exeter, N. H., then the leading classical school in the country. Here he was brought into the companionship of Edward Everett, Jared A. Sparks, Buckminster, John G. Palfrey and John A. Dix. The stimulating influence of such companions, aided by his own quick faculties, rapidly developed him; and at the age of fourteen he entered Harvard College. He was graduated in due course, in the class of 1812, with Dr. John Homans, Judge Sprague, Bishop Wainwright, Henry Ware, Franklin Dexter, Charles G. Loring and others. In college Mr. Duncan held a high rank, especially in the classics, the careful study of which was strongly apparent in the smooth, rounded, Latinized style that marked his conversation and public speech.

The career, thus happily begun, was followed by the study of the law,—first in the office of Hon. John Varnum at Haverhill, and afterwards with his cousin, Leverett Saltonstall, at Salem. In 1815 he was admitted to the Essex bar, and entered upon practice at Haverhill. For several years Mr. Duncan gave his entire time to his profession; but the death of his father, January 5, 1822, left him in the charge of a considerable estate, which gradually withdrew him from its duties, though he did not wholly relinquish practice until 1849, when he took his seat in Congress. It has been thought by many a misfortune for his own reputation, that the cares of property interfered with the ardent practice of his profession. His ready and sympathetic eloquence, his thorough honesty and comprehensive judgment gave promise of a brilliant future. But probably his life was more widely useful than if he had remained an advocate. As a lawyer he was devoid of trickery, and he instinctively repudiated those indirect methods often employed in the profession. Though richly gifted as an advocate, he had a constitutional aversion to litigation, and thus was oftener engaged in settling cases than in disputing them. We copy here from the resolutions of the Essex bar, passed after his death:

"*Resolved*, That we desire to express and put on record our respect for the memory and character of the Honorable James H. Duncan, whose recent death was so sincerely and deeply lamented in the particular community where he was born and lived, as well as by the public at large. Mr. Duncan entered on the practice of the law in the courts of this county, more than fifty years ago, after a thorough preparation, according to the usages of the day, partly in the office of the late Leverett Saltonstall, so distinguished here in his generation, and his kinsman and friend. He pursued his profession here for many years, with marked fidelity and success, always trusted and respected by his brethren, until, having served his State honorably and usefully in both branches of the Legislature, he was called by the general voice of his fellow-citizens into the public councils of the country, now more than twenty years ago, since which time he has withdrawn himself wholly from the practice of the profession, and attendance on the courts. Of late years he has been known as a lawyer, to much the largest portion now in practice at this bar, only by the 'tradition of the elders,' among whom, as well as in the courts, he had obtained and always held a 'good report.'"

Mr. Duncan lived what might be called a *public life;* yet it was through a certain evident fitness that led him to be called to its duties, rather than from his own seeking. A short time previous to his admission to the bar, he was elected major in the Haverhill Light Infantry; and, passing through the various grades of militia service, he rose to the rank of colonel, by which title he was afterwards commonly addressed. He was early a trustee of the Essex County



James H. Duncan

Agricultural Society, and from 1836 to 1838 its president.

On the formation of the National Republican party, popularly known as the Whig party, in 1827, he was elected to the State Legislature, and in the three succeeding years to the Senate, when he declined re-election. In 1837–38, he was again found in the House; and in the two following years, he was a member of the Council. In 1857 he was again elected to the Legislature. On the passage of the State Insolvent Law, in 1838, he was appointed one of the Commissioners in Insolvency; and on the passage of the United States Bankrupt Law, in 1841, he was made Commissioner in Bankruptcy, holding the office until the law was repealed. In 1839 he was elected a delegate to the convention at Harrisburg that nominated General Harrison for the Presidency. In 1848 he was chosen to represent his district, then the largest manufacturing district in the United States, in the national Congress; and was re-elected in 1850.

Of his Congressional career Hon. Amos Tuck, of Exeter, at the time United States Senator from New Hampshire, thus speaks:

"He entered Congress at the first session of General Taylor's administration, when the problems in politics and government, which grew out of the Mexican War and the acquisition of California and New Mexico, infused such intensity of feeling into the public mind. The old Whig party, with which Mr. Duncan had long been honorably connected, was becoming more anti-slavery; while the Democratic party was gradually giving way to the entire leadership of Southern men, and becoming hopelessly involved in the sin, shame and want of statesmanship, involved in the advocacy and support of slavery extension. Mr. Duncan had relations of friendship with the old leaders of the Whig party, and was welcomed into their fellowship at Washington on his arrival at that city. But his moral perceptions had been cultivated beyond what was common among the devotees of either of the old parties, and he knew and felt the force of the moral questions which were discussed throughout the country upon the relation of the government to slavery. Attached to his party, and attached to his honored friends, he yet could not be blind or deaf or insensible to the claims for justice of the humble who could not even speak for themselves. He remembered those in bonds, as bound with them, and, at the expense of personal comfort, voted, I believe, from first to last, during his Congressional term of four years, under all the circumstances of an excited period of our history, on the slavery question in all its phases, only as his best friends could now wish he had voted, after all the light since shed upon the subject. That he so signally and uniformly acted on the side of wisdom and right, while so many of his associates were misled by excitement, or failed for other reasons to see and maintain what it is now apparent they ought to have supported, I attribute in a great degree to his elevated moral character, to his cultivated sense of right, to his determination never to violate the dictates of an enlightened conscience. He was not a frequent debater in the House of Representatives; but when he did speak, he commanded more than common attention. He was one whom to know was to love, who made many friends and no enemies, and who left Congress possessing universal esteem."

The tribute of affection and respect which the poet Whittier paid to him after his decease makes honorable mention of him as a man in public life and in his social relations. "His Congressional career was a highly honorable one, marked by his characteristic soundness of judgment and conscientious faithfulness to a high ideal of duty. In private life as in public, he was habitually courteous and gentlemanly. For many years the leading man in his section, he held his place without ostentation, and achieved greatness by not making himself great."

Not the least of Mr. Duncan's public services were his labors in behalf of the Union during the Civil War. He was active with voice and pen in strengthening the hands of the government. He cheerfully acted as the medium of communication between the soldiers in the field and their families at home. They sent to him their well-earned money, which he personally distributed, gladdening often many a humble home by his presence as the harbinger of good tidings and comfort.

These statements indicate how constantly Mr. Duncan was in public life. Meanwhile, he was serving in other large public interests not of a political nature; while in town matters his services were constantly demanded. For fifty years, scarcely an important item of municipal business was transacted except under his advice or leadership. If a matter needed to be brought before the General Court he was delegated to do it. He took the leading part in the erection of two town halls, making, at the dedication of both, historical addresses. In this connection Hon. Alfred Kittredge says,—"He took great interest in the affairs of the town, and frequently addressed his fellow-citizens upon subjects of importance. He was listened to with great interest, and usually carried a majority with him. In all discussions he was in a marked degree gentlemanly, both in his manner of presenting subjects and in his treatment of those who differed from him, stating his own views forcibly, and giving others due credit for their own. He had a remarkably clear utterance, and a rich ringing voice that gave him great power over an audience. When in the Legislature, Samuel Allen, I think, gave him the cognomen of the 'silver-tongued member' from Haverhill.

This sketch would be incomplete if it overlooked Mr. Duncan's relation to the great religious and benevolent movements of his time. He took the most lively interest in the cause of education, and in the great missionary organizations of his own and other Christian denominations. He was a member of the Board of Fellows of Brown University from 1835 till his death. In 1861 the Board conferred on him the honorary degree of Doctor of Laws. It is not too much to say that his name and influence were a tower of strength in the councils of the corporation. It is thus that Barnas Sears, then president of the University, speaks of him as he appeared at its annual meetings, or in the larger gatherings of the representatives of the Missionary Union,—"Long will men remember the impressions made on these and similar occasions by this Christian gentleman and scholar, with his finely-cut features and symmetrical form, his graceful and animated delivery, his chaste, beautiful, and musical language, his pertinent, clear and convincing arguments, his unflinching fidelity, and spotless integrity. So blended in him were these various attributes of body and

mind that we can think of them only in their union, and it would seem that a mind of delicate mould had formed for itself a bodily organ suited to its own purposes. In him we see how much Christianity can do for true culture, and how beautiful an ornament culture is to Christianity."

Mr. Duncan during his whole life worshipped with the First Baptist Church in Haverhill, though he did not become a member of the church until the age of forty. His ancestors on both sides were among its founders. Thus a Baptist by birth and education he afterwards added to the principles thus inculcated the full conviction of his mature years. However attached to his own communion he was not in the narrow sense of the term a denominationalist. By nature he was catholic and took the broad and liberal side on all church questions. Every good cause had in him a friend. He wrought zealously with all true lovers of God and man. The cause of home and foreign missions, of popular education and the dissemination of a sound literature enlisted his earnest advocacy. Indeed, he was quick in his response to all good objects by which humanity could be elevated and God honored.

Mr. Duncan remained single till the age of thirty-three, when, June 28, 1826, he married Miss Mary Willis, daughter of Benjamin Willis, Esq., of Boston. Thirteen children were born to them. Three died in early childhood, and three passed away after they had attained to adult years, leaving seven,—two sons and five daughters. His home, of which Mr. Duncan was pre-eminently the head, was the centre of a liberal culture and of a refined and generous hospitality. This hospitality was not the mere reciprocation of society. His ample mansion was open alike to friends and strangers. If the town, or any religious or secular interest could be served by his hospitality, it was proffered without stint. His house was regarded as the temporary home of public speakers, lecturers, clergymen and all others to whom hospitality seemed due. The grace and tact and dignity which Mr. Duncan uniformly exhibited thus in his own home is remembered by multitudes.

Mr. Duncan's last illness was brief, and its fatal termination was a surprise to all. Although he was seventy-five years old he bore no marks of age. A cold which caused no apprehensions at first, suddenly developed into pneumonia, which after only a few days of sickness terminated fatally, February 8, 1869. The announcement of his death passed rapidly through the town, and was received almost with incredulity. When the surprise passed, a general sorrow and sense of bereavement took possession of all hearts. Many had lost in him a loved and faithful friend, and all felt that the town had been bereaved of its most useful and honored citizen, and that his place would not soon be filled. By the general urgent desire of the community the funeral services were held in the church, instead of the house, as was first intended, and were attended by a large concourse of people. Though holding no office at the time, such was the appreciation of his services in the past, and such the sense of the love sustained by his removal, that the town adopted most appropriate resolutions upon the event.

There are other deceased members of the bar of whom sketches would be interesting, if reliable materials could be readily obtained. Some of these will be remembered by present members of the bar, and are as deserving of a place in this record as many who have been especially mentioned. Edward Pulling (H. C.), 1775, John W. Proctor, Jacob Gerrish, Ellis G. Loring, Francis B. Crowninshield, George H. Devereaux, George Andrews, Hobart Clark, Asa Andrews, Eben Shillaber, John B. Peabody, Wm. Howland, George Foster Flint, Frederick D. Burnham and Jairus Ware Perry are some of those whose sketches have been necessarily omitted.

Hon. Stephen Henry Phillips[1] was the eldest son of the Hon. Stephen Clarendon Phillips and Jane Appleton (Peele) Phillips, of Salem. His paternal great-grandfather, Deacon Stephen Phillips, a descendant of the Rev. George Phillips who reached Salem with Winthrop in 1630, and settled at Watertown, had removed from his ancestral home in that town to Marblehead, where he became a leading citizen, taking the Chair as Moderator of the tumultuous town-meeting called to protest against the Boston Port Bill of 1773, and was thenceforth an active patriot and a member of the Committee of Correspondence and Safety. His grandfather, Stephen Phillips, was a well-known citizen and merchant of Marblehead. His father's public services as a sturdy supporter of the interests of Salem, as an untiring friend of Freedom in Congress and elsewhere and of the Public School System of Massachusetts, will be recounted by others and are freshly remembered. Other descendants of the same Puritan ancestry have won distinction. The same stock produced the founders of academies bearing the name at Exeter and at Andover. It produced the famous Boston patriot of the Revolution, William Phillips; his son, the first mayor of Boston, John Phillips; in the third generation, Wendell Phillips, a son of the latter, our matchless master of English speech; as well as that much admired divine, the Rev. Phillips Brooks.

The subject of this sketch was born at the family mansion in Charter Street, Salem, now occupied as a City Hospital, August 16, 1823. His school experience was unique. Before 1830 he had been a pupil at the dame's school of Miss Mehetable Higginson, and from that date on he enjoyed the successive teachings of Henry K. Oliver, with whom Jones Very, David Mack, and Surgeon John L. Fox of the Wilkes Exploring Expedition were assistants, in Salem; of Frederick P. Leverett, at the Old South Chapel in Bos-

[1] Robert S. Rantoul.



Stephen H. Phillips.

ton; of the Rev. Joseph Allen at his boarding-school in Northampton; and of William J. Adams at a private school in Murray Street, New York City. The year 1836 found him at the Select Classical School in Washington, D. C., founded by Salmon P. Chase when a law student in the office of Attorney-General Wirt, and there Charles Levi Woodbury, Alfred Pleasanton, since known as a famous cavalry general, and Mansfield Lovell, the rebel commandant who evacuated New Orleans in face of Farragut, were among his schoolmates. The next year he passed in Salem at the school of Rufus T. King, in Chestnut Street, and another year under Master Oliver Carlton, of the Latin Grammar School, brought him a certificate with which, at the exceptional age of fifteen, he entered Harvard in 1838, taking his degree in course, a winter spent in the West Indies in the senior year for the recovery of his health depriving him of the very high rank he had previously held. Here he had for classmates the Rev. Samuel Johnson, of Salem, the eminent Orientalist, and a well-known essayist and magazine writer, Frederick Sheldon, of Newport, R. I. On graduating in 1842, he became a member of Harvard Chapter, Alpha, of the Society of the Phi Beta Kappa, and was at a later date a founder, and for its first six years President, of the Harvard Club of San Francisco.

The three years following his graduation,—the last three years of the life of its great patron, Judge Story,—Mr. Phillips spent at the Dane Law School, where Charles Sumner was an occasional lecturer and Simon Greenleaf was Royal Professor. Ex-President Rutherford B. Hayes; Chief Justice Peters, of Maine; Chief Justice Morton, of Massachusetts; Chief Justice Lee, of the Sandwich Islands; Ex-Chief Justice Foster, of New Hampshire, and Ex-Chief Justice Bradley, of Rhode Island, were among his fellow students. After a further period of study in the office of the Hon. Benjamin R. Curtis, at Boston, he was admitted to practice at the Suffolk bar in April, 1846, and for the years 1847, '48, '49, '50 edited the *Boston Law Reporter*.

Having removed his office to Salem, Mr. Phillips was appointed by Governor Boutwell, in 1851, District Attorney for the County of Essex, a position which he filled with acceptance and which he resigned in 1854. Advancing rapidly in professional and general estimation, and having formed a business connection with James A. Gillis, since for many years City Solicitor of Salem,—an office which Mr. Phillips himself filled for the years 1856, '57,—he had already achieved a leading position at the Essex bar, when he was elected in the last named year, at the unusual age of thirty-four, Attorney-general of the Commonwealth. This responsible and dignified position he retained by popular election through the three years' administration of Governor Banks, the first Republican administration in Massachusetts, and at its close, in 1861, was by him appointed Judge-advocate-general of the militia of the State.

Continuing the practice of his profession in Boston and in Salem, with such interruptions as no patriotic citizen could honorably avoid during the five troubled years which followed, and acting, from November, 1863, as chairman first of the City Water Committee, charged with procuring an act for the introduction of a water-supply for Salem, and then of the Water Commission, upon which devolved the duty of construction, Mr. Phillips in 1866 accepted overtures from Kamehameha V. for a position as one of the four responsible ministers of his privy council, and temporarily left the United States for Honolulu. Under the Hawaiian constitution, modeled largely on our own, he acted, throughout his residence in Honolulu, as Attorney-general, and for a considerable portion of the time as Minister of Foreign Affairs also. At times he added to these trusts that of Minister of Finance, and very generally he was the recognized head of the Royal Government in the House of Nobles, King's Cabinet and Privy Council. He was at liberty to practice in the courts of law in causes in which the interests of the State were not involved.

A position as the responsible head of a government like this is not without peculiar difficulties. For reasons of their own, England, France and the United States had seen fit to recognize the Sandwich Islands as an independent sovereignty. But with a standing army of seventy men, it was no mean task to keep the peace amongst as many thousands of these tawny, mercurial, Malayo-Polynesian subjects; to suppress the occasional armed outbreaks of religious fanaticism or of jealousy of foreign influence; to maintain at all times the dignity and self-respect of a reigning house under a form of government, nominally constitutional, in which the elements of strength were wanting, and, while yielding all that could safely be granted to foreign commercial and diplomatic agents and foreign missionaries, to see to it that none of them secured concessions injurious to rival denominations, nationalities or interests, or to the State. And this was the task which confronted Mr. Phillips during his seven years' residence at Honolulu. He was largely instrumental in the reciprocity negotiations of 1867–69, in which President Grant took so active an interest as to invite him to a private interview, and while securing to the people of the islands a measure of domestic tranquillity and peace which made life and property as safe there as in any portion of the civilized world, he was able to apply to their foreign affairs the good, old American doctrine of Washington's farewell address,—"Friendly relations with all nations; entangling alliances with none."

Upon the change of dynasty consequent upon the death of Kamehameha V., Mr. Phillips returned in 1873 to the United States and established himself at San Francisco as Resident-Director and Solicitor of the Equitable Life Assurance Society of the United States. During eight years spent here in the practice of the law he was at times retained as the official coun-

sel of the State Board of Railroad Commissioners, and the California State Reports show that he appeared in important causes, of which *Estate of Hinckley*, 58 *Cal.*, 457, dealing in a radical way with the State law of charities, is perhaps the most noteworthy. In 1881 he resumed the practice of his profession in the State of Massachusetts, residing in Danvers. He had previously married, at Haverhill, Oct. 3, 1871, while on a temporary absence from Honolulu, Miss Margaret D., daughter of the Hon. James H. Duncan, of Haverhill, a lady whose acquaintance he had made in the Hawaiian Islands.

It will be seen that, throughout a somewhat varied career, Mr. Phillips has only in a single instance been a candidate for office before the people, and in that instance the office was a professional one. Never slow to respond to the calls of good citizenship and good neighborhood; never hesitating to show his colors in any exigency where the public has a right to his opinions, he remains first, last and always a lawyer. Coming to the Essex bar, one of the ablest in the country, at a time when the rough habits of bluster and brow-beating were passing out of vogue, he made it his rule to appeal directly and with emphasis to the intelligence and convictions of jurors, and to the sound, legal discrimination of the Court, and in all cases to treat persons whom chance placed in his power on the witness-stand with the consideration due to that most trying and unprotected of positions. The thorough preparation which was insured to every cause entrusted to his hands left nothing to be decided by chance which could be foreseen and provided for, and the sagacity, energy, discretion and nerve which he displayed in his chosen calling were not slow in meeting their reward. It came to be a rare occurrence during his practice at the Essex bar to find a case of exceptional magnitude on trial from any part of the county in which Mr. Phillips did not appear on one side or the other. Among the most interesting of his cases may be noticed *Boston and Lowell Railroad Corporation vs. Salem and Lowell Railroad Company*, 2 *Gray*, 1; the famous Rockport liquor case, *Brown vs. Perkins, et ux.*, 12 *Gray*, 89; and a case against the Sergeant-at-arms, upon writ of *habeas corpus*, *Burnham vs. Morrissey*, 14 *Gray*, 226, which settled the constitutional prerogative of the House of Representatives, in matters of contempt.

While Attorney-general of Massachusetts Mr. Phillips was called on to prepare papers for the removal, by process of address to the Governor, of the Hon. Edward Greeley Loring from the office of Judge of Probate for the county of Suffolk, a proceeding which excited the most intense political feeling at the time, for which the files of the office afforded no precedent, and which did more than any other single event to make of a comparatively unknown lawyer, John Albion Andrew, the great War Governor of Massachusetts. He was also called to Lynn by a threatening demonstration of unemployed workmen during the feverish period which succeeded the financial disasters of 1857, and by his firm bearing and calm, persuasive address did much to avert the grave disorders which seemed to be impending. He was present, as a member of the Governor's staff, at the great Concord muster of the State Militia in October, 1860, and seconded in every way the efforts then making to put the Massachusetts contingent on a war footing. Not many months later he found an opportunity to present the sword there worn to a citizen of Marblehead, marching, in command of a company of his patriotic townsmen, the first company in the State to respond to the call of Governor Andrew, to the relief of the capital beleaguered with rampant treason, and it received no stain in the hands of Captain Knott V. Martin.

Mr. Phillips was associated with ex-Governor Clifford as Commissioner of Massachusetts for the adjustment of a boundary question between this State and Rhode Island, which called for the intervention of the Attorney-General of the United States, and was in Washington on that errand in the closing days of January, 1861. Brought, in this way, in daily contact with Mr. Stanton, at a time when Mr. Buchanan's Cabinet was in the last stages of disintegration, the Massachusetts Commissioners were not slow to divine the nature of the suspicions which distracted him, and reported confidentially to Governor Andrew, in the following letter:

WASHINGTON, Wednesday night, January 30, 1861.

DEAR SIR:—In an interview we had to-night with the Attorney-general of the United States, we have been authorized to express to you, *confidentially*, his *individual* opinion that there is imminent, if not inevitable peril of an attack upon the city of Washington between the 4th and the 15th of February—with a view to secure the symbols of government and the power and prestige of possession by the traitors who are plotting the dissolution of the Union.

We have but a moment before the closing of the mail to say to you, in this informal way, that no vigilance should be relaxed for Massachusetts to be ready at any moment, and upon a sudden emergency, to come to the succor of the Federal Government.

This may be an unnecessary precaution, but we feel that it is a simple discharge of a plain duty on our part to give you this intimation after what we have heard from a source of such high authority.

In great haste, we are very truly and respectfully yours,

JOHN H. CLIFFORD.
STEPHEN H. PHILLIPS.

GOV. ANDREW.

Governor Claflin, in his address in Doric Hall, February 14, 1871, accepting in behalf of the Commonwealth the Statue of Governor Andrew, says it was upon this letter that action was taken, February 5, 1861, to furnish two regiments with overcoats, not a company in the State being then ready for marching orders, and he attributes to this cause the advanced state of preparation which enabled our troops, though remote, to reach Washington with the foremost.

Bred among the Conscience Whigs, so called, Mr. Phillips became a Free Soiler from the start and acted with that party in the national campaigns of 1848 and 1852. In 1856 he represented his native

district in the first national Republican Convention which sat at Philadelphia and nominated Fremont. Subsequently he served as president of the local campaign club, which met weekly at Lynde Hall, Salem, in support of that nomination, and in 1864 he sat again in the Republican Convention which named Lincoln for a second term. In 1884 he presided at a county demonstration in Salem in support of Blaine and Logan. His religious affiliations have been with the Unitarian body, with such advanced leaders of thought as Channing, Emerson and Parker. Mr. Phillips holds personal independence above sectarian and party allegiance.

NATHANIEL WARD was born in Haverhill, County of Suffolk, England, in 1570. He was the son of Rev. John Ward, one of a long line in direct descent belonging to the clerical profession. He graduated at Cambridge in 1603, studied law in the Temple and after extended travels on the continent, began his professional practice. He soon, however, abandoned the law, and studied divinity, finally settling as a clergyman in Standon, in Hertfordshire. As early as the year 1629 he seems to have become disaffected towards the English Church. The following is an extract from the records of a meeting of the "Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England," held in London, November 25, 1629 :

"Lastly, upon the mocon of Mr. Whyte, to the end that this business might bee pceeded in wth the first intencon, wch was cheifly the glory of God & to that purpose that their meetings might bee sanctyfied by the prayers of some faithfull ministers resident heere in London, whose advice would be likewise requisite upon many occasions, the Court thought fitt to admitt into the freedome of this company Mr. Jo: Archer & Mr. Phillip Nye, Ministers heere in London, who, being heere psent, kindly accepted thereof: also Mr. Whyte did recomend unto them Mr. Nathaniell Ward, of Standon."

On the 12th of December, 1631, he was ordered to appear before Bishop Laud and answer the charge of non-conformity. In 1633 he was forbidden to preach, and in April, 1634, sailed for New England, arriving in June. He was settled at once, as the first minister of Agawam (now Ipswich), with Rev. Thomas Parker, as the teacher or assistant. In 1636 he resigned, on account of ill health, and seems after that time, as long as he remained in New England, to have been engaged, more or less, in public affairs, for the details of which his early education in the law had specially fitted him. *Winthrop's Journal*, first printed in 1790, says that "on the 6th of the 3d month, May, 1635, the Deputies having conceived great danger to our State in regard that our magistrates, for want of positive laws in many cases, might proceed according to their discretion, it was agreed that some men shall be appointed to frame the body of grounds of laws in resemblance to a *Magna Charta*, which, being allowed by some of the ministers and the General Court, should be received for fundamental laws."

The above extract does not appear in the records of the court, but the following entry is found in the record of the proceedings of the above date:

"The Governor (John Haynes), Deputy-governor (Richard Bellingham), John Winthrop & Tho: Dudley, Esq., are deputed by the Court to make a draught of such lawes as they shall judge needfull for the well ordering of this plantation, & to present the same to the Court."

On the 25th of May, 1636, nothing having been yet accomplished in the matter of the laws, the records state that "The Governor (Henry Vane), Deputy-governor (John Winthrop), Tho: Dudley, John Haynes, Rich: Bellingham, Esq., Mr. Cotton, Mr. Peters & Mr. Shepheard, are intreated to make a draught of lawes agreeable to the word of God, which may be the fundamentals of this commonwealth, & to present the same to the next Generall Court."

In September, 1636, Mr. Cotton reported a code of laws, but no action was taken on their adoption. Under the date of March 12, 1637–38, the following entry appears in the records of the General Court :

"For the well ordering of these plantations, now in the beginning thereof it having been found by the little time of experience we have here had that the want of written laws have put the court into many doubts and much trouble in many particular cases, this Court hath therefore ordered that the freemen of every town (or some part thereof chosen by the rest) within this jurisdiction shall assemble together in their several towns & collect the heads of such necessary and fundamental laws as may be suitable to the times and places where God by his providence hath cast us, & the heads of such laws to deliver in writing to the Governor for the time being before the 5th day of the 4th month, called June, next to the intent that the same Governor together with the rest of the standing counsell & Richard Bellingham, Esq., Mr. Bulkley, Mr. Phillips, Mr. Peters & Mr. Sheapard, elders of several churches, Mr. Nathaniel Ward, Mr. William Spencer & Mr. William Hawthorne, or the major part of them, may upon the survey of such heads of law make a compendious abridgement of the same by the General Court in autumn next, adding yet to the same or detracting therefrom what in their wisdom shall seem meet."

Winthrop's *Journal* states that in December, 1641, "The General Court continued three weeks and established one hundred laws, which were called the Body of Liberties, composed by Mr. Nathaniel Ward sometime past at Ipswich, who had been a minister in England, and formerly a student and practiser in the course of the Common Law." This was the first code of laws established in New England, and was so mingled in the subsequent codification of the laws with later statutes, that for a long period its precise provisions were unknown. In or about 1823, however, Mr. Francis C. Gray, of Boston, found in the Boston Athenæum a manuscript of sixty pages which,

probably, belonged to Elisha Hutchinson, who died in 1717, at the age of seventy-seven years. This manuscript contained a copy of the colonial charter and a "Coppie of the Liberties of the Massachusetts Colony in New England." This "Coppie" contained one hundred distinct articles separated by black lines, the introductory and concluding paragraphs not being numbered. Unlike the code, which Rev. Mr. Cotton prepared, and which was not accepted, it did not follow closely the laws of Moses, nor did it cite Scripture except relating to punishments. Cotton went so far in this respect as to add to the provision "that the Governor, and in his absence the Deputy Governor, shall have power to send out warrants for calling the General Court together," the Scripture authority contained in the first verse of the twenty-fourth chapter of Joshua, "And Joshua gathered all the tribes of Israel to Shechem and called for the elders of Israel, and for their heads, and for their judges, and for their officers, and they presented themselves before God."

The Body of Liberties followed the Scriptures so far as to make no crimes capital, not made so by the Mosaic law, and some of these were omitted, such as heresy, profaning the Lord's Day, reviling magistrates, etc. As the author of this code, Nathaniel Ward, a resident in Essex County, as long as he remained in New England, is entitled to a place in this narrative.

On the 13th of May, 1640, the General Court granted him six hundred acres of land at Pentucket (now Haverhill), which he sold November 26, 1646, to John Eaton. In 1641 he preached the election sermon. During the winter of 1646–47 he returned to England, and was settled at Shenfield, in the county of Essex, where he died in 1653. His son John, born in Haverhill, England, November 6, 1606, graduated at Cambridge in 1630, and was settled in Haverhill, Mass., in 1645, where he died December 27, 1693.

Mr. Ward was an author of some notoriety, if not repute in other fields than that of law. In 1648 he published a humorous satirical address to the London tradesmen, turned preachers, entitled "Mercurius Anti-Mechanicus on the Simple Coblers Boy," which was reprinted in Washington in 1844. On the 30th of June, 1647, he preached a sermon before the House of Commons, which was published, and in the same year published "A Religious Retreat sounded to a Religious Army." In 1648 he published "The humble petitions, serious suggestions and dutiful expostulations of some freeholders of the Easterne Association to the high and low Parliament of England," and in 1650 "Discolliminium a Reply to Bounds and Bonds." But the work by which, next to the Body of Liberties, he is best known, is a quaint political tract satirizing the affairs and manners of the Massachusetts Colony and the fashionable ladies of the day, of which the following is a copy of the title-page:

"The simple Cobler of Aggawam in America Willing To help mend his native country lamentably tattered both in the upper Leather and Sole with all the honest stiches he can take

And as willing never to be paid for his work by old English wonted pay.

It is his trade to patch all the year long gratis.

Therefore *I* pray *gentlemen* keep your purses.

By Theodore de la Guard

In rebus arduis ac tenui spe, fortissima quaeque confilia tutissima sunt. Cic.

In English.

When boots and shoes are torne up to the lefts
Coblers must thrust their awles up to the hefts.
This is no time to fear Apellis gramm:
Ne sutor quidem ultra crepidam.

London.

Printed by J. D. & R. T. for Stephen Bowtell at the signe of the Bible in Popes Head Alley

1647."

This work, though printed in England after the return of Mr. Ward, was written in New England in 1645. A careful reprint was edited by David Pulsifer, of Boston, in 1847.

THOMAS BANCROFT NEWHALL.—Mr. Newhall was born in that part of Lynn which is now the town of Lynnfield October 2, 1811. He is a lineal descendant from Thomas Newhall, the first white child born in Lynn, and a son of Asa T. Newhall, a prominent and successful farmer and magistrate.

Mr. Newhall was fitted for college at Andover and Lynn Academies, and graduated from Brown University in 1832. He studied law in offices in Danvers and Boston and at the Harvard Law School, and was admitted to the bar at the March term of the Court of Common Pleas, 1837, and early in the following month established himself in business in Lynn. He soon acquired a very satisfactory practice, in which he has continued during the intervening fifty years, and with the discharge of the duties of various offices of a public and private character with which he has been honored, his life has been active, useful and honorable. In 1852 he married Miss Susan S. Putnam, of Salem, and he has two children surviving—James S Newhall, of Lynn, and Mrs. Caroline P. Heath, of Boston.

WILLIAM CROWNINSHIELD ENDICOTT is descended from John Endicott, who came to Salem in 1628 as Governor of the Colony, sent out by the Massachusetts Company. The family in his line has, during the two hundred and sixty years which have elapsed since that date, always lived in Salem and its vicinity, and most of the time on the farm which included the homestead of the Governor. John Endicott was born in Dorchester, Dorsetshire, England, in 1588, and married Anna Gouer, who came with him to New England. She died in 1629, leaving no children, and Governor Endicott married, August 17th, 1630, Elizabeth Gibson, of Cambridge, England. He died March 15th, 1665, and his children were John, born about 1632, and Zerubbabel, born in 1665. Zerubbabel married a wife, Mary, who died in 1677, and he afterwards married Elizabeth, widow of Rev. Antipas



J. B. Marshall



Theodore Roosevelt



Wm H. Niles

Newman, and daughter of Governor John Winthrop. He was a physician, and lived in Salem. His children, all by the first wife, were John, born 1657; Samuel, 1659; Zerubbabel, 1664; Benjamin, 1665; Mary, 1667; Joseph, 1672; and Sarah, 1673. Of these children Samuel married Hannah Felton about 1694, and had John, born October 18, 1695; Samuel, August 30th, 1697; Ruth, 1699; and Hannah 1701. Of these Samuel, who was christened at South Danvers, September 30th, 1716, after he had reached manhood, married his cousin, Anna Endicott, December 20th, 1711, and widow Margaret (Pratt) Foster, February 11, 1724. He died in 1766, and was buried in the family burial-ground at Danvers. His children by his first wife were John, born April 29th, 1713; Sarah, September 19th, 1715; Samuel, March 12, 1717; Sarah, 1719; and Robert, 1721. By his second wife he had Hannah and Ann, twins, born November, 1727; Elias, December, 1729; Joseph, February, 1731; Lydia, 1734; and Ruth, 1734. Of the children of Samuel, John was christened at South Danvers, June 9th, 1717, and owned and occupied the old Governor Endicott farm. He married Elizabeth Jacobs May 18th, 1738, and died in 1783. His children were John, born in 1739; Elizabeth, 1741; William, 1742; and Robert, 1756. Of these, John was christened in the South Church, at Danvers, June 7th, 1741, and lived on the old Endicott estate. He married Martha, daughter of Samuel Putnam, and had the following children: Samuel, born in June, 1763; John, January 13th, 1765; Moses, March 19th, 1767; Ann, January, 1769; Elizabeth, August, 1771; Jacob, 1773; Martha and Nathan, twins, September, 1775; Sarah, September, 1778; Rebecca, May 20th, 1780; William, 1782; and Timothy, July 27, 1785. Of these, Samuel was christened in the South Church, at Danvers, November 1st, 1767, and was in early life a shipmaster. He retired from the sea in 1805, and, making Salem his place of residence, entered actively into mercantile pursuits. The records of the town of Salem show that he was prominent in town affairs, serving both as selectman and Representative in the General Court. He married, in 1794, Elizabeth, daughter of William Putnam, of Sterling, Mass., and with his brothers, John and Moses, owned the old family estate. He died May 1st, 1828, and his children were Samuel, born March, 1795; Eliza, who married Augustus W. Perry; Martha, who married Francis Peabody; William Putnam, March 5th, 1803; and Clara, who married George Peabody. Of these, William Putnam, who was christened in the North Church, at Salem, March 13, 1803, graduated at Harvard in 1822, and married, in February, 1826, Mary, daughter of Hon. Jacob Crowninshield. He married again in December, 1844, widow Harriet (French) Peabody. His children, all by the first wife, were William Crowninshield, born in Salem, November 19th, 1826; Mary Crowninshield, February 4th, 1830, who died February 16, 1833; George Frederick, September 11th, 1832, who died January 11th, 1833; and Sarah Rogers, March 3d, 1838, who married George Dexter, of Boston.

Of these children of William Putnam Endicott, the eldest, William Crowninshield Endicott, is the subject of this sketch. He was reared and educated in Salem, surrounded by families of wealth and culture, and carrying in his veins a share of the best New England blood. Indeed, few places can boast of the careful training of youth for which Salem has always been distinguished, and which has educated and developed that school of cultivated gentlemen of which Mr. Endicott is a marked example. He was fitted for College at the Salem Latin School, and graduated at Harvard in 1847. No man ever had better opportunities for the study of his chosen profession, the law, than were afforded to him in the office of Nathaniel J. Lord, of Salem, who during many years stood in the front rank of the Essex Bar. In 1850 he was admitted to practice at Salem, and in 1853 associated himself with J. W. Perry, who had been admitted to the bar in 1849. It was not long before his abilities as a lawyer were recognized, and these combined with a grace of deportment and dignity of character attracted and held a large and constantly increasing business.

So marked was his prominence, both as a lawyer and a man, that when a vacancy occurred on the Bench of the Supreme Judicial Court in 1873, Governor William B. Washburne unhesitatingly selected him from the political party opposed to his own for an appointment to the vacant seat. He continued on the bench until his resignation in 1882, leaving it after a service of nine years, to the regret of members of the bar and his associates, and carrying with him the affection and esteem of both.

In 1884 he was the candidate of the Democratic party of Massachusetts for Governor, and in 1885, after the inauguration of Grover Cleveland as President of the United States, was appointed by him Secretary of War, a position which he still holds with honor to himself, his native State and to the nation.

Mr. Endicott married Ellen, daughter of George Peabody, of Salem, and has two children, a daughter Mary, and a son, William C. Endicott, Jr.

William H. Niles was born in Orford, New Hampshire, December 22, 1839, and is the son of Samuel W. Niles and Eunice (Newell) Niles, of that town. At the age of five years he removed to South Reading (now Wakefield), and afterwards to North Bridgewater and East Bridgewater, in which last place he grew into manhood. He pursued the usual courses of study in the common schools and for two years was a private pupil under the care of Rev. R. W. Smith, of East Bridgewater, in whose family he lived. He then pursued a classical course in the Providence Conference Seminary, at East Greenwich, Rhode Island, and left that institution in 1861 to take the situation of principal of an academy in Georgia.

He remained in the South until the latter part of 1865, when he came to Boston and there engaged in mercantile business. He not long after began the study of law under the direction of Caleb Blodget, now a judge of the Superior Court of Massachusetts, and at the March term of that court, at Lowell, in 1870, he was, on examination, admitted to the bar.

He at once opened an office in Lynn, where he has since pursued a successful career. In March, 1878, George J. Carr, who had for several years been a student in his office, was admitted to the bar and became his partner. The business of the firm, which has rapidly increased in volume and importance, is a general one, embracing all branches of the law. Mr. Niles has neither held nor sought nor desired public office, but has confined himself assiduously to the labors of his profession. He has rendered willing service on the School Board of Lynn, believing it to be one which every good citizen should render, if called upon, and one rather within the field of citizenship than that of public life. He married, on the 19th of September, 1865, Harriet A., daughter of L. D. Day, of Bristol, New Hampshire, and has three daughters, all under nineteen years of age.

CHARLES PERKINS THOMPSON is descended from John Thompson, who came to Plymouth in the "Ann," or the "Little James," in 1623. He was born in Braintree, Mass., July 30, 1827, and was educated in the common schools of that town and in the Hollis Institute, which was established in Braintree in 1845 by John R. Hollis, and discontinued in 1865. He studied law with Benjamin F. Hallett, of Boston, and was admitted to the Suffolk bar in the spring of 1854. Mr. Hallett was United States District Attorney from 1853 to 1857, and Mr. Thompson, after his admission to the bar, was employed by him as his second assistant, his son, Henry L. Hallett, now United States Commissioner, acting as first assistant. In the spring of 1857 he removed to Gloucester, and has since continued to make that place his residence. In 1871 and 1872 he was a member of the State House of Representatives, and in 1874 was chosen a member of the Forty-fourth Congress. In 1885, on the appointment of William Sewall Gardner, then a justice of the Superior Court, to a seat on the bench of the Supreme Judicial Court, he was appointed by Governor George D. Robinson to fill the vacancy.

Judge Thompson has been for many years active in the interests of the Democratic party, and in 1881 was the candidate of that party for Governor. His warm friends are far from being confined, however, to that political organization, and the number is not small of those who were only restrained by the shackles of party from giving him their support, and would have been glad to welcome him as the chief executive of the State.

JOHN JAMES MARSH,[1] of Haverhill, is descended from an old family of that place, whose members are numerous and widely scattered.

The ancestor, George Marsh, came from England in 1635 to Charlestown, and settled in Hingham, Mass. His son, Onesiphorus, settled in Haverhill in 1672. He located at what was long known as "Marsh's Hill," a mile west of the village, in modern times Wingate's Hill.

In 1721, John Marsh, son of Onesiphorus, was chosen deacon of the first parish church.

David, son of John, was chosen deacon in 1737, continuing in that office till his death, Nov. 2, 1777. About 1728 he removed from Marsh's Hill to the village, to the site adjoining on the north, the Centre Church, still occupied by descendants. David Marsh had twelve children, who lived to a great age. The average of the twelve was eighty-three years, and the united age of all was one thousand. They were all noted for industry, temperance and frugality. Two of them, Lydia and Abigail Marsh, born in 1745 and 1747 respectively and unmarried, gave, in 1825, a lot of land on the north side of what is now Winter Street, for the Haverhill Academy.

Nathaniel Marsh, born 1739, was active in town and military affairs, commanded a relief company which marched from Haverhill to Stillwater in the Burgoyne campaign, was chosen in 1787 to the State convention to deliberate on the Federal Constitution and voted yea upon the question of its adoption. He was also a representative in the Legislature in 1786, 1788, 1789, 1790, 1797 and 1798.

Moses, son of David, had twelve children, like his father. Two of his sons, David and John Marsh, were partners in business for nearly fifty years in a store in Merrimack Street, on the river side.

There they manufactured hand cards for carding wool, before machines for that purpose, driven by water, were introduced here. After their introduction, and during the second war with England, they began to make the machines also and the cards with them. It is supposed that under the direction of Abraham Marland, an Englishman, who commenced woolen manufacturing in Andover as early as 1807, the brothers Marsh made the first carding machine used in this part of the country. Subsequently they sent many into New Hampshire and Maine. During their long career it has been said that the example of David and John Marsh was proverbial, not only for the fairness of their dealings and their promptness to meet all obligations, but also for the brotherly kindness which marked their intercourse with each other.

Samuel Marsh, the youngest of this long-lived and estimable family, was born in 1786 and died in 1872, in the city of New York, where he had resided many years and was largely engaged in important transactions. He was heavily interested in the Fox and Wisconsin Improvement Company, and was president of the New York and Erie Railroad Company, being succeeded in the latter position by his nephew,

[1] By Hon. J. B. D. Cogswell.



John Marsh



Chas. J. Noyes

Nathaniel Marsh, also a native of Haverhill. Marshfield, now a thriving town in Wood County, Wisconsin, preserves the name and marks the foresight of Samuel Marsh.

John James Marsh, son of John Marsh, the partner of David, was born at Haverhill May 2, 1820. His early education was received in its schools and at the Haverhill Academy. He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1841. Of his seventy-six classmates, the largest number have deceased. Gardner Greene Hubbard, well-known to many through his early connection with the development of the telephone, Henry Elijah Parker, for many years professor of the Latin language and literature at Dartmouth, Edward Reed, son of "Honest" John Reed, many years in Congress from Massachusetts, and Edward Webster, son of the great stateman, Daniel Webster, may be mentioned, the first three still surviving. Mr. Marsh's law studies were pursued in the offices of Alfred Kittredge, of Haverhill, and Slossons & Schell, of New York City, and at the Dane Law School, Harvard University. In 1846, he commenced the practice of the law in Haverhill, continuing in it till about 1872, when the pressure of private business caused him to relinquish the profession. Upon the change from a town to a city government in 1870, Mr. Marsh consented to act as city solicitor in that and the succeeding year. Otherwise he has never held public office. During the period of Mr. Marsh's active practice, he had many students, of whom may be mentioned John James Ingalls, United States Senator from Kansas, and Addison Brown, Judge of the District Court of the United States for the Southern District of New York. He was always regarded as a sound, energetic lawyer and successful practitioner.

The Children's Aid Society of Haverhill, a most deserving charity, established some years since a home upon Kenoza Avenue, which was ill-adapted to its beneficent purposes. In 1883, Mr. Marsh and his sister, Mrs. Ames, erected upon the lot on Main Street, which had been previously donated to the society by them and their cousin, Mrs. Kelly, a substantial and commodious brick building, which, upon its completion, was, with simple ceremonies, transferred to the society. Being in memory of their deceased sister it is known as the "Elizabeth Home."

"John Marsh," as he is known in Haverhill, is active in his habits and social in his temperament. Apparently in vigorous health, he bids fair to rival the remarkable longevity in the past, of the family whose most conspicuous representative he at present is. His residence is on Summer Street, and he is frequently to be seen driving out to his farm in the West Parish, on the shore of Crystal Lake, where he takes great satisfaction in the improvement of his acres, and the breeding and management of stock.

Charles Johnson Noyes is a lineal descendant of Rev. James Noyes (one of the colony which settled at Newbury in 1635), preacher and scholar, who erected what is now known as the "old Noyes house," standing a short distance to the right of the upper green, not far from the Old Town Church in old Newbury. His paternal grandfather was Parker Noyes, who was born September 25, 1777, at Haverhill, Mass., and died in 1848. Parker Noyes married Mary Fifield, who was born at Hopkinton, N. H., in 1780, and died in 1810. They lived for a time at Canaan, N. H., where Johnson Noyes, the father of the subject of this sketch was born, January 23, 1808. Johnson Noyes, while a young man, moved to Haverhill, Mass., having learned the shoemaker's trade, and was married to Sally Brickett, daughter of John and Abigail Brickett, on the 10th of October, 1833. They settled at what was known as the North Parish, in Haverhill, where he carried on a country store and manufactured shoes to a limited extent. Here one of four children, Speaker Noyes, was born, August 7, 1841, and lived until about nine years of age, when his parents moved into the main village, then a thriving town, now a city of twenty-four thousand people. John Brickett was born at Newbury, Mass, in 1762, and his wife at Haverhill, in 1763. The former died December 27, 1845, and the latter in the March previous, each at the ripe age of eighty-five years.

The other children of Johnson Noyes were Ann Augusta, who died when a mere infant; Sarah B., who was born December 10, 1834, and died May 29, 1862; and Elizabeth C., who was born December 23, 1845, and died May 5, 1870. After moving to the village Speaker Noyes attended the schools and passed through all the various grades, graduating at the Haverhill Academy in 1860, the valedictorian and president of his class. And when, afterward, an alumni association was formed, he became its first president and held the office five years, finally declining a re-election. He was twice the class orator and chairman of its senior catalogue committee. He was admitted to the bar at Cambridge, Mass., and began practice simultaneously in Boston and Haverhill in 1864. The extent of his Essex practice soon necessitated the discontinuance of his Boston office. In the second Lincoln campaign, that of 1864, Mr. Noyes was made president of the Lincoln Club of Haverhill, an organization composed of leading business men and citizens, and on the assassination of President Lincoln he was selected to deliver the memorial oration before the city authorities. In the fall election of 1865 Mr. Noyes was elected a member of the House of Representatives of 1866, in which he served on the committee on the judiciary. Declining a re-election to the House, he accepted a nomination from the citizens of Haverhill as candidate for the Senate, and was elected in a triangular contest, in which George S. Merrill, of Lawrence, and Moses F. Stevens were competitors.

In the Senate Mr. Noyes served on the committee on education, library (being chairman), and on the joint special committee on amendments to the Con-

stitution. At the close of the session he declined further political honors and devoted himself to his profession. He again opened an office in Boston and carried on a successful practice in the two counties until the business in Boston required his whole time. In 1872 he located his family in South Boston, where he has since continued to reside.

In 1876 he again entered the field of politics by accepting a nomination for Representative, and was elected, thus re-entering the House in 1877. He served that year as chairman of the committee on mercantile affairs and on the committee on Hoosac Tunnel and Troy and Greenfield Railroad. Re-elected in 1878, he served as chairman of the committee on harbors and Hoosac Tunnel. In the House of 1879 Mr. Noyes was a prominent candidate for Speaker, but was defeated by Mr. Levi C. Wade, who received the caucus nomination and consequently an election. Mr. Noyes was made chairman of the committee on amendments to the Constitution, and as such took charge of and secured the adoption in the House of a number of important amendments. Returning to the House of 1880, Mr. Noyes was elected Speaker over a number of competitors on the fourth ballot, receiving one hundred and twenty-one votes. Chosen to the House again the following autumn, he was elected Speaker by a practically unanimous vote. He was also again elected, and was Speaker in the House of 1882.

In the following summer, when it became known that Governor Long would decline a renomination, Mr. Noyes' name was at once taken up by the press as one in every way suitable for the head of the ticket, and friends from all parts of the State urged him to contest the nomination. After considering the matter some time he declined, however, to allow the use of his name in this connection. Had he gone into the convention as a candidate, the outcome would have been very different, with the probabilities largely in favor of the nomination coming to him. As it was, he received next to the largest vote for the Lieutenant-Governorship. In the campaign of 1883 he received the unanimous nomination for the Governor's Council from the Republican Convention of the Fourth Council or District, and, although the district was Democratic, received a very large vote.

He now sought retirement from active politics, determining to devote himself to the labor of his profession and the care of his growing private interests. He was soon after appointed as special justice of the Municipal Court of the City of Boston for the South Boston District, which position he has continued to hold. In 1886, however, he was again induced to become a candidate for the House, and though the district was more than doubtful, won the election. He at once began an active campaign for the Speakership, and, to the surprise of the other candidates and the consternation of their friends, won upon the first ballot.

Mr. Noyes is a member of the Order of Odd Fellows, and has long been active therein, having passed the chairs respectively of the subordinate lodge and the encampment. He is also an active member of the Masonic fraternity. He is a member of Adelphi Lodge, and one of its Past Masters; a member of St. Matthew's Royal Arch Chapter; a member of St. Omer Commandery, Knights Templar, and one of its Past Commanders; a member of Lafayette Lodge of Perfection; a member of the Giles F. Yates Council, Princes of Jerusalem; a member of Mount Olivet Chapter Rose Croix, and a member of Massachusetts Consistory. He has also taken the council degrees in Boston Council, but has never taken membership. He was also for a time a member of the National Lancers and of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company. Mr. Noyes is connected with the directory of a number of business corporations, in two of which he is president. In his religious affiliations Mr. Noyes is Unitarian, and has at times been quite active in church and Sunday-school work. In politics he has taken an active part on the stump during the last fifteen years in different parts of the country, and in the Garfield campaign of 1880 he spent six weeks speaking for the Republican cause throughout the States of North Carolina and Florida.

As a speaker, Mr. Noyes is fluent in utterance, easy and graceful in manner and remarkably apt in his choice of words. His memorial address at Worcester on Sunday evening, May 28, 1882, was a finished production, and was listened to by an audience that packed Mechanics' Hall to its utmost capacity. It was published in the *Worcester Gazette* of the following evening, and widely quoted by the press of the State. His off-hand efforts are always appropriate to the occasion and exceedingly felicitous.

As a presiding officer, Mr. Noyes has few equals and no superiors. His fine presence and quiet dignity of manner awe and hold in check all turbulent demonstrations, while his unfailing courtesy is felt and acknowledged by all. Gifted with keenness of vision and a readiness of apprehension, any movement made by a member to get the floor is immediately recognized, while a motion coming from any part of the House is caught at once and clearly stated to that body. Added to these qualifications is a thorough knowledge of parliamentary law, which makes him at all times the master of the situation. No attempt at resorting to the most bewildering of parliamentary tactics can disturb his equanimity, or make him for a moment lose sight of the point in hand; but, through all the intricacies of motions and amendments and counter-motions, the debate is kept under rigid control, and the final disposition of the question so clear and just that from the decisions of the chair there is no appeal.

To those who have come in contact with Mr. Noyes there is no difficulty in discerning the occasion of his popularity. He possesses in a high degree that

strong personal magnetism that at once draws one to him, while there is a sincerity and cordiality manifested by him that makes the bonds of friendship enduring. Easily approachable, genial and sunshiny by nature, he makes a most delightful companion, and his personal popularity is very great.

In 1864 Mr. Noyes was married to Miss Emily Wells, the only surviving daughter of Col. Jacob C. Wells, a well-known and successful merchant of Cincinnati, O. They have three children. The eldest, Miss Fannie C. Noyes, is a young lady of rare artistic talent, and is now studying in Paris as an animal painter; the second, Mr. Harry R. Noyes, holds a fine position with a well-known firm of stock brokers; and the youngest, Miss Gracie L., is still in school.

MARCUS MORTON is the son of Marcus and Charlotte (Hodges) Morton and was born in Taunton, Mass., April 8, 1819. His father was born in Freetown, Mass., in 1784, and graduated at Brown University in 1804. He received the degree of LL.D., from his *alma mater* in 1826, and from Harvard University in 1840. In 1825 he was appointed justice of the Supreme Judicial Court and continued on the bench until 1840, when he resigned to assume the duties of Governor of the commonwealth, which office he held during that year and again in 1843. He died in 1864. The father of Governor Morton was Nathaniel Morton, of Freetown, born in 1753, who married in 1782, Mary Cary, of Bridgewater. The father of Nathaniel was Nathaniel, born in 1723, who married in 1749, Martha Tupper. The father of the last Nathaniel was Nathaniel of Plymouth, born in 1695, who married, in 1720, Rebecca, widow of Mordecai Ellis, and daughter of Thomas Clark, of Plymouth. The father of the last Nathaniel was Eleazer, of Plymouth, who married in 1693, Rebecca Marshall, of Boston. The father of Eleazer was Ephraim, of Plymouth, born in 1623, who married, in 1644, Ann Cooper. The father of Ephraim was George, of Plymouth, who married in Leyden, in 1612, Julian, daughter of Alexander Carpenter, of Wrentham, England, and came to Plymouth in the "Ann" in 1623. Another son of George Morton, and a brother of Ephraim, was Nathaniel Morton, the secretary for many years of the Plymouth colony and the author of "New England's Memorial."

Thomas Clark, whose daughter, Rebecca, married Mordecai Ellis and afterwards Nathaniel Morton above mentioned, married three wives, and Rebecca was the daughter of the third wife, born in 1698. The father of Thomas Clark was James, born in 1637, who married in 1657, Abigail, daughter of Rev. John Lathrop, of Barnstable. The father of James was Thomas, of Plymouth, a passenger in the "Ann" in 1623, who married before 1634, Susanna, daughter of widow Mary Ring, and in 1664 widow Alice Nichols, of Boston, and daughter of Richard Hallet. It will thus be seen that this branch of the Morton family is descended from two of what are called the "First Comers" of Plymouth. The gravestone of Thomas Clark, one of these, is still standing on Burial Hill, in Plymouth.

Marcus Morton, the subject of this sketch, fitted for college at the Bristol County Academy, in Taunton, then under the charge of Frederick Crafts, a graduate of Brown University, in 1816, and a recipient of the degree of Master of Arts from Harvard in 1820. He graduated at Brown University in 1838, and after having studied two years in Dane Law School, at Cambridge, received the degree of Bachelor of Laws from Harvard, in 1840. After studying another year in the law office of Sprague & Gray he was admitted to practice in Suffolk County in 1841. He practiced law in Boston until 1848, living in Boston until 1850, and then removing to Andover, in which place he has since held his residence. In 1853 he was a member of the Constitutional Convention from Andover, and in 1858, represented that town in the House of Representatives. On the establishment of the Superior Court, in 1859, he was appointed by Governor Banks, one of its justices, with Charles Allen, of Worcester, as chief justice, and Julius Rockwell, of Lenox; Otis Phillip Lord, of Salem; Seth Ames, of Lowell; Ezra Wilkinson, of Dedham; Henry Vose, of Springfield; Thomas Russell and John Phelps Putnam, of Boston; and Lincoln Flagg Brigham, of New Bedford, as his associates. In 1869 two vacancies occurred on the bench of the Supreme Judicial Court, in consequence of the resignation of Ebenezer Rockwood Hoar and Dwight Foster, which were filled by Governor Claflin by the appointment of Judge Ames, who had left the Supreme bench in 1867, and by the promotion of Judge Morton.

In 1882 Horace Gray, of Boston, who had occupied a seat as associate justice of the Supreme Court from 1864 to 1873, and since 1873 as chief justice; he resigned the latter office on his appointment as one of the justices of the Supreme Court of the United States, and Judge Morton was appointed by Governor Long to fill the vacancy. In 1870 he received the degree of LL.D. from his *alma mater*, and in 1882 from Harvard.

Judge Morton still occupies his seat as chief justice and, in the performance of his duties, upholds and maintains the high character for which the Supreme Judicial Court of Massachusetts has always been distinguished.

WILLIAM W. STORY, son of Joseph Story, was born in Salem, February 12, 1819, and graduated at Harvard in 1838. He also graduated from the Dane Law School at Cambridge, in 1840, but soon gave up the profession and devoted himself to sculpture, in which he has won an enviable distinction. Among his best known works are the statue of Edward Everett, in the Boston Public Garden, and the statue of Chief Justice Marshall, at the west front of the Capitol in Washington.

EDGAR T. SHERMAN was born in Weathersfield, Vermont, November 28, 1834, and is descended from

an early New England settler, bearing that name. He was educated in the common schools of his native town, and in the Wesleyan Academy at Springfield, Vt. In his earliest manhood he taught four years in the Academy at Harwich, Mass., and in 1853 went to Lawrence, where, in the next year he began the study of law. In 1858 he was admitted to the bar of Essex Co., and soon after took the position of clerk of the police court of Lawrence, which, after two years, he resigned to become a partner of Daniel Saunders, of Lawrence, in the active practice of law. During his six years' connection with Mr. Saunders he enlisted in 1862 in the Forty-eighth Massachusetts Regiment, and after the battle of Port Hudson was breveted major, for bravery in the field. Having served out his time he again went to the front as captain in the Sixth Massachusetts Regiment, and served until the end of the war. His active military career was supplemented after the war by his appointment as chief of the division staff and assistant adjutant-general on the staff of General Benjamin F. Butler, with the rank of colonel in the State militia, and he held that position until 1876.

After the war he entered into a law partnership of short duration with John K. Tarbox, who had been admitted to the bar in 1860, and who had subsequently, as well as Colonel Sherman, seen service in the field. In 1865–66 he was a member of the House of Representatives, and in 1868 was chosen district attorney for the Eastern District, which included the towns of Essex County. To this office he was chosen for five successive terms, of three years each, and resigned in December, 1882, to assume the duties of Attorney-general, to which he had been chosen as the candidate of the Republican party at the November election.

He was rechosen Attorney-general in 1883, '84, '85, '86, '87, and was, on the 14th of September of the present year, nominated by Governor Ames to fill the vacancy on the bench of the Superior Court caused by the promotion of Marcus Perrin Knowlton to the bench of the Supreme Judicial Court to fill the vacancy caused by the resignation of William Sewall Gardner. Before the publication of this sketch the nomination of Colonel Sherman will be confirmed, and he will be in full possession of his judicial office. In 1884 he received from Dartmouth College an honorary degree of Master of Arts, but neither occupies nor seeks public positions outside of the professional field in which he has labored faithfully, and is now reaping his harvest.

Lincoln Flagg Brigham, was born October 4, 1819, in that part of Cambridge called the "Port." He was the son of Lincoln Brigham and Lucy (Forbes) Brigham, the daughter of Elisha and Hannah (Flagg) Forbes, of Westboro, Massachusetts. The first American ancestor of the Brigham family was Thomas Brigham, who came to New England in 1635, and settled in Cambridge, where he died in 1653. The subject of this sketch, after leaving the public schools of his native town, entered the counting-room of Samuel Austin, of Boston, with a view to a commercial life. His plans in this direction were, however, after two or three years abandoned, and he fitted for college under the care of Rev. David Peabody, the husband of his eldest sister, and afterwards Professor of *Belles-Letters* and Rhetoric in Dartmouth College, and graduated from Dartmouth in 1842. In 1844 he received the degree of LL. B. as a graduate of the Dane Law School, at Cambridge, and in 1883 received the honorary degree of LL.D. from his *Alma-Mater*. He finished his law studies at New Bedford, in the office of Clifford & Colby, a law firm composed of John H. Clifford, afterward attorney-general and Governor of the commonwealth, and Harrison G. O. Colby, who, while Mr. Brigham was a student in the office, was appointed by Governor George N. Briggs, a justice on the bench of the Common Pleas Court, and who resigned in 1847, and died in 1853. Mr. Brigham was admitted to the Bristol county bar in June, 1845, and after the appointment of Mr. Colby to the bench, became in July of that year a partner of Mr. Clifford. In 1853 he was appointed by Mr. Clifford, then Governor, district-attorney of the southern district of Massachusetts, comprising the counties of Bristol, Barnstable, Nantucket and Dukes county. In 1856 the office becoming elective by a recent law, he was chosen attorney by the people of the district, and held the office until he was appointed by Governor Nathaniel P. Banks to a seat on the bench of the superior court, then first established. Judge Seth Ames, chief-justice of that court, was appointed in 1869 by Governor William Claflin, a justice of the supreme judicial court, and Judge Brigham was promoted to the seat of chief-justice, which he has since up to this time held.

Judge Brigham married October 20, 1847, Eliza Endicott, daughter of Thomas Swain, of New Bedford, and has four sons, one of whom, Clifford Brigham, a graduate of Harvard in 1880, lives in Salem, and as a partner of George Burnham Ives, a graduate of Harvard in 1876, is engaged in the practice of law in Salem and Boston. During the residence of Judge Brigham in New Bedford, which terminated in 1860, he was interested in military affairs, and for a time was the efficient and popular commander of the New Bedford Light Infantry, one of the most active and respectable volunteer companies in the State. In 1860 he removed to Boston, and in 1866 to Salem, which place he has since made his residence. From the exacting labors of his official station he turns to music for his chief relaxation, and in whatever social circle he has lived he has done much to cultivate and refine its musical tastes. As a judge he has won not only the esteem, but the affection also of the members of the bar, and as a man he is universally beloved.

Samuel Swett was born in Newburyport June 9, 1782. He was the son of Dr. John Barnard and

Charlotte (Bourne) Swett, and entered Harvard College in 1796, having been fitted by his father at the grammar-school in his native town. He studied law in Exeter, N. H., with Judge Jeremiah Smith, and afterwards with Judge Charles Jackson and Judge Edward Livermore, and was admitted to the Essex Bar in 1805. He began the practice of law in Salem, where he married, August 25, 1807, Lucia, daughter of William Gray. He relinquished practice in 1810 and removed to Boston, where he became a partner in the firm of Wm. B. Swett & Co. In the last year of the War of 1812 he entered the army as a volunteer on the staff of General Izard, and served as a topographical engineer, with the rank of major. He was *aide-de-camp* on the staff of John Brooks, Governor of Massachusetts, from 1816 to 1823, and was three years a member of the Legislature. His wife died May 15, 1844, and he died in Boston October 28, 1866.

William S. Allen was the son of Ephraim W. Allen and born in Newburyport in 1805. He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1825, and after studying law with Stephen W. Marston, was admitted to the Essex Bar in 1827. For several years he was a partner of Caleb Cushing, and a representative from Newburyport in the General Court. He was the first editor of the Newburyport *Daily Herald*, started by himself and his brother, Jere. S. Allen, in 1832. At that time the *Herald* and the *New Bedford Mercury*, which started a few months earlier, were the only daily papers in Massachusetts outside of Boston. About the year 1835 he removed to St. Louis, where he was elected to a judgeship, which he held for several years. During the last twelve years of his life he was connected editorially with the *St. Louis Republican*, and died in St. Louis in June, 1868.

Stephen Hooper was the son of Stephen Hooper, a prominent merchant of Newburyport, and was born in that town in 1785. He was fitted for college at the Dummer Academy, and graduated at Harvard in 1808. He was admitted to the Essex County bar in 1810, and opened an office in Newburyport. He represented the town of Newbury, to which town his father removed while he was a youth, and which place he continued to make his residence in the General Court when he was twenty-five years of age, and at the age of thirty-one he was chosen a State Senator. In 1818 he removed to Boston, and there devoted himself to the practice of his profession. He was for several years an alderman of the city, and there died in 1825.

Edward St. Loe Livermore was born in Portsmouth, New Hampshire, April 5, 1762. His father, Samuel Livermore, born in Waltham, New Hampshire, May 14, 1732, died at Holderness, New Hampshire, in May, 1803, and was Attorney-General of New Hampshire, member of the Continental Congress, member of the convention to adopt the Federal Constitution, president of the Constitutional Convention of 1791, judge of the Supreme Court, member of Congress and United States Senator. His son Edward was a counsellor at law, and United States Attorney, and judge of the Superior Court of New Hampshire. He removed to Newburyport, and while a resident there was chosen member of the tenth Congress in 1806. He removed to Boston in 1813, and died at Lowell, September 22, 1832.

Samuel Sumner Wilde, so long a distinguished justice on the bench of the Supreme Judicial Court, deserves as a resident in Essex County eleven years, a place in this record. He was born in Taunton, Mass., February 5, 1771, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1789. He read law with David L. Barnes, of Taunton, who was afterwards judge of the United States District Court for Rhode Island. He was admitted to the bar in 1792, and removed to Maine, practising his profession in Waldoboro' and Warren and Hallowell, to which last place he removed in 1799; while at Warren he represented that town in the General Court, and while at Hallowell was twice chosen one of the electors of president and vice-president, and in 1814 was a member of the executive council. In 1815 he was appointed by Governor Caleb Strong an associate justice of the Supreme Court of Massachusetts, and at the separation of Maine from Massachusetts he removed to Newburyport, where he resided until 1831. He received the degree of doctor of laws from Bowdoin College in 1817, from Harvard in 1841, and from Dartmouth in 1849.

In early life he was an active Federalist, and lived to be the only surviving member of the Hartford Convention. He continued on the bench thirty-five years, and resigned in 1850, at the age of seventy-nine years. To those readers who remember Judge Wilde, and have been able by personal observation to measure his abilities as a jurist and his high character as a man, the following letter written in Hallowell in 1820, with its estimate of the judge in the early days of his judicial life, will be interesting:

"Hallowell, May 31, 1820.

"It is with much regret that we learn that Judge Wilde is making preparations to leave the town and the State of Maine in order to reside in Massachusetts, and there exercise the functions of a Judge in the Supreme Court in that State.

"In his several capacities of a judge, citizen, friend and acquaintance, his value has been so generally known and felt among us that his departure must necessarily be viewed with concern. On the bench he is conspicuous for his talents and learning, as well as for his candor and impartiality. He is at all times affable, and yet he preserves order; by his industry and arrangement he despatches business; though he knows how to be patient when the case demands it; to his mildness he joins firmness, and by his personal character he adds weight to his judicial decisions; since his sincerity gives assurance that these decisions are independent and conscientious. As a citizen he was formerly much engaged in public affairs, and yet he continued never to lose his temper or to give personal offence, and his intentions and fair dealing never called in question either when conducting his own affairs or those of his clients. Those who have known Judge Wilde as a friend are those who will most feel his loss; since the warmth of his feelings, the pleasantness of his temper, and his desire to render services were always conspicuous in his intercourse with them." * * *

Judge Wilde died in Boston, June 22, 1855.

This record will be closed with a list of the present members of the Essex County bar:

Amesbury.—Horace I. Bartlett (also at Newburyport), George E. Bachelder, George W. Cate, George Turner, Frank C. Whiting.

Andover.—George W. Foster, George H. Poor.

Beverly.—Frederick W. Choate, Samuel A. Fuller D. W. Quill, (also in Salem).

Bradford.—Henry Carter (also at Haverhill), Frank H. Pearl.

Danvers.—Daniel N. Crowley (also in Salem), Willis E. Flint, Edward L. Hill, Stephen H. Phillips (also in Salem), J. W. Porter, Alden P. White (also in Salem).

Essex.—Frank C. Richardson (also at Salem).

Georgetown.—W. A. Butler, Jeremiah P. Jones.

Gloucester.—Archibald N. Donahue, John J. Flaherty, Wm. W. French, M. J. McNeirny, Wm. A. Pew, Jr., J. C. Pierce, Charles A. Russell, Edgar S. Taft, Henri N. Woods, Sumner D. York.

Hamilton.—Daniel E. Safford.

Haverhill.—Abbott & Pearl, N. C. Bartlett, Wm. E. Blunt, B. F. Brickett, Harry J. Cole, Edward B. George, J. P. Jones, B. B. Jones, H. N. Merrill, Wm. H. Moody, Moody & Bartlett, John A. Page, Isaac E. Pearl, Winfield S. Peters, C. H. Poor, H. M. Sargent, E. B. Savage, Warren Tilton, R. D. Trask, H. H. Webster, John J. Winn.

Ipswich.—George Haskell, Edward P. Kimball, Charles A. Sayward.

Lawrence.—Benjamin C. Ames, M. H. Ames, Charles U. Bell, T. Burley, Joseph Cleaveland, Charles A. De Courcey, D. F. Dolan, Newton P. Frye, John S. Gile, W. F. Gile, N. W. Harmon (deceased), H. F. Hopkins, M. S. Jenkins, Wm. S. Knox, P. W. Lyall, D. B. Magee, J. J. Mahoney, Wm. T. McKeone, W. F. Moyes, John R. Poor, D. W. Proctor, Aretas R. Sanborn, John C. Sanborn, C. F. Sargent, Caleb Saunders, Charles G. Saunders, Daniel Saunders, Edgar J. Sherman, John M. Stearns, Andrew C. Stone, John P. Sweeney, Wm. L. Thompson, George L. Weil.

Lynn.—D. O. Allen, John R. Baldwin, T. F. Bartlett, John W. Berry, George J. Carr, N. D. A. Clarke, Wm. C. Fabens (also at Marblehead), Joseph F. Hannan, R. E. Harmon, Nathan M. Hawkes, H. F. Hurlburt, W. B. Hutchinson, Ira B. Keith, Caleb Lamson, Charles Leighton, W. H. Lucie, James R. Newhall, Thomas B. Newhall, M. P. Nickerson, Wm. H. Niles, Wm. F. Noonan, Dean Peabody, E. K. Phillips, T. H. Romayne, Wm. O. Shea, J. H. Sisk, Eben F. B. Smith, Calvin B. Tuttle, Frank G. Woodbury, John Woodbury.

Marblehead.—Wm. D. Trefry (also at Salem).

Merrimac.—T. H. Hoyt, M. Perry Sargent.

Methuen.—Wm. M. Rogers, W. R. Rowell.

Newburyport.—J. C. M. Bayley, Charles C. Dame, John C. Donovan, Joseph G. Gerrish, Frank W. Hale, Harrison G. Johnson, Nathaniel N. Jones, Amos Noyes, Nathaniel Pierce, John N. Pike, E. C. Saltmarsh, Thomas C. Simpson, Eben F. Stone, David L. Withington.

Peabody.—Sidney C. Bancroft, Frank E. Farnham, Charles E. Hoag, George Holman, Eugene T. McCarthy, Benjamin C. Perkins, Frederick G. Preston, Thomas M. Stimpson (also in Salem), Wm. P. Upham (also at Salem), F. W. Upton, Henry Wardwell, Charles A. Weare.

Reading.—Solon Bancroft, Chauncey P. Judd, E. T. Swift.

Rowley.—George B. Blodgett.

Salem.—Edward C. Battis, C. A. Benjamin, Clifford Brigham, George F. Choate, W. F. M. Collins, Forrest L. Evans, Andrew Fitz, James A. Gillis, Wm. H. Gove, Joseph E. Quinn, Richard E. Hines, Nathaniel J. Holden, Thomas F. Hunt, A. L. Huntington, George B. Ives, Samuel A. Johnson, D. B. Kimball, Edward P. Kimball, George R. Lord, J. T. Mahoney, Eugene T. McCarthy, P. J. McCusker, Henry P. Moulton, Wm. D. Northend, Theodore M. Osborne, Charles S. Osgood, J. B. F. Osgood, B. C. Perkins, Sidney Perley, Wm. Perry, John W. Porter, D. W. Quill, Josiah F. Quinn, J. M. Raymond, C. W. Richardson, Daniel E. Safford, Charles Sewall, C. H. Symonds, Charles P. Thompson, L. S. Tuckerman, George Wheatland A. P. White, Frank V. Wright, J. C. Wyman.

Saugus.—Benjamin F. Johnson.

Topsfield.—Benjamin Poole.

CHAPTER III.

OLD MODES OF TRAVEL.

BY ROBERT S. RANTOUL.

"You may ride in an hour or two, if you will,
From Halibut Point to Beacon Hill,
With the sea beside you all the way,
Through the pleasant places that skirt the Bay;
By Gloucester Harbor and Beverly Beach,
Salem Witch-haunted, Nahant's long reach,
Blue-bordered Swampscott and Chelsea's wide
Marshes, laid bare to the drenching tide,
With a glimpse of Saugus spire in the west,
And Malden hills wrapped in hazy rest.

"All this you watch idly, and more by far,
From the cushioned seat of a railway-car.
But in days of witchcraft it was not so;
City-bound travellers had to go
Horseback over a blind, rough road,
Or as part of a jolting wagon-load
Of garden-produce or household goods,
Crossing the fords, half-lost in the woods,
By wolves and red-skins frighted all day,
And the roar of lions, some histories say.
If a craft for Boston were setting sail,
Very few of a passage would fail
Who had trading to do in the three-hilled town;
For they *might* return ere the sun was down."

—*Peggy Bligh's Voyage, by Lucy Larcom.*

WHEN this region of ours was first colonized by Europeans, they contented themselves for a time

with the rude means of conveyance and transportation known to their savage neighbors. The favorite way to Boston, Plymouth and Cape Ann was by water. The "dug-out" was much in use, being a pine log twenty feet long and two and one-half feet wide, in which they sometimes "went fowling two leagues to sea." These "cannowes" seem to have been inspected at stated intervals by a town surveyor, and passed or condemned according to their fitness for further service. It was in swimming for one of these, from a desire to visit the Indian Village at "Northfield," that Governor Winthrop's son Henry, on the day after his arrival at Salem, was drowned in the North River. In one of these rude boats, no doubt, Roger Conant might often be seen making his way up Bass River, to visit his farm of two hundred acres, near the "great pond side." And Governor Endicott's little sloop-boat, or "shallop," flits across the pages of the ancient records, as, no doubt, she walked the waters of the bay and rivers, like a thing of life.

The condition of the trail, which was the only land transit between Salem and Boston, is indicated by two contemporary writers of the first authority. On the 12th of April, 1631, Governor Endicott wrote to Governor Winthrop the following letter from Salem:

"*Right Worshipful:* I did expect to have been with you in person at the Court, and to that end I put to sea yesterday, and was driven back again, the wind being stiff against us. And there being no canoe or boat at Saugus, I must have been constrained to go to Mystic, and thence afoot to Charlestown, which at that time durst not be so bold, my body being, at this present, in an ill condition to wade or take cold. * * * The eel-pots you sent for are made, which I had in my boat, hoping to have brought them with me." * * * *

It will be observed that these worthies were not the plodders of the Colony. Their position insured them the best travelling facilities the times afforded. Governor Winthrop wrote in his journal, October 25, 1631, "The Governor, with Captain Underhill and other of the officers went on foot to Saugus, and next day to Salem, where they were bountifully entertained by Captain Endicott, and on the 28th they returned to Boston by the ford at Saugus River and so over at Mystic."

In 1637 Governor Winthrop passed through Salem on foot, with a large escort, on his way to and from Ipswich, and next year visited Salem by water and returned by land. The first party of Salem people who visited Boston after its settlement are said to have spent four days on the way, and, on the following Sabbath, to have put up a note of thanks in our First Church (now restored and standing in the rear of Plummer Hall) for their safe guidance and return.

In 1650, as we learn from Parkman's "France and England in North America," the first essay was made, at the instance of the Colony of Massachusetts, towards negotiating a reciprocity treaty between these English settlements and the French colonies in Canada. A Jesuit ambassador from Quebec set out in company with a converted Indian chief, to visit Boston, and secure the military aid of this colony against the Iroquois, in consideration of some privileges of trade to be granted by the French. He made his way from "Kepane" (Cape Ann), where he was forced ashore by stress of weather, to Charlestown, "partly on foot—partly in boats along the shore," and from that peninsula the priest crossed by boat to Boston,—probably the first Romanist who ever received a welcome in the Puritan Colony. On returning, he stopped at Salem, and dined with Governor Endicott, who, he says, spoke French.

Some felling of trees and hoisting of rocks was needed to convert these muddy trails into bridle-paths, and then the colonist moved about through the forest, accompanied by good-wife on a pillion behind and followed perhaps by a pack-horse, sweating under well-stuffed panniers. "Such a way as a man may travel on horseback, or drive cattle," the court ordered laid out by Richard Brackenbury, Mr. Conant and others from the ferry at Salem, to Jeffrie's Creek, now Manchester. Poets sing false, or the saddle was sometimes mounted on the backs of neat cattle, in those early days, as now-a-days in South Africa and San Domingo:

"Then, from a stall near at hand, amid exclamations of wonder,
Alden, the thoughtful, the careful, so happy, so proud of Priscilla,
Brought out his snow-white Bull, obeying the hand of its master,—
Led by a cord that was tied to an iron ring in its nostrils,—
Covered with crimson cloth and a cushion placed for a saddle.
She would not walk, he said, through the dust and heat of the noonday;
Nay, she should ride like a Queen,—not plod along like a peasant.
Somewhat alarmed at first, but reassured by the others,—
Placing her hand on the cushion, her foot in the hand of her husband,—
Gaily, with joyous laugh, Priscilla mounted her palfrey."

After the bridle-paths came the roads. The configuration of our surface did not favor the use of canals, and we escaped that dreary stage in the developement of transportation. Roads multiplied apace, but they were constructed not so much on mathematical, as on social principles. Nothing is more entertaining to the idler than to trace out some old abandoned lane, wandering between crooked walls—choked up with underbrush of barberry, alderberry, rose-bush, fern and bramble—arched with grand old elms, and seemingly leading nowhere. Some dilapidated cellar-wall or ruined well soon answers the question "whither wilt thou lead me?" The pioneers built their homes where the soil was tempting, the slopes attractive, and material at hand. Villages were small and infrequent. Hence roads were made to reach the homesteads of single colonists, and not with prime regard to directness between town and town. And as the distance around a hill was no greater than over it, and the cost of excavating must be avoided, these roads, in uneven places, became still more circuitous, from the hills they encountered. Their original cost has been expended many times over, in widening,

straightening, and leveling them, so that the curious observer will find on either side of the present road, grass-grown bits of the old highway leading off a little, and soon returning to it.

An old family of the county has been in the habit of making a yearly pilgrimage from Cape Ann to Andover, over the road as it was two or three generations back, faithfully tracing out, wherever it was possible, each oxbow in the way, with its ancient trees and low-roofed farm-house and well-sweep and brook. Hawthorne has thus described one of the most tempting of these lovely by-ways, in his account of "Browne's Folly," written for the "Weal-Reaf" in 1860:

"Along its base ran a green and seldom trodden lane, with which I was very familiar in my boyhood; and there was a little brook, which I remember to have dammed up till its overflow made a mimic ocean. When I last looked for this tiny streamlet, which was still rippling freshly through my memory, I found it strangely shrunken; a mere ditch indeed, and almost a dry one. But the green lane was still there, precisely as I remembered it; two wheel tracks, and the beaten path of the horses' feet, and grassy strips between; the whole overshadowed by tall locust trees, and the prevalent barberry bushes, which are rooted so fondly into the the recollections of every Essex man."

These old roads belonged to the period when a journey to Boston was a thing to be thought of for days before—and only to be embarked on in pleasant weather. Dobbin must be brought in from pasture—be rested and fed up a little, and have his shoes looked to; the "one-hoss shay," with its capacity for stowage like that of the ark,—

> "Thorough-brace bison skin, thick and wide,—
> Boot, top, dasher of tough old hide
> Found in the pit when the tanner died,"—

this lumbering conveyance was to be cleaned up over night and its wheels put in order; the Sunday suit must be aired and dusted, and when at last the eventful morning dawned fresh and fair, and the leave-taking of several generations was accomplished, the journey of the day was to be performed, by not too burthensome stages, relieved by episodes of breakfast and baiting at the "Creature Comfort," or some other favorite half-way house, and a scrupulous withdrawal of Dobbin from the too active influence of the mid-day sun.

A few figures will show how much distances from point to point have been reduced since these days. We find the following in "Travis's Almanac," Boston, 1713.

"*From Boston to Portsmouth* (Ferry's excepted), 62 Miles, *thus accounted.*

"From *Winisimit*, to *Owens* 4 Miles, to *Lewes's* 2 & half, to the Sign of the Galley at *Salem* 9, to the Ferry at *Beverly* 1, to *Fiskes* at *Wenham* 5, to *Cromtons* at *Ipswich* 6, to *Bennets* at *Rowley* 3 & half (which is called the half-way house), to *Sargeants* at *Newbury*, the upper way by *Thurrel's* Bridge 8, but from *Rowley* the right hand way by the Ferry is but 7 to said *Sargeants*, to *Trues*, or to *Pikes* Gate at *Salisbury* 2 & half, to *Nortons* at *Hampton* 4 & half, to *Sherbons* at said Town 2, to *Johnsons* at *Greenland* 8 & half, and to *Harvies* at the three Tons at *Portsmouth* 5 Miles & half."

In April, 1775, Col. Pickering marched his regiment from Salem on the alarm of the fight at Lexington. To explain his failure to reach the scene of action, he gives these distances in his journal. Salem to Danvers, two miles; to Newell's in Lynn, seven miles; to Malden, six miles; to Medford, three miles; to Boston, four miles; making the route from Salem to Boston, towards the close of the last century, twenty-two miles.

The character of the public houses of the time is closely allied to our subject. The "Sign of the Galley at Salem," mentioned by Travis, was, no doubt, the "Ship Tavern," on School Street, at the corner of what are now Church and Washington Streets, the old Governor's house, brought up by water from Cape Ann, and rebuilt there and successively occupied by Conant and Endicott. It was kept, in 1713, by Henry Sharp, who, in 1701, advertised a calash to let, the first recorded instance of such a convenience in Salem. Modern travelers would hardly think these inns well described by the term "ordinary," under which they were licensed. They were conditioned to allow no tippling after nine at night; the house must be cleared on week-day lecture of all persons able to attend meeting; no cakes or buns to be sold, this was in 1637, on fine of ten shillings, the prohibition not to extend to cakes "made for any buryall or marriage, or such like special occation." In 1645, the widow of an innholder is licensed "if she procure a fitt man, that is Godly, to manage the business." In 1659, the law forbids dancing at taverns, and as late as 1759, the sale of spirits, wines, coffee, tea, ale, beer and "syder" on the Sabbath.

At the middle of the last century a New York merchant, supercargo on board the ship "Tartar Galley," from New York for London, was disabled when a few days out, and put in to Boston for repairs. While detained there he seems to have moved among what he terms the "best Fashion in Boston." I make room for a passage from his Journal.

"*October 19th*, 1750. While at breakfast Mr. Nathaniel Cunningham waited on me at Capt. Wendell's, agreeable to promise & furnished me with a horse to go to Salem, being very desirous to see the country. Sett out about 10 o'clock. * * * Cross'd Charles Towne Ferry. * * * About 2 miles from thence we crosst Penny Ferry which is better than ½ mile over. Being the neighest way to Salem. From this to Mr. Ward's is about 8 miles, and is about a mile this side of Lyn which is a small Country Towne of ab't 200 Houses very pleasantly situated, & affords a Beautifull Rural Prospect; we came to Mr. Ward's about one o'clock and dynd on fryd Codd. From this place is about 7 miles to Salem. After dinner having refreshed ourselves with a glass of wine sett out on our journey through a barren rocky country which afforded us not the least prospect of anything but a desart country, abounding with Loffty Ragged Rocks a fine Pastering Ground only for their Sheep, the Rhoads are exceeding stony and the country but thinly peopled.

"*October 19th.* Arrived at Salem ab't 3 a Clock put up our Horses at the Wid'o Prats from whence went to See Coll. William Browne where drank Tea with his Spouse, after which Mr. Browne was so Good as to Accomodate us with a Walk round the Towne, Shewing us the wharfs warehouses &c.; went up in the Steeple of the Church, from whence had a Fine View of the Town, Harbour, &c., which is Beautifully Situated From which have a View of Mr. Brownes Country Seat which is Situated on a Heigh Hill ab't 6 Miles Eastward of Salem. Spent the Evening at his House where Joynd in Company by Parson Appleton, Miss Hetty his daughter from Cambridge, they Being Acquaintence of Mr. and Mrs. Browne, we Supd togeather and after that where Very merry, at Whist, &c.

"*Oct. 20th.* Lodg'd at Mr. Brownes; after Breakfast Saunterd round the Towne mayking Our Observations on the Build's &c. Dynd at his House, after Dinner had a Good Deal Conversation with him upon Various Subjects, he being a Gent'n of Excellent Parts well Adversed in Leaturate a Good Scholar a Great Vertuosa and Lover of the Liberal Arts and Sciences haveing an Extraordinary Library of Books of the Best Ancient and Modern Authors. about 3 a Clock we Sett out in his Coach for his Country Seat rideing trough a Pleasant Country and fine Rhoads. we arived there at 4 a Clock the Situation is very Airy Being upon a Heigh Hill which Over Looks the Country all Round and affords a Pleasant Rural Prospect of a Fine Country with fine woods and Lawns with Brooks water running trough them, you have also a prospect of the Sea on one Part an On another A Mountain 80 Miles distant The House is Built in the Form of a Long Square, with Wings at Each End and is about 80 Foot Long, in the middle is a Grand Hall Surrounded above by a Fine Gallery with Neat turned Bannester and the Cealing of the Hall Representing a Large doom Designed for an Assembly or Ball Room, the Gallery for the Musitians &c. the Building has Four Doors Fronting the N. E. S. & W. Standing in the middle the Great Hall you have a Full View of the Country from the Four Dores, at the Ends of the Buildings is 2 upper and 2 Lower Rooms with neat Stair Cases Leadeing to them, in One the Lower Rooms is his Library and Studdy well Stockd with a Noble Colection of Books, the others are all unfurnish'd as yet Nor is the Building yet Compleat, wants a Considerable workman Ship to Compleat it, so as the Design is. But Since the Loss of his first wife who was Governour Burnetts Daughter of New Yerk by whome he has yet 2 Little Daughters Liveing, the Loss of her he took much to heart as he was doateingly fond of her Being a Charming Ladie when married. But he is now determind to Compleat it. we drank a Glass wine haveing Feasted our Eyes with the Prospect of the Country, Returned to his House where Sup'd and Past the Evening Vastly Agreeable being a Very merry Facitious Gentlemen, went to bed Intend'g to Proceed to Marble head Next Morning.

"*Oct. 21st.* Haveing Got our Horses ready, after Breakfast took our Leave's of Mr. Browne and Spouse. Before proceed shall Give a Small Discription of Salem. Its a Small Sea Port Towne. Consists of ab't 450 Houses, Several of which are neat Buildings, but all of wood, and Covers a Great Deal of Ground, being at a Conveniant Distance from Each Other, with fine Gardens back their Houses, the Town is Situated on a Neck of Land Navagable on either Side, is ab't 2½ Miles in Lenght Including the build'gs Back the Towne, has a main Street runs directly trough, One Curch, 3 Presbiterian and one Quakers Meeting, the Situation is Very Pretty, &c. The Trade Consists Chiefly in the Cod Fishery, they have ab't 60 or 70 Sail Schooners Employd in that Branch. Saw ab't 40 Sail in the Harb'r hav'g then ab't 40 at Sea. They Cure all their Own Cod for Markett; Saw there a Vast Number Flakes Cureing; in the Harbour Lay also two Topsail Vessells and three Sloops. on Exam'g into the Fishery find it a very adventag's Branch."

The travellers then ride to Marblehead "trough a pleasant country and good Roades"—spend an hour there at breakfast with Mr. Read—see the town, of which they formed no very flattering impression, and push on to their friend Mr. Ward's, at Lynn. "Dyned upon a fine mongrel goose"—proceeded on their journey "through Mystic, and came to Mr. Wendell's in Boston, ab't 8 o'clock."

I find passages illustrative of the times in the diary of John Adams, written when the author was "riding the circuit" in the practice of the law, at the age of thirty, and residing in Braintree.

"1766, *Nov. 3d, Monday.* Sett off with my wife for Salem. Stopped half an hour at Boston. Crossed the Ferry; at three o'clock arrived at Hill's, the tavern in Malden, the sign of the Rising Eagle * * * where we dined. Here we fell in company with Kent and Sewall. We all oated at Martin's where we found the new Sheriff of Essex, Colonel Saltonstall. We all rode into town together. Arrived at my dear brother Cranch's, about eight, and drank tea and are all very happy. Sat and heard the ladies talk about ribbon, catgut, and Paris net, riding-hoods, cloth, silk, and lace. Brother Cranch came home and a very happy evening we had. Cranch is now in a good situation for business, near the Court House and Mr. Barnard's meeting-house and on the road to Marblehead: his house fronting the wharves, the harbor and shipping, has a fine prospect before it.

"4. *Tuesday.* A fine morning: attended court all day. * * Prayer by Mr. Barnard, Deacon Pickering was foreman of one of the juries * * his appearance is perfectly plain, like a farmer. * * * *

"5. *Wednesday.* Attended Court; heard the trial of an action of trespass, brought by a mulatto woman for damages for restraining her of her liberty. * * * Spent the evening at Mr. Pynchon's with Farnham, Sewall, Sargent, Colonel Saltonstall, etc., very agreably. Punch, wine, bread and cheese, apples, pipes and tobacco. Popes and bonfires this evening at Salem, and a swarm of tumultuous people attending them.

"6. *Thursday.* A fine morning. Oated at Martin's, where we saw five boxes of dollars, containing, as we were told, about eighteen thousand of them, going in a horse-cart from Salem Custom House to Boston, in order to be shipped for England. A guard of armed men, with swords, hangers, pistols and muskets, attended it. We dined at Dr. Tuft's in Medford. * * * Drank tea at Mrs. Kneeland's,—got home before eight o'clock."

On a previous visit to his brother Cranch in August, he rode after tea to Neck Gate, then back through the common, down to Beverly Ferry and about town. "Scarce an eminence," he says, "can be found anywhere to take a view. The streets are broad and straight and pretty clean. The houses are the most elegant and grand that I have seen in any of the maritime towns."

On Friday, June 29th, 1770, he set out on another "journey to Falmouth in Casco Bay." Dined at Goodhue's in Salem. Fell in with a London merchant, a stranger, who "made a genteel appearance,"—was in a chair, himself with a negro servant; talked of American affairs; thought the colonists "could not conquer their luxury," and this would make them dependent on Great Britain. "Oated my horse and drank balm tea at Treadwell's in Ipswich." Treadwell's was a favorite resort with him. On a visit there ten days before, he says,—"Rambled with Kent round Landlord Treadwell's pastures to see how our horses fared. We found them in the grass up to their eyes; excellent pastures. This hill, on which stand the Meeting-house and Court House, is a fine elevation, and we have here a fine air and the pleasant prospect of the winding river at the foot of the hill."

On another visit he writes:

"Landlord and landlady are some of the grandest people alive: landlady is the great grand-daughter of Governor Endicott. * * As to Landlord he is as happy and proud as any nobleman in England."

And again—

"The old lady has got a new copy of her great grandfather's, Governor Endicott's picture hung up in the house."

That picture is now among the collections of the Essex Institute.

Next morning, Saturday, June 30th, he "arose not very early, drank a pint of new milk and set off; oated my horse at Newbury, rode to Clarke's at Greenland meeting-house, where I gave him hay and oats and then set off for Newington." Dined there with his uncle Joseph, minister of that town, then in his eighty-second year, and set off for York over Bloody Point Ferry * * "a very unsentimental journey excepting this day at dinner; have been unfortunate enough to ride alone all the way and have met with very few characters or adventures. I forgot

yesterday to mention that I stopped and inquired the name of a pond in Wenham, which I found, was Wenham Pond, and also the name of a remarkable little hill at the mouth of the pond, which resembles a high loaf of our country brown bread, and found that it is called Peters' Hill to this day from the famous Hugh Peters." * * *

"*July* 1. *Sunday.* Arose early. I took a walk to the pasture, to see how my horse fared. * * * My little mare had provided for herself, by leaping out of a bare pasture into a lot of mowing ground, and had filled herself with grass and water. * * * *

"2. *Monday morning.* In my sulky before five o'clock, Mr. Winthrop, Farnham and D. Sewall with me on horseback: rode through the woods, the tide being too high to go over the beach and to cross Cape Neddick River; came to Littlefield's in Wells, a quarter before eight: stopped there and breakfasted. * * * Rode to Patten's of Arundel. Mr. Winthrop and I turned our horses into a little close to roll and cool themselves and feed upon white honey-suckle. P. M. Got into my chair: rode with Elder Bradbury through Sir William Pepperell's woods: stopped and oated at Milliken's and rode into Falmouth."

Compare this picture of Mr. Adams riding into Falmouth, in his *désobligeant*, as he calls his narrow-seated chair or sulky, with an incident in the career of two statesmen of our time. During the negotiation of the British-American treaty which detained Mr. Webster in the cabinet of John Tyler, after his colleagues had deserted all the departments but that of State, it was proposed to convey him, in company with Lord Ashburton, with the utmost speed, from Boston to Portland. Alexander Brown, a genial, trusty, energetic man, was chosen from among the drivers on the route to arrange the conveyance by stage from the railroad terminus, and the most thorough preparations were made. Relays of picked horses, frequent and fresh, awaited him at every stage-house, a groom to each horse, ambitious, both man and beast, to act well their parts in the struggle against time. Three minutes were allowed for each change of horses. Mr. Brown, afterwards depot-master at the railroad station in Boston, recalled the achievement of that day with pride until his death, and used to tell how the British Ambassador got out at a stopping-place and, watch in hand, observed the process of "unhitching and putting to," remarking that it was done as quickly, within a few seconds, as in England. This was high commendation from an Englishman. And it certainly was a notable thing, to have driven for eight hours over American roads, well enough to keep an English peer in good humor, and to have brought him into Portland, which was the old time Falmouth, in company with the man described by Carlyle as a "Parliamentary Hercules," "a magnificent specimen," whom "that tanned complexion, amorphous, crag-like face and those dull, black eyes under their precipice of brows, and that mastiff mouth, lead one to back against all the extant world," and of whom Emerson wrote "He is a natural emperor of men," and Sidney Smith is reported to have said that he must be a humbug, "for no man could be a tenth part as great as he looked."

Once more, Monday, June 17, 1771, Mr. Adams set out upon the Eastern Circuit.

"I mounted my horse and rode to Boston in a cloth coat and waistcoat, but was much pinched with a raw, cold, harsh, northeast wind. At Boston I put on a thick flannel shirt, and that made me comfortable and no more; so cold am I, or so cold is the weather, June 17th * * * Came over Charlestown ferry and Penny ferry and dined at Kettel's in Malden. * * * Overtook Judge Cushing in his old curricle with two lean horses, and Dick, his negro, at his right hand, driving the curricle. This is the way of travelling in 1771, —a judge of the circuits, a judge of the superior court, a judge of the king's bench, common pleas and exchequer for the Province, travels with a pair of wretched old jades of horses in a wretched old curricle, and a negro on the same seat with him driving. * * * Stopped at Martin's in Lynn with Judge Cushing; oated and drank a glass of wine. * * * Rode with King, a deputy sheriff, who came out to meet the judges, into Salem: put up at Goodhue's. The negro that took my horse soon began to open his heart. He did not like the people of Salem; wanted to be sold to Capt. John Dean of Boston. His mistress said he did not earn salt to his porridge and would not find him clothes."

Arrived at Falmouth, July 2d, he writes:

"This has been the most flat, insipid, spiritless, tasteless journey I ever took, especially from Ipswich."

And this we can understand better when we read of his riding alone through Saco woods after night-fall.

"Many sharp, steep hills, many rocks, many deep ruts, and not a foot-step of man except in the road; it was vastly disagreeable."

Before great advances could be made towards speed, comfort, safety and cheapness in travel, fords and stepping-stones must give way to ferries,—ferry-ways must yield to bridges, and turnpikes must supersede county roads on the great thoroughfares. Road-making was no new art. It had been carried to a high point by the ancients, but the costliness of their works made the lesson of little value to the new countries of the modern world. The Romans, for instance, had magnificent roads leading out into the provinces,—as many of them as the hills upon which the eternal city sat. These roads were crowned with a surface of polished stone, over which wagons, on wooden wheels, were drawn by unshod beasts with ease and speed. But it was only at the beginning of this century that McAdam showed us how to bridge over a quagmire with a crust of concrete so firm as to bear loads that make the marshy substratum on which it rests quake like a jelly.

From 1636 a ferry had been supported between North Point or Salem Neck, so-called, and Cape Ann or Bass River side, now Beverly. From time to time it was leased for the benefit of the grammar school-masters of Salem. At first it provided only for the crossing of persons. But, in 1639, these were the regulations: "Lessee to keep an horse-boate—to have for strangers' passadge 2*d.* apeice,—for towne dwellers 1*d.* apeice,—for mares, horses and other great beasts 6*d.* apeice, and for goats, calves and swyne 2*d.* apiece." For more than a century, an inn known as the "Old Ferry Tavern," stood hard by on the Salem side. The ferry touched at Salem side near the present bridge, but a little to the east.

In 1787, Beverly, somewhat aggrieved at the manage-

ment of the ferry in the interest of Salem, moved for a bridge. A charter, now on deposit with the Essex Institute, was granted to the Cabots, and Israel Thorndike of Beverly, and to John Fiske and Joseph White of Salem, and the old ferry-way was laid out as a highway by the Court of Sessions. December 13th, the proprietors of the bridge organized at the Sun Tavern. Nathan Dane was moderator, and William Prescott, clerk. The bridge was opened for use September 24, 1788. It was one of the modern wonders. Gen. Washington, on his northern tour the next year, dismounted to examine it and observe the working of the draw. And a Russian engineer was specially commissioned to acquaint himself with its structure. But this beneficent work was not carried through without violent opposition, of which Spite Bridge was one of the fruits. Salem voted to oppose the petitioners and invited other towns to do so. Competition was threatened from a parallel bridge. The navigation of North River, it was urged, would be annihilated, and forty vessels of various tonnage, then employed there, would be driven from the river. Orne's Point was insisted on as the proper terminus in Salem. "Prejudices, strong party feeling and much excitement" are spoken of by Felt, and he adds that one Blythe, a wit of the time, was prompted to observe that there never was a bridge built without *railings on both sides.* This timely successor of the old ferry-way, after compensating its projectors for their risk and outlay, reverted, at the expiration of its seventy years' charter, to the State. I may be pardoned a personal reminiscence in this connection. My grandfather walked over the bridge on the day it was opened for travel, being then a Salem school-boy ten years old, and again in his eightieth year on the day of the expiration of its charter in 1858, having been president of the corporation in the interval.

In 1868 the bridge was surrendered by the State to the towns and thrown open to the public, in accordance with that enlightened social economy which teaches that all needless restraint upon the intercourse of neighbors is barbarism.

Another monument of Essex County enterprise is the turnpike connecting us with Boston, now also, in the same liberal spirit, dedicated to free travel. March 6, 1802, Edward Augustus Holyoke, William Gray, Nathan Dane, Jacob Ashton and Israel Thorndike, with their associates, were incorporated to build a turnpike from Buffum's corner, through Great Pastures, over Breed's Island in Lynn Marshes, across Mystic River, and from a point near the Navy-yard to Charles River Bridge. The Statute Books are full of similar acts at this period. The Essex Turnpike from Andover, intended to bring the travel of Vermont and New Hampshire through Salem to Boston, was chartered the next spring, as was also another from State street, Newburyport "by as nearly a straight line as practicable" to Malden Bridge.

Here again we were not behind the times. Telford and McAdam had not completed their grand experiments nor demonstrated their rival systems for some years later. But the turnpike corporators used the best science of the day and a wonderful road they made. In the famous records kept at Benjamin Blanchard's Barber Shop, in which his distinguished patrons noted current events, while waiting for an empty chair, it appears that work began near "Pickering's Pen" June 7, 1802. Of course there was vigorous opposition and wild disparagement on one side,—great enthusiasm on the other. Dr. Stearns, one of its most ardent promoters, is said to have declared that, when the turnpike was done, a man might stand on Buffum's corner and look straight into Charlestown Square. The extent of the work of building may be judged of by the fact that a village of huts covered the high ground now occupied by Erastus Ware, which soon became a resort for toddy and tenpins, and that the material and tools employed, sold on the completion of the work, brought at auction, October 27, 1803, thirty-two hundred dollars. Captain Richard Wheatland paid the first toll, July 12, 1803, on his way to Boston to take command of his ship for Calcutta. How much the new route, only twelve miles and a fraction long, did to bring us and the metropolis together, will be recalled with pleasure by some yet living who enjoyed for the first time, in the early years of the century, an evening ride to Boston with a ball, a concert, or a play in prospect to give zest to the excursion.

The largest sum, taken in a year at "Toll-Gate No 1," near our great pastures, was $5300, in 1805;—the day of the greatest travel was June 1, 1813. On that summer afternoon the smoke of conflict between the "Chesapeake" and "Shannon" was rolling over the bay. One hundred and twenty stages, crowded to repletion, passed up that day. Thousands of spectators prayerfully watched the fight from every hill-top and gloomily retired when the issue was but too plainly seen.

On the morning of November 6, 1869, the old gate-keeper at "No. 1," gets orders to take no more tolls. Gravely he sets open, for the last time, the last toll-gate in Essex County and breaks out in rhyme:

> "The last toll is taken,—I've swung wide the gate,
> The word has been spoken,—We yield to our fate!"

The distinctive character of the turnpike among roads is departed. It is as wholly a thing of the past as that negro village which once clustered about the entrance at Buffum's corner, with its fortune-telling and cake-baking and fiddling and dancing. But the great road will stand. Years will not destroy its traces of heavy blasting and grading,—its viaducts of splendid masonry across deep, picturesque ravines, their granite sides and terraced buttresses backed up with sturdy trunks and roots of ancient elm and willow, fit types of the blended beauty and utility which mark its course. No son of Salem returning from

his wanderings, however great a truant, but will pause delighted on that hill top, where bursts upon the eye the eldest born of New England cities, whether the morning sun is touching with an early glory the score of spires and towers, clustered about that thing of beauty, the South Church Steeple, or whether at night-fall, broadsides of factory windows are blazing with their perpetual illumination in honor of the triumphs of industry. While lovers ramble and young limbs are strong,—while Bitter-sweet Rocks live in song, and Great Pastures find a place in story,—so long shall there be brisk walking among its rugged scenes in Spring and Autumn, and willing steeds shall be urged to speed over No-bottom Pond Bridge on the moonlight gallop, so long as water plashes up like molten silver through the chinks in the planking,—until, indeed, the poet sings to deaf ears,

"'Tis life to guide the fiery Barb
Across the moonlit plain!"

The first public conveyance noticed by Felt was a "large stage chair," or two-horse curricle which ran from Portsmouth to Boston and back each week, in 1761. "An epidemical distemper" among horses interfered with the business in 1768, but, two years after, Benjamin Coats, who was then landlord at the Ship Tavern in School (now Washington) Street, gave notice that he had bought a "new Stage chaise" which would run between Salem and Boston "so that he will then, with the one now improved in that business, be able to carry and bring passengers, bundles and the like every day except Sunday." He has also five fall-back chaises, one fall-back curricle, six standing top chairs and three sulkies to let. In December, 1771, Benjamin Hart advertises that "he has left riding the single horse post between Boston and Portsmouth and now drives the post stage lately improved by John Noble. He sets out from Boston every Friday morning and from Portsmouth on Tuesday morning following. The above conveyance has been found very useful and now more so, as there is another curricle improved by J. S. Hart, who sets off from Portsmouth the same day this does from Boston, by which opportunity offers twice a week, for travellers to either place."

Systematic staging probably began here about 1796, and in this business Benjamin Hale, of Newburyport, seems to have been the pioneer on the route between Boston and Portsmouth, as was Seth Paine, of Portland, on the lines further east. Mr. Hale was a resolute, persevering man, and there was nothing worth knowing about staging which he did not know. Many improvements in stage springs are accredited to him, as well as the introduction of the trunk-rack, by which means the passenger's luggage was employed to ballast the coach, whereas formerly it had rested, a dead weight, on the axles, jolting and tossing as though springs were yet to be invented. He had made his way up from small beginnings against discouragements and trials, but his single coach, driven by his own hand, in the early years of the century, had given place to a large establishment of horses, carriages and drivers. Mr. Paine's career had not been different. He was a postman in Maine when all the mails were carried on horse-back; a man of few words, prompt, inflexible, and of great energy. He came to be the largest owner and sole manager of coaches east of Portsmouth and government contractor for the eastern mails, while the stages on this side of Portsmouth were under the able and exclusive management of Mr. Hale. The proprietors, at this time, were few,—not more than five or six. Besides those named, were Judge Elkins, of Wenham and Salem, and Samuel Larkin, of Portsmouth. Dr. Cleaveland, of Topsfield, bought an interest about 1806. The profitable character of the business could not long be concealed. Tributary lines spring up. Thus a stage connected with the Boston Line set off from Salem, August 20, 1810, for the Coos County. Three were to be despatched every week. Competition, of course, followed, and, in 1818, opposing lines were absorbed by the original proprietors, and the Eastern State Company was incorporated. It is not too early to write in a historic strain of that once familiar visitant, the Stage Coach. And the books of this corporation, now in possession of the Essex Institute, shed ample light upon one of the largest and most successful staging enterprises of New England.

The Eastern Stage Company was chartered by the State of New Hampshire, for a period of twenty years. Its act of incorporation, approved June, 1818, contains three sections, and, singularly enough, by no word except its title, from beginning to end, indicates the business to be facilitated thereby. By this act, Samuel Larkin, William Simes, Elisha Whidden and their associates are made a body corporate, the "Eastern Stage Company," by name, are to sue and be sued, have a common seal, make rules and by-laws, and generally to do whatever appertains to bodies corporate, with a capital stock not exceeding one hundred thousand dollars, and shares not more than five hundred in number, and that is all. To one familiar with the guarded language of acts establishing the railroad lines which superseded this great stage route, the absence of all limitations of power is striking. In the early railroad charters every function that could be anticipated is provided for, even to the grade of the road-bed, the curves of the track, and the erection of toll-houses and toll-gates, after the analogy of the turnpike, where trains were to stop and travellers pay fare.

But these corporators did not abuse their powers, however loosely conferred. Their first meeting, duly notified in the *Portsmouth Oracle*, the *Boston Centinel* and the *Newburyport Herald*, was held at Langmaid's tavern, at Hampton Falls, on Friday, October 9, 1818. They chose Dr. Nehemiah Cleaveland, of Topsfield, Moderator, and Samuel Newman, Clerk, accepted the

charter, adopted by-laws and fixed their capital stock at four hundred and twenty-five shares, of one hundred dollars each. The by-laws provide for eight directors and a proprietors' clerk, to be chosen annually by the share-holders, who were to throw a vote for each share owned, not exceeding twenty—the directors to chose a president from their number, appoint "a principal agent and treasurer" and such "agents, drivers and servants as they may find necessary for the due management of the property." They are to close accounts and declare dividends in March and September, and are allowed two dollars per day and expenses for attendance at directors' meetings. The clerk was under oath, and the agent and treasurer under bonds in the sum of ten thousand dollars.

Article VI. provides a form of stock certificate, assignable by indorsement and transfer on the books of the proprietors' clerk.

Article VII. "No person whatever shall be privileged to ride in any of the company's carriages without paying common stage fare."

They organized thus,—President, Dr. Cleaveland,—Proprietors' Clerk, Seth Sweetser,—Directors, Josiah Paine, Stephen Howard, Seth Sweetser, Samuel Larkin, Thomas Haven, Henry Elkins, Ephraim Wildes. Col. Jeremiah Coleman was principal agent and treasurer.

If the charter said nothing of the purposes of this corporation, their own by-laws said about as little. Nowhere is there a distinct announcement of the function which they proposed to discharge, nor any description of the extent nor location of their field of operations. This is to be explained, no doubt, by the fact that some of these gentlemen were, before their incorporation, already successful operators and proprietors of stages running over portions of the routes they now proposed to combine, and no words were needed to teach them the duties and liabilities of common carriers of persons.

Thus at the first directors' meeting we seem plunged at once into the dust and whirl of stage-coach travel. The six o'clock stage from Portsmouth (they vote) is to be discontinued. What a chapter might be written on that early coach, leaving "Wildes' Hotel" at six o'clock each frosty October morning or, better still, on the stage which, all winter long, in storm or by starlight, left Boston for the East at five o'clock in the morning. The hurried breakfast,—the smoking corn-cake,—the savory rasher,—the potato raked, glowing hot, out of its bed of ashes,—the steaming, creamy, aromatic coffee,—the chill, crisp morning,—lanterns flitting ghostly through the ample stables,—reluctant horse-boys shivering about the door-yard and wishing themselves in their bunks again,—the resonant crack of the whip,—the clear, sharp click of well-shod hoofs on frozen ground,—the clatter of wheels,—the scramble in the dark for seats,—the long, dull ride with fellow-travellers chilled and grim, half concealed by twilight and half in mufflers,—that crying baby, who seems to have found vent, at that unlucky hour, for all the pent-up sorrows of its little life,—the gradual warmth of conversation and day-break stealing at last over the coach-load,—the side-lights fading out and good nature once more prevailing over cramped legs, sharp elbows and cold feet shuffling among the scanty straw,—all these things must now be given over to the romancer, whose ready pen, ever busy with the past, will not long neglect them.

The late President Quincy gives a well-drawn picture of staging facilities at the close of the last century. He was then paying court to a New York lady, to whom he was privately engaged and afterwards married. Boston had twenty—New York, thirty thousand souls. Two coaches and twelve horses sufficed the travel between the two commercial centres of the continent. The journey was almost as rare an event then as a voyage to Europe is now, and took about as long. To one bent on Mr. Quincy's errand the way no doubt seemed doubly tedious. The impatient suitor writes:

"The carriages were old, and the shackling and much of the harness made of ropes. One pair of horses carried us eighteen miles. We generally reached our resting-place for the night, if no accident intervened, at ten o'clock, and after a frugal supper, went to bed with a notice that we should be called at three, next morning—which generally proved to be half-past two. Then, whether it snowed or rained, the traveller must rise and make ready by the help of a horn lantern and a farthing candle, and proceed on his way, over bad roads,—sometimes with a driver showing no doubtful symptoms of drunkenness, which good-hearted passengers never failed to improve at every stopping-place, by urging upon him the comfort of another glass of toddy. Thus we travelled eighteen miles a stage, sometimes obliged to get out and help the coachman lift the coach out of a quagmire or rut, and arrived at New York after a week's hard travelling, wondering at the ease as well as the expedition with which our journey was effected."

Contrast with this picture an "Old Driver's Reminiscence," which I give in his own words. The stage that left Newburyport for Boston at 8 o'clock in the morning usually took the passengers who had stopped for rest over night, many of whom were strangers to our New England customs. One morning, as the passengers were about taking their seats, a gentleman asked the driver if he would accommodate him with a seat on the box. "Certainly," says the driver, "please step right up before another occupies it." Our first stop was at Rowley, a seven mile drive, during which many questions were asked by the stranger and answered according to the driver's knowledge. At this place we took some passengers. While the driver was arranging the baggage, the gentleman on the box asked him to step in and take something to drink. His reply was, "No, I thank you, sir, I have no occasion for anything," and he mounted the box and drove to Ipswich, where the horses were changed. Here most of the passengers alighted while the shifting was taking place. At the same time the stranger came off the box and urged the driver again to take something to drink. The answer was the same as be-

fore. When the horses were ready, the driver, as was the custom, says—"the stage is ready, gentlemen!" and they take their seats in the coach. Off they start down the crooked hill and over the stone bridge, called by some short-sighted people "Choate's Folly." The next stop was at Wenham, where it was the usual practice to take the fares, it being the Half-Way House to Boston. And here the outside passenger says to the driver again,—"Come, now, you have accomplished one-half of the distance,—you must certainly take a drink with me." "No, I thank you, sir." "What kind of men are you drivers here in this section of the country? Drivers where I came from will drink at every stopping-place, and it is with much fear that we travel there, but here I see that passengers are perfectly at ease when seated in the coach." "Sir, things have changed here within a few years. You were saying that passengers in your section were uneasy, and often had fears for their safety while riding with your drivers. Here all that is reversed, for in former years the travellers used every precaution to keep the drivers sober, but now the drivers by their example try to keep the passengers sober." "I will never ask you to drink again," says our outside passenger, and he was mum on the drinking question the rest of the way to Boston.

The arrangements for the main route of the Eastern Stage Company, in the winter of 1818, may be sketched thus: A coach left Portsmouth for Boston at 9 A. M., (the same carriage running through), dined at Topsfield, then through Danversport and Salem to Boston, and back the same way next day, dining at Newburyport. A portion of the Newburyport turnpike was used, and this made Topsfield quite metropolitan, so much so that conventions often met there. In 1808 a great caucus was held at Topsfield to denounce the embargo. The County Convention which established Lyceums met there in 1829. The Essex Agricultural Society, formed at Topsfield in 1818, held its annual meetings there in 1820, '22, '23, '24, '25, '37 and '38, but never after.

Of course the records plunge us at once into all sorts of questions of law and policy,—they meet us at the threshold,—they linger to the end;—questions of tolls on turnpikes and bridges,—conferences arranged with this and that corporation,—new terms made or war declared. Once it is voted that seven hundred dollars be accepted by the Newburyport Turnpike as toll for the year, or the stages go by Old Town Bridge. Complications grow out of the delicate relations of carriers to the public. Too accommodating drivers are induced to act as expressmen on their private account, and attempts are made to hold the company liable for their losses. At the first meeting "Drivers are expressly prohibited from carrying any money or packages, not accounted for to the company's agent;" and almost at the last a "committee is considering the subject of drivers carrying provisions from sundry places to Boston for sale, contrary to a vote of the directors." In April, 1819, "the company do not consider themselves accountable for the loss of any baggage, bundles, or packages whatever, committed to the care of the drivers, or otherwise put into their stages." This sweeping announcement, so like what is sometimes read on the backs of railroad tickets to-day, was followed up in the same spirit in 1826 and 1829. Now they vote that no driver shall carry anything, except in his pocket, without paying the company's agent, on pain of instant dismissal; and again, the driver must "agree with the agent to exclude his private or pocket business from his compensation, so the company shall have no participation, direct or indirect, with such business of the drivers, meaning especially Bills of any Bank which may be entrusted to them." "But is this law?" ask the perplexed proprietors of Benjamin Merrill, Esq., in 1832, and that eminent counselor finds himself unable to give the desired assurance, but on the contrary, they record a long opinion advising them that their contract with drivers will not discharge them from liability, unless notice of it is brought home in each case to the sender of the bill or parcel. And accordingly a notice, drawn by him, is formally served in person on every bank president and cashier on the route, posted in the taverns, and widely advertised in the newspapers.

The record is rich in little incidents which give life to the picture of the times. A driver is fined fifty dollars, the value of a horse killed by his carelessness. Afterwards, for good conduct, the forfeiture is reduced to one month's wages. Owing to the appreciated state of the currency, in 1820, wages were reduced, and fares from Boston to Exeter put at three dollars. Once in awhile a coach is overturned. In one case, if payment of damages is refused by the Salem Turnpike, the agent is to enter complaint and present the road to the grand jury; in another, forty dollars are received in liquidation. Again, a director is to settle for damages done by loose horses breaking out of the Salem stable. And again, fines imposed by the post-office department for loss of mails, are to be charged off to the drivers who lost them. Sub-agents were selected for the principal points on the route, placed on salary, and under bonds, and quartered at the best hotels. Blacksmith's shops were established at many points, and extensive stables in Boston and elsewhere, many of them built of brick. Not more than seven shillings were to be paid for shoeing, out of Boston, and but ten cents for caulking or resetting shoes. Drivers are forbid taking letters, in violation of laws regulating the United States General Post-office; and frequent embassies are dispatched to Washington to contract for carrying the mails, or to change the times or terms for delivering them. "Accommodating Stages" are sometimes to take mails at the desire of government or the postmaster at Boston, but "Mail Stages" are regularly designated, and these make better speed

and collect higher fares than the former. Mail-contracts are exchanged among different companies, and combinations formed with other lines where competition would be ruinous, and sub-agents are withdrawn from inns which harbor the books of hostile companies. In April, 1823, it is significantly voted that several sub-agents be discharged, and hereafter it shall be an "indispensible requisite that their moral characters be good, and that they have no horses and carriages to let." In August, 1823, it is voted to "keep a horse and chaise in Boston to accommodate passengers, and carry and fetch their baggage." This under the stress of a vigorous opposition, when the exigency called for unusual efforts and the running of extras at "about the same time the opposing stage goes, but always a little before that conveyance and at the same fare." In October, a number of horses and chaises are to be kept on hire at Newburyport. In December, the extras run a little before the opposition coaches are to charge but half fare. The Ann Street stage-house at Boston is leased and furnished, and Col. Wildes placed there as landlord, with an interest in the profits not to exceed one-half. Next summer the horses are to be fed with cut hay and meal. April 19, 1825, the directors met at Gilman's hotel, in Newburyport. They found their enterprise thriving,—established a sinking fund to be swelled by semi-annual additions; carried one thousand dollars to that account; declared a semi-annual dividend of four per cent.; created seventy-five new shares, making up the full five hundred to which they were limited in their charter, and provided for selling the new shares at not less than six dollars premium on a par of one hundred dollars. To the sinking fund was afterward voted the net income of the Ann Street stage-house, and the agent was directed to sell at auction, from time to time, collections of articles left in their offices and coaches "for which no owners can be found." The second dividend for this year was six per cent., and in 1826 eleven per cent. was divided.

At the end of ten years the prosperity of the company was established. It had now substantial stables, not connected with public houses, at all the chief points of the route, one of them on Church Street, in the rear of the Lafayette Coffee-house, in Salem; and it owned hotels, or a controlling interest in hotels, at Boston, Newburyport, Exeter and Dover. It was sending deputations to the New England Stage Association, which met at "Holbrook's," in Milk Street, Boston, with a view to bring together, at least once a year, representatives of all the stage companies of this section. In October, 1828, it held its shares at a premium of fifty dollars, and made a semi-annual dividend of eight per cent., on one hundred and fifty dollars per share. At this time the management of the stage-house in Ann Street passed into the hands of Mr. Leavitt, upon the death of Col. Wildes and Col. Henry Whipple of Salem, became a director in place of Judge Elkins, resigned.

In 1830, the company was incorporated in Massachusetts, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars. In 1832 it sent delegates to a Mail Contract Convention, which sat at "Wyatt's" in Dover, to apportion the mail routes for New England, and its bid shows that it was running coaches from Concord to Portsmouth; Dover, by two routes, to Newburyport; Portsmouth, by Exeter, to Newburyport, Salem and Boston; from Salem to Haverhill and Lowell; from Gloucester to Ipswich; and from Lowell, by two routes, to Newburyport.

January, 1833, found them free from debt and their stock higher than ever. They owned near five hundred horses. A steamboat had been built on Lake Winnepessaukee and they were running stages from Dover to meet it. At times they ran a daily to Portland. In October, 1834, the stock stood at $202.13 per share on their books, par being $100. In January, 1835, they were paying between eight and nine thousand dollars in tolls for the year, had bought turnpike, bridge and bank stocks, and amongst other real estate the Dalton House, between the West estate and Church Street, in Salem, which they sold, retaining a way out from the stables to Church Street. Up to this point their career must be considered as one of unmixed prosperity. The Eastern Railroad was not chartered; the Boston and Maine was but a spur from the Boston and Lowell, extending as far as Andover. Travel increased apace,—with it the running stock and corps of employés. The directors' record-book is pleasant reading now. They meet at comfortable inns, spend two or three days together, examine lucrative accounts, pass the evening over plethoric way-bills, compute their dividends, make combinations with kindred bodies all over the Eastern States, and New York if need be, and smile at competition.

What a text is here for another volume of pen and ink sketches,—these old stage houses which figure in the record,—"Wildes' Hotel" at Portsmouth, "Langmaid's" and "Wade's" at Hampton Falls, "Gilman's" and the "Wolfe" at Newburyport, the "Sun Tavern," the "Lafayette Coffee House" at Salem, "Ann Street Stage House" and "City Tavern" in Boston! What pleasant memories start up at the recital, as of those ancient hostelries of London, once, as Mr. Dickens says, "the headquarters of celebrated coaches in the days when coaches performed their journeys in a graver and more solemn manner than they do in these times, but which have now degenerated into little more than the abiding and booking places of country wagons." Of these he says, "there still remain some half-dozen in the borough, which have preserved their external features unchanged, and which have escaped alike the rage for public improvement and the encroachments of private speculation. Great, rambling, queer, old places they are, with galleries, and passages, and stair-cases wide enough and antiquated enough to furnish materials

for a hundred ghost-stories, supposing we should ever be reduced to the lamentable necessity of inventing any." Such was our own poet's Wayside Inn,

> "Built in the old colonial day,
> When men lived in a grander way
> With ampler hospitality—
> A kind of old Hobgoblin Hall,
> Now somewhat fallen to decay,
> With weather-stains upon the wall
> And stair-ways worn and crazy doors
> And creaking and uneven floors,
> And chimneys huge, and tiled and tall.
> A region of repose it seems.
> By noon and night the panting teams
> Stop under the great oaks that throw
> Tangles of light and shade below.
> Across the road the barns display
> Their lines of stalls, their mows of hay.
> Through the wide door the breezes blow,—
> The wattled cocks strut to and fro,—
> And, half effaced by rain and shine,
> The 'Red Horse' prances on the sign."

One seems to recall the impatience with which the tired traveller looked forward to alighting at these old inns,—to see again the village steeple peering over the hill, its gilded cockerel glistening in the sunset,—to hear the stage-horn once more bidding the postmaster expect the evening mail, the landlord serve the welcome meal; to see honest, little, nervous Jack Mendum, or sturdy, robust, reliable Robert Annable, or good-natured Knight, or the voluble but substantial Pike, or some other famous whip, gather up his reins and muster his strength for a final sweep across the tavern yard, the crowning effort of a day of toil to dusty traveller and smoking, jaded team, and then down go the steps and cramped legs are free at last!

Or we seem again to be bowling down that grand old turnpike from Newburyport, with Ackerman or Barnabee or Forbes, rumbling by old Gov. Dummer's Academy at Byfield, telling off the milestones through the Topsfield of fifty years ago, over the grassy hills and by the beautiful lake at Lynnfield, on the coach that left "Pearson's" at six every summer morning; or to be whirling by Flax Pond, where, a century ago, Mr. Goldthwaite asked John Adams to a "genteel dinner" of fish, bacon, peas and incomparable Madeira, under the "shady trees, with half a dozen as clever fellows as ever were born;" or to be rattling through the old toll-gate and dashing down Great Pasture hills into Salem town on the topmost seat of the early Boston Mail Stage which, in 1835, was to "breakfast in Salem and dine at Portsmouth," while all the eastern landscape is aglow with the tints of morning and the dews of spring make everything in nature sparkle. Or perhaps it is winter.

> "Now the increasing storm makes all the plain
> From field to highway a vast foaming sea!
> And sculptors of the air, with curious skill,
> Have graven their images of stainless white,
> Pagodas, temples, turrets, columns raised
> From the exhaustless quarries of the snow,
> Afar and near,—the artwork of the wind!"

and we reach perhaps the little court-house on the hill at Ipswich, with the bar of Southern Essex, to find that another coach-load of jurisprudence is stuck fast on Rowley Marshes, while judge and counsellor alike have committed trespass *quare clausum fregit*, in prying their coach out of a snowdrift with the nearest fence rails.

The Hon. Allen W. Dodge writes of the drivers of those days as follows:—

"In those days of old-fashioned winters, there were many trials and difficulties in getting through the route, but let the storm or the snow blockade be ever so bad, they were always ready to do, to the uttermost, all that men could do to accomplish it. These drivers, too, were the most obliging and kind-hearted men that ever handled reins, cracked whip or sounded stage-horn.

"They were great favorites with all the boys who rode with them. Many of us who were then at Exeter Academy came home at the end of the term by the Eastern Stage route, and a lively time we used to have of it. Quite a number of stage coaches were always sent on to take us. When they arrived what a scramble ensued to see who should ride with Pike, who with Annable, or Knight, or Forbes, or some other good-natured driver, experienced in stages and careful of their young charges as if they were all destined to be governors, or judges, or presidents. We used to consider it the seat of honor on the outside with the driver, there to listen to his stories and to enjoy his company. Many a scrap of practical wisdom did we youngsters thus pick up to turn to good account on the great road of life.

"And then too what a gathering at the old Wolfe Tavern in Newburyport, when the noon stage-coaches arrived from Boston! The sidewalk was often crowded with anxious boys, and men too, to catch a sight of distinguished passengers and the last fashions, and to hear the latest news. Why, it was as good as a daily paper, or a telegraphic dispatch—better indeed, for the living men, actors sometimes in the scenes described, were there to tell what had happened."

I find related in a contribution to the *Salem Gazette*, one of those little incidents that sparkle like jewels in the sand:

"Once when a mere child it was necessary for me to go from Saco to a town near Boston. This was quite an undertaking in those days, as one was obliged to pass the night in Portsmouth. Being without a protector, my mother confided me to the care of one of those old, faithful drivers. It was evening when we reached Portsmouth and very cold. Everything was new and strange to me. How carefully was I taken by the hand and led up that long flight of stairs to the excellent accommodations which awaited me! How well I remember the kind, smiling face of Robinson, as next morning, whip in hand, he appeared at the parlor door and inquired for the 'little girl' who was to go with him! His hearty 'good morning' and 'all ready, miss,' as I presented myself, are still sounding in my ears. While changing horses at Newburyport I was comfortably seated before a warm fire in the sitting-room. Indeed, I do not know that I could have been more comfortably attended to had I been the daughter of the President. I was the daughter of a poor widow instead, and an utter stranger to the man whose memory I have ever cherished as one of the pleasant recollections of my childhood."

What stalwart men this sturdy, out-door life produced! Moses Head, of Portsmouth, drove into that town, from Boston, the stage that brought news of peace in 1815, with a white flag fastened to the box. News of the battle of New Orleans came at the same time. That evening there was a procession in honor of these events. Head, who was then Ensign of the artillery company, and resembled General Jackson in appearance and stature, arrayed himself in a military suit and chapeau, and personated the hero of New Orleans in the ranks of the procession to great acceptance. He was born among the granite hills of New Hampshire, and died at the age of seventy-two, after a sickness of a day, the only sickness of his life.

Another old driver sends me his recollections of "life on the road," and I insert them here.

"I began to drive on an opposition line in 1823, and after about nine months I had an application from Col. Coleman to come over to the old company. As I thought it a more permanent job, I came over to drive 'Extra.' I had not been long at it before the travel increased very much, so the directors ordered one hundred more horses to be bought, and carriages in proportion, to accommodate the public. The business came on so hard that I had all I bargained for. I followed the mail twelve days in succession, starting from Boston at 2 o'clock in the morning, breakfasting in Newburyport, dinner at Portsmouth and back again to supper in Salem, getting into Boston anywhere from nine to eleven o'clock, so there was not much sleep or rest for me. The twelfth day, when I drove into the yard at Salem, Col. Coleman was there, and said he, 'young man, you had better stop here and get a little rest and take your team in the morning at four o'clock.' So Mr. Rand took the team to Boston and back.

"The worst of it was, I had the same horses out and back every day. It was hard keeping up with the mail, as their horses rested one or two days in the week, and they were like wild ones. Only hold on and they would go as fast as any one wished to ride. As a general thing we made good time. I have been through Charlestown Square on time, for three weeks, not varying five minutes by the clock, although we had some trying storms.

"I was compelled to stop at Hamilton one night, after beating with the storm from seven in the morning till ten at night, with a single sleigh and two horses, and so, completely used up, we slept well. It cleared up about three o'clock, so that uncle Robert Annable, with the morning coach, came along pretty well, and passed us while we were asleep, and took off his bells so as not to awake us, and then he was very joyous to think he had got ahead. It was something, to be sure, that never happened before nor since.

"On the whole it was a very pleasant life, for every one on the road was very hospitable to us. I never got stuck in the mud nor snow, when all the people on the road were not willing, night or day, to lend a hand. So we felt that we were among friends, and that was comforting to us. The wealthy Southerners, who used to come east in summer, would almost always want us to keep on and drive them to Providence or New York, for they did not get so good accommodations at the South. And as we refused the refreshments they offered us at every stopping place, we were pretty sure to get a handsome present before they left, which was far more satisfactory. It was a very pleasant business, and we had our choice of company outside, and that was worth a great deal.

"When it was decided by the Legislature that there should be a Railroad, you may depend upon it there were heavy hearts. For we had spent so much time in staging we did not know what we should do. But all who wished had something to do. The corporation employed a large number of the drivers as conductors, baggage-masters and brakemen. I withdrew and took up the express business, and followed that until 1860. So I had served the public from '23 to '60."

These drivers, so freely trusted with life and treasure, with the care of helpless infancy and age, deserved well of the community they served, and are held in kindly remembrance. They knew of old the wants and habits of the travelling public, and railroad corporations were glad to secure agents from among their numbers.

Has anybody forgotten rare James Potter, of the Salem and Boston Line,—active, clear-headed, courteous and prompt, who for forty years drove with such care and skill to Boston and back that, it was said, he was as well known and as much respected by Salem people as Dr. Bentley? Here he comes up the street from the old "Sun Tavern" with the seven o'clock morning coach, his dapple-greys groomed to a hair and well in hand,—the model driver, trusted by the banks, by the old sea-kings, by everybody with uncounted treasure,—the splendid reinsman, chosen in August, 1824, to bring the beloved Lafayette in safety into Salem!

Has anybody forgotten the scene in College yard at Cambridge, when Peter Ray arrived, at the end of the term, with his coach and six sorrels, to take home what might well be styled the "flower of Essex!" How he displayed, before admiring eyes, his mastery of curves and functions, by turning six-in-hand, at a cheerful trot, in the little corner between Holworthy and Stoughton, and how the Essex County boys, cheered by their fellows and eager for the long vacation, whirled out of college gate and down the historic roads by Washington's Elm, and Letchmere's Point, and Bunker Hill, to their welcome home! Handsome Peter, they called him—a favorite with children and ladies—for with him, on the introduction of the famous steel-spring coaches, they first knew what it was to ride comfortably outside, with an intelligent and entertaining driver, whose tongue kept pace with his team, and whose castles in the air often reached stupendous proportions before half the distance between Lynn and Salem had been accomplished!

And here comes Page! witty, large-hearted, strong-handed Woodbury Page, his two bays on the jump, swinging round the corner from Beverly, sweeping round the Common to the old stable in Union Street, shifting horses, and then round the big elm and off again in a twinkling, with those very four milk-whites, with which he drove Henry Clay, in October, 1833, from Senator Silsbee's door-step in Washington Square to the Tremont House in sixty minutes!

And what shall be said of the polished and agreeable Jacob Winchester, favorite driver on wedding journeys and pleasure parties, who carried bags of specie to and from New York, when our merchants wanted a messenger who would neither play the rogue with funds nor suffer anybody to take them from him; what of the popular driver and consummate reinsman Lot Peach, who would get to Boston about as soon with crows' meat as moderate drivers did with choice teams of horses;—what of Albert Knight, always on good terms with passengers and steeds;—what of stout, little, talkative Major Shaw, who was off at three with the sorrels and the last coach up, rather than not go with whom ladies would often lose the morning stages and some hours of shopping and visiting in Boston; —what of stalwart, kind-hearted, deep-voiced Adrian Low, whose cheerful life ended in mystery and an unknown grave;—what, indeed, of the hundred and fifty good, sound, trusty men who, from first to last, drove stages over these routes in the employ of regular or opposition lines, whole families of them, like the four Potters, the three Annables, the three Akermans, the brothers Canney, Conant, Drake, Knight, Marshall, May, Manning, Patch, Robinson, Shaw, Tenney, Tozzer, Winchester, seeming to have been born on wheels, or descended from the hippocentaurs of ancient fable, —men who combined energy and good nature in a ratio not likely to be developed by any vocation now in vogue,—men who cracked their joke as they swung their whip,—men who knew what it is vouchsafed us

to know of that fascinating uncertainty, the horse, and supplemented this with a wonderfully shrewd insight into the nature of their fellow-creatures![1]

And what shall be said of those elegant coaches built at the Union Street shop for the Salem and Boston Stage Company,—

"Step and prop-iron, bolt and screw,
Spring, tire, axle, and linch-pin too,
Steel of the finest, bright and blue,"

the first in the country mounted on steel springs, and provided behind with a "dicky" and trunk-rack after the English pattern! And what of those noble teams of blacks and bays and buckskins and roans and chestnuts, clean-limbed and strong, that moved out, with coats like velvet, every afternoon when dinner was over, before the City Tavern in Brattle Street, the Ann Street Stage House or the Marlboro Hotel, sweeping the ground with flowing tails, too often, it must be added, tails of fiction, in which the cunning hand of Lancaster had eked out the unsuccessful efforts of nature! What of those scores of coach-builders and blacksmiths, and harness-makers, who plied the awl, and bent the tire, and drove the plane, with such pride and spirit in these old days, when Harding shod, and Daniel Manning ran with orders from the Sun Tavern to the yards in Union Street, and William H. Foster balanced accounts and made up dividends, and Mackie, over his saddlery, fought out the battle of Waterloo, in which he took a part, and that shy boy, since known to fame as Nathaniel Hawthorne, was keeping stage-books in his uncle Manning's office! What of that ancient negro hostler at Breed's Hotel, in Lynn, with his little competency accumulated from the trifles dropped into his hat for many a year by kindly travellers as the stage rolled off, who fell on his knees on the stable floor and wept great tears when the steam whistle sounded at last and he felt indeed that he must say with his Shakesperean prototype, "Farewell! Othello's occupation's gone!" Too many of this company of worthies are now

"Where rolling wheels are heard no more
And horses' feet ne'er come."

Twenty-one surviving drivers of the Eastern Stage Company honored themselves and the memory of the agent under whom they served, by attending, in April, 1866, the funeral of Colonel Coleman, the man to whose vigorous and intelligent oversight that enterprise had almost owed its success for a quarter of a century. During the same years the Salem and Boston Company was under the courteous management of William Manning, another model stage agent, known among the "whips" as "Sir William," and to have been trusted by whom they thought enough for an epitaph.

We come now to the closing scene of the Eastern Stage Company. In July, 1835, the ominous words "Rail Road" appear for the first time in their voluminous records. Let us see what these words meant.

Passengers had been transported in carriages drawn by steam over the Darlington and Stockton Railway in England, for ten years. The engines employed were stationary, and inventive genius had been as busy with the problem of travelling in steam carriages over turnpikes, as with the twin problem, which has since completely overshadowed the other, of locomotive machinery for railways. During the first ten years of the century, indeed, the steam engine, both stationary and locomotive, began to be applied to transportation. And long before this, the simple tramway of wood, stone or iron, operated by horse-power, had been employed for the conveyance of passengers and freight. As early as the settlement of New England, wooden rails were in use between the coal mines of Newcastle and the river, and these were so far perfected that in 1765 they had been introduced extensively in England, and enabled a horse to drag from two to three tons on an easy grade. Plates and wheels of iron had still further and very largely increased the draft-capacity of the horse. On the Darlington and Stockton road, trains had been provided with stable-cars, in which the horses employed for motive power on level and up grades, rested and fed in quiet while the momentum of the train carried it down hill.

The use of the Railway was no less familiar on this side the ocean. Our former townsman, Wm. Gray, after leaving Salem, in 1809, owned a wharf in Boston on which trucks were moved by hand over a plank-walk, provided on its edges with round iron bars, on which ran grooved wheels, thus forming a freight Railway from the ship in her dock to the warehouses on Lynn (now Commercial) Street. In grading Beacon Hill for the erection of the State House, late in the last century, an inclined Railway was used, on which the gravity of the loaded cars, in their descent, served to bring up on a parallel track those which had been emptied, and the same expedient, also in use in England, was employed at Quincy when the blue sienite of the quarries began to supplant, as a building material, the familiar gray granite of our hills, ledges and bowlders. The first Railroad charter granted by Massachusetts, authorized, March 4, 1826, the building of a Railway from these quarries to Neponset River, and the first freight transported over it was the corner-stone of Bunker Hill Monument. It was operated by horse-power.

[1] It was a happy thought which brought two hundred and fifty "old stagers" of the Connecticut Valley,—Drivers, Proprietors and Agents,—together at Springfield for a merry Christmas in 1859. Hon. Ginery Twitchell and James Parker, Esq., of the Western Railroad, seem to have been promoters of this "gathering of the whips," and two days were given up to their entertainment in Springfield during which the hospitalities of larder and stable were tested to the utmost. At a public dinner on the occasion were produced those spirited lines of Edwin Bynner, now familiar to newspaper readers, beginning,

"Oh! the days are gone when the merry horn
Awakened the echoes of smiling morn
As, breaking the slumber of village street,
The foaming leaders' galloping feet
Told of the rattling, swift approach
Of the well-appointed old stage coach!"

That unrest which prognosticates some great step in inventive art was stirring the public mind and bringing to light every clumsy expedient of cogs and ropes and wheels for mounting grades, and for moving by steam on common roads, as well as on rails, when, in 1829, the Stephensons, father and son, produced the Locomotive "Rocket," and placed it upon the Liverpool and Manchester road. Its success was at once complete and transportation by horse-power was doomed from that hour. In America we were not behindhand in applying steam to propulsion. It was already in use since 1807 on our rivers, canals and lakes. Indeed, the Hon. Nathan Reed, of Salem and Danvers, formerly a member of Congress from this district, had made a paddle-wheel steamboat in 1789, in which he navigated the river from his iron-works to Essex Bridge, taking Governor Hancock, Dr. Prince, Dr. Holyoke and Nathan Dane as passengers with him. The Baltimore and Ohio Railroad was begun in 1827; other routes from New York and Philadelphia soon after. In 1829–30–31 Massachusetts chartered Railroads from Boston to Lowell, to Providence and to Worcester.

In 1833, the Boston and Lowell road was extended to Andover and Wilmington, and to Haverhill in 1835. This was the first incursion of the iron monster into Essex, but he rapidly made his way over the county, enfolding in his fatal coils the poor struggling Stage Companies, whose nightly dreams were disturbed by the scream of the whistle, and whose waking eyes, turn where they might, were blasted with those words of doom, "*Look out for the engine.*"[1] For a time our directors stood up manfully to their struggle with fate. First they tried to curtail their expenses, —offered to sell real estate,—to buy in their stock at par, then at $60 and then at $50, and pay for it in the personal effects of the company. Fifty horses were to be disposed of at a stroke, and again and again another fifty,—hay and grain were high,—the appetites of live-stock inexorable. To add to their embarrassment, travel went on increasing as the hour of dissolution drew near. More horses and more were required, and again and again they were forced to replace those sold. To sell so large a stud at once, when the end came, would bring prices down to a ruinous figure, and the theory was generally accepted, that upon the establishment of steam cars, horse flesh would be worth little more than dog's meat. Before the end of 1835 they had joined the other proprietors of Newburyport turnpike in offering five miles of it for the use of a projected Railroad to Salem. In 1836 the Eastern Railroad was chartered.

Still they go on voting to sell their horses, still buying more. Late in '36 they try adding twenty per cent. to their fares. The directors meet once a month without notice, sometimes at half past six in the morning. They combine with thirteen like companies to keep up prices. Opposition coaches take the road and prices come down again. Late in '37, they try a reduction of wages, the peremptory sale of thirty horses, "as the company is fast approaching dissolution," they say,—sell the lease they hold of Henry Codman, of the Ann Street House, and agree with the purchaser to keep their teams from day to day,—sell the Exeter Stables, the Portsmouth and Concord Stages,—apply without success for a short extension of their charter to close the business, and in February, '38,—their charter expired in June,—offer for sale the whole remaining assets of the corporation.

This effort failing, the shareholders were for the last time summoned to Hampton Falls,—detailed reports submitted,—a fruitless effort made to start a new company, and the property turned over to trustees for final administration. And so this respectable body-corporate died without issue, at the stroke of midnight, June 26, 1838. Says the late Col. Whipple, who had been a director for ten years, and became its president on the death of Dr. Cleaveland in 1837, "the holders of stock, during twenty years, received eight and one-third per cent. in dividends annually, and after paying all debts, between $66 and $67 on each share. It does not appear that a passenger was killed or injured."

In August, 1838, the steam cars from Boston reached Salem. The *Register* speaks of immense crowds on every arrival and departure, covering the depot grounds and the banks of the mill-pond. In the belfry of the wooden station house hung a bell, taken from a ruined Spanish convent, and sold to one of our West Indiamen for old metal, which was vigorously rung to summon passengers on the departure of a train. At first, the cars took eleven hundred persons per day, but this, said the papers, was evidently due to their novelty, and could not be expected to continue. From six to eight hundred, it was thought, could be relied on. In about a month, sixteen hundred passengers were carried in one day, "the best day's work yet," said the press with enthusiasm! The *Boston Courier* stated that the cars used were not of the prevailing style, shaped like a coach-body with

[1] Mr. Tony Weller has favored the English-reading public with his views on the Railway and its invasion of his native Island, in words which I am forced to recall at this point. Said that eminent driver, as reported in "Master Humphrey's Clock," "I consider that the rail is unconstitutional, and a inwader o' privileges. As to the comfort—as an old coachman I may say it—veres the comfort o' sitting in a harm-chair, a lookin' at brick walls, and heaps o' mud, never comin' to a public 'ouse, never seein' a glass o' ale, never goin' thro' a pike, never meetin' a change o' no kind (hosses or otherwise), but always comin' to a place, ven you comes to vun at all, the werry picter o' the last! As to the honor and dignity o' travellin', vere can that be vithout a coachman, and vats the rail to sich coachmen as is sometimes forced to go by it, but a outrage and a insult! and as to the ingen, a nasty, wheezin', creakin', gaspin', puffin', bustin' monster, always out o' breath, with a shiny green and gold back like a onpleasant beetle; as to the ingen as is alvays a pourin' out red-hot coals at night and black smoke in the day, the sensiblest thing it does, in my opinion, is ven there's somethin' in the vay, and it sets up that 'ere frightful scream vich seems to say 'now eres two hundred and forty passengers in the werry greatest extremity o' danger, and eres their two hundred and forty screams in vun!'"

the door on the side, but were of a new pattern, in which a man may stand erect or pass from one to another, the whole length of the train, while in motion, with perfect safety. The passage from Salem to the Boston side of the ferry occupied from thirty-five to forty minutes, and it was hoped that about thirty-two minutes would be the average time consumed, when all was completed. The *Boston Post* announced that the witches came out of their graves to see these new conveyances. They met all expectations, and Mr. George Peabody, the first president of the road, in his opening address delivered before the six hundred stockholders and others, August 27th, called attention to the fact that those doing business in Boston could now live more cheaply in Salem than in Boston. What the railroad has done for us, in common with all the environs of Boston, cannot be briefly stated. If Boston is the Hub, the railroads seen from the State House dome are the living spokes, which bind it to an outer circle of social and business relations. If these have carried off our men of enterprise in search of a larger market, they have brought back the wealth they accumulate to beautify our estates and elevate our culture, and make of Massachusetts Bay, from Plymouth to Cape Ann, one great suburb in which the arts of cultivated life are brought to aid the native charms of country living.

Of the two presidents of the Eastern Stage Company, the first, Dr. Cleaveland, was a man of no common stamp. He came of the staunchest Puritan stock, his great-grandfather, Moses Cleaveland, having emigrated in his prime from Ipswich, in England, to Eastern Massachusetts and left a numerous and distinguished progeny. Some of them appear among the founders of Connecticut; many of them adorn the learned professions or fill chairs in the universities. Dr. Cleaveland's father died on his 77th birthday, in 1799, having been for more than half a century the pastor of Chebacco Parish in this county—a chaplain in both the French and Revolutionary wars, present with the army at Ticonderoga in 1758, at Louisburg in 1759, at the siege of Boston in 1775, on the Connecticut shore in 1776, and in 1778 in New York and New Jersey, and having given three sons to the Continental army.

Dr. Nehemiah Cleaveland was a man of large stature, and of erect, dignified and commanding aspect. A tall stripling of sixteen, he attended his father upon his service as chaplain during the siege of Boston, and in 1777 enlisted in the army as a common soldier. The stress of war deprived him of the collegiate training to which he had looked forward fondly, and kept him, during his minority, either in the camp or at the plow. Having subsequently mastered the science of medicine he began practice at Topsfield in 1783, purchasing the stock of a successful predecessor, as well as his library of just two volumes. He was soon after complimented with a commission as Justice of the Peace, and began to interest himself in the public affairs of town and county. As a politician he was earnest, ardent and patriotic. He was chosen, through Federalist support, to the State Senate in 1811, and lost his seat next year, under the operation of that famous districting system known as the "Gerrymander." From 1815 to 1819 he was re-elected, and then withdrew. In 1814 he was a Sessions Justice of the Circuit Court of Common Pleas. From 1820 to 1822 he was an Associate Justice of the Court of Sessions for the county, and in 1823 became its Chief Justice. This station he filled with ability and firmness until 1828, when he retired from public business, receiving at the same time from Harvard College the honorary degree of Doctor of Medicine.

With an iron constitution and health, up to his fiftieth year, untouched by disease, Dr. Cleaveland never laid aside the practice of his profession, however interrupted, but had extended it to all the neighboring towns. And until his death, in February, 1837, at the age of 77, he continued to serve, as their trusted physician, the community with which he had for fifty years identified himself by rare activity in every enterprise of moment. As a neighbor he was sought for his willing and judicious counsel, while his public career was marked throughout by good judgment, sound sense and solid worth.

He was twice married and left five children, among whom the eldest son, an honored graduate of Bowdoin, a distinguished educator, man of letters and Doctor of Laws, perpetuates his name and title.

Dr. Cleaveland's was one of those monumental characters which deserve study both for themselves and because they are typical of their times. Formed in our Revolutionary period, it was consolidated like the arch by the pressure which events imposed upon it. If his principles were austere, he applied them as rigidly to his own conduct as to his judgment of others. Thus he could in youth forego, without a murmur, the college training he had been promised, and, at the last, reject narcotics which would have spared him excruciating torture, because they might deaden his mental and moral sensibilities. Says the late Dr. Peirson, of Salem, in the *Medical and Surgical Journal*, "He was a much respected member of the Essex South District Medical Society. No man amongst us set a better example of professional integrity and honor. The few who could boast of his friendship will long remember with pleasure the virtuous and kind-hearted old man, whose influence was uniformly and efficiently exerted in support of good order and the true advancement of society."

Colonel Henry Whipple, the second and last president of the Eastern Stage Company, has left us so lately that the mention of his name is enough to recall a venerable presence and an exemplary life. He was born at Douglass, in Worcester County, June 24, 1789, and died in his eighty-first year, December 2, 1869. He served his apprenticeship with his brother

Charles, at Newburyport, and opened a book-store in the Franklin (then Archer's) Building, in Salem, October, 1810. For three-score years from that time, including part of that golden era when the story of Salem Commerce reads like an eastern fiction, Colonel Whipple was constant at his post, supplying our daring navigators with charts and books of travel,—our busy thinkers and bold projectors of enterprises distant and domestic with the best intelligence of the day. Said the *Danvers Wizard*, in July, 1861: "It would be difficult to point to a man now living so identified with the social, literary and denominational interests of Salem as is Colonel Whipple. In almost all the societies of a social and benevolent character he has been prominent and active. With the grace of native dignity and the bearing of a gentleman of the old school, the suavity of his manner attracted to his place of business the elevated and refined of Salem. His store was the resort and lounging place of all the eminent men of the past who have given a name to Salem in its modern history. Here met Bowditch, Story, Prince, Pickering, the elder Worcester, Barnard and Hopkins. Here Cummins discussed politics with Glen King and Saltonstall, while Dr. Flint and Judge White made criticisms on the last new book."

It was well said of Colonel Whipple that in his death Salem had lost one whom slander never touched, and who had probably never made an enemy,—his religious persuasion a consistent supporter,—the militia a veteran whose commissions bore date and expired before those of any officer now living,—and the Masonic body its oldest member. First from seniority on the roll of the Active Fire Club, and lately President of the Salem Dispensary, —a promoter in 1821 of the Salem and Danvers Association for Mutual Protection against Thieves and Robbers, as well as an active militiaman from his enlistment in the ranks of the Salem Light Infantry in 1811, until he resigned the command of the Artillery Regiment of Southern Essex, he was, in earlier as in later life, ready at all times for whatever service devolves upon the good citizen and Christian neighbor. At the close of the year 1869 he fell peacefully asleep at his home in Salem, alter enjoying for a while a tranquil retrospect of the memories he was to leave behind.

The good old days of stage coach travel are over. Gone, too, are most of those to whom they owed their charm. The stage-driver,—that next best man, it was quaintly said, to the minister, out of jail,—we have no longer. The old stage houses are for the most part, as in London, closed and deserted, or stand, like the old Bell Tavern, "with a kind of gloomy sturdiness, amidst the modern innovations which surround them." Never again shall

> "The windows of the wayside inn
> Across the meadows, bare and brown,
> Gleam red with firelight through the leaves
> Of woodbine, hanging from the eaves,
> Their crimson curtains, rent and thin!"

Even the Ann Street Stage-House,—the very focus of New England travel,—has vanished, and the name of the street it stood on is fading out of mind! Never again, about its hospitable hearth, that well known company of "whips" shall gather for a parting pipe, when guests are dreaming, and night coaches in, and horses well-bestowed, and smouldering embers, in its ample fire-place, give a fitful, flickering light. I see them now, in their quaint old chairs, whiffs of smoke curling lazily about their cheerful, ruddy, weather-beaten faces,—heavy, wet jack-boots steaming on the hearth,—ample capes and top-coats flung dripping on the benches,—while they chat by turns and stir the fire and laugh at the storm. There sits burly Sam Robinson, telling how he served the sneak who stole a ride on the trunk-rack every day as the noon coach passed through Wenham, by driving into the pond at Peter's Pulpit, under pretence of watering his horses, and then making such vigorous application of the lash that whoso rode behind was glad to escape his parthian blows by dropping off into the water! Or little Jack Mendum mounts a chair to tell how he drove the "mail," and "something broke," and the hungry passengers were all out hurrying him on, and the neighbors bustled about, and he lost his patience, and making up in oaths what he lacked in stature, bid them all stand aside and let him manage, "for while I drive that mail, I am the United States of America!" Or Peter Ray recounts the driving of the first steel spring coach to Boston on its trial trip, freighted with the mechanics who were its builders, and what a stir it made on 'change! Or Major Shaw, blinded by his great popularity, utters his famous threat of running the railroad off the route, by opposition coaches! Or Woodbury Page enjoys the discomfiture of the Charlestown driver, who roughly asked him to "get his bean pot out of the way," when he was taking up a passenger from that city for Beverly, and he replied, "wait till I get the pork in!" Or they all debate, with the warmth of conviction, the relative merits of the northern and southern routes to the eastward, until Alex. Brown declares that stage routes to the east are like different creeds in religion, for all creeds lead to heaven, if faithfully followed,—upon which reticent little Conant taps his pipe on the great iron fire-dog, and as the ashes drop upon the hearth, puts it tenderly away in his waistcoat pocket, remarking that he would rather not go to heaven at all, if he must go by the Dover route, and retires to bed.

> "Each had his tale to tell, and each
> Was anxious to be pleased and please,
> With rugged arts of humorous speech."

Never again, in that quaint old hostelry, shall

> "The fire-light on their faces glance,
> Their shadows on the wainscot dance."

And the coaches which once, says a writer in the

Lynn Reporter, "raised such a dust on the turnpike, night and day, that Breed's End knew no rest, and the road seemed made for their accommodation, so much at home were they on it in their day of glory," are all gone now. Over Essex Bridge, over the turnpike, through Salem streets, horse-cars now rumble and rattle with their growing freight. And at last the single coach, which brought us daily the dust and mail bags of Cape Ann, has disappeared forever. Never again shall we gather at the cottage gate, as the clatter of wheels and the cloud of dust approach, to welcome the aged parent,—the coming guest,—the daughter home from school. Never again shall we linger in the open doorway of a New England homestead, in tender parting with the young son setting out for sea, or on some distant westward venture,—to speed the lovers starting together on the life-long journey,—never again cast longing glances after that receding freight of dear ones, until at last the winding road and over-hanging elm trees part us, and we sit sadly down to listen,

> "While faint from farther distance borne
> Are heard the clanging hoof and horn."

Never again will the midnight watcher by the silent bedside hear the mail-stage arrive and go, leaving its messages of love and sorrow for the sleeping townsfolk, and sing, with Hannah Gould,

> "The rattling of that reckless wheel
> That brings the bright or boding seal
> To crown thy hopes or end thy fears,
> To light thy smiles or draw thy tears,
> As line on line is read."

Famous levelers were these old stage coaches and masters in etiquette also! What chance-medley of social elements they brought about! What infinite attrition of human particles,—what jostling of ribs and elbows,—what 'contact inconvenient, nose to nose'! What consequent rounding and smoothing of angles and corners,—what a test of good-nature,—what a tax on forbearance,—what a school of mutual consideration! For how else could a dozen strangers consent to be boxed up and shaken together for a day, but upon condition that each was to exhibit the best side of his nature and that only!

To the next generation the old stage coach will be as shadowy and unreal a thing as were those which appeared, musty and shattered, to the uncle of the one-eyed Bagman in Pickwick, while he dozed at midnight in the Edinboro' courtyard. "My uncle," says the Bagman, in telling the story, "rested his head upon his hands and thought of the busy, bustling people who had rattled about years before in the old coaches and were now as silent and as changed. He thought of the numbers of people to whom one of those crazy, mouldering vehicles had borne, night after night, through all weathers, the anxiously expected intelligence, the eagerly looked for remittance, the promised assurance of health and safety, the sudden announcement of sickness and death. The merchant, the lover, the wife, the widow, the mother, the school-boy, the very child who tottered to the door at the postman's knock,—how had they all looked forward to the arrival of the old coach! And where were they all now!"

CHAPTER IV.

SCIENCE IN ESSEX COUNTY.

BY JOHN ROBINSON.

In the sketch here attempted of a collection of subjects which may be classified under the general head of scientific, no pretence is made of completeness of detail, or even that many points are not omitted which are as well worthy of notice as some others which are included. The breadth of the term scientific might easily be made to embrace much matter which can be more properly treated under the separate histories of this volume by writers more familiar with the individual worker or his special subject; nor will space be given to the scientific institutions of the county or their work, as they will be fully treated elsewhere. It will, therefore, only be undertaken to show, before directly taking up the subjects of natural history, the principal ground intended to be covered by this article, that in science of almost every sort Essex County has produced workers, and workers, too, of no mean order. In the special field of natural history a very remarkable amount has been accomplished, especially in the direction of local investigation, and, besides, the county offers noteworthy inducements to encourage students of the natural sciences.

There are many names, to which we may point with pride, of men who, at home and abroad, have received high honors, and, either by birth or residence, have added to the fame of Essex County. In medical science the name of Edward Augustus Holyoke, and in mathematics and astronomy those of Andrew Oliver, Nathaniel Bowditch and Benjamin Pierce, are remembered with gratitude and respect. In connection with the early established scientific institutions Essex County held a prominent place. The original membership of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences included seventeen names, which may be claimed as belonging to Essex County, and the initial volume of the memoirs of that institution published in 1785 was very largely composed of papers and communications from Essex County scientists. In chemistry many workers might be enumerated who have contributed their share towards the increase of general knowledge of the subject.

Dr. James R. Nichols of Haverhill, well known through his long connection with the "Boston Journal of Chemistry," of which he was the editor, has been a worker in science and a writer of note. Among his

published works are "Fireside Chemistry" and "Chemistry of the Farm," but the one which has probably arrested the most attention is a little volume printed in 1882, entitled "From Whence, What, Where?" which has already passed through several editions.

Mr. Chas. Toppan is conspicuous as the inventor of a very successful process for bleaching, and for the new products of petroleum which he has introduced, having also published accounts of his experiments. In this place should be mentioned the name of Francis Peabody, a patron of the sciences, who was among the first to become interested in the establishment of the "Lyceum" system of scientific lectures, and whose valuable library, ever open for the use of the earnest student, now enriches the shelves of the Essex Institute, of which, as well as the Peabody Academy of Science, he was president. In physical science the record is interesting. Moses G. Farmer, of Salem, the well-known electrician, was for many years connected with the United States Government torpedo station at Newport, R. I. Prof. Charles Grafton Page, in 1837, made experiments with magnetic currents and musical sounds, which excited much attention both in this country and abroad, and which paved the way to that great invention, the speaking telephone, which Prof. A. Graham Bell, a resident of Salem during the years of his experimenting, first publicly exhibited before a meeting of the Essex Institute in that city in 1877.

With these brief references to other branches of science, we will proceed to consider the natural history of the county and the work of students in its various departments.

Geology and Mineralogy.—The entire absence of fossils and the obscure nature of the rocks of the county render the study of these branches of science uninteresting to the beginner, who is usually attracted at first, and led to more serious study, by the beauty of the minerals or the curious forms of petrifactions It is, therefore, easy to explain the rather limited number of students of geology and mineralogy, as compared with those interested in zoology and botany. The work, too, in the county, although in many cases emanating from prominent sources, has been carried on by many different persons, no single student having attempted any general survey of the whole county, so that a thoroughly satisfactory account of the geology and mineralogy of the region cannot as yet be given.

A great number of papers and notices of local interest have been published in the scientific journals and proceedings of scientific societies; but as the larger portion of these refer to a region of which Boston is the centre, most of the work only covers the southern and eastern portions of Essex County. A very full list of published articles referring to the region of Eastern Massachusetts, collected by Professor M. E. Wadsworth and printed in the "Proceedings of the Boston Society of Natural History" (vol. xix. p. 217), includes upwards of ninety titles of articles in the "Memoirs and Proceedings of the American Academy," "Boston Journal of Philosophy and Arts," "American Journal of Science and Arts," "Proceedings of the Boston Society of Natural History" and the "Proceedings" and "Bulletin of the Essex Institute," of greater or less length, which relate more especially to the geology and mineralogy of Essex County. Many of these, articles are of course very brief and possess only a negative value, while others are communications of much interest and importance.

The list of writers of the earlier articles include the names of Dana, Agassiz, Hitchcock, C. T. Jackson, W. B. Rogers and Chas. Pickering, while the papers and notices of more recent date, outside of the local workers, include the names of N. S. Shaler, Alpheus Hyatt, T. Sterry Hunt, W. O. Crosby and M. E. Wadsworth. Among the residents of Essex County who have made these subjects a study and who have published the results of their work are Dr. Andrew Nichols, of Danvers; B. F. Mudge, Esq., and C. M. Tracy, of Lynn; J. J. H. Gregory, of Marblehead; Rev. S. Barden, of Rockport; Dr. H. C. Perkins and Alfred Osgood, of Newburyport; Rev. G. F. Wright, of Andover, and D. M. Balch, of Salem.

Taking the more recently published work as a guide, the following synopsis of the underlying rocks has been prepared by Mr. J. H. Sears, of the Peabody Academy of Science, as a provisional arrangement, but one which, however, a more careful study of the rocks of the county now in progress may in some respects require to be changed:

Norian.	Naugus Head Series.
Huronian.	Syenite, Hornblendic and Binary, Peabody, Salem.
	Feldsite, Marblehead Neck, Lynn, Newbury.
	Dioryte, Salem, Danvers, Peabody, Nahant, etc.
	Hornblendic Gneiss, Salem Neck, Danvers, Beverly.
	Limestone, Lynnfield, Danvers, Newbury.
Montalban.	Gneiss, West Danvers, Andover.
	Mica Slate, Merrimac, Amesbury, Haverhill.
	Argillite, Middleton, Topsfield.
Shawmut.	Amygdaloid, Saugus, River Parker, Newbury.
Primordial.	Slate, River Parker, Newbury.
	Conglomerate, River Parker, Kent's Island.
	Trachyte, Marblehead Harbor.

The most conspicuous geological features of Essex County are the trap-dykes, of which fine specimens are to be seen at Nahant, Marblehead and Cape Ann, and the curious drift boulders which are met with in almost every part of the county, and which, together with the many wonderful glacial scratchings and groovings, offer a most favorable opportunity for the study of this epoch in geology.

Many of the drift boulders are of great size and are often found in most remarkable situations, projecting over ledges, mounted upon other stones or crowning the summits of the hills. Among the most noted boulders are Ship Rock, in Peabody, the estimated weight of which is eleven hundred

tons; Agassiz Rock, in Manchester; and Phæton Rock, in the woods between Peabody and Lynn. Many of these, including some of several tons in weight, perched upon the bare hill-tops, may be rocked by the hand, some even by a child. Were some of these erratics in the grounds of any popular summer resort their fame would be heralded abroad and thousands flock to see them; but, as it is, the country boy, with his bare feet and berry pail, or the infrequent pedestrian on his woodland rambles are their only visitors.

Careful study is continually bringing to light minerals previously unknown in the county. Many of these, although insignificant in appearance, are of great interest to the student, and serve to show the relations between the characters of the Essex County rocks and those of other regions. The number of known or authentically reported minerals may be placed at fifty-nine species.

The most general interest is naturally attached to those minerals, chiefly the metals, of value in commerce or the arts. In the earliest colonial times bog iron was worked at Saugus, and later, at Topsfield and Boxford, it was taken out in two or three places for mechanical purposes. The history of the old iron-works at Saugus River is a very interesting one. They were started in 1643 and continued in operation under many difficulties until about 1688, but now only cinder-heaps, covered with soil and herbage, remain to tell of their existence. At these works labored Joseph Jenks, a native of Hammersmith, England, the founder of a prominent New England family. Jenks was an inventor of considerable note in his day and deserves to be remembered as one of the earliest men of scientific tendencies in the county. A bit of romance attaches itself to him as the engraver of several of the dies from which the famous Pine Tree shillings were struck off in 1652 and later. Iron pyrites had been mined in Boxford, and gold was at one time found in small quantities near Hood's Pond. The so-called Governor Endicott copper mine in Topsfield, has been worked within the century; but, probably, at a profit too small to warrant a continuance of operations. Serpentine at Saugus, Lynnfield and Newburyport has been quarried in small quantities for ornamental purposes and for the manufacture of magnesia.

But the most conspicuous effort, however, to turn our mineralogical resources to account was that at Newburyport, when the wave of speculation in lead and silver passed over the once valueless pastures of that locality. The result, not unexpected to the miner of more practical experience in other regions, although it may have placed profit in the hands of some of the original land-owners or speculators in land, proved of greater interest to the student for whom specimens were brought to hand without cost, than to those who were unfortunate enough to invest their capital in the enterprise with the hope of large financial returns. All attempts thus far made in the direction of working our precious metals have resulted, as similar attempts in the future are likely to result, in small profit, if not actual loss. But aside from this, there is left, however, as the pride and prize of Essex County's geological and mineralogical resources, the solid granite whose mass not only assure us an enduring foundation and probably exemption from natural convulsions, but which, unquestionably, is to be looked upon as the mineral product of the greatest commercial value in the county.

Our Scientific Frontier.—From the fact that the geographical boundaries of Essex Co. are largely natural ones, it is possible to study its flora apart from that of surrounding regions, with much more satisfactory results than is usually the case in small areas of territory bounded by arbitrary lines. Indeed, with the exception of Barnstable County, Mass., where the ocean marks nearly its entire outline, no county in New England offers better opportunities for such work than our own. For the botanist, the Merrimac Valley to the northwest and the ocean on the northeast and southeast form most natural limits, while toward the south a solid mass of cities separate the county from the region beyond Boston, the flora of which shows many immediate and marked changes in character from that of Essex County. The southwestern boundary is, however, a less natural one, although the line of hills beginning at Chelsea and running through Melrose and Saugus to Wakefield and Reading forms a natural division between Essex and Middlesex a portion of the distance. The dividing line between these counties, where Andover and Methuen join Tewksbury and Dracut, is less satisfactory. This is but a short distance, however, and there is no marked difference in the character of the plants on the opposite sides of the line at this point.

Botany and Zoology: General Features.—Essex County contains upwards of fifty ponds rich in water and marsh plants, while the deep woods of Middleton, Boxford and Andover and those of Manchester and Essex closely resemble the interesting region at the base of the White Mountains of New Hampshire, and with these woods the bare and rugged shores of Cape Ann form a striking contrast.

The land plants belong to the northern flora, and some mountain species may yet be found, while a paradox in the shrubby form of the *Magnolia glauca*, still abundant in the Gloucester swamps, offers a subject for speculation. The marine algæ belong decidedly to the arctic flora, for the long arm of Cape Cod projecting into the ocean seems to form a natural barrier to the farther progress of southern species northward. At this point, too, the warm current of the Gulf Stream bears off to the eastward, while toward the shore, in Massachusetts Bay, the almost expended influence of the cold Labrador current is felt. A marked distinction is therefore found between the marine animals and plants north of Cape Cod and those

at the south of it, although in favorable situations, in warm nooks, some southern species are found north of this barrier, while some northern ones retain a foothold south of it, and there are certain cosmopolitan species which flourish in all waters.

It will be seen, therefore, that with the great variety of animals and plants which may be collected, and the natural limits which may be placed to the study of their distribution, attractions are offered which have proved sufficient to develop many students of botany and zoology at home, and to induce many others from abroad, among them some of the most eminent naturalists of the day, to come here to pursue their investigations.

Introduced Plants.—The early settlement of the county and numerous historical data available to the botanist render this a particularly favorable region to observe the introduced plants. Many species, such as the genista, barberry, white-weed and others of European origin, early established themselves in places where they now flourish to an extent it would seem difficult for them to exceed in their native lands. The natural fruits and vegetable productions, and such plants of the old country as could be made to succeed in this soil, were among the first things to which the colonists gave their attention, as early accounts amply testify, and thus we are, in many cases, able to trace the date of introduction of species now thoroughly naturalized. The study of these plants is aided by the little work entitled, "New England Rarities Discovered," by John Josselyn, an early traveler, who made several visits to this country, the most extended being from 1663 to 1671, when he seems to have given much attention to the native and introduced plants. A reprint of Josselyn's work, with notes by Professor Edward Tuckerman, is now available. In studying the Essex flora, it must be borne in mind that, by the clearing of the land and other great changes incident to the settlement, such native plants as were best able to endure these changes, and those which the changes favored, have now been given prominent places, while those which, at the time of the settlement, may have been abundant, but which were unable to endure the changed surroundings, are now scarce or have entirely disappeared. To the botanist all these questions add interest to the study of the local flora, and perhaps explain why the plants have received more continuous attention than either the animals or the minerals of the county.

The Native Plants.—The following table, taken from the catalogue of the flora of Essex County, published by the Essex Institute in 1880, with additional notes made from the herbarium of the Peabody Academy of Science, gives a fair idea of the material available for botanical study and the distribution of species among the different families, as well as the number of introduced plants to be found in the county:

Table showing the character of the plants, native and naturalized, growing in Essex County, Mass.

	Orders.	Genera.	Species.	Varieties.	Introduced from other portions of United States.	Introduced from foreign countries.	Native woody plants.	Native trees.
Exogens	85	371	855	36	39	216	157	47
Gymnosperms	1	7	17	.....	3	4	10	8
Endogens	17	124	372	38	6	41	1	...
Vascular Cryptogams	5	21	50	17	.....	1	.....	...
Muscinæ	2	59	161	12	.....	1	.....	...
Characeæ	2	2	9	3	.....	.....	.....	...
Thallophytes	3	115	312	41	.....	.....	.....	...
	115	699	1776	147	48	263	168	55

Total number of species recorded	1776
Species of Fungi (estimated)	1200
Species of fresh water Algæ (estimated)	200
Diatomaceæ (estimated)	250
Total of all species recorded and estimated	3426

In this table the introduced plants enumerated are chiefly such as have become thoroughly established, although sometimes very locally. The Thallophytes include only the lichens, of which forty-five genera, one hundred and fifty-seven species, are recorded, and the marine algæ, of which there are seventy genera, one hundred and fifty-four species. The fungi of the county have never been catalogued, owing to their great number and the difficulties attending their study; but, judging from the catalogues of other regions, it is quite probable that twelve hundred species would be a fair estimate of their number. Neither has any list been prepared of the Diatoms and Desmids, a numerous class, which, together with a large part of the fungi, are microscopic, and, although numerous in species, possess but little value in considering the flora as a whole, or the general distribution or character of the plants of the county.

Prominent Botanists.—The study of botany in Essex County, it may be said in New England, properly dates from the time of Rev. Manasseh Cutler, at the close of the last century. Early writers, as Francis Higginson, John Josselyn, William Wood, John Winthrop and others, refer to the native fruits and flowers. Josselyn published the well-known "New England Rarities Discovered," previously referred to, and Higginson, in a letter written from Salem in 1629–30 (Mass. Hist. Coll., vol. I. p. 121), speaks of the "Flowering Mulberry," or raspberry, and "Chervil," or sweet Cicely, as growing near Salem in places where, certainly until a few years, these interesting historical plants still flourished. None of these writers can, however, be considered as Essex County botanists, and it is not until the close of the American Revolution that we find any serious or scientific study given to the plants of the county. Manasseh Cutler, of Hamilton, after his varied services of Revolutionary chaplain, lawyer, doctor, pastor, reformer and pioneer, found time to prepare, in 1783–84, as the the title of his paper says, "An account of the vegetable production growing in this

part of America, botanically arranged." This was published in the first volume of the "Memoirs of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences," which was printed in 1785, where some three hundred and fifty species of flowering plants were described, and several important scientific points suggested, which have been since adopted in botanical treatises. Dr. Cutler's paper bears the date of presentation, January 26, 1784, and it was his intention to extend the work, several manuscript volumes now being in existence prepared toward this end.

Following Cutler came Dr. George Osgood and Dr. Andrew Nichols, both of Danvers. The former contributed notes for "Bigelow's Florula Bostoniensis," and published a partial list of plants in the vicinity of Danvers and Salem; and the latter delivered, in 1816, a series of lectures on botany, the first of such ever given in this neighborhood. Dr. Nichols was one of the founders of the Essex County Natural History Society, and for some years its president, and he thus had an important influence on local botanical work. In 1823 two young men, both destined to be long remembered on account of their contributions to botanical knowledge, began their work in Essex County. These were William Oakes, of Danvers, later of Ipswich, and Charles Pickering, then spending much of his time at the homestead of his grandfather, Colonel Timothy Pickering, at Wenham.

Oakes, disgusted with law, his chosen profession, became the first critical botanist of the region, and at this time converted Dr. Pickering from entomology and conchology, studies he had first chosen, to botany. Oakes botanized with Pickering extensively in Essex County, particularly in the Great Swamp, Wenham, a region then almost in its primitive wildness. He afterwards prepared a list of Vermont plants for Thompson's history of that State, and had in contemplation a work on the plants of New England, which, owing to the appearance of Beck's Botany, was never completed. His most elaborate work was a folio volume on White Mountain scenery, illustrated by Sprague, which, however, was not published until after his death, in 1848. Oakes was impulsive and generous, and thoroughly in earnest in his favorite study. Like many men of note, he was little appreciated while living, yet no monument could have been erected to make his memory more cherished and his labors more respected by the present generation of botanists than that which he left behind,—an extensive collection of beautifully prepared botanical specimens determined with faultless accuracy, a portion of which formed the nucleus of the present county botanical cabinet, now in the hands of the Peabody Academy of Science in Salem.

Professor Tuckerman dedicated to him a pretty little plant common in the region of Plymouth, but as this was afterwards transferred to another genus, the name "Oakesia" has been given to the spring bellwort, a common Essex County plant, by Professor Watson, of Cambridge, who, in his revision of the Liliaceæ, has thus named it to perpetuate the memory of William Oakes.

In 1838 Dr. Pickering was appointed naturalist to the United States (Wilkes) Exploring Expedition, and, to perfect his knowledge of animals and plants in foreign countries, he made extensive journeys after his return from that expedition. He was the author of several works of great value, the production of which required untiring research. Among them are the "Geographical Distribution of Animals and Plants" and the "Chronological History of Plants," the latter occupying the last sixteen years of his life in its preparation.

It is but right that Essex County should claim a share of the honor of his name, for it was here that his attention was drawn to the study of botany, and in the "Chronological History of Plants," page 1063, we find the following entry: "1824. In this year, after an excursion in 1823 with William Oakes, diverting my attention from entomology, (I made) my first botanical discovery." Dr. Pickering retained the deepest interest in botanical work in Essex County until his death, which occurred at Boston March 17, 1878.

The work of the Essex Institute from its foundation, in 1848, following that of the Essex County Natural History Society, from which it was in part developed, was largely devoted to botany and horticulture, a leading speaker at its meetings and contributor to its publications being Rev. John Lewis Russell, who made his home in Salem in 1853.

Mr. Russell devoted himself principally to cryptogamic botany, publishing accounts of his investigations from time to time as he proceeded. He was, besides, the author of many popular articles on various families of plants. He lectured frequently on botany, and was for many years vice-president of the Essex Institute, and contributed much to the general knowledge of botany in Essex County, but his most extensive collections were made in other places.

Among the earlier published catalogues of the plants of portions of the county was the "Studies of the Essex Flora," by Mr. Cyrus M. Tracy, of Lynn. This was intended to give a list of the flowering plants found in the neighborhood of Lynn, and enumerated five hundred and forty-six species. Besides possessing a very happy gift as a botanical lecturer, Mr. Tracy has contributed several valuable articles upon local botany to the publications of the Essex Institute and elsewhere.

At the evening and field meetings of the Essex Institute many papers on botanical subjects have been presented, including, in addition to those previously referred to, contributions from George D. Phippen, S. B. Buttrick, John Robinson and John H. Sears, of Salem; Rev. A. B. Alcott, of Boxford; Miss Mary N. Plumer, of Newburyport; Miss H. A. Paine, of Groveland; and others. Many students of

botany are distributed throughout the county, and numerous private herbaria have been formed, and, at the rooms of the Peabody Academy of Science in Salem, a large and valuable collection of the plants of Essex County is accessible to botanists. Special work has been done by several authors and collectors outside of the county, who have either visited this region to study the plants, or who have made comparative observation from specimens sent to them from the county for the purpose. W. H. Harvey visited Nahant about 1850 to study the marine algæ in preparing his famous work, "Nereis Boreali-Americana," which was published by the Smithsonian Institution in 1852–57. Professor W. G. Farlow, in his "Algæ of New England," and in his monograph of the Gymnosporangea, includes the Essex County species studied by him at various stations. Dr. B. D. Halstead and Dr. T. F. Allen have studied the Characeæ, and have published articles on the species; Mr. F. S. Collins has carefully studied the marine algæ, Mr. C. E. Faxon the grasses, sedges and mosses, and Mr. C. J. Sprague the lichens. Rev. A. B. Hervey, now of Taunton, worked almost entirely in Essex County in preparing his "Collector's Guide and Introduction to the Study of Marine Algæ." Nearly all of the work of Essex County botanists has been systematic; at least little, if anything, in the way of original research has been published by any county author in relation to the physiology or morphology of plants.

Horticulture.—In horticulture, a science too seldom treated as such, the citizens of Essex County have furnished valuable contributions. The establishment of the Essex Agricultural Society and the horticultural department of the Essex Institute have doubtless fostered the interest which has been shown from the earliest date in this subject, and which at times has been given considerable prominence in the county. There are several names worthy to be mentioned as promoters of the science of horticulture. Robert Manning, of Salem, whose death in the midst of his labors occurred in 1842, at one time cultivated in his own gardens, for the purpose of critical comparison, nearly one thousand varieties of pears, together with other fruits, sufficient to make the total of two thousand varieties, several of which he originated. John Fisk Allen, as early as 1843, produced some valuable varieties of grapes, the famous "Allen's Hybrid" being one of the number, and during the years of his experimenting in horticulture he tested the large number of four hundred varieties of grapes under glass. Mr. Allen was the first person in New England and the second in the United States to successfully cultivate the great water lily of South America (*Victoria regia*), which he flowered in Salem in 1853, and later he published, at great expense, a superbly illustrated folio work on its habits and cultivation. Between 1830 and 1877 Mr. Geo. Haskell, of Ipswich, made many scientific experiments in the culture of the grape by grafting, inarching amd hybridization, the results of which he published in pamphlet form in 1877. During this time Mr. Haskell produced several hardy hybrid grapes of acknowledged merit. Beginning in 1861 and continuing for several years afterward, Mr. Edward S. Rogers, of Salem, by a strictly scientific experiment, the result of excellent botanical knowledge, produced the famous hybrids between the native fox grape and the more tender hot-house varieties, known as the "Rogers' Grapes." These have given to cultivators a class of hardy grapes of rare excellence and world-wide reputation, and have won for the originator the gold medal of the Massachusetts Horticultural Society, the highest award of the most eminent institution of its character in America.

Zoology.[1]—Though Essex County has been a favorite collecting ground for naturalists for many years, exact statistics of its fauna are lacking. For this there are several reasons, the most prominent of which is that in recent years students have failed to record the results of their researches. Thus, of the mollusks, no catalogue has been published for half a century, while not a single group of insects has been thoroughly worked up. In fact, the only group concerning which we have definite statistical knowledge is that of the vertebrates, where we have, thanks to the labors of Messrs. Goode and Bean, of the United States National Museum, a catalogue of all the fishes that are known within the county limits, and the excellent catalogue of the birds by F. W. Putnam, which, although the work of his youth, has required but few corrections to bring it up to the present time. Of the other vertebrates, the turtles, snakes and batrachians are comparatively few in number and fairly well known, while to the knowledge of the existing mammals but little can be added, although a very interesting chapter could be written upon those which have disappeared, and whose story must be looked for in the early colonial records and the Indian shell-heaps. We have many catalogues of New England animals, but it is a difficult task for a student to predict from these exactly what forms will be found in a certain restricted region. Thus the land forms to be found in Northern Maine or on the White Mountains would differ greatly from those occurring near the shore of Long Island Sound, and from neither could we exactly tell those which would be found in Essex County. In the marine fauna, too, a similar difficulty is noted, for Cape Cod divides the animals occurring in the salt water into two groups, each with its own facies, although there are of course many species which occur on either side of that barrier.

The following estimate of the number of species, although but rudely approximate, may serve as a guide for the present and until further published

[1] The writer is largely indebted to Prof. J. S. Kingsley, of the State University of Indiana, formerly a special student at the Peabody Academy of Science at Salem, for the account of this branch of the natural history of the county.

work shall furnish us with accurate figures (in some groups there are almost no data to base any conclusions upon, while others, however, are comparatively well known):

Sponges		30
Cœlenterates		100
Echinoderms		30
Molluscoidea		60
Mollusca		390
Worms		225
Crustacea		250
Insects		2500
Vertebrates:		
Ascidia	20	
Fishes	150	
Batrachia	18	
Reptiles	22	
Birds	266	
Mammals	41	517
		4102

In the above estimate both the fresh water and marine fauna are included. Of the simplest forms of animal life, the Protozoa, no account is made for the reason that absolutely nothing is known of them beyond the fact that the species are very abundant; every stagnant pool has its population, while the mud near the shore is actually alive with them. Inconspicuous as they are, they play an important part in the food supply of many of the economic fishes, as well as in destroying still smaller forms which might otherwise be injurious to human health. Of the sponges of the county but little is known; many of them are inconspicuous, and none are of value for the ordinary purposes for which sponges are used, as all lack that resilience of fibre characteristic of commercial sponges. The finest examples of sponges in Essex County have been found on the piles of Essex bridge.

The marine worms are very abundant, and furnish a large amount of food for fishes. While the ordinary conception of a worm is that of a disgusting animal, many of the marine worms are marvels of beauty both in shape and color. In this respect however they must yield to some of the Cœlenterates, a group which includes the jelly-fish, sea-anemones and those other flowers of the sea which the naturalist calls hydroids. None of these, however, have the economic importance possessed by some of the mollusks and crustacea, groups which furnish the oyster, clam and lobster.

The insects are almost solely terrestrial and, as will be seen from the above table, include over half the total number of species occurring in the county. Of these the beetles are the most numerous in species, it being estimated that from twelve to fifteen hundred can be found within the boundaries. Next in numerical importance come the flies and bugs, followed in turn by the bees and ants on the one hand, and the butterflies and moths on the other, the remaining forms of insects being few in number of species. The vertebrates are so well known that they need no further mention than the figures against the different orders in the table above.

The marine fauna of Essex County is decidedly northern. The majority of the species found along the coast range north to the British provinces, and not a few may be collected on the shores of Europe, making the passage by the way of the Arctic seas. A smaller number range southward and pass the boundary line of Cape Cod, though but few extend in this direction beyond the Jersey shore. The land animals are likewise northern in character, and Essex County may be regarded as a portion of the "Alleghanian region" of the "Eastern province" of zoological geography.

Several localities in the county have become famous as zoological centres, either from the students who have lived near them or from the profusion of the material they offer for study. To the first category belongs Salem, for the Essex Institute and the Peabody Academy of Science have drawn many zoologists hither. Here Wheatland, Putman, Packard, Hyatt, Morse, Emerton and Cooke have labored, while for several years students came from all parts of the country to attend the Academy's Summer School of Biology. Salem may also rank among the places of the other group, for there are few spots on the whole New England coast which furnish better collecting ground than that around Essex (Beverly) Bridge, where the number of species to be found is very large, although indiscriminate collecting would soon deplete it. Next in order is Nahant where the Agassizs, father and son, with their assistants and pupils, did so much to enlarge our knowledge of the marine life. More lately Annisquam has come into prominence through the laboratory there established in 1881 by Professor Hyatt and maintained by the Women's Educational Society of Boston.

The interest in zoological studies has been fostered by the various scientific societies within the county, the most prominent among which are the Essex Institute and the Peabody Academy of Science of Salem. Besides these may be enumerated the Lynn Natural History Society, the Cape Ann Literary and Scientific Society, at Gloucester, the Danvers Natural History Society, the Bradford Natural History Society, the West Newbury Natural History Society, the Merrimac Natural History Society, of Amesbury, and the Cuvier Club, of Salem, which last, although composed entirely of young people, gives promise of good results, For two years the United States Fish Commission made Essex County the centre of its explorations, contributing much information of value, especially in relation to the deep-water animals.

The fauna of Essex County has been made the subject of several studies, some of which are worthy of mention in the present sketch. Professor Hyatt has studied the sponges; the Agassizs, father and son, and the late H. J. Cook have investigated the radiates the development of the worms has been studied by Alexander Agassiz and Charles Girard; the mollusca have been investigated by John Lewis Russell

William Stimpson and Edward S. Morse; Professor Morse, also, was the first author to point out the true position of the brachiopods among the worms, his theory now being adopted by the most eminent scientists. The crustacea and their development have been studied by A. S. Packard and J. S. Kingsley; the harvestmen have been described by H. C. Wood, and J. H. Emerton has made and published researches on the spiders. Among the insects, the work of A. S. Packard, S. H. Scudder and F. W. Putman deserves mention. J. S. Kingsley has described the development of one of the acsidians, while among the fishes the papers of G. B. Goode and T. H. Bean and of F. W. Putman upon the species, and the investigations of J. S. Kingsley, H. W. Conn and B. H. Vantleck upon the development, should not be omitted. F. W. Putman has studied the reptiles and birds, furnishing the list of county species published in the proceedings of the Essex Institute previously referred to. The birds have also been investigated by Dr. Elliot Coues.

In spite of the work above referred to, and the excellence, even eminence, of many of the workers, the field is so large and the supply of materials so great that there still remains an enormous amount of work to be accomplished before a knowledge which may be termed exact is obtained of the animals of the county.

Archæology.—In archæology, a study but recently given its proper position among the sciences, considerable work has been done in the county. The surface relics of the race which formerly occupied this territory have long been observed, and, in a few instances, preserved specimens of the so-called axes, celts and arrow-heads were placed in the East India Museum in Salem as early as 1802, and examples were figured in the first volume of the American Academy, published in 1785, from the cabinet of that institution. But it is only in comparatively recent years that any scientific observations have been made in relation to the graves, village sites and shell-heaps of this early race. Much has been written of late, speculative and otherwise, in relation to the pre-historic people, which may be read by those desiring to form opinions as to the correctness of the various theories advanced, but it is sufficient here to say that the most reasonable theories point to the Algonquin Indians of the region at the time of the settlement of this country, and their direct ancestors, as the people who fashioned the implements of stone, bone and clay which are daily turned up by the plough and occasionally met with in graves and shell-heaps. Yet it is reasonable to accept the theory that another and earlier race once occupied the country, perhaps the ancestors of the Esquimaux, even ruder in their way than the Indians, and who, being driven to the North by a more aggressive race, left their relics behind, which are now found confused with those of later date. It was supposed formerly that the shell-heaps found all along our coast were natural deposits, and not until recently were they connected with the early inhabitants of the county. Professor Jeffrys Wyman, of Cambridge, investigated the shell-heaps at Ipswich, with Putnam, Cooke and Morse, and later these investigations have been continued by many others.

The most interesting result of the study of these shell-heaps is perhaps that learned from the examination of a very old deposit at Ipswich, composed of shells of the oyster, a species now practically extinct along our shore, but which at the time of the deposit of this shell-heap must have been very abundant. From the relics there found, it was clearly shown that cannibalism was practiced by the people who left us this record of their existence. In 1867 Mr. J. F. Le Baron prepared a map of the shell-heaps on Castle Neck, Ipswich, and throughout the county are numerous collections of so-called "Indian relics," most of which may be classed as "surface-finds," owned by private individuals and public institutions. The largest collection of pre-historic relics is that of the Peabody Academy of Science in Salem, which numbers several thousand specimens and includes many objects from graves and shell-heaps, besides skeletons and crania.

Besides the work of Wyman, Putnam and others and the articles published by the Essex Institute on this subject, Dr. Abbott, of New Jersey, has made some field observations here and has published in his work entitled "Primitive Industry" much of interest in relation to the local archæology, besides giving figures of specimens collected in Essex County. Professor Morse, of the Peabody Academy, during his visit to Japan, made several explorations in connection with the archæology of that country, the results of his work being published in the memoirs of the University of Tokio, Japan.

Archæology is now one of the most progressive among the sciences, and one of Essex County's gifted sons, Professor Frederick W. Putnam, formerly of Salem, now Peabody Professor of Archæology and director of the Archæological Museum at Cambridge, profiting by his early training as a zoologist, is for the first time teaching the country the proper and only way of exploring the mysterious mounds of the West.

It will be seen by this sketch that a large portion of the scientific work has centered in and around Salem. This is undoubtedly due to the facilities there offered for study. Museums and scientific institutions had early become established in Salem, and many society and private libraries and microscopes were available. But with the interest in these subjects and the establishment of good lecture courses and libraries in nearly every city and town, natural history and scientific clubs and societies have sprung up in various parts of the county, and students of natural history may now be found at every hand, both collectors and those who are pursuing their studies of the minerals, the fauna or the flora, without forming collections.

CHAPTER V.

THE SPIRIT OF THE EARLY LYCEUMS.

BY ROBERT S. RANTOUL.

TIMOTHY CLAXTON was born in Norfolk, England, August 22, 1790. His father was a gardener, in the service of the Windham family, at Earsham Hall. Neither his father nor his mother could read or write, but, with the generous aid of the Honorable Mrs. Windham, the mistress of the house, they were enabled to educate their children. Timothy was from boyhood a marked character, and, as a young man, identified himself with the great movement for the general diffusion of knowledge, which, under the lead of Henry Brougham and other less conspicuous and comprehensive minds, swept over England and Scotland in the third decade of the present century. It was in the year 1823 that the so called "Mechanics' Institutes" began to attract the attention of all classes in Great Britain by their marked success. In that year, Claxton, who had spent some time in Russia, engaged in the introduction of gas-works, sailed from St. Petersburg and landed at Boston, whence, in September, he removed to Methuen, in this County, and connected himself with the machine-shop of a cotton-mill established by Stephen Minot, of Haverhill, at Spicket Falls, and at that time operated under the supervision and agency of the afterwards well-known political economist and writer, Amasa Walker.

In detailing, in his autobiography entitled the "Memoir of a Mechanic," the years passed in Methuen, this remarkable man says:

"In the spring of 1824 an opportunity offered itself for me to attempt the formation of a society for mutual improvement. A small society, for reading and general inquiry, had existed for about five years in the village, and was at a very low ebb at that time. I attended it and found a respectable number of both sexes, assembled at the house of one of the members. They were engaged in reading by turns, and the president put questions to them as they proceeded. I inquired what other exercises they had. He told me that was all, except an annual address by the president. I asked if it would not be well to try the debating of questions and familiar lectures on science and the arts. He thought well of it. I told him I thought they need not be afraid, for I had seen persons engaged in such exercises whose opportunities were inferior to theirs. I was asked if I could give them a lecture. I said I would try, and prepared myself accordingly. I had brought a small air-pump with me from Russia, which I made from a piece of gas-tubing, with a ground brass plate, on a mahogany stand. I bought a few glass articles, which I ground to fit the pump-plate, with a little sand and water, on the hearth-stone of my room. I procured a small wash tub and fitted a shelf to it, for a pneumatic cistern. In this way I succeeded, with a very simple apparatus, in explaining the mechanical and some of the chemical properties of air. This put new life into the society. Their constitution was revised, to make provision for a library and apparatus. Debating was introduced with success, and the ladies handed in compositions which were read at the meetings. Several members were prevailed upon to give lectures on subjects connected with their professions or callings. I served as vice-president for the remainder of my stay in the town, and took an active part. The society became too large for the members' houses. It tried the School-House and then the Tavern Hall, but, not satisfied with either, built a two-story building for its own use, and continued to prosper. It held weekly meetings, with a routine of exercises for the month, comprising, for the first week, Reading by all; for the second, Reading by one member specially designated; for the third, Original Lectures, and for the fourth, Discussion."

Here we have germinating, in the spring of 1824, in Essex County, the root-idea of the American Lyceum. The society, which Claxton left behind him well-established in Methuen, when, in October, 1826, he removed to Boston, possessed every characteristic feature of the novel organization now to be described, and which, under the new name of "Lyceum," soon to be applied to it by another, was about to challenge the approval and enlist the interest, and even the enthusiasm of the best minds in the country. I have been thus minute in describing Claxton's enterprise, because no earlier date than this can be assigned to the origin of the Lyceum system in America. On his removal to Boston, he became well known for his mechanical ingenuity, his large scientific attainments and his whole-souled devotion to the diffusion of useful knowledge. He at once associated himself with Josiah Holbrook, who had just come there from Connecticut, and with other kindred spirits and before the end of the year 1826 had established the "Boston Mechanics' Institution." In 1829 he bore an active part in the formation of the first Boston Lyceum, and in 1831, with Holbrook and others, established the "Boston Mechanics' Lyceum," of which, for the next five years, Claxton was chosen president. Finally, having inherited an estate in England, he returned thither to enjoy it, and there closed his life. In 1839 he issued, from the London press, a book of "Hints on Self-Education," of which the *London Civil Engineer and Architects' Journal* remarked, in a strain of high commendation, that "it had all the ease and simplicity of De Foe, and the exemplary utility of Franklin."

Dr. George A. Perkins, of Salem, who passed his early years in Boston, well remembers Claxton as a valued friend of his boyhood, always genial, gracious and kind, who would interrupt his work, not for hours merely, but for days, in order that some willing-minded youth might not go unenlightened.

Attention was first publicly called to the general practicability of organizations like this in an anonymous article which appeared in the October number of the *American Journal of Education* for 1826. It proved to have been written by one Josiah Holbrook, an *alumnus* of Yale College and a native of Derby, Conn., born in 1788. Mr. Holbrook afterwards became well known as an enthusiastic devotee of popular education in all its phases. At different periods of his career he was a lecturer upon science, a maker of school apparatus, and a compiler of school text-books, and in 1824 was conducting at Derby an agricultural and manual-labor school, in which he had, in some measure, anticipated the modern theory of object-teaching. His scheme for "Associations of Adults for Mutual Education," as he called them, the name "Lyceum" being only applied a little later, was introduced to public notice in a guarded editorial indorsement as "of uncommon interest," as "important in a political point of view," as "intimately con-

nected with the diffusion of intelligence and with the elevation of character among the agricultural and mechanic classes," as "a sure preventive of those insidious inroads of vice which are ever ready to be made on hours of leisure and relaxation." With such high hopes, prompted by motives so unmistakably humane, ingenuous and noble, did the pioneers in this unique undertaking make their modest, though confident appeal to public favor!

On January 7, 1879, the Concord Lyceum commemorated its fiftieth anniversary. The first name on its original roll and its first president had been the venerable and Reverend Dr. Ripley, the Revolutionary sage who had, from his study window in the Old Manse, watched his parishioners defending the bridge on that fateful day when there

> "The embattled farmers stood
> And fired the shot heard round the world!"

The last of the original signers of its constitution had been Judge Hoar, then a lad of twelve, now become a personage of the first distinction, introduced in 1870 by Emerson to Carlyle, as "a friend whom you saw in his youth, now an inestimable citizen in this State, and lately in President Grant's Cabinet, Attorney-General of the United States. He lives in this town and carries it in his hand."

Naturally called on to speak on such an occasion, Judge Hoar remarked:—

"The Lyceum began, as most things do that are good, by the gratuitous labors of an enthusiast, Mr. Josiah Holbrook, of Boston, a man who was interested in geology and mineralogy, and went about the State delivering lectures upon these subjects, and urging the people of the cities and towns to form Lyceums for popular education. His scheme embraced a good deal. He persuaded the people of various towns and cities, of Boston, and Charlestown, and Salem, and Worcester, and many of the smaller towns of the commonwealth to start his Lyceums. There has been but one, however, that has grown up into anything like the proportions of the institution which he contemplated and recommended, and that is the Essex Institute at Salem. It has, as he proposed each Lyceum should have, a large library, an extensive collection of objects in natural history, cabinets of mineralogy, having courses of lectures, and the members dividing themselves into sections for the prosecution of the study of history, science and art."

The large expectations entertained of Holbrook's novel scheme will appear from the contemporary expressions of its prime mover and his coadjutors, and from the sympathetic utterances of the journals of the day. There was nothing new in the Debating Club, the Social Library, the Literary Circle, the Union for General Inquiry and for Scientific Research. These had long been known, and in one form or another had sprung into a sporadic life in all the active centres of the world. Paris and London had not been without them for centuries, and Franklin had, just a hundred years before, established his "Junto," where the select coterie of a dozen friends, picked from his "ingenious acquaintance," who spent Friday evenings at the Ale House in Philadelphia in 1727, discussed curious queries on points of morals, politics or natural philosophy, propounded a week in advance of their consideration, heard original essays from each member in turn, and finally established a "lending library,"—the germ of the American Philosophical Society. But the idea of combining the functions of libraries and literary, scientific and debating clubs all in one body—of throwing the doors wide open and inviting in all who would assume their share of the work—of systematically organizing such clubs in every village and hamlet and then, for mutual encouragement and help, joining them all in a common league together, was indeed a new conceit, and if impracticable in its details, was not unworthy of that formative period which preceded Boards of Education, Normal Schools and Teachers' Institutes and Conventions,—the day of slow mails, stage-coach travel, rare newspapers, scant amusements and unsystematic teaching, before the cylinder-press, the electric telegraph, the locomotive engine, the submarine cable and the ocean steamer had made the world one family,—the day which ushered in our "revival of learning," when the depressions resulting from two wars waged to effect our independence of Great Britain were happily over, when a distinctly American literature was beginning to show itself in the writings of Dana, Bryant, Irving, Cooper and Halleck, when Mann and his co-workers were just extorting from the close-locked Teutonic intelligence the secrets of the Prussian school system for the advantage of our new republic, when Bancroft, Everett, Ticknor and Hedge were just returning from their first taste of German University culture, burthened like honey-bees with their delicious store, and when the English speaking peoples on both sides of the water seemed suddenly waking up to the consciousness as of newly discovered truth in the now familiar postulate that democratic government, while it is the safest and most stable of all if it rest on generally diffused intelligence, becomes, when based on prevailing ignorance, the most intolerable of despotisms.

Holbrook's confidence in his scheme was contagious because it was enthusiastic and exuberant. He supposed the Lyceum system would rapidly pervade the country and ultimately the world at large. "It seems to me," he said in his original prospectus, "that if associations for mutual instruction in the sciences and other branches of useful knowledge could once be started in our villages, and upon a general plan, they would increase with great rapidity and do more for the general diffusion of knowledge and for raising the moral and intellectual taste of our countrymen than any other expedient which can possibly be devised. And it may be questioned if there is any other way to check the progress of that monster, intemperance, which is making such havoc with talents, morals and everything that raises man above the brute, but by presenting some object of sufficient interest to divert the attention of the young from places and practices which lead to dissipation and to ruin."

In this initial article and in the subsequent allusions to the subject with which the public press and

educational periodicals fairly teemed, the general mechanism of the proposed organization is sufficiently disclosed. Each "Association of Adults for Mutual Improvement" was to have its president, secretaries, treasurer, curators and other needful functionaries and also three delegates to meet, twice a year, delegates from other branches of the organization in the same county, for the furthering of its various objects, especially "for qualifying teachers." And this board of delegates for the county, duly organized, shall appoint a representative to meet representatives from other like boards, who shall be styled the "Board of Mutual Education for the State." These State boards are to organize in turn, to meet annually for certain prescribed functions, and to send delegates to a general conclave embracing the whole country, whose permanent headquarters were ultimately to be established at Washington. The society was to be open to all adults of both sexes who were willing to share its labors and its cost, and the monies accruing from fees for admittance or from the generosity of patrons were to be applied to the purchase of books, cabinets, philosophical and scientific apparatus, the collection and exchange among the Lyceums of the country of specimens in botany mineralogy and natural history, the preparation and publication of town and county maps and histories and the observing and communicating through publication and correspondence of atmospheric, meteorological and climatic phenomena, the chemical analysis of soils, the character of quarries, minerals and mines, and such other facts of importance as might from time to time come to the knowledge of the corresponding secretaries. Funds might also be applied to the aid of institutions for "practical instruction," and even to the help of deserving aspirants in pursuing the higher branches of study. In science "classes" were to be formed, each choosing its "foreman," and conducting its investigations in its own way, and each in turn occupying the floor on its allotted night and claiming the attention of the whole Lyceum, be it in geology, astronomy, natural philosophy, chemistry or mechanics. The plan of itinerant, migratory or perambulating libraries was commended to the attention of counties and towns. This plan consisted in combining the funds devoted by several neighboring towns to the purchase of books for general circulation, so that more books should be obtained for the money expended and no duplicates bought. Thus each town in a group, say of five towns for instance, would take possession of one fifth of the books purchased, keep them for an agreed period and pass them on to the next town of the group, receiving a second fifth at the expiration of the stipulated term. But in the estimation of the projectors of the Lyceum the library in all its forms had failed as a stimulant to independent thinking amongst the mass of the people. Some more pungent flavor must be imparted to general education. This was to be effected through the immediate contact and clashing of mind with mind in neighborly bouts over issues of real, living, dominating importance. Questions upon which all the townspeople had finally to pass were to be debated before all the town by friends and neighbors who had serious convictions, *pro* and *contra*, as to how these questions ought to be determined. Moreover, scholarship was seen to possess intrinsic and inherent values of its own, quite aside from the consideration it buys. Why, it was asked, may not all men enjoy these in equitable measure? The locking up of learning in cloisters and colleges had been denounced by our forefathers from the first, as among the "wiles of Satan." Why not seize, perforce, upon the cherished heir-loom of the schools? If eloquence and culture, if the gifts of tongue and pen and the power of deep thinking were precious boons, entitling the possessor to the deference they claimed, why, it was impatiently asked, might they not be more evenly distributed? If science and the arts really conduced to the amelioration of mankind, why be longer indebted for their blessings to a few favored devotees? Why not snatch them for ourselves? Was it the spirit of the Renaissance and the Reformation abroad again? Or was it rather the error of the French Encyclopædists masquerading in a new disguise? It was no spirit of hostility or jealousy towards the higher learning, for it assumed that happiness was possible in the ratio of the learning attained. It was not proposed to raze the citadel, but only to assault its keep and divide its hoarded treasure. It was an uprising in behalf of more light. Perhaps it was the socialistic principle applied to culture. Perhaps it was communism in brain-food and brain products. It wandered far away from its English prototype,—so far that we find Sir Thomas Weise, a British member of Parliament, discussing the doings of the National Lyceum of America in 1831, with a view to adapt its methods to the needs of the Mechanics' Institutes of England. Holbrook claimed it as a thoroughly American product, and it certainly seemed well suited to the genius of the country, for it was democratic in spirit and republican in form; it was free and voluntary and spontaneous in its origin; it was elastic and self-adapting in its organization; it was social and humanizing in its aims, and kept before it the great and dignified cause of self-culture and mutual improvement, while it certainly might claim continental scope and dimensions, after its first national meeting in 1831, when no less than eight or nine hundred town Lyceums were reported in different parts of the country, with fifty or sixty county Lyceums, as well as several State organizations. The end showed that vitality resided in the town Lyceums and not in the attempted confederations of them.

The reader who finds it hard to recognize in all these anticipations the lyceum of actual fact as we have known it for the last half-century, may easily reconcile himself to the truthfulness of the picture I

have drawn by a little study of the journals of the day,—by an examination of the score of articles which appeared in the first five volumes of the *American Journal of Education*,—and by a passing glance at the state of opinion and conditions of life which prevailed in the New England of 1820–30.

When Claxton was lecturing on air before his townsmen of Methuen, there was not a rod of steam railway in existence. That potent leveling and centralizing agency had not begun its work. The question was still an open one whether horse-power or steam would ultimately prove the better motor for the new roadways already being provided with rails of wood, iron and stone. And it was only in 1828–29 that the Stephensons succeeded in applying the tubular boiler to the traction engine "Rocket," and that the triumph of steam was established. The first locomotive-engine which invaded Essex County ran on a spur track laid by the Boston and Lowell corporation to Andover in 1833, and to Haverhill in 1835. The Eastern Railroad reached Salem in 1838. Topsfield was, up to this time, the recognized centre of the county, and its Academy Hall and its famous Stage House, since removed to Phillips' Beach, Swampscott, and there consumed by fire, were the usual meeting-places for all county gatherings. Each town had then a social autonomy of its own, not yet impaired by the draft on its active citizenship, necessary to meet the business demands of our great railroad centres, building up great hives of industry and bringing together great swarms of population, nor by the superior attractions of city art galleries, concert-halls, lecture-rooms and theatres for our hours of ease. Each was a social centre for itself,—a planet, as it were, revolving with its own satellites in its own sphere, and not yet swung out of its appointed course by the disturbing attraction which, when brought near, the greater body, be it material or social, possesses for the less. Each had its traditions, its ancient families, its leading people,—both those of approved hospitality, of the great house and the long purse, and those who based their claims on superior knowledge, character, discrimination and taste,—its clergymen and deacons, its 'squires, doctors, teachers, ship-masters and owners of shipping,—its town elite,—and for better or for worse, its own townspeople must suffice, in the main, for its own needs.

Our county, one of the original four incorporated and set off in 1643, has an area of not far from five hundred square miles which, at the time we speak of, supported a population of about eighty thousand souls, and of these fifty-four or fifty-five thousand lived in thirteen large towns, every one of them incorporated before 1650, and seven of them as early as 1640. Of the towns in Massachusetts possessed of four thousand inhabitants and upwards, Essex County contained nearly one-half. Of our six prosperous cities the largest, Lynn and Lawrence, held no such places in the census tables then. Lynn, now the larger of the two, was a town of not half the size of the Salem of that day, and smaller than either Newburyport or Gloucester, while Lawrence, which now bestrides our great water-way like a Colossus, had neither "promise" nor "potency" before 1847. In many ways ours was a peculiar county. Nowhere on this continent, outside the great cities, were so many people brought together in so small a space. Nowhere was there greater average wealth or more generally diffused intelligence, independence, comfort and thrift. Save in a few exceptional situations, as of the counties of Dukes and Barnstable, there was nowhere in the country a population living on an equal area and touched by navigable water at so many points. Besides the lordly Merrimac, flanked on either hand with growing towns, turning more spindles than any other river in the world to-day, and weaving miles enough of cloth every three weeks to swathe the earth, which furnished to our thirty miles of northern frontier a cheap highway for freight, the county could claim, within its limits, no less than five valuable and commodious harbors, at Newburyport, Gloucester, Beverly, Marblehead and Salem, not to omit others of lesser draught, but fully equal to the more moderate demands of local trade. Treading hard upon the heels of the great towns already mentioned came Andover, Haverhill, Newbury, Ipswich and Danvers. Amongst the counties of the State Essex had no rival,—not even Suffolk,—in the aggregate of her population, unless, perhaps, Worcester, and probably she overtopped them all. Her lands were held in small hereditary estates by the men who tilled them. Her capital and her enterprise found ready employment at home, or if they looked abroad, turned eager glances to the East, and not as lately toward the setting sun.

Content in earlier years with the hard fare and meagre earnings of the fisheries and the export trade in fish, and later trained on the gun-decks of ships of war, or of their own privateers, the people of Essex County had come, since the days of peace, to push their ambitious ventures into every sea. Foreign commerce, which is in itself a liberal education, had taught them what the bold and strenuous life of the fishing-smack or the man of-war could never have engrafted upon their sturdy, Puritanic thought, and they brought home from their distant voyaging a freight more remunerative than silks, or gums or spices, made up of broadening views of life and liberal estimates of men and things. Geography and ethnology they studied at first hand. The populations which their enterprise employed, and the trade which their successes and their hospitality invited, built up large markets for the consumption of all that the interior sections of the county could produce. The population was singularly homogeneous, the few mills there were being operated by the sons and daughters of Essex County farmers and mechanics, amongst whom the average of intelligence and character was not a

whit lower than where mills did not exist. This high average was not reduced—possibly it was advanced—by another manufacture which formed a peculiar feature of the industry of the county. Shoes were then made by hand, and as the occupations of husbandry and the fisheries left much of the inclement season unemployed, these callings were very generally supplemented in the winter months by the making of a coarse kind of shoe for the southern market. This was a craft which called for little capital, since the shoe-stock was distributed in weekly portions from Lynn or Haverhill, the great centres of this peculiar industry, nor did it require any great degree of dexterity or skill. And thus the frugal yeomanry of Essex, whose summers were employed on the Grand Banks or on their ancestral acres, clubbed together by half-dozens to build the little box-like shoe-shops which once dotted all our country roads, and in which they wrought lustily all winter with lapstone and awl, in a temperature less conducive to longevity, perhaps, then stimulating to cerebration. And here all unconscious of the dictum of Pliny—"*ne sutor ultra crepidam*"—they were so effectually over-ruling, as well as of the supercilious slurs of Cicero, and Plautus and Horace on their indoor habits and unmilitary pose, they passed judgment from the bench, so to say, on the latest sermon, newspaper leader, political harangue and local gossip, with as much critical acumen, and as deep, earnest consideration of each passing topic as though, in very truth, time's noblest offspring were *the last.*

I do not know that I need sketch in further detail the salient features of this sturdy people. General the Baron von Riedesel's remark upon the Bay Colony in Revolutionary days,—high praise from an enemy,—" the inclination of the people is for commerce, navigation and the military art," as well described them half a century later, and no local community could with less presumption take to itself the glowing encomium of Burke upon the commerce and fisheries of New England. Theirs was the county which had produced the Pickerings, the Cabots, the Crowninshields, the Lowells,—Nathan Dane, Manasseh Cutler, Rufus King, Theophilus Parsons, Joseph Story, —the Derbys, the Thorndikes, the Peabodys, the Jacksons, the Grays, the Lees, the Pickmans, the Hoopers, the families of Cleaveland and Phillips and Bowditch, and, earlier than all these, the fine old stocks of Lynde, of Sewall and of Dummer. Theirs was the sod upon which Endicott and Higginson and Saltonstall and Winthrop first stepped ashore. Theirs was the soil upon which Gage had mustered his myrmidons, in the vain hope to quench the insurgent spirit flaming up in a Provincial Assembly which defied his sovereign from the old town-house in Salem. And while it may be the fact that no actual collision of troops ever consecrated in blood the soil of Essex County, although we suffered from Indian butcheries in the valley of the Merrimac, and felt the shots of British cruisers along our seaboard, and saw from the north shore of the bay the smoke of battle between the " Shannon " and her doomed antagonist,—that unequal contest over which English school-boys still regale their drooping spirits in the chorus,—

> " The Chesapeake, so bold, out of Boston, I am told,
> Came to take a British frigate neat and handy,
> And the people of the port came out to see the sport,
> With their music playing ' Yankee doodle dandy ! ' "

—while all this may be true, certain it is that no equal number of people had borne a heavier share in Indian, French or British hostilities, or contributed more victims to the horrors of Mill Prison, Dartmoor and the slave-pens of Algiers, from the gloomy days of Bloody Brook, of the Pequots and the Narragansetts,—from the days of the brilliant assaults upon Port Royal, Louisburg and Quebec,—down through the times when Washington took command of the Continental forces and called on us, without waiting for the action of Congress, to improvise a navy,—the times when Mugford and Manly and Harraden and Hugh Hill were afloat,—when Marblehead set her amphibious regiment on foot,—down to that later day when all our seaboard towns vied with each other to do homage to the naval heroes of the second war of Independence. The doubtful claim to the first bloodshed of the Revolution on that Sunday afternoon in February, 1775, at the old North Bridge in Salem, might be worth contesting in another county, but not here, for our people have twice sought out and attacked, on her own chosen field, the naval power which claims to rule the waves, closing with her wherever they could find her, be it in the Indian Ocean or the Irish Channel, or in whatever waters her red flag proclaimed her the terror of the seas, and giving battle until she cried enough. Facts like these go far to justify the ancient boast that Essex County produces more history to the acre than any equal area in the country. Antecedents like these had well prepared the people of the county for the new educational dispensation of which we speak, and they were as ready as any of their neighbors to distinguish the wheat from the chaff in Holbrook's singular proposals.

Enough has been said to indicate in a general way what these proposals were. It must be remembered that the first scientific survey of an American State was Hitchcock's survey of Massachusetts, the report of which became public in 1833; that we had no State Board of Education before 1837, and no authorized map of the commonwealth until 1842, and that our first Normal School, established at Lexington in 1839, and which it had been proposed, the year before, to establish at Dummer Academy, was the first in America, although the Prussians had known them for a century. The Lyceum was accordingly hailed as a cheap and much needed training-school and examining board for common-school teachers, while its semi-annual county gatherings were to serve the pur-

poses now met by Teachers' Institutes and Conventions. It was the impression of its projectors that scientific topics were to prove the most attractive, and that by adhering rather exclusively to these they were to escape at once both the Scylla and the Charybdis of religious and political contentions. To suppose, however, as is common, that at any time troublesome questions were successfully excluded from the Lyceum platform is to accept an error. No question was more generally discussed from the outset than that of the relative disadvantages of a free black and a slave population, the Colonization Society's methods, and abolition in the District of Columbia, and while the heat engendered was probably less than it would have been a little later,—the Garrison mob was in October, 1835,—I am convinced that the most volcanic topics were not interdicted, from reading a letter now before me, addressed by the Hon. Horace Mann to my father, both being members of Governor Everett's first Board of Education, in which is reported an attack made in a lecture before one of the best-conducted and most conservative Lyceums of the county, denouncing the board "as a machination of the Devil,—showing the preponderance of Unitarianism in it,—that the next element in point of strength was infidelity, two members being infidels, and its orthodoxy confided to one poor, weak old man!"

Another mode proposed to quicken the public mind was through "cheap and popular" publications. The Middlesex County Lyceum, under the Presidency of Edward Everett, began the publication of a series of treatises, of which the first was a popular Lyceum lecture on taxation by Andrew P. Peabody. It is now before me, and is designated on its title-page as Vol. I., No. 1, of the "Workingmen's Library." A prospectus follows, from which it appears that the publications were intended, in part, for reading as Lyceum lectures in small towns where there might be difficulty in procuring speakers. They were to be published monthly, and furnished by a committee of five. They were not to fail for want of being "plain and intelligible;" each writer to be "answerable for his own statements and opinions;" the price to be seventeen cents each. In a letter to my father, who was associated with him on the board of management of the Middlesex County Lyceum, Mr. Everett, whose clerical habit had not wholly worn off, although he franks his letter as a member of Congress, speaks of these publications as "tracts," is "more and more favorably impressed" with the plan, "if it be made sufficiently cheap to penetrate the community," and recommends "short tracts, such, for instance, as may be read thro' aloud in an hour & a quarter at the farthest,"—offers as his own contribution a lecture lately repeated at Charlestown, Waltham and Framingham,—hopes it "might do as one of the tracts," and thinks "the rule should be to put them as low as they can possibly be afforded." Henry Brougham was promoting publications of a similar character at this time in Great Britain.

One marked result of the Lyceum system, the production of a school of trained and able debaters in every town, does not seem to have been anticipated by its projectors. Among the long lists of prospective benefits I do not find this enumerated. But it was plain from the start that the Lyceum was to afford a free-school of debate for questions calculated to shape public opinion, questions involving expediency and policy, quite as much as questions of pure science. Thus Emerson seems to have found in the Lyceum the freedom denied him in the pulpit. How far he shaped the Lyceum, how far the Lyceum shaped him, is a question upon which we may not enter here. His biographer, Cooke, states that at once upon his return from Europe in 1833 "he took advantage of the interest in this new mode of popular instruction and working with many others served to mould the Lyceum into a means of general culture; helped make it a moral and intellectual power, a quickening influence on life and thought," while his admirer, Margaret Fuller, lets us see that in his lectures he was enlisting a following which made the later essays possible. Whether, without the Lyceum, Wendell Phillips and Henry Ward Beecher would have achieved their triumphs in the mastery of popular audiences, is a debatable question. Even of such men as Garrison and Parker,—men whose natures are an endogenous rather than an exogenous product,—it is not quite safe to say that they would have been just what they were without the Lyceum. But I had better let Mr. Emerson tell his own story.

Mr. Emerson stepped from the pulpit to the Lyceum platform. He describes his appearance in the new field, which occurred in the winter of 1833–34, as his "first attempt at public discourse after leaving the pulpit." His subjects had at that time a marked leaning towards natural science. Two years later he detailed to Carlyle the reasons which ought to bring the latter to America. "Especially Lectures. My own experiments for one or two winters, and the readiness with which you embrace the work, have led me to expect much from this mode of addressing men. In New England, the Lyceum, as we call it, is already a great institution. Besides the more elaborate courses of lectures in the cities, every country town has its weekly evening meeting, called a Lyceum, and every professional man in the place is called upon, in the course of the winter, to entertain his fellow-citizens with a discourse on whatever topic. The topics are miscellaneous as heart can wish. But in Boston, Lowell and Salem courses are given by individuals. I see not why this is not the most flexible of all organs of opinion, from its popularity and from its newness, permitting you to say what you think, without any shackles of prescription. The pulpit of our age certainly gives forth an obstructed and uncertain sound, and the faith of those in it, if men of

genius, may differ so much from that of those under it as to embarrass the conscience of the speaker, because so much is attributed to him from the fact of standing there. In the Lyceum nothing is presupposed. The orator is only responsible for what his lips articulate. Then what scope it allows! You may handle every member and relation of humanity. What could Homer, Socrates or St. Paul say that cannot be said here? The audience is of all classes, and its character will be determined always by the name of the lecturer. Why may you not give the reins to your wit, your pathos, your philosophy, and become that good despot which the virtuous orator is?

"Another thing. I am persuaded that if a man speak well, he shall find this a well-rewarded work in New England. I have written this year ten lectures; I had written as many last year, and for reading both these and those at places whither I was invited, I have received this last winter about three hundred and fifty dollars."

The next year he wrote to Carlyle: "I find myself so much more and freer on the platform of the lecture-room than in the pulpit. . . . But I preach in the Lecture-Room and there it tells, for there is no prescription. You may laugh, weep, reason, sing, sneer or pray according to your genius. It is the new pulpit, and very much in vogue with my northern countrymen. This winter, in Boston, we shall have more than ever; two or three every night of the week. When will you come and redeem your pledge?" And again, "I am always haunted with brave dreams of what might be accomplished in the Lecture-Room, so free and so unpretending a platform, a Delos not yet made fast. I imagine eloquence of infinite variety,—rich as conversation can be with anecdote, joke, tragedy, epics and pindarics, argument and confession." In an earlier letter, dated April, 1835, he had said to Carlyle: "If the lectures succeed in Boston, their success is insured at Salem, a town thirteen miles off, with a population of fifteen thousand. They might, perhaps, be repeated at Cambridge, three miles from Boston, and probably at Philadelphia, thirty-six hours distant. . . . They might be delivered, one or two in each week. And if they met with sudden success, it would be easy to carry on the course simultaneously at Salem, and Cambridge, and in the City."

To all which solicitations, Carlyle, not taking very kindly to the proposal, though thinking "I could really swim in that element were I once thrown into it," "a thing I have always had some hankering after," "could any one but appoint me Lecturing Professor of Teufelsdröckh's Science,—'Things in general'!" replies from time to time with an occasional growl, and they keep the plan "hanging to solace ourselves with it, till the time decide," until, in December, 1841, he writes in this characteristic strain of Emerson's "Lectures on the Times", "Good speed to the Speaker, to the Speech! Your Country is luckier than most at this time; it has still real preaching; the tongue of man is not, whensoever it begins wagging, entirely sure to emit babblement, twaddlement, sincere cant and other noises which awaken the passionate wish for silence."

Of course there were objectors and doubters, and the Lyceum was opposed on the very grounds upon which its promoters supported it. For those who shook their heads over Pope's line,

> "A little learning is a dangerous thing,"

and Bacon's warning,

> "A little philosophy inclineth man's mind to atheism,"

the answer was ready,—that we cannot have much unless we first have little, and that the having of little begets the desire for much. If these organizations might not hope to carry higher aloft the apex of the pyramid of human knowledge, they might hope to be able to broaden out its base and set the venerable pile upon a more firm, stable and comprehensive footing. It was the diffusion of information, primarily, and not the advancement of science, which the Lyceums aimed at. The systems of education they recommended were always described as *practical*, and were pretty sharply antagonized with those of the colleges and higher schools. They seem to have had a strong leaning towards manual labor academies, which were then much in vogue, and one of which enjoyed a brief career at the Cherry Hill Farm, in North Beverly. They proposed to insist, amongst other branches, upon instruction in practical politics, and called for the study of the State and Federal Constitutions, and for text-books on familiar principles of law. The lottery was one vulnerable member of the hydra-headed monster, and they proposed to attack that. Intemperance was another, and they proposed to have a tilt at that. As a Board of Education, as a Lecture Bureau, as an Agricultural, Geological and Topographical Survey, they made no doubt, the Lyceum was to prove invaluable. They proposed a great central School, for the dissemination of their ideas, connected with which a central work-shop was to manufacture and send forth at cost, school apparatus, philosophical, astronomical and geometrical instruments and chemical and other scientific preparations. They went so far as to propose, in much the same spirit in which we have set apart a Labor Day and an Arbor Day, to consecrate the second Monday of December to the interests of the Lyceum. The Lyceum was to do for the head, if not perhaps for the moral nature, what religion was doing for the heart, and one of our judges, holding a criminal term of court, charged his grand jury to go home and devote themselves to the establishment of town Lyceums, as a measure of prevention against crime. The mistakes they made were due in part to sanguine temperament, and partly to the spirit of the times, which was a spirit of unrest. These were the days of Fourier and of Owen, of Brook Farm and the

Phalansteries, when phrenology and mesmerism were struggling hard for a place among the sciences, and all sorts of experimental sociology were in the air. By undertaking a great deal too much; by claiming a great deal more than they could maintain, the projectors of the system had well nigh obscured the real merits of their conception. They had discovered a valuable specific, but it was not a panacea for all human ills. They had found a pearl of great price. It was not the philosopher's stone. Fortunately there were not wanting keen-eyed scholars who could appreciate the value of the discovery, and Essex County had her share of these.

It was in November, 1826, that Holbrook addressed thirty or forty of the farmers and mechanics of Millbury, a little town of a thousand inhabitants just south of Worcester, and at the close of a lecture on natural science induced them to organize themselves for mutual improvement, and to assume the somewhat pretentious title of "Millbury Lyceum, No. 1, Branch of the American Lyceum." This little group of persons,—there is no reason for supposing they ever met earlier than September, 1826,—included among its number several marked characters of whom perhaps Thomas Blanchard, the great inventor, was the most conspicuous. The United States Government had, at that time, a manufactory of small arms at Millbury, under the supervision of a very able mechanic named Morse, and with the co-operation of Blanchard and another mechanic named Andrews, who had correctly calculated an eclipse of the moon, he established this society. It was by no means the first of the kind, nor the first to take the name of Lyceum, but it was the first in Holbrook's system. Troy, N. Y., had maintained its Lyceum since 1818, but it was a collection of curiosities and specimens, such as we oftener call a museum. Gardiner, Me., had a Lyceum in 1822, but that was an academy established by a benevolent gentleman of the town bent on trying the experiment of the manual labor system. Professor Hitchcock may have applied the name as early to one of the natural history societies at Amherst College, but what Holbrook knew of these things or what guided him in the choice of this classic word he has not told us. It was so new and strange a word that we are instructed by the *Journal of Education* to pronounce it "Li-seè-um." To designate a new thing he had a right to a new word, and these Greek names have been most arbitrarily impressed into the service of modern ideas. An Athenæum with us is likely to be a library, but this is not what it was at Athens nor what it means in England. A Gymnasium with us imports a place for physical training, but the Greeks used it much more comprehensively to cover all sorts of culture, especially mental, and the Germans follow them. The word Museum, quite divorced from the muses who gave it once a graceful significance and an affiliation with music, generally designates with us a gathering of rather dry subjects. In Germany, equally without relation to its native origin, it means a club house. In Paris the Lyceum is a Government preparatory school; in London it is a theatre; in modern Greece a university,—so that whatever the word meant to the ancient Athenian, Holbrook might, without greater violence, apply it to his new club for mutual improvement. In fact the Lyceum of ancient Athens was a grove where Aristotle daily imparted his learning and inspiration through the medium of conversations and discussion, as did Plato in another grove called the Academy. And if, as is probably true, the word Lyceum is related in its origin to the words λύκος, λευκή, *lux*, light, Holbrook might turn the laugh on his too fastidious critics, for surely Aristotle's grove was no *lucus a non lucendo!*

From whatever source derived the word met a want and while the more scholarly amongst his recruits objected that it was stilted and inapt and that it made a very bad plural withal, no movement was made for substituting any other, and those who cared much for the thing and little for the name were both astonished and delighted to see the number of societies throughout the country calling themselves Lyceums, increasing before the close of 1831 to something like a thousand.

Of these none were earlier in the field than Claxton's, at Methuen, and this was one of the very few which provided itself with a local habitation. The structure stood on what is now Broadway, near Park Street, and has since been removed and converted into a dwelling. One other in this county, organized at Salem, in January, 1830, and at once incorporated, completed and occupied in January, 1831, and paid for out of the proceeds of its lecture courses, the commodious structure for its own accommodation, still in daily use, and known as Lyceum Hall. Of the Salem movement, Judge White, Col. Francis Peabody, Hon. Stephen C. Phillips, and Rev. Chas. W. Upham seem to have been the central figures. The first address delivered before the Salem Lyceum was given by Judge White, its first president, in the Methodist chapel in Sewall Street. The preliminary meetings for its formation had been held at Col. Peabody's house, and brought together, as we learn from the memoir of that conspicuous citizen by Mr. Upham, such active and able coadjutors as Dr. A. L. Peirson, Leverett Saltonstall, Rufus Choate, Benjamin Crowninshield, Robert Rantoul, Jr., Elisha Mack, Dr. Geo. Choate, Warwick Palfrey, and others, of whom Hon. Caleb Foote, Hon. Geo. Wheatland and William P. Endicott, Esq., are the last survivors. An address from Hon. Stephen C. Phillips opened the new hall the walls of which were decorated with frescos of Judge White and Captain Joseph Peabody, of Demosthenes and Cicero, and also with a somewhat ambitious design over the platform, in which the Lycean Apollo appeared resplendent in his cloud-borne car. But of this tradition relates that an unlucky janitor,

groping in the attic, presumably to regulate the ventilation, put his stumbling foot through the ceiling, and found himself occupying, uninvited, a seat in the chariot of the god of light! This famous Lyceum, with its unbroken continuity of lecture courses now reaching the limit of fifty-seven consecutive years,—a record only paralleled, so far as I know, by that of another, formed December 21, 1829, in the little red brick school-house in Littleton, a town of one thousand inhabitants, between Concord and Groton, which, under the name of the Littleton Lyceum, has sustained itself with spirit and success, and without a break, to the present time,—this famous Lyceum has called to its platform the most eminent men and women of our era. While few names are wanting which could add lustre to its record, the name of most frequent recurrence is that of Ralph Waldo Emerson.

The next Lyceum formed in Essex County, after that at Methuen, of which I have definite information, was an organization for lectures and discussion formed at Beverly, certainly as early as December, 1828,—probably earlier,—and which took the name, November 5, 1829, of the Beverly Lyceum. It owed its origin to the activity and public spirit of Robert Rantoul, Jr., Dr. Augustus Torrey and T. Wilson Flagg. Hon. William Thorndike was its first president, and on its original roll of members, it is interesting to find, in company with the names of William Endicott, John Pickett, Augustus N. Clark and Warren Prince, probably the last survivors of the Beverly worthies who joined it, that of Caleb Foote, of Salem.

A Lyceum, formed at North Andover, April 13, 1830, is claimed to have been the outgrowth of an association for mutual improvement organized early in the year 1828, and such a society existing, May 15, 1830, in the North Parish of Danvers, is also thought to have been gathered in some form and at some time during the same year.

At South Danvers, the "Literary Circle," devoted at first to reading and conversation solely, opened its meetings with an address from Dudley Stickney, its first president, on December 16, 1828, at Dr. Shed's Hall, nearly opposite the South Danvers Bank, and although it enjoyed from the outset the countenance of Rufus Choate, Dr. Nichols, Fitch Poole, Dr. Joseph Osgood, and others hardly less honored, it could not be called a Lyceum before January 9, 1834, when it took that form of organization.

A movement began in Lynn, also, as early as December 23, 1828, and in this Alonzo Lewis seems to have been active; but of its nature I know nothing.

So far as I can learn, there was not in existence in Essex County, on the fifth day of November, 1829, any organized body, in full working order, calling itself a Lyceum, and supporting an established course of debates and lectures, except at Beverly.

Of the extent to which the late Hon. Robert Rantoul, Jr., contributed to the success of the organization, it does not become me to speak. His college experience had qualified him to be of service in this way, for he had succeeded, in 1823, before the end of his freshman year, in establishing a debating club called the ΑΚΡΙΒΟΛΟΓΟΥΜΕΝΟΙ, which, in November, 1825, united with the Hermetic Society and the old Speaking Club or Fraternity of 1770, forming, under a constitution drawn by him, the Institute of 1770. Hon. Chas. W. Upham, in his memoir of Col. Peabody, has recorded his high estimate of my father's services, and the late Ellis Gray Loring, of Boston, Hon. Robert C. Winthrop, Rev. James Freeman Clarke, and Dr. O. W. Holmes, all near his time in college, with Dr. Andrew P. Peabody and the late Richard Hildreth and J. Thomas Stevenson, his classmates, have testified at various times that they then regarded his power in organization and in debate as phenomenal. Mr. Rantoul left college in August, 1826. He resided at Beverly for the next five years, while studying his profession in the offices of Hon. John Pickering and Hon. Leverett Saltonstall, and afterwards occupying an office in the Stearns Building at Salem. In the summer of 1831, he was residing and practising his profession at South Reading, and there became a member of the publication committee of the Middlesex County Lyceum.

Rufus Choate, who was some years Mr. Rantoul's senior, was practising law at South Danvers, in an office facing the Square, from September, 1823, until his removal to Salem in 1828. Before those dates he had pursued his studies in the offices of Mr. Andrews, of Ipswich, and of Judge Cummins, of Salem, as well as in that of Attorney-General Wirt, at Washington. He seems to have taken an early and very active interest in the Lyceums springing up around him, as so rare a nature could not fail to do, and to have identified himself, both before and after his establishment in Salem, with the efforts of his neighbors in behalf of mutual improvement. His name appears for the first time, as a lecturer, in the roll of the Salem Lyceum,—he was a member of its first board of managers,—in 1831, and but twice thereafter; but his lecture, entitled the "Romance of the Sea," originally known as the "Literature of the Sea," when first delivered in Salem, in 1837, became at once famous. Whipple says of it in his "Recollections of Eminent Men,"—"Those who heard it forty years ago now speak of it as a masterpiece of eloquence. It enjoyed a popularity similar to that of Wendell Phillips's lecture on 'The Lost Arts.'"

The first steps towards the organization of an Essex County Lyceum were taken at a gathering at Topsfield, December 30, 1829. It was not composed largely of delegates, but some eighty public-spirited professional and scholarly gentlemen came together there in Academy Hall, for mutual enlightenment on this interesting theme. Besides the Methuen and Beverly Lyceums, there were then existing in the county, one at Newburyport, organized November 25, 1829, on a very independent footing, and holding weekly meet-

ings; and another at Bradford, East Parish, now Groveland, called the Franklin Lyceum, organized December 23, 1829, holding weekly meetings in the hall of Merrimac Academy. If others were represented in the gathering at Topsfield, I have failed to trace them; but of those then in existence three, probably those of Newburyport, Bradford and Methuen, declined to send delegates or be in any way subjected to the authority of the proposed County Lyceum; and one, Beverly, sent delegates to protest against the scheme of confederation, except on condition that the autonomy of the town Lyceums was fully recognized and assured. The feeling of these remonstrants was well expressed by Ichabod Tucker, of Salem, who said: "For purposes of mutual improvement, the County Lyceum will be useless. He had no objection himself to ride ten or twelve miles once in three or four months, to shake hands with his friends from distant parts of the county, and to take a social chat and eat a social dinner together. He thought it would be a very good thing. But it was idle to think of forming a government while there was nothing to govern, or of forming any board of control without the consent, first asked and obtained, of those who are to be controlled by it." This spirit of opposition to the plan of confederation was by no means exceptional here, but cropped out elsewhere. The opening address, by Dr. Thomas A. Greene, before the New Bedford Lyceum, December 18, 1828, says: "We have adopted the name of New Bedford Lyceum, in preference to calling ourselves a branch of the American Lyceum, as has been done in some other places. This involves no necessary connection with other societies, but leaves us at liberty to pursue our own course." The very vigorous Lyceum at Newburyport was started on the same basis, and there is reason to think that many of the most promising of the early organizations kept aloof at least until they could be assured that no undue control would be attempted by the County Lyceum, and also that all efforts on the part of the evangelical element to give it a sectarian or denominational caste would be defeated. The differences of opinion which thus developed themselves, and the warmth with which opposite views were maintained throughout an extended session, showed that this gathering was no dilettanti excursion. It was called to order by Rev. Gardner B. Perry, of Bradford, who was its secretary, and Hon. Robert Rantoul, Sr., of Beverly, was its president. The question whether Lyceums should be of spontaneous growth and self-sustained, or should derive their charters and powers from a central head, such as a County or a State Lyceum, was vigorously discussed by Judge Cummins, Elisha Mack, Ichabod Tucker, Robert Rantoul, Jr., Dr. George Choate and Rev. Chas. W. Upham, all of Salem, and Rev. Leonard Withington, of Newbury, in favor of the view which prevailed, and by Dr. Spofford, of Rowley, and Rev. Henry C. Wright, of West Newbury, in opposition, and the convention recommended a County Lyceum, as a means of strengthening town Lyceums previously formed, but in no sense or degree as a source of power or authority, and after appointing the necessary committees, dissolved. One of these committees, of which Rev. Chas. W. Upham was chairman, issued, January 24, 1830, a circular letter, inviting the towns to form Lyceums, to send delegates to proposed semi-annual county gatherings, and to adopt constitutions modeled either on Holbrook's or that of the Beverly or of the Salem Lyceum, each of which was quoted *in extenso*. The letter concludes with an urgent appeal to the town Lyceums to send delegates to a county convention, called to meet at Ipswich Hotel, March 17, there to consider a county constitution to be submitted by the committee. Representatives of seventeen Lyceums attended this meeting,—there were then twenty-six towns in the county,—and adopted a county constitution; they chose Judge White president, fixed the annual meeting on May 5th, at Ipswich; requested an address from Judge White, which was delivered, and is in print; and apportioned the county amongst a Board of Managers, in the following districts: To Mr. Howe, of Haverhill, his own town, Methuen and Bradford West Parish; to Mr. Crosby, of Amesbury, that town and Salisbury; to Rev. Mr. Withington, Newburyport and Newbury; to Rev. Mr. Perry, Bradford East Parish, West Newbury and Rowley; to Rev. Mr. Vose, of Topsfield, that town and Boxford; to Mr. Cutler, of Lynn, Lynn and Saugus; to Rev. Mr. Bartlett, of Marblehead, and Rev. Mr. Badger, of Andover, their own towns respectively; to Hon. Wm. Thorndike, Beverly and Essex; to Hon. Israel Trask and Rev. Mr. Hildreth, Gloucester and Manchester; and the towns of Salem, Ipswich, Danvers, Lynnfield, Hamilton, Middleton and Wenham, to Hon. D. A. White, Rev. John Brazer, Eben Shillaber and Ichabod Tucker, Esquires, all of Salem.

The first annual meeting was held, as announced, on May 5th, in the First Parish meeting-house at Ipswich, and it is proof enough of the quickening influence of the county movement inaugurated at Topsfield December 30, 1829, that between that date and the meeting at Ipswich, May 5, 1830, Lyceums had been formed at Salem, January 18th; at Andover, February 10th; at Manchester, February 18th; at Gloucester, February 19th; at Topsfield and New Rowley, some time in February; at West Newbury, March 16th; at Essex, some time in March; at North Andover, April 13th; and one at Amesbury and Salisbury in common, and others, at dates which I cannot determine, at Lynn, Haverhill and some of the parishes. Delegates were present on the 5th of May from eighteen established Lyceums.

The County Lyceum met next, November 24th, at the Tabernacle in Salem, where it was addressed by Rev. Mr. Perry, who succeeded to the presidency upon the retirement of Judge White, and whose address was printed. The second annual meeting was held, May

27, 1831, in the First Parish meeting-house at Newburyport, and was addressed by Rev. Dr. Brazer, of Salem, whose remarks were also printed. Ipswich had formed a Lyceum since the last report, and was now represented in the convention. But so far as I can ascertain, this was the last meeting of the Essex County Lyceum. Teachers' Institutes were coming into favor; some element of internal discord may have relaxed its hold on public support, or it may be that the town Lyceums had found themselves so strong as to be perfectly well able to get on without it.

Meantime the State Lyceum of Massachusetts, the second in the country (New York being a month before us), was coming into prominence from the character of the men who were conspicuous in it, and, to Holbrook's mind at least, his scheme was also taking on national, if not even international dimensions. But before passing from the local Lyceums, let us look for a moment at the nature of the subjects with which they mainly concerned themselves. I shall not enumerate the long list of subjects upon which lectures were delivered, because in the selection of these the listeners had little voice. But the topics chosen for debate and the character of their other exercises certainly furnish a fair criterion of the prevailing standard of intelligence and the drift of public feeling. In the large towns, where either the services of professional men were to be had for the asking or the money required to secure them was readily forthcoming, the lecture was the common medium of instruction. Nothing else was ever offered in Salem. But it was in the small towns, as the annual reports assure us, that the institution did its greatest work, and here debates were the chief attraction. These were both written and extemporized, but in both cases the subjects were announced in advance and disputants appointed to open the discussion. In North Danvers, in Topsfield, in Haverhill and in Beverly debates seem to have proved a special attraction. Among the questions discussed were these: "Ought the habit of wearing mourning apparel to continue?" "Ought imprisonment for debt to be abolished in Massachusetts?" "Are railroads likely to prove advantageous?" "Is it expedient to authorize a lottery for completing Bunker Hill Monument?" "Ought the government to remove the Seminoles and Cherokees, and have Indians a right to tribal government independent of that of the State and of the Union?" "Do newspapers, on the whole, contribute to the morals of a people?" "Do the evils of the militia system counterbalance its advantages?" "Is capital punishment justifiable in Massachusetts?" "Are the poor laws in their present state beneficial?" "Ought public roads to be maintained by the town or the county?" "Ought representatives, in voting, to be governed by their own convictions or those of their constituents?" "Is it expedient to divide the town of Danvers?" "Is Free Masonry calculated to promote virtue, religion and good government?" "Ought immigration to be discouraged?" "Is it right, is it expedient to abolish slavery in the District of Columbia?" "Ought the incorporation of factories to be encouraged?" "Is it expedient to take legal measures to prevent the distillation of ardent spirits?" "Which sex has produced the best authors, according to their respective opportunities for literary acquirement?" "Does public policy require that females be excluded from the public offices of government and exempted from the active duties of citizens?" "Is the use of ardent spirits and stimulating liquors beneficial to the community?" "Is it for the advantage of Christendom that the Russians expel the Turks from Europe?" "If the Greeks gain their independence, what form of government will best suit their circumstances?" "Is the present government of France likely to be permanent?" "Has the career of Byron been beneficial or injurious?" "Of Napoleon?" "What occasions the stillness of the air which precedes earthquakes?" "Is the use of anthracite coal likely to conduce to economy and comfort?"

In many instances the same question was discussed for several sittings and often referred to a committee for final determination. Ladies made their contributions, if at all, in writing, and often anonymously, through the medium of the post-office or of a special receptacle for their communications and essays established by each Lyceum. In some places, notably in Gloucester, Boston and Philadelphia, ladies were encouraged to take part, but their co-operation was not always invited. In Salem, Haverhill and elsewhere they were at first admitted on special terms, and each required the guaranty of a male sponsor for her good behavior. The sex seems to have been treated with a vague distrust, like some untried, monstrous and explosive force, only to be experimented on, if at all, with the utmost circumspection. Where they appeared they were cautioned to come with heads uncovered, for bonnets were ample, and the presence of these fascinating obstructions, it was said, tempted auditors to rise from their seats when experiments were shown, and thus still further to intercept the vision. Of topics for lectures, I think that electricity, experimentally illustrated, was the universal favorite. In Salem Colonel Peabody owned costly apparatus for these experiments; in other less fortunate places the funds of the Lyceum were devoted to its purchase, and everywhere men of scientific knowledge enough to exhibit and explain the phenomena of galvanism, magnetism and kindred manifestations of this tremendous agent were in unfailing demand. In this connection the fact is not without interest that Professor Charles Grafton Page, of Salem, whose name was a household word amongst early Lyceum-goers, and who was afterwards for many years a principal examiner of patents at the Patent Office, and also connected with the early stages of the Smithsonian Institute at Washington, succeeded, in 1851, in driving a locomotive electric engine on the Baltimore and Ohio

Railroad from Washington to Bladensburg and back, reaching a maximum speed of nineteen miles per hour. It was not an uncommon practice in the Lyceums to engage some attractive celebrity for the opening lecture of a winter's course, and to make that lecture free, with a view to invite a large attendance and to recommend the institution to general favor. This policy was a justification of the remark of Dr. Holmes, in his "Lecture on Lectures and Lecturers," that the Lyceum served the purpose, among others, of a cheap menagerie for showing the lions to the people. I recall a course at Beverly, probably in 1842, opened by John Quincy Adams, who was afterwards entertained at the Brown mansion, on Cabot Street, now the residence of Mr. Perry Collier. Curators were chosen where there were cabinets and apparatus, and other officers for the care and administration of libraries. In some places, where the repetition of lectures was made necessary by the straitened accommodations of halls and churches, the lecturer read the same address on Tuesday evening and on Wednesday afternoon, and his audiences, by a process of natural selection, divided themselves between those whose occupations left their evenings free and the school attendants, teacher and pupil, with ladies and persons of leisure who could spare the hours of daylight, and so made a "lecture afternoon" in a new sense on Wednesday. In other places, as in Salem for the years between 1851 and 1856, when we had outgrown our little amphitheatre and were yet repelled by the cost and vastness of Mechanic Hall, courses were repeated on Tuesday and Wednesday evenings, and the former being a night devoted by the Evangelical Churches to religious gatherings, the atmosphere on the first reading of a lecture was considerably more heretical than on the second. The lecturer's fee was generally ten dollars, rarely twenty, and in most cases lectures, like other services, being rendered by public-spirited townsmen,—Mr. Emerson delivered ninety-eight in Concord,—were gratuitously rendered. Dr. Chapin's *mot*, "I lecture for FAME, Fifty-And-My-Expenses," belongs to a later epoch. In some instances the exercises of the Lyceum were opened freely to the public, but generally a little contribution to the funds was exacted, say fifty cents or a dollar per year. The magic-lantern took the place of our elaborate apparatus for illustration, but the name "Phantasmagoria," perhaps, made up for some of its deficiencies.

The Lyceums, while alike in general drift, differed much in methods and details; that at Gloucester was organized under the general act for incorporating Lyceums approved March 4, 1829, and for the first five years continued its sittings through almost the entire year. It devoted its attention at once to the schools of Gloucester and to the history of the town. To the distinguished names I have mentioned in connection with it, may be added those of Dr. Ebenezer Dale, Benj. K. Hough, Dr. William Ferson and John W. Lowe. The Lynn Lyceum encouraged the production of dissertations and essays and divided itself into ten classes or departments covering agriculture, trade and manufactures, education, letters, morals, art and sciences, physiology, natural history—including mineralogy, geology, botany and chemistry—history and public improvements. Two outlying districts of Lynn, namely, Woodend and Swampscott, had early Lyceums of their own. The Beverly Lyceum often had a lecture, followed by a debate on the same evening. At one time it met twice in each week for debate, and the debates sometimes extended over several adjournments. It also voted by yea and nay vote on the weight of argument, as well as on the merits of the question. And the president of the Lyceum did not preside over the debates, but was required to appoint in each case a chairman of the committee of the whole. Robert Rantoul, Sr., contributed a course of lectures on the history of the town which became the acknowledged basis of Stone's "History of Beverly." In a course on physiology, by Dr. Augustus Torrey, resort was had to the expedient of distributing a full printed synopsis of each lecture before its delivery. The Lyceum of Amesbury and Salisbury had expended nearly a hundred dollars for books and apparatus during its first season. That at Andover had followed an introductory by Holbrook, and a second address by Judge White, with a course of six illustrated lectures on astronomy from Rev. Harvey Wilbur, which were delivered at intervals of two or three days, and cost seventy-five dollars. Then Rev. Calvin Stowe pointed out the dangers of the prevailing ideas in education, especially those incident to Lyceums, and he was followed by Rev. E. W. Hooker in an essay claiming the Scriptures as the only basis of ethical science. At Bradford Merrimac Academy, one of the six large institutions of the kind then flourishing in the county, the students from abroad were allowed free admittance to the meetings of the Lyceum, probably in consideration of the use of Academy Hall, and a collection of mineral and vegetable specimens and other curiosities was begun, in 1830, having amongst them what was thought to be a foot and leg of aboriginal sculpture. At North Andover meetings were held once a fortnight, the year round, save in the summer months, and headquarters were established, with a reading-room, in the brick building opposite the meeting-house. At North Danvers the meetings were largely attended, occurred three times each month, and were occupied, with "Lectures, Debates, Compositions on Miscellaneous Topics, Reports of Committees appointed to solve questions in Natural Philosophy and Mathematics, and to criticize Declamations and Compositions." Lectures were read on chemistry, mechanics, geography, natural history, phrenology, geometry, natural theology, anatomy and architecture.

It would only be necessary to look beyond the county in order to extend indefinitely this catalogue of

idiosyncrasies. The Nantucket Lyceum, one of the very earliest, incorporated by a special charter approved February 12, 1827, at once took steps for the gathering of a museum of local industry, by issuing a printed call to whalemen, urging them to neglect no opportunity for bringing home specimens illustrative of their venturesome and romantic calling and giving them directions as to the best known means of securing and preserving them. The Worcester Lyceum made the common law of business a special topic for instruction, and organized classes in chemistry, history, geography and practical mechanics. Many of the Lyceums anticipated the functions of village improvement clubs, embellishing, with shade-trees, the roads and lanes, beautifying the borders of lakes and streams, opening vistas and caring for the village green. And one at Williamstown, if the journals of the day may be trusted, attempted the introduction of a new industry and undertook the planting, in the spring of 1830, of twelve thousand white mulberry trees at its own cost.

Such were the early Lyceums of Massachusetts, and Essex County contained between a fourth and a third of the whole number, when, in February, 1831, Mr. Secretary Vose, of Topsfield, presented the best report made by any county to the first gathering of the Massachusetts Lyceum at the State House in Boston. With a brief review of the doings of the State and National Lyceums this paper may fitly close.

The first movement looking towards the organization of a State Lyceum in Massachusetts took place at the Exchange Coffee-House in Boston, November 7, 1828. Daniel Webster filled the chair and endorsed the scheme, and George B. Emerson was secretary. Josiah Holbrook reported progress. Edward Everett pledged his support and urged that books and apparatus quite beyond the reach of single persons, could be owned and made of general use by Lyceums. The meeting adjourned for one week, and met again at the same place for the report of its committee on the present condition and needs of the Lyceum system, when Edward Everett was called to the chair, and after, discussion, another adjournment for one week was had. At the last meeting Dr. Charles Lowell took the chair and an elaborate report was submitted and adopted after debate, and laid before the people of the State, setting forth very forcibly and plainly the purposes and advantages of the Lyceum and urging general attention to its claims. The movement had the endorsement, also, of Henry Ware, then acting president of Harvard College, of Alexander H. Everett, and of other names hardly less conspicuous and influential, but it lacked the vital energy of the town Lyceums.

Later in the same winter, February 6, 1829, a meeting of members of the Legislature and others interested, was held at the Representatives' Hall, resolutions voted and given to the public, and a committee raised to collect and report information on Lyceums in the commonwealth. This report was made at an adjourned meeting at the same place, February 19, 1830, at which Governor Lincoln presided. It recommended, through Alexander H. Everett, its chairman, the formation of town and village Lyceums and of county Lyceums as an outgrowth and supplement to these, defined and described their objects, urged teachers to join them, proposed a State Lyceum, appointed a State Central Committee, including many of the foremost names in Massachusetts, upon which Essex County was represented by Stephen C. Phillips, Rufus Choate, Benjamin Greenleaf, William Thorndike, Gayton P. Osgood, Alonzo Lewis and others, recommended the Lyceums to co-operate in the proposed survey by Colonel James Stevens for a map of Massachusetts, proposed a scientific and practical examination of the resources of each town, gave a definition of the Lyceum as "a voluntary association of persons for mutual improvement," sent out a circular letter, with a promise of others, and urged in return a general response in the form of systematic reports from all the Lyceums in Massachusetts.

In consequence of this action the Massachusetts State Lyceum was organized February 25, 1831, and of this Alexander H. Everett was president and Josiah Holbrook secretary. Dr. James Walker, Hon. John Davis and Judge White were among its vice-presidents. It arranged for an elaborate lecture course at the State House during the annual session of the Legislature, with a most exhaustive catalogue of subjects and a most distinguished list of speakers, including Judge Jackson, Horace Mann, Theodore Sedgwick and James Savage. Its first anniversary meeting was held at the State House, February 1st, 2d and 6th, 1832, the president in the chair and Stephen C. Phillips, of Salem, secretary. It appeared that the twenty-six towns in Essex County supported twenty-three Lyceums, a record quite in advance of any other section of the country. Salem had the largest Lyceum in the State, numbering twelve hundred members. That at Newton ranked next, and after Newton came Newburyport, with four hundred and fifty, and Gloucester with four hundred. Haverhill with three hundred and fifty, was amongst the largest. Timothy Claxton took part in this meeting in an effort to show how Lyceums might be of service to struggling inventors in perfecting their designs and models. At the next meeting of the State Lyceum, which proved to be its last, held February 20, 1833, Dr. Gannett and Rev. John Pierpont appear among the speakers. But the efforts of all these good men and true were unable to save it longer.

The National Lyceum did not succeed much better. Organized in the United States Court Room in the City Hall at New York, May 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 1831, in accordance with a call issued January 13, by the State Lyceum of New York, sitting at Utica on its first gathering, the National Lyceum of America proceeded to adopt a constitution based upon the representation

of local Lyceums, each State and territory to send not less than three delegates, and not more than half its number of members in Congress. This body elected Hon. Stephen van Rensselaer, of Albany, N. Y., as its president, and Hon. Edward Everett and Hon. Thomas S. Grimke, of South Carolina were two of its five vice-presidents. It issued the usual appeals for support; commended to the aid of local Lyceums the work of Colonel James Stevens, an eminent engineer, then engaged in Massachusetts on the first State topographical map produced in the country; called for the establishment of normal schools; questioned the policy of retaining Latin and Greek in the advanced schools as a required study; urged the introduction of the natural sciences; and, after much labor of a more formal character, adjourned for a twelve-month. Its next meeting was in the Aldermen's Room in the City Hall at New York, May 4, 5, 6, 7, 1832, and here it was honored with the presence of an ex-president of the Spanish Cortes, of Zavala and Salgada, two Mexican ex-governors, and of Fortique, a representative in the Congress of Venezuela, as well as at other times of the consul-general of Colombia, the Prussian Envoy, an Armenian essayist from Constantinople, an Athenian professor, and a philosopher from London. It met again May 3, 4, 5, 6, 1833, in the same place, and elected President Duer of Columbia College its presiding officer. It recommended a uniform system of meteorological observations, amongst the Lyceums of the country; the introduction of vocal music and manual labor in the common schools; commended Audubon's great work on the birds of America; heard letters from several leading personages in the West Indies and the Central American States, as well as in various parts of the Union, and urged the formation in New York of a National Cabinet of Natural History, to be made up of contributions from local Lyceums. At a meeting in the same place, May 2, 3, 5, 1834, Massachusetts made a good report through Hon. Wm. B. Calhoun, and the state of education in Cuba, Poland and Mexico were considered. It was voted to print an essay on the North American Indians by Schoolcraft, and a text-book on Constitutional Jurisprudence, furnished by President Duer. In May, 1835, the annual meeting was again held in New York, and the teaching of political economy and the fine arts in the public schools was advocated. John Pickering's researches in the dialects of the North American tribes were highly commended. Signs of approaching dissolution began to manifest themselves. At the meeting of May 6, 7, 9, 1836, at the same place, Dr. Howe, of Massachusetts, explained his method of educating the blind, and New Grenada reported the purchase, at government cost, of twenty thousand slates and two hundred thousand slate-pencils! Holbrook proposed supplying every one of the eleven thousand counties in the United States with a cabinet of minerals of its own, furnished through the system of Lyceum exchange. In May, 1837, the annual meeting was held in Philadelphia. The disposal of the surplus revenue was discussed and Espy's theory of storms was commended, with a request to the local Lyceums to report their weather observations to Espy. Government was memorialized in favor of a weather bureau. Holbrook now produced his twelve-page prospectus of a "Universal Lyceum," with Henry Brougham at its head, a list of fifty-two vice-presidents, one for every week in the year, taken from all the nations of the earth, and one hundred and thirty-nine secretaries, besides Josiah Holbrook, who is styled "Actuary." The declared objects were "the diffusion of knowledge over our globe," and "the exchange of shells, minerals and plants." The meeting of 1838 was held at the free church in Hartford, Connecticut, and sat but one day, May 15. Common-school matters occupied it largely, but it found time to consider also the questions of international copyright and the improvement and embellishment of towns and villages. It complains of lack of funds and finds the American Institute of Instruction a growing competitor. It met once more; this time at New York again, May 3, 4, 5, 1839; fifty-five delegates were present, but none from Massachusetts. It proposed a convention to sit for one week from November 22d, at Independence Hall, in Philadelphia, just before the session of Congress, in order to influence that body in applying the Smithson Legacy, and also in favor of selling the public lands for educational purposes. It proposed to call for educational statistics in the next decennial census, and finally it proposed a General National Convention of the whole Union to sit at Washington, D. C., in May, 1840. These never met, and so ended all but what survived in the town Lyceums, and possibly here and there a scattered county organization, of the Lyceum system of Josiah Holbrook. This remarkable man seems to have died as he had lived, reaching out for more than he could grasp. His lifeless body was found floating in a stream near Lynchburg, Va., May 24, 1854, and there was reason to believe that in clambering alone up the rugged bluff to secure some rare mineral specimen or delicate flower of which he was in search, he had missed his footing, and so lost his life. Few in any age have shown more unselfish devotion to a noble idea, and what he really did, however it may have fallen short of what he hoped, is monument enough for any man.

CHAPTER VI.

MISCELLANEOUS.

Agricultural—Medical—Railroads.

ESSEX AGRIGULTURAL SOCIETY.[1]—The idea of the formation of this society originated with Col. Timothy Pickering, who, at the head of forty men, made the

[1] By Benjamin P. Ware.

first armed resistance to British forces, February 28th, 1775, at North Bridge, Salem. He called a meeting of farmers, and other inhabitants of Essex County, at Cyrus Cummings' tavern in Topsfield, Monday, the 16th of February, 1818. Ichabod Tucker was chosen moderator, and Daniel Cummings, secretary; these, with John Adams, Paul Kent and Elisha Mack, were appointed a committee to report a plan of organization.

Timothy Pickering was chosen president, and William Bartlett, Dr. Thomas Kittredge, John Heard and Ichabod Tucker, vice-presidents, Leverett Saltonstall, secretary, and Dr. Nehemiah Cleaveland, treasurer.

Timothy Pickering was annually chosen president, for ten years to 1829; Frederick Howes, four years, from 1829 to 1833; Ebenezer Mosely, three years, from 1833 to 1836; James H. Duncan, three years, from 1836 to 1839; Joseph Kittridge, two years, from 1839 to 1841; Leverett Saltonstall, four years, from 1841 to 1845; John W. Proctor, seven years, from 1845 to 1852; Moses Newell, four years, from 1852 to 1856; Richard S. Fay, two years, from 1856 to 1858; Daniel Adams, two years, from 1858 to 1860; Allen W. Dodge, three years, from 1860 to 1863; Joseph How, two years, from 1863 to 1865; William Sutton, nine years, from 1865 to 1874; and Benjamin P. Ware, thirteen years, from 1874 to 1887, now holding the office.

The secretaries and treasurers of the society have been as follows:—

SECRETARIES.

David Cummings.....1818–19.	Allen W. Dodge.....1844–60.
Frederick Howes.....1819–20.	Charles P. Preston.....1860–85.
John W. Proctor.....1820–42.	David W. Low.....1885–
Daniel P. King.....1842–44.	(Now in office.)

TREASURERS.

Ichabod Tucker.....1818.	William Sutton.....1841–56.
Daniel A. White.....1819–23.	Edward H. Payson.....1856–81.
Benj. R. Nichols.....1823–25.	Gilbert L. Streeter.....1881–
Benj. Merrill.....1825–28.	(Now in office.)
Andrew Nichols.....1828–41.	

There has been a carefully prepared address delivered before the society, at its annual meeting, every year since its organization, except the five years between 1823 and 1829. These addresses have been delivered in every instance by a citizen of the county, invited by a vote of the trustees, and have been published in the transactions of the society, and form a valuable part of the agricultural literature of the society. Col. Timothy Pickering delivered the first address in 1818, and again in February, 1820. The others were as follows:—

Andrew Nichols, in October, 1820.
Rev. Abiel Abbott, in 1821.
Rev. Peter Eaton, in 1822.
Hon. Frederick Howes, in 1823.
Col. Pickering, again in 1829.
Hon. James H. Duncan, in 1830.
Rev. Henry Colman, in 1831.
Rev. Gardner B. Perry, in 1832.
Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, in 1833.
Hon. Ebenezer Moseley, in 1834.
Hon. Daniel P. King, in 1835.
Hon. Nathan W. Hazen, in 1836.
Rev. Nathaniel Gage, in 1837.
Rev. Leonard Withington, in 1838.
Rev. Allen Putnam, in 1839.
Hon. Ashael Huntington, in 1840.
Alonzo Gray, A. M., in 1841.
Hon. Allen W. Dodge, in 1842.
Hon. Leverett Saltonstall, in 1843.
Hon. John W. Proctor, in 1844.
Rev. Edwin M. Stone, in 1845.
Hon. Moses Newell, in 1846.
Thomas E. Payson, Esq., in 1847.
Josiah Newell, Esq., in 1848.
Hon. Asa T. Newhall, in 1849.
Hon Caleb Cushing, in 1850.
Rev. Milton P. Braman, in 1851.
Hon. Henry K. Oliver, in 1852.
Hon. Joseph S. Cabot, in 1853.
Hon. R. S. Fay, in 1854.
Dr. James R. Nichols, in 1855.
Ben. Perley Poore, Esq., in 1856.
Dr. E G. Kelly, in 1857.
Dr. Geo. B. Loring, in 1858.
Edward Everett, in 1858.
Hon. J. J. H. Gregory, in 1859.
Rev. John L. Russell, in 1860.
Hon. Alfred A. Abbott, in 1861.
Geo. J. L. Colby, Esq., in 1862.
Hon. Daniel Saunders, in 1863.
Hon. Darwin E. Ware, in 1864.
Nathaniel Cleavland, Esq., in 1865.
Hon. Otis P. Lord, in 1866.
Rev. R. H. Seeley, D.D., in 1867.
Dr. Geo. B. Loring, again in 1868.
Benjamin P. Ware, Esq., in 1869.
Hon. Benj. F. Butler, in 1870.
Hon. Joseph S. How, in 1871.
Hon. Wm. D. Northend, in 1872.
Rev. Charles B. Rice, in 1873.
John L. Shorey, Esq., in 1874.
Rev. Dr. E. C. Bolles, in 1875.
Cyrus M. Tracy, in 1876.
Rev. O. S. Butler, in 1877.
T. C. Thurlow, Esq., in 1878.
Dr. Geo. B. Loring, again in 1879.
David W. Low, Esq., in 1880.
Dr. James R. Nichols, again in 1881.
Francis H. Appleton, Esq., in 1882.
Hon. Chas. P. Thompson, in 1883.
Asa T. Newhall, in 1884.
Thomas Saunders, in 1885.
Rev. John D. Kingsbury, in 1886.
Dr. William Cogswell, in 1887.

In connection with these addresses, fifteen original hymns, odes and songs, have been sung by selected choirs, and published in the transactions. There have also been published in the transactions of the society, (67) sixty-seven prize essays upon various subjects connected with agriculture, for which has been paid premiums varying from eight to twenty-five dollars each; also (49) forty-nine prize reports of committees; premiums paid for these from six dollars to ten dollars; in addition there have been published (626) six hundred and twenty-six extended reports of committees, containing original ideas and suggestions, each filling from one to ten pages of printed matter.

These addresses, essays and reports contain the best thoughts, the broadest experiences and wisest suggestions of the most prominent farmers and professional men of Essex County, in the last sixty-five years, and make up, principally, the agricultural literature of the county.

The Essex Agricultural Society, unlike all others in the State, owns no grounds, including a trotting track and show buildings; it has no local abiding place. But instead, owns a tent, some portable cattle pens, twelve hundred exhibition fruit dishes, an experimental farm of one hundred and fifty acres, which brings an income of from three hundred to five hundred dollars per annum, besides conducting such experiments as are required by the committee having that matter in charge. A library of eight hundred volumes of valuable books for reference and study, and funds invested in bank stock, the market value of which is $17,119.83.

This society needs no trotting track, for it never paid a dollar for speed since its organization; or for any other attraction, nor allows any on its grounds, except of a purely agricultural or horticultural character, which must be grown or owned within the county. Domestic manufactures and works of art from citizens of the county receive the encouragement of the society. All stock competing for a pre-

mium must be owned in the county at least four months previous. Agricultural implements, from any source, are admitted for competition; no entrance fees required from any competitor for premiums. The whole of the exhibitions are open, free to the public, except for admission to the exhibition hall, where twenty cents is charged. An average sum of three thousand dollars has been offered in premiums annually for the last ten years, and since its organization the society has, as near as can be ascertained, awarded in premiums and gratuities an aggregate of $48,727.54. In addition, the society has supported three scholarships at the Massachusetts Agricultural College through the entire course of four years, at fifty dollars each per year, and for three years had a premium of one hundred dollars offered for the best prepared student, who shall enter the college from Essex County and continue through the four years' course.

This society holds its annual exhibitions in different parts of the county where most needed and where suitable accommodations can be provided. Since its organization, it has held its shows at Danvers, ten times; Lawrence, seven times; six each at Lynn, Topsfield, Haverhill and Newburyport; five times at Georgetown and Salem; four times at Gloucester; three each at Andover and Ipswich; two at Peabody; one at Newbury; and two others in doubt. This society has held, since required by the State Board of Agriculture, 1879, forty-eight institutes in different parts of the county where most wanted. At each meeting two sessions have been held, with a large attendance, and the subjects selected discussed with much interest and satisfaction to the farming community, resulting in promulgating much practical knowledge and a growing interest in the farm. Two trials of mowing machines and other machines for making hay, have been organized and conducted by the society, and two of plows and other implements for cultivating crops, each proved of great value to the farmers and were a complete success. The whole number of members since its organization is twenty-nine hundred and eighty-six; the present number now living is fifteen hundred and eight.

The society publishes annually an edition of from fifteen hundred to two thousand copies of its transactions, containing from one hundred and twenty to two hundred and twenty pages, for distribution among its members and others

The transactions published since the society's organization make in the aggregate eighty-seven hundred and sixty-one pages of valuable and interesting reading matter, and which are no inconsiderable part of the agricultural literature of the State.

Essex South District Medical Society. – This is one of the oldest of the district societies that form the Massachusetts Medical Society. It was organized November 4, 1805, by ten physicians, who met at the Sun Tavern, in Salem; Dr. Edward Augustus Holyoke president and Dr. John Dexter Treadwell secretary. It consists of those members of the Massachusetts Medical Society who reside in Lynn, Swampscott, Nahant, Saugus, Lynnfield, Marblehead, Salem, Peabody, Danvers, Middleton, Beverly, Wenham, Topsfield, Ipswich, Hamilton, Essex, Manchester, Rockport, Gloucester.

Its meetings are held every six weeks, either in Salem or Lynn, except occasionally during the summer months, in other towns within the district. At these meetings written papers are read and oral communications are made, giving an account of interesting cases that have occurred in their practice.

The Library, which was established by a vote of the society at its first meeting, contains about twenty-five hundred volumes. The books from the libraries of the late Drs. E. A. Holyoke, A. D. Pierson and Samuel Johnson compose a large portion and are very valuable additions. The circulation is limited to members of the society. The library is deposited in Plummer Hall, Salem.

The Essex North District Medical Society was organized November 3, 1841. An application had been previously made to the Massachusetts Medical Society and granted by that body for the formation of the fellows of that Society practicing in Amesbury, Andover, Boxford, Bradford, Georgetown, Haverhill, Lawrence, Methuen, Newbury, Newburyport, Rowley, Salisbury and West Newbury into an association to be entitled the Essex North District Medical Society. At the date above mentioned Dr. Jonathan G. Johnson, of Newburyport, was chosen president; Dr. Rufus Longley, of Haverhill, vice-president; Dr. F. V. Noyes, of Newburyport, secretary; Dr. Isaac Boyd, of West Newbury, treasurer; and Dr. J. Spofford, of Groveland, librarian. The Society chooses annually eight counsellors, and these in connection with the counsellors of other district societies in the State constitute the Board of Counsellors of the Massachusetts Medical Society. Five censors are also chosen annually, who examine applicants for admission as to character and professional qualifications, and the consent of three censors is necessary for admission.

Stated meetings are held quarterly. The annual meeting is held at Haverhill on the first Wednesday in May, at which officers for the year are chosen, and other meetings in August, November and February at such places as may be from time to time determined.

Boston and Maine Railroad extends from Boston to Portland, Me., a distance of 115.50 miles. This road was originally organized as the Andover and Wilmington Railroad Company. It took its present name in 1839. This company is now the largest railroad corporation in New England. Its leased lines in Essex County are as follows: *Eastern Railroad*, chartered April 14, 1836; *Danvers Railroad; Lowell and Andover; Newburyport; West Amesbury;*

Chelsea Beach; Newburyport City; and *Boston* and *Lowell* and branches. President, George C. Lord; General Manager, James T. Furber.

Boston, Revere Beach and Lynn Railroad extends from East Boston to Lynn, along Revere Beach. It was chartered May 23, 1874, and was opened July 29, 1875. It does a large summer business. Gauge three feet. Honorable Edwin Walden, of Lynn, is president.

Boston, Winthrop and Shore Railroad extends from Point Shirley to Point of Pines. Honorable Edwin Walden, president.

THE

HISTORY OF ESSEX CO., MASSACHUSETTS.

CITIES AND TOWNS.

CHAPTER I.

SALEM.

INTRODUCTORY.

BY REV. GEORGE BATCHELOR.

THE writer of this introductory chapter is released from the ordinary duties and responsibilities of the chroniclers whose work he prefaces with some general views of the various epochs of the history of Salem. The careful precision as to names, dates and the order of events required of them must here give place to general views, rapid sketches and such characterization of men and times as may be expected of the essayist rather than the historian.

For more than a hundred years after the discovery of America by Columbus, New England was unknown. It was a century of exploration and discovery, and the Catholic Spaniard played a leading part in the process of opening a new world to civilization. His imagination was inflamed by what are now incredible stories of treasure to be discovered, of magical and supernatural manifestations to be noted in nature and human life, and by hopes of attaining to some new and unheard of power over the secret forces of nature, then so unknown, and yet so tempting to the unscientific mind of the sixteenth century. He was animated, also, by zeal to convert or dispossess the infidel, and to commend himself as a loyal son of the church, thus at one happy stroke making his fortune both for this world and the next. In 1565 St. Augustine was founded, and in 1582 Santa Fé was colonized and made a station of the church, and the Spaniard, keeping for the most part within those isothermal lines which, by an unwritten law of nations have so largely controlled the course of empire, was elated by visions of inexhaustible wealth, national glory and religious propagandism for which the western continent offered such unexampled opportunities.

To the Protestant Englishman during all this time New England was unknown except as an undistinguished part of the western world. With the seventeenth century the French, English and Dutch began to establish colonies in Nova Scotia, Canada, Virginia and New York. Then New England begins to emerge slowly from the vast, unsurveyed bulk of the continent, and to attract the attention of those in whose keeping were the seeds which, for a hundred generations of English and Germanic life, had been preparing to grow into the social, civil and religious institutions of New England. "God sifted a whole nation," said Stoughton, "that he might send choice grain out into this wilderness." He might have said that the civil and religious institutions of the Germanic race were sifted to furnish precedents, aptitudes and the specific religious impulses out of which to produce the Puritan Church and the New England Commonwealth.

Reviewing the events recorded in this volume, and contemplating the rare and great qualities of the founders of Salem as manifested in some of the most heroic and dignified aspects of human life, and in crises of difficulty and danger; regarding, also, without flinching or apology, the grim and cruel traits and deeds which disfigured their lives and stained their record, one need not be ashamed of his interest and admiration. The founders of Salem were not greater, wiser or better than other men. But the narrowness of their opportunity, together with the great use they made of it, rendered their qualities conspicuous, and the record of them a just cause of pride to all who inherit any share in their labors and rewards. As in some little Swiss canton, where nature has thrust together and pushed high into the

air the sublimities of that Alpine scenery, of which every detail may be surpassed elsewhere, while the general effect has no rival, so in this little township were to be brought together and set to do the drudgery of common life such gifts of culture, courage, wisdom and strength as commonly go to the founding of kingdoms and the conduct of empires. Indeed, in their own way, the way of intelligence and freedom, they were laying the foundations of institutions with influence more powerful and enduring than any empire which has risen or fallen since they lived their strenuous lives of homely toil and great endeavor. The events which were crowded into the first century of what was then their obscure history, spread over a larger surface and connected by more evident ties with the fortunes of civilization, would have attracted universal attention. Now they become an imperishable part of the history of human progress.

In 1614 Capt. John Smith, prince among adventurers and good fellows, coasted, named and praised New England, and going home to England he spent much time in commending the newly-discovered "Paradise" to rich and influential people. Then came the Pilgrims bound for a more genial climate; but driven out of their course by fortunate accident, they settle in Plymouth, and establish their church. But even in their little and well-sifted band there was not perfect agreement in matters of religion, although that was their chief concern, and soon we see John Lyford, of no enviable reputation, with John Oldham and others, because they could not agree to "separate" from the Church of England, pushing out and exploring the coast to the northward to find or found a home. Among them was one Roger Conant, well commended then and afterward for his homely good sense and perfect honesty. They tarry awhile at Nantasket, where Capt. Miles Standish, coasting that way, had built a hut a year or two before, and there, in somewhat dubious case, they are waiting when the Dorchester Company in England, having by this time (1623) forty or fifty ships passing to and fro, bringing over fishermen, salt, etc., and taking home cargoes of fish, beaver skins and such furs and other spoil of the wilderness as may be gathered there, summon Roger Conant to take charge of their station at Cape Ann. A charter has been secured, and hopes are entertained that now, after many misfortunes, some profit may accrue to the adventurers. Conant is to be Governor, Lyford minister to the half a hundred people gathered there, and Oldham is asked to come and trade with the Indians, which office he declines. Misfortunes continue, however. Fire, sickness and quarrels (a fierce one with Miles Standish) break their courage, reduce their profits and finally cause the abandonment of the undertaking.

Conant now has in mind an undertaking of another kind. Finding on the peninsula of Naumkeag a sheltered place where he thinks it possible for colonists to maintain themselves in comfort, he proposes to the Rev. John White, of the Dorchester Company, to establish there a plantation. It has been commonly believed that he proposed to provide here a shelter for such unhappy creatures as might in England be persecuted for their religion. This is now disputed on the ground that he was not a "separatist" in Plymouth, and did not agree with John Endicott when he came, and that he was now probably only looking out for a place where he and others might find life a little less hard to support on the usual terms. It is not impossible, however, that, "churchman" though he was, he had suffered enough for his religion to long for a place where the cursed jangle of theological discord might be forgotten, and other interests be made prominent. White promised him assistance of all needed kinds, and in 1626 Roger Conant, John Woodbury, John Balch and Peter Palfrey (names to be remembered) begin the clearing of the forest and the building of houses. About twenty-five, all told, are gathered there, and Naumkeag (not yet Salem) begins to be. Two years later there were, it may be, thirty or forty persons in the colony. Some had followed Lyford to Virginia, and some had returned to England. Conant, resolute and patient, remained and kept with him those who were inspired by his confidence and shared his hopes, whether religious or commercial. But, as so often happens, he was to sow that others might reap. He was too modest and undemonstrative to figure as a "personage," and to meet the more ambitious views of those in England who were influential in the management of affairs; and so it happened, when the property of the Dorchester Company passed into the hands of the New England Company, that Conant was superseded by Capt. John Endicott.

It was not Roger Conant, mild, tolerant, conciliatory and unambitious, that the feeble colony needed, but John Endicott, the man of the iron hand and determined will, the man to tear the cross from the flag of England and defy the world when his blood was up and his religion was in question. As a business transaction the transfer was justifiable enough. The parties to it on the other side of the water were buying and selling so much property at its commercial value. But on this side of the water it looked like the betrayal of a trust. Having no rights which they could legally defend, the old colonists felt the change to be grievous when, from being masters of the situation, if not the guardians of a refuge sacred to those who were oppressed for conscience' sake, they were suddenly and unexpectedly reduced to a handful of ordinary colonists who were transferred with the soil, and could only take the hard choice to go or conform to the law of the land. They were heard to talk about "slaves" and "slavery," and for some months held aloof from the meetings of the newcomers. But Capt. Endicott occupied a higher social

position than they, and he was not a man to be trifled with. In 1629 Governor Endicott receives intelligence as follows: that the company at home has obtained a confirmation of their grant by letters patent from His Majesty, Charles I., and that he is confirmed as Governor, with a council styled "the Councill of Massachusetts Bay." The new-comers had the power. But they saw that it was hard for the others to submit, and were disposed to use their power kindly. The colony was now grown to include, perhaps, three hundred persons, and at last the old settlers determined to make the best of it, and united in one body under Governor Endicott, and then, as we are told, "in remembrance of a peace settled upon at a conference at a general meeting between them and their neighbors after the expectance of some dangerous jar," they called the place Salem, or Peace. The story is a pretty one, and seems to furnish a natural and probable explanation of the change of name, but it is necessary to say that all such interesting statements are doubted or denied by modern investigators. It is held by some that Conant gladly received Captain Endicott and that their differences of opinion related to such matters as the morality of raising tobacco and other such affairs of minor importance.

The story of the ecclesiastical and commercial fortunes of Salem will be told elsewhere in the succeeding narratives. They were inextricably intertwined with each other. Both begin now to assume importance, although many a weary day must pass before either of them will be settled and prosperous. For a time the religious interests which they had at heart compelled them to postpone somewhat the temporal enterprises upon which depended their comfort and success. Whatever we may say of the purposes of Roger Conant, nobody need be in doubt as to the purposes of John Endicott. Religion was with him the first concern. He believed his creed. He had come here to give it room to grow into a new mode of life, and he did not intend to let anything among the powers terrestrial or demonic interfere with his purpose. But, before the temporal plans of the little community could be carried out, some very stern necessities were to try and to strengthen their faith. The winter of 1629 brought them little but trouble and sorrow. The climate, then as now, was rough and unsparing. No proper accommodations could be provided for so many families, their base of supplies was three thousand miles away, they were unused to such hardships and were ignorant of the dangers to be provided against. While, therefore, their friends in England were thinking of them as happily established in the "Paradise" of New England, and were looking forward to the pleasure of joining them in the spring or summer following, they began to sicken and die of exposure to cold, and the hunger which comes not with absolute famine, but inability to eat the coarse food which they had. Some epidemic disease probably brought on shipboard, had been communicated to them, and the place had become infected and pestilential. When Winthrop came with Saltonstall, Dudley and Johnson, and a company, in seventeen ships, in all, a thousand or more before the season was over, they found a colony of men and women haggard with weakness and want and depressed with sorrow. More than eighty had died in that awful winter, and of those who remained many had scarcely strength to stagger to the shore to meet the new-comers and give them tearful welcome. To the gentlemen and ladies who had come to transfer the government of the colony to the soil of New England, and establish here homes even more splendid than those they had left behind them, Salem offered at that time but few inducements. Winthrop therefore pushed along the coast, and soon he, with Dudley, Johnson, Saltonstall and the most of the new colonists, were laying the foundations of Charlestown, Boston and Watertown. The seat of government was transferred to Charlestown, and again the hopes and ambitions of the men of Salem had ended in a bitter disappointment. To Governor Endicott was now measured out that which he had meted to Roger Conant, and probably he was no better pleased than he with the result. But this time there was no rebellion. Endicott was too good a disciplinarian to resist a higher authority, and it happened then, as it has many times since in Salem, that the good things provided for home use were passed over to the common account, and the commonwealth gained by her loss.

We need not waste much time in praising the consummate wisdom of the founders of Massachusetts. They were wise, and they did well, and what they wrote in their charters and constitutions, and established in their customs and laws, show that they were seeking the best things in human institutions and knew the value of them when found.

But it is clear enough now that the Puritans were not the inventors of the system they established in New England, nor of the many complicated devices by aid of which they made their ideas effective in the conduct of affairs, social and civil. They selected, indeed, but they did not create out of pre-existent nothingness the institutions which here they cleared from much rubbish of ecclesiasticism and from the burden of the monarchy of England. The beginnings were small. Seen from the outside, they were mean and bare. The homes, labors and successes of the first colonists of Salem would be unworthy of our attention were they associated with the lives of ordinary settlers in a new country. But small though the beginnings were, these men were beginning to store up and to train the energy which was afterward to expand with tremendous force in the opening of the whole world to commerce and civilization, and in

the establishment of the best things in American life.

In the New World, free to follow the bent of their minds, they emancipated themselves from many an impediment and returned to the natural tendencies of the Germanic race, to which they belonged, and which, in Europe, has ever since been slowly attaining to that which they arrived at quickly. Of that race they brought the traditions and tendencies, and, almost unchanged, some of its most ancient customs and laws. The town, the town-meeting, the common holding of lands, the pasturage under herdsmen of their goats, swine and neat cattle, the pastor who was not a priest and many curious customs which have seemed to us to be evidences of their independence, skill and ingenuity, or which look like the temporary expedients of necessity, were simply survivals of English and German habits, dating back sometimes a thousand years, or even in some cases as we now know, antedating European civilization itself, and originating as in that immemorial past of our race when its home was in Asia.

Indeed, during the whole of the seventeenth century, the daily life of the people of Salem, if accurately represented to us now, would suggest European rather than American associations. Religion was the most important concern in that little settlement when it held a thousand souls. But, after all, the business of getting a living then, as now, occupied most of the waking hours. For the most part, their life on shore was rural, and their occupations and customs such as may even now be noted in secluded parts of the Old World.

On a summer morning the good man and good wife were up with the sun, attending to their various tasks, for by six o'clock at the latest, and in some years by half an hour after sunrise, the herdsmen of various kinds will be heard blowing their horns as they pass each man's door, gathering all the swine, goats and neat cattle of the town into flocks and herds, to be cared for during the day in the great pastures and other common fields. "The Great Pen" is provided for the cattle, and if, at six o'clock, any townsman shall not have his cows milked and ready for the herdsman, he must follow after as he may, and be responsible for any damage done to or by his stray cattle. At half an hour before sunset the horns of the approaching herdsmen were heard again, and every man was required to care for his own swine and goats at home. Sometimes in town-meeting it was a matter which divided the suffrages of freemen, as it was voted, that in a given season, the swine should or should not be allowed to run at large by night. Such customs are unknown now in America. But they still survive in many of the pastoral regions of Europe, such as the Black Forest and secluded valleys of Switzerland.

Simple, honest, God-fearing men and women made up the majority of the population. Their tasks were homely and laborious, and their tastes simple. But although from necessity their life externally was not unlike that of the European peasantry, they were neither stupid nor ignorant. Even those who had belonged to the servant class, and there were many of them, had passed through experiences which had sharpened their wits and greatly enhanced in their eyes the value of liberty. They had come over "under bonds" to serve a specified time in a condition not much better than slavery. Some had regained their freedom on the failure of commercial and industrial enterprises, it being cheaper to let them shift for themselves than to find work for them or to return them to England.

The yeomanry were picked men who had come over, not only because they hoped to better their condition and give their children a better chance than they could have at home, but also because they were interested in great problems of religion and government, and believed that these problems could be worked out to better advantage in a new country where they might be free from tradition and adverse precedent. They were trained in a school of experience which will show results in later generations.

Among these were some who held with tenacity to the social distinctions of the old country. They were those of official and professional standing, such as in England would, if not bearing a title, be permitted to write "gentleman" after their names. In spite of the leveling influence of their experiences and of the theories they held, the old habits were not easily given up, and, unconsciously, even, the relations of master and servant were retained on the Old World footing, and the mutual reserve remained after such relations had ceased. It took two hundred years, under the most democratic of institutions, to abolish the distinctions of aristocracy, and to make a "yeoman" of like character and education seem as good as a "gentleman." It was years before the possibility of establishing in Massachusetts an hereditary aristocracy ceased to be either a menace or a temptation.

With the founding of Boston, Salem lost its relative importance, but continued to be a centre of intelligence, and gradually, after long discipline, became one of the most influential towns in the commonwealth. Its liberality and intellectual alertness were shown very early in the treatment accorded to Roger Williams, who was loved and honored in Salem long after he was proscribed by the colonial authorities. Even John Endicott admired and defended him until further resistance to authority would have been rebellion. The enthusiasm, humaneness and free thought of Roger Williams seem to belong rather to our time than to that of the Puritan, who, with all his goodness, was grim and sometimes cruel. The man who, in 1631, could advocate, as he did, the rights of the savage, and in later years make his noble

plea for toleration, must have been a rare creature, and those who loved and honored him, as he was loved and honored in Salem, must have been, even then, capable of better things than the circumstances of the hard times in which they lived could offer them. When he goes into exile in 1636 it is pleasant to read that Governor Winthrop, not in office, however, gives him a private hint that he is wanted by the government, and that the safest place for him will be found on the shores of Narragansett Bay.

The Puritan minister was a great personage in the little colony. From the nature of the case, religion being avowedly and actually first among the concerns of the community, he was a man of much official dignity and influence. He could not be elected to office nor long hold it in comfort unless he represented the best thought and feeling of the people and showed a gift for mastery. He was the most highly-educated man in town. He had leisure to correspond with men of like standing abroad. He was the organ of communication with the outside world. He had no competitors. The intellectual appetite of his townsmen was keen, and there were no adequate means of satisfying it in a time when they had no lectures, no concerts, theatres, newspapers, magazines, or many books. He was the peer of the best, and was freely consulted both in public and private by parishioners and magistrates as to questions of conscience and questions of policy. The first ministers were men of such parts and learning that they were largely independent of each other and of their congregations. They seemed to have moved back and forth between the two continents with great freedom, and to have excited great interest, both by their coming and their going. They have been over-praised, and condemned beyond their demerits; for they were neither so good nor so bad as they have sometimes been represented to be. They would not have been human had they not been tempted to magnify their office unduly, and they must have been more than human to emancipate themselves wholly from the bigotries and superstitions of their times. We shall soon see them doing some cruel work, and our modern blood will find it difficult to keep cool as we helplessly watch the unmerited sufferings of good, even if misguided, men, and we shall helplessly writhe as we hear the hissing whip fall upon the naked backs of women whom pastors and magistrates alike agree to punish in the name of God. But if we are wise, we shall reflect on all the circumstances of the time and make such allowance as is due.

The Puritan attempted to crush the imagination, and is, therefore, supposed to have been devoid of it. But the imagination is a faculty nimble of foot and light of wing. It goes where it is not sent, and works where it is most contemned. Often it transforms itself, and, because its lighter moods are not in favor, plods in the disguise of some heavy-footed faculty, and masquerades as a phase of the sober reason, or still more homely common sense. In the Puritan the imagination did not exercise itself in the modern fashion nor after the manner of "ungodly playwrights." It was not stimulated by such visions of wealth and conquest as turned the head of the Catholic Spaniard. It was in him a sober faculty, dealing with the well-attested realities of common life, and what he considered the equally well-attested realities of the supernatural world. Given the facts to work upon, and this creative faculty was capable of producing surprising results. As the sober-visaged, plainly-clad Puritan sat in church listening to the long prayers and still longer sermons and lectures in which his favorite preacher described the city of God, his imagination, released from all restraint by his godly purpose, made many an excursion into the realm of those fair possibilities which on the earth were nowhere actual. He saw new and holier churches, societies, commonwealths arising to make the earth a safer home for the chosen children of God. He saw cities arise in the wilderness; fleets sailed over unknown seas, and broad lands, cleared, inhabited and wisely ruled, stretched in peaceful expanse before his comprehensive and creative imagination. These visions were not a waste of his time and energy; for they were the working plans of the architect and the engineer, who was able to create that which he imagined. He could understand the proud boast of the Roman, who, if he could not play the fiddle, could make a small village into a great city. To describe the Puritan as without imagination is to deny to him that which was a chief characteristic of his laborious life. His stimulus and delight came with and from the exercise of this power, by which the mind clearly sees that which, as yet, has never been. That which distinguished him from those who commonly and consciously use this power was the capital fact that they never used it solely for pleasure. It was an instrument as useful as the more homely tools of the working intellect. That which in the Puritan was active, but disguised, in his posterity two hundred years later was to break out into the full fruit and flower of the imagination. Hawthorne was the legitimate product of the ancient stock. All along the line of modern life, when Puritanism had completed its emancipation, there broke a wave of poetry. Bryant, Longfellow, Holmes, Lowell and the rest of that distinguished company only revealed the inherited traits which were in their ancestors, though not then manifest. Even Quakerism now sings in the poetry of Whittier.

That Puritanism was not, in all its parts, so grim as we sometimes imagine was shown by the love the people of Salem bore to Roger Williams. It was made still more apparent that it was not without tenderness of heart and susceptibility to change of thought when the great "Antinomian Controversy"

came. In 1637 Anne Hutchinson, a great-hearted woman, nearly overturned both church and state. By her liberal ideas and impassioned eloquence she carried with her Henry Vane, the Governor, and a majority of the people of Boston, the ministers almost unanimously opposing her. She was, as even her enemies admitted, a woman of wonderful power and attractiveness. Her philosophical ideas were not unlike those of modern Transcendentalism, and in many ways she only anticipated the thoughts which two hundred years later Emerson was to make familiar to sympathetic audiences in Lyceum Hall. The dispute was carried into everything, interfering with the course of government, even down to the conduct of town affairs. It made it more difficult for John Endicott to carry on the Pequot War. The reaction from Antinomianism brought back into power Winthrop, Endicott and the other old settlers—the "fathers and founders"—who were already, because of their seniority, becoming "distinguished townsmen." Mrs. Hutchinson found little open sympathy in Salem, because Hugh Peter was then at the full tide of his remarkable success, and he, with Governor Endicott, severely punished all who rebelled. They gave Governor Winthrop their hearty support, and helped him back into power, thus re-establishing Puritan rule in Massachusetts. Still, before her tragical death at the hands of the Indians, in 1643, this remarkable woman had made an ineffaceable mark on the institutions of Massachusetts and Rhode Island and greatly strengthened the impulse to grant, as well as claim, liberty of conscience.

From this time on there are two parties in church and state, representing Puritanism and Puritanism ameliorated. They go on in Salem together until the cruel policy of Governor Endicott, together with the absurd notions of demoniacal influence then current, bear their proper fruit in the "Witchcraft Delusion." Then Puritanism begins to relax its arbitrary and merciless tyranny and milder counsels prevail. Meanwhile, we shall see the two in conflict and shall see how a false theory of duty can, in the name of righteousness, drive humane men to the most inhuman deeds.

But the townsmen of Salem during this eventful seventeenth century were not solely given up to religious contention. They had many other interests, some of them very absorbing. Their lives were not stagnant or dull. To have in rapid succession two such ministers as Roger Williams and Hugh Peter, and to trace with intelligent interest as they did their subsequent career, the one founding a colony, the other going to the scaffold to expiate the death of a king, was enough to sharpen the wits of the dullest and give him a lively interest in the affairs of two continents. The great events of the rebellion, the Commonwealth, the restoration of the Stuarts and the Revolution all passed within the limits of a single lifetime, and every change in the fortunes of England was felt in the homes of Salem. Each man felt a responsibility for the issue of the battle over the seas, and when the commonwealth of England fell, the Commonwealth of Massachusetts was accounted its lawful heir.

But at home were many and engrossing occupations and interests, some good and some to modern consciences, as much to be condemned as any of their religious excesses. Commerce began its beneficent career, and was for a hundred and fifty years a source of good things innumerable. It kept the intellect alert, gave knowledge of other nations and gradually liberalized the minds of all who were engaged in it. It produced a remarkable breed of men, to whom in time the burdens of ecclesiasticism became insupportable, and the Puritan spirit was at last transformed and a broad catholicity took the place of bigotry. But as yet we see only the beginnings, and we see them marred by many an evil practice. The distillery arose in the colony and began to pour its poisoned stream into all the homes of savagery. The ships which went out laden with New England rum returned sometimes freighted with African slaves, and tender consciences did not seem to be hurt by the transaction. It is recorded that negroes were brought to Salem as early as 1638. The laws of nations were not well defined in those days, and a war with any nation, or a war among unfriendly nations, gave excuse for privateering, which easily slipped into piracy. Pirates who preyed upon their own commerce were punished when caught, but those who only molested unfriendly nations were winked at, and it was not a thing unknown for a pirate to sail into Salem harbor and sell his plunder to the townsmen, who asked no questions so long as they got good bargains. Indeed, it is now quite impossible to tell the true story of those times without doing injustice to them, so greatly has our moral standard in many things been elevated. One can easily see, however, that there were many compensations for the Puritan. His world was not so colorless as it seems to us when we think only of his religion, and imagine that to have been his only absorbing interest.

The internal arrangements of the colony at Salem were for many years matters of constant and grave concern. Things which seem to us trivial were then of great importance. The public lands were at first held by the government, and the towns, as agents of the colony, distributed them among their inhabitants. A law restricting this power of distribution to the towns was passed (as William P. Upham, Esq., informs us) in 1635. The land was granted in small building-lots and planting-fields to those who were admitted to the privileges of the town. There could be no speculation in town lots. Only the occupiers could hold them. The rights of forest, field and shore were common, and to the householders pertained cer-

tain privileges of pasturage and other rights peculiar to the proprietors. A man was made a freeman by the General Court, and when he desired to settle, asked to be "admitted an inhabitant," and, if his request was granted, became a member of a corporation consisting of certain named persons and such others as they chose.

Land was given to any one who became an inhabitant. At first there was no difficulty. But the question which arose when the late-comers were numerous, and insisted upon their full share of these privileges, became troublesome. Among the old settlers there were at least three distinctions of social rank attaching to freemen, non-freemen and servants. These were increased by an additional line drawn between the cottagers and commoners,—those who had a share in the original common rights and those who had not been admitted to such rights. The cottagers had great advantages, and for many years clung to their privileges. They even held meetings separate from the town. The contention at times must have been much more exciting than the news of a change of government in England, or the loss of the colonial charter, because it affected the fortunes of every householder in a direct way. It was not until the eighteenth century came in that the dispute was closed. In 1660 the general government passed a law that those who then had cottages or houses built should have rights in common land. About a generation later it was a serious question what rights they should have (then a large number) who were not included under that law. The cottagers were those who held under the law; the commoners were those who claimed a right, not by virtue of the act of 1660, but by right of habitation. In 1702 the town passed a vote settling this difference and admitting to a right in the commons all houses then built. In 1713 the commoners, which term then included both commoners and cottagers, organized under the province law, and are to this day represented by the "Great Pasture Corporation." These various measures were not agreed upon without great friction and excitement, and even the famous "witchcraft year," which came when the dispute was at its hottest, could only postpone the excitement over a matter which affected the fortunes of every townsman. The commoners at last voted to give up to the town the highways, burying-places, the common lands which lay within the town, bridge and the block-houses, with the training-grounds and various other relinquishments, which brought the affairs of the town on to a modern footing. Hospitality was not a characteristic of those days. People were suspicious and jealous of new-comers and required of them proofs that they would be safe and agreeable neighbors before they admitted them to a share of the common property. For temporary purposes they granted them cottage rights and garden spots, but not every new-comer was welcome. Strolling adventurers were promptly arrested and required to give an account of themselves. For a hundred years these internal relations of the community were very important and influential. They have now nearly passed out of the memory of all but the students of antiquity. But they were important then, and in the various attempts made to adjust differences and find out that which was for the common welfare, the community was being compacted and trained to common action in a way which made all its strength available in its great days when it covered the sea with privateers and merchantmen.

But before we take leave of the seventeenth century there are still some grievous things to be noted. The Friend is to us an emblem and suggestion of peace. But in 1657 he was to the people of Salem a creature to be abhorred and, by force if necessary, expelled from the community. It must be remembered that during all this century any, even the most innocent, trespasser was there illegally if he was not permitted by the authorities to make his home there. No matter what his business, if he was forbidden to dwell there, and still persisted in opposition to the proprietors, he was regarded as being as much outside of his rights as a poacher or a burglar. There was not even a sidewalk where he could claim to be on public soil, or on the "King's highway." Every inch of soil belonged to the town and the proprietors. When undesirable persons, therefore, were present and refused to go away when warned, it was easy and altogether too natural for those in authority to begin with threats and then proceed to force, which became at last cruel much beyond the original intention. When Massachusetts decreed that Quakers remaining within her bounds must die, it was hoped and believed that the *threat* of death would be effectual. When it was discovered that martyrdom had its charms, and that for every Quaker hung there would be five more ready for hanging, the brief madness of the magistrates yielded to the excited protests of all tender-hearted people, and the shameful law was repealed, but not until it had caused such deeds of cruelty in the colony, especially in Boston, as no good man can now contemplate without horror. The only plea to be offered in mitigation is that the magistrates feared overmuch a popular revolution and were driven to excess by overplus of official zeal. Still, we must remember that it was a century of perils and of fears. Safety lay in concert of action. The Jesuits, the Anabaptists, the Quakers, if permitted to come and proselyte, might bring in all kinds of political trouble and danger from foreign nations. The Dutch and Indians were near and dangerous, and the whole community lived in such fear of unseen perils as we can scarcely imagine. For all that, we cannot be reconciled to the whipping of women at the cart-tail nor the offering to sell Quakers to be taken as slaves to the Barbadoes.

But the latter days of the century approach with many fears, some prosperity and great distraction of mind and purpose. John Endicott had moved to Boston and died there in 1665. The race of great merchants had begun with Hollingworth and others. Philip English, the famous Episcopalian, was dazzling the eyes of his neighbors with his enterprise and the magnificent style of his living. His house and offices were full of "bound servants," and he evidently paid little attention to the strait ways of Puritanism. The "founders" who came to old age all died before the century was out. There were among them Major Hathorne and Captain Curwen, the Hon. W. Browne, who, coming over before 1638, lived half a century in Salem, and were regarded as "distinguished townsmen" when they died. There was much wealth accumulating already and life began to go on with considerable stateliness and dignity. Even those who did not for themselves expect to arrive at any station of especial honor still easily lent themselves to the general mode of life and assisted in creating a public sentiment favorable to the production of men of grave manners, weighty ideas and comprehensive plans of public and private advancement. With this outward gravity, and not altogether consistent with it, there were many grotesque and extravagant notions concerning both nature and the supernatural. At a time when men knew so little of the world and its natural products as to expect to find lions in the American wilderness, and when the loadstone was supposed to have some magical power of indicating the place of the precious metals, when devils and demons, both in their own form and as possessing human beings, were supposed to be as common as bats and owls, at any time events might happen which would break the outward calm and throw the community into a fever of curiosity or of apprehension.

At the end of the seventeenth century the town was, in many ways, in an unnatural condition. There had been numerous alarms and the real dangers were many. At any time enemies at home might trouble them, and against an irruption of foreign enemies there was no protection which was trustworthy. The more wealthy the community became the greater the danger that the ships of an enemy might sail into the ill-defended harbor and lay waste the town. Many losses had been incurred and the people were sore with apprehension, restless and ready for a panic of any sort. The occasion came, and Salem won an unpleasant and ill-deserved fame as the scene of the "Witchcraft Delusion." The sad tale will be honestly told in the narrative to follow. It is only necessary to say here that in our time men forget the multitudes who have been burned in Europe as witches and remember the score who went to an unhappy death on the scaffold in Salem, as if there were something peculiar in Salem witchcraft to distinguish it from the common experience in such matters of the rest of the civilized world. When the Zuni Indians came to Salem, a few years since, one of them, speaking in Plummer Hall, told the people that he heard that they put their witches to death. He told them that they did right; the Zunis did the same. It was the only way to deal with them. The Indian had a face like Dante's, and his opinions were only the same as were held by all the civilized world down to the time when in Salem the long delusion of the ages finally gave way to the humaneness of modern feeling. In Northern Europe, as Topelius testifies, witches were slain by the hundred. This eruption in Salem was the last infamous outbreak of Puritan fanaticism, and it cleared the air for all the generations since.

To do anything like justice to the people of those days we must remember that they were at the same time more happy and, in many ways, more cheerful than we are apt to think, and that they also were more hard and insensible to certain forms of human suffering than we are, and that, moreover, great sensibility could be a trait of the character in which were qualities which, to us, seem quite incompatible with it. We must also remember that many things which to us seem like acts of their free will did not seem so to them. To be obliged to whip an Anabaptist or a Quaker seemed to many a tender-hearted Puritan as necessary and as grievous as to us seem the unavoidable sufferings which come by "act of God." That a certain brutality was cultivated by such theories is certain. The best argument against the whipping-post is that whatever the crimes of the culprit who suffers at one end of the whip, there will always be a brute at the other end of it—probably the worse brute of the two. When Hugh Peter died in England for his political offenses we have a picture of the times which it is now difficult to contemplate without a shudder. As he waited for his turn at the gallows he was compelled to see his friend Cooke cut down and quartered. "How like you this?" asked the executioner, rubbing his bloody hands. When such things were going on it is hard for us to remember that the sun shone as brightly then as now over the lovely shores and bays of Salem; that in summer the east wind was fresh and cool as it swept over the sparkling water, where the fisher boats floated and the fisher boys sang their ancient ballads or shouted to each other in careless jollity; that there was a merry sound from the herdsmen's horns as the kine came in fresh from the pastures in June, and that for any one life was easy and careless and happy. But it was so, and many a legend, tradition and reminiscence of those early days show that sailors danced and were jolly, that rustics were as light-hearted at times, and even more content and satisfied than now. Society went on, as society must, with love-making and marriage, the love of children and the association of friends; and what men could not prevent, or thought they

could not, that they contrived to shut out and forget. In the days of the witchcraft excitement, however, there was no possibility of shutting out or forgetting the grizzly horror which might look in at any window and claim any victim. Whether one believed in all the possibilities of demoniacal possession or only feared the passion of enemies and the mania of the populace, the danger and the fear were inevitable and oppressive.

But those unhappy days passed. The common sense and good feeling of the community reasserted themselves, and the humaneness which had never been able to justify itself assumed an authority it had never had before. The modern period may be said to begin with the eighteenth century, although many a lapse and "many a backward streaming curve" show that progress then, as now, was not a regular progression from evil to good or from good to better things in public and private life.

The eighteenth century opened with renewed prosperity. Commerce was establishing itself, and with many and wide relations with the foreign world, Salem was becoming what it has always been since that time—remarkable for the number of its inhabitants who were cosmopolitan in their tastes and habits. The influence of a few men fostered a habit which, in time, produced a very peculiar and remarkable race of sailors and traders. Abandoning the ponderous methods of the older merchants, who built huge ships and founded permanent colonies, or occupied posts in foreign lands and carried on operations involving great expense and requiring to be protected by costly convoys and garrisons, the fishermen and traders of Salem learned to skirmish all along the border-lines of the civilized world, and prepared themselves for the brilliant exploits of later years. But it took a hundred years to train the whole population and compact it so that when the time came, whether for privateering or commerce, every varied need could be quickly, naturally and cheaply provided for at home. For these purposes there were needed on the spot men of universal knowledge of the known world, able also to make a shrewd guess as to what lay out of sight in the undiscovered parts of the world. They needed trusty agents as intelligent, if not as far-seeing, as themselves—men who could obey orders of a comprehensive character, with wit enough to modify them when new conditions arose. With them must go sailors who were bold, trusty, enterprising and intelligent, coming out of families whose interests were identical with those of the merchants and traders. About these there must be a homogeneous and interested population ready and skillful in all the trades and handicrafts needed by the main business of the place. We shall see, by and by, how all these conditions were prepared and what a mark Salem made on the business of the world. For the present we only note the fact that the process was beginning. The fishing-boats and coasters, the trading smacks and larger craft plying between the West Indies and Salem, and the ships which were slowly extending the European commerce of the colony, were training such a hardy, brave and intelligent seafaring population as can now be found in no city or town of any size anywhere in the world.

From this time on religious matters are less engrossing and less distracting. Education, business and politics claim an increasing share of their attention, and a town is slowly built up of a homogeneous population, prosperous, well educated, capable of taking an intelligent interest in all the affairs of the town and the Commonwealth. But the colonies, provinces now under royal Governors who are inclined to haughty ways and the exercise of irresponsible authority, are still small, isolated and feeble. The settlements are still scattered. Communication is infrequent. Horses are few, and, until the beginning of the seventeenth century, carriages were almost unknown, while turnpikes and stage-coaches were yet to be introduced as the novel appliances of a new civilization. Roads everywhere were bad, bridges were few, and the obstruction to public travel, except by a very few main highways, was so great that each separate community was nearly reduced to dependence upon its own resources, excepting such supplies as might come by water, the great common highway of commerce. The water-ways were still used for most kinds of transportation, even among neighbors in Salem. For, as the town grew along the water's edge, with the front doors of the houses opening towards the harbor or the various rivers, while the lanes, out-houses and swine pens were behind, where the principal streets now are, it was more easy to convey all bulky articles a long distance by water than to carry them but a little way on land. The settlements spread along the bays and rivers, and even little creeks were useful to the farmer who sought a market for his surplus produce in exchange for needed supplies. With all their increased wealth and comfort, we must still think of them as a "feeble folk," scattered and few, too few to live up to the independent ideas they have now been nourishing for a century. Money was scarce, even when comfort abounded, and stores could be provided at any time in a given place only by transporting them in kind. Virginia could not give a thousand bushels of wheat to Boston by sending a bill of exchange, as we might do to-day if a famine occurred in Asia Minor, but must laboriously collect the grain from her own scattered wheat-fields and transport it from Virginia to Boston.

With the fall of the colonial government and the coming of the royal Governors, new problems of the most perplexing kinds rolled in upon them. From the beginning of the century the American Revolution was preparing itself. It took seventy-five years to breed the ideas, train the men and make it possi-

sible to provide the supplies which were at last to come to their highest uses and expression in the republic. During these years attention was more and more called to what were to become national problems. Provincial governors, however bad, served an excellent purpose when they turned the attention of the colonists away from the idiosyncrasies of religionists (good and bad alike), and concentrated the energies of the people in defense of their common rights and privileges. From the time that Sir Edmund Andros said to Mr. Higginson, in Salem, "Either you are subjects or you are rebels" it was certain that rebellion would come. It was already prepared for in the mind of every Salem householder who believed that his tenure was independent of the King. Even then it was claimed by Mr. Higginson that the lands of New England belonged not to the King, but to the people who occupied and paid for them. There might be doubt as to who were the rightful proprietors of the town lots and "common lands" of Salem, but there was no doubt that the King was not one of them. In the "great pastures" even the "swineherds" would have resisted his claim to the feeding of a pig so long as he was not a "householder" in Salem.

The reaction from the intolerance and over-religiousness of the preceding century was largely brought about by the enforced practice of the toleration which they had feared and abhorred. Being obliged to live in peace with Anabaptists, Episcopalians and Quakers, they learned, if not to like them, at least to do business with them, and at last to respect them as valuable members of the community. Wearied with long strife which had proved to be so profitless, the peace which followed the establishment of public worship after the manner of the Friends and the "Churchmen" must have been a grateful surprise even to those who had predicted dire evils to follow the toleration of Episcopacy or heresy. The minds of men were now somewhat released from the contemplation of insoluble theological problems, and the fears which had hung over the colony for a hundred years began to drift away or to dissolve before the splendor of the rising sun. Religion began to be regarded as the beneficent guide of life to be privately followed and not publicly enjoined upon others.

Many now living remember Dr. Holyoke, whose one hundredth birth-day was celebrated by a dinner at the Essex Coffee-House, in 1828, which he attended and at which he spoke. He was graduated at Harvard College in 1746, and therefore knew all of the men and women of the last half of the eighteenth century in Salem, and those older men and women also whose memories went back to the lifetime of the *conditores* themselves. To men now living he may have told the stories related to him by men who heard them from the lips of John Endicott. His own memory must have held some wonderful reminiscences of the hundred years in which the feeble provinces were growing to be a great nation, able twice within his knowledge successfully to meet the mother-country in arms, and on sea and land to prove herself invincible to any foreign foe. As a boy, in 1736, he may have ridden over from Marblehead on a pillion behind his father, or have sailed around Naugus Head in a fishing boat to see the funeral procession of Philip English, and have listened that day to the tales of the grandams and goodies who remembered when he and his wife were arrested as witches. Perhaps he heard some of them slyly remind each other of having had a hand in the sport when the mob stripped and plundered his house. Some of them were in that procession which marched out to the edge of the wilderness at Gallows Hill, or stood near enough to hear the dying groans of Giles Corey. The older men that day would be sure to recall that other funeral when John Endicott was followed to his grave, in 1665, by his old companions, "the founders of the Colony." There would be several there who remembered seeing Robert Wilson's wife tied to the tail of a cart, and whipped from "Mr. Gedney's house to her own door in '61." As Dr. Holyoke in later years recalled these things, and contrasted the hardships and perils of his own century and theirs, he must have remarked the fact that the hard and perilous experiences of his time were memories to be proud of and to rejoice over as their anniversaries came, while the most exciting and perilous experiences of the preceding century left shameful memories and bitter regrets. Being born in Marblehead in 1728, Dr. Holyoke could not remember that in that year Gov. Burnet, finding it impossible in Boston to obtain an appropriation from the General Court for his salary, called a session in Salem, where he found the members still intractable and unwilling to provide supplies for a "royal Governor." He would quite naturally have been one of that crowd of six thousand people who assembled on Salem Common to hear George Whitefield preach, and he certainly heard much of the heated controversy which began at that time and continued until the Congregational Church of New England was divided, three-quarters of a century later. Those who sympathized with George Whitefield and Jonathan Edwards at the time of the "great revival" then formed one party; those who disapproved of their methods and doctrines formed another, and the lineal descendants or natural inheritors of the ideas and moral sympathies of these two parties are to-day in Salem, respectively called Orthodox and Unitarian Congregationalists. George Whitefield, loved, admired and praised by one party, was by the other distrusted and condemned. But to all he was an object of exceeding interest and curiosity. Holyoke felt the earthquake shock in '55, the year that Lisbon went down. He saw Timothy Pickering as a boy in the streets and saw the children growing up who were to march with him to Winter Hill, when the British

were retreating from Lexington, and get for a hard day's march, with none of the fighting which they went for, only curses because they did not get there sooner and capture the whole force. He must have stood at the North Bridge when Colonel Leslie marched that way and was met by the "proprietors of the North Fields," who assured him that the way beyond the bridge was not the "King's Highway," which he claimed it to be, but a private way where passing was "dangerous" for those who were forbidden by the lawful owners. He was a man in middle life when the great events of the Revolution were coming to pass. He might have seen Lafayette in Salem in 1784, and Washington in 1789, and may have owned one of the numerous beds occupied on that memorable occasion by the "Father of his country." No doubt he stood on the wharf when the "Grand Turk" sailed on her famous voyage to India and China, and went down to see her when she came in, the first to bring a cargo direct from Canton to New England. Some writers describe those days as provincial, dull and uninteresting to any but traders and sailors. But the man must have been curiously made who could stand in the distinguished company certain to assemble at such a time and see the treasures of the oriental world begin to pour into that little old Puritan town and not have sensations which would stir his blood and cause his nerves to tingle as scarcely anything would but war. These men, whose ancestors would not willingly associate with Anabaptists, Episcopalians or Quakers, were now ready to trade with Catholics, Buddhists, Mohammedans, Parsees, and idolaters of every hue and creed. Trading with them, they learned to respect them, and sometimes they even formed life-long friendships with men of the most diverse religious opinions. During his own lifetime Dr. Holyoke had seen revolutionary changes of many kinds. He saw the little provinces become a powerful nation. He saw religion cast off its gloom and severity, while in social life austerity gave place to animation and a joyous activity. He saw also in their cradles, or playing in the streets, the boys who were to bring literary renown to the old town when her commercial laurels faded. Perhaps the boys are now growing up who, by the fame of their scientific achievements, will take up the succession and make Salem as illustrious in science as she is now for the fame of her children,—Prescott and Hawthorne.

Of the last century Timothy Pickering was perhaps the most distinguished man born or living in Salem after 1750. He was conspicuous for the force and dignity of his character, for his many attainments and for his notable public services. Born in 1745, and dying in 1828, a descendant of one of the "founders," graduated at Harvard College, in his later years an officer of the First Church, a Unitarian before Channing had begun to preach, his life was almost an epitome of Puritan history in all its phases. From the time, in 1774, when the Colonial Legislature assembled in Salem and took measures to call a General Provincial Congress in Philadelphia, Pickering was at the centre of events. A mere catalogue of the offices he held in that-half century will suggest the many services he rendered and his eminent fitness for public life. He was adjutant-general and quartermaster of Washington's army; delegate to the Constitutional Convention at Philadelphia; Postmaster-General, Secretary of War and Secretary of State under Washington and Adams; United States Senator; Representative in Congress; and president of the Essex Agricultural Society. But, eminent as he was, he was but one in a group of professional and business men of rare ability and great attainments. Many of the educated people of that time, as in the next generation, were familiar, not only with public affairs in their own country, but also were at home in foreign lands, and had much of the culture which is gained by travel after the usual course of education is finished. They were not provincial in any narrow sense. Those merchants who had no academic training acquired a comprehensive knowledge of the world, which gave them great influence as advisers, and a large number of them were eminent outside of their counting-rooms. Such names as those of Benjamin Goodhue, Nathaniel Silsbee, the two brothers Jacob and Benjamin Crowninshield, Benjamin Pickman and William Gray suggest to those who are familiar with the history of the country the great services rendered by merchants in the early days of the republic. Goodhue and Silsbee were United States Senators. One of the Crowninshields was Secretary of the Navy, and one declined the same position some years before. Mr. Pickman was Representative in Congress after holding many posts of honor in Massachusetts, as did the other merchants named. Nathan Reed was well known, not only as member of Congress, but as jurist and inventor. He made a steamboat with paddle-wheels as early as 1789. B. Lynde Oliver was a learned and famous physician of that time, being well versed in such knowledge as was then current in scientific circles, and an authority in optics. Nathaniel Bowditch everybody has heard of who ever smelled salt-water. He was famous both on sea and shore. His fame was so extensive and stable that even his contemporaries who used his "Navigator" and worked out their problems by use of his tables, often thought of him as being as ancient and famous as Sir Isaac Newton. After his marine experience was over he lived as a quiet business man in Salem, not especially conspicuous in a place and at a time when first-rate attainments and achievements were expected of many men in many modes of action.

As merchants at that time, no men were more conspicuous in Salem, or elsewhere, than Elias Haskett

Derby, Joseph Peabody and William Gray. The story of the commercial fortunes of the town will be told elsewhere. They were at their brightest in the period between the two wars with England and were the direct result and continuation of one of the most interesting and exciting episodes in the varied history of Salem. America had no navy when the Revolutionary War began. Exposed along all her line of coast to a descent of the enemy, but one defense was possible. Instant submission must have followed had not the whole merchant service of every kind offered itself with ships and men trained to enterprise and eager for adventure. It was to Salem, Beverly and Marblehead that Washington looked at once for an armed fleet, without awaiting the slow action of a loosely organized Congress or taxing the inadequate resources of scattered and half-appointed ship-yards, and these old sea-ports did not fail him in his necessity. They furnished, ready-made, the first navy of the war. Ship-building of every kind was pushed with all speed. Vessels of all kinds, large and small, were commissioned to sweep the seas and make lawful prize of war whatever could be captured belonging to the enemy. Salem entered into this form of war with great enthusiasm. It suited the adventurous spirit of her boys. Jonathan Haraden was a sea-dog of the approved pattern. Bold, persevering and indomitable, he made himself a terror to the enemy, and, with others of like temper and spirit, soon made Salem a magazine of supplies of every kind, taken from the merchantmen of Great Britain. At one time a famine was averted by the timely arrival of a prize laden with flour and dry goods. More than one hundred and fifty privateers sailed from this port during the Revolution. The extraordinary activity of the marine forces of the town left few to take part in the war on land, although when Colonel Pickering marched after a drum through the aisles of the First Church, calling for volunteers, the full quota of the town fell in behind him and followed him into the street. Privateering had all the charm of piracy without its crime and outlawry. It furnished adventure to match the desires of the most inflamed youthful imagination. The town was full of well-educated young fellows who were eager for excitement. The people were of a homogeneous breed, mostly the descendants of the English yeomanry. Every one knew his neighbor, and each one had a reputation to make or to maintain. Every sailor boy expected some day to be admiral of a fleet or master of a vessel at least. All were intelligent, and sailed with a purpose. The result was the training of a merchant marine of unexampled intelligence, enterprise and experience. When the war was over it was easy to see that the little town of five or six thousand inhabitants was swarming with sailors and privateersmen, rough, boisterous, impatient of the plodding ways of business, spoiled for anything but a life of adventure. With the harbor crowded with swift-sailing vessels and the streets filled with idle sailors, with ship-owners not averse to the life of enterprise and adventure made familiar by war, all the conditions were prepared for the sudden enlargement of the mercantile resources of the town which followed. Many volumes would be required to hold the record of the times, the adventures in foreign lands, the hunt for new markets, the unexpected discovery of obscure corners of the world, where salable products of the earth, rare in Europe and America, were common, and to the natives of little value, the conflicts with natives often murderous in disposition and cannibals to boot, the rivalries of fellow merchants, and the dangers from foreign nations, both on sea and shore. These, often told in part, familiar to many, have as yet never been presented to the public in the fullness which the great interest of the subject would justify.

In this place it is possible only to call attention to the features of society at that time which are often overlooked, the dash and excitement of the common life and the brilliant cosmopolitanism of the rich, enterprising and educated men who conducted these enterprises. The sudden quiet which fell upon the town when the foreign commerce departed, the grave demeanor of the elders, who, their business being done, and their sons having gone to conduct other enterprises, quietly settled down to the enjoyment of wealth and leisure, have given the impression that it was always so in Salem. When those who are in middle life now came upon the stage the play was over, the curtain was falling and the lights were going out. But when everything was fresh and all enterprises in full operation, when the store-houses were full, the wharves scenes of busy activity, and the young men of the town were coming and going on their travels and voyages, there was nothing dull or sluggish in the movements of society. Youth was predominant and hopefulness characteristic of the times. The unexampled opportunities for young men drew them from all the neighborhood, and in those days the increase of population was largely of this class. An impression of gravity and severity is given by pictures of the men and women of that time, who, in dress and manner, seem ancient and stiff. At that time it was customary to mark distinction of age and standing by the fashion of the garments. Old men did not affect the sprightliness of youth either in gait or garment. In middle life one's coat was a little longer, his waistcoat a little more voluminous, his shoe buckles a little broader, and there was an air of repose and a suggestion of solidity which was regarded as not inappropriate to one who might be supposed to have done something and had passed the need of hurrying overmuch. It was a gravity not altogether without the compensations and quiet cheerfulness which come with well-filled pockets, and a heavy

balance at the bank. The young men as they prospered were not averse to a little of the dignity which began to indicate that they were men of weight. All social distinctions were still marked by etiquette and dress in a way now quite unknown. Until just before the Revolution names of students were printed in the catalogue of Harvard College in the order of the social rank of their parents. Something is to be said for customs which mark off society into classes according to age and merit, and make it easier to grow old and more desirable to succeed in lawful enterprises, because of the increased respect paid to the aged and the honorable. Old age in some ways began earlier than now. It is difficult for us to realize what an extension of the working capacity of the race has followed the great improvement of optical instruments since the beginning of this century. Timothy Pickering was near-sighted and wore glasses. A soldier has left on record the emotions with which he saw him ride along a line of camp-fires in the evening, his eyes blazing at intervals like balls of fire. He had never seen such a sight before. Many near-sighted people, having no glasses, were accounted queer, because they could not join with others in sports or many occupations, and the middle-aged, who were not rich enough or enterprising enough to provide themselves with the costly and ugly spectacles then made, were early victims of old age and were laid on the shelf prematurely because they could not see.

The intellectual excitements of the last part of the eighteenth century were many and strong. Intercourse with the whole world brought freight of many kinds besides that which paid duty at the custom-house. Puritanism had lost its hold upon the leading classes and English Unitarianism was coming in to make Salem a "peculiar place." But this, though influential, was as yet a silent force, working persuasively, but not noisily. French Democracy, working in some ways to the same end, was a disturbing force of which more account was taken. France had been the friend of America in her well-nigh hopeless struggle. Lafayette was loved there next to Washington, and it was natural that French ideas should be popular. But in the admixture of French ideas with Puritanism it is easy to see there were difficulties not easily overcome. "Infidelity" was a word of ominous meaning, and the atrocities of the French Revolution made it hard to keep one's balance when attempting to take from the French philosophers the good there undoubtedly was in their theories, and to avoid the evil which was only too apparent. Dr. Bentley was a Democrat and a sturdy fighter. He did not hesitate to avow his liberal opinions as to church and state and to take the consequences, and the consequences were sometimes unpleasant. He stood almost alone because of his opinions, a Roger Williams of later date, not doomed to banishment because the times had changed. Even so early as 1787 he was a leader in the ways which were by many accounted destructive. The story of the theological contests of the time belong in the ecclesiastical history of Salem, and will be told in its proper place. But the struggle was not wholly, perhaps not at this time mainly, theological. The questions in dispute were by all parties supposed to relate to the very foundations of social institutions and civil government. The new world of modern life was in process of discovery. New ideas were pouring into minds both trained and untrained in a tumultuous profusion which was bewildering. Everybody knew that the old familiar forms into which society had been shaped by Puritanism were shifting and changing. To some the changes were welcome; to some they were alarming. Few were indifferent to them, and no one knew what would come next, nor exactly what was desirable. The descendants of the Puritans, then as now, were conservative in action and slow to change the outward habit of their lives. The intellectual tumult, however, was none the less because veiled by the decent garb and weighty manners of the "respectable citizen." The peculiarities of Salem life cannot be understood by those who do not take into account the stress and tension of the minds of the men and women of those days, and the great activity of intellectual faculties exercised on numerous questions which had no relation to business and no concern with the traditional religious beliefs. It is not possible to account for the outburst of literary expression in the generation following this on the supposition that the best society of the last days of the eighteenth century was a "purse-proud" aristocracy, of which the most conspicuous members were those who, by patient and unscrupulous dealings in New England rum, negroes, tobacco and salt codfish, had amassed wealth and were enjoying it in an atmosphere of dignified and exclusive dullness. The evil and the stupid elements of a commercial town were there, and no doubt in their full proportion. But there was that other something, the intellectual unrest and voiceless activity which came to expression a little later in sons and daughters trained to think, accustomed from childhood to familiar intercourse with the masters of thought and literature, and able themselves to contribute to the world's slowly accumulating treasure of immortal books. The literature of a generation springs out of nothing but a previous generation prepared to nourish thoughtful sons and daughters. In the generation to come upon the stage as the great merchants pass away we shall see how the brilliant literary history of Salem was prepared for in these busy and laborious days after the Revolution. There was, in general society, at that time great formality and exclusiveness, due in part to the perilous strength of thought, out of which may come new dispensations of peace, or, with unfavorable conditions, contentions and disaster. Many of

the more "aristocratic" families had maintained their loyalty to the royal government, and were perhaps all the more attached to their King because at a distance from their "old home" they idealized him. They had found Salem too hot for "tories," and at the beginning of the war had gone to England or the British provinces. Among the "patriots" who remained the lines were strictly drawn between Federalists on the one side and Republicans on the other. The principles which were approved on either side were illustrated in many ways, and social life took its tone largely from the color of the political party to which a family belonged. The one would give society something of the stateliness of aristocratic society abroad, while the other would abandon all formal etiquette and return to the unconventional ways "of nature." To the Federalist, Thomas Jefferson riding unattended on horseback to take the oath of office as President of the United States was simply demeaning himself and degrading his office. To the Republicans he seemed to be setting an example of glorious republican simplicity. The two social ideals created social distinctions and produced rivalries which seem now incredible and foolish. But we must remember that nothing is of small value when it illustrates a principle, and that by outward signs a community is educated to loyalty or dislike for a theory of social order upon which the safety or prosperity of all may depend. The men of these times were at the head of the streams out of which were flowing the main currents of the national life. They knew it and they felt their responsibility.

At the beginning of the nineteenth century Salem was still a small town. The century was well on its way before fifteen thousand people gathered there. But it was the home of a vigorous race,—the product and flowering of the Puritan stock, enriched by culture, made wise by many experiences of adversity and polished by travel and a wide experience with men of many creeds and customs. In a letter written at the time, Haskett Derby is described as "a fine, majestic-looking man." "He says little, yet does not appear absent; has traveled much, and in his manners has an easy, unassuming politeness that is not the acquirement of a day." Such a description may be taken as almost typical of the society of that time in its best aspects. There was no doubt pride, pretension and folly, such as always come and go with rapid changes of fortune. There was no doubt a class whose arrogance was not justified by any service rendered to the public by themselves or their ancestors. Others were unworthy heirs of great names, and unfit custodians of family renown. There were the purse-proud who were ignorant, and the exclusive who, in order to be so, were obliged to forget their ancestry and exclude their kindred. But after making all the allowances which could be suggested by envy, by the ill-natured rivalry of other towns, or by jealous rivals at home, granting all that reason and the democratic sentiment of America claims for the rank and file of citizenship, still it remains true, and after making all deductions, fair and unfair, only the more conspicuously true, that in those days the little town of Salem was the home to a remarkable degree of intellect, culture and high-bred character; that it was not merely the dwelling-place of traders and speculators, but was an exceptional centre of attraction for a large number of men of comprehensive ideas, broad culture and a certain largeness of life not common then or now. In the chapters which follow on commerce and on literature the story of the achievements of the men of Salem will show in what ways the energy which had been stored up and the knowledge which had been accumulating were put to use both in enriching the world and making it wiser,—two processes not always carried on together. Aside from this history of activity on the sea and the gathering up of literary power there is little to tell of these times before the War of 1812. What there is to be noted shows that a settled prosperity has begun. The common is laid out, two banks are incorporated, the turnpike was opened, making rapid travel possible, two new banks were incorporated, two military companies held their first parade, a ship came in from a voyage round the world and another made the first voyage for trade at the Fiji Islands, Nathaniel Hawthorne was born, the Athenæum was incorporated, and Messrs. Judson, Newell, Nott, Hall and Rice were, in the Tabernacle Church, consecrated the first missionaries to India. This latter event, to many the most notable of the century, was one of the remarkable modern illustrations of the earnestness of the Puritan spirit in matters of religion, and it was a direct result of the meeting of two phases of the Puritan character. The spirit of enterprise opened the heathen world to commerce and the pious zeal of the church which had maintained the Puritan creed sent the gospel to complete the work of civilization. The two purposes which united at the founding of Salem made the third century of its life illustrious with the double triumphs of commerce and religion. The record of the Christian missionaries of New England shines with all the traits of heroism. In all the years which have followed since the sailing of the first missionaries in the brig "Caravan" in 1812, the Orthodox people of Salem have retained their interest in their work, and have been able with both money and advice to assist in generous measure.

It would be a mistake to suppose that the large amount of liberal "leaven" in the ecclesiastical life of Salem was the result of any easy-going optimism on the part of the people, or that the changes which have passed over the Puritan spirit indicate any wholesale lapse of the people from the standards of their fathers. The change was the result of a battle fiercely but fairly fought, and it has left all parties in possession of an inheritance directly derived from their

forefathers. The strife which followed the division of the Congregational body of Salem was probably the last one of its kind in Puritan history, and it would be an instructive exhibition if one could put the symbols of ecclesiastical discipline in chronological order, marking the two hundred years, with the gallows at one end and a "union Thanksgiving service" at the other. Tolerance in all matters of religion has become common-place in Salem. But all parties who date their ecclesiastical ancestry from the beginning are equally proud of their fathers and all claim, whatever their modern differences, to illustrate in important particulars the principles of the founders. Even the Episcopalians and the Quakers now live in peace with the descendants of those who persecuted them, and claim their share of the common inheritance, while not a few of the children of the persecutors have accepted the tenets of the men and women who suffered as disturbers of the peace and rebels against the church of God. Of no portion of her population is Salem more proud than of her "Friends." It is hard for her to forgive herself that in her borders they suffered violence. Their love of peace and their zeal for human liberty have conquered. Left to themselves, they have proved themselves to be not disturbers, but keepers of the peace, and as others adopt their rule of conduct their protest dies away and they are no longer to be distinguished from their friendly neighbors.

The founding of the Andover Theological School and the oath imposed upon its professors, with its list of things to be opposed, are part of the ecclesiastical history of Salem, and show some of the influences at work in shaping her religious and social life. John Norris, of Salem, gave ten thousand dollars of the original endowment. The school was intended to offset the "latitudinarianism" of Harvard College. The heresies mentioned were those which in Salem were, or had been, regarded with more or less sympathy and toleration. It is a list which could never have been made in a western town. The professors were sworn to opposition, "not only to Atheists and infidels, but to Jews, Papists, Mohammedans, Arians, Pelagians, Antinomians, Arminians, Socinians, Sabellians, Unitarians and Universalists." Now every one of these words stood for that which had been a belief held by men of Salem or their friends and business correspondents at some time in their troubled history.

The war with England in 1812 was a disaster to Salem which her merchants dreaded and would have avoided. Their ships were abroad on all seas, and they protested against the peril and loss which they saw to be inevitable. But the war being declared, they turned their attention with characteristic vigor to the prosecution of it to a victorious conclusion. As in the Revolution, an efficient navy being wanted and not being available, an extemporaneous navy was speedily organized, and, as usual, the privateering fleet of Salem was greatly out of proportion to her small population. Ships and seamen were abundant, and the boys were natural sailors and sea-fighters. Of the enemy much spoil was taken and many prisoners. But of the forty privateers, twenty-six fell into the hands of the British, and their crews lay in prison at Barbadoes and elsewhere. Dartmoor was filled with them, and until within a few years the survivors of captivity in that gloomy place recited the stories of their sufferings and release to admiring listeners.

As commerce culminated and passed away, the intellectual vigor which had been evolved or educated by its enterprise and wide experience of the world began to manifest itself in other ways. The life of professional men in the town was attractive and their work lucrative, according to the modest standard of the time. Ministers, lawyers and doctors, of learning and ability abounded. Scholars were numerous and well equipped. The men of native mental power, who had not been highly educated, sent their boys to Harvard College, and young men of wealth, education and the habit of foreign travel were in many families where culture was accounted at least as good as wealth. At that time all classes lived the year round in Salem. They might have outlying farms, and were in the habit of traveling much abroad, but the principal interests of the rich and educated families were at home. The influence of this concentration of interest, and the maintenance of a permanent domestic life in one place was favorable to the cultivation of the whole community. Men of exceptional gifts were not isolated from their townsmen. Those who were conspicuous for their wisdom were held in honor at home, and served the community like other citizens. For illustration every institution of the town might furnish an example,—Timothy Pickering was president of the Essex Agricultural Society; Nathaniel Bowditch was president of the Essex Fire and Marine Insurance Company; Daniel A. White was president of the Athenæum and of the Essex Institute; Leverett Saltonstall held similar offices; Colonel Francis Peabody founded the Lyceum; and in the school committee for 1821 we find the names of Tim. Pickering, Joseph Story, Nat. Silsbee, Gid. Barstow, Leverett Saltonstall, John Pickering and others. In the list we have one who had been a cabinet officer under two Presidents, a member of Congress, an United States Senator, a justice of the Supreme Court, with others almost equally eminent, together with two physicians of fine attainments, and business men of prominence. Not one of the whole list is insignificant. John Pickering made the first Greek lexicon with definitions in English, and not Latin, while among the teachers with whom the committee had to deal with then or a little later were such men as the author of "Worcester's Dictionary" and Henry K. Oliver. Rufus Choate was practicing law; Nathaniel

Hawthorne was just going to college at Brunswick; the sculptor and poet, W. W. Story, was not quite old enough to enter school; Jones Very, the poet, was a shy and modest lad of eight years; Samuel Johnson, the eminent historian of the "Oriental Religions," was getting the first impressions of the East which were to turn his attention to its literature, and make him the first American scholar in that department of learning; and many boys were fitting themselves in the public schools to become what they have been ever since—most important factors in the evolution of American society. Education was a "hobby" at this time, and money was at rapid rate being turned into brains and brain culture. Between 1815 and 1832 seventy-nine Salem boys were graduated at Harvard College alone. In 1828 seventeen boys entered Harvard College, and seven the same year went to other colleges. In those days young men, their travels being over, returned to live at home, and a proportion of the men to be met on Essex Street, unusually large for a town of its size, were college bred. The intense mental energy directed by the fathers into the channels of commerce could not be limited to them, and their sons, inheriting their ability with a wider range of experience and a greater knowledge of the world of books, became lawyers, judges, theologians, physicians, men of science and men of letters, and exponents in all New England and the Northern States of the intellectual and "gentle" life." It was a period of wonderful intellectual stimulus and fertility. Within a radius of twenty miles from the custom-house, from which the "Scarlet Letter" was dated, the stock being homogeneous and the conditions similar, there were produced in the early part of the century in Boston, Cambridge, Salem and other towns, Story, the two Danas, Sparks, Everett, Ticknor, Prescott, Norton, Ripley, Emerson, Parker, Hawthorne, Rantoul, Holmes, Whittier, Motley, Lowell and many another of equal or lesser light, and they drew into their fellowship such men as Channing, Bancroft, Longfellow, Agassiz, Choate and Webster. The common family life out of which they came was, to a great extent, the common life of an ordinary social circle in Salem. Henry R. Cleveland, son of a ship-master, was one of the "five of clubs," and brought his companions, Sumner, Longfellow, Hillard and Felton, to enjoy the gay and witty society to be found about his home. Many a visitor from Cambridge and Boston sought the company of the accomplished men and beautiful women who constituted a genuine "society," and many of the daughters of Salem were taken away to grace the homes of other cities.

Certain writers have much to say about the "provincialism" of Salem in the first half of this century. It is not necessary to deny any charge they may make, for no doubt it was provincial. But it was less so than any sea-port town of England at the same time, and was behind few English towns in the knowledge the people had of English literature of the better sort. Dr. Kirwan's philosophical library, made a prize of war in the Irish Channel, became the basis of the present Athenæum Library, a rare collection of good books both new and old. But it is safe to say that there was in that library no book so abstruse, so philosophical, or printed in language so uncommon as to be unfit for the use of numerous men and women in Salem. Rummage the closets of any old gambrel-roofed house to-day, and along with crackle-ware teapots and old silver porringers you will find some rare volume of "Seneca," the "Spectator," the "Dial," the common reading of Hawthorne and his playmates of seventy years ago or later.

Salem became a city about the time when its most famous days were over. With the transference of its trade to the larger cities and more accessible markets its local prominence was greatly reduced. The building of railroads and the multiplication of modern inventions reduced, instead of increasing, its relative importance. Great efforts were made, and hopes were entertained, that the port of Salem might again become the centre of a great inland trade. Stephen C. Phillips lost his life in a burning steamer on the St. Lawrence River, while making an effort to open new provinces to the enterprise of Salem. His sons were prominent in the movement which resulted in the provision made by the city for an abundant supply of pure water. When the city charter was procured, most of the wealth won by enterprise in all quarters of the globe was still held by citizens at home, or so invested as to swell the general resources of the city. But the inviting fields for enterprise opened in the Western States have caused the transference of a large part of it to other places, and with it have gone many of those who have inherited it. Some of them are to be found in most of the large cities of the Eastern States and in Europe. The sons of Salem are officers of many western railways, and the money won in oriental trade now facilitates the transport of the grain which feeds the millions of Europe.

The old Salem is gone. The men, the commerce, the Puritan spirit, the high-bred courtesy, the stately ways, the great men and women with strong local attachments,—these are gone. Nothing remains of the most stirring epoch in the life of the town but names, places, and a decreasing number of the families who trace their ancestry back of the nineteenth century, in Salem.

A new Salem has taken the place of the old. A city stands where the old town won its renown,—a city with railroads, horse-cars, electric lights and cotton-mills, and a large foreign population. The mansions built by merchants of English descent and training are inhabited by operatives in the mills or laborers, who have no interest in the old ways or the

former inhabitants. The Irish brogue and the French language are heard now where pure English was once the rule. The old wharves are rotting; the ancient warehouses are silently falling to decay, and the beautiful shores of streams and harbors, which once delighted the eyes of their owners, are becoming an offense to the poor who dwell along their borders. The custom-house, always too large for any reasonable expectations of prosperity, is much too vast for the diminishing commerce in dutiable goods. The old Salem is dead and gone. Most of it does not even exist as a relic of a fast-fading antiquity.

But a new Salem is rising. The points of activity and interest are no longer on her shores, which, for the present, are abandoned to chance and fate until, with renewed life and a more abundant leisure, measures shall be taken to make them once more as beautiful and attractive as they were when "Lover's Lanes" and clean beaches were the resorts of the youth. The centres of life and business activity are now within the town, along that highway which, once a lane and then a street, took its curves from the line of the shores where the merchants lived and business was done. Two hundred years ago what is now Essex Street was a shady lane, where the goats and swine and cattle passed on their way to and from their pastures, and where, in the dewy freshness of a summer morning, the horns of the herdsmen summoned their flocks and herds, to be driven away to fields now inhabited by prosperous citizens. The shores are now deserted by commerce, and the shaded lanes of the old time are now the paved and lighted highways through which begins to move, with increasing energy, the business which is to repair and rebuild the fallen fortunes of the city. Home industries, domestic commerce, manufactures, science, literature, music, art and education are now restoring the vanishing wealth, renewing the ancient renown, and making the city a centre of enterprises which are already enriching the national life.

Since the nineteenth century began there have been three distinct periods in the progress of the city. First, there was the commercial and intellectual energy of the first thirty years. They were supposed to be without limit. But they were appropriated by the larger life of New England. Then came the slowly diminishing prosperity of the thirty years before the War of the Rebellion, in which, in spite of costly endeavors to prevent it, the city lost its ancient importance as a centre of business. The war ended the career of "Old Salem," and the new Salem began to be. The city lives no longer on its memories alone, and is not distinguished solely for its antiquity. Business activity and scientific enterprise are rapidly preparing the conditions for a new career of progress, on new lines. The history of Old Salem is closed; but in the new city, which is rising on its ancient foundations, its memories will be cherished, its annals will be preserved with care and enriched with fresh discovery. The historic places where the good and evil passions of men were displayed in conflict, and where great virtues made the contest illustrious, will be visited, as the years pass, by an increasing number of pilgrims from all the newer parts of the country. The ideals of character which were the Puritan's finest contribution to the resources of modern civilization, honored and revered on the spot which gave them birth, will be constant sources of virtue and intelligence.

The people of Salem are proud of their ancestry and history, and a diligent band of local antiquarians is working out the story of the past, with results of more than local fame. But the city is entering upon a new career, and may become as notable for its achievements in the years to come as it was justly famous in the past.

The Athenæum, the Essex Institute, the Peabody Academy of Science and the societies and individuals that are attending to music and art are yet to be heard from in a way not unworthy of Salem. The idea is being cultivated that wealth is not the sole foundation of good society, and that the money made in the old times was not the principal gain. That money is now flowing in other channels, but it has, in flowing away from the place where it was accumulated, made it only the more evident that it was one of the least of the treasures gained in the enterprising days of foreign commerce. Now attention is turned to the other things which are seen to be permanent and of staple value in good society. The new Salem will be rich, but its cultivation will be not incidental. It will be held to be of primary importance, and, with religion, good morals and wisdom, will enrich the national life far beyond any material contributions which it may make to the national prosperity.

CHAPTER II.

SALEM—(*Continued*).

ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY.

BY REV. EDMUND B. WILLSON.

This history lays no claim to completeness. It deals but slightly with the interior, the unorganized religious life of the first settlers of Salem, or of the later inhabitants of the place. It is little more than a historical sketch of the church-life of its people.

Nor is it for the most part history now written for the first time. The main facts relating to nearly every church in the town have been already collected and printed—those of earlier date than the present century by the very competent hand of Rev. Mr. Bentley, minister of the East Church; those falling

within the present century by Charles S. Osgood and Henry M. Batchelder, in their historical sketch of Salem, published in 1879, whose contents were manifestly verified with painstaking care so far as the authority for them could be had and the scope of that work permitted them to be included.

The settlement of New England, it is to be borne in mind, was an enterprise in the interest of religion. "Civilized New England," says Palfrey, "is the child of English Puritanism." To know the child, therefore, we should know something of its ancestry. Only briefest notices of the ante-migration period of English Puritanism, however, can find room here.

When it is said that the colonizing of New England was in the interest of religion, it is not meant that secular interests had no voice in the councils that directed it. Hopes of advantageous trade and prospects of opening new fishing-grounds were not wanting. Philanthropic plans for converting and civilizing the Indians mingled with schemes for reaping solid gains from exchanging English goods for land, peltry, fish, whatever products might turn to account in a commerce between the Old World and the New. The sleepless love of adventure, thirst for roving and change, sure to be dreaming its fascinating dream of voyage and exploration in every tenth young Englishman's brain, of course played its part. The never failing, restless, religious adventurer—source of constant danger to the peace of the new settlement—would also be ready to embark in the first ship that sailed. It remains true that a religious purpose was predominant and controlling in the Puritan company that settled Salem.

Up to the time of its leaving its English home for the West, the history of Puritanism is to be studied chiefly as the history of a national religious movement, of the rooting, spread and final prevailing of the ideas of the Reformation on English soil. It is our province to trace it more particularly after its landing in America, and more particularly still in the planting, growth and shaping of the institutions which it founded and fostered in this town. It lost nothing of its intensity of religious purpose when it left its native land. It became even a larger element in the life of the settlers of New England after their removal than it had been before, in that here they led a life of narrowed and simplified conditions. It had a more undivided supremacy. It had deeply colored and characterized their life and history before they came; now it was the very life of their life. It imbedded itself in their social and domestic customs, and took control of their political aims and plans.

Lines of minor divergence naturally came to be drawn among the English reformers themselves, and that a good while before they sailed for these shores, as they found they were not agreed as to the extent to which church reform should go, or what were the methods most hopeful for effecting it. Some counseled separation from the established church as the only way to realize a pure worship, with entire freedom of mind and conscience, seeing no other sure way to obtain relief from the despotism of the Church of Rome, whose spirit was still present and ruling, and whose methods still lingered in the Church of Episcopal England. Those who took this view were the Separatists, Brownists, Independents of their time, avowed advocates of democracy in church government, for which Robert Brown of Norwich was a strenuous contestant, and in which he led a considerable following. Others regarding the national church as a true church still, even in its degeneracy, and having an invincible antipathy to the least semblance of schism, firmly resisted the secession movement, and sought rather to purify the church of its formalism by the leaven of a more sincere and fervent piety. These were the Puritans.

From the former class came the Plymouth colonists,—by the way of Holland, where they tarried a few years, and contemplated for a time making a permanent religious home under the tolerant laws, the Protestant leanings and the comparatively hospitable public sentiment of that country.

The Puritans continued for a while their experiment of staying in the national church and there working out its reformation. They never formally abandoned it. But practically they did. They confessed to themselves after a time that they were not succeeding. Reluctantly they became more and more accustomed to turn their eyes to the sea and to think of the shores beyond. English trading companies were sending their ventures meanwhile to the wild and little-known bays and rivers of Virginia and their ships were ranging the whole long Eastern coast of the new continent. They might try their experiment there, they thought, under a less close and jealous scrutiny, and possibly pursue there, unmolested by savage neighbors, as they could not at home, unmolested by priests and prelates, the better religious life they craved.

The reports that came from Plymouth were, to be sure, of hunger, cold, sickness, death and of returning malcontents, but also of an undaunted faith, a peaceful following of their own way in religion, and a fixed purpose to stay on the part of the conductors and earliest members of that community. A schismatic the Puritan would never be, but a non-conformist he could be. But at length non-conformity came to be no longer permitted in England. He looked now, then, oftener toward the sea, and thought more of a home and a church in the wilderness.

John White, of the English Dorchester, "a famous Puritan divine," perhaps not thinking of a possible Puritan church at all, but only of a plantation combined with a fishing and trading-post,—John White, of whatever thinking, interested himself, at any rate, to induce some faithful men among the number of those who made voyages from his town for the purpose of fishing in these neighboring waters and bar-

tering along these neighboring American coasts, and who were often for months together detained about these parts, to make a station at Cape Ann, "where the mariners might have a home when not at sea, where supplies might be provided for them by farming and hunting, and where they might be brought under religious influences."

In 1623 a plant was made, with this view, under Thomas Gardner as overseer. For some cause it failed. Two years later Mr. Roger Conant, who had left the Plymouth colony from disaffection, and had come up the coast as far as Nantasket, being reported to the Dorchester associates as a "religious, sober and prudent gentleman," was invited by them to come to Cape Ann and to take charge of the plantation there. Though this confidence in the newly-installed director was not misplaced, the plantation still languished, and a year or two after, those engaged in it sold what remained of their vessels and supplies, disbanded, and, as a company, quit their joint proceedings. But a few, of better stuff than the rest, and of more staying qualities of character, remained behind, and kept charge of the last importation of cattle. Mr. White was not one to accept defeat. He kept up communication with Conant, who meantime had removed to Nahumkeike, as a preferable seat for the general purposes of colonization, and pleaded with him not to be discouraged nor to desist from the undertaking to which he had set his hand. If Conant and three others whom he named would engage to stay at Naumkeag, he promised to obtain a patent for them and send them recruits, with provisions and goods suitable for trade with the Indians. The drooping spirits of the settlers were with some difficulty roused again, the faith of the English merchants was reinforced by the energetic representations of the Dorchester patron, so that they became willing to risk a portion of their wealth in another attempt. Not only Dorchester fishermen, but London merchants and gentlemen and others, were brought to put some capital at stake here. And it fell out that John Endicott, "a man well known to divers persons of good note," "manifested much willingness" to accept the leadership of the new effort proposed, and came in the summer of 1628, at the head of a not large party, to take the management, which, after some objection from those already on the ground, was finally yielded to him, and the name of Salem, which has since come to honor, commemorates, it is said, the pacification of the dispute between the newcomers and the old, which for a while threatened to wreck the project.

So Salem began in 1628. With its beginning began its worship. Probably under some tree, or if a shelter had been reared before the first Sabbath day came round, under its roof, it might be the roof of Conant's house, or of some original "planter's house" at first designed for common use. Their worship followed the prayer-book of the English Church, in part, it is likely, but they easily loosened themselves from its ritual, and their worship became informal and spontaneous—exposition, free prayer, mutual exhortations, —largely modifying the traditional forms of their Old World church-life, all parts recognizing the peculiarity of their situation as they supplicated for patience, faith and constancy in the way of duty and self-sacrifice.

Let us pause for a moment to observe this type of man who stands for the Salem founder. His portrait has often been drawn, but it differs pretty widely in the hands of different delineators. The differences, however, will turn out to be mainly in the strength of the lines and the depth of the coloring. Under them all the same man is easily recognized. He is of firm make, and his figure, face and spirit always hold their place and are to be identified at a glance. It is thus that the author of the "History of New England during the Stuart Dynasty,"[1] has sketched his features. "The Puritan was a Scripturist—a Scripturist with all his heart, if, as yet with imperfect intelligence. . . . He cherished the scheme of looking to the word of God as his sole and universal directory. . . . The Puritan searched the Bible, not only for principles and rules, but for mandates—and when he could find none of these, for analogies—to guide him in precise arrangements of public administration and in the minutest points of individual conduct. . . . His objections to the government of the church by bishops were founded, not so much on any bad working of that polity, as on the defect of authority for it in the New Testament; and he preferred his plain hierarchy of pastors, teachers, elders and deacons, not primarily because it tended more to edification, but because Paul had specified their offices by name. . . . The opposing party in the State was associated in his mind with the Philistine and Amorite foes of the ancient chosen people, and he read the doom of the King and his wanton courtiers in the Psalm which put the 'high praises of God' in the mouth of God's people 'and a two-edged sword in their hand, to bind their King with chains and their nobles with fetters of iron.' . . . He would have witchcraft, Sabbath-breaking and filial disobedience weighed in the judicial scales of a Hebrew Sanhedrim. His forms of speech were influenced by this fond reverence for the Bible. . . . He named his children after the Christian graces, still oftener after the worthies of Palestine, or, with yet more singularity, after some significant clause of holy writ.

"The Puritan was a strict moralist. He might be ridiculed for being over-scrupulous, but never reproached for laxity. Most wisely, by precept, influence and example—unwisely by too severe law, when he obtained the power—he endeavored to repress prevailing vice and organize a Christian people. His error was not that of interfering without reason, or

[1] John Gorham Palfrey, vol. i. pp. 274–277.

too soon. When he insisted on a hearing, villainous men and shameless women, whose abominations were a foul offense in the sight of God and of all who reverence God, were flaunting in the royal dressing-rooms. The foundations of public honor and prosperity were sapped.

"In politics, the Puritan was the Liberal of his day. If he construed his duties to God in the spirit of a narrow interpretation, that punctilious sense of religious responsibility impelled him to limit the assumption of human government. In no stress, in no delirium of politics, could a Puritan have been brought to teach that, for either public or private conduct, there is some law of man above the law of God."

The Puritan came to New England, as before stated, as a non-conformist, not as a separatist, with not less definite conceptions of what he did not want in church forms and institutions than of what he did want. The ideal of the true church, which he had derived from the Scriptures, was of a brotherhood—a church of equals. The elder, the bishop, was but a minister. In him was no official superiority or authority, but such as he had been invested with by his brethren. To be rid altogether of the false claims and assumptions of authority which the English, as well as the Romish hierarchy asserted, and sought to enforce, was what the Puritan saw clearly as his right; it was one of the promised advantages dearest to his heart, to be gained by his removal to some distant and obscure retreat, that there he would be less subject to jealous observation and easy interference, than under the immediate eye of the Lords Spiritual of England. Seeing his way so far, plainly, he set about modeling his church order accordingly, when he arrived in his new home. The church brotherhood was sufficient unto itself. The local group of Christian people acquainted with one another, and assembling together, were competent to proceed with their worship in their own preferred way and to maintain their Christian fellowship on such grounds and conditions as seemed to them Scriptural and fitting, always under a common acknowledged responsibility to their consciences and their God. This was practically "separatism," or "independency," but as yet they did not call it by that name.

This state of things was favorable to the growth of a free and natural church life, such as would develop spontaneously under the existing conditions. There was no preconceived form to which all intellectual conclusions, spiritual aspirations and prophetic visions must mold their expression. Precedents sat loosely upon them. They asked themselves what they wanted, and what best satisfied their religious hunger and need, with the consciousness of a liberty of choice to which they had not been accustomed. So they felt their way along tentatively into the adoption of a church life such as suited their case as they found it then and there existing, regarding it at the same time as subject to modification as they should find it thereafter to require. If they made mistakes, they were free to repair them. They did make mistakes. They could not help it. They were made up in their individuality of the old traditions and the new longings. They put their free principles on trial, and when they ran against some rock of rare and exceptional individualism like Roger Williams, or some apprehended social outcome of the largest liberality, like the familism or antinomianism, as they regarded it, of Ann Hutchinson, they felt a strain upon their before unquestioned postulates, and studied out the problem as they best could, to arrive sooner or later at some practical conclusion as to the next step necessary to be taken. They made their church polity, as has been happily said, as they went along. The churches of New England had this opportunity to grow up without an excess of swathing prescriptions, and profited by it as a child in an out-door life, and with not too much sheltering, dictation and repression of its activity, often derives strength from its freedom.

This little Puritan colony was yet a child—in the principles and art of constructing society, framing government and learning how to live together in a self-controlling community, how to draw the line between what might be safely conceded to individual choice and what must be enacted for the general good; it was a child, it thought as a child, it understood as a child, in this new learning. In finding out how to use its newly-acquired liberty without abusing it, it could not leap to the highest wisdom at a bound. It must sometimes stumble and fall. If it rose again and went on to better things, taught by experience to avoid its earlier mistakes, its experiment was to be accounted a success. Man's idealism and his hard, practical wisdom for daily use in every-day life never walk together with even feet. The one hastens, the other lags; the one sees forward, the other is half-blind, and only trusts in experience looking backward. Each corrects the other with much confidence that, both as to speed and direction, it is entitled to govern. It was as inevitable as it was human that the Puritan should sometimes push on with a daring that, to his old associates, seemed rashness, and sometimes manifest what posterity, with the teachings and experience of centuries behind it, to assure and reassure its judgment, loftily pronounces timidity and inexcusable inconsistency. A sufferer for his own dissent, how could he be so inconsistent as to turn and excommunicate, exile and crush out the dissenter from his own creed and church order? It was simply because it fell to him to pass upon the questions that came to him for judgment two and a-half centuries ago, and not now. Where to draw the line between the liberty that is permissible and safe and the license that is reckless of consequences and destructive and must be checked —this is the question that is always up, with the individual and with society, lasting on from age to age, but with applications new and difficult perpetually arising in practice. It is as much our predicament as

it was that of Endicott and Winthrop, of Cotton and Higginson and Williams centuries back. Have we not to decide to-day whether men who, for aught we know, are as honest and sincere as we are, shall be allowed openly and enthusiastically to teach any crowd it can gather, in the streets of any city, that the laws that they live under are oppressive, were enacted in the interest of the strong and rich and overbearing, and may be cast off, and the very foundations of society upturned and overthrown without scruple, whenever the power can be obtained for the purpose? Add to this, that a problem more delicate and difficult still was before the Puritan mind, viz., how to steer clear of offense to the jealous and watchful home government, and at the same time preserve the liberties they had come here to enjoy, and were fully determined to maintain, and the hard conditions under which this Puritan child community was taking its tutelage may be the better appreciated, and a too free criticism of the inhabitants of New England in the first half of the seventeenth century will be likely to be postponed.

Another condition in the circumstances under which the first settlers of New England organized their church system must not be overlooked, for it had a constant influence in giving a cast to the thought as well as a shape to the covenants, the discipline, the teachings and the whole institutional life of the people. This was the fact that the same community was regarded as both a church and a state. It was working out a double problem. Half consciously and half unconsciously, its citizens were striving, in the dual capacity of citizens and Christian disciples, to realize at once, and in one, an ideal commonwealth and a true church. So, half consciously and half unconsciously, each of them, the church and the commonwealth, was tending to usurp at any time the functions of the other, and for a considerable period these New England communities were in the process of finding out whether or not the one could stand for the other; if not, how far the union was possible, and the identification could be made to hold. Though to the mind of the Puritan the problem inclined always to state itself in the form of the question, whether, in the last result, the church, as representing more nearly the divine government, must not of right absorb to itself, as the higher and as sole heir of both, all inferior authorities, and take the ordering of human society in all its interests and relations under its own direction, and whether thus the ancient dream of a theocratic rule was not to come to realization in the earth, and that here, first, upon these American shores. The spell of this great hope was upon him alike when he set up tribunals for the trial and punishment of offenders against the peace of society, and when he fixed upon the true order of proceeding in church affairs. Qualifications for citizenship and for church membership constantly threatened with him to run into each other, get mixed and to become one and the same thing. And in the civil and the spiritual sphere alike he was free to enter on experiments which should test the practicability of his long-cherished theories. He made laws, and instituted courts, and prescribed magistracies, and called into being agencies of government, a step at a time, as exigencies arose and as new conditions pushed him to decisions, which he had been willing to leave till some necessity drove him to judgment and action.

As a fact going to show in strong relief the predominance of religious motive and purpose in the settlement of New England, the very leading part taken by the ministers in the administration of public affairs is to be noted. For a considerable period they were but little less conspicuous as counselors and founders in the establishment of civil government and in its conduct, than in constituting churches, settling what should be done in ecclesiastical matters and directing both worship and religious instruction. And these ministers of the earlier times of New England possessed high qualifications for the duties they were called to perform. Belonging to that class of persons whose original force of character and independence of thought and action had caused their exclusion from church dignities and chances of preferment in the Church of England, they had had the best training which the universities of Cambridge and Oxford afforded. "By the practice in the colony," it has been said, "the General Court, from time to time, propounded questions to the ministers or elders which they answered in writing. The proceeding was similar to that under a provision of the Constitution requiring the justices of the Supreme Judicial Court to give to either branch of the Legislature, or the Governor and Council, upon request, opinions upon important questions of law and upon solemn occasions. The opinions given by the ministers, which have been preserved, are very able, and will, in logic and sound reasoning, bear a not unfavorable comparison with opinions of justices given under the provision of our Constitution."[1]

Rev. Edward E. Hale, D.D., whose large information respecting early American history justly gives great weight to his statements, while discrediting the common notion that the early ministers of Massachusetts exercised the controlling or leading influence in affairs of civil government which history and tradition have ascribed to them, nevertheless says this of them: "There can be little doubt that John Cotton, minister of the First Church [in Boston], had very great authority here, while he lived, of a social or political character. There can be no doubt, humanly speaking, but that Boston is Boston, because he came and lived here, be it observed, because Winthrop and Dudley wanted him to, and begged him to. . . . And probably few affairs of importance were decided

[1] Hon. William D. Northend: Address before Essex Bar Association, p. 7. (N.)

in which Cotton did not take part, and in which his advice was not respected." It is difficult to see upon what grounds Cotton is thus assigned a weight of influence wholly exceptional, so that it could be said that "no trace of any such power appeared afterward." If "there were countless instances," as Dr. Hale says there were, "when the ministers met with the court, advised with them and were consulted as any other intelligent gentlemen might be consulted," we read between these lines that many ministers were found to be "intelligent gentlemen," whom the court deemed it important to consult. Official respect purely, and authority as ecclesiastics it is not claimed that they received. Quite otherwise. In the first church organized in Massachusetts—that in Salem—those who had been ministers in the English Church were first "reduced to the ranks" among the Salem brethren, and then *by those brethren* raised or set apart to the position of ministers. "There were present, at the time, and on the spot," says Upham, "at least four persons who had borne the ministerial office in distinguished positions, men of talent, learning and reputation, and eminent in worth as well as station."[1] If they had great influence afterward, it was because by their solid intelligence and their consistent Christian carriage they entitled themselves to a leading influence. "The leaders led as they always will," says Dr. Hale, words emphatically applicable to men like Higginson, Williams and Peters, as well as to Cotton. "The clergy," says Palfrey, in a *résumé* of the state of the Massachusetts colony in 1634, "now thirteen or fourteen in number, constituted in some sort a separate estate of special dignity. Though they were excluded from secular office, the relation of their functions to the spirit and aim of the community which had been founded, as well as their personal weight of ability and character, gave great authority to their advice. Nearly all were graduates of Oxford or Cambridge, and had held livings in the Established Church of England. Several had been eminent among their fellows for all professional endowments."

The theology of the Salem colonists, as of the settlers of New England generally, was Calvinistic. The formularies emanating from the Westminster Assembly of divines embody it with virtual accuracy. It was held with no half indifference, no mental reservations; not merely for substance of doctrine. Face to face, with a will to blink nothing of the terrible inferences involved, as before God, the sombre creed was confessed. And though, with Robinson, these confessors believed that more light would break forth from the word of God, they anticipated no such light as would soften the rigors of the divine government or lift the crushing doom of eternal pains from the non-elect—from the unbeliever and the impenitent who remained hardened to the hour of death. This was the Puritan's creed. His human feeling of compassion and justice was too strong against it in many a genial hour, and in many a sympathetic temperament, and he took refuge, as often as occasion required, from unbearable thoughts of the fate of the wretched lost, and unbearable thoughts of God, in the comforting sentences of Scripture that reminded him that God would have mercy and not sacrifice.

The first church in New England was that at Plymouth. It landed a completed church. The next, the first gathered upon the soil, was that at Salem. Its beginning possesses a curious interest and throws invaluable light upon the principles and aims that guided the founders of the earlier colonial churches. At every point in the proceedings it may be seen that it was a natural and gradual growth, rather than an artificial construction, built upon precedents. It appears that seventeen days intervened between the first step taken in the business of organization and the final one. The 6th of August, 1629, has usually been assumed as the date of its institution. We should rather assign it to the 20th of July. On that day it exercised the highest functions of a corporate body, viz., held an election—voting in the choice of its most important officers, viz., those of pastor and teacher. True, it had no written constitution yet. Its covenant was not adopted till more than two weeks afterwards. So far as appears, it had not yet a list of enrolled members. "Every fit member wrote, in a note, his name whom the Lord moved him to think was fit for a pastor, and so likewise, whom they would have for teacher." But nothing indicates how it was determined who were to be deemed "fit members." Perhaps it was by general assent of the assembly, any ballot being received if no objection was made. Perhaps each one was put upon his own conscience to decide for himself whether he ought to participate in the vote. At least the result was accepted without question or dispute. The day had been appointed as a "solemn day of humiliation for the choice of a pastor and teacher." It was a public assembly, meeting in response to this appointment which took action. "The former part of the day being spent in praise and teaching, the latter part was spent about the election."

We are forbidden to suppose that this was a mere preliminary and informal selection, intended to be ratified later, by the fact that the church then and there proceeded to set apart the pastor and teacher-elect with solemn and formal ceremony of official investment. "So the most voice was for Mr. Skelton to be pastor and Mr. Higginson to be teacher; and they accepting the choice, Mr. Higginson, with three or four more of the gravest members of the church, laid their hands on Mr. Skelton, using prayers therewith. This being done, then there was imposition of hands on Mr. Higginson." Here are all the circumstances indicative of a completed installation of these two chief officers of the church; and this was on the 20th of July. When the church or assembly proceeded to its

[1] Address at rededication of the church, 1867, p. 12.

next action, which was the choice of elders and deacons, it did leave *that* business uncompleted, at that time, to be finished at a later day. After going so far as to designate the persons of its choice—perhaps by what we might call an informal ballot—it is quaintly added by Mr. Charles Gott, in his letter to Governor Bradford, that "they were only named, and laying on of hands deferred to see if it pleased God to send us more able men over." It is true that at the meeting which followed, August 6th, "appointed for another solemn day of humiliation for the full choice of elders and deacons, and ordaining them," not only were the elders and deacons chosen and set apart to their respective offices in a formal and solemn manner, but some ceremony of ordination took place also, in seeming repetition of that by which, on the 20th of July, the pastor and teacher had been ordained. In looking for the reasons for this we are left largely to conjecture. Whatever may have occurred in the consultations held by those interested between July 20th and August 6th, the *election*, which had taken place on the former day, must have been deemed valid, for it was left undisturbed, and no like form was gone through with again. But the church at Plymouth had been notified of the occasion, and representatives of that church had been invited and were expected to be present on August 6th. Their approval and assurance of fellowship were also expected to be given, and were valued, though especial care was taken that it should be understood beforehand that this proffered fellowship would be welcomed on the part of the Salem Church simply as an act of Christian courtesy and brotherly communion, and not as implying any ecclesiastical jurisdiction in one church over another. There had been correspondence previously between them of Plymouth and these of Salem in regard to the true principles and right method of church foundation and organization, in which there had appeared to be a general harmony of views and the utmost good feeling, though not entire concurrence in all points.

On the 6th of August a covenant was to be presented for adoption, and a more definite recognition and enrollment of the members of the church was to be made by signing and accepting the covenant. In the absence of any definite testimony going to show the motive for the renewal of the act of ordination—the laying on of hands—upon the pastor and teacher-elect, we venture to think that it may have been partly that, upon review of the proceedings of July 20th, it was thought that the adoption and signing of the covenant would more properly have preceded the ordaining of the ministers; partly, perhaps, that the contemplated full constitution of the church designed to go into effect on the later day, together with the expected presence on that day of the Governor and others, messengers from the Plymouth Church, as guests of the Salem brethren, and appointed to bring greetings from the older sister church, made it seem to those who arranged the proceedings, fitting that the induction of the chosen ministers of the church into office should form a part of the observances of the time, as essential to their completeness. Governor Bradford and his associates from Plymouth, "coming by sea and hindered by cross-winds," did not arrive till late in the day; but though not present at the beginning, "they came into the assembly afterwards, and gave them the right hand of fellowship, wishing all prosperity, and a blessed success unto such good beginnings."

To assist us in determining—if that is possible—what was the form of the covenant adopted by the Salem Church in 1629, and to explain some of the controversies which have arisen over this question, it is necessary to present here certain facts in regard to the history of the records of this church.

No records made contemporaneously, or nearly so, with the events and facts which they record are now in existence of an earlier period than 1660, the time when the ministry of John Higginson began. John Higginson was the son of Francis,who was chosen the first teacher in the Salem Church July 20, 1629, and who drew up the covenant adopted August 6th of the same year. There was a book of records purporting to cover the period from 1629 to 1660 in existence when John Higginson was ordained, or at least from 1636 to 1660; when and how it began is obscure. It appears to have borne upon its pages some things which it seemed to the most considerate and exemplary members of the church not well to hand down to posterity. A committee was appointed accordingly "to review the church book and to report such things to the church as they conceive worthy of consideration." In their report the committee say that: "They conceived the book itself and paper of it being old, not well bound, and in some places having been wet and torn, and not legible, is not like to last long to be of use to posterity; therefore they thought it best if it were kept in a place of safety by the Elders—*by that means it will be of use so long as it will last.* Only some few passages in it, which do reflect upon particular persons, or upon the whole church, without any church vote, and without the proof, they did mark in the book as thinking they should be struck out." At the same time, "some of the brethren propounded, which was readily consented to, that there might be liberty, to such as desired it, to see those passages mentioned in the former book for a month's time." This recommendation appears to have been satisfactory to the church, and to have been adopted and carried into effect. It accomplished all that was expected of it—perhaps more. Not only were the objectionable parts withdrawn from sight, but the book itself disappeared, and except some portions of it which were transcribed into the new book of records, begun by John Higginson in 1660, its contents are unknown. It has been assumed that all that was important in it would be likely to be preserved, and to be contained in the record of the second Hig-

ginson. Very likely. We shall probably never know. Some will never cease to regret that they cannot know. If not important in any other sense, some will always think that even the expunged records are important to the completeness of history, and wish that it had been permitted them also to judge for themselves the wisdom of suppressing them. It would be interesting, no doubt, to see what picture the stormy time of Roger Williams' ministry left of itself on the old record-book. At least, as to the faithfulness and accuracy of the copy of those portions, purporting to be transcribed from the first book into the second, as far as they go, there should be no valid ground of doubt. But just here a new question, and an important one, precipitates itself upon us as to this very point—namely, the accuracy of the copy. The old book, the first book of records, appears to have been begun no earlier than 1636, with the beginning of the ministry of Rev. Hugh Peters;[1] consequently its record of events at the organization of the church, in 1629, was not strictly contemporaneous with the events. When we read there the covenant of 1629, as renewed in 1636, what confidence may we rightly have that the renewed covenant was the same that Francis Higginson wrote, and the church in Salem adopted August 6, 1629? Was it the same in substance only, or likewise in form? Over this question a spirited controversy has arisen within the last fifty years.

John Higginson, minister of the church from 1660 to 1708, and son of the framer of the covenant, himself, as a youth of thirteen, having joined the church in 1629, solemnly renewing this covenant with the church in 1660, records it as having been already "renewed" by the church in 1636, and he is our authority for saying that it is the covenant adopted in 1629, as he indorses it as such, the record in the margin running thus: "6 of 6th month, 1629, this covenant was publicly Signed and Declared, as may appear from page 85, in this book." To this, as renewed in 1660, is prefixed a preamble adopted with it in 1636, which states the fact and shows the motive of the renewal at that time, 1636, and an additional article is appended to it at the end, which was adopted with it at the renewal, in 1660, as applicable to the relation of the church to the Quakers at *that* time, the fact and the motive of the addendum being likewise plainly stated. Mr. Higginson's intention seems clearly and unmistakably to have been to present the covenant of 1629 in its original and unaltered form, and to distinguish from it carefully the prefix and suffix above referred to as no part of it. We introduce it here as it stood, unquestioned, for more than two hundred years. And to make evident the parts added in 1636 and in 1660, it is given as it stands in the record of Mr. John Higginson in 1660,—

Gather my Saints together unto me that have made a Covenant with me by sacrifice. Psa. 50 : 5:

6. *of 6th Month.* 1629, *This Covenant was ublickly Signed and Declared, as may appear from page* 85, *in this Book.*

Wee whose names are here under wrtten, members of the present Church of Christ in Salem, having found by sad experience how dangerous it is to sitt loose to the Covenant wee make with our God: 2nd How Apt wee are to wander into by pathes, even to the looseing of our first aimes in entring into Church fellowship: Doe therefore solemnly in the presence of the Eternall God, both for our own comforts, and those which shall or maye be joyned unto us, renewe that Church Covenant we find this Church bound unto at theire first beginning, viz: That

We covenant with the Lord, and one with an other; and doe bynd our selves in the presence of God, to walke together in all his waies, according as he is pleased to reveale himself unto us in his Blessed word of truth. And doe more explicitely in the name and feare of God, profess and protest to walke as followeth, through the power and grace of our Lord Jesus.

1 first wee avowe the Lord to be our God, and our selves his people in the truth and simplicitie of our Spirits.

2 Wee give our selves to the Lord Jesus Christ and the word of his grace, fore the teaching, ruleing and sanctifyeing of us in matters of worship, and Conversation, resolveing to cleave to him alone for life and glorie; and oppose all contrarie wayes, cannons and constitutions of men in his worship.

3 Wee promise to walke with our brethren and sisters in this Congregation with all watchfullnes and tendernes, avoyding all jelousies, suspitions, backbyteings, censurings, provoakings, secrete risings of spirite against them; but in all offences to follow the rule of the Lord Jesus, and to beare and forbeare, give and forgive, as he hath taught us.

4 In publick or in private, we will willingly doe nothing to the ofence of the Church but will be willing to take advise for our selves and ours, as ocasion shall be presented.

5 Wee will not in the Congregation be forward eyther to shew oure oune gifts or parts in speaking or scrupling, or there discover the fayling of oure brethren or sisters butt atend an orderly cale there unto; knowing how much the Lord may be dishonoured, and his Gospell, in the profession of it, sleighted, by our distempers, and weaknesses in publyck.

6 We bynd our selves to studdy the advancement of the Gospell in all truth and peace, both in regard of those that are within, or without, noe way sleighting our sister Churches, but using theire Counsell as need shalbe: nor laying a stumbling block before any, noe, not the Indians, whose good we desire to promote, and soe to converse, as we may avoyd the verrye appearance of evill.

7 Wee hearbye promise to carrye our selves in all lawfull obedience, to those that are over us, in Church or Commonweale, knowing how well pleasing it will be to the Lord, that they should have incouragement in theire places, by our not grieveing theyre spirites through our Irregularities.

8 Wee resolve to approve our selves to the Lord, in our perticular calings, shunning ydleness as the bane of any state, nor will wee deale hardly, or oppressingly with any, wherein we are the Lord's stewards:

9 alsoe promysing to our best abilitie to teach our children and servants the knowledg of God and his will, that they may serve him also; and all this, not by any strength of our owne, but by the Lord Christ; whose bloud we desire may sprinckle this our Covenant made in his name.

This Covenant was renewed by the Church on a sollemne day of Humiliation 6 *of* 1 *moneth* 1660. *When also considering the power of Temptation amongst us by reason of ye Quakers doctrine to the leavening of some in the place where we are and endangering of others, doe see cause to remember the Admonition of our Saviour Christ to his disciples Math.* 16.

Take heed and beware of ye leaven of the doctrine of the Pharisees and doe judge so farre as we understand it yt ye Quakers doctrine is as bad or worse than that of ye Pharisees; Therefore we doe Covenant by the help of Jesus Christ to take heed and beware of the leaven of the doctrine of the Quakers.

The preamble, postscript and marginal note we have italicized.

Until about fifty years ago, no doubt is known to have been publicly expressed or privately entertained

[1] He wrote his own name *Peter*. It has been the modern usage to write it *Peters*. Dr. Palfrey, in his "History of New England," writes it *Peter*.

that the covenant, as renewed in 1636, was, with a near approach to verbal accuracy, the same that was adopted in 1629. In connection with a "discourse delivered on the First Centennial Anniversary of the Tabernacle Church," in 1835, by Rev. Samuel M. Worcester, pastor of that church, and published, the author places the covenant of 1636—the foregoing covenant of these pages—in an appendix, with the following passage taken from its first paragraph in quotation marks, namely: "That we covenant with the Lord, and one with another, and do bind ourselves, in the presence of God, to walk together in all his ways, according as he is pleased to reveal himself unto us in his blessed word of truth:" and follows the quotation with this explanatory observation, "I have seen fit to throw into the form of a quotation that part of the Preamble of the foregoing Covenant, *which I suspect was, in substance at least,* THE COVENANT *'which the church was bound unto at their first beginning.'*" [The italics are ours] This conclusion, though couched at first in the form of a suspicion, was fortified with sundry reasons to support it, and affirmed later in more confident terms: "The conclusion is to my mind irresistible from the *internal evidence alone,* that the covenant printed in the Magnalia of Mather [that of 1636 as given above], and often cited as the covenant of the First Church at its beginning, could not have been the *first* Covenant of that church."

Again, in a discourse delivered at Plymouth December 22, 1848, and published the following year, Dr. Worcester reiterates the same opinion with greater emphasis, and qualified by no doubts: "What has been generally printed, for a hundred and fifty years, as the First Covenant of that church, and adopted August 6, 1629, *is not that covenant.* It was adopted as a special covenant in 1636" is his confident decision, which he proceeded to support with the asserted facts and resulting reasonings which had brought his mind to this conviction. And yet, again in 1854, in discussion of the same subject before the Essex Institute, the same ground was firmly maintained by him. In the next year, 1855, two publications appeared, both issued by the Congregational Board of Publication, which gave their sanction to this later view of the first covenant. One was "The Ecclesiastical History of New England," etc., by Joseph B. Felt, Vol. I., and the other a new edition of Morton's "New England's Memorial," in the appendix to which the editor, or editors, indorse the same conclusion. Mr. Felt says,[1] that "this covenant [of 1629] differs from the second, formed 1636, which has long been supposed to be the first, and from the hand of Higginson, when it was probably drawn up by Peters at the later date." He appears to have relied, as Dr. Worcester had done, mainly on internal evidence as his warrant for this belief.[2]

In the new edition of "Morton's New England's Memorial," Appendix A, under the heading "The Articles of Faith and Covenant of 1629," there is attributed to the editor of an earlier edition of the work, the learned Judge John Davis, an important oversight in not discovering that with the covenant of 1629 was adopted a separate confession of faith, and in misinterpreting history, in that he omitted to connect this confession of faith with the covenant of 1629 as a virtual part of the constitution of the church at its beginning.

The foregoing authorities,—Worcester, Felt and the editors of "Morton's Memorial," edition of 1855, witnessing to the strong probability, if not moral certainty of considerable and important differences between the covenant of 1629 and the renewed covenant of 1636 (*if they be not reducible to one authority, viz.: the Rev. Dr. Worcester, followed by the others*), lay especial stress upon the indications, or proofs, that the covenant of 1629 was adopted *jointly with a creed, or confession of articles of belief.* The covenant proper of 1629 they believe to have been materially shorter than that of 1636, but to have had this credal adjunct, which made the church constitution of 1629 to differ greatly from the renewed covenant of 1636 in being distinctly and emphatically doctrinal in its aspect.

An arraignment so weighty as this of what had passed for verified history for many generations, though sustained by a support so considerable, and by names of repute, was not likely to go long unchallenged. Nor did it. Taking only the time necessary to subject the evidence in the case to a rigid re-examination, the Hon. Daniel A. White, judge of probate of Essex County, and a leading member of the First Church for many years, replied to the published statements of Rev. Dr. Worcester, in which the traditions current for a couple of centuries as undisputed truth were set aside as we have seen with great assurance as founded in misconception—as sanctioning "an egregious and singular error." Point by point the champion of the long accredited opinion,—namely, that *the covenant of* 1636 *was, with no material difference, the covenant of* 1629,—stoutly contended for the trustworthiness of the ancient and long unquestioned opinion. The testimony of John Higginson was held to be explicit. His knowledge of the facts was not to be impeached. What Cotton Mather said of the first covenant was also to be accepted, he contended, with as much confidence as if it had been said by Higginson himself, for he, Higginson, wrote that, having "known the beginning and progress of these (New England) churches unto this day, and having read over much of this history (in the Magnalia), I cannot but in the love and fear of God bear witness to the truth of it." The first covenant is given by Mather as agreeing with that of 1636, only differing from it in lacking its preamble. The important testimony of Rev. John Fiske is also

[1] Page 115. [2] Page 267.

cited by Mr. White—only lately brought to light, but dating almost from the renewal of the Covenant in 1636, as Mr. Fiske came to Salem, from England, in 1637, and was for some time an assistant of Rev. Mr. Peters. In Mr. Fiske's private book of records "we find recorded," says Judge White, "in the handwriting of Mr. Fiske, the First Covenant of the Salem Church, with the preamble to its renewal, . . . Mr. Fiske's record of the Covenant being essentially the same as that which we have taken from the Salem Church book" (that already presented in this writing).

The "confession of faith," which Dr. Worcester supposes was adopted by the church in 1629, in connection with the first covenant, Mr. White believes —and believes he has proved—was of much later date, probably 1680, and was expressly declared not to be intended, even at that date, to be imposed as a rigid test upon all candidates for admission to the church. He produces much evidence to show that the imposition of doctrinal tests as a uniform and indispensable condition of admission to church membership was expressly disavowed by the church at the beginning, and that for a long time at least it consistently adhered in practice to the position thus taken. Not denying that Mr. Francis Higginson was commissioned "to draw up a confession of faith and covenant in Scripture language," or that he did so, he finds all that these terms describe and define in the single instrument commonly known and spoken of as the first covenant; "covenant," or "confession of faith and Covenant," he finds it called, the terms being used interchangeably, and when designated as "the confession of faith and covenant," the pronoun referring to it is in the singular number, indicating but one instrument or writing. Morton, having full knowledge of things from the beginning, writes, in his "New England's Memorial:" "The confession of faith and covenant fore-mentioned was acknowledged only as a direction, pointing unto that faith and covenant contained in the holy Scripture, and therefore no man was confined unto that form of words, but only to the substance, end and scope of the matter contained therein. . . . Some were admitted by expressing their consent to that written confession of faith and covenant; others did answer to questions about the principles of religion that were publicly propounded to them; some did present their confession in writing, which was read for them, and some that were able and willing, did make their confession in their own words and way. A due respect was also had unto the conversations of men, viz.: that they were without scandal."[1]

Besides much other external and historical evidence, too voluminous to be introduced here, but presented as bearing upon the writer's main conclusion and fortifying it, Judge White comments also carefully upon the internal evidence in the alleged anachronisms contained in the covenant of 1636, much relied upon to prove that it could not have been the same as that of 1629. On this point he dissents from the judgment expressed by Dr. Worcester, Mr. Felt and the editors of "Morton's Memorial," edition of 1855, and at the same time equally forecloses, it may be here observed, by unconscious anticipations, so far as the weight of his name goes, a similar opinion from another source presently to be noticed,—an opinion not expressed till after Judge White's death, —by his former pastor, Rev. Charles W. Upham.

This opinion of Rev. Mr. Upham is remarkable, not only for the weight that justly attaches to any opinion of his upon matters to which he had given many years of study, and to which he brought a trained mind and habits of research, but still more for the reason that it is a direct reversal of an earlier opinion of his own on a point since strenuously controverted, without so much as an allusion on his part to any change of opinion, or to any judgment previously entertained and expressed, and now abandoned or modified; remarkable, moreover, as being in direct opposition to the well-known and elaborately-maintained opinion of his able and candid parishioner, Judge White, with whom he had been in life-long associations of intimacy, and the worth of whose deliberate judgment he knew so well how to estimate, and yet to his dissent from whose judgment he makes no reference whatever that we have been able to discover. Mr. Upham's last conclusion, in regard to the identity of the covenant of 1629 with that renewed in 1636, is against it, and agrees with that of Dr. Worcester—that there were two covenants; that of 1629 very short, that of 1636 quite long. But on Dr. Worcester's more important position, that there were articles of belief required to be adopted as a confession of faith, distinct from the covenant, but in force in connection with it, in 1629,—against this opinion Mr. Upham expresses himself on all occasions distinctly and emphatically.

It is to be remembered that Rev. Charles W. Upham, whom we now cite, was for twenty years pastor of the First Church (from 1824 to 1844), conversant with its records and with early Salem history, and the author of important historical discourses of commemoration, delineating with great fullness of detail the story of the early days of the Salem Church. Mr. Upham delivered a "*Second Century Lecture of the First Church*" in 1829 of a historical character, and gives in an appendix, as the "first covenant of the First Church," the covenant already given on a preceding page of this work, it being the same as that which was renewed in 1636, he holding—that is, at that time—to the long-established and settled opinion upon the question in hand. Mr. Upham remarks at the end of the covenant that "at a very early period

[1] "New England's Memorial," Davis' edition, pp. 146–147. See also a tract, without date (in Boston Athenæum Library. "B. 76: Sermons"), entitled "A Direction," etc. Referred to by both Dr. Worcester and Judge White as bearing upon this question.

this covenant was displaced by another. It was restored and renewed at the ordination of John Higginson in 1660. In the course of time it was again superseded, and for many years has not been used in the church." How much he may have meant by the expression, "at a very early period this covenant was displaced by another," we cannot tell. He does not specify as to the time or the extent of the displacement. He may have had in mind the preamble of 1636; if more than that, we cannot interpret his language, since no other changes are known to us previous to 1660.

On the 8th of December, 1867, Mr. Upham delivered an address at the re-dedication of the First Church building. Without intimating an abandonment of a former judgment, he incidentally shows that his judgment upon the matter in question was quite different in 1867 from that he had expressed nearly forty years before, thus: "This renewed covenant of 1636 bears the impress of the style of thought and expression of Hugh Peters, whose name heads the list as from that date. . . . In most of the clauses the language and forms of thought were, as plainly appears, suggested by circumstances that had disturbed the peace and harmony of the church during the stormy agitations and conflicts of Roger Williams' period, and are therefore of temporary and retrospective interest. The passages that have no such special reference, but express sentiments of universal and perpetual obligation, are inscribed on the opposite wall. It will be noticed that it begins by quoting from the covenant at the 'first beginning' of the church. From the aspect of the document in the church book, and its entire construction and import, it is highly probable that what is inscribed on that tablet in German text *is all that was taken from the first covenant.* It is so complete in itself that *the inference* which the form of the document and the bearings of the contents seem to suggest, *that it was the whole of that document, is almost unavoidable.*"

What was "inscribed on that tablet in German text" was this,—

"*We covenant with the Lord, and one with another, and do bind ourselves in the presence of God, to walk together in all his ways, according as He is pleased to reveal Himself unto us, in His blessed word of truth.*"

And this, says Mr. Upham, "it is highly probable is all that was taken from the first covenant."

Perhaps no expression of our own opinion is called for, as to who is right in this controversy. If we have fairly placed the facts before the reader, and especially if we refer him to the authorities in which he may find the merits of the question exhaustively treated (as we propose to do at the end of this article), we shall put him in the way to form his own opinion for himself, if he cares to do so. We dismiss the interesting inquiry by simply calling attention, further, to the fact that those who have sought to invalidate the long-settled opinion that the covenant "renewed" in 1636 is the same that was adopted at the founding of the church in 1629, appear to rest their argument and conclusion mainly upon the internal evidence afforded by the document itself. In resting their case upon that, they give it, as it seems to us, its best support, the weight of the historical evidence alone being insufficient to sustain their position. Both Mr. Upham and Dr. Worcester think they find in the covenant, as renewed in 1636, traces of the church agitations, and of the special controversies intervening between 1629 and 1636. Mr. White does not. Mr. Upham, moreover, finds that "this renewed covenant of 1636 bears the impress of the style of thought and expression of Hugh Peters." Mr. White could not discover this.

It should be borne in mind that this kind of evidence, while it may be strong and convincing in some cases, is peculiarly liable to take a more marked or a slighter coloring, or even an opposite hue, according to the interpreter's direction of approach and resulting point of view. It needs a judicial impartiality, a very complete knowledge of the religious history of the time, and a keen and much practiced literary perception, to pass intelligently and convincingly upon such points. The difficulty is heightened by the circumstance that the very power of the recreative imagination, so necessary to reproduce vividly the life and thought of a past period, is itself often a snare and becomes an easy and frequent cause of the misconstruction of language. We follow with caution, and not without a measure of distrust, a line of argument which grounds important inferences upon what are at best only inferences from premises incapable of verification, therefore not compelling assent.

No fact comes out more conspicuously in the early history of the Salem Church than that it intended to guard well its own independence. It was conscious of a new departure. It trod its untried way with caution, but with a firm foot. It was determined to make sure of this, namely, that the unit of human authority in matters ecclesiastical should be the body of members congregating and covenanting together in church fellowship, in any one appointed place which should give it local habitation and name. Each such congregation was competent and commissioned to manage its own affairs. It need acknowledge no earthly superior. The Scriptures were its law-book. In them it would seek to find out the mind of Christ, the Head of the Church, in whom resided, for it, the ultimate sovereignty in spiritual things. It was glad to exchange assurances of mutual good-will and fellowship with the elder sister church at Plymouth. It had no intention of cutting itself off from Christian fraternal relations with the churches of the mother-country, and stood with an anticipating hand of welcome stretched forth in brotherly recognition to all the New-World congregations of Christian people which it foresaw planting themselves in a long succession by its side, and all around. But each church

within its own borders constituted, under the Divine Head, a dominion of its own. It was in pursuance of this principle that the First Church in Salem had unmade the before-ordained ministers found within its own fold at the beginning, that it might make them ministers of its own creation and invest them with right and title to their office from itself.

In other ways, it availed of every opportunity that offered to reassert this principle. It looked with distrust upon a proposed affiliation of its ministers with the ministers of other churches in pastoral associations, fearing that these associations would come in time to claim some power of direction and control within the churches, or would invent some form of ecclesiastical bondage, into which the churches of the colony might be drawn unconsciously, to the loss of their complete self-government. It was not long after its foundation before it conceived its independence to be seriously threatened. Other churches which had sprung up around it, and such as had an honorable and weighty constituency, showed a disposition to meddle in its affairs by taking cognizance of teachings by the Salem ministers, which they regarded as not agreeing with the Scriptures, nor as being consistent with the peace and welfare of the community of new settlements in the colony. As often as there appeared to be occasion for it, this church reaffirmed, in clear and strenuous language, its purpose not to suffer its fellowship,—which it extended freely and gladly as a sympathetic, helpful, brotherly communion, to all churches and all Christians,—not to suffer it to become an entangling alliance, which might endanger its own freedom and autonomy. There was abundant justification for these precautions in the usurpation of ecclesiastical authority with which these Salem Christians had been lately only too familiar in England, and which warned them to keep a jealous guard against the forging of new fetters of spiritual domination and oppression this side the sea, under the guise of better symbols of church order and of Christian living.

The officers of the church as first organized in Salem were, besides the pastor and teacher, one or more ruling elders, deacons and deaconesses. Between pastor and teacher no distinction of precedence appears to have been observed. It is probable that in the performance of their respective duties it was found that the work of each naturally overlapped that of the other to a considerable extent, and that experience showed before long that it was better to combine the two offices in one, as was done.

The duties belonging to the office of the ruling elder were not very distinctly defined. He was an assistant to the pastor and teacher, but while under their general direction, he had an independent voice also as adviser and administrator in church affairs. The office came to Plymouth from Holland with the Pilgrim Church. That church found it in the Reformed Churches of the Continent and referred to the French Reformed Churches as its own precedent for establishing it, though in the French Churches the ability to teach was not held to be a necessary qualification for a ruling elder, as it was in the Dutch-English and American Churches.[1] For a hundred and fifty years, at least, ruling elders were chosen by some churches in Massachusetts as necessary to their complete organization, although Mr. Bentley says, "the office never existed but in name, and did not survive the first generation."[2] Mr. Bentley regards the office as having been designed to represent the power of the church itself on the part of its general membership, the elder standing as a permanent watchman and makeweight against all assumptions of special authority on the part of the ministers. After his brusque and vigorous fashion he indicates how far short of answering its end was the device, by his brief and contemptuous notice of those who were elected to the place. "In the choice of an elder to rule the church, care was taken not to accept a civil officer, and Elder Houghton was appointed. He was a man of inoffensive ambition, and died in the next year after his appointment. Mr. Samuel Sharpe succeeded him, but he was frequently absent, and never possessed even the shadow of power. He died in 1658. The independence of Mr. Williams and the sovereignty of Mr. Peters rendered the office useless in their time, and it never obtained its influence. When Mr. John Higginson, the son of Francis, in 1660, returned to Salem and attempted to revive the form of government which his father had adopted, Mr. John Browne was elected elder, but we find no other services but of attending, for a short time, the private instructions of the pastor, who had secured all the power." We have said that the office did not cease to be known with the first generation, or for a century and a half after, and it is true that the men called to the office even in the later years of its existence were not all colorless and valueless ciphers. But the fear of ministerial usurpation had very much died away, and the ruling elder was, in time, without functions, and disappeared. Mr. Bentley's assertion that it soon came to stand for little more than a name seems to be borne out by the history of the churches of the Massachusetts Colony.

Deacons, but not deaconesses, are mentioned as officers chosen at the organization of the Salem Church. They received the contributions of the church and distributed them, and made provision for the table of communion, serving also in the dispensation of the bread and wine in the observance. Deaconesses, if not chosen at once by the church at Salem, were, according to custom, regularly selected in the churches of the earliest colonial period. As at Plymouth, so at Salem. They were widows by preference, of at least three-score years, without carefully prescribed duties

[1] Felt's Eccl. Hist. Vol. i. p. 34.

[2] The North Church in Salem chose a ruling elder as late as 1826—pronounced by Felt "the only continuation of an ancient custom here."

as to details, but were appointed to carry on a general ministry of visiting and comforting among the sick, poor and distressed.

We have been more minute and explicit in specifying some of these forms of church-life and organization first adopted here, because this was the pioneer church. Offices, titles and usages now long familiar to every New England village were then new, or known only as existing in the English churches under other conditions, and where they had a different significance; here, under an old name, went a new thing. New methods were on trial, and were carefully observed and studied, and sought to be adjusted to the circumstances of the time and people, and were not immediately and once for all fixed in an unalterable form.

Francis Higginson lived but a year after the founding of the church. On the 6th of August, 1630, just a year from the day when its organization was completed, a day in whose doings he bore the leading part, he closed his earthly labors. He was born in 1588, and was, therefore, a little more than forty years of age when he came to Salem. He was a graduate of the famous English University of Cambridge — of Emanuel College, according to Mr. Upham; of Jesus, says Judge White; of St. John's, says F. S. Drake (American biography); and Mr. Savage (Geneal. Dict.), seemingly warranting and reconciling all these assignments, has it: "Bred at Jesus College, Cambridge, where he took his A.B., 1609, but was of St. John's when his A.M. was given, 1613, though Mather asserts he was of Emanuel." He was first settled in Leicester, England, where he had so high a reputation as a preacher that "the people flocked to hear him from the neighboring towns." Neal, historian of the Puritans, says, "he was a good scholar, of a sweet and affable behavior, and having a most charming voice, was one of the most acceptable and popular preachers of the country." Becoming a non-conformist he was ejected from his living and forbidden to preach in England. After this he resorted to teaching for a livelihood. He is characterized by Mr. Bentley as "grave in his deportment and pure in his morals. In his person he was slender, not tall; not easily changed from his purposes, but not rash in declaring them. His influence in giving form and direction to the first church polity in America was second to none." Mr. Bentley, by a few strokes, pictures some of the results of Mr. Higginson's brief ministry in the social customs of the newly-gathered community at Salem, and shows in what spirit and along what lines of influence he wrought: "He lived to secure the foundation of his church, to deserve the esteem of the colony and provide himself a name among the worthies of New England. When he died, he left in the colony the most sacred guards upon the public manners. Cards, dice, and all such amusements, had no share of favour. Family devotions were inculcated and established, and the most constant attendance on public worship. The ministers visited families to assist in their devotions. Constant care of the poor was required; the Indians were not permitted to trade in private houses; all the inhabitants were instructed to unite in the labours which promoted their common interest; and the greatest confidence was required in all who were appointed in civil trusts." (Pp. 244–245.)

Rev. Samuel Skelton, ordained the first pastor of the church, in association with Mr. Higginson as teacher, on the 20th of July, 1629, survived his colleague four years. He had been the minister of Governor Endicott, in England, and was held by him in especial affection and esteem, as one to whom he had reason to look up as his spiritual father. His name is less conspicuous in the early annals of the Massachusetts churches than that of Higginson. He seems to have been a modest and retiring man, and is described by a contemporary as "of gracious speech, full of faith, and furnished by the Lord with gifts from above." He was content to yield precedence to others, nor soured with jealousy when to them went the harvest of fame. "As he never acted alone," says Mr. Bentley, "he yielded to others all the praise of his best actions." The scant recognition accorded to him among those who led in church affairs in the earliest days is further explained by his biographer by the fact that "there was a want of friendship between the ministers of Boston and its neighborhood and the ministers of Salem. Everything which one party did was found fault with by the other." That he was a man of positive convictions and not lacking in courage would appear from his standing forward in defense of his colleague, Roger Williams, when the latter was assailed and in danger of being overborne by those who uttered the sentence of popular condemnation against him. Mr. Skelton was probably of about the same age as Mr. Higginson, having taken his first degree in 1611, two years later than Mr. Higginson. He was of Lincolnshire, educated at Clare Hall, Cambridge, and died August 2, 1634.

Francis Higginson had been dead six months, and Mr. Skelton was carrying on his ministry alone in the Salem Church, when Roger Williams arrived in Boston, early in February, 1631. Rev. John Wilson, minister of the First Church in Boston, was contemplating a visit to England, and Mr. Williams was invited to supply his place during his absence, but declined on the ground that the members of that church were "an unseparated people."

April 22d, following, he was invited to Salem as an assistant to Rev. Mr. Skelton. Having already promulgated some novel and unacceptable notions deemed subversive of the just authority of the magistrates, the Massachusetts Court interposed a remonstrance against the action of the Salem Church, and succeeded in preventing Mr. Williams' coming to Salem. He soon went to Plymouth, and even there, though the teachings of the separatists were more in

favor in Plymouth than in Boston, and his personal qualities gained him a large influence, his "singular opinions" were not welcome to all, and after serving a while as assistant to Rev. Ralph Smith, he applied himself to manual labors and to trade for a livelihood, devoting much time also to acquiring the language of the Indians, though meanwhile never losing sight of the then agitating questions of church government, and of individual responsibility in civil and ecclesiastical affairs.

In 1633 Mr. Williams obtained, not without some difficulty, a dismission from the church in Plymouth, and returned to Salem; returned accompanied by several members of the Plymouth Church, who preferred to give up their home and church relations to severing the tie that bound them to their pastor. Arrived in Salem, he became an assistant to Mr. Skelton, though without formal ordination. And notwithstanding that he had come again under the censure of the Governor and Assistants of Massachusetts for offensive writings and publications, in some of which he had denied the validity of the title of the Massachusetts Company to its territory, in that they had not the assent of the natives of the soil, yet he was invited and ordained, upon the death of Mr. Skelton, in August, 1634, to succeed him in the pastoral charge of the church. In this office he continued till October 19, 1635, when the opposition which his vigorous assertion of his views had aroused culminated in a sentence pronounced by the General Court that he should depart out of the jurisdiction of Massachusetts within six weeks, on account of having "broached and divulged divers new and dangerous opinions against the authority of the magistrates, as also writ letters of defamation, both of the magistrates and churches." "The colonial records," says Arnold, the historian of Rhode Island, "fix the date November 3d." Consent was given afterwards to the postponement of his removal till spring, upon condition of his refraining from promulgating his objectionable doctrines. It was withdrawn subsequently, upon the allegation that the conditions had been violated. Learning that he was to be sent at once to England, he anticipated the plans of his judges, escaping early in January to the South, through the wintry snows and storms, and finding a refuge on the banks of the Seekonk River, where he founded the State of Rhode Island.

The teachings of Mr. Williams which gave offense, to be fully understood, must be sought for and examined in the history of the time, at greater length than it is possible to consider them here. They dealt largely with definitions and distinctions bearing on the relations of the civil and spiritual authorities to each other, showing their respective limits, constantly raising questions of much nicety and difficulty, and yet questions immediately and vitally practical, as affecting issues at the moment pressing upon the people. The whole field of discussion being at the same time complicated with that larger problem which had exercised the minds of the colonists from the first, namely: the possibility of constructing a civil order on a Biblical foundation. The severity of the course pursued by the magistrates and ministers has been ascribed in part, and probably not unjustly, to a feeling in the churches of Boston and the neighborhood not friendly to the Salem Church, which church had shown, from the first, a commendable jealousy of interference by other churches, and a determination to maintain strictly its independence. It has been mentioned as a noteworthy fact that "in this court [for the trial of Mr. Williams], composed of magistrates and clergy, while some of the laymen opposed the decree [of exile], every minister, save one, approved it."[1]

If it be conceded "that there were faults on both sides, and that they were faults of the age rather than of the heart," it must be conceded, too, that this marked man was before his time in the discernment and announcement of some principles ecclesiastico-political, destined to stand the test of after-trial, since, in his transmitted ideas, as well as his character and bearing during those troublous days which he spent in Salem, he grows more illustrious under the light of experience, while the proceedings of those who drove him out from their company become more difficult of apology. Roger Williams has had the credit of being the promoter, if not the cause, of the act of Governor Endicott in cutting the cross from the English colors. It is not clear what part he had in it, if any. If any, he was not the man to disavow it; if any, he but represented a feeling dominant in many a Puritan's breast at the time, who, perhaps, more prudent than he, would not have counseled it, though pleased to see it done. Such was Roger Williams. "Open, bold and ardently conscientious, as well as eloquent and highly gifted, it cannot be surprising that he should have disturbed the magistrates by divulging such opinions, while he charmed the people by his powerful preaching, and his amiable, generous and disinterested spirit."

Mr. Williams was born in Wales in 1599, resided in London during his youth, was elected a scholar of Sutton's Hospital (now the Charter House), July 5, 1621, admitted to Pembroke College, Cambridge, Feb. 8, 1623, graduated B. A. January, 1627, took orders in the Church of England, obtained a benefice in Lincolnshire, became a non-conformist, or "Separatist," and embarked at Bristol, Dec. 11, 1630, for New England. He died at Providence, R. I., in April, 1683.[2]

[1] "Arnold, History of Rhode Island," p. 38.

[2] Porter C. Bliss, in Johnson's Cyclopædia.—Since this notice of Roger Williams was prepared, intimations have come to us that new light may be expected to be let in soon, upon the origin and early days of this striking figure in the history of primitive New England. The new matter found claims to be not only additional to the old and hitherto accepted story, but corrective also. For example: It is said that "the Roger Williams who was a foundation scholar at the Charter House in

The infant church, already served by three ministers in half a dozen years, found its fourth in one born to lead, Rev. Hugh Peters, who, after filling the pastoral office for five busy and fruitful years, in which he governed and shaped with the decision of a master, was summoned away from this humbler field of labor to a broader theatre and a more famous career, in which his life assumed historical importance, and set him among the conspicuous actors of his age, ending tragically at the executioner's block. Mr. Peters was born at Fowey, in Cornwall, in 1599, the same year as Roger Williams, and was educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, taking the degree of A. M. in 1622. Appointed to a London lectureship while still very young, he drew a large following by his forcible and eloquent preaching. In 1629, it having become not only uncomfortable but dangerous for such as he, a Puritan and a popular preacher, to stay in England, he withdrew to Holland and became the pastor of a church at Rotterdam, whence he came to New England, Oct. 6, 1635. He was invited to take charge of the church in Salem after the departure of Mr. Williams, and was settled Dec. 21, 1636. He was an able minister and something more, a clear-sighted administrator in civil-political and politico-economical affairs. Without neglecting his duties as pastor, which he discharged with rare energy and faithfulness, he set himself diligently to improving all the social regulations and habits of the place, on which the welfare of the new community depended. In the controversies, which he inherited from Mr. Williams, he showed no sympathy with the adherents of the latter, nor toleration for the opinions which had brought on him the condemnation of the ministers and the General Court. He spent little time over the comprehensive principles and enlightened distinctions laid down by his predecessor as to the relative authorities of the secular and ecclesiastical governments, and the rights of the individual soul under each, while he plunged with assiduous zeal into studies which he deemed of a more immediate and pressing importance. He gave his attention to projecting measures for promoting the business prosperity, the orderly living, the growth in population of the town; he devised measures for the better execution of the laws, for the preservation of peace and the establishment of beneficial industries.

Respecting no man, says Mr. Bentley, has the public opinion been more divided than respecting Mr. Hugh Peters. This division of opinion he ascribes to the part he took in the commonwealth of England and in the death of King Charles, though intimating that "unkind reports" had been connected also with the early part of his life, which reports, however, either never reached New England or were unheeded there. The Rev. Charles W. Upham, in his Second Century lecture, has vindicated his fame with a generous and warm enthusiasm. But there is no difference of opinion as to the great benefits which his life and labors in Salem, from 1636 to 1641, conferred upon its people and its forming social habits and institutions. He objected to the devotion of so much time as had been given to the numerous weekly and occasional lectures, to the neglect of the daily industries, which he fostered as being nearest in the line of evident and pressing duties. His church greatly increased, showing that there had been no lack of faithful tillage therein. New and valued citizens were attracted to the place. He interested himself in reforming the police system, encouraged commerce, caused new arts and employments to be introduced, a water-mill was erected, a glass-house, salt works, the planting of hemp was advised, and a regular market was set up. He formed a plan of carrying on fishery, and of coasting and foreign voyages. Amid all his activities, it is repeated, "he did not forget his church." In Synod and Salem pulpit alike, he made his power constantly and beneficently felt. Clear-headed and wise, he was a check upon the invasion of superstition, and in the excitement caused by Mrs. Ann Hutchinson's doctrine and influence, kept his church in the main free from its disturbing effects, and went, Mr. Bentley thinks, full far in the opposite direction of repression. The Massachusetts Colony, having occasion to find suitable persons to represent their interests in England with reference to the laws of excise and trade, it was not strange that Mr. Peters should be selected to be one for this commission. His qualifications for it were evident. His people resisted his acceptance of the appointment and remonstrated against it; they could not spare him. But they were overborne by the urgency with which the claim for his services was pressed, and finally a reluctant assent was yielded, and on the 3d of August, 1641, he left with his colleagues for England. There he became involved in the revolution which brought Cromwell to supreme power. Peters was his counselor and favored friend, and when the restoration gave back power to Cromwell's enemies, the lives of all his friends were held forfeited. Hugh Peters was a selected victim, and as such was beheaded in the Tower Oct. 16, 1660.

Mr. Peters was assisted in his pulpit duties between 1637 and 1640 by Rev. John Fiske, who taught a school in Salem about that time. Mr. Fiske was settled afterwards over a church in Wenham and still later in Chelmsford, Massachusetts. It was he—before alluded to in these pages—who copied from the earliest record-book of the church the covenant contained therein, with some other minutes, which have lately come to light, and have furnished important evidence as to the form of the first covenant.

1621, and who was sent to the University in July, 1624, being a good scholar, was not the Roger Williams of Rhode Island." So much, Rev. George E. Ellis, D.D., president of the Massachusetts Historical Society, is reported—in the Boston *Daily Advertiser* of March 11, 1887—to consider proven by the investigations of the librarian of Brown University, Mr. Reuben A. Guild.

The Rev. Edward Norris was settled as a colleague with Mr. Peters March 18, 1640. Mr. Bentley says his was the first ordination which was performed with great public ceremonies in Salem. He had come from England the year before, and joined the church here in December of that year; had been a teacher and minister in Gloucestershire; was distinguished for learning, was of a tolerant spirit, and had a large and well-balanced mind. He was a man to wield a wide and strong influence, and that for good. He fell upon troubled times, inheriting in his turn the unsettled controversies of his predecessor's ministry. A Mrs. Oliver, a follower of Mrs. Ann Hutchinson, had claimed, in the time of public service, the right of communion, without a covenant, and was sent to prison for disturbing the congregation, though soon set at liberty. During Mr. Norris' ministry she again openly asserted the same right, and was publicly disgraced.

The Anabaptists were busy. Mr. Endicott set his face against them as disturbers of the peace of the church and of the community; a few were subjected to punishment, some confined to the town, or laid under other humiliating and annoying prohibitions. Mr. Norris took no active part in these proceedings, and seems rather to have endeavored to quiet and repress the public excitement than to promote it, and succeeded in keeping the town in comparative tranquillity during his life. He died December 23, 1659, in time to escape the full force of the still greater distraction caused by the Quakers who had appeared in Salem in 1657. His abilities, attainments and high character were recognized throughout the colony. He wrote upon affairs of public interest temperately, yet forcibly. He assisted in constructing the system of ecclesiastical discipline "substantially contained in the Cambridge Platform," and yet he refused to substitute in his own church the platform of 1648, which he had helped to shape, for the one already in use, resolutely insisting on the maintenance of his church's independence. At the same time, with a rare consistency, he successfully restrained his own church from meddling in the controversies and the management of other churches.

Mr. Norris was the last of the ministers of the first generation. "The consistent politicks, the religious moderation, and the ardent patriotism of Mr. Norris," says Mr. Bentley, "entitle him to the grateful memory of Salem. He diverted the fury of fanaticism by industry, he quieted alarms by inspiring a military courage, and in the public morals, and a well-directed charity, with a timely consent to the incorporation of towns around him, he finished in peace the longest life in the ministry which had been enjoyed in Salem, and died in his charge." [1]

Mr. Norris' ministry of nearly twenty years seemed long as measured by the average term of service of those who had preceded him. But it was short as compared with that of his successor. John Higginson, the son of the Rev. Francis, the first minister—"Teacher"—of Salem, was born at Claybrook, England, August 6, 1616, and accompanied his parents when they came to New England, in 1629, and was thirteen years old, therefore, when he arrived; and at that age he joined the church. After his father's death he was assisted by the magistrates and ministers, who could not forget what the young church owed to the father, in continuing his education. At the age of twenty, and for four years after, he was chaplain at Fort Saybrook, Connecticut. In 1641 he taught a school in Hartford, and studied divinity with the Rev. Thomas Hooker; in 1643 became an assistant to Rev. Henry Whitfield, of Guilford, whose daughter he married. From 1651 to 1659 he was in sole charge of the church in Guilford. In that year, 1659, he took passage for his native land. The vessel in which he sailed was obliged by stress of weather to put into Salem harbor. The church in Salem had recently lost its minister. A negotiation with Mr. Higginson was entered into which issued in an engagement on his part to remain and preach for one year. At the end of the year he was invited to become the pastor, accepted the invitation, and was ordained in August, 1660. Already forty-four years old, he continued in the ministry in Salem forty-eight years, till his death, December 9, 1708, at the age of ninety-two years. He was sole minister for twenty-three years, till 1683,—except that for four years, from 1672 to 1676, he had a so-called "assistant," [2] who did not assist, as is explained farther on. In 1683, he being then sixty-seven years of age, Rev. Nicholas Noyes became his colleague. The settlement of Mr. Higginson was signalized by an addition to the covenant of the church, as a solemn declaration against the teachings and practices of the Quakers, as has been mentioned. It had been the custom of the church, from time to time, to "renew" the covenant, as has been noticed before, an act equivalent to a solemn re-affirmation of loyalty to its vows, and which was accompanied, in two instances at least, by an addition to its original form, for the purpose of putting on record the church's sentiment or verdict upon special dangers and evils existing at the time. Thus, at the settlement of Rev. Mr. Peters, the church prefaced a "renewal of the covenant" with a preamble which has already been given on a previous page, it being of the nature of a penitent confession that they had experienced the danger of coming to "sit loose to the covenant made with God," and found how apt they were "to wander into by-paths, even to the loosing of their first aims in entering into church fellowship." So, now, in 1660, we come upon another tide-mark, showing how high had arisen the feeling against the Quaker invasion, the following being

[1] Col. Mass. Hist. Soc. for 1799 : p. 259.

[2] Charles Nicholet.

appended to the covenant: "When also considering the power of temptation amongst us by reason of the Quakers' doctrine to the leavening of some in the place where we are, and endangering of others, [We] do see cause to remember the admonition of our Savior Christ to his disciples. Math. 16: Take heed and beware of the leaven of the doctrine of the Pharisees, and do judge so far as we understand it that the Quakers' doctrine is as bad or worse than that of the Pharisees; therefore we do covenant by the help of Jesus Christ to take heed and beware of the leaven of the doctrine of the Quakers." "This appendix to the covenant sufficiently shows the stand taken by Mr. Higginson towards the Quakers. It is difficult in our time to conceive the excitement which the arrival of a shipload of Quakers from England in 1660, the year of Mr. Higginson's ordination, caused in the Massachusetts colony. A vigorous persecution had been in progress for some time before, with the usual result of increasing the boldness and multiplying the number of the new sect. They were not altogether an inoffensive people. For, though they disclaimed the use of physical violence even in protection of themselves, among them were those who knew the irritating power of arrogant and exasperating speech, and did not spare the use of it, accusing the magistrates, ministers and the members of the churches of ignorance of the true religion, and of being unacquainted with its spirit. Their interruption of public worship, their open denunciations of time-serving and hireling ministers, and their fanatical violations of good order and the public quiet in some cases, were calculated to inflame the popular mind to the highest pitch of anger; and while this does not excuse the heavy hand of persecution raised upon them, it explains and palliates the disgust and antipathy felt by many reasonable and worthy persons towards such intemperate revilers of men and women, who were, at least, as good as themselves, and were held in honor—deservedly or not—as appointed chiefs in church and state. "The wildest fanaticism on their part was met by a frenzied bigotry on the other." Mr. Higginson was active in turning upon them an unrelenting harrying, for which Mr. Bentley says he was sorry afterwards. Eighteen of these unhappy persons are said to have been publicly punished in Salem in the year 1661. And, as is always the case when men suffer for their opinions, the most blameless met with the same fate as the most turbulent and aggressive. After the restoration of King Charles II., he took their case into consideration and put a stop to the persecution. It had lasted about five years. The excitement soon died away when the persecution ceased.

A "Direction" for a public profession of faith was prepared by Mr. Higginson, and printed in a dateless tract, already referred to, probably, says Judge White, in 1680, which, however, was "to be looked upon as a fit means whereby to express that their common faith and salvation, and not to be made use of as an imposition upon any." This "Direction" became famous in the friendly but controversial discussion, already alluded to as having occurred thirty to forty years ago, between Rev. Dr. Worcester and Judge White, as to the form of the first covenant, it being regarded by the former as substantially identical with a confession of faith adopted by the church in 1629, along with the covenant, a position earnestly contended against by the latter as wholly untenable.

In 1672 there came a man to Salem from Virginia, who, for a few years, filled quite a large place in the town and church—Mr. Charles Nicholet. He was invited to be the assistant of Mr. Higginson for a year, "for trial." At the end of the year the engagement was renewed upon the same terms for another year, one condition of which being that he should have for his maintenance "a free voluntary contribution every Lord's day." When, at the end of the second year, he was offered again the same terms, they were probably not accepted, as, a little later, it was voted that, "it is agreed by a hand and free vote of the town for Mr. Nicholet's continuance amongst us during his life." At the same time (that is, early in 1674) the town voted a grant of as much land on the common as should be needed "for to build a new meeting-house for the worship of God."[1] This meeting-house was begun and its frame erected, but was never finished. The invitation to Mr. Nicholet, extended by the town instead of by the church—an unusual, if not an unprecedented proceeding—and the building of another meeting-house at some distance from the established place of worship, were painful proofs to the elder minister that there were restless and disaffected persons in his congregation not unwilling to show their discontent. "His enemies," says Mr. Bentley, "made by persecution, now had power to distress him." His support had been partly withheld. Some who were not unfriendly thought it time that a portion of his burden of varied duties and wearing responsibilities should be transferred to an assistant. But the church had taken offense and exception at the manner in which the assistant was called—that is, in the town's having acted by itself. A remonstrance was sent to the General Court, which tribunal answered by declaring its disapprobation of such a departure from established usages, characterizing it as not only very irregular, but as "expressly contrary to the known wholesome laws of this jurisdiction." Mr. Higginson disapproved the course pursued by his assistant and the town. Mr. Nicholet explained and promised to be on his guard, but apparently continued his ministry and drew to himself a following of malcontents, and kept up the discord till, happily for the town, "after many farewell sermons," he "departed from America forever," in 1676.

As time healed or softened the dissensions that

[1] Town Records, pp. 179, 208, 217, 222.

attended Mr. Nicholet's ministry, it also made the burdens carried by the senior pastor, now without an assistant, to be felt more oppressively as he advanced in years. The way was thus prepared for another trial of the experiment of a colleague. In 1682 Mr. Higginson recommended it; and on the 14th of November, 1683, Mr. Nicholas Noyes was ordained. It was a choice fortunate for the church. Mr. Noyes' character, as drawn in the record-book of the church when he died, on the 13th of December, 1717, at the age of nearly seventy years, and at the end of a ministry of thirty-five years, has been accepted as a just portraiture of the man—a portraiture the more entitled to be preserved and reproduced on suitable occasions, in that it is a calm after-judgment respecting one who bore a prominent part in the ever-memorable and mournful proceedings of the dark days of the witchcraft trials. It is the testimony of his contemporaries; of those who should be presumed to know him best; who knew his mistakes and the sincerity of his lamentation on their account. "He was extraordinarily accomplished for the work of the ministry, whereunto he was called. . . . Considering his superior genius; his pregnant wit; strong memory; solid judgment; his great acquisition in human learning and knowledge; his conversation among men, especially with his friends, so very pleasant, entertaining and profitable; his uncommon attainments in the study of divinity; his eminent sanctity, gravity and virtue; his serious, learned and pious performances in the pulpit; his more than ordinary skill in the prophetical parts of Scripture; his wisdom and usefulness in human affairs; and his constant solicitude for the public good: it is no wonder that Salem and the adjacent part of the country, as also the Churches, University and people of New England, justly esteem him as a principal part of their glory." For one to have saved such a reputation as this, who had been a chief actor in bringing those accused of witchcraft to punishment, argues rare excellences of character. Mr. Bentley accords him exceptional honor as the one among all those ministers who were swept along by the storm, misled, silenced, non-protesting, accountable—the one who made all possible reparation afterwards; an open, confessing, self-sacrificing atonement for the evil he had done and caused, to the extent of his ability. "Noyes came out and publicly confessed his error; never concealed a circumstance; never excused himself; visited, loved and blessed the survivors whom he had injured; asked forgiveness always, and consecrated the residue of life to bless mankind. He never thought, in all these things, that he made the least compensation, but all the world believed him sincere." The glooms of the period of the witchcraft visitation have had no parallel, before or since, in the ancient town. It is not our province to depict its creeping horrors. It stands apart, a story of unrelieved tragedy. It was connected with the church-life of the people, but it was an epidemic mania, an outcropping nightmare of superstition, that swept like a sudden torrent over the region. "From March till August, 1692, . . . business was interrupted. The town deserted. Terror was in every countenance, and distress in every heart."[1] We thankfully leave the sombre task of telling the sad tale to another.

We introduce here the few remaining minutes to be noted respecting Rev. Mr. Noyes. He was born in Newbury December 22, 1647, and was the nephew of the first minister of Newbury, Rev. James Noyes. For thirteen years before coming to Salem he had been settled in the ministry at Haddam, Conn. He was never married.

During the witchcraft storm Mr. Higginson held himself aloof. "His only fault was his silent consent." He had gone too far with the Quakers, and learned the lesson of caution. But it was not in him to be strong enough, old man that he was, where all were stricken with the madness, to sound an alarm and call a halt. It was what all were waiting and praying for, from some one. But probably if any had been brave enough and far-sighted enough to cry aloud in protest, it would only have availed when the tempest was subsiding and far-spent; earlier it would only have added another victim, possibly, to the popular frenzy. Such a panic-stricken community could only come to its senses slowly, and when the fury of the blast was passed. Mr. Bentley's just reflections are in place here, and in the history of the church should not be omitted: "As soon as the judges ceased to condemn, the people ceased to accuse. Just as after a storm, the people were astonished to see the light at once break out bright again. Terror at the violence and the guilt of the proceedings succeeded instantly to the conviction of blind zeal, and what every man had encouraged all professed to abhor. Few dared to blame other men, because few were innocent. They who had been most active remembered that they had been applauded. The guilt and the shame became the portion of the country, while Salem had the infamy of being the place of the transactions. Every expression of sorrow was found in Salem. And after the death of Mr. Higginson, whose only fault was his silent consent, the church, before the choice of another minister, publicly erased all the ignominy they had attached to the dead, by recording a most humble acknowledgment of their error. After the public mind became quiet, few things were done to disturb it. But a diminished population, the injury done to religion, and the distress of the aggrieved were seen and felt with the greatest sorrow."[1]

For six years from the death of Mr. Higginson Mr. Noyes was the sole pastor of the church. He being then nearly sixty-seven years old, Mr. George Curwin, son of Hon. Jonathan Curwin, was ordained as his colleague. Mr. Bentley says that Mr. Curwin was

[1] Bentley, pp. 270–271.

proposed by Mr. Noyes in 1709, soon after the death of Mr. Higginson, and would have been immediately ordained if those living beyond the town bridge had not hoped to become a separate church. In 1713 another church was formed, which is the lower parish in Danvers. Mr. Curwin's settlement followed in May of the next year. The opening of his ministry was full of promise, and excited in his people high hopes of usefulness,—hopes destined to an early blight. He died Nov. 23, 1717, at the age of thirty-four years, only four and a half years from his ordination. He was born in Salem May 21, 1683, graduated from Harvard College in 1701, and ordained May 19, 1714. The entry made upon the church book of records, of date Nov. 23, 1717, after recording his death, adds: "He was highly esteemed in his life, and very deservedly lamented at his death, having been very eminent for his early improvements in learning and piety, his singular abilities and great labors, his remarkable zeal and faithfulness in the service of his Master. A great benefactor to our poor. The Rev. Mr. Noyes his life was much bound up in him." These last words read more as prophecy than as record of a past accomplished, when we look on to the next entry upon the book. It is but twenty days later. It records the death, Dec. 13th, of the Rev. Nicholas Noyes. Within three weeks the church is bereaved of both its pastors.

Mr. Samuel Fisk was called with great unanimity the next year to the church in Salem, and was ordained on the 8th of October, 1718. He was a grandson of Rev. John Fisk, herein before mentioned as sometime assistant to Rev. Hugh Peters, afterwards minister of Wenham and Chelmsford; was born April 6, 1689, in Braintree, where his father, Rev. Moses Fisk, was many years minister, and was graduated from Harvard College in 1708. He was a man of acknowledged abilities and of great energy, but the unanimity with which his ministry was welcomed at the beginning gave place in no very long time to a rising alienation on the part of a portion of his congregation, which grew to a protracted and bitter controversy,—protracted and bitter even in comparison with other church contentions, proverbial as such are for their tenacity and implacability,—many of his parishioners becoming hopelessly estranged from him, the division culminating at last in the expulsion of Mr. Fisk from his pulpit in 1735. Mr. Bentley ascribes his loss of usefulness to high thoughts of church authority. Pamphlets of more than four hundred pages of printed matter remain in a Salem library (Athenæum) to represent the course of the correspondence and criticisms which grew out of the long contest. The points involved were not chiefly theological or ecclesiastical, but consisted largely of charges brought by members of the church of misrepresentation and of a want of ingenuous, truthful and frank dealing on the part of Mr. Fisk as to an unwarranted interpolation in the church records in the matter of maintaining or discontinuing the church "lecture," an institution which had long existed, the interest in which had fallen off greatly, and the responsibility for whose decay, and close, and resumption was mutually bandied back and forth between the minister and the dissatisfied brethren. Mr. Fisk was also accused of arbitrarily refusing to call church meetings except such as he pleased and when he pleased, and of asserting a right of control in church matters generally deemed by a very considerable part of his congregation to be unauthorized and inadmissible. As to one of the issues raised, Mr. Fisk and his followers seem to have planted themselves on unassailable ground. The aggrieved brethren seem to have been a confessed minority of the church. When, therefore, this aggrieved minority,—supposing it to be such,—first called on a neighboring church,—the second in Boston,—to come in, by its representatives, and endeavor to compose the existing difficulties, the majority declined to submit their case to this commission for a hearing and decision. So, when a council of four churches made a similar attempt, and again, when a yet larger and more imposing council was summoned, they simply denied the jurisdiction of each and all such ecclesiastical courts, in steadfast adherence to that original principle laid down at the founding of the church, in 1629, of the independence of each church, and they denied the authority of any other church or churches to interfere in its concerns. Unless by some formal vote it had surrendered this claim of autonomy in favor of some other paramount authority as does not seem to have been claimed, or the voice of the majority was arbitrarily suppressed by the pastor, which *is* perhaps charged by implication, it is difficult to see by what right the majority of this church and congregation were dispossessed of their meeting-house or any of their church rights, as was done, and sanctioned by the General Court.

After the exclusion of Mr. Fisk from the pulpit, a majority of the members of the church withdrew and built another meeting-house near at hand.[1] The withdrawing members continued to use the title of "The First Church," their right to which could hardly be gainsaid, perhaps, except upon the ground taken by the courts of Massachusetts a hundred years later, viz.: that the church derives its designation from the parish out of which it has grown, and upon which its identification depends. Mr. Fisk took away with him the church book of records, retaining it through the period of his ministry. In 1762 Rev. Dudley Leavitt, the minister of the church which Mr. Fisk had led out in 1735 to a new home, died, much beloved and lamented. That church soon after opened a gracious and conciliatory correspondence with the church of the First Parish, proposing to relinquish to it the title

[1] They first placed it too near,—"only twelve perches and eleven feet from the First parish meeting-house." The General Court interfered, and ordered that it should not stand "nearer to the other than forty perches." It was removed accordingly.

of the First Church from that time, and took for itself the title of "The Church of which Rev. Dudley Leavitt was late Pastor,"—known since, and now for many years, as the Tabernacle Church. These overtures were met in a like spirit. An amicable division of plate and other church property accompanied and attested the healing of the old wounds of dissension.

Leaving, for the present, the notices of other churches formed in the town from time to time, we follow out first the sketch of the First Church. During the years from 1735 to 1762 the old First Church and Society was called, and called itself the Church and Parish of the Confederate Society, or, for a shorter title and common use, the Confederate Church. Dr. Worcester says the seceders gave them the title. The effect of the division by which the society was cleft in 1735 was depressing for a while, undoubtedly. But on the 5th of August, 1736, Mr. John Sparhawk was called by "the brethren adhering to the ancient principles of the First Church in Salem," with substantial unanimity, to the ministry among them, and was ordained on the 8th of December following. He was the son of Rev. John Sparhawk, of Bristol, R. I., and was born in that town in September, 1713, and graduated at Harvard College in 1731. He died April 30, 1755, in the forty-second year of his age. He was described by his parishioner, Dr. Edward Holyoke, as "large in person, a man of dignity and an excellent preacher." If that people is to be accounted happy whose history affords few incidents or experiences deemed worthy to be recited, the same evidence may be taken as ground for the belief that a church is happy, its life one of peace, of silent, healthful, spiritual growth, when it affords little material for the historian to record. The First Church entered upon such a period after the close of the rather tempestuous ministry of Mr. Fisk. The usefulness of Mr. Sparhawk's labors, and the affection in which he was held, is shown by the sincere sorrow caused by his death. The ministries which followed were of a like character, and, even down to this day, have generally abounded in quiet and diligent service on the part of the ministers, and been characterized by general harmony and co-operation on the part of the church and congregation in maintaining the institutions of religion and cultivating the spirit of the Christian gospel.

Rev. Thomas Barnard succeeded Mr. Sparhawk. He was the son of Rev. John Barnard, of Andover, and was born in that place August 16, 1716, graduated from Harvard College in 1732, ordained at Newbury January 31, 1738, left his people there on account of "difficulties about Mr. Whitfield's preaching," and turned to the study and practice of law for a time. Re-entering the ministry, he was installed minister of the First Church in Salem September 17, 1755. He was a man of solid excellencies, both of mind and character, not brilliant, but strong and rightly balanced, "much beloved by his society and esteemed by the public." He was disabled by paralysis in 1770, and a colleague was settled in 1772. Mr. Barnard died August 5, 1776. The colleague just referred to was Mr. Asa Dunbar. There had been a division of feeling in the choice of a colleague, some desiring Mr. Barnard's son, Thomas Barnard, Jr., to be invited to take the place, while a bare majority were for Mr. Dunbar. The organization of the North Church, with Mr. Thomas Barnard, Jr., for its minister, was the result of the disagreement. But the parting between the brethren who went out and those who stayed behind was friendly, and characterized by an affectionate reluctance to take the decisive step, and by a generous surrender of some of the vessels and sacred things belonging to the church, because they had come to it by gift from those who were now departing or from members of their families. Rev. Asa Dunbar was born in Bridgewater May 26, 1745, graduated at Harvard College in 1767, and ordained in Salem July, 22, 1772. His health before long became broken, and compelled him first to seek its restoration in rest, and finally to resign his office, which he did April 23, 1779, his society consenting with reluctance, and not until convinced that it was a necessity. Honorable and delicate testimonials of the mutual affection and confidence subsisting between the pastor and people were exchanged at parting. Mr. Dunbar studied law after leaving his ministry in Salem, and settled in Keene, N. H., where he practiced his profession and lived greatly respected till June 22, 1787, the time of his death. He appears to have lived in Weston before coming to Salem; he married there Mary Jones, in 1772, and had a child born there in 1776. After leaving Salem, and before settling in Keene, he probably lived in Harvard for a time, as he had children born there in 1780 and 1781. Mr. Bentley, a competent judge, and not given to unmeaning praise, characterized him as a man of genius.

Rev. John Prince, who succeeded Mr. Dunbar, and whose ministry covered a period of fifty-seven years—for forty-five of which he had no assistance—was born in Boston July 22, 1751, graduated at Harvard College in 1776, and ordained minister of the First Church in Salem November 10, 1779.[1] Dr. Prince was a faithful and devoted minister and lived in the sincere affection and respect of his people during his long pastorate. But he had greater fame as a devotee of natural science and an ardent philosophical investigator than as a preacher. His parishioner, the late Hon. Daniel A. White, says of him that "he possessed the spirit of a true philosopher and a true Christian, and was alike distinguished for his mechanical ingenuity, his attainments in natural, in theological and general

[1] The ministry of Dr. Prince has had no parallel for length in Salem, except in that of Rev. Dr. Emerson, of the South Church, which extended over more than sixty-seven years, though for the first nine and the last thirty-two of the years of his ministry he was associated with colleagues, and for many years before his death he performed almost no professional duties.

learning, and for his various genius and taste, his ardent love of nature and of art, his single-heartedness and truly Christian temper, and for his amiable and generous disposition, especially as manifested in the gratuitous diffusion of his scientific discoveries and improvements, and in imparting his rare knowledge at all times for the gratification and entertainment of others. His character will long be remembered with sincere admiration." He bequeathed to his society a library of nearly four hundred and fifty volumes. He was an honored member of various societies organized for the study of science, art and history, and received the degree of Doctor of Laws from Brown University. His death took place on June 7, 1836.

During the ministry of Dr. Prince the parish received valuable legacies from Charles Henry Orne, a merchant, and from Miss Mehitable Higginson, a descendant in the sixth generation from the first minister, and widely known as "a teacher of successive generations of children," and "a blessing to the church and the town." More recently the permanent funds of the society were increased by a liberal bequest from Hannah Haraden Ropes, and in 1867 amounted to about ten thousand five hundred dollars. In the year 1817 the society became incorporated as the First Congregational Society in Salem.

In 1824 Mr. Charles W. Upham was ordained as a colleague pastor with Dr. Prince. He was born in St. John, New Brunswick, May 4, 1802, graduated from Harvard College in 1821, and from the Divinity School in Cambridge in 1824. He was ordained in Salem the same year, December 8th, and filled a ministry of twenty years, when impaired health caused him to resign, and he closed his ministry in December, 1844. Mr. Upham was held in high esteem as an acceptable preacher and a man of scholarly attainments. He received, on retiring from his ministry, substantial tokens of the generous appreciation of the people whom he had served, and which he acknowledged with a warm recognition. He died in Salem June, 15, 1875, more than thirty years after his ministry ended, having filled in the course of that time several important civil and political offices. He was mayor of Salem in 1852; elected to both Houses of the Legislature of the State at different times, and president of the Senate in 1857–58; member of the National House of Representativs in 1853–55; and of the State Convention of Massachusetts in 1853. In various sermons and addresses he sketched and illustrated the history of the Salem Church, and contributed for publication much historical and biographical material, relating to the men and times of early New England. During his ministry he published a small work upon the "Logos," another upon "Prophecy as an Evidence of Christianity;" "Lectures upon Witchcraft," which, in 1867, he expanded into an elaborate work of two volumes of nearly one thousand duodecimo pages. "A Life of Sir Henry Vane," in *Sparks' American Biography*, was from his pen. In 1856 he wrote the "Life, Letters and Public Services of John Charles Fremont," one of the Presidential candidates of that year. His last published literary work was a "Memoir of Timothy Pickering," in three volumes. He edited the *Christian Register* in 1845–46, and was a frequent contributor to periodical publications, both religious and secular.

Rev. Thomas Treadwell Stone was called to the vacant pastorship in June, 1846, and on the 12th of July following was installed in that office, with the simplicity of form observed in the primitive Salem Church, the entire service being carried on and completed by the congregation through its appointed representative and the pastor-elect. Mr. Stone was born in Waterford, Me., February 9, 1801, and graduated at Bowdoin College in 1820. He was ordained in Andover, Me., September 8, 1824, and continued to be pastor of that church till September, 1830, when he became preceptor of Bridgton Academy. After two years he resumed the ministry, and was settled in East Machias May 15, 1833. The anti-slavery agitation which came to its crisis after a quarter of a century in civil war in 1861, and which had been long straining threateningly the civil institutions and the political integrity of the nation, had also deeply disturbed the peace of a large proportion of the churches of the free States. Some ministers caused discontent in their folds by preaching upon the country's responsibility and duty in regard to the institution of slavery, some gave equal offense by wholly refraining from the theme, and still others displeased their hearers by what they said or their manner of saying it. The public feeling was extremely sensitive. The congregations were divided in sentiment. Expressions used in the pulpit, which in ordinary times might not have produced a ripple of commotion, in the inflammable state of popular feeling then existing, broke friendships, and sundered in many instances the bond that held pastor and church together. Mr. Stone, incapable of giving offense by any breach of Christian charity or courtesy, yet felt himself constrained to utter an earnest testimony against slavery as subversive of the plainest principles of justice and humanity, and as equally condemned by the fundamental teachings and the essential spirit of Christianity. While his personal and professional character was unassailable and unimpeached, as it respected the purity and disinterestedness of his motives and the singleness of mind and the high ability with which he discharged the duties of the ministerial office, some of his society became dissatisfied, and he was dismissed in February, 1852. He was afterwards settled in Bolton, and is now passing a serene and studious old age, dividing his time between his home in Bolton and the homes of his children.

January 6, 1853, the vacancy caused by the dismission of Dr. Stone was filled by the installation of Rev. George Ware Briggs. Mr. Briggs was born at

Little Compton, R. I., April 8, 1810, graduated from Brown University in 1825, and from the Divinity School at Cambridge in 1834, and was ordained in Fall River September 24, 1834, and installed in Plymouth, January 3, 1838, as colleague pastor with Rev. James Kendall, D.D. Dr. Briggs resigned his ministry in Salem April 1, 1867, and the same year was settled over the Third Congregational Society in Cambridge (Cambridgeport), where he still ministers, his society having refused not long since to accept his resignation. During Dr. Briggs' ministry in Salem the "irrepressible conflict" between slavery and freedom reached the stage of open war, and the attempted secession of the slave States brought the conflict to a termination in the emancipation of the slaves, the victory of the northern armies and the restoration of peace between the North and the South. Dr. Briggs was a strenuous and able champion of the cause of freedom and of the maintenance of the nation's integrity during the war.

Rev. James T. Hewes succeeded Dr. Briggs, September 27, 1868. Mr. Hewes was born in Saco, Me., March 23, 1836; was ordained in South Boston, February 19, 1862; resigned June 4, 1864; settled over the Second Unitarian Parish, in Portland, Me., June 23, 1864. He resigned his Salem charge August 31, 1875. With health already impaired before leaving Salem, he was installed in Fitchburg September 26, 1875. After a ministry there of five years, seriously interrupted by ill health, he resigned, sincerely respected and beloved by his society, and after a year and a half spent in California, removed to Cambridge, where he died November 21, 1882.

Rev. Fielder Israel, now in pastoral charge of the First Church, was installed March 8, 1877. He was born in Baltimore, Md., June 29, 1825, was in the Methodist ministry for some years, and later had been pastor of the Unitarian Church in Wilmington, Del., and of that in Taunton, Mass., before his settlement in Salem.

The First Church has occupied successively four houses of worship on or near the same spot, Essex, corner of Washington Street. The first is still standing—so much of it as to make its size, shape and general aspect visible and certain. The main timbers of its frame are preserved and are in their original places, the clothing of the skeleton only—that is, the boarding and plaster—having been from time to time renewed. "An unfinished building of one story," says Rev. Mr. Upham, "was temporarily used at the beginning for the purposes of the congregation." Houses had been provided at once, by order of the company in London, for dwellings for the two ministers,—Rev. Mr. Higginson's "directly south of and about fifty feet distant from the eastern part of the site of the present meeting-house" (ground covered at present by the southeastern corner of the Asiatic Block, now the rear room of the Salem Savings Bank, in which the corporation and its trustees hold their meetings). Mr. Skelton's house was farther south and to the east, on the southern side of the present Front Street. Neither of these two ministers lived to preach in the first meeting-house, which was contracted for in 1634, the year of Mr. Skelton's death, and which stood, it will be recalled, quite near the sites of their dwellings as just given. Mr. Norton was the builder of that first meeting-house. The trees for it were not felled till the beginning of 1635, and the house was erected the summer after. Its dimensions were twenty feet in length by seventeen feet in width, and twelve feet in the height of the posts. A gallery extended across the northern end, or side, whose front supporting beam rests now in its original position, the floor of the gallery rising towards the rear by a sharp pitch. The main floor of the house is supposed to have been of clay. The door opened on Essex Street when the building stood on its original foundation; the gallery ran across the same end; the preacher's place—and the pulpit's, when one was built—was opposite, that is, on the southern end. The windows were not glazed till 1637. In 1639 the house was elongated southward by more than its original length, viz.: twenty-five feet. When a new house of worship was to be built, in 1670, the town voted to appropriate the old house to the town's use for a school-house and watch-house. In the course of the next ninety years it was put to various uses by the town. It was in 1760, it is probable, that it was sold to Thorndike Proctor, and by him removed to a spot now in the field a few rods south of Boston Street, near the foot of Gallows (or Witch) Hill, a public road at that time running past it, and there it was occupied as a tavern, after which it stood awhile as a neglected and nearly empty stable and disused store-house. In 1864 it was presented to the Essex Institute by Mrs. David Nichols, its owner at the time, and removed to the rear of Plummer Hall, where it now stands restored to its primitive form by the liberality of the late Francis Peabody, Esq., then president of the Essex Institute, in such a way that the original parts and the renewed portions, respectively, are easily to be distinguished from each other. The second meeting-house was built in 1670, on the western side of the site of the first. It was sixty feet long on Essex Street, fifty feet wide and twenty feet stud; "cost one thousand pounds," says Rev. Mr. Upham, "had galleries, and was called by Cotton Mather 'the great and spacious meeting-house.'" This house served the congregation nearly sixty years. In 1718 it was found to have become so decrepit as not to be worthy of repairing, and it was voted to build a new one to take its place on the same ground.

This third meeting-house was seventy-two feet long on Essex Street, and fifty feet wide, with two tiers of gallery and a spire. "The steeple," says Mr. Upham, "was probably like that still preserved in the venerable meeting-house of the First Church of Hingham, built in 1681, rising directly over the centre of the

roof, the bell-rope coming down to the broad aisle, half-way between the pulpit and the main entrance." Great changes were afterwards made in the interior arrangement and in the external appearance of the building. A picture of it, as it appeared in its latest form, may be seen among the collections of the Essex Institute, and is also preserved in the appendix to the sermon preached by Rev. Mr. Upham at the dedication of the church edifice at present occupied by the society. The old house was taken down in 1826, and the new was built and dedicated November 16th of the same year. There are a few still living who remember the former, with its three tiers of windows, its tower and spire on its western end, and its front entrance upon its Essex Street side.

The meeting-house built in 1826, and now in use, was materially changed in appearance both within and without in 1875. Without, it was originally a plain brick structure, cruciform in general outline, the central and main portion, that containing the auditorium, being nearly square, and in appearance much the same as now on its northern front; high porches projecting from the middle of the eastern and western sides made the arms of the cross; the building stood above a lower story devoted to business purposes,—stores, etc., as now. On the Essex Street side of either porch were doors of entrance to the auditorium and the gallery; the ascent from the pavement to the entrances was made by a short flight of steps, an iron fence with gates inclosing the recesses between the street and the steps. Within, a gallery extended along the Essex Street front, in which was the choir and organ, and some space for sittings besides; on the opposite, the southern side, was the rather high pulpit. In 1867 considerable changes were made from its first interior appearance; a smaller organ was substituted for the one which had been in use, and was placed with the choir, in an alcove or gallery, within the upper part of the eastern porch; the front gallery was removed, and appropriate inscriptions were placed upon the northern wall, against which it had stood. In 1875 the whole interior was changed to its present form, the pulpit or preacher's desk being carried to the western side, and a large new organ built in its rear. At the same time the two porches upon the eastern and western sides were replaced by extended additions on those sides reaching the entire length of the building, providing not only stairways of access to the audience-room, but rooms adjoining for the minister's use and his library, for the Sunday-school library and for other convenient purposes.

Society of Friends.—We now turn back to find and trace the offshoots from this parent stem of ecclesiastical growth in the Salem settlement. The earliest of these was a gathering of Quakers. Mention is made of the appearance of these people in Salem first in 1656 or '57, only about ten years after George Fox began his itineracy and public preaching in England. The peculiar tenets and practices of the Quakers exhibit one of the numerous phases taken on by the new and freer spirit to which the Reformation of the sixteenth century had given birth. It was an emancipation from bondage to legalism, ecclesiasticism and hierarchies. It was usually characterized by more or less spiritual exaltation and religious enthusiasm. In some sanguine, imaginative and emotional temperaments, this new spirit burst forth, like new wine from old bottles, into effervescent prophesyings and extravagant claims of illumination. Sincere and pure in motive as most of these people were, they were yet protestants of the protestants, and in many instances boldly arraigned the existing churches as needing a new baptism of the Spirit; as leaning without warrant wholly on the letter of the Bible. They affirmed that each human soul might have its own immediate communication with God, its own interpretation of Christ, and its own revelation of truth, not to be superseded by any external authority. Very innocent and even commendable affirmations these would perhaps be pronounced to-day; and were Endicott, Higginson and Wilson here now, they would, it is likely, assent to them; while we who are to-day sitting complacently in judgment upon their conduct and upon that of the Southwicks and Maules, if we had been among them in their time, should have been Quakers and denouncers of Quakers in just about the same numerical proportions as they were. We need not be unjust to those who fined, sold and hanged Quakers, in order to do justice to the Quakers. The members of the churches of Salem and Boston could not know just the nature, conditions and the probable outcome of the problem which they had to deal with in Quakerism in 1656, as we now know it, viewing it in the light of history. When they first heard announced the peculiar views of these people, they recognized in them something like and yet unlike the teachings of Mrs. Hutchinson and of the Anabaptists, which they deprecated with genuine dread. To what would the new doctrines disseminated by these preachers, of which they had some not reassuring reports from England, lead, and where would they end? Did the preachers themselves know? Or were they on a drift whose tendency they were quite unable to forecast? Now it is but common-place wisdom to say that it was not right to judge the whole body or the great majority by the vagaries of a few unbalanced spirits. But the judgment had to be made then and there, by the contemporaries of Robinson, Stevenson and Mary Dyer, and they could not tell at once who were the typical disciples of the new school and who were the exceptional zealots whose ways would be eventually repudiated by the majority,—nor indeed whether the few might not yet become the majority, which was what they feared. They could not tell, nobody could, to what pitch this excitement might rise. Alarming possibilities loomed up to their apprehen-

sive imaginations. The ways and doctrines of these Quakers appeared to them to lead out to the unfenced wilderness of antinomianism [no-law-ism]; so their propagators were honestly, if mistakenly, held to be dangerous to the security of the new communities struggling to set up here law and order in commonwealth and church. The latter were contending with teachings and influences sincerely believed to be disorganizing and hostile to the peace, if not to the existence, of the newly-planted colony. It is asking too much to require that magistrates and ministers, church-members and citizens, in the infancy of a great and critical experiment in the conduct of civil and ecclesiastical affairs, acting under circumstances of frequent perplexity and serious embarrassment making their own precedents as they went, and daily treading paths of uncertain ending, should have been exempt from the limitations of their age, and should have made the discovery, at once and on the spot, that the extreme of tolerance towards dissent and contradiction was a discreet and safe policy, to be fearlessly followed out in practice without any restrictions and under whatever provocation—a discovery which, after two hundred years of social progress, hardly commands an unqualified and universal acceptance. It would be disingenuous not to allow, however, that personal feelings, wounded pride and narrow and bitter prejudices doubtless mingled with considerations of public policy, however unconsciously, in promoting the persecution of the Quakers,

Persecutors and persecuted were alike human. Grant that the doctrines of the Quakers had much truth to justify their earnest proclamation. They had too often, as uttered, the implication, if not the tone, of the Pharisee's "I am holier than thou," to the members of the New England Churches. Their authors were not sparing in the terms of self-humiliation, it is true, and this made the assumption of superior insight, and nearer communion with God, the more irritating and offensive. The very truths and half-truths that were couched in many of the allegations made against the Christianity of the day,—allegations of undue devotion to letter and form, and of lack of true religious experience and life, which, if they had come from brethren within the church, or from supposed friends, might have been welcomed by the more spiritually-minded and conscientious of the fold,—were not to be borne when regarded as the false accusations of meddlesome, censorious and aggressive pretenders to superior piety. The cruelties visited upon the Quakers were simply horrible, almost beyond belief. Yet we may not flatter ourselves that it is because we are so much better than our fathers that we are to-day unanimous in this verdict. It is, that we are nearly a quarter of a millenium later than the Puritans of 1656, and that between their time and ours a good deal has been learned. As to the aggravated sufferings to which the Quakers were subjected, however, this should be said: that in an age when all pains and penalties for crime were immeasurably heavier and more cruel than now, if the Quakers must suffer punishment at all, the punishments inflicted upon them were not unusual, and therefore were such as should have been expected: fines, whippings, public disgrace, imprisonment, enslavement,[1] banishment and death. And furthermore it should be mentioned, though not as alleviating in the least the responsibility for the harsh treatment visited upon the Quakers, that some who suffered seemed rather to court martyrdom than to shrink from it. The disturbances growing out of the visits of Quakers to the places of public worship appear to have been less numerous and less violent in Salem than in some other places. As has been already mentioned, a Mrs. Oliver had, in Mrs. Hutchinson's time, and again afterwards, claimed in the open congregation the right to partake of the communion, though not a member of the church; had denied the right of the church or the magistrates to prevent her; and had suffered a brief imprisonment for the first offense, and was "publicly disgraced" after the second. One Christopher Holder, a Quaker, after being banished, returned and spoke a few words in the meeting here, September 21, 1657, "after the priest had done," but "was hauled back by the hair of his head, and a glove and a handkerchief were thrust into his mouth." On the Monday he was sent to Boston, received thirty stripes and was imprisoned nine weeks. Samuel Shattock, for trying to prevent the stopping of Holder's mouth, was carried to Boston and imprisoned there. Lawrence and Cassandra Southwick, members of the church in Salem, for entertaining Holder and another of his sect, were sent to Boston and imprisoned. Some twenty persons are named by Felt [Annals] as having been among the persons punished, or indicted for attending a Quaker Meeting at Nicholas Phelps'. So serious was the apprehension of evil to the churches from this source, that when the covenant was "renewed," soon after the Rev. John Higginson's settlement, a special clause of warning *against the leaven of the doctrine of the Quakers* was added at the end, as has been noted already.

The Quakers in Salem had their meetings at first in private houses. Their first meeting-house stood on the south side of Essex Street, on the space between the houses numbered at present 373 and 377, and is said to have been built by Thomas Maule, in 1688. Maule had some years before been warned, as a Quaker, to quit the town, and two citizens, Samuel Robinson and Samuel Shadocke, had been fined twenty shillings each for "entertaining" him in 1669. In 1716 Maule bought the meeting-house he had built in 1688, for twenty-five pounds, the society having then built their second meeting-house, a plain building, as all Quaker meeting-houses are, on the present site of

[1] Mr. Bentley mentioned that in 1659 "the heads of a family belonging to Salem were ordered to be sold." If, as is probable, the reference is to Daniel and Provided Southwick, son and daughter of Lawrence and Cassandra Southwick, the order was not carried into effect.

the Quaker burying-ground, at the corner of Essex and North Pine Streets, the latter street not having been opened. This second meeting-house is remembered by the older citizens of Salem, having been removed only about fifty-five years ago, that is in 1832.[1] The brick meeting-house, on the corner of Warren and South Pine Streets, now occupied by the society, was built in 1832, upon land given for the purpose by a *friend, indeed*, though not a Friend by sectarian designation, George S. Johonnot.

A difference as to discipline or doctrine, which arose among the New England Quakers towards the end of the first quarter of this century, led to earnest and protracted controversy, and finally to a practical division of the body into two sections, in 1843, sometimes popularly designated as "Gurneyites and Wilburites," from their adhesion, respectively, to John James Gurney, of England, and John Wilbur, of Rhode Island; each section claiming to be logically and spiritually in historical line with the founders of the sect. The latter conceived that the former "did not allow so full an agency to the Holy Spirit on the mind and heart as the primitive Friends did." The separation took effect in this region, at the New England Yearly Meeting, in June, 1845; and again at the Quarterly Meeting in August, and at the Monthly Meeting in September following, was ratified by the followers of the two representative men above named, and the two sections fell irreconcilably apart. The majority of the society in Salem held with Gurney, and those of the adverse views put up a small meeting-house at the corner of Essex and North Pine Streets, in 1847, which is now standing on the same spot, having been changed into a dwelling-house.

Though the Quakers have no fixed and salaried local ministers, the following persons are named in the "Historical Sketch of Salem," by Messrs. Osgood and Batchelder, as being "among the ministers acknowledged and recorded as such, from time to time, by the Salem Monthly Meeting of Friends (comprising the meetings of Salem and Lynn): Micajah Collins, Mary Newhall, Moses H. Bedee, Avis Keene, Elizabeth Breed, Jane Mansfield, Benjamin H. Jones, William O. Newhall, Abigail Bedee, Sophronia Page, Henry Chase, Hannah Hozier, Lydia Dean, Mary Chase, Daniel Page and Ruth Page." No records of the minority meeting in the house by the burial-ground, are known to have been preserved. Its numbers, not large at first, gradually diminished till the society became extinct. Among those who upheld that meeting, and were identified with it as ministers or well-known supporters, are remembered Nathan Page, David Buffum, Lois (Southwick) Ives and George F. Reed. Current rumor used to say that the last-named, a fine scholar and an able teacher, a member of the class of 1831 in Harvard College,[2] remarkable as a linguist, in character simple and guileless as a child, was sometimes, in the last days of the society, the only attendant at the meeting-house, and that then he sat there alone in silent worship and meditation what time the Spirit detained him.

In 1671 the inhabitants of "the farms," or "Salem Village," as the lands now lying about "Danvers' Centre" were then called, regarding themselves as entitled by their numbers and their remoteness from the Salem Church to a nearer place of worship and the full services of a minister, began to hold religious services among themselves on the Lord's day, and constituted a church, the parent church assenting and regarding this church and congregation as a branch of itself. Rev. James Bailey was the first minister, settled in October, 1671, and Rev. George Burroughs, of unhappy memory (as a victim of the witchcraft madness), succeeded him, November 25, 1680. On the 10th of November, 1689, this church was formally separated from the mother church at Salem, and on the 15th of that month Samuel Parris was ordained its pastor.

Marblehead, taken from Salem, was incorporated in 1649, but no church was gathered there till 1684; meantime such of its people as had had or desired church fellowship continued to find it in connection with the church in Salem. On the other side of Bass River, in what is now Beverly, public worship was established in 1657, and Rev. John Hale was settled as the first minister in 1667. In 1713 a second church was formed in that part of Danvers, then called the lower parish, or "middle precinct," afterwards South Danvers, now Peabody.

East Church.—The third church formed within the present territorial limits of Salem, regarding the Quaker "Meeting" as the second, was that commonly known by the title of the East Church. But as Quaker "meetings" were not held worthy to be counted as "churches" (members of Congregational Churches being judges), and as the Quakers themselves adopted another name for their assembly, this church styled itself the "Second" Church. It will be remembered that during the colleagueship of Mr. Nicholet with Rev. John Higginson (1672–76), efforts were made to establish a meeting, and that a meeting-house was partly built in the east part of the town, on the northeast border of the common. With the departure of Mr. Nicholet, the division in the society was virtually healed, and the meeting-house was not completed; but the idea of a church in that quarter did not wholly die out of the minds of the residents in those parts. When a committee of the First Parish reported "reasons for building a meeting-house" for the use of that parish early in the last century, it un-

[1] The frame of it is now standing in Peabody, on the Lynnfield road, having been purchased by the late Mr. Samuel Brown, taken down by him and set up again for a barn near his dwelling-house. An addition has been put to it, but its original size and form are easily to be made out.

[2] Mr. Reed completed his college course, and had a part assigned him for commencement, but neglected to prepare for it, and did not take his degree.

designedly gave strength to the project long entertained by the Eastern District of a separation from the parent church, and of building a meeting-house in the midst of the population to be accommodated thereabouts. As quoted by Dr. Flint in his sermon on leaving the old East Church, in 1846, this committee's report alleged that "the house [of the First Church] was not big enough to hold the people, and, for want of room, many of the eastern end of the town, and many others on other accounts, stayed away from public worship; and a great many, under pretence of being of the Church of England, went to Marblehead in boats, [so] that our harbor appeared more like a day of frolicking than anything else." The First Church resisted separation as long as it could, and more than hinted in its acquiescence at the last that the "proceedings of some of the said brethren" had been "irregular" and "contrary to good order;" but seeing a meeting-house already built, and knowing that a minister was selected and ready to be ordained, it finally, in 1718, made a virtue of necessity, ceased from further opposition, and gave the Second Church its benediction at parting.

The year 1718 was an eventful year to the First Church, made so by its having recently lost by death, both within three weeks, its two ministers (Rev. Mr. Noyes and Rev. Mr. Curwin), by the settling of another (Rev. Samuel Fisk), by the erection of a large, new church building for its own use, and by the completing of the new East Church building for the people living in that section, and the organization of a separate church and congregation there, over which Rev. Robert Stanton was ordained the minister on the 8th of April, 1719. The East Society's meeting-house was situated half a mile to the east of the First Church, on Essex Street, at the corner of what was then Grafton's Lane (now Hardy Street). In the sermon of Dr. Flint, just above quoted, it is thus described, —"The house was in dimensions originally forty by sixty feet, and what has been called tunnel-shaped, the belfry and spire ascending from the centre of the roof." In 1761 this meeting-house was new sashed and glazed; in 1766 clap-boarded; in 1770, "there not being room to accommodate the congregation," it was voted to enlarge it, which was done the following year by dividing it in the centre, carrying the western half fourteen feet farther west, and covering in this additional space. The seams, showing the lines of junction between the old part and the new, were visible in the plaster of the ceiling till the house was abandoned, in 1846. At the time of the enlargement a new steeple was built at the western end, and a porch was added at the eastern end. In 1846 the present church edifice was built and occupied.

The birth-place of Rev. Robert Stanton, the first minister of the East Church, is not known. Mr. Felt gives 1692 as the year of his birth. He graduated at Harvard College in 1712, and died May 30, 1727, after a ministry of eight years. Dr. Flint, the fourth in the line of his successors, infers that his ministry was peaceful and happy, from the fact that nothing to the contrary has been recorded, and that his early death was regretted alike by his people and the community at large. Mr. William Jennison was ordained the year following Mr. Stanton's death; that is, in 1728, May 2d. He was born in Watertown in 1705, and died in the same town in April, 1750, having been dismissed from the East Church Sept. 13, 1736. He graduated at Harvard College in 1724. His letter of resignation is pathetic in its humility. A disaffection of his society towards him had become general, the cause of which is not now known. "Honored and Beloved," he wrote, "I esteem myself very unhappy that I have fallen under your displeasure. Glad would I be, if it lay in my power to fulfill the ministry I have received among you, [so] as to approve myself to God and to the consciences of all of us; but when I consider the great and long uneasiness and dissatisfaction you have labored under (for which I am heartily sorry), I despair of being re-instated in your love and affection, so as to answer the great ends of the sacred office among you. I am therefore willing to accept a dismission from the sacred office among you, which I write with fear and trembling, not knowing at present what will become of me and mine; but earnestly trusting to your favor and kindness towards us under the difficulties of my situation, and which you have encouraged me to hope for, upon my being freely and willingly dismissed. I heartily wish the best of blessings to your dear church and flock. . . ."

The long ministry of Rev. James Diman followed that of Mr. Jennison. Mr. Diman was born on Long Island, N. Y., Nov. 29, 1707, graduated at Harvard College in 1730, was librarian of the college two years, was ordained in Salem May 11, 1737, and died Oct. 8, 1788. His ministry was peaceful for the most part, and so successful that an enlargement of the meeting-house was required in his day and was made. Towards the end of his pastorate, however, his society became desirous of a colleague. A large portion of the people had fallen out of sympathy with their minister's opinions and teachings, which were rigidly Calvinistic, and, in this, at variance with their own. These divergencies led at length to an interruption of harmony; feelings of personal coldness and alienation set in. After a reluctant assent to the expressed wishes of the society for a colleague, in 1783, and the settlement, the same year, of one who held theological views not in accord with his own, the senior minister manifested an increasing estrangement and withdrawal from his society. Mr. Diman is described as "of grave aspect, invested with the imposing dignity—rather stern and awe-inspiring—peculiar to the ministers of the age of huge wigs, which were a symbol of the clerical authority and the orthodox theology of the day."

The colleague called to assist Mr. Diman was the

widely-known scholar, independent thinker, political writer and vigorous preacher, William Bentley, who "dispensed at once with the wig and creed of which it had been so long the symbol." Mr. Bentley was born in Boston June 22, 1759, graduated at Harvard College in 1777, was three years tutor there, ordained in Salem Sept. 24, 1783, died Dec. 19, 1819, the discourse at his funeral being preached by Professor Edward Everett, then connected with the college at Cambridge. The beginning of Mr. Bentley's ministry marked the transfer of the East Church from apparent allegiance to the theology of the Westminster Assembly to that of a liberalism not yet defined, but which later took the name of Unitarian. It cannot be said that the new minister brought about the change, since we have seen that the people of that church, in choosing a minister, showed a preference for one of a different type from that of their senior pastor, even while the latter was yet preaching to them—they having already departed from the doctrinal faith upheld by him. This more liberal theology, which proved to be the nascent New England Unitarianism, was, to a wide extent, "in the air," in the last quarter of the last century, in Eastern Massachusetts, though not yet developed into an open and systematized confession of faith, nor exciting yet the opposition and alarm which it caused in the early years of the present century, greatly disturbing all the Congregational Churches of New England, and dividing a considerable portion of them into two polemic camps. Of the Boston clergy, a considerable number had ceased to hold to the creed of the New England founders. Some were pronounced in their disaffection and dissent; some simply refrained from teaching important parts of the creed of Calvin and the Westminster divines. Mayhew and Howard, of the West Church; Chauncey and Clarke, of the First Church; and Lathrop, of the Second Church, who preached Mr. Bentley's ordination sermon, were well known for their liberal opinions. So were Mr. Barnard, of the North Church, and Mr. Prince of the First Church in Salem; while the pastors of two churches of the Episcopal order in Boston and Salem,—Rev. James Freeman, of the King's Chapel in Boston, a friend and classmate of Mr. Bentley, and born the same year, and Rev. Nathaniel Fisher, rector of St. Peter's in Salem—were by common repute of the same general way of thinking.

It was with men like these that Mr. Bentley was classed theologically, if, indeed, he was not more unorthodox than they; and this fact recommended him the more as an acceptable candidate to the worshippers in the East meeting-house. Chiefly on account of his political opinions, which were in accord with those of the Republicans of his day, as opposed to those of the Federalists, and on account of his frequent and strong enforcement of these opinions through the press, he was not in close and cordial professional fellowship with his clerical brethren of the neighborhood, they being for the most part Federalists. Consequently his interchange of pulpit services with them was much more restricted than it would otherwise have been, being confined to a few. He was an ardent patriot. On the 22d of February, 1793, he delivered an oration commemorative of the birthday of George Washington to a very large assembly in the North meeting-house. Again, after the death of Washington, he was invited by the citizens of Salem to pronounce a funeral oration, which he did in the same place before a vast gathering of people. When the United States frigate "Constitution" was driven into Marblehead harbor by the British cruisers Tenedos and Endymion, on Sunday, April 3, 1814, and a messenger brought the news to the church, Dr. Bentley promptly dismissed the congregation and hastened, with many of his parishioners, to the scene of the expected attack.

Dr. Bentley was a man of broad culture, of a wide range of reading and research, and of a catholic mind. The deep and long-enduring influence which he exerted is attested by the traditions that still live among the people of Salem, showing the authority that went with his name and word. He did not write for posterity, but for his own time, caring little for fame. His fame reached beyond his immediate neighborhood and outlasted his time, not because he planned it to be so, but because of the powers of his large and many-sided personality and his wealth of resources. He had much and varied learning, had it at command, and possessed along with it that bracing, balanced, healthful "common sense" which is so *un*common. His heart was warm, his sympathies were quick, his hand was always in practice, both for giving and serving. "From all that I have learned of him," says his successor, Dr. Flint, "I have conceived of him as possessed of a vigorous and brilliant intellect,—rapid and exuberant in thought,—of great ease and fluency of speech,—untrammeled by the authority of names or systems in philosophy or theology,—interpreting the universe and the Bible fearlessly by *the light, which enlighteneth every man that cometh into the world*,—the light of the soul, which is greater than the outward universe, or the mere letter of the Bible." Dr. Bentley never married. "Having no family ties to divide his cares and responsibilities with his people, he made them his family. And the affection he manifested for them he had the happiness to know was cordially reciprocated by them." Once he wrote for posterity—a "Historical Sketch of Salem," published in the "Collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society" (vol. vi.).

Dr. Bentley's successor, just above quoted, was Rev. James Flint, born in Reading December 10, 1779; graduated at Harvard College in 1802; ordained over the church in Bridgewater [East Parish] October 29, 1806; installed pastor of the East Church, in Salem, September 19, 1821; he died March 4, 1855. He was the sole minister of the East Church for thirty

years, till 1851, when Rev. Dexter Clapp became his colleague. The period of Dr. Flint's ministry was one of steady prosperity for the society. In 1846 the beautiful brick church, with front of free stone, was built on what is now Washington Square (then Brown Street), over against the southwest angle of the common. Dr. Flint was a man of scholarly tastes, had a poetic temperament, and his graceful and vivid writing, combined with an animated and warm delivery of his discourses, made him an attractive preacher, welcomed always in the pulpits of his denomination, as his presence was acceptable also on those more public occasions which brought him before his fellow-citizens at large.

Rev. Dexter Clapp, installed as colleague with Dr. Flint December 17, 1851, was born July 15, 1816, in Easthampton, Mass.; graduated at Amherst College, 1839, and at the Cambridge Divinity School in 1842; was ordained pastor of the Unitarian Church in Savannah, Ga., November 26, 1843, and continued in the ministry there for a few years, after which he was settled over the Second Church in Roxbury (First in West Roxbury) five years. He was minister of the East Church twelve years, till February, 1864, when he resigned on account of ill-health. He died July 26, 1868. During his ministry in Salem his society was united and strong. It was with sincere regret that his resignation was accepted. He was a spiritually-minded man, an earnest preacher, and a high ideal of ministerial duty made both his pulpit and his pastoral services acceptable and effective.

A few months after his resignation Rev. Samuel C. Beane was called by the society to succeed him. Mr. Beane was born December 19, 1835, in Candia, N. H.; graduated at Dartmouth College in 1858, and from the Cambridge Divinity School in 1861; ordained in Chicopee, Mass., January 15, 1862; installed in Salem January 1, 1865; resigned January 1, 1878; installed in Concord, N. H., January 9, 1878; resigned May 10, 1885, since which time he has been a missionary for Northern New England, appointed by the American Unitarian Association. Rev. George H. Hosmer was installed pastor of the East Church January 1, 1879, and resigned January 1, 1886. He was born in Buffalo, N. Y., May 14, 1839; graduated at the Meadville Theological School, 1866; ordained as an evangelist in 1867, and after preaching in Deerfield, Mass., some time, was installed in Bridgewater December 17, 1868, where he remained ten years. He was installed in Neponset February 20, 1887. Rev. William H. Ramsey, the present minister, was ordained October 15, 1886.

Episcopal.—*St. Peter's.*—The great majority of the first settlers of Salem brought with them no love of Episcopacy from the Old World home. John Lyford, the well-known disturber of the peace of Plymouth, "came hither also," as an associate of Roger Conant, and held services for a time, before Endicott and his company came, according to the usages of the English Church. He was here but a short time, however, as he went to Virginia in 1627, and died there the same year. Of Endicott's company there were a few—at least the two brothers Brown, John and Samuel—who did not fail in loyalty to the Church of England. They were leading men and councillors. When they saw in the organization of the First Church that a new departure, amounting to a virtual secession from the National Church, was determined on, they, with some others of like mind, set up a separate worship after the order of the Book of Common Prayer. When Governor Endicott summoned them to answer for their schismatic attitude towards the Salem Church, they persisted, "and therefore, finding those two brothers to be of high spirits and their speeches and practices tending to mutiny and faction, the Governor told them that New England was no place for such as they, and therefore he sent them both back to England at the return of the ships the same year." "This proceeding," says Palfrey, "had first raised, and for the present issue had decided, a question of vast magnitude. The right of the Governor and Company of Massachusetts Bay to exclude at their pleasure dangerous or disagreeable persons from their domain they never regarded as questionable, any more than a householder doubts his right to determine who shall be the inmates of his house."[1]

The experiment of Episcopal worship was not tried again with a view to permanency for a long time. To Mr. George R. Curwen's valuable notes, which I am kindly permitted to use, I am indebted for many interesting and important facts in the history of St. Peter's Church. He says that in 1727 Rev. George Pigot, then rector of St. Michael's, in Marblehead, delivered monthly lectures and administered rites of the English Church in Salem, from which he infers that there was an organized parish of that order here at that time. In 1733 a church was built on "Prison Lane" (now St. Peter's Street), and was consecrated June 25, 1734, the land on which it stood having been given in part for the purpose by Philip English and his family, a pew in the church being set apart to them as an equivalent for the rest. The gift was estimated at nineteen-twenty-fourths of the value of the land, viz., ninety-five pounds, the other five-twenty-fourths representing the estimated value of the pew, viz., twenty-five pounds. This church had forty pews and a tower upon its western end. It gave place to the present Gothic stone building in 1833, which was enlarged in 1845 and further improved not many years since by the erection of the stone chapel annexed to it. Rev. Charles Brockwell, a graduate of Cambridge, England, was the first rector, entering upon his office, says Mr. Curwen, October 8, 1738. (Mr. Felt says May 9, 1739.) November 27, 1746, he left St. Peter's, having been appointed by the Bishop of London to

[1] 'History of New England," vol. i., p. 299.

King's Chapel, in Boston. He died August 20, 1755, says Felt (April 20, 1755, say Osgood & Batchelder, in sketch of Salem), at the age of fifty-nine.

Mr. Brockwell was educated at St. Catherine's Hall, Cambridge, and was appointed by the Society (in England) for the Propagation of the Gospel in foreign parts, to St. Andrew's Church, in Scituate, Mass., but "finding neither the place nor the people to answer his expectations," he removed to Salem. The officers of the Salem Church, in applying to the Society in England for a clergyman to succeed him, in 1747, testify to his faithfulness, and speak of theirs as "this infant, though flourishing church."

Rev. William McGilchrist was appointed his successor. Mr. McGilchrist was born in Glasgow, Scotland, 1703; graduated at Baliol College, Oxford, in 1731; ordained priest in 1733, and sent by the above-mentioned missionary society, in 1741, to Charleston, South Carolina. After four years' service he was obliged, by the state of his health, to return to England. Recovering from his illness, he was appointed to succeed Mr. Brockwell in Salem, and entered on the duties of his office in 1747. He died in the ministry in Salem, April 19, 1780, aged seventy-three years. His services seem not to have been quite continuous, however, through the thirty-four years intervening between his settlement and his death. The opposition to the English Church establishment had not died out. The parish was not strong, though it gradually increased until 1761, when it was found necessary to add twenty feet to the length of the church building. It was not without difficulty, however, that, in the face of popular odium and legal ban, the small congregation upheld its standard. In 1777 the revolutionary spirit was impatient and intolerant. The Legislature passed a law prohibiting the reading of the Episcopal service under heavy penalties. Later, however, the service was reinstated by the rector. From 1771 to December, 1774, Rev. Robert B. Nichols, a native of the West Indies, educated at Queen's College, Oxford, was an assistant to Mr. McGilchrist. He was afterwards a chaplain in the British army, and became still later dean of Middleham, England.

Rev. Nathaniel Fisher was the next rector. He was born in Dedham July 8, 1742. The mother of Fisher Ames, the distinguished statesman and orator, was his sister. Mr. Fisher graduated at Harvard College in 1763, taught a school in Granville, near Annapolis, Nova Scotia, under the patronage of an English missionary society, soon after the Revolutionary War began. In 1777 he went to London, and was there ordained a priest by the celebrated Dr. Robert Lowth, Bishop of London, and was licensed on the 25th of September of that year as assistant to Rev. Mr. Wood, of Annapolis, and continued after the death of Mr. Wood, which occurred the following year, in charge of his mission in Annapolis and Granville, till the close of the year 1781. On his return to Massachusetts at that time he was invited to Saint Peter's Church, Salem, and entered upon his duties there, February 24, 1782. His ministry in Salem extended over a period of thirty years, and closed only with his life, on Sunday, December 20, 1812. Mr. Fisher became a man of leading influence in the Episcopal Church in Massachusetts, being active in the early years of his ministry in measures for the organization of that church in Massachusetts and parts adjacent, and was held in high respect by the clergy and laity. He was a man of independent mind and action, more than once casting a solitary vote in conventions of the Episcopal Church on important questions coming before them, when his voice alone broke the otherwise unanimous decision. He was a man of strongly-marked traits of character, "and very decided and fixed in his prejudices, which he took no pains to conceal." His demeanor, says his successor, Rev. Charles Mason, was somewhat stern, but he was a man of generous feelings and habits. In person he was strongly built and of a large frame. His constitution was vigorous, and remained firm till his death. In the preface to a volume of his sermons published several years after his death, it is observed that "to clearness of apprehension the author joined a sprightly imagination, which was exercised with care and modesty, and contributed equally to illustrate and enliven his sentiments. This, as well as the other faculties of his mind, was regulated and enlivened by a devoted study of the ancient classics, which, to the latest period of his life, he read with the ardor of a true scholar."

"In regard to these sermons," says Rev. Mr. Mason, "it may be proper to add that while they contain earnest and impressive appeals to the heart and conscience, especially those which the author last wrote, —we find in them no clear and distinctive instruction upon the great orthodox doctrines of the church. They convey, indeed, no positive doubt in regard to any of these doctrines, but are deficient in such definite statements as would show that the writer firmly and heartily maintained them. It is possible that they may not do entire justice to their author in this respect, and that the preferences of the editor, who is supposed to be a friend who afterwards joined the ranks of the Unitarian denomination, may have insensibly biased his judgment in the selection." The person referred to as having edited the volume of sermons was probably the late Joseph Story, one of the justices of the Supreme Court of the United States. Judge Story was a devoted friend and parishioner of Mr. Fisher, and to his pen is attributed a highly appreciative obituary notice of his pastor, which appeared in the *Salem Gazette* of December 25, 1812.

At the time of Mr. Fisher's death the congregation worshipping in Saint Peter's Church was in a very feeble condition. The commercial misfortunes and restrictions that led the way to the War of 1812 had operated disastrously upon the town, and especially upon the

Episcopal Society. The clergy of the town, of various denominations, severally in turn, supplied the pulpit of the church through a series of Sundays succeeding Mr. Fisher's death. The ministry of Mr. Fisher was followed by that of Rev. Thomas Carlile, who first officiated as lay reader, and after ordination entered upon the duties of rector January 22, 1817. He was born in Providence, R. I., January 12, 1792, and graduated at Brown University, 1809. His ministry was eminently useful to the parish, raising it from the low condition in which he found it to a position of comparative prosperity. He resigned the rectorship October 6, 1822, and died in Providence March 28, 1824.

Rev. Henry W. Ducachet, who followed Mr. Carlile, was born February 7, 1797, in South Carolina. He was educated at Princeton, studied medicine and practiced as a physician some years in Baltimore and New York. Changing his profession for that of the ministry, he first served St. Peter's Parish, as lay reader, in 1823, and for a short time as rector, after ordination as a priest. He resigned December 5, 1825, and removed to Norfolk, Virginia.

Rev. Thomas W. Coit, the next rector, was born in New London, Conn., June 28, 1803, graduated at Yale College, 1821, was settled in Salem July 16, 1826, resigned March 22, 1829, and became rector of Christ Church, Cambridge, Mass. He died in Middletown, Conn., June 21, 1885. His ministry in Salem, though short, was very useful to the parish. He was highly esteemed in the Episcopal Church, and wrote vigorously in defense of churchmen, as against the Puritans.

The St. Peter's Parish was much disheartened when Mr. Coit left them, but entered into a correspondence with Rev. Alexander V. Griswold, bishop of the Eastern Diocese, and then rector of St. Michael's Church, in Bristol, R. I., which resulted in his coming to Salem to take the pastoral charge of St. Peter's, which he did December 24, 1829. He continued in the office till June 26, 1834, when he removed to Boston. Mr. Griswold was born in Simsbury, Conn., April 22, 1766, and died February 15, 1843. He was widely known and universally esteemed through Eastern Massachusetts for his personal virtues and his exemplary simplicity, dignity and fidelity in the responsible office to whose duties he was devoted. During the ministry of Bishop Griswold the new stone church was built, his last official act being its consecration.

Rev. John A. Vaughan was Bishop Griswold's successor. He entered upon his duties June 26, 1834. Mr. Vaughan graduated at Bowdoin College in 1815, and resigned the Salem rectorship in 1836. Rev. Charles Mason followed him, being inducted into the ministry in Salem May 31, 1837. Mr. Mason was a son of Jeremiah Mason, the eminent lawyer; was born in Portsmouth, N. H., July 25, 1812; graduated at Harvard College, 1832. During his ministry the church was enlarged by a chancel and vestry-room. The congregation increased and there was growing strength and constant union in the parish. Mr. Mason resigned May 30, 1847, and became rector of Grace Church, Boston, in which office he continued until his death, March 23, 1862.

Rev. William R. Babcock came to the vacant rectorship April 30, 1848, and resigned April 18, 1853. He was born in Westerly, R. I., March 28, 1814; graduated at Brown University, 1837. From Salem he removed to Natchez, Miss. Rev. George Leeds succeeded him in the St. Peter's rectorship September 4, 1853, and resigned April 8, 1860. He was born in Dorchester, Mass., October 25, 1816. Mr. Leeds removed from Salem to Philadelphia, and died there April 15, 1885.

Rev. William Rawlins Pickman was the next rector. He took charge of the parish October 7, 1860, and left it in 1835. There was a serious interruption, in the course of his ministry, to the harmony which had existed before, and the agitation did not cease while he continued in office. Rev. James O. Scripture succeeded Mr. Pickman in November, 1865. He was born June 26, 1839; graduated at Dartmouth College, 1860, and died August 9, 1868, having officiated in all the usual services, including the communion, at St. Peter's Church, the Sunday next preceding his death. He died sincerely mourned by his warmly attached and suddenly bereaved congregation. From May 1, 1870, to March 28, 1875, Rev. Edward M. Gushee filled the rectorship of St. Peter's, having been previously settled over St. Paul's Church in Wallingford, Conn. From Salem he removed to Cambridge, Mass., and is in charge of a church in that city. In 1872, during the ministry of Rev. Mr. Gushee, the stone chapel was erected in rear of the church. The present rector of St. Peter's, Rev. Charles Arey, D.D., commenced his services in Salem September 26, 1875. He came to Salem from St. John's Church in Buffalo, N. Y. He was born in Wellfleet, Mass., August 22, 1822.

Tabernacle Church.—The Tabernacle Church is next in age among the churches of Salem. The causes of its origin have been already mentioned, in part, in the story of the First Church, to which the reader is referred. In 1735 the disaffection in the First Church towards Rev. Samuel Fisk, its minister, came to a crisis, as has been stated, in his exclusion from the pulpit of that church, and his withdrawal with a majority of its members: Dr. Worcester says, "three-fourths, at least, of the church and society;" the remaining members, in their petition calling for a meeting for reorganization, assert that the late minister "was dismissed by a major part of the brethren of the church of the First Parish, qualified by law to act in that matter." The preacher of the first Centennial Discourse says that neither the day nor the month can be ascertained when Mr. Fisk and his friends deter-

mined to establish themselves upon a separate foundation, or when they consummated their determination by any formal process. In inquiring for the birthday of this, the "Third," or Tabernacle Church, I incline to fix on May 4, 1735, as its probable date. This church conceived of itself as having had a continuous life and identity with the church of 1629. It was not till the 23d of May, 1763, that, by a formal vote, it relinquished the title of the First Church and assumed that of the Third Church. But its date of actual beginning may be assumed to be the first time it assembled after its expulsion from the meeting-house of the First Church. If the exclusion was, as the record says, on the 27th of April, 1735, there can be no doubt that the congregation met somewhere, probably enough at the house of Joseph Orne, the next Sunday, which would be May 4, 1735. They soon began the building of a new meeting-house, which was completed in 1736. It will be remembered that they first placed it too near the house of the old parish, "only twelve perches and eleven feet" from it, and that the General Court ordered it to be removed to a limit "not nearer to the other than forty perches." This house stood nearly upon the site of the Perley Block, and was completed early in 1736.

In 1744 Mr. Fisk asked for a colleague. The confidence felt at first in his leadership and in the wisdom of the step taken in separating from the mother church, had begun to wane. Some correspondence was had with that church relative to an accommodation. No agreement could be reached. Rev. Dudley Leavitt was called to be colleague with Mr. Fisk. He declined to take the office of colleague pastor, but, it was understood, might consider an invitation to become sole pastor. August 12, 1745, the congregation voted that Mr. Fisk be discharged from ecclesiastical relations with the society; the church had taken similar action two weeks before. The way being now considered open for Mr. Leavitt's settlement, the call to him was renewed and accepted, and he was ordained October 23, 1745, not, however, peacefully. Mr. Fisk's friends were present at the time and place appointed in sufficient force to interrupt the public services and prevent the orderly proceedings of the ceremony. Those who had come together to settle the new minister retired from the tumultuous scene to a neighboring garden, where, under the shelter of a tree, the service of ordination took place. Mr. Leavitt died, sincerely lamented, February 7, 1762. The society prospered during his ministry. The church, says Mr. Worcester, became "more Calvinistic" under his preaching. Mr. Leavitt was born in Stratham, N. H., in 1720, and graduated at Harvard College in 1739. That his influence was marked in calming the troubled waters of controversy, that his mind was large and his spirit catholic, and that the impression made by his labors was deep and lasting, is shown by the fact that the church which had been led by his counsels not only surrendered its claim to the title of First Church, soon after his death, but voted to take, in affectionate commemoration of him, the title of "The Church of which Rev. Dudley Leavitt was late Pastor." It kept this name from August 2, 1762, to May 23, 1763, when it voted to assume the name of the "Third Church."

Mr. John Huntington was ordained successor of Mr. Leavitt September 28, 1763, but lived less than three years from his ordination, dying May 30, 1766, at the early age of thiry years. He was born in Norwich, Conn., in 1736, and graduated at Harvard College in 1763.

The next ministry was that of Rev. Nathaniel Whitaker, D.D., which continued for fourteen or fifteen mostly stormy years. He was settled July 28, 1769, and his connection with the society was dissolved February 24, 1784. He made some unusual conditions as preliminary to his acceptance of the society's invitation to Salem. The customary services of installation were not to be observed. Certain articles of agreement between himself and the church must be adopted, changing materially the method of church government and organization from that usual with Congregational Churches, making it essentially Presbyterian. He afterwards endeavored to bring the church formally into connection with the Boston Presbytery. He was himself a Presbyterian. With a view to substitute some equivalent for the omitted installation service, he proposed that the Rev. Messrs. Diman, Barnard and Holt, neighboring ministers, should be invited to be present "as friends to the society and the common cause of religion." This was done, and the ministers invited returned an answer declining the invitation, not wishing to countenance proceedings which they characterized as "irregular," and remonstrating against the course taken, though in an entirely friendly spirit. The church was prepared to comply with all requisitions made by the pastor-elect. He was a man of popular gifts; his preaching was much admired. He was energetic, active, inclined to assume power and to take control in whatever matters engaged his interest. The conditions of the union between pastor and people had not been very distinctly drawn. The church, under the blinding glamours produced by the preacher's brilliancy, accepted everything, and soon awoke to the fact that they were entangled in the meshes of various concessions not well defined, opening doors to misunderstanding and contentions which in due time ripened into open and bitter strife. On the 6th of October, 1774, the meeting-house of the society was burned. At this time those who had been pushing a resolute opposition to Dr. Whittaker withdrew and organized the church now known as the South Church. Reports unfavorable to Dr. Whittaker's character had been in circulation, and the secession of those who had withdrawn did not bring peace. The attendance upon his ministrations fell off, and after long and persistent efforts to accomplish the end,

the society relieved itself of its discredited pastor and of Presbyterianism, and resumed its place among the Congregational Churches of the town.

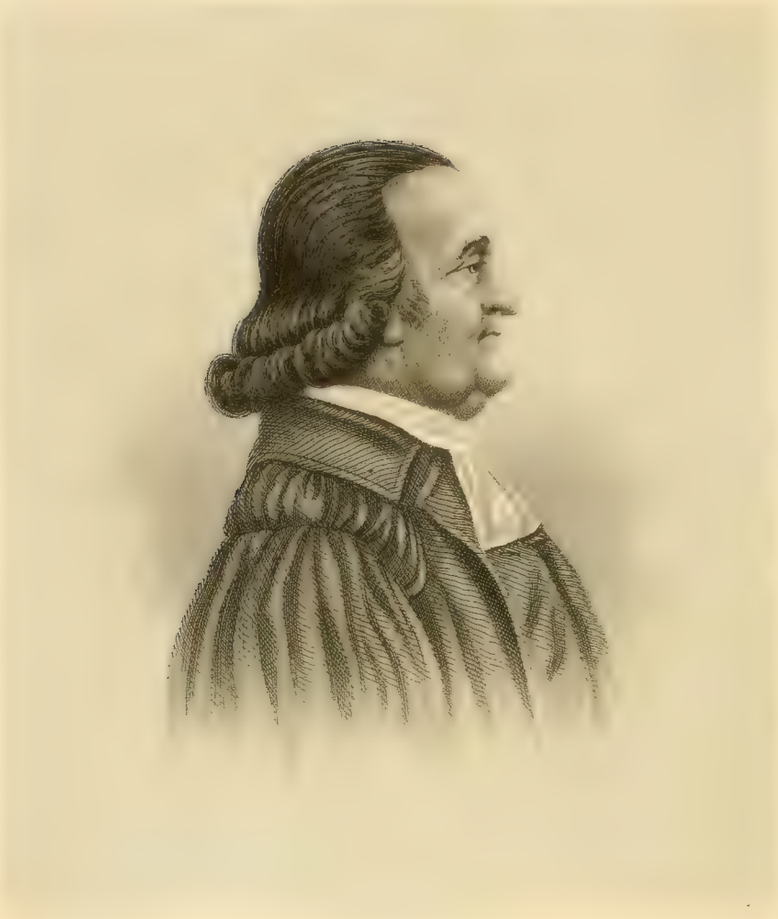
After the burning of the first meeting-house the society built a new one on the corner of Washington and what was then Marlborough (now Federal) Streets, the site of the present church. The new church was built in 1776, though not supplied with pews until the following year. The society was not in a condition to make the building of it easy, or to bring it promptly to completion. When dedicated, it was, says Dr. Worcester, without galleries, without pulpit and without even plastering upon the walls. Being modeled after Whitfield's London Tabernacle, the building, and from it the church and congregation took, in the popular speech, its name, which in time was adopted by the society, though without any definite action authorizing it. The close of Dr. Whittaker's ministry, in 1784, was in striking contrast with its imposing beginning. His friends were few, he had no regular salary, his parish was weak, his fame tarnished. He was born in Long Island, N. Y., February 22, 1732, graduated at Princeton College, 1752, and died January 21, 1795, in Virginia.

Rev. Joshua Spaulding followed him. He was ordained October 26, 1785. The society recovered its strength under his ministry, and for a time prospered. The meeting-house, having added pulpit and galleries, was finished and furnished. Mr. Spaulding, says Mr. Worcester, was a man of unquestioned piety, "but the vehemence and pungency with which he preached the distinguishing doctrines of grace often inflamed the enmity of the carnal mind," and tended to make him "less popular." Engaging also in political controversy, both with pen and voice, and finally asserting his own right, as pastor, "to negative the votes of the church," he brought upon himself finally a warm and determined counteraction of his measures, within his church, and was led to ask a dismission, which took place April 23, 1802. He did not cease to minister to a portion of his flock, however, as those who disapproved of the action of the society in dismissing him withdrew with him from the church and organized "the Branch," or Howard Street Church, of which more is to be said in its place. Mr. Spaulding was born in Killingly, Conn., graduated at Dartmouth College, 1786, resigned the pastorship of the Branch Church May 4, 1814, and died September 26, 1825, at the age of sixty-five years.

The next minister, the fifth in the ministerial line of the Tabernacle Church, was Rev. Samuel Worcester, D.D. He was installed pastor of the Tabernacle Church in Salem, April 20, 1803, and continued in the office till his death, June 7, 1821. His ministry covered a period of great religious activity, in and out of his church, in which he bore a conspicuous part. The Unitarian controversy, which divided many of the principal Congregational Churches of Eastern Massachusetts, was at its height. Dr. Worcester was a prominent champion on the orthodox side, and wrote in opposition to Dr. Channing, especially in review of the sermon preached by Dr. Channing at the ordination of Mr. John Emery Abbot over the North Church in Salem, April 20, 1815. He was an active promoter of the organization of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, in 1810, and became its corresponding secretary. In his church the first missionaries to India were ordained and commissioned on the 6th of February, 1812. His influence extended widely beyond his society, and was strong and deep within it. His labors outside his church became so weighty and engrossing that a colleague was settled in 1819, that his connection with his people might continue, though only a part of his time and strength could be devoted to their service. The meeting-house underwent no little change during these years. In 1804 it lost its dome and belfry in a tempest. The next year a steeple was built upon its front, changing it materially from its original tent-like form. Mr. Worcester was born in Hollis, N. H., November 1, 1770, graduated at Dartmouth College, 1795, and had been five years pastor of a church in Fitchburg before his settlement in Salem. He was a younger brother of Noah Worcester, the "apostle of peace," and the author of "Bible News" and some other important contributions to the Trinitarian controversy, upon the Unitarian side.

The colleague settled with Dr. Worcester, July 21, 1819, was Mr. Elias Cornelius, a native of Somers, N. Y., born July 31, 1794, graduated at Yale College 1813, dismissed from the Tabernacle Church December 22, 1826, to take a position in the service of the American Education Society. He died February 12, 1832. His parish esteemed him an able and devoted man, and regretted his departure. February 14, 1827, John P. Cleaveland succeeded him. Mr. Cleaveland was born in Rowley July 19, 1799, graduated at Bowdoin College, 1821, was dismissed from the Tabernacle Church May 14, 1834.

His successor, the eighth in the pastoral line, was Rev. Samuel Melanchthon Worcester, son of Rev. Samuel, chronicled above as the fifth in the line. He was born in Fitchburg, September 4, 1801; graduated at Harvard College, 1822; from 1823 to 1834 professor in Amherst College; settled in Salem December 3, 1834; resigned January 31, 1860; died August 16, 1866. His tastes, though scholarly, and his training, though directed to service in the church, did not limit his sympathies and activities to scholastic or ecclesiastical lines. He was a true patriot and took a profound interest in the national crisis which the country passed through in the years from 1860 to 1865. He had represented the town of Amherst, the city of Salem and Essex County in the State Legislature. His orthodoxy was stanch and positive, but his spirit was genial and kind, and his bearing was courteous and friendly with all.



Thos Barnard

A new church—the present building—was erected in 1854, on or near the site of the old, and a large new chapel, of two stories, was built in its rear and in connection with it, in 1868,—the ample size and commodiousness of these buildings attesting the prosperity of the society, and the largeness of the wants they were designed to meet.

Mr. Charles Ray Palmer was ordained pastor of the church August 29, 1860, and dismissed June 13, 1872. Mr. Palmer was born in New Haven, Conn., May 2, 1834; graduated at Yale College, 1855, and, after his dismission from the Tabernacle Church, became the pastor of a church in Bridgeport, Conn. From June, 1872 to Dec. 31, 1873, the church was without a pastor. On the last-named date Rev. Hiram B. Putnam was installed. His health failed, causing him to seek a dismission, which took place March 15, 1877. Mr. Putnam was born in Danvers January 27, 1840; graduated at Amherst College, 1860, and had been settled over a church in West Concord, N. H., before his installation in Salem. Rev. De Witt S. Clark, the present pastor of the church, was installed January 15, 1879. He was born in Chicopee, Mass., September 11, 1841; graduated at Amherst College, 1863, and had been pastor of a church in Clinton, Mass., before his settlement in Salem.

North Church.—On the 3d of March, 1772, *The Proprietors of the North Meeting House* organized themselves into a religious society with the above title, in the Salem Town Hall. They had been members of the First Parish; there were forty-three. On the 19th of July of the same year, fifty-two persons, having received a dismission from the First Church on the 16th of May preceding, met at the house of Benjamin Pickman, on Essex Street, opposite St. Peter's Street, constituted themselves a church, which they afterwards voted should be called the North Church. This secession from the First Parish grew out of a disagreement in the choice of a minister. In 1770 the highly-esteemed minister of the First Church, Rev. Thomas Barnard, became disabled by paralysis, and his people looked for a colleague. Thomas Barnard, Jr., a son of the pastor, who had a little before completed his preparation for the ministry, supplied his father's pulpit for some months, and about half of the society earnestly desired his settlement as colleague pastor. A small majority preferred another man, who, after much delay, was called and ordained. The disappointed friends of the younger Barnard were unwilling to give him up, and organized the new (North) society, as above related. A site for a meeting-house had been selected and purchased on the 14th of February, 1772, on the corner of Lynde and North Streets, on the western line of what was early known as "Sharpe's Training-Field." This meeting-house was first opened for public worship August 23, 1772, though not nearly completed. After occupying it three Sundays, the proprietors determined to add side-galleries, not originally contemplated in the plan of the building committee. It was not considered finished till nearly five months after the society began to meet in it. It was a house of large capacity, and was on that account much resorted to for civic celebrations on the Fourth of July, and on other public days, for many years. Thomas Barnard, Jr., was ordained January 13, 1773, and continued in the pastoral office till October 1, 1814, the day of his death. He came of a ministerial ancestry. His father, an uncle, a grandfather, a great-grandfather had all been preachers; nor does this roll completely sum up the clerical kinsmen descended from the American progenitor, Rev. Francis Barnard of Hadley. Thomas Barnard, Jr., was born in Newbury, February 5, 1748; graduated at Harvard College, 1766, and studied theology with Dr. Williams, of Bradford, afterwards professor at Harvard College. The North Society suffered in common with other churches during the Revolutionary War. Mr. Barnard at first leaned to the side of the Royalists, and a considerable number of his leading parishioners were pronounced Loyalists, including several who quit the country. He turned to the Whig side, however, before long, and was afterwards steadfast in that way. Though but a young man, he made himself prominent at the North Bridge, when Colonel Leslie, the British officer, came at the head of three hundred men from Marblehead, for guns supposed to be collected and deposited on the other side of the North River. He bore himself with dignity and firmness that day, albeit as a pacificator of the roused passions ready to burst into a flame. He has the credit of counseling the compromise which saved bloodshed, and led to the turning back of the King's troops, leaving the object of the expedition unaccomplished.

Dr. Barnard's long ministry justified the loyalty of his early friends. He was broad-minded, wise and catholic in spirit, effective as a preacher, genial and trustworthy as a friend and a pastor, fond of children, and the society was united and prosperous through his ministry. As a scholar he stood well among the scholarly. He was held in such honor among the preachers of his day, and was of such reputation in the churches and in the State, as to be often sought to preach on days of general public convention, both ecclesiastical and other. Among the able pulpit leaders of thought in a highly intelligent community, and at a time when theological inquiry was exciting great interest, and becoming more free and earnest, he held an eminent place, held it long, and at the close of his forty years and more of service, his influence showed no sign of waning. In his theological opinions he belonged to the liberal school, and so educated his congregation that they elected a Unitarian to succeed him with hearty unanimity.

That successor was John Emery Abbot, son of the distinguished head of Phillips Academy, in Exeter, N. H., Dr. Benjamin Abbot. Mr. Ab-

bot was born at Exeter August 6, 1793, graduated at Bowdoin College 1810, and pursued his professional studies partly at Cambridge, under the direction of Dr. Henry Ware, Sr.; and partly with Dr. William Ellery Channing, of Boston, who preached at his ordination as minister of the North Church, April 20, 1815. The sermon of Dr. Channing on this occasion produced a deep and wide-spread impression, and was followed by strictures and controversial arguments against its positions from the pen of Dr. Samuel Worcester, of the Tabernacle Church, in Salem. Mr. Abbot, not yet twenty-two years of age, taking charge of this large society, and giving himself with great devotion to the studies and labors incidental to a position so exacting and responsible, broke down in health within two years. Rest and travel brought only temporary and partial alleviation to his illness, and he died at his father's house in Exeter October 7, 1819. Though his ministry was so short, it left a lasting influence. Mr. Abbot was a good scholar and a conscientious student. But his highest power lay in a soul of deep religious sensibility, a character of rare purity and loftiness of aim, and a consecrated fidelity.

Mr. John Brazer succeeded him. His ordination took place November 14, 1820. Mr. Brazer was born in Worcester, Mass., September 21, 1789, graduated at Harvard College 1813, was appointed tutor in Greek in the college 1815, and from 1817 to 1820 was tutor in Latin. His ministry in Salem ended with his life, February 26, 1846. In January, 1846, he left his home in Salem for a milder climate, his health requiring rest and change; and he died at the plantation of his friend and classmate, Dr. Benjamin Huger, on Cooper River, near Charleston, S. C. Dr. Brazer was of a sensitive and nervous temperament, which made him seem reserved, almost shy, to many, but he was a friend of the poor, and a minister of comfort to the sorrowing. Conservative by nature, he was a preacher of commanding power, clear and logical in thought, grave and dignified in manner, serious and searching in bringing truth home to the conscience. For the twenty-five years and more of his ministry he held one of the largest and most intelligent congregations in Massachusetts in close and united attendance upon his services. During all this period the society was in a condition of the highest prosperity. It was during the ministry of Dr. Brazer that the present stone church was built on Essex Street. The question of building was some time in agitation. The project was not finally approved by all. But the majority having decided upon it, the corner-stone was laid May 16, 1835, and the church was dedicated June 22, 1836. It was finished at first perfectly plain in its interior, with white walls. In 1847 it was completely changed within, and assumed its present appearance, under the direction of the late Francis Peabody, Esq.

Mr. Octavius Brooks Frothingham was ordained successor to Dr. Brazer March 10, 1847. He was born in Boston November 26, 1822, graduated at Harvard College 1843, resigned his charge in Salem April 9, 1855, and was installed pastor of a newly-gathered Unitarian Society in Jersey City, N. J., September 11, 1855. The year following he removed to the city of New York and became the minister of the Third Unitarian Society in that city, where for many years he was widely known as an eloquent expositor of so-called "radical" religious thought. Leaving this position in somewhat impaired health, Mr. Frothingham, after a period of travel and rest, has taken up his residence in Boston. Mr. Frothingham's ministry in the North Society produced some results worthy of notice. In the first years of it his theological views and his ideal of the ministerial aim were in closest accord with those of his hearers. They were what were termed, in the phrase of the day, conservative. But a change came —by the fault of nobody. The minister was in earnest in the pursuit of truth. It led him, in time, to conclusions which modified materially his pulpit utterances. Some persons who could not change with him no longer enjoyed his ministrations as before. But we have to notice that an important education went on under this experience of listening to teachings in themselves not welcome, not accepted, but heard with respectful attention, because of the recognized ability and sincerity of the preacher. It gave the society broader sympathies, a more fearless spirit of inquiry, and a tolerant, self-possessed and catholic mind towards all forms of honest thought. A habit of candid hearing grew; novel and unacceptable teachings were heard with patience; the mind was not thrown off its balance by hearing its cherished opinions arraigned or denied. During the ministry of Mr. Frothingham the society built its vestry, in the summer of 1853.

Rev. Charles Lowe succeeded Mr. Frothingham. Mr. Lowe was born in Portsmouth, N. H., November 18, 1828, graduated at Harvard College 1847, was tutor in Greek and Latin in the college 1850-51, ordained colleague pastor with Rev. John Weiss, in New Bedford, July 28, 1852, resigned in 1854, on account of ill-health, installed minister of the North Church, Salem, September 27, 1855, and resigned July 28, 1857, as before, on account of ill health. On the 28th of May, 1859, he was installed minister of the Congregational (Unitarian) Church in Somerville, and after a ministry of nearly six years, was once more compelled by the state of his health to resign. With a partial regaining of his health there came, as was always sure to come with returning strength, a desire of active service, and he gave several years of efficient administration to the American Unitarian Association, as its secretary, besides editing for a time the *Unitarian Review*. Mr. Lowe died June 20, 1874.



E. B. Willson.

The present minister of the North Society is Rev. Edmund B. Willson, who was installed June 5, 1859. He was born in Petersham, Mass., August 15, 1820, was a little while in Yale College, and graduated at the Cambridge Divinity School, 1843, ordained in Grafton, Mass., January 3, 1844, installed in West Roxbury July 18, 1852.

South Church.—Mention has been made of a division in the Third (now known as the Tabernacle) Church, in 1774, growing out of dissatisfaction with Dr. Whitaker, and a secession or dismission of some thirty-eight members has been noticed as having taken place after the church was burned. Those withdrawing purchased the Assembly House, as it was called, built in 1766, which stood on the site of the present vestry of the South Church, and established public worship there. They organized a church, which an ecclesiastical council, so far as such a council was empowered to confer and confirm a title, authorized to take the name of the Third Church. An issue was made later as to its right to do so. It was argued that not even an ecclesiastical council has retroactive power to alter facts, or to enact that a misrepresentation shall have the force of truth; that this was not made the Third Church in Salem by a declaration that such should be its name. There was a Third Church of the Congregational order (chronologically), and this was not it. We must suppose that the church worshipping in Cambridge Street considered itself, on some ground or other, as having come rightfully into possession of the title which its mother church, Dr. Whitaker's, had enjoyed, but had now forfeited. It can hardly claim that, by reason of Dr. Whitaker's or the church's defection from Congregationalism to Presbyterianism, the title of the Third Church had lapsed or become a disused and unclaimed waif, which any church might pick up and appropriate at will. If the transfer of Dr. Whitaker's church to the Presbyterian body, real or *quasi*, had broken the line of descent, it surely had broken it as fatally for the daughter church as for the mother. If Dr. Whitaker's church was not the Third Church, there was none, or the North Church was that, for the North Church was organized in 1772. If the church worshipping on Cambridge Street was the Third Church, what was that church still existing under the ministry of Dr. Whitaker? It was not extinct. Had the withdrawing portion of the society conveyed away with it the entire and identical body, of which it had been but a member—a part? and could it assert its lineal and unbroken descent from Rev. Samuel Fisk's church? It seems to do so. What did this withdrawal of the aggrieved do to Dr. Whitaker's church ecclesiastically, legally, or as simple fact? Here it is to-day, under whatever name, the same church that has had a continuous life from 1735 to this year of grace.

Such has been the general line of argument and statement pursued by those who have questioned the historical truth of that name adopted by the church of the South Society in February, 1775. We do not see how it is to be answered. There was one more church in Salem after February 14, 1775, than there had been before. Can there be any question which one began at that time, or that, in fact, the church of the South Society was the new one, whose existence dates from that time?

The meeting-house of the Third Church, on Essex Street, was burned on the 6th of October, 1774. The dismissed members and those who joined them in the new enterprise had their purchased house of worship ready for occupation on the 18th of December following. The church was, in the phrase of its own preference, "recognized" by a council called for that purpose, February 14, 1775, and this may be taken, in our judgment, as the date of the beginning of the church's independent existence. The society called itself the Third Congregational Society till March 15, 1805, when it was incorporated under the title of "The Proprietors of the New South Meeting-house," on entering its new (the present) meeting-house on Chestnut Street. This house, built in 1804, was dedicated January 1, 1805. It was remodeled and renewed throughout in its interior in 1860, but its fine exterior architectural forms and proportions were preserved unchanged.

The first minister was Mr. Daniel Hopkins, a younger brother of Dr. Samuel Hopkins, of Newport, R. I., the famed theologian and founder of a school of divinity well known in the beginning of the century. He was born in Waterbury, Conn., October 16, 1734, graduated at Yale College, 1758, and taught a school for young ladies in Salem from 1766 to 1778, this being "the first school for the exclusive instruction of young ladies ever instituted in Salem, and taught by a gentleman." While teaching he preached as opportunity offered. He was ordained November 18, 1778, and his ministry continued till his death, December 14, 1814, he having the assistance of a colleague from 1805. Mr. Hopkins possessed some of the traits of his more distinguished brother. They were both more than ministers, warm patriots, and did good service for their country during the Revolutionary crisis. Mr. Hopkins, of Newport, was a resolute foe to slavery; the Salem brother was a forward advocate of independence. He was a member of the Provincial Congress in 1775, and in 1778 was elected a member of the Council of the Conventional government. His theological views were in substantial accord with his brother's. His sermons were not written beyond a mere outline. "The doctrines he preached," says his son-in-law and colleague, Mr. Emerson, "and the plain, direct and pungent manner in which he presented them, procured for him warm friends and bitter enemies. Such was the opposition awakened against him, that a committee, consisting of some of the most influential men in the town, waited upon him at his residence, and made

a formal and earnest request that, for the peace of the community, he would leave the town. . . . With characteristic shrewdness, he closed his eyes, smoothed down his face and mildly said, 'Gentlemen, I smoke my own tobacco.' The committee withdrew and gave him no further trouble." At the same time that he is described as giving offense by the severity and point of his preaching, enforced, too, with the vigor of a man of strong native talent, he is said to have been of a kind and amiable disposition, affable and courteous in social intercourse, his conversation marked by good sense and pleasantry.

April 24, 1805, shortly after entering the new meeting-house, Mr. Brown Emerson was ordained colleague pastor, and commenced a ministry of the remarkable length of sixty-seven years, ending with his life, July 25, 1872. During thirty-five of these years he was sole pastor, having been for the first nine years the junior pastor with Dr. Hopkins, and the last twenty-three years the senior pastor with two juniors, successively, Rev. Mr. Dwinell and Rev. Mr. Atwood. For the last fifteen or twenty years of his life his participation in the duties of the ministerial office was slight and infrequent, and for a few years had ceased altogether. He was born at Ashby, Mass., January 8, 1778, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1802. The union and strength in which the society maintained itself, while he ministered to it, best attest the quality of the man. In the days of his highest vigor and fullest activity he was a preacher acceptable to his hearers, and fulfilled the duties of his office to the satisfaction of those who attended upon his ministry.

Mr. Israel E. Dwinell was ordained colleague with Mr. Emerson November 22, 1849, and resigned on account of loss of health in 1863, and removed to California, in whose more genial climate he has filled a pastorate of many years in Sacramento, and since, for some years, a professorship in the Theological Seminary in Oakland, California. He was born in East Calais, Vermont, October 24, 1820, and graduated at Burlington, Vermont, in 1843. Rev. Edward S. Atwood succeeded Mr. Dwinell and is the present pastor of the church. He was born in Taunton, Massachusetts, June 4, 1833, graduated at Brown University in 1852, and was installed in Salem October 13, 1864. He had been pastor of a church in Grantville (now Wellesley Hills) previous to his settlement in Salem.

Branch Church (or Howard Street).—It has appeared more than once in these annals that the Puritans did not leave behind them, on quitting England and its church establishment, the elements of dissent and causes of division. From every form of dissent dissenters were sure in time to arise; and if doctrines afforded no pretext for non-conformity, administration did. Sometimes voluntarily, sometimes upon compulsion, the division took place, only to be followed by sub-division. The multiplication of churches came oftener from explosive forces within, producing cleavage, than from the requirements of increasing population. Each portion, majority and minority, seceders and seceded-from, kept in itself its proportion of the seeds of separatism. Separatists who had once tried non-conformity and self-exile had had a lesson and an experience which rendered a repetition of the experiment by them the more probable and the more easy. Sometimes the pastor headed the exiles, as did Rev. Sam'l Fisk, leaving the church without a pastor; sometimes the pastor drove a restive portion of the flock into the wilderness without a shepherd, as in the case of the thirty-eight brethren and sisters of Dr. Whitaker's church. And now again, in 1803, from this same church goes out the minister, Rev. Joshua Spaulding, leading forth such as preferred sharing with him exodus and uncertainty to remaining safe in the fold of the mother church without his voice to guide. In this way came into being "the Branch" Church (as it was at first called, afterwards (from its location, the Howard Street Church). These emigrants from the Tabernacle Church possessed abundance of energy and faith, if they were not rich in this world's goods. Organized December 29, 1803, after a brief period of meeting in a private house, then in a vestry loaned them, and for a time in chance pastures with neighboring flocks, they built a large and handsome meeting-house on Howard Street in 1804, which they dedicated February 8, 1805. They were not a quiet people. Their history is colored by varying fortunes. The spirit of zeal, independence and aggressive reform had its home among them. Temperance and slave-emancipation numbered warm and self-sacrificing advocates in both pulpit and pew. Those who "sat under" the preaching of Rev. George B. Cheever and Rev. Charles T. Torrey were in no danger of sleeping under it, nor of resting in indifference to the great social evils of their time.

After the example of the mother church, from which it had its birth, this church, for a time—from 1814 to 1827--allied itself with Presbyterianism, and in time returned, after the same example, to the Congregational order. The characteristics of the first minister, Rev. Joshua Spaulding, have been touched upon in the notice of the Tabernacle Church. His ministry in the Howard Street Church extended from April 17, 1805, to May 4, 1814, when he resigned and removed to the State of New York. He died September 26, 1825. For nearly five years after Mr. Spaulding's removal the church was without a pastor. It joined the Presbytery of Newburyport. Rev. Henry Blatchford was installed in its ministry January 6, 1819, and resigned December 20th of the following year. He was born in Lansingburg, N. Y., graduated at Union College 1811, and died September 7, 1822. Mr. William Williams was ordained his successor July 5, 1821, and remained pastor of this church till February 17, 1832, when he resigned, on account of a division in the church, and on the 22d of November,

1832, was installed pastor of a newly-gathered church branch of this "branch," composed of a very considerable following of members of the Howard Street Church, who withdrew with the pastor.

Mr. George B. Cheever, the next minister of the church, was ordained Feb. 13, 1833, and resigned Jan. 4, 1838. He was born in Hallowell, Maine, April 17, 1807, and graduated at Bowdoin College 1825. His ministry was a busy one. An irrepressible vitality and mental activity gave his pen as little rest as his voice. He wrote for the journals and the reviews. His eyes were about him to see what was wrong and reprehensible in the customs of society and in the conduct of individuals. For giving his pen too great freedom in his strictures upon these he incurred a suit of libel and a judgment involving thirty days' imprisonment. His theology was Puritanic and positive. His convictions were strong and urgent. He was a zealous preacher of reform, a vehement orator, aggressive and unsparing in attack upon whatsoever and whomsoever he found, in his judgment, hindering the cause of which he was the champion. In 1838 he became the pastor of the Allen Street Presbyterian Church in New York, and in 1846 was installed pastor of the Congregational Church of the Puritans in the same city. He still lives in a vigorous old age.

Rev. Charles T. Torrey was installed on the day on which Mr. Cheever was dismissed, January 4, 1838. He had been settled before as pastor of the Richmond Street Congregational Church, in Providence, R. I. He was born in Scituate November 21, 1813, graduated at Yale College 1833, resigned his charge in Salem July 21, 1839, and, after having twice suffered imprisonment in Baltimore, Md., for alleged violation of the laws of that State in conspiring with slaves to effect their escape from bondage, died in the Maryland penitentiary May 9, 1846.

Mr. Torrey regarded it as a great crime to enslave a fellow-man. He preached this conviction. He carried his faith into practice, and suffered for it. The story of his martyrdom, as told by Henry Wilson in "the Rise and Fall of the Slave Power," possesses a sad, an almost romantic interest. "Well-born, with superior talents, education and professional prospects, a charming home, cheered by the presence of a lovely wife and little ones, he sacrificed them, disregarded the popular sentiment of the North, and braved the vengeance of the South, to aid the lowly and down-trodden." He claimed to have assisted four hundred slaves to obtain their freedom. He frankly told Reverdy Johnson, by whom he was defended in the courts of Maryland, that he had helped one of his slaves to escape. He attempted, with others, to get out of the Baltimore prison. Being betrayed, he was heavily ironed and placed in a damp and low arched cell, and treated worse than if he had been a murderer. "I was loaded with irons weighing, I judge, twenty-five pounds, so twisted that I could neither stand up, lie down, nor sleep." December 30, 1843, he was sentenced to six years' imprisonment in the penitentiary. After his death, even the officials of the Park Street Church, in Boston, refused their permission to have the funeral services over his dead body in that church. But an indignant multitude followed his remains to Mount Auburn with tokens of sorrow and sympathy. And Faneuil Hall, the evening after, echoed the mournful but honoring words of his eulogists. Whittier wrote: "There lies the young, the beautiful, the brave! He is safe now from the malice of his enemies. Nothing can harm him more. His work for the poor and helpless was well and nobly done. In the wild woods of Canada, around many a happy fireside and holy family altar, his name is on the lips of God's poor. He put his soul in their soul's stead; he gave his life for those who had no claim on his love save that of human brotherhood."

Rev. Joel Mann, a native of Orford, N. H., and graduate of Dartmouth College 1810, was installed pastor of the Howard Street Church May 6, 1840, and resigned April 14, 1847. At the time of Mr. Mann's dismission the condition of the church seemed so hopeless of substantial revival from its divisions and losses, that the council called to dismiss him advised the church to "separate and unite with other churches till they can organize anew with a greater prospect of union and usefulness. The major part of the church complied, but the rest, claiming to be the Howard Street Church," still clung together, and maintained public worship, with small and steadily declining numbers, for about seventeen years longer, Rev. Messrs. M. H. Wilder, E. W. Allen and C. C. Beaman serving as ministers during that time. Rev. Mr. Beaman, the last of the number, came in 1857, and resigned October 2, 1864. The Howard Street meeting-house after being occupied a short time by a newly-formed "church of the New Jerusalem," was sold at auction, by authority of the Legislature June 28, 1867, to the First Methodist Society in Beverly, and in 1868 was taken down, transported across the river, and set up again on Railroad Avenue, Beverly, with the exception of the tower, which was not found in good enough condition for re-erection. This year (1887) a lofty tower has been added to the front end of the church, and an extension has also been made in the rear. The building was well worth preserving, whether for itself or its history. It was designed under the advice and direction of Mr. Samuel Macintire, a Salem carpenter, famous also as a successful church builder, the South meeting-house on Chestnut Street, in Salem, having been designed by him.

It will be seen by this brief sketch of the history of the Branch, or Howard Street Church,—not one of the older churches of Salem, beginning its existence within the present century, and but short-lived as the lives of churches are reckoned, having become extinct in about sixty years from its formation,—that it has had more of stirring incident, of eventful and disintegrat-

ing controversy, of salient characteristics in its membership and of striking biographical episodes in the career of its pastors than usually falls to the lot of churches of much longer life.

When the use of the North meeting-house was refused to Mr. Crowninshield and his friends, for the funeral services of Captain Lawrence and Lieutenant Ludlow, who lost their lives in the engagement between the frigates Shannon and Chesapeake, in 1813, the doors of the Howard Street meeting-house were opened, and there Mr. Story's eulogy was delivered. The inherent spirit of Puritanism, with its flavor of intense individuality, fearless assertion of freedom, its equally fearless application of condemnatory truth, its stiff, "conscientious contentiousness, or contentious conscientiousness,"—this spirit has had many a picturesque illustration in the brotherhood of "the Branch."

First Baptist Church—It has been claimed that there were Baptists in Salem as early as the period of Roger Williams' residence and ministry here. They were here prior to 1639, at least. That year, says Felt, William Wickenden, a Baptist preacher, moved from Salem to Providence. That year the Salem Church notified the Dorchester Church that it has excommunicated Roger Williams and nine others named, all but two of them *having been re-baptized.* Anabaptists they were often called—that name signifying the "re-baptized." It was not till December 24, 1804, that the First Baptist Church was embodied in Salem. Its first place of worship was a frame building, one story high, thirty-six by fifty-five feet in dimensions, standing not far from the spot now occupied by the meeting-house of the society. "This house faced the West, and stood on a high bank, forty or fifty feet East of North Street, with its Southern side nearly on the line of the present Odell court." It soon gave place to the present brick meeting-house, which was dedicated January 1, 1806. Since its opening, considerable land has been purchased to constitute the front on Federal Street, which, with various other improvements, have given the house and lot their present attractive aspect. In 1868 the interior of the building was reconstructed and improved throughout. October 31, 1877, it was visited by fire, and its interior so destroyed as to require rebuilding entirely.

The first minister was Mr. Lucius Bolles, born in Ashford, Conn., September 25, 1779, graduated from Brown University 1801, and settled in Salem January 9, 1805. His connection with the church in Salem, as an active pastor, practically ceased in June, 1826, when his release from the pastoral office was requested and obtained of the church, by the Baptist Board of Foreign Missions, that he might become its corresponding secretary; though for eight years after, till August 6, 1834, he continued to be the senior pastor of the church, without discharging any of the duties of the office. He died in Boston January 5, 1844. When Mr. Bolles came to Salem, those who adhered to the theological views of the Baptists "were few in numbers and feeble in resources," says Dr. R. C. Mills, in his fiftieth anniversary sermon: "The state of piety in the American churches was low." In theological opinions the early Baptists of America were strictly Calvinistic. The disintegration of the Calvinistic creed had progressed in Eastern Massachusetts at the time this church was formed, so far as to cause those who still held it in its integrity, deep solicitude for its maintenance. The Baptist denomination was cordially allied with its supporters of other names, and regarded itself as in some sort an especial bulwark against the spread of the opposite errors; as the case was set forth by one of its ablest advocates: "Infant baptism led to Arminianism, and that to Socinianism in churches which had been strictly Calvinistic."

The Baptist Church increased from the first, and soon grew strong in Salem, under the devoted ministry of its earliest pastor. There was no considerable hostility at that time among the people at large, either to the tenets of this denomination respecting the mode and subjects of baptism, to which many persons inclined, or to their creed, the Unitarian controversy not having yet opened into public discussion. The use of the North meeting-house (corner of Lynde and North Streets) was asked for the ordination services at the settlement of Mr. Bolles, and was granted; but, for some reason, they were held, not at the North, but at the Tabernacle Church; possibly because, though the vote granting the use at the North meeting-house passed, it became known that there were twelve dissentients among those voting. Dr. Bolles became eminent in his denomination. He laid his foundations well. A minister both capable and zealous, his period of service was long enough to educate a generation, and so to fix habits, and to stamp his congregation with distinctive characteristics which have run on, doubtless, into the succeeding years. In twenty years, and before he left them, they were strong enough to colonize, and a second church was formed.

Rev. Rufus Babcock was installed as colleague with Dr. Bolles August 23, 1826, and was practically the sole pastor, his senior having relinquished to him all pastoral duties. Mr. Babcock remained till October 11, 1833, when he resigned to accept the presidency of Waterville College, in Maine, his resignation being accepted by his people with reluctance. Mr. Babcock was born in Colbrook, Conn., September 18, 1798, and was graduated at Brown University, 1821. After leaving Waterville he was pastor of churches in Philadelphia, Poughkeepsie, New Bedford and other places. He died in Salem, Mass., May 4, 1874, while on a visit among old friends.

August 6, 1834, Rev. John Wayland, having been a professor in Hamilton College, Clinton, N. Y., and called from that position to succeed Mr. Babcock,

was settled pastor of the church, and continued in office until near the close of 1841, his resignation being accepted November 12th of that year. Mr. Wayland afterwards became an Episcopalian. He was held in high esteem by his parishioners in Salem. He was succeeded by Mr. Thomas D. Anderson, who was settled March 15, 1842. In 1848, his health having failed, he resigned, and his resignation was accepted, January 28th of that year, with every testimony of regret on the part of the church at their loss.

Rev. Robert C. Mills was installed as the next pastor of the church June 14, 1848. Dr. Mills' ministry continued till April 21, 1876, when he resigned, and within a few years after removed to Newton, in which city he now resides. Dr. Mills was born, February 6, 1819, in New York City, and graduated at the University of New York 1837. His was the longest sole and active pastorate this church has known, being but little short of twenty-eight years.

Rev. George E. Merrill succeeded Dr. Mills February 2, 1877; his health failed after some years of active service, and he resigned June 1, 1885. He was born in Charlestown December 19, 1846, graduated at Harvard College 1869, and had been settled in Springfield, Mass., from October, 1872, to January, 1877. In the more equable and milder climate at the foot of the Rocky Mountains he has so far regained health as to be able to take charge of a Baptist Church at Colorado Springs, Col. Rev. Galusha Anderson, D.D., followed Mr. Merrill in the pastorship of the church, being recognized as pastor November 18, 1885. He resigned his ministry January, 1887, to take the presidency of Granville College, Ohio. He had come to Salem from another important educational position—that of the presidency of the University of Chicago, Ill. Mr. Anderson was born in Bergen, Genesee County, N. Y., March 7, 1832, graduated at Rochester, N. Y., 1854, was two years pastor of a Baptist Church in Janesville, Wis., from 1858 to 1866 pastor of the Second Baptist Church in St. Louis, Mo., from 1866 to 1873 professor in the Theological Seminary at Newton, from 1873 to 1878 pastor of the Strong Place Church in Brooklyn, N. Y.

Free-Will Baptist.—There were two or three kindred religious movements in the early years of the century, which were not very clearly distinguished from one another in the popular apprehension, but whose differences assumed no inconsiderable importance, for a time at least, to those who contended for their respective tenets and built upon them. They had this in common: that they marked in some cases a partial modification, in some a pronounced rejection of Calvinistic doctrinal standards, as a ground of Christian communion and church fellowship. They also indicated the ecclesiastical unrest of the time, and showed a longing for greater spiritual freedom, a growing intellectual activity and courage, and, as a consequence, a perceptible widening of the scope of theological inquiry and religious sympathy. We find a society formed in 1806, which built a meeting-house on English Street in 1807, and which Messrs. Osgood and Batchelder mention as a society of "Free-Will Baptists, sometimes called Christians." These two are quite different denominations, divided on theological grounds and on the conditions of fellowship. The society that worshipped in English Street was formed, says Felt, as a Free-Will Baptist Society. Thirty years later, in June, 1840, a portion of the society, having imbibed the views of Alexander Campbell, withdrew and organized a separate meeting, taking the name of "Christians" (especially repudiating the name Christ-ians, by which they were more commonly called), and worshipped in several different places till they became extinct. A list of the ministers of the Free-Will Baptist Society in "Felt's Annals" contains the following names: John Rand (1806–07), Abner Jones (1807–12), Samuel Rand (1813–14), Moses How (1816–19), Abner Jones, 1821. George W. Kelton, William Andrews, William Coe and Christopher Martin are also said to have preached for this people prior to 1840. Among the ministers who preached for the Christians were William W. Eaton (1843–47), David O. Gaskill (1847–50 or later).

Universalist.—In 1804 a Universalist preacher, Samuel Smith by name, appointed a meeting at the Court House and preached, so far as is known, the first Universalist sermon ever heard in Salem. It was not altogether a satisfactory service to those who attended it, but served to bring together and make known to each other a considerable number of persons who were disposed to entertain with favor the views of that denomination. Between that time and 1808 meetings were held, at first at irregular intervals, but soon weekly, as an established Sunday congregation. Various ministers came and went,—the veteran John Murray, Hosea Ballou, Thomas Jones of Gloucester, and others. The meetings were held in private houses at first, but a hall, or large room, in the new house of Nathaniel Frothingham, on Lynde Street, was found suitable, and there they stayed mostly, till their meeting-house was built. The society was organized in 1805, but its records for the first twenty-one years—from 1805 to 1826—are lost. In 1808, Aug. 17th, it laid the corner-stone of its meeting-house, *at six o'clock in the morning!* and on the 22d of June, 1809, dedicated it, and installed a minister the same day. A lot of land on St. Peter's Street (then known as Prison Lane), valued at a thousand dollars, had been given by Benjamin Ward for a meeting-house, covering, in part at least, the present site of the Central Baptist meeting-house, and now deemed more eligible than the spot in Rust Street on which the house was built, but not so regarded then; it was accordingly sold, and the land bought on which the church now stands. The minister settled on the day the church was dedicated was Rev. Edward Turner, who came from Charlton, Mass., where he

had been the minister of a Universalist society. He retained his connection with the Universalist society in Salem till June 1, 1814, when he accepted a call to the Universalist society in Charlestown, Mass. When, a few years later, the question whether all punishment for sin is limited to this life divided the Universalist denomination, Mr. Turner took the negative, and after severing his connection with the society in Charlestown he became identified with the Unitarians. He died in West Roxbury Jan. 24, 1853, at the age of seventy-six years. The line of ministers following Mr. Turner may be conveniently given here, with their periods and in their order: Rev. Hosea Ballou, June 18, 1815, to Oct. 12, 1817; Rev. Joshua Flagg, Dec. 7, 1817, to March 1, 1820; Rev. Barzillai Streeter, Aug. 9, 1820, to Sept. 20, 1824; Rev. Seth Stetson, June 1, 1825, to March 23, 1828; Rev. Lemuel Willis, March 25, 1829, to May 26, 1837; Rev. Matthew Hale Smith, June 6, 1838, to April 5, 1840; Rev. Linus S. Everett, May 12, 1841, to April 12, 1846; Rev. Ebenezer Fisher, May 4, 1847, to Oct. 7, 1853; Rev. Sumner Ellis, Feb. 1, 1854, to Sept. 1, 1858; Rev. Willard Spalding, March 4, 1860, to Nov. 28, 1869; Rev. Edwin C. Bolles, D.D., June 18, 1871, to Sept. 1, 1887.

Several of these were preachers eminent within their denomination, and the fame of two or three went beyond it. Mr. Ballou was one of the earliest apostles of Universalism, possessing great native vigor of intellect, unfailing courage and a power of plain, simple and direct statement which made him one of the ablest and most effective among the advocates of his faith in the times of its earlier promulgation, when it was unpopular, and kept its earnest defenders in incessant controversy. He went from Salem to Boston, and for more than thirty-five years labored there. Rev. Matthew Hale Smith became widely known both as a champion and an assailant of Universalism. Versatile and having a facile command of pen and speech, a too easy mobility carried him away from one to another denomination and back again, and from one to another profession in such rapid succession that his confessions and renunciations lost their power of impression from their number and their nearness to each other. Rev. Mr. Willis' ministry is regarded as having been eminently useful, and helpful to the prosperity of the church. The ministry of Mr. Fisher and that of others since have been characterized by a devotion to Christian scholarship and a careful instruction of the people in religious truth. Dr. E. C. Bolles, the last of the line, now about leaving Salem, and whose pastorate is the longest upon the list, is known as one of the most prominent preachers in his own denomination, while his services as a popular lecturer and speaker at gatherings non-denominational are in large demand. The society is large and prosperous, and has more than once given promise of colonization.

A second Universalist society was indeed organized in 1844, and held its first public meeting in Lyceum Hall on the 12th of May of that year. Afterwards its meetings were held in Mechanics' Hall, then in the Sewall Street meeting-house, and finally in Phœnix Hall. On the 6th of June, 1852, however, it voted to discontinue its meetings, and was disbanded. Its first settled pastor was Rev. Day K. Lee, who was succeeded by Rev. Messrs. Benjamin F. Bowles, S. C. Hewett and E. W. Reynolds. Again, about twenty-five years ago,—perhaps in 1861,—the experiment of maintaining a second Universalist place of worship was carried on for some months at Lyceum Hall, but no permanent organization came of it.

The Sunday-school connected with the first society was organized during the ministry of Mr. Willis, and by him, May 3, 1829, and "was the first in this denomination this side of Boston, and the third known to exist among the Universalists." It is at this time one of the largest, if not the largest, of the Protestant Sunday-schools in Salem.

The meeting-house has undergone several extensive and costly transformations since it was built, both within and without. In January, 1840, the changes necessary for the reception of an organ were made. In 1842 the pews of the gallery were taken out and replaced by new ones of more convenient form, the walls and ceiling were painted in fresco, and other larger and lesser changes in different parts of the building were made, some of them to prepare for the placing of stoves. In 1855 still greater changes were carried through, with an outlay of several thousand dollars. The floor was raised, the old pews were removed, and an increased number with different arrangement took their place; a new pulpit was put in, costing five hundred dollars and paid for by the ladies of the society. The whole interior was renewed in form and color. In 1857 the space in front of the church was opened and enlarged by the removal of a neighboring dwelling-house, while new fences and new bricking and boarding of side-walks made the approaches to it more roomy and pleasant. Again, in 1877, the spirit of improvement took the venerable building in hand and changed its whole aspect, internally and externally, bringing it to its present appearance. Its original square, plain tower, stopping so abruptly and baldly as to suggest the likelihood of its not having been finished according to the builder's original intention, was carried up to its present graceful height and proportions, with some not excessive ornamentation. The new coloring without and within produced marked effects. The pulpit, regarded with so much pride in 1855, gave way to the modern platform and simple reading desk. It is now one of the largest and most satisfactory of the church edifices in the city,—a city which has a fair number of attractive houses of worship.

Roman Catholics.—The parent Catholic Church

in Salem was that of St. Mary. The first Roman Catholic services in the town were held in 1806 by Rev. John Cheverus, of Boston, the first Roman Catholic bishop of Massachusetts, and subsequently services were held occasionally by the bishop and Dr. Matignon during the intervening years till 1811, when services were held in a school-house on Hardy Street, by Rev. John O'Brien, who afterwards became pastor of the church in Newburyport. The first settled pastor was the Rev. Paul McQuade, who was here from 1818 to 1822. It was in 1821, and during his pastorate, that St. Mary's Church was built on the corner of Mall and Bridge Streets. This is supposed to have been the first Catholic Church built in Essex County, the church in Newburyport not being built until 1848. Before that year (1848) Catholics came even from Newburyport, and of course from the nearer and adjoining towns, to the church in Salem, Bishop Cheverus sometimes walking from Boston to Salem to preach and celebrate Mass. The land on which the church was situated was deeded to Bishop Cheverus by the president, directors and company of the Marblehead Bank, "for the use and benefit of a certain number of persons in Salem, who have or are about forming a Roman Catholic Church and society in said Salem." This church was built by subscriptions of citizens of Salem, some of whom were not Catholics, but entertained a kindly feeling towards the principal Catholics of the place, among whom were the late John Simon, Francis Ashton and Matthew Newport, representing, respectively, the three Catholic nationalities, French, Italian and Irish. The largest contributor was probably John Forrester, father of Simon, the great merchant of those days, who was himself of Irish birth, but a Protestant in religion. The following is a partial list of the clergy of this church: John Mahoney, 1826 to 1830; William Wiley, 1830 to 1834; John D. Brady, 1834 to 1840; James Strain, 1841 to 1842; Thomas J. O'Flaherty, 1842 to 1846 (died March 29, 1846); James Conway, 1846 to ——; T. H. Shahan.

When the Church of the Immaculate Conception was built on Walnut Street in 1857, the Church of St. Mary ceased to be occupied, that parish being merged in the new one, and in 1877 the old church was torn down, and the land on which it stood was sold by decree of the Supreme Judicial Court, on the 20th of December, 1882, the terms of the deed by which the bishop acquired his title preventing the conveyance of an unquestionable title to another purchaser without this authority from the court. The line of pastors in the Church of the Immaculate Conception includes the names of Rev. Thos. H. Shahan, Michael Hartney and William H. Hally, with those of Rev. Charles Renoni, James Quinlan, Wm. J. Delahunty, Matthew Harkins, Wm. A. Kennedy, James J. Foley, Martin O'Brien and Thomas Tobin as assistants. The rapidly increasing needs of the Catholic population had already called so urgently for enlarged church accommodations, even before the church in Walnut Street was erected, that in 1850 the Church of St. James was opened on Federal Street, though not dedicated until January 10, 1857. Its first pastor was Rev. Thomas Shahan, and he was succeeded by Rev. William Daley (who died in Rome), and Rev. John J. Gray, the present pastor. The Rev. J. Healy, Michael Masterson, William Shinnick, D. J. Collins and John Kelleher have been assistant clergymen in the parish since its organization. Two large schools, of five or six hundred pupils each, are carried on by sisterhoods of Notre Dame, connected with the two churches of the Immaculate Conception and St. James, respectively. An asylum for orphans and also, secondarily, for the aged and infirm, is maintained on Lafayette Street, by a sisterhood of the Gray Nuns of Montreal, and has at present about seventy children in its care.

The French speaking Catholics of Salem, having become numerous, were gathered for worship in their own tongue in 1872, in the Church of the Immaculate Conception. There were about ninety families at that time. In 1873 they bought the old Seamen's Bethel on Herbert Street, and took the name of St. Joseph's Church. Rev. George Talbot was appointed the first pastor. He was succeeded by Rev. Ol. Boucher, and on the appointment of the latter to the rectorship of the French Church in Lawrence, Father Talbot resumed the charge of St. Joseph's. Rev. J. Z. Dumontier succeeded him early in January, 1878. In September, 1878, Rev. Octave Le Pine was appointed pastor, and on the 13th of July, 1879, the present pastor, Rev. F. X. L. Vezina was given charge of the congregation; Rev. Joseph O. Gadoury is his assistant. On the 26th of August, 1881, as the congregation had much increased, the old building on Herbert Street was found inadequate, and the Luscomb estate, on Lafayette Street, was bought, and steps were taken to build a new church, which was done in 1883, and services were held in it in March, 1884. In April, 1886, the Elwell estate adjoining was bought for a parsonage. The French congregation represents a population of about two thousand five hundred souls at present.

Methodist Episcopal.—Organized Methodism in Salem dates back to 1821, when a church was formed. In 1822 Rev. Jesse Filmore became its first pastor. The next year, 1823, a church was built in Sewall Street, the same that is now occupied by the Wesley Chapel congregation, and which is about to be replaced by a more substantial structure immediately in its rear, fronting upon North Street. This church did not unite with the General Conference till February, 1835. Mr. Filmore had resigned his pastorate in 1832, but became pastor of the church again in 1835, and yet again in 1840, remaining till 1844.

The following names are to be found upon its roll of pastors previous to the formation of a second

Methodist Church, in 1841: Joseph B. Brown, 1832–33; Jefferson Hamilton, 1833; T. C. Macreading, 1834; Aaron Waitt, 1834–35; J. W. Downing, 1835–38; T. G. Hiler, 1838–39.

Trouble seems to have grown out of the ownership of the church building by the pastor, who had erected it, and, as its owner, had a more potential voice and vote in its affairs than ordinarily falls to the pastors of churches, and involved relations between pastor and people not found to be conducive to harmony.

This modest and not very ancient house of worship has sheltered, at different times, and for longer or shorter periods, a great variety of worshippers, passing under uncongenial denominational names, resting here in turn temporarily on the road to larger and more permanent holdings elsewhere, or—on the road to further ecclesiastical transformation, or—on the way to extinction.

Second Methodist.—In March, 1841, a second Methodist congregation was formed by members withdrawing from the first, who built a meeting-house in Union Street (afterwards occupied by one branch of the Second Advent Church). Rev. N. T. Spaulding was the first pastor, and among the earlier of his successors were Joseph A. Merrill, David K. Merrill, Horace Moulton, Phinehas Crandall, David L. Winslow, John W. Perkins; some of them, however, for very short periods—from less than a year to two years. The difficulties in the Sewall Street Church continuing, the church in Union Street gradually absorbed into itself the members of the former, and it became extinct. Meantime, its own prosperity and increasing wants made a removal necessary, and the church on La Fayette Street, corner of Harbor Street, the present home of the society, was built in 1851, and dedicated January 5, 1853. Its roll of pastors since it has occupied its present place of worship is as follows: Luman Boyden, 1851–53; A. D. Merrill, 1853–54; Daniel Richards, 1854–56; John A. Adams, 1856–57; Austin F. Herrick, 1857–59; John H. Mansfield, 1859–61; Edward A. Manning, 1861–62; Gershom F. Cox, 1862–64; Loranus Crowell, 1864–67; S. F. Chase, 1867–69; D. Dorchester, 1869–72; J. S. Whedon, 1872–74; George Collyer, 1874–77; Daniel Steel, 1877–79; George W. Mansfield, 1879–82; William P. Ray, 1882–85; T. L. Gracey, 1885–87.

During the winter of 1871–72 the advisability of organizing another Methodist Church was considered by the La Fayette Street Church, the result of which was that the old Methodist meeting-house in Sewall Street was purchased and re-dedicated, May 24, 1872, and a new society was formed, taking the name of Wesley Chapel, and Rev. Joshua Gill, appointed by the New England Conference its pastor, first held Sunday services therein May 26, 1872. Thirty-five persons bringing certificates from the parent church were constituted the new church. The following pastors have been successively in charge: Rev. Joshua Gill, 1872–74; William J. Hambleton, 1874–77; William H. Meredith, 1877–80; Charles F. Rice, 1880–83; Willis P. Odell, 1883–86; Thomas W. Bishop, 1886——. Mr. Bishop is the present pastor. The church has enjoyed the services of devoted and capable pastors, and has had a large and substantial growth. Under the ministry of Rev. Mr. Odell the need of more room and better accommodations became so pressing that the enterprise of building another church to meet the wants of the society was taken up with spirit and harmony, and an encouraging subscription list was started with an assurance of final success. The work has gone forward in the hands of his successor, and the plans are perfected for a new church on North Street, which is to be of brick, with terra-cotta trimmings and a handsome tower, and which will have sittings for a thousand persons, its appointments in all other respects being designed to answer all the needs of a large and increasing congregation. By legislative enactment the church was authorized in 1886 to change its name to Wesley Methodist Episcopal Church.

The Independent Congregational Society in Barton Square.—In the autumn of 1819 the North Church pulpit becoming vacant by the death of Mr. Abbot, that society invited Rev. Henry Colman, pastor of a church in Hingham, to become its minister. The invitation was not unanimous, and was declined. Later, a portion of the First Parish desired that Mr. Colman should be invited to become a colleague with their minister, Rev. Dr. Prince, but failed to persuade the society to take the action they advocated. In 1824 these friends of Mr. Colman in the North and First Parishes withdrew from their respective churches, and organized the Independent Congregational Society in Barton Square. A church of brick was built and dedicated in December, 1824. Rev. Henry Colman was installed February 16, 1825, and resigned December 7, 1831, on account of ill health. Mr. Colman had been pastor of the Third Church in Hingham thirteen years, and had taught a school there; from 1820 to 1825 he taught a school in Boston. After leaving Salem he engaged in agriculture at Deerfield, Mass., and was employed by the State from 1836 to 1842 to investigate its agricultural condition and resources. In 1842 he was sent to Europe in pursuit of the same purpose, and the results of his observation were embodied in two octavo volumes. He also published reports upon agriculture and silk culture, and two volumes upon European life and manners. Visiting Europe a second time, for the benefit of his health, he died at Islington, England, August 14, 1849. He was born in Boston September 12, 1785, and graduated from Dartmouth College, 1805. Mr. Colman was an independent thinker, and did not always follow the conventional roads as a theologian and preacher, a fact in which lay, doubtless, one of the causes -

though not the sole cause—of the want of unanimity in the North and First Churches in desiring him for a minister.

Mr. Colman was succeeded by Rev. James W. Thompson, who was installed March 7, 1832, and remained in this ministry twenty-seven years, till March 7, 1859. Mr. Thompson had been settled in Natick before his settlement in Salem, and left his church here to take charge of the Second Church in West Roxbury (Jamaica Plain), of which he continued the sole or senior pastor till his death, September 22, 1881. He was born in Barre, Mass., December 13, 1805, and graduated from Brown University, 1827. The society increased and prospered during his pastorate. The church building was entirely reconstructed in its interior, galleries were added and a commodious vestry of brick was erected in connection with it, at the rear, to meet its increasing wants.

Dr. Thompson was succeeded by Mr. Augustus M. Haskell, who was ordained January 1, 1862, and resigned May 2, 1866. Mr. Haskell was chaplain of the Fortieth Massachusetts Regiment in the Civil War, from September 11, 1863, to November 5, 1864, and after his Salem ministry became the pastor of Unitarian Churches in Manchester, N. H., and West Roxbury (Boston), Mass., successively. He is still pastor of the latter society, He was born January 24, 1832, in Poland, Me., and graduated at Harvard College, 1856. Mr. George Batchelor followed Mr. Haskell, being ordained October 3, 1866. He resigned after sixteen years of service, November 1, 1882, to take the pastoral charge of the Church of the Unity, in Chicago, Ill., which he was obliged by ill health to relinquish after two or three years. Mr. Batchelor was born in Southbury, Conn., July 3, 1836, graduated at Harvard College 1866, having completed a theological course at the Meadville School previous to his course in college. Rev. Benjamin F. McDaniel was installed pastor January 7, 1883, and resigned at the end of four years of service, January 1, 1887. He had been, before his Salem ministry, pastor of churches in Hubbardston, Mass., and Exeter, N. H., and left Salem to take pastoral charge of a church in San Diego, Cal. He, like a predecessor named above, did good service in one of the Union armies during the Civil War.

Central Baptist Church.—As mentioned before, in the sketch of the First Baptist Church, a colony from that church was dismissed and commissioned by it, in 1825, to establish a second church of its order in the lower part of the city. It was duly organized January 19, 1826, under the name of the "Second Baptist Church," having its house of worship and chapel, on St. Peter's Street, ready for occupancy prior to its organization, though the dedication was delayed till June 8, 1826. In 1855 its name was changed, by a legislative act, to the "Central Baptist Church in Salem."

August 23, 1826, Mr. George Leonard was ordained its first pastor. He was compelled, by failing health, to resign his ministry, which had opened with much promise, January 19, 1829. Mr. Robert E. Pattison was ordained September 9, 1829, but within six months asked and received a dismission, February 12, 1830. In October, 1830, Rev. Cyrus P. Grosvenor was installed pastor, and remained with the church till November 1, 1834. Mr. Grosvenor became warmly engaged in the anti-slavery agitation, just opening, and which disturbed the peace of many churches, and broke the pastoral tie in not a few cases. It may be presumed to have had its share of influence in interrupting the harmony of the relation between Mr. Grosvenor and his people.

Mr. Joseph Banvard was ordained pastor of the church August 26, 1835, and continued with it till March, 1846; and this period was manifestly one of increased activity, harmony and growth. Rev. Benjamin Brierly was installed Mr. Banvard's successor in September, 1846. His brief pastorate ended August 25, 1848. Mr. William H. Eaton followed him, and was ordained August 16, 1849. His society reluctantly consented to his dismission, in November, 1854. The next pastor was Rev. Daniel D. Winn, who came in October, 1855, and was dismissed by his own desire, December 23, 1866. During Mr. Winn's ministry the meeting-house was remodeled at a large cost. Early in 1867 Rev. S. Hartwell Pratt succeeded Mr. Winn, and resigned his charge October 21, 1870, to become pastor of the newly-formed Calvary Baptist Church, organized largely by his influence and under his direction. In January, 1872, Rev. David Weston, D.D., was settled in charge of the church, but being the same year elected professor of ecclesiastical history in Hamilton Theological Seminary, N. Y., he resigned, to the sincere regret of his church, September 27, 1872. April 8, 1873, Rev. W. H. H. Marsh succeeded him, and remained seven years, to 1880. Rev. Charles A. Towne, the present pastor, took charge of the church in 1881.

The Crombie Street Church.—On the 16th of February, 1832, one hundred and thirty-nine members of the Howard Street Church—the minister of that church, the Rev. William Williams, one of them—withdrew from it, with the purpose of organizing a separate church. They held their first meeting for public worship in Lyceum Hall February 19, 1832. The same day the Sunday-school, composed of their children, met at the same place. On the 6th of the next April they organized themselves into a religious society, and took the name of the "Lyceum Society." The purchase of a brick building on Crombie Street, now their house of worship, then known as the Salem Theatre—which had been occupied as a theatre—having been effected, at a meeting held in the office of Hon. Rufus Choate, on the 29th of August, 1832, a committee was chosen to make

the required changes in the building to adapt it to its new uses. These changes accomplished, the pulpit was in the centre of the western end, the choir-gallery was opposite the pulpit. Over the pulpit was the inscription, "*Love the truth and peace,*" with the date of the church's institution—May 3, 1832—and that of the dedication of its house of worship—November 22, 1832; below were the names of the pastor and the architect. Between the lines, right under that inscription, "Love the truth and peace," we may presume that the recent emigrants from Howard Street read another inscription, invisible to the eye of flesh: "The end of our prayers, the desire of our hearts; for which we have left home—a house in contention, divided against itself." The church took the name, "The New Congregational Church" on the 8th of May, 1832, and on the 17th of September of the same year, adopted the title, which has been permanent since, of the "Crombie Street Church." In 1851 the pulpit was carried to the opposite (the eastern) end, the floor, which had sloped upward from the front, was brought to a level, the pews were reversed, the brick vestry was built in the rear and the walls and ceiling were painted in fresco; nine years later, in 1860, the organ was carried to the rear of the pulpit, to stand as it now does, the congregation claiming to have been the first in Salem to dispense with choir-singing, which it did in 1850, and for which the present position of the organ was deemed better adapted.

The first in the line of pastors has been already named—Rev. William Williams. He was born in Wethersfield, Conn., October 2, 1797; graduated at Yale College 1816; ordained pastor of Howard Street Church July 5, 1821. His ministry continued from November 22, 1832, to March 1, 1838. The new meeting-house was dedicated the same day that Mr. Williams was installed. After resigning his charge in Salem Mr. Williams was settled in Exeter, N. H., for a few years, after which, in 1842, he returned to Salem, and having studied medicine with Dr. Abel L. Peirson, of this city, established himself in the practice of medicine, in which he became successful. He died in 1860. Rev. Alexander J. Sessions, born in Warren, Mass., August 13, 1809, and graduated at Yale College in 1831, was the next pastor, settled June 6, 1838, and continued till August 22, 1849, when he resigned, and has since been the pastor of churches in Melrose, Scituate and North Beverly. He is still living in Beverly. The third pastor was Rev. James M. Hoppin, born in Providence, R. I., January 17, 1820; graduated at Yale College 1840 and settled as pastor of Crombie Street Church March 27, 1850. Mr. Hoppin remained till May 16, 1859. He has since been a professor in Yale College—first, of homiletics and pastoral theology and later of the history of art. December 29, 1859, Rev. Joseph Henry Thayer was settled as the fourth pastor of the church. He resigned this charge February 19, 1864, to accept the position of associate professor of sacred literature in the Theological Seminary at Andover, which office he continued to fill until 1882, when he resigned. He was appointed the next year lecturer on Biblical theology in the Divinity School of Harvard University, and on the death of the eminent scholar, Ezra Abbot, professor of New Testament criticism and interpretation in the Divinity School, Professor Thayer was appointed to the same place, which he still holds.

During the Civil War Mr. Thayer asked leave of absence from his parish to become chaplain of the Fortieth Regiment of Massachusetts Volunteers for nine months. His term of service was from September 17, 1862, to May 15, 1863. He was one of the American members of the company of New Testament revisers and translators in England and America, who brought out the Revised New Testament in 1880, and with their co-laborers who had given similar revision to the Old Testament, a revised translation at a later day of the whole Bible. Mr. Thayer was born in Boston November 7, 1828, and graduated at Harvard College 1850.

The fifth paster was Rev. Clarendon Waite, whose short term of service fell between the dates of April 10, 1866, and December 3d of the same year (less than nine months). Being advised by his physicians that he could not expect the health requisite for the ministry, he withdrew from his profession, and in just about a year afterwards died on a journey to a new field of labor to which he had been called (that of professor in Beloit College, Wisconsin). Mr. Waite was born in Hubbardston, Massachusetts, December 12, 1830, graduated at Brown University, Providence, and had been seven years pastor of a church in Rutland, Mass., before coming to Salem. Rev. Hugh Elder, the sixth pastor, was born in Dunfermline, Scotland, March 26, 1838, and graduated at the University of Edinburgh 1863. He preached to the society and was invited to become its minister before the settlement of Mr. Waite, which invitation he declined. After the death of Mr. Waite he came again to preach; was called again to the pastorate, accepted and was ordained January 28, 1868. He resigned at the end of August, 1884, to accept the position of pastor of the college church connected with Airdale College, in Bradford, England. The present pastor of the church, Rev. Louis B. Voorhees, was installed April 15, 1885. He was born June 10, 1847, in Rocky Hill, N. J., and graduated at Princeton College 1868. He had been pastor of churches in North Weymouth, in Worcester and in Grafton previous to his settlement in Salem.

It needs but a reference to the fact that four of the seven pastors of this church have received appointments to positions in educational institutions of the higher class to show that it has been favored with a line of scholarly men for its ministers. Better than that, they have been, as a whole, men devoted to the service of the people outside the church as well as inside, thus helping the church to which they minister-

ed to make an honorable history among the churches of the town.

Second Advent.—A religious movement of considerable extent grew out of the preaching of William Miller, the prophet of the millenium, who, for about ten years (from 1833 to 1843), stirred many communities to a high pitch of excitement with predictions of an early return of Christ to the earth; the time was definitely set; when it had passed uneventfully another was set. After several such predictions had successively failed, though many lost faith and abandoned the body identified with the great expectation, others, still sanguine that it was no more than an error of time, and that a small one, settled into a belief that the Lord would appear *soon* to set up his kingdom; and the latter have become a permanent sect. Mr. Miller never preached in Salem, as we can learn; but a large gathering of his disciples, and of the curious to hear the exposition of his belief, was held in North Salem, in camp, in 1842. Preachers continued to set forth the millenial doctrine according to Mr. Miller from time to time, and on July 23, 1848, a church was formed, which, with intervals of suspended services, has continued to the present time. Indeed, it has at times divided into two sects over controverted points turning chiefly on the state of the "dead" between the body's dissolution and resurrection. Sunday services have been maintained in two places of worship at the same time for a while. At present the society worships in its own church in Herbert Street. It has changed its place of assembling several times; has been in Sewell Street (old Methodist meeting-house), in Union Street (Second Methodist), Holyoke Hall, 199 Essex Street, Hardy Hall, Washington Street. One of its sections, when there were two passing under the same name, met in a chapel in Endicott Street. The pastorates of this church in both branches have been mostly short. Several, however, have continued for a period of a few years each. Rev. Lemuel Osler, Francis H. Berick, Rufus Wendell, Charles E. Barnes, George W. Sederquist, Frederick Gunner (Endicott Street) have at different times ministered to the society. The present pastor is Rev. George F. Haines.

Episcopal: Grace.—A second Episcopal Church was organized in the year 1858, under a movement arising in St. Peter's Church, the rector of St. Peter's, Rev. Dr. Leeds, remarking in the Journal of the Diocese of 1859: "The completion of the fifth quarter-century in the history of St. Peter's was celebrated by laying the corner-stone of another church edifice, to be known by the name of Grace Church." The new church, a Gothic frame structure, was consecrated June 2, 1859. The Rev. George D. Wildes was the first rector, his pastorate covering eight years, 1859–67. Rev. Joseph Kidder succeeded Mr. Wildes in 1868, and remained until July 1, 1870, when the present rector, Rev. James P. Franks, succeeded him. The sixty communicants with which this church began had increased, at the twenty-fifth anniversary of its consecration, to one hundred and fifty. The architecture of the church remains as it was at the beginning.

New Church Society (oftener designated in popular speech as the *Church of the New Jerusalem*, or *Swedenborgian Church*).—As early as 1840 those interested in the doctrines of the New Jerusalem met at the homes of different individuals and read the writings of the church. In 1845 Miss Mary Eveleth having joined the little band, became their reader for most of the two or three following years; after that Mr. Joseph Ropes was for a few years their leader. It was in 1861 that meetings began to be held in the hall of the building which had been General H. K. Oliver's school-house, and which was erected by him, on Federal Street. At that time Rev. Warren Burton was their leader. Here a Sunday-school was first gathered. From this place a removal took place to Creamer Hall, on Essex Street, and on the 25th of January, 1863, the society was instituted by Rev. T. B. Hayward, who preached for the congregation two years, or more. Services were afterwards held in the Howard Street Church and in Hamilton Hall. Rev. Abiel Silver was minister from 1867 to 1869. The society was incorporated July 13, 1869. That year a lot of land was purchased for a church. On this land the present church was built, and dedicated April 18, 1872. Rev. L. G. Jordan was the minister from June 6, 1869, to November 1, 1870. Rev. A. F. Frost began to preach for the society in 1872, but was not installed as pastor till January 25, 1875. He resigned June 30, 1879. Rev. Mr. Hayden followed Mr. Frost, being engaged to preach for a year. After he left, different ministers preached from one Sunday to several months each, until April 1, 1884, when Rev. Duane V. Bowen was invited to become the minister of the society. The invitation was accepted, and he remains to the present time the minister. Rev. Mr. Bowen was ordained in the Unitarian ministry in 1873, and had served parishes of that denomination before embracing the faith of the New Church and identifying himself with that body. In making the change he did not sever the bonds of friendship and sympathy by which he had been held in earlier fellowship with the communion of which he had been a member. Of the fifty-nine original members of the New Church Society, twenty have removed from the city, and fourteen have been "removed to the spiritual world," the speech of this church not recognizing such translation as death.

Calvary Baptist Church.—On the 21st of October, 1871, ninety members of the Central Baptist Church received letters of dismission from that church, for the purpose of constituting a new church, upon a somewhat different basis from that on which the parent church existed, believing "that the house of God should be free to all, without the sale or letting of pews, or the granting to a worldly proprietorship a vote on

any interest pertaining to the church." They met in the old Howard Street Chapel October 24, 1871, and organized under the name of "The Calvary Baptist Church of Salem." Rev. S. H. Pratt, who had come in their company from the Central Church, was chosen their pastor. The congregation transferred itself to Mechanic Hall for a time. Coming to feel the need of a church home of their own, Mrs. John Dwyer gave them land on which to build, and they proceeded to set up their meeting-house on the corner of Essex and Herbert Streets, meantime worshipping at the old "Bethel" on the latter street, till the new church should be ready. With much effort, their means not being abundant, they carried the enterprise through and dedicated their house on the 17th of November, 1873. On the 17th day of March, 1874, the church organized as a corporation under the general statutes of Massachusetts; there was no society distinct from the church, the church itself being incorporated. "The seats are utterly free, no price or rent being charged for any seat, and no seat being assigned to or claimable by any person, and all seats being open to the first comer; . . . the expenses are met by voluntary weekly offerings." Rev. Mr. Pratt resigned his charge May 4, 1873. For nearly a year they had the services of Mr. E. B. Andrews, a student of Newton Seminary, and since professor both in Newton and in Brown University—services which were of great value beyond his religious ministry, as he worked strenuously to raise the money for the building of the church. Twice they invited him to become their pastor and twice their earnest call was declined. Rev. D. H. Taylor was ordained their second pastor September 9, 1874. He continued in the pastorate till January 12, 1877. On the 27th of the following March (1877) Rev. William A. Keese, then settled in Ellsworth, Me., was invited to take pastoral charge of the church, and accepting, began his labors May 6th, and resigned May 26, 1883, at the end of a ministry of six years. Rev. Samuel H. Emery, the present pastor, was settled January 2, 1884. He was ordained December 5, 1877, and had been pastor of a church in Bellows Falls, Vt., previous to his settlement in Salem.

Seamen's Society: Seaman's Bethel.—When Salem's prosperity rested largely upon commerce, and the town was not without a considerable population of seafarers and their families, some transient, some resident, they were regarded by the Salem churches as a class entitled to special missionary effort. In August, 1824, a "Bethel" was opened in a store at the head of Derby Wharf as a place of worship, and Rev. Eleazer Barnard became the minister. The next year Rev. Benjamin H. Pitman succeeded Mr. Barnard, remaining two years; and in 1832 Rev. Michael Carlton was appointed, and continued in this work nearly thirty years, adding, in the latter years of his ministry, many of the offices of a minister at large and of a dispenser of the charities of the rich among the poor to his pastoral and missionary duties among sailors. A chapel was built on Herbert Street, and from its top the "Bethel" flag long waved an invitation to all who would come, seamen and others, to worship. As the number of seamen has diminished in Salem, the special mission work in behalf of sailors has become desultory and intermittent at times. Rev. Benjamin Knight, a Baptist clergyman living in Salem, rather past middle life, took up and carried on the same miscellaneous work which Mr. Carlton had pursued, that of colporteur, preacher and pastor to seamen, agent of the charitable in seeking out and relieving cases of want, and advocate of temperance—in short, the work of a minister at large. Since Mr. Knight's death two organizations, not altogether friendly to each other, have grown out of his mission, both assuming the name of "Bethel" societies, and seeking to perpetuate a ministry to the neglected and the unchurched like that in which he labored so many years. Neither has a settled pastor. One worships in the same building in which Mr. Knight preached, at the head of Phillips Wharf, the other (lately incorporated) on Derby Street, opposite the Bertram Home for Aged Men.

Church of the Colored People.—Another mission enterprise was started by the Salem churches about sixty years ago, in 1828, to provide a separate place of worship for the colored people of the town, it being their own desire to have a church home by themselves, in which they would be free from unpleasant and intrusive observation, and have a more perfect enjoyment of ministrations of their own selection, and more congenial to their feelings and religious habits. A chapel was built, in 1828, on South Street, afterwards known as Mill Street, and still later as (new) Washington Street, the chapel being removed when Washington Street was extended up the hill. This little congregation called itself at first the "Union Bethel Church." It had James P. Lewis as a missionary in 1831. It several times changed its name. In 1839 it was "Wesleyan Methodist," in 1842 "Zion's Methodist," or "Equal Rights Zion's Methodist Church" (unless this was a branch of the former), in 1845 again the "Wesleyan Methodist Connection in America," in 1854 "First Free-Will Baptist Society." In 1839 John N. Mars was its pastor; in 1845, Samuel Palmer; in 1855, Rev. James H. Marston. It had many reorganizations. Its light sometimes flickered, sometimes seemed to have gone out. Messrs. Osgood & Batchelder date its extinction within the year 1861. The African Methodist Episcopal Church has several times within the last eight years sent preachers from its Conference to undertake a revival of public worship among the colored people, and the establishment of a church. Rev. Jacob Stroyer and Joseph Taylor have each continued efforts to this end for two or three years at a time, but unsuccessfully. The population in whose interest the experiment has been tried is estimated at about three hundred souls in all. Many

of these are already respected members of other churches, satisfied with their church relations. The desire of many colored persons, sensitive to surrounding opinion, and constrained by a self-respecting reserve to have their worship apart and by themselves, has been well understood and sympathized with, and they have been liberally aided in their attempts to maintain their own separate meetings on Sunday. But it would appear to be wiser, hereafter, to seek their absorption in the other churches, where, it may be hoped, time and a growing appreciation of the spirit of true Christianity will make real the abolishment of all distinctions of class and race.

MORMON.—For a few years a church of the "Latter-Day Saints," better known as Mormons, existed in Salem. It was organized January 1, 1842. Ten years before, Joseph Smith, the "prophet" of that sect, came to Salem, with associates, and propagated its tenets, not unsuccessfully; in 1843 it had one hundred members. Erastus Snow remained here as its elder for a year or two. But in 1844, when all the pilgrims of this order were setting their faces towards Nauvoo, in Illinois, their sacred city, the church in Salem obeyed the general impulse and made a clean exodus from among the aliens.

DEAF MUTES.—A small congregation of deaf mutes organized themselves into a religious society in 1876, and have had Rev. Philo W. Packard, one of their number, as their only pastor. They number about twenty persons. Mr. Packard was born in Boston February 25, 1838.

LUTHERAN SWEDISH CHURCH.—One finds the simple record in the list of Salem churches for 1884–85 that "a Lutheran Swedish Church was organized June 15, 1884—no pastor—John Lonn its president. Its place of meeting, Central, corner of Charter Street."

For many years a body of believers, classed as "Spiritualists," numerically undefined and undefinable, at times sufficiently organized for regular meetings, have had sessions from Sunday to Sunday for such communion, utterances and conferences as usually characterize their congregations. Those who attend such gatherings are few compared with the number of those who entertain opinions more or less concurrent with theirs, but to whom they are private speculations, or a private faith, calling for no public and conventional proclamation, or separate and permanent organization.

The principal authorities consulted:

Rev. C. W. Upham's "Sermon at the Dedication of the First Church," November 16, 1826; "Second Century Lecture," 1829; "Address at the Rededication of the First Church," December 8, 1867.

Rev. William Bentley's "Description of Salem" ("Mass. Hist. Col.," vol. vi., year 1799).

Rev. J. B. Felt's "Annals of Salem," two vols.; Felt's "Ecclesiastical History of New England," vol. i.

Hon. Daniel A. White's "N. E. Congregationalism," 1861.

Lectures by Judge White respecting the "Founders of Salem and the First Church."

"Papers Relating to Rev. Samuel Skelton," by William P. Upham, Esq. ("Hist. Col. of Essex Inst.," vol. xiii.).

"Genealogy of the Marsh Family," Skelton.

"Sketch of Salem," by Charles Osgood and Henry M. Batchelder, 1879.

"Address before the Essex Bar Association," by Hon. Wm. D. Northend, president of the association, 1885.

"Discourse on the First Centennial Anniversary of the Tabernacle Church, April 26, 1835," by Rev. Samuel M. Worcester

"Narrative of the Controversy between the Rev. Mr. Samuel Fisk, the Pastor, and a number of the Brethren of the First Church of Christ in Salem," 1735; "Narrative of the Proceedings of the Ecclesiastical Council, convened in Salem in 1734," 1735; other published pamphlets relating to the above controversy, bound together in a volume in the library of the Salem Athenæum.

"Brief History of Settlement of Third Church in Salem, 1769 and of the Ecclesiastical Council of 1784," by Rev. Dr. Nathaniel Whitaker.

"Correspondence in Relation to the Third Church of 1735."

"First Centenary of the North Church," 1872.

"Semi-Centennial Sermon" by Rev. Robert C. Mills, D.D., First Baptist Church.

"Semi-Centennial Address on the Fiftieth Anniversary of Dedication of the Universalist Meeting-house and Installation of Rev. Edward Turner," 1859.

"Manual of Crombie Street Church."

"Manual of Central Baptist Church."

"Historical Sketch of Calvary Baptist Church," by Rev. Willlam A. Keese, in Report to the Salem Baptist Association, 1883.

[In Library of Boston Athenæum "B. 76, Sermons No. 7½."] A tract of six pages; its title page, in part, "A Direction for a Publick Profession in the Church Assembly after the Private Examination of the Elders" [much referred to in the discussion between Dr. S. M. Worcester and Judge D. A. White respecting the covenant and confession of the Salem Church, adopted in 1629].

"Reports of the Salem Society of Deaf Mutes, 1876, 1881, 1886."

"Roger Williams," article by Porter C. Bliss in "Johnson's Encyclopædia."

Sewell's "History of the Quakers."

Sprague's "Annals of the American Pulpit."

Morton's "New England's Memorial," editions of 1826 (Davis'), and of 1855 (Cong. Pub. Soc.).

Drake's "History of American Biography."

Savage's "Genealogical Dictionary."

Barry's "History of Massachusetts."

Arnold's "History of Rhode Island."

Palfrey's "History of New England."

"Salem Directories."

CHAPTER III.

THE COMMERCIAL HISTORY.

BY CHARLES S. OSGOOD.

SALEM may justly be proud of her commercial history. No other seaport in America has such a wonderful record. Flying from the mast of a Salem ship the American flag was first carried into the ports beyond the Cape of Good Hope. Her vessels led the way from New England to the Isle of France and India and China, and were the first from this country to display the American flag and open trade at St. Petersburg and Zanzibar and Sumatra, at Calcutta and Bombay, at Batavia and Arabia, at Madagascar and Australia, and at many another distant port. Well may she proudly inscribe on her city seal *Divitis Indiæ usque ad ultimum sinum.*

The colonists, in the War of the Revolution, were almost destitute of ships of war. They were engaged

in a struggle with one of the most powerful maritime nations, without the means to cope with their enemy on the high seas. Their own commerce was ruined, and it was essential to their success that provision be made for forcing the commerce of Great Britain to suffer in common with them, the fortunes and vicissitudes of war. Boston, New York, and the larger seaports, were occupied and nearly ruined by the enemy, and the main reliance of the country was on the shipping of Salem and the neighboring towns of Beverly and Marblehead.

The merchants of Salem at this crisis showed that the resolution passed in town meeting June 12, 1776, that "if the Honorable Congress shall for the Safety of the United American Colonies declare them independent of the Kingdom of Great Britain, we will solemnly engage, with our lives and fortunes, to support them in the measure," was no meaningless phraseology or idle boast.

They turned their vessels into men of war, and built new ones for the service, equipped them with cannon, manned them with gallant seamen and sent them out to meet Great Britain on the deep. During this contest there were sent out from this port at least one hundred and fifty-eight vessels, manned by several thousand brave sailors from Salem. They mounted more than two thousand guns, carrying on an average twelve or fourteen each, and captured during the war as many as four hundred and forty-five prizes.

The war ended, the merchants of Salem found themselves in possession of many large and swift-sailing vessels which had been built for use as privateers. These being too large to be profitably employed in the coasting trade, or on the short voyages to other ports heretofore visited by Salem ships, their owners determined to open to distant countries new avenues of trade and bring to Salem the products of lands lying in the remotest quarters of the globe.

There was no lack of seamen to man the vessels. The young men of the town, fresh from service on the armed ships of Salem, were eager to embark in just such ventures as a voyage to unknown countries offered. They had served with Haraden in his daring exploits off the coast of Spain, and had been with West when, in the darkness of the night, he cut his prize out of a British harbor under the guns of the enemy. What wonder that after wielding the cutlass and the boarding pike, they were not contented to put their hands to the plough or return to the daily drudgery of the work-shop. The spirit of adventure was awakened, and the more dangerous and perilous the undertaking the better it suited the temper of these wild and courageous graduates from the deck of the privateersman.

From the close of the War of the Revolution until the embargo in 1808, Salem was at the height of her commercial prosperity. The white sails of Salem's ships were unfurled in every port of the known world and carried the fame and name of Salem to the uttermost parts of the earth.

The history of this period makes a tale which even the imaginings of romance could hardly parallel. It is crowded full of the accounts of daring adventures by brave seamen in unknown seas, of their encounters with pirates and savage tribes, of their contests with the armed ships of France and England and of their imprisonment among the Algerines and in the prisons of France and Spain.

It was the young men of Salem that officered her ships, sailing as captains at an age when the boys of the present time are scarcely over their school-days. At the beginning of one of the East India voyages of nineteen months, neither the captain (Nathaniel Silsbee), nor his first mate (Charles Derby), nor his second mate (Richard J. Cleveland), was twenty years of age, and yet these boys carried ship and cargo safely to their destination, with imperfect mathematical instruments and with no charts but of their own making, and returned with a cargo which realized four or five times the amount of the original capital. With no power to communicate with home, the success of the undertaking was largely in the hands of these youthful captains. Their duty was not ended when the ship arrived safely in port, for upon their judgment and sagacity in buying and selling depended the profits of the voyage.

In those early days, when a vessel left Salem harbor, there was often nothing heard from her until after the lapse of a year or more she would come sailing back again. To-day the earth is girdled with the telegraph, and the arrival of a ship in the foreign harbor can be known at home almost within an hour of her reaching port. Then, foreign prices were unknown and the result of a voyage might be splendid success or ruinous disaster; now, a voyage is merely a passage from port to port with the market ascertained beforehand at either end.

When Captain Jonathan Carnes set sail for Sumatra, in 1795, on his secret voyage for pepper, nothing was heard from him until eighteen months later, he entered with a cargo of pepper in bulk, the first to be so imported into this country, and which sold at the extraordinary profit of seven hundred per cent. This uncertainty which hung over the fate of ship and cargo lent a romantic interest to these early voyages which this age, with its telegraph and steamship, has destroyed.

The lower part of the town, in the days of Salem's commerce, was full of bustling activity. The wharves were crowded with vessels discharging their cargoes, gathered from all nations, or loading for another venture across the seas. Sailors fresh from the distant Indies were chatting on the street corners with companions about to depart thither, or were lounging about the doors of the sailor boarding-houses with that indescribable air of disdain for all landsmen which seems always to attach to the true rover of the seas. They were looked upon by the younger portion of the community with that curiosity which is so

near akin to awe, with which we regard those about to start upon, or who have just returned from some uncommonly perilous undertaking.

The shops were full of strange and unique articles brought from distant lands. The parrot screamed at the open door and in the back shop the monkey and other small denizens of foreign forests gamboled at will, sometimes escaping to the neighboring housetops, much to the delight of the small children who gathered to watch their capture with upturned faces and expressions of intense interest in the result of the chase. Derby Street in those days was well worth a visit, if only for the suggestions of foreign lands that met the eye on every hand.

Salem at that time was one of the principal points for the distribution of foreign merchandise, over eight million pounds of sugar being among the imports of the year 1800. The streets about the wharves were alive with teams loaded with goods for all parts of the country. It was a busy scene with the coming and going of vehicles, some from long distances, for railroads were then unknown and all transportation must be carried on in wagons and drays. In the taverns could be seen teamsters from all quarters sitting around the open fire in the chilly evenings, discussing the news of the day or making merry over potations of New England rum, which Salem in the good old times manufactured in abundance.

All this has changed. The sail-lofts where on the smooth floor sat the sail-makers, with their curious thimbles fastened to the palms of their hands, busily stitching the great white sheets of canvas that were to carry many a gallant ship safely through storm and tempest to her destination in far-distant harbors, and that were to be reflected in seas before unvexed by the keel of an American vessel, are deserted or given over to more prosaic uses, the ship-chandlers' shops are closed and the old mathematical instrument maker has taken in his swinging sign of a quadrant, shut up his shop and, as if there was no further use for him here, has started on the long voyage from which there is no return.

The merchandise warehouses on the wharves no longer contain silks from India, tea from China, pepper from Sumatra, coffee from Arabia, spices from Batavia, gum-copal from Zanzibar, hides from Africa, and the various other products of far-away countries. The boys have ceased to watch on the Neck for the incoming vessels, hoping to earn a reward by being the first to announce to the expectant merchant the safe return of his looked-for vessel. The foreign commerce of Salem, once her pride and glory, has spread its white wings and sailed away forever.

It remains for us to-day to gather together as well as we may the facts and incidents of this memorable epoch in the history of our city and preserve them as a precious legacy from the Salem of the past to the Salem of the future.

Although commerce has sought other ports and is no longer prosecuted here, the influence of the old-time merchants, whose energy and enterprise, whose daring and far-sightedness, made such an unparalleled chapter in the history of Salem, still lingers with us. Salem to-day owes to these men the high position she holds in the world of science. Their broad and liberal views, stimulated by contact with all nations, prepared their descendants, the Salem of to-day, for the good work which is now being carried on in our midst. Their rare and unique collection of curiosities now in the possession of the Peabody Academy of Science grows in interest each year, being one of the principal points of attraction to visitors. As such it will always remain, a perpetual monument to the far-seeing and public-spirited merchants and ship-masters of Salem.

Salem was undoubtedly chosen as a good place for settlement by Roger Conant, who described it as "a fruitful necke of land," because of its harbors and rivers. Situated on a peninsula, with North River on one side and South River on the other, all parts of the town were readily accessible by water. Salem was from the first and of necessity a maritime place. The Massachusetts Company, that sent John Endicott to Salem, was a trading company, and the home Governor, Matthew Cradock, writes to Endicott in 1629 to send, as return cargoes, "staves, sarsaparilla, sumach, two or three hundred firkins of sturgeon and other fish and beaver."

The early, long-continued and staple trade of Salem was in the product of the fisheries. The harbors and rivers swarmed with fish, and the supply was so plentiful that large quantities were often used for manure. From 1629 to 1740 Winter Island seems to have been the headquarters of the Salem fishing trade, and that trade was the staple business of Salem down to a much later period. In 1643 the merchants of Salem were trading with the West Indies, with Barbadoes and the Leeward Islands.

Between 1640 and 1650 the commercial career of Salem received an impetus, and her vessels made voyages not only to the mother-country but to the West Indies, Bermudas, Virginia and Antigua. Her wealth was great in proportion to her population, and Josselyn, writing in 1644, says "in this town are some very rich merchants." In 1663 William Hollingworth, a Salem merchant, agrees to send one hundred hogsheads of tobacco from the River Potomac by ship from Boston to Plymouth in England, the isle of Jersey or any port in Holland, and thence to said island for seven pounds sterling per ton.

From 1670 to 1740 the trade was to the West Indies and most ports of Europe, including Spain, France and Holland. From 1686 to 1689 inclusive Salem is trading to Barbadoes, London, Fayal, Pennsylvania, Virginia and Antigua. The great majority of her vessels are ketches from twenty to forty tons and carrying from four to six men. Only one ship appears among them, and her tonnage is but one

hundred and thirty tons. In 1698–99 registers are taken out for two ships of eighty and two hundred tons, a barque, three sloops and twenty ketches. The ketch of those days was two-masted, with square sails on the fore-mast and a fore-and-aft sail on the main-mast, which was shorter than the fore-mast. The schooner, which gradually supplanted the ketch, first appears in our Salem marine about 1720. Felt says that "Andrew Robinson, of Gloucester, originated the name of schooner in 1709." John Johnson, of Salem, in 1693, "having for nigh three years followed the trade of boating goods" to and from Boston, "sometimes twice a weeke," complains to Governor William Phipps of the cost of entering and clearing.

In 1700 the foreign trade of Salem is thus described by Higginson: "Dry, merchantable codfish for the markets of Spain, Portugal and the Straits, refuse fish, lumber, horses and provisions for the West Indies. Returns made directly to England are sugar, molasses, cotton, wool, logwood and Brasiletto-wood, for which we depend on the West Indies. Our own produce, a considerable quantity of whale and fish-oil, whalebone, furs, deer, elk and bear-skins are annually sent to England. We have much shipping here, and freights are low."

Dr. Edward A. Holyoke, writing of the commerce of Salem in 1749, says: "The commerce of this town was chiefly with Spain and Portugal and the West Indies, especially with St. Eustatia. The cod fishery was carried on with success and advantage. The schooners were employed on the fishing banks in the summer, and in the autumn were laden with fish, rum, molasses and the produce of the country and sent to Virginia and Maryland, and there spent the winter retailing their cargoes, and in return brought corn and wheat and tobacco. This Virginian voyage was seldom very profitable, but, as it served to keep the crews together, it was continued till more advantageous employment offered."

Comparatively little mention is made in this chapter of the commerce of Salem prior to the Revolution. The colonial trade was narrow and limited, and was restricted by the short-sighted policy of the home government. Trade was carried on with the West Indies, with the mother-country and with some other of the European ports, but the famous record of Salem as a commercial port begins with the close of the Revolutionary War.

Colonel Higginson, in his recent article on "Old Salem Sea-Captains," says "there is nothing more brilliant in American history than the brief career of maritime adventure which made the name of Salem synonymous with that of America in many a distant port. The period bridged the interval between two wars; the American Revolution laid its foundation; the later war with England saw its last trophies."

It is to this period that this chapter is largely devoted, and it has been the endeavor of the writer to present as complete an account of Salem's commercial triumphs as can be gathered, the records of the custom-house and the files of contemporaneous newspapers being gleaned for material for the work. The log-books in the custody of the Essex Institute have also been carefully examined. These form a curiously interesting collection suggestive of life on ship-board, and of the old ship masters who made the entries in them from day to day. It is to be regretted that a large proportion are devoted wholly to the direction and force of the wind, to the latitude and longitude and the details of the ship's course. But now and then, especially among those belonging to the East India Marine Society, most interesting accounts are given of the customs and manners of foreign nations.

In one of the oldest of them we find this entry, made in the Indian Ocean: "A wave just broke over the ship and came in at the cabin window, making a blot on the log;" and there is the blurred writing, just as the salt water left it a hundred years ago; a trifling incident, but how real it makes the voyage to us! As we turn the pages, yellow with age and musty even now with the smell of the ship, we seem almost to be sailing the distant ocean and feel the force of the wave as it dashes against the vessel and throws its spray through the cabin window.

In the following pages it has been found most convenient to trace the course of trade with different countries separately, although it must be understood that many vessels visited several of the ports named in the course of a single voyage,—one, for instance, starting from Salem stopping at Manilla, and thence on to Canton, returning direct to Salem.

The Canton Trade.—Elias Hasket Derby led the way to India and China, and opened for Salem that extensive foreign commerce which will always hold a prominent place in her history. His enterprise and vigor was something rarely paralleled. Not content to follow in the footsteps of his predecessors, he turned his eyes to the Cape of Good Hope and the far-distant Indies, and determined to measure his strength with the incorporated companies of England and France and Holland, which then entirely monopolized the commerce of the East. He boldly entered into competition with that great and powerful monopoly, the East India Company, which Queen Elizabeth incorporated on the last day of the sixteenth century, a company whose Governor, Josiah Child (formerly an apprentice, sweeping one of the counting-rooms of London), became the possessor of boundless wealth, the companion of nobles, and one from whom King Charles II. graciously accepted a gift of ten thousand guineas,—a monopoly which held in its powerful grasp the whole trade of England, with the distant East, issuing its edicts from the India House on Leadenhall Street to its subjects in India, commanding them to disregard the votes of the House of Commons; and which, as late as the year 1800, when

the ship "Active," of Salem, George Nichols, master, arrived at Liverpool, from Salem, with a cargo of Surat cotton, compelled her to carry it to London and dispose of it from the warehouses of the Company in that city.

Mr. Derby, on the 28th of November, 1785, cleared the ship "Grand Turk," Ebenezer West, master, for the Isle of France, with the purpose to visit Canton. This vessel went to the Isle of France and China, and returned to Salem in June, 1787, with a cargo of teas, silks and nankeens, making the first voyage from New England to the Isle of France, India and China.

In the year 1790 there were three arrivals from Canton. The brig "William and Henry," Benjamin Hodges, master, one hundred and fity tons, was entered, in May, to Gray & Orne. Captain Hodges was a good type of the master mariner of that period. He was born in Salem, April 26, 1754. When the East India Marine Society was formed, he was chosen its president. He brought to Salem the first full cargo of tea direct from Canton. He died April 13, 1806. Captain Hodges makes the following quaint entry in his log-book, under date of Friday, Dec. 25, 1789, when leaving China for home: "Discharged the pilot after much altercation, having promised him fifty-six dollars, which I only intended as a conveniency, as forty dollars is the established customary price, which sum was all I intended and all I did pay him. However unjust it may appear to promise with an intention not to perform, yet it is necessary in dealing with such rascals as the Chinese, who are ever ready to take undue advantage, and, as the vulgar say, 'Two cheats is an even bargain,' and the only method to keep pace with such faithless villains." Evidently Captain Hodges was not impressed with the honesty of the average Chinaman.

Captain Hodges also gives a list of the American vessels then lying at Canton, fourteen in all, of which five hailed from Salem, four from New York, three from Philadelphia and two from Boston; and of the two Boston ships, one, the "Massachusetts," of one hundred and ninety tons, had a Salem man, Benjamin Carpenter, for captain. Captain Carpenter, although he does not appear to have made any voyages from Salem, was intimately connected with our marine societies. He was one of the founders of the East India Marine Society and an early member of the Salem Marine Society, which last-named society has in its possession a log-book of a voyage made by him in the ship "Hercules," of Boston, from that place to the East Indies, in 1792. His crew consisted of thirty-nine men, thirteen of them from Salem. All but two or three of the crew were between nineteen and twenty-four years of age, Captain Carpenter putting down his own age at forty. This log-book is remarkable for the elegance of the penmanship and the skill displayed in making pen-and-ink sketches of islands, rocks and other objects of interest to mariners.

The ship "Astrea," James Magee, master, and Thomas Handasyd Perkins, supercargo, of three hundred and thirty tons, arrived in June to Elias H. Derby, with a cargo of tea, paying $27,109.18 as duties; and the ship "Light Horse," Ichabod Nichols, master, two hundred and sixty-six tons, in June, to Elias H. Derby, with a cargo of tea, paying $16,312.98 as duties. There is no year when the direct arrivals from Canton numbered more than three. The "Astrea" was one of Mr. Derby's favorite ships. She was distinguished for speed, having in one voyage to the Baltic, made the run in eleven days from Salem to the coast of Ireland. Preparing for a voyage to Canton was in those days a serious undertaking. The "Astrea" was sent up the Baltic for iron, a schooner was sent to Madeira for wine, and specie was collected from New York, Philadelphia and Baltimore. In February, 1789, the "Astrea" was dispatched for Canton with an assorted cargo, consisting of iron, wine, butter, candles, ginseng, beef and flour. The cargo of the "Astrea" was entrusted to the joint care of Captain James Magee and Thomas Handasyd Perkins. This last-named gentleman was afterwards for many years a leading merchant of Boston, and one of the founders of the Boston Athenæum.

As showing how completely the merchant was obliged to rely on the judgment of the officers of his ship a few extracts from the letter of instruction given by Mr. Derby to the officers of the "Astrea" may be interesting. He writes as follows:

"Salem, February, 1789.

"Capt. James Magee, Jr., Mr. Thomas H. Perkins:

"*Gents*,—The ship 'Astrea' being ready for sea. I do advise and order you to come to sail and make the best of your way to Batavia, and on your arrival there you will dispose of such a part of the cargo as you think may be most for my interest. If you find the price of sugar to be low, you will then take into the ship as much of the best white kind as will floor her, and fifty thousand weight of coffee, if it is as low as we have heard, and fifteen thousand of saltpetre, if very low; some nutmegs and fifty thousand weight of pepper; this, you will stow in the fore peak, for fear of its injuring the teas. At Batavia you must, if possible, get as much freight for Canton as will pay half or more of your charges,—that is, if it will not detain you too long—as by this addition of freight it will exceedingly help the voyage. If Messrs. Blanchard & Webb are at Batavia in the Brigantine 'Three Sisters,' and if they have not stock sufficient to load with coffee and sugar, and if it is low, and you think it for my advantage, then I would have you ship me some coffee or sugar and a few nutmegs to complete his loading. If his brigantine can be sold for a large price, and sugar and coffee are too dear to make any large freight—in that case it possibly may be for my interest to have her sold, and for them to take passage with you to Canton, but this must not be done unless you, Dr. Blanchard and Capt. Webb shall think it greatly for my interest. It is my order that in case of your sickness, you write a clause at the foot of these orders, putting the command of the ship into the person's hands that you think the most equal for it, not having any regard to the station he at present has in the ship. Among the silks, you will get me one or two pieces of the wide nankeen satin, and others you will get as directed. Get me two pots of twenty pounds each of ginger, that is well put up; and lay out for my account fifteen or twenty pounds sterling in curiosities. There will be breakage-room in the bilge of the ship, that nothing dry can go in; therefore, in the crop of the bilge, you will put some boxes of China, such as are suitable for such places, and filled with cups and saucers, some bowls, and anything of the kind that may answer. Although I have been a little particular in these orders, I do not mean

them as positive ; and you have leave to break them in any part where you by calculation think it for my interest.

"Your friend and employer,

"ELIAS HASKET DERBY."

The "Astrea" did not make so successful a voyage as was anticipated. American ships were beginning to follow the lead of the "Grand Turk," and between the fall of 1788 and 1791, no less than fifteen American vessels arrived in Canton. Mr. Perkins was obliged to sell the large invoice of ginseng at twenty thousand dollars, less than the prime cost. Four ships of Mr. Derby, the "Astrea," "Light Horse," "Atlantic" and "Three Sisters," were lying at Canton in the summer of 1789. Two of these ships were sold, and the proceeds of all their cargoes was shipped in the "Astrea" and "Light Horse," both of which vessels arrived safely in Salem, in June, 1790, with 728,871 pounds of tea for Mr. Derby. The entire importation into the United States during this year was 2,601,852 pounds. This unprecedented importation was disheartening to the China merchants, as it was largely in excess of the consumption which at that time was less than a million pounds. An unexpected duty had also been imposed on teas which bore heavily upon the importers.

We therefore find no further arrival from Canton till 1798, when the ship "Perseverance," Richard Wheatland, master, enters in April with a cargo of tea and sugar to Simon Forrester, paying in duties $24,562.10. Captain Wheatland was largely endowed with the bravery, vigor and enterprise which were so essential to a successful ship-master in the times when it was sometimes necessary to fight a passage to the destined harbor. He was born in Wareham, England, in October, 1762, and began his seafaring life in the city of London. He served on a British man-of-war for three years, holding some small office on board the ship. After the peace of 1783, Captain Wheatland, being in the West Indies, became acquainted with Captain William Silver, of Salem, and at his solicitation came to Salem, where he afterwards resided. He married a daughter of his friend, Captain Silver. She died shortly after her marriage, and he subsequently married a daughter of Stephen Goodhue. He was the father of George Wheatland, now the senior member of the Essex bar, and of Dr. Henry Wheatland, the president of the Essex Institute. As illustrating the dangers to which commerce was exposed at this time as well as the bravery of Captain Wheatland and his crew the following letter is given, together with the heading which precedes it in a local paper, and which shows the bitterness with which the French nation was then regarded by the press and people,—

"A sea fight gallantly and victoriously maintained by the ship 'Perseverance,' Captain Richard Wheatland, of this port, against one of the vessels of war of the 'Terrible Republic.' The French rascals, contrary to the laws of war and of honor, fought under false colors, whilst the 'Eagle,' true to his charge, spread his wings on the American flag."

The following is Captain Wheatland's letter to his owners :

"SHIP 'PERSEVERANCE,' OLD STRAITS OF BAHAMA, January 1, 1799.

"GENTLEMEN :

"Conceiving we may possibly meet an opportunity of forwarding this immediately on our arrival at Havana, or perhaps before, induces me to give an account of our voyage thus far.

"Until December 26 met with nothing very material, except heavy, disagreeable weather off the coast, and, having the wind so far to the westward as to preclude the possibility of making our passage round the bank, were compelled, contrary to our wishes, to go through the Old Straits of Bahama. On the afternoon of the 27th were boarded by the British frigate 'Romilla,' Captain Rolles, our papers examined and we treated with great politeness. They purchased, at our own prices, a number of articles from the cargo and of the people. Three days before, they had captured a French privateer sloop of ten guns and sixty men, and retook an American brig, her prize. After two hours' detention we were permitted to proceed, which we did without meeting any interruption till Monday, December 31. For particulars of that day we give an extract from a journal kept on board.

"December 31, Key Romain in sight, bearing south, distance four or five leagues. A schooner has been in chase of us since eight o'clock, and has every appearance of a privateer. At one o'clock P. M., finding the schooner come up with us very fast, took in steering-sails, fore and aft and royals ; at half past one about ship and stood for her ; she immediately tacked and made sail from us ; we fired a gun to leeward, and hoisted the American ensign to our mizzen-peak ; she hoisted a Spanish jack at main top-mast head, and continued to run from us. Finding she outsailed us greatly, and wishing to get through the narrows, in the Old Straits, at two o'clock P. M., we again about ship, and kept on our course. The schooner immediately wore, fired a gun to leeward and kept after, under a great press of sail. At half past two she again fired a gun to leeward, but, perceiving ourselves in the narrows, above-mentioned, we kept on, to get through them, if possible, before she came up with us, which we effected. At three o'clock, finding ourselves fairly clear of Sugar Key and Key Laboas, we took in steering-sails, wore ship, hauled up our courses, piped all hands to quarters and prepared for action. The schooner immediately took in sail, struck the Spanish jack, hoisted an English Union flag and passed under our lee at considerable distance. We wore ship, she did the same, and passed each other within half musket. A fellow hailed us in broken English, and ordered the boat hoisted out and the captain to come on board with his papers, which he refused ; he again ordered our boat out, and enforced his orders with a menace, that in case of refusal he would sink us, using at the same time the vilest and most infamous language it is possible to conceive of.

"By this time he had fallen considerably astern of us ; he wore and came up on our starboard quarter, giving us a broadside as he passed our stern, but fired so excessively wild that he did us very little injury, while our stern-chasers gave him a noble dose of round-shot and langrage. We hauled the ship to wind, and, as he passed us, poured a whole broadside into him with great success. Sailing faster than we, he ranged considerably ahead, tacked, and again passed, giving us a broadside and a furious discharge of musketry, which they kept up incessantly till the latter part of the engagement. His musket balls reached us in every direction, but his large shot either fell short or went considerably over us, while our guns, loaded with round shot and square bars of iron, six inches long, were plied so briskly and directed with so good judgment, that before he got out of reach we had cut his mainsail and fore topsail all to rags and cleared his decks so effectually that when he bore away from us there were scarcely ten men to be seen.

"He then struck his English, and hoisted the flag of the 'Terrible Republic,' and made off with all the sail she could carry, much disappointed, no doubt, at not being able to give us a fraternal embrace. The wind being light, and knowing he would outsail us, added to a solicitude to complete our voyage, prevented our pursuing him ; indeed we had sufficient to gratify our revenge for his temerity, for there was scarcely a single fire from our guns but what spread entirely over his hull. The action, which lasted an hour and twenty minutes, we conceive ended well ; for, exclusive of preserving the property entrusted to our care, we feel a confidence we have rid the world of some infamous pests of society. We were within musket-shot the whole time of the engagement and were so fortunate as to receive but very trifling injury ; not a person on board met the slightest harm. Our sails were a little torn, and one of the quarter-deck guns dismounted.

"The privateer was a schooner of eighty or ninety tons, copper bottom and fought five or six guns on a side. We are now within forty-eight hours' sail of Havana, where we expect to arrive in safety ; indeed we

have no fear of any privateer's preventing us, unless greatly superior in force. The four quarter-deck guns will require new carriages, and one of them was entirely dismounted.

"We remain with esteem,

"Gentlemen,

"Your humble servant,

"RICHARD WHEATLAND."

There is appended to this letter, in the newspaper, the following comment:

"The gallantry of young Mr. Ingersoll, on board the 'Perseverance,' we are well assured, contributed greatly to second the determined bravery of Captain Wheatland in defending the ship. Indeed the whole ship's company deserve well of their owners and of their country."

Captain Wheatland, after retiring from the sea, was engaged in commerce. He died in Salem in March, 1830.

The ship "Elizabeth," Daniel Sage, master, arrived from Canton in June, 1799, consigned to William Gray, and the ship "Pallas," William Ward, master, to Samuel Gray, William Gray and Joseph Peabody, with a cargo of tea and sugar, paying a duty of $66,927.65, arrived in July, 1800. In May, 1802, the ship "Minerva," M. Folger, master, belonging to Clifford Crowninshield and Nathaniel West, entered from Canton and was the first Salem vessel to circumnavigate the globe. She sailed around Cape Horn, stopped one degree south of Chiloe, went to the Island of Mas-a-Fuera, where she took seals, wintered south of Lima and proceeded to China. She came home around the Cape of Good Hope.

The ship "Concord," Obed Wyer, master, entered from Canton in July, 1802, with a cargo of tea to Gideon Tucker and Pickering Dodge, paying a duty of $20,477.53; and in April, 1803, the ship "Union," George Hodges, master, to Ichabod Nichols and thirty-nine others, entered with a cargo of tea, paying a duty of $43,190.79. The ship "Friendship," William Story, master, arrived from Canton, Sumatra and the Isle of France, in August, 1804, to Jerathmael Pierce, with tea, coffee and pepper, paying a duty of $31,514.19. The ship "Eliza," William Richardson, master, arrived in May, 1807, to Pierce and Wait, and the ship "Hercules," James M. Fairfield, master, with a cargo of tea and cassia, paying a duty of $45,575.98, in March, 1808, to Nathaniel West. In April, 1810, the brig "Pilgrim," Charles Pearson, master, arrived to Richard Gardner, and the ship "Hunter," Philip P. Pinal, master, with a cargo of tea, sugar, candy and cassia, to Jerathmael Pierce, in May, 1810.

The brig "Active," William P. Richardson, master, arrived with a cargo of tea and cassia, consigned to James Cook, and paying duties to the amount of about thirty-two thousand dollars. The "Active" left Salem June 1, 1810, and went to the Feejee Islands, where she remained till July 26, 1811. She arrived in Salem, March 27, 1812, one hundred and eighteen days from Canton.

The brig "Canton," Daniel Bray, Jr., master, arrived in May, 1817, from Canton and Marseilles, to Joseph Peabody and Gideon Tucker, having performed the voyage to Canton and Europe in eleven months and twenty-five days. The ship "China," Benjamin Shreve, master, cleared for Canton, May 24, 1817, and arrived in Salem March 30, 1818, with a cargo of tea, nankeens and silks to Joseph Peabody and others, and paying a duty of $15,348.56. In January, 1819, the ship "Hercules," James King, Jr., master, arrived with a cargo of tea and sugar, paying a duty of $51,765.49 and consigned to Nathaniel West, Jr. and others. The ship "Osprey," Stephen Brown, master, arrived from Canton, *via* Boston, in July, 1819, one hundred and seventeen days from Canton, to William P. Richardson, and the ship "Midas," Timothy Endicott, master, entered from Canton, *via* Boston, to Pickering Dodge, with a cargo of tea, cloves and sugar, in September, 1819, one hundred and forty-three days from Canton. In February, 1820, the ship "Friendship," Thomas Meeke, master, entered from Canton to Pickering Dodge and others, with a cargo paying a duty of $21,677,44.

The brig "Leander," owned by Joseph Peabody, made three voyages direct from Canton, entering in March, 1825, in April, 1826 and in July, 1829. Charles Roundy was master on the first two voyages and N. Smith on the last; the cargoes paying duties of $86,847.47, $92,392.94 and $84.043.82 respectively. The ship "China," H. Putnam, master, entered from Canton in April, 1825, to Joseph Peabody and others, paying a duty of $22,987.32.

The ship "Sumatra," owned by Joseph Peabody, made six voyages direct from Canton, entering in April, 1829, in April, 1830, in October, 1831, in June, 1834, in December, 1836, and in October, 1841. Charles Roundy was master on the first four voyages, and Peter Silver on the last two. When returning on the last voyage, Captain Silver speaks the ship "Echo," dismasted, with one hundred and forty passengers bound for New York. He could not board the distressed vessel at once, because of the storm then prevailing, but lay by until he was able to send his boat and supply her with sails and provisions. He took on board his own vessel twenty-four of the passengers, including several sick ladies, and landed them at Holmes Holl. For the kind and timely assistance rendered, Captain Silver was presented by the passengers with a silver pitcher, and each of his mates with a silver cup.

The ship "Eclipse," William Johnson, master, entered from Canton in August, 1832, consigned to Joseph Peabody. The above-named comprise all the vessels that entered at the Salem Custom-house, direct from Canton, bringing a full cargo of Canton goods. There were many other Salem vessels that went there in the course of their voyages, or that cleared from Salem for Canton and returned to other ports. The ship "St. Paul," Chas. H. Allen, master, and owned by Stephen C. Phillips, went to China from Manilla and on her return to Salem in March, 1845, brought part of a cargo of tea and other merchandise from

China. All the direct trade from Canton to Salem after 1825 was carried on by Joseph Peabody.

Among the vessels that cleared for Canton was the ship "Brutus,". Richard Crowninshield, master, March 7, 1798. The ship "Gov. Endicott," Benjamin Shreve, master, cleared for Canton May 5, 1819, and experienced a tremendous gale on July 31st, during which the whole watch, consisting of the second-mate and seven men were washed overboard and lost, and her mizzen-mast and rudder were carried away. She arrived at St. Salvador in a crippled condition on the 26th of September.

From a journal kept by Mr. Samuel Goodhue on board the ship "Sumatra," Charles Roundy, master, on a voyage to Manilla and Canton, the following extracts are made as giving some general account of the incidents of such voyages.

"*Sunday, May* 24, 1829.—At three o'clock in the morning got under way from Derby wharf, and in fifteen minutes dropped anchor in the harbor. At seven o'clock the passengers came on board and we got under way and stood to sea. For passengers we have Mr. Low and wife, Mrs. Harriet Low and servant and Mr. Ammidon. The ship's company consists of the captain, his two mates, Mr. Johnson and Mr. Shephard, eleven hands before the mast, cook and steward, making twenty-one persons in all on board. At eight o'clock we discharged our pilot, and at ten o'clock we got our breakfast. The wind was fair and blowing a good breeze, fast taking us from our native land.

"*Wednesday, June* 3*d.*—Very pleasant and delightful weather. We have been employed for several days in cleaning our guns, small arms, boarding pikes, etc., and in making wads and other warlike preparations, as we shall soon be in the way of pirates.

"*Sunday, June* 21*st.*—This is the fourth Sunday at sea, and we are now drawing near the equator.

"*Monday, June* 22*d.*—Just as the watch was called at four P.M., we discovered a barque just on our weather bow about eight miles from us. He had his royals furled top-gallant sails clewed up, courses hauled up, and main top sail to the mast. He seemed to be laying too to speak to us. On our nearer approach, he being two or three miles on our weather bow, saw him to be a small craft with painted ports, and instead of a barque it was a brig with a jigger mast and a false stern. It was evidently a man-of-war or a pirate in disguise. The wind beginning to head us off, all hands were called to tack ship to the westward. In a few minutes a heavy rain squall came up, and we soon lost sight of our suspicious neighbor.

"*Monday, June* 29*th.*—Thirty-seven days out. About one P.M. crossed the Equator with a six-knot breeze.

"*Saturday, July* 25*th.*—This forenoon saw two very large whales very near us. They appeared to be very old and had barnacles on their heads. They passed very slowly under our stern with their mouths wide open.

Wednesday, July 29*th.*—Had strong breezes during the day. The distance ran was two hundred and one miles, the greatest day's work since leaving Salem.

"*Sunday, August* 16*th.*—For the last twenty days ending yesterday we sailed three thousand six hundred and eight miles, averaging one hundred and eighty miles a day. Caught a large porpoise weighing about three hundred and fifty pounds. It was very fortunate for us to get some oil as our stock of oil has been out four or five days.

"*Wednesday, August* 26*th.*—At eleven P.M. we saw the Island of Java, and at eight A.M. we passed Java Head with a fine eight-knot breeze and got fairly inside the Straits of Sunda. Came to anchor off Angier, and a Dutch boat came off for news and letters, and afterwards came off again, bringing fowls, vegetables and fruit. They informed us that the ship 'Lotus,' Thomas Moriaty, captain, had gone up the Straits three days before bound to Canton.

"*Tuesday, September* 8*th.*—About two P.M. we entered the Bay of Manila after a very short passage of one hundred and six days from Salem. As we went up the bay the rain at intervals poured down in torrents, giving us a specimen of Manila weather, at this season of the year. At dark we passed the point of Cavite, and at seven o'clock came to anchor about two miles below Manila. We found the ship 'Mandarin,' of Salem, William Osgood, captain, and the ship, 'Restitution,' Capt. Kinsman, and a New York brig were at Cavite. Thus, of the five vessels laying in a single port, three of them are Salem ships.

"*Monday, September* 14*th.*—Went ashore at Manila. The streets, some of them are wide with tolerable good accommodations for foot passengers. The lower stories of all the buildings are occupied as shops or stores. The upper stories are used as dwellings. The shops for the most part are kept by Chinese. They are not very neat, and are generally filled with a great variety of articles, such as hats, dry goods, fancy articles, etc. We passed a bridge built of stone over a canal. There were plenty of beggars on the bridge who had a very miserable appearance. There are several large churches in the suburbs. One very large one of stone we went into. They were saying mass over a corpse. After hurrying over a parcel of Latin, like a ship in a squall, and throwing a little water and burning some incense, the corpse was carried off. The inside of the church was paved with flag-stones, and was filled with Malays, a large proportion being small boys, who appeared to be very devout. I do not think the city is very strongly fortified. It was once taken by the English. We met a number of carriages something like a barouche. They were filled with ladies who all have a kind of olive pale complexion, but are otherwise tolerably handsome. They dress very splendidly and generally have no head dress excepting a handkerchief or piece of muslin. I never saw any of them walking, I suppose they think themselves too good to touch the earth. Among the Malay women there is but very little beauty. They are of a copper color and have a kind of hopping gait, something resembling a cock turkey. Their dress is but little more than a piece of cloth tied round their waist. They wear wooden shoes which have nothing above the sole excepting a small place for a toe. At eight o'clock we returned to the ship. If I was to live here I should much rather be on board our ship than on shore among a parcel of Spaniards, Malays, pigs and dogs.

"*Tuesday, September* 22*d* —At 8.30 we got under way after laying in Manila fifteen days, and taking in four thousand piculs of rice, and a light breeze took us slowly out of sight of the turrets and towers of Manila.

"*Wednesday, September* 30*th.*—We are sailing along among the Ladrone Islands. There are plenty of fishermen about us. The fishermen are a very hardy set of people. Their whole fortune is in their boat and that is their sole dependence. They carry their families in their boat and sometimes there are two or three generations, from the white-headed old man to the young babe. Their boats are kept in good order and generally have two masts, with mat sails. They mostly fish two or three in company with nets, and come to anchor in the night among the islands. They are, indeed, a very independent set of men. It is but nine months since we were going along these islands bound home. We have made two passages, laid in Salem one month, been to Manila, and are now here again. At three P.M. we came to anchor in Macao roads. At ten o'clock the next morning our passengers left us, and no doubt were glad to get on shore after being so long on shipboard. Several Chinese junks passed us bound into Macao. They generally have two or three masts, and have an eye painted on each bow. They have large wooden anchors, and sail very clumsily.

"*Saturday, October* 3*d.*—Got under way for Lintin, and in the afternoon we passed a great number of craft of all descriptions, mostly fishing boats. We generally saw that the wife had the helm while the men were at work on the nets or laying still, and there were plenty of young brats, blackguarding every one that passed, for that I believe is the first thing they learn. The town of Lintin is small and is the principal place for smuggling opium, which sells here for eight hundred dollars a picul of one hundred and thirty-three pounds.

"*Tuesday, October* 6*th.*—About eleven o'clock we passed a fort which stands at the entrance of Whampoa River. There was a mandarin came off to go up the river with us, and, though dressed in his gaudy robes and arrayed in all his state, his first business after coming on board was to beg a bottle of rum. Soon after passing the entrance we came in sight of a large pagoda which stands upon high land and is about two hundred feet high.

"*Monday, October* 12*th.*—This morning five of us started in the boat to go up to Canton. We passed a duck boat. The ducks were let out on the shore to feed, and I should think there were several hundred of them. When the keepers want them they sing out, and the last one in generally gets a flogging. Some distance from the city you can tell you are drawing near to a large commercial city, by the clouds of smoke hanging over it, and the forests of masts in the river. At the head of Whampoa River stands a fort. It is square and built of stone and brick, and has about thirty small pieces of cannon in it. They are lashed with rattan to blocks of wood. We soon landed at Canton, and were busy making what little purchases we were able to afford. The shop-keepers

are always ready at the landing place to lead you to their shops, recommending their goods above all others. Their shops, especially those in China and New Streets, are very clean, and their goods make a handsome show. They generally have an English sign over their door, but go by the Chinese names, except some in Hog Lane, such as 'Jimmy,' 'Good Tom,' 'Young Tom,' etc., and among others, 'General Jackson,' recommended himself to us. We were not much gratified in finding the hero, an inferior, black-looking Tartar, surrounded by a few pieces of inferior silks, some pictures, etc. At six o'clock we returned to the ship.

"*Thursday, December 17th.*—At three o'clock this morning six of us started in the pinnace for Canton. After breakfast we went up China Street to finish making our purchases, and while there saw a procession of a mandarin. He was preceded by about a dozen dirty-looking Tartars with bamboos, and no other uniform than a dirty red cap. One had an instrument something like a tambourine, another something like a fife, which made a hard screeching sound. The mandarin was in a palanquin and carried by two Tartars. At the head of the street there was a theatre. The players were very active, and their dress was rich and splendid. They are paid by the shop-keepers ef the street, and attract great numbers of Chinese. At the entrance of China Street there was a large figure of Josh, and around him were burning several lights, while before him were heaps of oranges, also a roast pig and a turkey. About four o'clock we started on our return to the ship.

"*Wednesday, December 30th.*—Having got all our cargo of tea on board, we got underway and dropped down the river on our way home. After an uneventful passage, the 'Sumatra' arrived safely in Salem harbor, with her cargo of tea, in April, 1830."

THE INDIA TRADE.—India was visited soon after the close of the Revolutionary War by Salem vessels. The trade was opened by Elias Hasket Derby, and the ship "Atlantic," commanded by his son, was the first vessel to display the American ensign at Surat, Bombay and Calcutta. This was in the year 1788. The ship "Peggy" arrived in Salem, June 21, 1789, with the first cargo of Bombay cotton brought to this country, consigned to E. H. Derby. The brigantine "Henry," Benjamin Crowninshield, master, of one hundred and twenty-five tons burden, and manned by eight men, arrived at Salem, from Madras, Bengal and the Isle of France, consigned to E. H. Derby and John Derby, Jr., January 10, 1791, and on May 13, 1793, the ship "Grand Turk," Benjamin Hodges, master, of five hundred and sixty-four tons burden, and owned by E. H. Derby, arrived from Madras with 1,031,484 pounds of sugar, 500 bags of saltpetre, 464 pieces of redwood, 3,900 hides, 709 bags of ginger, 830 bags of pepper, and 22 chests of tea, the cargo paying a duty of $24,229,65. The "Grand Turk" had sailed, outward bound, Sunday, March 11, 1792, at 3 P. M., and Captain Hodges writes in his log book that "great numbers of our friends assembled at the old fort and expressed their good wishes in the old English custom of three huzzas." The schooner "Polly and Sally," George Crowninshield, master, and consigned to Richard Crowninshield with sugar, pepper and coffee, arrived from Bengal in May, 1794. The brig "Enterprise," William Ward, master, entered in August, 1794, from India, consigned to William Gray. The ship "Henry," Jacob Crowninshield, master, entered from India and Cowes, in November, 1794 to E. H. Derby. "The ship "Washington," Benjamin Webb, Jr., master, entered July 11, 1795, from Calcutta, *via.* Boston, with a cargo of sugar to John Fisk. The ketch "Eliza," Stephen Phillips, master, appears to be the first vessel to arrive at Salem direct from Calcutta. She entered October 8, 1795, with a cargo of sugar to E. H. Derby. The "Eliza" cleared from Salem for the East Indies, December 22, 1794, with an outward cargo of 48 casks of brandy, 22 barrels of naval stores, and 106 pairs of silk stockings.

There were five arrivals from India in 1796,—February 23d, the brig "Friendship," George Hodges, master, to Joseph Osgood, Jr., from Calcutta; April 18th, the snow "Peggy," Joseph Ropes, master, to E. H. Derby, from India; April 18th, the ship "John," Jona Moulton, master, to William Gray, from Calcutta; August 16th, the brig "Hind," Jona Hodges, master, from Calcutta; and September 20th, the ketch "Eliza," Stephen Phillips, master, to E. H. Derby, from Calcutta.

From a New York paper, under date of April, 1796, we make the following extract: "The 'America,' Captain Jacob Crowninshield, of Salem, Mass., commander and owner, has brought home an elephant from Bengal in perfect health. It is the first ever seen in America, and is a very great curiosity. It is a female, two years old, and of a species that grows to an enormous size. This animal sold for ten thousand dollars, being supposed to be the greatest price ever given for an animal, in Europe or America."

There were four entries from India in 1797,—in May, the bark "Essex," John Ropes, master, to William Orne, from Calcutta; in May the ship "William and Henry," John Beckford, master, to William Gray, from Bengal; in May, the ship "Benjamin," Richard Gardner, master, to E. H. Derby, from Calcutta and the Cape of Good Hope; and in July, the ship "Betsey," Nathaniel Silsbee, master, from Calcutta and Madras, consigned to Daniel Pierce and Nathaniel Silsbee, with sugar, coffee and pepper, paying a duty of $10,753.20.

During the year 1798 there were nine entries from Calcutta; the largest number of entries in any single year. The years 1803 and 1818 show the same number. The entries from Calcutta for the year 1798 were,—in January, the ship "Recovery, Joseph Ropes, master, to E. H. Derby; in January, the ship "Lucia," Thomas Meek, master, to William Gray; in March, the bark "Sally," Benjamin Webb, master, to Thomas Saunders & Co.; in March, the brig "Good Hope," Edward West, master, to Nathaniel West; in March, the brig "Adventure," James Barr, Jr., master, to John Norris; in March, the ship "Betsey," Josiah Orne, master, to Samuel Gray & Co.; in March, the ship "Mary," Nicholas Thorndike, master; in May, the ship "Sally," Josiah Obear, master; and in July, the ship "Belisarius," John Crowninshield, master, to George Crowninshield & Sons, with a cargo of sugar, 10,767 pounds of sugar-candy, and 118,215 pounds of coffee, from Calcutta and the Isle of France.

There were but two enteries in 1799. The ship

"Recovery," Joseph Ropes, master, entered May 7th, to E. H. Derby. This vessel had touched at Mocha on her outward passage, and displayed the American flag for the first time at that port. The ship "Ulysses," Josiah Orne, master, entered July 10th, to William Gray. Both entries were from Calcutta. The above-named vessels comprise all that arrived from India prior to the year 1800.

The limits of this chapter will not permit a full list of the subsequent entries, but the names of a few are given as showing the Salem merchants and shipmasters engaged in this trade. The ship "Active," Timothy Bryant, master, with a cargo of 180,000 pounds of cotton to Bryant & Nichols, entered from Bombay, in August, 1800. The ship "Vigilant," James Clemmons, master, entered from Bombay, in February, 1801, with a cargo of cotton to Simon Forrester. The bark "Eliza," Benjamin Lander, master, entered from Calcutta, July, 1801, with a cargo of sugar and other merchandise to Joseph White. The ship "Hazard," Henry Tibbetts, master, entered from Calcutta, May, 1802, with sugar, cigars and cordage, to John and Richard Gardner, paying a duty of $16,298.

The brig "Sally," William Ashton, master, entered from Calcutta in February, 1803, to Jacob Ashton & Co., with a cargo of sugar, paying a duty of $10,631.54. The ship "Lucia," Solomon Towne, master, entered from Calcutta in August, 1804, with a cargo of sugar, indigo and cheroots, to William Gray and others, and paying a duty of $24,001.08.

The ship "Argo," Stephen Field, master, entered from Calcutta in March, 1805, with a cargo of sugar to Philip Chase and others, and paying a duty of $32,799.47. The ship "Mary Ann," Edward Norris, master, entered from Calcutta, April, 1806, with a cargo consigned to John Norris, and paying a duty of $14,797.68. The ship "Franklin," Timothy Wellman, 3d master, entered from Calcutta in October, 1806, with a cargo of sugar to Joseph Peabody, and paying a duty of $19,734.60. The ship "Friendship," Israel Williams, master, entered from Madras in November, 1806, with a cargo of pepper, coffee and indigo to Pierce & Wait, paying a duty of $21,093.21. The ship "Exeter," Thos. B. Osgood, master, entered from Bengal in October, 1807, with 356,043 pounds of cotton, 11,141 of indigo, and 80,731 of sugar, paying a duty of $16,331.21, and consigned to Benjamin Pickman, Jr.

The ship "Union," William Osgood, master, entered from Calcutta in September, 1811, with a cargo to Stephen Phillips, and paying a duty of $26,408.23. The ship "Restitution," David D. Pulsifer, master, entered from Calcutta in October, 1812, with a cargo to Simon Forrester, and paying a duty of $51,526.33. The brig "Caravan," Augustine Heard, master, entered from Calcutta in March, 1813, with a cargo to Pickering Dodge, paying a duty of $26,975. The bark "Patriot," Nathan Frye, master, entered from Calcutta in March, 1816, to John H. Andrews.

In October, 1816, forty-two vessels had cleared for India since the close of the War of 1812, and sixteen of them carried out three million hard dollars. The ship "Malabar," Josiah Orne, master, entered from Bombay in June, 1817, with a cargo of cotton and pepper to John W. Rogers, paying a duty of $18,769.40. The ship "Endeavour," Timothy Bryant, Jr., master, entered in September, 1817, to Dudley L. Pickman. The brig "Alexander," David A. Neal, master, entered from Bombay in September, 1817, with cotton to Jonathan Neal.

The ship "Gentoo," Nathaniel Osgood, master, entered from Calcutta in June, 1818. The cargo of this vessel, as was often the case with large vessels sent on distant voyages, was the property of a large number of persons. It consisted principally of sugar and cotton, and the consignees were Pickering Dodge, Nathaniel Silsbee, Francis and George Lee, John Belknap, Francis Quarles, Samuel P. Gardner, Baker & Hodges, Henry Pickering, John Derby, Philip and A. Chase, Samuel G. Derby, John W. Rogers, John Stone, Humphrey Devereaux, Nathaniel Osgood and Samuel G. Perkins. The whole duty paid was $29,270.55. The brig "Lawry," John Holman, master, entered from Calcutta in May, 1820, to John Derby, and paying a duty of $20,693.99.

The brig "Naiad," Nathaniel Osgood, master, arrived from Calcutta in January, 1821, with a cargo to Pickering Dodge, paying a duty of about $24,000. The ship "Aurora," Robert W. Gould, master, arrived from Siam in January, 1823, with a cargo of pepper and coffee to Willard Peele. The brig "Ann," Charles Millett, master, arrived from Bombay in November, 1825, to Henry Prince. The brig "Reaper," J. F. Brookhouse, master, entered from Bombay in February, 1830, consigned to Robert Brookhouse. The brig "Nereus," Thomas Farley, master, entered from Bombay in April, 1830, consigned to John W. Rogers. The ship "Catherine," Joseph Winn, Jr., entered from Calcutta in October, 1831, consigned to Joseph Peabody. The brig "Quill," S. I. Shillaber, master, entered from Bombay in October, 1832, consigned to N. L. Rogers & Brothers. The brig "Cherokee," W. B. Smith, master, entered from Bombay in February, 1837, consigned to Michael Shepard. The ship "William and Henry," Charles H. Fabens, master, entered from Bombay in September, 1839, consigned to David Pingree.

In 1842 there were three entries from Calcutta,—the ship "General Harrison," W. Lecraw, master, in February; the ship "Isaac Hicks," Newell, master, in September; and the ship "New Jersey," Barry, master, in December, all with cargoes consigned to Francis Peabody. The last entry at Salem from ports in India of a vessel consigned to a Salem merchant was that of the bark "Brenda," H. Bridges, master, in August, 1845, with a cargo of pepper and cordage to Michael Shepard, paying a duty of $31,793.65. Within the last few years there have been several en-

tries from Calcutta of vessels bringing cargoes of jute butts to the factories here.

A detailed history of these India voyages could not fail to be interesting, and would contain many thrilling accounts of the perils of the sea. In January, 1788, the ship "Juno," Henry Elkins, master, and owned by E. H. Derby, cleared for the East Indies, and when forty hours out was found to be sinking. Every effort was made to free her, but without success, and in twenty minutes she went down. The crew escaped in one of the ship's boats, and were picked up and taken to Demerara. In 1793 the ship "Astrea," on a trading voyage from Madras to Pegu, was seized by the king of the latter place as a transport for stores to his army in Siam, who had gone thither to attack that empire. Captain Gibant and his second mate were detained as hostages for the performance of the voyage. In March, 1807, the ship "Howard," Benjamin Bray, master, from Calcutta, was lost at Grapevine Cove, Gloucester. The captain, second mate and two seamen were drowned. On Thursday, October 28, 1819, the brig "Naiad," Nathaniel Osgood, master, arrived at Salem from Calcutta, with a cargo consigned to Pickering Dodge. On the Monday night previous the "Naiad" was struck by lightning, and the second mate, Mr. William Griffen, of Salem, was instantly killed. He was on the maintopsail yard at the time, and, on being struck, fell into the water with his clothes on fire. The first mate was knocked down and one of the men severely injured. The vessel received but trifling damage.

From the year 1800 to 1842, inclusive, only the years 1809, '14, '15, '38, '39 and '41 passed without an entry at Salem from some of the ports of India. The whole number of entries during that period from Calcutta were one hundred and fifteen, the years 1805, '06 and '07 showing seventeen, and the years 1816, '17 and '18 showing twenty-one. There were twenty entries from Bombay during the same time, six from Bengal, six from Madras, three from Siam, and two from Ceylon. During the periods from 1802 to 1807, and from 1816 to 1822, there was the greatest activity in the Calcutta trade.

From 1816 to 1840 the Salem trade with Calcutta was mainly carried on by Joseph Peabody. He was the owner of the famous ship "George," which made voyages between Salem and Calcutta with the regularity of a steamer. The "George" was built in 1814 for a privateer by an association of ship-carpenters, who were thrown out of employment by the War of 1812. Peace came on before she was sold, and Captain Peabody bought her for sixteen dollars per ton. She measured three hundred and twenty-eight tons, and was a full-rigged ship. The "George" made twenty-one voyages to Calcutta between 1815 and 1837. She sailed from Salem May 23, 1815, on her first voyage, and arrived home June 13, 1816, one hundred and nine days from Calcutta. The length of her voyages was surprisingly regular, varying but a few days in all her passages between Calcutta and Salem. She sailed from Salem August 5, 1836, on her last voyage, reaching Salem on her return May 17, 1837, one hundred and eleven days from Calcutta. Previous to her leaving Calcutta on her twenty-first voyage, the Banian merchants of that port presented to the ship a complete and beautiful "freedom suit" of silk signals and colors. Her commanders were William Haskell, Thomas West, Samuel Endicott, Thomas M. Saunders, Jonathan H. Lovett, Jr., and Benjamin Balch, Jr. Her supercargoes were Daniel H. Mansfield, Ephraim Emmerton, Jr., George W. Endicott, Samuel Endicott, Samuel Barton and James B. Briggs. Her cargoes paid in duties $651,743.32. After her last voyage to Calcutta she was sold to Jefferson Adams and Caleb Smith, and went to Rio Janeiro, where she was condemned about January 12, 1838. Mr. Peabody imported from Calcutta, between 1807 and 1840, about 1,050,000 pounds of indigo, of which the ship "George" brought, in seventeen voyages, 755,000 pounds.

The Batavia Trade.—In the Indian Ocean, near the island of Sumatra, lies the island of Java, and here again Salem vessels were the first to display the American ensign. There was quite an extensive trade with this island in the early days of Salem's commerce. Of the seventy-two arrivals from Batavia between the years 1796 and 1855, thirty-five were previous to the year 1807, and seventeen during the years 1817, '18, '19 and '20. From 1806 to 1816 there was no arrival.

The brig "Sally," Benjamin Webb, master, cleared for Batavia Sept. 30, 1795, and entered from the same place Sept. 6, 1796, with a cargo of pepper and sugar to Thomas Saunders & Co. The schooner "Patty," Edward West, master, cleared for Batavia Sept. 26, 1795, with wine, brandy, gin, tobacco, lead and iron, and entered from that place, on her return, Oct. 3, 1796, with pepper and sugar, consigned to Nathaniel West. The bark "Vigilant," John Murphy, master, entered in February, 1797, with 238,746 pounds of coffee and 168,604 pounds of sugar, consigned to Simon Forrester. The brig "Eunice," Enoch Sweet, master, entered in July, 1797, with coffee and pepper to George Dodge and others. The brig "Star," John Burchmore, master, entered in November, 1797, to John Norris & Co. The bark "Eliza," Gamaliel Hodges, master, entered in February, 1798, and again in December, 1799, to Joseph White." The brig "Olive Branch," Jonathan Lambert, Jr., master, entered in 1798, consigned to Ashton & Lambert. The ship "Friendship," Israel Williams, master, entered July 4, 1798, with 301,687 pounds of coffee and 111,087 pounds of sugar, to Pierce & Wait, and paying a duty of $18,376.13. The brig "Exchange," William Richardson, master, entered in August, 1798, to Ezekiel H. Derby. The ship "Hazen," Jonathan Hodges, master, entered in August, 1798, consigned

to William Orne. The ship "Franklin," James Devereux, master, entered in October, 1801, with 315,742 pounds of coffee, 164,699 of pepper and 155,797 of sugar, consigned to Joseph Peabody, and paying a duty of $29,709.40. The same vessel, with the same master and consignee, entered in March, 1804, and May, 1805.

The ship "Margaret," Samuel Derby, master, entered in June, 1802, with coffee and other merchandise, consigned to John Derby and Benjamin Pickman. The "Margaret" cleared for Sumatra Nov. 19, 1800, with fifty thousand dollars in specie, twelve casks of Malaga wine and two hogsheads of bacon. She left Salem Harbor on the 25th of November, and anchored in Table Bay, Cape of Good Hope, Feb. 4, 1801. Leaving Table Bay February 10, she reached Bencoolen Roads, Sumatra, on the 10th of April, one hundred and thirty-six days from Salem. Without stopping to trade at Sumatra, the vessel proceeded to Batavia, arriving there on the 25th of April. While at Batavia Captain Derby made a bargain with the Dutch East India Company to take the annual freights to and from Japan, and left for that place with his cargo June 20, 1801.

The "Margaret arrived at the port of Nagasaki July 19, being obliged to fire salutes and dress the vessel with flags before entering port. Mr. George Cleveland, who was clerk for Captain Derby, gives an interesting description of his visit to the city of Nagasaki. "In the first place," he says, "we went to Facquia's, an eminent stuff merchant. Here we were entertained in such manner as we little expected. We had set before us, for a repast, pork, fowls, meso, eggs, boiled fish, sweetmeats, cake, various kinds of fruit and sacky and tea. The lady of the house was introduced, who drank tea with each of us, as is the custom of Japan. She appeared to be a modest woman. The place we next visited was a temple, to which we ascended from the street by at least two hundred stone steps. Adjoining this was the burying-ground. We went next to the glass-house, which was on a small scale; thence to a lac-ware merchant's, where we were entertained with great hospitality. Thence we went to a tea-house, or hotel, where we dined. After dinner we were entertained with various feats of dancing and tumbling. Towards dark we returned to the island, and so great was the crowd in the streets to see us pass that it was with difficulty that we could get along. The number of children we saw was truly astonishing. The streets are narrow, and at the end of every street is a gate, which is locked at night. The houses are of two stories, built of wood.

"The Japanese observed one fast when we were there. It was in remembrance of the dead. The ceremonies were principally in the night. The first was devoted to feasting, at which they fancy their friends to be present; the second and third nights the graves are lighted with paper lamps and, situated as they are on the side of a hill, make a most brilliant appearance. On the fourth night, at three o'clock, the lamps are all brought down to the water and put into small straw barques with paper sails, made for the occasion, and, after putting in rice, fruit, etc., they are set afloat. The exhibition was very fine.

"As the time was approaching for our departure, we began to receive our returns from the interior, brought many hundred miles. These consisted of the most beautiful lacquered ware, such as waiters, writing-desks, tea-caddies, knife-boxes and tables. We also received a great variety of silks, fans in large quantities and a great variety of porcelain. The East India Company's cargo had already been put on board. The principal article was copper in small bars. The company's ships have been obliged to take their departure from the anchorage opposite Nagasaki on a certain day to the lower roads, no matter whether it blew high or low, fair or foul, even if a thousand boats should be required to tow them down. We, of course, had to do as our predecessors had done. Early in November we went to this anchorage and remained a few days, when we sailed for Batavia, where we arrived safely after a passage of a month."

This account is interesting because the "Margaret" was the first Salem vessel and the second American vessel to visit Japan. The ship "Franklin," of Boston, commanded by Captain James Devereux, of Salem, was the first American vessel which traded with Japan, having been employed to make the same voyage as the "Margaret" two years previously. Commercial intercourse was not opened with Japan till half a century later; the American Treaty, the result of the expedition under Commodore Perry, which opened her ports to the world, being dated March 31, 1854. Previous to this time all the trade with Japan was in the hands of the Dutch, who were obliged to submit to the grossest indignities.

The ship "Henry," John Barton, master, entered from Batavia in July, 1802, to John Derby and Benjamin Pickman. The ship "Herald," Zachariah F. Silsbee, master, entered in May, 1804, to Nathaniel Silsbee. The brig "William" arrived Aug. 31, 1802, consigned to Jonathan Mason. She lost her captain, John Felt, and her mate by sickness during the voyage. The ship "Mary and Eliza," Nathaniel Hawthorne, master, arrived in October, 1804, with coffee, nutmegs, sugar and mace, to Joseph White. The bark "Georgetown," George Ropes, master, arrived in April, 1806, to Stephen Phillips. The ship "Henry," Benjamin Russell, master, arrived in May, 1806, to Edward Russell and others. The ship "Hercules" made two voyages, entering in March, 1816, and March, 1817, to Nathaniel West, commanded on the first voyage by Edward West and on the second by James King, Jr. The ship "Erin," Nathan Cook, master, entered in November, 1819, to Henry Pickering. The brig "Franklin," John White, master, entered in September, 1820, to Stephen White. The brig "Roscoe," J. M. Ropes, master, entered in Au-

gust, 1827, to Charles Saunders. The bark "Henry," R. Wheatland, master, entered in December, 1835, consigned to Samuel Cook and others.

The ship "Union," William Osgood, master, from Pulo Penang, with a cargo of pepper and tin, consigned to Stephen Phillips, was cast away on the northwest point of Baker's Island, Feb. 24, 1810, during a snowstorm and lost with most of her cargo.

The brig "Java," Nathaniel Osgood, master, from Batavia, went ashore on the bar off Nauset, Cape Cod, on the night of February 9, 1832, in a snowstorm. The crew narrowly ascaped in the boats. The cargo, consisting of 585,000 pounds of coffee, 13,500 pounds of nutmegs and 94,000 pounds of block-tin, was owned by Jonathan Neal. The vessel was a total wreck.

The ship "Sumatra," Peter Silver, master, made two voyages from Batavia, arriving at Salem in September, 1842, and August, 1843, consigned to Joseph Peabody. Captain Silver has a strange experience on one of these voyages. He sees a vessel in distress, and bearing down finds her to be the bark "Kilmars," of Glasgow, with no person on deck except a female, who seems almost frantic. He sends a boat and brings her on board. She was about eighteen years old, and wife of the commander of the bark. Two months before the vessel had sailed from Batavia with a cargo of sugar for Europe. The crew, shipped at Batavia, were many of them discharged convicts. The captain received an intimation that the crew contemplated obtaining possession of the vessel, and when it became certain that such was their intention, he charged the ringleader with the design and, in the altercation that followed, shot and wounded him. He then succeeded in confining the crew in different parts of the vessel, and endeavored with the help of two boys, to navigate his vessel back to Batavia. In the early morning, before the vessel was discovered by Captain Silver, the captain with the two boys had started in a boat for the shore to procure help. The captain's wife finding her husband missing was fearful that he had been killed by the mutineers, but she found that they were still confined. Dreading lest they would soon break out, she took her stand on the rail, determined to throw herself overboard if they regained the deck. Only twenty minutes after she was taken from the "Kilmars" the crew broke out, took charge of the vessel and made sail. In order to avoid a collision, Captain Silver steered away from the vessel and arrived at Batavia, where he placed the lady under the charge of the Dutch Government. The "Kilmars" subsequently reached Angier, where the authorities took possession of her and adopted measures for the trial of her crew. The captain and the boys were picked up in the Straits of Sunda. Anxiety and overwork had made him partially insane. When he left his vessel he had expected to be able to return at once with help.

The ship "Rome," Nathaniel Brown, master arrived from Batavia in December, 1842, consigned to B. W. Stone. The last arrivals in our harbor from Batavia, were the "Buckeye," in August, 1853, and "Witch," in November, 1855, both consigned to Edward D. Kimball.

The Sumatra Trade.—Salem sent the first vessel that ever sailed direct from this country to Sumatra, and a Salem captain commanded the last American vessel that brought a cargo of pepper from that island. In the year 1793, Captain Jonathan Carnes of Salem, being at the port of Bencoolen, learned that pepper grew wild on the northwestern coast of Sumatra. On his return to Salem he made known his discovery to Mr. Jonathan Peele, who immediately built a schooner and gave Carnes the command. The vessel was called the "Rajah," and was of one hundred and thirty tons burden, carrying, four guns and ten men. In 1795 he set sail for Sumatra, the destination of the vessel and the object of the voyage being kept a profound secret. The "Rajah" cleared at Salem November 3, 1795, for India, having on board two pipes of brandy, fifty-eight cases of gin, twelve tons of iron, two hogsheads of tobacco and two boxes of salmon. The vessel was absent eighteen months, during which time her owner Mr, Peele had no tidings from her. At last she entered Salem harbor, with a cargo of pepper in bulk, the first to be so imported into this country. This cargo was sold at a profit of seven hundred per cent. Such an extraordinary voyage created great excitement among the merchants of Salem, and they were all anxious to discover in what part of the Eastern World the cargo had been procured. But the matter still remained a secret. Captain Carnes was preparing for another voyage; and the Salem merchants determined if possible to penetrate the mystery, despatched several vessels to the port of Bencoolen where it was known Carnes got his first knowledge of the trade. They were not successful, however, and had to make up their voyages in some of the ports of India. But the secret voyages to Sumatra did not long continue. By the first of the present century the mystery was penetrated, and the whole ground open to competition.

The brig "Rajah" made several voyages to Sumatra, under command of Captain Carnes, entering at Salem in October, 1799, with 158,544 pounds of pepper, and in July, 1801, with 147,776 pounds, the last consigned to Jonathan & Willard Peele.

The firm of George Crowninshield & Sons were largely engaged in the early Sumatra trade. The ship "Belisarius," Samuel Skerry, Jr., master, made several voyages for this firm, entering at Salem in July, 1801, with 320,000 pounds of pepper; in July, 1802, with 306,542 pounds; and in September, 1803, with 276,459 pounds. The ship "America" made two voyages, commanded by John Crowninshield on the first and Jeremiah Briggs on the second, and entering in November, 1801, with 815,792 pounds of

pepper, paying a duty of $53,842.27, and clearing January 2, 1802, on the second voyage, returning in October, 1802, with 760,000 pounds, paying $50,031.76. The ship "Concord," Jonathan Carnes, master, made two voyages, entering in November, 1803, and in August, 1805. The ship "John," John Dodge, master, entered in October, 1807, and the ship "Fame," Holten J. Breed, master, in April, 1812, with 623,277 pounds of pepper, paying a duty of $37,396.62, all consigned to this firm.

Joseph Peabody entered upon this trade early. Among his vessels were the ship "Cincinnatus, John Endicott, master, which entered in September, 1803, with 307,824 pounds of pepper; and in November, 1807, commanded by William Haskell, with 347,000 pounds. The ship "Franklin," Samuel Tucker, master, which entered in September, 1810, with 539,-585 pounds. The ship "Janus," John Endicott, master, which entered in December, 1809, with 537,-989 pounds, and in December, 1810, with 547,795 pounds. The "Janus" sailed from Salem April 1, 1810, and arrived at the Vineyard on her return, November 26, 1810, making one of the shortest voyages ever made from Salem to Sumatra and back. These were among Mr. Peabody's early voyages. He continued the trade until about the time of his death, in 1844. The ship "Sumatra," Peter Silver, master, which entered in July, 1838, and the ship "Eclipse," George Whitemarsh, master, which entered in February, 1840, in February, 1841 and in December, 1842, and the ship "Lotos," Benjamin Balch, Jr., master, which entered in November, 1841, were among the later voyages.

Abel Lawrence & Co. were the consignees of the brig "George Washington," Timothy Bryant, master, which entered in November, 1803, and of the ship "Putnam," Nathaniel Bowditch, master, which entered in December, 1803, with 425,000 pounds of pepper and 42,000 pounds of coffee from Sumatra and the Isle of France, and paying a duty of $27,634.67. Captain Bowditch afterwards became distinguished for his mathematical works and as an astronomer, and achieved a world-wide reputation by his treatises on navigation.

Captain Bowditch writes in his journal of this voyage:

"On your arrival at Sumatra you contract with the Datoo for the pepper and fix the price. If more than one vessel is at the port the pepper which comes daily to the scales is shared between them as they agree. Sometimes the Datoo contracts to load one vessel before any other is allowed to take any, and he holds to this agreement as long as he finds it for his interest to do so, and no longer, for a handsome present or an increase of the price will prevent the pepper from being brought in for several days, and the person who made the agreement must either quit the port or else give an additional price. The price in 1803 was from ten to eleven dollars per picul. The price has risen there being now thirty sail of American vessels on the coast.

"The pepper season commences in January, when they begin to gather the small pepper at the bottom of the vine; in March, April and May is the height of the crop. The best pepper grows at the top of the vines and is gathered the last. It is larger and more solid than that gathered at an earlier period. Some suppose that the pepper is all gathered in May, but I was in some of the gardens in July, and found at the top of the vines large quantities which would be ripe in a few days. Some calculate on two crops, but from the best information I could procure, there is only one. The pepper is generally weighed on American scales. It is sold by the picul, equal to one hundred and thirty-three and one-third pounds. What is weighed in the day is paid for in the evening, they being unwilling to trust their property in the hands of those they deal with; in the same manner it is not prudent to pay in advance to the Datoo, as it would often be difficult to get pepper or money of him again."

The ship "Good Hope," George Cleveland. master, entered in January, 1805, consigned to Nathaniel West. The ship "Freedom," John Reith, master, in January, 1805, consigned to Jonathan & Willard Peele. The bark "Eliza," Joseph Beadle, master, entered in August, 1806, consigned to Joseph White & Co. The ship "Union," George Pierce, master, entered in October, 1806, consigned to Stephen Phillips, with four hundred and sixty-five thousand two hundred and seventy-one pounds of pepper, paying a duty of $28,506.26. The ship "Eliza," James Cook, master, entered in October, 1807, with one million twelve thousand one hundred and forty eight pounds of pepper, consigned to James Cook, and paying a duty of $66,903.90. The ship "Herald," Z. F. Silsbee, master, entered in December, 1809, consigned to James Devereux. The bark "Active," William P. Richardson, master, entered in December, 1809, consigned to John Dodge, Jr. The bark "Camel," Holten J. Breed, master, entered in July, 1816, consigned to William Silsbee. The bark "Eliza and Mary, Nathaniel Griffen, master, consigned to William Fettyplace, entered April, 1823. The brig "Jane," Thomas Saul, master, entered in November, 1823, consigned to Willard Peele. The brig "Persia," Moses Endicott, master, in July, 1824, with one hundred and sixty thousand pounds of pepper to Dudley L. Pickman. The ship "Friendship," Charles M. Endicott, master, entered in July, 1831, consigned to William Silsbee, and the ship "Delphos," James D. Gillis, master, entered in October, 1831, consigned to Z. F. Silsbee and others. The bark "Malay," J. B. Silsbee, master, entered in November, 1836. The bark "Borneo," C. S. Huntington, master, in April, 1842, consigned to Z. F. Silsbee.

David Pingree was the consignee of the ship "Caroline Augusta," which entered in August, 1842,

and in November, 1845. She was commanded on the first voyage by E. D. Winn. Tucker Daland was the consignee of the brig "Lucilla," which entered in June, 1842 and in November, 1846. H. W. Perkins was the master on the first voyage and D. Marshall on the second. This was the last vessel to arrive at Salem from the coast of Sumatra.

The trade with Sumatra was, at one time, mainly carried on by Salem merchants, and a large proportion of the pepper consumed was distributed to all countries from the port of Salem. From the year 1799 to 1846 inclusive, but five years (1813, '14, '15, '22 and '37) passed without an entry at Salem from the island of Sumatra. During that period there were one hundred and seventy-nine arrivals, the years 1809, '10 and '23 showing ten each, the largest number in any single year.

Although the direct trade between Salem and Sumatra ceased in 1846, Salem vessels and Salem shipmasters were engaged in it until a much later date. The last Salem vessel on the coast was the ship "Australia," J. Dudley, master, owned by Stone, Silsbee & Pickman. She was there in 1860. There is no direct trade to-day between the United States and Sumatra. Captain Jonathan Carnes, of Salem, commanded the first American vessel that ever procured a cargo of pepper in bulk from the Island of Sumatra, and a Salem captain was master of the last American vessel that visited that coast. The bark "Tarquin," Thomas Kimball, master, and William F. Jelly, mate, both of Salem, arrived at New York in 1867, and this arrival closed the American trade with the Island of Sumatra. The "Tarquin" was owned by John L. Gardner, of Boston.

The energy and fearlessness of our early navigators was something almost marvellous. In vessels of but one hundred and fifty tons they boldly set sail for ports never before visited by Americans, and without chart or guide of any kind, made their way amid coral reefs and along foreign shores. Even as late as 1831, when a United States war vessel was despatched to the Island of Sumatra, no chart of the coast could be found in the possession of the government. The United States frigate "Potomac" sailed for the East Indies in 1831, and in the journal of her voyage it is stated that it was the original intention of her commander to prepare charts and sailing directions for the guidance of other mariners, but that "this duty has been much more ably performed than it could have been with our limited materials." For this important service our country is indebted to Captains Charles M. Endicott and James D. Gillis, of Salem, Mass.. The former, who was master of the "Friendship," when she was seized by the Malays at Quallah-Battoo, has been trading on this coast for more than fifteen years, and during that period he has, profitably for his country, filled up the delays incidental to a pepper voyage, by a careful and reliable survey of the coast, of which no chart was previously extant which could be relied on. Captain Endicott has since published the results of his labors in a well executed chart, which comprises all that portion of the coast which is included between Sinkel, 2° 18′ and 4° 15′ north. Actuated by a like commendable zeal for the commercial interests of his native country, Captain Gillis has extended the surveys to latitude 5° north, and published an excellent chart, accompanied also with sailing directions. These are important acquisitions to our knowledge of this coast, and will increase the security of our merchants and mariners. We gladly embrace this opportunity to acknowledge our obligations to both these gentlemen for much valuable information and many interesting facts.

Salem, therefore, was not only the first at Sumatra, but the first to make it safe for others to follow her lead, and as long as American vessels visited the coast their commanders were provided with copies of the charts prepared by these Salem shipmasters.

The dangers of the coral reefs were not the only ones our mariners had to contend with. The natives of the island were cruel and treacherous, and ready to commit any atrocity for the sake of plunder.

The ship "Putnam," commanded by Captain John Carlton, was captured by the Malays on the 28th of November, 1805, and several of the crew massacred. The "Putnam" was at anchor in the outer roads of Rhio (island of Bentang), where she had been trading with the natives for pepper. The captain had already closed his business at Rhio, when the fatal catastrophe took place. There was at the time a Malay brig, belonging to Lingen (a neighboring island), lying in the inner roads, besides two English brigs, viz., the "Malcolm," Captain Fenwick, and the "Transfer," Captain Matthews. On the 26th the captain, having been ashore and on board the "Malcolm" to transact some business, was informed on his return that a boat from the Lingen brig had made a visit to his ship in his absence, and from their behavior excited strong suspicions of a design to cut her off. They had also been on board several times before without any apparent business, but to gratify their curiosity. Captain Carlton, apprehensive of their design, endeavored to excite the caution and courage of his officers and crew, confident that there was no danger but from negligence or timidity. The next morning (the 27th) the captain sent the third officer to the Malay brig to forbid their again coming on board the ship. He at the same time repaired and set the boarding nettings and made other preparations for defense. About five in the afternoon his apprehensions were renewed, by observing the Malay boat again coming toward the ship, whereupon he ordered every man to arm himself, and have everything in readiness, in case of an attack; but his apprehensions were lessened on the boat's nearer approach, by observing a Chinese merchant in it. The merchant came on board and offered to barter pepper for tin, on terms which the officers

(who had wanted an opportunity of selling their private adventures) accepted, and, to make the bargain more sure, took thirty dollars of him as earnest. Not one of the Malays could, at this time, be persuaded to enter the ship, and at sunset they returned to the brig.

On the 28th Captain Carlton found it necessary to go on shore once more, to close his business with the Rajah, previous to sailing. He was much averse to leaving the ship again on account of the suspicious conduct of the Malays, who were expected on board with pepper as agreed for. However, as the brig lay to the southward, and as it blew a perfect gale to the northward, he thought there was little probability of any boat coming on board that day; he therefore took the pinnace, with Mr. Fenno, his clerk, and two hands, and proceeded on shore. On his return, about five in the afternoon, he called on board the "Malcolm" to take his leave. He had been there only a few minutes before he was alarmed by the sight of his ship's boat coming along side, with seven of the crew on board, three of them dangerously wounded, viz., Mr. Samuel Page Pierson, second officer; Stephen Holland and William Brown, the two former mortally. The men were taken on board and their wounds immediately dressed. This shocking sight but too plainly indicated the unhappy event which had taken place. The Malay boat, with sixteen men on board, had been to the ship with the pepper. It seems, notwithstanding all the causes for suspicion, they were received very unguardedly on board the ship and without the people having their arms at hand in case of an assault. The pepper was taken in, and the hands were about weighing it, when it was observed that the Malays, about six in number, were secretly receiving their creases from their fellows in the boat. On this the second officer, Mr. Pierson, stepped toward them and directed them to return to their boat.

This served as a signal to begin their savage attack, in which Mr. Pierson fell, mortally wounded. The Malays in the boat immediately reinforced their comrades in the ship. The first officer received a slight wound, and, being closely pursued, escaped over the bows. Richard Hunt followed, but afterwards got up by a rope into the fore-channels, where one of the Malays creased him through the netting and he dropped below the channels and held on for some time, but was probably badly wounded and fell into the water and was seen no more. A number of others fled at the onset of the Malays. The cook, a black fellow, by the name of George Cowley, was heard to say a few minutes before the Malays began the massacre that he would not fight if they did attempt to take the ship; he accordingly concealed himself below and was not seen after the action. A black man, by the name of Henry Annuls, was killed on deck as soon as the action began. Cæsar Thomson, the steward, a mulatto, was struck at the same time, but, being a brave man, he seized a handspike and knocked the assailant down and another after him; but a third gave him a mortal wound. Stephen Holland, a seaman, at the beginning of the attack, got over the bows, where he stood for a few minutes, when, spying a handspike on the deck, he sprang and seized it. With this he knocked down several of the Malays, but, unfortunately, received a mortal stab at last. At length, what with those who were killed and wounded and those who had escaped to places of safety, Wm. Brown, a carpenter of the ship, was left to maintain the contest alone; which he did with great bravery and success, and was thereby the means of saving the lives of those who survived the rencontre. He had seized a strong stick, of about three feet in length, on the end of which the cook had fastened an iron coffee-mill; this was an excellent weapon, and he dealt such deadly blows among his antagonists with it that, after a severe contest, he cleared the decks of them. He received two wounds; the first was between the shoulders, but not deep, as he caught the hand of the Malay and broke the force of the blow, and with a well-aimed stroke he laid the fellow at his feet. Immediately he had three more upon him, who, finding him resolute, retreated aft, and in following them he observed a fourth, who was standing upon a cask above him, aiming at him; he attempted to seize his hand, but was not so fortunate as before; he caught his arm, however, but, his hand being bloody, it slipped up to his elbow, and the fellow creased him over the left shoulder; the force of the weapon was in some measure stopped by its striking the spine, though it went through his back on the right side of the spine. Notwithstanding this, he drove all the Malays abaft the mizzenmast, when Henry Pettit came down from the fore-top, where he had been during the action. He brought aft a handspike and kept the Malays at bay until Brown went below and brought up a spear, with which he quickly drove them all into the water, where they were picked up by their boat, which had cut their fastenings and dropped astern for that purpose. There were twelve or thirteen of the Malays who had been engaged on board; one was left dead upon deck; four were carried off wounded, some, it was supposed, mortally, during the struggle, and seven or eight were driven overboard by Mr. Brown.

Brown and Pettit then attempted to fire a swivel into the boat as she passed under the stern; but the confusion of the scene probably prevented their priming it properly, so that it did not go off. The Malays being thus driven out of the ship, Brown ran fore and aft, in order to rally those of his shipmates who had abandoned him in the conflict, calling out that the decks were clear and they might return with safety. Having collected them together, Brown advised the chief officer to display a signal that would bring them assistance from the ships in the inner roads; but the officer being fearful of their returning to a second attack, gave orders for abandoning the

ship, though the boat had by this time pulled off two or three miles, more in fear, no doubt, of being destroyed by a shot from the ship than with any idea of renewing their attack upon her; only half of their number remaining in a condition for action, one having been killed and seven others wounded. The Malays observing the ship to be thus abandoned by the crew, returned, of course, and took possession of her.

The mortification of Captatn Carlton at being in this sudden and unhappy manner deprived of his ship is not to be described. He immediately applied to the English vessels to assist him in attempting her recovery. Captain Fenwick, of the "Malcolm," very promptly, and Captain Matthews, of the "Transfer," with reluctance, consented to pursue the pirates. They accordingly set sail, and at eight that evening anchored in the straits of Lingen. At daylight the next morning they weighed anchor and steered for Lingen; at eight A.M. saw the pirates from the top gallant-yards; at half past past five P.M. the "Malcolm" was within cannon-shot, but the "Transfer," not sailing so well, three or four leagues astern; at six, within pistol-shot of the ship, and the pirate brig about musket-shot distance, on the lee quarter of the "Malcolm." The ship then commenced firing and the "Malcolm" immediately returned a broadside with a discharge of musketry. The brig also hauled to and brought her bow-chasers, the only guns she had to bear, on the "Malcolm" and fired them once, without any judgment or effect. The ship, whose guns were in excellent order, well-leveled and supplied with plenty of powder and round shot, kept up a well-directed fire for half an hour, and the "Malcolm" received considerable damage in her hull, rigging and boats; and Mr. Trask, the first officer of the "Transfer," but who had gone on board the "Malcolm" as a volunteer, was unfortunately killed. The "Malcolm," during this rencontre, kept up as brisk a fire as circumstances would admit of. She was badly equipped for fighting. She had no gun-tackle and only two rammers and sponges, and one of those was lost early in the action, and only seven men to work the guns. Her deck was extremely round, and the brig very crank; and the guns being fought to leeward, they upset every time they were discharged, and several times pitched out of the ports, breech up, and stood perpendicularly. Yet, under all these disadvantages, the "Malcolm" discharged as many as ten broadsides; the musketry, also, was well served, and the pirates were completely silenced in half an hour and bore away, and had it been earlier in the day, the ship would probably have been recovered. At the close of the action the third officer of the "Putnam" was badly wounded in his right hand and arm by the going off of a gun while he was loading her. When the "Transfer" came up Captain Matthews was requested to follow on and renew the action, but he declined, and, as he was depended on as the pilot, Captain Fenwick was obliged to follow him, and they hauled to, to the eastward, and anchored, while the pirates were left to proceed unmolested. At daylight next morning they hove up and made sail for Lingen; again discovered the pirates, and at three P.M. were on the point of renewing the attack upon them, when Matthews tacked about, and they were obliged again to give up the ship when she seemed almost to be in their possession, and follow the "Transfer" towards Lingen.

At daylight, December 1st, they found that they were in shore of the pirates. Matthews got first under way; but, to the astonishment of those on board the "Malcolm," hauled on a course directly from them. Captain Fenwick, judging it not prudent to pursue alone, followed the "Transfer" into Lingen roads, leaving the pirates in quiet possession of their prize, when another opportunity had presented of recovering her with little effort. Captain Carlton, after this, made application to the Governor of Malacca and to Admiral Trowbridge for assistance to recover his ship, but could obtain none, and was obliged to submit to the mortification of giving her up as a total loss.

The foregoing account is gathered from correspondence published in the Salem papers at the time of the piracy.

The ship "Marquis de Somerulas," Captain Story, was attacked by the Malays at Sumatra September 18, 1806, and one man was killed and several wounded, but the crew succeeded in driving away the attacking party.

The ship "Friendship," Charles M. Endicott, master, was attacked at the port of Quallah-Battoo by the native Malays. The first mate, Charles Knight, was killed and several of the seamen wounded.

Captain Endicott was ashore at the time, receiving pepper to be sent on board. Observing something unusual in the conduct of those aboard the ship, Captain Endicott determined to return to her at once, but hardly had he started with his men when crowds of Malays began to assemble on the banks of the river, brandishing their weapons and otherwise menacing him. At the same time three Malay boats, with forty or fifty men each, came out of the river and pulled toward the ship. Convinced that the only way to recover the ship was by obtaining assistance from some other vessel, Captain Endicott directed his boat's course to Muckie, a port about twenty-five miles distant, where he knew two or three American vessels were lying. Arriving there, he found three vessels, among them the brig "Governor Endicott," of Salem, H. H. Jenks, master, and the ship "James Monroe," J. Porter, master, of New York. These vessels proceeded at once to Quallah-Battoo. The "Friendship" was meanwhile in the possession of the Malays, who plundered her of the specie and every other movable article. Four of her crew jumped overboard at the time of the attack, and swam a distance of two miles before they could find a safe place

to land. After wandering about in the bushes, almost without food, for three days, they found a canoe, and made their way to the residence of a friendly native, named Po Adam, who furnished them with clothing and carried them aboard one of the American vessels. Upon the arrival at Quallah-Battoo of the three vessels, before mentioned, an attack was made upon the town, and the "Friendship" was boarded and recaptured. Her voyage having been broken up, the "Friendship" returned to Salem, where she arrived July 16, 1831. About a year thereafter the United States frigate "Potomac," before referred to, bombarded Quallah-Battoo as a punishment for the conduct of the natives towards an American vessel.

Another Salem vessel, the "Eclipse," had a somewhat similar experience on the coast of Sumatra in 1838. While the mate and four hands were ashore, a party of Malays boarded the vessel and killed the captain, Charles P. Wilkins. The crew, finding themselves overpowered, escaped, some by ascending the shrouds, and some by jumping overboard and swimming ashore. The Malays then plundered the ship of specie, opium and everything else of value, and departed with their ill-gotten gains. The men aloft descended, lowered their boat, and rowed to a French bark lying at an adjoining port. The next morning the crew returned to the vessel, and during the night they set sail and left the island. The "Eclipse" had a sad ending. She sailed from Sumatra July 10, 1849, under command of Captain Daniel Cross, and was never after heard from. She had on board a cargo of pepper, consigned to Tucker Daland and Henry L. Williams.

The Manila Trade.—In the early days of Salem commerce, when her enterprising and energetic merchants were seeking to establish trade with hitherto unknown countries, and her ships were ploughing the seas which had never before floated an American vessel, the ship "Astrea," commanded by Henry Prince, and owned by that king among merchants, Elias Hasket Derby, entered the harbor of Manila, the capital city of the Phillipine Islands, situated on the island of Luzon. Obtaining there a cargo of 750,000 pounds of sugar, 63,695 pounds of pepper, and 29,767 pounds of indigo, she entered at Salem in May, 1797, and paid a duty on her cargo of $24,020. A journal of this voyage, kept by Nathaniel Bowditch, afterwards so famous as a mathematician, is on the files of the East India Marine Society. The "Astrea" left Salem March 27, 1796, and went to Lisbon, Madeira and Manila, arriving at the latter place October 3, 1796. On the passage home, February 18, 1797, the ship sprung a leak, and two men were obliged to be kept at the pumps constantly from that time till the 22d of May, 1797, when the vessel arrived at Salem.

In the precise and rather formal handwriting of Dr. Bowditch we find in his journal the following account of his experience at Manila:

"The city of Manila is about three or four miles in circumference, is walled all round, and cannon are placed at proper intervals; but we were unable to get much information with respect to the state of the place, as they were shy of giving any information to foreigners. The buildings within the walls are all of stone, and none except the churches are more than two stories high, on account of the violent earthquakes, which they have generally at the breaking up of the Monsoon. The month of March is when they most expect them, but on the 5th of November, 1797, we experienced several violent shocks at about two P.M., which came from the northward and proceeded in a southerly direction, continuing with violence nearly two minutes. It threw down a large house a half a league from the city, untiled several buildings, and did much other damage. It was not observed on board the ship lying off the bar. The motion of the earthquake was quicker than those usual in America, as the latter are generally preceded by a rumbling noise; the former was not.

"The suburbs of Manila are very extensive, and most of the business is done there. The houses of the wealthier class are of two stories, built of stone; the poorer sort live in bamboo houses with thatched roofs. No house can be built in the suburbs without the particular permission of the Governor, in which the dimensions of the buildings are stated, fearing, if they are too high, that an enemy might make use of them for attacking the city, as was the case when the English took the place formerly, for one of the churches near the walls was very serviceable to them; it has since been pulled down.

"There are but few Europeans in the settlement; all the women have a little of the Indian blood in their veins, excepting the lady of the Governor and two or three others, though by successive intermarriages with Europeans they have obtained a fair complexion. The natives (like all other Malays) are excessively fond of gaming and cock-fighting. A theatre is established for the latter business, from which the government draws an immense revenue, this diversion being prohibited at any other place; sometimes there are 5,000 or 6,000 spectators, each of which pays half a rial. A large sum arises from the duties on tobacco and cocoa wine. Tobacco is prohibited, but if you smuggle any on shore, it cannot be sold for more than the cost in America, notwithstanding the retail price is very high; particular people, licensed by the king, are the only persons allowed to deal in it. All the natives chew dreca and betel, though not mixed with opium, as in Batavia. This, with chewing and smoking tobacco, makes the teeth very black. The cigars used by the women, and which they smoke all day, are made as large as they can possibly get into their mouths. The natives are about as honest as their neighbors, the Chinese; they stole several things from us, but, by the goodness of the police, we recovered most of them. On the 3d of

December, 1797, they broke into the house where we lived, entered the chamber where Captain Prince and myself were asleep, and carried off a bag containing one thousand dollars without awaking either of us or any of the crew of the long boat, sleeping in the adjoining chamber. The guard boat discovered them as they were escaping and pursued them; they, in endeavoring to escape, ran afoul of a large boat, which, upsetting them, the money went to the bottom, and, what was worse, the bag burst and the money was all scattered in the mud, where the water was eight feet deep; however, by the honesty of the captain of the guard, most of it was recovered. The thieves were caught, and, when we were there in 1800, Mr. Kerr informed us that they had been whipped and were to be kept in servitude several years.

"The same day another robbery was committed equally as daring. The day the indigo was shipped the second mate came ashore with several of the people to see it safe on board. The boats we had provided not taking all of it, we sent the remainder aboard with a black fellow to guard, who was esteemed by Mr. Kerr as an honest fellow, but he had been centriving to steal a couple of boxes. When the 'Casco,' containing the indigo, had passed the bar, a small boat came aboard with two boxes filled with chips, stones, etc., appearing in every respect exactly like those full of indigo, and pretending that we had put on board two wrong boxes, they exchanged their boxes for two real boxes of indigo, but in bringing them ashore they were detected and the indigo returned.

"There are great numbers of Chinese at Manila, but they are all obliged to become Catholics. It is from them that most of the sugar is purchased. They trade considerably with China. Their junks arrive at Manila in January, and all their goods are deposited and sold from the Custom-House."

From 1797 to 1858, the date of the last arrival from this port, there were eighty-two entries at Salem from Manila. The period from 1829 to 1839 shows the largest number of arrivals, thirty of the eighty-two entries being made during that time.

The ship "Folansbe," Jonathan Mason, Jr., master, entered in May, 1799, with sugar and indigo, consigned to John Collins & Co. The ship "Laurel," Daniel Sage, master, entered in July, 1801, with 115,133 pounds of indigo and 124,683 of sugar, consigned to William Gray, and paying a duty of $32,382.26.

The ship "Fame," Jeremiah Briggs, master, entered in March, 1804, consigned to Jacob Crowninshield. The "Fame" visited the coast of Cochin China in search of sugar and Captain Briggs in his journal relates the following interesting incidents connected with his visit:

"The king of Cochin China has about five hundred vessels of war of all denominations, principally boats from about forty to ninety feet long, a number of junks and four ships carrying thirty guns each, about four hundred tons, rigged and sailed European method. The boats that are reserved for the use of the royal family are the most elegant work that I ever saw; the painting was superb. The one which is called the king's is one hundred feet long and not a butt in her. She mounts eight guns, six pounders, and one twenty-four pounder. I saw a great number of brass cannon, eighteen and twenty-four pounders, that were cast in the country. Elephants are kept to the number of five hundred, trained for war. The first mandarin is captain of two companies and likewise these animals. They are manœuvered by a boy sitting on their head with a hook, with which he turns them. The city is composed of an astonishing number of small huts thatched. There is no other kind of house except those of the first mandarins. The council-house is a large building. I suppose it would contain one thousand people. It is entirely open in front, they having a looking-glass about ten feet long in it. There was a very large stone, about eight feet long, two and a half wide and one and a half thick; it was hung with a bolt through the middle and so nicely balanced that the touch of a finger would set it going; by striking it with a stick it would ring like a bell. The citadel or fort is about three-fourths of a mile in circumference; it has a wall of twenty-five feet, which the present king is now extending two miles. The streets are laid out in European style. He has now one hundred thousand men at work laying out the roads, building the walls, etc. The king himself attends every day. He is mounted on an elephant. His dress is yellow silk, and he is attended by a guard of two hundred men armed with spears, each spear with hair upon it dyed red. He keeps thirty-two concubines. They all live together in one house, which they are not allowed to leave. It is built upon the water and communicates with the land by a bridge. The king is thirty-one years of age, a man very well informed. Their churches are entirely without ornament. I saw a number of the Cochin Chinese that were Christians. They appeared very mild in their manners."

The ship "Essex," Joseph Orne, master, entered in May, 1805, with sugar and indigo from Manila, consigned to William Orne, and paying a duty of $18,443.70. The ship "Horace," John Parker, master, entered in May, 1806, consigned to William Gray. The ship "Exeter," Thomas B. Osgood, master, entered in June, 1806, with 14,589 pounds of indigo and 702,064 of sugar, consigned to Benjamin Pickman, Jr., and paying a duty of $23,526.33.

From 1806 to 1816, there seems to have been no entry from Manila at the port of Salem. The ship "Endeavour," Timothy Bryant, master, entered in May, 1816, consigned to Nathan Robinson. The ship "Perseverance," Samuel Hodgdon, master, in May, 1820, consigned to Williard Peele. The brig "Ann," Charles Millett, master, in July, 1824, consigned to Henry Prince. The brig "Peru," William Johnson,

Jr., master, in April, 1825, consigned to Stephen C. Phillips. The ship "Endeavour," James D. Gillis, master, in September, 1826, consigned to Nathaniel Silsbee. The bark "Derby," Allen Putnam, master; entered in March, 1827; in April, 1829; J. H. Eagleston, master; and again in July, 1832, J. W. Cheever, master, consigned to Stephen C. Phillips. The ship "Mandarin," William Osgood, master, entered in March, 1830, consigned to Pickering Dodge. The ship "Sumatra," Charles Roundy, master, entered in November, 1832, consigned to Joseph Peabody. The brig "Charles Doggett," William Driver, master, entered in November, 1832, consigned to Richard S. Rogers. The ship "Lotus," George W. Jenks, master, entered in June, 1832, consigned to Pickering Dodge. The ship "Brookline," Charles H. Allen, master, entered in April, 1837, consigned to Stephen C. Phillips. The ship "Caroline," Charles H. Fabens, master, entered in April, 1842, consigned to David Pingree. The ship "St. Paul," belonging to Stephen C. Phillips, was almost as famous in connection with Salem's trade with Manila as was the ship "George" in the Calcutta trade. The "St. Paul" made twelve voyages between Salem and Manila. She sailed on her first voyage from Salem June 3, 1838, and arrived at Manila in one hundred days, which was the shortest passage made by the ship from Salem to Manila. She reached Salem, on her return, in April, 1839, in one hundred and forty-eight days from Manila. Joseph Winn, Jr., commanded the ship on this voyage, having also been master on her previous voyage from New York to Manila, and back to Salem, where she arrived, for the first time, April 29, 1838. On her second and third voyages she was commanded by George Pierce, and entered at Salem April 4, 1840, and July 7, 1841. Joseph Warren Osborn was master on the fourth and fifth voyages, and she arrived at Salem August 8, 1842, and January 8, 1844, making on the last voyage the long passage of one hundred and eighty-eight days. On her sixth, seventh, eighth and ninth voyages, she was commanded by Charles H. Allen, entering at Salem March 17, 1845, March 12, 1846, March 19, 1847, and April 6, 1848. William B. Davis was master on her tenth voyage, sailing from Salem May 18, 1848, and returning March 26, 1849. On her elveventh and twelfth voyages she was commanded by Charles H. Allen, returning to Salem on her eleventh voyage January 7, 1851, and sailing from Salem, on her twelfth voyage, July 5, 1851. On the 9th of December, 1851, she went ashore on Masbata Island, in the Straits of San Bernardino. She was subsequently raised and sold to Spanish parties, but never returned to Salem.

The last arrival at Salem from Manila was the bark "Dragon," Thomas C. Dunn, master, which entered in July, 1858, with a cargo of hemp, consigned to Benjamin A. West. Salem merchants continued the trade with Manila for some time thereafter, but their vessels entered and cleared at other ports. Tucker Daland and Henry L. Williams, Henry Gardner, B. W. Stone & Brothers and Silsbee & Pickman were extensively engaged in this trade. The last-named firm still continues the trade with Manila.

THE ISLE OF FRANCE TRADE.—In the Indian Ocean, not far from the eastern coast of Madagascar, lies a small island, called the Isle of France, or Mauritius. The climate of this island is remarkably fine. Throughout the year the thermometer ranges from 76° to 90° in the shade. The Dutch formed a settlement there in 1644, but subsequently abandoned it. A more successful attempt to form a permanent establishment was made by the French in 1721. It remained in French hands until the year 1810, when it was taken by the British in an expedition under General Abercromby, and has since remained a British possession.

When the merchants of Salem, after the close of the Revolutionary War, sought to establish commercial intercourse with foreign ports never before visited by American vessels, the Isle of France was among the first places to which they sent their ships to bring home cargoes of sugar, which was the staple article of export. Elias Hasket Derby dispatched the "Grand Turk," Ebenezer West, master, there in November, 1785, and she returned to Salem in June, 1787, making the first voyage from New England to the Isle of France. In December, 1787, the "Grand Turk" made another voyage to the Isle of France, under the charge of Elias Hasket Derby, Jr. He sold the vessel, and remained on the island about a year, when he went to India and thence back to Salem.

Of the arrivals at the Isle of France in 1789, ten were from Salem, five from Boston, two from Philadelphia, one from Virginia, three from Baltimore, one from Beverly and one from Providence.

The schooner "Richard and Edward," George Crowninshield, master, entered January 4, 1790, consigned to George Crowninshield. The brig "William," Thomas West, master, entered in December, 1791, consigned to William Gray. The ship "Henry," Jacob Crowninshield, master, cleared for the Isle of France June 25, 1791. She was of one hundred and ninety tons burden, and carried ten men. Her outward cargo consisted of 60 boxes of wax and 50 boxes of sperm candles, 18 barrels hams, 3000 feet of oars, 14 tons iron, 13 hogsheads tobacco, 17 casks oil, 102 barrels beef and pork, 27 casks ale, 6 kegs flints, 287 barrels flour, 424 cases and 190 jugs of Geneva, 25 boxes soap, 6 boxes chocolate, 43 kegs lard, 62 quintals fish, 6 hogsheads West India rum, 12 bags pimento, 16 cannon, 88 hundredweight shot, 1 hogshead, 4 crates ware, 40 barrels tar, 4 barrels pitch, 30,000 feet lumber, 175 casks powder, 7 saddles and bridles, 12 tables and 5 desks. She entered on her return in November, 1792, with 172,749 pounds of sugar, consigned to Elias Hasket Derby. The brig "Hind," John Beckford, master, entered in January, 1793,

consigned to William Gray. The brig "Peggy," Amos Hilton, master, entered in August, 1793, consigned to John Fisk. The ship "Aurora," Thomas Meek, master, entered in March, 1794, with 424,034 pounds of sugar, consigned to William Gray.

The ship "Benjamin," one hundred and sixty-one tons, Nathaniel Silsbee, master, cleared for India December 10, 1792, and entered in July, 1794, from the Isle of France with cotton, indigo, sugar and pepper, consigned to Elias H. Derby. Her outward cargo consisted of tobacco, cordage, shooks, iron, lead, salt, provisions and earthen ware. Twelve thousand glass tumblers, costing less than $1000, were exported in this ship and arriving when there was no glassware on the island, sold for $12,000. Captain Silsbee was but twenty years old when he assumed command of the "Benjamin." The brig "Peggy," John Edwards, Jr., master, entered in May, 1795, consigned to John Fisk. The brig "Rose," John Felt, master, entered in July, 1795, consigned to Elias H. Derby. The ship "Belisarius," George Crowninshield, Jr., master, entered in July, 1795, with tea, coffee and indigo, consigned to George Crowninshield & Co., and again in October, 1796, with the same description of cargo. The brig "Hope," Samuel Lambert, master, entered in June, 1796, consigned to Ashton & Lambert. The ship "Martha," George Ropes, master, entered from the Isles of France and Bourbon in May, 1797, with 416,993 pounds of coffee, 136,617 pounds of sugar and 13,262 pounds of cotton, consigned to Elias H. Derby, and paying a duty of $23,317 88. The ketch "Eliza," Stephen Phillips, master, entered in July, 1797, consigned to Elias H. Derby. The brig "Katy," Job Trask, master, entered in July, 1797, consigned to Benjamin Pickman, Jr.

There were nine entries at Salem from the Isle of France in 1798, the largest number in any single year. Among the entries were the ketch "Brothers," John Felt, master, in April, consigned to Ezekiel H. Derby; the ship "Martha," John Prince, Jr., master, in June, consigned to Elias H. Derby, with 260,000 pounds of coffee, 336,603 of sugar and 17,803 of cotton, paying a duty of $24,943 47, and the bark "Vigilant," Daniel Hathorne, master, in October, consigned to Simon Forrester.

The trade with the Isle of France was largely carried on by Elias Hasket Derby, and after his death, in 1799, the Salem trade with this island decreased. The years 1797 and 1798 show seventeen arrivals and were the years when the most trade was carried on between Salem and this island. There were a few direct arrivals after 1798. The bark "Two Brothers," Samuel Rea, master, entered in April, 1806, consigned to Thorndike Deland. The brig "Sukey," Henry Prince, Jr., master, entered in August, 1808, consigned to Stephen Phillips. There were a few arrivals in later years, and some vessels bound to or from other ports touched at this island; but the largest direct trade was prior to the year 1800.

The Mocha Trade.—On the 26th of April, 1798, Captain Joseph Ropes, in the ship "Recovery," left Salem, bound direct for Mocha, Arabia Felix, with fifty thousand dollars in specie, and arrived at that port on the 9th of September. This was the first American vessel that ever displayed the stars and stripes in that part of the world. The captain says that the arrival of the strange ship was viewed with great interest by the authorities, who could not divine from whence she came, and made frequent inquiries to know how many moons she had been coming. Captain Ropes went from Mocha to Calcutta, and thence to Salem. The first vessel to arrive at Salem from Mocha with a full cargo of coffee was the ship "Recovery," Luther Dana, master, which arrived in October, 1801, with 216,286 pounds of coffee consigned to Elias H. Derby, 7,485 pounds to Henry Prince, 11,825 pounds to Nathaniel Bowditch, 34,917 pounds to Clifford Crowninshield and 33,181 pounds to Nathan Robinson, and paying a duty of $16,844.39. The ship "Ulysses," Henry Elkins, master, entered from Mocha and Muscat in January, 1802, consigned to George Crowninshield & Sons. The brig "Edwin," Joseph J. Knapp, master, entered in November, 1803, consigned to Charles Cleveland & Co. The ship "Bonetta," Benjamin Russell, master, entered from Mocha in February, 1804, with 268,851 pounds of coffee consigned to Benjamin Pickman, Jr.

In 1805, there were eight arrivals from Mocha, the largest number in any single year; and during that year there was landed at Salem over two million pounds of Mocha coffee. The entries were: the ship "Margaret," Henry Elkins, master; the ship "Two Sons," Thomas Ball, master; and the ship "America," Benjamin Crowninshield, master,—all consigned to George Crowninshield & Sons; the brig "Suwarrow," William Leach, Jr., master, consigned to William Leach and others; the bark "Eliza," Joseph Beadle, master, consigned to Joseph White; the ship "Mary," Samuel King, master, from Aden, consigned to John Norris; the ship "Commerce," Thomas Bancroft, master, consigned to Nathaniel West; and the bark "Mary," Daniel Bray, Jr., master, consigned to Benjamin Derby and John Derby.

George Crowninshield & Sons had three vessels which entered from Mocha in 1806; the ship "Margaret," Henry Elkins, master; the ship "John," William Fairfield, master; and the brig "Telemachus," Benjamin Frye, master. The ship "Franklin," Timothy Wellman, 3d, from Mocha and Aden, entered in December, 1808, with 532,365 pounds of coffee consigned to Joseph Peabody, and paying a duty of $26,618.25. The brig "Coromandel," William Messervy, master, entered in October, 1813, with a cargo of coffee consigned to John Derby, and paying a duty of $28,587.60. The brig "Beulah," Charles Forbes, master, entered from Mocha in April, 1820, consigned to John W. Rogers. The brig "Ann," Charles Millett, master, entered in

May, 1827, consigned to Michael Shepard. After the opening of the Zanzibar trade the vessels engaged in that trade visited Mocha and obtained a part of their cargo there, and to the account of that trade reference may be had for later dates.

THE MADAGASCAR TRADE.—The American trade with the island of Madagascar was opened by Nathaniel L. Rogers & Brothers, eminent and enterprising merchants of Salem. Robert Brookhouse was also among the pioneers of this trade. The brig "Thetis," Charles Forbes, master, appears to be the first vessel to enter, with a full cargo from that island. She arrived in November, 1821, with 216,519 pounds of tallow, consigned to J. W. & R. S. Rogers. The brig "Beulah," Charles Forbes, master, which entered from Mocha in April, 1820, consigned to John W. Rogers, touched at Madagascar on her passage, and brought from there a small quantity of tallow. This appears to be the first American vessel to trade at Madagascar. The brig "Climax," G. W. Grafton, master, entered in March, 1822, consigned to Robert Brookhouse. The brig "Thetis," William Bates, master, made three voyages, entering in January, 1823, in February, 1824, and in January, 1825, consigned to Richard S. Rogers. The brig "Reaper," Robert Brookhouse, Jr., master, entered in December, 1824, consigned to Robert Brookhouse. The brig "Nereus," B. W. Brookhouse, master, entered in December, 1825, consigned to Nathaniel L. Rogers. The brig "Susan," Stephen Burchmore, master, entered in August, 1826, consigned to Robert Brookhouse.

At the time of the opening of the trade with Madagascar Zanzibar was a small settlement, and no trade was carried on there, gum-copal, the principal staple, being carried to India by the Sultan's vessels, to be cleaned. The trade with Zanzibar was an extension of the Madagascar trade. The vessels subsequently engaged in that trade usually touched at Madagascar and Mocha, and made up their cargoes in part in each place. In the account of the Zanzibar trade will be found the later arrivals.

THE ZANZIBAR TRADE.—As Salem had been first at Sumatra and Madagascar, so she was first at Zanzibar. But little of the uncleaned gum-copal, which was the staple article of export, was brought to this country until after the "Black Warrior," belonging largely to N. L. Rogers, and commanded by John Bertram, was there in 1831. Captain Bertram arrived at Zanzibar while the Sultan's frigate was lying in the harbor, ready to carry the gum-copal to India, and made a bargain for what was on hand and for future cargoes. The "Black Warrior" arrived in Salem in March, 1832, with the first large quantity of uncleaned gum-copal that had been imported into this country. For some time thereafter the gum-copal trade was monopolized by Salem merchants, and all the gum-copal used was distributed from the port of Salem.

But the "Black Warrior," although taking the first large cargo from Zanzibar, was not the first vessel to open trade with that port. The brig "Ann," Charles Millett, master, and owned by Henry Prince & Son, left Salem March 12, 1826, for Mocha. When she arrived there, in June, Captain Millet found a great scarcity of bread-stuffs, and, leaving a clerk in charge of the business, he left Mocha for Zanzibar and Lamo, where he obtained a cargo of small grain, and purchased ivory and other articles for the homeward cargo. The "Ann" went from Zanzibar to Mocha, and from thence to Salem, arriving May 9, 1827. This was the opening of American trade with Zanzibar. The same vessel made a second voyage to Zanzibar, leaving Salem August 9, 1827, arriving home April 10, 1829, having visited many new ports on the east coast of Africa. On the passage home, February 20, the "Ann" lost her masts and was otherwise badly wrecked. She also lost her mate and two men. For their skill in navigating the vessel into port the insurance companies presented the commander with a service of plate; his clerk, John Webster, with a silver pitcher; and the rest of his men with three hundred and thirty dollars.

The three-masted schooner "Spy," Andrew Ward, master, ninety-one tons, appears to be the first vessel to enter at the Salem Custom-House from Zanzibar. She arrived at Salem August 11, 1827, one hundred and ten days from Zanzibar, with a cargo consigned to Nathaniel L. Rogers & Brothers. Captain Ward reported that the "Susan," Burchard, master, touched at Zanzibar about the 1st of March, and that the "Fawn," of Salem, had also been there. The "Spy" was built at Essex in 1823, and was the first three-masted schooner of which there is any record. On the 12th of January, 1825, the brig "Laurel," Lovett, master, owned by Robert Brookhouse, left Salem for South America. Finding markets dull, the captain sailed for ports east of the Cape of Good Hope, and, about the 10th of July, left Port Louis, Mauritius, for Zanzibar, stopping at the island of Johanna on the way. This was the first time the American flag was displayed at that Island, and the king gave a reception in honor of the event. The vessel arrived at Zanzibar the 20th of July, 1825, and, although not the first to open trade, seems to be the first to have displayed the American flag at that port. From Zanzibar the "Laurel" proceeded to Mombas, and from there to Patta, Lamo and other small places, in all of which she appears to have displayed the American flag for the first time. The "Laurel" arrived in Salem, on her return passage, June 3, 1826.

From the year 1827, when the "Spy" entered from Zanzibar, to the year 1870, when the last entry from that port was made at Salem, there were one hundred and eighty-nine arrivals from Zanzibar. The period from 1840 to 1860 was the time of the greatest activity in this trade, one hundred and forty-five of the one hundred and eighty-nine entries being made be-

tween those years. Nathaniel L. Rogers & Brothers, John Bertram, Michael Shepard, David Pingree, Joseph Peabody, Andrew Ward, Nathaniel Weston, James B. Curwen, Ephraim Emmerton, Tucker Daland, Michael W. Shepard, George West and Benjamin A. West were among those engaged in this trade.

Among the earlier arrivals were the brig "Cipher," S. Smith, master, in March, 1834; the brig "Tigris," John G. Waters, master, in July, 1834, consigned to David Pingree; the brig "Thomas Perkins," J. P. Page, master, in November, 1834, consigned to Putnam I. Farnham; the brig "Leander," J. S. Kimball, master, in April 1836, and again in August, 1837, consigned to Joseph Peabody; the brig "Palm," N. W. Andrews, master, in November, 1836, consigned to John Bertram; the brig "Cherokee," W. B. Smith, master, in April, 1837, consigned to Michael Shepard; the bark "Star," E. Brown, master, in November, 1839, again in 1842, W. B. Smith, master, and again in September, 1846, in October, 1847, and in January, 1849, William McFarland, master, consigned to Michael Shepard; the brig "Richmond," William B. Bates, master, in October, 1840, to Ephraim Emmerton; the brig "Rolla," A. S. Perkins, master, in January, 1841, and again in January, 1843, consigned to David Pingree; the brig "Rattler," F. Brown, master, in May, 1841, and again in 1843, J. Lambert, master, consigned to Michael Shepard; the bark "Brenda," Andrew Ward, master, in March, 1844, with one hundred and forty-two thousand one hundred and twenty-four pounds of dates and other merchandise, consigned to Michael Shepard and John Bertram; the brig "Richmond," William B. Bates, master, entered in December, 1845, consigned to Ephraim Emmerton; the bark "Eliza," A. S. Perkins, master, entered in May, 1846, consigned to George West and David Pingree; the bark "Orb," W. Cross, master, entered in November, 1846, and again in March, 1848, C. F. Rhoades, master, consigned to Tucker Daland; the bark "Sophronia," B. R. Peabody, master, entered in January 1849, and again, E. A. Emmerton, master, in October, 1850, consigned to Ephraim Emmerton; the bark "Iosco," Groves, master, entered in January, 1852, consigned to Michael W. Shepard, and again in December, 1852, consigned to John Bertram.

Space will not permit the enumeration of any large proportion of the arrivals from this port, but enough have been given to indicate the merchants who were engaged in the Zanzibar trade. Many of the vessels touched at Madagascar and Mocha, and obtained a part of their cargoes at those places. For years this trade was largely in the hands of Salem merchants, and Salem was the principal point of distribution for ivory, gum-copal and Mocha coffee.

Among the vessels lost while engaged in this trade was the bark "Peacock," Joseph Moseley, master, and owned by John Bertram, which was wrecked on a reef near Majunga, Madagascar, August 6, 1855, and with the cargo was a total loss. The bark "Arabia," John Wallis, master, and owned by Benjamin A. West, sailed from Salem, on her first voyage, July 4, 1857. On the passage home, May 9, 1858, while off the Cape of Good Hope, she fell in with the "Ariadne," bound from Bombay to Boston. This being in a crippled and sinking condition, her crew, twenty-three in number, were taken on board the "Arabia." The supply of water was inadequate for so large an addition to their number, and Captain Wallis thought it prudent to enter Table Bay and procure an additional supply. At the entrance to the bay the "Arabia" was becalmed. The night was dark, and about 2 A.M., the vessel struck on a reef and became a total loss. The cargo was saved and sold. The bark "Iosco," Claussen, master, and owned by John Bertram, was wrecked on a reef off Zanzibar, July 7, 1858. Both vessel and cargo were lost. The bark "Guide," McMullen, master, and owned by John Bertram, was wrecked on the Ras Hoforn, east coast of Africa, on the night of September 4, 1860, and with her cargo was a total loss. The bark "Jersey," James S. Williams, master, owned by John Bertram, was built at Salem in 1869, and was wrecked at Madagascar on her first voyage.

The large importation of uncleaned gum-copal, an article which, prior to 1832, had been sent to India to be cleaned, led to the establishment by Jonathan Whipple of a factory at the foot of Turner Street, in Salem, to clean and prepare the gum for the market. Prior to the establishment of Mr. Whipple's factory, Daniel Hammond had been engaged in cleaning the gum, but Mr. Whipple was the first to establish the business on an extensive scale. At first the gum was cleaned by being scraped with a knife. Mr. Whipple soon introduced the process of washing it with an alkali. The uncleaned gum was deposited in tubs of alkali liquor and allowed to stand over night. It was then taken and placed upon large platforms in the open air, and carefully dried and brushed. The gum was then sorted as to size and color.

This business was established about 1835, and increased very rapidly. Mr. Whipple commenced by employing four or five men, but at the time of his death, in 1850, the number of men employed averaged thirty-five or forty, and the amount of gum cleaned each year was about one million five hundred thousand pounds, the gum losing in weight about one-quarter part during the process of cleaning. Mr. Whipple was succeeded by his sons, who continued the business under the name of Stephen Whipple & Brothers. The business was prosperous until the year 1861, when an import duty of ten cents a pound was imposed on the uncleaned gum. The gum was thereafter cleaned on the coast of Africa before shipment, and the business diminished until it was finally abandoned altogether.

The trade with Zanzibar, Madagascar, Arabia and

the east coast of Africa has been continued by Salem merchants from the summer of 1826, when the "Ann" was there, to the present day. In 1846, Salem had nine vessels there. The successors of the firm of John Bertram still continue the trade, but their vessels no longer enter the port of Salem. The last arrival at Salem from Zanzibar was the bark "Glide," May 1, 1870, and this was also the last arrival at Salem of any vessel owned in Salem from beyond the Cape of Good Hope.

THE CAPE OF GOOD HOPE TRADE.—When the merchants of Salem, at the close of the Revolutionary War, sent their vessels on long voyages, the Cape of Good Hope was among the first places visited. In this as in most other trades established with distant countries Elias Hasket Derby was the first to lead the way. In 1781 he built at the South Shore a fast sailing ship of three hundred tons called the "Grand Turk" for use as a privateer. She carried twenty-two guns, and was remarkably successful in capturing prizes. In November, 1784, Mr. Derby despatched this vessel, under command of Jonathan Ingersoll, on the first voyage from Salem to the Cape of Good Hope. The cargo of the "Grand Turk" consisted, in part, of rum, which was sold to an English East India-man and delivered at the Island of St. Helena. From there she returned to Salem, via the West Indies, arriving in 1785. He bought in the West Indies, Grenada rum enough to load two vessels, sent home the "Grand Turk," and returned himself in the "Atlantic."

A striking incident is connected with this voyage of Captain Ingersoll. On his passage to Salem he rescued the master and mate of the English schooner "Amity," whose crew had mutinied and set their officers adrift in a boat. After their arrival at Salem, Captain Duncanson of the "Amity" was sitting one day with Mr. Derby in his counting-room, and while using his spy-glass he saw his own vessel in the offing. Mr. Derby promptly manned one of his own brigs, put two pieces of ordnance on board of her, and, taking with him the English captain, boarded and recaptured the "Amity."

Mr. Derby purchased a vessel which had been captured from the British during the Revolutionary War. He named her the "Light Horse." This bark he sent, in January, 1787, to the Cape of Good Hope, under command of John Tucker.

The captain wrote his first letter from Table Bay, dated May 15, 1787, giving an account of a sale of part of the cargo. From the Cape he went to the Isle of France, sold the remainder of his cargo, loaded with coffee and some India goods, and returned to Salem, arriving in January, 1788.

The brig "Hope," of one hundred and sixty tons burden, carrying eight men, made an annual voyage between Salem and the Cape of Good Hope for six consecutive years, entering at Salem in February, 1790, in August, 1791, in July, 1792, in June, 1793, in May, 1794, and in July 1795. She was commanded on the first three voyages by Jonathan Lambert, and on the last three by Samuel Lambert, and her cargo was consigned, on each voyage, to Jacob Ashton and others. The schooner "Ruth," Jonathan Lambert, Jr., master, entered in July, 1796, consigned to Jacob Ashton and others. The ship "Betsey," Jeremiah L. Page, master, entered in May, 1804, consigned to Abel Lawrence & Co.

Coffee, wine, pepper, sugar, ivory and aloes were among the articles imported. Most of the direct trade with the Cape of Good Hope, was carried on before the commencement of the present century, and Jacob Ashton and Jonathan Lambert appear to have been largely engaged in it.

THE AUSTRALIAN TRADE.—Wherever a new channel of trade was opened for Americans, Salem was either the first to open it, or her vessels followed closely after the pioneers. She was found asking for admission to the port of Sydney, in 1832, and by a special order of the council, passed that year, the ship "Tybee," Charles Millett, master, was allowed to enter that port. This vessel was owned by Nathaniel L. Rogers and others, and was the first American vessel to enter the ports of Australia. The "Tybee" entered at Salem from Sydney January 20, 1835, again in March, 1836, and again in June, 1837. Joseph Rogers commanded her on these voyages, and her cargo consisted mainly of wool. The ship "Black Warrior," William Driver, master, entered from Sydney in September, 1835, and the ship "Shepherdess," J. Kinsman, master, in May, 1836, both bringing cargoes of wool. All the above-mentioned cargoes were consigned to Nathaniel L. Rogers & Brothers. This trade did not prove profitable and it was not long continued, the direct entries at Salem, from Sydney, being confined to the years 1835, '36 and '37.

THE FEEJEE ISLANDS TRADE.—The enterprise of Salem merchants seems not to have been confined by the limits of the civilized world, but to have extended to all habitable countries, however remote and however peopled. Salem was as familiar a name to the cannibals of the Feejee Islands, during the first half of the present century, as it was to the savages of Africa and Madagascar. In many of those wild countries, the untutored natives thought Salem comprised all the remainder of the outer world about which they knew so little. Captain William P. Richardson, of Salem, was at the Feejee Islands in the bark "Active," in 1811. He sailed from Salem June 1, 1810, and left the Feejee Islands July 26, 1811, for Canton. He arrived at Salem March 27, 1812, one hundred and eighteen days from Canton. This was the first trading voyage from Salem to the Feejee Islands. Commercial intercourse with these islands began about 1806, probably by the vessels of the East India Company.

When Commodore Wilkes went on his famous exploring expedition, he took with him as pilot and inter-

preter, Captain Benjamin Vanderford, a Salem shipmaster, who, having made many voyages to these islands, was familiar with the customs and language of the natives. Captain Vanderford died March 23, 1842, on the passage home; and the commodore, writing of him says: "During the cruise I had often experienced his usefulness. He had formerly been in command of various vessels sailing from Salem, and had made many voyages to the Feejee Islands. During our stay there, he was particularly useful in superintending all trade carried on to supply the ship." Commodore Wilkes was indebted to another Salem captain for bringing one of the vessels of his squadron,—the "Peacock,"—safely into port, on the 12th of July, 1840. Captain J. H. Eagleston, of Salem, who was trading there at the time, rendered him this important service. The commodore, in his report to the government, says: "The squadron is much indebted to Captain Eagleston for his attention and assistance. I am also indebted to him for observations relating to gales."

Captain Eagleston made voyages to these islands between 1830 and 1840, in the bark "Peru," the ship "Emerald," the brig "Mermaid" and the ship "Leonidas." On one of his passages in the "Leonidas" he caught several albatrosses, and tied to the neck of each a quill containing a slip of paper, on which was written "Ship Leonidas, of Salem, bound to New Zealand." One of these birds was caught by a French vessel off the Cape of Good Hope, several hundred miles away from the spot where it was first caught by Captain Eagleston. The news reached Salem March 21, 1840, and was the first news of this vessel since she sailed, on the 9th of August. Captain Eagleston sailed for Stephen C. Phillips, who was a prominent merchant of Salem from about 1828 to the time of his death, in 1857. Mr. Phillips was largely engaged in trade with the Feejee Islands, with Manila and other Eastern ports. In 1846 Salem had six vessels engaged in trade with the Feejee Islands. The usual voyage was from Salem to the Feejee Islands, where the vessel would remain, collecting the *beche-de-mer*, a sort of sea slug, found on reefs and in shallow water, and after drying and preparing them for the market, carry them either to Manila to exchange for sugar and hemp, or to China to exchange for tea, the voyage usually consuming about two years. Salem almost monopolized this trade, and, in a work written in London, in 1858, by Thomas Williams and James Calvert, missionaries at these islands, it is stated that the traffic in sandal-wood, tortoise-shell and *beche-de-mer*, "has been, and still is, chiefly in the hands of Americans from the port of Salem." There are many curious articles at the Peabody Academy of Science at Salem, which were brought from the Feejee Islands during the early voyages.

Among the Salem merchants engaged in this trade were Nathaniel L. Rogers & Bros., Stephen C. Phillips, Samuel Chamberlain & Co. and Benjamin A. West. The bark "Zotoff," Benjamin Wallis, master, made several voyages to the Feejee Islands. Captain Wallis, on two of these voyages, covering a period from 1844 to 1850, was accompanied by his wife, who, upon her final return, wrote an account of her travels, in a book entitled, "Life in Feejee." She mentions seeing the brig "Elizabeth," the bark "Samos," Captain H. J. Archer, the bark "Pilot," Captain Hartwell and the brig "Tim Pickering," all of Salem, during the first voyage. The "Samos" was afterwards condemned at Manila. The "Tim Pickering," Walden, master, while lying at Ovalou, in the Feejee Islands, was driven ashore in a severe gale, April 5, 1848, and became a total loss. Captain Benjamin Vanderford was at the Feejee Islands about 1819, in the ship "Indus," and about 1822 in the "Roscoe." The bark "Dragon," Thomas C. Dunn, master, sailed from Salem February 22, 1854, and arrived at the Feejee Islands, a distance of sixteen thousand seven hundred and seventy miles, in eighty-five days, making the shortest passage ever made from the United States. She crossed the equator in twenty days, and passed Port Phillip, New Holland, seventy-three days out. She reached Salem from Manila September 4, 1856, with one thousand one hundred and seventy bales of hemp, consigned to Benjamin A. West.

The seamen of Salem, visiting these islands, were exposed to peril of their lives from the ignorant and deceitful inhabitants, and to disaster to their ships from hidden reefs, of the existence of which they were unaware. In August, 1830, the brig "Fawn," James Briant master, and owned by Robert Brookhouse, was lost at the Feejee Islands, and Captain Charles Millett, of the ship "Clay," gave captain and crew a passage to Manila. The ship "Glide," in March, 1832, was driven ashore at Tackanova, and lost. Her boat's crew were attacked by the natives, at Ovalou, December 26, 1831, and two of them killed. In the same gale which destroyed the "Glide," another Salem vessel, the brig "Niagara," was lost, at an island one hundred and forty miles from Tackanova.

The brig "Charles Doggett," owned by Nathaniel L. Rogers & Bros., and commanded by George Batchelder, was at Kandora, one of the Feejee Islands, in September, 1833, and her crew were curing the *beche-de-mer* for the East India market. They were attacked by the natives for the sake of plunder, and five of the crew were killed, including Charles Shipman, the mate. The remainder escaped in the boats, but were all more or less injured. James Magoun, of Salem, who had lived among the islanders several years, was dangerously wounded. On the way to Manila, the vessel touched at the Pelew Islands, and the crew were again attacked by the natives, and a boy was killed. The vessel reached Salem, from Manila, in October, 1834.

The story of a previous voyage of the "Charles Doggett," under the command of William Driver, is one of most romantic interest, and deserves a place in history. As an introduction, it may be well to give a brief account of the mutiny of the "Bounty," which, though an oft-repeated tale, is still one of thrilling interest. Captain William Bligh was sent by the British Government in the "Bounty" in December, 1787, to Tahiti. He reached that island in October of the following year, and remained there six months, collecting bread-fruit plants, with which he started for Jamaica. Twenty-four days out, on the 28th of April, 1789, a part of the crew mutinied, and forced Captain Bligh and eighteen men into the ship's launch, which they cast adrift, turning their own course back to Tahiti. The captain and his companions arrived on the 14th of June, after suffering almost incredible hardships, at the island of Timor, a distance of three thousand six hundred nautical miles from the place where they were abandoned. The mutineers, after staying at Tahiti for some time, fearing pursuit, sailed eastward, taking with them eighteen natives, six men and twelve women, and leaving part of their comrades at Tahiti. They landed at Pitcairn Island, a solitary island in the Pacific Ocean, lying at the southeast corner of the great Polynesian Archipelago, having an area of only one and a quarter square miles. Here they took up their residence, and burned the "Bounty." From the time they left Tahiti, in 1792, nothing was heard of them, until an American, Captain Folger, touched at the island in 1808. At this time, all the men, save Alexander Smith, and several of the women, were dead. The island was visited by British vessels in 1825 and 1830.

In 1831 their numbers had increased to eighty-seven, and the island was scantily provided with water. At their own request, they were transported by the British Government to Tahiti. All the original settlers were dead, and their descendants had been reared away from contact with the world, and were, despite their wild ancestry, virtuous and religious. Never having looked upon vice, they found themselves among a people where virtue was unknown. Disgusted with the immoralities of the Tahitians, the most loose, voluptuous and unchaste people that exist under the tropic sun, they yearned with a homesick longing for the isolation and quiet of the little island that had so recently been their home.

It was at this time that the brig "Charles Doggett," William Driver, master, and owned by Nathaniel L. Rogers & Brothers, arrived at Tahiti. These poor homesick people besought Captain Driver to take them back to their native island. For their own sake, but above all for the sake of their children, they desired to leave this land of sensual indulgence. Captain Driver finally consented to carry them, sixty-five in number, back to the island, fourteen hundred miles away, from whence they had so recently arrived, taking in pay some old copper, twelve blankets and one hundred and twenty-nine dollars in missionary drafts. They left on the 15th of August, 1831, and were landed on Pitcairn Island on September 3rd, after an absence of about nine months. In 1855, finding their numbers again too large for the island, for they now numbered two hundred and two, they petitioned the British Government, and, in 1856, were removed to Norfolk Island. In 1859, two families, in all seventeen, returned to Pitcairn Island. An English writer, in speaking of them, says: "From their frequent intercourse with Europeans, the Pitcairn Islanders have, while retaining their virtuous simplicity of character and cheerful, hospitable disposition, acquired the manners and polish of civilized life, with its education and taste."

May it not well be said that a Salem vessel saved this people from sinking into the immoral life that surrounded them at Tahiti, and that in their strange and romantic history there is no chapter more important than that which records the assistance rendered them by Salem in their time of need?

The South American Trade.—The trade between Salem and South America has been quite extensive. This trade began early, and continued to be prosecuted after trade with other foreign countries had been abandoned. On the 25th of August, 1789, the schooner "Lark" arrived from Surinam with sugar and cocoa. The brig "Katy," Nathaniel Brown, master, cleared for Cayenne in April, 1798, with fish, flour, bacon, butter, oil, tobacco, candles and potter's ware. The schooner "Sally," Daniel Proctor, master, cleared for Cayenne in March, 1802. For forty years, from 1820 to 1860, there was constant commercial intercourse between Salem and the ports of South America.

Para was the port most frequently visited, there having been four hundred and thirty-five arrivals at Salem from that port, mainly between the years 1826 and 1860. The largest number of arrivals in a single year was in 1853, when twenty vessels entered. The last entries were in 1861. Rubber, hides, cocoa, coffee and castana nuts were among the articles imported. A few of the entries from Para are given, to indicate the merchants engaged in this traffic: The schooner "Betsey," James Meagher, master, entered from Para in March, 1811, with cassia, coffee and cocoa, consigned to John Howard; the schooner "Four Sisters," Joseph Ervin, master, in August, 1811, with one hundred and thirty-eight thousand pounds of cocoa, to William Orne; the schooner "Resolution," Edward Brown, Jr., master, in July, 1812, consigned to Jeremiah L. Page; the brig "Mercator," Samuel B. Graves, master, in September, 1817, to Robert Upton; the schooner "Cyrus," Benjamin Russell, master, in March, 1820, to Robert Upton; the schooner "Charles," Richard Smith, master, in August, 1822, to Michael Shepard; the schooner

"Phœbe," Benjamin Upton, master, in December, 1824, to Robert Upton; the schooner "Leader," Nathaniel Griffen, master, in April, 1826, to Richard Savory; the schooner "Dollar," Thomas Holmes, master, in April, 1826, to David Pingree; the schooner "Cepheus," Charles Holland, master, in August, 1826, to Joseph Howard; the brig "Romp," Clarke, master, in December, 1828, to Thomas P. Pingree and Michael Shepard; the schooner "Gazelle," Warren Strickland, master, in August, 1830, to James Brown; the brig "Abby M.," R. Wheatland, master, in October, 1830, to Gideon Tucker; the brig "Amethyst," John Willis, master, in July, 1831, to Robert Upton; the brig "Fredonia," S. K. Appleton, master, in September, 1832, to Benjamin Creamer; the brig "Deposit," G. E. Bailey, master, in January, 1842, to James Upton (this vessel made regular trips between Salem and Para); the brig "Mermaid," C. Conway, master, in April, 1842, to P. I. Farnham; the brig "Eagle," M. S. Wheeler, master, in December, 1842, to Benjamin Upton; the brig "Deposit," under command of Charles Upton, entered in March, 1844, and made several voyages thereafter, consigned to Luther Upton; the brig "Granite," S. Upton, master, entered in October, 1844, and made regular trips, to S. F. Upton; the brig "Rattler," C. W. Trumbull, master, entered in July, 1846, and made a number of voyages, consigned to John Bertram; the brig "M. Shepard," H. B. Manning, master, entered in March 1853, and continued for some time in the trade, consigned to John Bertram. Messrs. Phippen and Endicott were the last among the Salem merchants engaged in this trade. There were two entries in the year 1861, and these entries closed the trade of Salem with Para.

There has been a large trade between Salem and Cayenne, beginning in the last century. The whole number of arrivals from this port between the years 1810 and 1877 was about three hundred. The largest number of entries in a single year was in 1835, when there were eleven entries from that port. From 1835 to 1840 inclusive, there were fifty-eight entries. The Cayenne trade was the last foreign trade engaged in by Salem merchants at the port of Salem.

Among the entries from that port was that of the brig "Trial," Eben Learock, master, in June, 1810, with molasses and coffee, consigned to Francis Quarles; the schooner "Rachel," Mark Knowlton, master, in August, 1812, to John Winn; the brig "Return," Henry King, master, in March, 1813, to Thomas Perkins; the schooner "Essex," Thomas Cloutman, master, in May, 1816, with cocoa, molasses and almonds, to William Fabens; the brig "Rambler," W. D. Shatswell, master, in February, 1821, to William Fabens, and in February, 1828, to Benjamin Fabens; the brig "Cynthia," in July, 1821, to J. H. Andrews; in 1824, to Michael Shepard, and in 1825, to David Pingree; the brig "General Jackson," Shatswell, master, in May, 1826, to P. I. Farnham; the brig "Jeremiah," Joshua F. Safford, master, in June, 1821, to David Pingree; the brig "Rotund," Joseph R. Winn, master, in May, 1825, to Benjamin Fabens; the schooner "Betsey and Eliza," Benjamin Pickering, master, in August, 1829, to Joseph Shatswell; the schooner "Numa," D. R. Upton, master, in March, 1833, to Robert Upton; the brig "Romp," Peter Lassen, master, in September, 1851, to Joseph Shatswell; the brig "Esther," W. H. Fabens, master, in February, 1850, to Benjamin Fabens, Jr., and in August, 1850, Peter Lassen, master, to Charles H. Fabens; the bark "Lawrence," Fabens, master, in September, 1851, to Charles H. Fabens.

David Pingree and Joseph Shatswell were largely engaged in this trade. The Fabens family for four generations have carried on the trade between Salem and Cayenne. William Fabens began it about 1816, Benjamin Fabens about 1825, Charles H. Fabens about 1850, and Charles E. and Benjamin H. Fabens about 1869. The successive generations have prosecuted the trade continuously from 1816 to the present day. The last named removed the business to Boston in 1877, and now carry it on from that port. The last arrival at Salem from a South American port was the schooner "Mattie F," which was entered from Cayenne, by Messrs. C. E. & B. H. Fabens, March 21, 1877. The entry of the "Mattie F." closed the foreign trade of Salem.

The trade between Salem and Buenos Ayres is the next in importance. From 1816 to 1860, inclusive, there were one hundred and twenty-one arrivals at Salem from this port. The period of greatest activity was from 1841 to 1860. Robert Upton, James Upton, David Pingree and Benjamin A. West were among the merchants principally engaged in this trade. The entries from this port include that of the brig "Nancy Ann," John B. Osgood, master, in April, 1816, to Stephen Phillips; the ship "Diomede," Samuel L. Page, master, in March, 1817, to Philip Chase; the brig "Cambrian," H. G. Bridges, master, in June, 1823, to Joseph Peabody; the brig "Bolivar Liberator," James Garney, master, in January, 1831, to P. I. Farnham; the bark "Chalcedony," J. E. A. Todd, master, entered in April, 1841, and made several voyages thereafter, commanded by Captain Todd, and a number after 1849, with George Upton as master (she was consigned on these voyages to James Upton); the bark "Three Brothers," Welch, master, entered in May, 1843, consigned to David Pingree; the brig "Cherokee," Mansfield, master, entered in October, 1843, consigned to Michael Shepard; the brig "Gazelle," Dewing, master, in November, 1843, to John Bertram; the brig "Olinda," S. Hutchinson, master, in December, 1843, to Gideon Tucker; the bark "King Philip," George Upton, master, in June, 1844, to James Upton; the brig "Gambia," G. E. Bailey, master, in September, 1848, to Benjamin A. West; the bark "Maid of Orleans," Charles Upton, master in September, 1848, and on several subsequent voy-

ages, consigned to James Upton; the bark "Manchester," S. Upton, master, in May, 1853, to Robert Upton; the brig "Russell," in August, 1854, to Geo. Savory; the bark "Salem," in August, 1860, to Jas. Upton. The last entry at Salem from Buenos Ayres was in 1860.

Rio Grande was a place with which Salem merchants traded quite extensively. Hides and horns were the principal articles imported. From 1817 to 1860 there were one hundred and fifty-five arrivals at Salem from that province, and of that number, one hundred were during the period from 1845 to 1854 inclusive. The largest number of arrivals in a single year was seventeen, in the year 1851. The Uptons were largely interested in this trade, as they were in most of the Salem trade with the ports on the eastern coast of South America. Robert Upton, James Upton, Benjamin Upton, Luther Upton and H. P. Upton and David Pingree, George Savory, Thomas P. Pingree, Benjamin Webb and David Moore were among those engaged in trade with Rio Grande.

From the list of entries from that place at Salem a few are given. A complete list would hardly interest the general reader. The brig "Trader," John Eveleth, master, entered in June, 1817, with tallow consigned to Edward Lander; the brig "Rotund," John Ingersoll, master, in July, 1822, to Gideon Tucker; the brig "Cynthia," Shillaber, master, in October, 1828, to David Pingree; the brig "Abby M.," R. Wheatland, master, in October, 1829, to Putnam I. Farnham and others; the brig "Quill," Thomas Farley, master, in November, 1831, to Nathaniel L. Rogers & Bros.; the brig "Mermaid," George Savory, master, in May, 1841 to Benjamin Upton; the brig "Northumberland," Kane, master, in November, 1842, to Thomas P. Pingree; the bark "Chalcedony," J. E. A. Todd, master, in October, 1846, to James Upton, and in May, 1847, to Luther Upton; the brig "Russell," R. F. Savory, master, in May, 1847, to H. P. Upton; the bark "William Schroder," J. E. A. Todd, master, in March, 1848, to Robert Upton; the bark "Wyman," J. Madison, master, in July, 1849, to James Upton (this vessel made many trips between Salem and Rio Grande, commanded by George Harrington); the bark "Sophronia," E. A. Emmerton, master, in July, 1849, to Ephraim Emmerton; the schooner "Maria Theresa," O. Baker, Jr., master, in August, 1849, to D. R. Bowker; the brig "Draco," E. S. Johnson, master, in October, 1849, and in April, 1850, to David Moore; the brig "Prairie," E. Upton, master, in November, 1850, to George Savory and others; the bark "Delegate," D. Marshall, master, in January, 1851, to Benjamin Webb and others; the bark "Arrow," in June, 1860, to James Upton. There were two entries from Rio Grande in 1860, and with those entries the Salem trade with that place closed. There was a single entry from Rio Grande in 1870, but neither vessel nor cargo was owned by Salem merchants.

The Salem trade with Montevideo began about 1811, and ended in 1861. There was no entry from this port between 1811 and 1823. The largest number of entries was during the years 1847, '48 and '53. Robert Upton, James Upton and Benjamin A. West were among those engaged in trading with that port. Hides and horns were the principal articles imported. The brig "Hope," Benjamin Jacobs, master, entered in June, 1811, consigned to Thomas Perkins; the ship "Glide," Nathan Endicott, master, entered in November, 1823, consigned to Joseph Peabody; the brig "Chalcedony," George Upton, master, in May, 1839, and in October, 1847, to James Upton; and in March, 1848, to Luther Upton; the bark "Zotoff," G. E. Bailey, master, in January, 1853, and again in August, 1853, to Benjamin A. West; the bark "Peacock," Upton, master, in April, 1853, to Robert Upton; the bark "Argentine," George Upton, master, in June, 1853, to James Upton; the bark "Miquelon," S. Hutchinson, in July, 1853, to E. H. Folmer; the brig "Mary A. Jones," in January, 1860, and again in July 1860, to Benjamin A. West. There was a single entry in 1861, the last entry at Salem from Montevideo.

In the years 1824 and 1825 there were twenty-four entries from Maranham. From 1817 to 1858 there were one hundred and ten entries. Joseph Howard and James Brown were among those most largely interested in this trade. The brig "Henry," George Burchmore, master, entered from Maranham in January, 1817, consigned to Stephen White; the brig "Anson," Haskett D. Lang, master, in May, 1819, to P. & A. Chase; the brig "Alonzo," George K. Smith, master, in August, 1819, to Joseph Howard; the brig "Betsey," Timothy Ropes, master, in August, 1819, to George Nichols; the schooner "Mermaid," John Willis, master, in April, 1824, to Pickering Dodge; the schooner "General Brewer," George Gale, master, in August, 1825, to Stephen White; the brig "Stork," Stephen Gale, master, in November, 1825, to James Brown and others; the brig "Calliope," George Creamer, master, in March, 1826, to Robert Upton; the schooner "Spy," Benjamin Russell, master, in April, 1826, to Nathaniel L. Rogers & Bros.; the brig "Edward," Thomas C. Whittredge, master, in May, 1826, to Thomas Whittredge; the schooner "Sally Barker," F. Quarles, master, in June, 1826, to Michael Shepard; the brig "Stork," Oliver Thayer, master, in July, 1826, to Joseph Howard; the brig "Cynthia," Benjamin Shillaber, master, in April, 1827, to David Pingree; the brig "Wm. Penn," S. K. Appleton, master, in January, 1836, to John F. Allen; the brig "Amethyst," R. Hill, Jr., master, in February, 1837, to James Upton; the brig "Palm," in September, 1840, to Thomas P. Pingree; the schooner "East Wind," in June, 1858, to Phippen & Endicott; and this entry closed the Salem trade with Maranham.

Surinam was visited early by Salem vessels. The

period of the greatest activity in this trade was between the years 1797 and 1810. There were twelve arrivals at Salem from this place in 1799, and the same number in 1804. There were two entries in 1860, the last made at Salem from Surinam. Coffee, cocoa, sugar, cotton, molasses and distilled spirits, were the principal articles imported.

The schooner "Saint John," W. Grafton, master, entered from Surinam in October, 1791, consigned to Joseph Waters. The brig "Lydia," Eben Shillaber, master, in August, 1796, to William Gray. The brig "Three Friends," John Endicott, master, in October, 1796, to Jonathan Gardner and Joseph Peabody. The schooner "Cynthia," Hezekiah Flint, master, in December, 1796, to Joseph Peabody and Thomas Perkins. The schooner "Diligent," James Buffington, master, in February, 1797, to Joseph Sprague & Sons. The brig "Katy," Nathaniel Brown, master, in August, 1798, to Benjamin Pickman, Jr. The schooner "Fame," Downing Lee, master, in April, 1798, to Samuel Gray and John Osgood. The brig "Neptune," Robert Barr, master, in May, 1797, to John Barr. The ship "Henry," Stephen Webb, master, in June, 1799, to Elias H. Derby. The ship "Belisarius," Edward Allen, master, in August, 1799, to George Crowninshield & Sons. The schooner "Helen," Samuel King, master, in November, 1799, to Benjamin West. The ship "Atlantic," Eben Learock, master, in April, 1804, to Joseph Peabody. The bark "Active," John Endicott, master, in July, 1804, to Benjamin Hodges. The schooner "Union," Moses Yell, master, in December, 1807, to Michael Shepard. The brig "Nabby," Hardy Phippen, master, in April, 1808, to Samuel Archer, 3d. The brig "Union," Timothy Ropes, master, in October, 1823, to John H. Andrews. The brig "Rambler," S. Upton, master, in March, 1829, to Benjamin Fabens. The brig "Cynthia," John G. Waters, master, in August, 1829, to David Pingree. The ship "William and Henry," C. H. Fabens, master, in January, 1838, to David Pingree. The brig "Mary Francis," in July, 1855, to Joseph Shatswell. The bark "Lawrence," in April, 1857, to Charles H. Fabens. The brig "Elizabeth," in April, 1860, and in August, 1860, to Benjamin Webb. The above-mentioned entries show the names of the Salem merchants engaged in trade with Surinam.

There were three entries at Salem from Rio Janeiro in 1810. The largest number of entries in a single year was in 1824, when six vessels entered from that port. The schooner "Mercury," Edward Barnard, Jr., master, entered from that port in June, 1810, consigned to Nathaniel West. The brig "New Hazard," Edward Stanley, master, in July, 1810, to John Gardner, Jr. The ship "Marquis de Someruelas," Thomas Russell, master, in July, 1810, to John Gardner, Jr. and Michael Shepard. The ship "John," Jeremiah Briggs, master, in March, 1811, to George Crowninshield. The brig "Cora," P. P. Pinel, master, in December, 1811, to Jerathmael Pierce. The brig "Alonzo," Philemon Putnam, master, in April, 1823, to Joseph Howard. The ship "Friendship," Richard Meek, master, in November, 1823, and again in November, 1824, to George Nichols. The brig "Pioneer," Andrew Ward, master, in April, 1824, to John W. Rogers. The brig "Edward," Thomas C. Whittredge, master, in August, 1824, to Thomas Whittredge. The brig "Roscius," J. Kinsman, master, in November, 1824, to Robert Upton. The brig "Thomas Perkins," B. Shillaber, master, in September, 1832, to Michael Shepard. The bark "Richard," J. Hodges, master, in November, 1832, to Joseph Hodges. The bark "Imaun," Batchelder, master, in April, 1852, to Benjamin A. West. The entry of the "Imaun" closed the Salem trade with Rio Janeiro. The principal articles imported were coffee and sugar.

In August, 1832, the brig "Mexican," of Salem, owned by Joseph Peabody, and commanded by John G. Butman, of Beverly, left Salem for Rio Janeiro, having on board twenty thousand dollars in specie. On September 20th, between the hours of eight and nine A. M., she was hailed by the piratical Spanish schooner, "Pinda," Commander Gilbert. The pirates came on board the "Mexican," and threatened all hands with instant death unless the specie was immediately produced. They obliged the crew to bring the boxes containing it on deck, when they at once transferred it to the schooner. They then ransacked the cabin and rifled the captain's pockets, taking his watch and money. Not being successful in finding any more specie aboard the brig, the pirates returned on board their schooner. In eight or ten minutes they came back, apparently in great haste, shut all the crew below, fastened the companion-way, fore scuttle and after hatchway; stove the compasses to pieces in the binnacles, and cut away tiller-ropes, halliards, braces and most of the running rigging. They then took a tub of tarred rope-yarn, and what they could find combustible about the deck, put it into the caboose-house and set it on fire. As soon as the pirates left, the crew of the "Mexican" reached the deck through the cabin scuttle, which the pirates had neglected to secure, and extinguished the fire, which, in a few moments, would have set the main sail on fire and destroyed the masts. The crew immediately repaired damages, as far as possible, and set sail for home, where they arrived October 12th. It was, doubtless, the intention of the pirates to burn the brig, but seeing another vessel in the distance, and being eager for more plunder, they did not stop to fully accomplish their design, and the crew thus escaped a horrible fate. The "Mexican" had a crew of thirteen men; among those now living are John Battis, Jacob Anderson and Thomas Fuller, all of Salem.

Our government ordered a vessel to cruise in pursuit of the pirate, but she soon gave up the chase as hopeless. The piratical vessel was afterwards cap-

tured by an English vessel, and on August 27, 1834, H. B. M. brig "Savage," Lieutenant Commander Loney, commanding, from Portsmouth, England, arrived in Salem harbor with sixteen of the pirates as prisoners. They had an examination in Salem, and then were taken to Boston, and tried before Chief-Justice Story. Five of them were hanged June 11, 1835. Bernardo de Soto, the mate of the "Pinda," when master of the Spanish brig, "Leon," had, in 1831, at great personal risk, rescued seventy-two persons from the burning ship "Minerva," of Salem, Captain George W. Putnam, and for the bravery and humanity displayed by him on this occasion, he was pardoned by President Jackson.

Pernambuco was a port at which many Salem vessels touched for orders. There were not a great many direct entries at Salem from that port. The largest number was in 1826, when there were six entries. Among the entries were the brig "Welcome Return," Jeremiah Briggs, master, in September, 1809, consigned to Josiah Dow. The schooner "Hannah," Edward Briggs, master, in June, 1810, to Josiah Dow. The brig "Alonzo," Isaac Killam, master, in August, 1811, to John Derby. The schooner "Rising States," Samuel Lamson, master, in March, 1812, to James Cook. The ship "Endeavor," Nathaniel L. Rogers, master, in May, 1812, to John Forrester. The brig "Levant," Samuel Rea, master, in October, 1812, to Joseph Peabody. The brig "Cora," Philip P. Pinel, master, in September, 1815, to Jerathmael Peirce. The brig "Eliza," Stephen Gale, master, in November, 1819, to Benjamin Barstow. The brig "Eliza and Mary," S. Benson, master, in November, 1825, to S. White and F. H. Story. The brig "Olinda," R. Wheatland, master, in December, 1825, and in June, 1826, to Gideon Tucker. The brig "Washington," A. Marshall, master, in August, 1826, to William Fettyplace. The brig "Amethyst," R. Hill, Jr., master, in May, 1836, to Robert Upton. The brig "Mermaid," George Savory, master, in May, 1840, to Putnam I. Farnham. The brig "Gazelle," J. Dewing, master, in March, 1841, to Joseph Shatswell. The entry of the "Gazelle" closed the direct trade between Salem and Pernambuco. The principal article imported thence was sugar.

Bahia, Paraiba and Patagonia on the eastern coast, and Valparaiso, Lima and Guayaquil on the western coast of South America, were among the places from which vessels entered at the port of Salem. The trade with these places was not very extensive. The brig "Blakely," Benjamin Fabens, master, entered from Bahia in July, 1819, with molasses, consigned to William Fabens. The brig "Lion," J. P. Felt, master, entered from Bahia in June, 1821, consigned to John Dike. The brig "Augusta," Seth Rogers, master, entered from Bahia in March, 1824, consigned to Gideon Tucker. The brig "Mercator," Aaron Miller, master, entered from Bahia in September, 1826, consigned to John F. Andrew. The schooner "Generous," E. B. Hooper, master, made several voyages in 1832 and '33 between Salem and Paraiba, consigned to Michael Shepard. The ship "China," H. Putnam, master, entered from Lima in July, 1828, consigned to Joseph Peabody. The brig "Herald," Aaron W. Williams, master, entered from Guayaquil in August, 1824, consigned to George Nichols. The brig "Phœnix," George Hodges, Jr., master, entered from Guayaquil in December, 1826, with one hundred and sixty-six thousand one hundred and twenty pounds of cocoa, consigned to Moses Townsend. The brig "Java," Nathaniel Osgood, master, entered, from Guayaquil in January, 1829, and proceeded to New York.

The West Coast of Africa Trade.—If the natives on the west coast of Africa have been temperate they have been so in spite of the efforts of the Salem merchants, to supply them with the materials for intemperance. The trade opened early, and October 6, 1789, the schooner "Sally," and October 8, 1789, the schooner "Polly," cleared for Senegal, each with a cargo of New England rum; and from that time forward, Salem has contributed largely to spread a knowledge of the potent qualities of New England rum, of the astounding effects of gunpowder and of the consoling influences of Virginia tobacco, among the savage tribes of the West Coast. The Salem trade with this coast has been quite extensive. The period of the greatest activity was between the years 1832 and 1864. During that time, there were five hundred and fifty-eight arrivals at Salem from the West Coast of Africa. From 1844 to 1860, only the years 1854 and 1855 show less than twenty entries. Robert Brookhouse, Daniel Abbot, Putnam I. Farnham, David Pingree, William Hunt, Charles Hoffman, Edward D. Kimball and George West, were among those engaged in this trade. Hides, palm-oil, peanuts and gum-copal, were the principal articles imported. Among the entries were the brig "St. John," Thomas Bowditch, master, which entered from Sierra Leone in June, 1796, consigned to Henry Gardner & Co. The brig "Sukey," John Edwards, master, which entered from Senegal in July, 1801, consigned to Henry Prince & Co. The brig "Star," Richard J. Cleveland, master, entered from Goree in July, 1808, consigned to John Derby. The brig "Siren," James Vent, master, entered in March, 1828, consigned to Robert Brookhouse. The schooner "Fredonia," Charles Hoffman, master, in September, 1829, to Daniel Abbot. The brig "Shawmut," J. Emerton, master, in July, 1831, to Robert Brookhouse. The schooner "Complex," J. Burnham, master, in June, 1832, to Richard S. Rogers. The schooner "Dollar," John Stickney, master, in September, 1835, to Putnam I. Farnham. The brig "Selina and Jane," Joseph Rider, master, in August, 1836, to David Pingree. The brig "Elizabeth," N. Frye, master, in March, 1837, and in November, 1837, J. A. Phipps, master, consigned to William Hunt.

The brig "Cipher," J. Rider, master, in August, 1839, to Charles Hoffman. The brig "Tigris," N. A. Frye, master, in December, 1840, to Robert Brookhouse. The brig "Malaga," S. Varney, master, in October, 1844, to E. G. Kimball. The brig "Herald," P. Ayres, master, in February, 1845, to William Hunt. The brig "Hamilton," H. Tufts, master, in March, 1847, to Edward D. Kimball. The brig "Fawn," J. Rider, master, in June, 1847, to George West. The brig "Tam O'Shanter," J. R. Francks, master, in February, 1848, to Benjamin Webb. The brig "Ohio," Josiah Webber, master, in April, 1848, to Edward D. Kimball. After 1848 the trade was largely in the hands of Robert Brookhouse, Edward D. Kimball and Charles Hoffman. The last arrival at Salem from the West Coast of Africa was the brig "Ann Elizabeth," from Sierra Leone, which was entered by Charles Hoffman in July, 1873. Salem merchants are still engaged in this trade, but their vessels do not enter the harbor of Salem.

The West India Trade.—The early trade of Salem was mainly in the product of her fisheries. The first settlers came hither for the purpose of establishing a fishing and trading post, and among their first acts was the building of stages on which fish could be dried and prepared for consumption. The islands of the West Indies offered a market for the exchange of the fish for other products, such as sugar, cotton and tobacco, and it was natural that a trade between Salem and those islands should commence at a very early period. The island of Barbadoes, one of the Carribbean group, was one of the earliest places at which Salem vessels traded. Salem was trading with Barbadoes as early as 1647. William Hollingworth, then a merchant in Barbadoes, writes to his mother, Mrs. Eleanor Hollingworth, at Salem, under date of September 19, 1687, that "fish now att present bares a good rate by reason ye Newfoundland men are not yet come in but I believe itt will be low anuffe about three months hence. Oyle will be ye principal commoditie. Pray lett my brother see this letter. I cannot tell what to advise him to send as yett besides oyle but in a short time wee shall see what these Newfoundland men will doe, what quantity of fish they bring in, and then I will advise him further."

The ketch "Providence," John Grafton, master, on her passage from Salem to the West Indies, in September, 1669, was cast away on a rock in a rainy night, and six of the crew were drowned. The master, mate and a seaman remained on the rock till morning. They then succeeded, with difficulty, in reaching an island about half a mile away, where they found another of their company. There they remained eight days sustained by salt fish; and the last four days by cakes made from a barrel of flour which had been washed ashore. After four days they found a piece of touch-wood and a flint, and with the aid of a small knife, they struck fire. They framed a boat with a tarred mainsail and some hoops, and then fastened pieces of boards to them. With this boat, so made, they sailed ten leagues to Anguilla and St. Martin's, where they were kindly received. Joshua Ward was one of these sufferers.

The dangers to which these early navigators were exposed we can hardly realize. With no correct charts and with the rudest instruments, they had no method of fixing their exact location while at sea. The dangers of approaching coasts were also vastly greater, owing to the want of light-houses. Boston light-house was first lit up in 1716; Thatcher's Island light-house in 1771; and Baker's Island light-house in 1798. It is related that in 1788 a schooner from Bilboa, bound for Marblehead, was only saved from shipwreck by a seaman first seeing the rock in our harbor called "Satan," close to the bows (there was a snowstorm at the time), and shouting the fact to the crew; the captain being then for the first time aware of his true longitude on the coast.

Salem was trading with the Barbadoes for cotton in 1685, for in September of that year, as the small-pox raged there, the selectmen order "that all cotton-wool imported thence shall be landed on Baker's Island." In 1686 the Governor issues a pass to the pink "Speedwell," Thomas Beadle, master, to go to Barbadoes; to the ketch "Hannah," John Ingersoll, master, for Fayal and Barbadoes; to the ketch "Industry," Lewis Hunt, master, for St. Christopher's; and to the ketch "Penelope," Edward Hilliard, master, also for St. Christopher's. In 1688 a similar pass is issued to the ketch "Diligence," Gamaliel Hawkins, master, and the ketch "Virgin," John Allin, master, both bound for Antigua; and in 1689, to the pink "Dove," Zebulon Hill, master, and the ketch "James Bonaventure," Philip Prance, master, both bound for Barbadoes. In 1688 Philip English is trading with St. Christopher's.

The records of our early commerce are vague and fragmentary, but enough is known to indicate that the Salem trade with the West Indies was continued, in a greater or less degree, from the year 1638, when the ship "Desire" made a voyage to New Providence and Tortuga, and returned laden with cotton, tobacco, salt and negroes (slaves), the latter the first imported into New England, to a very late period in her commercial history. In 1639 the first importation of indigo and sugar seems to have been made, and in 1642 eleven vessels sailed from New England for the West Indies with lumber. The custom-house records prior to the Revolution have disappeared. Possibly they were destroyed in the great fire of 1774, when the custom-house was burned, or, it may be, carried to Halifax at the breaking out of the war. They have never been found, and we must content ourselves with such information as can be gleaned from other sources.

The law imposing a tax on sugar and molasses created great dissatisfaction among the Salem merchants, and there were many forfeitures in conse-

quence. It was upon a petition of James Cockle, Collector at Salem, for a warrant to search for smuggled molasses, heard at the old State House in Boston, February, 1761, that James Otis made his immortal plea against writs of assistance.

The temper of the usually law-abiding people of Salem regarding the imposition of these duties may be judged by their treatment of poor Thomas Row, who seems to have performed only his duty as a customs officer. From a local paper under the date of September 13, 1768, the following extract is made:

"One Row, a Custom House waiter, on Wednesday last, by informing an officer of the Customs that some measures were taken on board a vessel in this Harbor, to elude the payment of certain duties, engaged the attention of a number of the inhabitants, who determined to distinguish him in a conspicuous manner for his conduct in this service. Between the hours of ten and eleven A. M. he was taken from one of the wharves and conducted to the Common, where his head, body and limbs were covered with warm tar, and then a large quantity of feathers were applied to all parts which, by closely adhering to the tar, exhibited an odd figure, the drollery of which can easily be imagined. The poor waiter was then exalted to a seat on the front of a cart, and in this manner led into the Main Street, where a paper, with the word 'Informer' thereon, in large letters, was affixed to his breast, and another paper with the same word to his back. The scene drew together, within a few minutes, several hundred people, who proceeded with Huzzas and loud acclamation, through the town; and when arrived at the bounds of the compact part, opened to the Right and Left, when the waiter, the confused object of their ridicule descended from his seat, walked through the crowd and having received the strongest assurances that he should, the next time he came to this place, receive higher marks of distinction than those which were now conferred upon him, went immediately out of town."

While the trade between Salem and the West Indies was probably continuous from 1638 down to quite recent times, the last entry from Havana being in 1854, the period of the greatest activity was from 1798 to 1812. The entries from Havana and Martinico were four each in the year 1797, while in 1798 there were twenty-one from Havana and thirteen from Martinico. The largest number of arrivals from Havana in a single year was in 1800, when there were forty-one entries from that port. During that year there was imported into Salem over eight million pounds of sugar. In 1805 there were twenty-eight entries from Havana, and forty-four from Martinico. Between 1798 and 1812 there were three hundred and thirty-two entries from Havana, and two hundred and thirty-two from Martinico. There was a large trade in the latter part of the last century between Salem and Aux Cayes, Port-au-Prince and the other ports of the island of St. Domingo, and with the island of St. Eustatia. But while Salem vessels were found in almost every port in the West Indies, Havana and Martinico were the principal places with which trade was carried on.

A list of the merchants engaged in this trade would include the names of almost every one interested in commerce during the years that the West India trade flourished. Benjamin Pickman was engaged extensively in this trade and amassed a large fortune in it.

It is not possible, in the space allotted to this chapter, to give any extended list of the vessels entering from the West Indies. In the palmy days of this trade Salem was a point of distribution for large quantities of sugar and coffee, and the buyers from all parts of the country must have given a bustling and busy aspect to streets now quiet and almost deserted. It was a custom in those days to make up the cargo of a large vessel by inducing various persons to send adventures, the owner of the vessel getting a commission for buying and selling. The brig "Massafuero," Andrew Haraden, master, entered from Havana in September, 1805, with 150,000 pounds of sugar consigned to Joshua Ward, Jr.; 9000 to Timothy Wellman; 6000 to Eben Seccomb; 62,000 to S. B. Doane; 2000 to William Monroe; 20,000 to Robert Hooper & Sons; 4000 to John Jenks; 65,000 to William Gray; 4000 to Benjamin H. Hathorne; 5000 to Joshua Pope; 3000 to Joshua Phippen, Jr., and with a small quantity of merchandise consigned to Benjamin West. Among other entries from Havana, we find the ship "Mount Vernon," Elias H. Derby, Jr., master, which entered in May, 1799, with five hundred thousand pounds of sugar, consigned to Elias Hasket Derby, and paying a duty of $12,842.15, and the ship "Martha," Nicholas Thorndike, master, which entered in December, 1799, with four hundred thousand pounds of sugar; the two vessels landing nearly a million pounds of this commodity. In October, 1809, the schooner "Neutrality," Benjamin Fabens, master, entered from St. Bartholomew's with sugar and coffee consigned to William Fabens. The Fabens family for several generations have been engaged in trade with the West Indies as well as Cayenne. The last vessel to enter at Salem from Havana was the brig "Vincennes," on June 29, 1854, consigned to Phillips, Goodhue & Bowker.

THE RUSSIA TRADE.—Salem vessels opened the American trade with St. Petersburg. On the 15th of June, 1784, the bark "Light Horse," Captain Buffinton, was sent by Elias Hasket Derby with a cargo of sugar, and she was the first American vessel to trade at St. Petersburg.

Salem merchants, in the palmy days of her commerce, were largely engaged in trade with Russia. There have been two hundred and eighty-nine arrivals from the ports of Russia at Salem. The period of the greatest activity in this trade was from 1797 to 1811 inclusive, one hundred and sixty-two of the two hundred and eighty-nine entries having been made during that time. The largest number in a single year

was in 1811, when there were thirty-one entries. The war caused a suspension of the trade, and in 1812 there were but three entries and none in 1813 and 1814. In 1815 there were nine entries, and the trade continued till 1829, when it ceased almost entirely, there having been but about six entries after that year. The last vessel to enter from St. Petersburg was the ship "Eclipse," Johnson, master, to H. L. Williams, in September, 1843. All the East India merchants carried on more or less trade with Russia, and brought from there duck, hemp and iron, with which to make up their cargoes for the East. Elias Hasket Derby, William Gray, Joseph Peabody, Nathaniel West, William Orne, Nathaniel Silsbee, Gideon Barstow, Thomas Perkins, Pierce & Waite, Stephen Phillips, Joseph White, Pickering Dodge, Simon Forrester, William Silsbee, Stephen White, Dudley L. Pickman, John H. Andrews, James Devereux and Samuel Orne were among the Salem merchants engaged in this trade. A few of the earlier entries are given, showing the ports from which the vessels arrived.

The brig "Ceres," Thomas Simmons, master, entered from Russia, in October, 1789, with 1,546 pieces of sail-cloth and sheeting, 180 bundles of hemp, 948 bars of iron, and 359 hundredweight cordage. The brig "Iris," Benjamin Ives, master, entered from St. Petersburg in October,1790. The brig "Hind," John Bickford, master, cleared for the Baltic, June 17, 1790, with 600 barrels of tar, 10 barrels of turpentine, 4 hogsheads tobacco, 27 casks of rice, 21 hogsheads New England rum and 73 chests of Hyson tea, and entered from St. Petersburg, on her return, in November, 1790. The ship "Commerce," John Osgood, master, entered from St. Petersburg in December, 1790, again in November, 1791, and again in September, 1792. All these vessels were owned by William Gray. The brig "Good Intent," M. Haskell, master, entered from Russia in December, 1791, again in November, 1792, and again in November, 1793, consigned to Simon Forrester. The brig "Polly and Betsey," Gamaliel Hodges, master, entered from St. Petersburg in November, 1794, consigned to Joseph White. The bark "Essex," John Green, master, entered from Russia in January, 1795, and again in October, 1795, consigned to William Orne. The bark "Vigilant," Richard Wheatland, master, entered from Russia in October, 1795, consigned to Simon Forrester. The brig "Hopewell," James Dowling, master, entered from St. Petersburg in September, 1797, consigned to Nathaniel West. The bark "William," Benjamin Beckford, Jr., master, entered from St. Petersburg in January, 1798, and again in August, 1798, consigned to William Gray. The brig "Neptune," Robert Barr, master, entered from Russia in October, 1798, consigned to John Barr.

The first entry from Archangel appears to be that of the ship "Perseverance," Richard Wheatland, master, in October, 1798. She proceeded to Boston with her cargo. The brig "Fanny," Jesse Smith, master, entered from Archangel in November, 1798, with hemp, cordage, candles and soap, consigned to John Derby, Jr. The ship "Cincinnatus," Samuel Endicott, master, entered from St. Petersburg in November, 1799, consigned to Joseph Peabody. The brig "Good Hope," Nicholas Thorndyke, master, entered from St. Petersburg in October, 1801, consigned to Nathaniel West. The ship "Mount Vernon," Samuel Endicott, master, entered from St. Petersburg in September, 1804, consigned to Joseph Peabody. The brig "Admittance," C. Sampson, master, entered from St. Petersburg in September, 1805, consigned to John Osgood. The brig "Augusta," Timothy Haraden, master, entered from Archangel in September, 1810, consigned to Joseph Peabody. The ship "Friendship," Edward Stanley, master. entered from this same port in September, 1811, consigned to Jerathmael Peirce. The ship "America," Samuel Briggs, master, entered from Riga in April, 1812, consigned to Benjamin W. Crowninshield. The ship "Herald," Eleazer Graves, master, entered from Archangel in August, 1815, consigned to Nathaniel Silsbee. The brig "Saucy Jack," Nathaniel Osgood, master, entered from Archangel in November, 1815, consigned to Pickering Dodge.

Among the later arrivals was the brig "Niagara," Oliver Thayer, master, which entered from Cronstadt in September, 1828, consigned to Joseph Peabody.

The last two arrivals from Archangel appear to have been the ship "Diomede," Samuel L. Page, master, which entered from that port in October, 1820, and the schooner "Regulus," George Chinn, master, which entered in November, 1820, consigned to Edward Lander and others. The last arrival from Cronstadt was the brig "Mexican," H. Johnson, master, which entered in August, 1836, consigned to Joseph Peabody. There was no other arrival from Russia until September, 1843, when the ship "Eclipse," Johnson, master, entered from St. Petersburg, the last vessel to arrive at Salem from that port.

Trade with Spain and Portugal.—Among the earliest ports to which Salem sent the products of her fisheries for a market, were those of Spain and Portugal. This trade began before the year 1700, in which year Higginson speaks of the foreign trade of Salem, as being in "dry merchantable codfish for the markets of Spain and Portugal." Bilboa and Lisbon were among the ports earliest visited. In 1710 the ship "Macklesfield," a frigate of three hundred tons, belonging to London and from Lisbon, was cast away outside of Baker's Island and lost. In February, 1715, the ship "Hopewell," loaded with fish for Bilboa and anchored in the harbor, was driven ashore on the rocks in South Field. Most of her cargo was unloaded before she was got off.

Bilboa and Lisbon are mentioned as ports with which Salem vessels traded from 1714 to 1718.

Philip English was trading at Spanish ports from 1694 to 1720; and Richard Derby, from 1732 to 1757. The last entry from Bilboa was in 1809. The years 1803 and 1807 show each eight entries from Lisbon. From 1800 to 1808 the trade with Spain and Portugal was at its height. Bilboa, Cadiz, Barcelona, Malaga, Tarragona, Alicant, Lisbon and Oporto were among the ports from which Salem vessels brought cargoes. After the War of 1812 there were but few entries from either of those ports, saving that of an occasional cargo of salt from Cadiz.

The ship "Astrea," Henry Prince, master, entered from Alicant in April, 1799, with fifty-eight thousand and three gallons of brandy and four thousand four hundred and forty-six gallons of wine, consigned to Elias H. Derby, and paying a duty of $20,930.59. The brig "Favorite," Henry Rust, Jr., master, entered from Bilboa in December, 1800, consigned to Peter Lander & Co. The schooner "Willard," from Alicant in July, 1800, with red wine and brandy, to Willard, Peele & Co. The brig "Essex," Joseph Orne, master, from Barcelona in July, 1800, with red wine and soap to William Orne. The brig "Nancy," Thomas Barker, master, from Tarragona in October, 1801, with brandy to Samuel Gray. The snow "Concord," William Leech, Jr., master, from Oporto in September, 1802, with port wine, etc., to William Gray. The brig "Hannah,"[2] Clifford C. Byrne, master, from Malaga in November, 1802, with wine, etc., to Joseph White. The ship "Restitution," John Derby (3d), master, from Lisbon in April, 1805, with wine, figs and salt to Simon Forrester. The bark "Active," William P. Richardson, master, from Malaga in June, 1807, with twenty-three thousand seven hundred and forty-six gallons of Malaga wine to Timothy Wellman, Jr. The brig "Washington," Nathan Story, master, from Barcelona in July, 1807, with red wine, brandy and soap, consigned to Stephen Phillips. The brig "Sukey and Betsey," Caleb Cook, master, from Malaga in November, 1807, with wine and raisins to Edward Allen. The ship "Sally," Nathan Cook, master, from Lisbon in September, 1824, with salt, etc., to James Cook. The last entry from Lisbon was in 1829. The principal articles imported from Spain and Portugal were salt, wine, brandy and soap.

Trade with other European Ports.—Prior to the War of 1812 Salem vessels were to be found in all the principal ports of Europe, and Salem merchants were trading with Copenhagen, Gottenburg, Stockholm, Amsterdam, Antwerp, Hamburg, Rotterdam, London, Liverpool and Bordeaux. The principal trade with Copenhagen was between 1796 and 1807. There were eight entries in 1799; that with Gottenburg, from 1809 to 1812, and from 1820 to 1823, there being thirteen entries from that port in 1810; that with Antwerp, from 1817 to 1830, there being nine entries from that port in 1827; that with Hamburg, from 1798 to 1802, there being five entries in the last-named year; that with Amsterdam, from 1802 to 1806, there being five entries in the first-named year; and that with Bordeaux, from 1794 to 1807, there being twelve entries in 1804 and the same number in 1805, the whole period showing sixty-nine entries. There were only occasional entries from the other ports. The last entry from Copenhagen was in 1816: from Amsterdam, in 1823; from Antwerp, in 1836; from Hamburg, in 1828; from Gottenburg, in 1837; from Rotterdam, in 1834; and from Bordeaux, in 1815.

From Copenhagen the brig "Francis," J. Wallace master, entered in March, 1792, and again in November, 1792, with iron and glass, consigned to William Gray. The early trade with Copenhagen seems to have been carried on largely by Mr. Gray. John Fish, Ezekiel H. Derby, Joseph Peabody, Thomas Perkins, and George Crowninshield & Sons were also engaged in this trade. The whole number of entries from Copenhagen was forty-five. The last entry was the schooner "Rover," Josiah Dewing master, in August, 1816, consigned to Pickering Dodge.

The brig "Hector," Captain Lewis, arrived in 1788. While the brig lay at Marlstrand, where she discharged her cargo, a Swedish ship was wrecked on a very rough and rocky part of the island in a violent storm. The crew, with assistance from the land, soon got safely ashore, except the mate, who went overboard with the fore-mast, to the top of which he had retreated for safety. The mast remained attached to the wreck by the shrouds, and the man continued his hold on the mast, the waves continually breaking over him. The sea was in such violent agitation and the shore so rugged that an attempt to recover him was extremely hazardous. About twenty sail of Swedes were then in the harbor, whose boats were many of them employed to succor the distressed object, but returned without effecting it, intimidated by the danger. At length application was made to Captain Lewis's crew for their assistance, with the offer of a considerable pecuniary reward if they would make the attempt, even should it fail of success, but they nobly refused going on a mercenary principle. However, from pure motives of humanity, the mate and six hands went off in a boat, at the utmost hazard of their lives and under the discouraging representations of those Swedes who had before sailed, surmounted every danger, and brought the sufferer, with just the remains of life, ashore, after hanging, as it were, by a straw several hours in the water. The offer of money was now repeated to them, and again refused. The Governor of the place being made acquainted with the transaction, sent for these brave Americans to his house, and, taking each of them by the hand, made the most honorary acknowledgments for their successful exertions to rescue from destruction a subject of Sweden, but a stranger to them, and presented the mate with a golden spoon and each of the others with a silver spoon, as testi-

monies of their heroism and humanity, and also granted them the liberty of walking in any part of the city at any time of day or night, a privilege in which even their own subjects are not indulged. In short, so much was this act admired that it gained them every mark of respect from the citizens, and the name of an American, says the account, became synonymous with that of hero and friend.

From Gottenburg the schooner "Nancy," Richard Derby master, entered in August, 1791, with iron, consigned to E. H. Derby, Jr., & Co. and John Fisk. The ship "Nancy," J. Devereux master, entered in August, 1792, consigned to John Fisk. From 1794 to 1804 there were no entries from this port. The ship "Rising States," Benjamin Beckford, Jr., master, entered in February, 1804, with hemp, to William Gray. The schooner "Saucy Jack," Benjamin Upton master, in September, 1809, with glass, to Timothy Wellman, Jr. The brig "Neptune," Henry King master, in December, 1810, with cordage, steel and sheet-iron, to John Saunders. The ship "China," Hiram Putnam, master, in October, 1820, with iron, to Joseph Peabody. The brig "Jane," Thomas Saul master, in July, 1820, with iron, to Willard Peele. The brig "Roscoe," J. Briggs master, in October, 1825, with iron, to Charles Saunders. The brig "Cynthia," Benjamin Shillaber master, in October, 1826, to David Pingree. The ship "Borneo," I. Nichols master, in September, 1835, with iron, consigned to Z. F. Silsbee. The brig "Leander," J. S. Kimball master, in August, 1836, to Joseph Peabody. The whole number of entries from Gottenburg was sixty-one. The last entry was the brig "Mexican," in July, 1837, consigned to Joseph Peabody.

From Antwerp the ship "Messenger," Edward Stanley master, entered in June, 1817, consigned to John Forrester. The brig "Nancy Ann," John B. Osgood master, in August, 1817, to Stephen Phillips. The brig "Naiad," Nathaniel Osgood master, in July, 1823, to Gideon Barstow and others. The brig "Indus," Thomas Moriarty master, in April, 1826, to Pickering Dodge. The brig "Centurion," William Duncan master, in May, 1826, with linseed-oil, to Nathaniel West, Jr. The ship "Friendship," Nathaniel Osgood master, in May, 1827. The brig "Niagara," Oliver Thayer master, in August, 1829, to Joseph Peabody. The whole number of entries from Antwerp was fifty-five. The last entry was the brig "Curlew," J. Cheever master, in October, 1836, consigned to Edward Allen.

From Amsterdam the brig "Peggy," Jonathan Derby master, entered in September, 1794, with glassware, paint, iron, steel and ribbons, consigned to Benjamin Pickman, Jr. The ship "Essex," Solomon Stanwood master, in September, 1800, with forty-two thousand eight hundred and seventy-one pounds of cheese, five thousand pounds of nails and eight thousand gallons of gin, to Nathaniel West and William Gray. The ship "Minerva," Matthew Folger master, in September, 1802, with gin, steel and cheese, to West, Williams & Crowninshield. The whole number of entries from Amsterdam was twenty-three. The last entry was the ship "Endeavour," James D. Gillis master, in October, 1823.

From Hamburg the schooner "John," Benjamin Webb master, entered in December, 1792, with steel, glass and spirits, consigned to John Fisk. The schooner "Patty," Edward Allen, Jr., master, in October, 1794, with gin, brandy, hemp and Bohea tea, to Nathaniel West. The brig "Hope," Benjamin Shillaber master, in October, 1794, to John Norris. The brig "Salem," Oliver Obear master, in June, 1799, with gin and hemp, to William Gray. The ship "Friendship," Israel Williams master, in July, 1799, to Peirce & Wait. The brig "Thetis," John Fairfield master, in November, 1799, to Jonathan Gardner. The schooner "Cynthia," John H. Andrews master, in November, 1801, to Pickering Dodge and others. The brig "Helen," Samuel C. Martin master, in December, 1816, with iron, to Humphrey Devereux. The brig "Roscoe," Benjamin Vanderford master, in September, 1823. The whole number of entries from Hamburg was thirty-six. The last entry was the brig "Texel," Samuel Wells master, in January, 1828.

From Rotterdam the ship "Peggy," James Very master, entered in August, 1791. The ship "Active," George Nichols master, in August, 1803, with gin, to Benjamin Hodges & Co. The bark "Georgetown," Joshua Safford master, in September, 1806, to Pickering Dodge. The brig "Indus," John Day master, in November, 1823, with white-lead, nutmegs and mace, to Henry Prince. The whole number of entries from Rotterdam was sixteen. The last entry was the ship "Borneo," C. Prescott master, in May, 1834.

From Bordeaux the brig "Essex," John Green master, entered in November, 1790, consigned to Orne & Saunders. The brig "Columbia," Henry Rust master, in April, 1792, to William Gray. The brig "Nancy," Edward West master, in July, 1794, with wine and sweetmeats, to John Derby, Jr. The brig "Favorite," Peter Lander master, in October, 1795, to John Norris & Co. The schooner "Betsey," Israel Williams master, in November, 1796, with brandy, wine and cheese, to Peirce & Wait. The brig "Exchange," William Richardson master, in May, 1797, with claret wine and brandy, to Ezekiel H. Derby. The schooner "Jason," Benjamin West, Jr., master, in June, 1797, to Benjamin West & Son. The brig "Nancy," Jonathan Neal master, in August, 1797, to William Gray. The brig "Catherine," Daniel Gould master, in May, 1803, to Joseph Peabody. The brig "Pompey," James Gilchrist master, in March, 1804, with wine and twenty-one thousand seven hundred and seventy-two gallons of brandy, to Joshua Ward. The ship "Prudent," Edward Ford master, in July, 1804, to Nathaniel West. The brig

"Edwin," Penn Townsend master, in October, 1804, with wine and prunes, to Moses Townsend. The brig "Industry, J. Cook master, in February, 1805, to William Orne. The ship "Algol," Thomas Folinsbie master, in October, 1807, with wine, to Nathan Robinson. The whole number of entries from Bordeaux was seventy-five. The last entry was the schooner "Cyrus," Benjamin Upton master, in November, 1815, with brandy, yellow ochre and prunes, to Robert Upton.

From Stockholm the ship "China," H. Putnam master, entered in August, 1823, consigned to Joseph Peabody. The brig "Centurion," Samuel Hutchinson master, in October, 1829, with iron, consigned to Gideon Tucker.

From Christiana the brig "Industry," Samuel Smith master, entered in March, 1812, with iron hoops and window-glass, to William Orne. The brig "Cuba," Josiah B. Andrew master, in November, 1816, with iron, steel and glass, to John Andrew.

On the 7th of January, 1796, the ship "Margaret," of Boston, John Mackey master, with a valuable cargo from Amsterdam, went ashore in Salem harbor, on the Eastern Gooseberry, during a snow-storm. The captain and three others perished on the wreck. The rest were saved by men from Marblehead. On the 11th of the same month the brig "John," Ebenezer B. Ward master, from London, was lost on the Great Misery during a snow-storm. There was at this time no light on Baker's Island, and these shipwrecks led the Salem Marine Society to send a memorial to Congress, dated in February, 1796, in which it is stated that "much of the property and many of the lives of their fellow-citizens are almost every year lost in coming into the harbor of Salem, for want of proper lights to direct their course. No less than three vessels, with their cargoes, and sixteen seamen have been lost the present season." The act authorizing the erection of a light-house on Baker's Island was approved April 8, 1796, and the lights were shown for the first time January 3, 1798.

On the 21st of February, 1802, the ship "Ulysses," Captain James Cook, the "Brutus," Captain William Brown, owned by the Messrs. Crowninshield, and the "Volucia," Captain Samuel Cook, belonging to Israel Williams and others, sailed from Salem for Bordeaux and the Mediterranean. When they departed the weather was remarkably pleasant for the season, but in a few hours a furious snow-storm commenced. After using every exertion to clear Cape Cod, the tempest forced them the next day upon its perilous shore. The "Volucia" struck in the forenoon and the other two in the evening. The first was saved with part of her cargo, but the others were total wrecks. The saddest part of this catastrophe was the loss of life in the "Brutus." One hand was killed by the fore-yard prior to the ship's striking, another was drowned while attempting to reach the shore, and the commander, with six men, perished with the cold after they had landed. Captain Samuel Cook, of the "Volucia," was associated with mercantile affairs in Salem for a long period. He was born August 3, 1769, and was the son of Stephen and Elizabeth (Newhall) Cook. In 1797 he was commanding a vessel bound for Cadiz. During the palmy days of the East India trade he was engaged in distributing that wealth through the South. He died in Salem December 10, 1861, having lived through the whole period of the rise and decline of the commerce of Salem.

MEDITERRANEAN TRADE.—Besides the Spanish ports on the Mediterranean, Salem vessels visited Marseilles, Genoa, Naples, Leghorn, Messina, Palermo, Smyrna and Trieste. Salt, wine, brandy, figs, raisins, almonds, candles and soap were among the articles imported from those ports. Leghorn and Marseilles were the ports most frequently visited. From 1804 to 1808 there were forty-six entries from the former and twenty from the latter port. From 1821 to 1829 there were forty-one entries from Leghorn and seventeen from Marseilles. The last entry from Leghorn was in 1841 and from Marseilles in 1833. The principal trade with the Mediterranean ports was from 1800 to 1808.

From Leghorn the ship "Martha," John Prince, Jr., master, entered in July, 1799, with 40,893 gallons of wine, 18,490 gallons of brandy and 6744 pounds of soap, consigned to Elias H. Derby, and paying a duty of $12,840.12. The ship "Lucia," Thomas Meek master, in July, 1800, with brandy, soap, etc., to William Gray, and paying a duty of $20,301. The brig "Sukey," Samuel Sweet master, in August, 1800, to Simon Forrester. The ship "Friendship," Israel Williams master, in September, 1805, to Peirce & Wait. The brig "Betsey," Andrew Tucker master, in June, 1806, with soap, tallow, figs, currants, raisins, almonds and candles, to Joseph Peabody and Gideon Tucker. The ship "America," Joseph Ropes master, in June, 1807, to Nathaniel Silsbee. The ship "Hope," James Barr master, in November, 1807. The brig "William and Charles," Isaac Killam master, in November, 1807, with soap, candles, currants and wine, to Michael Shepard. There were no entries from Leghorn from 1808 to 1816. The ship "Sophia," Jonathan P. Felt master, entered in April, 1816, consigned to Charles H. Orne. The ship "Eliza," William Osgood master, in January, 1821, to Stephen Phillips. The brig "Essex," William Fairfield master, in January, 1822, with candles, soap, raisins, etc., to Nathaniel Silsbee. The ship "Two Brothers," William Messervy master, in February, 1823, to Holton J. Breed. The brig "Gov. Endicott," H. C. Mackay master, in October, 1823, to Pickering Dodge. The brig "Malay," J. Richardson, master, in May, 1825, with lead and currants, to Nathaniel Silsbee. The bark "Patriot," John Marshall master, in August, 1826, to John H. Andrew. The ship "Janus," Henry G. Bridges master, in August, 1829,

with salt, wine and letter-paper, to Gideon Tucker. The brig "Amazon," Oliver Thayer master, in March, 1832, with salt, etc., to Joseph Peabody. The last vessel to arrive from Leghorn was the brig "Mexican," H. Johnson master. She entered in September, 1839, in March, 1840, and in September, 1841, consigned on each voyage to Joseph Peabody. The whole number of entries from Leghorn was one hundred and thirteen.

From Marseilles the schooner "Union," Stephen Field master, entered in October, 1802, consigned to Edward Allen. The ship "Ulysses," William Mugford master, in August, 1804, with prunes, almonds, 18,199 pounds of soap, 48,233 gallons of wine and 1571 gallons of brandy, consigned to William Gray. The ship "Endeavour," James Buffinton master, in July, 1805, with 44,902 gallons of claret wine, etc., to Simon Forrester. The brig "Industry," Jonathan Cook master, in March, 1806, to William Orne. The brig "Sukey," Samuel B. Graves master, in November, 1807, to Nathan Pierce. The schooner "Agawam," Francis Boardman master, in June, 1816, to John Dodge. The ship "Perseverance," James Silver master, in October, 1816, with salt, brandy and claret wine, to Willard Peele and William Fettyplace. The brig "Cygnet," Samuel Kennedy master, in July, 1823, with wine, to Stephen White. The brig "Java," William H. Neal master, in September, 1823, with 35,295 gallons of red wine, 1045 gallons of oil and 9708 pounds of soap, to Jonathan Neal. The ship "Endeavour," J. Kinsman master, in December, 1827, to Dudley L. Pickman. The ship "Messenger," James Buffinton master, in January, 1828, to John Forrester. The ship "Bengal," J. Richardson master, in August, 1830, to Pickering Dodge. The whole number of entries from Marseilles was fifty-three. The last entry was the brig "Roque," T. Seaver master, in February, 1833, with salt, etc., to Joseph Peabody.

From Naples the ketch "John," Stephen Phillips master, entered in March, 1799, with 25,000 gallons of brandy and 46,417 pounds of soap, consigned to Elias H. Derby, and paying a duty of $11,299. The brig "Cruger," John Barton master, in July, 1800, with soap and wine, to John & Richard Derby. The ship "John," Daniel Bray master, in May, 1804, with 32,437 gallons of wine, to Benjamin Pickman, Jr. The brig "Belleisle," Samuel Leech master, in August, 1805, to Pickering Dodge and Nathan Robinson. The ship "Hercules," Edward West master, was seized in Naples in 1809, but Captain West had the good fortune to obtain her release in order to transport Lucien Bonaparte and family to Malta, thus saving his ship from confiscation. The "Hercules" was owned by Nathaniel West. The schooner "Joanna," Jonathan Hassam master, entered in January, 1810, with brandy, etc., to Samuel Gray. The last entry from Naples was the ship "Francis," William Haskell master, in August, 1810. This vessel was purchased of the Neapolitan government by the American consul to bring home the crews of American vessels confiscated by order of that government. She brought two hundred and fourteen persons, a large number of whom belonged in Salem. The Salem vessels and cargoes condemned at Naples were valued at seven hundred and eighty-three thousand dollars.

The ship "Margaret," of Salem, William Fairfield master, left Naples April 10, 1810, with a crew, fifteen in number, and thirty-one passengers. On Sunday, May 20th, a squall struck the ship, and she was thrown on her beam-ends. As every person on board was on deck at the time, they all reached either the bottom or side of the ship, the waves at the time making a continual breach over her. Monday morning the sea was tolerably smooth, and one of the boats having been repaired, Captain Fairfield and fourteen men left the ship in her, and were picked up on Saturday, May 26th, by the brig "Poacher," of Boston. The sufferings of those left on the wreck can hardly be imagined. After the long-boat had departed they raised a signal of distress. On the 28th a gale swept away the stage they had erected, and the provisions they had gathered, except a small quantity of wine and salt meat. On the 30th they made another stage over the forecastle, and so kept themselves out of the water. June 3d one of the number died of fatigue and famine. For seven days they had nothing to drink each day but an allowance of three gallons of wine for all, and a glass of vinegar for each man. Many could not resist the temptation to quench their thirst from a pipe of brandy which had been saved from the cargo. On the 5th twelve of their number, overcome by their hardships and privations, died, and another on the next day. By the sixth the whole of the upper deck had gone, and no food was left but beef and pork, which could not be eaten because there was no fresh water. Since the time of the disaster, May 20th, four vessels had passed in sight of the sufferers on the wreck and added the pangs of disappointed hope to their other trials.

On the 7th, five of the number left the wreck in a small yawl. These were John C. Very, E. A. Irvin, and Jeptha Layth, of Salem; Henry Larcom, of Beverly; and John Treadwell, of Ipswich. They left about ten survivors on the wreck, and from these no tidings ever came. Who can imagine their agony, as hope gradually faded out, and they died one by one in mid-ocean. The escape of those in the small boat is a remarkable instance of human endurance, amid sufferings and hardships almost incredible. For sixteen days after leaving the wreck they had nothing to sustain them but brandy, a gill in twenty-four hours; and to quench their thirst were obliged to resort to most revolting means. On the night of June 22d there was a fall of rain, and water was caught in handkerchiefs, sufficient to partially allay their thirst.

June 23d, Treadwell, worn out with fatigue, hunger, and thirst, died without a struggle. The same day they caught some rudder fish, which was the first food they had eaten since they had left the wreck. On the twenty-eighth Layth died, leaving three survivors in the boat. The next day, with a heavy sea running, they lost their oars and mast, and having nothing to steer by they gave themselves up for lost. They had already been passed by three vessels, when, on the 30th, they saw another in the distance, and strained every nerve to get in her track. In this they were successful, and Captain Stephen L. Davis, of Gloucester, the master of the vessel, received them and treated them with great care and kindness. Tossed about in a small and shattered boat for twenty-three days, with scarcely any food or water to sustain them, exposed to storms and gales in which it seemed hardly possible that such a craft could keep afloat, their escape from such extraordinary perils and privations is hardly paralleled in the history of marine disasters.

From Messina, the ship "Prudent," Benjamin Crowninshield, master, entered in December, 1803, with 11,406 gallons of red wine, 6,413 gallons of white wine, 4,303 gallons of brandy, and 9,810 pounds of soap, consigned to Nathaniel West. The ship "Two Brothers," John Holman, master, in October, 1804, to Israel Williams. The brig "Louisa," Richard Ward, Jr., master, in August, 1810, to James Cook. The brig "Harriot," Samuel Becket, master, in October, 1811, with soap, raisins, almonds and wine to Nathaniel Silsbee. The brig "Eliza and Mary," Thorndike Procter, master, in August, 1818, to Stephen White. The last entry was the brig "Centurion," Samuel Hutchinson, master, in June, 1831, with currants, oil, &c., to Gideon Tucker.

From Smyrna, the brig "Independence," Nathaniel L. Rogers, master, entered in April, 1810, to Dudley L. Pickman. The brig "Reward," James Hayes, Jr., master, in July, 1810, with almonds, raisins and figs, consigned to Charles H. Orne and Dudley L. Pickman. The brig "Resolution," Samuel Rea, master, in April, 1812, to Joseph Peabody. The brig "Hope," John Beckford, master, in December, 1829, with one hundred and twenty-five thousand pounds of figs, to Daniel Abbot and Robert Stone. The last entry was the brig "Leander," James Silver, master, in January, 1831, with salt, figs, raisins and wool, to Joseph Peabody.

From Trieste, the brig "Texel," Charles Hill, master, entered in December, 1825, with olive oil and lead, consigned to John W. Rogers. The bark "Eliza," Samuel Benson, master, in July, 1829, with hemp and glass, to Stephen White.

The brig "Persia," John Thistle, master, from Trieste for Salem, belonging to Silsbee, Stone & Pickman, and having a cargo of rags and sumac, was wrecked in the storm of March 5, 1829, on a rocky shore near Brace's Cove, about a mile and a half below Eastern Point, Gloucester, and all on board perished.

From Genoa, the brig "Nereus," David A. Neal, master, entered in March, 1822, with raisins, &c., to John W. Rogers. The brig "Rebecca," J. P. Andrews, master, in July, 1831, to John H. Andrew.

Among other entries was that of the brig "Telemachus," Penn Townsend, master, from Constantinople in May, 1810, with cordage figs, raisins and currants, to David Burditt.

Among the last voyages projected by Elias Hasket Derby was one up the Mediterranean, by the ship "Mount Vernon," in 1799. Hostilities had commenced between the United States and France. American trade had been rendered unsafe, and, as a consequence, a great demand for sugar had arisen in the ports of the Mediterranean. At this crisis Mr. Derby had built the ship "Mount Vernon," of three hundred and fifty-six tons, equipped her with twenty guns, manned her with fifty men, and, after loading her with eight hundred cases of sugar, placed her in the hands of his son, Elias Hasket, with a sailing-master. The cargo cost forty-three thousand two hundred and seventy-five dollars. The following letter, written by his son, is interesting as showing the risks attending our commercial ventures at this period:

"GIBRALTAR, 1st August, 1799.

"E. H. DERBY, ESQ., Salem:

"*Honored Sir:* I think you must be surprised to find me here so early. I arrived at this port in seventeen and one-half days from the time my brother left the ship. In eight days and seven hours were up with Carvo, and made Cape St. Vincent in sixteen days. The first of our passage was quite agreeable; the latter light winds, calm, and Frenchmen constantly in sight for the last four days. The first Frenchman we saw was off Tercira—a lugger to the southward. Being uncertain of his force, we stood by him to leeward on our course, and soon left him. July 28th, in the afternoon, we found ourselves approaching a fleet of upwards of fifty sail steering nearly northeast. We ran directly for their centre; at four o'clock found ourselves in their half-moon; concluding it impossible that it could be any other than the English fleet, continued our course for their centre to avoid any apprehension of a want of confidence in them. They soon dispatched an eighteen-gun ship from their centre, and two frigates—one from their van and another from their rear—to beat toward us, we being to windward. On approaching, under easy sail, the centre ship I fortunately bethought myself that it would be but common prudence to steer so far to windward of him as to be a grape-shot distance from him, to observe his force and manœuvering. When we were abreast of him he fired a gun to leeward and hoisted English colors. We immediately bore away and meant to pass under his quarter, between him and the fleet, showing our American colors. This movement disconcerted him, and it appeared to me he conceived we were either an American sloop of war or an English one in disguise, attempting to cut him off from the fleet; for, while we were in the act of wearing on his beam, he hoisted French colors and gave us his broadside. We immediately brought our ship to the wind and stood on about a mile; wore toward the centre of the fleet; hove about and crossed him on the other tack, about half grape-shot distance, and received his broadside. Several of his shot fell on board of us and cut our sails, two round-shot striking us without much damage. All hands were active in clearing ship for action, for our surprise had been complete. In about ten minutes we commenced firing our stern-chasers, and in a quarter of an hour gave him our broadside in such a style as evidently sickened him; for he immediately luffed in the wind, gave us his broadside, went in stays in great confusion, wore ship afterward in a large circle, and renewed the chase at a mile and a half distance, a manœuvre calculated to keep up appearances with the fleet and to escape our shot. We received seven or eight broadsides from him, and I was mortified at not having it in my power to return him an equal number without exposing myself to the rest of the fleet, for I am persuaded I should have had the pleasure of sending him home, had he been separate from them.

"At midnight we had distanced them, the chasing rocket-signals being almost out of sight, and soon left them. We then kept ourselves in constant preparation till my arrival here; and, indeed, it has been requisite, for we have been in constant brushes ever since. The day after we left the fleet we were chased till night by two frigates, whom we lost sight of when it was dark. The next morning off Cape St. Vincent, in the latitude of Cadiz, were chased by a French lateen-rigged vessel, apparently of ten or twelve guns—one of them an eighteen pounder. We brought to for him; his metal was too heavy for ours, and his position to windward, where he lay just in a situation to cast his shot over us, and it was not in my power to cut him off; we, of course, bore away and saluted him with our long nines. He continued in chase till dark, and when we were nearly by Cadiz, at sunset, he made a signal to his consort, a large lugger, whom we had just discovered ahead. Having a strong breeze, I was determined to pass my stern over him, if he did not make way for me. He thought prudent so to do. At midnight we made the lights in Cadiz City, but found no English fleet. After laying to till daylight, concluded that the French must have gained the ascendency in Cadiz, and thought prudent to proceed to this place, where we arrived at twelve o'clock, popping at Frenchmen all the forenoon. At ten A. M. off Algesiras Point, were seriously attacked by a large latineer, who had on board more than a hundred men. He came so near our broadside as to allow our six-pound grape to do execution handsomely. We then bore away and gave him our stern-guns in a cool and deliberate manner, doing apparently great execution. Our bars having cut his sails considerably, he was thrown into confusion, struck both his ensign and his pennant. I was then puzzled to know what to do with so many men; our ship was running large, with all her steering-sails out, so that we could not immediately bring her to the wind, and we were directly off Algesiras Point, from whence I had reason to fear she might receive assistance, and my port (Gibraltar) in full view. These were circumstances that induced me to give up the gratification of bringing him in. It was, however, a satisfaction to flog the rascal in full view of the English fleet, who were to leeward. The risk of sending here is great, indeed, for any ship short of our force in men and guns—but particularly heavy guns. Two nines are better than six or eight sixes; and two long twelves or thirteen pounders do better than twenty sixes, and could be managed with few men.

"It is absolutely necessary that two government ships should occasionally range the straits and latitude of Cadiz, from the longitude of Cape St. Vincent. I have now, while writing to you, two of our countrymen in full view, who are prizes to these villains. Lord St. Vincent, in a fifty-gun ship, bound for England, is just at this moment in the act of retaking one of them. The other goes into Algesiras without molestation.

"I find that nothing is to be done here with advantage except to obtain information from above. I have been offered thirty dollars to deliver my sugar at Naples, where I think I shall go; but rather expect to sell at Venice, Constantinople or Genoa, in case the French are driven from there. I have concluded to touch at Malaga with Captain Young, of Boston, and obtain what information I can; and think I may direct Mr. White how to lay out the property in his hands, against my return, as I think it for your interest to have it out of Spain. You need have but little apprehension for my safety, as my crew are remarkably well trained and are perfectly well disposed to defend themselves, and I think, after having cleared ourselves from the French in such a handsome manner, you may well conclude that we can effect almost any thing. If I should go to Constantinople, it will be from a passport from Admiral Nelson, for whom I carry a letter to Naples.

"Your affectionate son,

"ELIAS HASKET DERBY."

In subsequent letters Mr. Derby writes: "My sales here amount to about $120,000, which I have found impossible to invest immediately in a cargo proper for America. I have, therefore, contracted for $60,000 in silks called ormazene, and about seven hundred casks of wine. In the meantime, whilst the silks are in the loom, I have thought it for your interest to purchase two polacca-rigged ships, of two hundred and ninety and three hundred and ten tons, both of them very fine ships, almost new and great sailers. They are now ready to proceed with the 'Mount Vernon' for Manfredonia, to take on your account cargoes of wheat to Leghorn, which, from the rising state of the market, I think will more than clear the ships. They cost, with all expenses, about $16,000. The two ships made a voyage for wheat and cleared nearly $30,000 in two and a half months." Mr. Derby dined with Lord Nelson and the officers of the fleet at Naples. The beautiful Lady Hamilton was present at this dinner. The "Mount Vernon" arrived home safely, with a cargo of silks, wines and brass cannon, and realized a net profit of more than one hundred thousand dollars on a capital of forty-three thousand, two hundred and seventy-five dollars, the cost of the outward cargo.

The foregoing account illustrates the great disadvantages, in some respects, under which the commerce of that period was prosecuted. Mr. Derby desired to return to Salem from the Mediterranean by the fall of 1799, but his silks must be manufactured and he must wait till the red wine of Port Iolo is ready to ship. "Exchange on London," he says, "is very disadvantageous, besides the uncertainty of it, and to leave property in a distracted country like this, where they guillotine six a day, three or four times a week, would be madness." So he must perforce remain till his cargo is ready, and that he may not remain in idleness, he buys two ships and freights wheat to Leghorn, and makes nearly thirty thousand dollars in less than three months. He returned in 1800 with the "Mount Vernon" and a valuable cargo. Great as were the obstacles placed in the way of trade at that period, these very drawbacks made possible the sometimes enormous profits of the voyage, so that although to-day trade is carried on with greater facility, there is no such opportunity for making a fortune in a single venture, as was possible about a hundred years ago.

THE NOVA SCOTIA TRADE.—About the year 1840 the trade between Salem and Nova Scotia, and the other British provinces on the eastern coast of North America, began to be vigorously prosecuted, mainly by English vessels, whose captains often owned both ship and cargo. This trade increased very rapidly. Wood, coal and plaster were among the principal articles of import. In 1840 there were fifteen entries; in 1845, one hundred and seven; in 1850, three hundred and ninety-one; in 1855, three hundred and twenty-eight: in 1860, two hundred and fifteen; in 1865, one hundred and eighteen; in 1870, one hundred and seventeen; in 1875, fifty-nine; in 1878, fifty-three; in 1886, ninety. During the thirty years from 1841 to 1870, inclusive, there were five thousand seven hundred and twenty-four entries. The period of the greatest activity was from 1848 to 1857, inclusive, when there were 3253 entries, or an average of 325 for each year.

THE CALIFORNIA TRADE.—A letter giving definite information of the discovery of gold in California reached Salem in October, 1848. The brig "Mary and Ellen" was then fitting for sea. A cargo suita-

ble for the California trade was at once put on board, by Stephen C. Phillips and others, and the brig, under command of Captain J. H. Eagleston, was cleared October 27, 1848, for the Sandwich Islands *via* California. Salem again takes the lead, for this was the first vessel to sail for California from Massachusetts after the gold discovery. Both vessel and cargo were sold in California. The first vessel that cleared from Massachusetts for San Francisco direct, with an assorted cargo and passengers, was the bark "Eliza," of Salem, loaded by John Bertram and others, and commanded by Captain A. S. Perkins. She left Salem December 23, 1848, and arrived at San Francisco June 1, 1849. Alfred Peabody, of Salem, was among the passengers, and upon his arrival he found that Captain Eagleston had already sold the "Mary and Ellen," and her cargo. John Beadle, Jr., Dennis Rideout, George P. Buffum, George W. Kenney and Jonathan Nichols, all of Salem, were passengers with Mr. Peabody.

The bark "Lagrange," Joseph Dewing, master, sailed from Salem for San Francisco March 17, 1849, taking as passengers the "Salem and California Trading Company," among whom were Joseph Dewing, Anthony Francis, Nicholas Bovey, J. K. Vincent, P. Gilman, John H. Pitman, H. B. Bogardus, H. A. Tuttle, C. R. Story, A. Robbins, John McCloy, George Harris, C. C. Teele, Joseph L. Bartlett, William P. Leavitt, Thomas B. Flowers, Eben Chapman, Charles E. Brown, William H. Sibley, O. A. Gordon, John H. Dakin, Daniel Couch, D. A. Nichols, Moses Prime, Edward Fuller, William Brown, B. F. Symonds, William Sinclair and James Stewart, of the Trading Company, and Nathaniel Osgood and Richard H. Austin, all of Salem. On board the same vessel were twelve passengers from Danvers, four from Lynn, two each from Manchester and Beverly, four from Gloucester and about ten from other places.

The ship "Elizabeth," J. S. Kimball, master, was cleared for San Francisco April 3, 1849, by W. P. Phillips. Brackley R. Peabody and Robert M. Copeland, of Salem, went as passengers. The bark "Ann Parry," Wm. M. Harron, master, was cleared June 20, 1849, for San Francisco, by Benjamin Webb. James C. Briggs and Wm. H. Clark, of Salem, were passengers. The ship "Talma," Wm. B. Davis, master, cleared September 11, 1849, and the bark "Backus," A. D. Caulfield, Jr., master, cleared November 28, 1849, for San Francisco. In the "Backus" Joseph Allen, Charles R. Julyn, Thomas W. Taylor, Wm. Stafford and Wm H. Brown went as passengers.

The ship "Crescent," John Madison, master, cleared for Benicia, Cal., December 3, 1849. She had been purchased by the Salem Mechanics' Trading and Mining Association, and was loaded with one hundred and thirty thousand feet of lumber, framed and made ready for erection into houses, and the frame-work of a small steamboat. On the 6th of December the "Crescent" left Salem with the following-named members of the association as passengers: Albert Lackey, Thomas J. Gifford, Dean C. Symonds, John Madison, Thomas Dickson, Jr., John H. Newton, Jonathan Davis, Eben Waters, Nathaniel Jenkins, John D. Chapple, Edward A. Wheeler, George S. Nichols, John P. Dickson, Joshua Pope, Gilman Andrews, Israel Herrick, Charles L. Hardy, Wm. Graves, Wm. P. Buffum, Asa A. Whitney, Wm. H. Searles, James Gardner, Payne Morse, Benjamin S. Boardman, Samuel H. Larrabee and John Nichols, all of Salem, and a number from Lawrence, Fitchburg, Lynn and Newton, in all numbering about sixty-one. She arrived at her destination May 26, 1850, and was sold, with her cargo, very soon after arrival.

During the gold excitement a large number of Salem residents went to California, sailing from other ports. Stephen C. Phillips and John Bertram were among those engaged in the California trade.

Salem Tonnage.—In 1793 twelve ships were owned in Salem; in 1807, sixty; and in 1833 only twenty-nine. In 1825 there were thirty-two ships, five barks, ninety-five brigs, sixty schooners, and six sloops owned in Salem, measuring thirty-four thousand two hundred and twenty-four tons—the ship "Nile," of four hundred tons, was the largest; and in 1828 thirty ships, one hundred and two brigs, eight barks and thirty schooners, the largest being the ship "Arabella," of four hundred and four tons. In 1833 there were one hundred and eleven Salem vessels engaged in the foreign trade.

For some time after Salem ceased to be a port to which vessels from foreign countries brought their cargoes, Salem merchants continued to own a large amount of tonnage, but they transacted their business mainly in Boston and New York. At the present time (1887) there are hardly a dozen vessels hailing from Salem engaged in the foreign trade. The ship "Highlander," 1352 tons, owned by Benjamin W. Stone; the ships "Sooloo," 963 tons; "Mindoro," 1021 tons; and "Panay," 1190 tons, owned by Silsbee, Pickman & Allen; the barks "Glide," 493 tons, and "Taria Topan," 631 tons, owned by Ropes, Emmerton & Co.; the three-masted schooners "Benjamin Fabens," 687 tons; "Charles H. Fabens," 301 tons; and "George K. Hatch," 378 tons, owned by C. E. & B. H. Fabens; and the bark "Fury," 310 tons, owned by Henry O. Roberts, are all that are left to carry the name of Salem to foreign lands, and none of these ever enter the port of Salem.

Where once vessels were arriving—sometimes two in a single day—from India or other remote ports, but a solitary schooner found her way into Salem harbor from a foreign port, other than those from the British provinces, during the year ending June 30, 1878, and she brought a cargo of coal from England. At the custom-house, where, in the week ending September 15, 1798, seven Salem vessels—three ships, one bark and three brigs—cleared for Copenhagen, there

was cleared, during the year ending June 30, 1878, one vessel to the West Indies and one to Liverpool, the single entry and the two clearances being in the month of December. The whole number of foreign entries for that year was seventy-nine, of which eight were American vessels and the total tonnage was 8183. The number of foreign clearances was ninety six, of which nine were American vessels, the total tonnage being 10,090.

The Whale Fishery.—After the decline of the foreign commerce of Salem it was hoped that the whale fishery might be successfully prosecuted, and for a short time there was quite a fleet of whalers hailing from this port. Stephen C. Phillips was agent, in 1841, for the ships "Elizabeth," 398 tons, and "Sapphire," 365 tons; and the barks "Emerald," 271 tons; "Eliza," 240 tons; "Henry," 262 tons; and "Malay," 268 tons. John B. Osgood was agent in the same year for the ships "Bengal," 300 tons; "Izette," 280 tons; "James Maury," 395 tons; and "Mount Wollaston," 325 tons; and the barks "Reaper," 230 tons, and "Statesman," 258 tons. Nathaniel Weston was agent for the bark "Palestine," 248 tons. The "Malay" was lost July 27, 1842, on Europa Rocks, in Mozambique Channel. The "Eliza" was condemned at Tahiti, June 15, 1843, and the "Statesman" at Talcahuana, November 3, 1844.

During the year ending April 1, 1837, sperm oil to the value of $124,440 and 108,065 gallons of whale oil, valued at $40,866, were landed at Salem. There were 432 hands employed in this business. During the year ending April 1, 1845, there was landed at Salem 45,705 gallons of sperm oil, valued at $39,306, and 18,345 gallons of whale oil, valued at $5686, the number of hands employed being 110. The hopes entertained at the outset in regard to the whale fishery were destined never to be realized.

Felt says, in 1847, "There are two whalers from Salem. The prospect is that this perilous employment, recommenced in hope as to its increase, continuance and profit, will soon terminate in disappointment." Benjamin Webb had some vessels engaged in this fishery, and John C. Osgood was agent of the last whalers that hailed from the port of Salem. This business was abandoned several years ago, and to-day no whalers are owned in Salem.

The Coasting Trade.—While Salem has lost her foreign trade, the harbor of Salem is not entirely barren of vessels, for a large amount of tonnage—larger even than when she was at the height of her commercial prosperity—now engaged in the coasting trade, brings coal to Salem for distribution to the mills of Lowell and Lawrence. In 1870 there entered the harbor 1812 coasting-vessels, having an aggregate tonnage of 213,514, and 1237 vessels measuring 203,798 tons entered during the year ending June 30, 1878. In 1885 there arrived at Salem 1599 vessels, with a tonnage of 270,000. The Salem and New York Steamship Company maintained a line of steam packets between Salem and New York from July, 1871, to June, 1872.

The "Massachusetts," the first steamboat to enter Salem harbor, arrived from New York in July, 1817, and was employed for a short time in making excursions in the bay. She was regarded at the time as a great curiosity, and attracted considerable notice from the towns-people. In this connection the fact is worthy of mention that Dr. Nathan Reed, of Salem, was the actual inventor of the first steamboat with paddle-wheels in American waters. Dr. Reed was certainly a most versatile genius. He was successively a student of medicine, apothecary, inventor, member of Congress, and finally chief justice of the Court of Common Pleas of Maine. He was born in Warren, Mass, in 1759, and graduated at Harvard in 1781. He studied medicine with Dr. E. A. Holyoke, of Salem, and afterwards kept an apothecary shop in that place.

While keeping store in Salem he presented a petition to Congress in 1790, stating, among other discoveries, that he had made one "of the application of steam to the purposes of navigation and land carriages." This petition was accompanied by a recommendation from a select committee of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. He was also the inventor of a patent for the manufacture of nails, which originated the building of the Danvers Iron Works. The trial-trip of his newly-invented steamboat was in the summer of 1789, and he had on board such distinguished guests as Governor Hancock, Hon. Nathan Dane, Dr. E. A. Holyoke and the Rev. Dr. Prince. His trip was from his iron works, at Danversport, to the Essex Bridge, at Beverly. Fulton's success on the Hudson was sixteen or eighteen years later. So Salem has not been behind her neighbors in navigation, whether under steam or canvas.

Dr. Reed represented this district in Congress, and in 1807 removed to Maine, where he was for many years chief justice of the Court of Common Pleas. He died at Belfast in 1790. His house in Salem stood on the site now occupied by Plummer Hall.

The Custom-House.—Hand-in-hand with commerce come the collectors and officers of the customs revenue. Before 1819, and during the palmy days of Salem commerce, there was no government building for the accommodation of such officers. Salem has been established as a port of entry at least since 1658. In 1663 Hilliard Veren was collector, and in 1683 Marblehead, Beverly, Gloucester, Ipswich, Rowley, Newbury and Salisbury are annexed to the port of Salem by order of the Court of Assistants, and it is decreed that this port and Boston shall be lawful ports in this Colony, where "all ships and other vessels shall lade or unlade any of the plantations' enumerated goods, or other goods from foreign ports, and nowhere else, on penalty of the confiscation of such ship or vessel, with her goods and tackle, as shall lade or unlade elsewhere."

At an early period commerce seems to have centred about Creek Street and the locality of the present Granite Railroad Station. This is the supposed location of the "Port House on the South river," mentioned in an order of the Quarterly Court in 1636. All the "cannowes of the South Syde are to be brought before the Port House att the same time, to be viewed by the Surveiors." These "cannowes" were used for transporting passengers to North and South Salem before the days of bridges, and in them they sometimes went fowling "two leagues to sea." There was another port-house on North River, and much business was done in former years on that side of the town.

The custom-house for thirty-four years was in a building on the corner of Gedney Court, erected in 1645, and known as the French house, having been tenanted at some time by French families. In 1774 the custom-house seems to have been on Essex Street, between Washington (then School) and North Streets, and to have been burnt in the great fire of October 6, 1774, which destroyed the Rev. Dr. Whitaker's meeting-house, eight dwellings and fourteen stores. It is not unlikely that the custom-house records were also destroyed in this fire, thus accounting for the lack of any such records prior to the Revolution.

In 1789 it was on the site of the present bank building in Central Street. Major Hiller was then collector. In 1805 it was removed, under Colonel Lee, to the Central Building, on the opposite side of the street, where a carved eagle and shield, lately restored, still mark the spot. In 1807 it was in Essex Street for a time, opposite Plummer Hall; in 1811 it was on the corner of Essex and Newbury Streets, and, in 1813, in the Central Building again, where Colonel Lee resided, and whence, in 1819, it was removed to the government building erected for the purpose at the head of Derby Wharf, where it now remains. This building stands upon land bought of the heirs of George Crowninshield, and was the site of the Crowninshield mansion-house, which was removed to make way for the present structure. It was, says Hawthorne, "intended to accommodate a hoped-for increase in the commercial prosperity of the place—hopes destined never to be realized—and was built a world too large for any necessary purpose, even at the time when India was a new region, and only Salem knew the way thither." This custom-house is a substantial, two-story, brick building, with a large warehouse in the rear, the whole surmounted by a cupola, from which the inspectors can watch for incoming vessels. It is now out of all proportion to the business of the port, and the time is not far distant when it will be abandoned for some smaller quarters.

There has been collected in imposts at the port of Salem, since the organization of the Union in 1789, more than twenty-five millions of dollars. From August 15, 1789, to 1791, the amount collected was $108,064.48, and the number of foreign entries was 205. From 1791 to 1800, inclusive, the duties were $2,949,817.19, and the foreign entries 1508. From 1801 to 1810, inclusive, the duties were $7,272,633.31, and the foreign entries 1758. From 1811 to 1820, inclusive, the duties were $3,832,894.81, and the foreign entries 835. From 1821 to 1830, inclusive, the duties were $4,685,139.58, and the foreign entries 1226. From 1831 to 1840 the duties were $1,987,509.12, and the foreign entries 903. From 1841 to 1850 the duties were $1,534,558.58, and the foreign entries 2327. From 1851 to 1860, inclusive, the duties were $1,816,676.42, and the foreign entries 3693. From 1861 to 1870, inclusive, the duties were $846,741.74, and the foreign entries 1,420. The large increase in the number of foreign entries since 1841 is due to the large trade then carried on between Salem and Nova Scotia. From 1871 to 1878, inclusive, the duties were about $223,911.96. The duties for the quarter ending December 31, 1807, when the embargo was officially announced in Salem, were $511,000, which is the largest amount ever collected at Salem in a single quarter. The goods were imported in twenty-two ships, three barks, nineteen brigs and twenty-three schooners. In 1868 there was collected in duties $118,114.37, of which $30,000 was paid in a single month. In 1878 the whole amount collected was only about $11,000, of which only about $3600 was for direct imports. In 1886 the amount collected was about $28,767.

Collectors of Customs.—The successive collectors since the Revolution have been Warwick Palfray (born October, 1715; died October 10, 1797), from 1776 to 1784; Joseph Hiller (born March 26, 1748; died February 9, 1814), 1784 to 1802; William R. Lee (born 1744; died in office, October 26, 1824), 1802 to 1824; James Miller, 1825 to 1849; Ephraim F. Miller, 1849 to 1857; William B. Pike, 1857 to 1861; Willard P. Phillips, 1861 to 1865; Robert S. Rantoul, 1865 to 1869; Charles W. Palfray, 1869 to 1873; Charles H. Odell, 1873 to 1885; Richard F. Dodge, 1885 to the present time.

Deputy Collectors.—The deputy collectors, under the present organization, have been: Charles Cleveland, from 1789 to 1802; William W. Oliver, 1803 to 1839; John B. Knight, 1839 to 1843; Ephraim F. Miller, 1843 to 1849; J. Linton Waters, 1849 to 1854; Henry E. Jenks, 1854 to 1857; Chipman Ward, 1857 to 1859; Henry Derby, 1859 to 1861; Ephraim F. Miller, 1861 to 1864; Charles S. Osgood, 1864 to 1873; J. Frank Dalton, 1873 to 1881; A. Frank Hitchings, 1881 to the present time.

Surveyors.—The surveyors during the same period have been Bartholomew Putnam, from 1789 to 1809; George Hodges, 1809 to 1817; John Saunders, 1818 to 1830; James Dalrymple, 1830 to 1834; Joseph Noble, 1834 to 1838; Edward Palfray, 1838 to 1841; Stephen Daniels, 1841 to 1843; Nehemiah Brown, 1843 to 1846; Nathaniel Hawthorne, 1846 to 1849; Allen Putnam, 1849 to 1854; Lewis Josselyn, 1854 to 1857; Ebenezer Dodge, 1857 to 1861; William C. Waters, 1861 to 1863; Charles F. Williams, 1863 to 1865; Joseph Moseley, 1865 to 1871; Charles D. Howard, 1871 to 1875, when the office was abolished.

Naval Officers.—The naval officers have been William Pickman, from 1789 to 1803; Samuel Ward, 1803 to 1812; Henry Elkins, 1812 to 1829; John Swasey, 1829 to 1842; Abraham True, 1842 to 1846; John D. Howard, 1846 to 1849; William Brown, 1849 to 1853; Charles Millett, 1853 to 1858; John Ryan, 1858 to 1860; Joseph A. Dalton, 1861 to 1865, when the office was abolished.

The two most prominent names in this list are those of Nathaniel Hawthorne and James Miller, —the one, the unequaled master of romance; the

other, "New England's most distinguished soldier." Nathaniel Hawthorne was born in Salem July 4, 1804, in the house now numbered twenty-one, on Union Street. He was a descendant of Major William Hathorne, who came with Governor Winthrop, in the "Arbella." The name is an old and honored one in Salem, and prominently connected with its early history. On the death of his father, in 1808, he lived for a time with his maternal grandfather, Richard Manning, on Herbert Street. For a year he lived in Raymond, Me., and then returned to Salem. He was graduated at Bowdoin College in 1825, in the same class with the poet Longfellow. He was appointed weigher and gauger at Boston in 1838, and was removed in 1841 for political reasons; he was surveyor at Salem from 1846 to 1849; and consul of the United States at Liverpool from 1852 to 1856.

The growing interest in Hawthorne as a writer brings to the Custom-House a crowd of curious travelers from far and wide. The room he occupied, the desk on which he wrote, the stencil-plate with which he put his name on packages, the room in which he tells us he found the manuscript, telling the sad, strange story of Hester Prynne, were, until a few years since, preserved and examined with interest by tourists. The Custom-House was refurnished in 1873, and his desk was deposited by his successor in office with the Essex Institute. He died in Plymouth, N. H., May 19, 1864, while making a short journey, in the company of his friend and classmate, President Franklin Pierce.

James Miller was born in Peterboro', N. H., in 1776. He was bred to the law, and left the courts for the camp, on being appointed by Jefferson, in 1808, a major in the Fourth United States Infantry. He was with General Harrison throughout his famous western campaign of 1811; after this followed Brownstown, Chippewa and Lundy's Lane, and from the last dates his national fame and his brigadier's commission. At that battle Major-General Brown was in command, and was disabled; and Scott, of the First Brigade, was also disabled. It was plain that a certain hill, whose frowning front bristled with artillery, was the key to victory. At this juncture, Colonel Miller was called on to storm the work. "I'll try, sir!" was Miller's reply, and as he says, with his regiment reduced to less than three hundred men, he at once obeyed the order. Two regiments ordered to his support quailed and turned back. "Colonel Miller," says the official record, "without regard to this occurrence, advanced steadily and carried the height." "Not one man at the cannon," says he, in writing to his wife, "was left to put fire to them." The memorable words, "I'll try, sir!" were at once embossed upon the buttons of his shattered regiment, which was presented with a captured gun, for distinguished gallantry. On the following November, Congress voted him a gold medal bearing his likeness, his famous words, and the names of Chippewa, Niagara and Fort Erie. He was also presented with a sword by the State of New York. General Miller was Governor of Arkansas Territory in 1819. He died July 7, 1851, in Temple, N. H.

Mr. Cleveland and Mr. Oliver are remarkable among the deputy collectors. The former was born in Norwich, Conn., June 21, 1772, and died June 5, 1872, coming within sixteen days of living out the century. At the age of ninety-eight he attended Mr. Oliver's funeral, who died at ninety-one. Mr. Oliver was connected with the Custom-House forty-six years. He was born in Salem December 10, 1778, and died December 29, 1869.

Jonathan Pue, now immortalized in "The Scarlet Letter," became "searcher and surveyor" in 1752, and died suddenly in office, March 24, 1760. In 1734 William Fairfax, whose name was afterwards pleasantly associated with that of Washington, left the collectorship of this port and removed to Virginia.

Marine Insurance Companies.—The rapid increase in the shipping at this port which took place after trade was opened between Salem and the East Indies led to the organization of a number of insurance companies where the merchants could insure ship and cargo. At the different offices of these companies the merchants assembled in the evening to transact their business, to read the papers and to hear the general gossip of the day. Here the shipmasters recounted the perils they had encountered, and compared notes with each other regarding the voyages from which they had just returned; and here, in the busy days of Salem's commerce, all was bustle and activity and life. Many of the offices were retained long after the business had greatly diminished, and became a place where the retired shipmasters of Salem resorted to discuss the news of the day, and recount the departed glories of the past.

The Essex Fire and Marine Insurance Company was incorporated March 7, 1803, William Gray and others incorporators, and was located in the building on Essex Street, facing Central Street; Nathaniel Bowditch was its president for many years. The Merchants' Insurance Company, Peter Lander, president, was located in the store now occupied by Thomas B. Nichols, on the west side of Essex House yard. The Salem Commercial Insurance Company was incorporated in 1818, N. Silsbee, Joseph Story and others incorporators; George Cleveland, for many years, president. The Mercantile Insurance Company, incorporated in 1825, John Winn, Jr., president, was located on the western corner of Essex and St. Peter's Streets. After that company gave up business the Essex Insurance Company was formed and occupied the same location. The Oriental Insurance Company, incorporated in 1824, was located in the East India Marine building, and subsequently removed to Asiatic Bank building. The Social Insur-

ance Company was incorporated March 1, 1808, and revived June 5, 1830, for ten years, to settle old claims. The Salem Marine Insurance Company, which was incorporated in February, 1856, and commenced business in February, 1857, is the only marine insurance company now doing business in Salem. William Northey is president, and F. P. Richardson secretary.

SHIP-BUILDING.—It was natural that early attention should have been given to ship-building in a settlement where the staple article of trade was the product of the fisheries. In 1629 the Home Company sent six ship-builders to Salem, of whom Robert Moulton was chief. Salem Neck was used for ship-building from the very earliest period. So many people were located in that vicinity in 1679 that John Clifford was licensed to keep a victualling house for their convenience. In 1636 Richard Hollingworth, a ship-builder, who came to Salem in 1635, gets a grant of land on the neck from the town, and builds a ship of three hundred tons there in 1641. It is most probable that prior to 1637 Robert Moulton and his shipwrights built several small decked vessels for the fisheries and for trading. The Home Company ordered three shallops to be built in Salem in 1629, doubtless for fishing purposes. From 1629 to 1640 Salem had not much shipping of her own; but in the latter year the Rev. Hugh Peters, of the First Church, a man of great energy and sagacity, interested the people in ship-building, and in a few years an abundant supply of vessels were built. Salem became noted as one of the principal places in the colony for building vessels.

From 1659 to 1677 there appear to be four noted ship-builders in Salem, one of whom, Jonathan Pickering, gets a grant of land about Hardy's Cove from the town, to himself and heirs forever, to build vessels upon. From 1692 to 1718 seven ship-builders appear prominent in Salem, among whom are Joseph Hardy and William Becket. In 1662 the town authorities endeavor to accommodate, at Burying Point, near the foot of Liberty Street, those desirous of graving vessels. In 1676 Salem is said to be one of the principal places for building vessels, at four pounds per ton. Of the twenty-six vessels belonging to Salem in 1698–99, seventeen were built here. From 1700 to 1714, inclusive, registers were granted to four ships, three barks, nine brigs, twenty-four sloops and nineteen ketches belonging to Salem. They ranged from fifteen to ninety tons, and forty of them were built here. In 1705 the ship "Unity," of two hundred and seventy tons, was built in Salem, for Boston and London merchants, and in 1709 Joseph Hardy built the brig "American Merchant," of one hundred and sixty tons burden. In 1712 a sale is recorded by Ebenezer Lambert, shipwright, of Salem, of ye good sloop "Betty," lately built, of about eighty tons burden, to Benjamin Marston, of Salem, for two hundred and forty pounds, or three pounds per ton.

Vessels were built or repaired in Salem on the neck, including Winter Island; on the creek running into South River, near the foot of Norman Street; at the Burying Point near the foot of Liberty Street, and at other places on the South River; at Frye's Mills on the North River; and at Hardy's Cove. Referring to the creek running into the South River, Felt says, writing in 1842, that "its course was from the South River, below the mills, and up between Norman and High Streets. A century since boys would go in boats from its waters to a swamp in Crombie Street, and collect eggs from blackbirds' nests. Britton's Hill, running from Summer Street, formerly had a ship-yard, whence vessels were launched into the creek. An octogenarian vividly remembers a brig of one hundred and fifty tons, which was built on the margin of the same waters." It seems hardly credible that the principal ship-building of the town was at one time carried on in this locality, for scarcely a vestige remains to-day of the creek or cove, and the South River is gradually disappearing from view, and at this point runs through a covered culvert.

The Beckets have been famous as ship-builders in Salem. The ship-yard of the Beckets was situated between Phillips' Wharf and Webb's Wharf. This place has been known as Becket's Beach, and is directly in front of the old mansion-house built by John Becket about 1655. It was occupied by the Beckets as a ship-yard from 1655 to 1800, a period of one hundred and forty-five years. After 1800 Retire Becket built his vessels on land farther to the eastward.

The most famous vessel built by Retire Becket was the yacht "Cleopatra's Barge," of one hundred and ninety-one tons burden, whose owner, Captain George Crowninshield, spared no expense in her construction or in her appointments. She was built for a pleasure-trip to the Mediterranean, and excited wonder, even at Genoa, for her beauty, luxury and magnificence. She was launched October 21, 1816, in the presence of an immense concourse of people. During the winter of 1817 the harbor was frozen over to the Haste and Coney Island, and this vessel having returned from her voyage, a great many people drove over the ice in sleighs to visit her. Retire Becket also built, in 1799, the brig "Active," of two hundred and six tons, in which William P. Richardson made the first trading voyage from Salem to the Feejee Islands, in 1810; and in 1800 the ship "Margaret," of two hundred and ninety-five tons, which made the first voyage from Salem to Japan, leaving Salem November 10, 1800, under command of Samuel Derby; and in 1794, for Elias H. Derby, the ship "Recovery," of two hundred and eighty-four tons, which, under the command of Joseph Ropes, first displayed the stars and stripes at Mocha. He also built for Elias H. Derby, in 1798, the ship "Mount Vernon," of three hundred and fifty-six tons; for George Crowninshield & Sons, 1804, the ship "America," of four hundred

and seventy-three tons, famous as a privateer in the War of 1812; for Z. F. Silsbee and James Devereux, in 1807, the ship "Herald," of two hundred and seventy-four tons. The last vessel built by Mr. Becket was the brig "Becket," of one hundred and twenty-eight tons, for John Crowninshield, in 1818.

Ebenezer Mann came to Salem from Pembroke in 1783, and in the same year commenced building vessels in a yard near Frye's Mills, on North River, and continued in the business until about the year 1800. Among the vessels built by Mr. Mann was the brig "William," of one hundred and eighty-two tons, in 1784, for William Gray; the brig "Fanny," of one hundred and fifty-two tons, in 1785, for Benjamin Goodhue; the bark "Good Intent," of one hundred and seventy-one tons, in 1790, for Simon Forrester; the schooner "Betsey," of one hundred and eight tons, in 1792, for Jerathmael Peirce; the brig "Hind," of one hundred and fifty-seven tons, in 1795, for William Orne; the ship "Good Hope," of one hundred and eighty-eight tons, in 1795, for Nathaniel West; the bark "Eliza," of one hundred and eighty-seven tons, in 1796, for Joseph White; and the ship "Prudent," of two hundred and fourteen tons, in 1799, for Nathaniel West.

Christopher Turner, who came to Salem from Pembroke, where he was born in 1767, continued the business of ship-building at Frye's Mills after Mr. Mann retired. He built, among others, the schooner "Essex," of one hundred and fourteen tons, in 1800, for William Fabens, for the West India and Cayenne trade. The ship "Pompey," of one hundred and eighty-eight tons, in 1802, for William Orne. She was afterwards sold to Joshua Ward, made into a brig, and commanded by James Gilchrist. The ship "Hope," of two hundred and eighty-two tons, in 1805, for J. & J. Barr. The ship "Hunter," of two hundred and ninety-six tons, in 1807, for Jerathmael Peirce. The brig "Romp," of two hundred and thirty-two tons, in 1809, for Nathaniel Silsbee. She was commanded by William Lander, and was confiscated at Naples, in 1809, on her first voyage. The ship "Rambler," of two hundred and eighty-six tons, in 1811, for George Nichols. She was captured by the British in 1812, while commanded by Timothy Bryant. Mr. Turner built, at Union Wharf, for George Crowninshield, the sloop "Jefferson," of twenty-two tons, for a pleasure-yacht. She was launched in March, 1801, and is believed to have been the first real yacht built in the United States.

David Magoun built, on the neck, between the gate and Colonel John Hathorne's house, in 1805, the ship "Alfred," two hundred tons, for Joseph White.

Barker & Magoun built, at the same place, the schooner "Enterprise," two hundred tons, in 1812, and the schooner "Gen. Stark," in 1813.

Enos Briggs was one of the most noted ship-builders in Salem. He came here from Pembroke in 1790, and built the ship "Grand Turk," of five hundred and sixty tons, for Elias Hasket Derby. She was built on the lot of land next east of Isaac P. Foster's store, and was launched May 19, 1791, and replaced the ship "Grand Turk," of three hundred tons, which was sold at the Isle of France in 1788. A Salem paper at the time of the launching calls her "the largest ship ever built in this country."

Having built the "Grand Turk," Mr. Briggs returned to Pembroke for his family. They arrived at Salem July 4, 1791, and the sloop in which they came brought, also, the frame of a dwelling-house, which he erected on Harbor Street, and which, for many years after his decease, was occupied by the family of his daughter, Mrs. Nathan Cook. Mr. Briggs was born in Pembroke July 29, 1746, and died in Salem October 10, 1819. His ship-yard in Salem was located between Peabody and Harbor Streets, west of the Naumkeag Cotton-Mills. Here he built for Elias Hasket Derby, in 1792, the ship "Benjamin," of one hundred and sixty-one tons, which was afterwards commanded by Nathaniel Silsbee; in 1794, the ketch "Eliza," of one hundred and eighty-four tons, which, under command of Stephen Phillips, made some of the early voyages to Calcutta and the Isle of France; in 1795 the ketch "John," of two hundred and fifty-eight tons, and the ketch "Brothers," of one hundred and forty-eight tons; and, in 1796, the ship "Martha," of three hundred and forty tons. For George Crowninshield & Sons he built, in 1794, the ship "Belisarius," of 261 tons. For Peirce & Wait, in 1797, the ship "Friendship," of 342 tons, afterwards commanded by Israel Williams. For Joseph Peabody, in 1798, the schooner "Sally," 104 tons; in 1798, the brig "Neptune," 160 tons; in 1801, the brig "Catherine," 158 tons; in 1803, the ship "Mount Vernon," 254 tons; in 1804, the ship "Janus," 277 tons; in 1805, the ship "Augustus," 246 tons; in 1807, the ship "Francis," 297 tons; in 1811, the ship "Glide," 306 tons; in 1812, the brig "Levant," 265 tons; and in 1816, the ship "China," of 370 tons. For Nathaniel West, 1794, the schooner "Patty," 111 tons, which, under command of Edward West, made one of the earliest voyages from Salem to Batavia; and in 1801, the ship "Commerce," 239 tons. For Benjamin Pickman, in 1803, the ship "Derby," of 300 tons. For Simon Forrester, in 1805, the ship "Messenger," 277 tons. For William Gray, in 1806, the ship "Pactolus," 288 tons. Mr. Briggs built, while in Salem, fifty-one vessels of 11,500 tons, among them the famous frigate "Essex," of 850 tons, built in 1799.

Elijah Briggs, on the death of his cousin Enos, continued the business of ship-building at the yard in South Salem. He built for Pickering Dodge, in 1819, the ship "Gov. Endicott," 279 tons; in 1828, the ship "Lotos," 296 tons; in 1828, the ship "Mandarin," 295 tons; and in 1829, the ship "Rome," 344 tons. For Jonathan Neal, in 1820, the brig "Java," 225 tons. For John Forrester, in 1823, the ship "Emerald," 271 tons. For Joseph Peabody, in 1824, the brig

"Mexican," 227 tons, and the brig "Amazon," 202 tons. For Gideon Tucker, in 1825, the brig "Olinda," 182 tons. Mr. Briggs was born in Scituate July 17, 1762, and died in Salem May 29, 1847.

Elias Jenks and Ichabod R. Hoyt continued the business of ship-building in South Salem down to 1843, and built their vessels a little to the westward of the spot occupied by Enos Briggs. They built for Joseph Peabody, in 1827, the ship "Sumatra," 287 tons; in 1831, the ship "Eclipse," 326 tons; in 1833, the ship "Naples," 309 tons; and in 1837, the ship "Carthage," 426 tons. For Nathaniel L. Rogers & Brothers, in 1828 the ship "Crusoe," 350 tons. For the Messrs. Silsbee, in 1831, the ship "Borneo," 297 tons; and in 1840, the ship "Sooloo," 400 tons. For Thorndike Deland, in 1836, the schooner "William Penn," 125 tons. For David Pingree, in 1843, the bark "Three Brothers," 350 tons.

In 1834, there had been built in Salem for the foreign trade since 1789, sixty-one ships, four barks, fifty-three brigs, three ketches, and sixteen schooners, measuring 30,557 tons.

On the 1st of December, 1825, there was launched from the ship-yard of Mr. Cottle, in North Salem, near Orne's Point, a schooner of 40 tons, built for the use of the American missionaries at the Sandwich Islands. She was called the "Missionary Packet," and sailed from Boston January 17, 1826, for the Sandwich Islands.

Samuel Lewis built, in 1849, the bark "Argentine," for Robert Upton, and in 1850 the brig "M. Shepard," 160 tons, for John Bertram.

John Carter built, in 1854, under the superintendence of A. H. Gardner, on the eastern side of Phillips Wharf, for Edward D. Kimball, the bark "Witch," 417 tons; and subsequently, at the same place, for other parties, the ship "Europa," 846 tons.

Edward F. Miller, whose ship-yard was at the point of land in South Salem opposite the end of Derby Wharf, built for R. W. Ropes & Co., in 1855, the brig "Mary Wilkins," 266 tons; and in 1859, the bark "La Plata," 496 tons. For Benjamin A. West, in 1857, the bark "Arabia," 380 tons. She was lost at the Cape of Good Hope on her first voyage. For John Bertram, in 1856, the bark "Guide;" in 1861, the bark "Glide," 493 tons; in 1869, the bark "Jersey," 599 tons, which was lost at Madagascar on her first voyage; and, in 1870, the bark "Taria Topan," 631 tons. For John C. Osgood and others, in 1862, the brig "Star," 250 tons.

Joshua Brown built, near Miller's ship-yard, the schooner "Prairie Flower," 106 tons. This vessel was launched on the 27th of April, 1858. She sailed from Salem Tuesday, June 8, 1858, for Boston, to obtain a part of her fishing outfit. A large party of young men were on board, invited by the owners to make the trip to Boston. About 2 P.M., when in the Broad Sound and entering Boston harbor, the schooner was struck by a sudden gust of wind and capsized. The water rushed into the cabin, filling it, and of those there at the time, seven were drowned. They were all under thirty years of age, and all of Salem. Osgood Sanborn was 28; Daniel R. Fitz, 24; George C. Clarke, 24; Francis Donaldson, 21; William H. Russell, 20; William H. Newcomb, 20; and Lewis B. Smith, 14. The remainder of the party were rescued by vessels that chanced to be near the scene of the accident. No such calamity had occurred in Salem since the 17th of June, 1773, when the King's boat, belonging to the custom-house, was capsized in Salem harbor during a squall, and three men and seven women, all of Salem, were drowned. Mr. Brown built a number of other vessels, among them the schooner "David B. Newcomb," 92 tons, in 1860, and the brig "Albert," 325 tons, in 1862.

SALEM MERCHANTS.—This chapter should not be closed without some notice of the men whose enterprise and daring made for Salem her brilliant commercial record.

Among the earliest of the merchants was Captain George Curwin, who was born in England in 1610. He settled in Salem about 1638, and was extensively engaged in commerce. His books of account show that he had embarked in the London trade previous to 1658. He died on the 3d of January, 1685, leaving a large estate, comprising four ware-houses and two wharves in Salem, and a ware-house and wharf in Boston, and the ketches "George," "Swallow," "John" and "William," valued at £1050.

Captain Walter Price, who died in 1674, and Captain John Price, who died in 1691; John Turner, who died in 1680; William Bowditch. who died in 1681; Joseph Grafton, Sr., who died in 1682; William Brown and John Brown, who died about 1687, '88; Henry Bartholomew, who died in 1691; Richard Hollingworth and his son, William Hollingworth, were all engaged in commerce in Salem.

Philip English came to Salem before 1670, and in 1675 married the daughter of another Salem merchant, Mr. William Hollingworth. In 1676 he is at the Isle of Jersey, commanding the ketch "Speedwell." He had so flourished in 1683 that he put up a stylish mansion on the eastern corner of Essex and English streets. It was one of those ancient mansion houses, for which Salem was once noted—a venerable many gabled, solid structure, with projecting stories and porches. Down to 1753 it was known as English's great house. It stood until 1833, long tenantless and deserted, and when torn down a secret room was found in the garret, supposed to have been built after the witchcraft furor, as a place of temporary security in case of a second outcry.

In 1692 Philip English was at the height of his prosperity. He was trading with Bilboa, Barbadoes, St. Christopher's and Jersey, as well as with several French ports, He owned twenty-one vessels, besides a wharf and warehouse on the neck, and fourteen buildings in the town. It is probable that his wife

was over-elated by their prosperity, and forgot her humble friends of former days, for she is now called "aristocratic," and the prejudice thus engendered against her doubtless led to her being "cried out" against for withcraft. Both Mr. English and his wife were so accused. From 1694 to 1720 Mr. English sends ketches to Newfoundland, Cape Sable or Acadia to catch fish, and sends these fish to Barbadoes or other English West Indies, Surinam and Spain. He also had a number of vessels running between Salem and Virginia and Maryland.

Mr. English was put into Salem jail, so says Felt, in 1725, for refusing, as an Episcopalian, to pay taxes for the support of the East Church. About 1734 he retired from trade, and in 1735 he was put under guardianship as being clouded in mind. He died in 1736, aged about eighty-six years, and was buried in the Episcopal church-yard.

The name of Derby is intimately associated with the commerce of Salem—Roger Derby, born in 1643, emigrated to America in 1671 from Topsham, in the South of England. He was a member of the Society of Friends, and first settled in Ipswich, but having been fined for non-conformity, he removed to Salem where he embarked in trade. At his decease in 1698 it appears by his inventory, that he possessed a house, wharf and warehouse. His son Richard, born in 1679, engaged in maritime affairs, but died in 1715, leaving, among other children, a son Richard, born in 1712, whose son, Elias Hasket Derby, was the most eminent among Salem's merchants. The last-named Richard, in 1736, at the age of twenty-four, was the master of the sloop "Ranger," bound from Salem to Cadiz and Malaga. In 1739 he sails in the "Ranger" to St. Martin's, and in 1742 he is master and part owner of the "Volant," bound for Barbadoes and the French Islands. In 1757 he retired from the sea and became a merchant of Salem, relinquishing his vessels to his sons John and Richard.

The commerce in which Mr. Derby was engaged was pursued in vessels ranging from 50 to 100 tons. His vessels, laden with fish, lumber and provisions, cleared for Dominica or some Windward Isle in the British West Indies, and then ran through the islands for a market. The returns were made in sugar, molasses, cotton, rum and claret, or in rice and naval stores from Carolina. With the returns from these voyages assorted cargoes were made of oil, naval stores, and the produce of the islands for Spain and Madeira, and the proceeds remitted partly in bills on London, and partly in wine, salt, fruit, oil, iron, lead and handkerchiefs to America. The commerce of these days was bold and adventurous. Few vessels exceeded 60 tons burden, and they were exposed not only to the dangers of the seas, but also to the buccaneers and French and English cruisers. During the French War, from 1756 to 1763, Mr. Derby owned several ships as well as brigantines, carrying each eight or ten cannon. He was owner of part of the cannon which Col. Leslie was sent down from Boston by Gen. Gage to capture, in 1775. His son John carried to England the first news of the battle of Lexington, and returned to Salem with the first intelligence of the effect it produced in London.

Mr. Derby was born in Salem September 16, 1712, and died there November 9, 1783.

The second son of the last named Richard Derby, Elias Hasket, was born in Salem August 16, 1739, and was Salem's most eminent merchant. He was the pioneer, and led the way while others followed. His vessels were the first from New England at India and China, and largely to his courage and sagacity Salem is indebted for the prominent place she held as a commercial port. Until his coming, the trade of Salem was narrow and limited. He opened the ports of the whole globe to the Salem ships, and made the name of Salem familiar wherever trade penetrated or civilization ventured.

At an early age he entered the counting-room of his father, and from 1760 to 1775 he took charge of his father's books, and engaged extensively in trade with the English and French islands. At the commencement of the Revolutionary War, he had seven sail of vessels in the trade of the West Indies. Many of the rich men clung to the mother country, but Mr. Derby espoused the cause of the colonists. His trade and that of Salem was ruined by the war. Indignant at the oppressive course of Great Britain, Mr. Derby united with his townsmen, and Salem fitted out at least one hundred and fifty-eight armed vessels during the Revolution.

From 1771 to 1785 the tonnage of Salem declined, and did not revive till the opening of the India trade, when it increased with astonishing rapidity.

On the 15th of June, 1784, the barque "Light Horse" was sent by Mr. Derby to St. Petersburg with a cargo of sugar, and opened the American trade with that place.

In November, 1784, he despatched the ship "Grand Turk," of 300 tons, Captain Jonathan Ingersoll, on the first voyage from Salem to the Cape of Good Hope. Although this voyage was not very successful, it gave Mr. Derby an insight into the wants and prices of the Indian market, and Nov. 28, 1785, he cleared the same vessel under command of Ebenezer West, for the Isle of France, with the purpose to visit Canton, went to the Isle of France, Batavia and China, and returned to Salem in June, 1787, with a cargo of teas, silks and nankeens, making the first voyage from New England to the Isle of France, India and China.

In December, 1787, Mr. Derby again despatched his ship "Grand Turk" on a voyage to the Isle of France under the charge of his son, Elias Hasket Derby, Jr. The "Grand Turk" was sold at a great profit, and the son remained at the Isle of France until the arrival, about a year afterwards, of the ship "Atlantic," when he proceeded to Surat, Bombay,

and Calcutta, and first displayed our ensign at those ports. He bought, at the Isle of France, the ship "Peggy," sent her to Bombay for cotton and then back to Salem, where she arrived June 21, 1789, with the first cargo of Bombay cotton. One of his vessels was the first to display the American flag at Siam and another made the first voyage from America to Mocha.

In February, 1789, Mr. Derby sent, for the first time, the ship "Astrea" on a direct voyage to Canton. American ships were now following the lead of the "Grand Turk," and we find fifteen there in 1789, five of them belonging to Salem, and four to Mr. Derby. In 1790 he imported into Salem 728,871 pounds of tea. In May, 1790, the brig "William and Henry," Captain Benjamin Hodges, owned by Gray & Orne, entered this port with a cargo of tea, which was among the first of such cargoes imported in an American bottom. When Mr. Derby first engaged in the India trade there were no banks, and he rarely purchased or sold on credit. While his large ships were on their voyages to the East he employed his brigs and schooners in making up the assortment for cargoes by sending them to Gottenburg and St. Petersburg for iron, duck and hemp; to France, Spain and Madeira for wine and lead; to the West Indies for spirits; and to New York, Philadelphia and Richmond for flour, provisions, iron and tobacco. In the brief space of fourteen years (from 1785 to 1799), he made one hundred and twenty-five voyages, by at least thirty-seven different vessels, of which voyages forty-five were to the East Indies or China. Among the officers of his ships, who were afterwards distinguished, were the Hon. Nathaniel Silsbee, late United States Senator from Massachusetts and Dr. Nathaniel Bowditch.

In 1798 the nation appeared to be on the eve of a war with France, and was without a navy. John Adams was President, and the administration, in June, 1798, passed an act authorizing the President to accept such vessels as the citizens might build for the national service, and pay for them in a six per cent. stock. Subscriptions were opened in Salem, and Mr. Derby and Mr. William Gray each subscribed ten thousand dollars, and William Orne and John Norris each five thousand dollars, and in a brief period some seventy-four thousand, seven hundred dollars were subscribed. Mr. Enos Briggs, who had built many of Mr. Derby's fastest ships, was instructed to build a frigate, to be called the "Essex." The keel was laid April 13, 1799, and September 30th following she was successfully launched. She proved the fastest ship in the navy, and captured property to the amount of two million dollars. Admiral Farragut served on the "Essex" as a midshipman.

Mr. Derby made one more brilliant voyage before he closed his career, although he did not live to ascertain its results. Hostilities between France and the United States had commenced when Mr. Derby sent a ship of four hundred tons, called the "Mount Vernon," equipped with twenty guns, manned by fifty men and loaded with sugar, to the Mediterranean. The cost of the cargo was forty-three thousand two hundred and seventy-five dollars. The vessel was attacked by the enemy, but escaped, and arived safely in America with a cargo of silks and wines, and realized a net profit of one hundred thousand dollars. Before her arrival Mr. Derby died, September 8, 1799, and left an estate which exceeded a million dollars, and was supposed to be the largest fortune left in this country during the last century.

The mansion in which Mr. Derby lived while acquiring his fortune still stands on the corner of Washington and Lynde Streets, and was, for a long time, occupied by another Salem merchant, Robert Brookhouse. Mr. Derby erected an elegant and costly edifice on the site now occupied by Derby Square, and laid out walks and gardens from Essex Street to a terrace which overhung the South River. The mansion was finished, but was occupied by Mr. Derby but a few months before his death. For some twelve years thereafter it was in the possession of his oldest son, but with the embargo and war there came a check to the prosperity of Salem, and no one was willing to incur the expense incident to living in such a palatial structure. The buildings and gardens were closed for years, and finally gave place to the square and market which now bear the name of Derby.

Crowninshield is another family name whose members contributed to the commercial prosperity of Salem. John Crowninshield was born in 1696, was a Salem captain in the West India trade about 1724 and died in 1761. He was the father of George Crowninshield, who was born in Salem in 1734, and who married a sister of Elias Hasket Derby. George Crowninshield built a mansion-house on Derby Street, which was demolished to make room for the present Custom-House in 1816. After the Revolution, and until the embargo, he was engaged in commerce with his sons, and in the War of 1812 was successful in privateering, the most famous of his vessels being the "America." He died in 1815.

His son George was the owner of the famous pleasure yacht, the "Cleopatra's Barge," in which he visited the ports of Europe. It was the first American vessel to cross the ocean solely on a pleasure excursion. He returned in October, 1817, and on the 26th of the following November, while the yacht was lying at the port of Salem, he died suddenly in her cabin at the age of fifty-one.

Jacob Crowninshield was a member of Congress, and was appointed Secretary of the Navy in 1805, but declined on account of ill health. Benjamin W. Crowninshield was Secretary of the Navy from 1814 until 1818, and a member of Congress from 1823 until 1831. He built and lived in the house which is now the Home for Aged Women, on Derby Street. He died in 1851.

The Pickmans were among Salem's successful merchants. Col. Benjamin Pickman, who was born in 1706, was largely interested in the West India trade, and as the principal article of export to those islands was the product of the fisheries, he engaged extensively in the prosecution of that industry. His fish-flakes extended from North Street through Federal to Boston Street, and down to the river. He amassed a large fortune in this business, and, in recognition of the service rendered him by the codfish, he had a carved and gilded effigy of that fish placed on the side of each stair in the principal hall of his house, which he built in 1750, and which still stands on Essex Street, next the East India Marine Building. The front of this house is now hidden by a block of stores. Col. Pickman died in 1773. His sons, Benjamin and William, were merchants of Salem, and his grandson, Dudley L. Pickman, a son of William, who was born in 1779, and died in 1846, was largely engaged in the East India trade, and was an eminently successful merchant.

Silsbee is a name prominent in the annals of Salem's commerce. Nathaniel Silsbee, an eminent master mariner and confidential agent of Elias Hasket Derby, was born in Salem November 9, 1748. At a very early age Mr. Silsbee was entrusted with the charge of a vessel and cargo to the West Indies, and subsequently he was owner of several vessels employed in that trade. He commanded the "Grand Turk" on a voyage to the West Indies and afterwards to Spain. In the course of a few years he embarked in business on his own account, and soon acquired an independent fortune, which unfortunately was lost by reverses in business. He died June 25, 1791, leaving three sons, each of whom were masters and supercargoes of ships while in their teens, and became eminent and successful merchants. Nathaniel, born in 1773; William, born in 1779; and Zachariah F., born in 1783.

The eldest son, Nathaniel, followed his father in the command of the ships of Elias Hasket Derby, and in 1793, at the early age of twenty was on a voyage to the Isle of France as captain of the new ship "Benjamin," of one hundred and sixty-one tons. From the Isle of France he proceeds to the Cape of Good Hope, returns to the Isle of France, and brings his ship home with large profits. In 1796 Mr. Derby dispatches him in the ship "Benjamin" to Amsterdam, and thence to the Isle of France, with a credit of ten thousand dollars for his own private adventures. After selling his cargo at a great profit he purchases a new ship of four hundred and fifty tons and returns to Salem, with a full cargo of East India goods for his owner, and such favorable results for himself as to enable him to commence business on his own account, in which he soon achieves a fortune.

After the attainment of a competency, Mr. Silsbee devoted many years to the civil service of his country. He was chosen a member of Congress in 1816, and served in the House until 1821, and in the United States Senate from 1826 to 1835. In 1823, '24 and '25 he was president of the Massachusetts Senate. He died in Salem, July 14, 1850.

Captain Nathaniel West and his elder brother, Ebenezer, and his younger brother, Edward, were prominent in the early commercial days. Ebenezer was, for nearly four years, during the Revolution, a prisoner of war, and was exchanged shortly before peace was declared. He subsequently had command of E. H. Derby's famous ship, the "Grand Turk," and in her made the first voyage from New England to Canton. Edward, while in command of his brother Nathaniel's ship "Hercules," was seized at Naples in 1809, but had the good fortune to obtain her release, in order to transport Lucien Bonaparte and family to Malta, thus saving his ship from confiscation. In 1775, Nathaniel, at the age of nineteen, being in command of a merchant vessel in the West India trade, was captured by a British frigate and compelled to serve as midshipman in the British navy. Not long after he escaped and went to Spain, where he embarked for Salem in the privateer "Oliver Cromwell," Captain Cole, of this port. He made several cruises in the "Oliver Cromwell," and took many prizes. He participated with the famous Captain Haraden in several contests, and made successful cruises as captain of the privateer "Black Prince," carrying eighteen guns, and one hundred and fifty men. On one occasion, with Captain Nathaniel Silsbee as his lieutenant, he put into Cork, on a dark night, and cut out and took away a valuable prize.

Captain West subsequently embarked in commerce, and pursued it with continued success until he had amassed a large fortune. In 1792 he built and despatched the schooner "Patty," under command of his brother Edward, and she was the first American vessel to visit Batavia. His ship "Minerva" was the first Salem vessel to circumnavigate the globe. His ship "Hercules," under his brother Edward's command, on the conclusion of the war with Great Britain, in 1815, was the first vessel to sail from the United States for the East Indies, under the terms of the treaty. He was born in Salem January 31, 1756, and died here December 19, 1851. In person he was of fine figure and of majestic mien and gait. He never forgot the dignity which belonged to his years and station. He was a gentleman of the old school in manners and dress, and adhered with scrupulous tenacity to the costume of his early years.

William Gray was a prominent merchant of Salem. He was born in Lynn, June 27, 1760, moved to Salem at an early age, and entered the counting-room of Richard Derby. He became one of the largest ship owners in Salem, and followed the lead of Mr. E. H. Derby in sending ships to Canton and ports in the East Indies. In 1805 Salem had fifty-four ships, eighteen barks, seventy-two brigs and eighty-six schooners, five ships building and forty-eight vessels round the cape. In 1807 sixty ships, seven barks,

forty-two brigs, forty schooners and three sloops in the merchant service, and one hundred fishermen and schooners; and of these William Gray owned fifteen ships, seven barks, thirteen brigs and one schooner, or one-fourth of the tonnage of the place.

From 1801 to 1810, inclusive, the duties collected at Salem amounted to $7,272,633.31, and these were the years of Mr. Gray's greatest activity.

His former mansion, is now the Essex House. About 1808 he left the Federal party and joined the Democrats, upholding Jefferson in the Embargo Act of that year. Party feeling ran high, and Mr. Gray, finding a growing coolness towards him among many of his former associates, left Salem in 1809 and moved to Boston, where, in 1810 and 1811, he was chosen lieutenant-governor, and where he died November 3, 1825. During his life he accumulated a great property. As a merchant he was industrious, far-seeing and energetic; as a citizen patriotic and public-spirited, and he may well be classed among Salem's "princely merchants."

Joseph Peabody was another eminently successful merchant, who lived to see the decline of that commercial prosperity to which he had contributed so largely. He was born in Middleton December 9, 1757, and during the Revolutionary War he enlisted on a privateer, and made his first cruise in E. H. Derby's "Bunker Hill," and his second in the "Ranger." In 1782 he made a trip to Alexandria in the "Ranger" as second officer, and on his return the vessel was attacked by the enemy, and Mr. Peabody was wounded. After peace was restored he was promoted to a command in the employ of the Messrs. Gardner, of Salem, and soon realized a sufficient sum to purchase the vessel known as the "Three Friends." He retired from the sea in 1791, and engaged actively in commerce. The brig "Three Friends," Joseph Peabody, master, entered from Martinico in June, 1791, with a cargo of molasses and sugar consigned to Mr. J. Gardner, and this was probably his last voyage. During the early years of the present century he built and owned a large number of vessels, which in every instance he freighted himself. His vessels made thirty-eight voyages to Calcutta, seventeen to Canton, thirty-two to Sumatra, forty-seven to St. Petersburg and thirty to other ports of Europe. He shipped, at different times, seven thousand seamen, and advanced thirty-five to the rank of master, who entered his employ as boys.

The disastrous effects of the embargo and war were shown in the diminution of vessels in the foreign trade of Salem from one hundred and fifty-two, in 1807, to fifty-seven in 1815. In 1816 forty-two Indiamen had sailed and sixteen returned since the war. In 1817 Salem had thirty-two ships, two barks and eighteen brigs in the India trade; and from 1808 to 1817 the arrivals from foreign ports were nine hundred and thirty six, which yielded an annual average of duties of three hundred and seventy-eight thousand five hundred and ninety dollars. In 1821 one hundred and twenty-six vessels were employed in foreign commerce, fifty-eight of them in the India trade, the largest being the ship "China," H. Putnam, master, three hundred and seventy tons.

A few facts relating to the connection of Mr. Peabody about this time with the China trade are interesting. In 1825 and 1826, the "Leander," a little brig of two hundred and twenty-three tons, brought into Salem cargoes from Canton, which paid duties amounting, respectively, one to $86,847.47 and the other to $92,392.94. In 1829, 1830 and 1831, the "Sumatra," a ship of only two hundred and eighty-seven tons, brought cargoes from the same port, paying duties of $128,363.13, in the first case; $138,480.-34, in the second, and $140,761.96 in the third, the five voyages paying duties to an aggregate of nearly $587,000. No other vessel has entered Salem paying $90,000 in duties. Both brig and ship were owned by Mr. Peabody, and were commanded on each voyage by the same gentleman, Captain Charles Roundy, a good type of that class of master mariners whose energy and fearlessness carried the name of Salem to the remotest ports, and whose uprightness and business integrity made that name an honored and respected one in those far-off countries. Mr. Peabody died at Salem, January 5, 1844.

Nathaniel L. Rogers was an enterprising and prominent merchant of Salem, and opened the American trade with Madagascar, Zanzibar and Australia. He was born in Ipswich, August 6, 1785, and died July 31, 1858. Associated with him in business was Richard S. Rogers, another successful merchant, who was born in 1790, and died in Salem June 11, 1873.

Robert Brookhouse was engaged in trade with Madagascar, Patagonia, the Feejee Islands and largely with the West Coast of Africa. He was very successful as a merchant, and accumulated a large property. He was born December 8, 1799, and died June 10, 1866. After his death his son Robert, with William Hunt, Joseph H. Hanson and Nathan A. Frye, continued the trade with the West Coast of Africa.

These brief notices of a few of the prominent merchants of Salem should not be closed without some reference to the last of their number, whose vessels arrived in her harbor from ports beyond the Cape of Good Hope.

John Bertram was born on the Isle of Jersey, February 11, 1796, and died in Salem March 22, 1882. Mr. Bertram came to Salem at an early age; and in December, 1813, we find him sailing from Boston in the schooner "Monkey" as cabin boy. He arrived in Charleston, S. C., early in 1814, and left there in an American privateer in March. The privateer was captured, and he was taken to Bermuda and confined in the Bermuda and Barbadoes prison-ships. Having been born on the Isle of Jersey, and being familiar with the French language, he was released,

as a Frenchman, after which he shipped on an American schooner and started for home, but was again taken prisoner, and carried to England, where he arrived in April, 1815, after peace had been declared.

In 1824, with P. I. Farnham and others, Mr. Bertram chartered the schooner "General Brewer," and, in company with Captain W. B. Smith, sailed for Saint Helena. When a few days out, he met the brig "Elizabeth," of Salem, Story, master, bound also for Saint Helena. Captain Story came on board the "General Brewer," and took tea with Captain Bertram; and each was desirous that the other should not know his destination. They each announced themselves as bound for Pernambuco. Captain Bertram suspected, however, that the "Elizabeth" was bound to Saint Helena, and he was extremely anxious to arrive there first, and dispose of his cargo. As night came on, in order to lighten his vessel, he had his entire deck-load of lumber passed aft and thrown overboard, and by crowding on all sail, day and night, he arrived at Saint Helena, disposed of his cargo, and was coming out of the harbor, just as the "Elizabeth" arrived. From Saint Helena, Captain Bertram went to Pernambuco, on his way to Salem. After his return home, he purchased the "Velocity," 119 tons burden, and, with Captain W. B. Smith, again set sail for Saint Helena. He went from there to the Cape of Good Hope, and thence to the Rio Grande and the Coast of Patagonia, at which latter place he remained, engaged in trading for hides, while Captain Smith made trips up and down the coast in the "Velocity." After being at Patagonia for some time, Captain Bertram and Captain Smith both sailed for Pernambuco in the "Velocity," and there found Captain Thomas Downing, of Salem, in the brig "Combine," of 133 tons burden. They purchased the "Combine" of Captain Downing, and Captain Bertram returned in her to Patagonia. Captain Smith came back to Salem in the "Velocity," and arrived there in August, 1826, with a cargo of two hundred and eight thousand two hundred and ninety-one pounds of beef, consigned to Peter E. Webster. After trading for awhile on the coast, Captain Bertram returned to Salem in the "Combine," arriving December 14, 1826. He afterwards made another trip to Patagonia in the "Combine," returning to Salem in July, 1827, with one hundred and thirty-five thousand one hundred and twenty-two pounds of beef. He was on the coast of Patagonia for about three years.

On his final return to Salem the firm of Nathaniel L. Rogers & Bros. offered him an interest in the ship "Black Warrior," of 231 tons burden, and he sailed in command of her from Salem in December, 1830, for Madagascar, Zanzibar and Mocha. Captain Henry F. King, of Salem, was with him on this voyage, serving as his clerk. He loaded with a large quantity of gum-copal in bulk, and established a trade there which continues to the present time. He returned from this voyage March 31, 1832. Mr. Bertram was connected in this business in the early years with Michael Shepard, Nathaniel Weston and Andrew Ward.

From 1845 to 1857 he was trading with Para. He sent, in December, 1848, one of the first vessels from Massachusetts to California after the gold discovery, and the favorable accounts he received from her induced him to send three vessels from Salem the next spring with full cargoes, and two others shortly after. He also engaged in the California trade with Messrs. Glidden & Williams, of Boston. While Captain Bertram was engaged in the California trade he built, with others, the ship "John Bertram," 1100 tons, at East Boston, and she was launched in sixty days from the time of laying her keel, and in ninety days was on her way down Boston harbor with a full cargo on board, bound for San Francisco. Although many predicted that a vessel built so hastily would not last long, their predictions have not been verified, and the ship is still afloat, sailing under a foreign flag. She sailed for San Francisco on her first voyage January 10, 1851. Captain Bertram has been connected with the building and management of several railroads in the West. He founded, and has maintained at his own expense, the "Old Men's Home," and he was largely instrumental in establishing the Salem Hospital. As a merchant, he was enterprising and energetic; as a citizen, public-spirited and charitable. His name worthily closes the long list of eminent merchants who have given Salem a history unparalleled in the annals of American commerce.

The foregoing notices of Salem merchants are by no means complete, and doubtless some, equally worthy of extended mention, are omitted. The names of others, particularly of those of the latter period of our commerce, will be found in the accounts of the different trades. It is not possible, in the limits of a single chapter, to do full justice to all, but the sketches just given will serve as an example of the class of men who made the name of Salem famous in the commercial annals of the State and nation.

CHAPTER IV.

SALEM—(*Continued*).

THE BANKING INTEREST.

BY HENRY M. BATCHELDER.

The Essex Bank—The Salem National Bank—The Merchants' National Bank—The Commercial Bank—The National Exchange Bank—The Asiatic National Bank—The Mercantile National Bank—The Mechanics' and Traders' Bank—The Naumkeag National Bank—The Bank of General Interest—The North American Bank—The Salem Savings Bank—The Salem Five Cents Savings Banks.

THERE are nine banks in Salem—seven banks of deposit and discount, and two savings banks.

In 1782 a branch of the Bank of North America was located in Boston, and in 1784 the Massachusetts Bank was established in that city. Eight years later the first bank was opened in Salem. It was styled the "Essex Bank," and commenced business July 2, 1792, with a capital of about three hundred thousand dollars.

It was in 1786 that, by Congressional order, accounts were kept in dollars, dimes and cents instead of pounds, shillings and pence. On account of business troubles, specie payments were suspended from 1837 to 1839, and again at the breaking out of the Civil War in 1861. This last suspension lasted until 1876.

THE ESSEX BANK, occupied a room in the building now known as the "Central Building," on Central Street, which street was for a time known as Bank Street. It expired in 1819, though its affairs were not fully wound up till 1822.

THE SALEM BANK now the Salem National Bank, was incorporated March 8, 1803, with a capital of two hundred thousand dollars. This was increased to two hundred and fifty thousand dollars in 1823; reduced in 1859 to one hundred and eighty-seven thousand five hundred dollars; restored to two hundred thousand dollars in 1865; increased in 1873 to three hundred thousand dollars, which is the present capital. Its presidents have been Benjamin Pickman, 1803; Joseph Peabody, 1814; George Peabody, 1833; Benjamin Merrill, 1842; George Peabody, 1847; William C. Endicott, 1858; Augustus Story, 1875; S. Endicott Peabody, 1882. Its cashiers: Jonathan Hodges, 1803; John Moriarty, 1810; Charles M. Endicott, 1835; George D. Phippen, 1858.

The bank was originally located in a brick building on the south side of Essex Street, next west of the Benjamin Pickman estate, nearly opposite St. Peter Street. This building stood in from the street, and was erected for the accommodation of the Salem Bank and the Salem Marine Insurance Company on the lower floor, and the East India Marine Museum on the second.

The Salem Bank adopted the national system in 1864, and moved to the Holyoke Building, Washington Street, in 1866, where it is still located.

THE MERCHANTS' BANK was incorporated June 26, 1811, with a capital of two hundred thousand dollars, which was afterwards increased to four hundred thousand dollars, and reduced in 1845 to the original figure. The bank was first located in the Union Building, on the corner of Essex and Union Streets, later in the Bowker Block, and in 1855 removed to the second floor of the then newly-built Asiatic Building on Washington Street. In 1883 it was removed to its present location, in the Northey Building, on the corner of Essex and Washington Streets. Its presidents have been Benjamin W. Crowninshield, 1811; Joseph Story, 1815; John W. Treadwell, 1835; Benjamin H. Silsbee, 1851; George R. Emmerton, 1880. Its cashiers: John Saunders, 1811; John W. Treadwell, 1813; Francis H. Silsbee, 1835; Benjamin H. Silsbee, 1848; Nathaniel B. Perkins, 1851; George R. Jewett, 1883; Henry M. Batchelder, 1883. The bank became the Merchants' National Bank, December 30, 1864.

THE COMMERCIAL, now FIRST NATIONAL BANK, was incorporated February 12, 1819, with a capital of three hundred thousand dollars, which was reduced to two hundred thousand dollars in 1830, and restored in 1851. This bank first opened its doors at its present location, in the Central Street Bank Building. It presidents have been Willard Peele, William Sutton and Eben Sutton. Its cashiers: Nathaniel L. Rogers, Zachariah F. Silsbee and Edward H. Payson. It was the first bank in the city to enter the national system, becoming the "First National Bank" in June, 1864.

THE EXCHANGE BANK was incorporated January 31, 1823, with a capital of three hundred thousand dollars, which was afterwards reduced to the present amount, two hundred thousand dollars. It commenced business in a building on the site of William Gray's garden, No. 172 Essex Street, the building extending to the corner of St. Peter Street. It was removed to the First Church building in December, 1864, occupying at that time the rooms on the corner of Washington Street, but was transferred to the southwest corner of the building in 1875. The bank is now numbered 109 on Washington Street. Its presidents have been Gideon Tucker, John Webster, Henry L. Williams, Nathan Nichols. Its cashiers: John Chadwick, Joseph H. Webb. It became the National Exchange Bank February 18, 1865.

THE ASIATIC BANK was incorporated June 12, 1824, with a capital of two hundred thousand dollars, which was increased to three hundred and fifteen thousand dollars. It commenced business in the Central Street Bank Building; removed from there to the East India Marine Building, on Essex, opposite St. Peter Street, and in 1855 changed its quarters to the Asiatic Building, on Washington Street, where

it is still located. Its presidents have been Stephen White, Nathan W. Neal, Thomas P. Pingree, Joseph S. Cabot, Leonard B. Harrington; and its cashiers: Henry Pickering, Joseph S. Cabot, William H. Foster and Charles S. Rea. Mr. Foster, who retired from the office of cashier in 1884, had been in the service of the bank for sixty years, since its organization. It became the Asiatic National Bank December 8, 1864.

THE MERCANTILE BANK was incorporated March 4, 1826. Its capital has always been two hundred thousand dollars, and it has always been located on Central Street, first in the Central Building, on the west side of the street, and since 1827 in its present quarters in the Central Street Bank Building, nearly opposite. Its presidents have been Nathaniel L. Rogers, David Putnam, John Dwyer, Aaron Perkins, Charles Harrington. Its cashiers: John A. Southwick, Stephen Webb and Joseph H. Phippen. The bank became the Mercantile National Bank January 10, 1865.

THE MECHANICS' AND TRADERS' BANK was incorporated March 10, 1827, with a capital of two hundred thousand dollars, but never commenced business.

THE NAUMKEAG BANK was incorporated March 17, 1831, with a capital of two hundred thousand dollars, which was subsequently increased to five hundred thousand dollars. It commenced business in the store of Benjamin Dodge, on Essex Street, opposite the Essex House, thence was removed to the Manning Building, now Bowker Place, from there to the East India Marine Building, and in 1872 to its present quarters, on the second floor of the Asiatic Building, Washington Street. Its presidents have been David Pingree, Edward D. Kimball, Charles H. Fabens, William B. Parker, David Pingree, (Jr.,) and Joseph H. Towne. Its cashiers have been Joseph G. Sprague, Joseph H. Towne and Nathaniel A. Very. The Naumkeag became the Naumkeag National Bank in December, 1864.

THE BANK OF GENERAL INTEREST was also incorporated March 17, 1831, with a capital of two hundred thousand dollars. John Russell was president and William H. Russell cashier. It ceased business in 1842.

THE NORTH AMERICAN BANK was incorporated March 31, 1836, with an authorized capital of three hundred thousand dollars. It never went into operation.

THE SALEM SAVINGS BANK was incorporated January 29, 1818, as the "Institution for Savings in the town of Salem and Vicinity." The name was changed to the Salem Savings Bank in 1843. It commenced business on Central Street, thence removed to the Bowker Building, and in 1855 to the present location in the Asiatic Building, Washington Street.

Its presidents have been Dr. Edward A. Holyoke, 1818; Joseph Peabody, 1830; Nathaniel Silsbee, 1844; Daniel A. White, 1851; Zach. F. Silsbee, 1861; John Bertram, 1864; Joseph S. Cabot, 1865; Benjamin H. Silsbee, 1875; Peter Silver, 1879; William Northey, 1883. The treasurers have been William P. Richardson, 1818; William Gibbs, 1820; William Dean, 1821; Peter Lander, Jr., 1822; Daniel Bray, 1823; Benjamin Shreve, 1837; Henry Ropes, 1839; William Wallis, 1861; Charles E. Symonds, 1865; William H. Simonds, Jr., 1879. In 1855 the bank removed to the Asiatic Building, Washington Street, which it now owns. Its depositors number between sixteen and seventeen thousand, and the amount on deposit averages $6,500,000.

THE SALEM FIVE CENTS SAVINGS BANK was incorporated in 1855. It opened for business in the second story of the Downing Block, No. 175 Essex Street, removing from there into its present quarters on the second floor of the Northey Building. Its presidents have been Edward D. Kimball, 1855; Edmund Smith, 1861; Henry L. Williams, 1862; John Kinsman, 1879; William H. Jelly, 1882. Its treasurers: J. Vincent Browne, 1855; Charles H. Henderson, 1868. The number of depositors is over eight thousand, and the amount on deposit averages more than $2,500,000.

The aggregate capital of the national banks of Salem is $2,015,000, and the combined surplus funds and undivided profits on August 1, 1887, was over $900,000. The amount on deposit on the same date was over $1,700,000.

CHAPTER V.

SALEM.—*Continued.*

THE PRESS.

BY GILBERT L. STREETER.

THE history of the press in any community, if properly executed, is a chronicle of the times, a correct narrative of the passing events of the period. It is the business of the journalist to "catch the manners living as they rise," but the correctness of the picture will depend, of course, upon the skill of the artist.

It is difficult to appreciate the condition of our early colonial community before the days of the newspaper, which now seems so essential to a proper knowledge of events. It is manifest that the ordinary gossip of the community, and the verbal narration of events transpiring elsewhere, satisfied every want. There were printing presses in the colony long before sufficient patronage could be obtained to warrant the establishment of a newspaper. There was a printing press in Cambridge as early as 1639, and as the infant university was located there, as well as the local government of the colony, the persons concerned in it were encouraged by grants of land from the General

Court. Subsequently, in 1674, a printing press was "set up" in Boston, and this was by special leave of the General Court, which had previously ordered, in 1664, that there should be no other press than that in Cambridge; for, besides the cost of importing a printing press from England, and the great cost of paper and other materials, the early printers had to encounter the objections of the Puritan authorities, who, although ready to patronize the press to some extent, looked upon the freedom of printing with a jealous eye. They early appointed certain trusted clergymen to act as licensers of the press.

The first attempt to establish a newspaper in North America was made in 1690, when (September 25th) a single number of a small sheet was printed in Boston by Richard Pierce for Benjamin Harris. It was condemned at once by the public authorities, and it is believed that a second number was never issued. It was fourteen years after this before another party ventured to try the experiment, and this person was John Campbell, the postmaster of Boston, who succeeded in establishing the *Boston News Letter*.

While, therefore, Salem was the third town in the colony, in the order of time, to enjoy the advantages of a public printing press, it was nearly a century later than Boston in getting one. The arrival of this press in Salem, in 1768, was a great event. Although the town contained many literary persons of distinction, and the inhabitants were generally well educated, the literary resources of the town which were available by the public were quite limited. There were few books, for they were very costly, and these were in possession of the wealthy families. Most families were esteemed fortunate if they possessed the Bible, the almanac and a few approved sermons. The first attempt to collect a library in Salem was when the Social Library was formed, and this was after the printing press was established.

But the decade preceding the Revolution was one of great intellectual activity. The press in the colony had been relieved from the supervision and control of the clergy, and its absolute independence was nearly secured. Several newspapers had been commenced in Boston, and there was a general disposition to encourage and sustain such publications.

The person who undertook to establish the printing business in Salem was Samuel Hall, a young man, a native of Medford, and one who, from his qualities of mind and energy of character, was well suited to perform the task of a pioneer in this matter. He was a practical printer, and had learned his trade of his uncle, Daniel Fowle, who was the first printer in New Hampshire. Before coming to Salem he had been concerned with Mrs. Anne Franklin, sister-in-law of Benjamin Franklin, in the publication of the Newport (R. I.) *Mercury*, a newspaper originally established by James Franklin, and which has been continued until this time.

Mr. Hall was in sympathy with the rising party of young men who were becoming restive under the yoke of the mother-country, and he was afterwards active in the Revolution; and it is quite probable that he was assisted in his enterprise by leading persons of the patriotic party.

Mr. Hall opened his office in Salem in April, 1768. It was located on Main Street, a few doors above the Town-House—about where the Creamer block is situated. This locality was then, as now, near the centre of business. The Town-House was a wooden building of two stories, next above the First Church, on the spot between the present church and the parapet of the railroad tunnel. It was where the town-meetings were usually held (in the lower story), and was also occupied, in the second story, as a court-house. It was afterwards called the State-House, as the Provincial Assembly of Massachusetts convened therein in 1774, with John Hancock as president. It was a building of humble pretensions, its chief claim to notice arising from the circumstance that it was a *painted* building, which was an uncommon distinction in those days. In front of the building, extending on either side of the door, was a wooden bench, where the elderly men of the town were accustomed to assemble to gossip and converse on public and private matters.

1. The Essex Gazette.—Mr. Hall soon resolved to commence a newspaper here. Salem was the principal place in the colony outside of Boston. It was a town of about five thousand inhabitants, largely engaged in the fisheries and in the coastwise and West India trade, and was generally prosperous. There were many wealthy and eminent people here, some occupying important positions in the colonial or in the royal service. The town was also noted for its intellectual culture and the elegance of its society.

Proposals were issued by Mr. Hall in July, 1768, for publishing a paper to be entitled *The Essex Gazette*, to be issued weekly, on Tuesday, at 6*s.* 8*d.* per annum. The prospectus was full and explicit in regard to the character of the proposed paper; and, as indicating the spirit in which the enterprise was started, we quote the following passage:

"I shall exert myself to obtain as general and fresh a Collection of News as will lay in my Power, both Foreign and Domestic, and insert it with accuracy and in due order; and I shall at all times assiduously endeavor to procure and carefully publish, as I may have room, any Compositions that may have a tendency to promote Religion, Virtue, Industry, good Order, a due sense of the Rights and Liberties of our Country, with the Importance of true and genuine principles of patriotism, and whatever may serve to enliven and animate us in our known Loyalty and Affection to our gracious Sovereign. In short, any Pieces that may be productive of Public Good, or contribute to the innocent Amusement and Entertainment of my Readers, will be inserted with Pleasure; and any writings of a Contrary Nature will, if offered for Insertion, be instantly rejected."

These comprehensive, patriotic and emphatic statements of his intentions, with more of a similar character, constituted Mr. Hall's introduction to his readers. And all that he here promised he thoroughly performed, for he was prompt and faithful in the

execution of all his contracts, devoting himself with great energy and spirit to the discharge of his duties.

The first number of the paper appeared August 2, 1768, and was a very creditable publication in its typographical execution and the general character of its contents. It was printed upon a crown sheet, folio, ten by sixteen inches, three columns to the page. This diminutive sheet, less than one-third the size of the *Gazette* of to-day, was spoken of in the prospectus as "four large pages, printed in folio." It was doubtless considered as large at that time. The head was adorned by a rude wood cut, comprising the figures of two Indians, with a codfish overhead, and a dove with a sprig in its bill in the centre. This device bears some resemblance to the Essex County seal, and was probably intended to be emblematical of peace, the fisheries and successful emigration. A portion of this device is contained in the seal of the city of Salem. The head-line assured the reader, in the common phraseology of that day, that the sheet contained "the freshest advices, both foreign and domestic." It bore as a motto a quotation from Horace, "Omne tulit punctum qui miscuit utile dulci."

The contents of the paper were such as were looked for in public prints at that time, chiefly items of political news from various parts of the world, very concisely stated, and selected with care and good judgment. Foreign news occupied a large share of the columns. Domestic news was given simply, under the names of the several towns in the colonies, whence it was received. A few advertisements filled out the sheet. The contents were mostly selected, but few original pieces, either editorial or contributed, appearing in the columns in those days. The public did not estimate so highly at that time as they seem to now, the off-hand remarks, speculations and effusions generally, of editors and their correspondents. Among the contributors to Mr. Hall's paper was Col. Timothy Pickering, then a rising young man, and afterwards an officer in the Revolutionary army and Secretary of State of the United States. He published a series of able and elaborate articles upon the importance of a reorganization of the militia, which had great influence in arousing attention to the subject, and which suggested complete plans for increasing the efficiency of that branch of the public service. His father, Deacon Timothy Pickering, also frequently communicated with Mr. Hall's readers, usually to rebuke some growing evil in the community or to encourage some good work.

Mr. Hall was eminently qualified for the task he had undertaken. He possessed business talents, enterprise, ability, editorial tact and judgment, and withal sympathized entirely with the state of the public mind at that time with respect to the mother-country. He had commenced his paper at an important season. The causes were then actively at work which soon eventuated in the Revolution. A spirit of independence was growing up in the breasts of the people, and the principles of civil and political liberty were undergoing a thorough discussion. With this condition of popular feeling Mr. Hall sympathized warmly and earnestly.

Subscribers to his *Gazette* were obtained, not only in this town, but also doubtless in most of the principal places in the colony; for a newspaper at that period was a much more important thing than at the present day, when such publications abound in all directions. There were then but five papers in the state, all of which were in Boston, namely, the *News Letter*, *Evening Post*, *Gazette*, *Chronicle* and *Advertiser*. There was none at the eastward except in Portsmouth. No regular stages or other means of transportation having been established, excepting a single stage to Boston, Mr. Hall's eastern subscribers were supplied by a post-rider, who left the office on publication mornings for the towns between here and Newburyport, depositing the papers on the way. To obtain the most recent news from Boston, he incurred the expense of a special messenger from that town, on the previous day, who brought the latest papers. The news from New York was a week old, from Philadelphia a fortnight, and from London two months.

In 1772 Mr. Hall admitted his younger brother, Ebenezer, into partnership with him. Their business connection continued until the death of Ebenezer, in Cambridge, February, 1776, aged twenty-seven.

The *Essex Gazette* was published here nearly seven years, a period which embraced the most important events that immediately preceded the Revolution. All the great questions which agitated the colonies during that time were discussed in its columns. The odious taxes imposed by the King, the non-importation agreements, the Boston Massacre, the Boston Port Bill, the Tea troubles, the doings of the people in their town-meetings and other primary assemblies, the popular hatred of the officers of the crown, and other similar topics were laid before Mr. Hall's readers in the succession of their occurrence.

In October, 1770, an attempt was made to injure the subscription of the paper on account of an alleged partiality in its columns towards the non-importation agreements. But the effort was unsuccessful, and seems to have resulted in the increase rather than diminution of the list. The number of subscribers at this time was about seven hundred.

As indicative of the spirit of the paper, we may quote an article which appeared March 5, 1771. This was the anniversary of the massacre in State Street, Boston. The columns on this occasion were draped in black. On the first page was a mourning tablet, surrounded by heavy black lines, upon which was inscribed the following animated declaration:

"As a Solemn and Perpetual MEMORIAL:

"Of the Tyranny of the British Administration of Government in the years 1768, 1769, and 1770:

"Of the fatal and destructive Consequences of quartering Armies, in Time of Peace, in populous cities:

"Of the riduculous Policy, and infamous Absurdity, of supporting *Civil Government* by a *Military Force*.

"Of the great Duty and Necessity of firmly opposing Despotism at its first Approaches:

"Of the detestable Principles and arbitrary Conduct of those *Ministers* in Britain who advised, and of their *Tools* in America who desired, the Introduction of a Standing Army in this Province in the Year 1768:

"Of the irrefragible Proof which those Ministers themselves thereby produced, that the Civil Government, as by them administered, was weak, wicked and tyranical:

"Of the vile Ingratitude and abominable Wickedness of every *American*, who abetted and encouraged, either in Thought, Word, or Deed, the establishment of a Standing Army among his Countrymen:

"Of the unaccountable Conduct of those *Civil Governors*, the immediate Representatives of his Majesty, who, while the *Military* were triumphantly insulting the whole LEGISLATIVE AUTHORITY OF THE STATE, and while the blood of the massacred Inhabitants was flowing in the Streets, persisted in repeatedly disclaiming all Authority of relieving the People, by any the least Removal of the Troops:

"And of the savage Cruelty of the IMMEDIATE PERPETRATORS,

"*Be it forever Remembered*,

That this Day, THE FIFTH OF MARCH, is the Anniversary of PRESTON'S MASSACRE—IN KING STREET—BOSTON—NEW ENGLAND—1770.

In which Five of his Majesty's Subjects were slain and six wounded, By the Discharge of a Number of Muskets from a Party of Soldiers under the Command of Capt. THOMAS PRESTON.

GOD Save the People!

"Salem, March 5, 1771."

In May, 1775, soon after the Concord fight - a full account of which, as well as of Leslie's invasion, etc., had appeared in the *Gazette*—Mr. Hall transferred the publication of his paper from Salem to Cambridge, for political purposes. The last number issued here was dated May 2d, and the next number in Cambridge May 12th. The office was in a building of the college, Stoughton Hall. The title was then enlarged to the *New England Chronicle or Essex Gazette*. This movement was made "at the desire of many respectable gentlemen of the Honorable Provincial Congress," with whom Mr. Hall was in high favor. The paper was continued in Cambridge until the evacuation of Boston by the British, when it was removed thither, and at the same time the title of *Essex Gazette* was dropped.

Before Messrs. Hall left Salem, their printing-office was burnt out by the great fire of October, 1774, which destroyed a meeting-house, custom-house, eight dwellings, fourteen stores and several barns and out-buildings. The meeting-house destroyed was the Rev. Dr. Whitaker's, which was succeeded by the Tabernacle, and stood on King Street just above School Street, about where the Endicott building now is. The custom-house was just above. The printing-office was subsequently located in a brick building on School Street, which was afterward incorporated in the brick block near the corner of Norman Street.

2. THE SALEM GAZETTE AND NEWBURY AND NEWBURYPORT ADVERTISER.—Before Mr. Hall left town another newspaper was commenced, July 1, 1774, with the foregoing elaborate title. It was published by Ezekiel Russell, from Boston, an unsuccessful printer, who had been an unsuccessful auctioneer also. His antecedents were those of a Tory. In 1771 he had published in Boston a small paper called the *Censor*, which was in the interest of the loyal party, and soon expired. He had also been known, in 1773, as the printer of a hand-bill entitled "The Tradesmen's Protest against the proceedings of the Merchants relative to the new Importation of Tea." This handbill excited so much feeling among the patriotic merchants and tradesmen that, at a large town-meeting in Faneuil Hall, the printer and the authors of it were pronounced as "detestable," and the protest itself as "false, scandalous and base." Mr. Russell's office in Salem was "in Ruck Street, near the State House," somewhere on Washington Street, near the depot, we presume. The head of the paper announced that it was "A Weekly, Political, Commercial and Entertaining Paper—Influenced neither by Court or Country." But the Country decided that it was influenced by the Court. The editor was suspected of a bias in favor of the British, probably on account of his previous course in Boston, and the paper accordingly terminated in a few months an unpopular career.

3. THE AMERICAN GAZETTE, OR THE CONSTITUTIONAL JOURNAL.—This was the title of another paper by Mr. Russell, the author of the previous one; and like that, it failed to command public confidence and support. It was published during the Revolution, commencing June 19, 1776, and closing in a few weeks. It was nominally published by John Rogers, at Mr. Russell's office; but as Rogers was merely Russell's journeyman, and owned neither press nor types, the latter was doubtless the true proprietor. The printing-office at this time was near the upper end of Main Street. The paper was published weekly, on Tuesday, at eight shillings a year. The device at the head of the paper, coarsely cut in wood, was that of an open journal, supported by two figures—one that of fame with her trumpet, and the other an Indian with his bows and arrows. Beneath the volume was a ship under sail.

Some time after the suspension of this paper Mr. Russell removed to Danvers, and printed for a few years near the Bell Tavern, and then returned to Boston. There he continued the printing business, in a small way, until his death, in 1796, at the age of fifty-two.

Mr. Russell seems to have experienced through life a constant succession of the reverses of fortune. Besides the fruitless efforts we have mentioned, he had been a publisher of the *Portsmouth Mercury*, in company with Thomas Furber, and that paper continued but three years. It is said that Mr. Russell's wife was the "better half" of his family, assisting as a practical printer in his office, composing popular ballads for publication, and assuming the business upon his death.

4. THE SALEM GAZETTE AND GENERAL ADVER-

TISER.—For nearly five years during the Revolution there was no paper in Salem. But in 1780 Mrs. Mary Crouch, widow of a printer in Charleston, S. C., removed hither with her press and types, and December 6, 1780, issued a prospectus, in the name of Mary Crouch & Co., for the publication of the *Salem Gazette and General Advertiser*. For this purpose they announced "an elegant assortment of type and printing materials," and stated their purpose to relate such matters as should refer "to the safety and welfare of the United States, to the liberties and independence of which the *Salem Gazette* will be ever sacredly devoted." The first number of the paper was dated January 2, 1781. It was of the crown size, issued weekly at fifty cents a quarter. The paper was more miscellaneous than its predecessors had been. It commenced the publication of stories, tales and other entertaining articles.

Mrs. Crouch exhibited spirit and enterprise, but was unable to succeed with the paper, which lasted only nine months, closing October 11th of the same year. She assigned as reasons for the stoppage, "the want of sufficient assistance, and the impossibility of obtaining house-room for herself and family to reside near her business." Her printing-office was at the corner of Derby and Hardy Streets. Mrs. Crouch afterwards removed to Providence, her native place.

5. THE SALEM GAZETTE.—In just a week after the close of Mrs. Crouch's paper Samuel Hall again entered upon a career as publisher in Salem. He had returned from Boston, and probably bought Mrs. Crouch's materials. He commenced a new paper entitled *The Salem Gazette*, the first number of which was dated October 18, 1781. It was of the size and general character of his previous paper. He continued the publication of this series of *Gazettes* for a little more than four years, enlarging the sheet in the third volume, and bringing it to a close in this town November 22, 1785. At that time he removed the paper to Boston.

In finally terminating his connection with Salem, Mr. Hall stated that he did so only under the pressure of stern necessity. His business had been materially injured by a tax upon advertisements, which had been imposed by the Legislature the previous summer. This tax, in conjunction with the decline of trade, had operated so disastrously as to deprive him of nearly three-quarters of the income of his paper from that source, and on this account he accepted the advice of friends, who recommended his removal to Boston. The contracted circulation of the paper, and the great expense attending its publication in Salem, he said, rendered a burdensome tax upon his advertising columns insupportable. The expense of procuring intelligence from Boston alone, by special messenger, was so great that to defray it he would gladly have given more than half the profits of all the newspapers circulated in this town.

The tax on advertisements, of which Mr. Hall complained so bitterly, was voted by the Legislature July 2, 1785, and had elicited an outcry of indignation from nearly all the papers in the State. It was imposed to aid in liquidating the war debt incurred during the Revolution. It required the payment of *six pence* on each advertisement of twelve lines or less, and *one shilling* on those of twenty or less, and so on in proportion. This act was denounced in severe terms as an infringement of the liberty of the press, as the "Bostonian Stamp Act," etc. When the law went into operation, Mr. Hall spoke of it in the *Gazette* as follows:

"No printer can now advertise, even in his *own* paper, any books or pieces of *piety or devotion*, not excepting the HOLY BIBLE, without paying a heavy tax for it. How this accords with His Excellency's late 'Proclamation for the encouragement of *Piety*, *Virtue*, *Education* and *Manners*,' let the framers of the act determine. Were it not for the tax upon advertising *good books*, the Printer hereof would inform the Public that he has just published 'Extracts from Dr. Priestly's Catechism,' which he sells at five coppers single, and two shillings the dozen."

In leaving, Mr. Hall said he should always retain the most grateful recollection of favors received in this place, and should "always endeavor to promote the interests and reputation of the town of Salem."

The removal to Boston was executed with characteristic promptness, so that not a single issue of the paper was omitted, the next number, under the new name of *The Massachusetts Gazette*, appearing as a continuation on the regular day, November 28th. Mr. Hall made arrangements to supply his Salem subscribers as usual, by a carrier. He subsequently sold the *Gazette* to other parties. He afterwards printed a paper for a short time in the French language, entitled *Courier de Boston*,—the first paper in that language in New England. In 1789 he opened a book-store in Cornhill, which he sold in 1805 to Lincoln & Edmands, of which firm Gould & Lincoln were the modern successors.

Mr. Hall, as we have stated was born in Medford November 2, 1740, of Jonathan Hall and Anna Fowle. He died October 30, 1807, aged sixty-seven years. He was an industrious, accurate and enterprising printer, a judicious editor and excellent man. His life was one of active usefulness and of remarkable success. Besides his newpaper publications, he was the printer and publisher of many works of various degrees of importance, some of them of considerable value. The list of his publications during his residence in Salem, and subsequently in Boston, would reflect great credit on him as a man of business enterprise. In his papers he advocated liberal opinions with firmness and discretion, and always commanded the confidence and respect of the best men in the community. "The country," says Mr. Buckingham, "had no firmer friend, in the gloomiest period of its history, as well as in the days of its young and increasing prosperity, than Samuel Hall."

6. THE SALEM CHRONICLE AND ESSEX ADVERTISER—The short interim succeeding Mr. Hall's second series was followed, March 30, 1786, by the

commencement of a weekly paper with the foregoing title, by George Roulstone. It continued less than a year, and possessed no special interest. It was printed on Paved Street, on a crown sheet, at nine shillings.

7. The Salem Gazette.—The present *Salem Gazette* was commenced October 14, 1786, when John Dabney and Thomas C. Cushing issued the first number of *The Salem Mercury*, which in 1790 (January 5th) assumed the name of *The Salem Gazette*, and has so continued ever since. Mr. Cushing was a native of Hingham. He had served his apprenticeship with Mr. Hall, and had afterwards, in 1785, been connected with John W. Allen in the publication of the *American Recorder and Charlestown Advertiser*, in Charlestown. He was twenty-two years of age when he came to Salem, and, from his intercourse with so excellent a master as Mr. Hall, had doubtless been strengthened in the liberal principles and correct habits which he brought to his new undertaking.

The Mercury was printed weekly, on Tuesday, on a demy sheet, four columns to a page, and chiefly in long primer type. The price was nine shillings a year. The contents of the paper gave evidence of care in the selection, and the original communications were from competent writers. Party lines had not been drawn at that early period, and the political character of the paper was simply that of an ardent advocate of the new Federal Constitution, the adoption of which, in our own State, and in other States successively, was recorded in terms of exultation.

Mr. Dabney withdrew from the paper at the close of the third volume, October 6, 1789, and opened a book-store, leaving Mr. Cushing sole proprietor of the business. He continued thus until October 14, 1794, a period of five years, and then transferred the publication to William Carlton, his partner in the Bible and Heart Book-store. This book-store was a noted place of resort for the leading gentlemen of the town, such as Dr. Bowditch, Dr. Holyoke and Dr. Prince, for many years. The store was subsequently carried on successfully by John M. Ives, John P. Jewett and D. B. Brooks, and it is now Mr. Young's music-store. There were formerly wooden figures of a Bible and a heart suspended over the door, which, during the War of 1812, in a time of great political excitement, were torn down in the night by some mischievous persons, and thrown into the harbor. It was upon the occasion of a list of privateers in our harbor being published in the *Gazette* by the foreman of the office.

The excited and virulent political feeling at various times between 1802 and 1815, embracing the events connected with the last war with Great Britain, was fully exhibited in the columns of the *Gazette*. Although Mr. Cushing was himself of a mild and peaceable disposition, he allowed a pretty free use of his columns by writers who did not emulate his own virtues. The Republican party was assailed in violent and often extremely personal language. Sarcasm, ridicule and severe denunciation were freely employed. Nor was the *Register* at all backward in returning the assault in a similar tone and spirit. This mode of warfare led, on several occasions, to serious personal difficulties.

In the fall of 1802 a violent contest arose between the Federal and Republican parties, concerning the election of a member of Congress from this district. The result was favorable to the Republicans. When it was over, in November, the editors of the *Register* and *Gazette* were called upon to answer for the tone of their papers, the former by a libel suit and the latter by threats of personal violence. Mr. Cushing was visited at his house by Captains Richard and Benjamin Crowninshield and Mr. Joseph Story, and taken into a private room, where he was charged with malicious publications, of a purely personal and offensive character, against the complainants and their friends, designed to injure them in the estimation of the community. After detailing their grievances at some length, Captain Benjamin Crowninshield threatened to shoot Mr. Cushing if he continued to publish such things as they had complained of. Mr. Cushing replied that it had been his endeavor to keep his paper free from undue personalities, though he considered public characters and public conduct as proper subjects of animadversion; and as for the future he should give no pledges, but should be governed by his regard for decency, and endeavor to give no just cause of offense. The conversation became so loud and boisterous that it alarmed the females of Mr. Cushing's family, who called a number of persons into an adjoining apartment, as listeners; and thus the whole affair became a matter of public notoriety. The excitement which ensued was so great that Mr. Cushing was obliged to publish a full account of the interview.

Party politics continued to rage for several years afterwards with a degree of violence which has not been exhibited since.

One of the most amusing circumstances connected with this period was that of the Pictorial Gerrymander. The Democratic Legislature of 1811–12 had carved and cut up the towns of Essex County in such a manner as to favor the election of a Democratic member of Congress from Essex South. The district thus formed was very strange in its outlines, running from Salem all around the line of back towns, Lynn, Andover, Haverhill, etc., and ending at Salisbury. This curious arrangement struck the eye of Gilbert Stuart, the celebrated painter, as presenting the outlines of a natural monster, and he accordingly took his pencil, and by affixing claws to the lower extremities at Salem and Marblehead, wings to the back at Andover, and a 'horrid beak' at Salisbury, produced the figure of a creature which he said would do for a Salamander. But Major Benjamin Russell suggested that it might more properly be

called a "Gerrymander," in allusion to Elbridge Gerry, the Democratic Governor of the State. It ever after received this title. An engraving of the monster was inserted in the *Gazette* and other papers, and printed upon handbills, as an electioneering document. In 1813, when the Democrats were defeated, the Federalists were in high glee over the "Gerrymander," which had been so useful to them, and on the morning after the election in April, a figure of the skeleton of the deceased monster appeared in the *Gazette*, with the appropriate epitaph, "Hatched 1812—killed 1813." This device was executed by Mr. Appleton, the jocose partner of Mr. Cushing in his book-store, who cast a block of type-metal and engraved the figure during the night previous to its publication. There was subsequently published a picture of the nondescript in its coffin, and a fac-simile of the grave-stone, together with an amusing programme of mock ceremonials at its funeral.

Mr. Cushing relinquished the publication of the *Gazette* Dec. 31, 1822, on account of infirm health, and, in retiring from a post he had so long occupied, bade adieu to his friends in a graceful note. He died Sept. 28, 1824, aged sixty. As an editor and publisher, as well as a member of the firm of Cushing & Appleton, he had secured a host of friends, who remembered him as "the amiable and gifted Cushing." His qualities of mind and heart were such as commanded the respect and esteem of all who knew him. He was steadfast and conscientious in his political opinions, a person of thorough integrity in his business affairs, gentle and pleasing in his manners. He is described as having had strong powers of mind, warmth of fancy, various and extensive knowledge, and a familiar acquaintance with the best of English literature, which gave attraction and fascination to his conversation.

Among the writers for the *Gazette* during Mr. Cushing's connection with it was the late Benjamin Merrill, who was a constant and voluminous contributor to its columns, and whose writings contributed largely to its success and influence upon the public mind.

The next publishers of the paper were Caleb Cushing, a son of Thomas C., and Ferdinand Andrews, who commenced at the beginning of 1823. Mr. Cushing withdrew at the end of six months, and Mr. Andrews continued sole publisher until April 1, 1825, when he sold half of the establishment to Caleb Foote. Mr. Foote had served his apprenticeship with Mr. T. C. Cushing, who had himself been an apprentice of Mr. Hall, and thus was established a personal connection between the original *Essex Gazette* and the *Salem Gazette* of to-day. In 1826, Oct. 1st, the other half of the *Gazette* was purchased by William Brown, of Mr. Andrews, who removed to Lancaster and established a paper in that town. He afterwards returned to Salem to publish the *Landmark*, and was subsequently a proprietor of the Boston *Daily Evening Traveller*.

In 1833, Jan. 1st, Mr. Foote became sole proprietor of the *Gazette*. He was assisted for some time by John B. Chisholm, and afterwards for many years by Major William Brown. In 1851, Jan. 1st, Nathaniel A. Horton became associated with Mr. Foote as publisher and editor, and so remains at the present time. From Jan. 1, 1847, until Oct. 3, 1851, the *Gazette* was issued tri-weekly, on Tuesday, Friday and Saturday. At the latter date the Saturday edition was discontinued in favor of an enlarged semi-weekly. Since the modern division of parties the *Gazette* has been a zealous and efficient advocate of the views of the Republican party, in entire harmony with its old antagonist, the *Register*.

The printing-office previous to 1792 was somewhere near its present location, and for two years subsequent to that time in Stearns' Building. It was afterwards removed to the present neighborhood; then to No. 8 Paved Street. From 1825 to 1827 it occupied the rooms now improved by the *Register* office. It was thence removed to Columbian Hall, in Stearns' Building, and in 1831 to quarters in the Holyoke Building, where it remained until January, 1874, when it occupied its present commodious quarters in Hale's Building.

8. The Salem Register.—This paper was commenced during the first year of the present century, May 12, 1800, when the first number was issued with the title of *The Impartial Register*. It was published on Monday and Thursday, by William Carlton, who had withdrawn from the *Gazette* and dissolved his partnership in the book business with Thomas C. Cushing several years before, as we have already stated. The *Register* started in opposition to the Federal party, and, during the violent political struggles which ensued, was an able supporter of the Republican cause. It selected for its motto the following lines:

> "All parties here may plead an honest, favorite cause,
> Whoever reasons best on Nature's, Wisdom's Laws,
> Proclaims eternal Truth—gains Heaven's and Men's applause."

Dr. Bentley aided Mr. Carlton in his new publication, as he had previously done in the *Gazette*, and his famous summaries and variety of miscellaneous and local articles soon gave the paper a decided character. In a few months, Aug. 7th, the title was enlarged to *The Salem Impartial Register*. This was continued until Jan. 4, 1802, when the word "Impartial" was dropped, leaving *The Salem Register*. At the same time the original motto gave place to the well-known verse which is still printed in the paper, and which was written impromptu by the late Judge Story, who is said to have scribbled it in pencil on the side of a printer's case.

> "Here shall the Press the People's Rights maintain,
> Unawed by Influence, and unbribed by Gain;
> Here Patriot Truth her glorious precepts draw,
> Pledged to Religion, Liberty and Law."

During the autumn of this year (1802) the editor,

Mr. Carlton, was convicted of a libel on Timothy Pickering, and suffered imprisonment therefor. This occurred just after the election of a member of Congress for this district, when Jacob Crowninshield, the Democratic candidate, was chosen over Mr. Pickering, who was the Federal candidate. The *Register* had asserted that "Robert Liston, the British Ambassador, distributed five hundred thousand dollars amongst the partizans of the English nation in America," and intimated that Mr. Pickering might have partaken of "these secret largesses," "some little token, some small gratuity, for all his zealous efforts against liberty and her sons, for all his attachment to the interests of England," at the same time indulging in contemptuous flings toward the distinguished ex-Secretary of State. To answer for this article Mr. Carlton was indicted by the grand jury, and tried before the Supreme Court, at Ipswich, in April, 1803. He was convicted, and sentenced to pay a fine of one hundred dollars and the costs of prosecution; to be imprisoned in the county jail two months, and to give bonds, with two sureties in four hundred dollars each, to keep the peace for two years. This unfortunate affair is simply illustrative of the acerbity of party feeling at that time.

In a little more than two years after this imprisonment Mr. Carlton died, July 24, 1805, aged thirty-four years. He had suffered from fever during his imprisonment as stated by Dr. Bentley, and continued feeble until the day before his decease, when he was suddenly seized by violent fever and derangement, which terminated his life in twenty-four hours. Mr. Carlton was a native of Salem, and descended from two of the ancient families of the country. His constant friend said of him: "He always possessed great cheerfulness of temper and great benevolence of mind. He was distinguished by his perseverance, integrity and uprightness. To his generous zeal the public were indebted for the early information which the *Register* gave of the most interesting occurrences. To a tender mother he was faithful, and to his family affectionate. The friends of his youth enjoyed the warmth of his gratitude. His professions and friendships were sincere. He was an able editor and an honest man."

Previous to the death of Mr. Carlton the printing-office was removed (January 3, 1803) from its original location in the house on Essex Street, next below the Franklin building, to a room over the post-office, where Bowker's building now stands. At the same time a new head-piece was mounted, a figure of Liberty, with the motto, "Where liberty is, there is my country."

After the death of Mr. Carlton the *Register* was published for his widow, Elizabeth, until the 26th of August ensuing, when she died also. It was then continued "for the proprietors,"—Dr. Bentley and Warwick Palfray, Jr., contributing to its columns for nearly two years. In August, 1806, an advertisement appeared, stating that "*The Salem Register* having been supported in its editorial department by the voluntary assistance of its friends since the decease of the late editor, Mr. Carlton, the proprietors are desirous of obtaining an editor to conduct the same in future." No new arrangement was commenced, however, until July 23, 1807, when a "new series," entitled *The Essex Register*, was commenced by Haven Pool and Warwick Palfray, Jr., assisted by S. Cleveland Blydon. At this time the famous motto-verse was dropped, and the following sentence adopted as a substitute: "Let the greatest good of the greatest number be the pole-star of your public and private deliberations." [Ramsay.] Mr. Blydon's name remained in the paper only about six months, when, January 6, 1808, it was withdrawn. The publication days were then changed to Wednesday and Saturday, "for various reasons, some of a public and some of a private nature." The favorite motto was again resumed.

On June 28, 1811, Mr. Pool, the eldest proprietor, although only twenty-nine, suddenly died, after a short illness, leaving Mr. Palfray the sole editor and publisher for the next twenty-three years. Mr. Pool was described in an obituary notice as "an affectionate husband, kind parent and dutiful son. He was of a cheerful disposition, constant and ardent in his friendships and excessively fond in his domestic attachments." He is remembered as a genial and gay companion.

The printing-office was located successively in the three buildings next below the Franklin Place until April 28, 1828, when it was transferred to Stearns' Building, and on October 5, 1832, it was finally removed to Central Building, where it now remains.

On February 1, 1823, the old publication days, Monday and Thursday, were resumed. On January 1, 1835, John Chapman, who had entered the office as an apprentice in 1807, was admitted as partner in the business, and continued until his death.

The death of Mr. Palfray, who had been identified with the *Register* as Mr. Cushing had been with the *Gazette*, occurred August 23, 1838, at the age of fifty-one years. He was a native of Salem, a descendant of Peter Palfray, one of the first settlers of this place—having arrived here several years before Governor Endicott. Mr. Palfray served his time as a printer with Mr. Carlton, whose office he entered in 1801. He assumed a share in the charge of the *Register* while yet a minor, and his tact and good judgment, thenceforth exerted, largely increased the circulation of the paper, and gave it popularity and influence. He was the sole conductor during the times of the embargo and the war with England, when political feeling ran very high, and was much embittered by personal hostilities. "Yet, notwithstanding all the excitements of those periods," said his eulogist, the late Joseph E. Sprague, "Mr. Palfray gave as little just cause of offense as any man living could. Possessed of most

generous and honorable feelings, he never willingly gave just cause of offense to a political opponent. Personal allusions were always painful to him—and at those periods of deadly feud, when he was placed at the editorial desk, it was his greatest pleasure to take from the papers handed him for publication the poisoned arrows; and when he could not consistently with political duty, wholly remove personal allusions, to soften them to the utmost limit." . . . "With but slight advantages of education, there were but few who were more useful to society. His heart was the abode of pure thoughts—his life the exemplar of good principles. The tongue of calumny, in the times of bitterest political animosities, never breathed a syllable against the spotless purity of his life and character."

Though Mr. Palfray never sought office, he held several public trusts. He was a member of the city government at the time of his death, and vice-president of the Mechanic Association. He had served with usefulness in both branches of the Legislature.

After the death of Mr. Palfray, the paper was continued by the surviving partner, Mr. Chapman,—the family of the former retaining an interest in the publication. Mr. Chapman, by the soundness of his judgment and the integrity of his principles, contributed largely to the continued success of the *Register*, although he was not a regular contributor to its columns. The paper was an able exponent of the purposes of the Whig party during the entire period of its existence, and Mr. Chapman was made a member of the Governor's Council in recognition of the value of his services to his party. And afterwards, when the Republican party triumphed in the election of Abraham Lincoln to the Presidency of the United States, Mr. Chapman was appointed postmaster of Salem. On January 1, 1839, Charles W. Palfray, a son of the former proprietor, and a graduate of Harvard University, assumed the place vacated by his father. In 1841, January 1st, the earlier name of *The Salem Register* was again adopted. Eben N. Walton became associate publisher and editor, January 1, 1873, and since the death of Mr. Chapman, April 19, 1873, the paper has been published by Palfray & Walton.

The *Register* during the more than half-century of its existence has received the contributions of able pens. Dr. Bentley and the late Sheriff Sprague were voluminous and influential writers in its columns for a great many years. Judge Story, during his residence in Salem, was a frequent contributor. So was Andrew Dunlap for many years previous to 1825. The "Summaries" of Dr. Bentley have become famous. These concise and curious medleys were furnished regularly for a quarter of a century. They often extended to a column and a half of close matter, and sometimes to several columns. They were continued until the very close of his life, the last "Summary" appearing in the *Register* published on the very day of his death, the last day of the year 1819. These contributions from Dr. Bentley's industrious pen were thus constantly furnished without ever a dollar being received by him as compensation. He labored without the expectation or desire of reward.

9. The Weekly Visitant.—In 1806, during the rage of party politics, a periodical was commenced by Haven Pool, of a purely literary character, though not of great pretensions. It was an octavo, entitled *The Weekly Visitant*, published on Saturday evening "directly west of the Tower of Dr. Prince's Church." Price two dollars per year. It seems to have been designed to afford its patrons more agreeable reading than was furnished in the political papers, an idea which was expressed in the couplet adopted as a motto:

"Ours are the plans of fair, delightful peace,
Unwarped by party rage, to live like brothers."

10. The Friend.—The *Visitant* had a successor the next year in *The Friend*, started by Mr. Pool, in connection with Stephen C. Blyth, as editor, January 3, 1807. It was published weekly, on Saturday evening, of the common newspaper form, at two dollars per year. It was announced as a "new and *neutral* paper," and was therefore spoken of as "a scheme *novel* in its design;" nevertheless it was hoped that by avoiding insipidity it might be made interesting. Like its predecessor, this paper indicated a desire for peace in the community by selecting a peaceful motto from Ecclesiasticus: "Sweet language will multiply friends; and a fair speaking tongue will increase kind greetings." The *Friend* lasted about six months, until July 18th, and was then merged in the *Register*, with which the publisher and editor also formed a connection. Mr. Blyth had changed his name to Blydon, during the year, by consent of the General Court. He was a native of Salem, and taught school here. He afterwards removed to Canada, and is believed to have died there.

11, 12, 13. Humorous Publications.—In 1807 and 1808 Mr. John S. Appleton, of the firm of Cushing & Appleton, who was known as a ready wit, got out two or three small humorous publications, which had a temporary run as periodicals. One of these was "*The Fool.* By Thomas Brainless, Esq., LL.D., Jester to his Majesty, the Public. A new and useless paper, of no particular form or size, issued at irregular intervals; and the price to be left at the generosity of the public." This was issued in 1807. Then there was "the *Barber's Shop*, kept by Sir David Razor," published by Cushing & Appleton in 1808 and printed by Joshua Cushing, a brother of Thomas C. Cushing. Another of these ephemeral sheets, the Punches of those days, was *Salmagundi*, from the same source. In all of these the Republican party was the object of ridicule and satire.

14. The Gospel Visitant.—This was the title of a quarterly octavo magazine, commenced in Salem in 1811, to espouse the doctrine of Univeralism. It is

interesting from the circumstance that it was the first regular periodical issued by that denomination in this country. There had been previously an occasional publication in Boston entitled *The Berean*,—containing the proceedings of an association,—eight numbers of which were printed at irregular intervals, without regard to time; but the *Visitant* was the first regular periodical. It was started at the suggestion of a Conference of Universal Ministers, assembled at Gloucester in January of that year. The conductors were Thomas Jones, of Gloucester, Hosea Ballou, of Portsmouth, Abner Kneeland, of Charlestown, and Edward Turner, of Salem, all prominent clergymen of that communion, settled over societies in the places named. The contents of the magazine were chiefly sermons, essays and briefer articles upon religious and doctrinal points. The price was twenty-five cents a number. The numbers for June and September were printed at the *Register* office; that for December, by Ward & Coburn, on North Street; and that for March, 1812, was published in Charlestown. The second volume did not appear until 1817, when it was printed by Warwick Palfray, Jr. It was now edited by Hosea Ballou and Edward Turner. At the commencement of Vol. 3, April, 1818, the publication was removed to Haverhill and assumed by P. N. Green.

15. The Salem Observer.—The first number of *The Observer* was published January 2, 1823, by William and Stephen B. Ives—the former an apprentice of Mr. Cushing, of the *Gazette*. It was of the royal size, and issued weekly on Monday evening, from the Washington Hall building, No. 2 Court Street. Price, two dollars. The paper was designed to be a literary and miscellaneous sheet, eschewing party politics,—a character which it has maintained until the present time. It was edited by Benj. Lynde Oliver, Esq., during the first year. After the fifth number the time of publication was changed to Saturday evening, which arrangement continued for twenty-two numbers, and then Saturday morning became the time of publication, and so continues now. At the commencement of Vol. 2, 1824, the title was changed to *Salem Observer*, and at the same time Joseph G. Waters, Esq., became editor, as successor to Mr. Oliver. At the conclusion of the year Mr. Waters withdrew from the responsibility of the paper, but continued to be a contributor for several years afterwards. In 1825, January 15th, the name was enlarged to *Salem Literary and Commercial Observer*, and this was borne until January 3, 1829, when the title *Salem Observer* was resumed.

The printing-office was removed, November 25, 1826, from its original location to "Messrs. P. & A. Chase's new brick building in Washington Street." There it remained until 1832, February 4th, when it was again removed to quarters in Stearns' Building which it occupied for fifty years. In 1882 the proprietors erected the Observer Building, of three stories, of brick, in Kinsman Place, next to the City Hall, and these commodious quarters they still occupy. In 1837, January 7th, Mr. George W. Pease, who had served his apprenticeship in the office, was admitted to the partnership, and in 1839, January 5th, Mr. Stephen B. Ives withdrew, leaving the firm of Ives & Pease.

The *Observer* has from the beginning "pursued the even tenor of its way" as a well-established family newspaper, experiencing fewer changes of fortune than some papers we have mentioned, and therefore affording fewer incidents "to make a note of." Established in a time of intense political excitement as a non-partisan paper, it was the first to succeed upon that basis.

At the termination of Mr. Waters' editorship, Solomon S. Whipple became a regular contributor to its columns, and afterwards Wilson Flagg, Rev. E. M. Stone, Edwin Jocelyn and Stephen B. Ives, Jr. Gilbert L. Streeter became associated with the *Observer* on January 1, 1847, and, with the exception of a brief period of two years, has been a regular contributor ever since.

16. Salem Courier.—In 1828, September 17th, Charles Amburger Andrews began a weekly paper, the *Salem Courier*, which was published on Wednesday, at three dollars, from an office in the East India Marine Hall building. It proclaimed itself "strictly independent," a supporter of Adams' administration, an opponent of the tariff, etc. It became, however, a theological rather than a political paper, and was a zealous antagonist of the doctrines of Calvinism. Its editor was a pleasant and humorous writer, and had able correspondents. But the paper was continued for only one year. Mr Andrews was a member of the bar, and served as a representative of the city in the Legislature. He died June 17, 1843.

17. The Hive.—This was a small weekly publication for children, commenced on Saturday, September 21, 1828, by W. and S. B. Ives. The picture of a bee-hive ornamented its first page, and its contents were mostly selected.

After the fifth number it was issued on Wednesday. It continued for two years. The first volume was 16mo and the second an 8vo. It was one of the earliest of papers intended exclusively for children, which are now so numerous and excellent.

18. Ladies' Miscellany.—A small weekly folio, with this title, was commenced January 6, 1829, a specimen number having been issued on the 7th of November preceding. It was printed at the Register office by John Chapman, on Tuesday, at one dollar per year. It was designed "to furnish a supply of amusing, instructive and unexceptionable reading to the Ladies of Salem and vicinity." At the close of the volume the issue was suspended for want of support, but April 7, 1830, a second volume was commenced, on Wednesday, in consideration of a "considerable accession to the list of subscribers." At the close of this volume the publication ceased.

19. Essex County Mercury.—The publication of a diminutive weekly paper by the proprietors of the *Gazette* was commenced in 1831, June 8th, under the name of *Salem Mercury*. It has since been much enlarged, and is now entitled *Essex County Mercury, Danvers, Beverly and Marblehead Courier*. It is made up mainly from the columns of the *Gazette*.

20. Salem Advertiser.—The first organ of the modern Democratic party in Salem was *The Commercial Advertiser*, commenced April 4, 1832, by Edward Palfray and James R. Cook. It was started as a semi-weekly, on Wednesday and Saturday. The office was in Central building, over the Savings Bank. It was an earnest advocate of the election of General Jackson to the Presidency, and throughout its existence of seventeen years continued to uphold the views of the Democratic party. After the first year the additional title of *Essex County Journal* was adopted, and it was published as a weekly, on Wednesday, until July 8, 1837, when Palfray & Cook sold out to Charles W. Woodbury, who issued it as a semi-weekly again, under the name of *The Salem Advertiser*. Thus it was continued until February, 1849, when it was a weekly once more until its final close, August 1, 1849. From October 16, 1841, until September 11, 1844, the title was *Salem Advertiser and Argus*, after which the word "Argus" was omitted.

So many persons were connected with the *Advertiser* at various times, as editors and publishers, that we must mention them briefly. During the proprietorship of Mr. Woodbury, Wm. B. Pike served as editor for about six weeks from October 17, 1838. Henry Blaney served two terms as proprietor, first, from March 11, 1840, until October 16, 1841, and again from June 21, 1843, until September 11, 1844. Benjamin Kingsbury, Jr., was editor during the political campaign of 1840. Edward Palfray took a second turn of two years between Mr. Blaney's two periods. H. C. Hobart and F. C. Crowninshield were the editors during the campaign of 1844. Mr. Hobart afterwards went to Wisconsin, and became Speaker of the Assembly. Mr. Crowninshield enlisted for the Mexican War, and was a lieutenant of a company. Messrs. Varney, Parsons & Co. were the next publishers, from November 20, 1844, to December 31, 1845, and were succeeded by Messrs. Perley & Parsons, Mr. Varney having gone to the war as a corporal. The final publisher was Mr. Eben N. Walton, who began February 15, 1847, and continued to the end. Mr. Woodbury, an earlier editor, and once postmaster here, was the third one who went to the war. He was drowned on his way back. Before he came to Salem he published the *Gloucester Democrat*. Edward Palfray, the projector of the paper, and the person who was longest editor of it, died at the Worcester Hospital in 1846, April 14th, aged forty-one. He was a spirited and forcible writer, a zealous Democrat and a kind-hearted man.

21. Saturday Evening Bulletin.—This was the title of a small neutral paper, published weekly by Palfray & Cook, at the *Advertiser* office. Price, one dollar. It continued for one year, from May 18, 1833, when it was relinquished in favor of a political journal. It was edited by Nicholas Devereux.

22. The Constitutionalist.—This was the political journal which followed the *Bulletin*. Its publishers were the same. It was a small weekly. It sustained Marcus Morton for Governor and Joseph S. Cabot for Congress. The duration of this paper was from June 28, 1834, until the close of the year—a little more than six months.

23. The Landmark.—In 1834, August 20th, a semi-weekly paper, entitled *The Landmark*, of goodly size and elegant typography, sent out its first number from a new printing-office, corner of Essex and Liberty Streets. It was printed on Wednesday and Saturday by Ferdinand Andrews, formerly of the *Gazette*, and subsequently publisher of the *Boston Traveller*, and was edited by Rev. Dudley Phelps.

The *Landmark* was started in the period of "the Unitarian controversy," and was intended to counteract the influence of Unitarianism, which was prevalent in Salem at that time. It was also intended to give utterance to anti-slavery and temperance sentiments, both of which topics were beginning to attract serious attention. On January 31, 1835, a communication was published in the *Landmark* upon the subject of temperance, which caused more excitement in the community than any other publication either before or since. It was the famous article by Rev. George B. Cheever, then the young pastor of the Branch Church in Howard Street, entitled "Enquire at Amos Giles' Distillery." It set forth in lurid colors the evils attending the manufacture, sale and use of intoxicating liquors, and depicted, with great severity of language, the responsibility of those engaged in the liquor business. It was understood to have personal reference to a prominent and reputable citizen of Salem, a deacon of the First Church, who was a distiller, and was alleged to contain libelous matter. The editor of the *Landmark* apologized in the next number for the appearance of the obnoxious article, but this did not allay the public excitement; and a fortnight afterwards Mr. Cheever was publicly whipped in Essex Street, just above Sewell Street, by Elias Ham, the foreman of the distillery, who used a cowhide for the purpose; and in the evening of the same day an attack was made upon the *Landmark* office, with the apparent design of wrecking it, but it was defended from the inside, and the assault failed. Mr. Ham was fined fifty dollars for the whipping. Mr. Cheever was tried for libel, and, although defended by Rufus Choate, was convicted, and sentenced to a fine of one thousand dollars and imprisonment in Salem jail for one month. He was escorted to jail by his friends, and was furnished with every convenience and luxury. The parties to these events subsequently and consequently

left town. Mr. Ham became an active friend of temperance in after-years. Mr. Phelps retired from the *Landmark*, and Mr. Cheever left the Branch Church and entered upon a distinguished career in New York City. The *Landmark* was not sustained in its advanced position, and its publication ceased November 2, 1836, in a little more than two years from the outset.

24. The Lighthouse.—During the time of the *Landmark* a small weekly paper, entitled *The Lighthouse*, was printed at the *Gazette* office, and "edited by an Association of Gentlemen," the design of which was "to represent the sentiments and espouse the interests of liberal Christianity." It was recognized as an antagonist of the *Landmark*, and was continued from June 11th until October 31st of the year 1835. The first nine numbers were issued on Monday; the remainder on Saturday.

25. Essex County Democrat.—This was the title of a paper removed hither from Gloucester in the fall of 1838, to sustain Joseph S. Cabot, and the interests of the Cabot section of the Democratic party, in distinction from those of the Rantoul section. It was edited and published by Joseph Dunham Friend. The first number was issued November 2d of that year. After continuing for a time as a semi-weekly, on Tuesday and Friday, it became a weekly. It expired in about three months.

26. The Harrisonian.—During the exciting political contest of 1840 a small campaign paper, entitled *The Harrisonian*, containing speeches and documents, was published by the editor of the *Gazette*. It was commenced on Saturday, February 22d, and continued weekly until the election, lending its aid to the Whig nominees.

27. The Whig.—This also was a campaign paper, a few numbers of which were published in 1840 at the *Register* office, to promote the election of General Harrison to the Presidency. Such campaign sheets as the *Whig* and *Harrisonian* were numerous during the memorable contest of that year, and exerted a large influence in favor of the election of Harrison and Tyler. They were published at very low rates, and freely purchased by political clubs for gratuitous distribution.

28. Genius of Christianity.—This was the title of a small semi-monthly sheet, printed at the *Observer* office, for the Rev. A. G. Comings, for two years from January 1, 1841. It was a religious paper, as its title indicates. Mr. Comings was a preacher of the Campbellite faith, and had a society in a room on Washington Street, opposite the court-house.

29. The Christian Teacher.—This was substantially the same publication as the *Genius of Christianity*, containing, as it did, the same matter as that sheet, thrown into a quarto form, once a month, for circulation through the mail. It was issued during the year 1832. The printers and editor were of course the same.

30. "The Locomotive, an Independent Journal."—In April, 1842, William H. Perley commenced a weekly paper in Lynn, entitled *The Locomotive*, which was removed to Central building, Salem, December 17, 1842, and published here on Saturday, until July 8, 1843—about six months. A few numbers in February were published semi-weekly, on a diminutive sheet. From May 13th it was published by Perley & Whittier. It was humorous and miscellaneous in its character.

31. Essex County Washingtonian.—This paper was printed in Lynn, by Christopher Robinson, and was published in Lynn and Salem, on Thursday, during a portion of the year 1842. Its connection with Salem was brief and merely nominal. It was one of the earliest of the numerous temperance periodicals which sprang up at the time of the *Washingtonian* or moral suasion movement. The editor at one time was the Rev. David H. Barlow, of Lynn.

32. Salem Washingtonian.—This paper, like the preceding one, had only a nominal connection with our city. It was printed in Boston, by J. B. Hall, published by Theodore Abbott, and edited by Charles W. Denison. Its Salem office was in Washington Hall (then permanently occupied by a temperance society), whence it was circulated on Saturday, for a short time, in 1843, commencing July 8th. It soon afterwards assumed the title *New England Washingtonian*, and was published in Boston under that name for several years.

33. Independent Democrat.—A division existed in the Democratic party in 1843, which led to the establishment of a weekly paper here to sustain David Pingree as a candidate for Congress against Robert Rantoul, Jr. It was entitled *Independent Democrat;* was commenced March 6th, and continued for a few weeks only. Wm. H. Perley was the printer.

34. The Voice of the People.—In 1843, May 7th Sylvanus Brown, who was then in Salem Jail for disturbing a religious meeting, published at the *Locomotive* office three numbers of a small sheet with the foregoing designation, beginning May 7, 1843. Mr. Brown was one of the sect of "Comeouters," then somewhat numerous, so called because they came out from the churches as a protest against the pro-slavery tendencies of the pulpit.

35. Voice Around the Jail.—In 1843 Henry Clapp, Jr., issued a small transient publication with the foregoing title, from W. H. Perley's printing-office. Mr. Clapp was editor of the *Lynn Pioneer*, and was then an occupant of Salem Jail under a sentence for libel. His "Voice" in this printed form was in favor of radical reform. Mr. Clapp was a Garrisonian Abolitionist, and a man of genius, and subsequently became prominent as a journalist in New York City.

36. The Evangelist.—For the second time the publication of a Universalist periodical was begun in Salem, Aug. 12, 1843. It was a small weekly, with the foregoing title, issued on Saturday from Samuel

T. Damon's office in Manning's Building. The editors were L. S. Everett, J. M. Austin and S. C. Bulkeley, the first settled over the Universalist society in Salem, and the others pastors in Danvers. *The Evangelist* was sustained only six months.

37. Essex County Reformer.—This was the third temperance paper published here as an aid to *The Washingtonian* or moral suasion movement. It was issued weekly, on Saturday, upon a small sheet, from the office of S. T. Damon. T. G. Chipman was the editor. It lasted three months from September 2, 1843.

38. The Temperance Offering.—The Rev. N. Hervey, who preached to a Free Church in Washington Hall, commenced February, 1845, a monthly 12mo periodical, with the title named above. During that year it was printed at the *Gazette* office. The second and last volume, for 1846, was printed in Boston, of octavo size, and with the additional title of *Youth's Cascade.* The volumes have since been issued in book-form.

39. Salem Oracle.—In 1848 two numbers of a small advertising sheet, called *The Oracle,* were published for the months of January and February by Henry Blaney. Four more numbers, enlarged, for the four months following, were printed at the *Gazette* office for Jos. L. Wallis, editor.

40. Essex County Times.—This paper was a Democratic weekly, published in the fall of 1848, by E. K. Averill. It began in Marblehead, where ten numbers were issued, and ended its brief period here with three numbers more. It was issued irregularly. The principal writer for its columns was E. K. Averill, Jr., who was better known as a writer of "yellow covered literature" for Gleason's publishing house in Boston.

41. The Free World.—This was a spirited campaign paper, published during the Presidential contest in 1848, in support of Van Buren and Adams, the Free-Soil candidates. It commenced August 15th, and continued on Friday until November 10th. The editor was George F. Chever, Esq. It was printed at the *Observer* office.

42. Salem Daily Chronicle.—The first attempt to establish a daily paper in Salem was made by Henry Blaney, who, in 1848, March 1, began the *Salem Daily Chronicle.* It was printed in Bowker's building, and published every afternoon at one cent a copy. It took no part in politics and was short lived.

43. The Asteroid.—In August, 1848, William H. Hutchinson, a job printer, commenced a small monthly sheet for the entertainment of the young people in our public schools, etc., entitled as above. It was continued here for several months, and was then removed to Boston.

44. Essex County Freeman.—The Free-Soil movement in 1848–49 led to the establishment of several new papers in different parts of the commonwealth. One of these was the *Essex County Freeman,* the first number of which was issued by Gilbert L. Streeter and William Porter August 1, 1849. It was designed to aid the political anti-slavery movement, and in pursuance of this purpose sustained the nominations of the Free-Soil party, and subsequently those of the coalition of the Free-Soil and Democratic parties. It was published semi-weekly, on Wednesday and Saturday, at three dollars per year, from an office in Hale's building. In 1850, Nov. 25th, Mr. Streeter withdrew his interest in the paper, but remained as editor. The publication was continued by Mr. Porter until 1852, Feb. 11th, when he withdrew, and the publication was assumed by "Benjamin W. Lander for the Proprietors." At the same time Geo. F. Chever, Esq., associated himself with the former editor as joint conductors of the paper. In the beginning of the next year the establishment was purchased by Rev. J. E. Pomfret, the former editors continuing their services in that department for several months. Mr. Pomfret was the publisher of the paper for one year, after which Edwin Lawrence, of the Lynn *Bay State,* become the proprietor. He issued it weekly until June 14, 1854, when the publication ceased, after a term of five years.

45. The National Democrat.—On Saturday, May 24, 1851, Mr. James Coffin issued a specimen number of the *National Democrat,* but the patronage offered did not warrant a continuance of the paper. It was designed to oppose the coalition of the Free-Soil and Democratic parties.

46. The Union Democrat.—The next movement for an anti-coalition Democratic paper was more successful. *The Union Democrat* lasted over ten months. It was commenced by Samuel Fabyan, a printer from Boston, July 31, 1852, and closed October 6th, when it was removed to Boston. The office was in Bowker's building. Published on Wednesday and Saturday.

47. Massachusetts Freeman.—This was the title of a weekly Free-Soil paper, published for a short time by J. E. Pomfret, commencing June 8, 1853. It was made up from the columns of the *Essex County Freeman.* Mr. Pomfret, previous to his commencement in Salem, had published several papers, the last of which was the *Amesbury Villager.* He was a minister of the Universalist persuasion, and afterwards settled in Haverhill.

48. The People's Advocate.—This paper was begun in Marblehead, in November, 1847, by Rev. Robinson Breare, a Universalist minister, and bore the title of *The Marblehead Mercury.* In 1848 it became the property of James Coffin and Daniel R. Beckford. In 1849 it was entitled *The People's Advocate and Marblehead Mercury,* and in August of that year Mr. Coffin became sole proprietor. In October, 1853, it abandoned its neutral position in favor of the advocacy of the views of the Democratic party. In October, 1854, the printing-office was moved to Salem and the title of the paper was abbreviated to *The People's Advocate.* It was discontinued in 1861.

49. Salem Daily Journal.—The second attempt to establish a daily penny paper in Salem was made by Edwin Lawrence in 1854. He published the first number of the *Salem Daily Journal* on the 24th of July of that year. It was published in the afternoon, as the *Chronicle* had been in 1848. The experiment was not successful, and the publication was abandoned November 24, 1855, after a trial of over a year. The *Journal* was at first neutral, afterwards favorable to the Native American party, and in the fall of 1855 approved the Republican nominations. Mr. Lawrence, previous to his removal to Salem, had published the *Newburyport Union, Lynn Bay State* and *Essex County Freeman.*

50. The Essex Statesman.—These were no newspaper ventures during the unsettled period immediately preceding the outbreak of the Rebellion, and it was not until 1863, the second year of the war, that a new publication was undertaken. This was the *Essex Statesman,* commenced on January 17th, and published on Wednesdays and Saturdays by Edgar Marchant, and afterwards by Benjamin W. Lander. It was announced as a "conservative" paper and was conducted as a moderate opponent of the national administration. It terminated after four years of difficult existence.

51. The Post.—In July, 1872, Charles H. Webber began the publication of a weekly paper entitled *The City Post,* which was continued under the successive titles of *Salem City Post* and *Salem Evening Post.* Mr. Webber, after a few years, disposed of the paper, which had become a semi-weekly, to Charles D. Howard. The latter proprietor, in 1885, sold the concern to "The *Telegram* Publishing Co.," a new penny daily. The *Post* was a professed neutral paper with Democratic leanings.

52. The Salem Evening News, a small daily penny paper, begun October 16, 1881, by Robert Daman, issued from a new office on Central Street. The *News,* having become prosperous, was subsequently enlarged and removed to Brown's building, on Essex Street. The main purpose seems to have been to collect the local news and gossip of the town, in which it has been quite successful.

53. The Evening Telegram.—This venture of a small penny daily, in rivalry of the *News,* grew out of the suspension of the *Post,* as has been mentioned. The first number was issued by "The Telegram Publishing Company," on February 9, 1885, and it continued until March, 1887, when, becoming embarrassed, the plant was sold out to the publishers of the *Daily Times.*

54. The Daily Times.—A new trial of the penny plan by parties previously interested in the *Telegram.* The first number was issued March 21, 1887.

55. The Salem Public.—A weekly paper commenced Saturday, April 23d, 1887, by Charles F. Trow, at $1.50 per year. Devoted chiefly to the interests of the Grand Army of the Republic. Mr. Trow had been connected with the *Methuen Transcript* and the *Salem Telegram.*

This completes the list of newspapers published in Salem by subscription since the introduction of the printing press by Samuel Hall, more than one hundred years ago. Besides these, several advertising sheets have been issued, such as the *Pavillion,* published by David Conrad for about four years, and the *Fireside Favorite,* published for a yet longer time and still continued by John P. Peabody. These have been circulated gratuitously, principally for the business advantage of their proprietors.

Another series of periodicals, of a scientific character, deserve to be enumerated. To review the contributions of Salem authors to the literature of science would be an elaborate work, quite beyond the scope of this paper. Benjamin Lynde Oliver was a distinguished contributor to scientific works before the Revolution, and his "Essay on Comets" was published in Salem from Mr. Hall's press. The names of Count Benjamin Rumford, John Pickering, Nathaniel Bowditch, Edward A. Holyoke, Charles L. Page and others more recent would be included in this category. For the periodicals published in Salem for the promotion of scientific knowledge we are indebted to the Essex Institute and the Peabody Academy of Science. The former society has been prolific in publications within the past few years, its priced list showing about one hundred and fifty pamphlets and books. The "Journal of the Essex County Natural History Society," from 1838 to 1852, was followed by the "Proceedings and Communications" of the Institute from 1848 to 1868, and then by "The Bulletin," issued quarterly. These publications contained an account of the regular and field meetings of the society, and papers of scientific value. Besides these, the Institute issues its "Historical Collections," quarterly, at three dollars a year, containing papers of historical, genealogical and biographical interest and of permanent value to students in general and local history. Although no name is given of the editor of these publications, it is well known that the public are indebted for them to the indefatigable industry of Dr. Henry Wheatland, who is, indeed, the founder of the Institute itself.

Another serial originally issued under the auspices of the Institute was "*The American Naturalist,* an Illustrated Journal of Natural History." This very meritorious magazine is still published. After its first volume it was published under the auspices of the Peabody Academy of Science for four years, and since that time it has been issued in New York and Philadelphia. The original editors at its commencement in March, 1867, were A. S. Packard, Jr., E. S. Morse, A. Hyatt and F. W. Putnam.

Another serial, miniature in size, was begun in May, 1886, by the "Cuvier Natural History Club," under the name of "*The Amateur Collector.*" The price is twenty-five cents a year and it appears

monthly. The youthful naturalists who projected and have maintained this little enterprise design it chiefly to awaken an interest in natural history in the minds of young people.

We have now passed in rapid review the periodical literature of Salem, chiefly its newspapers, during the past century. The reader has observed, doubtless, that only a few of these many enterprises have been permanently successful. Most of the journals which we have named died in early infancy, only three of the whole number having survived a generation. The multiplication of newspapers during this period has been exceedingly rapid, and yet where one has succeeded, perhaps fifty have failed. Often commenced merely as business speculations, rather than to meet the wants of the community, they have not been sustained by the public, because not needed.

When Mr. Hall issued his proposals for the publication of a "Weekly Publick Paper" in this place, such a vehicle of information was greatly desired. Newspapers were few in number and confined to the large seaboard towns. They were looked for and read in the country with the deepest interest. The appearance of the weekly sheet was an event of importance to people of all classes. Now they abound everywhere. Almost every considerable village in the country can boast its local print. Then, the expense attending the publication of a newspaper was very great. Paper was scarce and costly, and other materials obtainable only by importation from the mother-country. The style of the papers, in respect to typographical appearance, was quite inferior. The old *Essex Gazette* is a curiosity of the printer's art, although it was in all respects a superior paper for those days.

During the past fifty years the art of type-making has advanced rapidly, and wonderful improvements have been made in presses and other contrivances and materials employed in the printing business. The art of wood-cutting has been, we might almost say, discovered since the days when grotesque devices, clumsily executed, figured so extensively at the head of the little colonial journals. The rude wood-cuts which then were supposed to adorn the public sheets are curious and amusing exhibitions of the infancy of this delicate art, now so useful in elegant and cheap illustrations. If any one is interested to see the first difficult beginnings of the engraver's skill, he may find many singular specimens in Thomas' "History of Printing," a valuable and rare work, now out of print. A few instances are also given in Mr. Buckingham's interesting Reminiscences of the newspaper press, to which work, as well as the former one, we are indebted for some of the statements in this account. A comparison of the uncouth adornments of the papers of the Revolutionary period with the exquisite wood engravings in the monthly illustrated magazines now published affords a contrast nearly as great as that exhibited by the toilsome operations of an old hand-press beside the wonderful rapidity of the lightning cylinder machines of the present day.

The ancient newspapers were of small dimensions, printed on large types, with clumsy presses and upon coarse paper. Such were the early prints of Salem. They were less various in their contents than those of our time, and were made up without much order or method. They were less full and minute in respect to local and general information. But little effort was made to gather the countless fragments of news which now distend the columns of the public journal. In all these respects there has been a great improvement in the public prints. But in regard to honest industry and enterprise, public spirit, boldness and freedom of expression, patriotic and noble endeavor, we do not know that any superiority can be claimed for the modern journals. In these particulars the publishers of ante-Revolutionary times were generally worthy of the highest praise.

CHAPTER VI.

SALEM—(*Continued*).

EDUCATIONAL.

BY WINFIELD S. NEVINS.

THE public and private schools of Salem have ever occupied a high place among the educational institutions of the country. If Salem did not establish free schools as early as Virginia, it was, doubtless, because the settlement here was not as early. The first settlement in Virginia was made in 1607, and her first public school is believed to have been established in 1621, fourteen years later. The real settlement of the Massachusetts Bay colony was in 1628, when John Endicott and his fellow-voyagers came to Salem, although Conant and a few others had located here in 1626. In 1637, nine years after the coming of Endicott, John Fiske opened a public school in Salem. In Boston, in 1636, a petition was presented to the authorities asking for a free school. Whether it was established before 1642, at which time we find the first definite mention of it in the records, we know not positively; probably it was. But to whomsoever shall ultimately be awarded the honor of establishing the "first free school," this is true: that while Salem maintained hers from 1637 down to 1887, in unbroken succession, the Governor of Virginia, in 1671, "thanked God there were no free schools, nor printing, and hoped they would not have any these hundred years," and long years thereafter the Old Dominion taxed schoolmasters twenty shillings per head.

These early "free" schools were not, be it understood, as free as the schools of 1887, when not only house and tuition are free, but also books, stationery

and other supplies. The town of Salem in those days appears to have borne the larger part of the expense of the master, and taxed the balance to the parents of such as could pay. A vote, passed September 30, 1644, said: "If any poor body hath children or a childe to be put to school, and not able to pay for their schooling, that the town will pay it by a rate." John Fiske, the first schoolmaster, relinquished the office in 1639, and was succeeded by Edward Norris in 1640. Norris was evidently the only teacher in the town school for twenty years after. In 1670 Daniel Epes, Jr., was employed at a salary of £20 a year, and, also, "to have besides halfe-pay for all scollers of the towne, and whole pay from strangers." Mr. Norris was voted £10 as a sort of pension in 1671. In July, 1672, he resumed the mastership of the grammar school for one year. At the expiration of that time, and until his death, in 1684, he was voted an allowance each year from £10 to £15. Some time during Mr. Norris' teachership the school came to be called a grammar school, and so continued for several years. Latin and Greek were taught. Mr. Epes, in 1677, agreed with the selectmen to teach English, Latin and Greek, and fit pupils for the university; also to teach them good manners and instruct them in the principles of the Christian religion. In 1768 tuition in the public schools was made free to all and ever since has been so.

This school has always been classed as the immediate predecessor of the present classical and high school. Perhaps this is the simplest way, although it might with just as good grace be said to be the predecessor of our present grammar schools. However, adopting the customary division, we find no evidence that there was more than one school until 1712, when Nathaniel Higginson established a "school for reading, writing and cyphering, in the north end of the town-house." This school was for some time known as the writing school, but gradually assumed the name of English school, which it bore for many years. The other was known as the Latin or Grammar school, as the speaker or writer chose, as often one as the other, for nearly a century, the former name gradually superseding the latter. The English and Latin schools were united in 1743, and separated three years later.

During all this time and until about 1793 these schools appear to have been for boys exclusively. In the last-named year the town instructed its committee to "provide at the writing school, or elsewhere, for the tuition of girls in reading, writing and cyphering." In 1827 the town voted to have two high schools for girls. One was located in Beckford Street, and known as the West school, the other in Bath Street, and known as the East school. This was undoubtedly the first time that females were provided with high school instruction. But to return to the boys' Latin, or grammar school, we find that its course of study in the eighteenth century comprised the branches now commonly taught in the grammar schools, and, in addition, Latin and Greek. The dead languages seem to have been deemed of more importance than the English branches. In 1752 the committee orders that all boys who go to the grammar school must study Latin as well as read, write and cipher. In 1809 the committee ordered that "Latin and Greek languages, Geography, English Grammar, the principles of Arithmetic, and writing be taught in the Grammar schools, but that one-half the time, at least, of each scholar be devoted to Latin and Greek, so that the other studies be subservient to the learned languages."

The Latin school was transferred to the new building prepared for it on Broad Street on April 19, 1819. It began with a principal and Latin usher, and an assistant in the English department. The number of pupils reported as being in the school the following month was eighty-six, and one year later, May 4, 1820, one hundred and thirteen. The English department was discontinued in a few years, and the school, under the principal and an assistant, was a classical school, fitting boys to enter the university. The school was divided in 1827, and Henry K. Oliver took charge of the English High school, as this portion was called. Mr. Oliver was appointed June 16, 1827. The school continued to increase in numbers and enlarge its curriculum until about 1839, when two recitation rooms were added and two assistants appointed.

The school was mostly renamed in 1845. The Latin school was called the Fiske; the Boys' High school the Bowditch; the Girls' High school the Saltonstall. Nine years later the Fiske was merged in the Bowditch, and in 1856 the Bowditch and Saltonstall were united under the name of the Salem Classical and High school. To-day it is known as the Classical and High school. The course of study was divided, in 1882, into a four years' classical and a three years' English course. Thus we have traced, very briefly of necessity, the rise and growth of the first Salem public school until it has become one of the strongest high schools in the country. In its long line of forty three masters, from John Fiske down, have been men of more than ordinary ability and some of more than local reputation.

The grammar schools as we know them now are generally considered as having had their origin in that writing school which Nathaniel Higginson opened on September 1, 1712, when the committee "agreed" with him "to keep a writing, cyphering and reading school in the north end of the town-house, which is now fitted up for a school, for one quarter of a year from this 1st day of September, and to be paid for the same seven pounds ten shillings in money." This school evidently filled the place now filled by the primary schools; and the grammar school work of the present day was combined with the curriculum of the Latin school in those days.

The school which Mr. Higginson thus started appears to have given satisfaction, for on September 25, 1713, the committee agreed "that Mr. Nathaniel Higginson is desired to continue to keep the school till 25 December, and to be paid proportionally." On March 9, 1713, the committee is "agreed that Mr. Nathaniel Higginson be desired to keep the writing school for one quarter longer . . . at not exceeding ten pounds the quarter." On April 13th following, the committee "agrees" that he shall keep the school for one year from the preceding March for thirty-six pounds. His successor was John Swinnerton, who began his labors on January 2, 1716. Nathaniel Higginson was the son of John and Sarah (Savage) Higginson, the grandfather of Rev. Francis and great-grandfather of Rev. John Higginson, the first and sixth ministers of the First Church in Salem. He was born April 1, 1680, and died in 1720. He lived in a house that occupied the site of the present East Church, near the Common.

This school was known sometimes as the Writing school and sometimes as the English school, the former name gradually giving way to the latter, until it was finally dropped. It soon began to act as a feeder to the Latin school, for in July, 1717, the committee voted that four boys be promoted from the Reading and Writing school to the Grammar school. We find no trace of more than one English school in the town proper previous to 1785. As early as 1700 the town granted money for schools at Ryall Side (Beverly), Middle Precinct (Peabody), the village (Danvers) and Will Hill (Middleton), where the instruction was probably substantially that of the English or Writing school. In 1785 three English schools were opened,—one in the centre of the town, Edward Norris, master; another in the eastern part of the town, with John Watson master and a third in the western end, with Isaac Hacker master. An English school was opened in North Salem in 1807, and one in South Salem in 1819, the latter being first known as the South English school. This school was subsequently located on Ropes Street, and named the Brown school. In 1874 it was transferred to the new house on Hazel Street, and soon after called the Saltonstall Grammar school. Another English or Grammar school was established in the east part of the town, on Williams Street, in 1821. The High school for girls opened on Beckford Street, in 1827, subsequently became the Higginson Grammar school. In 1841 a new school was opened on Aborn Street, for both sexes, under charge of Charles Northend. Four years later it was named the Epes school. In 1876 the Higginson and Epes were united with the Hacker, on Dean Street, all under the name of Bowditch Grammar school. The Girls' High school, on East Street, in 1827, was the original of what is now the Bently school for girls, Grammar and Primary. The Centre school was, in 1841, united with the Williams Street and East Street schools as the Union school, and located near Forrester Street. In 1845, when the general renaming of schools took place, this school received the name of Phillips' Grammar. The North English in North Salem became the Pickering.

In 1729 generous Samuel Brown, in giving two hundred and forty pounds to the school fund, provided that one hundred and twenty pounds should go to *the* Grammar school, sixty pounds to *the* English school, and sixty pounds to *a* Woman's school. His language would seem to indicate that while the two first named then existed, the other was to be established. He did not state what should be taught in the other two, but in the Woman's school the interest of the donation was "to be yearly improved for the learning of six very poor children their letters, and to spell and read, who may be sent to said school six or seven months." This was, undoubtedly, the founding of our primary school. But the records of the school committee give no indication of the establishment of the school until March 26, 1773, when a vote was passed which would indicate quite clearly that no action had been taken previously. It read:

"The interest of said Brown's donation and legacy to a Woman's Reading School, being about eight pounds and four shillings per annum, be given to Mrs. Mary Gill, for which she is to teach nine poor boys to spell and read this year. This and to find them in firing during the winter, provided she admits but sixteen other schollars into her school." To this is appended in the records the following: "We, the subscribers, advise to the order. Asa Dunbar, Wm. Brown, one of the Posterity of the Donor." It is evident that Mrs. Gill was already keeping a private school, and that this money was paid to her for teaching small poor children.

By the old town records, however, it appears that at a town-meeting on May 16, 1764, a vote was passed "that the School Committee be empowered to draw fifty dollars out of the Town Treasury and apply the same for the instruction of the poorest children of the town in reading at Women's School." On March 3, 1770, Timothy Pickering petitioned the selectmen to "Be pleased to insert a line in your warrant for the next Town-Meeting to know if the Town will take into their consideration their vote passed in May, 1764, respecting the schooling the poorest people's children at Women's School, etc." Whether this petition means that no action had been taken on the vote of 1764, or whether we are to infer that the petitioners desired a repetition of that, we do not know. The records of the meetings of the school committee, not very full for those years, make not the least mention of this matter, nor do the accounts show any orders drawn to pay any one for the purposes specified. But this omission may be due entirely to the incompleteness of the record.

Early the following month this entry was made: "The committee met the 8th inst. and agreed that the following-named Boys be put to the Charity

School kept by Mrs. Gill, and there be taught for six months from the 10th inst." Then follow the names of ten boys.

On August 10th the committee "agreed that an order for two pounds, three shillings and six pence be drawn in favor of Mrs. Mary Gill, being one-quarter of a year's interest of Samuel Brown, Esq., his Donation and Legacy." From this time on appears an order for the payment of Mrs. Gill every three months. The conclusion is irresistible that she was the first teacher of a free public woman's school, and that our primary schools date from April 10, 1773, and not from 1729, the year of Colonel Brown's donation.

Thus we have three independent schools of three distinct grades corresponding to our present high, grammar and primary.

Two years later, in Mr. Brown's will, leaving an additional one hundred and fifty pounds for the school fund, he speaks of the "Latin," "English" and "woman's" schools. In 1801 a notice about the schools mentions the grammar school, where all the higher branches were taught, including Latin and Greek, and three public schools for children of both sexes and not less than five years of age, where the alphabet, spelling and reading would be taught. Primary schools have continued as a separate department of our educational institutions down to the present time, and are now deemed the foundation of our school system. During a portion of the past eighty years we have had "intermediate" schools for such as had passed the primaries, but could not be classed in the grammar schools. There are now eleven primary schools, and no intermediate existing, although the school committee in 1885 authorized the establishment of one when needed.

From 1807 to 1843 colored children were educated in separate schools most of the time. It is supposed that previous to that time they were not instructed at all by the town. Chloe Minn was the first teacher of a primary school for colored children. As early as 1830 a girl of color was admitted to the high school. Some opposition being manifested to this, and the legality of the act questioned, the committee took counsel of eminent legal lights, and was informed that the colored girl had as much right in the school as a white child. It is needless to say that the present generation sees, without thought of protest, black and white, native and foreign, educated together, not only in the same school, but side by side in the same class.

From the settlement of Salem down to 1712 the educational interests of the town were controlled by the people themselves, either by direct vote or instructions to the selectmen. In 1712 the citizens in town-meeting assembled chose Samuel Brown, Josiah Walcot, Stephen Sewall, John Higginson, Jr., and Walter Price to have charge of the schools. Committees were chosen by the people every year thereafter, until Salem was incorporated as a city in 1836. Under the charter, members of the school committee were chosen by the City Council until 1859, when the power was restored to the people, to whom it properly belongs. The mayor and president of the Common Council are, by the charter, made members of the board, the people electing three members from each of the six wards. The office of superintendent of schools was created in 1865, and Jonathan Kimball elected to the position. It was discontinued in 1872 and revived in 1873, when A. D. Small was elected superintendent. It was again discontinued in 1880, since when the schools have been supervised by sub-committees.

It is not proposed in a brief chapter like this to trace out all the sites occupied by school-houses during the past two hundred and fifty years. It is important, however, to learn something of the houses used by the earlier schools and of the spots where they stood. Of Mr. Fiske's school-house we know nothing. The church may have served the purpose, as it did for town-meetings. In 1655 the school was kept in the town-house, which then stood near what is now the southerly end of the railroad tunnel. A year later the town empowered a committee "to have *the* school-house repayred." Whether this indicates an independent house for school purposes, or has reference to the room in the town-house used by the school, no one knows. In 1672 Daniel Andrews was voted pay for keeping school in his house.

About 1700, perhaps shortly before, grants of school money were made to the inhabitants "without the bridge," also to those at Ryall Side, Middle Precinct, and the village. Just where their school-houses were located it is impossible to say. On June 16, 1712, the town voted "that the watch-house, adjoining the town-house, be for the future set apart and improved for a school-house . . . and that the same be repaired and fitted conveniently for the use aforesaid." The watch-house stood beside the town-house; most antiquarians say to the south of it; but when, in 1712, the school committee "agreed with Nathaniel Higginson to keep a writing, ciphering and reading school," it was to be "in the north end of the town-house, which is now fitted up for a school." Of course this meant the watch-house, and the language indicates clearly that it was at the north end of the town-house, and not the south.[1] This town-house was the one which stood in the middle of what is now Washington Street, opposite the Brookhouse estate, on the corner of Lynde Street. The watch-house continued in use for some years, and the schools were kept in this street so long that it came to be known as "school-house lane."

In 1760 the town voted to erect a brick school-house, a great step forward in the march of educa-

[1] Felt, in his "Annals of Salem," and other local historians locate this school "in the north end of the town," but the records of the school committee say "in the north end of the town-*house*."

tional progress. This building stood near where the previous school-house had. It was taken down in 1785 to make room for a new court-house, and quarters hired elsewhere for the schools. They were not long without a home, for on March 24th the town voted to build the Centre school-house, 24x36 feet, a portion of which was to be occupied by a library. This building was of wood, two stories high. The Latin school occupied rooms here. Other houses were undoubtedly soon built for the East and West schools. The next school-house built was probably that in North Salem, which was on the corner of North and School Streets. The High school now occupies a fairly commodious building on Broad Street, where it has been located since 1856. For thirty-seven years previous it had occupied the neighboring building now used by the Oliver Primary school.

The largest school building in the city is the Bowditch, on Dean Street, built in 1870 at a cost of eighty-five thousand dollars, including land. The Phillips Grammar school, on Lower Essex Street, occupies an eight-room house, built in 1883 at a cost of thirty-three thousand and five hundred dollars. The Bently Grammar and Primary, on Essex Street, near the Phillips, was built in 1861 and enlarged in 1886. The four-room building in North Salem, occupied by the Pickering Grammar school, was built in 1862, at a cost of twenty thousand dollars. The Saltonstall, on Holly Street, South Salem, the only wooden grammar school-building, and built in 1874, cost sixteen thousand dollars. Of the primary school-houses all are small and most of them are old, wooden four-room buildings. The Bertram is the only one of recent date.

The pay of the earlier teachers was small. Mr. Epes, in 1677, was to have twenty pounds from the town, and if that was not enough with tuition to make sixty pounds, the selectmen were to make up the balance. If it was more than enough, he was to have it and be free from all taxes, trainings, watchings and wardings. In 1699 Mr. Whitman was to "have fifty pounds in money, each scholar to pay twelve pence a month," and "what this lacked was to be made up out of the fund sett apart for grammar schools." Thus the compensation ran along for some years with slight variations, but, on the whole, slowly rising. Mr. Nutting had ninety pounds in 1729. At the close of the eighteenth century the master of the English school had one hundred and fifty pounds and "found ink," and the grammar master one hundred and thirty pounds, and nothing said about ink. In 1803 each of the four school mistresses "is to have a salary of one hundred dollars and four cords of wood." In 1819, when Thomas Henry Oliver (General H. K. Oliver) succeeded Mr. Clark in the Latin school as "usher," it was at a salary of six hundred dollars, and in 1824, as "assistant," he had nine hundred dollars and Mr. Eames, the master, twelve hundred dollars. The same salary was paid to Oliver Carleton in 1840, while Rufus Putnam, as master of the High school, had one thousand dollars. The masters of the other schools had seven hundred dollars each and the assistants from two hundred dollars to two hundred and fifty dollars. Teachers in the primary school received one hundred and fifty dollars. Perhaps this part of the story may as well be completed with brief allusion to salaries paid in 1887. The master of the High school has two thousand two hundred dollars; the sub-master, one thousand five hundred dollars; the first assistant, eleven hundred dollars; other assistants and principals of primary schools, six hundred and fifty dollars; male principals of grammar schools, one thousand eight hundred dollars; one female principal one thousand five hundred dollars; assistants in grammar and primary schools, five hundred dollars.

In the days when those small salaries were paid, a year of teaching was a year indeed. The school-bell was ordered to be rung (in 1700) at 7 A.M. and 5 P.M. from March 1st to November 1st; at 8 A.M. and 4 P.M. the remainder of the year, "ye school to begin and end accordingly." A half-century later the only vacations were "general election, commencement day and the rest of that week, fasts, thanksgivings, trainings, Wednesday and Saturday afternoons." This, says Felt, was a liberal allowance compared with what their predecessors had enjoyed. Now we have, in all, full three months' vacation besides Wednesday and Saturday afternoons. Are our boys and girls more healthy than those who went to school "from morning to night," and "the year round?" For nearly two centuries the girls were not granted the same privileges as boys. They went to school four days in the week from 11 A.M. to 12.30 P.M., and 4.30 to 6 P.M., from April 1st to October 1st, the idea being, evidently, that they needed but little education.

A State Normal school for girls was established in Salem in 1854. The city provided the site and erected the building at a cost of about $13,200. The State reimbursed $6000 of this amount and the Eastern Railroad Company contributed $2000 additional. The building was enlarged in 1870–71, at a cost of $25,000. It was dedicated on September 14, 1854, having been opened for the admission of pupils on the previous day. Richard Edwards was principal from the opening to September, 1857; Professor Alpheus Crosby from October, 1857, to September, 1865, and Professor Daniel B. Hagar from September 6, 1865, to the present time. The aims and methods of the school are best stated in the language of the circular:

"The ends chiefly aimed at in this school are, the acquisition of the necessary knowledge of the Principles and Methods of Education, and of the various branches of study, the attainment of skill in the art of teaching, and the general development of the mental powers.

"From the beginning to the end of the course, all studies are conducted with especial reference to the best ways of teaching them. Recitations, however excellent, are not deemed satisfactory unless every pupil is able to teach others that which she has herself learned. In every study the pupils in turn occupy temporarily the place of teacher of their classmates, and are subjected to their citicisms as well as those of their regular teacher. Teaching exercises of various kinds form a large and important part of the school work."

Private schools have always been an important factor among the educational agencies of old Salem. The first mention which Felt, in his Annals, makes of these institutions is under date of January 1, 1770, when, he finds, Daniel Hopkins, who was afterwards a minister in Salem, had leave to open a private school for reading, writing and arithmetic. He adds that a teacher in one of the public schools had "recently taught in the evening on his own account." We can hardly believe that for one hundred and forty years after the settlement here there were no private schools. That they existed, but are unrecorded, we have no doubt. Two years and a half after the above leave was granted, Charles Shimmin is advertising to instruct children and youth in English, book-keeping, geography, astronomy, etc. A year or so later (1773) Elizabeth Gaudin opened a school to instruct young ladies in plain sewing, marking tent and Irish stitch. In about 1780 Mrs. Mehitable Higginson, widow of John Higginson, who died in 1818, aged ninety-four years, with her daughter Mehitable, began a private school, which she kept many years, and which became of great repute. Nathaniel Rogers and his wife, Mrs. Abigail Dodge Rogers, parents of the Messrs. Rogers, leading merchants in Salem during the first half of this century, kept a famous school during the latter part of the last and early in this century. Thomas Cole came from Marblehead and opened the well-known female school in 1808, and continued until about 1834, when he resigned on account of his health. He lived eighteen years afterwards, and was an active member of the school committee.

In 1782 Mr. Bartlett adds composition and history, and in 1783 Nathan Reed adds grammar and elocution. It will be seen that the branches taught in private schools were mainly additional and supplementary to those in the public schools. In 1802, says Felt, William Gray, Benjamin Pickman and others, "desirous to afford their sons the privileges of a school with few pupils, under a teacher of high character and attainments, and subject to their immediate control," concluded to have such an establishment. They employed Jacob Knapp, and in 1803 built a school-house for him. The number of pupils was limited to thirty, and Mr. Knapp's salary, which was twelve hundred dollars the first three years, was for the remaining five years fixed at the, for those times, munificent sum of two thousand dollars. This school was in Church Street, and later moved to the vicinity of the common. A similar school, known as the Salem Private Grammar school, was begun in 1807, on Chestnut Street, where the Phillips house now stands. Several other schools, on a similar plan, were opened in different parts of the city about this time. The public schools appear not to have given satisfaction. The town was economizing, and began, as usual, with the schools. A vote to build a new house was revoked in 1820, and the old one repaired; teachers' salaries were reduced. The higher branches, like geography, history, grammar and elocution, appear to have been long finding a place in the school course. A census taken in 1820 revealed 2750 children of school age, of whom 225 boys, out of some 1300, were in private schools. From 1806 to 1820 Felt finds seventy-five advertisements of private schools. In 1816, the year before the course of study in the public schools was enlarged, seven masters set up private schools, and it is believed that half the children in town attended them. The enlargement of the course reduced the private schools by one-half. In 1826, however, there were 69 private schools, with 1686 pupils, the amount of tuition being $18,836, against $8592.89 paid by the town. Four-fifths of the amount paid for private tuition was for girls and small children of both sexes, they not having been provided for properly in the town schools. Eleven years later there were 70 private schools, with 589 males and 1001 females, the cost of tuition being $22,700, while the cost of the public schools, with 1236 pupils, was $8877. The number of private schools had been reduced to 49 in 1843, with 972 pupils, at an annual cost of $13,594.75. The public schools instructed about 2000 pupils at a cost of $14,816.86. Thereafter the number of private schools diminished until, aside from the parochial schools, there are now less than a dozen. The number of pupils attending them is 365, out of a school population of 5140. The three Roman Catholic parochial schools contain 917 girls and no boys.

In closing this chapter it seems not inappropriate to say a word about the schools of Salem as they exist to-day, just two hundred and fifty years after Mr. Fiske began that "first free school." The High School had, in 1887, an enrollment of 216, and the average attendance was 180. The corps of teachers consist of a master, two male and five female assistants. The grammar schools are five in number. The Bowditch, for both sexes, with a male principal and twelve female assistants, had a membership of 479; the Bently, for girls only, with five female teachers, 176; the Phillips, for boys only, with a male principal and seven female assistants, 267; the Saltonstall, for both sexes, with a principal and seven assistants, 255; the Pickering, for both sexes, with a principal and four assistants, 174.

The primary schools showed the following membership: Bently, 163; Bertram, 148; Browne (six teach-

ers) 193; Carlton, 173; Endicott, 169; Lincoln, 195; Lynde (five teachers), 217; Oliver (five teachers), 222; Pickman, 133; Prescott, 135; Upham, 152; Naumkeag, 110—making a total of 3546.

Those primary schools not otherwise mentioned had four teachers. There is an "unattached" teacher, who goes from school to school to relieve the principal while she supervises the work in other rooms. The Naumkeag, located in the house on Ropes Street, is an ungraded school. It is intended for such pupils as cannot be conveniently classified in the graded school, but its patronage is now entirely of French Canadian children, who must be taught the English language first of all, and its various branches subsequently. This school was established in 1869, and is in charge of a principal and one assistant. Evening schools are kept through the fall and winter months—one for boys and one for girls. The attendance has always been small and somewhat irregular. The course of study is of a somewhat miscellaneous character.

The courses of study in the several schools do not differ materially from those now generally pursued in all public schools. Added to the common branches of learning are music, under the direction of a special instructor, drawing, history of the United States, and physiology and temperance hygiene. All books, slates, pencils, stationery and general supplies used in the schools are, by law, furnished to the pupils free of expense. The cost of introducing these, in 1884, for 4000 pupils was about $9000, in addition to the $2000 worth then in the school-houses. The cost was somewhat above the average for the State. The cost of replenishing, in 1885, was above $5000, and in 1886 $6200, which is also above the average for the State. This latest addition to the expense of maintaining free public schools, however, makes them free in fact as well as in name. The child may now come to them "without money and without price." The total cost of the Salem schools in 1886 was $81,507.16.

CHAPTER VII.

SALEM—(*Continued*).

LITERATURE.

BY GEO. B. LORING.

WHILE we contemplate with profound interest the material growth of a community, and trace its progress in agriculture and commerce and the arts of life, we turn always with more attention to the intellectual operations by which it has taken its stand among the thoughtful and cultivated. The work of man's hands is always interesting, but the fruits of his mental toil arrest our most solemn attention, and take us into a higher atmosphere where dwells his divine genius. The development of letters in a newly-settled country is always slow. Men engaged in organizing States have no time for books. Authorship is a work of established government, developed industries, a prosperous condition. The defenders of a frontier and the organizers of war seldom write histories or poems. Achilles fights and Homer writes. When States are to be organized, and towns founded, and farms outlined, the scholars are obliged to wait for their turn. The adage "*inter arma silent leges*" should include also *et literæ*. In the early colonial days of our country the work of the *conditores imperiorum* was so constant and pressing that there was neither time nor opportunity for intellectual work, other than that which belonged to the church and the state. Until within fifty years American literature has been a prediction, and it required all the scholarly enthusiasm and confidence in the American mind, which Mr. Everett, just then returned from the schools of Europe, possessed to foretell the effect of free institutions on the public mind here. When he pronounced his oration at Harvard in 1824, in which he appealed to the scholars to do their duty, and placed before them the picture of a great literary republic, just then beginning to dawn, he was obliged to look back upon a feeble and meagre contribution by American authors to the libraries of their country. At that time no poet greater than Joel Barlow had appeared among us. Charles Brockden Brown was the chief novelist. Hutchinson stood foremost as a historian. No scientist had either explored or written, except Franklin, at once scientist, essayist, statesman, diplomatist. That long array of poets, and historians, and novelists, and essayists, and scientists, and jurists, and statesmen, and divines, which now fills the world with their brilliant performances, and has placed the literature of the United States along with that of any other nation, ancient or modern, has accomplished all its work since that prophecy of Mr. Everett was made. Great declarations had been proclaimed, urgent protests had been put forth, essays upon forms of government had been written, sound constitutions had been organized, the pulpit had threatened with vehemence and exhorted with religious fervor, theological disputations and moral essays filled the colonial libraries. There was no necessity for gratifying the imagination, which at that time had but a small abiding-place. The surrounding reality was more remarkable than any tale that could be told. And the songs of Zion appealed to their hearts with a warmth unknown to the most fervid lines of love.

All these influences were especially strong in the community of Naumkeag. The leaders of the colony were men of deep thought, strong convictions and stern purpose. They had an abiding faith, and they always held themselves in readiness to defend it. It

was a liberal education to listen to the sermons of Francis Higginson and Samuel Skelton, the pastor and the teacher of the First Church, and to the profound philosophy and radical doctrines of Roger Williams—all scholars of Oxford and Cambridge. The public utterances of Hugh Peters, preacher, civilian, manufacturer, merchant, more than filled the place of an attractive volume. Harvard sent into the Salem pulpit the brilliant but deluded Noyes, the commanding Curwin, the devout Fisk, and in later colonial days Barnard, the pious and prudent, and Dunbar, the fervid and patriotic. Stepping aside a moment from his official duty, the Rev. Mr. Higginson published "Generall Considerations for the Plantations in New England, with an Answer to Several Objections;" and "a true relation of his last voyage to New England."

This book was published as early as 1629. It sets forth the reasons for supporting the settlement, especially at Naumkeag, and defines its object to be the planting of the Gospel on these shores, the erection of a refuge for Christians, provision for the poor and needy who could not procure homes in England, economy of living in that extravagant and wasteful age, a supply of education for the poor, the support of a particular church and to set an example of faith and devotion to the cause of Christ.

Roger Williams, who commenced his remarkable career in Salem, began his work of authorship in 1643. In that year, during a voyage to England, he composed his "Key to the Language of America," the first treatise on the subject prepared on this continent. This was soon followed by a book entitled the "Bloody Tenent," in which he denounced the views of John Cotton, that it was the duty of the magistrate to regulate the doctrines of the church, to which Cotton replied in a volume called the "Bloody Tenent washed and made white in the Blood of the Lamb." To this Williams rejoined in "The Bloody Tenent yet more Bloody by Mr. Cotton's endeavor to wash it White." In these books he most earnestly maintained the doctrine of religious toleration and entire freedom of conscience. His last publication, so far as known, is entitled "George Fox digged out of his Burrows," a book which appeared in 1672, in reply to Fox's "Defence of the Quakers." Prior to this, however, he published, in 1652, "The Hireling Ministry none of Christ's, or a Discourse touching the Propagating the Gospel of Jesus Christ," and the same year "Experiments of Spiritual Life and their Preservations." He also addressed many letters to John Winthrop and John Winthrop, Jr., Governor of Connecticut from 1633 to 1635. In all these works, written during a stormy life, and amidst scenes of the greatest trial and excitement, will be found that vigor of thought, independence of feeling, philosophical power and devotion to strong conviction for which Roger Williams was distinguished.

Hugh Peters entered upon his varied career in this country October 6, 1635, at which date he landed in Salem. He was settled as the successor of Roger Williams December 21, 1636, and while performing most efficient service as minister of a parish, he devoted himself to regulating the police force of the town, to encouraging commerce and manufactures and to the general welfare of the community. Educated at Jesus College and Trinity College, Cambridge, he commenced life as a comedian, but soon took holy orders in the Church of England, and was for some time a lecturer of St. Sepulchre's, London. He soon, however, became a non-conformist and fled to Holland, where it is said he "used his powerful eloquence and pulpit eccentricities with great effect," until he emigrated to America. It was with this mental culture and this remarkable experience that he commenced his labors as pastor of the First Church in Salem, and pursued his literary career. He was the author of "Good Work for a Good Magistrate," 1651, in which he recommends the burning of the historical records in the Tower; "A Dying Father's Last Legacy to his Only Child," 1660, and "a number of political tracts, occasional sermons," etc. He also published "Amesii Lectiones in Psalmos, cum Epist. Dectic," 1647. The opinions of historians and biographers with regard to Hugh Peters differ widely. He is called a grand imposter and an arch-traitor on the one side, and on the other side he is eulogized as a martyr to the cause of civil and religious freedom, a pure and able divine and a devoted philanthropist. That he had extraordinary ability and immense energy no man can doubt, nor can we fail to recognize his influence in raising the New England colonies into a position of power and effect, which is still felt throughout the country.

In 1690 Thomas Maule published "Truth Set and Maintained,"—an ardent plea for the Quakers as a means of spreading the Gospel. He was indicted for the publication of a book, "wherein is contained divers slanders against the churches and government of this province," and for saying at the honorable court in Ipswich "that there were as great mistakes in the Scriptures as in his book." He was, however, acquitted.

It seems proper to record here the mental attainments and efforts of a youthful prodigy who, while he left no mark of his great powers, occupies a place in the list of those who represent the early culture and scholarship of Salem. Nathaniel Mather, a son of Increase Mather, lies buried in the Charter Street Burying-ground, with the inscription on his gravestone, "an aged person who saw but nineteen winters in this world." He was born in 1669 and died October 17, 1688. He was graduated at Harvard in 1685. At sixteen he delivered an oration in Hebrew, and ranked among the first scholars of his time. When a mere child he repented in sackcloth and ashes that he had "whittled on the Sabbath-day, and thus reproached his God by his youthful sports." At twelve

he cried out "Lord, give me Christ or I die." His brother, Cotton Mather, says of him, "Nor did he slubber his prayers with hasty amputations, but wrestled in them for a good part of an hour together." He died at nineteen, "an aged person," as recorded on his grave-stone in the Charter Street Burying-ground, and left, it is true, a most slender record behind him. But the scholar who contemplates his career will admire his genius and will picture to himself the brilliant work he would have accomplished for mankind and his country had his life been spared and his promise been fulfilled. His memory belongs to the community where his ashes lie and his radiance illumines the dawn of letters in the colony.

In Salem Village the Rev. Peter Clark, an able and earnest minister, published in 1752 a "Defense of Infant Baptism," and in 1760 "The Doctrine of Original Sin Vindicated Again." In 1728 he published a sermon at the ordination of William Jennison at the East Church. He died in 1766, aged seventy-five.

It will be noticed that authorship has thus far been confined to the clergy. Until 1700 the provincial and colonial theocracy was complete. The clergy organized the State, constructed the laws, provided municipal regulations, exercised a general and close supervision of public affairs and directed the current of literature. The libraries of that day were full of volumes of sermons, moral essays, treatises on theology, books of devotion, all well exemplified by the numerous productions of Roger Williams and Hugh Peters.

At the opening of the eighteenth century the current of thought changed. The manifest mistakes of the preceding three-quarters of a century were fully realized, and the law-givers were busy in reforming the code, and the publicists and theologians commenced the work of explanation. The State had become organized; the theory on which it was constructed had become operative; the doctrinal contests were largely over; and the minds of the community had settled into a degree of repose which created but few active authors and writers. The Indian wars commenced, and for many years the active forces of the colony were engaged in the horrors of forest warfare. The strong men organized train-bands; the brave mothers kept careful watch of the homes; the clergy who were not engaged in active military service inspired the hearts of the people with faith and courage. From the breaking out of the Indian wars until the close of the French war the opportunity for study and meditation was small; and during the remainder of the century, which was occupied by the War of the Revolution and the civil conflicts of the construction of the Constitution, the thought of the people was turned to questions of state, and the science of government occupied very largely the minds of those who were engaged in literary work. In public debates, in the newspaper press, in a flood of pamphleteering, may be found the fruits of the mental effort of the day. There was neither time nor opportunity nor inclination for poems or novels; and theological disputations were suspended before the all-absorbing topics which a great struggle for freedom, and a great declaration and defense of popular rights, had created. Science asserted itself, it is true, from time to time. Franklin pursued his observations on electricity, and, so far as Salem is concerned, Judge Andrew Oliver published in 1772 "An Essay on Comets," "Papers on Lightning, Thunder Storms and Water-spouts," and an account of a disease among the Indians, while Benjamin Thompson, later Count Rumford, was imbibing here, as an apprentice in John Appleton's shop, his passionate love of science.

In 1746 Dr. Edward Augustus Holyoke, who was born in 1728, was graduated at Harvard, and, in 1749, commenced in Salem the practice of medicine, which he continued eighty years. He published many medical articles in the reviews of his profession, and scientific papers in the "Memoirs of the American Academy of Science." He possessed great repose of body and spirit, and that balance of powers which usually attends longevity.

It was about 1770 that Timothy Pickering commenced his career as soldier and statesman by publishing a manual of military tactics which he used in drill service before the breaking out of the Revolutionary War, and whose principles he applied in a critical review of the military training of his superior officers as the war went on. He found time, in the midst of his duties in the army, in Congress, in the Cabinet and in agriculture, to publish an exhaustive letter on the "Conduct of the American Government towards Great Britain and France," and a "Review of the Correspondence between President John Adams and W. Cunningham," besides many valuable papers connected with his varied official service. Colonel Pickering was not only governed by a high sense of duty throughout his long career, and by strong convictions, but he also expressed himself in a nervous, vigorous style, and in controversial correspondence was a most formidable foe. To no man is this country more indebted for its independent nationality and the strength of its institutions. He performed his service with such fearlessness and honesty that he was at times placed on the defensive; but he now stands in the front rank of the great and pure men of the Revolutionary and Constitutional period in our history. In a literary point of view, he has left for the imitation of those statesmen who come after him a clear and impressive style and great power of statement.

The adoption of the Constitution and the organization of the Union found the country almost entirely absorbed by political controversies, and most vigorous endeavors to restore the languishing business of a people exhausted by a long war and a feeble and unsatisfactory system of government. The pulpit, the

bar and the newspaper press absorbed nearly all the cultivated talent of the country. The progress of Arminianism and the development of Unitarianism gave rise to a most animated theological controversy, and the issues, growing out of various interpretations of the Federal Constitution, brought out a strong body of writers on these subjects. Rev. Thomas Barnard, of the North Church, published many occasional sermons, beginning in 1786, among which may be found an eloquent discourse delivered on the death of Washington, following in this respect his father, Rev. Thomas Barnard, of the First Church, who began his publications in 1743.

One of the most remarkable writers and investigators of that day was Rev. John Prince, LL.D., who was born in Boston in 1751, and died in Salem in 1836. He was graduated at Harvard College in 1776, and was ordained minister over the First Church in Salem in 1779. He was a most indefatigable worker, and applied himself to scientific research, often at the expense of his ministerial and parochial duties. He was an intimate friend of Count Rumford, who commenced his great career in this town as author and investigator in 1765, and joined in many of his inventions and scientific experiments. He improved largely the air-pump, and tested many plans for warming rooms. He published many sermons, among which are a Fast Sermon in 1798, a Charitable Sermon in 1806, a sermon on the death of Dr. Barnard in 1814, and a sermon before the Bible Society in 1816. His labors and his character were noticed by many scientific, literary and historical societies, and were reviewed by many leading periodicals of the day.

Dr. Prince exerted a commanding influence on the community in which he lived and his memory is warmly cherished in Salem. In theology he passed from Arminianism to Unitarianism with many of his clerical associates, and set a noble example of the capacity of a liberal-minded man to retain his faith while pursuing his theological investigations and modifying his views. His style was simple and somewhat severe, but it was used by him to convey sound doctrine, and a fund of valuable information and much food for thought.

William Bentley was ordained over the East Church four years after Dr. Prince commenced his labors at the First Church. He was born in Boston in 1759; was graduated at Harvard in 1777; and died in 1819. He was one of the ablest men of his time. His learning was extensive, and he used it, not only in the pulpit, but also in the newspaper press, to which he was a liberal contributor, and in a more elaborate work upon the history of Salem. He was at one time the editor of the *Essex Register*. In politics he was an ardent Republican and espoused the cause of Jefferson and advocated his interpretation of the Constitution. In theology he was an extreme Arminian, and paused not when he reached Unitarianism, but adopted with great force and ability those doctrines which since his day have been more generally accepted by the followers of Emerson and Parker and the German school. He was a most ardent patriot and left his pulpit in mid-service to defend the town of Marblehead and the frigate "Constitution," when she was chased into that harbor, now famous as the rendezvous of the competing yachts of the country. Dr. Bentley was at his death warmly eulogized by Edward Everett, at the time a professor in Harvard College. But it was not found convenient to publish the sermon. He left his valuable library to the theological school at Meadville, and the American Antiquarian Society, at Worcester. He was a most beloved pastor and friend, and his memory is held as a most precious legacy by the descendants of those who loved him in his lifetime, and worshipped his spirit after death. Dr. Bentley published: "A Sermon at Stone Chapel, Boston," 1790; "Sermon on the death of Jonathan Gardner," 1791; "Psalms and Hymns," 1795; "A Masonic Discourse," 1796; "Artillery Election Sermon," 1796; "Sermon on the death of General Fiske," 1797; "A Masonic Discourse," 1797; "Masonic Charge," 1798; "History of Salem," 1800; "Sermon on the death of B. Hodges," 1804; "Sermon on the ordination of Joseph Richardson Hingham," 1806; "Election Sermon," 1807.

These two distinguished divines performed great service in the work of sustaining the literary reputation and power of Salem—a duty which before their death was taken up by one of the most learned and exemplary sons of this town, the Hon. John Pickering. He was born in Salem in 1772, a son of Timothy Pickering, and spent his early life in public service at home and abroad. He was secretary of legation to Portugal, and afterwards private secretary of Rufus King, in London. He filled many important positions as instructor at Harvard, practiced law in Salem until 1830, was a Senator from Essex and a member of the House of Representatives from Salem, and revised and arranged the Statutes of Massachusetts. He was, during his life, a most diligent student. His works are of great value to the scholar, and attracted the favorable attention of learned men at home and abroad. In 1816 he published "a vocabulary or collection of words and phrases which have been supposed to be popular in the United States," a work which was accepted at once as of great value by scholars on both sides of the Atlantic. In 1829 he published a volume "On the Adoption of a Uniform Orthography for the Indian Languages of North America," to which students of etymology made constant reference. In 1836 he published "Remarks on the Indian Languages of North America," accepted as a most valuable treatise by General Cass, W. H. Prescott, Du Ponceau, Ludewig and others. In 1826 he published "A Comprehensive Lexicon of the Greek Language, adapted to the schools and colleges of the United States," a book which ran through many editions and was published in Edinburgh by Professor

George Dunbar, with additions. The third American edition was so enlarged and improved as to be accepted as final authority. Mr. Pickering also published "A Fourth of July Oration in Salem," in 1804; "Eulogy on Nathaniel Bowditch, before the Academy of Arts and Sciences," 1838; "Lecture on the Alleged Uncertainty of the Law," 1834; "Dr. Edwards' Observations on the Language of the Muhekaneew Indians," 1823; "Eliot's Indian Grammar," 1822; "Father Rasles' Dictionary of the Abnaki Language," and the "Vocabulary of Josiah Cotton," and "A Grammar of the Cherokee Language." He edited with a memoir "Peirce's History of Harvard University." In connection with Judge White, of Salem, he published an edition of "Sallust," in 1805. He also published a translation of "M. Dupin's Refutation of J. Salvador's Trial of Jesus," prefixed to the "Examination of the Testimony of the Four Evangelists;" "A Review of the McLeod International Question;" "Remarks on Greek Grammar;" "An Address Before the American Oriental Society;" "A Paper on the Roman Law;" "An Article on National Rights;" "An Essay on the Agrarian Laws;" "An Essay on the Pronunciation of Greek;" one on the "Priority of Greek Studies;" one on the "Egyptian Jurisprudence;" papers on the "Cochin China Language," and "Prescott's History of Ferdinand and Isabella."

The scholarship of Dr. Pickering, especially as a linguist, has seldom been surpassed. He had a profound knowledge of more than twenty languages. President Felton said of him that "he was one of the noblest and most learned men our country has produced." He possessed great purity of character and a most amiable and gentle disposition. His mind was enlarged by much learning and his heart was constantly warmed by his devotion to scholarly labor and his daily intimacy with the works of students of all ages and every country.

During the years occupied by John Pickering in performing his great literary work, Joseph Story entered upon his remarkable career as poet, legislator, lawyer and jurist. He was born in Marblehead September 18, 1779; was graduated at Harvard in 1798; was admitted to the bar in 1801, and commenced the practice of his profession at once in Salem, where he resided until appointed professor of law at Harvard in 1829. He was a lawyer who had acknowledged power as an adviser and an advocate, even in the early days of his professional labors. He was a most influential member of the Massachusetts House of Representatives, and during his term of service in Congress, to which he was elected as a Jeffersonian Republican, in 1808, he pursued a course of great independence and commanding influence. During this period of his public career he had entered upon the field of authorship with great zeal, and was already recognized as an eloquent orator, a graceful scholar and an able expounder of the law. As early as 1804 he published a poem, entitled "The Power of Solitude," which, whatever may have been its poetic merit, indicated the grace and fervor of the author's mind. He then commenced his long catalogue of treatises on various branches of the law. He published "A Selection of Pleadings in Civil Actions" in 1805; "The Public and General Statutes passed by the Congress of the United States from 1789 to 1827;" "Commentaries on the Law of Bailments," 1832; "Commentaries on the Constitution of the United States, with a preliminary review of the Constitutional History of the Colonies and States before the adoption of the Constitution," 1833; "Commentaries on the Conflict of Laws, Foreign and Domestic, in regard to Contracts, Rights and Remedies, and especially in regard to Marriages, Divorces, Wills, Successions and Judgments," 1834; "Commentaries on Equity Jurisprudence as administered in England and America," 1835; "Commentaries on Equity Pleadings and the incidents thereto, according to the Practice of the Courts of Equity in England and America," 1838; "Commentaries on the Law of Agency as a Branch of Commercial and Maritime Jurisprudence, with occasional Illustrations from the Civil and Foreign Law," 1839; "Commentaries on the Law of Partnership as a Branch of Commercial and Maritime Jurisprudence," 1842; "Commentaries on the Law of Bills of Exchange, Foreign and Inland, as administered in England and America, with occasional Illustrations from the Commercial Law of the Nations of Continental Europe," 1843; "Commentaries on the Law of Promissory Notes, and Guaranties of Notes and Checks on Banks and Bankers, with occasional Illustrations from the Commercial Law of the Nations of Continental Europe," 1845; besides numerous decisions on his circuit as United States justice, of which Sir James Mackintosh said they were "admired by all cultivators of the law of nations."

It would not be supposed that in the midst of such vast and constant labor as a lawyer, professor, jurist and author, Judge Story would have found time for productions of a more purely literary character, and yet the list of these is long and interesting. He delivered in Salem an eulogy on George Washington, 1800; eulogy on Captain J. Lawrence and Lieutenant C. Ludlow, 1813; sketch of the life of Samuel Dexter, 1816; charge to the grand juries of the Circuit Courts at Boston and Providence, 1819; charge to the grand jury of the Circuit Court of Portland, 1829; address before the members of the Suffolk bar, 1821; discourse before the Phi Beta Kappa Society of Harvard, 1826; discourse before the Essex Historical Society, 1828; discourse on inauguration as Dane Professor of Law in Harvard University, 1829; address on the dedication of the cemetery at Mount Auburn, 1831; discourse on the funeral obsequies of John Hooker Ashmun, 1833; discourse on the life, character and services of Hon. John Marshall, LL.D.,

1835; lectures on the Science of Government, 1838; discourse before the Alumni of Harvard College, 1842; charge to the grand jury of Rhode Island on treason, 1845; with many occasional speeches and pamphlets.

America has produced but few men equal in all respects to Judge Story. As a student he combined patience, diligence, comprehension and enthusiasm to a most extraordinary degree. He turned his attention in his early life to the hardest of all sciences, in which dispassionate judgment and cold deliberation are essentially required. And yet he filled the temple of the law with a genial warmth and a radiant glow which could not be surpassed by any work of taste and imagination, and has rarely been equaled in those spheres which are dedicated to fervor and devotion. He had a sacred regard for the law, and he inspired his hearers with the same sense of reverent admiration. His mind, with its vast grasp and broad understanding, worked on with the rapidity of light. And while exercising his vigorous powers, he had most genial attractions for his associates, and those whom he taught, and in his family he always won the most ardent affection by his kindness and gentleness and simplicity. He was a great lawyer, a great author, a great citizen, and a kind and affectionate parent. Mrs. Farrar said of him, "He was the beau-ideal of a judge." His justice was always tempered with mercy.

The career of Nathaniel Bowditch, which, in an intellectual point of view, is one of the most remarkable and admirable records in history, commenced in Salem almost contemporaneously with that of John Pickering and Joseph Story. Pickering was born in 1772, Bowditch in 1773, and Story, who made no delays in his youth, in 1779. Pickering delivered his first oration in Salem in 1804. Bowditch published "The Practical Navigator" in 1802, and Story was admitted to the bar in Salem in 1801 to overtake in accomplishment his great contemporaries. They removed to Boston about the same time, carrying with them the great reputation they had already achieved,

Dr. Bowditch was born in Salem in 1773, and died in Boston in 1838. He began life in the forecastle of an East Indiaman, and before he had relinquished his interest in navigation he had become the mariner's guide across the trackless sea. Placed in charge of an insurance company in Salem, he advanced from "The Practical Navigator" to the "Mecanique Celeste," and the interpreter of Laplace to all English-speaking nations, and when he was called to a higher position in Boston as the organizer and president of the Massachusetts Hospital Life Insurance Company, an enduring monument to his financial wisdom and skill, he continued his studies still, until he accomplished that great literary work upon which his fame rests so securely. He seems to have been indifferent to all obstacles from the beginning to the end of his great career. At ten years of age he was compelled by poverty to labor for his own living. He followed the seas, mostly in a subordinate capacity, until he had reached mature manhood. And when he entered upon the great work of his life he was obliged to call his family about him, and confer with them as to the possibility of his publishing his volumes without outside aid. The same economy and courage which bore him through his early trials bore him also through the later struggles, fortunately supported as he was by the resolute determination of his wife and children. While engaged in his work he seemed to be unconscious of disturbance or interruption, and his most difficult calculations were made in the midst of the amusements of his family. The "Mecanique Celeste" appeared in four large volumes in 1829, '32, '34, '38. And by the strength of his genius he stood in the front rank of the great students and mathematicians of the world.

Dr. Bowditch possessed this great mental power, but he was remarkable also for his foresight, prudence, integrity and courage. His influence was felt in commercial circles, in scientific associations, in the government of Harvard College, and on the lives of those who bore his name, and went out from his domestic circle to practice the virtues he had given them as his best legacy.

The Rev. Samuel Worcester, D.D., commenced a long and useful career as pastor, preacher and author in charge of the Tabernacle Church in Salem, in 1803. He was born in Hollis, N. H., in 1770, was graduated at Dartmouth in 1795 and died in 1821. He was a theological scholar of great ability, and entered with zeal and power into the controversies of his day. From 1810 until his death he was corresponding secretary of the A. B. C. F. M., and he was untiring in his efficient support of that association. He published six sermons on the doctrine of "Eternal Judgment," 1800; "A Discourse on the Covenant with Abraham," 1805; "Three Letters to the Rev. W. E. Channing on Unitarianism," 1815; an edition of Watts' Hymns, 1818; many magazine articles and the first ten Reports of the A. B. C. F. M. He was considered one of the ablest supporters and advocates of orthodox Christianity, and was counted worthy of elaborate reviews and notices by such writers as Jeremiah Evarts, A. P. Peabody and Rufus Anderson. Dr. Worcester added much to the literary reputation of Salem, and his presence and services gave importance to the town. He presented a fine example of the New England clergy of a former date; and he raised a standard which his theological associates were proud to follow, and which has served as a mark for those who have succeeded him. He brought harmony and strength to a church organization which had passed through many trials and changes, and gave it the proud distinction of sending forth the first foreign missionaries to the East Indies.

The Rev. Elias Cornelius was settled as an associate

of Dr. Worcester in 1819, and dismissed in 1826. He was the author of "The Little Osage Captive," 1822, and a "Sermon on the Trinity," 1826.

Benjamin Peirce, who was born in Salem in 1778, and died in 1831, contributed largely to the literature of his times. He became librarian of Harvard College in 1826, and retained this station until his death. He was the author of a "History of Harvard College from 1636 to the Revolution;" a "Catalogue of the Library of Harvard College," 1830. He was a diligent scholar and a most useful official in the college.

The Rev. James Flint was born in Reading 1779, was graduated at Harvard 1802, and installed over the East Church 1821. He died in 1855. He had great mental powers, a glowing imagination, an incessant activity. Ralph Waldo Emerson said he had genius. His literary remains consist of a volume of sermons, occasional sermons and addresses and a few sweet and fervid hymns scattered here and there in the collections for churches. There are those who remember him with great esteem and reverence. He published: "The Christian Ministry," 1806; "Sermon on Ordination of Rev. N. Whitman Billerin," 1814; "God a Refuge in Times of Calamity and Danger," 1814; "Election Sermon," 1815; "Discourse at Plymouth on the Landing of the Pilgrims," 1816; "Ordination of Seth Alden, Marlboro'," 1819; "Sermon on the Death of Rev. Abiel Abbot," Beverly, 1828; "Sermon on the Sabbath," 1828; "Sermon on Indolence," 1829; "Change: Phi Beta Kappa Poem, Harvard," 1839; "Collection of Hymns," 1843; "Sermon on the Vanity of Earthly Possessions," 1844; "Sermons on Leaving the East Church," 1845; "Sermon on the Death of Dr. Brazer," 1846; "Sermons on the Deaths of President Taylor and Hon. U. Silsbee," 1850; "Posthumous Volume of Sermons and of Poems," 1852.

The Rev. John Brazer was born in Worcester in 1789, was graduated at Harvard in 1813, where he was tutor and professor until 1820, in which year he was ordained pastor of the North Church. Dr. Brazer was a most polished scholar, and on all public occasions when he was called on to deliver a sermon or address he acquitted himself with great taste and finish. His style was not easily surpassed. He was a strong and consistent and conservative Unitarian, and his congregation was one of the largest and most influential in the town. He delivered the Dudleian Lectures at Harvard in 1836, and published a volume of sermons about the same time. His labors were mostly confined to his parish, and he left a valuable literary harvest from his fertile and well-cultivated mind. Dr. Brazer published; "Discourse for Promotion of Christian Education," 1825; "Sermon on the Death of Dr. Holyoke," 1829; "Power of Unitarianism," 1829; "Ordination of Jonathan Cole," 1829; "Memoir of Dr. Holyoke," 1830; "Sermon on the Value of the Public Exercises of Religion," 1832; "Efficacy of Prayer," 1832; "Duty of Active Benevolence," 1835; "Essay on Divine Influence," 1835; "Lesson of the Past," 1837; "Present Darkness of God's Providence," 1841; "Sermon on the Death of Hon. Benj. Pickman," 1843; "Sermon on the Death of Hon. Leverett Saltonstall," 1843; "Posthumous volume of Sermons."

Henry Pickering, a brother of John Pickering, born in 1781, was for some time a merchant in Salem, and afterwards removed to New York. He printed a volume of poems for private distribution in 1830, and a poem entitled the "Ruins of Paestum" in 1822. He possessed the scholarly tastes of the family, and enjoyed a fine reputation as a gentleman of refinement and learning.

As a friend of the distinguished authors just enumerated, and as a graceful scholar, wise legal adviser and patron of letters, no man ever stood higher than the Hon. Daniel Appleton White. He was born in Methuen in 1776, was graduated at Harvard in 1799, and devoted himself for some years to teaching. He was admitted to the bar in 1804, and was appointed judge of probate for Essex County in 1815, at which time he took up his residence in Salem for the remainder of his life. He died in 1861. He published a "Eulogy of Washington at Haverhill," 1800; "View of the Jurisdiction of the Court of Probate in Massachusetts," 1822; a "Eulogy of Nathaniel Bowditch," 1838; an address at the consecration of Harmony Grove Cemetery, 1840; "New England Congregationalism in its Origin and Purity," 1861; besides numerous pamphlets.

Judge White led a long and useful life in Salem. His literary work was always done with great taste and skill, with a purity and terseness of style rarely equaled, and with great wisdom and humanity. His mind was always guided by a high moral sense. In his connection with public affairs he always exercised the most untiring devotion to the welfare of the community, and steadily entertained lofty views of the duties of a Christian commonwealth. To the libraries of Salem and to the educational work of the Lyceum, which he founded, and the Essex Institute, which he patronized liberally, he rendered a service which should never be forgotten. He was known as the friend of the scholar and of sound learning.

In 1818 the friends of Rev. Nathaniel Fisher published a posthumous volume of his sermons preached at St. Peter's Church, which were considered of a high order. He was born in Dedham in 1742, and died in Salem in 1812.

In the same year (1818) Benjamin Lynde Oliver, a gentleman of great ability and attainments, published his first volume, entitled "Hints on the Pursuit of Happiness." He followed this with "The Rights of an American Citizen," 1832; "Law Summary," 1833; "Practical Conveyancing," 1838; "Forms of Practice," 1841; "Forms in Chancery, Admiralty and Common Law," 1842. Mr. Oliver was distinguished for his brilliancy in conversation and his high social quali-

ties. He was a most skillful chess-player, and was considered an authority in that intricate game. He was born in 1788, and died in 1843. He was a son of Rev. Thomas Fitch Oliver, an Episcopal minister, who published an interesting discourse on Masonry in 1784. He was also a nephew of Dr. B. Lynde Oliver, who died in Salem in 1835, aged seventy-five, and who published many medical treatises.

In 1824 the Rev. Josiah Willard Gibbs, who was the son of Henry and Mercy (Prescott) Gibbs, and born in Salem in 1784, commenced the publication of his philological works, consisting of "A Hebrew and English Lexicon to the Old Testament, including the Biblical Chaldee from the works of Prof. W. Gesenius;" an edition of the above for schools, in 1828; "Philological Studies" with English illustrations, 1857; and "A New Latin Analyst," 1859. Professor Gibbs was a long time professor of sacred literature in Yale College. He was a profound scholar; his works were republished in London, and were favorably noticed by the most accomplished linguists.

While yet a junior in Dartmouth College, Charles Dexter Cleveland commenced his literary career. He was born in Salem December 3, 1802; was graduated at Dartmouth College in 1827, and in 1830 was elected professor of Latin and Greek in Dickinson College, Carlisle, Pennsylvania. He entered upon the work of authorship in 1826, at which time he published "The Moral Characters of Theophrastus," with a translation and critical notes. This he followed with "An Epitome of Greek Antiquities," 1827; "First Lesson in Latin on a New Plan," 1827; "The National Orator," 1827; Xenophon's "Anabasis," with English notes, 1830; "A Compendium of Greek Antiquities," 1831; "First Lessons in Greek," 1832; "Sequel to First Lessons in Latin," 1834; an edition of Adams' "Latin Grammar," 1836; "An Address of the Liberty Party of Pennsylvania to the People of the State," 1844; "First Latin Book," and "Second Latin Book," 1845; "Third Latin Book," 1848; "A Compendium of English Literature," 1848; "Hymns for Schools," 1850; "English Literature of the Nineteenth Century," 1851; an edition of Milton's "Poetical Works," 1853; "A Compendium of English Literature," 1858. His Latin series have always been highly esteemed by scholars; and his edition of Milton is most satisfactory, both to the scholar and the general reader. His devotion to ancient and modern literature has given his country a noble movement in American scholarship; and it has been said of his work that "good taste, fine scholarship, familiar acquaintance with English literature, unwearied industry, tact acquired by practice, an interest in the culture of the young, a regard for truth, purity, philanthropy, religion, as the highest attainment and highest beauty—all these were needed, and they are all united in Mr. Cleveland."

The Rev. Samuel Melancthon Worcester began his work as an author in 1826. He was a son of the Rev. Samuel Worcester, to whom allusion has been made; was born in 1801; was graduated at Harvard in 1822; was for many years tutor and professor in Amherst College, and was settled over the Tabernacle Church, in Salem, in 1834. He was recording secretary of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, from 1847 to 1866. In 1826 he published "Essays on Slavery," by Vigorinus; in 1854 "A Memorial of the Tabernacle Church;" many sermons and discourses; and many articles in reviews and periodicals. He represented Salem in the Massachusetts Legislature in 1866. Dr. Worcester had great industry and a strong mind controlled by sincerity and honesty of purpose. He resembled his father in the sturdy vigor of his style and in the purity of his purpose. He resigned his pastorate in 1859, but not until he had strengthened the work his father consolidated, and had seen his people collected in the new church edifice which they erected in 1854.

The Rev. Joseph B. Felt has intimately connected his name with the history of Salem, by his faithful and accurate annals of the place. He was born in Salem in 1789, was graduated at Dartmouth in 1813, and soon became the acknowledged historian of many localities in Essex County. He published histories of Ipswich, Essex, Hamilton and Salem, in all of which he displayed great patience of research and great capacity for arrangement and selection. He also published "Collections from the American Statistical Associations on Towns, Population and Taxation" in 1847, and a "Memoir of Roger Conant" in 1848. He is highly esteemed as a reliable annalist, and an honest and capable searcher after truth; and he is accepted as authority on all matters which he has investigated and recorded. He ranks among the most faithful of historians.

The work of social reform has at times occupied most absorbing attention in Salem, and has been supported by some of her ablest and most conspicuous citizens. Among the most remarkable of her reformers was the Rev. George B. Cheever, who, while pastor of the Howard Street Church, exerted himself most vigorously and conscientiously in behalf of human freedom and temperance. He was born in Hallowell, Me., in 1807; was graduated at Bowdoin College in 1825, and not long after was settled in Salem as pastor of the "Branch Church." His fearless hostility to the traffic in and the use of ardent spirits led him into the most violent contest, in which he maintained his position with great courage and persistency, and in an attitude far in advance of his times. While here he published "Inquire at Deacon Giles' Distillery," a work which produced a stirring social commotion in the town, but won for him the reputation of an ardent and brave reformer. He afterwards settled in New York as pastor of the Allen Street Church, 1845; and as pastor of the Church of the Puritans in New York, in 1846. He published "The American Common-Place Book of Prose,"

1828, and of "Poetry," 1829; "Studies in Poetry," 1830; "Lectures on Hierarchical Despotism" and "Lectures on Pilgrim's Progress," 1843; "Wanderings of a Pilgrim in the Shadow of Mont Blanc," 1846; "The Hill of Difficulty," 1849; "The Voice of Nature to her Foster-child," "The Soul of Man," 1852; "A Reel in the Bottle for Jacob in the Doldrums," 1852; "Journal of the Pilgrims at Plymouth," 1848; "Punishment by Death: its Authority and Expediency," 1849; "Windings of the River of the Water of Life," 1849; "Powers of the World to Come," 1853; "Lectures on Cowper," 1856; "God against Slavery," 1857.

These works indicate the tendency of Dr. Cheever's mind; they also indicate his great power and versatility. He has made a mark in his time which will never be obliterated, and he has done much to direct the public mind in the paths of morality, rectitude and virtue.

At the time when Dr. Cheever commenced his career in Salem the Rev. Charles W. Upham had just entered upon his pastorate in the (First) Congregational Church as colleague of Dr. Prince. Mr. Upham was born in St. John, New Brunswick, 1802; was graduated at Harvard, 1821, and settled in Salem in 1824. For twenty years he was minister of this parish, at the end of which time he resigned, and pursued diligently his work as public official and author. He was a member of the Thirty-third Congress; Representative to the General Court in 1849, '59, and '60; State Senator in 1850, '57 and '58, and one year presiding officer of that body. He was mayor of the city in 1852.

Mr. Upham became an author at an early period of his career. He published, in 1828, "Letters on the Logos." This was followed by "Principles of Congregationalism," 1829; "Lectures on Witchcraft," 1835; "Salem Witchcraft, with an account of Salem Village," 1867; "Discourse on the Funeral of Rev. John Prince," 1836; "Life, Explorations and Services of John Charles Fremont," 1856; "Life of Sir Henry Vane," 1836; "Life of John Quincy Adams," 1839; oration, July 4, 1844; oration before the New England Society, N. Y., 1846; "Life of Washington," 1852; and the last three volumes of the "Life of Timothy Pickering," a work commenced by Octavius Pickering, a son of Timothy Pickering, a graduate of Harvard in 1810, and for many years reporter of the Supreme Court of Massachusetts.

Mr. Upham was a graceful and forcible writer. His sermons, while a preacher, were extremely attractive to old and young, and were filled with a warm Christian spirit. In his work as a public servant he set an example of honest conviction and a fearless discharge of duty. His contributions to the history of his country were most valuable. The "Life of Sir Henry Vane" which he contributed to Sparks' "American Biography" has always been accepted as one of the most brilliant works of the kind in the English language. His "History of Witchcraft" is elaborate, graphic and exhaustive; and his share of the "Life of Timothy Pickering" is a charming record of the great work of that remarkable man. Mr. Upham, at his death, left a circle of warm and devoted friends, and an honorable record in the community in which he spent so many long and laborious years of his life.

In 1800 William Biglow, or, as he sometimes subscribed his name, Gulielmus Magnushumilis, was engaged as a teacher in Salem. He was born in Natick in 1773, was graduated at Harvard in 1794, and died in 1844. He was the author of the "History of the Town of Natick from 1650;" and of the town of Sherborne from its incorporation to the end of the year 1830. He contributed a Latin poem on the occasion of the second centennial of Harvard, in 1836. He published "Elements of Latin Grammar," 1811; "Education," a poem, Salem, 1799; "Phi Beta Kappa," poem, 1811; "Poem on Intemperance," Cambridge, 1834; "Recommencement, or Commencement Again," Boston, 1811; several school books. He married a daughter of Peter Lander, of Salem. He was a scholar of extensive reading, and was well known to numerous acquaintances as a social companion of original wit and fancy, and possessing a fund of anecdote, which he would communicate with facility in prose and rhyme.

The Hon. Joseph G. Sprague delivered a eulogy on Adams and Jefferson in 1826, and published many political and biographical essays. Lieutenant John White, U. S. N., published "Voyage to the China Seas," 1826.

Dr. R. D. Mussey practised medicine in Salem at this period, and earlier for several years. He was engaged in lecturing on chemistry in 1816, and removed to accept a professorship at Dartmouth College, and afterwards at Cincinnati. He published many medical essays and an elaborate treatise on tobacco. He married a daughter of Dr. Joseph Osgood, of Salem.

Dr. Daniel Oliver was engaged with Dr. Mussey in popular scientific lectures in Salem. He resided here for many years, and was afterwards professor of the theory and practice of medicine at Dartmouth College. He published "First Lines in Physiology," in 1835.

It was in this period of the literary history of Salem that Nathaniel Hawthorne commenced his inspired work. Born in Salem July 4, 1804, he led a quiet and secluded life for thirty years, passing shyly through the schools of the town and inconspicuously through Bowdoin College, where he was graduated in 1825. His first appearance as an author was in *The Token* and *The Democratic Review*, where he published anonymously a series of tales so attractive that the most brilliant minds of the country commenced a diligent search for the author, who was supposed for a long time to be a female of great delicacy of fancy and keen knowledge of human nature. In 1837, however, he collected these productions into a volume entitled

"Twice-Told Tales," and the position of Hawthorne in the world of letters was at once recognized. The book received a most flattering review by Longfellow, a warm and cordial reception by Miss Mitford and a most enthusiastic welcome from all that class of refined and æsthetic students who were gathering round Emerson, George Ripley, Margaret Fuller, Theodore Parker and their charming and critical associates. On the other hand, the hard students rejoiced in his appearance. From this time until his death, in 1864, a period of less than thirty years, he held various official positions conferred upon him for his merit as an author; and he sent forth that collection of romances which have given him an immortality in the world of letters and have elevated the position of the American mind to the rank accorded to genius in all ages and among all nations. "The Scarlet Letter," "The House of the Seven Gables," "Blithedale Romance," "Mosses from an Old Manse," "Grandfather's Chair," "The Wonder Book," "Tanglewood Tales," "The Marble Faun," "Our Old Home," "English Note-Book," "American Note-Book" all came out in rapid succession, and now occupy the dearest corner in every well-appointed library, at home and abroad.

By his many reviewers Hawthorne has been compared with nearly all the great writers of fiction, whose works have been accepted as beyond mere figments of the fancy. That he surpassed them all in his comprehension of the motives of the human heart there can be no doubt. It was a supernatural element in him which gave him his high distinction. When he entered upon his work as a writer he left his personality entirely behind him. In this work he allowed no interference, he asked for no aid. He was shy of those whose intellectual power and literary fame might seem to give them a right to enter his sanctuary. In an assembly of illustrious authors and thinkers he floated reserved and silent around the margin of the room and at last vanished into outer darkness. The working of his mind was so sacred and mysterious to him that he was impatient of any attempt at familiarity or even intimacy with the divine power within him. His love of personal solitude was his ruling passion; his intellectual solitude was an overpowering necessity. And so in great loneliness he toiled, conscious that no human power could guide him, and that human sympathy was of no avail. He appeared to understand his own greatness so imperfectly that he dared not expose the mystery to others; and the sacredness of his genius was like the sacredness of his love. That this sentiment, so natural and admirable, made him somewhat unjust to his literary associates there can be but little doubt. For while he applied to them the powerful test of his own genius, before whose blaze many of them withered, his retiring disposition kept him at a distance almost fatal to any estimate of their true proportions. And even when he admired and respected the authors among whom he moved, and was proud of the companionship into which his genius had elevated him, he never overcame his natural sensitiveness with regard to the demand they might make on him as a fellow-artist, to open his creations to their vision and with regard to the test they might apply to him. For his sturdy manhood he sought intimates and companions,—not many, but enough to satisfy his natural longing for a fellow; for his genius he neither sought nor desired nor expected to find companionship. For his old official friends he had a tender affection; for the strong and practical young men with whom he set forth in life he had an abiding love and attachment; they satisfied the longings of one side at least of his existence. For the throne on which he sat in the imperial realm of his own creative thought he desired no associate; his seat there was for himself alone; his reign there was supreme. And when he retired to that lonely room which he had set apart at the height of the tower which overtopped his humble abode in Concord, and without book or picture, alone with a solitary seat and desk, having none to commune with except nature, which stood before his windows to cheer his heart, and he entered upon his work, his creation moved steadily and majestically, as when the morning stars sang together and all the sons of God shouted for joy.

At the foundation of Hawthorne's genius lay those strong and sturdy characteristics which he had inherited from a long line of agricultural and maritime ancestors. And these characteristics he never surrendered. He found for them a sympathetic feeling in the few companions whom he met in the ordinary service of his life. They were genuine as nature had made them—neither tasteless nor artificial nor corrupt. And in their association his mind found the repose which all nature requires. But this was by no means his life; and let those who assume that his companions led him into bad practices, even were they so inclined, remember that he found his eternal rest with some of the sweetest and purest spirits of his time. Let those who flippantly accuse him of dissipation and vulgarity remember that he found his home among the noblest characters in the community in which he lived, and let their regard and love for him attest his nobility and purity. *They* say he was pure and chaste and honorable—and their testimony is enough. He had no fondness whatever for social pleasures, good or bad, and never entered into them, nor did he establish between himself and his fellowmen the superficial intimacy upon which society rests. But his instinct led him into the companionship of the refined and gentle, whose life was made beautiful by the constant presence of poetry and art and the highest intellectual culture. Salem, in Hawthorne's day, was filled with brilliant and beautiful women; and they worshipped at a distance this mysterious divinity, whose delicate fancies charmed their hearts, and whose glowing eye and sturdy form, and dome-

like head crowned with a luxuriant "pomp of hair," and fair and noble face, made up in him the type of imperial manhood. The doors of the most delightful society were open to him. But he selected from a secluded nook a modest flower, gave her his heart and united with her in exploring the beauties of art and letters, and in building up a home of great simplicity and love. Hawthorne knew many ideal homes in his day, but none more beautiful than his own, which was always in accord with the delicacy of his taste and feeling, and on entering which he was obliged to leave no unworthy qualities, no discordant habits behind. No act of his life and no association had unfitted him for such companionship as he found there. He embodied in all his relations with life the finest of those characteristics which have made his native place the home of strong and versatile powers, and of faculties which have produced a deep impression upon the world.

Julian Hawthorne, a son of Nathaniel and Sophia Peabody Hawthorne, was born in Boston in 1846, but passed much of his childhood in Salem while his father was surveyor of that port. He has devoted himself entirely to literature, and has displayed most remarkable faculties in the creation of fiction and the delineation of romance. It is easy to trace the resemblance between his own mind and that of his father, and easy also to distinguish the difference. At an early age he has secured a foremost place among the authors of the country, and has added much to the literary wealth of his times. To powers like his the future is full of bright promise.

The Rev. Thomas W. Coit, who was connected with Saint Peter's Church until 1826, was born in 1803; was graduated at Yale in 1821 was ordained, July 16, 1826, resigned March 23, 1829. He was a scholar of good capacity and attainments, was professor of Trinity College, and president of Transylvania University. He published "The Theological Common-Place Book" in 1832; "Remarks on Norton's Statement of Reasons," 1833; "The Bible" in paragraphs and parallelisms, 1834; "Townsend's Chronological Bible," 1837; "Puritanism, or a Churchman's Defense against its Aspersions," 1844.

Elizabeth Palmer Peabody has devoted a long life to a most valuable literary labor. She was born in 1804, and spent her early years in Salem with her sisters, who became the wives of Nathaniel Hawthorne and Horace Mann. She commenced her literary work early in life, publishing "Records of a School," "Spiritual Culture," "Dick Harbinger, the Pioneer," "The Present," "Introduction to Grammar," "First Steps to History," 1833; "Key to the History of the Hebrews," 1833; "Key to Grecian History," 1833; "Chronological History of the United States," 1856; "Memorial of Dr. William Wesselhoeft," 1859; "Translation of De Gerando's Moral Self-Education," 1859; "Bem's System of Chronology," 1852; "The Æsthetic Papers," 1849; "Essay on Language," 1857; and many papers in the *Christian Examiner* and *Journal of Education*. She has engaged most zealously in many reforms and has always combined great humanity and kindness with careful scholarship. She was an early disciple of Dr. Channing, and she cultivated most intimate relations with Washington Allston, Emerson and the leaders of what is now known as the Concord School of Philosophy. Her last publication, "An Evening with Allston, and Other Essays," is a most graceful and profound production. She is now eighty-three years of age and retains all her vigor of thought and power of expression. Her sister, Mrs. Hawthorne, has published a charming volume of letters, and her sister, Mrs. Mann, has written an admirable "Life of Hon. Horace Mann," and has published a valuable edition of his works.

The talent and accomplishments of these three women deserve a more elaborate notice than can be given here. They were daughters of Dr. Nathaniel and Elizabeth (Palmer) Peabody, who resided a long time in Salem and elsewhere in Essex County. Mrs. Peabody was the daughter of General Joseph Pearce Palmer, a patriotic officer in the Revolutionary army, and was one of a remarkable family. Her sister Catherine was the mother of George P. Putnam, the distinguished publisher and liberal patron of letters. Her sister Mary married Royall Tyler, chief justice of Vermont, poet and essayist, and was the mother of learned clergymen and college professors; and her sister Sophia married Dr. Thomas Pickman, of Salem, an able and beloved physician of the town. The daughters of Dr. Peabody inherited the talent of their mother's family, and they have made many contributions to the literature and art of the country. Their associates and companions were among the most learned men and women of their time, by whom they were held in great affection. The last survivor, Elizabeth Palmer Peabody, even in her old age, occupies her mind with all objects of philanthropy and charity, and enjoys the profound respect and esteem of all who know her, and of all who remember her constant labors in the cause of good learning and education.

One of the most diligent and studious of Salem authors was Jonathan Cogswell Perkins, lawyer and jurist, and so learned and accurate an annotator of the numerous law books he published that he has been placed by the best authorities "by the side of Story and Metcalf." He was born in Chebacco Parish, Ipswich (now Essex), in 1809, was graduated at Amherst in 1832, studied law with Rufus Choate and at the Cambridge Law School, and was admitted to the bar in 1835. In 1848 he was appointed judge of the Court of Common Pleas of Massachusetts, "and proved himself to be a learned and able, as well as a just and upright judge." He published nine volumes of the second edition of "Pickering's Massachusetts Reports," 1835–41; "Chitty's Criminal Law," 1847; "Chitty on Contracts, with

Valuable Annotations," seven editions from 1839 to 1859; "Jarman on Wills," 1849; "Abbot on Shipping," 1854; "Daniell's Chancery Practice," 1851; "Collyer on Partnership," 1850; "Chitty on Bills and Notes," 1854; "Arnould on Insurance," 1859; "Sugden's Law of Vendors and Purchasers of Real Estate," 1851; "Angell on Water-Courses," 1869; "United States Digest," 1840; "Chitty on Pleadings in Civil Actions," six editions from 1844 to 1866; "Brown's Chancery Reports," 1844; "Vesey, Jr., Chancery Reports," 1844–45. After a busy and laborious life, of great value to the profession of law, Judge Perkins died Dec. 12, 1877.

Benjamin Peirce (Professor) was born in 1809 and graduated at Harvard 1829. He was Hollis professor of mathematics in 1832, and Perkins professor of astronomy and mathematics from 1842 to 1867, having been previously tutor in mathematics. In 1867 he was appointed superintendent of the United States Coast Survey. Professor Peirce was truly a mathematical genius. He comprehended a problem with great rapidity and clearness, and he stated it, with his conclusion, with a conciseness never surpassed by mathematicians of any era. No proposition was too small to receive his attention and none too large to be mastered by his powerful mind. His publications were numerous, and they stand in the front rank of mathematical works. He published "Elementary Treatise on Plane Trigonometry," 1835; "Elementary Treatise on Spherical Trigonometry," 1836; "Elementary Treatise on Sound," 1836; "Elementary Treatise on Plane and Solid Geometry," 1857; "Elementary Treatise on Algebra," 1837; "Elementary Treatise on Curves, Functions and Forces," 1841; "Tables of the Moon, arranged in a form under the superintendence of Charles Henry Davis, lieutenant U. S. N.," 1853; "Physical and Celestial Mechanics, Developed in Four Systems of Analytic Mechanics, Celestial Mechanics, Potential Physics and Analytic Morphology," 1855; besides many articles on "Meteors," "Latitudes," "Perturbations of Uranus and Neptune," "Comets," "Saturn's Ring," "Tails of Comets," "Moon Culminations," "Celestial Mechanics and Meteors." His diligence was great, as was also his power of application, and his amiability and patience enabled him to pursue his work continuously amidst the interruptions incident to his duties as teacher and professor. His position among the scientists of his day was among the foremost, and it is related of him that he secured by letter, for a fellow-student and observer, to M. De Lesseps, the plans and measurements of the Suez Canal, which had been repeatedly refused to those who applied as statesmen and diplomatists. He died in 1880.

A brother of Professor Peirce, Charles Henry, born in Salem in 1814, and a graduate of Harvard in 1833, was for many years examiner of drugs and medicines for the port of Boston, and published "Translation of Stockhardt's Principles of Chemistry," 1850, a work which was highly commended; and "Examinations of Drugs and Medicines," 1852. Dr. Peirce died in 1855.

Charles T. Brooks, who was a contemporary of Professor Peirce, possessed a mind of an entirely different order. He was born in 1813, was graduated at Harvard in 1832, and was ordained pastor of the Unitarian Church, Newport, R. I., in 1837. He had a quick imagination, a graceful fancy and a deep love of poetry. His sermons were characterized by great piety and strong faith, as well as by a progressive liberality. It was chiefly as a poet, however, that he distinguished himself and took his place among the scholars and authors of the country. He published "Schiller's William Tell," translation 1838; translation of "Mary Stuart," and the "Maid of Orleans," 1839; "Titan," from Jean Paul Richter, 1840; "Specimens of German Songs," 1842; translation of Schiller's "Homage of the Arts," 1847; "Poems," 1848; the controversy touching the "Old Stone Mill at Newport," 1851; "German Lyrics," 1856; "Songs of Field and Flood," 1854.

Mr. Brooks was distinguished not only for his ability as a scholar and poet, but for the sweetness of his disposition and the purity of his life. His presence in the pulpit was a benediction, and he bore the trials which fell upon him with a calm and patient submission which won the admiration of all who knew him.

The essays and poems of Jones Very were published in 1839. He was born in 1813, as was Mr. Brooks, just preceding, and was graduated at Harvard in 1836, four years later. His progress towards distinction was not rapid, but it was sure and constant. His rank in college was good, his ability was recognized and he was appointed Greek tutor in the university soon after his graduation. The first issue of his poems and essays attracted universal attention. They were characterized by great religious fervor, a fine imagination, great delicacy of thought and a pure, simple and effective style. His sonnets were especially charming. He was intimate with the beauties of nature and drew many a lesson from the flowers by the wayside and the fair landscape which lay around his home. His soul was, at the same time, full of aspiration, and he saw the hand of the Creator in all the natural objects about him. On every subject which came under his notice he turned a "dim religious light," and you rose from his essays with the feeling that you had been led to the contemplation of his themes by the prophet of the Lord. It was said of him, by one of the ablest of his critics, that "he always piped the sweet, sad notes of religious melancholy," but he also taught the most unbounded faith and the most confident reliance on that divine power to which he turned for inspiration, and on which he leaned throughout his sincere and thoughtful and pious life. He was one of the most sympathetic of men, and one of the most inspired.

Robert Rantoul, Jr., one of the most eloquent and brilliant of all the sons of Essex County, hardly identified himself with Salem, except as a law-student in the offices of John Pickering and Leverett Saltonstall, and a lawyer from 1829 to 1831. At this time, however, he took so active a part in the mental activity of the town, that he has given an opportunity for enrolling his name in this list of cultivated and intellectual men. Mr. Rantoul was born in Beverly, 1805; was graduated at Harvard, 1826; was admitted to the bar, 1829; and died in 1852. During this comparatively short period he devoted himself largely to public service and won great distinction as a lawyer, legislator and orator, with powers which, had they been exercised in more purely literary work, would have won for him greater distinction still. His commanding presence in the Massachusetts Legislature is well remembered. His bold and gallant stand in Congress is recalled with admiration by his contemporaries who remain. He was a fearless advocate of the principles in which he believed, and he was the most inspiring popular orator of his day in Massachusetts. He was formidable as an adversary and all-powerful as an ally; a generous and kindly opponent and a tender and devoted friend. His early argument in behalf of popular education, and his unanswerable attack on the Ten Million Bank Bill, which he defeated in the Massachusetts Legislature; his report against capital punishment; his oration at Concord, in 1850; his reply to attacks made on him in Congress, in 1852; his speech to his devoted constituents in Salem, July 5, 1852; his arguments as United States district attorney, from 1845 to 1849—all indicate great mental grasp, extraordinary keenness of perception and masterly skill in arrangement. When he died a great career was suddenly and prematurely closed. And in the great struggle which followed, in the opening of which he took a conspicuous and important part, and which ended only with the Civil War, his friends, his State and his country, when disheartened by adversity, were encouraged by the thought that the spirit of Rantoul was with them, and mourned that his voice could be no longer heard. His recorded words gave great inspiration to those on whom the burthen of the contest fell when he was gone; and his name is warmly cherished by the few now living who knew him, and by the many who have learned from their fathers to admire his courage, his genius and his gentle and affectionate spirit.

On the organization of the Barton Square Unitarian Church, in 1824, the Rev. Henry Colman was installed as pastor, February 16, 1825. Mr. Colman was born 1785, and died 1849. He continued his connection with the church seven years, and then withdrew to a broader and more active sphere of duty. He became one of the most useful and interesting of agricultural writers. He published "Reports of the Agriculture of Massachusetts," 1849; "European Agriculture and Rural Economy," 1851; "Agriculture and Rural Economy of France, Belgium, Holland and Switzerland," 1848; and "European Life and Manners," 1849. He spent many years in England, investigating agriculture and society, and he was the first to describe the domestic economy of that country, into whose well-organized homes he was most cordially admitted. His style was graceful and graphic, and his intercourse was genial and highly attractive.

In 1842 Richard J. Cleveland published a narrative of "Voyages and Commercial Enterprises," which was most favorably noticed by the leading reviews of the day. His son, Henry Russell Cleveland, born in 1808, graduated at Harvard in 1827, died in 1848, and published "Remarks on Classical Education of Boys by a Teacher," 1834; "Life of Henry Hudson," 1838; "Address Delivered Before the Harvard Medical Association," 1840; "A Letter to the Hon. Daniel Webster on the Causes of the Destruction of the Steamer 'Lexington,'" 1840; besides many papers to the *North American Review* and the *New England Magazine*. Mr. Cleveland was a sound scholar and a graceful and forcible writer. His early death was deeply deplored.

One of the most brilliant and fascinating of American writers and historians was William Hickling Prescott, who was born in Salem, 1796, and died in Boston in 1859. He was a son of Judge William Prescott, who resided in Salem from 1789 to 1808, and who was intimately connected with the most important business enterprises of that day, and whose name appears on many of the important documents. Mr. Prescott was graduated at Harvard in 1814, and having been disabled by a painful accident from entering upon a professional life, he commenced at once, under great obstacles a literary career which he pursued with great diligence and success until the close of his life. He published, in 1837, "The History of Ferdinand and Isabella," and stepped at once into the list of the great historians of the world. It was universally known that this fascinating and elaborate work had been accomplished under difficulties which would have discouraged the most enthusiastic and devoted student, and the entire world of scholars was filled with admiration of the accomplishment and the tenderest sympathy with the heroic author. The history was translated into German, French, Spanish, Italian and Russian, and was enrolled at once among the classic productions of the world. But Mr. Prescott did not relinquish his work here. Dependent upon a reader for his data, and employing an apparatus constructed in a writing case for the blind, he "pursued his solitary way." His mind acquired great strength as he went on with his work, and he retained and arranged the materials he had accumulated with marvelous facility. In 1843 he published the "History of the Conquest of Mexico, with a Preliminary View of the Ancient Civilization," and a "Life of the Conqueror, Fernando Cortez;" and

the world of scholars was once more filled with admiration of his "pure, simple and eloquent style, keen relish for the picturesque, quick and discerning judgment of character, calm, generous and enlightened spirit of philanthropy." In 1847 this was followed by the "History of the Conquest of Peru, with a Preliminary View of the Civilization of the Incas," a work which was as enthusiastically received as its predecessors. His style was again admired; his candor and fidelity and power of description were warmly commended by authors and readers alike. The "History of the Reign of Philip the Second, King of Spain," appeared in 1855. The materials for this work, the preparation of which occupied six industrious years, were gathered without regard to trouble, labor and expense, and the work itself opened one of the most thrilling and important chapters in the history of the greatest and most stormy periods of Continental Europe. The brilliancy of the volumes drew from the historian Macaulay, then in the height of his power, the warmest praise. "The genius of Mr. Prescott," said he, "as a historian, has never been exhibited to better advantage than in this very remarkable volume, which is grounded on ample and varied authority." In 1857 he published "The Life of Charles the Fifth after his Abdication," Modestly insisting that Robertson had most faithfully recorded the policy and events of this great monarch's reign, he devoted himself to the unrecorded years of his life of retirement, and supplemented the brilliant pages of Robertson with a touching narrative of the close of the great life to whose career they had devoted their fine historical powers. In addition to these important works, Prescott published biographical and critical miscellanies containing reviews and essays of great interest,—"Charles Brockden Brown, the American Novelist;" "Asylum for the Blind;" "Irving's Conquest of Grenada;" "Cervantes;" "Chateaubriand's English Literature;" "Bancroft's United States;" "Madame Calderon's Life in Mexico;" "Molière;" "Italian Narrative Poetry;" "Poetry and Romance of the Italians;" "Scotch Song;" "Du Ponte's Observations;" "Ticknor's History of Spanish Literature."

Mr. Prescott was sixty years old when his last volume was published. For more than a quarter of a century he had pursued his great career. In many respects he was the greatest of American historians. Scholars recognized him as one of the most brilliant of their number, when that number in this community was not small. The American people remembered with pride that the blood of the brave commander of the patriot forces at Bunker Hill was flowing in his veins. A Christian community loved him for the beauty of his character, and for the high moral standard which he had followed through life. His biography was written by all the biographers; his works were reviewed by all the reviewers; his character as a scholar was discussed with admiration by Edward Everett, and George E. Ellis, and Francis Lieber, and Theodore Parker, and A. P. Peabody, and by all the historical societies of the world. No American writer has won higher renown, no American citizen has received more profound respect and warmer love.

Alpheus Crosby, who took charge of the Normal School in Salem Oct., 1857, was born in 1810, and died in Salem April 17, 1874. He was graduated at Dartmouth in 1827, and was appointed professor of Greek and Latin languages in that college. He was a diligent and careful scholar, and published "A Greek and General Grammar," "Greek Tables," "Greek Lessons," "An Edition of Xenophon's Anabasis," "First Lessons in Geometry," "A Letter of John Foster, with Additions," "An Essay on the Second Advent." Professor Crosby was for many years principal of the Normal School in Salem, and after retiring from that position passed the remainder of his life in this city.

Edwin P. Whipple, who was born in Gloucester in 1819, was for a long time employed as clerk in a bank in Salem, and for a time was the librarian of the Salem Athenæum, where he acquired those literary tastes which he afterwards exercised with so much activity and usefulness. He began to write for magazines early in life, and soon acquired a good reputation as a facile and graceful essayist. He was an interesting popular lecturer, selecting his themes with great skill and treating them with great wit and discrimination He published "Essays and Reviews," 1848; "Lectures on Subjects connected with Literature and Life;" "Washington and the Principles of the Revolution;" "An Oration before the City Authorities of Boston, July 4, 1850;" "Character and Characteristic Men," 1867, in which he discussed Character, Eccentric Character, Intellectual Character, Heroic Character, the American Mind, the English Mind, Thackeray, Hawthorne, Edward Everett, Thomas Starr King and Agassiz. He was considered "one of the ablest of American critics." His lectures were esteemed as miniature histories, and were highly valued. He was accepted by Prescott, and Griswold, and Bowen, and Thomas. He was not accepted by Edgar A. Poe.

George B. Loring was born in North Andover, (at that time included in Andover) November 8, 1817. He entered Harvard College in 1834, and entered the Harvard Medical School, where he was graduated in 1842. He was in practice from 1842 to 1850; surgeon of the United States Marine Hospital, Chelsea, 1843 to 1850; commissioner to revise the United States Marine Hospital system, 1849; member of the Massachusetts Legislature, 1866 to 1868; president of the New England Agricultural Society from its foundation, 1864, to the present time; United States Centennial Commissioner, 1872 to 1876; president of the Massachusetts Senate, 1873 to 1877; member of the United States House of Representatives, 1877 to 1881; United States Commissioner of Agriculture, 1881 to

1885. In the midst of his public career he has been active as a writer on many and diverse topics, and a speaker on many and various occasions. He has published "An Essay on Phlebitis," *New England Journal of Surgery and Medicine*, 1843; "An Oration on Constitutional Freedom, the Corner-Stone of the Republic," 1856; "Review of the Scarlet Letter," 1851; "Reply to the *Church Review* on the Scarlet Letter," 1851; "Letters from Europe in the Boston *Post*," 1848–49; "Modern Agriculture," 1858; "The Farmer's Occupation," 1858; "Agricultural Education," 1858; "Farm Stock, Massachusetts Report on Agriculture," 1859; "The Relation of Agriculture to the State in Time of War," 1862; "Scientific and Practical Agriculture," 1864; "The Assassination of Lincoln," 1865; "The Unity and Power of the Republic," a Fourth of July oration, Newburyport, 1865; "The State of the Union, a Speech in the Massachusetts House of Representatives," 1866; "The New Era of the Republic," 1866; "Dedication of the Soldiers' Tablets at Bolton," 1866; "Classical Culture," 1867; "The Power of an Educated Commonwealth," 1867; "Agricultural Investigation," 1867; "Oration on the Dedication of Soldiers' Monuments at Weymouth," 1868; "Semi-Centennial of the Essex Agricultural Society," 1868; "The Development of American Industry," 1869; "The Connection of the State Board of Agriculture with the Agricultural College," 1869; "The Struggles of Science, Address before the American Institute," 1870; "Oration Dedicating the Memorial Hall, Lexington," 1871; "Speech at the Dedication of the Morse Statue, New York," 1871; "Oration at the Bi-Centennial Celebration at Dunstable, Mass.," 1873; "Speech in the Massachusetts Senate in behalf of the Museum of Comparative Zoology," 1873; "Eulogy of Agassiz," 1873; "The People and Their Books," an address dedicating the Thayer Library at Braintree, 1873; "Oration at the Centennial Celebration at Sherburne," 1874; "Oration at Centennial Celebration of Swansea," 1875; "Address on Tree-planting before the Fern Cliff Association," Lee, Mass., 1875; "A Speech in the Massachusetts Senate in Favor of Rescinding the Resolves Condemning Charles Sumner," 1874; "A Speech in the Massachusetts Senate on the Railroad Policy of Massachusetts," 1874; "Speech on Suffrage as a Right under a Republic," Massachusetts Senate, 1874; "An Oration at the Centennial of Leslie's Retreat from Salem," 1875; "Oration at the North Church, Boston, on the Centennial Anniversary of hanging out the Signal Lanterns to warn Paul Revere of the Advance of the British Troops to Concord," April 18, 1875; "Oration at Bloody Brook," 1875; "Oration Dedicating the Mugford Monument at Marblehead," 1875; "Sketch of the Massachusetts Surgeons in the Revolutionary Army," 1875; "The Farm-Yard Club of Gotham," an account of New England families and farming (pp. 600), 1876; "Eulogy of Dr. S. G. Howe," Massachusetts Senate, Jan. 21, 1876; "Oration on Speculative Masonry," 1876; "Speech before the New England Society," New York, Dec. 10, 1875; "Speech in the United States House of Representatives on Specie Payments," 1877; "Speech on the College of William and Mary in Congress," 1878; "Speech on American Industry and the Tariff, in Congress," 1878; "Defence of Massachusetts in Congress," 1880; "The American Problem of Land-holding," 1880; "Eulogy of Caleb Cushing," 1879; "Address on the Cobden Club and the American Farmer," 1880; "Education, the Corner-stone of the Republic," speech in Congress, 1880; "Eulogy of Judge Collamer," in Congress, 1880; "Eulogy of Garfield, Lodge of Sorrow, Washington," 1880; "Speech on the Anniversary of John Winthrop's Landing in Salem," June 22, 1880; "Washington as a Statesman," 1882; "Opening Address at Mechanics' and Manufacturers' Institute, Boston," 1881; "Address at the Cotton Convention, Atlanta, Ga.," 1881; "Address at the Tariff Convention, New York," 1881; "Address before the Mississippi Valley Cane-Growers' Association," 1882; "Address before the American Forestry Association, St. Paul, Minn.," 1883; "Oration at the Ninety-fifth Anniversary of the Settlement of Marietta, Ohio," 1883; "The Cattle Industry," 1884; "The Influence of the Puritan on American Civilization," 1885; "Puritanism, the Foundation of Liberal Christianity," 1887; "New England Agriculture," 1887. Dr. Loring has also contributed to the *Southern Literary Messenger*, the *Massachusetts Quarterly* and the *North American Review*, and has delivered a great number of occasional speeches in addition to those enumerated, besides many political addresses in State and national campaigns.

Edward Augustus Crowninshield, son of Hon. B. W. and Mary (Boardman) Crowninshield, born in Salem, 1817, was graduated at Harvard, 1836, and died, 1859. His literary taste led him to the collection of rare books; his valuable library contained the "Bay Psalm Book," 1640; Morton's "Memorial;" Winslow's "Hypocrisy Unmasked," 1645; Coryat's "Crudities," 1611.

Nathaniel Ingersoll Bowditch, a son of the great mathematician, who was graduated at Harvard in 1822, published a "Memoir of N. Bowditch," 1839; "History of the Massachusetts General Hospital," 1851; and "Suffolk Surnames," 1855. Dr. Henry I. Bowditch, another son, who was graduated in 1828, has published translations of valuable treatises on medicine.

William W. Story, the son of Judge Story and author of his biography, was born in Salem in 1819, and was graduated at Harvard in 1838. He took the degree of LL.B. at the Dane Law-School, and was admitted to the bar in 1841. He published "Report of Cases Argued and Determined in the Circuit Court of the United States for the First District," 1842–47; "Nature and Art, a Poem," 1844; "Treatise on the

Law of Contracts under Seal," 1844; "Treatise on the Law of Sales of Personal Property," 1847; "Poem delivered at the Dedication of Crawford's Statue of Beethoven, at the Boston Music Hall," 1856; "The American Question," 1862; "Roba di Roma," 1862; "Proportions of the human figure according to a new Canon for practical use," 1866; "Grafiti d' Italia," 1869; "The Poet's Portfolio," 1855; besides poems and articles in the *Atlantic Monthly*, the *Boston Miscellany* and *Blackwood's Magazine*. As an artist, Mr. Story has taken a front rank. For this he had an early love. The admirable bust of his father was one of his first works, and there is in existence a crayon portrait of one of his classmates, taken a short time after they left college, which, as a likeness and as a drawing, is admirable. In sculpture he has produced busts of his father, J. R. Lowell, Josiah Quincy, Theodore Parker, Edward Everett, and statues of Everett, Chief Justice Marshall and Professor Henry. He has also created in marble the Shepherd Boy, Little Red Riding Hood, the Libyan Sibyl, Cleopatra, Judith, Holofernes, Sappho, Saul, Medea and others of great beauty and power. His genius as author and artist are everywhere acknowledged, and he has shed great lustre on his country.

Among the cultivated men of Salem, William C. Endicott has accomplished, as lawyer, writer, jurist and statesman, a work of which his native city will always be proud. He was born in Salem in 1826, and was graduated at Harvard in 1847. Having taken his degree at Cambridge, he was admitted to the bar in Essex County, and commenced the practice of his profession in Salem. His judgment as a lawyer was soon recognized, and he became one of the leaders of the bar and one of the best of office advisers. The grace and finish of his style have always been recognized in his public performances, among the most interesting and elaborate of which are his orations on the two hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the landing of John Endicott, celebrated in Salem in 1878; his address before the Young Men's Union on Patriotism, as bearing on the duties of the citizen; address on John Hampton and his relation to the great Puritan movement here and in England; lecture on Chivalry; agricultural address at Sterling on the relation of agriculture to the stability and permanence of the State; speech on the death of N. J. Lord. Mr. Endicott's services on the Supreme bench of Massachusetts are highly esteemed, and his conduct of affairs as Secretary of War, to which he was appointed in 1885, will place him on the list of sound and judicious Cabinet ministers.

The Essex bar has furnished many names which have added to the intellectual reputation of Salem, and foremost among these stands that of Rufus Choate. Mr. Choate was born in 1799, and was graduated at Dartmouth in 1819, and died in 1859. Entering at once upon the study and practice of his profession, first in Danvers and then in Salem from 1828 to 1834, he secured and retained during his life a most brilliant reputation as an advocate. He commenced the study of law with Wm. Wirt, in whose office he remained one year, and completed his studies with Judge David Cummins, of Salem. He was admitted in September, 1813, to the Common Pleas bar and in 1825 to the Supreme Court bar. His skill and eloquence in the courts were acknowledged to be unrivaled. In addition to this, he charmed his hearers with addresses and orations of great originality and beauty, and his readers with glowing admiration of the peculiar grace and power of his style. Whatever he touched he adorned, whether it was the record of the Puritan at Massachusetts Bay, or the Pilgrim at Plymouth, or the oratory of the ancients, or the romances of the moderns. He found rest and repose in his library after the labors of the day, and some of his most touching eloquence was bestowed upon the solacing power of books. He was elected to the Massachusetts Legislature in 1825, to the Massachusetts Senate in 1827, to Congress in 1832, to the United States Senate in 1841, to the Massachusetts Constitutional Convention in 1852. Those who have heard his startling oratory will understand how impossible it is to describe the power of his speech, and will sympathize with the exclamation of Henry Clay, at the close of one of Mr. Choate's superb speeches in the United States Senate, "What will Massachusetts send here next?" The two volumes of his biography by Professor Brown contain all that remains of his many speeches, orations and arguments as member of Congress from the Essex District, as United States Senator from Massachusetts, as occasional orator and as lawyer at the bar. It is unnecessary to enumerate them here. His words still linger with those who knew him—his wit, his wisdom, his learning, his inimitable repartee. And, more than all, his lovable and affectionate spirit remains with those who loved him and were tenderly regarded by him.

Nor should the strength of his associates here at the bar be overlooked,—the sound learning and honest purpose and judicial integrity of Samuel Putnam; the polished scholarship of John G. King; the profound legal knowledge of N. J. Lord; the wit and humor of Benjamin Merrill; the quaint solemnity of Judge David Cummins; the sturdy power of Otis P. Lord; the delicious geniality, and courtly bearing, and persuasive tongue, and Christian spirit of Leverett Saltonstall, the senior—all fond of sound learning, all unrecorded authors, all pillars of the literature of Salem. The treatise of David Roberts on "Admiralty," published in 1859; the admirable address of Asahel Huntington before the Essex Agricultural Society, and his speeches in behalf of the temperance reform in the court-room and before public audiences; the volume of earnest and eloquent speeches published by Wm. D. Northend, with his elaborate papers on the Essex Bar and the Puritans

on the administration of President Peirce, and on the decision of the Maine judges upon the election returns of 1882, and his excellent address before the Essex Agricultural Society; the "Notes of Travel, or Recollections of Zanzibar, Mocha," etc., 1854, by J. B. F. Osgood; the conclusive opinions of Judge L. F. Brigham; and the valuable publication on "Trusts," by Jairus W. Perry—all belong to the literary record of the city, and bear witness to the culture and attainments of this portion of the Essex bar.

Joseph Hodges Choate, born in Salem in 1832, was graduated at Harvard in 1852, settled as a lawyer in New York, and has risen to the front rank as a counselor and advocate. His eloquence, and wit, and wisdom as a public speaker have given him great distinction among scholars and great influence with the people.

To the works of the physicians, already referred to should be added the "Remarks on Fractures," and the "Memoir of Dr. Holyoke," furnished by Dr. A. L. Peirson, the learned physician, the skillful surgeon, the devoted student who strengthened the bond between the profession here and all the great centres of the country; and also the translations of Dr. Charles G. Putnam, a son of Judge Samuel Putnam, of most honorable memory, the sanitary writings of Dr. George Derby, a son of John Derby, who established the Board of Health in Massachusetts, of which he was a valuable member, after having rendered most valuable and efficient service in the Union army during the Civil War.

And the clergymen of the town also, from the early days until now—what have they not done to add to the literary reputation of the community? The sermons of John Emery Abbott, who died in 1819, the beloved pastor of the North Church, the most blessed consoler and adviser of his flock; the profound meditations of the Rev. T. T. Stone, published in 1854; the well-balanced views of the Rev. J. W. Thompson; the sweet inspirations and wise counsels of the Rev. Charles Lowe; the delightful historical review of the North Church, and the long series of thoughtful and pious sermons of the Rev. E. B. Willson; the brilliant and searching speculations of the Rev. O. B. Frothingham; the "Bow in the Cloud," pointed out for every mourner by the Rev. George W. Briggs; the sound utterances of the Rev. Brown Emerson; the excellent work of the Rev. E. S. Atwood as a pulpit orator, and faithful biographer of John Bertram; the active and vigorous labor of the Rev. E. C. Bolles, brilliant in the pulpit, charming in the lecture-room, invigorating as a companion; and the history of the First Baptist Church, by the Rev. R. C. Mills—all these are a portion of the treasure which the pulpit of Salem has poured into its literary storehouse. To this list belongs the name of the Rev. Samuel Johnson, who was born in Salem in 1822, the son of Dr. Samuel Johnson, was graduated at Harvard in 1842, and having completed his studies at the Divinity School at Cambridge, commenced his work as pastor and preacher. Possessed of a most powerful mind and a fine moral sense, he set his standard high and endeavored faithfully to reach it. In his religious belief he coincided with Theodore Parker, whom he resembled in the fervor of thought and expression, the severity of his logic and the purity of his character. His sermons, delivered with a most impressive voice and manner, were carefully-prepared essays on all public questions of religion, morality and politics. His contributions to the literature of the country as an author of essays, and especially of "Oriental Religions," were rich and valuable. And he was counted among the intellectual luminaries which flash across the heavens in independent paths, and when gone leave the observer bewildered with wonder and admiration.

The Rev. James M. Hoppin has published "The Notes of a Theological Student" and "The Temptations of American Young Men," and has also delivered an address, dedicating Plummer Hall, in 1857; and published "European Travels." He was born in Providence, R. I., in 1813; was settled over Crombie Street Church in 1850; was professor of homiletics and pastoral theology in Brown University, and is now professor of the history of arts.

The Rev. Henry W. Foote, the pastor of King's Chapel, Boston, a son of the venerable editor of the Salem *Gazette*, has published a history of King's Chapel and many occasional sermons—eulogies of distinguished members of his parish; the Rev. George L. Chaney, also a native of Salem, now at Atlanta, has published an interesting and valuable series of books for boys; the Rev. George B. Jewett, at one time professor at Amherst and afterwards minister at Nashua, N. H., spent the closing years of his life in Salem, engaged in work on a "Dictionary of the Greek Testament; and the Rev. J. Henry Thayer, pastor of Crombie Street Church in 1859, lecturing at Cambridge on "Biblical Theology."

Around the literary institutions of the town, moreover, has always gathered a studious and inquiring body of investigators and writers. The Essex Institute—who can measure the amount of scientific and historical research it has inspired in Essex County? For its guide and leader and organizer too much praise cannot be recorded. For much more than half a century Dr. Henry Wheatland has devoted all his time and powers to this valuable institution. From a small society organized for historical research in the county, he has raised it into the highest position, and placed it with the strongest and most useful in the land. As he went on in his work with a patience and diligence unexampled, all the best forces contributed to his support and that of his organization. The wealthy contributed of their store, the scientist gave the results of his investigations, the learned gathered to its councils, a body of students has been graduated from its halls who have adorned the higher semina-

ries of learning—F. W. Putnam, the devoted student and recognized authority in zoölogy, and the early explorer of the Mammoth Cave, and more recently the Indian Mounds in Ohio, particularly those in the valley of the Little Miami; John Robinson, whose treatises on Trees and Ferns are now accepted by the United States Geological Survey as the best of the kind in the country; John H. Sears, the accomplished and independent botanist and geologist; E. S. Moore, who has opened up the domestic art of Japan and delineates animal development, and advocates evolution with inspiring zeal and great artistic skill; Alpheus S. Packard, author of "Observations on the Glacial Phenomena of Labrador and Maine, with a View of the Recent Invertebrate Fauna of Labrador," 1867; a guide to the study of insects, and a treatise on those injurious and beneficial to crops, 1869; and reports as United States commissioner to consider and report upon the Rocky Mountain locust; and Alpheus Hyatt, a most devoted student and teacher of natural history. The work which Dr. Wheatland has accomplished will endure as long as the recorded history of Essex County, the remains of its architecture, the specimens of its domestic economy, the interest in its geological structure, the beauties of its flora and fauna, shall find a place in the admirable institution he has founded and developed, and as long as Essex County shall remain in reality or history.

One of the most diligent and active literary friends of the Institute is Robert S. Rantoul. He is a son of Robert Rantoul, Jr., was graduated at Harvard in 1853, and at the Law School, in Cambridge, in 1856. His contributions to the publications of Salem, where he has resided since his admission to the bar, have been numerous and important. He has published "Notes on Wenham Pond," 1864; "The Cod in Massachusetts History," 1856; "Address on taking the Chair of the Essex Liberal Conference," 1869; "Port of Salem," 1870; "Argument before the Finance Committee of the Massachusetts Legislature upon the Preservation of Salem Harbor," 1870; "Decoration day Address before the Chipman Post G. A. R., Beverly," 1871; "Notes on odd works of Travel," 1872; "Report as arbitrator between the Commonwealth and the Massachusetts Historical Society in the matter of the Hutchinson papers," 1874; "Centennial Oration at the Celebration at Stuttgart, Wurtemburg," July 4, 1876; "Memorial address on the death of Freiligrath, Stuttgart," 1877; "Address on resuming the chair of the Liberal Conference," 1880; "Oration at the Two Hundred and fiftieth Anniversary of the Landing of Winthrop," 1880; "Sketch of Cat (now Lowell Island)," 1880; "Memoir of Benjamin Peirce," 1881; "Early Quarantine Regulations at Salem," 1882; "Memoir of James Kimball," 1882; "Note on the Authenticity of the portraits of Governor Endicott," 1883; "Sketch of James O. Safford," 1883; "Report to the Massachusetts Legislature against abolishing the Poll Tax as a prerequisite for suffrage," 1885; "Two Reports against the Biennial Amendments of the Constitution, 1884–85, "The Essex Junto—the long embargo; the great Topsfield Caucus," 1808, 1882. "Material for a History of the Name and Family of Rentoul—Rintoul—Rantoul," 1885; "A Contribution to the History of the Ancient Family of Woodbury," 1887; Mr. Rantoul's work has been done with great accuracy and fidelity.

This sketch would not be complete without an enumeration of the contributions which have been made by an accomplished and cultivated group of authors who have found recreation and pleasure in their work. Among these, Robert Manning published, in 1838, his valuable "Book of Fruits;" his son, Robert Manning, the secretary of Massachusetts Horticultural Society, his recent valuable history of that society. Henry K. Oliver, the accomplished teacher, the rare musical composer, the immortal author of "Federal Street," published, in 1830, "The Construction and Use of Mathematical Instruments;" Elizabeth Saunders reviewed "Ferdinand and Isabella" in 1841, and advocated with great zeal the cause of the North American Indian; Thomas Cole published "Microscopy as Applied to Ferns and Plants;" John Lewis Russell issued many valuable papers on botanical subjects; George A. Ward published "Biographical Essays," and "The Journal and Letters of Samuel Curwen" were published in 1842; J. Fisk Allen issued his "Essay on Grape Culture," and his striking monogram on the "Victoria Regia;" James F. Colman published his graceful volume of poems in 1846; W. P. Upham published his "Brief History of Stenography" in 1877; his "Memoir of General Glover," a collection of letters on the siege of Boston; his "Records of Salisbury;" E. H. Derby published "The Catholic Letters and Record of a Jurist to a Young Kinsman Proposing to join the Church of Rome," 1856; Charles Pickering prepared an elaborate "Report of Wilkes' South Sea Expedition;" John B. Derby published "The Musings of a Recluse," 1837;" Major Samuel Swett published a paper on "Who Commands at Bunker Hill," and delivered a Fourth of July oration in 1805, at the South Meeting-house; Perley Derby published his "Genealogical Researches into the Families of Thomas White, of Marblehead, and Mark Haskell, of Beverly, and of the Sons of Reginald Foster," 1872; George H. Devereaux published a "Translation of the Literary Fables of Yriarte," 1855, and "Sam Shirk, A Tale of the Woods of Maine," 1871; William Giles Dix put forth "The American State and Statesman," 1876; and "The Deck of the 'Crescent City,'" 1853; James H. Emerton issued "Life on the Seashore," and "Short Communications in the Papers of the Institute;" Joseph Warren Fabens published "Life on the Isthmus," 1853; and "The Camel Hunt," 1851; George D. Phippen has published "Botanical sketches" and

"History of the Old Planters in the Institute List;" D. B. Hagar, the accomplished teacher of the Normal School, has published from time to time that invaluable series of school books which have won for him a high reputation: Primary Lessons in Numbers, Elementary Arithmetic, Common School Arithmetic, Key to Arithmetic, Elementary Algebra, Manual of Dictation Problems. John M. Ives published, in 1847, "The New England Book of Fruits;" James Kimball published "A Journey to the West in 1817," and "Destruction of Tea in Boston Harbor;" "Exploration of Merrimac River," and "Notes on the Richardson and Russell Families;" and James P. Kimball, his son, issued his papers on "Ores and Metals Taught in the Mining Schools of Europe," which led to his selection as director of the Mint, for which service he is so admirably fitted; Stephen H. Phillips issued his paper on witchcraft; John T. Devereux published a collection of poems he had contributed to periodicals; Gilbert L. Streeter prepared for the institute "The History of Newspapers," "Clergymen of Salem in the Revolution," "Historical Notes of Salem Scenery;" James A. Emmerton "The Genealogy of New England Families from English Records;" Henry F. Waters discovered, for the admiration of scholars, the birth-place of John Harvard, and wrote upon the "Home and Genealogy of Shakspeare;" C. M. Endicott published a valuable paper on "Leslie's Retreat," and the "History of the Salem and Danvers Aqueduct;" Dr. G. A. Perkins published "The Genealogy of the Perkins Family and the Fabens Family;" James Upton an "Essay on the Ripening of Pears;" Leverett Saltonstall, the junior, "A Memoir of Oliver Carlton;" Edw. A. Silsbee "Talks on Architectural and Art Topics;" Ernest Fenollosa, one of the most brilliant scholars of Harvard, 1874, is made professor at Tokio, Japan, and is a most diligent and distinguished student of Japanese art; E. Stanley Waters "History of the Webb and Ropes Families;" Winslow Upton, professor of astronomy in Brown University, on the "Eclipse of 1878;" Wm. G. Barton published a paper on "Thoreau, Flagg and Burroughs," and a paper on "Pigeons and the Pigeon Fancy;" Rev. B. F. McDaniel a paper on the "Geology and Mineralogy of Essex County;" Oliver Thayer, "Early Recollections of Essex Street;" Charles S. Osgood and H. M. Batchelder published their most excellent, faithful and graphic sketch of Salem, 1879; the fugitive poems of William P. Andrews, together with his volume of the "Sonnets and Lyrics of Jones Very," accompanied by a most sympathetic and appreciative notice, have secured for him an enviable place in the ranks of the authors of Salem; W. L. Welch, "An Account of the Cutting Through of Hatteras Inlet, N. C.;" George M. Whipple, an interesting sketch of the "Musical Societies of Salem;" Henry M. Brooks has published "Olden Time Scenes," a most interesting collection, and A. C. Goodell, Jr., has edited with great care and accuracy "The Laws and Resolves of the Province of Massachusetts Bay," and has contributed many papers on historical matters which have attracted great attention, his services in this direction having elevated him to the presidency of the Massachusetts Historic Genealogical Society; Pickering Dodge, in 1840, "A Treatise on Modern Painters;" Thomas Sanders, in 1886, a spirited and instructive "Examination of the Agriculture of Essex County," which was published by the Essex Agricultural Society at Newburyport; and Samuel M. Caller published, in 1881, a sketch of the Southwick family, descendants of Lawrence and Cassandra Southwick.

Of the female writers, Caroline R. Derby, a daughter of E. Hersey Derby, published, under the name of D. R. Castleton, a series of tales in *Harper's Monthly* so striking and beautiful that the readers of that magazine sought for her identity, to pay her the tribute she deserved. Her fugitive poems were of a high order. She published "The Ruler's Daughter" and other poems in 1877, and a novel entitled "Salem, or a Tale of the Seventeenth Century," which was read with great interest.

"The Half Century of Salem," prepared with great care and discretion, was published by Mrs. M. A. Silsbee in 1887.

Sarah W. Lander published, in 1874–75, her fascinating stories,—"Spectacles for Young Eyes," "Boston," "Rhine," "St. Petersburg," "Zurich," "Berlin," "Rome," "New York,"—a most attractive and instructive series, and "Fairy Bells," a translation from the German.

Maria Cummins, a daughter of Judge David and Maria (Kittredge) Cummins, was born in Salem in 1830, and passed her early life in that city. She appeared as an authoress in 1854 with a novel, entitled "The Lamplighter," which was instantly received with great favor. It ran through editions amounting to seventy thousand copies in less than a year, and stands among the most popular American tales. Miss Cummins published a charming story, entitled "Mabel Vaughan," in 1857, which was declared by some critics to be far in advance of "The Lamplighter." In both these works she displayed great power of delineation and a most graceful style.

Mrs. Kate Tannatt Wood has contributed from her liberal store the series of tales which have delighted old and young,—"Six Little Rebels," "Dr. Dick," "Out and About," "Duncans on Land and Sea," "Doll Betsey," "Jack's First Contract," "Toots and his Friends," "Twice Two," "All Around a Rocking," "Hester Hepworth," "Hidden for Years," "The Minister's Scent," "That Dreadful Boy, a Novel," "Headlands, a Novel." Poems,—"Dan's Wife," "Christmas at Birch's," "Dinah's Christmas," "Papa's Valentine" and many more, and many contributions to the magazine literature of the day.

Mary L. Horton published poetical and prose compositions, 1832.

Lydia L. A. Very has issued a volume of poems of

rare merit, and, in connection with her sister, has published "The Essays and Poems of Jones Very," her brother, which is invaluable as a complete collection of the works of this remarkable writer.

Mary Orne Pickering prepared during her life a biography of her father, John Pickering, a faithful and instructive work, which was published in 1887.

Mrs. Martha Perry Lowe, wife of the Rev. Charles Lowe, pastor of the North Church, published "The Olive and the Pine" and "The Palm," and has since given to the public a most interesting biography of her devout and faithful husband.

Mary Wilder (Foote) Tileston, a sister of the Rev. Henry W. Foote, has published "Helps by the Way," "Quiet Hours" and "Sursum Corda" and many admirable selections of poetry.

Sarah Savage, a daughter of Ezekiel Savage, in 1833, contributed some well-written and fascinating stories to "Scenes and Persons, Illustrating Christian character." Among her publications were "Trial and Discipline," "James Talbot," "Alfred" and "The Backslider." She died in 1835, and left an enviable reputation as an author of taste and ability and great delicacy of fancy.

Elinor Forrester (Barstow) Condit published in 1869 "Philip English's Two Cups."

Hannah G. Creamer published "A Gift to Young Students," "Eleanor," "Delia's Doctors," &c.

Lucy W. Stickney published the "Genealogy of the Kinsman Family" and assisted her father, Matthew A. Stickney, in his "Genealogical Researches."

Mrs. M. D. Sparks, widow of Jared Sparks and daughter of Hon. Nathaniel Silsbee, published a charming volume of poems, hymns, Homes, Harvard in 1883.

Mary N. Plumer, in 1881, wrote an interesting essay on "The Dissemination of Seeds," Mrs. Chadwick, in 1853, published "Home Cookery," and Mrs. George H. Devereux, also, a book on cookery.

In preparing this sketch of the literary history of Salem great care has been taken to include all who have contributed their share to the record, those who had a temporary interest in the town, as well as those who passed their lives here, those who set forth in life here and left their homes, and those who were adopted even for a short season. When we consider the population and the commercial character of Salem, the number of writers recorded here is extraordinary, and presents a remarkable list of the literary sons and daughters, native and adopted, of the town. If in the collection there are any omissions, it must be attributed to the difficulty attending an extended research among so great a mass of materials of diverse descriptions.

CHAPTER VIII.

SALEM—(*Continued*).

MANUFACTURING INTERESTS.

BY HENRY C. GAUSS.

The manufacturing interests of the city of Salem, although occupying in their total valuation, a fourth place among those of the manufacturing centres of Essex County, are only within a few thousand dollars of being second in the valuation of their general manufactures. The census of 1880 gives Salem a total of manufactured products of $8,440,350, of which the leather manufacture contributes nearly one-half. Since the compilation of that census, the increase in the volume of the leather business, together with the increase of the shoe manufactures and that of other lines, with the establishment of at least two new industries, have augmented the volume of manufactured products in the city till it would be safe to place the total valuation at the time of writing at, at least, nine millions of dollars.

There are represented in Salem thirty-one of the more important lines of manufacturing industries, including most of the general lines of manufacture, with several specialties. As has been said, nearly one-half of the volume of manufacturing products is contributed by a single industry, one that makes Salem the most important centre of its prosecution in the country, and one that was the first to be established. This is the

Leather Manufacture.—The leather business of Salem has had a slow but steady growth, and with but few checks. Philemon Dickinson is the first recorded tanner; he flourished in 1639. The early tanneries were probably on land now bordered by the northern side of Washington Square and by Forrester Street,—the excavation for a cellar for a house built by Charles W. Whipple on the latter street, in 1886, having revealed the rotted boards of vats with an accumulation of tan-bark, the deposit going to some depth, causing an inconvenience in placing the foundation. Other excavations in the same vicinity also have disclosed traces of ground bark. The same substance, together with the horns of cattle, has been found at the foot of Liberty Street, and it is believed that a tannery was established there at an even earlier date than that of those on Forrester Street.

One, or perhaps two, tanneries sufficed the primitive demands of the early settlers for leather, and even in 1768 there were only four tanneries established in Salem. Just previous to the above date Joseph Southwick, a preacher-tanner of Danvers, introduced the first-recorded improvement in the process by putting his old horse at work grinding the bark in a

stone mill. If the old gentleman looks down now on the labors of his successors, he must be vastly interested in the evolution of his slow-going stones, with their capacity of a slab of bark in half an hour, to the whirring bark-mill of to-day that devours a carload in an equal time.

From the last part of the eighteenth century the tanneries deserted their location in the lower part of the town and began to make their habitat along the course of the then clear and stenchless North River. In 1801 there were seven tanneries situated in the valley that soon came to be called "Blubber Hollow," and the number of these gradually increased, extending up the stream and along Boston Street till, in 1850, there were eighty-three establishments, of which thirty-four were tanneries, as many currying-shops, fifteen shops which carried on both trades, and two morocco-dressers. The value of the leather tanned and curried was in the vicinity of $869,047.70, and five hundred and fifty hands were employed. The large number of establishments may be accounted for by the fact, stated by a veteran tanner, that the owner of the shop, with only four or five men, generally constituted the shop's crew.

About this time there was a great depression in the leather trade in Salem that continued several years. It eventually was removed, and the American civil war, with the wars of the Crimea, that followed the first years of its recuperation, gave it an impetus it had never before had, and its progress has never since been checked to any material degree, while its present prospects, with improved railroad facilities and improved processes of manufacture, are brighter than ever before.

There are at present in Salem fifty-four firms engaged in the manufacture of leather,—twelve tanners, fifteen curriers, twenty-one tanners and curriers, and six morocco-dressers. The census of 1880 gives fifty-two establishments with nine hundred and ten employees, $1,167,050 invested as capital, and a value of production of $4,209,004. That there has been an increase in the volume of the business since that date all the leather men agree, and, after careful consideration, it is thought that it is not too high to estimate the capital employed at $1,350,000, a volume of production of $4,750,000, and a total employment of nine hundred and fifty men.

The leather manufactories lie, for the most part, in a well-defined district, well compacted and lying on the following streets: Boston, both sides, from Essex to Goodhue; Goodhue, northern side; Grove, western side, to Harmony Grove Cemetery; Mason, eastern side, to oil works; South Mason and Franklin. There are also a number of scattered shops on the short streets leading up "Gallows Hill."

There have, of course, been great improvements in machinery in the leather trade since Parson Southwick's bark-mill, but there is still room for many inventions that will lessen the time of production of leather, and aid to supersede, to a degree, hand-labor. There has been, and, perhaps, still is, a prejudice among manufacturers in favor of hand-labor and against machine, but the late strike taught them that machines could be used, and a revolution in the business in this respect is expected by many leather men.

The Late Strike.—The late strike above referred to was the second of the great leather strikes that have been inaugurated in Salem. It had its true origin in the attempts of the Knights of Labor, to which the employees almost universally belonged, to enforce a new price-list for splitting and some other branches, together with a ten-hour-a-day time schedule. The manufacturers refused to entertain price-list or time schedule, and as a strike in some departments was imminent, posted the following circular:

"Whereas, At a meeting of the leather manufacturers of Salem and Peabody, at which over sixty members were present, the subject of dictation to us in the management of our business was referred to a committee with full power to act as in their judgment may seem best, and that we follow such course as they may advise. That committee having met, reported the following resolutions:

"That hereafter we employ only such men as will bargain individually with us and agree to take no part in any strike whatever; and all men desiring so to be employed by us may report Tuesday morning, July 13th, at the usual hour of this factory.

"That we are determined to stand by the men who do so, and also determined to run our business without any dictation.

"F. R. Tuttle,
"G. W. Varney,
"Alvan A. Evans,
"Geo. H. Poor,
"W. F. Wiley,
"Franklin Osborne.
"*Committee.*"

"July 12, 1886.

This stroke at once removed the contest from every question of wages and hours, and threw down the gage of battle directly before the order of the Knights of Labor. It took up the defiance and a generally strike was ordered. Men left their work by scores. Shops were left with hides in the lime, without a hand to save them, except the proprietor. Some shop crews worked till the stock was put out of danger, and then left. The manufacturers combined and helped those whose stock was spoiling, to save it. All, however, could not be cared for, and a loss of several hundred dollars was sustained. The manufacturers, as soon as possible, began to import non-union help from Maine and the provinces, and the new workmen, by careful supervision, were able to take the place of the skilled labor in part, and the manufacture of leather went on after a short delay.

The success of the manufacturers in partly filling the places of the strikers irritated the latter, and after a series of petty and very annoying persecutions, the enmity broke out into open riot, beginning in Peabody on August 7th, when non-union men and their boarding-houses were stoned by angry mobs. It extended to Salem on the Monday following, on the 9th, and the non-union men, their boarding-houses and some tanneries were subjected to the same treatment. The riot, however, was promptly suppressed by the police,

and a system of patrol established that prevented further outbreaks.

Finding that open riot was ineffectual, a guerrilla warfare was adopted; whenever a non-union man was found away from police protection he was assaulted. Details of strikers also followed the non-union men about, the boycott was used, and every means possible put in practice to induce the men to leave. Some men did go, but their places were soon filled, while the strikers, despite help from the Knights of Labor, grew weaker and weaker.

The culmination came on Thanksgiving Day; a mob attacked two brothers named Yeaton on Boston Street, and also stopped a horse-car and beat three non-union men who were its occupants. The long series of outrages disgusted the better class of the strikers, and, with the cessation of help from the order, the strike was declared off. This was on Sunday, November 28th. Those strikers who could find work went back, but many whose places were filled were unable to get back and much suffering was caused among the poor employes as a result.

The result of the strike to the manufacturers was that it gave them perfect freedom from the Knights of Labor dictation, and although the losses of stock were considerable, the loss was lessened by the increase in the price of leather and the stoppage of a threatened over-production. The result to the employees was disastrous,—a long term of idleness, with the vice idleness brings, brought want to many a family, and the winter of 1886–87 was one of sore distress in many cases.

Cotton Manufacture.—Next to the leather business, the manufacture of cotton cloth is the most important industry carried on in Salem. The cotton goods manufacture is vested in a single concern, the Naumkeag Steam Cotton Company, incorporated April 5, 1839. The original capital of the company was $200,000. The first mill was erected in 1847, the capital stock being increased to $700,000 meanwhile.

This first mill is four hundred by sixty feet, contains 32,768 spindles and 643 looms, with a capacity of 9400 yards of cloth a week. At the time of its completion it was regarded as the finest and best-appointed mill in the country.

The first mill being a success, twelve years later a still larger building was erected by the company, the capital being increased to $1,200,000. The second mill is four hundred and twenty-eight by sixty-four feet and contains 35,000 spindles and 700 looms.

Since the building of the second mill, three additional mills, slightly smaller, have been built, the last one, on the opposite side of Union Street from the others, being constructed in 1883, the first loom being started Jan. 12, 1884.

The Naumkeag Steam Cotton Company has now a capital of one million five hundred thousand dollars, and its plant consists of five mill buildings, with machine-shop, storage-houses, etc. The total number of spindles in the mills, is one hundred thousand, and of looms, twenty-four hundred. The power in the mills on the eastern side of Union Street is furnished by two pairs of Corliss engines of twenty thousand horse-power total, and in "Mill No. 5" by a four hundred horse-power engine. The mills are lighted by twenty-two hundred gas jets and six hundred and fifty incandescent lights, gas works and an electric light plant being situated on the premises.

The production of cotton cloth by the mills during the year 1886 was eighteen million seven hundred and fifty thousand yards, at a valuation of about one million five hundred thousand dollars, and sixteen thousand bales of cotton were consumed. There are fourteen hundred operatives employed in the mills, and the yearly pay-roll is four hundred and twenty thousand dollars.

The Naumkeag Mills have always taken a front rank in the cotton manufacture of New England for the quality of the cloth produced and their solid financial standing, the stock at present being quoted many points above par. The relations with the operatives have for the most part been harmonious. The company has experienced no disastrous fires, and the whole course of the company has been, to a great extent, a prosperous one. The mills are now models of appointment and management.

Shoe Manufactures.—Next to the manufacture of cotton goods, the largest industry in Salem is the manufacture of shoes, which, while not as extensive as that of some other towns of the county, is still fairly large and is increasing. There are twenty-one manufacturers of shoes in the city, the grades being mostly medium and fine ladies' and children's shoes. There are, besides, twenty-five shops for the manufacture of inner-soles, stiffenings, etc., and two shoe-stitching shops.

The capital employed in the shoe business in Salem is about one hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars, with a value of production of about nine hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars, and a total number of eight hundred and fifty employees. The manufactories are mostly grouped in the vicinity of the Boston and Maine Railroad depot, on Mill, Washington, Dodge and Lafayette Streets, although two of the largest are on Boston Street.

The relations between employer and employe in the shoe factories of Salem have been harmonious during the past few years and, save one or two minor troubles, there have been no strikes. The projected street over the South River is expected to open up land that will be utilized for shoe manufactories, and with good railroad facilities, nearness to the leather supply and no labor difficulties, Salem offers many advantages for location of shoe manufactories.

Jute Bagging.—The manufacture of jute bagging is now carried on in Salem at two establishments. The first jute-mill was established in the fall of 1865, when the late Francis Peabody built the jute-mill on

Skerry Street. Two years later a tract of land on English and Webb Streets, the old English estate, was bought and a second mill built by a company known as the India Manufacturing Co., formed at the same time. A second company, called the Bengal Bagging Co., was formed in 1870 to carry on the Skerry Street mill, but, in 1875, all the property fell into the hands of David Nevins & Co., of Boston, and, since the death of the elder Nevins, a year or two ago, has been carried on by his son.

The two mills have now over a thousand spindles, with a capacity of five million yards of bagging a year. The total value varies, but averages three hundred and fifty thousand dollars. The amount of jute-butts consumed annually is twenty-two thousand five hundred bales, at a value of eight dollars per bale. The two mills employ a total of two hundred and sixty-eight hands, of which one hundred and one are females and one hundred and two youths and children.

The jute-butts are brought from Bengal, from the port of Chittagong, in large vessels that give the inhabitants of Salem their only occasional sight of large sized, square-rigged vessels, and the import duties make up the greater part of the receipts of the Salem custom-house, the amount received from each vessel being in the vicinity of two thousand dollars. The bagging is mostly shipped South for use in baling cotton, especially large shipments going to Galveston, Tex.

White-Lead Manufacture.—The manufacture of white-lead as a pigment from pig, or blue-lead, is one of the oldest industries in the city, it having been established in 1826. In that year two lead-mills were started, one by the first Salem Lead Company and the other by Colonel Francis Peabody. Both were situated in South Salem, the first on the site of the Naumkeag Cotton-Mills, the other where Lagrange Street is now situated.

The first Salem Lead Company had a capital stock of over two hundred thousand dollars, but the enterprise proved unprofitable and, after an expenditure of one hundred and twenty thousand dollars, the works were sold at auction in 1835 for the sum of twenty thousand five hundred dollars.

The works established by Colonel Peabody were more successful, and were carried on at Lagrange Street till 1843. In 1830 the Wyman Grist-Mills, at Forest River, were purchased and used for grinding and mixing the lead. In 1843 the Forest River Lead Company (incorporated in 1846) purchased the works of Colonel Peabody, tore down the sheds on Lagrange Street, and established the entire plant at Forest River. The manufacture of white-lead to the amount of one thousand tons annually was carried on by the company till 1882, when it made an assignment. The works were operated for a time by a Boston firm, but were finally abandoned in 1883, and have since remained unoccupied.

The present Salem Lead Company was incorporated February 7, 1868. It has its works at the foot of Saunders Street. They consist of a large three-story mill, with corroding-sheds in the rear. The company has a capital of one hundred and fifty thousand dollars employed at this factory, and the annual product is about fifteen hundred tons of white-lead, dry and ground in oil, together with a considerable amount of sheet-lead and lead-pipe. About thirty hands are employed.

Oil Manufacture.—The refining and manufacture of oils has been an industry in Salem from 1835, when Caleb Smith began the oil and candle manufacture on the site of the present Seccomb Oil Works. Col. Francis Peabody began the same industry a year later, also in South Salem. The latter did a large business, buying in one year one hundred and fifty thousand dollars' worth of sperm and whale oils. He also manufactured a large quantity of candles and imported the first machine for braiding candle-wicks.

There are now four manufactories of oils in the city; two, however, are unimportant. Seccomb, Thayer & Sons carry on the manufacture at the "old stand," established by Caleb Smith. They manufacture lubricating and curriers' oils to a small extent. The Seccomb Oil Company, which was established in 1865, was dissolved in 1885.

The Salem and South Danvers Oil Company was organized in 1855, and have a capital of forty-eight thousand dollars. Since the organization the company has manufactured considerable quantities of kerosene and curriers' grease and oils.

On June 14, 1887, the works of the company took fire from a spark blown from a burning tannery on South Mason Street, and within three-quarters of an hour a stock worth ten thousand dollars, with all the wooden buildings of the plant, were totally destroyed. The stills, however, and other manufacturing plant were not materially injured, and the work of rebuilding was re-commenced at once, although some citizens made an attempt to have the Board of Aldermen refuse a permit to rebuild on that site. The manufacture of kerosene has been given up, and the manufacture of curriers' grease and oils entered on on a large scale.

The Adamanta Works.—The latest established industry in Salem has been that of the manufacture of paints, etc., by new processes, by the Adamanta Manufacturing Company at the former Rowell farm, on Salem Neck.

The Adamanta Manufacturing Company organized in 1885 with a capital of three hundred and fifty thousand dollars, for the prosecution of the manufacture of a number of articles under different patents, mostly German, purchased, in the autumn of 1885, the estate, on Salem Neck, known as the Rowell farm. This land was admirably fitted for the purpose of the manufactory, being secluded and with easy water

and land access. Building was commenced in February, 1886. A long, low, fire-proof building was constructed for the manufactory, together with the necessary out-buildings, and in September, 1886, work was commenced. At present there are about twenty-five men employed, a number of whom are Germans, as is the superintendent.

The products of the works are enamel paints, varnish, a steam-proof pitch and an artificial rubber. The present manufactory is a merely experimental one, but a large quantity of the articles produced has been sold; the demand is said to be increasing, and a large manufactory is among the probabilities; indeed, plans for such are being now considered.

Manufacture of Type-Writers.—A second industry of importance that has lately been established in Salem is the manufacture of type-writers, under the Hall patents. In May, 1885, the plating and polishing works of E. C. Bates, on Front Street, were removed to the building 200 Derby Street, and with a large plant the manufacture of the Hall type-writer was begun, together with that of light machinery and electrical goods. The Hall Type-Writer and Machine Company was incorporated in April, 1886, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars, at one hundred dollars per share. The company now employs fifty men, and produces an average of two hundred type-writers a month, at an annual value of ninety-six thousand dollars. The business of manufacturing light machinery and electrical work, mostly by contract for Boston and New York firms, is also large.

Manufacture of Cars.—Two companies for the manufacture of cars have been established in Salem. In 1863 the Salem Car Company began the manufacture of horse-cars at the present car-shops of the Boston and Maine Railroad, on Bridge Street. The project was unsuccessful, and the works were sold to John Kinsman, after having been in operation a short time. This gentleman manufactured a few railroad cars there, and then sold the works to the Eastern Railroad. They are now operated by the Boston and Maine Railroad as repair-shops, the bulk of the repairs for this section being made there. About one hundred and fifty hands are employed, and during leisure seasons a few cars are built, several of the best rolling stock on the Eastern Division having been constructed here.

The Atlantic Car Company was organized in 1872, and commenced the manufacture of railroad cars at works built by them on Broadway, in South Salem. The works only ran for a year, the business crisis in 1873 being the cause of their closing. The buildings, after being unoccupied for four years, were used as a furniture manufactory. This in turn failed, and, after a long period of idleness, the works were again started up as a manufactory of the "Humiston Preservative." This also failed, and the United States Patents Company took the plant; that continued for a year or two, then failed; and in 1886 the Poor Brothers, of Peabody, bought the plant, and altered it over into a tannery, with several hundred vats, and employing a large number of men.

The Gas-Light Company.—The Salem Gas-Light Company was organized in April, 1850; works were built at the foot of Northey Street, and the first stores lighted December 17, 1850, and the street lights on December 25th of the same year. A large amount of gas has been manufactured. When the city electric light system was put in operation, in 1886, the greater part of the street lights were given up. The change, however, caused but little diminution in the production of gas, as it was found that the increased use of gas by individuals nearly made up the deficit.

The present plant of the company, having been in constant use for thirty-seven years, has gone out of date, besides being in a bad condition, and the company has in process of construction, at its lot on Bridge Street, new retorts and apparatus of an improved pattern. A wharf, gas-holder and other buildings had been constructed there some years before, and when the present works shall be finished the company will have a complete plant. The manufacture of gas will be carried on there, and the Northey Street works abandoned.

The present works contain fifty-five retorts, and 41,858,000 cubic feet of gas were manufactured there during 1886. The selling price was $1.75 a thousand feet. The new works will have a much greater capacity than have the old.

Electric Lighting Co.—Salem was among the first cities in New England to introduce electric lights. In 1881 a small plant was set up in the rear of the West Block, and a few lights started. The first lights were lighted December 18, 1881. The light, used at first by the storekeepers as an advertisement, came rapidly into favor, and, in April, 1882, the Salem Electric Lighting Company, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars, was incorporated, and took the plant established in 1881. The demand for lights increased rapidly, and in the fall of 1886 the city of Salem closed a contract with the company for one hundred and twenty-nine lights for two years from Oct. 1, 1886, at forty-seven cents a night for one hundred lights, and forty-five cents for the remainder, the lights to burn all night and superseding four hundred gas-lights. The number was afterward increased to one hundred and forty-seven lights, which are now located and make Salem one of the best lighted cities in the State.

In June, 1885, the incandescent light was introduced, and quite a number of stores are lighted with the lights, as well as the Council and Aldermanic chambers at City Hall.

The electric lighting station is situated in the rear of the West Block, on Essex Street, in a specially constructed building, whose tall, iron chimneys are a prominent feature in a bird's-eye view of Salem from

any point. The plant consists of eight arc dynamos, of a capacity of thirty lights each, of which five are employed on the city lights. There is an incandescent dynamo, burning two hundred and fifty lights. The power is supplied by boilers of three hundred horse-power, with three engines, respectively one hundred and seventy-five, seventy-five and sixty horse-power. The station is a well-appointed one, and the lights give good satisfaction.

Miscellaneous Manufactures. — The list of the more important manufactures of Salem is now finished, but the miscellaneous manufactures are large in total and comprise most of the domestic industries and manufactures, with the employment of a large number of operatives. There are two iron foundries, employing about twenty-five men and producing a large amount of castings for the different manufactories of the city and county ; eleven machine-shops, most of which manufacture machines under patents ; and one boiler-shop. The total value of the product of the metal-working establishments of the city is about seven hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars.

The building trades are well represented, Salem being a centre for the district in this respect, and the total value of the building products is in the vicinity of three hundred thousand dollars.

Boxes, to the value of thirty-five thousand dollars, are made ; stone-work, of a value of thirty thousand dollars, is produced ; and the printing and publishing interests have a value of production of fifty thousand dollars.

Defunct Industries.—*The Salem Laboratory Company.*—Among the few industries which have been relinquished in Salem, the manufacture of chemicals was the oldest. The manufacture of chemicals was begun on Lynde Street early in the present century, and continued by the Salem Laboratory Company, incorporated in 1819, which continued the manufacture above alluded to, removing the works to North Salem. A considerable amount of chemicals were manufactured up to 1884, when the company was dissolved on account of decreasing profits and other considerations. The buildings have been partly demolished, and one has been utilized as a currying-shop.

The Cooperage Business.—During the years of the commercial prosperity of Salem, and especially at the times of the West India and West African trade, the cooperage business of Salem was quite extensive, ten or twelve firms being engaged in the manufacture of fish butts, molasses and rum hogsheads, etc. With the decrease of the commerce the business declined, and is almost extinct, there being now only two shops, employing six or eight men, and turning out a few hundred lead kegs and half-barrels yearly.

Gum Copal Cleaning.—Another very important industry during the time of the trade with the west coast of Africa was the cleaning of gum copal and other varnish gums, carried on at Hunt's wharf.

Nearly all the varnish gums used in this country at that time were landed at Salem, and in a rough state. The business of preparing these gums for use grew to considerable proportions, but the imposing of a duty on the rough gums caused the business of cleaning them to be transferred to Africa, so that although small lots have been cleaned within six years, the business is now entirely extinct.

The Coal Business.—The principal industry of Salem, outside of the direct manufacturing interests, is the transshipment of coal, for the most part to the factories of Lowell and Lawrence. During the year 1886—a year below the average in the amounts of coal received, owing to great coal strikes—the amount of coal brought to Salem was 184,163 tons, at an average valuation of five dollars per ton. The coal was brought in three hundred and sixty-three sailing vessels and thirty steamers, whose aggregate tonnage would probably be as great as that of any year in Salem's palmiest commercial days.

The coal trade of Salem has been established since 1850. In that year the Salem and Lowell Railroad was completed to Salem, and coal began to arrive at Phillips' wharf for the mills in Lawrence and Lowell. A business of one thousand tons was done the first year, and the amount rapidly increased till, in 1871 and 1872, two hundred thousand tons was the aggregate. In the former year a coal-pocket was built, but in the latter the road was leased to the Boston, Lowell and Nashua road and the larger part of the business transferred to Boston, and under the later *regime* of the Boston and Lowell the business has been still further decreased. During 1886 the aggregate of tons landed at Phillips' wharf was 26,645, mostly brought in small vessels of one hundred to five hundred tons capacity, the gradual filling up of the docks preventing the entrance of larger vessels.

The greater part of the coal coming to Salem is landed at the Philadelphia and Reading Company's pier, situated a short distance below Phillips' wharf, and built in 1873. The pier consists of a wooden-walled bulkhead, having a coal "pocket" with a capacity of eight thousand tons, and a long bridge connection. The bridge is about fourteen hundred feet in length and the wharf seven hundred feet. The depth of water at low tide is eleven feet. Most of the coal is brought in the iron steamers of the company, whose average capacity is 1660 tons. They run at regular intervals during the greater part of the year, the round trip from Philadelphia, including loading and unloading, taking about two weeks, although, under especially favorable circumstances, it has been made in one. The coal received from the steamers and sailing-vessels is temporarily stored in the pocket and shipped away by rail as fast as cars can be procured. Most goes to the mills of Lowell, Lawrence and Haverhill. The total amount of coal received at the pier in 1886 was 106,247 tons.

Besides the coal received for direct transshipment,

a large amount is received for the supply of a considerable local and district demand. There are thirteen retail coal dealers in the city, mostly situated on Derby Street and along the South River. The total shipments of coal received by them during 1886 were 53,861 tons.

Owing to the precarious state of the demand for labor in the coal business in Salem, and also to the transient nature of the labor itself, as no special training is needed for coal handling, and many take to it as a makeshift, it is difficult to ascertain how many receive support from the pursuit of that grimy calling. It is safe to say, however, that three hundred men, in round numbers, are employed by the coal trade of the city.

THE HORSE-RAILROADS.—*The Naumkeag Street Railroad.*—The benefit that the establishment and growth of the two horse-railroad companies running from Salem has been to the city is almost inestimable. It has turned into the coffers of the Salem merchants money that has in former years gone to Boston ; it has made Salem, in fact, what she is in position, the centre of the southern part of Essex County. It is safe to say that it has doubled the retail trade of the city.

The first act of incorporation of a horse-railroad in this city was obtained in 1862, under the name of the Salem Street Railway Company. The road was built to South Danvers (now Peabody), and the first car run July 8, 1863. In the same year the road was extended to Beverly, the line being opened for travel on October 28th. In May, 1864, a branch was built to South Salem, and five years later, June 4, 1869, a North Salem branch was put in operation.

The old Salem company, however, proved an unprofitable investment, and in 1875 a new company, known as the Naumkeag Street Railway Company, leased the property of the old road, and, by careful management and display of considerable enterprise, soon established the scheme on a paying basis.

The first extension of the tracks under the new company was to the "Willows," the picnic ground of Salemites for generations, the line being opened June 10, 1877. A year or two later several of the heavy stockholders of the road purchased a tract of land there, and erected a "Pavilion" and theatre, besides making a small park there, and this, with many improvements made on the public land by the city, was opened as a summer resort on June 10, 1880.

The opening of the "Willows" was one of the great factors of the success of the Naumkeag road; immense crowds of people were attracted to the place, as many as eight thousand people being on the grounds on some occasions, and, for the most part, transported by the horse-car lines.

Dating from the opening of the "Willows," and especially since 1883, the extension of the rails of the Naumkeag Street Railroad has been steady and rapid. In 1883 the Beverly track was extended to the Gloucester crossing; a little later a branch was laid to the northern side of Harmony Grove, which, however, has since been given up as not being profitable.

In the spring of 1884 a line was projected to the town of Marblehead, whose transportation facilities by railroad were very meagre. The line was completed in August, 1884, the first car being run August 18th, and being received with great enthusiasm by the Marbleheaders. The line has met with good success, although it was prophesied that it would prove unprofitable during cold weather; the use of stoves in the cars, however, removed that objection, and the cars have a good patronage all through the winter.

The increasing traffic on the line between Salem and Beverly, together with the foreseen extension to Wenham, led the directors of the road to have another line through Beverly constructed. It was built through Rantoul Street, and connected with the Cabot Street line at the Gloucester crossing, the line being opened on June 16, 1886.

The line in Peabody was then extended through Lowell Street previous to July 2, 1886; and on August 21st the Marblehead tracks were extended through the town to Franklin Street.

The greatest addition to the road was consummated, however, in the connection of the Beverly tracks through North Beverly to Wenham depot and to Asbury Grove, the latter branch, however, being used only in summer. The road, about seven miles in length, was completed May 23, 1886, and formally opened on the 26th. This road was a great stroke of policy; it accommodated an immense local trade, besides "booming" building interests along the line.

On June 1, 1886, by legislative enactment the Naumkeag road assumed the franchise of the old Salem Street Railway, and, with the purchase of the Salem and Danvers in the spring of 1887, assumed an entire control of the local traffic.

The Naumkeag Street Railroad Company at present has a capital of $250,000 of paid-up stock, divided among forty-nine stockholders, with a net debt of $257,959.52, and total assets of $636,240.23. The road has a length of 30,119 miles, of which 7,785 miles were the original property of the Salem road, and 8,800 miles that of the Danvers road, making the extensions made by the Naumkeag Company during their occupancy 13,534 miles.

The consolidated road has at the time of writing 105 cars, 390 horses and 112 employes, with an annual pay-roll of $69,340.50.

The Naumkeag system is divided into four branches, each with its stables, cars and superintendent, but under the direction of the superintendent of the main branch. The latter includes the tracks in Salem, Beverly, to the Gloucester crossing, Peabody and to the "Willows." The stables are situated on Webster Street and at Beverly Cove. The Danvers branch includes all the old Danvers track, and has

stables in Danvers and Peabody. The Marblehead branch includes the Marblehead tracks and stables on the road, and the Wenham branch includes the tracks below the Gloucester crossing, having stables at Wenham, near the town hall.

The total earnings of the consolidated road for 1886 were $190,468.50, with a total expense of $154,977.79. Besides the extent of the Naumkeag tracks, connection is made at Peabody and Marblehead with the Lynn and Boston Street Railway, whose lines extend the entire distance to Boston, making a distance of some thirty miles in diameter reached by the road.

Salem and Danvers Street Railroad—In the fall of 1883 a party of Salem, Peabody and Danvers capitalists formed a stock company for the purpose of constructing a horse railroad from Salem to Danvers. They were incorporated May 15, 1884, under the style of the Salem and Danvers Street Railway Company, with a capital stock of seventy thousand dollars, afterward increased to one hundred thousand dollars. The construction of the road was pushed rapidly, and five miles of track were built and the road equipped at a cost of $62,783.24. The road was opened for travel June 25, 1884, and during the first three months of its operation the net income was $5239.93. In the spring of 1885 a connection of the Danvers track with that of the Naumkeag Street Railroad in Peabody was begun and completed July 9th, the cars running from Salem through Peabody to Danvers and *vice versa*. Several branches to Tapleyville and other parts of Danvers were also built, so that the road had access to every part of the town, and controlled all the local traffic.

It was feared by the Naumkeag road that the proposed filling of the South River would give the Danvers road a location through the heart of the city, and a movement was made to get control of the road, which was accomplished in April, 1887, the Naumkeag road paying one hundred and sixty-five dollars for a small balance of stock, and assuming the debt of the Danvers corporation.

The road is now running in conjunction with the Naumkeag system, cars of the road being run through from Danvers to Beverly.

Railroad Communication.—The steam railroad communications of Salem are excellent, the Boston and Maine Railroad, Eastern Division, formerly the Eastern Railroad, which was opened in August, 1878, and the Boston and Lowell Railroad, which has a terminus here, give rapid and cheap transportation to every part of the Eastern New England States and Canada. There are twenty-three regular trains to Boston on the Boston and Maine daily, with twenty-two extras and eleven Sunday trains, and a nearly equal number of trains going east. The trains on the Boston and Lowell road are also frequent.

The freight facilities are equally good, and the amount of business transacted at both stations amount to a very large sum annually.

Retail Trade.—The retail trade of Salem is large, especially in the dry-goods line, and has greatly increased since the extension of the horse-car lines. The dry-goods trade includes eighteen firms, and the stores are large and handsome, including three which occupy the entire blocks in which they are situated. The largest clothing-store east of Boston is also established here, with large stores devoted to other lines, and Essex Street, the centre of the retail trade, is lined with stores that equal, if not surpass, any in Essex County.

CHAPTER IX.

SALEM (*Continued*).

MISCELLANEOUS.

BY WILLIAM T. DAVIS.

In the preparation of the history of Salem, several writers have been engaged, each confining himself to the special department assigned to him, and thus necessarily leaving untouched some subjects, the omission of which would make the history unfinished and incomplete. This chapter, therefore, will include a reference, to the government of Salem as a town, to its organization as a city, the adoption of a city seal, the earlier and later water-works, the witchcraft delusion and to such associations and organizations as have not been treated in the departmental work.

The settlement of Salem may be dated 1626, when Roger Conant, with his companions, leaving Cape Ann took up his temporary residence at Naumkeag, as Salem was then called, or it may be dated September 6, 1628 (old style), when John Endicott cast anchor in Salem harbor, as governor of the colony, sent by the Massachusetts Company, in London, of which Matthew Cradock was governor, to make a permanent settlement on the shores of Massachusetts' Bay. As the city has inscribed the date 1626 on its seal, it is perhaps useless either to inquire how completely the settlement by Conant was abandoned, or to question the claim of the earlier date.

Salem, like Plymouth, was never incorporated as a town. At the first meeting of the Court of Assistants, held at Charlestown, August 23, 1630, it was recognized as a distinct plantation or town, and with Mattapan was exempted from the common charge for the support of Rev. Mr. Wilson. Its character as a town was not questioned after the arrival of Winthrop in 1630, but its boundaries were undefined, and those, of course, were to be settled by the General Court of the Colony. Thus, at the Court held on the 4th of March, 1634, it was ordered that "Mr. Nowell and Mr. Mayhewe shall set out the bounds betwixt Saugus (Lynn) and Salem and betwixt Salem and Marble Harbor;" and at the Court held on the 3d of March, 1635–36, it was "re-

ferred to John Humfrey, Esq., and Capt. Turner, to set out the bounds betwixt Salem and Ipswich." On the 13th of March, 1638–39, it was "ordered that the bounds betwixt Salem and Linn shall begin at the cliffe by the sea, where the water runs, as the way lyeth by the ould path that goeth to Linn at the south end thereof next to Linn & the whole pond to bee in Salem bounds; & from that part to run upon a straight line to the island in the Humfreys pond & from that island to run upon a straight line to 6 great pine trees marked, called by the six men that layd out the bounds, the 6 mens Bounds; & from these trees to run upon a straight line unto another little pine tree marked by the side of a little hill beyond the trees, to run upon the same line so farr as o^{r} bounds shall reach, into the countrey."

At first Salem included within its recognized limits Beverly, Danvers, Manchester, Peabody, Marblehead, Middleton and parts of Topsfield, Wenham and Lynn. Beverly was incorporated October 14, 1668, and a part annexed to Danvers, April 27, 1857. Danvers was incorporated June 16, 1757 and divided into Danvers and South Danvers, May 18, 1855, the name of the latter being changed to Peabody, April 13, 1868. Manchester was incorporated May 14, 1645; Marblehead, May 2, 1649; Middleton, June 20, 1728; Wenham, May 10, 1643; Topsfield, October 18, 1650. A part of Salem was also annexed to Swampscott, April 3, 1867, and the boundary line between Salem and Danvers was changed March 17, 1840.

At a General Court held March 3, 1635–36, it was ordered that "whereas, particular towns have many things which concerne onely themselves, and the ordering of their own affairs, and disposing of business in their own town, it is therefore ordered, that the freemen of every town or the major part of them shall onely have power to dispose of their own lands, and woods with all the privileges and appurtenances of the said towns, to grant lots, and make such orders as may concern the well-ordering of their own towns, not repugnant to the laws and orders here established by the General Court; as also to lay mulcts and penalties for the breach of these orders, and to levy and distrain the same, not exceeding the sum of xx*s.*; also to choose their own particular officers, as constables, surveyors for the highways, and the like; and because much business is like to ensue to the constables of several towns, by reason they are to make distresses, and gather fines, therefore that every town shall have two constables, where there is need, that so their office may not be a burthen unto them, and they may attend more carefully upon the discharge of their office, for which they shall be liable to give their accompts to this Court when they shal be called thereunto."

In accordance with the above act of the General Court the Town of Salem chose, at a meeting held on the 19th of the 4th month (June) 1637, a committee of twelve "for manadgin the affairs of the town." A part of the record of this meeting is lost, and the actual election of this committee is not found on the town books. The deficiency is, however, supplied by the town Book of Grants, which contains the following entry:

"The 20th of the 4th moneth, 1637.

"A towne meeting of the 12 men appoynted for the busines thereof whose names are here under written:

Mr. Hathorne.	Daniell Ray.
Mr. Bishop.	Robt. Moulton.
Mr. Connaught.	Mr. Scruggs.
Mr. Gardiner.	Jeffry Massy.
John Woodbery.	John Balch.
Peter Palfrey.	John Holgrave."

Mr. Hathorne was William Hathorne, Mr. Bishop was Townsend Bishop, Mr. Connaught was Roger Conant, Mr. Gardiner was Thomas Gardiner and Mr. Scruggs was Thomas Scruggs. This committee was the prototype of the Board of Selectmen of a later period. There had been previously chosen, on the 16th of the 9th month (November), 1635, a committee consisting of Captain William Traske, John Woodberry, Mr. Conant, Jeffry Massy and John Balshe as "overseers & Layers out of Lotts of ground for this presinct of Salem, but are to have directions from y^{e} towne where they shall lay y^{m} out, and in leiwe of y^{r} paynes they are to have 4*d.* the acre for small lotts, and 10*s.* the hundred for great lotts rightly & exactly laid out & bounded; and 3 of these may doe the worke."

There had also been appointed in the latter part of March, 1636, a committee of thirteen, whose names are not given, who were called "the towne representative," but the committee of twelve above referred to seems to have been the first committee with the broad powers delegated to it of managing the affairs of the town. The meetings of this committee are called in the records town meetings, and by their direction inhabitants were admitted, lands granted, raters were chosen and the general business of the town was conducted. At the meeting of the committee held on the 20th of the 10th month (December), 1637, John Endicott appears as a member, and on the 29th of the 8th month (October), 1638, Mr. Fisk, but whether John, or William, or Phineas, does not appear.

At a general town meeting held the 31st of the 10th month (December), 1638, seven men were chosen "for the managing of the affaires of the towne for a twelve moneths, viz.: Mr. Endecott, Mr. Hathorne, Mr. Conant, John Woodbury, Laurence Leech, Jeffry Massy and John Balch." Under date of the 11th month (January), 1639–40, it is recorded that "the ould Seaven men continewed still." The next year the committee consisted of the same persons, and in 1642 of Mr. Endicott, Mr. Hathorne, Mr. Massy, Peter Palfrey, Laurence Leech, Mr. Gardiner and William Lord. In 1643 Henry Bartholomew was substituted for Mr. Leech, and at the meeting at which the new committee was chosen, held the 4th of the 10th month (December), 1642, it was ordered "that the seaven men chosen for the managing of the affaires of the towne, or the greater number of them, shall meete to-

gether monethlie one the second day of the weeke, in the morninge, to begine the second day the weeke next being the 11th of the 10th mo., 1643, upon the penaltie of tenne shillings, to be leavied one the whole or upon such of them as are absent wth out just ground."

Up to this date while the meetings of the freemen of the town were called general town meetings, those of the seven men were called particular town meetings. After this date they were called "meetings of the 7 men," or "town meetings of the 7 men." In 1644–45 the same persons served as the committee, and in 1646 eight men were chosen, viz.: Captain Hathorne, William Lord, John Hardey, Mr. Corwine, Sergeant Porter, Samuel Archer, Ed. Batter and William Clerke. In 1647 William Hathorne, Edmond Batter, George Corwin, Jeffry Massy, John Porter, Henry Bartholomew and Emanuel Downing made up the board of seven men, and about this time their meetings were sometimes called meetings of the "townsmen."

From this date the seven men were called selectmen, and the following is a list of selectmen down to the incorporation of the city in 1836:

1648.
Wm. Hathorne.
Wm. Browne.
Thomas Gardiner.
Roger Conant.
Thomas Lathrop.
Henry Bartholomew.
John Porter.

1649.
Wm. Hathorne.
Wm. Browne.
Roger Conant.
Jeffry Massy.
Henry Bartholomew.
George Corwin.
Walter Price.

1650.
Wm. Hathorne.
Emanuel Dowing.
George Corwin.
Jeffry Massy.
Roger Conant.
Walter Price.
Henry Bartholomew.

1651.
Wm. Hathorne.
Roger Conant.
John Porter.
Jeffry Massy.
Henry Bartholomew.
Wm. Browne.
George Corwin.

1652.
Wm. Hathorne.
Roger Conant.
John Porter.
Walter Price.
Jacob Barney.
George Corwin.
Edmond Batter.

1653.
George Corwin.
Wm. Hathorne.
Roger Conant.
John Porter.
Jeffry Massy.
Walter Price.
Edmond Batter.

1654.
George Corwin.
Roger Conant.
John Porter.
John Gedney.
Richard Prince.
Jeffry Massy.
Edmond Batter.

1655.
George Corwin.
John Porter.
Jacob Barney.
Jeffry Massy.
Thomas Gardiner.
Jno. Gedney.
Edmond Batter.

1656.
Wm. Hathorne.
Thomas Gardiner.
Wm. Browne.
George Corwin.
John Porter.
Jeffry Massy.
Edmond Batter.

1657.
Wm. Browne.
George Corwin.
John Porter.
Jacob Barney.
Richard Prince.
Jeffry Massy.
Walter Price.

1658.
Wm. Hathorne.
Roger Conant.
Thomas Lathrop.
Edmond Batter.
Jos. Boice.

1659.
Wm. Hathorne.
George Corwin.
Walter Price.
Wm. Browne.
Edmond Batter.

1660.
Wm. Browne.
George Corwin.
Walter Price.
Roger Conant.
Thomas Lathrop.
Edmond Batter.
John Porter.

1661.
Wm. Browne.
Wm. Hathorne.
George Corwin.
John Porter.
Roger Conant.
Walter Price.
Edmond Batter.

1662.
Wm. Hathorne.
Wm. Browne.
George Corwin.
Walter Price.
Edmond Batter.
John Porter.
Henry Bartholomew.

1663.
Wm. Hathorne.
Wm. Browne.
George Corwin.
Walter Price.
Edmond Batter.
George Gardiner.
Henry Bartholomew.

1664.
Wm. Hathorne.
Wm. Browne.
George Corwin.
Walter Price.
Thomas Lathrop.
Edmond Batter.
Henry Bartholomew.

1665.
Wm. Hathorne.
Wm. Browne.
George Corwin.
John Pickering.
John Price.

1676.
Edmond Batter.
John Corwin.
Wm. Browne, Jr.
Samuel Gardiner, Sr.
Bartholomew Gedney.
John Pickering.
John Price.

1677.
Jos. Grafton.
Philip Cromwell.
John Higginson.
Samuel Gardiner, Sr.
Lieut. Leach.
Edward Flint.
Wm. Trask.

1678.
John Corwin.
Wm. Browne.
Philip Cromwell.
John Turner.
John Higginson.
John Hathorne.

1679.
John Corwin.
Wm. Browne.
George Corwin.
John Higginson.
Philip Cromwell.
Israel Porter.
John Hathorne.

1680.
Edmond Batter.
John Corwin.
Wm. Browne.
Samuel Gardiner, Sr.
John Putnam.
Israel Porter.
John Hathorne.

1681.
John Corwin.
Wm. Browne.
John Price.
Samuel Gardiner, Sr.
Israel Porter.
John Pickering.
John Hathorne.

1682.
John Corwin.
Samuel Gardiner, Sr.
John Price.
John Hathorne.
John Pickering.
Samuel Gardiner, Jr.
John Higginson.
Israel Porter.

1683.
Samuel Gardiner, Sr.
John Price.
John Hathorne.
John Higginson.
John Pickering.
Israel Porter.
Samuel Gardiner, Jr.

1684.
Bartholomew Gedney.
John Corwin.
John Price.
John Ruck.
Thomas Gardiner.
Daniel Andrew.
Samuel Gardiner, Jr.

1685.
Bartholomew Gedney.
John Higginson.
John Ruck.
Israel Porter.
Wm. Porter.
Samuel Gardiner.
Timothy Lindall.
Wm. Hirst.

1686.
John Ruck.
John Price.
John Leech.
Thomas Gardiner.
Samuel Gardiner, Sr.
Timothy Lindall.
Wm. Hirst.

1687.
John Price.
John Ruck.
Wm. Hirst.
John Higginson.
Samuel Gardiner.
Robert Kitching.

1688.
John Putnam.
Nathaniel Putnam.
Edward Flint.
John Higginson.
John Price.
Thomas Gardiner.
Samuel Gardiner, Jr.

1689.
John Putnam.
John Pickering.
Israel Porter.
Captain Sewall.
Wm. Hirst.
Benjamin Gerrish.
Samuel Gardiner.

1690.
Stephen Sewall.
John Pickering.
Israel Porter.
Wm. Hirst.
Samuel Gardiner.
Daniel Andrew.
Benjamin Gerrish.

1691.
Israel Porter.
Thomas Flint.
Benjamin Marston.
Josiah Wolcott.
Manasseh Marston.
Robert Kitching.
Daniel Parkman.

1692.
Samuel Gardiner.
Stephen Sewall.
Israel Porter.
John Putnam.
John Pickering.
Edward Flint.
Robert Kitching.

1693.
Wm. Hirst.
Stephen Sewall.
Israel Porter.
Benjamin Gerrish.
John Pickering.
Edward Flint.
Robert Kitching.

1694.
Wm. Hirst.
Stephen Sewall.
Timothy Lindall.
Edward Flint.
Benjamin Gerrish.
Israel Porter.
Samuel Browne.

1695.
Wm. Hirst.

Israel Porter.
Samuel Browne.
Stephen Sewall.
Timothy Lindall.
Benjamin Gerrish.
Samuel Gardiner.

1696.
Stephen Sewall.
Israel Porter.
Samuel Gardiner.
Wm. Hirst.
Timothy Lindall.
Manasseh Marston.
John Turner.

1697.
Benjamin Browne.
John Higginson.
Wm. Hirst.
Stephen Sewall.
Benjamin Putnam.
Edward Hilliard.
Samuel Nurse.

1698.
Benjamin Browne.
John Higginson.
Wm. Hirst.
Stephen Sewall.
Samuel Browne.
Benjamin Gerrish.
Josiah Wolcott.

1699.
Josiah Wolcott.
Philip English.
Daniel Andrew.
Edward Flint.
Jeremiah Neale.
Joseph Putnam.
Peter Osgood.

1700
Wm. Hirst.
Stephen Sewall.
Samuel Browne.
Samuel Gardiner.
Daniel Andrew.
Joseph Herrick.
Daniel Epes.

1701.
Wm. Hirst.
Samuel Browne.
Jona. Putnam.
Jos. Herrick.
John Higginson.
Daniel Epes.
Stephen Sewall.

1702.
Wm. Hirst.
Samuel Gardiner.
John Higginson.
Walter Price.
John Putnam.
Jos. Herrick.
Daniel Epes.

1703. Same.

1704.
Wm. Hirst.
Josiah Wolcott.
Walter Price.
John Browne.
John Turner.
Jona. Putnam.
Daniel Epes.

1705. Same.

1706.
Samuel Gardiner.
Walter Price.
John Turner.
Thomas Flint.
Peter Osgood.
Benjamin Putnam.
Daniel Epes.

1707.
Josiah Wolcott.
Captain Gardiner.
Captain Turner.
Benjamin Putnam.
Jona. Putnam.
John Higginson.
Daniel Epes.

1708.
Josiah Wolcott.
Samuel Gardiner.
John Browne.
John Turner.
Walter Price.
Benjamin Putnam.
Daniel Epes.

1709.
Samuel Gardiner.
John Turner.
John Higginson.
Peter Osgood.
John Gardiner.
Benjamin Putnam.
Jona. Putnam.

1710.
Stephen Sewall.
Samuel Gardiner.
Jona. Putnam.
Benjamin Putnam.
Jos. Orne.
John Pickering.
John Gardiner.

1711.
Josiah Wolcott.
Walter Price.
Wm. Gedney.
Jos. Putnam.
John Browne.
James Lindall.
John Trask.

1712.
Josiah Wolcott.
Benjamin Lynde.
Wm. Gedney.
Francis Willoughby.
Jos. Putnam.
John Trask.
Walter Price.

1713.
Benjamin Lynde.
Wm. Gedney.
Francis Willoughby.
Peter Osgood.
Walter Price.
Abel Gardiner.
Jos. Herrick.

1714.
Wm. Gedney.
Peter Osgood.
Samuel Gardiner.
F. Willoughby.
Wm. Pickering.
Walter Price.
Jos. Herrick.

1715.
Stephen Sewall.
Captain Pickering.
Jos. Orne.
James Moulton.
Walter Price.
Philip English.
Jos. Putnam.

1716.
Philip English.
Jos. Orne.
James Moulton.
Jos. Herrick.
Wm. Pickering.
John Pickering.
Jos. Putnam.

1717.
John Pickering.
Jos. Orne.
Wm. Pickering.
Jos. Putnam.
James Moulton.
Samuel Ruck.
Thos. Barton.

1718.
Wm. Bowditch.
Wm. Pickering.
James Moulton.
Jacob Manning.
Benjamin Flint.
Benj. Gerrish.
John Putnam.

1719. Same with Thos. Barton for J. Putnam.

1720. Same.

1721.
Wm. Bowditch.
Jos. Willard.
Benjamin Flint.
Benjamin Gerrish.
Thos. Barton.
John Putnam.
James Moulton.

1722.
Wm. Bowditch.
Daniel Epes.
Jos. Willard.
Thos. Fuller.
Benjamin Flint.
Benjamin Gerrish.
Thos. Barton.

1723.
Wm. Bowditch.
Jacob Manning.
Daniel Epes.
Thomas Fuller.
John Cabot.
Jos. Orne, Jr.
Thos. Barton.

1724.
Jacob Manning.
Benjamin Flint.
Benjamin Gerrish.
Daniel Epes.
Thomas Fuller.
Jos. Orne, Jr.
Thomas Barton.

1725. Same with Wm. Bowditch for Mr. Gerrish.

1726.
Wm. Bowditch.
Jacob Manning.
Benjamin Flint.
Jos. Orne, Jr.
Thomas Flint.
Thorndike Proctor.
Thomas Barton.

1727.
Same with Ichabod Plaisted for Mr. Manning.

1728.
Daniel Epes.
Jos. Orne, Jr.
Thomas Flint.
Ichabod Plaisted.
Samuel Barnard.
Miles Ward.
Thomas Barton.

1729. Same.

1730. Same with John Higginson for Mr. Barton.

1731.
Thomas Barton.
Jos. Orne, Jr.
Benjamin Flint.
Ichabod Plaisted.
Thorndike Proctor.
Samuel King.
John Higginson.

1732.
Thomas Barton.
Daniel Epes.
Jos. Orne, Jr.
Thorndike Proctor.
Ichabod Plaisted.
Miles Ward.
John Preston.
Samuel Flint.
John Higginson.

1733. Same with Samuel Browne for Ichabod Plaisted.

1734.
Thomas Barton.
Daniel Epes.
Jos. Orne, Jr.
Thorndike Proctor.
Thomas Flint.
Samuel King.
Ed. Kitchen.
Israel Andrew.
John Higginson.

1735.
Thomas Barton.
Jos. Orne, Jr.
Daniel Epes.
Ichabod Plaisted.
Thorndike Proctor.
John Preston.
Samuel Flint.
John Turner, Jr.
John Higginson.

1736. Same with Samuel Barton for Thomas Barton.

1737. Same with Joshua Hicks and Samuel Endicott for Orne and Proctor.

1738.
Daniel Epes.
John Preston.
Samuel Flint.
Samuel Barton.
Joshua Hicks.
Samuel Endicott.
Wm. Lynde.
Richard Elvires.
John Higginson.

1739.
John Higginson.
Samuel Flint.
Samuel Barton.
John Preston.
Thorndike Proctor.
Daniel Epes.
Dr. Cabot.
Capt. Pickman.
Capt. Ives.

1740.
Thomas Flint.
Eben. Moulton.
Daniel Marble.
T. Proctor.
Saml. West.
Ezekiel Marsh.
Jos. Putnam.
John Leach.
John Gardner.

1741.
Jos. Putnam.
John Gardner.
Ben. Ives.
John Leach.
Daniel Marble.
Benj. Browne.
Daniel Epes.
T. Proctor.
John Clarke.

1742.
Captain Pickman.
Benj. Ives.
Daniel Epes.
Col. Bronne.
Jos. Putnam.

1743.
Benj. Ives.
Benj. Pickman.
Daniel Epes.
Jos. Putnam.
Benj. Browne.

1744.
Benj. Pickman.
John Leach.
Nathanl. Andrew.
Daniel Epes, Jr.
Benj. Browne.
Stephen Putnam.
John Higginson.

1745.
Benj. Pickman.
Daniel Epes.
Nathl. Andrews.
Benj. Browne.
James Putnam.
Wm. Porter.
John Higginson.

1746. Same with Jona Gardner and Thomas Lee for Mr. Pickman.

1747. Same with James Jeffrey for Mr. Lee.

1748.
Nathl. Andrew.
Jona Gardner.
James Jeffrey.
James Putnam.
T. Proctor.
John Proctor, Jr.
Eben Work.

1749.
T. Proctor.
Saml. Gardner.
Warwick Palfray.
Saml. King.
Saml. Holton.
Eben Work.
John Higginson.

1750. Same with Saml. Flint for Mr. Holton.

1751.
Jos. Bowditch.
Jona Gardner.
John Leach.
Abraham Watson.
John Higginson.

1752. Same with T. Proctor for Mr. Higginson.

1753. Same.

1754.
Joshua Ward.
T. Proctor.
Abraham Watson.
Timothy Orne.
Nathl. Ropes.

1755. Same with John Nutting for Mr. Ward.

1756. Same with Stephen Higginson for Mr. Nutting.

1757. Same.

1758. Saml. Gardner.
Nathl. Ropes.
Benj. Goodhue.
Benj. Herbert.
Jona Ropes, Jr.

1759. Same with Peter Frye for Nathl. Ropes.
(The records from 1760 to 1764 are missing.)

1765.
Saml. Curwen.
Wm. Browne.
Richard Lee.
Richard Derby.
Joseph Blaney.

1766.
Jos. Blaney.
John White, Jr.
Jona Gardner, Jr.
Jeremiah Hacker.
T. Proctor.

1767.
Jos. Blaney.
Benj. Pickman, Jr.
Jeremiah Hacker.
T. Proctor, Jr.
David Phippen.

1768.
Jos. Blaney.
Jona Gardner, Jr.
David Phippen.
Jeremiah Hacker.
Benj. Osgood.

1769.
George Williams.
Jacob Ashton.
Saml. Barton, Jr.
E. H. Derby.
George Dodge.

1770. Same with John Felt for Mr. Ashton.

1771. Same.

1772. Same with John Gardner for Mr. Derby

1773.
George Dodge.
George Williams.
John Gardner.
Henry Gardner.
Tim. Pickering, Jr.

1774. Same with Wm. Pickman, and William Northey for Mr. Dodge.

1775.
Tim. Pickering, Jr.
T. Proctor.
John Hodges.
Eben Beckford.
Joseph Sprague

1776.
T. Pickering, Jr.
John Gardner (3d).
John Hodges.

Jona Peele, Jr.
Eben Beckford.
Joseph Sprague.
Jacob Ashton.
1777.
Richard Ward
John Gardner (3d).
Eben Beckford.
Jacob Ashton.
Jona Peele, Jr.
1778. Same with William Pickman for Mr. Ward.
1779. Same.
1780.
Benj. Goodhue, Jr.
Miles Greenwood.
John Norris.
Peter Landen.
John Buflinton.
1781.
Saml. Flagg.
John Fisk.
Joshua Ward.
Jona. Ingersoll.
Jerathmel Price.
1782.
Wm. West.
Joshua Ward.
John Appleton.
Francis Cabot, Jr.
Jona Waldo.
1783. Same with Wm. Gray for Mr. Waldo.
1784. Same with Saml. Pierce for Mr. Cabot.
1785. Samc.
1786. Same.
1787.
John Appleton.
Joshua Ward.
Wm. Gray.
Saml. Pierce.
John Fisk.
1788.
Wm. Gray, Jr.
Edward Pulling.
John Hathorne,
Saml. Ward.
Edward Norris.
John Buffinton.
Wm. Northey.
1789.
Wm. Northey.
John Fisk.
Richard Ward.
Wm. Gray.
Saml. Ward.
Jona. Waldo.
John Buffinton.
1790. Wm. Northey.
Joseph Sprague.
Geo. Crowninshield.
Nathl. Richardson.
John Hathorne.
1791. Edward Norris.
John Hathorne.
Nathl. Richardson.
Jona. Waldo.
Nehemiah Buffinton.
1792. Same with Jos. Sprague for Mr. Buffington.
1793. Eben Putnam.
John Saunders, Jr.
Wm. Gray, Jr.
Joseph White.
E. H. Derby.
1794.
Jona. Waldo.
Jacob Sanderson.
E. H. Derby.
Benj. Ward, Jr.
Edward Norris.
1795. Same.
1796. Same with Jona. Lambert for Mr. Derby.
1797. Same with Nathl. Ropes for Mr. Sanderson.
1798. Same with Amos Hovey for Mr. Ropes.
1799.
Jona. Waldo.
Benj. Ward.
Amos Hovey.
Saml Ward.
Jona. Lambert.
1800. Same.
1801. Same with Jacob Sanderson and John Gardner for Messrs. Ward.
1802.
John Buffinton.
John Hathorne.
Jona. Mason.
Benj. Ward, Jr.
Addison Richardson.
1803. Same with John Punchard for Mr. Mason.
1804. Same with Moses Townsend for Mr. Punchard.
1805.
John Hathorne.
Benj. Ward, Jr.
Addison Richardson.
Moses Townsend.
Nehemiah Buffinton.
1806.
Jona. Mason.
John Hathorne.
B. Ward, Jr.
Samuel Ropes.
Henry Prince.
1807.
John Hathorne.
Moses Townsend.
James Cheever.
Benj. Crowninshield.
Benj. Ropes.
1808.
John Hathorne.
Moses Townsend.
Benj. Ropes.
George S. Johonnot.
Joseph Ropes.
1809.
Moses Townsend.
Joseph Ropes.
Samuel Ropes.
Edward Allen.
Joseph Winn.
1810.
Moses Townsend.
Joseph Winn.
Jona. Neal, Jr.
Joshua Ward.
Benj. Crowninshield.
1811.
Moses Townsend.
Joshua Ward.
B. W. Crowninshield.
Thos M. Woodbridge.
Joseph Ropes.
1812.
Samuel Ropes.
Abel Lawrence.
Philip Chase.
Wm. Mansfield.
Michael Webb.
1813. Same.
1814. Same.
1815.
Samuel Ropes.
Abel Lawrence.
Wm. Mansfield.
Abijah Northey.
Benj. H. Hathorne.
1816.
Moses Townsend.
Joseph Winn.
Joseph Ropes.
John Crowninshield.
Henry Elkins.
1817.
Wm. Mansfield.
Michael Webb.
Moses Townsend.
Saml. Endicott.
Joseph Ropes.
1818.
Wm. Mansfield.
Wm. Fettyplace.
Saml. Endicott.
Gideon Barstow.
John Prince, Jr.
1819.
Saml. Endicott.
John Crowninshield.
John Andrews.
John Howard.
Perley Putnam.
1820. Same.
1821. Same with James Silver for Mr. Crowninshield.
1822.
Perley Putnam.
James Silver.
Willard Peele.
Timothy Bryant.
Abijah Northey.
1823.
Perley Putnam.
Tim. Bryant.
Andrew Tucker.
John Stone.
George Hodges.
1824.
Perley Putnam.
John Stone.
Andrew Tucker.
Wm. Proctor.
Benj. Fabens.
1825. Same with Joseph Howard for Mr. Proctor.
1826.
Perley Putnam.
Andrew Tucker.
Benj. Fabens.
Joseph Howard.
John Foster.
1827.
Andrew Tucker.
Benj. Fabens.
David Moore.
Perley Putnam.
N. L. Rogers.
1828. Same with Henry King for Mr. Rogers.
1829. Same.
1830. Same with Nathl. Frothingham for Mr. Rogers.
1831.
Benj. Fabens.
Nathl. Frothingham.
Isaac Newhall.
Benj. Blanchard.
Jos. Cloutman.
1832. Same with Henry Whipple for Mr. Fabens.
1833.
Nathl. Frothingham.
N. L. Rogers.
Joseph Beadle.
David Pingree.
Holten J. Breed.
1834.
Nathl. Frothingham.
Nehemiah Brown.
Samuel Holman.
Perley Putnam.
George Peabody.
1835. Same with John Stone for Mr. Frothingham.

The meetings of the town, in the early days of the colony, were held in the meeting-house of the First Parish. The church and the town were practically identical and the name meeting-house was derived from the fact that it was the general place of meeting, not alone on Sunday, but on all public occasions. This meeting-house stood near the southeasterly corner of Washington and Essex Streets, and was erected in 1634. About the year 1677, a building for town purposes was erected in the middle of School, now Washington Street, near what is now Lynde Street, and facing south. The upper part was fitted for a court-house, and there the Court of Oyer and Terminer, organized by Governor Phipps, in 1692, for the trial of the witches, was held.

Essex County was established May 10, 1643, and on the 14th of November, 1644, Salem was made the shire of the county; but precisely where the courts were held previously to 1677, is not definitely known. It is probable, however, that the meeting-house was used as a court-house, as well as a town-house. A prison was erected in 1668, near the southwesterly end of the meeting-house, and this fact adds force to the suggestion that the meeting-house was used for a court-house.

In 1719, a second town and court-house combined was erected on School, now Washington Street, near the southerly end of the railroad tunnel. In this building the General Court met, October 31, 1728,—April 2, May 28 and June 25, 1729,—by order of Governor Burnet, because he believed that undue influence was exerted in Boston against a grant for his salary.

On the 25th of May, 1774, the General Court was adjourned by Governor Gage, to meet at Salem on the 7th of June; and again the Salem Town-house became historic. The session lasted eleven days, during which the court protested against its removal from Boston, and on the 17th passed a resolve appointing James Bowdoin, Thomas Cushing, Samuel Adams, John Adams and Robert Treat Paine delegates to the Congress at Philadelphia, "to consult upon measures for the restoration of harmony between Great Britain and the Colonies." Upon this action, Governor Gage at once, on the same day, dissolved the court; and so ended, in the old Town-house in Salem, which ought to be standing to-day, the last General Court in Massachusetts, under a Provincial Governor.

On Thursday, the first of September, writs were issued by the Governor for a new court, to meet at

Salem on the 5th of October, but were recalled by proclamation. The Assembly met notwithstanding, and organized with John Hancock, Chairman, and Benjamin Lincoln, Clerk; and on the 7th of October voted "that the members aforesaid do now resolve themselves into a Provincial Congress, to be joined by such other persons as have been or shall be chosen for that purpose, to take into consideration the dangerous and alarming situation of public affairs in this province, and to consult and determine on such measures as they shall judge will tend to promote the true interest of His Majesty and the peace, welfare and prosperity of the province."

After this action, the Congress adjourned to Concord, where it was more formally organized by the election of Mr. Hancock, President, and Mr. Lincoln, Secretary; and after several sessions in Concord and Cambridge, finally dissolved. Thus the old Town-house again became memorable, and was not only the scene of the last act under the old dispensation, but the scene also of the first act under the new.

In 1785, another building was erected for the joint use of the town and county, in the middle of Washington Street, nearly opposite the Tabernacle Church, and town meetings were there held until the erection, in 1816, of the Town House in Derby Square, which was used until the incorporation of the city in 1836.

The second prison was built in 1684, near the corner of Federal and St. Peter's Streets, and the present prison was built in 1813.

The lands within the territory of Salem were originally held by the freemen of the town, and all grants were made by them. The historical sketch of Salem by Charles S. Osgood and H. M. Batchelder, published in 1879, says that,—

"With increasing population, this method of holding the lands became unwieldy and cumbersome, and in 1713 the then owners of the common lands under the province laws became organized into a quasi corporation with the title of Commoners. In 1713 the commoners granted all the highways and burying-places and common lands lying within the town bridge and block-houses to remain forever for the use of the town of Salem, and the Common was then dedicated forever as a training-field. In 1714 the commoners, at a meeting held at the meeting-house of the first parish in Salem, voted that Winter Island be wholly removed and granted for the use of the fishing rights to use the same to be let by the Selectmen of Salem; and the same year the Neck lands were granted and reserved to the town of Salem for a pasture for milch cows and riding horses, the same to be fenced at the town's charge.

"In 1722–23, Feb. 26, the grand Committee of the commoners who had charge of affairs reported the whole number of rights to be 1132, and the number of acres held, 3733. Several distinct proprietaries were formed under an act of the colonial legislature; and the commoners of the two lower parishes having 790 rights and 2500 acres of land lying between Spring Pond and Forest River, organized themselves into a corporation. This organization continued until 1855, when they were incorporated into the Great Pasture Company, and by that company the last of the common lands, about 400 acres in extent, are now held."

The training-field referred to in the above extract was at the time of its grant an uneven and spongy piece of ground, scarcely fit for the use to which it was dedicated until 1801, when Elias Hasket Derby, the colonel of the militia, raised about two thousand five hundred dollars by subscription and put it in order. In 1802 it was named by the selectmen Washington Square, and it is now enclosed by an iron fence, within which are two rows of trees, mostly elms.

In the early part of 1836 a determined effort was made to change the town government for that of a city. The population of the town, which, according to the census of 1830, was 13,886, had then probably reached 15,000. Its property valuation the year before was $8,250,000, and the amount raised by taxation for county and town expenses was $40,391.31. The amount of tonnage of vessels owned in the district, which included Beverly, was 34,906, consisting of 30 ships, 12 barks, 70 brigs, 124 schooners and 14 sloops. The expression of the town was that of a city, except so far as its form of government was concerned. It had a police court, of which Elisha Mack was the judge, and Ezekiel Savage and Joseph G. Waters were the special justices. Its lawyers were Leverett Saltonstall, Benjamin Merrill, John Glen King, Larkin Thorndike, Solomon S. Whipple, Ebenezer Shillaber, Joseph G. Waters, Asahel Huntington, Stephen P. Webb, David Roberts, George Wheatland, Nathaniel J. Lord, Charles A. Andrews, Francis H. Silsbee, George H. Devereux, John S. Williams, Joseph H. Prince and Jonathan C. Perkins. Its physicians were Oliver Hubbard, Joseph Torrey, Samuel Johnson, Abel L. Pierson, George Choate, John G. Treadwell, Edward A. Holyoke, Benjamin Cox, Elisha Quimby, Nathaniel Peabody Dentist, A. J. Bellows and Horatio Robinson.

It had seventeen churches and chapels, eight stock banks, with a combined capital of one million eight hundred and fifty thousand dollars, one savings bank, five stock insurance companies with a combined capital of eight hundred thousand dollars, one Mutual Fire Insurance Company, one Latin school, one English high school, seven English schools, one of which was for colored children, two girls' high schools, seven primary schools and forty-seven private schools. It had also among the libraries the Salem Atheneum with seven thousand five hundred volumes, the Essex and another circulating library with six thousand volumes, the Salem Mechanic Association's Library with seven hundred and fifty volumes, the Colman Circulating Library with five hundred volumes and the Essex Historical Society Library. In the fire department there were one receiving and eight suction engines, one hose company, one hook and ladder company and three sail carriages, and there were in the militia the Salem Light Infantry, the Mechanic Light Infantry, the Salem Artillery, the Salem Independent Cadets and four companies of infantry of the line. The newspapers at that time were the *Salem Gazette*, issued semi-weekly, Tuesday and Friday, started in 1773; the *Essex Register*, semi-weekly, Monday and Thursday, established in 1800; the *Salem Observer*, weekly, Saturday, established in 1822; the *Salem Mercury*, weekly, Wednesday, established in 1831;

the *Commercial Advertiser*, weekly, Wednesday, established in 1832; and the *Landmark*, semi-weekly, Wednesday and Saturday, established in 1834.

At that time railroad connections had not been made and the following facilities for travel were open to the people of Salem. The Salem and Boston Stage Company advertised that seats could be taken at the Lafayette Coffee House, Salem Hotel, at the office in Court Street, and at the office in West Place, and that three stages would leave at seven A. M, two at 7½, one at eight, one at nine, one at ten, one at two P. M., one at 1½ and one at four P. M., all returning the same day. On Sunday, one at four P. M.

Osborne's Line left the office on Essex Street, nearly opposite the market, daily, except Sunday, at seven A. M., returning in the afternoon.

The stages of the Great Eastern Line left the Coffee House for Boston at 10½ A. M., 2½ P. M., 3½ P. M., and 4 and 6 P. M.

Besides this there were the Gloucester, and Beverly, and Manchester, and Marblehead, and Lynn stages.

At a town-meeting held on the 29th of January, 1836, "to act on the petition of George Peabody and others to ascertain the sense of the town in relation to the adoption of a city form of government and to take any measure in relation thereto." Leverett Saltonstall was chosen moderator. It was voted on motion of Elias Hasket Derby "that a committee of three be chosen from each ward, who, together with the selectmen, shall be a committee to take the subject into consideration and to report at an adjournment of this meeting as to the expediency of adopting a city form of government," and the following were chosen to serve on the committee:

Ward 1. Thomas Farless.	Ward 3. Jos S. Cabot.
Joseph G. Waters.	Wm. B. Pike.
Joseph Hodges.	Leverett Saltonstall.
Ward 2. Holton J. Breed.	Ward 4. N. L. Rogers.
Nathl. Silsbee, Jr.	Michael Shepard.
J. T. Andrew.	Eben Symonds.

The town at that time had been divided into districts or wards under the provisions of law now contained in the thirty-fourth chapter of the General Statutes.

At the adjourned meeting held on the 15th of February it was voted in accordance with the report of the committee that it was expedient to adopt a city form of government, and that the committee with six added, be instructed to draw up and submit to the Legislature an act for that purpose, which shall not take effect unless accepted by the people. Joseph Peabody, Benjamin Merrill, Gideon Barstow, Eben Shillaber, Isaac Cushing and Nathaniel J. Lord were added to the committee.

An act "to establish the city of Salem" was approved by Edward Everett, Governor, March 23, 1836, and warrants were at once issued for a town-meeting to be held April 4th. At this meeting Benjamin Merrill was chosen moderator, and on the question of the acceptance of the charter eight hundred and two votes were cast, of which six hundred and seventeen were in the affirmative. On the 25th of April an election was held for mayor, six aldermen and twenty-four members of the council. Of 1104 votes for mayor Leverett Saltonstall received 752; Perley Putnam, 260; George Peabody, 56; and David Putnam, 36. The organization of the government took place in the Tabernacle Church, on Monday, May 9th, when, after a prayer by Rev. Dr. Brazer and the administering of the oath of office by David Cummins, one of the justices of the Court of Common Pleas, the mayor delivered his address. Thus the second incorporated city in the Commonwealth entered upon its career. Boston had been incorporated only fourteen years before, February 22, 1822, and Lowell, the third city, was incorporated less than a month afterwards, on the 1st of April, 1836.

It is not proposed in this chapter, somewhat disjointed and fragmentary in its character, to enter into any details of the history of the city. It is intended merely to supply such deficiencies as other chapters covering various specified departments necessarily leave.

It was not until December, 1837, that any movement was made towards the adoption of a city seal. On the 18th of that month an order was introduced into the Board of Aldermen, providing for the appointment of two members with such as the Council might join to consider and report upon the expediency of procuring a seal. The Council concurred, and on the 19th of February, 1838, at a meeting of the Aldermen an ordinance was introduced providing that a device should be adopted with the word Salem in the centre, inclosed in an olive wreath, and in a circle round the margin the words "Founded Sept^{r}., 1628. City Incorporated, 1836." This ordinance was passed by the Aldermen on the date of its introduction, but in the Council it was referred on the 5th of March to its committee on the seal, who on the 12th reported a recommendation which was adopted that the further consideration of the ordinance be referred to the next City Council. On the 9th of April, 1838, the ordinance was taken from the files and referred to a joint special committee, consisting of Aldermen Peabody and Holman, and Councilmen Oliver, Putnam and Hunt. Mr. George Peabody submitted a device to the committee of which he was the chairman, which with some alterations was approved. On the 25th of February, 1839, the committee through Henry K. Oliver, chairman, on the part of the Council reported to the Council "an ordinance to establish the City Seal." Be it ordained by the City Council of the city of Salem that the following be the device of the seal of said city, to wit: In the centre thereof a shield bearing upon it a ship under full sail, approaching a coast, designated by the costume of the person standing upon it and by the trees near him, as a portion of the East Indies; beneath the shield this motto, "Divitis Indiæ usque ad ultimum sinum," signifying

"To the farthest port of the rich east," and above the shield a dove bearing an olive branch in her mouth. In the circumference encircling the shield the words:

"Solyma condita, 1628.
Salem founded, 1628."

"Civitatis regimine donata, 1636.
Incorporated as a City, 1836."

The ordinance was recommitted with instructions to ascertain the correct date of the settlement of the city, but finally adopted after substituting 1626 for 1628, and changing Solyma to Salem. The committee to whom the date of settlement was referred reported that they had "investigated the subject and do not find any reason for changing the date as at present affixed to the proposed seal. As the history of the settlement of the town is so well known, they do not think it necessary to bring forward all the facts in relation to it. The whole question seems to turn upon the point whether the settlement is to date from the time when Roger Conant, Peter Palfray and others came here in 1626, and built a few houses, but without the means of remaining, or the time in 1628, when Endicott came out with colonists, and all the means necessary for founding a colony. The subject may admit of some argument, but the committee are of opinion that it would be better to fix the period of foundation of the town as it has been generally regarded, and will be found stated in many of our valuable gazeteers and other similar books in 1628, as this was undoubtedly the first permanent settlement." This report was signed by George Peabody, chairman, but notwithstanding its recommendation the date was changed as we have seen to 1626, and the seal was finally adopted March 11, 1839, nearly three years after the incorporation of the city.

The introduction of water into Salem, and the final evolution of its present water system cover a period of more than sixty years. The first practical scheme for the supply of water for the inhabitants of Salem and Danvers was conceived in 1796. About that time a wave of excitement swept over the State concerning the supply of water to towns, and during the last five years of the last century a number of water companies were incorporated. Luther Eames and others, of Boston, were incorporated Feb. 27, 1795; Lemuel Stewart and others, of Williamstown, Feb. 26, 1796; Theodore Sedgwick and others, of Stockbridge, June 15, 1796; John Bacon and others, of Richmond, November 24, 1796; Calvin Whiting and others, of Dedham, June 15, 1796; Chandler Robbins and others, of the South Parish of Hallowell, then in Massachusetts, February 9, 1797; Eli Stearns and others, of Lancaster, February 14, 1797; and Wm. Davis and others, of Plymouth, February 27, 1797.

A meeting of those interested in the scheme was held December 30, 1796, at the Sun Tavern, and those present were Abel Lawrence, William Gray, Jr., Samuel Gray, Joshua Ward, Ichabod Nichols, William Orne, Jerath Pierce, William Lang, Nathaniel West, Jacob Ashton, Squiers Shove, John Jenks, Edward Southwick, Jonathan Dean, Joseph Fenno, Benjamin Carpenter, Abner Chase, Philip Chase, Aaron Wait, Jacob Crowninshield, Joseph Aborn, James Bott, Edward Pulling, Folger Pope, John Gardner, Jr., Samuel Derby, John Norris and John Daland. Mr. Ashton was chairman, and John Jenks clerk, and a committee was appointed consisting of Edward Southwick, of Danvers, William Gray, Jr., and Joshua Ward, of Salem, to procure an act of incorporation. A charter was accordingly obtained, dated March 9th, 1797, under the style of the "Proprietors of the Salem and Danvers Aqueduct." The charter provided that the towns of Salem and Danvers should have the privilege of placing conductors into the pipes for the purpose of drawing such water therefrom as might be necessary "when any mansion house or barn or other building" should be on fire, without paying therefor.

The proprietors organized April 7, 1797, by the choice of William Gray, Jr., president; Jacob Ashton, vice-president; John Jenks, treasurer; Joshua Ward and John Norris, of Salem, and Edward Southwick, of Danvers, directors. Thomas Nichols was chosen agent. The capital was fixed at ten thousand dollars, divided into a hundred shares of one hundred dollars each. The plant of the company consisted at first of a large hogshead sunk into the spongy ground in the neighborhood of Brown's and Spring Pond, of pine logs with a three inch bore, and a reservoir on Gallows Hill, ten feet deep and twenty-four feet square. The works were completed in the spring of 1799, and water was supplied to families at a yearly rate of five dollars. This rate was raised the next year to sixty cents per month. In 1802 a new fountain was built on land bought of William Shillaber to the southwest of the old one, and the supply was sufficient to enable the company to lead a pipe to Gray's Wharf and sell water to the shipping at twelve and a half cents per hogshead.

In 1804 the old logs were replaced by new ones with five-inch bore and paid for by assessments on the shares which, up to 1807, amounted to two hundred and sixty-five dollars per share, or twenty-six thousand five hundred dollars in all. In 1805 a new tariff of rates was adopted similar to that of the Boston company, to wit:—

For a family of five persons	Eight dollars.
For a family of six and less than twelve	Ten "
For a family of twelve or upwards	Twelve "
For a public or boarding house	Twelve "
For a West India Goods Store, from	Eight to Twelve "
For a mansion house and West India Goods Store under the same roof, to be supplied from one tube	Sixteen dollars.

Up to November, 1807, the company had expended on their works, including lost dividends, forty-four thousand one hundred dollars, making the cost of the shares four hundred and forty-one dollars each. In 1810 William Gray, Jr., resigned the presidency, and was succeeded by Jacob Ashton. In 1816, owing to

a deficiency of water, all branches leading to manufactories, bathing houses and stables were cut off, and precautions were taken against waste. At a date not far from 1817 another reservoir was built on Sewall Street with a capacity of twenty-two thousand gallons, and up to 1818, from 1807, regular dividends, with three exceptions, were paid. In 1819 an arrangement was made with the Salem Iron Company to erect a boring mill, and for the first time the logs were bored by machinery. During the period extending from 1818 to 1821 the earnings of the company were expended in laying new yellow pine logs, and very soon after arrangements were made with a view of connecting the pipes by iron castings. Up to this time it is presumed that in Salem as in other places one end of the log was tapered down and driven into its fellow log, the bore of which had been reamed out to receive it. An iron band encircled the butt of each log to prevent splitting when driven into. The iron connections were tubes tapered slightly on the outside at each end and with a flange in the middle. This flange served two purposes, preventing unequal entrances of the two ends of the tube, and when settled in the body of the wood by the operation of driving the logs home, lessening the danger of a leak.

In the winter of 1829–30 Mr. Ashton, the president, died, and Joseph Peabody took his place. From 1821 to about 1834 the affairs of the company went on smoothly, and for the most part regular dividends were paid. Little complaint was heard of a scarcity of water, but this was owing less to the abundance of supply than to the low standard of people's wants compared with those of to-day, and to the free use of pumps and wells owned either by individuals or the town. In 1855 there were no less than sixty town pumps in various streets, of which the following is a list:—

Two in English Street.....near Derby Street.
One in Derby Street.....near Turner Street.
Two in Derby Street.....near the Custom House.
Two in Essex Street.....near Herbert Street.
Two in Neptune Street.....near Elm Street.
Two in Liberty Street.....near the Centre.
Two in Derby Square.
Two in Washington Street.....corner of Essex Street.
Two in Bridge Street.....near Pleasant Street.
Two at foot of Central Street.
Two in East Street.....near Essex Street.
Two in Essex Street.....near Daniels Street.
Two in Bath Street.....near Newbury Street.
Two in Brown Street.....near Winter Street.
Two in St. Peter Street.....near Brown Street.
Two in Marlboro Street.....near the Court House.
Two in Mill Street.....near Norman Street.
Two in High Street.....near the Centre.
One in Crombie Street.....near the Centre.
Two in Essex Street.....near Summer Street.
Two in Essex Street.....near Hamilton Street.
Two in Essex Street.....near Flint Street.
Two in Essex Street.....near Buffum's Corner.
One in Sewall Street.....near the Centre.
Two in Federal Street.....near North Street.
Two in Federal Street.....near Beckford Street.
Two in Federal Street.....near Dean Street.
Two in Boston Street.....near Federal Street.
Two in Boston Street.....near Smith's Store.
Two in North Salem.
One in South Salem.....near Peabody Street.
Two in South Salem.....near Putnam's Store.

In 1834 an act of incorporation was obtained by another company, but its operations were successfully checked by a reduction of the tariff, and no action was taken under its charter. In the same year a six-inch iron pipe was laid in Essex Street from North to Newbury Streets, at a cost of five thousand dollars, which sum was paid out of the earnings of the company. At various other times new pipes were laid, old lines of pipe extended and the fountain reservoirs improved and enlarged, so that in 1844 it was estimated that the company had expended one hundred thousand dollars on their works. In 1849 the condition of the company had become so perplexing, owing to increasing demands for water without adequate means of supplying it, that its stockholders became somewhat discouraged. At this juncture the steam cotton mill felt greatly the need of water, and its proprietors conceived the project of buying up the shares of the Aqueduct and securing control of the corporation. The result was a revolution in the organization of the company and the election of a new board of management, consisting of William D. Waters, president; Ebenezer Sutton, vice-president; and Joseph S. Leavitt, John Lovejoy, William Lummis and C. M. Endicott, directors. Under the new management the number of shares was increased to one thousand at one hundred dollars each, a line of pipe was laid to Spring Pond; the capital was again increased to two hundred thousand dollars and before the summer of 1850 an iron main pipe of twelve inches bore, measuring sixteen thousand one hundred and sixty-five feet, was completed, with a reservoir capable of holding six hundred and fifty-two thousand gallons. From this time on until 1860 improvements and extensions were constantly going on, iron pipes replacing the decayed wooden ones and sources of supply being enlarged to such proportions that at the last mentioned date a statement of the affairs of the company showed a capital stock of two hundred thousand dollars, forty miles of pipe including branches, thirty-six hundred takers, and reservoirs and fountains of one million one hundred thousand gallons capacity besides Spring Pond of fifty-nine acres as a reserve. But still the supply was inadequate to meet the demand, and in 1865, with a view to defeat the movement then going on to build city water-works, a connection was made with Brown's Pond, and a sixteen-inch main laid as far as the head of Federal Street. But the movement on the part of the city could not be checked,—it went successfully on, and the result was the retirement of the old company and the use of its pipes for the supply of the adjoining town of Peabody.

It is not necessary to give a detailed history of the present water system. A brief sketch will be suffi-

cient. On the 12th of October, 1863, John Bertram and ninety-three others petitioned the City Council "to take the necessary measures to procure from the Legislature power to establish city water-works." On the 23d of November, 1863, the City Council chose in convention, Stephen H. Phillips, James B. Curwen and James Upton, a committee to collect evidence showing the necessity of a larger supply of water and submit the same to the Legislature in support of the petition which the mayor had been directed to present when action was taken on the petition of Mr. Bertram. The petition of the mayor, supplemented by a second petition, asked for authority to take water from Humphrey's, Brown's and Spring Ponds and Wenham Lake. At the hearing before the Committee of the Legislature, on the 29th of February, 1864, the petitioners were represented by Robert S. Rantoul, and were opposed by the Aqueduct Company. On the 13th of May, 1864, an act was approved which provided that the city might take water from either Wenham Lake, or Brown's and Spring Ponds, and that the City Council should determine by joint ballot at least fourteen days before the first Monday in December, 1864, which source they would select, the act to be void unless accepted by a majority of the voters at a meeting to be held on that day. On the 14th of November, 1864, the City Council decided by a vote of twenty-two to five to select Wenham Lake, and on the 5th of December, the citizens voted to accept the act by a vote of ten hundred and twenty-three yeas to one hundred and fifty-one nays.

On the 22d of May, 1865, Stephen H. Phillips, James B. Curwen and James Upton, were chosen water commissioners, and on the 26th of June, Franklin T. Sanborn and Peter Silver were chosen in the places of Messrs. Curwen and Upton, who declined to serve. Mr. Phillips was made chairman, James Slade was appointed engineer, Charles A. Swan assistant engineer and Daniel H. Johnson, Jr., clerk. After many vexatious delays, on the 12th of February, 1866, the commissioners advertised for proposals for the construction of a reservoir on Chipman's Hill, in Beverly, and on the 18th of May the work was begun, by Collins & Boyle, the contractors. In July a Worthington pumping engine was bought at a cost of forty thousand dollars, and in the same month Willard P. Phillips was chosen commissioner in the place of his brother, Stephen H. Phillips, who had resigned. In October, contracts were made with J. W. and J. F. Starr, for six thousand feet of thirty inch, and twenty-five thousand feet of twenty inch iron pipe, and in the following April, with Boynton Brothers, for a pipe bridge and syphon at Bass River.

On the 3d of February, 1868, a contract was made with George H. Norman, of Newport, R. I., to furnish and lay the iron and cement distribution pipes, and to set hydrants and gates. On Wednesday, December 2, 1868, the filling of the distribution pipes commenced, and on the 25th the houses and citizens were supplied. On the 19th of November, 1869, Mr. Phillips, on the part of the commissioners, transferred the charge of the works to the City Council, up to which time the amount expended was one million dollars.

Wenham Lake is situated in Beverly, and Wenham has an area of three hundred and twenty acres, with an extreme depth of fifty-three feet and a level of thirty-one feet above mean high tide. Its distance from City Hall is four miles and six-tenths, and it is capable of supplying two and a half millions of gallons of water daily. The reservoir on Chipman's Hill is four hundred feet square, with a capacity of twenty million gallons, and a level, when filled, one hundred and forty-two feet above mean high tide.

The works are in the charge of a board of five members, one of whom is chosen annually by concurrent vote of the City Council for the term of five years. Up to December 1, 1885, the total cost of the works was $1,423,783.48, and the income from rates for the year 1885 was $62,886.47. The number of takers is at present about 8000.

The Witchcraft Delusion.—The extraordinary delusion concerning witchcraft which prevailed in Salem during the latter part of the seventeenth century must not be omitted in this narrative. It furnishes material for a sad chapter in the history of the town, and one which every lover of his kind pitying their infirmities, and sympathizing with their woes, would gladly see expunged and forgotten. It was no new delusion, and in Salem was only peculiar in the extent to which it possessed and influenced the minds of men. It was a part of the theology of the times, and had been handed down from generation to generation, from the earliest days of Christian history. In the 18th verse of the 22d chapter of Exodus it is written, "Thou shalt not suffer a witch to live." In the 27th verse of the 20th chapter of Leviticus it is also written, "A man also or a woman that hath a familiar spirit, or that is a wizard, shall surely be put to death; they shall stone them with stones; their blood shall be upon them," and in the 18th chapter of Deuteronomy are found these words: "There shall not be found among you any one that maketh his son or his daughter to pass through the fire, or that useth divination, or an observer of times, or an enchanter or a witch; or a charmer or a consulter with familiar spirits, or a wizard, or a necromancer, for all that do these things are an abomination unto the Lord; and because of these abominations the Lord thy God doth drive them out from before thee."

A belief in witchcraft was universal, for it rested on what was thought to be divine authority. It was confined to no class, no order of minds, no degree of education. It was as much a matter of fact as the fires of hell and infant damnation. Nor was the punishment of death judged by the standards of the day excessive or unjust. As early as 1646 the Massachusetts Gene-

ral Court, following scriptural command, passed a law that "if any man or woman be a witch, that is, hath or consulteth with a familiar spirit they shall be put to death." At the same time thirteen other offenses were made punishable by death in accordance with quoted passages of Scripture; nor does this seem so strange when we reflect that the only lingering argument for capital punishment in our own day rests on the Old Testament books of Exodus and Numbers and Leviticus, which declare that "he that killeth any man shall surely be put to death."

So far was obedience to Scripture authority carried in dealing with actual or constructive offenses that after the defeat and death of King Philip, in 1676, most of the ministers of the Massachusetts and Plymouth Colonies who were consulted as to what disposition should be made of his innocent son quoted from the Bible to justify their opinion that he should be put to death. Among those consulted were Rev. John Cotton of Plymouth, Rev. Samuel Arnold of Marshfield and Rev. Increase Mather of Boston. The two former, in a united opinion, said "they humbly conceive on serious consideration, that children of notorious traitors, rebels and murderers, especially of such as have been principal leaders and actors in such horrid villanies, and that against a whole nation; yea, the whole Israel of God may be involved in the guilt of their parents, and may *Salva republica* be adjudged to death, as to us seems evident by the Scripture instances of Saul, Achan, Haman, the children of whom were cut off by the sword of justice for the transgressions of their parents, although concerning some of these children it may be manifest that they were not capable of being co-actors therein."

Mr. Mather said: "It is necessary that some effectual course should be taken about him. He makes me think of Hadad, who was but a little child when his father (the chief sachem of the Edomites) was killed by Joab; and had not others fled away with him I am apt to think that David would have taken a course that Hadad should never have proved a scourge to the next generation."

This incident is quoted to show how potent in the witchcraft age what was believed to be literally the word of God was in its control over the judgments and actions of men.

Nor was the delusion confined to New England. It prevailed wherever the Scriptures were read and were recognized as authority. Chief Justice Matthew Hale, in his charge to the jury, on the trial of Rose Cullender and Amy Deering for witchcraft, in 1665, said: "That there were such creatures as witches he made no doubt at all. For first the Scriptures had affirmed so much. Secondly, the wisdom of all nations had provided laws against such persons, which is an argument in their confidence of such a crime. And such hath been the judgment of the Kingdom, as appears by an Act of Parliament which hath provided punishment proportionate to the quality of the offence."

The expression of such an opinion by the highest legal authority in England, and the existence of the statute to which he refers are sufficient to illustrate the universal prevalence of the delusion and the belief in the necessity of the severest punishment of the guilty.

It was not Salem witchcraft, but the witchcraft of the world. The people of Salem were constituted like others of their generation. The inflammable material lying hidden within the delusion existed in every community; it happened to be Salem where the spark ignited them and caused the consuming flame. It has been estimated that in Europe during the sixteeth and seventeenth centuries, more than a hundred thousand of both sexes were convicted of witchcraft and burned, drowned or hanged.

All through the earlier life of the American colonies there had been what might be called sporadic cases of supposed witchcraft which finally resulted like sporadic cases of disease in a violent epidemic at Salem. Hon. Wm. D. Northend in an address delivered December 8, 1885, before the Essex Bar Association says that "within half a century before the trials for witchcraft in this (Essex) county, accusations against persons for witchcraft had been made in Boston, Dorchester, Cambridge, Springfield, Hadley, Groton, Newbury, Rowley, Salisbury, Hartford, Hampton, Portsmouth and Salmon Falls in New Hampshire. During this period in the colony five persons were executed upon conviction of witchcraft, as follows: Margaret Jones, of Charlestown, executed at Boston, June 15, 1648; the wife of Henry Lake, of Dorchester, about 1650; Annie Hibbins, of Boston, June 19, 1656; Mary Parsons, of Springfield, May 29, 1657; and Goody Glover, of Boston, November 16, 1686."

There had been also accusations within the county of Essex and in Salem and its vicinity. In 1658 John Godfrey, of Andover, was accused of causing losses in the estate of several people and "some affliction in their bodies also." In November, 1669, "Goody Burt," a widow, was prosecuted, a physician testifying that no natural cause could have led to such effects as were wrought by her. Phillip Reed, a physician, preferred similar charges against Margaret Gifford, and in 1679 Caleb Powell was arrested as the warrant of arrest stated "for suspicion of working with the Devil to the molesting of William Morse and his family."

It is worthy of note that the delusion concerning witchcraft never made any considerable headway in the Plymouth colony. The people of that colony probably had as firm a faith in witchcraft as the people of Massachusetts, but it never grew into a panic as it did in the sister colony. Their laws against witchcraft were as severe as those of Massachusetts, and death was the punishment for "solemn compaction or conversing with the devil by way of witchcraft or conjunction." Only two cases, however, were

brought before the courts of the colony, in one of which the accuser was sentenced to be either whipped or to make public acknowledgement of her offense, and in the other the accused was acquitted. The following record of these cases may be interesting to readers:

"General Court, March 5, 1660.

"Joseph Sylvester, of Marshfield, doth acknowledge to owe and to stand indebted unto his majesty, his heirs, &c., in the sum of twenty pounds sterling in good and current pay; the condition of this obligation is that in case Dina Sylvester shall and doth appear at the Court of assistants to be holden at Plymouth, the first Tuesday in May next, and attend the Courts determination in reference to a complaint made by Wm. Holmes and his wife about a matter of defamation; that then this obligation to be void or otherwise to remain in full force and virtue.

"In witness the above bounden hath hereunto set his hand the 9th of March, 1660.

"Joseph Sylvester.

"Dina Sylvester being examined saith the bear she saw was about a stone's throw from the highway when she saw it; and being examined and asked what manner of tail the bear had, she said she could not tell for his head was towards her.

"May 9, 1661. Concerning the complaint of Wm. Holmes, of Marshfield, against Dinah Sylvester for accusing his wife to be a witch. The Court have sentenced that the said Dina shall either be publicly whipped and pay the sum of five pounds to the said Wm. Holmes, or in case she the said Dina Sylvester shall make public acknowledgement of her fault in the premises that then she shall bear only the charge the Plaintiff hath been at in the prosecution of his said suit. The latter of which was chosen and done by the said Dinah Sylvester, viz., a public acknowledgement made as followeth.

"May 9, 1661. To the Hon. Court assembled, whereas I have been convicted in matter of defamation concerning Goodwife Holmes, I do hereby acknowledge I have injured my neighbor and have sinned against God in so doing, though I had entertained hard thoughts against the woman; for it had been my duty to declare my grounds, if I had any, unto some magistrate in a way of God and not to have divulged my thoughts to others to the womans defamation. Therefore I do acknowledge my sin in it, and do humbly beg this Honorable Court to forgive me and all other Christian people that be offended at it, and do promise by the help of God to do so no more; and, although, I do not remember all that the witnesses do testify, I do rather mistrust my memory and submit to the evidence.

"The mark of Dinah Sylvester.

"March 6, 1676-77.

"The Inditement of Mary Ingham.

"Mary Ingham: Thou art indited by the name of Mary Ingham, the wife of Thomas Ingham, of the towne of Scituate in the jurisdiction of New Plymouth for that thou, haveing not the feare of God before thyne eyes, hast by the healp of the devill in a way of witchcraft or sorcery, maliciously procured much hurt, mischeiffe and paine unto the body of Mehittable Woodworth, the daughter of Walter Woodworth, of Scituate aforesaid, and some others and particularly causing her the said Mehittable to fall into violent fitts, and causing great paine unto severall parts of her body att severall times, soe as shee the said Mehittable Woodworth hath bin almost bereaved of her sencis, and hath greatly languished, to her much suffering thereby, and the procuring of great greiffe sorrow and charge to her parents; all which thou hast procured and don against the law of God, and to his great dishonor and contrary to our sov lord the Kinge, his crowne and dignitee.

"The said Mary Ingham did putt herselfe on the tryall of God and the country and was cleared of this inditement in processe of law by a jury of twelve men whose names follow:

"Sworn.	Mr. Thos. Huckens.	Sworn.	Marke Snow.
	John Wadsworth.		Joseph Bartlett.
	John Howland.		John Richmond.
	Abraham Jackson.		Jerud Talbutt.
	Benajah Pratt.		John Foster.
	John Blacke.		Seth Pope.

"The jury brought in not guilty, and soe the said prisoner was cleared as above said."

While the witchcraft panic never extended to the old colony, the case of Dinah Sylvester, above quoted, bears the strongest internal evidence of the deep-seated belief there in witchcraft itself. That it should have been considered a serious defamation of character, and a deadly wound to personal reputation to be charged with communing with the devil shows that such a communion was an offense in the existence of which the whole community had faith, and one as real and positive as murder or any other well defined crime. It is probable that if at the commencement of the panic an accuser had received the punishment awarded to Dinah Sylvester, it would never have passed beyond its incipient and opening stage.

Various causes have been assigned to the outbreak of the excitement in Salem and its mad, but fortunately short, career. None of them, however, are satisfactory. Like vitiated blood in the human system, it gradually and necessarily came to a head, and as the location of the ulcer which gives relief to the body depends on some trivial and unknown cause, so in some mysterious and accidental way Salem became the gathering point from which was to be thrown off that insane delusion, which had for generations and centuries poisoned and terrified the minds of men. In the early months of the year 1692 the panic began. On the 29th of February warrants were issued for the arrest of Tituba, an Indian servant of Mr. Parris, Sarah Osborn, a woman who was bed-ridden, and Sarah Good, a woman of ill-repute, who, upon the complaint of Joseph Hutchinson, Edward Putnam, Thomas Putnam and Thomas Preston, were charged with afflicting sundry persons in remarkable and unaccountable ways. Other accusations and arrests speedily followed. Mr. Upham, in his exhaustive work on witchcraft, says,—"There was no longer any doubt in the mass of the community that the devil had effected a lodgment in Salem village. Church members, persons of all social positions, of the highest repute and profession of piety, eminent for visible manifestations of devotion, and of every age, had joined his standard and become his active allies and confederates." Arrest followed arrest, each arrest adding to the panic, and the panic leading to new arrests. On the arrival of Sir William Phipps at Boston on the 14th of May, 1692, bearing the charter of the "Province of Massachusetts Bay in New England," and his commission as its Governor, the prisons at Salem, Ipswich, Boston and Cambridge were full of persons awaiting trial for the crime of witch-

craft. Governor Phipps was a believer in witchcraft, as was William Stoughton, the Lieutenant-Governor, and took immediate steps to bring the accused to trial. Under the charter the General Court alone had the power to establish courts of justice, but by an unwarrantable usurpation of authority, the Governor organized a Court of Oyer and Terminer to act in and for the counties of Suffolk, Essex and Middlesex, and appointed William Stoughton, of Dorchester, chief justice, and Nathaniel Saltonstall, of Haverhill, Major John Richards, of Boston, Major Bartholomew Gedney, of Salem, Wait Winthrop, Captain Samuel Sewall and Peter Sargent, of Boston, associate justices. Mr. Saltonstall declined the appointment, and Jonathan Corwin, of Salem, was appointed in his place. Stephen Sewall was appointed clerk, and Thomas Newton attorney-general, the latter being succeeded in office, July 22, 1692, by Anthony Checkley. George Corwin, of Salem, was appointed sheriff. The commissions of the court were dated May 27, 1692, and the court convened at the court-house in Salem on the 2d of June. The court-house and the Salem town-house were combined in one building, which stood in the middle of what is now Washington Street, near Lynde Street, and facing south. Under the colony a law had been passed, as has already been stated, making witchcraft a crime, and fixing as a penalty the punishment of death. Sir Edward Andros during his administration adopted the colony laws, but after his expulsion and under the new charter it was supposed that prosecutions for witchcraft could only be made under the old English statute of James the First. The first trial was that of Bridget Bishop, of Salem. She was convicted on the 8th of June and executed on Gallows Hill on the 10th. On the day of her conviction the General Court came together and passed an act reviving the old colonial law, and under that law it is presumed the subsequent trials were held. After the conviction of Bridget Bishop the court adjourned to June 29th. During the recess the Governor and Council sought the advice of the principal ministers in Boston and vicinity, who on the 15th of June replied in writing, advising that all the proceedings should be "managed with an exceeding tenderness towards those who may be complained of, especially if they have been persons formerly of an unblemished reputation;" "that the evidence ought certainly to be more considerable than barely the accused persons being represented by a spectre unto the afflicted, and that they should not esteem alterations made in the sufferers by a look or touch of the accused to be an infallible evidence of guilt." They nevertheless recommended "speedy and vigorous prosecutions," according to the directions given in the laws of God and the wholesome statutes of the English nation for the detection of witchcraft.

The court again met on the 29th of June, and continued with several adjournments to September 17th, when it adjourned to the first Tuesday in November, before which time it was formally dissolved. During its various sessions twenty-seven persons were convicted and condemned to death, as follows,—Bridget Bishop, Sarah Good, Sarah Wildes, Elizabeth How, Susanna Martin, Rebecca Nurse, George John Proctor, George Jacobs, John Willard, Martha Carrier, Martha Corey, Mary Eastey, Alice Parker, Ann Pudeator, Margaret Scott, Wilmot Reed, Samuel Wardwell, Mary Parker, Elizabeth Proctor, Dorcas Hoar, Mary Bradbury, Rebecca Eames, Mary Lacy, Ann Foster, Abigail Hobbs and Abigail Faulkner. Of these Elizabeth Proctor was pardoned on the ground of insufficient evidence, and the six following her on the list finally escaped punishment. Such is the record of a court established expressly for the trial of crimes punishable by death, but without a justice on its bench educated to the law. In such a court unfamiliar with judicial methods, ignorant of the rules of evidence and not untouched by the popular frenzy, the trials were little more than a formal condemnation of persons already tried and convicted by the judgment of an excited and reckless people.

After the dissolution of the Court of Oyer and Terminer, the Superior Court of Judicature was established in November, 1692, with William Stoughton chief justice, and Thomas Danforth, Wait Winthrop, John Richards and Samuel Sewall associate justices. This court had jurisdiction in cases of witchcraft, and at its session in Essex County in the January following, indictments for the offense were found against fifty persons, and all who were tried were acquitted except three, and these were pardoned by the Governor. All not tried were discharged on payment of thirty shillings each to the attorney general. At the first session of the Court of Middlesex County several persons in prison under indictments were tried but all were acquitted. The storm of infatuation had burst and spent its force, the moral atmosphere of the community was cleared and the sober judgment of men once more held sway. Let the present generation while it passes judgment on the delusions of a former age be sure that it is itself, free from delusions and follies if less dangerous and cruel, yet as little conformable to the standards and tests which wisdom and common sense should apply to the acts of men.

Little remains to be mentioned in this chapter. The industries, the schools, the churches, the commerce, the military, and many of the leading associations, are fully treated in other chapters. The following perhaps imperfect list will furnish some idea of the field in which the literary and scientific and benevolent tastes and energies of the people of Salem find opportunities for their exercise,—

Salem Athenæum	incorporated in 1810
Salem Lyceum	instituted in 1830
Young Men's Union	instituted in 1855
Salem Marine Society	instituted in 1766
East India Marine Society	instituted in 1799
Salem Fraternity	organized in 1869

Young Men's Christian Association.....organized in 1858
Plummer Farm School.....incorporated in 1855
Salem Hospital .....organized in 1873
Salem Dispensary.....organized in 1820
Old Ladies' Home.....founded in 1861
Salem Charitable Mechanic Association.....organized in 1817
Harmony Grove Cemetery Corporation.....incorporated in 1840
Salem Female Charitable Society.. .....incorporated in 1804
Samaritan Society.....organized in 1833
Salem Female Employment Society.....incorporated in 1867
Seamen's Widow and Orphan Association...incorporated in 1844
Seamen's Orphans' and Children's Friend Society.. ..inc. in 1841
City Orphan Asylum of Salem Sisters of Charity..founded in 1866
St. Peter's Guild.....organized in 1872
American Association for the Advancement of Science..org. 1840
Bertram Home for Aged Men.....incorporated in 1877
Essex Institute.. .....founded in 1848
Association for Relief of Aged and Destitute Women in Salem, organized in 1860
Notre Dame Educational Institutes.
Peabody Academy of Science.....founded in 1867
Woman's Friend Society and Working Women's Bureau, organized in 1876
American Hibernian Society.....organized in 1886
American Legion of Honor.....organized in 1879
Ancient Order of Hibernians.
Ancient Order of United Workmen in three lodges.
The Oriental Lodge, No. 4.....organized in 1878
The John Endicott Lodge, No. 12.....organized in 1879
Puritan Lodge, No. 62.....organized in 1886
Bethel Aid Society.....organized in 1880
Colonial Club.....organized in 1882
Boston and Maine R. R. East Division Car Department Mutual Benefit Association.....organized in 1869
Jennie Wade Council, No. 2, Daughters of Liberty...org. in 1877
Essex Agricultural Society.....incorporated in 1818
Essex Bar Association.....organized in 1856
Essex South District Medical Association.....organized in 1805
Franklin Mutual Benefit Association.....incorporated in 1882
Phil. Sheridan Post 34, Grand Army of the Republic..org. in 1867
Improved Order of Red Men.
Naumkeag Tribe, No. 3.....instituted in 1886
Knights of Honor Salem Lodge, No. 150. .....organized in 1875
Knights of Pythias North Star Lodge, No. 38...organized in 1870
The Liberal Club,.....organized in 1882
Loyal Association, No. 5, Stationary Engineers..organized in 1883
Massachusetts Catholic Order of Foresters.....organized in 1880
Master Carpenters' and Builders' Association...organized in 1886
Naumkeag Grocers' Association.....organized in 1885
Local Branch, No. 362, of Order of Iron Hall..organized in 1886
Niagara Council, No. 11, of United American Mechanics, organized in 1872
Roger Williams Council, No. 94, of Order of United Friends, organized in 1883
North Salem Union Chapel Association.....organized in 1881
John Endicott Colony, No. 9, of Pilgrim Fathers.....org. in 1880
Hawthorne Council, No. 331, of Royal Arcanum.....org. in 1879
Salem Council of same, No. 14.....organized in 1877
Salem Firemen's Relief Association..... .....organized in 1878
Salem High School Association.....organized in 1867
Salem Mutual Benefit Association.....organized in 1873
Salem Oratorio Society.....organized in 1868
Salem Police Relief Association.....organized in 1877
Salem Relief Committee .....organized in 1873
Salem Schubert Club.....organized in 1878
Salem Seamen's Bethel Society.....organized in 1883
Salem Society of Amateur Photographers.....organized in 1885
Salem Society of Deaf Mutes.....incorporated in 1878
Salem Symphony Club.....organized in 1885
Colonel Henry Merritt Camp No. 8 of Sons of Veterans, organized in 1884
Urban Club.....organized in 1884
Ward One Associates.....organized in 1883
Twelve Temperance Associations.
Winslow Lewis Commandery, Knights Templar.....org. in 1865
Salem Council Royal and Select Masters (Masons)...inst. in 1818
Washington Royal Arch Chapter (Masons)..... instituted in 1811
Sutton Lodge of Perfection (Masons).....instituted in 1864
Essex Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons.....chartered in 1793
Starr King Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons chartered in 1864
Essex County Masonic Mutual Relief Association.....org. in 1875
Grand United Order of Odd Fellows.
Royal Enterprise Lodge, No. 1895.....instituted in 1878
Naumkeag Encampment, No. 13, I. O. O. F.....organized in 1845
Salem Encampment, No. 11, I. O. O. F.....organized in 1884
Unity Canton, No. 5, Patriarchs Militant, I. O. O. F..org. in 1883
Essex Lodge, No. 26, I. O. O. F.....organized in 1843
Fraternity Lodge, No. 118, I. O. O. F.....organized in 1846
Union Relief Committee, I. O. O. F.....organized in 1877
Union Lodge, No. 11, Degree of Rebekah.....organized in 1870
Odd Fellows' Mutual Benefit Association.. .....organized in 1869
Three bicycle clubs.
Three boat clubs.
One yacht club.

In closing this chapter, it is only necessary to add a few statistics. According to the last census in 1885, the population of Salem was 28,084, and the valuation in the same year $27,765,824. During the year 1885, 1599 vessels arrived at Salem, 114 of which were from foreign ports, and their aggregate tonnage was 270,003,29 tons. The receipts for duties in the same year were $20,145.01, and the customs expenses $7,095.15. If to the business by sea which these figures represent the large inland commerce by rail be added, it is easy to see that while Salem has lost the foreign trade upon which, as its seal indicates, its early prosperity was based, it has nevertheless made a satisfactory advance in its industries, its population and wealth.

CHAPTER X.

SALEM—(*Continued*).

SOCIETIES, ETC.

THE LITERARY AND SCIENTIFIC SOCIETIES.[1]—A history of the literature of Salem, giving an account of those who have individually devoted themselves to this pursuit or collectively in the organization of the various institutions of learning, for the encouragement of which a beneficent public spirit has existed from the beginning, and has worthily exerted itself as exigencies called it forth, would form an interesting and important chapter in the history of Salem.

Sufficient space has not been allowed to do justice to the subject in this communication. It will be fully treated elsewhere. A few incidents that have

[1] By Henry Wheatland.

occurred in this direction can only be noted in their chronological order.

As preliminary to the notice of these institutions of learning, a brief allusion to some of the agencies leading ultimately to their present condition may not be deemed inappropriate.

The first great transaction in the settlement of the town was the organization of the church, a step marked by profound wisdom as well as ardent piety. Francis Higginson, "the father and pattern of the New England clergy," as he is justly called, prepared a document, which, while it formed an admirable manual of Christian faith and duty, embodied the principles of improvement and progress, and recognized the importance of a right education of children.

His brave compeer, Gov. Endicott, heartily cooperated with him, and subsequently took a provident care for the education of poor children at the expense of the town.

Salem has been blessed above most other towns in the wisdom, learning, piety and energy of the leading men among the early settlers or their immediate descendants. At the opening of the Grammar School arrived Rev. John Fiske, a learned scholar and divine qualified for the work. Roger Williams, afterwards the founder of Rhode Island, and Hugh Peters, who proved himself an able statesman and powerful friend of the whole colony, as well as a popular preacher and an energetic benefactor of Salem.

Peters's effective influence gave an impulse to industry and enterprise in every direction. Then we had the Brownes, whose charities, through successive generations, flowed freely in aid of education, learning, religion and the poor. William Browne was here with Fiske and Peters, to catch the love of learning from the one and the spirit of commerce from the other, and for more than half a century was considered a liberal and successful promoter of learning. He came over with his wife, in 1635, residing in Salem till his death, in 1688. William Browne, whose name appears among the early members of the Social Library, was a descendant in the fifth generation. Emanuel Downing came to Salem in 1636, where he lived in great esteem, after representing the town in the General Court. His wife, Lucia, was a sister of Gov. John Winthrop. His son George was then a lad of some fifteen summers, preparing under the tuition of Rev. John Fiske to enter the college, where he graduated in the first class, that of 1642. The son went to England, entered Cromwell's service and became highly distinguished.

Major William Hathorne came over in the "Arbella," with Winthrop, as stated by Savage, and came to Salem in 1636. Salem tendered him grants of land. From that time his name appears in the records as holding important positions, as commissioner, Speaker of the House of Representatives, counsel in cases before the courts, judge on the bench, etc. Johnson, in his "Wonder-working Providence," thus says of him: "Yet through the Lord's mercy we still retaine, among our Democracy, the Godly Captaine, William Hathorn, whom the Lord hath imbued with a quick apprehension, strong memory and Rhetorick, volubility of speech, which hath caused the people to make use of him often in Publick Service, especially when they have to do with any foreign government." He died in 1681.

His son John seems to have inherited many of his prominent traits of character, and to have succeeded to all his public honors. He died in 1717. The name appears, thus far, to have been as prominent in the civil history of that period, as it has been in the elegant literature of the present, in a descendant of the sixth generation, Nathaniel Hawthorne.

Other contemporary families of the colonial and provincial periods might be named of equal or superior distinction in the history of Salem, actuated by a like public spirit and not less zealous in promoting the higher interests of the town as well as its commercial prosperity, as Pickman, Orne, Curwen, Higginson, Cabot, Pynchon, Oliver, Lynde, Turner, English and others.

The Salem Athenæum was incorporated in March, 1810. Its conception was suggested undoubtedly by the Boston Athenæum, organized some three years earlier. The charters of the two institutions are in many respects similar, the leading objects of both being the promotion of literature, the arts and sciences. The founders of the Salem Athenæum were actuated by high motives, and laid a broad basis for future operations, commencing at first with a library, and trusting to the future for the further extension of their views and plans. To this end they purchased the Social and Philosophical Libraries.

The Social Library.—This reminds us of the Social Evening Club, composed of the leading spirits of the town, which flourished during the middle of the last century, and was wont to hold its meetings weekly at the Tavern House of Mrs. Pratt, to discuss the topics of the day, especially those of a literary or scientific character. The following are understood to have been members: Benjamin Lynde and Nathaniel Ropes, both of the bench of the Superior Court of the Province, the former, as well as his father, its chief justice; William Browne, judge of the Superior Court, afterwards Governor of Bermuda; Andrew Oliver, judge of the Common Pleas; Rev. Thomas Barnard, of the First Church; Dr. E. A. Holyoke, a young physician; Stephen Higginson, Benjamin Pickman and Timothy Orne, merchants; William Pynchon, an eminent lawyer, and others. A taste for literature and knowledge, and a zeal in the prosecution of scientific studies, were thus imparted to this community, of which the imprints can be distinctly traced through our subsequent history. The first movement in this

direction was the meeting of gentlemen, many of whom were members of this club, at the Pratt Tavern on Monday evening, March 31, 1760, for the purpose of "founding a handsome library of valuable books apprehending the same may be of very considerable use and benefit under proper regulations." A subscription was opened, funds obtained, and Rev. Jeremiah Condy, a Baptist minister of Boston, being about to visit England, was employed to purchase the books. On their arrival a meeting of the subscribers was held, May 20, 1761, of which Benjamin Pickman was moderator and Nathan Goodale clerk. The Social Library was thus put in operation. The books imported, with those given by members or otherwise procured, amounted to 415 volumes. The society was incorporated in 1797. It may be regarded as the pioneer of all the institutions established in this place for the promotion of intellectual culture.

The Philosophical Library.—This also calls to remembrance some of the scenes in the Revolutionary period; the Cabots' privateer-ship "Pilgrim;" its bold and stalwart commander, Hugh Hill; his daring exploits; the capture of a schooner in the English channel, having on board the library of Dr. Richard Kirwan, a distinguished chemist; the bringing of these books into the neighboring port of Beverly; the purchase of the same by several scientific men of Salem and its vicinity, of whom may be mentioned Rev. Manasseh Cutler, of the Hamlet Church in Ipswich, now Hamilton, Rev. Joseph Willard of Beverly, afterwards president of Harvard College, Dr. Joshua Fisher of Beverly, Dr. E. A. Holyoke, Dr. Joseph Orne, Rev. Thomas Barnard and Rev. John Prince, all of Salem. They made it the foundation of the Philosophical Library in 1781. To show Dr. Bowditch's estimate of the value and character of these books, this extract from his will is inserted:

Item, "It is well-known that the valuable Scientific library of the celebrated Dr. Richard Kirwan, was during the Revolutionary war, captured in the British Channel, on its way to Ireland, by a Beverly Privateer, and that by the liberal and enlightened views of the owners of the vessel, the library thus captured was sold at a very low rate, and in this manner was laid the foundation, upon which has since been successfully established the Philosophical Library so called and the present Salem Athenæum. Thus, in early life, I found near me a better collection of Philosophical and Scientific books than could be found in any other part of the United States nearer than Philadelphia, and by the kindness of its proprietors I was permitted freely to take the books from that library and to consult and study them at pleasure. This inestimable advantage has made me deeply a debtor to the Salem Athenæum, and I do, therefore, give to that Institution the sum of one thousand dollars, the income thereof to be forever applied to the promotion of its objects and the extension of its usefulness."

Athenæum.—The rooms of the Athenæum in Central Building, Market (now Central) Street, were opened to the proprietors on Wednesday, July 11, 1810, with a goodly collection of books upon the shelves, duly arranged and properly classified.

In April, 1815, the library was removed to rooms in Essex Place; in 1825 to rooms over the Salem Bank; in 1841 to Lawrence Place, and in April, 1857, to Plummer Hall, the present resting place for this valuable and increasing collection of books.

The present number of volumes is about twenty-one thousand. These have been obtained principally by moneys arising from the sale of shares and annual assessments and subscriptions, although many valuable works have been received as donations from the friends of the institution.

The number of shares is one hundred. Each share entitles the proprietor to take from the library four books at one time. Books which have been in the library one year can be retained four weeks; if less than that time, two weeks; recent periodicals, in numbers, one week. Persons not proprietors, approved by the trustees, may have all the privileges of proprietors in the use of books for one year, on the payment of one dollar in addition to the annual assessment, which is determined at the annual meeting. The assessment for several years past has been five dollars.

Officers of the Salem Athenæum for the year 1887–8.—Edmund B. Willson, president; Henry Wheatland, clerk; Richard C. Manning, treasurer; William C. Endicott, Jr., Richard C. Manning, George P. Messervey, William Northey, Charles S. Osgood, George A. Perkins, Frederick P. Richardson, Henry Wheatland, Edmund B. Willson, trustees; Alice H. Osborne, librarian; Annie E. Snell, asssistant librarian.

Plummer Hall.—On the 13th May, 1854, at her residence in Salem, "died Miss Caroline Plummer," leaving bequests to the city of Salem for the founding of a Farm School of Reform "for boys in the city of Salem;" to Harvard College for the foundation of a Professorship of Christian Morals, and to the Salem Athenæum the sum of thirty thousand dollars "for the purchasing of a piece of land, in some central and convenient spot in the city of Salem, and for building thereon a safe and elegant building of brick or stone, to be employed for the purpose of depositing the books belonging to said corporation, with liberty also to have the rooms thereof used for meetings of any scientific or literary institution, or for the deposit of any works of art or natural productions." Thus, by the noble bequests of this lady, an impetus has been given to the cause of literature, science, philanthropy and noble living, which will ever make her name respected, honored and beloved, not alone in the city of Salem or within the walls of Harvard, but wherever learning and liberality shall find a home.

The location selected is upon one of the leading thoroughfares of the city and near its centre, with agreeable and attractive surroundings, and about which cluster many associations of exceeding interest to the student in history, the scholar, the scientist and the general public.

The building is in the form of a parallelogram, ninety-seven feet three inches long by fifty-three wide. The exterior walls are faced with pressed brick, and are forty-five feet in height above the under-pinning, which is four feet six inches high and is of brown sandstone. The steps, doorway, window-dressings,

balcony, belts, &c., are also of the same stone. The style of the building is Romanesque. On the first floor were arranged the scientific and historical collections of the Institute; on the second floor the libraries of the Athenæum and of the Institute. The shelving in the library-rooms having been completed and the books placed upon the shelves, though not finally arranged, the building was accepted at a meeting of the proprietors, held on Monday, September 21, 1857, and dedicated on Tuesday, the sixth of October following. The order of exercises was as follows:

Music, by a volunteer choir under the direction of Manuel Fenollosa, of Salem;

Hymn, by Hon. Joseph Gilbert Waters, of Salem;

Prayer, by Rev. George Ware Briggs, of the First Church, Salem;

Hymn, by Rev. Jones Very, of Salem;

Address, by Rev. James Mason Hoppin, of the Crombie Street Church, Salem;

Hymn, by Rev. Charles Timothy Brooks, of Newport, R. I.

Benediction, by Rev. Robert Curtis Mills, of the First Baptist Church, Salem.

The following letter from the historian Prescott, received among others in response to invitations to attend the dedication, will be read with interest:

Pepperell, Oct. 6, 1857.

Dear Sir: I, last evening, had the pleasure of receiving the invitation of the committee to attend the dedication of Plummer Hall. Unfortunately, being absent from town, it did not reach me till too late to profit by it. I beg you will present my acknowledgments to the committee for the honor they have done me. I need not assure them that I take a sincere interest in the ceremonies of the day, for I am attached to Salem by the reminiscences of many happy hours passed there in boyhood; and I have a particular interest in the spot which is to be covered with the new edifice, from its having been that on which I first saw the light myself. It is a pleasant thought to me, that through the enlightened liberality of my deceased friend Miss Plummer, it is now to be consecrated to so noble a purpose.

With great respect, believe me, dear Sir,

Very truly yours,

Wm. H. Prescott.

Dr. George Choate, Pres. Salem Athenæum.

Presidents of the Salem Athenæum.

Edward Augustus Holyoke	1810–29
Benjamin Pickman	1829–35
Ichabod Tucker	1835–38
Daniel Appleton White	1838–40
Benjamin Merrill	1840–47
Stephen Clarendon Phillips	1847–50
George Choate	1850–64
Alpheus Crosby	1864–74
William Mack	1874–86
Edmund Burke Willson	1886

Clerks of the Proprietors.

John Sparhawk Appleton	1810–14
John Pickering	1814–19
John Glen King	1819–31
Ebenezer Shillaber	1831–41
William Putnam Richardson	1841–46
Henry Wheatland	1846

The Essex Institute.—The Essex Institute was formed by the union of the Essex Historical Society and the Essex County Natural History Society, and was organized, under an act of incorporation granted by the Legislature of Massachusetts in February of 1848, on the 1st of March following.

The Essex Historical Society.—At the suggestion of Hon. John Glen King and George A. Ward, Esq., several gentlemen, many of whom were active in the organization of the Salem Athenæum, eleven years before, assembled on the 21st of April, 1821, Hon. Joseph Story presiding, and formed themselves into an association under the name of the Essex Historical Society, the leading object of which was the collection and preservation of all authentic materials illustrating the civil history of the county of Essex, and in furtherance thereof they invited the co-operation of other kindred societies. An act of incorporation was obtained from the Legislature, June 27, 1821. The first corporate meeting was held on Wednesday, June 27, 1821, due notice having been given of the call at which the act was accepted and the society organized by the adoption of rules and regulations and the election of officers to serve until the annual meeting fixed on the 6th of September, in commemoration of the landing of Governor John Endicott on that day (O. S.), 1628.

The venerable Dr. E. A. Holyoke, who always took the most lively interest in whatever concerned American literature and science, was elected the first president. It is quite remarkable that in each stage in the progress of institutions of this character in Salem, a leading part was taken by one man, Dr. Holyoke; he signed the call for the meeting at the tavern of Mrs. Pratt in 1760, and was an original subscriber to the funds then raised to establish the Social Library; he was one of the purchasers of Dr. Kirwan's books, thus co-operating in founding the Philosophical Library; he was the first president of the Salem Athenæum, and the first president of the Essex Historical Society. The zeal and ability of the members and their friends, in a short time, gathered together a good collection of portraits and antique relics, illustrative of the early history of the county and the nucleus of a library containing files of several newspapers, pamphlets, documents, etc. These were first deposited in Essex Place, on Essex Street, facing Central; then in the room over the Salem Bank, where Downing Block now stands, afterwards in Lawrence Place, at the corner of Washington and Front Streets, until the union which formed the Institute.

On the 6th of September, 1825, the day of the annual meeting, Hon. Leverett Saltonstall delivered a public address, which was well received, before the society, in the First Church. On Thursday, the 18th of September (N. S.), 1828, the members of the society, with their invited guests, met to commemorate the two hundredth anniversary of the landing of Endicott. The orator of the day was the Hon. Joseph Story, one of the justices of the United States Supreme Court, an original member and the vice-president of the society. The president of the society, Dr. Holyoke, the centennial anniversary of whose birth was appropriately observed

by the medical profession of Boston and Salem on the thirteenth of the month preceding, presided. The secretary was the Hon. Joseph G. Waters, secretary of the society for the twenty-one years preceding the union, in 1848. He will be long remembered for his deep interest in our literary and scientific institutions and for his versatile gifts and extensive knowledge of English literature and history. The society had on its roll of membership at that time many men of wide distinction. Probably no society in the United States could claim a greater number of influential men in the various walks of life. The eloquent address of Hon. Mr. Story at the North Church; the intellectual and social banquet at Hamilton Hall; these, and other interesting incidents connected therewith, rendered the occasion one long to be remembered in the annals of the society.

OFFICERS OF THE ESSEX HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

Presidents.

Edward Augustus Holyoke	1821–29
Benjamin Pickman	1829–35
Ichabod Tucker	1835–37
Daniel Appleton White	1837–48

Recording Secretaries.

George Atkinson Ward	1821–22
John White Treadwell	1822–24
William Proctor	1824–27
Joseph Gilbert Waters	1827–48

THE ESSEX COUNTY NATURAL HISTORY SOCIETY.—A communication was printed in the *Salem Gazette* for Tuesday, February 1, 1831, under the signature of Ebah, suggesting the feasibility of organizing a Society of Natural History; other communications occasionally appeared, but the various suggestions did not begin to take a tangible form until December, 1833, when, on the evening of Saturday, the 14th, a meeting of those friendly to the subject was held, which resulted, after several adjournments, in the organization of the Essex County Natural History Society, Dr. Andrew Nichols, of Danvers, president; William Oakes, Esq., of Ipswich and Rev. Gardner B. Perry, of Bradford, vice-presidents; John M. Ives, Esq., of Salem, secretary and treasurer; Rev. John Lewis Russell, of Salem, cabinet keeper and librarian; William Oakes, Esq., of Ipswich, John Clarke Lee, of Salem, Charles Grafton Page, of Salem, Thomas Spencer, Esq., of Salem, curators.

Upon the organization of the society the attention of its members was mainly devoted to horticulture; its rooms were opened occasionally during every season with greater or less frequency, as circumstances would permit, for exhibitions of fruits and flowers. The first exhibition took place on Tuesday, July 11, 1834. The first general exhibition, which continued several days, occurred on Tuesday and Wednesday, September 14th and 15th, 1841.

These exhibitions, though not an original object, became, in the course of years, one of the most important features of the society. For several years exhibitions were held weekly during the summer months, with an annual show in September, and increased in interest with each successive season. Several nurseries were established, the demand for fruit trees, ornamental trees and shrubs increased, and Salem, for some years became, as it were, a centre for horticultural operations. The exhibitions at the Metropolis were largely indebted to the Salem gardens for their requisite proportion of fruits and flowers.

This city and its vicinity had a goodly array of enthusiastic and successful cultivators of the choicest gifts of Flora and Pomona; among them the name of Robert Manning stands as a pioneer in the cultivation of fruit, especially of the pear. The garden of Mr. J. Fisk Allen exhibited, for several seasons, a fine display of that gorgeous lily, "Victoria Regia," and his excellent treatise on that flower, with illustrations, finds a place in every well stored library. Salem was also noted for the great variety of grapes and other fruits grown under glass. The gardens and grounds of the Messrs. Putnam, Lee, Cabot, Emmerton, Upton, Ives, Bertram, Hoffman, Derby, Phippen, Ropes, Oliver, Glover, Bosson, Gardner and others, may be mentioned in this connection.

The Journal of the Essex County Natural History Society, comprising one volume in three numbers, issued in 1836, 1838 and 1841, was published by the society.

OFFICERS OF ESSEX COUNTY NATURAL HISTORY SOCIETY.

Presidents.

Andrew Nichols	1833–45
John Lewis Russell	1845–48

Secretaries

John M. Ives	1833–35
Henry Wheatland	1835–48

During the autumn of 1847 the Historical and the Natural History Societies held several meetings to effect a union. A joint committee was appointed to draft a plan to serve as a basis of organization. The plan offered by the committee was accepted by the two societies at a meeting held January 14, 1848. An act of incorporation was obtained in February of that year, and upon its acceptance, on the 1st of March following, the Essex Institute was organized.

The organization of the two societies being on an entirely different basis, generous concessions were called for from both parties to bring about the desired results.

The Historical Society always had a small membership. Members were elected by ballot, and an entrance fee was required. There was no regular assessment, though occasionally one was levied; the rooms were never opened to the public at stated times, though persons could obtain access by calling upon the librarian or some officer, who was always courteous and ready to grant such a favor.

The Natural History Society was differently constituted. Any inhabitant of the county could be-

come a member by signing the constitution and paying the small annual assessment. The rooms were always central and accessible, and were frequently opened for horticultural and other exhibitions, the aim being to make them attractive and thereby to awaken an interest in the objects of the society. The collections increased in value and importance, the membership was enlarged, and consequently more means were available to extend its operations.

The Institute, in organizing in 1848, took up with vigor the work of its two component members, as well as new undertakings of its own. If the Essex Historical Society had busied itself with collecting and perpetuating the history of the county, the Institute, with its new blood, hoped not without reason to push this important portion to still greater results. If the Natural History Society had been successful in its delightful exhibits of fruits and flowers, so did the Institute at the outset perpetuate this excellent example and call to its aid a new class of generous contributors. Moreover, it began at once, by means of field meetings and other popular and original appliances to make science, local tradition and history, literature and the arts, so far as it could with its modicum of means and membership, a part of the daily diet of the people.

The library and various collections were removed to Plummer Hall as soon as the shelving and cases were prepared for their reception.

The several departments of the Museum were arranged on the first floor, and were well represented; in several of the classes of the animal kingdom the collections were inferior to but one or two others in the country. Those in some classes were arranged and identified, and catalogues commenced. In consequence of a liberal use of its rich supply of duplicates, the Institute became the recipient of large and valuable collections from scientific institutions and individuals, both in this and foreign countries.

These various scientific collections, containing some one hundred and forty thousand specimens are now deposited at East India Marine Hall, in the custody of the trustees of the Peabody Academy of Science, according to terms of agreement signed May 29, 1867, by the contracting parties.

The Peabody Museum was, after thorough re-arrangement, dedicated to the public on Wednesday afternoon, August 18, 1869, the first day of the meeting, in Salem, of the American Association for the Advancement of Science.

All contributions of specimens in natural history which have since been received by the institute, either by donations or otherwise, have been likewise deposited with the trustees above named, at East India Marine Hall.

The collections of antique relics, paintings, portraits, engravings, etc., are placed in the halls of the institute, and are of great historic value, and will be alluded to in another place.

The agreement by which the institute has occupied Plummer Hall, jointly with the Athenæum for thirty years, was cancelled from the end of April by the governing board of the two institutions, February 25, 1887, and at the same time another agreement was adopted to go into effect on the 30th of April, 1887, by which the institute retains the use of the first floor and the basement for the deposit of a portion of its library and collections, and the hall to be used for lectures and meetings, horticultural and art exhibitions, and for other purposes not inconsistent with the provisions of Miss Plummer's will. Each society, as heretofore, may freely consult the books of the other.

Library.—The library of the institute contains about fifty thousand bound volumes, and some one hundred and fifty thousand pamphlets. In the early stages of the growth of a great library, its energies are mainly absorbed in mere accumulation. At a later stage, and when exchanges are established and a law of growth confirmed, while accretions are not less rapid, more attention can be given to extending its usefulness and acquainting others with the value and character of its treasures. The institute library has now reached this stage. It is for the first time able to display its quality and richness in the new building purchased March 12, 1886, and since suitably fitted for the purposes intended. Among the valuable features which, on being catalogued, it will be found to contain, are,—

A very complete collection of the legislative and official publications of Massachusetts from early dates, as well as those of several other States of New England and of the Union at large.

A large and daily increasing collection of the works of the authors of Essex County, both native and resident, already counting about six hundred volumes. Full files of newspapers possessing to the antiquary, the historical student and the conveyancer, a value hardly to be exaggerated.

Some eight thousand volumes of English, Greek and Latin classics, also historical and other works, selected for the private library of the donor, the late Judge Daniel A. White, first president of the Essex Institute. A collection of some three hundred Bibles and parts of Bibles of curious antiquity, including one, doubtless the oldest book in Essex County, dated before the discovery of America, in the year 1486, a well preserved copy brought from a Carmelite Monastery in Bavaria, and presented to the institute October 2, 1858, by Rev. J. M. Hoppin, then of Salem, now a professor in Yale College. Part of the library of the late Francis Peabody, the third president of the institute, containing some three thousand volumes, principally, architectural, horticultural and scientific. Also the libraries of the late Augustus Story, comprising about fifteen hundred volumes of literary and historical books—and that of the late William Sutton,

about sixteen hundred of agricultural and historical works.

The China Library, containing nearly seven hundred volumes, an unique collection of publications relating to that country and her people; the Library of the Art Department, numbering upwards of five hundred volumes, together with many periodicals in its various branches, to which additions are being constantly made, and a small Musical Library.

A large portion of the books are arranged in the new building,—the Historical in the western section of the second floor; the Literary in the eastern section and the Essex County books in the central. On the third floor are the Theological, in the western section; Scientific, in the eastern; the Directories, Horticultural and Educational Books, in the central.

The national, state and city Documents, those relating to Finance and Trade, bound volumes of Newspapers and Pamphlets, are retained in Plummer Hall. The large room is furnished with settees and chairs, and is used for lectures, concerts, meetings and exhibitions of Art, Horticulture, etc.

Meetings of the Institute.—Regular meetings are held on the first and third Monday evenings of each month; field meetings, during the summer months, at such times and places as may be appointed by a special committee.

The Institute was organized in the spring of 1848. It at once introduced a system of field meetings, unique and interesting, as well as useful to those who have attended them. These meetings gather from one to three hundred or more persons; four or five of them are held in each season. Railroads, local authorities, church committees, educational, scientific and literary organizations, have uniformly united their efforts to make attendance easy and agreeable. The first of these gatherings was held at Danvers, June 12, 1849, and, with the interval of three summers, in 1853–4–5, they have since been uninterrupted. One hundred and thirty-five field meetings have been held in ninety-six different places in thirty-three of the towns and cities of the county of Essex, and twelve meetings in twelve towns or cities beyond the county limits. Members of the Institute and all others are invited on equal terms. A spot is selected for its scientific and historical interest, and with some regard to its facilities for transportation, shelter and refreshment. Physicists and antiquarians, especially local students of science, tradition and history, are sought out. The party attending provides itself with a basket luncheon, and is usually transported at half fare. Reaching its destination, it is often welcomed by a local committee, deposits its baskets and extra clothing, and, in self-appointed sections, follows the lead of its specialists in botany, geology, entomology, local history or antiquity, to various points of interest in the neighborhood. Coming together at noon in the village church, the school-house, the town hall, or some inviting grove, a meeting is held, after the baskets are emptied, and the results of the previous rambles are exhibited, compared, analyzed and discussed.

In yet another way has the effort been successful to make science and sociability tributary to each other. For several seasons, beginning May 1, 1866, and for several evenings during each season, meetings were held, which might be described as microscope shows. From twenty-five to fifty instruments of every variety of make, were brought together in Hamilton Hall, where the friends of the Institute, to the number of two hundred, passed most agreeable evenings in examining the specimens shown, in listening to the comments of experts and specialists, and in general social relaxation. The occasions owed much of their success to the interest and labor of the late well-known microscopist, Edwin Bicknell.

Lectures.—During the past fifteen or twenty years, regular courses of lectures have been delivered annually in the winter months, with perhaps a few exceptions; and before this occasionally as opportunities offered. These embrace a wide range of topics in science and literature. In addition to the above, courses of lectures or single lectures have been given by those who were or are now active members of the institute.

Commemorations.—The fiftieth anniversary of the organization of the Essex Historical Society was observed on the 21st of April, 1871. The address was by A. C. Goodell, Jr., Esq.; an excellent choir, under the direction of General H. K. Oliver, sang an original hymn, written for the occasion by Rev. Jones Very; after which remarks were made by Rev. George D. Wildes, of New York City; General H. K. Oliver and J. Wingate Thornton, of Boston; and Dr. George B. Loring.

The seventy-fifth anniversary of the organization of the Essex Institute, on the 5th of March, 1873, was commemorated by a banquet in the rooms of the Institute, with addresses by the President, His Excellency Governor William B. Washburn, Mayor William Cogswell of Salem, Hon. George B. Loring, president of the Massachusetts Senate, Hon. John E. Sanford, speaker of the Massachusetts House of Representatives, Hon. Marshall P. Wilder, of New England Historico-Genealogical Society, Prof. O. C. Marsh, of Yale, and others.

The centennial of the Destruction of the Tea in Boston Harbor, December 16, 1773, was noticed at a special meeting on that evening by an address from James Kimball, Esq., whose grandfather, William Russell, was one of the actors on that occasion.

The first centennial of the meeting in Salem, October 5, 1774, of that memorable body which formally and finally resolved itself into a Provincial Congress and established in Massachusetts "a government of the people, by the people & for the peo-

ple," was commemorated by an address from A. C. Goodell, Jr., Esq.; a fine double quartette, under the direction of Mr. M. Fenollosa, sang some patriotic pieces.

The directors of the institute, in compliance with several official circulars and personal letters from the chief of the Historical Department of the Centennial Exhibition at Philadelphia, made an exhibit of specimens illustrative of the History of Essex County. Portraits of Governors Endicott, Leverett and Bradstreet, of Sir Richard Saltonstall, Rev. Dr. Manasseh Cutler and Colonel Timothy Pickering and about one hundred articles of historical interest, also an album containing one hundred and twenty photographs illustrating our city, were contributed. These remained during the exhibition.

The commemoration of the two hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the landing of John Endicott at Salem, September 6, 1628, was conducted by the Essex Institute, September 18, 1878. The forenoon exercises, in Mechanic's Hall, consisted of an organ voluntary by Mr. B. J. Lang, reading of Scripture and prayer by Rev. R. C. Mills, hymn by Rev. Jones Very, poem by Rev. C. T. Brooks, ode by Rev. S. P. Hill, oration by Hon. W. C. Endicott; Mrs. Hemans' hymn, "The Breaking Waves Dashed High," sung by Mrs. J. H. West; poem, by W. W. Story, read by Prof. J. W. Churchill; the one hundredth Psalm sung by a chorus.

The guests then proceeded to Hamilton Hall, where an elegant lunch was served by Cassell. The divine blessing was invoked by Rev. R. C. Mills, D.D. The president opened the afternoon speaking, and was followed by Rev. E. C. Bolles, toast master, Governor A. H. Rice, Mayor H. K. Oliver, Hon. R. C. Winthrop, President of Massachusetts Historical Society, Hon. M. P. Wilder, President of the New England Historico-Genealogical Society, Dean Stanley, of Westminster Abbey, Hon. W. C. Endicott, Hon. L. Saltonstall, Prof. B. Peirce, Hon. G. B. Loring, Rev. F. Israel, Joseph H. Choate, Esq., of New York, B. H. Silsbee, Esq., President East India Marine Society, and Rev. E. S. Atwood.

The two hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the arrival of John Winthrop at Salem, with the charter and records of the Massachusetts Bay Company, occurring on the 22d of June, 1880, the first field meeting of the season was held on that day, at the Pavilion on Salem Neck, and the occasion was devoted to a commemoration of this important event. At 1 P.M. lunch was served in the dining hall; at 2.30 o'clock the afternoon session was held in the great hall below.

The president introduced Robert S. Rantoul, Esq., who then delivered an historical and eloquent address. Rev. De Witt S. Clarke, read a poem written for the occasion by Miss Lucy Larcom, who was present, and was followed by Colonel Thomas Wentworth Higginson, of the Governor's staff, a lineal descendant of Rev. Francis Higginson. Hon. George Washington Warren, president of Bunker Hill Monument Association; Hon. George B. Loring, M.C., Mayor H. K. Oliver, and Seth Low, Esq., of Brooklyn, N. Y.; selections from the correspondence were read by Rev. E. S. Atwood, and a communication from E. Stanley Waters, Esq., by Rev. George H. Hosmer, giving a reminiscence of his predecessor in the pulpit of the East Church, Rev. William Bentley, D.D., whose birthday this gathering also commemorated, he having been born in Boston June 22, 1759. The proceedings at these commemorations were fully reported and are in print.

The Publications of the Institute.—"Proceedings and Communications," 6 vols., 8vo., 1848–68. These volumes contain a large number of descriptions and figures of new species, especially of corals, insects and polyzoa, and many valuable papers in natural history. The first three volumes also contain many important historical papers. In addition to the papers on special subjects, the volumes contain the proceedings of the meetings of the institute, the records of the additions to the library and the museum, and many important verbal communications made at the meetings, etc.

"Bulletin," 17 vols., 8vo, issued quarterly; a continuation of the "Proceedings of the Essex Institute," containing an account of the regular and field meetings of the society and papers of scientific value.

"Flora of Essex County," by John Robinson, 8vo, pp. 200.

"Historical Collections," 23 vols., 8vo, issued quarterly, contain extracts from the records of courts, parishes, churches and towns in this county; abstracts of wills, deeds and journals; records of births, baptisms, marriages and deaths, and inscriptions on tombstones; also papers of historical, genealogical and biographical interest. In these volumes will be found memoirs of the following persons: of Daniel A. White, by George W. Briggs; of George A. Ward, Daniel P. King and Francis Peabody, by Hon. Charles W. Upham; of Asahel Huntington, by Hon. Otis P. Lord; of Henry C. Perkins, by Rev. Samuel J. Spalding, of Newburyport; of James Upton, by Rev. Robert C. Mills; of Augustus Story, by Rev. Charles T. Brooks, of Newport, R. I.; of Benjamin Peirce, James Kimball, Charles Davis and James O. Safford, by Robert S. Rantoul; of John Bertram, by Rev. E. S. Atwood; of John Lewis Russell, John C. Lee and Charles T. Brooks, by Rev. E. B. Willson; of Gen. John Glover, by William P. Upham; of Jones Very, by William P. Andrews; of Oliver Carlton, by L. Saltonstall; also genealogies of the families of Gould, Chipman, Browne, Pope, Fiske, Ropes, Hutchinson, Becket, Higginson, Webb, Gedney, Clarke, Silsbee, Fabens, Newhall, Perkins and Townsend.

The institute exchanges publications with fifty societies in Germany, fourteen in France, eight in Switzerland, five in Belgium, four each in Sweden, Russia,

Italy and Norway, three each in Austria and Denmark, two each in Spain, Australia, South America and Java, one each in Portugal, China, Tasmania, Mexico, Nova Scotia and New Brunswick, four in Canada, sixteen in Great Britain (besides receiving the government surveys of India and the United Kingdom), and with twenty-seven miscellaneous, forty scientific and thirty-three historical societies in the United States of America.

Art Exhibitions.—In February, 1875, the proposal of the Misses Mary E. and Abby O. Williams, of Salem, to deposit temporarily their valuable collection of paintings, many of which were copied by them from acknowledged masters during a residence of several years in Rome, and had earned the praise of Ruskin, was gratefully accepted.

The collection was received on Thursday, March 4th, and it had been found expedient, with so fine a basis, to arrange an art exhibition, and to solicit other contributions. The exhibition was opened Thursday, March 11th, and continued to Friday evening, March 19th. From the day that notice was given, pictures of all kinds were sent in with the greatest liberality, and some three or four hundred of them were hung upon the walls of the exhibition-room.

The second exhibition opened on Tuesday, November 9, 1875, and closed Wednesday, the 17th. The eastern ante-room was occupied with a display of bronzes, porcelain and pottery; this was the first ceramic exhibition in Salem.

Encouraged by this success, exhibitions have been held in June, 1879, in April, 1880, and in May, 1881, May, 1882, May, 1883, May, 1884, and June, 1886.

The collections in these exhibitions have been confined, with one or two exceptions, to the recent productions of Essex County artists.

Manuscripts.—The collection of manuscripts is large and valuable, consisting of original charters, commissions, account-books, records and papers of extinct local organizations, such as old stage and insurance companies, orderly-books in our several wars, court papers, correspondence, journals, almanacs with written notes; also a large number of log-books containing records of voyages made at the period of our city's commercial prominence.

The day books of Dr. E. A. Holyoke contain an accurate record of his professional practice; they comprise one hundred and twenty-three volumes of ninety pages each. The first entry was July 6, 1749, the last February 16th, 1829.

Membership.—The members of the institute number about three hundred and fifty. Resident membership is secured by election and the payment of an annual assessment of three dollars, and this entitles the member to admittance to all horticultural, antiquarian and art shows during the year, to the use of the books of the library to the extent of four volumes at a time and to consultation, free of cost, of the books of the Salem Athenæum, whose shareholders enjoy the reciprocal right of consulting free the books of the Essex Institute. Life membership of the institute is obtained by paying at one time the sum of fifty dollars.

OFFICERS OF THE ESSEX INSTITUTE.

Presidents.

Daniel Appleton White	1848–61
Asahel Huntington	1861–65
Francis Peabody	1865–67
Henry Wheatland	1868–

Secretaries.

Henry Wheatland	1848–68
Amos Howe Johnson	1868–70
John Robinson	1870–71
Amos Howe Johnson	1871–73
John Robinson	1873–75
George Manton Whipple	1875

The Library.—It began with a few shelves of books, miscellaneous and unselected in a small back room. There are now some five or six thousand volumes. The increase in the size of the library, and the greatly increased use of it, have made necessary a migration from room to room, until it has reached its third station, where it has fair accommodations in the room which is the last added to the suite occupied by the Fraternity.

This library has been gathered by gift wholly. It is the only free public library in Salem. Its large number of readers show an active circulation. The number of books lost is very small comparing favorably with all known similar institutions in this respect.

Its Reading-Room is supplied with the Salem papers by the favor of the publishers, and from some of their offices come besides many of their most desirable exchanges, several daily and weekly newspapers, pictorial weeklies, religious, scientific and literary periodicals.

In 1875 the Fraternity became incorporated under the statutes of Massachusetts, that it might hold and administer larger funds, and that its permanence and efficiency might be the better assured.

Its Funds. In 1873, Dudley P. Rogers of this city bequeathed the income of fifteen thousand dollars to the Fraternity with something more at the death of certain favorite animals. Miss Harriet A. Deland died June 29, 1876, leaving by will five thousand dollars. Martha G. Wheatland died June, 1885, leaving two thousand to the Fraternity. With the income accruing from these funds and subscriptions from its friends collected annually, and small sums occasionally from other sources, the Fraternity, with the gratuitous assistance of several ladies and gentlemen, is enabled to do some good work in the promotion of the objects of its organization.

Officers for the year 1887–88.—Henry Wheatland

president; G. W. Mansfield, secretary; William Northey, treasurer.

East India Marine Society.—Soon after the termination of the Revolutionary War, the merchants of Salem directed their attention to the opening of new avenues of trade, especially with the countries beyond the Cape of Good Hope and Cape Horn with which this country had previously no commercial relations.

Elias Hasket Derby was the pioneer in this direction. His ships were the first to visit any of these ports, and to him, in a great degree, may be attributed the establishment of the East India trade in Salem. Other vessels soon followed, and gradually an extensive business was developed, which created great activity in the various industries of this place, especially those connected with the building, rigging and fitting for sea of vessels of various kinds. The young men of Salem and its vicinity, on leaving the school, the academy, and the college actuated by the prevailing spirit of the period, for the most part entered upon a commercial career, and found employment in the counting-room, on shipboard, or with some of the commercial agencies established in these distant ports to facilitate the conducting of their business operations. The influence of these surroundings greatly modified public sentiment, and the outcome was the organization of an institution, having in view, the assisting its unfortunate members or their families, in improving themselves in the knowledge of navigation and of the various trades in which they were engaged, and incidentally in collecting a museum which should represent the peculiarities of the strange people, and strange places visited by its members in their long and distant voyages.

During the summer and early autumn of 1799, the first suggestion of such an institution was made by a few shipmasters who were standing under the lea of a store on the end of Union Wharf, where they were in the habit of congregating, during the intervals between their voyages. An agreement was drawn up and signed by Jonathan Lambert, Jona. Ingersoll, Jacob Crowninshield, John Gibaut, Nathaniel Silsbee and others to form an association consisting of such shipmasters only, as have had a register from Salem, and who had navigated those seas at or beyond the Cape of Good Hope, to be called the East India Marine Society, or by any other name which may hereafter be determined. And they also further agree that the first meeting to carry into effect the above purposes shall be held at Capt. Webb's tavern, on the 18th of September (Wednesday evening), 1799.

The meeting was held, and a committee was appointed to prepare the articles and to report at the meeting to be held on Monday, October 14, 1799.

At the adjourned meeting the articles were read separately and adopted. Officers chosen as follows: Benjamin Hodges, president; Ichabod Nichols, Jonathan Lambert, Benjamin Carpenter, committee of observation; Jonathan Hodges, secretary; Jacob Crowninshield, treasurer.

Rev. William Bentley of the East Parish, many of whose parishioners followed the sea and were interested in or members of the new society writes in his journal:

"*Tuesday, October* 22, 1799, Captain Carnes from Sumatra showed me various specimens of shells, a large oyster-shell, a petrified mushroom cup and stem, two specimens of boxes in gold, with the pen work extremely nice and open flowers, the work is of uncommonly thin plates of gold, by the Malays.

"It is proposed by the new marine society, called the East India Marine Society, to make a cabinet. This society has been lately thought of. Captain Gibaut first mentioned the plan to me this summer, and desired me to give him some plan of articles or a sketch. The first friends of the institution met and chose a committee to compare or digest articles from the sketches given to them. Last week I was informed that in the preceding week the members met and signed the articles proposed by the committee and had chosen officers. (See above.)

"*Thursday, November* 7, 1799, Mr. Carnes has presented his curiosities to the new-formed East India Marine Society and they are providing a museum and cabinet. The above were the first specimens given to the Society.

"*November* 6, 1799, Rooms were obtained in the Stearns' building on the north east corner of Essex and Court, now Washington, Streets for their meetings and a place for the deposit of books, charts, etc., and in July of the following year glass cases were provided to arrange therein the specimens that had been accumulated."

This may be considered one of the earliest museums in this country, and it has had a world-wide fame. There was at that time a museum in Boston which commenced with an exhibition of a few wax figures at the American Coffee-house, on State Street, Mr. Daniel Bowen the proprietor. In 1795 he moved his collections to a hall in Bromfield Street, when it took the name of the Columbian Museum; it was destroyed by fire January 3, 1803. Other collections were formed but had not a continuous history, nor were any of these earlier museums established for scientific purposes.

The act of Incorporation having passed both branches of the Legislature was approved by the Governor March 3, 1801. The objects are:

1st. To assist the widows and children of deceased members who may need the same from the income of the funds of the society, which were obtained from the fees of admissions and the annual assessments; also from donations and bequests.

2d. To collect such facts and observations as tend to the improvement and security of navigation. For this purpose every member bound to sea was authorized to receive a blank journal, in which he is to insert all things worthy of notice which occur during his voyage, particularly his observations on the variation of the compass, bearings and distances of capes and headlands, of the latitude and longitude of the ports, islands, rocks and shoals; and upon his return to deposit the same with the society. These journals are afterwards bound in volumes under the direction of the inspector, with a table of contents or index. Ninety of these journals, prior to 1831, of voyages made to various parts of the world, and in several in-

stances to places rarely visited, have already been deposited; recourse has often been had to them to correct the latitudes and longitudes of our ships, also for historical purposes.

Many of the journals are beautiful examples of neatness and fine penmanship, and are embellished, here and there, with diagrams, maps, drawings of coasts and even with sketches of native craft. The society was in constant communication with the United States Government and the scientific records made by its members have received more than ordinary mention by well-known authors of works on meteorology. The endorsement of the society was ever considered a guarantee of the highest character. Commodore Maury in compiling his well-known wind charts continually used the society's journals, and Captains Charles M. Endicott and James D. Gillis, members of the society, prepared charts of Sumatra which are spoken of in the report of the cruise of the United States frigate "Potomac," which vessel was sent out in 1831 for the purpose of performing this in connection with other work, as "more ably performed (by these gentlemen) than it could have been with our limited material." (See Hist. Sketch of Salem, p. 154.)

To the library of which these journals formed the nucleus, were added by purchase and gift "books of history, of voyages & travels and of navigation; among them are several rare valuable editions of the celebrated voyages of Perouse, Cook & Vancouver."

With "the same view the President and committee have authority to purchase books of similar character as they may deem useful to the society." This was more applicable in the palmy days of the India trade in Salem than at the present time; since then other institutions have been organized, whose objects are mainly to take care that this and allied classes of books are accessible to scholars as well as to the general reader.

3d. To form a museum of natural and artificial curiosities, particularly such as are to be found beyond the Cape of Good Hope and Cape Horn. This has been obtained, to a considerable extent, by the valuable donations of the members as well as of others friendly to the institution. The fame of this Museum was, at first, in a great measure, due to public interest as a collection of curiosities, and not on account of its scientific value; yet the originators of this work devised for themselves methods and plans, based upon the orderly ways of transacting business at that time, which are very commendable. They instructed the members whenever their voyages should take them among uncivilized people to collect the utensils, weapons and dresses of such people; also accounts of native customs were often noted in their journals or communications by letter to the society; collections of shells, birds, mammals, etc., also specimens of the flora and of the geology were contributed.

The scientific man of to-day finds among these fruits of their labor much valuable and interesting material to aid him in his researches and investigations, especially in the science of anthropology. They builded better than they knew.

The Annual Festivals of the Society in November were very attractive and interesting to the public in the early years of its history. The society formerly paraded through the streets, the officers usually dressed in Eastern costume, with battle axes, spears and other warlike weapons; there was also a palanquin, in which reclined a boy apparelled in most gorgeous habiliments, borne by persons in the East Indian dress, attended with fan and hookah bearers and every other accompaniment of an East Indian equipage.

The exercises of the day closed with a banquet with toasts, sentiments, etc. These have now passed away, and the annual gathering is not marked by any outward display. We copy from the press of that day a report of the meetings in 1804 and 1805.

On Wednesday last was the annual meeting of the East India Marine Society. On this occasion is the choice of their officers, and an elegant dinner is provided. Before dinner the members proceeded from their hall under an escort of the cadet company and attended with an excellent band of music. As their cabinet displays the richest collection of Eastern curiosities, and furnishes the principal dresses and ornaments, as well as martial instruments and inventions of the oriental nations, a proper exhibition was made for the gratification of the numerous citizens assembled to view the procession. The whole scene provoked curiosity, and indulged it, while good taste and dignity of manners justified it. Capt. Benjamin Hodges has continued to receive the annual invitation to be their president, while all the members have generously contributed to afford such communications and such articles as have enriched their records and their collections. The Museum is decorated with instructive historical paintings, at the expense of the society. The celebrated navigators appear on its walls. Rich specimens in the whole extent of Natural History are already obtained, and no country is forgotten which has afforded anything to the antiquarian, the historian, or the friend of commerce.[1]

On Wednesday last The East India Marine Society had their annual meeting, with the festive scenes in which they recall their former friendships, recount their services and urge their common zeal for the promotion of the end of their society. Their success has been worthy of their great attempts, and their exertions have been such as have been unprecedented in our country. Their museum, happy in its arrangements and elegant in its display of its riches,—with the many subjects it embraces—the great

[1] *Salem Register, Monday, November* 12, 1804.

variety with which it is enriched, does honor to their taste, their inquiries and their diligence. It was a great diminution of their pleasure to be deprived of the company of their president, Capt. B. Hodges, who was unable to attend. Captain Carpenter, the vice-president, presided on the occasion with dignity.

The military parade was by the Light Infantry, under Captain Saunders, and the procession was admired as a just display of the eastern manners. The whole scene was powerful in convincing us of the personal merit of the members, of the benefits from their institution, and of the zeal with which they have promoted its best reputation.[1]

November 2, 1803, the society voted to take the room in the second story of the building then being erected for the accommodation of the Salem Bank and the Salem Insurance Company on the first floor, on the eastern portion of the land now occupied by the Downing Block—dimension of the same forty feet by fifty-four. On the 7th of March, 1804, a committee was appointed to remove the collections and to arrange the same in the new hall.

July 8, 1817,—*Voted* to accept the invitation from the committee of arrangements to join the procession this day,—reception of James Monroe, President of the United States. Also *voted* that the president of the society be requested to wait on the President of the United States of America, and in the name of the society to invite him to visit the museum with his suite, and also to wait on the Governor of the commonwealth with a similar invitation,—and at such time as they shall appoint for the purpose, the officers of the society to attend them to the hall.

July 5, 1820, *Voted* that the president and committee be authorized to procure printed copies of the catalogue[2] now preparing, to furnish each member (or the family of each member deceased) with a copy and to present the same in the name of the society to such gentlemen of the town and its vicinity as the president and committee may think proper.

Voted, That the president and committee be authorized to engage Dr. Seth Bass to superintend the museum under their direction and for such compensation as they may judge reasonable.

January 7, 1824.—*Voted*, That the subject of enlarging the hall or procuring another hall be submitted to a committee. May 19, 1824, the committee reported that a new building may be erected that will accommodate the society in the most convenient manner and they subjoin for their consideration the following proposal, to be offered for subscription immediately:—

"A lot of land may be had near the present hall, of a proper size for erecting the contemplated building, and that it may be completed in the course of the next year, proposals for erecting a building of about 45 by 95 feet for E. I. M. S. and other purposes, by an association to be incorporated for the purpose under the name of the East India Marine Hall Corporation; one hundred and fifty shares at $100 each; the society to take as many shares as they may deem proper, the remainder to members of the society or other parties."

Twenty-sixth Anniversary—Dedication of the New Hall, Friday, October 14, 1825.—Celebration by a public procession and dinner, on the occasion of taking possession of the hall which they have lately erected and fitted up in splendid manner for their accommodation. This hall, over one hundred feet in length and forty in breadth, is as chaste and beautiful a specimen of architecture as our country can exhibit, and filled as it is by the rare and curious productions of nature and art from the four quarters of the globe, forms a cabinet unrivalled in this and excelled perhaps by few in any country.

On this occasion the society was honored by the company of the President of the United States and many other distinguished guests, amongst whom were Mr. Justice Story, of the United States Supreme Court; Hon. Benjamin W. Crowninshield, member of Congress for this district; Hon. Josiah Quincy, Mayor of Boston; Hon. Mr. Hill, of the Executive Council; Hon. Timothy Pickering, President Kirkland, of Harvard University, and a large number of merchants, professional men and others.

The society, with its guests, moved in procession at two o'clock from Hamilton Hall, under the direction of Richard S. Rogers and Jonathan P. Saunders, Esqrs., and, escorted by a fine band of music, proceeded through some of the principal streets to their new hall on Essex Street. The occasion drew together a vast concourse of citizens, who testified by repeated cheers and greetings their happiness at beholding the Chief Magistrate.

The dinner was served in a style of magnificence. The religious services were performed by Rev. Dr. Kirkland and Rev. Mr. Cornelius. Hon. Stephen White, President of the Society, presided at the tables. The President of the United States appeared in good health and spirits. The toasts were announced by John W. Treadwell, Esq., the Corresponding Secretary.

December 31, 1866.—The report of Mr. John B. Silsbee, respecting the arrangements for the transference of its building and collections to the Essex Institute, or Mr. Peabody or his trustees, was read and accepted.

Too much praise cannot be given to the thoughtful originators and promoters of this institution, which, after flourishing for three-quarters of a century, transfers to younger hands the care and continuance of its scientific and other collections, reserving for itself the administration of its noble charities, which will continue as long as the institution exists.

Superintendents of Museum, Seth Bass, M.D., Mal-

[1] *Salem Register, Monday, November* 11, 1805.

[2] The first printed catalogue of objects in the museum, journals, list of members, etc., while the collections were in the Salem Bank Building. This gave 2269 members. In 1825 the museum moved to the East India Marine Hall, and by the impetus thus given the collections were rapidly augmented, so that in 1831, when the second edition was printed, besides having some entailment, gave 4299 members for the museum.

thus A. Ward, M.D., George Osborne, M.D., Charles G. Page, M.D., Henry Wheatland, M.D., George D. Phippen.

The Peabody Academy of Science.—With the decline of Salem's foreign commerce the East India Marine Society found it more and more difficult to obtain means for conducting the museum which it had maintained with increasing success since 1799. Few new members joined the society, and the proceeds of its invested funds and membership assessments were all required for the charitable objects of the organization. The museum, therefore, became a burden, and serious thoughts were entertained of selling the collections.

At about the same time the Essex Institute had accumulated a large and valuable collection of objects relating to natural history, the care of which, with the limited means then at its disposal for this purpose, threatened to seriously embarrass the society and disperse the band of scientists who had collected and were working under the auspices of that institution.

In 1866, through the instrumentality of Mr. Francis Peabody, at the time president of the Essex Institute, the existing condition of affairs with these institutions was brought to the attention of Mr. George Peabody, of London. After a very careful consideration of the matter, both on the part of Mr. Peabody and those interested in the institutions here, a general understanding was arrived at, and on February 26, 1867, Mr. George Peabody generously placed in the hands of several gentlemen the sum of one hundred and forty thousand dollars, "for the promotion of science and useful knowledge in Essex County," to be expended in a manner indicated by a letter of trust and as understood between himself and the trustees named, and who, on Saturday, March 2, 1867, organized as the "Trustees of the Peabody Academy of Science," with Mr. Francis Peabody as president. The East India Marine Hall property was purchased and the large exhibition-room was refitted for museum purposes with a special portion of the fund, according to the request of the donor. The museum of the East India Marine Society and the natural history and ethnological collections of the Essex Institute were then placed in the hands of the academy trustees as permanent deposits. These were arranged in East India Marine Hall, which was dedicated August 19, 1869, and opened to the public, the act of incorporation, approved April 13, 1868, having passed both branches of the Legislature.

Thus, through the instructions of the founder, the work of the institution was clearly indicated, and, although the funds were given for the benefit of the citizens of the county, the directions as to the purchase of the East India Marine Hall property and the agreements with the societies depositing their collections definitely located the institution in Salem, where its work must be conducted.

It has been the effort of the trustees to carry out Mr. Peabody's wishes by managing the affairs of the institution on as broad a plan as the income from the funds will permit. The museum, to which very large additions have been made by the trustees since 1867, through exchange, purchase and by gift, is arranged as an easy object-lesson in natural history. All the specimens in the cases are labelled clearly, larger cards and signs being placed to indicate the groups of the animals or minerals and the divisions of the ethnological collections. By this means the difficult problem of a catalogue for the use of visitors is avoided. This system is with the trustees a necessity, as the visitors to the museum number upwards of forty thousand annually, and are, with very few exceptions, persons without any scientific training whatever, and, in order that the museum shall be of any benefit to them and furnish them with instruction, the arrangement of the collections must at once be made simple and attractive. The office of the academy is ever open to any one who may desire to make inquiries as to the nature of any rock, animal or plant, or, in fact, anything coming under the general head of science. All such inquiries are answered as far as possible, and, at least, the inquirer is directed where he may gain the information he seeks. In 1876 a summer school of biology was established by the trustees, which was conducted for six seasons, and only discontinued when it was found that very few persons from Essex County cared to avail themselves of its instruction, nearly all the students coming from the Western States. During the continuance of the school, lectures were given and laboratory work conducted by well-known specialists in all branches of natural history. In addition to this work, special students have been received at the academy and classes in various branches of natural history are from time to time conducted, and, since the completion of the addition to the building and the opening of Academy Hall, public lectures have been given by men of acknowledged scientific attainments at such hours and at a rate of admission so low as to come within the reach of all. Of scientific memoirs the academy has published two volumes, chiefly of original researches by the officers of the academy, and, in addition, nineteen annual reports, several of which include scientific papers, have been issued. By a system of exchange, a large library of the publications of similar institutions, both of this country and abroad, has been brought together.

The officers of the academy at the present time are: Trustees,—William C. Endicott, President; Henry Wheatland, Vice-President; Abner C. Goodell, Jr., Secretary; all of Salem; James R. Nichols of Haverhill, George Peabody Russell of England, S. Endicott Peabody of Salem, George Cogswell of Bradford, John Robinson of Salem, Treasurer. The last three named have been chosen to fill vacancies caused by the deaths of Mr. Francis Peabody and Dr. Henry C. Perkins and the resignation of Prof. Asa Gray.

The first director under the trustees was Professor Frederick Ward Putnam, now of Cambridge, who was followed in 1876 by Dr. Alpheus S. Packard, Professor in Brown University, and, in 1880, by the present director, Prof. Edward S. Morse.

The museum and assistants there employed are in charge of the Treasurer, Mr. Robinson. The museum is open free to the public every week day from 9 to 5 o'clock, and, pending the completion of the new exhibition room in the addition to the main building, as at present arranged in East India Marine Hall, it contains, on the western side of the main floor, an educational collection illustrating the orders of the animal kingdom, arranged in their proper sequence, from the lowest forms to the highest. This collection was chiefly derived from the Essex Institute in the year 1867.

On the eastern side are arranged the Ethnological collections, principally received from the East India Marine Society, which are subdivided according to races or countries. This collection ranks among the very highest in importance in America. It is especially rich in South Sea Island implements, cloths, models, idols, domestic utensils, etc., and Chinese, Japanese, and East Indian life-size models of native characters, besides the boats, clothing, utensils, implements of war and of domestic use from these countries, and from Africa, Arabia, and North and South America. The collection from Japan is very fine, having been formed by the director during his last visit to that country. A collection from Korea and another illustrating the Indian Tribes of North America, have just been added to the museum.

The gallery is devoted to the Natural History and Archæology of Essex County. Nearly all of the species of the flora and fauna are represented by preserved specimens; the collection of birds and that of native woods being especially fine. The academy has, also, the best local collection of prehistoric implements and utensils of stone, bone and clay to be found in Essex County.

An educational collection of minerals has recently been arranged in the central gallery case.

Academy Hall, previously referred to, is on the lower floor of the fire-proof addition to the East India Marine Hall building. It has a pleasant audience-room with a seating capacity for three hundred and fifty persons, and is well ventilated and tastefully decorated. The hall was arranged primarily for the use of the academy, but, having a separate public entrance, it is rented for such other purposes as are deemed suitable by the trustees.

The Salem Lyceum was founded in the month of January, 1830, "for the purpose of mutual instruction and rational entertainment by means of lectures, &c." The persons engaged in this formation were among the principal gentlemen of the town. The first meeting was held at the house of Colonel Francis Peabody, on January 4, 1830; a meeting was subsequently held in Town Hall, where a committee was appointed "to prepare a constitution and submit the same for inspection to the citizens of Salem."

On the evening of January 18, 1830, a meeting was held at the Essex House, and a formal organization was effected by the choice of Daniel A. White, president; Stephen C. Phillips, vice-president; Charles W. Upham, corresponding Secretary; Stephen P. Webb, recording secretary; Francis Peabody, treasurer, and a board of ten managers which included the names of Rufus Choate, Leverett Saltonstall and Caleb Foote.

In the original plan a series of public debates was contemplated, but this intention was never carried out. A course of lectures was, however, started at once, and in the first course all but four were delivered by gentlemen of Salem. The lectures were first given in the Methodist meeting-house on Sewall Street, and afterwards in the Universalist meeting-house. But during the summer of 1830 plans were adopted for the construction of the present Lyceum Hall, which was built and ready for occupancy in January, 1831, at a cost of $3036, the land upon which it was erected costing seven hundred and fifty dollars.

For over half a century an annual course of lectures has been delivered before the Salem Lyceum, and during a portion of that time the demand for tickets has so far exceeded the seating capacity of the hall that a duplicate course has been given—gentlemen's tickets at the outset were sold for one dollar, and ladies' tickets for seventy-five cents; but it was not considered proper for ladies to purchase tickets unless "introduced" by a gentleman, and the tickets issued to them ran as follows: "Admit to the Salem Lyceum a Lady introduced by ———." In the changes which fifty years have brought about, ladies not only purchase tickets on equal terms with gentlemen, but appear upon the platform as lecturers, without question or comment.

Nearly a thousand lectures have been delivered before the Lyceum, and it is doubtful if any other institution in the country could present such a distinguished list. Judge Daniel A. White delivered the first lecture, his subject being "Advantages of Knowledge," and the list of lecturers includes such names as Daniel Webster, Rufus Choate, Edward Everett, John Quincy Adams, Caleb Cushing, Charles Sumner, Henry Wilson, Ralph Waldo Emerson, Oliver Wendell Holmes, Wendell Phillips, Louis Agassiz, George Bancroft, Charles Francis Adams, Horace Mann, Jared Sparks and Robert C. Winthrop. Among the Salem lecturers were Judge Daniel A. White, Francis Peabody, Rufus Choate, Thomas Spencer, Stephen C. Phillips, Henry Colman, Henry K. Oliver, Charles W. Upham, Leverett Saltonstall, Joshua H. Ward, Caleb Foote and George B. Loring. Ralph Waldo Emerson lectured in thirty-two different courses.

His first lecture was given in 1835, and his last in 1870.

The Lyceum can no longer offer such attractions to its patrons. The public taste has changed, and demands amusement rather than instruction in such a form. The purely literary lecture as a source of general entertainment is almost a thing of the past. The small cost of the cheap editions of the books of the present day which enables an author to address a larger audience at less inconvenience to himself, may have something to do with this change. Whether this be so or not the interest in the Lyceum lectures has not been maintained of late years, and the time may not be far distant when it will be deemed advisable to bring the affairs of this old time institution to a close.

The board of officers at present consists of President, George B. Loring; Secretary, Charles S. Osgood; Treasurer, Gilbert L. Streeter. Trustees, George Peabody and Caleb Foote, and a board of eight managers.

Salem Fraternity.—On the 7th of February, 1869, Mr. Alfred Stone, of Providence, formerly a resident of Salem, by invitation addressed a meeting at the East Church, explaining the working of the Providence Union. The next evening a few persons came together in the parlor of Benjamin H. Silsbee, Esq., to confer upon the matter further. Other meetings followed at the same place, and resulted in the formation of the Salem Fraternity, under a constitution which states the purpose of the organization to be "to provide evening instruction and amusement" for such of our population as "being confined to their work during the day need recreation at the close of their labors."

The experiment fairly began on the 21st of April, 1869, on which evening the western range of rooms on the second floor of Downing's Block, 175 Essex Street, was opened for the purpose from front to rear. The place was well chosen; central, accessible, attractive in its principal rooms, while the thoroughfare of the Essex Street promenaders led directly past its door. The rooms were designated as amusement, reading, school and work-rooms.

A year and a half after its opening a winter course of lectures was started. On Saturday evenings the games and amusement were suspended, and their room was taken for this object. Gen. H. K. Oliver gave the first lecture on Saturday evening, October 22, 1870, subject "Good Manners." These lectures were continued on successive Saturday evenings for several years with great success, interspersed with familiar talks upon different mechanical trades and various industries by practical workers in them.

The Young Men's Union was organized in 1855, and was for many years a flourishing institution. It maintained a reading-room, and each season a course of lectures and entertainments was given under its auspices, but, failing to maintain its membership, it was dissolved some four or five years ago.

Salem Charitable Mechanic Association.—Organized October 1, 1817; incorporated June 4, 1822; consists of regular apprenticed mechanics and of manufacturers, citizens of the city of Salem and vicinity. Its object is to extend the means of usefulness by encouraging the ingenious, by assisting the necessitous, and by promoting mutual good offices with each other.

A donation of books from Mr. Oliver Parsons, in April, 1820, laid the foundation of the library belonging to this institution. A committee was then appointed to solicit contributions, and in July of that year the number of volumes amounted to three hundred. In January, 1821, Mr. Benjamin Pickman presented a complete set of Rees' Cyclopædia. From this time the library has annually increased by donations and special appropriations, and at present numbers five thousand one hundred and twenty-five volumes. It is deposited in the middle eastern room under the Mechanic Hall, and is opened on Saturday evenings for the delivery of books. This institution early adopted the plan of having popular lectures on literature and science delivered to the members and their families. The first lecture was delivered by Dr. George Choate on Thursday evening, January 24, 1828, in Franklin Hall. These lectures were continued weekly, usually on Thursday evenings, during the winter season, for about thirty-eight years. They have since been delivered in their rooms, Derby Square, then Washington Hall, Lyceum Hall and Mechanic's Hall.

This association was instrumental in the building of Mechanics' Hall, in 1839. A stock company was incorporated for this purpose, in which the association invested a portion of its funds, the remainder of the stock being taken by the Salem Lyceum and the members and friends of the association. In 1870 it was enlarged and entirely remodelled, in its present condition.

In September, 1849, its first meeting was held in the above-named building. It was very successful and creditable to the Board of Managers and all who were interested in its success.

The first exhibition under the auspices of the government of the association was held at the Mechanic's Hall, Salem, commencing on Monday September 24, 1849. A good representation of the products of our varied industries was arranged upon the tables making a very creditable appearance. Forty-four medals and fifty-two diplomas were awarded by the judges.

Odd Fellowship.[1]—The exact date of the origin of Odd Fellowship in Massachusetts is not known. The first lodge, self-instituted and without a charter, held its sessions in Boston. No records of its early meetings were preserved. On the 26th of March,

[1] By Daniel B. Hagar.

1820, it was organized by the choice of officers, the adoption of a name, and of laws for its government, and the commencement of a record of its proceedings. It was instituted under the name of Massachusetts Lodge, No. 1. On the 11th of March, 1823, Siloam Lodge, No. 2, was instituted. On the 28th of March, Massachusetts Lodge wrote to the Grand Lodge of Maryland, recognizing it as the Grand Lodge of the order in the United States, and asking for a charter to be granted to it as the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts. The request was granted, and the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts was duly organized June 9, 1823.

The growth of the order in Massachusetts was not rapid, and after a few years it became nearly extinct. Prior to 1832 seven lodges had been instituted, all of which had at that time ceased to exist, Merrimac Lodge, No. 7, being the last to give up. The Grand Lodge of the State died with the subordinate lodges. In 1883 Merrimac Lodge was revived, and was placed under the jurisdiction of the Grand Lodge of the United States. On the 22d of June, 1841, Massachusetts Lodge, No. 1, was reorganized. By request of these two lodges, the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts was reinstated December 23, 1841. From this time the growth of the order was encouraging. Within two years the number of lodges increased to twenty-five. Between 1850 and 1860 there was a period of declension in the prosperity of the order in Massachusetts. Since 1860 the order has rapidly grown in numbers and influence, until it has come to be recognized as the leading beneficial order in the commonwealth. The present number of lodges is one hundred and ninety-one; the number of members, according to the last report, August, 1887, is thirty-four thousand six hundred and sixty-two.

The organization of the order includes the Grand Lodge, the Subordinate Lodges, the Grand Encampment, Subordinate Encampments, Cantons of Patriarchs Militant, and Lodges of the Daughters of Rebekah.

Essex Lodge, No. 26.—On the 20th of October, 1843, the first step was taken towards establishing a lodge of Odd Fellows in Salem. Adrien Low, G. D. Lyons, William Durant, Thomas Harvey and C. C. Hayden met at the house of Mr. Low, and, after deliberation, determined to apply to the Grand Lodge for a charter for Essex Lodge, No. 26, I. O. O. F. The charter was granted, and on the evening of November 6, 1843, the grand officers duly instituted the lodge and installed its officers. The officers were,—N. G., Thomas Durant; V. G., C. C. Hayden; Secretary, George Russell; Treasurer, Adrien Low; W., W. Merrill; C., B. F. Steadman; I. G., T. E. Page; R. S. N. G., T. Harvey; L. S. N. G., J. Kimball; R. S. V. G., N. Goldsmith; L. S. V. G., W. Saunders; R. S. S., W. R. Allen; L. S. S., I. T. Kimball; Chap., I. P. Atkinson.

The lodge at once entered upon a very prosperous career.

At the close of the year 1844, it numbered one hundred and thirty-four members, and January 1, 1849, five years and two months from its organization, it numbered three hundred and fifty-seven members. The whole number of members from its formation to the present time is nine hundred and twenty-five; of these one hundred and thirty-seven have died. The present number is three hundred and eighty-seven. A large number of members have withdrawn from Essex Lodge to aid in establishing other lodges. It furnished three of the five charter members of Atlantic Lodge, four of the five for Ocean Lodge, and four of the five for Holton Lodge. For the organization of Fraternity Lodge, it gave forty-three members; for Bass River Lodge, thirty-one; for Magnolia Lodge, twenty-seven; for Danvers Lodge, eleven. Essex Lodge has furnished in part the membership of some fifteen lodges.

Since its organization the lodge has paid in weekly benefits to the sick, $26,580.87; in funeral benefits, $5826.10; in other charities, $3366.39; total, $35,773.36. This amount does not include frequent private subscriptions not entered on the lodge books.

The lodge has a trust fund of over $15,000, which is at present under the charge of three trustees, Rufus B. Gifford, Daniel B. Hagar and Charles H. Kezar.

The membership of the lodge has included men of every profession and almost every occupation; many of whom have held prominent positions in city and State and in the high ranks of Odd Fellowship. One of its members, Levi F. Warren, has been Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts, and one, Rufus B. Gifford, has been Grand Patriarch of the Grand Encampment of Massachusetts, and Grand Representative to the Sovereign Lodge of the United States.

The Noble Grands of Essex Lodge, in their order of service, have been: William Durant, C. C. Hayden, James Kimball, Thomas Harvey, Adrien Low, Warren G. Rayner, Joseph A. Goldthwait, Richard Lindley, Thomas H. Lefavour, George Russell, Henry Luscomb, Benjamin S. Grush, John W. Rhoades, Walter S. Harris, Hale Hildreth, Charles E. Symonds, Alvah A. Evans, Joshua W. Moulton, Simeon Flint, Enoch K. Noyes, Robert P. Clough, E. B. Phillips, Willis S. Knowlton, Samuel B. Foster, George C. S. Choate, Benjamin S. Boardman, Charles B. Luscomb, Charles H. Manning, Samuel Fuller, Rufus B. Gifford, George W. Kingsley, Thomas Oakes, Walter Norris, James M. Brown, John R. Norfolk, Jonathan S. Symonds, Joseph Beadle, Edwin Verry, Joseph A. Kimball, Moses H. Sibley, Seth S. Currier, Joseph Swasey, Albert Day, Benjamin Edwards, Levi F. Warren, John White, William Holland, Charles Adams, Eleazer Hathaway, Richard N. Knight, Edward E. Dalton, James Donaldson, William P. Hayward, Nathaniel M. Jackman, John S. Wardwell, Jr., Perry Col-

lier, George M. Harris, Aaron C. Young, George H. Blinn, John F. Staniford, Joseph Batchelder, John H. Russell, Henry Conant, William D. Dennis, William R. Tebbetts, Aaron J. Patch, William O. Arnold, Charles Babbidge, John Wilson, William P. Pousland, George M. Gallup, Charles C. Roades, Charles B. Trumbull, Joseph N. Petersen, John E. Kimball, John E. Matthews, Frank Cousins, Benjamin A. Touret, David B. Kimball, Clarence Hayward, Howard C. Kimball, Amos J. Vincent, Robert E. Hill, Daniel B. Hagar, Arthur S. Palfray, George Z. Goodell, Warren B. Perkins, A. L. Burnham, Andrew J. Wilson.

The Secretaries have been: George Russell, James C. Briggs, Samuel B. Buttrick, Amory Holbrook, Jonathan F. Worcester, Israel D. Shepard, John G. Willis, Joseph Farnham, Franklin Grant, Benjamin S. Boardman, Charles E. Symonds, Charles B. Luscomb, John W. Moulton and E. B. Phillips; the last named has been secretary since 1858.

The Treasurers have been: Adrien Low, Nathaniel Goldsmith, James Harris, E. B. Symonds, Samuel Smith, John Beadle, Jr., Rodney C. Fletcher, Robert P. Clough, Volney C. Stow, George C. S. Choate, James M. Brown, John J. Ashby, Andrew H. Lord, Charles H. Norris, John P. Langmaid, William P. Hayward and John Wilson.

The present chief officers of the lodge are: N. G., A. J. Wilson; V. G., E. A. Reed; Secretary, E. B. Phillips; Treasurer, John Wilson.

Fraternity Lodge, No. 118, was instituted November 13, 1847, at Lynde Hall. The charter under which the lodge exists is signed by Rev. Dr. E. H. Chapin, at that time Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts. Of the Board of Grand Officers that instituted the lodge, Judge W. E. Palmenter, now chief-justice of the Municipal Court of Suffolk County, is the only survivor.

The charter members were James Kimball, Adrien Low, Stephen Whittemore, Jr., T. H. Lefavour, George Russell, William Lummus, Jesse Smith, S. B. Buttrick, Ephraim Annible, William Saunders, B. R. White, Gardner Barton, John Barlow, Joseph Hunt, James Harris, Jr., Nathaniel Wiggin, Alexander McCloy, C. B. Elwell, Alva Kendall, John Lovejoy, John G. Willis, Franklin Grant, William Brown, Joseph Farnum, S. O. Dalrymple, Jonathan Perley, George W. Pease, Jonathan F. Worcester and D. C. Haskell.

The first board of officers were James Kimball, N. G.; Stephen Whittemore, V. G.; Jonathan F. Worcester, Sec.; Thomas H. Lefavour, Treas.; Franklin Grant, W.; William Brown, C.; John Lovejoy, I. G.; E. Annible, O. G.; Joseph Farnum, R. S. N. G.; S. O. Dalrymple, L. S. N. G.; C. B. Elwell, R. S. V. G.; Alva Kendall, L. S. V. G.; Jonathan Perley, R. S. S.; George W. Pease, L. S. S.; Trustees, S. B. Buttrick, Jesse Smith and James Harris, Jr.

These brothers were all active members of the order: Messrs. Kimball, Low, Whittemore, Lefavour and Russell having been at the head of Essex Lodge, of Salem, and many others having held other positions in that lodge.

The lodge inaugurated an entirely new arrangement of the system of dues and benefits. The Grand Lodge of Massachusetts endorsed and especially commended the system of Fraternity Lodge, and it has been substantially adopted by all Odd-Fellows' Lodges in the country.

Of the twenty-nine original members, nine are now living (July 1, 1887), and in active membership, having held continuous membership more than forty years; all the other charter members are dead.

The Noble Grands of this Lodge, in regular order, have been James Kimball, Stephen Whittemore, Jr., Joseph Farnum, Jonathan F. Worcester, Benjamin Whittemore, I. D. Shepard, George H. Pearson, Jonathan Perley, S. O. Dalrymple, William Brown, H. E. Jocelyn, H. E. Meloney, Alva Kendall, E. C. Webster, William B. Brown, F. H. Lefavour, C. B. Elwell, Charles Estes, William B. Ashton, John R. Smith, N. A. Horton, George L. Upton, Joseph J. Rider, T. H. Lefavour, William M. Hill, Richard Harrington, T. M. Dix, W. H. Caulfield, C. D. Stiles, Charles Odell, A. J. Lowd, J. W. Averell, Joseph L. Lougee, C. H. Ingalls, Edward F. Brown, T. B. Nichols, N. A. Very, R. W. Reeves, G. C. Fernald, John P. Tilton, J. A. Hill, William Harmon, Charles B. Fowler, B. L. Morrill, B. M. Kenney, George H. Hill, Jesse Robbins, W. D. Gardner, W. G. Hammond, Samuel C. Beane, A. J. Tibbets, W. L. Welch, Charles Phelps, James A. Evans, J. R. Lambirth, W. A. Upton, F. A. Newell, C. H. Harwood, David Allen, William Meade, Joseph A. Sibley, E. W. Woodman, I. G. Taylor, Edward Mitchell, John M. Raymond, E. O. Richards, W. S. Nevins, A. B. Fowler, A. W. Batchelder, H. C. Strout, George W. Burnham, J. D. H. Gaus, George Putney, Fred. Tibbets.

The secretaries, in regular order, have been Jonathan F. Worcester, Richard Gardner, I. D. Shepard, Daniel T. Smith, William Archer, Jr., H. E. Meloney, Joseph J. Rider, T. H. Lefavour, N. A. Horton, William M. Hill, Joseph L. Lougee, C. H. Ingalls, J. P. Tilton, C. B. Fowler, J. W. Averell, J. A. Hill, A. J. Lowd.

The treasurers have been T. H. Lefavour, I. D. Shepard, A. B. Keith, James A. Wallis, George R. Buffum, T. M. Dix, Joseph Farnum, Joseph L. Lougee.

The present trustees of funds are William M. Hill, George Russell, N. A. Very, C. B. Fowler, E. F. Brown.

The present number of members is three hundred and twenty; fifty-nine members have died. The lodge has paid for relief of members, $12,544.67; for burial of the dead, $2640; for other charitable purposes, $2376. The lodge has remaining a large fund for relief.

An examination of the list of members of this lodge, in its forty years of history, shows that its members have been among the most prominent citizens of Salem. Two have filled the position of mayor of the city, thirteen have served as aldermen, five have served as president of the Common Council, sixty-four as members of the Common Council, and others in many prominent public positions in State, county and municipal affairs.

In the order itself the members of this lodge have been highly honored. Nathaniel A. Very has served as Grand Patriarch of the Grand Encampment of Massachusetts, and William M. Hill has served as Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts; and other members have filled many important positions in the Grand Encampment and the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts.

Naumkeag Encampment, No. 13, *I. O. O. F.*—The Naumkeag Encampment was organized June 26, 1845. Its members are connected with various subordinate lodges including Essex, Fraternity, Holton, Bass River, Agawam, Ocean, Hoekomoco, Asylum, Me., and Boston. The large majority of the members belong to Essex and Fraternity Lodges. The present number of members is three hundred and fifteen. Fifty-three of its members have died.

Its first officers were: C. P., William Archer, Jr.; H. P., Benjamin H. Grush; S. W., Israel D. Shepard; J. W., John C. Howard; Secretary, Samuel B. Foster; Treasurer, William Saunders, Jr.

The present officers are: C. P., William A. Saunders; H. P., C. C. Rhoades; S. W., Andrew J. Wilson; J. W., Edward N. Reed; Secretary, E. B. Phillips; Treasurer, J. Archer Hill. The trustees of its fund are Samuel A. Potter, Aaron C. Young and James Buxton.

The Chief Patriarchs, in the order of their service, have been: William Archer, Jr., Samuel B. Foster, Franklin Grant, John C. Howard, Walter S. Harris, James Kimball, Jonathan Perley, Jr., Jefford M. Decker, Stephen Whitmore, Joseph Farnum, Jr., John White, Robert P. Clough, James H. Conway, Edward C. Webster, Alva A. Evans, E. B. Phillips, Isaac Young, Simeon Flint, Andrew H. Lord, Rufus B. Gifford, Nicholas Woodbury, John R. Smith, Andrew F. Wales, B. W. Standley, Richard L. Woodfin, Thomas Oakes, William A. Foster, John R. Norfolk, Joseph J. Rider, Thomas W. Webber, George M. Hildreth, Moses H. Sibley, Joseph Swasey, Simon Lamprell, John E. Davis, Daniel F. Staten, Eleazer Giles, Caleb Prentiss, Jr., Ezra Stanley, John Conway, Jr., William M. Smith, T. D. Hanners, N. A. Very, Abram A. Fiske, Charles H. Ingalls, Charles F. Wilkins, Charles B. Fowler, Andrew J. Tibbetts, Aaron C. Young, George H. Blinn, Jr., William D. Gardner, William O. Arnold, James W. Averell, Joseph N. Peterson, N. M. Jackman, George M. Harris, Frank Cousins, S. Augustus Stodder, Wesley K. Bell, Edward F. Brown, F. A. Newell, Albert Day, Jr., John Wilson, George W. Ingalls, William E. Mead, Andrew J. Lord, George W. Grant, Fred. J. Gifford, Arthur S. Palfray, Arthur R. Millett, C. D. Bliss, J. O. Buxton, Robert E. Hill, A. J. Vincent, J. K. Saunders.

Salem Encampment, No. 11, *I. O. O. F.*—The Salem Encampment was organized January 1, 1884, with fifty-eight charter members. Since that time fifty-eight members have been initiated, making the total number one hundred and sixteen. Of these, one has died and one has been dropped, leaving the present number one hundred and fourteen.

The Chief Patriarchs, in the order of service, have been: William E. Mead, George Millett, John M. Raymond, Otis Burnham, I. G. Taylor, W. P. Poussland, W. H. Dayton, E. M. Carpenter.

The present leading officers are: C. P., E. M. Carpenter; H. P., J. F. Lovejoy; S. W., A. M. Batchelder; J. W., W. L. Nevens; Secretary, A. J. Lowd; Treasurer, W. D. Dennis.

This Encampment pays for sick benefits one dollar per week; for funeral benefits, fifty dollars.

Union Lodge, Daughters of Rebekah, No. 11, *I. O. O. F.*—Union Lodge of the Daughters of Rebekah was instituted April 12, 1870. Sixty-nine charter members were present at its first meeting, mostly from Essex Lodge.

Its first officers were, N. G., Eleazer Hathaway; V. G., Eliza A. Ingalls; Recording Secretary, Charles H. Ingalls; Permanent Secretary, Sarah H. Baker; Treasurer, Margaret J. Robinson.

The present membership consists of seventy-nine brothers and ninety-two sisters.

The present officers are, N. G., Amos J. Vincent; V. G., Eliza A. Ingalls; Recording Secretary, E. B. Phillips; Permanent Secretary, Lulu H. Graham; Treasurer, Lydia A. Tyler.

Patriarchs Militant, I. O. O. F.—Canton Unity, No. 5, Patriarchs Militant, I. O. O. F., was instituted January 6, 1883, as Unity Uniformed Degree Camp, No. 5, with twenty-seven charter members. The officers installed were, Commander, George H. Blinn; Vice-Commander, Walter J. Norris; Officer of the Guard, William O. Arnold; Secretary, John Wilson; Treasurer, Samuel A. Potter. Among the charter members were Nathaniel A. Very, Past Grand Representative, and William M. Hill, then Mayor of Salem.

The camp grew in a short time to one hundred and thirty-five members, taking its membership from Salem, Beverly, Ipswich, Gloucester, Danvers, Peabody, Marblehead and Lynn.

On the 12th of February, 1886, Unity Camp was merged into a canton, taking the name Grand Canton Unity, No. 5, P. M., I. O. O. F. It consisted of three component cantons, numbered 13, 14 and 15. The officers of the new organization were:

No. 13. Captain and Commandant. Arthur S. Palfray; Lieutenant, Charles F. Wilkins; Ensign, Chas. D. Bliss.

No. 14. Captain, William W. Pinder; Lieutenant, Charles W. Wallis; Ensign, George O. Tarbox.

No. 15. Captain, John Karcher; Lieutenant, William E. Luscomb; Ensign, Horace A. Roberts.

Clerk of Grand Canton, John Wilson; Accountant, Samuel A. Potter.

The canton made a creditable appearance in the parade on the 22d of September, 1886, given in honor of the Sovereign Grand Lodge, at Boston. It turned out the largest number of any canton in the line.

Many of the most prominent men of Essex County are members of the canton.

Its present officers are:

No. 13. Captain and Commandant, Fred. J. Gifford, of Salem; Lieutenant, George H. Stickney, of Salem; Ensign, A. S. Edwards, of Beverly.

No. 14. Captain, Arthur R. Millett, of Salem; Lieutenant, W. G. Hussey, of Salem; Ensign, Edward N. Reed, of Salem.

No. 15. Captain, John E. Graham, of Salem; Lieutenant, John O. Buxton, of Peabody; Ensign, Joseph C. Shepherd, of Gloucester; Clerk, John Wilson; Accountant, Henry C. Millett. Cantons pay no benefits, its objects being social.

Odd Fellows' Burial-Ground.—A joint committee consisting of Brothers Walter H. Harris, Alvah A. Evans and Nathaniel M. Jackman, of Essex Lodge, and Brothers G. C. Fernald, William M. Hill and Nathaniel A. Very, of Fraternity Lodge, purchased eight lots in what was then known as the Orne Street Cemetery, since called Green Lawn Cemetery. The price paid was $218.40, each lodge paying one-half that amount.

This purchase was made in August, 1868. In 1871 the sum of two hundred dollars was expended in grading these lots into one large lot, and putting it into a good condition. A monument was erected upon the lot in 1884, at the cost of eleven hundred and twenty-five dollars. The fund for the erection of this monument was donated by Naumkeag Encampment, the same being a part of the proceeds of a fair held by that encampment.

The monument is of granite and consists of a base and sub-base of hammered stone, a square stone upon whose several faces are the memorial inscriptions, an octagonal stone embellished with emblems of the Order, a polished column, around which is twined a vine of leaves, and upon its summit a polished globe. It is four feet five inches square at the base, and is thirteen feet high.

The lot is under the care of a joint committee, consisting of three brothers from each lodge.

Up to the present time, there have been fifteen interments in the lot; five bodies have been removed to other lots, leaving at present ten graves, four of which represent an entire family—father, mother and two children; one is that of a brother of a lodge in a distant part of the State; the remainder are those of brothers belonging to the Salem Lodges.

CHAPTER XI.

SALEM—(*Continued*).

MILITARY HISTORY.

BY CHARLES A. BENJAMIN.

UNLIKE many cities of equal historic importance, Salem is fortunate in her inability to point to a record of battles fought within her limits or sieges sustained by her. No turreted walls have enclosed her, nor, with one exception, since the precautions taken in the earliest life of the infant settlement, have her streets been watched by sentinels or, except in peaceful parade, echoed to the tread of armed men or rumble of artillery. As her name imports, she has indeed been a city of peace, and her citizens for nearly two centuries, have, within her borders, enjoyed immunity from the scourge of war. Her fame rests upon the success of her people in the paths of commerce and manufacture; their devotion to science and art and a charity and large-heartedness that, accompanying wealth, have prevented want and made her ever the abode of comfort and plenty. But although thus given to peaceful pursuits and preserved in herself from the devastation and ruin of war, this by no means implies that Salem has not indirectly suffered from its effects, or that her men have been slow to respond to the demands of their country upon their patriotism and courage; for they have manfully borne their full part in the wars of the nation, and sustained its honor and that of their native town on all occasions. In every Indian skirmish, and on every smoke-wreathed field known in our history, from the taking of "Sassacus his fort" to Bunker Hill and Gettysburg, or fighting their guns on the ocean in all latitudes, have stood the men of Salem, patriotic, brave and enduring. Their blood has wet the sod from the chapparal of Mexico to the shores of the great lakes, and their shattered bones lie fathoms deep in every sea.

This, then, is the military history of Salem—not that of a Saragossa or Leipsic, shaken in her own territory with the thunder of cannon, the crash of falling walls, and the groans of the wounded and dying—but steadfastly enduring in almost every cycle of her existence the departure of numbers of her best and bravest, and keeping green the memory of those who never returned, with tears, but in great honor and gratitude.

Within the limited space necessarily given in a county history to a monograph of this character, it is impossible to render full justice to all those whose services constitute the military record of the city, and if any for themselves or their ancestors or kindred shall feel neglected in this particular, their indulgence is requested on this account, and because of the sometimes scanty sources of information existing, with relation

to the connection of individuals with the warlike events of our history.

The first settlers of Salem, in common with their neighbors, landing in the wilderness and surrounded by a race of savages not numerous, but singularly active and enterprising, to whose keen, though untaught comprehension, their habits appeared objectionable and their civilization a menace, soon found that a conciliatory attitude was ineffectual to remove the suspicions of the Indians and enable the colonists to rely upon their good faith. The Indian, once fairly committed to a friendship upon a sound basis, may be expected to keep his engagements, and is a steadfast ally. When, however, as has usually been the case in our history, treaties and alliances were forced upon him as the weaker party, he fully realized the moral weakness of these compacts, and felt justified by his simple code of ethics in evading them upon the least sign of bad faith on the other side, or by simple treachery, followed by such violent efforts to as far as possible restore the proper equality of numbers between himself and his antagonist, as made the Indian wars extremely destructive and cruel.

Our ancestors therefore found it essential to their continuance here, to organize for defense. At the meeting of the Court of Assistants in September, 1630, the first step was taken in this direction by the appointment of Captains Underhill and Patrick, doubtless old English soldiers, as military instructors (probably charged also with the early organization of the forces), and an assessment was levied upon the various settlements for their maintenance. Salem's share toward this comfortable billet for these old veterans was three pounds.

In the following April the same authority directed that the companies should be drilled by their officers on each Saturday: Captain Underhill or Patrick no doubt superintended the operation, and with the latitude presumably allowed to the military hope of the pious colonists, were doubtless sometimes permitted to be well sustained with strong waters and to swear freely at both officers and men, after the fashion of military instructors in all ages. Every man was at this time required to bear arms, and the colony seemed to be establishing itself on a sound military basis. Several cannon were brought to Salem about this time.

In August of the same year (1631), a considerable hostile body of Tarrentines or Eastern Indians,—probably from Maine,—made their appearance in the vicinity of Salem, and caused much alarm to the settlers, as they were reputed to be puissant in warfare with the unpleasant habit of eating their captives. The people, however, fell in at once, and dragging out their six pounders, discharged them into the woods in the supposed direction of the enemy: whereat the Tarrentines, being unaccustomed to the sound of heavy ordnance, and apparently finding it disagreeable, took themselves off without further delay. This bloodless victory scored one for the Salem men, and must have been a gratifying result of their first engagement with the enemy.

About this time Captain John Endicott commanded an expedition composed of Salem men and other colonists to the number of ninety, to beat up the Indians who had gathered about Block Island with mischievous intent and had committed some depredations. The Fabian policy of the gentle savage prevented any general fight, although a few Indians were picked off by some accurate long-range practice, and the general effect of this energy and promptness appears to have been salutary.

While bearing a hand generally upon the simple fortifications and block-houses built for the safety of the colony, the Puritan warriors of Salem kept up their military habits by frequent drills, though they do not seem to have been engaged with the Indians again until 1636. It was on the occasion of a parade of the Salem company during this interval that the Cross of St. George was cut out of its colors by the pious sword or command of Capt. John Endicott, whose military and religious instincts seem to have been quite equally developed. This assertion of the puritan dislike of papistical emblems, raised a considerable breeze on both sides of the Atlantic, and the offense to the authority of the Crown was only condoned after suitable apologies. In August, 1636, hostilities having broken out with the Pequod Indians, a force of four small companies under Captain Endicott, one of which comprised the Salem contingent and was commanded by Ensign Davenport, of this place, was sent out against the enemy. Marching westward they had some skirmishes with the Indians, and returned September 14th, after inflicting on them considerable loss, while themselves losing but two men killed and a few wounded. The military officers appointed for Salem that winter were, Captain William Trask, Lieutenant Richard Davenport and Ensign Thomas Reade.

The following year Salem furnished two officers, Captain Trask and Lieutenant Davenport, and twenty-eight men as a part of the quota of one hundred and sixty from the Massachusetts Colony, who, under the general command of Captain Stoughton, marched to join the Connecticut forces in the campaign against the Pequod chief, Sassacus, who had assumed a hostile attitude. Before the arrival of the Massachusetts reinforcement, Colonel Mason had severely defeated the Indians, but they gallantly rallied, and the forces of the colonists having united, nearly exterminated them in a second engagement where Lieutenant Davenport and a party of his Salem men particularly distinguished themselves. Lieutenant Davenport was promoted, and in 1644 was appointed as captain to the command of the castle in Boston harbor. Later on he became a colonel, but had then removed from Salem.

There followed a considerable period during which

the settlers were not harassed by the Indians to any great extent; but realizing their constant danger, their vigilance was not relaxed and the military were kept in a good and increasingly efficient condition, with numbers continually augmenting, while the garrison and outpost duty they were required to perform was arduous and constant.

The discipline of the colonial soldier seems to have been carefully looked after at this time, for we read that it was enacted that "any disobeying his officer should be set in the bilboes or stocks, or be whipped." Military officers also directed the arms that men should carry in going from home, and particularly when attending church. The sight of a stalwart citizen of Salem of to-day, heavily armed and marching up and down the sidewalk in front of the First Church door narrowly watching every approach, while Sunday morning service was in progress; and the subsequent exit of the congregation at its close, each man with a heavy matchlock carrying a bullet of fifteen to the pound, on his shoulder, would strike us as rather odd; but it was quite the correct thing in the sixteen-forties at the very same place.

As a sample of the good fighting stuff of which the ancient Salemite was constructed, it might not be out of place to draw attention to the military talents of that distinguished Salem divine, the Rev. Hugh Peters, who officiated in the First Church at about this time, and who doubtless imbibed some of the belligerent spirit of his colonial parish: for, some time later being in England, he served as chaplain of one of the "Ironsides" regiments of Cromwell's army, and on one occasion in Ireland, we are told, took command of the regiment, and handled it in action like a born soldier. It is to be regretted that the active part he took in the affairs of the English Commonwealth ultimately cost him his head.

In the summer of 1645 war was declared by the colonists against the Narragansett tribe, and the Salem military marched with other troops against them. The Indians, however, do not seem to have laid in sufficient ammunition or had their tomahawks properly sharpened, for they "weakened," if the expression may be permitted, and sued for peace, which was concluded before the combatants came to blows. In October of that year the officers appointed for the Salem company were: Captain William Hathorne; Lieutenant William Clark and Ensign William Dixey, while John Endicott, who had previously held that commission, was continued as sergeant-major-general, which, though now an obsolete title, was then given to the commander-in-chief of the forces of the colony.

Fifteen years later we find the military establishment of what had now become the County of Essex, well organized and containing two troops of cavalry, one of which was composed of men of Salem, Manchester, Lynn and Riverhead, under Captain George Curwen and Lieutenant Thomas Putnam of Salem, and Cornet Walter Price of Manchester.

Captain Thomas Lathrop of Salem, though he may afterwards have been of Beverly, was, in 1663, appointed to command the Eastern foot company of the town. It would appear that at this early date there were two standing companies of infantry and part of a company of cavalry furnished by the town of Salem, which, considering the probable population of the settlement, must have comprised a large part of its able-bodied men.

Quiet continued to prevail until in 1675 the sudden uprising of Philip, Chief of the Wampanoags, with his tribesmen and allies, dispelled the fancied security of the colonists and called into immediate action their well-appointed and trained forces. Nevertheless, so well had this astute warrior laid his plans and so carefully had they been kept from the knowledge of those whom it was his purpose to annihilate, that his preconcerted attack was a complete surprise and for a time it seemed as if the accomplishment of that purpose was by no means impossible.

Towns were destroyed in an hour, large numbers of the people were massacred and the outlying settlements were abandoned by the inhabitants who flocked toward the larger towns to the eastward. In the hasty muster and advance of the troops to succor their hard-pressed brethren, their eagerness in some cases outran caution, and in the first contact with the insidious foe they had difficulty in holding their own and met with some severe reverses.

Captain Lathrop, before mentioned, while in command of a picked body of young men of the Essex companies, called by contemporaneous writers "the flower of Essex," was convoying a supply train, and being ambuscaded in Deerfield while crossing Muddy Brook, was killed with seventy of his men—nearly his entire force. Hearing the noise of the firing, Captain Mosely hastened from the upper part of Deerfield with his company, and finding the Indians engaged in scalping Lathrop's men, attacked them without hesitation, though greatly outnumbered, and drove them off with severe punishment. The company of Captain Mosely seems to have contained many Salem men and his lieutenants, Savage and Pickering, both of Salem, did much in aid of his victory by their resolution and gallantry. As in Lathrop's company there were also a number of Salem young men, this town shared in the general mourning of the county over the disaster that befell them.

The powerful Narragansett tribe, having at length allied themselves with Philip, the colonists determined to avail themselves of the inclement weather of approaching winter that would draw the Indians together, and, with a very strong force, to deal this tribe a crushing blow that should render them powerless for future harm. Thirty-one men, under Captain Gardner, were drawn from the Salem companies

and joined the force that marched southward to attack the stronghold in Rhode Island, where a large part of the Narragansetts were gathered. In the attack upon this palisaded fort in a morass, which was signally successful and utterly broke the power of that formidable tribe, Captain Gardner and six other men of Salem were killed and eleven wounded, which would indicate that the men from this town were not shirking their work to any great extent.

Hostilities continued during the following year and while the enemy had been much weakened and the military had begun to get hold of their work and were equal to the Indians when they could find them, yet with such subtle foes and in a country full of difficulty for moving columns, constant vigilance had to be exercised, and the troops had little rest. More men were impressed from Salem for active service. Those remaining strengthened the main fort here and built "garrisons" (block-houses), for the protection of the farm people outside of the town. These were all garrisoned, and the military of Salem must have been nearly all on duty during this time, at home or with the active forces. Lieutenant John Pierce and Ensign Gardner were appointed in the winter of 1676 to the foot company lately commanded by Captain Gardner, who fell at the Narragansett Fort.

In the spring of this year Captain George Curwen, of Salem, who was commanding a troop of cavalry in the field, had a difficulty with a Major Henchman, his superior officer, and the General Court,—which useful body, by the way, seemed to be available for any service from expounding doctrine, to sitting as a general court-martial—sentenced the gallant captain to dismissal and a fine of £100. As, however, he seems to have been too good an officer to lose, and quite likely the General Court finding that they had blundered about the evidence, he was presently restored to his rank. Although the record is silent on this point, it is also to be hoped that he got back his hundred pounds.

In September of that year, Major William Hathorne, with part of the Salem contingent bore a hand in the final surprise of Quecheco, where the greater number of the Indians remaining in arms were captured and King Philip's war ended; that gallant chief having been killed the previous month.

Civilization has its advantages, and looking at the question practically, it is perhaps best that its onward march should not be obstructed by a few savages. Nevertheless it is difficult to withhold admiration for this man Philip and his brave followers, who, believing that the English were driving them from the land of their fathers, died in the effort to preserve their inheritance as gallantly as did Leonidas or Winkelreid. As to the Indian methods of warfare, if they made more cruel work of it than the pious Puritan did on several occasions, the chroniclers have much misled us.

Early in 1677 some Eastern or Maine Indians rather disgusted the Salem ship-owners by capturing a number of their vessels that were on that coast, probably engaged in fishing. Exactly how it was done is not clear, and the fact is rather surprising; for while dashing fighters on land, the red man has rarely gone in much for naval distinction. However, in some way or another in this case they managed to pick up "no less than thirteen ketches and *captivate* the men," so goes the record. The ketch was a small schooner-rigged vessel which was much used in those days. As was quite customary, on receipt of this intelligence, a fast was immediately ordered, while an armed ketch with a crew of forty men and doubtless the destructive big guns that had proved so noisily effective on a previous occasion, was dispatched as a man-of-war to the rescue. "The Lord gave them success," is the brief and pious record of this first of Salem's long list of maritime victories. Matters rather calmed down after this naval exploit for a dozen years or so, and the good Puritans of Salem in the absence of war's alarms, were able to improve their material condition and to indulge in those fierce doctrinal squabbles in which their souls took stern enjoyment. But their military matters were not neglected, and in 1689 Jonathan Walcott was appointed captain, and Nathaniel Ingersoll and Thomas Flint, respectively lieutenant and ensign of the new company formed at Salem village, afterward the town of Danvers. Samuel Higginson, of Salem, was about this time serving as lieutenant-colonel of the South Essex regiment that embraced the Salem companies and those of adjacent towns.

The Indians in this year, instigated by the French, gave signs of restlessness, and in July seventy men were told off from the Essex lower regiment of foot, that included the Salem companies, to join in the defence of the frontier towns. Captain B. Gedney, who declined, and subsequently Captain S. Sewell, Lieutenant Robert Kitchen and Ensign Edward Flint were appointed officers of the West Salem company.

The companies of Salem seemed to have been well filled, for Capts. Sewell and John Price were presently ordered to organize four companies from their commands. The names of the new officers commissioned in consequence of this mobilization do not appear. As the savages became more threatening in their demonstrations and things were looking rather blue, a fast was now ordered in Salem. It is pleasant to observe the practical military preparations that in each emergency accompanied the prayers of our excellent ancestors. They were ever buckling on the sword, as it were, even while they were in the act of bending the knee.

In August Captain Simon Willard marched with a contingent from Salem and vicinity to Casco Bay, while the Essex lower cavalry troop, possibly still under the efficient command of our old friend Captain Curwen, were ordered to Newichewannock.

Late in the fall Captain Willard writes to the governor for supplies for the Casco Bay outpost, and takes occasion to say that "the parents of his soldiers "are much displeased because they have not already "returned as was promised." What effect this statement had upon the governor does not appear, but it is to be hoped that the displeasure of their parents was not visited upon the unhappy young recruits themselves when they ultimately turned up in Salem.

In 1690 war was declared against the French by the Colonists, who were much harassed by them in the fisheries and by their Indian allies in the Eastern settlements. Great military activity prevailed and while a few Salem men form part of the one hundred and sixty from Massachusetts reporting at Albany, four companies under Maj. John Price, Capts. Sewell and Walcot, and other officers whose names are not given, join the larger New England force preparing to attack Port Royal, the French stronghold in Nova Scotia. Benjamin Gedney, of Salem, now a colonel, and apparently held in high estimation, was appointed to command this expedition, but he declined the honor in favor of Sir William Phipps, who this year captured the place.

No especial mention is found of the conduct of the Salem portion of the beleaguering force, but it requires little penetration to feel quite assured of their gallantry on every opportunity, and it is pleasant to observe that Colonel Gedney is upon his return, placed upon the committee to divide the plunder obtained from Port Royal, which was very valuable. Let us hope that he saw to it that Salem received her just share thereof.

The cavalry (Essex lower troop) now under command of Captain Brown, of Salem, are in the field again this year, though the direction of their service is uncertain—probably to the eastward—while three hundred and eight men of Colonel Gedney's regiment, doubtless then under his command, from Salem and vicinity, rendezvous late in the year, and take part in the unsuccessful expedition against Montreal and Quebec, Captain John Curwen being one of the officers, with no doubt others from Salem.

A desultory warfare was continued with the French and their Indian allies for a long period, during which there is little to be gleaned in the chronicles, of the doings of the Salem soldiery. In fact little actual fighting was done by any body in this part of the country, though the scouts and Indians had no end of quiet amusement in the depths of the forest, bushwhacking and scalping each other to their heart's content.

In 1692 Colonel Gedney went down to Wells, Me., with an escort of thirty troopers (probably of the Essex lower troop) and made a peace with the Maine Indians, independently of the French, which appears to have endured until 1695, when, by the bad faith, according to Colonel Gedney's account, of one Captain Chubb in command at Kittery, the Indians again took up arms, obliging the colonel to march on that place with four hundred and sixty men. We presume that this imposing force, combined with Colonel Gedney's diplomatic abilities, restored the broken peace, for there do not seem to have been any further difficulties in that region for some little time thereafterwards.

In 1703 we find the Governor ordering the impressment of twenty men for the "Flying Horse," an armed cruiser of Salem. As the good people of the town with solemn pleasure watched the fitting out of this vessel, how little did they realize the very large number of armed cruisers that were, in later times, to be sent from their harbor! It appears that the buccaneers of the Spanish main, who had for many years been making things very unpleasant for treasure-ships and settlements in the vicinity of the equator, now began to extend their operations to the northward and appeared occasionally off the New England coast. Hence arose the necessity for this incipient naval force.

In the year 1704 a party of pirates, in a vessel commanded by one Quelch, remained off and on the coast for a time, having a secret rendezvous in a house near the entrance of Marblehead harbor. Where the armed cruiser was at the time is not clear, except that she was out of the way. However, the good people of Salem got along without her very well, according to the record; for, the character of the gang developing itself by some depredations, they were tracked to Gloucester, and Major Stephen Sewall, with one party, and Judge Samuel Sewall (who, by the way, was the chief promoter of the expedition), in personal charge of another, followed them down and carried their vessel by boarding, killing or capturing the entire lot after a rattling fight. The survivors were promptly hanged as a suggestion of the insalubrity of the New England climate to gentlemen of their profession. The hint was not lost upon the unhanged residue, and it was not until eighteen years later that the exploit of the notorious Capt. Low in Marblehead harbor, indicated that these lively sea-rovers must have learned of the demise of the belligerent Salem justice, and had good hope of the immunity that they actually enjoyed on that occasion.

During the interval of comparative repose that ensued for Salem and vicinity, in common with the rest of the colony, between King William's and Queen Anne's War, there is nothing to record. But this afforded but a brief breathing-space, and soon the border towns were again suffering from Indian attacks, and the Colonists involved in expensive and abortive expeditions in the effort to conquer Canada, so much desired by England. The pressure of danger was not severely felt in Salem just now, since we find the town indulging in a rather acidulous controversy in 1706 with the Governor, as to whether Fort Anne, in Salem should be repaired by the town or the Province.

In August, 1708, Major Walter Turner, with Cap-

tains John Gardner and Walter Price and a Salem contingent, join with other troops in pursuit of a party of French and Indians that had threaded the wilderness in one of their numerous raids and suddenly appeared near the northern towns. A sharp action, in which the enemy were discomfited and driven off, and John Gyles, of Salem, lost an arm, with a few others killed and wounded, was the net result.

There is little to record in the next few years of a military character that concerns Salem. Although until the peace of Utrecht, in 1711, there was constant warfare on the border.

In 1714 the town petition the General Court—having evidently had enough of the Governor in this matter—to repair and garrison Fort Anne. We are not told the result.

The peace of New England began to be again disturbed in 1720 by French intrigues among the Eastern Indians whose depredations on the border recommence, although it is uncertain as to what part Salem took in the Norridgewock episode and other border affairs that succeeded.

Soon after the opening of the French War, in 1745, we read that Capts. Grant, King, White and Covell, all of Salem, embarked with the troops bound for Cape Breton and the siege of Louisbourgh. Capt. George Curwen also took part in that brilliant and successful campaign, for an extract from a letter from him to his wife says "young Gray (of Salem) is killed, June 2d, in the attack upon a battery, and three more of Grant's men missing." The officers mentioned were doubtless in command of men from Salem and vicinity.

In the spring of 1746, a French fleet being reported off the coast with an army, preparing for an attack upon Boston, the Salem companies march to its protection. Perhaps this circumstance may have come to the knowledge of the French commander; at any rate the force made no landing: as a matter of fact it never got very near Boston, if it were, as is probable, the one commanded by the Duke D'Anville.

In 1755 the final war between the French and English on this continent was formally opened, so to speak, although, as usual, the Indians instigated by French officers and priests, had precipitated actual hostilities for a year or more before, and in the early part of the spring of this year Salem sends twenty-eight men, her quota of reinforcements to Col. Johnson's army operating towards Crown Point. To refresh the spirits of these men before their departure, the Rev. Mr. Clarke preaches them a sermon entitled, "a word in season to soldiers." We trust that in their conduct at the ensuing battle of Lake George, the good effects of Mr. Clarke's exhortations were made manifest. Captain Samuel Flint on September 25th (1755) marches with his company to join the same army.

In May, 1755, Col. Plaisted leaves Salem to assume his command at Crown Point; probably in the expedition about to move under Col. Winslow.

A liberal bounty is offered about this time by the General Court for the scalps of any Indians of all ages and both sexes, and a fast is ordered in Salem to pray for victory over the French and Indians.

In the spring of the following year (1757) a force of eighteen hundred men was drafted in Massachusetts, and under command of Col. Joseph Frye, of Andover, marched to reinforce the garrison of Forts Edward and William Henry. Captains Goodhue, Plaisted, Clarke and Pickman, of Salem, commanded companies in this force. Other Salem officers may have been with it, and some, at least, of the men in these companies were volunteers from Salem. King George promised £10 to every man who should enlist this year, and in the case of these men he failed to pay up. The old gentleman doubtless having considerable paper maturing about that time, may have been a little short. At any rate they got no money out of him, and a number of loyal citizens of Salem made it up to them by private subscription. The names of the men receiving this bounty were,—

In Capt. Goodhue's Company.

Peter Stokey.	John Elkins.
Jacob Verry.	John Baley.
David Morrill.	John Ward, Jr.
David Phipen, Jr.	Eleazer Symonds.
Barnabas Herrick.	Joseph Sands.
James Gould.	John Collins.
Thomas Symonds.	Moses Townsend.
Aphanis Seavy.	

In Capt. Plaisted's Company.

John Swasays.	John Leaman, Jr.
Robert Elliot.	Edward Ross.

In Capt. Clarke's Company.

Thomas Kneeland.	Sam'l Merritt.
John Webb.	Jos. Eborn.
Jo. Symond.	Jos. Silsby.
John Osgood.	John Dowst.

The record gives none of the names of the men in Capt. Pickman's company, who received this money, although it indicates that there were some. It will be remembered that Lord Loudon, this year, withdrew a large part of his army from the Champlain country and elsewhere for his abortive attempt upon Louisbourgh, which by the peace of Aix la Chapelle had been returned to the French. The astute Montcalm saw his opportunity and reckoning, with reason, upon the probability of Loudon's failure in the east, marched straight south with a strong army of French troops and Indians, and suddenly appeared before Fort William Henry. In the short siege of the place, followed by its surrender and the subsequent shocking Indian massacre, Richard Butman, Daniel Robertson and possibly others of Salem were killed, while six Salem men were captured and carried to Canada. These things had a depressing influence upon Salem, and another fast was ordered.

In 1758 General Abercrombie's bloody repulse before Ticonderoga was hardly calculated to raise the spirits of the people, but there was hardly time to

have a fast ordered in Salem, before the very different news of General Amherst's recapture of Louisbourgh that followed almost immediately after would seem to have obviated the necessity for it.

Whether any Salem men were with Abercrombie cannot be stated with certainty, but as his force contained over nine thousand provincial troops there can be little doubt of it; some also were presumably serving under Amherst.

There is extant a journal of one Gibson Clough, of Salem, a private of Captain Giddings' company, in the Fourteenth Provincial Regiment, that under Colonel Jonathan Bagley, was sent to reinforce the garrison of Louisbourgh after its capture.

Captain Giddings and a considerable portion of his company were evidently from Salem as well as Clough, whose running account of his experiences gives a fair idea of the life of the New England soldier of that day. Some of his comments are rather amusing. Speaking of certain disciplinary proceedings he remarks that "there is no spair of whip here;" and further on in an apparent fit of disgust with the service, he says, "if we get clear this year, I think we shall be unwise if we come here again to serve our King and country."

As the severe weather of a Cape Breton October approaches, Mr. Clough observed that they would soon stand in need of winter clothing and good liquors . . . . "for to keep up our spirits;" . . . . "But," he dryly adds, "we are not likely to get liquors or cloathes!" . . . . He describes, in his odd manner, the dismantling of the fortifications of Louisbourgh and the daily incidents of garrison and outpost duty; tells of the news of the taking of Quebec by General Wolfe and of the subsequent operations of General Amherst against Montreal and the French lake forts, all of which is filtered through the usual camp rumors and gossip. For the most part our friend writes in very low spirits, until his final description of his return home with Amos Hilton, Jonathan Buxton, Robert Picket and Daniel Butman, of Salem, and other comrades whom he does not name, which is marked, to use his own words, by "great joy and content."

At the capture of Quebec Captain John Tapley, of Salem, took part, with no doubt other Salem men, although it is probable that a larger number of them were serving with General Amherst's army, that failed to reach Quebec in time to co-operate with Wolfe, but performed signal services the following year in the reduction of Montreal and the remaining French posts that finally ended the dominion of that people on this continent.

Lemuel Woods, a soldier in this army, believed to be from Salem, wrote a fragmentary journal that has been preserved. No doubt his soldierly qualities were superior to his scholarship; for his style, even for a diary, must be regarded, in whatever light we view it, as very slovenly. He speaks of Lieutenant Granger and Ensign Peabody having obtained permission to look at the works of Fort Ticonderoga after its surrender, naively adding, ... "I accidentally went with them and viewed the fort," etc. (we decline the reproduction of his spelling). When the journal, in describing the accidental death of a man of his regiment, says, ... "a heavy stick slipped and stove him all to mash, and they brought him over and buried him," . . . . we must admit a conciseness of expression that in a measure redeems Mr. Woods' manuscript; but when, in another place he speaks of the camp being . . . . "all in a combustion a raging things up for a sudden push when called for," . . . . it seems hardly worth while to quote more although the diary is of much interest as illustrating the life of a soldier of the time in active service.

The French wars were now ended. The people of the colonies while impoverished by the aid rendered the mother-country, had nevertheless learned their strength; and the presence among them of a large body of trained soldiers, just returned from efficient service in the field where they had often proved themselves fully the equals of the British regulars, did not tend to make them tolerant of any tyrannical measures of the Crown. So for the next fifteen years the people of Salem, in common with their neighbors, were warming up in their quarrel with the mother-country.

The General Court meeting in Salem in 1774, Governor Gage brought down two regiments as a display of force that should overawe the court and the people. But upon his return to Boston the troops were withdrawn, fortunately without any collision with the exasperated people.

It was in Salem that the Revolution really began, when the General Court, the same year, formed itself into a Provincial Congress, and subsequently, after adjourning to Concord, appointed officers independently of the crown and proceeded to procure arms and ammunition. Here also occurred the first actual collision with the British troops, which, though without bloodshed, resulted in their retirement without the accomplishment of their purpose.

For on Sunday morning, February 26, 1775, Colonel Leslie in command of a battalion of infantry, sailed around from Boston and debarking at Marblehead, marched rapidly to Salem, with the purpose of seizing some cannon and munitions collected and stored at a point across the North River. A draw bridge that was there had been raised by the people, who shrewdly guessed their unlawful object. In endeavoring to push across in batteaux moored near by, some resistance was made by the crowd, and one man received a slight flesh wound from a soldier's bayonet. The number of people increased, and some prominent citizens warning Colonel Leslie that with the present temper of the people he would never take his command back alive if he persisted or fired upon them, he said that if, as it was a matter that concerned his honor,

they would permit him to pass the bridge, he would immediately withdraw. This was agreed to, and the bridge being lowered, he led his men across and at once countermarching, returned to Marblehead and re-embarked for Boston. This bloodless expedition was the first military movement made by the English in the Revolutionary War. On April 18th, Colonel Pickering, with three hundred men from Salem, marched in pursuit of the British troops retreating from Lexington, but failed to come up with them. Captain Hiller commanded one of his companies. Some others from Salem were in the engagement, however, and Benjamin Pierce was killed at Lexington village.

Just previous to the Lexington affair Salem had been getting in order for the coming war. A general muster was held March 14th, of all persons liable to military duty in the town armed and equipped. The new pine tree flag was raised, perhaps for the first time, on this occasion.

The Provincial Congress had recommended the tactics and manual of 1764 (probably English) for the provincial troops, but very shortly after, the system prepared by Colonel Timothy Pickering, of Salem, was, it appears, adopted.

No compromise seemed possible after Lexington. Men arranged their affairs and joined the army, now gathering near Boston. A lady writing from Salem, June 10, 1775, says: "The men are listing very fast; 3 or 400 are gone from here." Many of those who were able to do so, now sent their families back into the country, to Nantucket and other inaccessible places, believing Salem to be too near the scene of hostilities for safety.

In the historic engagement of Bunker Hill that naturally followed the prompt erection of works commanding Boston, a few Salem men took part, and Lieutenant Benjamin West, of Salem, a gallant young officer, was killed at the breastworks. As has been stated, many Salem men now joined the fighting force as minute-men, militia or Continentals. Colonel Timothy Pickering, who seems to have had a genius for military matters, made "a plan of exercise" or tactics, already spoken of, that the Congress ordered to be used by officers of the Massachusetts Militia. He was, in 1776, appointed quartermaster-general of the army, and served as such and as adjutant-general, with distinction throughout the war. In an interesting diary of one Lieutenant Craft, from Manchester, kept while serving with the army in the environs of Boston, are many allusions to officers, whose names indicate that they may have been from Salem. His regiment, at any rate, was raised in lower Essex County, and doubtless largely in Salem, and Colonel William Mansfield, who commanded it, was a Salem man. The pay of the army was not excessive at this time, captains receiving six pounds per month, and lieutenants four and three pounds; sergeants forty-eight shillings, and privates forty shillings. Captain John Felt commanded a company of artillery in service this year, his lieutenant being John Butler, both of Salem.

The same year (1776) Fort Lee was built to command Salem harbor, and a company of men, under Captain John Symonds and Lieutenant Benjamin Ropes, Jr., stationed as its garrison. In 1777 forty-four men were raised in Salem as her quota for the army, presumably under a Captain Greenwood, for we read that he marched from Salem on public service with his company, on November 11th, 1777. Fifty-four men additional were also drafted to act as guards for Burgoyne's surrendered army, under Captain Simeon Brown. Another company, under Captain Benjamin Ward, also marched to join the army at New York December 17, 1777. This was doing pretty well for a little town in one year, and in 1778 we find the town still promoting enlistments by voting bounties to the men who should volunteer for the army. This would indicate that even in that day of intense patriotism, it was necessary to use extraordinary means to induce men to be steadily food for powder, while they might be quite ready to dodge about as minute-men for a few days' fun.

In July of this year Captain Samuel Flagg commanded a small company raised for special service in Rhode Island. Captain Flagg's lieutenants were Miles Greenwood and Robert Foster. Major Hiller, of Salem, also had a command in this expedition, which, under General Sullivan, attempted, with the co-operation of the French fleet under the Count D'Estaing, to wrest Rhode Island from the English, who held it under Sir Robert Pigot. Owing to the failure of the French fleet to render the promised assistance, the objects of the expedition were not attained. Considerable mention is made of the services of the Salem company in the accounts of this campaign.

The same year the town had to proceed with the additional task of raising forty-two men for the Continental army, and some others for some special short enlistment not particularly described.

In 1779 a committee are appointed in Salem to raise thirteen more men for the Rhode Island service and twenty-eight for the Continental army, in which they no doubt had difficulty; for it is stated that in October large additional pecuniary inducements, in addition to Continental and State pay, were voted to recruits to serve three months in the army. On December 11th Captain Addison Richardson marched with his company to join the army.

Early in 1780 the town voted a very large sum for those days, to devote to the raising of sixty-two men to serve for six months in the army.

These records bear continual testimony to the baneful practice so prevalent in that war of enlisting men for short terms of service. It was a constant cause of complaint by the officers of the Continental Army, and did much to destroy its efficiency.

Major Samuel King, of Salem, an aide to General De Kalb, was killed in action this year in South Carolina, and Captain Nathan Goodale, of Salem, is also reported as made prisoner by the enemy.

A letter dated in camp near West Point, on the Hudson, February 12, 1782, to Joshua Ward, from a Salem soldier of the Continental Army, whose signature does not appear, asks to have sent him certain articles on credit, and speaks of the hardships endured by the army without supplies or money. Captain Flint, killed this year in the first day's battle at Saratoga, is believed to have been from Salem. Mention should be made of Colonel Samuel Carleton, of the Continental line, who was from Salem, and who so distinguished himself that Washington declared him to be one of the most intrepid officers who served under him.

Of the special part taken by Salem and her soldiers in the succeeding years of this war, there is too little trace. There is evidence, however, that her record in point of numbers and service was quite up to the average, though it is to be regretted that so little can be written of the gallant deeds of her officers and men in an army where all were so brave and steadfast, and that, though in the appendix a list is given of the names of those who served from Salem, there is some doubt as to its accuracy, and it tells nothing of the actions in which those men took part, or of the character of their service.

But in the record given of the part borne by Salem and her citizens in our revolutionary armies, though, it were much more complete, but a small part of her services to the country can be fully comprehended. Long before the colonies took the first decisive action that resulted in their independence, Salem had been steadily increasing her commerce, and in 1775 she had become an important port of entry, her merchants were becoming wealthy and a large part of her people followed the sea. Very soon after the war broke out, it became evident that a navy was almost as necessary to our success as an army. Congress fitted out a few armed vessels, but the resources of the young nation were inadequate to equip any sufficient number to cope with the powerful navy of Great Britain, or even to be of much use in the destruction of her commerce.

Here, then, was the opportunity of Salem, with her ships lying idle at her wharves in fear of English cruisers, and her fine seamen idling about her streets. Procuring commissions for private armed cruisers and letters of marque and reprisal for her trading ships, she fitted out her ablest and swiftest vessels with heavy guns and powerful crews well officered, and sent them over the sea in quest of the enemy's merchantmen. Nor did they neglect her smaller men-of-war, but, as eager for glory as plunder, promptly attacked any armed ship whose weight of metal was not absurdly disproportionate to their own, and in the majority of cases with success; while her trading vessels made their voyages well armed, and with double complement of men, and showed their teeth when interfered with or when falling in with a vessel whose chances of capture were sufficiently good to justify the risk to their owners. Our privateer navy was intensely active and successful, and played an important part in that contest, severely crippling the enemy's merchant marine and keeping her navy busy in every part of the world to protect it.

It is impossible to give more than a glance at the exploits of the gallant officers and men who ranged the seas in the Salem privateers, sending in a rich return of captured vessels to their owners.

And it is not to be understood that in the capture of these merchantmen no fighting was involved. Many of the English trading vessels were letters of marque, and nearly all carried guns and had strong crews well armed, and, defending themselves with true English courage, they were often only taken after a severe struggle. The actions between our privateers and British men-of-war or privateers were of the most sanguinary description, and were only finally determined by boarding and a hand-to-hand fight on the deck of one or the other of the vessels.

The Salem privateers and letters of marque formed a large part of those sailing from American ports during that war, and, indeed, the principal business of the town became that of privateering, the results of which laid the foundation of many fortunes that are but now being dissipated.

Some of the regulations governing the crews of Salem privateers in the Revolution were curious. The owners of the vessel, after deducting outfit and expenses, took one-half of the value of the prizes, and the officers and crew the other half, divided in certain proportions according to rank. A prize of $500 was given to the man first sighting a sail, and $1000 and best firelock to the first man to board the enemy. For the loss of a leg or arm in action $4000 was paid as compensation, $2000 for an eye and $1000 for a joint. If one of the crew were detected in thieving, he suffered the loss of all prize money, which, to judge by the liberal schedule above given, must have been in some cases a severe penalty.

As illustrating the work of these gallant little vessels, it is related that the ship "General Pickering," sixteen guns, Captain Jonathan Harraden commanding, on May 20, 1780, engaged and whipped an English man-of-war of twenty guns; on June 1st fought and took a schooner of fourteen guns and fifty-seven men, and on the 4th boldly luffed up and sustained the attack of the "Arguilles," thirty-four-gun frigate, and though quite unable to take a vessel of such size, beat her off after an engagement of nearly two hours. The "Julius Cæsar," of Salem, a small schooner, the same year, simultaneously engaged two vessels, both of heavier metal than herself, and made it so warm for them that they were glad to make sail and leave their plucky little antagonist in possession of the field.

In June, 1782, it took a British sloop-of-war four hours to capture the little privateer "Jack," of Salem, and she did not strike until her captain, David Ropes, and more than half her crew were killed or wounded.

The "Jack" was a small ship that had the peculiarity of having a mizzen mast that could be taken down at sea and as easily put up again. By this expedient she constantly deceived the enemy and escaped capture, appearing alternately as a ship and a brig.

Captain Perkins, of Salem, commanding a small privateer, had on one occasion manned two prizes, and was making the best of his way home with only four men left before the mast, when an English privateer quickly hove in sight. Instead of running away, he immediately made all sail for her, and she, not liking his apparent readiness for a fight, wore around and sailed away. A rather amusing incident occurred to the privateer Oliver Cromwell, Captain James Barr, when cruising in the West Indies in 1779. Sighting a vessel with low top-masts and apparently no guns in a fog off the coast of Cuba, one morning, she supposed it to be a large merchantman and was ranging up alongside, when in a trice up went a string of painted canvass that covered her ports, and the "Oliver Cromwell" narrowly escaped being blown out of water by the discharge of a frigate's full broadside. She was much crippled, but managed to get away in the fog and light breeze.

The letter of Marque "Ranger" twenty men, when anchored in the Potomac, the night of July 5, 1782, was attacked by sixty tories in boats. The captain, Lucum, was shot at the first volley and Joseph Peabody, of Salem, second officer, springing to the deck in his night clothes, drove the enemy off by the clever expedient of directing the crew to drop cold shot into the boats. One was sunk and the others pulled away.

Many more incidents of this character might be given did space permit; suffice it to say that these are but a sample of the adventures of the Salem fighting marine during these years.

It would be interesting reading could we follow the adventures of Captain John Leach, who commanded at different times the privateers "Brutus," "Franklin," "Eagle," "Dolphin" and "Greyhound;" Capt. Nathan Brown the first commander of the "Jack" and also of the ship "Hunter;" Capt. Joseph Robinson, who commanded the ship "Pilgrim" and also the "Franklin;" Capt. Sam'l Masury of the schooner "Panther;" Capt. John Donaldson, who sailed the brig "Captain;" Capt. John Mason of the brig "Lion;" Captain Jacob Wilds, who sailed in the privateers "Greyhound," "Hawk" and "General Greene;" Capt. William Patterson, who commanded the ship "Disdain" and brig "Favorite;" Capt. Benj. Dean of the strong sloop "Revenge;" Capt. Benj. Moses, another commander of the ship "Oliver Cromwell;" Captain Anthony Diver, a former officer of the English Navy, who was a lieutenant on several vessels, and later ably commanded the privateers "Civil Usage" and "Sturdy Beggar;" Capt. Ebenezer Pierce of the schooner "Liberty;" Capt. John Gavett of the brig "Flying Fish;" Capt. John Brooks, also a commander of the "Junius Brutus;" Capt. Edward Rolland, also of the brig "Sturdy Beggar;" Capt. William Carleton, who sailed the heavily armed and manned sloop "Blacksnake;" Capt. Benj. Hammond of the schooner "Greyhound;" Capt. Charles Hamilton commanding the ship "Jason;" Capt. John Fearson of the ship "William;" Capt. Thomas Benson who had the schooner "Dolphin," and later the ship "Hendrick;" when he was captured in the latter in 1782, a petition to the General Court asked that an exchange be arranged forthwith for Capt. Benson, his services being so valuable to the country. There were also Captains John Revell, Forrester, Mascoll (killed while boarding an enemy's ship in 1777), McDaniel, Daniel Ropes, John Buffinton, John Carnes, John Turner, Samuel Tucker, Joseph Lynde, Pratt, Briggs, Cook, Baker, Brookhouse, Gray, Nehemiah Buffinton, Dunn, James Cheever, Neili, John Felt, Ingersoll, Crowell, Baldwin and many others, all Salem men, commanding Salem ships with good Salem officers and crews, and handling them with great seamanship and bravery. It is impossible to give a list of the other officers and crews of the vessels sailing as privateers from Salem during the Revolution. Their aggregate would be little, if any, under five thousand men, first and last, and would comprise a large majority of the able-bodied men of the town who did not join the army. They were largely sea-faring in their training, and took to this rough and tumble naval experience as naturally as ducks to water.

A fairly accurate register of the privateers of Salem in this war, will be found in the appendix; and the following copy of the commission of a Salem privateer commander in the Revolution may be of interest:

"The Delegates of the United States of New Hampshire, Massachusetts Bay, Rhode Island, Connecticut, New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina and Georgia. To all unto whom these presents shall come, send greeting—know ye, that we have granted and by these presents do grant license and authority to Samuel Croel Mariner, Commander of the Schooner called the 'Greyhound' of the burthen of forty tons or thereabouts, belonging and others—mounting six carriage guns and navigated by eleven men, to fit out and set forth the said schooner in a warlike manner, and by and with the said schooner and the crew thereof, by Force of Arms to attack, subdue and take all ships and other vessels whatsoever carrying Soldiers, Arms, Gunpowder, Ammunition, Provisions, or any other Contraband Goods to any of the British Armies or ships of war employed against these United States. And also to attack, seize and take all ships or other vessels belonging to the Inhabitants of Great Britain, or to any subject or subjects thereof, with their Tackle, Apparel, Furniture and Ladings on the High Seas or between high and low water marks (the ships or vessels, together with their cargoes belonging to any Inhabitant or Inhabitants of Bermuda, Providence and the Bahama Islands, such other ships and vessels bringing Persons with intent to settle and reside within any of the United States, or bringing Arms, ammunition or warlike stores to the said States for the use thereof, which said ships or vessels you shall suffer to pass unmolested,

the commanders thereof permitting a peaceable search and giving satisfactory information of the contents and lading and destination of the voyages, only excepted). And the said ships or vessels so apprehended as aforesaid and as prizes taken, to carry into any Port or Harbor within the dominions of any neutral State willing to admit the same, or into any Port within the said United States in order that the Courts there instituted to hear and determine Causes Civil and Maritime, may proceed in due form to Condemn the said captures, if they be adjudged lawful prizes, or otherwise according to the usage in such cases at the port or in the State where the same shall be carried. The said Samuel Croel having given Bond with sufficient sureties that nothing be done by the said commander of schooner or any of his officers, Marines, or company thereof contrary to or inconsistent with the usage and Customs of Nations, and that he shall not exceed or transgress the Powers and Authorities contained in this Commission. And we will and require all our officers whatsoever in the Service of the United States to give succor and assistance to the said Samuel Croel in the Premises. This commission shall continue in force until the Congress shall issue orders to the contrary. Dated at Boston, 14th day of October, 1779, and in the 4th year of the Independence of the United States of America.

"By order of the Congress,

"JOHN JAY, *President.*

"JOHN AVERY, *Attest.*

"CHAS. THOMPSON, *Secretary.*"

After the Revolution the new nation being nominally at peace with other countries, there is nothing to record until the War of 1812, though Salem shipping, which had vastly increased in value since the independence of the country had been established, suffered considerably from the depredations of the French navy, which, had we been a little stronger, were a quite sufficient *casus belli.*

Subsequently, that government frankly recognizing their fault in this matter, paid over a large amount to the United States as an indemnity fund for the ship-owners who had suffered loss. Our government, with a calm dishonesty for which an individual would have been promptly punished, put the money in its coffers, and no part of it has, up to date, been paid to those to whom it properly belonged. As it is difficult to get a government indicted and put into States prison, or even to force it to file an answer in a civil proceeding, the unhappy people who were swindled in this matter were obliged to die without getting their money, and their heirs have since hung around the steps of the capitol at Washington or caught the members of Congress in the lobbies in the hitherto vain attempt to recover their own.

A little later, when the Barbary corsairs began to pick up our merchantmen, with some Salem vessels among them, we felt that if we could not make it convenient to quarrel with France, we did not propose to have Algiers or Tripoli tread upon us, and promptly whipped those people into the belief that we were something of a naval power, after all.

What part was taken by such Salem men as were serving in the United States navy, in that quite creditable little war, we cannot say, but it was doubtless, as usual, efficient and valuable.

In 1798, it being obvious that the United States needed a navy, and the government having no facilities for ship-building, a request was made that the citizens of certain maritime localities loan funds to aid in the equipment of the navy. In Salem a large sum was subscribed, and the frigate "Essex," afterward to become a very famous vessel, was built by Salem ship-builders on Winter Island, rigged and turned over to the government. It was a patriotic task for a little town of nine thousand inhabitants to undertake. The "Essex" proved a very fast sailer, and had a noted career.

The following are the names of the subscribers to this loan, on which the government paid only six per cent. while borrowing other moneys at eight per cent., a fact well known to these gentlemen:

Wm. Gray, Jr.	$10,000
Elias H. Derby	10,000
Wm. Orne	5,000
John Norris	5,000
John Jenks	1,500
Ebr. Bickford	2,000
Benj. Pickman, Jr.	1,000
Stephen Webb	500
Benj. Pickman	1,000
Jos. Peabody	1,500
John Osgood	1,000
Wm. Prescott	1,000
Ichabod Nichols	1,000
Benj. Carpenter	500
Jacob Ashton	1,000
James King	500
Samuel Gray	2,000
Wm. Ward	500
Joshua Ward	750
Jonathan Neal	2,000
John Deland	100
Joseph Newhall	100
Benj. Goodhue	800
Nathl. Batchelder	50
Daniel Jenks	500
Samuel Archer	100
Jos. Vincent	200
Joshua Richardson	500
Jos. Mosely	100
Wait & Pierce	2,000
Thos. Saunders	500
Abel Lawrence	500
Hardy Ropes	200
Thos. Cushing	50
E. A. Holyoke	800
Moses Townsend	100
Timothy Wellman, Jr.	100
John Morong	50
Lane & Son (in work)	100
Enos Briggs	50
Ephraim Emmerton	100
Wm. Marston	250
Edw. Lang	100
Thos. Webb	200
Michael Webb	100
Edmund Gale	10
Benj. Webb, Jr.	100
Richard Manning	1,000
Benj. Hodges	500
John Beckett	100
James Gould	50
John Derby	1,000
Edward Allen, Jr.	500
Page & Ropes	100
Thomas Perkins	500
John Murphy	500
Joseph Cabot	500
Edwd. Killen	100
Ezekiel H. Derby	1,000
Jona. Mason	50
Saml. Ropes, Jr.	50
Saml. Brooks	50
Asa Pierce	50
Natha. Pierce	250
Upton & Porter	400
Buffum & Howard	450
Jos. Osgood, Jr.	25
Wm. Appleton	50
John Hathorne	200
Isaac Osgood	500
Elias H. Derby, Jr.	400
Jona. Lambert	40
Henry Osborne	50
Joseph Hill	300
Walter P. Bartlett	100
Israel Dodge	500
Saml. Very	100
Brackey Rose	100
Asa Kilham	20
A lady, by J. Jenks	50
Benj. West, Jr.	350
Thomas Chipman	100
Richd. Manning, Jr.	200
David Patten	50
Edw. J. Sanderson	200
John Treadwell	500
John Barr	600
Wm. Luscomb	300
Jona. Waldo	40
Thos. Bancroft	100
Nathl. West	1,500
Saml. McIntire	100
Benj. Felt	100
George Dodge	1,000
Peter Lander	200
Stephen Phillips	1,000
Richd. Derby, Jr.	1,500
Jos. Waters	415
C. Crowninshield	500
John Pickering	200
Edmund Upton	300
Total	$74,700

During the years that preceded the War of 1812, the Salem merchantmen in common with others lost men by the high-handed impressments of the British men of war, that exercised a pretended right to take from the ship of any nation met on the high seas, such seamen as their officers chose to consider English subjects; and as they were in need of sailors they were by no means nice in drawing distinctions. Therefore, while opposed on general principles to the

embargo and subsequent declaration of war against England, these unwarrantable acts had left sufficient sting in the minds of the Salem merchants and seamen to render them very ready to again sweep the seas with their privateers to the serious detriment of the British merchant marine. Again it may be said, without much exaggeration, that from commerce this became the principal business of Salem, and if it were possible to give a list of the men who at some time during this war, served on her privateers and letters of marque, it would give a very fair idea of the seafaring portion of the town's population.

In writing of the exploits of the privateers of Salem in this war, it is difficult to know how to begin and where to end. For three years forty vessels, practically men of war, cruised from this port heavily armed, and officered, and manned by as skillful and brave navigators and seamen as were then afloat. And this does not include over one hundred letter of marque trading vessels, that kept the sea and did some fighting as well as trading. Of these, as their warlike character was merely incidental, we shall be unable to make more than this passing mention.

With regard to the privateers, the records of the time are more or less imperfect: some of the deeds performed by them are recounted while others are unnoticed, and the history of their actions and captures is imperfect and unsatisfactory. Nevertheless, it is impossible to turn this remarkable page in the history of the town without glancing at the careers of a few of these notable vessels, and recalling some of the incidents of their warfare.

The daring with which these fine vessels were fought and the brilliant seamanship that so fully utilized their admirable sailing qualities, were the wonder and exasperation of the English navy, and caused British merchants many hours of painful reflection.

These qualities of vessel and crew were never better illustrated than in the ship "America," twenty guns, and carrying a crew of one hundred and fifty men, more or less. She was owned by George Crowninshield, and was the largest privateer sailing from this port. Admirably commanded by Captains Joseph Ropes, John Kehew and John W. Cheever at different times, she was considered by some to be the fastest vessel afloat during that war. Her success in capturing prizes was phenomenal, and the amount realized by her owner was very large; her captures up to March, 1814, were estimated at the value of $1,100,000. Unlike the greater number of privateers, she escaped capture by the enemy, and may be said to have died peacefully in her bed, long subsequent to the war.

A smaller full-rigged ship, called the "Alfred," sixteen guns and one hundred and ten to one hundred and thirty men, was an effective cruiser. She was built in Salem in 1805, and at her launch the rudder, which, against the remonstrance of the builder, was already hung, struck the bottom and was thrown out, falling immediately across the stern-post and stopping the vessel, so that she lay aground one tide. When floated she was found to be badly "hogged." She was brought to the wharf and large blocks of wood placed under her stern-post and forefoot, and her weight brought upon the extremities, which caused her to settle in the centre and resume her original lines. She was never apparently the worse for this severe test of her elasticity, but proved a good ship and fast sailer. When fitted as a privateer she sailed less well than previously and was altered into a brig. She seemed under both rigs to have had bad luck with her spars in heavy weather. As a brig she was probably over-sparred, but that had not been the case when ship-rigged. She was well commanded by Captains Stephen Williams and Philip Bessom, under both of whom, if the vessel lost a few sticks, she never failed to send in prizes enough to fully atone for this one foible. Two of her prizes alone sold for one hundred and twenty thousand dollars. She was ultimately captured in February, 1814.

The ship "Alexander," eighteen guns and about one hundred and forty men, was commanded on her first cruise by Captain Wellman, and gave promise of a successful career, which was fully borne out by her performances on the next cruise under Captain Benjamin Crowninshield, when, with the greater part of her crew away in seven prizes just previously taken, she was, on May 19, 1813, crowded on shore in Wells' bay by two English men-of-war, and captured. So closely was she pressed by the enemy that only twenty men of her crew succeeded in reaching the shore and escaping.

The other full-rigged privateer sailing from Salem, the ship "John," sixteen guns and a strong crew of one hundred and sixty or more men, was commanded by Captains Fairfield and Crowninshield (who afterwards commanded the Alexander), and after a short season of great usefulness, in which she picked up some twenty English merchantmen, more or less, was in her turn picked up by an English frigate in February, 1813, and Salem saw her no more.

Of the privateer brigs of Salem, perhaps the most profitable and fortunate was the "Grand Turk." She was large for the time, carried eighteen guns and one hundred and fifty men, and became noted for her good qualities as a sailer and her audacity and uniform good fortune. At one time, in 1813, under one of her two gallant commanders, Captain Breed or Greene, she stood off and on at the mouth of the English channel for twenty days, capturing a number of vessels almost in sight of their home ports; finally eluding all pursuit and making off in safety. She was never captured.

The smaller brig, "Montgomery," twelve guns, commanded in turn by Captains Holton J. Breed (who was also in the "Grand Turk"), Joseph Strout (who had been a naval officer), and Benjamin Upton, was almost as fortunate a vessel as the "Grand Turk."

She made many prizes and distinguished herself by some hard fighting. On one occasion she had a desperate action with a large, heavily-armed ship, which she captured after losing many men, her then captain, Upton, being severely wounded. At another time, falling in with a British troop ship, near Surinam, full of soldiers and carrying eighteen guns, a man-of-war to all intents and purposes, she attacked without hesitation, and after two hours' hot work, drew off for repairs, intending to "resume business at the old stand," as it were, as soon as she could splice up some of her rigging and plug two or three troublesome shot-holes. But the Englishman had had quite enough of her, and crowding all sail made good her escape. After a very successful series of cruises, the "Montgomery" was ultimately obliged to succumb to superior force, but it took the British line-of-battle ship, "La Hogue," seventy-four guns, to bring her to terms.

The "fore and aft" rig seems to have commended itself to those engaged in privateering, doubtless from the fact that by pointing higher, a schooner could more easily work to windward of a large merchantman, while, in case of pursuit by a man-of-war, she could go off dead before the wind, still holding one of her best points of sailing. At all events, the greater number of our privateers in this war, from all ports, were top-sail schooners, twenty-three of this class sailing from Salem. These vessels were, some of them, of fair size for the time, others very small, but nearly all were good sailers and were always well handled. They carried but few guns, but one of these was usually a large one, and their strong crews of daring seamen, eager for the chance of boarding, rendered them exceedingly formidable to everything they met, short of an enemy's frigate. They chased, fought and ran away, as the occasion required, with equal bravery and address. Most of them met their fate sooner or later, but this resulted usually from their own temerity, and not before the English had paid for them many times over, in their prizes taken.

Room can be given to the notice of but few of these gallant little vessels, though a book might well be filled with the record of their exploits. There was a little pink-sterned fishing schooner changed into a privateer, called the "Fame," of only thirty tons, and carrying two six-pounders, that had wonderful luck and was never captured, though finally lost in a storm. She sailed fast, and her excellent reputation did not seem to suffer under any of her numerous commanders, for she changed them, apparently, at almost every cruise; being commanded successively by Captains Webb, Upton, Poland, Greene, Chapman, Endicott, Brookhouse and Evans.

The "Frolic," a much larger schooner, carrying one twenty-four pounder and a smaller gun and commanded by Captains Green and Odiorne, proved a very lively vessel in more senses than one, sweeping the sea like a broom during her short life, though her captures were not of great value. She was built on Salem Neck, and was very fast, but had the peculiarity of being unduly sharp aft; so much so, indeed, that she was unseaworthy, and on her second cruise, being taken aback in a slight squall, ran stern under as far as the main hatch, and was only saved from swamping by great exertions. So little did her crew enjoy this particular phase of her frolicsomeness, that they came aft in a body and offered the captain to give up all advances if he would abandon the cruise. The British man-of-war "Heron," happening around about this time, saved the officers from any embarrassment on this score by capturing and burning the vessel, in spite of her desperate endeavors to escape through a long stern chase.

Dr. Benjamin F. Browne, well remembered by our citizens, was taken on board of the "Frolic," and many are familiar with his experiences in Dartmoor prison, where he and his shipmates were confined until the peace. He narrowly escaped being shot in the savage suppression of restlessness among the prisoners, by Colonel Shortland, commanding the guard. Dr. Browne, in those days, of course, a mere boy, took also a short cruise on the ship "Alfred," already spoken of.

The "Dolphin" was a still larger schooner, carrying more men, though less weight of metal, than the "Frolic." She was built in Baltimore, before the war, and altered to a privateer, and under Captain Jacob Endicott, made, perhaps, as good a record as any privateer schooner sailing from Salem in proportion to the time of her service; for she was captured in September, 1812. A single vessel and cargo taken by her brought the large sum of sixty thousand dollars. A lady passenger, on one of the prizes taken by the "Dolphin," in a published letter, bore pleasant testimony to the politeness of Captain Endicott, who caused her to be landed at the port most convenient to her destination and scrupulously secured to her all her money and baggage. Judging from the batteries carried by some of the ships taken by the "Dolphin," she must have done considerable fighting, first and last.

The vicissitudes sometimes attending the career of a privateer were well illustrated by the "John" and "George," a fine American-built schooner, captured early in the war by an English man-of-war, and for some reason turned adrift. She was found off Cape Sable by the American privateer "Regulator," August 13, 1812, and sent in to Salem, where, being found to be fast, she was turned into a privateer. She made one short cruise under Capt. Sinclair, in which she was successful. Her name was then altered to the "Revenger," though it would seem as if the name she already bore had given her sufficiently good luck. Certainly the new one brought her none, for she was captured on her very next cruise. The Englishmen who bought her continued her as a privateer, again changing her name to the "Retaliation." Subsequently a Portsmouth privateer retook her, but she was lost to Salem, and

her further changes of name are no longer a matter of history.

The "Dart," a small schooner of but forty tons and two small guns, commanded successively by Captains Davis, Symonds, Green and Poland, under each of whom she was admirably handled, was a profitable little vessel. She sailed well and took some valuable prizes. One in particular, a large armed merchantman, heavily manned and carrying six guns, she gallantly took after a most determined resistance. She was never captured, though, as if the elements conspired with the enemy against these plucky little vessels, both she and the "Fame" already spoken of, were wrecked in the Bay of Fundy.

The "Fair-Trader," another little schooner, of the same tonnage as the "Dart," seems to have been a good cruiser, and under her Captain John R. Morgan took a number of prizes before her capture in September, 1812.

The largest privateer schooners that sailed from Salem during the war were the "Diomede," commanded by Captain J. Crowninshield; the "Enterprise," Captain Morgan; and the "Growler," Captains Graves and Lindsay. They were all built for this purpose on the "Baltimore Clipper" model, and were all ultimately captured by the enemy after a more or less fortunate service. The "Diomede" was a very fast sailer. On one short cruise of a few weeks she sent in six vessels, and among others of her captures was one large ship carrying sixteen guns; while among the "Growler's" captures, one vessel and cargo are mentioned as valued at one hundred thousand dollars.

Four sloops figured as privateers from Salem in this war, of which the little "Jefferson" was very successful considering her size, which was that of a mere pleasure boat, for which purpose, indeed, she was originally built in Salem. She carried one gun and twenty men, and managed to escape capture.

The sloop "Wasp," rather larger, was also built in Salem, carried two six pounders and twenty-five men. Upon her first cruise after making some captures, she was herself taken, but in a manner that reflected honor upon her captain and crew. Attacked by the British schooner-of-war "Bream," of ten guns, she only surrendered, after a close fight of half an hour, and a running fight of nearly nine hours, most of the time at musket range, during which Captain Ervin in vain tested the fine sailing qualities of his little vessel to the utmost, in the effort to escape. So great was the gallantry displayed in the defence of the "Wasp," that Captain Ervin and his crew were treated with the greatest consideration by their generous captors, after the surrender of the sloop, and when walking in the streets of St. John on parole Captain Ervin was pointed out as the Salem captain who defended his vessel with such heroism.

The "Polly" was a large, powerful sloop, built on the Hudson before the war. She was oversparred until it was ascertained that she sailed better by shortening her mast. She kept the sea as well as vessels of any class, and could go to windward of anything she was after, while no English ship could catch her in the open sea. She was not taken until April, 1814, and then only by being cornered and driven ashore by an English corvette. This, by the way, seems to have been a favorite manœuvre of the enemy in dealing with our swift and sometimes audacious little privateers. The English man-of-war "Indian," twenty-two guns, had previously tried to come it over the "Polly" in a different style, and failed most signally; for both vessels being becalmed off Cape Sable, she sent in her launch and other boats to board her, but the "Polly" beat them off with such slaughter that it was with difficulty that they could get back to their ship, which made no further effort to molest her antagonist, and made off when a breeze arose. Captains Samuel C. Hardy and Robert Evans successively handled this wonderful little vessel with great skill, and with her one twelve pounder and eight sixes, and a strong crew of sixty men, she was for nearly two years a most effective sea rover.

A large number of the privateers were captured by the enemy, as will be seen by the list given in the appendix; but so great was the aggregate value of their prizes that the pecuniary loss to the owners was of little consequence, although many good men of their crews lost their lives or languished long in English prisons.

There were a number of small craft, launches and open boats that ran out on occasion, and made some captures, being, in the hands of desperate men, no mean antagonists. Mention should be made of the schooner "Helen," loaned by the Messrs. White and Knapp, Salem merchants, at their own risk, and fitted out and manned by a volunteer crew of seventy men, gathered by fife and drum in Salem streets, all within the space of about four hours. It appears that news was received Nov. 12, 1812, in Salem, that the "Liverpool Packet," a well-known and very active British privateer, had been seen inside of Halfway Rock, and this sudden expedition was organized for her capture. The Englishmen had sailed for St. John in time to avoid the "Helen," but the incident sufficiently indicates the high spirit of the time and the courage of the men, who, at a moment's notice, were ready to attempt the capture of a strong and well-armed vessel.

It would seem that many English prisoners came this way, for in 1814, and perhaps previously, the government maintained the prison-ship "Aurora" in the North River, in which many were confined, principally sea-faring men.

During the war, in addition to the ordinary militia and the volunteer companies of the town there was a company of sea-fencibles, so called, organized and composed entirely of masters and mates of merchantmen who were idle, to serve as artillerists or otherwise, as

the coast was threatened from time to time by British men-of-war.

The venerable William H. Foster, now living, was a member of the cadet company of that day, and was also acting as assistant to the United States provost marshal of the district, in which capacity he took the parole of three English officers, who had been taken in Maine, and reported to be paroled until exchanged. Mr. Foster's youthful appearance, and the easy absence of ceremony in dealing with them, rather astonished the Englishmen, one of whom, a colonel, remarked that it would have taken several British officers to manage such a matter with them, instead of one young boy. Young Foster looked after them that night, and in the morning they were sent to Andover, where, with others, they enjoyed for a time the good air and ample religious and literary privileges of that hill town, if any there were there then. We were economical of men and means in the prosecution of that war.

Mr. Foster also remembers various alarms, musterings and marches hither and thither on various occasions. When the frigate "Constitution" was forced to take refuge in Marblehead harbor from a pursuing squadron of the enemy, the company of fencibles dragged their twenty-four pounders over to the shore of that town to play on the enemy in case they should follow her. The English vessels, not being acquainted with the shore and depth of water, did not venture in, and an attack with boats upon a formidable frigate was out of the question, of course.

The next day the "Constitution" was brought around to Salem by Joseph Perkins, the harbor pilot, who died but a few years since, and anchored under the guns of the fort. With the crowd of others from Salem and Marblehead who lined the headlands, Mr. Foster a year later shared in the intense excitement and bitter disappointment of witnessing the combat of the ill-fated "Chesapeake" with the "Shannon," in which our ship was taken but a mile or two off shore.

It is to be regretted that a list of those who served in the army during the war of 1812 from Salem cannot be given, as in that existing at the State house the residences of the men are not given. The number was, it is understood, not large, as the war was not over-popular in this neighborhood, and the tastes of a maritime people led them to seek the enemy on their proper element.

It may not be considered out of place to allude to the services of General Miller, who held a command in this war, and who, though not originally from Salem, was long identified with the town by his residence here. His modest but determined answer to General Scott, at the battle of Lundy's Lane, when asked if he could carry a certain position with his brigade, followed by his gallant and successful attack, will ever live in the memory of his countrymen.

The Mexican War called for but few regiments to augment the strength of the regular army. The names of the few from Salem who served in the Massachusetts regiment of volunteers, commanded by Col. Caleb Cushing, of Newburyport, are to be found in the appendix. This regiment served in the army commanded by General Scott, and took part in the engagements that signalized its resistless march from Vera Cruz to Mexico. If any men from this place joined the so-called New England regiment, it has been impossible to obtain their names.

It is proper to speak of some volunteer militia organizations that have been identified with the history of the town; for without a hearty recognition of the long existence of some of them in the face of many difficulties, and of the services they have directly and indirectly been able from time to time to render, no military record of Salem would be complete.

Incidentally, it may be stated that under the system adopted soon after the Revolution, the entire male population of the State, within certain ages, was enrolled as a militia, and were liable to be called out by the Governor for service within the State upon any emergency. Meanwhile they were required to attend at certain stated times and places for musters or trainings in companies, regiments and brigades of local establishment, under officers chosen and commissioned by the Governor. With the heterogeneous mass of raw material that, under this system, were, within the memory of man, annually formed upon Salem Common, under officers for the most part quite ignorant of the simplest requirements of military duty, it is not necessary to trouble ourselves in an article that assumes to treat of things military. These gatherings served to amuse the people, and the vanity of many excellent citizens was tickled by military titles that often as ill-fitted their characters as their uniforms did their persons.

Here and there in the State, however, from the beginning, there were a few, who, having a real desire to learn the duties of soldiers and to be of some use in case of need, formed themselves into volunteer companies by permission of the State, elected men of military instincts and application as their officers, and in neat uniforms and equipments steadily labored to be as far as possible real and not caricatures of soldiers. They kept alive the germs of the military spirit sown in the different wars, and furnished tactical schools that proved of value when the State or nation required troops for actual service. The superiority of these organizations over the mob of enrolled militia, became ultimately so apparent that Governor Banks, some years before the war, remodeled the entire military establishment of the State upon the volunteer plan that has endured to this day, and furnishes us with two brigades of fairly instructed militia.

Of the original volunteer companies the Salem Light Infantry, the Mechanics' Light Infantry and the Salem Cadets were among the best in the State.

First parading, July 4th, 1805, under Captain John Saunders, the Salem Light Infantry was from the out-

set a select body of men, numbering in its ranks in every period some of the most substantial citizens of the town, and actuated always by a strong *esprit du corps* that told in its invariable excellence in drill and discipline.

It did some slight service as coast guards during the War of 1812, and at the breaking out of the civil war in 1861, went to the front with the Eighth Regiment Massachusetts Militia, and served three months. One incident of this service was its voyage from Annapolis to New York as guard for the old frigate "Constitution," which relic of our former naval prowess, the government was determined should not fall into the hands of the enemy. It subsequently served nine months, in 1862–63, as part of the 50th Mass. Militia, in the service of the United States, seeing plenty of warm work in the Department of the Gulf. And in 1864 it again volunteered for another three months' service. Throughout the war the company was constantly sending from its ranks large numbers of men, in the aggregate nearly three times the number it contained in 1861, many of whom held commissions.

The war record of this company is remarkable. Doing much service as an organization, and repeatedly, when at home, filling its ranks and as often depleting them in the manner alluded to, it seemed a never failing conduit for the augmentation of our armies in the field. The company still endures with good numbers as a part of the Eighth Regiment Massachusetts Militia, and is a credit to the city.

Older than the organization just described, by over twenty years, the Second Corps of Cadets, originally formed as a company in 1781, under Captain Stephen Abbott, constantly vied with the other in the high character of its membership and in the maintenance of a good state of drill and efficiency. During the War of 1812 it performed similar duty at intervals, and during the War of the Rebellion did three months' duty in the service of the United States. From its ranks went only less officers and men to the active army than from those of its rival. Organized at present as a small battalion of two companies, it presents a fine appearance when on duty, and is justly regarded as one of the crack military bodies of the State.

The Mechanics' Light Infantry first paraded under Capt. Perley Putnam, July 4, 1807. As its name implied, it was composed originally of young mechanics and was always a most excellent company, as it is to-day, although its numbers are somewhat reduced from what they should be. It went to the front with the Fifth Militia Regiment in April, 1861, for three months; and few companies have ever had fuller ranks than it showed on that occasion.

The Salem City Guard, organized about 1848, was said to be a good company in its prime, though it no longer exists. Certainly its old members may feel that though dead, it is on the field of honor, as it is the only militia company of Salem that enlisted as such for the three years' service in the War of 1861. It died as a militia company, to become a part of the Fortieth Massachusetts Infantry Volunteers, where it saw plenty of service.

The Salem Artillery, a company organized in 1787, and two juvenile organizations formed of boys under eighteen, the Washington Rangers and the Washingington Blues, both first parading about 1807, were short-lived, neither surviving after about 1815.

The three companies of militia above spoken of as now existing in Salem, do not stand merely as relics of the past, like the Ancient and Honorable Artillery of Boston, but are essentially military in character, and to be relied upon for any necessary service. In the case of the Light Infantry and Cadets, the commemoration of their past glories,—their historical department, if it may be so described,—is well cared for by their respective veteran corps, that turn out in large numbers on all anniversaries and other festive occasions with side arms and impressive chapeaus, and in the customary closing exercises of the day, indulge in much jovial reminiscence and display convivial talents of the highest order.

Before considering the part taken by Salem in the war fought for the preservation of the Union, mention should be made of the defensive works that have from time to time been erected within her limits.

The harbor and town of Salem have never been specially well fortified, and a word will dispose of the history of her defences of this nature.

There is some mention of an early structure, probably a block-house, within a stockade that stood on the highest point in the present city limits, which would be that now occupied by the Sewall Street Methodist Church. This work, strengthened from time to time, was no doubt the one alluded to as Fort Anne, and was presumably the main reliance of the place against Indians. Another work of equal antiquity was the Darby Fort, erected in 1629, on the Marblehead Side, probably on Naugus Head, where the present earth work is located.

During the Indian wars, block-houses were erected at various points on the outskirts of the settlement to guard the plantations, and were in times of danger furnished with garrisons, though probably unprovided with cannon.

In 1643 a considerable fort was built on Winter Island, originally styled Fort William, which was maintained at intervals, until the Revolutionary War, when it was strengthened and mounted with a few guns. The land and fort were ceded to the United States in 1794, and in 1799 its name was changed to Fort Pickering; it has, since that time, been in an alternate condition of grassy dilapidation or neat effectiveness, according as peace or war has prevailed in the land. The work on the hill on the neck to the north of Winter Island, is the successor of a breastwork existing on that spot at a very early day, that has from time to time been restored. In the Revolu-

tionary War it was called Fort Lee—and perhaps still retains the name.

Away on the point the builders of cottages may have found traces of an old battery that commanded the islands and Beverly harbor during the Revolution, under the name of Fort Juniper. It has now disappeared, and the yachtsmen and cottagers flirt and make merry, where once the sad-faced patriot sentinel looked out over the bay in the moonlight and wondered at the inscrutable providence that kept him out there in the cold instead of suffering him to slumber in his comfortable bed in the town, but a mile away.

This is no place to discuss the causes that led to the Civil War. The long strain imposed upon our institutions by Negro Slavery, that anomaly in a nation founded upon the theoretical equality and freedom of all men, was not to be relieved longer by hollow compromises, in which both parties felt defrauded. And yet at the North there prevailed an optimistic feeling of security—a reluctance to believe that their brethren of the South were willing to sever a Union of States baptized with the blood of their fathers, and presenting, with all its defects, such a grand illustration of a successful government by the people for the people. To the last they hugged the hope that the Southern bluster would evaporate and, in some manner, the differences between the sections be healed.

The sound of the first gun fired upon Fort Sumter awakened the North from this dream, and with a determination that the Union should remain inviolate quite as strong as that of the South for its disseverment, it arose and bent its great strength and vast resources to the task of defeating the aims of the secessionists. Handicapped by want of preparation, its purpose was firm, and in spite of traitors at home and false friends abroad, it finally and most thoroughly accomplished this work.

Salem shared with other Massachusetts towns in her sudden anger at the attack of the batteries of Charleston. On the evening of April 17th, the Wednesday after the firing upon Fort Sumter, an earnest meeting of citizens was held in Mechanics' Hall, at which the mayor, Hon. S. P. Webb, presided and read a strong address, which was subsequently published, in which the people were called upon to forget party differences and uphold the government in its effort to preserve the country. Patriotic speeches were made and resolutions, prepared by a committee made up without regard to the previous party affiliations of its members, were unanimously adopted. They expressed the determination to stand by the government, pledged life and fortune to the preservation of the Union, and to the protection and care of the families of those about to go into the field. Several thousand dollars were subscribed on the spot for this purpose, and a permanent committee chosen to secure more funds, composed of the following well-known gentlemen: S. P. Webb, John Bertram, R. S. Rogers, W. D. Pickman, B. A. West, G. F. Browne, W. P. Phillips, N. B. Mansfield, William McMullan, E. W. Kimball, G. H. Devereux, W. D. Northend, J. V. Browne, C. W. Upham, George Peabody, W. C. Endicott, Charles Mansfield, David Pingree, A. Perkins, J. S. Jones, R. S. Rantoul, A. C. Goodell, R. C. Manning, Samuel Brown, J. C. Stimpson, and B. M. Perkins.

Meanwhile the first call of the President for State troops to be sent for the defence of the capital, had been promulgated, and some of the military companies being under orders to march, the town was simmering with the excitement of their approaching departure.

On the following day the Salem Light Infantry, called the Zouaves, under Captain Arthur Devereux, numbering sixty-two muskets, left Salem for Boston, where, though on the militia rolls as Company A, Seventh Militia Regiment, they were attached to the Eighth Regiment, and were at once sent forward. Two days later, April 20th, two other companies, the Mechanics' Light Infantry, under Captain George Pierson, and the City Guard, under Captain Henry Danforth, left Salem and went direct to the City of Washington as part of the Fifth Militia Regiment. Upon the departure of each of these companies they were addressed at their armories by the mayor and other prominent citizens amid a gathering of their friends. They were bid God-speed, and urged to remember the high duty they were called upon to perform, while at every step of their march through the streets they were cheered by enthusiastic crowds, many of whom only regretted that circumstances prevented their being also in the ranks. The city was a unit in its enthusiasm, and while there was plenty of "gush," if the word may be pardoned, and an exaltation of sentiment greater than our national temperament has been usually given to, the occasion justified it, and it was hearty and genuine to the last degree. In these companies over two hundred men left Salem for Washington within five days from the call of the President.

But the Governor of Massachusetts, and other far-seeing men in the State, were fully persuaded that the immediate and pressing need for soldiers would not be confined simply to the protection of the National Capital; that the South was making no mere demonstration, and that to preserve the integrity of the nation there might be required another and different army from the militia regiments now hastening to Washington. The tread, therefore, of the marching troops was still sounding in Salem's streets, when recruiting offices were opened at the suggestion of prominent citizens, to provide for the unknown contingencies of the future.

Captains Coggswell and Fitzgerald began at once to enlist men for three years' service, and had but little difficulty in doing so. At an Irish patriotic meeting forty men were enlisted on the spot. The City Council of Salem had, meantime, voted $15,000 at its first

meeting after the surrender of Sumter, to be used in aid of the families of absent soldiers.

April 24th, the past members of the absent Light Infantry organized under the style of the Veteran Light Infantry, for such duty as might be required of them about home.

Captain Charles Manning, who had been enlisting men for the Fourth Battery of Light Artillery, had his rolls filled, and added to the military enthusiasm of the hour by a drill on Salem Common, on May 3d, and the same day the Fitzgerald Guards were paraded. This company went into camp on May 10th as part of Colonel Cass's Irish Regiment, afterwards the Ninth Massachusetts Infantry. On Sunday, May 12th, Captain Coggswell's company, then styled the Andrew Light Guard, marched from their barracks on Winter Island to attend church in a body, and two days later they left the city for Camp Andrew, in Roxbury, where they were incorporated with the Second Massachusetts Volunteers. The company was presented with a color on its departure from the city.

Both of these companies were uniformed by the city and private subscriptions, supplemented by the personal work of the patriotic women of Salem.

And so the long patriotic excitement fed by these events continued. Perhaps never in the history of any country was there seen such an outburst of disinterested enthusiasm so well sustained as marked the first few months of the war in the entire North. And it was fully shared in Salem. Every one was desirous of doing something in aid of the cause. Men and women seemed for the time to lose sight of the petty aims and thoughts of every-day life, and were dignified by a common love of their country and a desire to serve it.

Every man who enlisted was in the eyes of his friends a hero. Nothing was too good for him. And this honest admiration and the enthusiastic ovations given to the departing soldiers, did indeed make heroes of the meanest among them, and they went to the front with a high courage that courted the opportunity to fully deserve the encomiums showered upon them.

At home the newspapers were crowded with war news, genuine and speculative. The published letters of absent soldiers to their friends were read with avidity, and their sage prognostications as to the plans of the enemy and the possibilities of the future were only less interesting than the views of a host of military strategists, who now arose and recommended movements, and criticized the officers in command of the troops, as freely as if military science had been imbibed with their mothers' milk.

The great puzzle was as to the movements of the enemy. Where their position was not known, it was nevertheless stated with as much precision by the military newspaper correspondent as though he examined their lines daily. The masked battery and other military spectres were worked for all they were worth, and the people strained their understanding to the utmost to master the intricate details of positions, evolutions, strategy and logistique, not always realizing the ignorance of those who wrote so fluently on these subjects. On the street corners, in the old corner book-store and other centres of quasi-public consultation, the all-absorbing topics were of a military character, and that group was fortunate that included some tactical veteran of the light infantry or other militia organization, on whose words the others hung as they were those of an oracle.

Military notices and advertisements for recruits began to appear in the papers, while the announcement to the effect that "the ladies of such and such a church "would meet on such an afternoon to make clothing "for a certain company, or that such other ladies "would meet to make Havelocks," and other similar notices indicated that the feminine portion of the community were not only talking (which of course they needs must always do) but also vigorously working, as indeed they were. Although prevented by nature from shouldering muskets, the women of Salem were then and throughout the war, filled with a patriotic fervor that found practical expression in such liberality of means and effort as gave great aid and comfort to the Salem men in the field, and to the unfortunates who languished from time to time in hospital.

When the militia companies went out and the volunteers were enlisting in advance of the resources of the government for their equipment, the fair ones of Salem laid aside their embroidery and sewed for dear life on rough uniforms, being fully repaid for their toil when watching the gallant forms marching through the streets in garments with each stitch of which they were familiar.

In a newspaper of the time the mayor recommends the Havelock as a useful article for the soldier in a warm climate, and states that he has a pattern at his office for the use of those desiring to make them. So this remarkable product of this stage of the war cost the Salem ladies many hours of work; and as the militia-man or recruit with this queer imitation of the serviceable article worn in the East Indian service on his head, passed proudly by on the sidewalk, the benevolent ladies who had cut and made it little realized how soon it would be thrown away or used as a dish-cloth in camp.

May 24th ten men went on to reinforce the Salem Light Infantry, and great excitement was caused in Salem by the advance of the national forces across the Potomac into Virginia, and the wild rumors of accompanying engagements that had no foundation.

General Andrews, of Salem, was put in command of the forts of Boston harbor early in June. Later in the month the city was enthusiastic over the engagement at Philippi, West Virginia, where our troops

gained a slight success, and General Lander, of Salem, led in his brigade. The families of the men in the field who required it, now regularly received the aid that was continued to all throughout the war. Drill clubs were formed in the city to familiarize men with the use of arms in view of future needs. In their ranks were many men who distinguished themselves later in the war. The Veteran Light Infantry also met often and drilled vigorously. As the full extent of the rebel strength transpired, and it appeared that all the Southern States were determined to join in the secession movement, authority was given to the States to raise more troops, and early in July recruiting offices were again opened in Salem by A. Parker Browne, J. C. Putnam and N. W. Osborne. Meanwhile the companies of Cogswell and Fitzgerald were fast learning their duties in camp.

July 16th considerable excitement was caused by the report of the rebel privateers "Sumter" and "Jeff Davis" being upon the coast. But the times had changed. The town no longer swarmed with seafaring men, and no recruiting party marched through the town, beating up a crew to go out and take them, as in the days of 1812. A few superannuated ship-masters, men of wealth and ease, were about all that remained to remind one that this had been a maritime town and a great centre of commerce.

During July it was daily expected that our army would advance, and as the enemy were now known to be in some force in its front, a decisive action was anticipated. The month wore on full of earnest work, and with an underlying feeling of suppressed excitement and strained expectation, until at length the day came—that day of sorrow and deep mortification. The first confused reports, contradictions and excuses soon crystalized, and the full extent of the disaster at Bull Run struck the people of Salem, as the entire North, like a blow. Stunned at first, they soon recovered and began to grasp the full meaning of this defeat. They saw that a great war was only just begun: That the efforts already put forth could be regarded as but an earnest of what must continue indefinitely, and that if the nation was to endure, faith and patriotism must be subjected to a steady strain, and men, money and effort given without stint.

The first stage of the war was over; the time of wild enthusiasm, of exaggerated sentiment and unthinking elation excited by the novelty of the situation, had passed. Men and women were sobered and realized the heavy burden of bloodshed, grief and loss that they must bear; and they took it up without hesitation, here as elsewhere. Men began to arrange their affairs that they might join the army, and the drill clubs were assiduously attended, while the recruiting officers found little difficulty in filling their ranks.

The returning short term companies were greeted with a kindness and warmth that served to fix the resolution of most of their members to return to the army. Every engagement with the soldiers was rigidly kept, and there was an increased effort made in all directions to furnish all that the government should require of Salem. The patriotic work of the ladies was continued with unabated zeal, and as the war continued they never relaxed their energies. They organized or assisted in fairs in aid of the sanitary commission. Their Dorcas Societies incontinently threw over the poor whom they had always hitherto had with them, and picked lint for the wounded, or knit socks of the stoutest yarn and portentous dimensions for the soldier well or ailing. They gave freely of money, medicines and delicacies for army necessities, hopefully kept up the cheerfulness of the men at home; while during the long war there were few among them who did not have some one especially dear to them, who had gone with the army, and to whom, if living, they sent words of loving encouragement, or for whom, if dead, they shed many tears, while they still worked on for the living.

In this connection reference should be made to the Field Hospital Corps raised in Salem, in May of this year, by the Rev. D. G. Wildes, rector of Grace Church. This corps was composed of sixty volunteers from Salem and vicinity, and was said to be the first effort for a systematized ambulance department in the army.

On the day following the battle of Bull Run, the "Essex Cadets," a company recruited by Lieut. A. Parker Browne, marched under Capt. Seth A. Buxton from Salem to join the camp of instruction. It subsequently was incorporated with the Fortieth Regiment Massachusetts Infantry.

Early in September the first company of sharpshooters unattached, containing many Salem men, left the State for Washington, and on the 4th of the month, Capt. Ethan A. P. Brewster's Company "A," of the Twenty-Third Massachusetts Infantry, that had been recruiting in Salem, marched from town to the camp at Lynnfield, followed on the 7th by Capt. John F. Devereux's Company, subsequently attached to the Eleventh Infantry.

A drill club that had been steadily keeping to their work for some months, voted about this time to enlist in a body for the war, and on the 18th of October, marched under Capt. Geo. M. Whipple, to Lynnfield, to join as its Company "F," the Twenty-Third Infantry, which was now completed. Containing two full Salem companies, this regiment, on the 31st of the month, marched into Salem and were reviewed on the Common, just before leaving for the seat of war, to the great pride and satisfaction of the people.

Meanwhile there had been constant recruiting for other companies. On the 8th of October a second company of sharpshooters, under Capt. E. Wentworth, left for the front as part of the Twenty-Second Infantry; and Capt. Charles M. Devereux's Company "H," Nineteenth Regiment, were mustered into service in

November, and left the State December 13th, while early in December Capt. John Daland's and George F. Austin's Companies partly recruited in Salem and attached to the Twenty-Fourth Infantry, were ordered South with their regiment.

Capt. Manning's Fourth Battery of Light Artillery, entirely raised in Salem, had been mustered into service and embarked on transports for the department of the Gulf.

In the foregoing account of the various military organizations leaving for the front, it is by no means to be understood that they comprised all of the officers and men who had entered the service from Salem during the first nine months of the war. But those have been spoken of whose departure had some peculiar interest for the mass of the people by some circumstances of their organization or otherwise. For, during this time Salem men were joining other companies and regiments daily, and going to the front, as will be seen by the brief notices of the various regiments, a little further on. Salem was indeed doing her duty in this first year of war, and as the event proved, she had by no means exhausted her resources. To the end of the war she continued to furnish men and money liberally. Her quota was usually forthcoming.

Early in 1862, two military funerals in her streets, of officers of distinction, served to remind the people, had it been necessary, that war was not all pomp and glitter, but meant death and sorrow. Salem did honor to her illustrious dead, and the obsequies of General Lander, who died in West Virginia, and of Lieutenant-Colonel Henry Merritt, killed in action at Newberne, gallantly leading the Twenty-Third Regiment, occurring on the 8th and 21st of March, were impressive, and attended by a large concourse of people.

Recruiting was resumed in 1862. The Federal armies in the field were very large; but when the heavy work of the war fairly opened, and the long rolls of the killed and wounded on the Peninsula began to be read, it was clear that those armies must be replenished, from time to time, for years to come perhaps; and so men were again flocking to the rendezvous and marching to the front.

Captain S. C. Oliver's Company of the Thirty-fifth Infantry, containing some Salem men, went forward with that regiment in August, 1862, and September 8th three companies under Captains D. H. Johnson, Richard Skinner and Henry Danforth, that had been partly recruited in Salem during the summer for the Fortieth Infantry, were forwarded with the regiment to Virginia. The last mentioned of these companies was the City Guard, with ranks filled up by fresh enlistments. The Lieutenant-Colonel of the Fortieth was Joseph A. Dalton of Salem.

November 19th Captain George Putnam's Company, " A," of the Fiftieth Militia Regiment, left the State for the Department of the Gulf for nine months' service. This company was the Salem Light Infantry filled up by special enlistments, many of its original members being already in service in other parts of the army.

December 27th Company E, recruited in Salem for the Forty-eighth Militia Regiment, by Captain George Wheatland, for nine months' service, embarked on transports for the Department of the Gulf.

July 10th of the following year (1863) the draft was ordered in the Northern States, and Captain D. H. Johnson, as Provost Marshal, completed the rolls here and began to draw the names. But few men, however, were drafted in Salem, as the city made every effort to fill her quota by offering heavy bounties to volunteers, and in the main succeeded.

November 16th, 1863, the Twelfth Unattached Company of Heavy Artillery, raised in Salem under Captain J. W. Richardson, occupied the forts on Salem Neck. This company, then commanded by Captain Jos. M. Parsons, in June of the following year (1864) was ordered to Washington.

May 12, 1864, the Salem Light Infantry, Captain, R. W. Reeves, again left Salem for one hundred days' garrison duty, to relieve the regular volunteer troops from this service and enable them to be put in at the front.

In addition to the very large sums contributed by individuals, from time to time during the war, in aid of the soldiers, of their families and to promote enlistments, the amount of which cannot be ascertained, the city appropriated and expended on account of the war one hundred and six thousand eight hundred and eighty-five dollars, exclusive of over two hundred thousand dollars, State aid to the families of the men in the field, which latter was ultimately refunded to her by the State. She responded to all calls upon her for men, about three thousand entering the army and navy during the war out of an entire population of a little over twenty-one thousand. In the partial account given of the departure of these men from Salem, no mention has been made of the character of their service or that of the regiments to which they belonged. It could not be expected that any extended history of these organizations can be here given, and only a glance at the careers of those containing more or less Salem men is permitted by the limitation of this article.

The militia regiments that first went out in the spring of 1861, had a valuable experience of the duties of the soldier in active service, learning the use of arms and camp and outpost duty; but they were not engaged with the enemy except the Fifth regiment, in which were the Salem City Guard and Mechanics' Light Infantry Companies, that took some part in the battle of Bull Run though suffering but slight loss.

The first regiment to be raised for the service of the United States, in this State, was the 2d Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry, that began to be formed before the Government had called for other than militia

regiments. The Company commanded by Captain Cogswell, containing many Salem men, was attached to it, and at the close of the war this officer returned in command of the regiment and with the brevet of a brigadier, while of the Salem enlisted men, five had earned commissions. The Second had a distinguished record. With Colonel Gordon and Lieutenant-Colonel George L. Andrews, (of a Salem family) both West Pointers, it was from the beginning a thoroughly instructed and efficient regiment. It served under General Patterson in 1861, and subsequently remained in the Shenandoah Valley under General Banks, distinguishing itself as a part of the rear guard in his retreat to the Potomac in May 1862. Closely engaged in the battle of Cedar Mountain under the same officer, it there lost nearly half of its officers and one-third of the men. It took part in the succeeding battles of Centreville and Antietam, and the following year lost heavily at Chancellorsville and Gettysburg. Forming part of the force sent to New York to suppress the draft riots, it was then sent to Alabama where the regiment was furloughed for re-enlistment and returned with recruited ranks in time to take part in General Sherman's severe Atlanta campaign, subsequently marching through Georgia and continuing northward through the Carolinas in the resistless march of that officer until its fighting days were ended at Raleigh by the news of Lee's surrender. At the muster out, July 14, 1865, there were but four officers and one hundred men remaining of the original full regiment that had marched from the State to the front.

In the Ninth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry there were a large number of Salem men, particularly in company F, originally called the Fitzgerald Guard, already mentioned. Serving in front of Washington from its muster in June, 1861, when it became a part of the great Army of the Potomac, in whose fortunes it shared until its muster-out in June, 1864. In Morell's division of the fifth corps, it took part in all the battles of the ill-fated peninsula campaign, and in the determined stand made by Porter in command of this corps at Gaines' Mill, the Ninth lost twenty officers and three hundred and sixty men. Still, and always in the fifth corps under Porter, and afterwards under Warren, the regiment was engaged at Centreville, Antietam, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville and Gettysburg, and through the Wilderness to Spottsylvania, on all these historic fields acquitting itself with great gallantry and suffering heavy losses. The regiment was mustered out at the expiration of its term of service in June, 1864. Four of the enlisted men from Salem had received commissions in addition to the three officers originally marching from the city.

The Twenty-third Regiment Massachusetts Infantry had peculiar claims upon the city by reason of the large number of its citizens in the ranks, and the interest attaching to one of its companies that, in a sudden burst of patriotic feeling had resolved themselves, by a vote, from a drill-club of amateurs into a company of United States soldiers with plenty of hard service immediately before them. The regiment was sent to Annapolis, and a few months later joined General Burnside's expedition that took Roanoke Island and occupied Newberne. It suffered some losses in these operations, including Lieutenant-Colonel Merritt, already mentioned. Later, in the same department, under General Foster, it was engaged at Heckman's farm, Arrowfield Church and Drury's Bluff. In the later action it lost heavily, being exposed to a flank attack.

Under General Stannard, the Twenty-third joined the Army of the Potomac just before the battle of Cold Harbor in which it took part, subsequently doing duty in the trenches at Petersburg. Being returned to its old department, it was put in during the final operations in that quarter in 1865, being last engaged at Kingston. It was finally mustered out of service in June, 1865, a large number of the regiment having re-enlisted the previous year. Six of its enlisted men from Salem returned home with commissions, excepting one, Lieutenant Richard P. Wheeler, who had died of wounds received in action.

The Twenty-third was a thoroughly good regiment and always did its work in gallant style.

Captain Arthur F. Devereux, who had drilled the Salem Light Infantry Company just before the war to a wonderful point of excellence, upon the return of that company from its three months' service, aided in raising the Nineteenth Regiment, Massachusetts Infantry, going out as its lieutenant-colonel and returning in command as a brevet brigadier-general. He took with him as officers nine or ten of his old light infantrymen and near one hundred recruits from Salem, besides many from the vicinity. The Nineteenth was a regiment always noted for its drill and precision of movement and distinguished itself in many actions. It took five stand of colors, and was twice complimented in general orders.

Getting its initiation at Balls' Bluff, it took part in the Peninsular battles, Centreville, Bristoe Station, Chancellorsville, Fredericksburg (there forming the advance that crossed the river in pontoons), fought at Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, the Wilderness and succeeding engagements, and after the rough winter's work in front of Petersburg, was in at the death at Appomatox, where one of its captains was killed by the last shot said to have been fired by the enemy. Capt. George W. Batchelder, of Salem, was killed at Antietam.

The 24th Volunteer Infantry contained several officers and a considerable number of men from Salem. It was a well instructed regiment, and always displayed good qualities in the face of the enemy. Accompanying the Burnside expedition it took part in the engagement prior and subsequent to the occupation of Newberne, and being sent to the siege of Charleston was in the attempt on Fort Wagner and other actions

in that vicinity until ordered to St. Augustine, Fla., in the latter part of 1863. In the spring of 1864 it was transferred to the Tenth Corps, Army of the James, where, at the battle of Drury's Bluff, it suffered considerable loss. Later at Deep Bottom and in subsequent service in front of Petersburg, the regiment lost heavily. It continued to participate in the operations that resulted in Lee's surrender. Having largely re-enlisted at the expiration of its first three years of service, the regiment was not finally mustered out until January 20, 1866, remaining on duty as part of the garrison of Richmond, Va. Adjutant Charles G. Ward, of the Twenty-fourth, of Salem, was killed in action May 6, 1864.

In the Eleventh Infantry were a number of men recruited in and about Salem. Its list of engagements is that of those of the Army of the Potomac, in which it served from the first battle of Bull Run to the close of the war, and always with distinction. The Salem men who served in the Twelfth Infantry known as the Webster Regiment, after making the campaign with General Banks in the Shenandoah Valley and at Cedar Mountain, had a similar experience in the succeeding engagements of the Army of the Potomac through the battle of Cold Harbor, after which those that were left were mustered out at the expiration of their term of service.

In the Fortieth Infantry there were a considerable number of officers from Salem, and it was recruited partly here. The regiment entered the service in September, 1862, served in Virginia until in the division of General Gordon (the former colonel of the Second Infantry) it was sent to Suffolk to reinforce General Peck, who was facing Longstreet's army. From there sent to the South Atlantic coast, it was engaged at Seabrook farm, S. C., and subsequently forming a part of the Florida expedition, suffered severely at Olustee and the accompanying actions in that ill-advised campaign. The regiment was sent north in time to engage in the final operations of the Army of the Potomac, entering Richmond in April, 1865. Lieut. George C. Bancroft, from Salem, was killed at Old Church, Va., June 1, 1864.

The Seventeenth Infantry contained nearly seventy Salem men. Raised in 1861, after a few months' garrison duty at Baltimore, it reported at Newberne, N. C. It was engaged at Kinston and Goldsborough. On the 16th of December, 1863, an attack was made on Newberne by a strong force of the enemy, and the Seventeenth lost heavily in repelling it. Later it was engaged at Washington, N. C. Subsequently, March 8, 1865, the regiment was heavily engaged at Wise Forks, N. C., in the advance made from the coast to connect with General Sherman. Garrisoning Greensboro', N. C., until July 11, 1865, the regiment was then mustered out of service.

The single officer and sixteen or eighteen men of Salem who served with the Thirtieth Massachusetts Infantry, known as the Eastern Bay State Regiment, were, with it, engaged in the principal actions in the department of the Gulf during 1862 and 1863. Re-enlisting in 1864 it, upon return from furlough, was put into the Nineteenth Corps and transferred to Washington, and ultimately the Shenandoah Valley, where it was engaged in Sheridan's battles, specially distinguishing itself at Cedar Creek. The regiment remained in service in Georgia until 1866.

In the Thirty-Second Infantry were rather more men from this city. This regiment, going to the front early in 1862, after a short period of garrison duty, became a part of the Army of the Potomac, and remained with it to the end, being engaged in nearly every battle fought by that army, from the Peninsular campaign to the moment that the Army of Northern Virginia laid down its arms. Its only commissioned officer from Salem, Captain Charles A. Dearborn, was killed at Fredericksburg.

The Thirty-Fifth Infantry had three officers from Salem, although but few enlisted men. Its record is very similar to that of the regiment last mentioned, although it did not go into action until Antietam. Lieutenant Charles F. Williams, of this regiment, from Salem, died of wounds September 22, 1863.

The Twenty-Eighth and Twenty-Ninth regiments of infantry numbered but few men in their ranks from Salem. Mustered into service in 1861, the Twenty-Ninth took part in the engagements of the Army of the Potomac from Gaines' Mill to Fredericksburg, when it was ordered West, and bore a hand at Vicksburg and in other engagements in the cotton States, being ordered North, and taking part in the Cold Harbor battle and in the succeeding operations in front of Petersburg. The Twenty-Eighth, entering the service early in 1862, was put into the Army of the Potomac in season for the battle of Centreville and every subsequent pitched battle of that army, ending at Ream's Station. Like all Massachusetts regiments these did their duty well. The Thirty-Ninth Infantry, commanded by Colonel Charles L. Pierson, of Salem, contained but few others from this town. It was a good regiment and saw its share of service.

Mention should be made of the two colored Massachusetts regiments, the Fifty-Fourth and Fifty-Fifth Infantry, both of whom had some officers (who were white) from Salem, and some recruits also. Both regiments were sent to Hilton Head, participated in the Olustee campaign in Florida, and took an active part in the operations against Charleston, S. C. They were in the assault on Fort Wagner, where the Fifty-Fourth lost heavily, and wherever engaged showed such courage and soldierly conduct as did much to remove the predjudice entertained at first for this class of troops. They remained in service in that department until their final muster-out. Lieutenant Edwin R. Hill, of the Fifty-Fifth, of Salem, was killed in action December 9, 1864.

There was a considerable aggregate contingent of

Salem men in the Fifty-Sixth, Fifty-Seventh and Fifty-Eighth regiments, particularly in the latter, whose Lieutenant-Colonel, John Hodges, of Salem, was killed while leading the regiment, July 30, 1864. These regiments were raised late in the war (1863), but got into very heavy work when their turn came, and as is often the case with full regiments coming to the front from garrison duty, they were kept well in the advance, where they were very willing to go. They all lost severely in the Virginia campaign of 1864–65, and well-earned a good place in the roll of honor of their State.

In the First, Fifteenth, Sixteenth, Eighteenth, Twentieth and Twenty-second Regiments of Massachusetts Infantry, there was but an aggregate of four officers and about seventy enlisted men from Salem, exclusive of the first and second companies of sharpshooters hereafter mentioned. These regiments were all connected with the Army of the Potomac from the time of its first mobilization and bore a distinguished part in its many sanguinary engagements. All were mustered out at the expiration of their three years' service at various dates in 1864, with the exception of the Twentieth that re-enlisted, but had the misfortune to be surrounded at Reams Station, August 23, 1864, where the entire regiment was killed or captured. Lieutenant Richard Derby, the only commissioned officer from Salem in the Fifteenth Regiment, was killed at Antietam.

The two companies of sharpshooters raised in this State took a number of keen rifle shots out of Salem, particularly the Second company that had nearly all its officers and about thirty men from this city. This company was attached to the Twenty-second Massachusetts Infantry, and shared in the honors and fatigues of that gallant regiment in the Army of the Potomac from the beginning, doing valuable service in its particular line of duty on many fields. It was subsequently attached to the First and Twentieth Regiments of Infantry.

The first company though commanded by a Salem man, had few in its ranks from here. Serving unattached in General Lander's command until the death of that officer in West Virginia, it was subsequently attached to the Fifteenth, and later to the Nineteenth Infantry, taking the creditable part in the battles of the Army of the Potomac that was borne by those distinguished regiments. Its first captain, John Saunders, of Salem, was killed at Antietam.

Salem was well represented in other branches, in the three years' service. The First Regiment of Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, commanded by Col. Tannatt, of Salem, a West Point graduate, had more Salem men in its ranks than any regiment that left the State. Raised in 1862, it did duty in its proper sphere in charge of the heavy guns in different fortresses in the belt around Washington, at Maryland Heights and elsewhere. In General Pope's campaign in 1862 the regiment was ordered as infantry to the front and participated in the battle of Centreville. After another period of service in garrison, it again took the field in May 14, 1864, and in Tyler's powerful division of heavy artillery, lost heavily at Spottsylvania. It continued at the front in the third and second corps, taking a distinguished part in the succeeding work of the Army of the Potomac, until the surrender of Lee's army, and was finally mustered out at the expiration of its term of service.

The Second and Third Regiments of Heavy Artillery contained many officers and men from Salem. The former did garrison duty at various points in North Carolina and south-eastern Virginia during its term of service, as well as some active duty in the field. Two of its companies were captured in April, 1864, in an engagement at Plymouth, N. C. The Third, raised late in 1864, served in the fortifications in front of Washington.

The Fourth Massachusetts Light Battery that has already been alluded to, was raised, early in the war, entirely in Salem. It was embarked at Boston, accompanying General Butler's expedition for the reduction of New Orleans, and it remained in the extreme South during its entire service of nearly four years. It was first engaged at Baton Rouge, was at the siege of Port Hudson, and on the Bayou Teche campaign. In General Canby's force it entered Tennessee and was engaged at Morganzia, and on Grierson's raid, in 1864. Joining the land force sent against Mobile, it took part in the siege and capture of that place, where it remained until sent to Texas, serving there until its muster out in October, 1865. It was an excellent battery, well handled, and efficient in action.

The Fifth and Thirteenth Batteries of Light Artillery contained more or less Salem men, and the first-named was ultimately commanded by Captain Charles A. Phillips, of Salem. This battery left the State in December, 1861, and was always attached to the Army of the Potomac, doing excellent service and suffering severely. The Thirteenth Battery served in the Department of the Gulf, being present at the siege of Port Hudson, on the Bayou Teche campaign, and on duty in various parts of Louisiana. It was formed later than the Fifth, leaving for the South, January 20, 1863.

In the Third Massachusetts Cavalry, several officers and a considerable number of men from Salem had a varied and arduous service. Originally recruited as the Forty-first Massachusetts Infantry, in 1862, it was sent to the Department of the Gulf, where, shortly after, to meet the need in that quarter of mounted troops, the regiment was for a time used as Mounted Infantry. This anomalous condition was presently changed, and they were organized as the Third Cavalry and equipped and instructed accordingly. Taking part in the siege operations at Port Hudson and in the Red River campaign, the regiment was in 1864, shipped North with General Emory's Nineteenth Corps, and joined the Army of the Shenandoah. Here

it was remounted and put in the First Brigade, Second Cavalry Division, participating in General Sheridan's brilliant campaign. After the Rebellion had been quelled this regiment was sent upon the plains with other cavalry, to hold down certain restless Indian tribes. It was ultimately mustered out of service in the fall of 1865. Lieutenant Pickering D. Allen, of this regiment, from Salem, was killed at Brashear City, La., June 2, 1863.

A number of men were recruited in Salem for the Second Massachusetts Cavalry that went out in 1862. This regiment had the peculiarity of having five full companies from the State of California. It served in Virginia, and at one time enjoyed the equivocal distinction of being specially detached to hunt down the guerrilla, Colonel Mosby and his command, which was very much like the historical search for the Irishman's flea. Allowed later to fly at higher game, the regiment did good fighting at Aldie, North Anna Bridge and elsewhere. Being ordered to the Valley, it participated in the campaign of 1864, and ultimately accompanying Sheridan's column to Richmond, fought in the closing engagements at Five Forks and Sailors' Creek, and was present at the surrender at Appomatox.

In the First Regiment of Massachusetts Cavalry a few Salem men enlisted in 1861. This was one of the first mounted regiments in the field and had an excellent name for a long and valuable service of four years, almost constantly in Virginia. A battalion, originally recruited to reinforce this regiment, was ultimately attached to the Fourth Massachusetts Cavalry, raised in 1864, and in which were some men from Salem, and saw considerable hard service in the closing work of the war.

Of the short-term regiments the Forty-eighth and Fiftieth regiments of Massachusetts Militia, that served nine months in 1862 and '63, contained each a large number of Salem men. These regiments were both sent to the Department of the Gulf where they took part in the siege of Port Hudson and the other active operations then going forward in Louisiana and Texas. Their service was arduous and well performed. The principal number of the Salem men in the Fiftieth were in Company A, already alluded to as being the Salem Light Infantry.

The Seventh Militia Regiment also entered the service in 1862 for six months' service taking the larger part of one company from Salem.

In the Fourth Heavy Artillery, the First Battalion of Frontier Cavalry, and the Sixty-first Infantry, all enlisted, late in the war, for one year's service, there was a considerable aggregate of Salem men. The first did garrison duty at Washington, and the second served on the Canada frontier a few months, while the Sixty-first reached the Army of the Potomac in time to do some hard work in the closing engagements of the war. The First Battalion of Artillery was somewhat recruited in Salem. It served during the war, but only in home garrisons. It is proper to observe that in all of the regiments raised late in the war, were many veterans who had already served with honor in older organizations.

Mention has already been made of the first three months' troops that went forward in 1861. Those that went later in the war for this term, were used to relieve the regular volunteer troops from garrison duty, that they might join the armies in the field in pressing emergencies.

This hasty review of a few facts in the career of the regiments in which the men from Salem served, is the only means possible to convey an idea of the services those men performed for the country. Any individual record of nearly three thousand men is of course out of the question, and it would be an invidious task to select especial cases for remark where all were good and faithful soldiers. The few names mentioned have necessarily appeared as essential parts of the narrative or to add here and there to its interest. If some regiments have appeared to receive more attention than others, it is in no sense to be taken as in derogation of the services of the latter, but must be attributed to the greater interest naturally attending those containing the largest number of Salem men, or, in some cases, to the greater facilities of obtaining information concerning them.

We cannot follow the history of the vessels of our navy, in which many men from Salem served. These men were scattered through the various fleets, on so many ships of war, that it would be an impossibility to write of the work performed by those vessels within the limits of this article; and their aggregate number, though large, was small in comparison with the number who served on land. The record of Salem on the sea, however, is good in this war, as in all others. Some fifty-seven officers and three hundred and twenty-five seamen, many of the latter being warrant and petty officers, entered the navy during the war, in addition to such others as might have been serving when it opened. This small proportional number of seamen indicates the fact that few vessels sailed from or obtained their crews in Salem at the outbreak of the war; while the large number of officers who were mainly drawn from the officers of merchant vessels, equally shows that the traditions of the old Salem families kept many men upon the sea as captains and mates of merchantmen sailing from other ports. It is doubtful whether any town in the country of equal size furnished as many volunteer officers for the navy during the war, as Salem; and their proverbial excellence in the duties of their profession, made them of great value upon the quarter-decks of the men-of-war in which they served.

A number of these officers commanded vessels, among others Lieut. Com. Wm. G. Saltonstall who commanded the "Commodore Hull," the "Governor Buckingham," and the "Kensington;" Lieut. Lewis D. Voorhies the "Gemsbok;" Lieut. John Roberts a

sloop of war; Lieut. William C. Rogers the gunboat "Anderson" and also the "Huntsville;" Lieut. Henry Pitman an armed schooner; Master Thos. W. Hutchinson who also commanded the "Huntsville;" Master Abraham A. Very, for a time, the "Cambridge," and Ensign Charles Boyer the "Yantic;" Ensign Robert H. Carey who also commanded the "Anderson" and Ensign Charles Wilkins a gunboat; Ensign James S. Williams commanded a vessel in one of the blockading squadrons and Ensign William M. Swasey a dispatch boat. Others no doubt may have held similar commands, many were executive officers and nearly all were given responsibilities in excess of the requirements of their nominal rank in the service.

The names of officers and seamen are found in the appended list of those who entered the two services during the Civil War, and the work they did appears in the wonderful record of the navy; in the blockading squadrons; attacking the strong works of the enemy on the coast and on the banks of our great rivers, and sweeping distant seas in pursuit of his nimble privateers.

A few officers and enlisted men from Salem also served with regiments not of this State, but it has not been possible to note any facts regarding such regiments. Their names appear in the appended list.

It is with reluctance that the imperfect record of this great war is finished. If it may seem monotonous, it is the monotony of numerous gallant deeds performed simultaneously by many men. Greater variety might imply less heroism; and the history of men intent on one great purpose may well like that of succeeding events, repeat itself.

The military history of Salem must end with the events of 1865; for since that date there has been no war nor hardly rumor of war in the land, excepting where away in the western country the indomitable red man still occasionally stirreth up a little strife. In closing, it may only be added that volumes might be written of the valiant deeds performed for two centuries by her sons afloat and ashore. Perhaps enough has been here suggested, however, to indicate that this quiet city can, on occasion, hold her own with many an old fighting town, and that amid the arts of peace here cultivated so assiduously, the strong spirit of war slumbers but lightly in the breasts of her people, ready to be aroused at the first menace to the rights and liberties of the nation.[1]

Appendix (No. 1).

1774, May 17. As a Committee of Correspondence, the following persons were chosen:

George Williams.
Stephen Higginson.
Richard Manning.
Jonathan Gardner, jr.
Joseph Sprague.
Richard Derby, jr.
Jonathan Ropes.
Timothy Pickering, jr.
Warwick Palfray.

1775, October 16. A list of the Committee of Safety and Correspondence, now elected:

Timothy Pickering, jr.
Thomas Mason.
Samuel Williams.
Jacob Ashton.
Samuel Webb.
Richard Ward.
William Northey.
Benjamin Ward, jr.
Joshua Ward.
Stephen Osborn.
Abraham Gray.
Warwick Palfray.
John Pickering, jr.
John Gardner (3d).
Joseph Hiller.
John Felt.
John Hodges.
Joseph Vincent.
Joseph Sprague.
David Felt.
Bartholomew Putnam.
George Williams.
Jonathan Peele, jr.
Abraham Weston.
John Fisk.
Samuel Ward.
Nathan Goodale.
Jonathan Andrews.
George Osborn.
Dudley Woodbridge.

An enlistment, August 15, 1777, to reinforce the American army till last of November, as one-sixth of the able-bodied militia of Salem, according to a resolve of General Court, August 8th.

Capt. Zadock Buffinton.
Jonathan Southwick.
Edmund Munyan.
John Curtis.
Ebenezer Tuttle.
Benjamin Hudson.
Elijah Johnson.
Joshua Moulton.
Joseph English.
Stephen Barker.
William Holman.
Israel Burrill.
William Clough.
Elisha Newhall.
Joshua Pitman.
Joshua Gould.
Thomas Cheever.
Abel Mackintire.
Nathaniel Holden.
John Ward.
Ezekiel Duncklee.
Cape Briton (black).
Benjamin Tarbox.
Nicholas Hopping.
Isaac Holt.
Nathaniel Safford.
Job Abbott.
Nathan Skerry.
Samuel Cheever.
Benjamin Gardner.
Joseph Twiss.
Ephraim Skerry.
James Austin.
Benjamin Shaw.
Joseph Flint.
Jeremiah Newhall.
William Meak.
Daniel Foster.
Samuel Lovejoy.
Edward Brown.
Samuel Merritt.
William Newhall.
Thorndike Proctor.
Joshua Cross.

List of men drafted to help guard Burgoyne's troops at Winter Hill in 1777:

Mansel Burrill.
Benjamin Brown, jr.
Asa Peirce.
Samuel Skerry.
Jonathan Very, jr.
Timothy Welman.
Nathaniel Osgood, jr.
Stephen Cleaveland.
William Prosser.
John Flint.
Edward Barnard.
Isaac Osgood.
John Gardner, (4th).
Stephen Webb.
Benjamin Hathorn.
John Carwick.
Edward Britton.
Samuel Masury.
William Young.
Thomas Ruce.
John Dove.
Jonathan Ashby.
Samuel Bond.
Jesse Farson.
William Cook.
Joshua Convers.
Samuel Blyth.
Nathaniel Perkins.
Thomas Palfray.
Benjamin Daniels.
Littlefield Sibly.
Joseph Ross.
Benjamin Peters.
James Andrews.
William Pynchon, jr.
Reuben Alley.
Benjamin Cheever.
Joseph Kempton.
Gabriel Munyon.
Edmund Henfield, jr.
Joseph Bacon.
Andrew Ward.
Joseph Young.
James Boardman.
Nathaniel Lang.
Stephen Osborn.
John Wood.
James Symonds.
Nathan Kimball.
Joseph Cook.

[1] The writer of the foregoing article begs to acknowledge his indebtedness for many facts to Felt's "Annals of Salem," Coggeshall's "Privateers," many papers in the Historical Collections of the Essex Institute and the files of the *Salem Gazette*, in addition to the usual fields of historical research.

David Mansfield.
David Beadle.
James Gould.
Joseph Cook, jr.

Soldiers in the Continental army whose families received assistance in 1777.

Col. Samuel Carlton.
Solomon Webber.
Thomas Needham.
William Skeldon.
Ephraim Ingalls.
William Joplin.
Asa Whittemore.
Samuel Oakman.
Richard Maybory.
Joseph Masury.
William Gray.
Benjamin Latherby.
Capt. Thomas Barnes.
Joseph Millet.
Samuel Crowel.
Stephen Hall.
James Gray.
Douglass Middleton.
Capt. Ebenezer Winship.
Abraham Morse.
Charles Vanderford.
Cornelius Bingen.
William Bright.
Thomas Keene.
Samuel Murray.
William Bright.
Gibson Clough.
Edmund Gale.
Joseph Cook.
John Masury.
Joseph Metcalf.
Nathaniel Needham.
Samuel Bishop.

These two, Peter Pitman and Nathl. Knights, were of the army, 1776.

Besides the preceding, there were other soldiers of Salem in the army from 1777 to 1780, as follows:

George Ulmar.
John Peirce.
Timothy Dwyer.
Thomas Richerson.
Joel Chandler.
Valentine Beron.
John Darrago.
William Liscom.
Spencer Thomas.
Joseph Symmes.
Samuel Askins.
David Levit.
Moses Chandler.
Abraham Bolton.
John Gillard.
Thomas Roche.
Jephtha Ward.
William Lockhead.
Clement Gunner.
Samson Freeman.
William Graviel.
Jonas Child.
William Woster.
Richard Downing.
George Venner.

In the records of Massachusetts quota in the army, the following were of Salem, 1780:

Nathaniel Hathorn.
Alexander Baxter.
Fortune Ellery.
Capt. Nathan Goodale.
William Fitzael.
Brown Vellett.
Edward Lee.
Daniel Williams.
David Collins.
George Tucker.

Men hired by Salem to serve six months in the Continental army, according to resolve of General Court, June 5, 1780:

Joseph English.
James Turner.
William Morgan.
Noah Parker.
Samuel Royal (black).
Benjamin Oliver (black).
Thomas Morse.
James P. Bishop.
Robert Thompson.
Charles Brien.
John Burk.
James Smith.
Edward Prize.
John Gamgus, jr.
Humphrey Fears.
John Tracy.
Benjamin Knowles.
Robert Stutson.
John Ward.
James Smith.
Thomas Sheridan.
William Long.
Michael Condon.
John Green.

These belonged here and thirteen others, belonging elsewhere, were named with them.

Names of soldiers hired from December, 1780, to Feb., 1781, to serve three years in the Continental army:

John Hale.
Peter Harris.
Nicholas Wallis.
John Smith.
John Bryan.
Michael Garvin.
Benjamin Oliver.
Alexander Smith.
William Ryan.
Joseph Williams.
William Tector.
Joseph Liotier.
Cesar (negro).
William McLaughlan.
Randal McFadin.
James Ketwel.
John Smith.
Benjamin Daland.
Jonathan Gardner.
John Still.
Samuel Payne.
William Gray.
John Riley.
Lawrence Vernes.
Michael Alley.
Edward Smith.
John Jackson (negro).
William Thompson.
Nathan Williams.
John Youans.
William Wetmore.
Peter Mass.
James Fitzgerald.
Samuel Appey (negro).
Loudon (negro).
Thomas Whiddick.
Joseph Laroache.
Edward Rudge.
Samuel (negro).
John Ducture.
Samuel Wardsworth.
Paul Holbrook.
Alexander Campbell.
James Welch.
Maurice Barrett.
Patrick Swaney.
John Dean.
Eneas McDonald.
Polydore (negro).
Charles Colley.
Benjamin Peters.

1781. John Coolin, William Cooper, Benjamin Webb and Thomas Lakeman were in the army.

Men detached to service in Rhode Island, according to resolve of General Court, June 16, 1781:

Major Joseph Hiller.
Francis Haynes.
William Orne.
Lewis Hunt.
John Dove.
Edward Norris.
Samuel Symonds (3d).
Francis Cook.
John Wiburt.
Jonathan Gardner (3d).
Joseph Daland.
Ebenezer Nutting.
George Frazier.
Joseph English.
Thomas Symonds.
James Masury.
Nathan Prince.
David Bickford.
Benjamin Lang.
Robert Hill.
Cheever Mansfield.
Samuel Cheever.
Joshua Pitman.
Theophilus Batchellor.
Capt. Simeon Brown.
William West, jr.
Seth Ring.
Joseph Millet.
Francis Boardman.
Samuel Jones.
Caleb Foot.
John Emmerton, jr.
Charles Britton.
David Beadle.
Nathaniel Brown.
Richard Manning.
Abel Lawrence.
William Thomas.
Penn Townsend.
David Ingersoll.
James Carrel.

From May 25th to July 11th, 1782, enlistments to serve in the army three years:

Jacob Northrup.
Josiah Phelps.
Edward Bessley.
John Adams.
Peter Ingersoll.
James Smith.
David Jones.
William Leonard.
Andrew Bulger.
John Dorsey.
John Taylor.
Alanson Hamner.
Moses Hall.
William Tector.
Eliphaz Spencer.
Benjamin Johnson.
John Fogarty.
Samuel Buckman.
Joel Northrup.
Daniel Weller.
John Melony.
Edward Rudge.
Samuel Locke.
John Coats.
John Hubbard.
Thomas Brown.
James Slater.
David Davis.
Abraham Newport.
William Lamson.
William Taylor.
Thomas Powars.
Nathaniel Williams.

The names of the following officers who served in the Revolutionary armies, and are all believed to have been from Salem, do not appear in the foregoing lists:

Col. Timothy Pickering.
Lieut. Benjamin West.
Col. William Mansfield.
Capt. Samuel Flagg.
Capt. —— Greenwood.
Lieut. Miles Greenwood

Capt. John Felt.
Lieut. John Butler.
Capt. John Symonds.
Lieut. Benjamin Ropes, jr.
Capt. Benjamin Ward.
Lieut. Robert Foster.
Capt. Addison Richardson.
Major Samuel King.
Capt. ——— Flint.

APPENDIX (No. 2.)

List of Salem Privateers of the Revolution.

(This is believed to include 'Letters of Marque.')

SHIPS.

Names.	Number of Guns.	Weight of Metal.	No. of Men.
Pilgrim	18	9	120
Essex	20	6	110
Franklin	18	6	100
Scourge	20	6	110
Disdain	20	6	110
Congress	29	9	130
Royal Louis	18	6	100
Porus	20	9	130
Grand Turk	24	6	120
Rattle Snake	20	4	95
Rover	20	4	95
Cromwell	16	6	100
Jason	16	6	100
Marquis	16	4	75
Hendrick	18	6	100
Junius Brutus	20	6	110
Rhodes	20	6	110
Harlequin	20	4	95
Neptune	16	4	75
Mohawk	22	6	110
Buccaneer	18	9	120
Cicero	18	9	120
Rambler	16	6	95
Defence	14	6	85
Independence	16	4	70
Jack	12	9	60
Black Prince	18	6	.....
Bunker Hill	20	6	.....
Hector	22	6	.....
Jack	14	4	.....
Hunter	18	4	.....
Pickering	16	6	.....
Renown	14	4	.....
Roe Buck	12	4	.....
Trenton	12	6 & 4	.....
Thirty-five ships.	622	.....	2645

BRIGS.

Tyger	16	4	70
Montgomery	14	4	60
Sturdy Beggar	14	4	60
Captain	10	3	45
New Adventure	14	3	55
Active	14	4	60
Hero	8	4	40
Fortune	14	4	60
Swift	14	4	60
Blood-hound	14	3	55
Flying-fish	10	3	45
Fox	14	3	55
Cato	14	3	55
Chase	10	3	45
Brandywine	6	3	.....
Cutter	10	3	.....
Eagle	12	4	.....
Fame	16	4	.....
Hampden	14	4	.....
Hornet	10	3	.....
Lexington	8	3	.....
Lincoln	12	4	.....
Lion	16	6	.....
Maccaroni	14	4	.....

Names.	Number of Guns.	Weight of Metal.	No. of Men.
Monmouth	12	4	.....
Pluto	8	3	.....
Rambler	14	6	.....
True American	10	4	.....
Tyger	10	3	.....
Wild Cat	14	4	.....
Thirty-two brigs.	392	.....	870

SCHOONERS.

Greyhound	8	3	35
Lively	8	3	35
Shackle	6	3	30
Pine Apple	6	3	30
Languedoc	6	2	25
Dolphin	6	3	30
——— ———	6	3	30
Panther	4	3	20
Beaver	10	Swivels.	.....
Blackbird	10	Swivels.	.....
Civil Usage	10	Swivels.	.....
Civil Usage	each.	.....	.....
Centipede	6	2	.....
Congress	8	3	.....
Cutter	8	Swivels.	.....
Delight	4	2	.....
Dolphin	10	Swivels.	.....
Dolphin	each.	.....	.....
Fly	10	Swivels.	.....
Fox	10	Swivels.	.....
General Gates	8	2	.....
Greyhound	6	2	.....
Hammond	10	Swivels.	.....
Hampden	8	3	.....
Harlequin	10	3	.....
Hawk	10	Swivels.	.....
Hornet	14	Swivels.	.....
Lark	12	Swivels.	.....
Lively	14	Swivels.	.....
Modesty	8	3	.....
Pompey	6	2	.....
Scorpion	6	2	.....
Shark	10	Swivels.	.....
Skulpion	10	Swivels.	.....
Swett	12	3	.....
Tatne Bush	10	Swivels.	.....
Warren	10	3	.....
Thirty-seven schooners.	320	.....	235

SLOOPS.

Fish-hawk	8	4	40
Hazard	6	3	30
Black Snake	12	3	.....
Bowdoin	8	3	.....
Jack	14	4	.....
Morning Star	8	3	.....
Revenge	10	3	.....
Rover	8	3 & 4	.....
Bowdoin	8	2	.....
Nine sloops.	82	.....	70

Seven shallops, names not mentioned..... 120 men.

RECAPITULATION.

	Vessels.	Guns.	Men.
Ships	35	622	2645
Brigs	32	392	870
Schooners	37	320	235
Sloops	9	82	70
Shallops	7	.....	120
Total	120	1416	3940

(APPENDIX No. 3).

LIST OF THE PRIVATEERS.

Belonging to Salem during the War of 1812.

NAME	Class	Tons	Guns	Weight of Metal	Men	Where Built	When Built	Builder.	Commander	Captured
Active	Sch.	20	2	4 lbs.	25	Salem	1810		Benj. Patterson	Sept., 1812
Alexander	Ship	330	12	6 "	140	Baltimore	1808		T. Wellman, jr.	May 19, 1813
			6	9 "					B. Crowninshield	
Alfred	Ship	200	16	6 "	110	Salem	1805	David Magonn	Step'n Williams	Feb., 1814
	Brig								Philip Besson	
									Joseph Ropes	Sold at auction
America	Ship	350	20	9 "	150	Salem	1804	Retiah Becket	John Keheu	
									Jas. W. Chever	June, 1831
Bl'k Vomit	Boat	5	0	Muskets	16	Salem	1813	Leach & Teague	John Upton	Sold
Buckskin	Sch.	60	1	12 lbs.	50	Baltimore	1808		Bray	Sept., 1812
			4	4 "						
Cadet	Sch.	47	2	6 "	40	Boston	1814		William Calley	
			2	3 "					Josiah Elwell	
Castigator	Launch	10	6	Car'nade	20	Salem	1813	Webb & Beadle	Ste'n G. Clarke	
									Spencer Hall	
Cossack	Sch.	48	1	18 lbs.	45	Salem	1813	Webb & Beadle	John Upton	March, 1813
									William Davis	
Dart	Sch.	40	2	4 "	40	Salem	1800		T. Symonds	
									John Green	
									Abner Poland	
Diomede	Sch.	170	3	12 "	100	New York	1814		J. Crowninshield	May, 1814
			1	6 "						
Dolphin	Sch.	140	1	12 "	70	Baltimore			Jacob Endicott	
			2	6 "						
Enterprize	Sch.	200	4	18 "	100	Salem	1812	Barker & Magoun	John R. Morgan	May, 1813
Fair Trader	Sch.	40	1	12 "	35	New York	1809		John R. Morgan	Sept., 1812
Fame	Sch.	30	2	6 "	30	Essex	1804		Webb, Upton, Poland	
									Green, Chapman & Evans	
Frolic	Sch.	110	1	24 "	60	Salem	1813		Nathan Green	
			4	6 "					J. B. H. Odiorne	
Galliniper	Sch.	25	2	6 "	30	Eng. built	1807		Tim. Wellman	May, 1813
									Andrew Tucker	and burnt
Gen. Putnam	Sch.		2	32 "						
		150	1	18 Car.	60	Boston	1814		John Evans	Nov., 1814
			1	9 lbs.						
Gen. Stark	Sch.	54	3	12 Car.	50	Salem	1813	Barker & Magoun	John Evans	July, 1813
									William Rice	
Grand Turk	Brig	310	18	9 lbs.	150	Wiscasset, Me.	1812		Holten J. Breed	
									Nathan Green	
Growler	Sch.	172	1	24 "				Under Sup't'nce	Sam'l B. Graves	Aug. 1813
			14	6 "	105	Baltimore	1812	Capt. J. J. Knapp	Nath'l Lindsey	
Helen	Sch.	75	4	6 "	70	Braintree	1792		John Upton	
Holkar	Boat	6	0	Muskets	16	Salem	1813	Leach & Teague	Samuel Lamson	1814
									John Keheu, J. H.	
Jefferson	Sloop	14	1	4 Car.	20	Salem	1801	Christ'er Jurner	Downie, S. Giles	
									J. Wellman, jr.	
John	Ship	200	16	6 lbs.	105	Salem	1794	Enos Briggs	James Fairfield	Feb., 1813
									B. Crowninshield	
John & George	Sch.	57	1	12 "	50	New York	1810		John Sinclair, jr.	Nov., 1812
			2	6 "						
Lizard	Sch.	30	2	6 "	30	Salem	1813	Leach & Teague	Samuel Loring	1814
Montgomery	Brig	190	10	6 "	100	Medford	1812		Holten J. Breed, Benj.	May, 1813
			2	18 "					Upton, Joseph Strout	
Orion	Boat	5	0	Muskets	20	Salem	1813	Leach & Teague	John Upton	
									Jonathan Blythe	
Owl	Boat	6	0	Muskets	14	Salem	1813	Leach & Teague	William Duncan	April, 1813
Phœnix	Sch.	20	1	6 lbs.	25	Salem	1814	William Rowell	Stephenson Richards	
Polly	Sloop	96	1	12 "	60	Poughkepsie, N. Y.	1800		Sam'l C. Hardy	April, 1814
			8	6 "					Robert Evans	
Recovery	Sch.	20	2	3 "	20	Salem	1810		Joseph Peele	1812
Regulator	Sch.	75	1	24 "	50	New York	1808		James Mansfield	Sept., 1812
			2	6 "						
Revenge	Sch.	57	1	12 "	50	New York	1810		John Sinclair, jr.	Nov., 1812
			2	6 "						
Scorpion	Sloop	14	1	4 "	20	Salem	1812	Wm. Huliss	Stephenson Richards	
									Thomas Osborne	
Swift	Sch.	27	1	6 "	25	Eng. built	1808		Harvey Choate	
Swiftsure	Launch	10	1	4 "	20	Salem	1813	Leach & Teague	Stephen Clarke	
									Charles Berry	
Terrible	Boat	5	0	Muskets	16	Salem	1813	Leach & Teague	James Thomas	
									John Greene	
Viper	Sch.	14	1	4 lbs.	20	Salem	1814	Leach & Teague	Joseph Preston	
Wasp	Sloop	30	2	6 "	35	Salem	1813	William Hulin	Ernest A. Ervin.	

(APPENDIX No. 4).

List of officers and enlisted men from Salem who served in the Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers during the Mexican War.

Crowninshield, Charles B.....Capt.
Crowninshield, John C.....1st, Lieut.
Charles C. Varney, Levi Curtis.....Privates.
Augustus Chamberlain, Lucius Grover....Musicians.

APPENDIX No. 5.

List of Commissioned Officers from Salem. War of the Rebellion.

Allen, Pickering D.....1st Lieut., 3d Cav.; killed.
Ames, George L., Capt.; Bvt. Lieut. Col. U. S. Com. Dept.
Andrews, Richard F., 2d Lieut. U. S. C. T. (36th U, S. Vols).
Annable Ephraim A.....2d Lieut. 2d H. Art.
Atherton, Charles H.....2d Lieut. 1st H. Art.
Austin, George F.....Capt. 24th Inf.
Avery, Henry.....Act. Ensign, Navy

Babson, Edwin.....Act. Ensign, Navy
Baker, Charles H.....Engineer, Navy
Bancroft, George C.....1st Lieut. 40th Inf.; killed.
Barstow, Simon F.....Major, Gen. Meade's Staff.
Batchelder, Charles J (I.).....1st Lieut. 3d Cav.
Batchelder, George W.....Capt. 19th Inf.; killed.
Bates, Charles H.....1st Lieut. 23d Inf.
Bertram, Joseph H. M..... Major, U. S. Pay Dept.
Black, Patrick W.....Capt. 9th Inf.
Bott, Thomas E.....Capt. 11th Inf.
Boyer, Charles.....Act. Ensign, Navy
Brewster, Ethan A. P.....Maj. 23d Inf.
Briggs, Joseph B.....1st Lieut. 4th Bat. L. Art.
Brooks, Charles W.....1st Lieut. 23d Inf.
Brown, Robert B.....Capt. 2d Inf.
Browne, A. Parker.....Maj. 40th Inf.
Browning, George F.....Capt., Bvt. Maj. 2d Inf.
Bruce, Daniel, Jr.....U. S. C. T.
Buffum, G. R.....Capt.
Buffum, Robert.....Lieut. 4th Tenn. Cav.
Burnett, Servington S...2d Lieut. 48th Inf. Militia.
Buxton, Seth S.....Maj. 1st H. Art; died in service.

Calef, Benjamin S., Capt., Maj. Gen. Birney's Staff.
Carey, Robert H.....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Center, Addison.....Capt. 23d Inf.
Chadwick, John C., Capt. 19th Inf., Lieut. Col. 92d U. S. C. Inf.
Chapman, George T.....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Chase, Charles W.....Capt. 40th Inf.
Chase, Thorndike.....Clerk Com. Dept.
Chipman, Andrew A., 1st Lieut. 12th Inf.; 4th H. Art.; Trans. 39th Inf.
Chipman, Charles G.....Capt. 54th Inf. (colored).
Chisholm, T.....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Clough, Benjamin P.....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Cogswell, William., Col. 2d Inf.; Bvt. Brig. Gen.
Coleman, Francis M.....2d Lieut. 3d H. Art.
Cox, Charles G.....Maj. 40th Inf.
Cummings, Walter C.....Lieut.
Cummings, William C.....2d Lieut. 23d Inf.

Daland, John.....Capt. 24th Inf.
Dalton, Joseph A.....Lieut. Col. 40th Inf.
Dalton, Samuel.....1st Lieut. 1st H. Art.
Danforth, Henry F.....Capt. 40th Inf.
Davidson, Henry, Jr., 1st. Lieut. 4th Bat. L. Art.
Dearborn, Charles A., Jr.....Capt. 32d Inf.; killed.
Derby, T. Putnam, Jr.....Capt. 4th U. S. C. T.
Derby, Richard.....Capt. 15th Inf.; killed.
Devereux, Arthur F., Col. 19th Inf.; Bvt. Brig. Gen.
Devereux, Charles U.....Capt. 19th Inf.
Devereux, John F.....Capt. 11th Inf.
Dimon, Charles A. R., Col. 1st U. S. Vols.; Bvt. Brig. Gen.
Dodge, Elliot C., Lieut. 1st Regt. N. Y. Excelsior Brigade.
Dodge, Richard F.....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Dodge, Thomas F .....2d Lieut. 2d H. Art.
Doherty, John.....1st Lieut. 9th Inf.
Driver, Joseph M., Chap. Hospital, Washington.
Dudley, L. E.....13th Inf.
Durgin, Horace.....Q. M. 48th Inf. militia.

Edwards, Charles W.....2d Lieut. 2d Inf.
Edwards, Shuball.....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Emilio, Louis F.....Capt. 54th Inf. (colored).
Emmerton, Charles S.....1st Lieut. 23d Inf.
Emmerton, George R.....1st Lieut. 23d Inf.
Emmerton, James A.....Surg. 2d H. Art.
Endicott, Charles.....Act. Master, Navy.
Evans, Alvan A.....1st Lieut. 2d Co. Sharps.
Evans, John W., 2d Lieut. 13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.

Fabens, George O.....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Fallon, Thomas R.....2d Lieut. 9th Inf.
Farmer, George S., Lieut. 4th H. Art.; Died at Andersonville Prison before receiving commission.
Finney, George.....Act. Master, Navy.
Fisher, Charles.....Engineer, Navy
Fisher, George A., 1st Lieut. 23d Inf.; Trans. U. S. Sig. Corps.
Fitzgerald, Edward.....Capt. 9th Inf.
Ford, John F.....1st Lieut. 48th Inf. militia.
Foster, Joseph C.....2d Lieut. Salem Cadets.
Fowler, Philip M.....Capt. (U. S. C. T).
Fox, John L.....Surg. Navy.
Frye, Charles H.....Capt. 2d N. C. Vols.
Frye, Nathan A., Jr., 2d Lieut. 59th Inf.; not mustered.

Gardner, George W.....Capt. 24th Inf.
Getchell, George H.....Capt.
Glidden, Joseph H.....1st Lieut. 6th Inf. militia.
Goldthwait, Joseph A., 1st Lieut. 2d Inf.; Capt. and C. S. U. S. Vols.
—— Gordon.....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Goodale, Joshua C.....2d Lieut. 2d H. Art.
Goss, James W.....1st Lieut. 1st H. Art.
Gray, George C., 2d Lieut. 1st Co. Sharps.; Capt 178th N. Y. Vols.
Grant, Frederick.....1st Lieut. 2d H. Art.

Hale, Henry A., Capt. 19th Inf.; Bvt. Lieut. Col. and A. A. G. Vols.
Hamblett, Samuel H.....1st Lieut. 5th Bat. L. Art.
Hancock, John.....Midshipman, Navy.
Hannan, Dennis B.....Surg.
Harrington, Daniel.....Midshipman, Navy.
Harrod, Benjamin C.....1st Lieut. 1st H. Art.
Haskell, Augustus M.....Chap. 40th Inf.
Hatch, Charles F.....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Hayward, Charles H.....1st Lieut. 23d Inf.
Henfield, Amos.....Capt. 3d Cav.
Hill, Edwin R., 1st Lieut. 2d Inf.; Trans. 55th Inf. (colored); killed.
Hill, William A.....Capt. 19th Inf.
Hiltz, Jacob C.....1st Lieut. 2d U. S. Vols.
Hobbs, Edward.....1st. Lieut. 1st H. Art.
Hodges, John, Jr.....Lieut. Col. 5th Inf.; killed
Hodges, Thorndike D.....Capt. 1st N. C. Vols.
Holt, Frank.....2d Lieut. 1st Bat'n F. Cav.
Hoyt, S.....Capt.
Hurd, William H.....2d Lieut. 50th Inf. militia.
Hutchinson, Thomas W.....Act. Master, Navy.

Jackson, Andrew.....Act. Ensign, Navy.
James, Henry.....Engineer, Navy.
Johnson, Daniel H., Jr.....Capt. 40th Inf.
Johnson, Thomas H.....2d Lieut. Salem Cadets.

Kelley, Thomas.....2d Lieut. 30th Inf.
Kemble, Arthur.....Act Asst. Surg., Navy.
Kenny, Jonathan A.....2d Lieut. Salem Cadets.
Kimball, Frank.....Lieut.
Kimball, Jacob.....Act. Lieut., Navy.
Kinsley, Benjamin F.....

Lakeman, John R.....1st Lieut. 23d Inf.
Lander, Frederick W.....Brig. Gen.
Lee, Charles J.....2d Lieut. 48th Inf. militia.
Lee, John R.....1st Lieut. and Q. M. 1st Inf.
Lee, Robert G.....Act. Master, Navy.
Leonard, James.....2d Lieut. 3d H. Art.
Loud, Charles A.
Luscomb, Joseph H.....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Luscomb, Henry R.....2d Lieut. 3d H. Art.

McGourty, Patrick.....2d Lieut. 11th Inf.
Manning, Charles H.....Capt. 4th Bat. L. Art.
Manning, Joseph A..2d Lieut., Gen. Butler's Staff.
Manning, Thomas H.....1st Lieut. 4th Bat. L. Art.
Mansfield, William D.....Capt. 14th N. Y. Vols.
Marks, John L.....Maj., Salem Cadets.
Marks, Thomas H.....Act. Ensign, Navy
Mehan, Dennis.....Capt. 2d Inf.
Merritt, Henry.....Lieut. Col. 23d Inf.; killed.
Merritt, Henry A.....1st Lieut. 2d H. Art.
Millet, Charles (2d).....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Millet, Edward.....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Millet, Frank.....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Millet, William H.....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Miller, Frederick L.....Engineer, Navy.
Miller, James.....Capt. 4th Cav.
Milward, Benjamin F.....1st Lieut. 59th Inf.
Moody, Converse.....Capt. Md. Vols.
Moseley, Joseph.....Act. Master, Navy.
Mullaly, John E.....Capt. 17th Inf.

Neal, William S.....Ass't. Engineer, Navy.
Nichols, James B.....Capt. 24th Inf.
Nichols, James W.....2d Lieut. 40th Inf.
Noyes, Isaac S.....1st Lieut. 7th Inf. militia.
Nutting, William G..... Act. Lieut. Navy.

O'Brien, Martin.....Capt. 9th Inf.
O'Donnell, James.....1st Lieut. 9th Inf.
O'Leary, Timothy.....Capt. 9th Inf.

Oliver, Samuel C., Lieut. Col. 1st H. Art.; Lieut. Col. 2d H. Art.; Bvt. Col.
Osborne, Nathan W. N., Capt. 13th U. S. Inf. (Vols).

Palmer, William L.....Maj. 19th Inf.; Bvt. Col.
Parsons, Joseph M.....Capt. 3d H. Art.
Peirson, Charles L., Col. 59th Inf.; Bvt. Brig. Gen.
Peirson, George H.....Col. 5th Inf. militia.
Peirce, Charles H.....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Perkins, Charles T.....1st Lieut. 24th Inf.
Phalan, Edward A.....Capt. 2d Inf.
Phalan, Michael (W).....1st Lieut. 9th Inf.
Phillips, Charles A.....Capt. 5th Bat. L. Art.; Bvt. Maj.
Phillips, Edward P. (B).....Lieut.
Phillips, Edward W., 1st Lieut. 50th Inf. Militia.
Phipps, John.....Act. Ensign, Navy
Pickering, John., Capt. 13th Unat. Co. H. Art; 3d H. Art.; Adj. S. C.
Pickman, Benjamin.....1st Lieut. 3d Cav.
Pitman, Henry.....Act. Lieut., Navy.
Pollock, John.....Lieut. Col. 40th Inf
Pool, Marcus M.....2d Lieut. (1st H. Art).
Pope, Frank.....Capt. 1st H. Art.
Pope, James.....Capt. 1st H. Art.
Price, Benjamin S.....Act. Asst. Pay Master, Navy.
Putnam, George D.....Capt. 50th Inf. militia.
Putnam, Henry C.....Act. Master, Navy.
Putnam, William S.....Act. Ensign, Navy.

Quimby, Samuel F.....Act. Asst. Surg., Navy.

Redmond, Philip E., 1st Lieut. 9th Inf.; died in service.
Reeves, Robert W., Capt. 13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.
Reynolds, John P., jr.....Capt. 19th Inf.
Richardson, James M., Capt. 12th Unat. Co. H. Art.
Roberts, John.....Act. Lieut., Navy.
Rogers, William C.. .....Act. Lieut. Navy.
Rose, Stephen C.....Lieut. Col.
Ross, William H.....Capt.
Rowell, Sidney B.....2d Lieut. 3d H. Art.

Safford, John B..... .Asst. Engineer, Navy.
Saltonstall, William G.....Act. Lieut. Com., Navy.
Sanders, Charles.....1st Lieut. 48th Inf. militia.
Saunders, John.....Capt. 1st Co. Sharp.; killed.
Servey, William T..... .....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Sherman, Charles F.....2d Lieut. 57th Inf.
Shreve, William P., 1st Lieut. Gen. Birney's Staff.
Skinner, Richard, jr.....Capt. 40th Inf.
Smith, Albert P.....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Smith, Joseph C.....1st Lieut. 1st H. Art.
Smith, Lawrence P.....Act. Ensign, Navy
Smith, Robert.....Capt. 2d Co. Sharp.
Smith, Samuel.....Act. Ensign, Navy

Snapp, Philip J.....1st Lieut. 23d Inf.
Staten, Edward H., Capt. 6th and 7th Inf. militia.
Stevens, George O., 1st Lieut. 13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.
Stiles, Charles D.....1st Lieut. 2d Co. Sharp.
Stimpson, Edward S...1st Lieut. 55th Inf. (colored).
Stoddard, Benjamin F..... .....Capt. 24th Inf.
Stone, Lincoln R., Surg. 2d Inf.; 54th Inf. (colored); U. S. Vols.
Symonds, Benjamin R., 1st Lieut. 59th Inf. and 19th Inf.
Symonds, H. C.....Maj.
Swasey, William M.....Act. Ensign, Navy.

Tannatt, Thomas R.....Col. 1st H. Art.; 16th Inf.
Thayer, J. Henry.....Chap. 40th Inf.

Upton, Edward.....1st Lieut. 2d Co. Sharp.
Upton, William B.....Capt. 1st U. S. Vols.

Very, Abraham A.....Act. Ensign Navy.
Voorhies, Lewis D.....Act. Lieut. Navy.

Walcott, Alfred F.....Capt. 21st Inf.
Walcott, Charles F., Col. 61st Inf.; Bvt. Brig. Gen.
Ward, Andrew A.....Act. Master, Navy.
Ward, Charles G., 1st Lieut. and Adj. 24th Inf.; killed.
Ward, John L.....Capt. 50th Inf. militia.
Waters, Edward S., Vol. Engineer, Gen. Burnside's Staff.
Waters, John.....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Webb, Augustine F.....2d Lieut. 40th Inf.; killed.
Webb, Francis R.....Act. Ensign, Navy
Webb, Joseph H.....1st Lieut. 40th Inf.
Wentworth, Louis E.....Capt. 2d Co. Sharp.
West, W. C.
Wheatland, George, jr.....Maj. 48th Inf. militia.
Wheeler, Richard P., 2d Lieut. 23d Inf.; died of wounds.
Whipple, George M.....Capt. 23d Inf.
White, Caleb B.
Wildes, George G.....Chap. 24th Inf.
Wilkins, Charles .....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Wiley, George.....2d Lieut. 48th Inf. Militia.
Williams, Charles F., jr., 2d Lieut. 35th Inf.; died of wounds.
Williams, James S.....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Williams, William A.....Engineer, Navy.
Wilson, Edmund B.....Chap. 24th Inf.
Wilson, Jacob H.....2d Lieut. 40th Inf.
Winn, John K.....Act. Ensign, Navy.
Woods, George H.....Lieut. Col.

APPOINTMENTS (neither Commissioned nor Enlisted Men).

Berry, William H.....Surg.'s Stew., Navy.
Dalton, J. Frank.....Capt.'s Clerk, Navy.
Farrington, George P., jr.....Surg.'s Stew., Navy.
Hamblett, Augustus P... Paymaster's Stew., Navy.
Luscomb, Abial T.....Surg.'s Stew., Navy.
Webber, Joseph.....Surg.'s Stew., Navy.
Wells, Charles H.. .....Surg.'s Stew., Navy.

LIST OF ENLISTED MEN FROM SALEM IN WAR OF REBELLION.

Abbott, Adolphus.....23d Inf.; V. R. C.
Abbott, Benjamin F.....4th H. Art.
Abbott, Charles J.....Wagoner, 24th Inf.
Adams, Charles H.....23d Inf. ; 3d H. Art.
Adams, Charles P....1st Co. Sharps., 5th Inf. militia
Adams, Charles.....1st H. Art.
Adams, George W.....Navy
Adams, George W.....2d H. Art.
Adams, Henry.....2d H. Art.
Adams, Henry J..32d Inf.; V. R. C.; 2d Co. Sharps.
Adams, Henry P.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Adams, John H.....19th Inf.
Adams, Thomas M.....6th Inf. militia
Adams, Peter F.....6th Inf. militia
Ahern, John.....3d H. Art.
Aldrich, Edward M .....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Aldrich, Moses H.....7th R. I.
Allen, Benjamin, jr.....11th Inf.; died of wounds.
Allen, Charles F.....50th Inf. militia.
Allen, Edward F.....2d H. Art.
Allen, Henry.....16th Inf.
Allen, Horatio D.....Corp. 23d Inf.
Allen, George W.....4th Cav.
Allen, William H.....2d Co. Sharps.
Allen, James.....Corp.
Allen, John N..... ..... 38th Inf.
Allen, William A.....Navy.
Alton, Samuel T .....2d Inf. ; died of wounds.
Ambrose, Charles.....22d Inf.; trans. Navy.
Ames, Eben.....Navy
Ames, M. Eugene.....Navy
Anderson, Thomas B.....Navy
Anderson, George F.....40th Inf.
Anderson, Aust.....18th Inf.
Anderson, Joseph.....54th Inf.; 55th Inf. (colored).
Anderson, William.....Navy
Anderson, William J..... .....Navy

Anderson, Edward.....Navy
Anderson, James H., jr.....Navy
Andrews, Gilman A.....Corp. 50th Inf. militia
Anthony, Joseph H.....11th U. S. Inf.
Anthony, Joseph.....5th Inf. militia
Annis, Joseph E.....40th Inf.
Appleton, John L..... .....2d Inf.
Archer, George N.....8th Inf. militia
Archer, Benj. F. (H.)..... .....2d Co. Sharps.
Archer, Rufus P., jr.....4th H. Art.
Archer, William H.....Corp. 2d Co. Sharps.
Arnold, Edward H.....4th H. Art.
Arnold, Isaac S.....1st H. Art.
Arnold, James E.....1st H. Art., V. R. C.
Arnold, James E.. .....3d Cav.
Arnold, James H.....23d Inf.
Arnold, Joseph E.....1st H. Art.
Arnold, Peter.....2d Cav.
Arrington, Benjamin E..... .....U. S. Vet. Vols.
Arrington, Benjamin F..... .....23d Inf.
Arrington, Benjamin R.....17th Inf.
Arrington, James, Jr.....23d Inf. ; U. S. V. R. C.
Arrington, John R.....Navy
Artemus, John.....56th Inf.
Arvedson, C. K.....Navy.
Arvedson, William L.....Sergt. 24th Inf.
Arvedson, Charles F.....Navy
Ashbell, Wyatt.....1st H. Art. ; died in service
Ashby, Elias W..... . .....Sergt. S. C.
Astrom, Carl.....30th Inf.
Atkinson, Frank E.....1st Sergt., 62d Inf.
Attwood, Frank.....1st Sergt., 62d Inf.
Austin, Alden K.....S. C. ; 23d Inf. ; died in service
Austin, Amos P.....Corp., 1st Bat'n F. Cav.
Austin, Everett E.....13th Unat. Co., Inf. militia.
Austin, Orlow.....13th Inf.
Austin, William R.....23d Inf.

Avery, John W. C., 1st H. Art.; died Andersonville Prison.
Ayres, Loren (Lorron).....23d Inf.; trans. V. R. C.

Babbidge, William.....17th Unat. Co.
Babbidge, William A.....50th Inf. militia
Babcock, John F.....Corp. 4th Cav.
Babcock, John H.....7th Inf. ; 1st Bat'n H. Art.
Bacheller, William H..... .....17th Inf.
Bager, Henry.....Navy
Bagley, Daniel I.....Navy
Bailey, Edward A., (Edwin A.).....2d Inf.
Bailey, Theron.....1st H. Art.
Bailey, Warren K.....19th Inf.
Bailey, William.....2d H. Art. ; 17th Inf.
Baines, Richard..... Navy
Baker, Barney.....3d Cav. ; V. R. C.
Baker, Benjamin.....2d H. Art.
Baker, Edwin D.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Baker, Henry C.....50th Inf., militia ; 30th Inf.
Baker, Robert.....20th Inf.
Baker, William H.....1st H. Art. ; V. R. C.
Baker, Peter.....23d Inf.
Balch, William D..... .....Corp. 50th Inf., militia
Balfe, Thomas.....5th Bat. L. Art.
Balger, Patrick.....2d Cav.
Ball, George H. A.....19th Inf. ; U. S. Cav.
Ballard, Francis A..... .....40th Inf.
Ballard, George R.....1st H. Art.
Baltazar, Castano.....Navy ; drowned at sea, 1873.
Barenson, Abram F., S. C.; 50th Inf., militia ; 2d Cav.
Barge, William.....1st U. S. V. R. C.
Barker, Benjamin.....2d Inf.
Barker, Charles F.....S. C. ; 50th Inf.
Barker, John.
Barnard, Samuel, 4th Bat'n L. Art., died in service

Barnard, Samuel, jr.....23d Inf., V. R. C.
Barnard, William H .....17th Unat. Co.
Barnard, William H.....Navy
Barnes, Israel D.....2d Unat. Co.; died in service
Barnes, Michael D.....3d H. Art.
Barnes, John.....11th Inf.; died of wounds, 1862
Barnett, Patrick.....62d Inf.
Barnum, S. G .....Navy
Barrington, Archibald.....43d U. S. C. T.
Barrington, A.....Navy
Barters, John.
Bartlett, Calvin.....1st H. Art.
Bartlett, Jeremiah I.....Navy
Barrett, Cornelius.....Navy
Barrett, Peter.....59th Inf.; died of wounds.
Barrows, Henry.....Navy
Barry, Edward.....Navy
Barry, Edward A.....3d H. Art.
Barry, John H.....13th Unat. Co
Barry, William H.....5th Inf., militia
Bassett, Eben.....Navy
Bassett, John A.....7th Inf.
Bassett, Robert C., 1st H. Art.; died Andersonville Prison.
Batchelder, Charles.....1st H. A.
Batchelder, George H .....3d H. Art.
Batchelder, George W.....Sergt. 8th Inf., militia
Batchelder, John.....11th Inf., V. R. C.
Batchelder, John H.....Corp. 2d Co. Sharps.
Batchelder, Richard.....Sergt. 3d Cav.
Batchelder, Walter.....1st H. Art.
Batchelder, George H. .....11th Inf.
Batchelder, George H.....23d Inf.
Batchelder, William H.....17th Inf.
Bateman, Charles.....1st Cav.; killed.
Bateman, Joseph.....48th Inf. militia
Bateman, Thomas.....48th Inf. militia
Bauer, Anton.....23d Inf.
Bauer, Ignace (Ignaz).....5th Bat. L. Art.
Baxter, John.....Navy
Beach, William, jr.....40th Inf.
Beadle, John (3d).....Navy
Beals, William A.....4th H. Art.
Becker, Joseph.....Corp. 3d H. Art.
Becker, Peter.....23d Inf.
Beckett, Daniel C.....Corp. 1st H. Art.
Beckett, Edward C.....Navy
Beckett, William H.....29th Inf.; 35th Inf.
Beckford, John M.....1st H. Art.
Beckford, Jonathan A.....1st H. Art.
Beckford, Eben.....23d Inf., V. R. C.
Beckford, Jefferson (A.).....1st H. Art.
Begg, William H.....1st H. Art.
Bell, James.....Navy
Bell, William H.....7th Inf.; Sergt. 2d Cav.
Bellows, James.....1st H. Art.
Bellows, John.....9th Inf.
Bennett, Abram E ..... S. C.
Bennett, George A., 13th Unat. Co.; 50th Inf. militia; 1st Bat'n F. Cav.
Bennett, Larrington.....Corp. 48th Inf. militia
Benson, Samuel B.....1st Sergt., 59th Inf.
Berg, William R.....5th Inf. militia; 2d Co. Sharps.
Berrin, Lewis.....Navy
Berry, Edward A.....3d H. Art.
Berry, James A.....62d Inf.
Berry, William H. .....Sergt. 1st Bat'n, F. Cav.
Berry, William R.....22d Inf.
Beston, James.....Blacksmith, 3d Cav.; V. R. C.
Bickford, William F., 5th Inf. militia; 1st H. Art.
Bigelow, Walter R.....4th H. Art.
Binney, Thomas J.....62d Inf.
Birmingham, John.....61st Inf.
Birney, Thomas J.....(See Binney, Thomas J.)
Bissell, Wesley T.....40th Inf
Bixby, Joseph H. (A.).....7th Bat. L. Art.; V. R. C.
Black, William.....Navy
Blaisdell, George E.....23d Inf.
Blake, Darius G.....2d Inf.
Blanchard, Andrew J., 23d Inf.; died in rebel prison
Blanchard, Daniel.....11th Inf.; killed
Blanchard, William H.....2d Cav.
Blinn, George H., Sergt. 13th Unat. Co.; Corp. 50th Inf. militia; 1st Bat'n F. Cav.
Bly, Benjamin (Joseph).....Corp. 24th Inf.
Boden, Thomas C.....50th Inf. militia.
Boden, Hiram C.....Navy
Bodwell, John A.....6th N. H. Vols.; died in service
Bolend, James.....32d Inf.
Bolton, Thomas.....1st H. Art.; trans. Navy
Bonner, John.....32d Inf.
Borden, Thomas.....Navy
Bousley, George E.....7th Inf. militia
Bousley, Nathaniel C.....50th Inf. militia
Bousley, Theophilus F.....48th Inf. militia; killed
Bovey, James G.....1st Sergt. 1st H. Art.
Bovey, Nicholas.....Sergt. 4th Bat. L. Art.
Bovey, Thomas L.....50th Inf. militia
Bowen, Francis.....28th Inf.
Bowen, James W.....Navy
Bowen, Thomas E.....1st H. Art
Bower, Anton.....23d Inf.
Bowler, Henry A., 1st H. Art.; died Andersonville Prison.
Bownar, John.....22d Inf.; 23d Inf.
Boyce, Henry.....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia
Boyce, John F., 4th Bat. L. Art.; died in service.
Boyd, George.....Navy
Boyle, Michael W.....1st Sergt. 9th Inf.
Brackett, Warren.....2d H. Art.
Bradford, Francis.....Navy
Bradley, James.....Navy
Bradley, John.....1st H. Art.; died of wounds
Brady, Edward.....9th Inf.
Brady, James.....23d Inf.; 2d Inf.
Brady, Patrick R.....9th Inf.; 32d Inf.
Brady, Thomas.....Navy
Braman, John.....Navy
Bray, G. Parker.....1st H. Art.
Bray, Isaac.....Navy
Breed, Elbridge H.....3d H. Art.
Breed, Frank S.....62d Inf.
Breed, Otis J.....3d H. Art.
Brennan, Michael.....4th H. Art.
Brickley, John.....11th Inf.
Briggs, Edward L. P.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Briggs, Henry F., 5th Inf. militia; detailed in Navy
Brigham, Azel P.....Pr. Mus. 11th Inf.
Brigham, William H. B.....Mus. 11th Inf.
Britton, John.....3d Cav.
Broderick, Dennis.....9th Inf.; 61st Inf.
Brooks, Horace A., 50th Inf. militia; 1st Bat'n F. Cav.
Brooks, Joseph H.....8th Inf. militia
Brooks, Richard.....20th Inf.; killed
Brooks, Samuel H.....23d Inf.; died of wounds
Brown, August.....Navy
Brown, Albert W..8th Inf. militia; 7th Inf. militia
Brown, Augustus.....23d Inf.; died in service
Brown, Augustus, 1st Sergt. 50th Inf. militia; 1st Sergt. 13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.
Brown, Benjamin K., Sergt. 5th Inf. militia; Wagoner, 3d Cav.
Brown, Charles.....Navy
Brown, Charles.....Navy
Brown, Charles A.....Corp. 48th Inf. militia
Brown, Charles W.....62d Inf.
Brown, Edmund A.....Navy
Brown, Elbridge K.....8th Inf. militia
Brown, Ezra L.....23d Inf.
Brown, Ezra W.....23d Inf.
Brown, Frederick C.....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia
Brown, George A., 8th Bat. L. Art.; died in service
Brown, George L.....22d Inf.
Brown, George A., 5th Inf.; Corp. 19th Inf.; died of wounds.
Brown, George O.....19th Inf.
Brown, Henry F.....Mus. 23d Inf.
Brown, Henry, jr.....30th Inf.
Brown, Herbert A.....Navy
Brown, Jeremiah W.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Brown, James.....1st H. Art.
Brown, James.....9th Inf.
Brown, James.....Navy
Brown, James H.....1st H. Art.
Brown, James R.....Navy
Brown, John B.....Mus. 7th Inf.
Brown, John B.....11th Inf.; died of wounds
Brown, John H.....Navy
Brown, Oliver.....24th Inf.
Brown, Patrick .....1st Cav.
Brown, Samuel.....1st H. Art.
Brown, Patrick.....24th Inf.
Brown, Samuel A.....S. C.
Brown, Thomas E.....1st H. Art.
Brown, Thomas W.....48th Inf. militia
Brown, William.....22d Inf.
Brown, William P.....50th Inf. militia
Brown, George A.....8th Bat'n L. Art.
Browne, John B.....Mus. S. C.
Browning, Clement A.....Corp. 3d H. Art.
Bruce, Robert P.....Corp. 1st H. Art.
Bruce, Sullivan.....Navy
Bryant, Enoch, jr.....19th Inf.
Bryant, Timothy W.....50th Inf. militia
Buckley, Bartholomew S.....1st H. Art.
Buckley, John.....5th Bat. L. Art.
Buckley, Patrick.....1st H. Art.
Buckley, Timothy.....Navy
Buffam, Charles C.....S. C.
Buffum, George W.....23d Inf.
Buker, William H.....16th Inf.
Bullock, Attwood C.....1st H. Art.
Bulger, James.....5th Inf. militia; Sergt. 40th Inf.
Bulger, Patrick.....2d Cav.
Bumpus, Elisha .....Navy
Burbank, Nathan P.....2d Inf.
Burchstead, David W.....Corp. 23d Inf.
Burding, Edward W.....5th Inf.
Burg, William R.....(See Berry, William R.)
Burgess, Charles H., 2d H. Art.; 3d Cav.; died in service.
Burgess, William H.....Artificer 3d H. Art.
Burke, Michael.....4th Cav.
Burke, Richard.....9th Inf.
Burnes, Charles E.....12th Inf.
Burnes, George W.....12th Inf.; died of wounds
Burnham, Joseph P.....3d Cav.
Burnham, John.....9th Inf.
Burns, John.....9th Inf.
Burns, John.....11th Inf.; killed.
Burns, John H.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Burrill, Francis A.....1st H. Art.
Busted, Andrew.....Sergt. 40th Inf.
Buswell, John H.....2d Cav.; 61st Inf.
Butler, Benjamin F.....39th Inf.; trans. Navy
Butler, Charles.....4th Cav.
Butman, George A., Mus. 59th Inf.; died in service
Butman, Luther C.....22d Inf.; trans. 32d Inf.
Buton, Maurice.....Navy
Butterfield, Hiram.....17th Inf.
Buxton, Alonzo D.....1st H. Art.
Buxton, Augustus.....1st H. Art.
Buxton, Charles W.....Wagoner, 17th Inf.
Buxton, Edward H.....4th Cav.
Buxton, George, jr.....Wagoner, 17th Inf.
Buxton, George B.....5th Inf. militia
Buxton, George F., 5th Inf. militia; Q. M. Sergt. 2d H. Art.
Buxton, George E.....S. C.
Buxton, John.....41st Inf.

Buxton, John H.....1st H. Art.
Buxton, Samuel H.....5th Inf. militia
Buxton, Thomas, 1st H. Art.; died Andersonville prison.

Cadieu, Charles H.....Navy
Cain, Patrick.....9th Inf.
Cahill, Bartholomew...4th H. Art. Died in service
Callahan, John.....48th Inf. militia; 4th H. Art.
Callahan, Patrick.....9th Inf.
Calavacan, Charles.....22d Inf.; killed
Call, Aaron W.....Corp. 40th Inf.
Call, Isaac.....40th Inf.; V. R. C.
Call, George.....19th Inf.
Call, George A.....1st H. Art.
Call, George A.....23d Inf.
Call, Samuel L.....Bat'n G., 3d Penn.
Call, Thomas S.....17th Unat. Co.
Campbell, John C.....1st H. Art.
Campion, Edward J.....20th Inf.
Campion, Patrick J.....Sergt. 20th Inf.
Cane, Thomas.....28th Inf.
Caras, Lattara.....19th Inf.
Carcy, George A.....Navy
Carey, Hugh.....9th Inf.
Carey, James.....32d Inf.; died in service
Carey, John.....9th Inf.
Carlin, Samuel.....2d Inf.
Carroll, Charles.....13th Unat. Co.
Carroll, James.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Carroll, Peter.....1st H. Art.
Carlisle, John.....18th Inf.
Carleton, David.....19th Inf.
Carlton, John W.....8th Inf. militia
Carlton, David...Sergt. 23d Inf.; Missing, supposed killed
Carlton, Joseph G. S.....Corp. 23d Inf.
Carney, Richard.....Corp. 9th Inf.
Carr, Thomas F.....3d H. Art.
Carr, William H.....7th Inf. militia
Carpenter, Isaac W.....3d Cav.
Carter, William H.....7th Inf. militia
Carter, William H...Corp. 13th Unat. Co.; 4th Cav.
Carter, Simon.
Casey, Daniel.....20th Inf.
Casey, Daniel (David).....13th Unat. Co. Inf.
Casey, Thomas.....Navy
Cashin, David.....Corp. 9th Inf.
Cashion, Robert.....9th Inf.
Caspersen, John P.....12th Inf.; killed
Cassidy, James.....23d Inf.
Cassidy, James.....2d H. Art.
Cassell, Charles C., 54th Inf. (colored); trans. 55th Inf. (colored).
Cassell, John M., 54th Inf. (colored); trans. 55th Inf. (colored).
Cashron, John.....13th Unat. Co. Inf.
Caswell, George A.....S. C.
Cate, John H.....19th Inf.; trans. Navy
Cate, Samuel A.....5th Inf. militia; Navy
Chalk, Henry T.....Corp. 1st H. Art.
Chamberlain, Luther L.....Sergt. 2d H. Art.
Chamberlain, Charles E. A.
Chamberlain, Garland A...Sergt 29th Unat. Co. H. Art.; 3d H. Art.
Chambers, John W.....1st H. Art.
Chandler, Benjamin F.....2d Cav.
Chandler, Isaac H..Corp. 59th Inf.; 50th Inf. militia; died of wounds.
Chandler, John.....Corp. 6th Inf. militia
Chandler, George A.....7th Inf. militia; Navy
Channell, George W.....3d H. Art.
Chapman, Joseph R.....4th H. Art.
Chapman, Lewis A.....4th Bat. L. Art; trans. 13th Bat.
Chapple, William F.....8th Inf. militia; 23d Inf.
Chase, Benjamin E.....7th Inf. militia
Chase, Charles H..36th Inf.; Hosp. Stew. U. S. Vols.
Chase, Charles P.....Corp. 24th Inf.
Chase, George.....Navy
Chase, George E.....48th Inf. militia
Chase, Jacob C.....55th Inf. (colored)
Chase, John R.....48th Inf. militia
Chase, John R.....57th Inf.; 59th Inf.
Chase, Lyman A.....2d H. Art.
Cheney, Joseph H.....7th Inf. militia
Cheney, Richard R. W.....62d Inf.
Chesley, Charles H, jr.....24th Inf.
Chesley, Edward A.....4th H. Art.
Chessman, Charles H.....50th Inf. militia
Chick, Daniel.....3d H. Art.
Chick, William H.....19th Inf.
Childs, Charles N.....Navy
Chipman, James G.....1st H. Art.
Chipman William F. T.....3d H. Art.
Chipman, William H.....13th Unat. Co. Inf.
Chipman, Andrew T.....17th Inf.
Chism, William.....20th Inf.
Chitman, William H.....13th Unat. Co. Inf.
Chrystal, Samuel.....19th Inf.
Chute, Isaiah.....7th Inf. militia
Chute, Rupart J.....Mus. 7th Inf. militia
Claiborne, George C.....3d Cav.
Claflin, William H.....8th Inf. militia
Clark Albion J.....23d Inf.
Clark, Charles A. D.....Sergt. 4th Bat. L. Art.
Clark, Edward A.....5th Inf. militia; 29th Inf.
Clark, Henry M.....Corp. 4th Bat. L. Art.
Clark, Charles P.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Clark, John A.....19th Inf.; killed
Clark, John F....1st H. Art.; Corp. 5th Inf. militia
Clark, John W.....62d Inf.
Clark, Patrick.....Navy
Clark, Patrick.....29th Inf.
Clark, Sylvester W.....5th Inf. militia; 24th Inf.; killed
Clark, William.....Navy
Clark, William B.....50th Inf. militia
Clark, William W.....23d Inf.
Clarrage, Edward D. (F.).....1st H. Art.
Clarrage, James O.....11th Inf.; Navy
Clements, Charles H.....2d Co Sharps
Clemons, William H.....5th Inf. militia; 2d Co. Sharps
Clough, Robert P., 1st Sergt. 6th Inf. militia, S. C.
Clough, William H.....3d H. Art.
Clough, William H. (V.).....17th Inf.
Clynes, Frank H.....Corp. 23d Inf.
Clynes, John.....9th Inf.
Coburn, Geo. E.....54th Inf. (colored).
Cocklin, John.....9th Inf.
Cokclin, John J. (I.).....Corp. 1st H. Art.
Cochrain, George.....39th Inf.
Cochran, Daniel.....9th Inf.
Cochran, James.....11th Inf.
Cochran, James.....Corp. 40th Inf.
Cochran, John.....2d Inf.; killed, 1862
Cochran, Thomas H.....24th Inf.
Cochrane, James.....1st Bat'n H. Art.; trans. navy
Cochrey, Bartholomew.....9th Inf.
Cogan, John.....9th Inf.
Cogger, James.....4th H. Art.
Coggin, Thomas.....48th Inf. militia.
Cogswell, Epes, Artificer 4th Bat. L. Art.; died in service.
Cohane, John.....Sergt. 11th Inf.
Colcord, David B.....1st H. Art.
Cole, Robert.....Killed.
Coleman, Patrick.....2d Inf.
Collier, Charles D.....1st H. Art.
Collier, John F.....4th H. Art.
Collins, Charles H.....23d Inf.
Collins, Edward A., 13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia, 23d Inf.
Collins, Cornelius F.....3d H. Art.
Collins, Edward, jr.....S. C.
Collins, George W.....23d Inf.
Collins, Jeremiah.....30th Maine Vols.
Collins, John G.....4th Cav.
Collins, John H.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Collins, John.....11th Inf.
Colony, Moses G.
Colman, Benjamin F.....S. C.
Colman, George B., 54th Inf. (colored); trans. 55th Inf. (colored).
Colwell, Patrick.....48th Inf. militia, 3d H. Art.
Conant, George W.....62d Inf.
Coney, Charles W., 1st H. Art.; died Andersonville Prison.
Conner, Patrick.....1st H. Art.
Conners, Cornelius.....2d Cav.
Connolly, James.....9th Inf.
Connors, Jeremiah.....2d Inf.
Connor, Henry.....2d Inf.
Converse, Francis T.....Bugler 2d H. Art.
Converse, Augustus.....2d Cav.; mus. 19th Inf.
Converse, Josiah L., Bugler 2d H. Art.; mus. 19th Inf.
Conway, Dennis.....Sergt. 62d Inf.
Conway, James., 13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia; Sergt. 62d Inf.
Coogan, John.....9th Inf.
Cook, Adelbert P.....1st H. Art.
Cook, David N., 17th Inf., 13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.
Cook, Frank.....22d Inf.; Navy.
Cook, George B.....50th Inf. militia.
Cook, George W.....50th Inf. militia.
Cook, Jeremiah.....V. R. C.
Cook, Peter S.....11th Inf.
Cook, William S.....23d Inf.
Copeland, George A.....S. C;; 50th Inf. militia; 23d Inf.
Corcoran, Daniel.....9th Inf.
Corcoran, John.....2d Inf.
Corrigan, Daniel.....19th Inf.
Corrigan, John.....27th Unat. Co. Inf.
Cottle, Alfred.....1st H. Art.
Cottle, Samuel.....19th Inf.; trans. Navy.
Cotter, Simon.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Cottrell, William A.....1st H. Art.
Coughlin, Edmund C.....28th Inf.
Coughlin, John.....9th Inf.
Coughlin, Thomas H.....Wagoner 24th Inf.
Cousins, Joseph H.....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.
Cowee, George L...4th Bat. L. Art.; died in service.
Cowley, John H.....1st H. Art., V. R. C.
Cowley, Richard.....3d H. Art.
Crane, Albert J.....2d Co. Sharps.
Crawford, James, Corp. 1st Cav. (Co. K, New Bat. Cav.).
Crawford, Wallace.....15th Inf.; trans. 20th Inf.
Creden, Cornelius.....9th Inf.
Critchet, Charles E.....24th Inf.
Crocker, Josiah M.....23d Inf.
Cronan, Jeremiah.....1st Sergt. 9th Inf.
Cronan, John.....1st Bat'n. H. Art.
Cronin, John.....61st Inf.
Cronin, Patrick.....17th Inf.
Cross, George.....48th Inf. militia.
Cross, George W., 1st H. Art.; died Andersonville Prison.
Crosson, James F.....2d Inf.
Crowley, Jeremiah.....22d Inf.
Crowley, Florance.....42d Inf.
Crowley, Philip.....30th Inf.; died in service.
Crowell, Freeman.....11th Inf.
Cullen, John.....11th Inf.
Cummings, Edward D.....12th Inf.
Cunningham, John.....Navy.
Cunningham, John J.....1st Bat'n. H. Art.

Cunningham, Lawrence....9th Inf.
Cunningham, Matthew, Corp. 1st. Bat'n. H. Art., 11th Inf.
Cunningham, Thomas....19th Inf.; trans. Navy.
Cunningham, William W....11th Inf.
Cunniff, Martin....Pr. Mus. 40th Inf.
Curran, John....17th Inf.
Currier, Charles W....1st H. Art.
Curtis, Alonzo....57th Inf., 59th Inf.
Curtis, Jacob....4th Bat. L. Art.
Cutler, Nathan P....1st Sergt. 1st H. Art.
Cutts, Benjamin....S. C.
Cutts, Richard A....S. C.
Cusick, Patrick....9th Inf.
Cusick, Patrick....9th Inf.

Dailey, John....9th Inf.
Dailey, Patrick....4th Bat. L. Art.
Dailey, Thomas....62d Inf.
Daley, Bartholomew....41st Inf.
Daley, Charles P....Sergt. 2d H. Art.
Daley, James....22d Inf.; killed.
Daley, James P....19th Inf.; V. R. C.
Daley, John....4th Bat. L. Art.
Daley, Jeremiah....1st Inf.
Daley, Lewis T....62d Inf.
Daley, Patrick....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.
Daley, Timothy....2d Inf.
Dalrymple, George....50th Inf. militia.
Dalrymple, George W...13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.
Dalrymple, Simon O....8th Inf. militia.
Dalrymple, William H....Corp. 50th Inf. militia.
Dalton, Charles H....Sergt. S. C
Dalton, Eleazer M., Jr....1st H. Art.; killed.
Dalton, James....2d H. Art., 22d Inf.
Dalton, Sepherino M....Sergt. 1st H. Art.
Dalton, Patrick....40th Inf., V. R. C.
Dalton, William T....S. C.
Danforth, George....Corp. 62d Inf.
Danforth, Robert K....Corp. 1st Bat'n. H. Art.
Daniels, Edward A....48th Inf. militia.
Daniels, John B...5th Inf. militia, 48th Inf. militia.
Daniels, William....Corp. 48th Inf. militia.
Daniels, William F....Sergt. 23d Inf.
Daniels, William, Jr....23d Inf.
Danigan, Thomas....40th Inf.
Darcy, James.
Darcy, Michael....Navy.
Darcy, Thomas....9th Inf.
Davenport, David....5th Inf. militia.
Davis, Andrew L....1st H. Art.
Davis, Benjamin F...26th Inf.; trans. 5th U. S. Art.
Davis, Charles W...Sergt. 23d Inf., 5th Inf. militia.
Davis, George....5th Art., U. S. C. T.
Davis, George A....Sergt. 1st H. Art.
Davis, James D., 4th Bat. L. Art.; died in service.
Davis, Jefferson R....Mus. 2d H. Art.
Davis, Samuel....Corp. 40th Inf.
Davis, Warren P....Corp. S. C.
Day, John....4th Vt. Vols.
Day, John....Navy.
Day, John M....Corp. 3d Cav.
Dean, Charles S....4th Cav.
Dearborn, Henry F....Navy.
Deboa, James....9th Inf; V. R. C.
Deland, Alfred N....Corp. 1st H. Art.
Deland, Charles....Navy.
Delmer, Henry....28th Inf.; Navy.
Dempsey, James....9th Inf.
Derby, Charles W....1st H. Art.
Derby, Perley....23d Inf.; V. R. C
Derwin (or Dervin), Michael....4th Bat. L. Art.
Desmond, Dennis....9th Inf.
Desmond, John....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Desmond, John....17th Inf.
Devine, John....17th Inf.
Devine, Michael....9th Inf.

Dickson, Augustus....4th Cav.
Dinsmore, William....9th Inf.
Dix, Charles E....Navy.
Dix, James....Navy.
Dockham, William S....48th Inf. militia.
Dodd, James....Navy.
Dodge, Charles W....5th Inf. militia.
Dodge, Charles P., Jr....S. C.
Dodge, George A....47th Inf.
Dodge, Eben P....23d Inf.
Dodge, Joseph H....6th Inf.; died in service.
Dodge, Joseph R..50th Inf. militia; died in service.
Dodge, Judson F....Navy.
Dolan, Patrick....9th Inf.
Dominick, Joseph....5th Inf. militia; 29th Inf.
Donahoe, Patrick F....7th Inf.; 2d Cav.
Donahue, Thomas, 4th Bat. L. Art.; died in service.
Donegan, Thomas....5th Bat. L. Art.
Donelly, Patrick O....9th Inf.
Donovan, John....9th Inf.
Donovan, Patrick H....Corp. 17th Inf.
Donovan, Timothy....4th H. Art.
Dougherty, Michael S....1st H. Art.
Douglass, Albert, 48th Inf. militia; Trans. 2d R. I. Cav.
Douglass, Albert....Navy.
Douglass, Albert C....8th Inf. Militia; 19th Inf.
Dow, George W....5th Inf
Dowdell, Charles....9th Inf.
Downing, Henry W., Corp. S. C.; Sergt. 2d H. Art.
Dowst, Joshua W., Sergt. 6th Inf. militia; 3d Cav.
Drahan, Nicholas....V. R. C.
Draper, William M....Hosp. Stew. U. S. A.
Dresser, Charles F....1st H. Art.; died in service.
Driscoll, John....9th Inf.
Driscoll, John O....12th Inf.
Driscoll, Timothy....9th Inf.
Driver, Samuel....19th Inf.
Driver, Stephen P....Q M. Sergt. 23d Inf.
Drown, William P....5th Inf. militia.
Dudley, Warren....23d Inf.
Duffee, John R....4th Bat. L. Art.
Duggan, Morty....48th Inf. militia.
Duggan, William....9th Inf.
Dunham, Nicholas....13th U. S. V. R. C.
Dunn, James....19th Inf.
Dunnigan, John....Navy.
Dunnegan, Thomas....5th Bat. L. Art.
Durgin, Thomas....59th Inf.; trans. 57th Inf.
Dupar, William G....Navy.
Dutra, Theodore....2d Unat. Co.
Dwight, Freeman....27th Inf.
Dwinell, David L. M....Sergt. 1st H. Art.
Dwinell, William P., 13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia; 4th Bat. L. Art.; trans. 13th Bat. L. Art.

Eagan, Richard F....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia
Easterbe, Thomas W....7th Inf. militia.
Eastley, Alfred....19th Inf.
Eaton, Alpheus....5th Inf. militia.
Eaton, Horace D....50th Inf. militia.
Eck, William....22d Inf.
Edgerly, Charles E....23d Inf.
Edgerley, Samuel A....Sergt. 24th Inf.
Edwards, George....23d Inf.
Edwards, George K....V. R. C.
Edwards, George W., Corp. 40th Inf.; died in service.
Edwards, John L., 5th Inf. militia; 4th Bat. L. Art.; detailed as sailor, 1861.
Edwards, Joseph....2d N. Y.
Edwards, Richard L....24th Inf.
Edwards, William....19th Inf.
Edwards, William P....Corp. 19th Inf.
Emmerson, Charles H....2d Inf.; killed.

English, James W....6th Inf. militia.
Entwistle, Thomas....23d Inf.
Enwright, James....19th Inf.
Estes, George H....1st H. Art.; killed.
Estes, John F., Mus. 13th Unat. Co.; Corp. 1st Bat'n F. Cav.
Estes, William P. R....19th Inf.
Evans, Daniel....11th Inf.
Evans, George (E)....6th Inf. militia; Navy.
Evans, James G....20th Inf.
Evans, William....50th Inf. militia; 3d H. Art.

Fabens, William P....3d H. Art.; died in service.
Fairfield, John H....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Fairfield, Samuel G....1st H. Art.
Fairfield, William....1st H. Art.
Fairfield, William....3d H. Art.; V. R. C.
Fairfield, William....22d Inf.
Fairley, Alexander....19th Inf.
Farley, Charles (M)....1st H. Art.
Farley, George E....48th Inf. militia.
Farley, James H....23d Inf.
Farmer, Joseph P....1st H. Art.
Fallon, Patrick....17th Inf.
Farnham, George A....4th Cav.
Farnum, Henry A....32d Inf.
Farrell, Edward....4th H. Art.
Farrell, John....9th Inf.
Farrell, John....3d H. Art.; trans. Navy.
Farrell, Robert....9th Inf.; killed.
Farrell, Owen....22d Inf.
Farrell, William....5th Inf. militia.
Faunce, Moses D....Artificer 4th Bat. L. Art.
Feldgen, Hiram S....Sergt. 17th Inf.
Felt, David H....17th Inf.
Fennell, John....62d Inf.
Ferguson, George P....1st H. Art.
Ferguson, Samuel A., 5th Inf. militia; 1st H. Art.
Ferrick, James....62d Inf.
Ferris, Edward....22d Inf.
Fessenden, George....2d Cav.
Field, Charles....V. R. C.
Field, Joseph (John) W....8th Inf. militia.
Fields, Robert M....17th Inf.
Fillebrown, Charles F....1st H. Art.
Finley, Edward...30th Inf. militia; died in service.
Finngan, Thomas....Navy.
Firth, John A....2d H. Art.
Fischer, William L. (F)....23d Inf.
Fish, Charles W....23d Inf.; died in service.
Fisher, Francis A....Corp. 3d H. Art.
Fiske, Peter....19th Inf.
Fitch, John....19th Inf.
Fitzgerald, Conrad....2d Inf.
Fitzgerald, George....Navy.
Fitzgerald, Michael....3d H. Art.
Fitzgerald, Terrance....3d Cav.
Fitzgerald, Timothy.
Fitzgerald, William....Navy.
Fitzgerald, John....9th Inf.; trans. 32d Inf.
Flaherty, Thomas....9th Inf.
Flakefield, Charles....2d H. Art.; died of wounds.
Flakefield, John, jr....38th Inf. militia.
Flannigan, Nicholas....Navy.
Flannigan, Thomas....Navy.
Fleet, George....1st H. Art.; killed.
Flemming, Hugh....Navy.
Flemming, Michael....Navy.
Fletcher, Francis H....Sergt. 54th Inf. (colored)
Flood, John....6th Inf. militia; 48th Inf. militia.
Flowers, William H., jr....1st H. Art.
Flynn, Thomas....23d Inf.
Fogg, James W....Navy.
Foley, James....3d Cav., 62d Inf.
Folsom, Nathaniel F....1st H. Art.
Foote, George F....48th Inf. militia

Foote, John C.....1st H. Art. (Band).
Foote, Moses F....4th Bat. L. Art. ; died in service.
Forbes, Charles.....11th Inf.
Ford, Charles T.....24th Inf.
Ford, Jeremiah L.....48th Inf. militia.
Ford, Samuel A.....Navy.
Ford, Stephen.
Forness, William F. (L).....23d Inf.
Foss, John G.....50th Inf. militia ; 3d H. Art.
Foss, John L.....23d Inf.
Foster, Isaac P., jr.....Sergt. S. C.
Foster, John M.....Hosp. Stew. 5th Inf. militia.
Foster, Charles W.....1st H. Art.
Foster, Patrick.....1st H. Art. ; died in service.
Foster, William J.....S. C.
Fountain, James W.....55th Inf. (colored)
Fountain, William.....54th Inf., trans. 55th Inf. (colored).
Fowler, Newton G.....7th Inf. militia.
Fowler, Edward.....Navy.
Fowler, Samuel M., Corp. 1st H. Art. ; died Andersonville Prison.
Fowler, William T., 8th Inf. militia ; Sergt. 23d Inf. ; killed.
Fowler, William W.....Navy.
Fox, Lawrence.....17th Inf.
Foye, Edward.....Navy.
Francis, Joseph, 48th Inf. militia; 59th Inf. ; killed.
Francis, Moses F.....Navy.
Franklin, George.....28th Inf.
French, Harry B.....56th Inf.
French, John.....62d Inf.
Freeze, Noah L.....19th Inf. ; 47th Inf. militia.
Friend, Joel M.....50th Inf. militia.
Friend, Alfred.....Corp. 24th Inf. ; died of wounds.
Friend, Frederick.....Navy.
Friman, Karl.....22d Inf.
Frothingham, Gustavus, 1st H. Art.; died in service.
Frothingham, John F., 1st H. Art. ; died of wounds.
Frye, Alfred, 1st H. Art. ; died Andersonville Prison.
Frye, Daniel M.....12th Inf., V. R. C.
Furbush, Edward W.....20th Inf.
Furtony, Michael.....Navy.
Full, William L.....1st. H. Art.
Fuller, Charles G.....U. S. Signal Corps.
Fullum, John.....17th Inf. militia.

Gaffney, Christopher.
Gage, Andrew J.....2d Co. Sharps.
Galarcar, Charles. *See* Calaracan, Charles.
Galivan, Michael.....13th Unat. Co. Inf.
Gallagher, Joseph.....Navy.
Gallagher, Thomas.....17th Inf.
Gallagher, William G.....1st Bat'n F. Cav.
Gallnear, Charles.....2d Co. Sharps. ; killed.
Gallucia, Hezekiah A.....3d H. Art.
Galloway, F. N.....Navy.
Galloway, John H.....29th Inf.
Gammon, James.....1st H. Art.
Ganley, John H.....9th Inf.; killed
Gannon, John.....4th H. Art.
Gannop, John.....9th Inf.
Gardner, Abel.....5th Inf. militia ; 2d Co. Sharps.
Gardner, Albert G.....Pr. Mus. 23d Inf.
Gardner, Benjamin B.....2d Inf.
Gardner, Charles H.....40th Inf.
Gardner, Benjamin F.....29th Inf.
Gardner, Charles W., 5th Inf. militia ; S. C. ; Navy.
Gardner, Charles W.....50th Inf. militia.
Gardner, Edward L.....47th Inf. militia.
Gardner, George A.....Navy.
Gardner, Horace B.....1st H. Art.
Gardner, Howard P.....1st H. Art.
Gardner, John.....Mus. 7th Inf. militia.

Gardner, James W.....2d Co. Sharps., 22d Inf.
Gardner, Benjamin S.
Gardner, Joseph D.....S. C.
Gardner, Robert.....2d Inf.
Gardner, William.....3d U. S. Art.
Gardner, William D.....S. C.
Gardner, William H.....5th Inf. militia.
Gardner, William H.....48th Inf. militia.
Garney, John W.....23d Inf.
Garrity, John.....30th Inf.
Garrity, Patrick, 4th Bat. L. Art., trans. 13th Bat.
Gass, William H.....Navy.
Gebow, James.....Navy.
Geigle, Edward.....Sergt. 9th Inf.
Getchell, Charles E.....Corp. S. C.
Getchell, Charles L.....23d Inf. ; died in service.
Getchell, Edward E.....23d Inf.
Getchell, George F.....1st H. Art.
Getchell, James A.....1st H. Art.
Getchell, Stephen O.....1st H. Art.
Gibbions, Lyman O.....62d Inf.
Gibbs, William, 54th Inf., trans. 55th Inf. (colored); killed.
Gibson, John F.....3d H. Art.
Gifford, Charles P....1st Co. Sharps.; died in service.
Gifford, Frank, 7th Inf. militia ; 4th Cav.; died in service.
Giles, Charles H.....5th Inf. militia.
Giles, Israel.....19th Inf.
Gillespie, James S.....1st H. Art.
Gillespie, Joseph A.....23d Inf.
Gilley, George S.....2d H. Art., trans. Navy.
Gillon, Hugh.....11th Inf.; died in service.
Gilman, Charles B.....14th Bat. L. Art.
Gilman, John T.....5th Inf. militia.
Gilman, Joseph.....4th Bat. L. Art., trans. V. R. C.
Gilman, Simon F.....14th Bat. L. Art.
Glazier, James E. (B).....23d Inf.
Glazier, George W.....S. C.
Glass, George.....Navy.
Gleason, John.....29th Unat. Co., H. Art.
Glidden, Joseph H.....5th Inf. militia.
Glover, James, Jr.....See Grover.
Glover, Joseph N.....48th Inf. militia.
Glover, Henry B.....11th Inf.; killed.
Glover, William H.....48th Inf. militia.
Glover, George D.....Sergt. S. C.
Goldsmith, William H.....4th N. H. Vols.
Goldthwaite Benjamin F.....23d Inf.
Goldthwaite, Charles A.....9th Bat. L. Art.
Goldthwaite, George C.....S. C.
Goldthwaite, Luther M.....1st H. Art.
Goldthwaite, Warren P.....1st Bat'n F. Cav.
Goodhue, Amos D.....32d Inf., trans. V. R. C.
Goodhue, Hiram B.....S. C.
Goodhue, John E.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Goodrich, William.....6th Inf. militia.
Goodsell, Henry.....19th Inf.
Goodwin, George.....19th Inf.
Goodwin, Thomas.....29th Unat. Co. H. Art.
Gordon, George E.....1st Inf.
Gorman, James.....1st H. Art.
Gorman, John.....57th Inf., trans. from 59th Inf.
Gorman, Michael.....Navy.
Gorman, Thomas.....1st H. Art.
Gorman, Thomas.....9th Inf., trans. V. R. C.
Gorten, Samuel.....Sergt. 62d Inf.
Goss, Charles H.....8th Wis.
Goss, George L.....6th Inf. militia, 23d Wis.
Goss, Samuel (I.) T.....1st H. Art.
Gould, James.....1st N. Y. Excelsior Brigade.
Gove, Charles F.....29th Inf.
Gould, Gilman J.....2d N. H. Vols.
Grady, Dennis.....Navy.
Graham, William, 9th Inf.; reported killed as Gorham.
Graham, William.....4th Cav.

Grant, Benjamin H.....S. C.
Grant, Edward H.....23d Inf.
Graser, Charles.....Navy.
Gray, George A.....48th Inf. militia.
Gray, George A.....4th H. Art.
Gray, Everhardt.....3d H. Art.
Gray, John.....3d H. Art.
Gray, John (H.).....23d Inf.
Gray, Joseph.....1st Co. Sharps.
Gray, Robert.....2d N. Y. H. Art.
Gray, William.....19th Inf.
Greeley, Thomas J.....Corp. 24th Inf.
Green, George P.....Navy.
Green, George W.....4th H. Art.
Green, Joseph H.....1st H. Art.; died in service.
Green, John.....Navy.
Green, Thomas, 13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia ; Corp. 9th Inf.
Green, William R.....2d Inf.
Greenough, Daniel S., 2d Inf.; died of wounds, 1864.
Greenough, John W., Jr., Corp. 23d Inf.; died of wounds.
Grieve, Thomas.....V. R. C.
Griffin, Benjamin.....55th Inf. (colored).
Griffin, Eben, Jr.....S. C.
Griffin, Henry, 13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia ; 61st Inf.
Griffin, John.....29th Unat. Co. H. Art.
Griffin, Thomas.....5th Bat. L. Art.
Griffin, Thomas J.....48th Inf. militia.
Griffin, William.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Grimes, Charles H., 1st H. Art. ; 29th Unat. Co. H. Art.
Grimes, Israel W.....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.
Grimes, Oliver.....1st H. Art.
Grimes, Robert.....29th Unat. Co. H. Art.
Grimes, Warren S.....9th Inf.
Grimes, William H.....23d Inf.
Grinson, Thomas L...12th Inf.; missing, supposed killed.
Grosvenor, Edward P.....23d Inf.
Grover, James, Jr.....5th Inf.; militia.
Grover, John, Jr.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Grocer, John C.....4th Cav. ; Navy.
Grush, Benjamin S.....Sergt. 40th Inf.
Guilford, Elbridge H., Corp. 5th Inf. militia ; detailed as sailor.
Guilford, Samuel W.....Sergt. 40th Inf.; killed.
Gwinn, Charles H., Sergt. 6th Inf. militia ; 7th Inf. militia.
Gwinn, Edward A., Corp. 40th Inf. ; died of wounds.
Hackett, Harrison.....5th Inf. militia, 3d H. Art.
Hackett, Michael.....28th Inf.
Hadley, Horace L.....5th Inf. militia.
Hale, Joseph S.....48th Inf. militia.
Haley, James.....62d Inf.
Hall, Edwin A.....8th Inf. militia, Sergt. 23d Inf.
Hall, James A.....6th Inf. militia, 62d Inf.
Hall, Thomas.....22d Inf.
Hall, William H., 5th Inf. militia, 48th Inf. militia.
Ham, Edwin.....2d Inf.
Hammond, William G., Corp. 13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia. 50th Inf. militia.
Hancock, John E.....1st H. Art.
Hanshaw, John.....Navy.
Hanson, George.....48th Inf. militia.
Hanson, John.....9th Inf., trans. Navy.
Hanson, George W.....35th Inf.
Hanson, Parker W.....7th Inf. militia, 3d H. Art.
Hardman, James.....20th Inf.
Harmon, M. D.....Navy.
Harrington, Daniel.....59th Inf. ; died of wounds
Harrington, F. H. W.....Navy
Harrington, Leonard.....50th Inf. militia.
Harrington, Michael.....19th Inf., V. R. C.

Harrington, Philip F.....4th H. Art.
Harrington, William H.....5th Inf. militia
Harris, Alphonzo.....50th Inf. militia.
Harris, John, Jr.....Saddler, 1st Bat'n F. Cav.
Harris, John P.....1st H. Art.
Harris, William S. .....50th Inf. militia.
Harrison, George .....19th Inf.
Hart, John.....17th Inf.
Hart, John W.....5th Inf. militia.
Hart, Joseph L.....4th Bat. L. Art ; died in service.
Hart, Timothy.....20th Inf.
Hartman, Charles.....16th Inf.
Hartwell, Joseph W..... .....7th Inf. militia.
Hartwell, William H .....23d Inf.
Haskell, Benjamin F..... 19th Inf.
Haskell, Charles....Corp. 12th Inf. ; died in service.
Haskell, Charles F.....7th Inf. militia.
Haskell, Elijah.....Navy.
Haskell, Edward B.....S. C.
Haskell, William H.....1st H. Art.
Hassett, Martin .....30th Inf. ; died in service.
Hatch, Henry J.....
Hatch, Thomas C..13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia ; 1st Bat'n F. Cav.
Hathaway, Stephen F.....1st H. Art.
Hauseman, William.....19th Inf.
Hawes, James.....Navy
Hawthorne, William H.....Master's Mate, Navy.
Hay, John.....
Hayden, Thomas.....Navy
Hayes, Benjamin..... .....Corp. 9th Inf.
Hayes, James.....2d H. Art. ; trans. Navy.
Hayes, John..... .....57th Inf.
Hayes, John I.....19th Inf.
Hayes, Maurice.....30th Inf. ; died in service.
Hayes, Thomas.....Navy
Hayford, William B....1st H. Art., 4th Bat. L. Art.
Hayward, Charles E.....1st H. Art.
Hazard, John .....Navy
Hazeton, Augustus.....48th Inf. militia.
Hazelton, David Jr.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Hazelton, Andrew..... .....48th Inf. militia.
Healy, Dennis.....9th Inf.
Heaney, Richard.....9th Inf.
Heeney, Thomas.....2d Cav.
Heeney, William A .....1st H. Art.
Helpin, James...55th Inf. (colored) ; died in service.
Helt, Benjamin G.....1st H. Art.
Hemmenway, Frederick.....Navy.
Henderson, Charles H .....Corp. 1st H. Art.
Henderson, Ephraim I.....1st Sergt. 1st H. Art.
Henfield, James H., 29th Unat. Co. H. Art., 1st Sergt. 1st Bat'n H. Art.
Henfield, Joseph H. .....S. C.
Hennessy, Arthur..... .....Navy.
Hennessy, David.....2d Inf.
Hennessey, James P.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Hennessy, John .....Corp. 9th Inf.
Henry, Michael.....1st Cav.
Henville, William W.....1st Cav.
Herrick, Benjamin, jr.....1st H. Art.
Herrick, Benjamin F.....2d Unat. Co Inf. militia.
Hersey, William H .....1st H. Art.
Hewitt, Edwin W.....23d Inf.
Heywood, George.....23d Inf.
Hicks, Samuel.....Navy
Hibbard, Curtis A .....5th Inf. militia.
Higbee, Stephen D.....S. C.
Higgins, Thomas .....62d Inf.
Higginbotham, John .....Navy
Higginbotham, Joseph .....23d Inf.
Higley, Gilman S.....23d Inf.
Hifield, Thomas.....Navy
Hill, Charles H.....3d H. Art.
Hill, Horace L.....1st Inf.
Hill, James..... .....5th Inf. militia
Hill, Thomas.....Navy
Hill, Thomas G.....Navy
Hilton, Charles H.....62d Inf.
Hilton, Edward W.....1st Cav.
Hinckley, George O., 23d Inf ; died Andersonville Prison.
Hinds, Richard.....48th Inf. militia.
Hines, Thomas F .....Corp. 48th Inf. militia.
Hines, Thomas T.....6th Inf. militia
Hitchings, Abijah F., 8th Inf. militia ; Sergt. 19th Inf.
Hoar, Thomas.....V. R. C.
Hobbs, George.....Artificer 1st H. Art.
Hobbs, Nathan F.....Navy
Hodgdon, George R.....Corp. 23d Inf.
Hogan, James.....56th Inf. ; died of wounds
Holden, John.....11th Inf.
Holmes, George H.....1st H. Art.
Holmes, Francis W.....Navy
Holland, Thomas.....Navy
Homer, George H..... .....19th Inf.
Hood, Osborn..... .....Navy
Hopkins, John.....1st H. Art.
Horton, George..... .....1st H. Art.
Horrigan, Jeremiah.....19th Inf.
Howard, Austin..... .....Navy
Howard, Daniel L.....4th H. Art.
Howard, David A., 6th Inf. militia ; 27th Unat. Co. Inf.
Howard, Eben M.....1st H. Art.
Howard, Frank C.....8th Inf. militia
Howard, Fletcher.....22d Inf. ; trans. 32d Inf.
Howard, John H.....5th Inf. militia
Howard, Nathaniel K.....6th Inf. militia
Hovey, William.....48th Inf. militia
Howe, James.....Navy
Howes, Christopher H..... .....60th Inf. militia
Hoyt, Charles C.....Sergt. 48th Inf. militia
Hoyt, George N..... 61st Inf.
Hoyt, John A.....6th Inf. militia; 4th Bat. L. Art.
Hoxflin, Frederick.....22d Inf.
Huddle, Benjamin.....17th Inf.
Hughes, Edward.....9th Inf. ; trans. V. R. C.
Hughes, James.....Navy
Hunter, John.....Navy
Huntress, Charles W.....4th H. Art.
Huntress, John E..... .....4th Bat. L. Art.
Hurd, George S .....Navy
Hurd, William H.....5th Inf. militia
Hurley, James..... .....Navy
Hurley, John.....Navy
Hurley, John F.....Q. M. Sergt. 4th Bat. L. Art.
Hurley, William ..... 2d Cav.; killed
Hurly, William.....9th Inf. ; died in service
Hurrell, John .....9th Inf.; killed
Hurty, James.....Navy
Huse, Edward.....9th Inf.
Huse, Stephen S.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Husmann, Johannas.....22d Inf. ; Navy
Hutchinson, George C. 2d Co. Sharps; trans. V. R. C.
Hutchinson, Goodwin.....Navy
Hutchinson, John L., Artificer, 29th Unat. Co. H. Art.; 1st H. Art.
Hutchinson, William..... .....2d H. Art.
Hutchinson, William.....23d Inf.
Hytyes, George..... .....22d Inf; Navy

Ingalls, John.....11th Inf.; died in service.
Ingalls, John D.....48th Inf. militia.
Ives, George A.....44th Inf.
Ivers, William.....1st Cav.
Ivory, John.....62d Inf.

Jackson, Andrew.....48th Inf. militia.
Jackson, James W. C.....Navy.
James, John....54th Inf.; trans. 55th Inf. (colored).
James, John.....Navy.
Janes, Edwin.....17th Inf.
Janes, John.....50th Inf. militia.
Janes, William H.....V. R. C.
Jaques, John.....Navy.
Jaques, Joseph.....48th Inf. militia ; Navy.
Jarvis, William H.....19th Inf.
Jeffs, James M.....1st H. Art.
Jeffreys, William F.....48th Inf. militia.
Jennis, James D.....32d Inf.
Jennis, Thomas J.....32d Inf.; trans. V. R. C.
Jewell, Charles C...7th Inf. militia ; Sergt. 2d Cav.
Jewell, David N.....Navy.
Jewell, Franklin..... .....2d Inf.; killed.
Jewett, Charles S...wagoner 40th Inf.; trans. V. R. C.
Jewett, Lewis T.....1st H. Art.
Jewett, John W.....V. R. C.
Jewett, Thomas E.....Sergt. 48th Inf. militia.
Johnson, Alfred.....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.
Johnson, Charles.....17th Inf.
Johnson, Frederick A.....Corp. 12th Inf.; V. R. C.
Johnson, Frank E.....5th Inf. militia.
Johnson, George.....1st Inf.; trans. 11th Inf.
Johnson, Henry.....Sergt. 4th Bat. L. Art.
Johnson, John H.....1st H. Art.
Johnson, John O.....2d Cav.
Johnson, Louis.....28th Inf.
Johnson, Lewis ....Navy.
Johnson, Peter..... .....Navy.
Johnson, Samuel.....Navy.
Johnson, Samuel F.....Navy.
Johnson, William B. F.....1st H. Art.
Jones, Alexander.....17th Inf
Jones, John..... .....Navy.
Jones, John J.....Navy.
Jones, Stephen F.....1st Sergt. 17th Inf.
Jones, Thomas T.....Navy.
Jones, William H.....19th Inf.
Jordan, John.....19th Inf.
Jordan, William..... .....9th Inf.
Joyce, John..... .....19th Inf.
Joye, Robert H..... .....2d Inf.
Junkee, Augustus L.....2d Inf.

Kain, John.....22d Inf.; trans. 32d Inf.
Kane, Dennis F.....Navy.
Kavanaugh, James.....Navy.
Kayler, Patrick.....11th Inf.
Kearney, Peter.....16th Inf.
Keating, John L.....3d Cav.; trans. Navy.
Keating, Michael..... .....9th Inf.
Keating, Patrick.....9th Inf.; killed.
Keenan, Michael.....9th Inf.; killed.
Keene, Charles.....4th Cav.
Kehew, Francis A..5th Inf. militia ; Sergt. 24th Inf.
Kehew, George.....5th Inf. militia ; 24th Inf.
Kehew, John H.....5th Inf. militia ; 24th Inf.
Kehew, Samuel B..... .....1st H. Art.
Kell, William.....9th Bat. L. Art.
Kelliher, James. .....Com. Sergt. 1st Cav.
Kelleher, John.....9th Inf.
Kelliher, Jeremiah.....Navy.
Kelliher, Mortmon..... .....Navy.
Kelly, Charles.....Navy.
Kelley, Charles D.....9th Inf.
Kelly, Edward..Com. Sergt. 1st Cav.; 8th Inf. militia.
Kelly, James.....28th Inf.
Kelly, James.....9th Inf.
Kelley, James..... .....Navy.
Kelley, John.....9th Inf.
Kelley, John.. .....9th Inf.
Kelley, John..... .....9th Inf.
Kelley, John ....30th Inf.
Kelly, Luke .....Navy.
Kelley, Michael.....9th Inf.
Kelley, Michael..... ..... 2d Cav.
Kelly, Patrick.....Navy.
Kelley, Simon P.....9th Inf.
Kellogg,.Fred B.....1st H. Art.
Kendalll, William H.....50th Inf. militia.

Kennedy, Martin.....9th Inf.
Kennedy, Martin.....Navy.
Kennedy, Michael...48th Inf. militia; trans. 2d R. I. Cav.
Kennedy, Michael.....Navy.
Kennelly, David.....9th Inf.
Kenney, Benjamin M.....23d Inf.; trans. V. R. C.
Kenney, Thomas F.....Navy.
Kennison, Orrin W.....23d Inf.
Kershaw, Samuel.....20th Inf.
Ketcham, Francis H.....
Kezar, Albert.....4th Bat. L. Art.; died in service.
Kezar, Albert.....3d Cav.
Kezar, Alonzo.....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.
Kezar, Alonzo C.....11th Inf.; 17th Inf.
Kezar, Charles H.....S. C.
Kezar, George L.....2d H. Art.
Kezar, George W.....Sergt. 62d Inf.
Kezar, Walter A.....Sergt. 29th Inf.
Kiernan, Eugene.....4th H. Art.
Kilbride, Daniel.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Kilham, Alexander S.....40th Inf.
Kilham, William G.....S. C.
Kimball, Charles A.....S. C.; 3d H. Art.
Kimball, George S.....S. C.
Kimball, Horace W.....Navy.
Kimball, James, jr.....11th Inf.
Kimball, Joseph A.....40th Inf.
Kimball, Palmer.....2d Inf.
Kimball, William L.....5th Inf. militia; 1st Cav.; Sergt. 3d H. Art.; trans. Navy.
King, George.....Navy.
King, John.....2d Inf.
King, John.....11th Inf.; trans. V. R. C.
King, Obey.....Navy.
King, Peter.....2d H. Art.
Kingsley, George W.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Kingsley, John.....3d H. Art.
Kingsley, William P.....1st H. Art.
Kinsley, James H.....19th Inf.
Kinsman, Joseph N.....23d Inf.; died in service.
Kirkland, James M.....Corp. 1st Bat'n H. Art.
Kirwin, Charles.....Navy.
Kittredge, Henry.....30th Inf.; died in service.
Kittredge, Henry A..Corp. 30th Inf.; died in service.
Kleever, Ferdinand.....Navy.
Knapp, Samuel W.....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.
Knight, Charles.....Navy.
Knight, Jeremiah.....3d H. Art., 2d Inf.
Knight, Solomon.....Navy.
Knowles, David L.....Navy.
Knowlton, George..50th Inf. militia; died in service.
Knowlton, George W.....2d Co. Sharps.
Knowlton, Marcus A.....Navy.
Knowlton, Samuel.....23d Inf.
Knowland, John B.....2d H. Art.
Kohane, Michael.....2d H. Art.
Kyle, Robert.....Corp. 40th Inf.; killed.

Lablair, Louis.....11th Inf.
Lacey, James.....Navy.
Lacy, Thomas.....Navy.
Lackey, Frank.....11th Inf.
Ladd, Daniel W.....Q. M. Sergt. 1st Cav.
Laduc, Joseph.....Navy.
Lahey, Jeremiah.....40th Inf.
Lakeman, Horace.....19th Inf.
Lakeman, Nathan...Q. M. Sergt. 1st H. Art.; Super.
Lamb, Hiram O.....6th Inf. militia; S. C.
Lamson, George A.....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia; 50th Inf. militia.
Lancy, Patrick.....Navy.
Lander, Benjamin W.....Q. M. S.
Lander, William T.....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.
Landers, David.....2d H. Art.
Landgren, George O.....Navy.
Landgren, John H.....Navy.
Landy, Michael, jr.....
Lane, Charles H.....Navy.
Lane, William H.....1st Inf.
Lang, Joseph.....2d Cav.
Langdell, George W.....50th Inf. militia.
Langmaid, George W.....2d Inf.
Larrabee, Joseph N.....Corp. 48th Inf. militia.
Larrabee Samuel W.....1st Sergt. 48th Inf. militia.
Larrabee, Warren.....48th Inf. militia.
Larrabee, William W.....2d Inf.; killed.
Lawrence, John.....Navy.
Lawton, George F.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Leach, Daniel E.....Corp. S. C.
Leach, Harris.....5th Inf. militia.
Leach, Lebbeus, Jr.....Sergt. 13th Unat Co. Inf. militia.
Leach, Robert.....Navy.
Leahy, David.....1st H. Art.
Learey, Henry.....Navy.
Leary, Dennis...2d H. Art.; 17th Inf.; died Andersonville Prison.
Leary, Timothy.....9th Inf.
Leary, Timothy.....19th Inf.
Leavitt, Israel P...Corp. 17th Inf.; 5th Inf. militia.
Lechood, John.....Navy.
Lee, Francis H.....23d Inf.
Lee, John W..1st H. Art.; 3d H. Art.; trans. Navy.
Lee, Joseph, Jr.....50th Inf. militia.
Lee, Robert G.....59th Inf.
Lee, William H.....Navy.
Lee, William R.....59th Inf.; trans. 57th Inf.
Lee, William S.....57th Inf.
Lee, York M.....Navy.
Le Grand, Charles E..Bugler 1st Bat'n F. Cav.; 13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.
Lehan, William.....22d Inf.; trans. 32d Inf.
Leighton, William.....2d Cav.; died in service.
Lenakin, William.....Navy.
Lendholm, Charles F.....99th N. Y. Inf.
Leonard, John H.....Sergt. 17th Inf.
Llewellyn, Patrick.....
Llewellyn, Thomas J.....9th Inf.
Lewis, Chancy H.....Corp. 1st H. Art.
Lewis, Charles W.....Mus. 3d H. Art.
Lewis, Daniel S.....19th Inf.
Lewis, Eneas I.....Navy.
Lewis, George B.....2d Co. Sharps.
Lewis, Henry.....1st H. Art.
Lewis, Henry.....Navy.
Lewis, John.....Navy.
Lewis, Roland F.....Corp. 17th Inf.
Lewis, Thomas W.....3d H. Art.
Libby, Henry...5th Inf. militia; Sergt. 7th Inf. militia.
Libby, John F.....7th Inf. militia.
Libby, Melvin J.....Navy.
Lightfoot, Joseph.....25th Inf.; died of wounds.
Liles, Jack.....Navy.
Linehan, Connelius J...13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.
Linehan, Dennis.....Corp. 1st Cav. 5th Inf. militia.
Linehan, John.....Sergt. 2d H. Art.
Linehan, John.....53d Inf.
Linehan, Thomas E.....23d Inf.
Little, Thomas.....Navy.
Littlefield, Daniel.....11th Inf.
Littlefield, Elmer.....S. C.
Littlefield, Moses H.....Corp. 4th Bat L. Art.
Littlefield, Joseph A.....Navy.
Lobdell, Richard T.....Navy.
Locke, Cyrus...7th Inf. militia; Corp. 7th Bat. L. Art.
Logan, Jeremiah.....Corp. 1st H. Art.
Long, Andrew.....Navy.
Long, George.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Long, Henry.....Navy.
Long, Robert J.....12th Inf.; trans. Navy.
Looby, Thomas.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Loratta, Anthony.....Navy.
Lord, Charles L.....6th Inf. militia; S. C.
Lord, Francis.....S. C.
Lord, George C.....6th Inf. militia.
Lord, Henry C.....13th Inf.
Lord, Thomas H.....2d Cav.
Lorigan, John.....Sergt. 9th Inf.
Lorrigan, Michael.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Loring, John.....17th U. S. Inf.
Loud, David, Jr.....S. C.
Loud, Elbridge.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Loud, George B.....3d Cav.
Loud, Joseph G.....S. C.
Low, Cornelius B.....1st H. Art.; trans. V. R. C.
Low, George H.....5th Inf. Militia.
Low, James W.....5th Inf. Militia.
Lowd, Albert J.....Sergt. 5th Inf. Militia.
Lowd, Jacob R.....50th Inf. Militia; Corp 4th Cav.
Lowd, William H.....Navy.
Lowry Michael.....Navy.
Lucey, Daniel.....Navy.
Lucy, Michael P.....17th Inf.
Lundgren, James F.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Lundy, Michael.....61st Inf.
Lunt, William J.....5th Inf. militia.
Luscomb, Charles P.....5th Inf. militia; Navy.
Luscomb, George W...Sergt. 59th Inf.; trans. 57th Inf.; 50th Inf. militia; 8th Inf. militia.
Luscomb, Henry R.....Navy.
Luscomb, William H.....Corp. 24th Inf.
Luscomb, William F.....1st H. Art.
Luscomb, William L.....1st H. Art.
Lusk, Joseph H.....1st H. Art.
Lynch, Charles.....Navy.
Lynch, Francis E.....Navy.
Lynch, James.....Navy.
Lynch, James.....9th Inf.
Lynch, John.....Navy.
Lynch, Patrick.....48th Inf. militia.
Lynch, Patrick...4th Bat. L. Art.; trans. 13th Bat. L. Art.
Lynch, Patrick.....9th Inf.
Lynch, Jeremiah.....22d Inf.; died in Rebel Prison.
Lynch, William.....9th Inf.
Lyons, Charles H.....3d H. Art.
Lyons, James.....48th Inf. militia.
Lyons, Patrick.....4th H. Art.
Lynn, Matthew.....Sergt. 9th Inf.
Lyon, James W.....1st R. I. Inf.

McAdams, Patrick.....62d Inf.
McCabe, Patrick...48th Inf. militia; 59th Inf.; died in service.
McCabe, William H.....1st Cav.; killed.
McCafferty, Neal.....20th Inf.
McCann, Hugh.....17th Inf.
McCarthy, Daniel.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
McCarthy, Daniel.....9th Inf.
McCarthy, Dennis W.....9th Inf.
McCarthy, John.....Corp. 1st Bat'n H. Art.
McCarthy, John...4th Bat. L. Art.; died in service.
McCarthy, Michael.....Sergt. 1st Bat'n H. Art.
McCarthy, Patrick.....9th Inf.
McCarthy, Patrick.....9th Inf.
McCarty, John.....9th Inf.
McCarty, John.....Navy.
McClellan, George H.....2d H. Art.; trans. 17th Inf.
McCloud, Alfred.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
McCloy, John B.....23d Inf.
McCloy, Robert.....Corp. S. C.
McCommic, John.....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.
McCormick, Charles.....Navy.
McCormick, Thomas.....23d Inf.
McCormick, Thomas.....28th Inf.
McDonald, Eneas.....17th Inf.
McDonald, Philip.....4th H. Art.
McDonnell, David.....59th Inf.; died in service.

McDonnell, John.....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.
McDonnell, Philip.....12th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.
McDonnell, Philip.....2d Inf.
McDonough, Enos.....17th Inf.
McDuffie, Augustus P.....23d Inf.
McDuffie, Dana H.....Navy.
McDuffie, George.....Navy.
McDuffie, Hugh.....Sergt. 5th Inf. militia ; 1st Cav.
McDugal, John.....48th Inf. militia.
McFadden, Albert.....32d Inf.
McFarland, Charles.....5th Inf. militia.
McFarland, Charles...Sergt. 12th Inf. ; trans. 20th Inf.
McFarland, James.....9th Inf.
McFarland, Peter.....40th Inf. ; died in service.
McGordis, Charles.....1st H. Art. ; died of wounds.
McGrath, John.....9th Inf.
McGuire, Charles.....2d Cav.
McGuire, Patrick.....9th Inf. ; killed.
McGuire, Thomas.....9th Inf.
McGuire, Thomas.....22d Inf. ; trans. 5th U. S. Art.
McGurty, Patrick.....9th Inf.
McHugh, Patrick H.....9th Inf.
McIntire, Charles.....17th Inf. ; 19th Inf.
McIntire, George.....24th Inf. ; died of wounds.
McKennan, Francis.....19th Inf.
McKenny, Robert.....20th Inf.
McKenzie, John W.....2d Co. Sharps. ; killed.
McKinley, Barney.....Navy.
McKliget, James.....9th Inf
McKormick, John.....9th Inf.
McKown, John B...1st H. Art. ; died a prisoner at Milan, Ga.
McLaughlin, Andrew.....Navy.
McLaughlin, James.....
McLaughlin, Michael.....24th Inf.
McLord, Alfred.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
McMahon, James.....9th Inf. ; killed.
McMahon, John.....16th Inf. ; killed.
McMahon, Philip...7th Inf. militia ; 1st Bat'n H. Art.
McMurphy, Benjamin F.....7th Inf. militia.
McMurphy, James F.....4th H. Art.
McNamara, Michael.....20th Inf. ; died in service.
McNamara, Peter.....9th Inf. ; killed.
McNeal, Daniel F.....19th Inf.
McNeil, Michael..7th Inf. Militia ; 1st Bat'n H. Art.
McNulty, James (1st).....3d Cav.
McShane, James.....22d Inf.
McShea, John.....17th Inf.
McShea, Thomas.....3d H. Art.
McSweegan, James.....62d Inf.
McSweeney, Morgan.....9th Inf.
McVey, Charles.....Navy.

Mack, William.....2d H. Art.
Mackie, John A.....50th Inf. militia.
Madden, Stephen.....62d Inf.
Maddicutt, John.....Navy.
Maddin, John, 4th Bat. L. Art. ; trans. 13th Bat. L. Art.
Magoun, Samuel B.....11th Inf.
Magrath, David, Corp. ; 28th Inf. ; trans. V. R C
Magner, John.....4th Bat. L. Art. ; died in service.
Mahoney, Dennis, 9th Inf. ; trans. Navy as Daniel D. Mahoney.
Mahoney, James, jr.....Navy.
Mahoney, John C.....24th Inf.
Mahoney, Timothy.....4th H. Art.
Mallen, Henry.....3d Cav.
Maloney, Edward.....19th Inf.
Maloon, William H.....S. C.
Malowe, John.....Navy
Manning, Albert E.....23d Inf.
Manning, Daniel A., artificer ; 4th Bat. L. Art. ; died in service.
Manning, Horace.....1st H. Art ; died in service.
Manning, Peter.....11th Inf.
Manning, Philip A., 6th Inf. militia ; 1st Bat'n F. Cav.
Manning, Richard H.....3d H. Art.
Manning, William H.....1st H. Art.
Manning, William S.....Corp. 1st Bat'n H. Art.
Manser, John B.....62d Inf.
Mansfield, Charles H.....8th Inf. militia, 11th Inf., U. S. Eng. Corps.
Mansfield, Daniel R.....S. C.
Mansfield, George S..Corp. 23d Inf. ; trans. V. R. C.
Mansfield, James, jr.....5th Inf. militia
Mansfield, John R....5th Inf. militia ; 7th Inf. militia ; Wagoner 1st Bat'n H. Art.
Marley, Richard.....17th Inf.
Marr, Michael.....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia
Marshall, Ezekiel H.....S. C.
Marshall, Robert C.....3d H. Art. ; trans. Navy
Marshall, John H.....4th Bat. L. Art. ; trans. 13th Bat. L. Art.
Marshall William F.....48th Inf. militia
Martin, Edward.....40th Inf.
Martin, George A.....Mus. 59th Inf. ; killed
Martin, Henry.....23d Inf.
Martin, William H.....17th Inf.
Mathews, Lawrence.....9th Inf. ; died of wounds
Mathews, Vincent.....48th Inf. militia
Matthews, Henry.....Navy
Matthews, Henry.....28th Inf.
Masury, Thomas A.....29th Inf. ; died of wounds
Maxfield, Charles O.....Corp. 1st H. Art. ; super
Maxfield, James, jr.....5th Inf. militia
Maxfield, John G.....2d Cav.
Maxfield, John V.....1st Maine H. Art.
Maxwell, Adam.....4th H. Art.
Maxwell, Silas.....17th Inf. ; died in service
May, Henry E.....2d Co. Sharps., trans. V. R. C.
Meade, William E.....Navy
Meady, Albert C.....1st H. Art.
Meady, Daniel F.....2d Co Sharps
Meek, Henry M..5th Inf. militia ; 1st Bat'n F. Cav.
Mehan, John C.....Navy
Mehan, Mathew.....17th Inf
Melcher, George P....1st H. Art. ; 1st Bat'n H. Art
Melcher, John E.....1st H. Art.
Melcher, Levi L..5th Inf. militia ; 7th Inf. militia ; 2d Co. Sharps
Melden, William R.....19th Inf.
Meldram, Orin.....24th Inf.
Melley, William, jr.....4th Bat. L. Art. ; died in service
Mellow, Henry.
Melville, Frank.....2d Cav.
Merrill, Amos.....Clerk Prov. Marshall's off.
Merrill, John C.....S. C.
Merrill, Parker., Com. Sergt. 3d Cav. ; trans. V. R. C.
Merrill, William R.....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia
Messenger, Hugh G.....62d Inf.
Metcalf, George W.....1st Cav.
Meyer, William.....39th Inf.
Miles, Orrin A.....11th Inf.
Miller, Allen, jr.....2d Co. Sharps.
Miller, Arthur J. (G.).....22d Inf
Miller, Jacob.....19th Inf.
Miller, James.....50th Inf. militia
Miller, Thomas.....Navy
Millett, Andrew J.....Q. M. Sergt. 1st H. Art.
Millett, Charles, 2d.....S. C.
Millett, Daniel.....11th Inf. ; died in service
Millett, George.....Navy
Millett, William H.....S. C.
Millett, William S.....11th Inf. ; trans. 11th Bat.
Millett, William.....11th Inf.
Milton, B. Sylvester S.....1st Cav.
Miner, Albert H.....7th Inf. militia
Miner, John T.....40th Inf.
Minnahan, John.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Mitchell, Edward.....S. C.
Mitchell, Patrick.....48th Inf. militia
Mitchell, William.....19th Inf.
Mitchell, William F.....4th H. Art.
Monarch, Eben.....30th Inf.
Monarch, George H.....1st H. Art.
Monaghan, Joseph H...Com. Sergt. 9th Inf. ; Com. Sergt. 32d Inf.
Monies, William H.....Sergt. 3d H. Art.
Monroe, Robert C.....23d Inf.
Moody, Converse.....8th Inf. militia
Mooney, John.....19th Inf.
Moore, John G.....1st Inf.
Moore, Thomas.....19th Inf.
Moore, Thomas H.....Saddler 5th Cav.
Moran, Frank.....3d H. Art.
Moran, James.....11th Inf. ; killed
Moran, Nathaniel.....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia
Moran, Matthew.....Navy
Morgan, Francis.....11th Inf
Morgan, John A.....Navy
Morgan, Joseph.....Navy
Morgan, Joshua.....Navy
Morgan, Michael.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Morgan, Patrick.....23d Inf. ; died Andersonville Prison
Moroney, Thomas.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Morrill, Gilman L.....11th Inf.
Morrill, Henry O.....5th Inf. militia
Morris, James.....1st H. Art.
Morris, George.....U. S. C. T.
Morrison, George M.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Morrison, John.....22d Inf.
Morrison, John.....2d Co. Sharps. ; killed
Morrissey, John.....Corp. 3d H. Art. ; trans. Navy
Morrissey, John.....9th Inf. ; killed
Morse, Charles C.....23d Inf. ; trans. V. R. C.
Morse, George.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Morse, George F.....50th Inf. militia
Morse, George W...Sergt. 2d H. Art. ; 5th Inf. militia.
Morse, Henry.....1st H. Art.
Morse, James.....62d Inf.
Morse, John.....1st H. Art.
Morton, Charles.....48th Inf. militia
Morton, George.....13th Inf.
Morse, John R.....5th Inf. militia
Moses, John E.....59th Inf.
Moser, John H.....5th Inf. militia
Moulton, Charles E.....6th Inf. militia
Moulton, Nathan E.....Corp. 4th H. Art.
Moynahan, Humphrey.....9th Inf.
Mullaly, Michael.....17th Inf.
Mullaly, William.....Sergt. 17th Inf.
Mullane, Martin.....32d Inf.
Mullen, Patrick A.....24th Inf. ; killed.
Mulligan, Martin.....3d Cav.
Mulready, Stephen (H).....19th Inf.
Mulready, Thomas.....Sergt. 4th Bat. L. Art.
Munroe, Alexander A.....23d Inf.
Munroe, George, 4th Bat. L. Art. ; died in service.
Monroe, Isaac M.....4th H. Art.
Munroe, Robert.....Navy
Munroe, Stephen N.....5th Inf. militia
Murphy, Christopher.....9th Inf.
Murphy, Cornelius.....2d Cav.
Murphy, Hugh E.....17th Inf.
Murphy, James.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Murphy, John.....3d H. Art.
Murphy, John.....48th Inf. militia
Murphy, John.....5th Bat. L. Art.
Murphy, John.....5th Bat. L. Art.
Murphy, Luke.....19th Inf. ; killed.
Murphy, Michael.....48th Inf. militia
Murphy, Michael.....3d Cav.
Murphy, Michael.....1st Sergt. 9th Inf.
Murphy, Michael.....9th Inf

Murphy, Patrick.....Navy
Murphy, Peter.....48th Inf. militia
Murphy, Thomas (1st).....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Murphy, Thomas.....5th Bat. L. Art.
Murphy, William.....59th Inf., trans. 57th Inf.
Murphy, William.....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.
Murphy, William H.....23d Inf.
Murphy, William H.....7th Inf. militia
Murray, George.....1st H. Art
Murray, Jeremiah, Corp. 2d Inf. ; trans. 4th U. S. Art.
Murray, John.....27th Unat. Co. Inf.
Murray, Martin.....4th Cav.
Musgrave, Peter.....Corp. 1st H. Art.; killed
Mynehan, John.....Navy

Nagle, Jacob.....Corp. 23d Inf.
Naos, Henry E.....Navy
Nay, Joseph B...Sergt. 5th Inf. militia ; 11th U. S. Inf.
Neal, James M.....1st H. Art.
Neal, William W.....Navy
Needham, James.....23d Inf.
Needham, James F.....1st H. Art.
Neil, Edward.....9th Inf. ; killed
Nelson, James F.....Corp. 48th Inf. militia
Nelson, Jeremiah.....Corp. 50th Inf. militia
Neville, Patrick.....3d Cav. ; trans. V. R. C.
Newcomb, Charles B., Jr.....Sergt. 4th Bat. L. Art.
Newell, Charles O.....Sergt. 20th Inf.
Newton, Albert E....Corp. 13th Unat Co. Inf. militia ; 50th Inf. militia.
Nicholas, Benjamin.....Navy
Nichols, Arra.....Navy
Nichols, Benjamin C.....1st H. Art.
Nichols, George A.....Sergt. 13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia ; 50th Inf. militia.
Nichols, William C.....Mus. 24th Inf.
Nichols, William H 3d...6th Inf. militia ; 7th R. I. Cav.
Nickerson, Ansel.....3d H. Art.
Niles, Amos.....Navy
Nimblett, Benjamin F.....Corp. 23d Inf. ; 5th Inf. militia.
Nimblett, John W.....3d H. Art. ; trans. 29th Unat. Co. H. Art
Noble, Alexander J.....1st H. Art.
Noble, James A.....50th Inf. militia
Nolan, Francis.....Corp. 24th Inf.
Nolan, Thomas.....4th Bat. L. Art. ; trans. 13th Bat. ; died in service.
Nolan, Thomas.....3d H. Art.
Noland, Thomas.....1st H. Art.
Noonan, John.....24th Inf.
Norcross, Orlando W.....1st H. Art.
Norris, William E.....17th Inf.
Norton, John.....9th Inf.
Nourse, George A.....23d Inf.
Noyes, Charles W.....62d Inf.
Noyes, Edward D.....19th Inf. ; killed
Noyes, George S.....Corp. 62d Inf.
Norwood, Alexander.....40th Inf.
Nugent, John.....28th Inf.
Nugent, Sylvester.....11th Inf.
Nutter, Horace.....1st Bat'n H. Art. ; 2d H. Art.
Nutting, Joseph H.....40th Inf.

O'Brien, Edward.....9th Inf.
O'Brien, James.....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.
O'Brien, John.....5th Bat. L. Art.
O'Brien, John 1st.....9th Inf.
O'Brien, John 2d.....9th Inf.
O'Brien, Stephen.....4th H. Art.
O'Brien, Thomas.....9th Inf.
Ober, Oliver.....50th Inf. militia ; died in service
O'Callahan, Eugene.....9th Inf.
O'Connell, Timothy.....19th Inf. ; killed
O'Connor, James.....9th Inf.
O'Connor, James.....11th Inf.
O'Connor, John.....20th Inf.
O'Connor, John.....6th Inf. militia
O'Donnell, Donald.....2d H. Art.
O'Donnell, John.....Navy
O'Donnell, Patrick.....9th Inf.
O'Donnell, William.
Ogden, James.....40th Inf.
O'Hara, Patrick.....4th Bat. L. Art.
O'Hara, Patrick.....9th Inf.
O'Hara, Patrick J.....12th Bat. L. Art.
O'Hare, Andrew J.....2d Inf.
O'Hare, Charles H.....17th Inf.
O'Hare, Charles H.....2d Inf. and Mus. 23d Inf.
O'Hare, Polonius.....2d Inf.
O'Keefe, John.....24th Inf.
O'Keefe, John.....9th Inf.
O'Keefe, Patrick.....9th Inf.
Oldson, Charles (F).....Navy
Oldson, Edwin U.....Mus. 59th Inf.
Oldson, Francis T.....24th Inf. ; died of wounds
Oldson, George D.....Navy
Oldson, John H.....Navy
Oldson, Joseph H.....6th Inf. militia
O'Leary, Dennis.....2d H. Art.
O'Neal, Thomas.....24th Inf.
O'Neil, Michael.....2d Cav.
O'Rourke, John.....9th Inf., U. S. M. C.
O'Shea, Patrick.....17th Inf.
O'Sullivan, Timothy.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
O'Sullivan, Timothy.....29th Inf.
Osborn, Frederick M.....23d Inf. ; trans. V. R. C.
Osborn, John B.....4th H. Art.
Osborn, Josiah B.....1st H. Art.
Osborn, Stephen H.....23d Inf.
Osborn, William E.....3d Unat. Co. Inf. militia
Osborne, John B.....Navy
Osborne, John H.....5th Inf. militia; Navy
Osborne, Laban S.....5th Inf. militia ; 1st H. Art.
Osborne, Stephen H.....23d Inf.
Osgood, Cyrus M.....2d Co. Sharps ; killed
Osgood, Edward T.....8th Inf. militia ; 23d Inf.
Osgood, George E.....23d Inf. ; trans. V. R. C.
Osgood, William H...1st Bat'n H. Art.; 2d H. Art. ; Navy
Owens, James.....19th Inf.

Packard, William.....62d Inf.
Paine, Charles D.....6th Inf. militia
Paine, Joseph A., Jr.....23d Inf.
Paine, William.....54th Inf. ; trans. 55th Inf. (colored).
Paishley, Sylvester.....11th Inf.
Palmer, Charles W.....1st H. Art.
Palmer, George.....1st H. Art.
Palmer, William H.....5th Inf. militia
Palmer, William H. H.....50th Inf. militia
Parker, Alfred.....Navy
Parker, George F.....24th Inf.
Parrott, Francis.....1st H. Art.
Parshley, Nathaniel D.....1st H. Art.
Parshley, Sylvester.....7th Inf. militia ; 9th Inf.
Parsons, Cyrus.....5th Inf. militia ; 7th Inf. militia
Parsons, Eben O.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Parsons, George W.....1st H. Art.; killed
Parsons, William D., 23d Inf. ; died Andersonville Prison.
Patch, John S.....23d Inf.; missing. Supposed killed
Patten, Frank.....62d Inf.
Patten, James M.....5th Inf. militia
Peabody, William.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Peabody, William M.....5th Inf. militia ; 4th Bat. L. Art.
Peach, George S., 1st Sergt., 5th Inf. militia; Sergt. 24th Inf.
Peach, George W.....4th H. Art
Peach, Thomas S.....4th H. Art.
Peach, William, Jr.....5th Inf. militia ; 40th Inf.
Peckham, Charles, 1st Bat'n H. Art. ; died in service
Peirce, Charles H.....1st H. Art.
Pendar, John.....9th Inf.
Pendergast, Thomas.....1st H. Art. ; died in service
Pepper, Walter A.....Navy
Perchard, Clement H.....50th Inf. militia
Perkins, Asa B.....Navy
Perkins, Charles...Corp. 13th unat. Co. Inf. militia ; 50th Inf. militia ; 1st Bat'n F. Cav.
Perkins, Charles C.....1st Inf.
Perkins, Eben S.....23d Inf.
Perkins, Francis M.....50th Inf. militia
Perkins, George H.....50th Inf. militia
Perkins, Henry.....13th Unat. Co. Inf militia
Perkins, James W.....50th Inf. militia
Perkins, Joseph A.....8th Inf. militia ; S. C. ; 1st Bat'n F. Cav.
Perkins, Joseph H., (N.).....5th Inf. militia
Perley, John E.....Navy
Perley, Thomas A.....50th Inf. militia
Perry, Henry W.....5th Inf. militia
Perry, Henry E.....Navy
Perry, Horace S.....1st H. Art.
Perry, William A.....5th Inf. militia
Pervier, Benjamin L.....Mus. 3d H. Art.
Peterson, Andrew G., Corp. 13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia ; 50th Inf. militia ; 1st Bat'n F. Cav.
Peterson, Thomas S.....Navy
Pettengill, George.....6th Inf. militia
Phelan, Thomas.....17th Inf.
Phelan, Thomas J.....Corp. 1st H. Art
Phillips, Angelo.....3d H. Art.
Phillips, Benjamin A.....2d H. Art.
Phillips, Edward B.....
Phillips, James L.....30th Inf. ; trans. V. R. C.
Phillips, John.....1st H. Art.
Phillips, Phineas W.....7th Inf. militia
Phippen, Abraham.....17th Inf. ; died in service
Phippen, Charles H.....5th Inf. militia ; Sergt. 7th Inf. militia ; 1st H. Art.
Phippen, David.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Phippen, Edward A., Jr.....5th Bat. L. Art.
Phippen, George P.....Corp. 23d Inf.
Phippen, Joshua 2d.
Phippen, Joshua B.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Phippen, Robert A.....1st H. Art.
Phippen, Robert C.....1st H. Art.
Phippen, William H.....1st H. Art.
Phipps, Henry B., Corp. 1st H. Art. ; died Andersonville Prison.
Phinney, Edwin.....Corp. 9th Inf. ; trans. 32d Inf.
Pickering, Benjamin F.....Sergt. 6th Inf. militia ; Corp. 7th Inf. militia.
Pickering, Benjamin P.....S. C.
Pickett, Charles.....1st Sergt. 40th Inf.
Pickman, Hersey D.....Corp. 13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia ; 50th Inf. militia.
Pierce, Alden J.....27th Inf.
Pierce, David H.....5th Inf. militia
Pierce, John.....1st Bat'n H. Art. ; 2d H. Art. ; V. R. C.
Pierce, Thomas.....Navy
Pierce, William.....Corp. 2d Cav.
Pierce, William H.....27th Inf.
Pike, George N.....4th H. Art.
Pinckton, William.....23d Inf.
Pinkham, Charles F., Artificer, 1st Bat'n H. Art. ; died in service.
Pinkham, Charles H.....Sergt. S. C.
Pinkham, William A.....23d Inf. ; died in service
Piper, John F.....Sergt. 59th Inf.
Pitman, John H.....Mast. Mate. ; Navy
Pitman, Nathaniel, (Jr. or F.), 1st H. Art. ; died of wounds 1864.
Pitman, William.....1st H. Art.
Pitman, William H.....1st H. Art.

Pitts, Albert W.....1st H. Art.
Pitts, Otis.....23d Inf.
Pirt, Isaac.....Navy
Place, Charles A.....12th N. H. Vols.
Plummer, David.....10th Maine Inf.; killed
Plummer, Frank.....Sergt. 24th Inf.
Plummer, George.....Sergt. 1st H. Art.
Plummer, Lewis K.....Sergt. 22d Inf.
Pollock, David M.....23d Inf.
Pond, Frederick A.....50th Inf. militia
Pond, Joseph P., Jr.....59th Inf.
Poor, Horace A.....11th Inf.
Poor, James, Jr.....1st H. Art.; 5th Inf. militia
Pope, Benjamin C.....23d Inf.; V. R. C.
Pope, Joseph.....2d Inf.
Pope, Thomas S., 5th Inf. militia; 1st Bat'n F. Cav.
Porter, Charles.....11th Inf.
Pope, Thomas.....Navy
Porter, William T.....1st H. Art.
Potter, Francis B.....12th Inf.; died in service
Poulson, Lewis.....2d Cav.
Pousland, David N.....S. C.
Pousland, Edward A.....Navy
Pousland, John H., Corp. 1st Bat'n H. Art.; 2d H. Art.; 5th Inf. militia.
Powell, Nathaniel.....Navy
Powers, Charles H.....Navy
Powers, Edward.....9th Inf.; trans. 32d Inf.
Powers, Edward E.....19th Inf.; trans. Navy
Powers, James.....9th Inf.; killed
Powers, John.....1st H. Art.
Powers, Richard, Jr.....3d Cav.
Powers, Stephen A.....48th Inf. militia
Powers, William F.....Corp. 3d H. Art.
Pratt, A. W.....Navy
Pratt, Calvin L., 5th Inf. militia; 4th Bat. L. Art.
Pratt, Edward L.....Navy
Pratt, Edwin F., 8th Inf. militia; Corp. 4th Bat. L. Art.
Pratt, James F.....1st H. Art.
Pratt, John W.....Sergt. 40th Inf.
Pratt, Lewis R.....Sergt. 2d H. Art.; 5th Inf. militia
Pratt, William A.....3d H. Art.; trans. Navy
Pray, Joseph.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Pray, Joseph S.....3d H. Art.
Preble, John.....V. R. C.
Preston, Charles H.....19th Inf.
Preston, John C.....2d Inf.
Preston, John F.....59th Inf.; killed
Preston, John H.....Mus. 2d Inf.
Preston, Otis P., 50th Inf. militia; died in service
Preston, William A.....50th Inf. militia
Price, Rufus.....19th Inf.
Price, William H. See Prime, William H.
Prime, William H.....23d Inf.
Prime, Joshua S.....17th Inf.
Prime, William H. H.....Hosp. Stew.
Prince, George.....23d Inf.; died of wounds
Prince, William W.....S. C.
Pulsifer, Charles A.....1st H. Art.
Pulsifer, David F.....23d Inf.; killed
Pulsifer, Nathaniel F., 1st H. Art.; died in service
Pulsifer, William H.....Navy
Purbeck, John H.....1st H. Art.
Purbeck, John H.....9th Inf.; 1st H. Art.
Purbeck, William L.....5th Bat. L. Art.; killed
Putnam, Perley.....Navy

Quinlan, Thomas.....9th Inf.
Quinn, John.....5th Inf. militia
Quinn, Joseph.....2d Inf.
Quinn, Joseph.....17th Inf.
Quinn, Patrick.....23d Inf.
Quinn, James.....Mus. 19th Inf.
Quinn, James.....23d Inf.
Quinn, John.....V. R. C.
Quinn, John.....1st Cav.
Quinn, John.....Navy

Radford, George A.....S. C.
Ragan, Michael.....1st H. Art.; died in service
Ramsdell, Alonzo O., 4th Bat. L. Art.; trans. 13th Bat. L. Art.
Ramsdell, Joseph R.....3d H. Art.
Ramsdell, Peter A.....Corp. 5th Inf. militia; 3d H. Art.
Ramsdell, William F.....3d H. Art.
Randall, Charles W.....Sergt. 1st H. Art.
Raymond, Alfred A., jr.....19th Inf.
Read, William.....19th Inf.
Real, Joseph F.....2d H. Art.
Reardon, Daniel.....2d Inf.
Redman, John.....13th Unat. Co., Inf. militia
Reed, Benjamin A.....23d Inf.
Reed, Thomas.....24th Inf.
Reeves, Edward.....1st H. Art.
Reeves, William H.....1st H. Art.; died in service
Regan, B. F.....12th Inf.
Regan, Dennis.....9th Inf.
Regan, Edmund.....9th Inf.; died of wounds
Regan, James.....9th Inf.; killed
Regan, Stephen.....4th H. Art.
Regan, Stephen.....28th Inf.; trans. V. R. C.
Regan, Timothy.....4th H. Art.
Remick, James.....(See Remick, Patrick)
Remick, Patrick.....Sergt. 9th Inf.
Remon, John C.....S. C.
Restell, John.....19th Inf.
Restell, John, jr.....19th Inf.
Rice, Benjamin B.....7th Inf. militia
Rice, George.....Hosp. Stew. U. S. A.
Rice, William H. C.....2d Inf.
Richards, John H.....23d Inf.
Richardson, Alfred.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Richardson, Alfred J.....2d H. Art.
Richardson, Henry H.....5th Inf. militia
Richardson, John H.....55th Inf. (colored)
Richardson, William L.....39th Inf.
Ricker, Francis M.....S. C.; 23d Inf.
Ricker, James, Sergt. 2d N. H. Vols.; died of wounds
Ricker, Richard.....2d Cav.
Ricker, Richard.....17th Inf.
Ricker, William H.....2d Cav.
Rider, Joshua O.....6th Inf. militia
Rinks, John H.....Navy
Rix, Asa W. S.....5th Inf. militia
Roach, Michael.....Navy
Roark, Frank.....22d Inf.; trans. 32d Inf.
Roarke, Thomas.....Mus. 32d Inf.
Roberts, George.....59th Inf.; died of wounds
Roberts, Henry L.....23d Inf.; trans. V. R. C.
Roberts, James.....19th Inf.
Roberts, John.....2d Co. Sharps.
Roberts, John S.....23d Inf., 3d H. Art.
Roberts, Samuel, jr.....19th Inf.
Roberts, Stephen H.....2d Co. Sharps.
Roberts, William.....5th Bat. L. Art.
Roberts William H.....1st H. Art.
Robbins, Louis L.....Corp. 23d Inf.
Robbins, Nathaniel A.....Corp. S. C.
Robbinson, Edward L., 1st Sergt. 22d Inf.; trans. 32d Inf.; trans. V. R. C.
Robinson, Harry S.....17th Inf.
Robinson, Jeremiah.....4th Cav.
Robinson, John.....50th Inf. militia
Robinson, John G.....Q. M. Sergt. 48th Inf. militia
Robinson, Nathaniel F.....Corp. 50th Inf. militia
Robinson, William.....2d Cav.; trans. V. R. C.
Rock, John.....18th Inf.
Rodigrass, John S.....19th Inf.
Rodwell, John A.....6th N. H. Vols.; died in service
Rogan, Cornelius.....9th Inf.
Rogan, William.....9th Inf.; died in service
Rogan, William N.....9th Inf.; died in service

Rogers, Benjamin H.....11th Inf.
Rogers, Henry N.....11th Inf.
Rogers, John E.....6th Inf. militia
Rogers, John E.....Navy
Rogers, Joseph C.....23d Inf.
Rogers, Joseph S. S.....11th Inf.
Rogers, Simon A.....1st Bat'n H. Art.; died in service
Rollins, Abijah.....23d Inf.
Rollins, James.....Navy
Rollins, William.....19th Inf.
Ronan, Wm. H.....Corp. 3d H. Art.; 48th Inf. militia
Rooney, Peter.....19th Inf.; trans. 20th Inf.
Ross, Daniel M.....1st Cav.
Ross, J. Perrin.....8th Inf. militia
Ross, Joseph H.....1st H. Art.
Ross, William H.....8th Inf. militia; 19th Inf.; killed
Ross, William P.....1st H. Art.
Rouke, John.....9th Inf.
Rounds, Edward H.....Corp. 23d Inf.
Rowe, George E.....40th Inf.
Rowe, James H.....61st Inf.; died in service
Rowell, Thomas A., Q. M. Sergt. 3d H. Art.; Corp. 7th Inf. militia.
Rowley, Robert.....6th Inf. militia
Ruee, Benjamin B.....2d H. Art.
Rull, Benjamin B.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Runey, Peter.....See Rooney, Peter
Russell, Albert W.....11th Inf.
Russell, George F.....1st H. Art.
Russell, John H.....Sergt. 40th Inf.
Russell, Martin V. B.....Mus. 1st H. Art.
Rust, Edwin F., 4th Bat. L. Art.; trans. 13th Bat. L. Art.
Ruth, Edward.....59th Inf.; trans. 57th Inf.
Ruth, Edward.....Navy
Ruth, John.....59th Inf.
Ryan, John.....3d Cav.
Ryan, John.....19th Inf.
Ryan, John P.....Navy
Ryan, Patrick.....48th Inf. militia

Safford, George W.....50th Inf. militia
Sanborn, Edward D.....3d H. Art.
Sanborn, Horace E.....1st H. Art.
Sanborn, Joseph W., Corp. 13th Unat. Co. militia; 50th Inf. militia.
Sanborn, John F.....5th Inf. militia
Sargent, Charles O.....23d Inf.
Sargent, Thomas J.....1st H. Art.
Sassfield, Edward.....3d U. S. Inf.
Saunders, Charles.....2d Cav.; trans. V. R. C.
Saunders, David E., jr.....Sergt. 50th Inf. militia
Saunders, Henry T.....Corp. 23d Inf.; died in service
Savory, John.....2d H. Art.; died Florence Prison
Sawyer, Caleb.....1st H. Art.
Sawyer, Nathaniel.....1st H. Art.; trans. V. R. C.
Scanlan, Michael.....17th Inf.
Scates, David M.....24th Inf.
Scheledel, Otto.....22d Inf.; trans. 32d Inf.
Scopic, Leo.....28th Inf.
Schultz, Carl F.....23d Inf.; died in service
Schweitzer, George.....22d Inf.; trans. 32d Inf.
Scribner, Luther.....Corp. 4th Cav.
Scriggins, Joshua C.....23d Inf.
Scriggins, William J.....50th Inf. militia; Navy
Scully, John H.....9th Inf.
Scully, Patrick.....48th Inf. militia
Searles, George.....5th Inf. militia
Seger, John.....11th Inf.
Selton, Thomas E.....Navy
Semons, Francis A., Corp. 7th Inf. militia; 5th Inf. militia.
Senter, William C.....23d Inf.
Shanley, William J.....5th Inf. militia; 3d H. Art.
Shapine, John.....23d Inf.
Sharp, Thomas.....3d H. Art.
Sharkey, Charles.....17th Inf.

Shatswell, Joseph A.....7th Inf. militia
Shaw, Brown E.....23d Inf.
Shaw, Colin.....See Shaw, Orlin
Shaw, Cyrus P.....8th Inf. militia
Shaw, John.....Navy
Shaw, John.....Corp. 1st H. Art.
Shaw, Neil.....7th Inf. militia
Shaw, Orlin.....Corp. 11th Inf. ; died of wounds
Shaw, Walter G. C. C., Corp. 24th Inf. ; 40th Inf. ; 48th Inf. militia.
Shea, Daniel.....9th Inf.
Shea, Patrick.....2d H. Art.
Shea, Patrick.....9th Inf. ; died of wounds
Shea, Timothy.....9th Inf.
Shearin, Charles H.....19th Inf.
Shearman, James L.....Navy
Shearman, William.....Navy ; 55th Inf.
Sheehan, Edward.....17th Inf.
Sheehan, John J...6th Inf. militia ; 4th Bat. L. Art.
Shehan, Patrick.....Navy
Sheehan, Timothy.....1st H. Art.
Sherlock, Thomas T.....9th Inf. ; died in service
Sherman, William.....Navy
Sherman, Wm., 54th Inf. ; trans. 55th Inf. (colored)
Sherwin, William, jr.....30th Inf.
Shine, Cornelius A.....2d Cav.
Shirley, John.....2d H. Art
Shortell, James.....9th Inf. ; V. R. C.
Shortell, Michael.....Corp. 2d Cav.
Short, Charles H.....50th Inf. militia
Short, Joseph A.....29th Inf. ; killed
Shutes, John D.....1st H. Art.
Sikey, William H.....2d Co. Sharps
Silver, Augustus.....4th Baf. L. Art.
Silver, W. A..4th Bat. L. Art.; trans. 13th Bat. L. Art.
Simmons, Francis A.....5th Inf. militia
Simmons, William.....2d H. Art. ; died of wounds.
Simon, John F., Corp. 50th Inf. militia; died in serv.
Simonds, Edward A.....1st Sergt. S. C.
Simonds, William.....19th Inf ; 40th Inf.
Simonds, William H.....40th Inf.
Simons, Francis A.....3d H. Art.
Simpson, John A.....Navy
Sinclair, David.....24th Inf.
Sinclair, James.....62d Inf.
Sislie, Robert.....28th Inf.
Skerry, Edward S.....1st H. Art.
Skerry, George L.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Skinner, Emery B.....1st H. Art.
Skinner, James N.....50th Inf. militia
Skinner, Philip G.....Sergt. S. C.
Sleuman, Charles A.....50th Inf. militia
Sloper, William A.....5th Inf. militia
Sluman, William H.....Navy
Small, William M.....61st Inf.
Smeathers, Joseph.....1st H. Art.
Smith, A. P., Corp. 23d Inf. ; 9th Inf. ; 8th Inf. mil.
Smith, Benjamin F.....Sergt. 4th Bat. L. Art.
Smith, Charles.....Navy
Smith, Charles F.....23d Inf.
Smith, Daniel F.....V. R. C.
Smith, Frederick W.....8th Inf. militia ; 23d Inf.
Smith, Harley P.....7th Inf. militia
Smith, Henry.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Smith, Henry J.....Sergt. 20th Inf.
Smith, Henry J.....5th Inf. militia ; 2d Cav.
Smith, James E.....23d Inf. ; trans. V. R. C.
Smith, James S.....8th Inf. militia
Smith, John.....1st H. Art.
Smith, John.....11th Inf. ; 23d Inf.
Smith, John A.....19th Inf.
Smith, John B.....1st Inf.
Smith, John F.....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia
Smith, Jonathan C.....1st H. Art.
Smith, J. Jewett.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Smith, Lorenzo.....23d Inf
Smith, Patrick.....48th Inf. militia ; died in service
Smith, Samuel H...8th Inf. militia ; Sergt. 19th Inf.
Smith, Thomas R.....1st H. Art.
Smith, Timothy.....19th Inf.
Smith, William.....1st H. Art.
Smith William A.....1st H. Art. ; V. R. C.
Smith, Wm. A., 54th Inf. (colored) ; trans. 55th Inf.
Smith, William J.....20th Inf. ; killed
Smith, William R.....7th Inf. militia
Smith, William.....15th Bat. L. Art.
Snell, Nicholas P..Corp. 1st H. Art. ; died of wounds
Solen, Nathaniel.....See Soley, Nathaniel
Soley, Frank.....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia
Soley, Franklin.....7th Inf. militia
Soley, Nathaniel.....1st H. Art.
Somner, Sehan.....16th Inf. ; trans. 11th Inf.
Soper, Jeremiah.....V. R. C.
Southard, Geo. F.....50th Inf. militia
Southard, (Southward) Samuel S.....23d Inf.
Southwick, Edward.....48th Inf. militia
Southwick, Elbridge M., 7th Inf. militia ; 3d H. Art.
Southwick, Joseph.....11th Inf.
Spaulding, J. C.....Navy
Spencer, Hiram B.....1st Cav.
Spofford, John B.....Navy
Spring, Patrick.....9th Inf.
Stacey, Peter.....48th Inf. militia
Stafford, James M.....1st Sergt. 2d Inf.
Stamper, William F.....11th U. S. Inf.
Staniford, Daniel.....Corp. 6th Inf. militia ; S. C.
Stanley, Abraham J.....Mus. 24th Inf.
Staples, E. C.....Navy
Staples, Elias C.....1st H. Art , killed
Staples, George.....2d Inf., killed
Staten, Alexander.....4th Cav.
Staten, William H. U.....1st Maine Vols.
Stearns, William.....Navy
Stenford, Joseph.....19th Inf.
Sterling, William S.....Sergt. 62d Inf.
Stevenson, John H.....Navy
Stevenson, Robert.....30th Inf.
Stevens, Daniel W.....17th Inf.
Stevens, Edward P.....8th Inf. militia
Stevens, John,.....Navy
Stevens, John.....2d Cav.
Stevens, John.....28th Inf.
Stevens, Samuel.....62d Inf.
Stevens, Samuel A., 6th Inf. militia ; 2d Maine Vols.
Stickney, David.....Navy
Stickney, George A.....1st H. Art.
Stickney, Joseph.....Navy
Stickney, Joseph A.....Navy
Stillman, Amos....S. C, ; 50th Inf. militia ; 23d Inf.
Stillman, Edward, Mus. 13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia ; Mus. 50th Inf. ; Mus. S. C. ; 1st Bat. F. Cav.
Stillman, James H.....23d Inf.
Stillman Samuel.....2d Co. Sharps., killed
Stimpson, Edward A.....48th Inf. militia ; 16th Inf.
Stocker, Charles H.....S. C.
Stoddard, George A.....50th Inf. militia
Stone, Charles.....Corp. 1st Co. Sharps.
Stone, Benjamin F.....17th Inf.
Stone, George B.....23d Inf.
Stone, George L.....6th Inf. militia
Stone, Joseph H. S.....4th Cav.
Stover, Nathaniel F., 48th Inf. militia ; 3d H. Art. ; died in service.
Strafford, James M. (see Stafford, James M.)
Stratton, Benj. F., 50th Inf. militia ; died in service
Stuffles, John.....3d U. S. Art.
Sullivan, Cornelius.....3d Cav.
Sullivan, John.....Navy
Sullivan, Matthew.....11th Inf.
Sullivan, Patk., 9th Inf. ; died Andersonville Prison
Sullivan, Patrick.....3d U. S. Art. ; killed
Sullivan, Timothy.....2d H. Art.
Sumner, John A.....5th Inf. militia
Swaney, William H.....23d Inf , killed
Swasey, Lewis G., Sergt. 3d H. Art.; corp. 1st H. Art.
Swasey, Thomas S. B.....3d Cav. ; Navy
Swasey, William R.....8th Inf. militia
Swasey, William R.....6th N. H. Vols. ; killed
Sweeney, Daniel, (David).....9th Inf.
Sweeney, John.....2d Cav.
Sweeney, Morgan, 2d Inf. ; 59th Inf. ; trans. 57th Inf
Swaney, William.....48th Inf. militia
Sweeny, William H.....23d Inf.
Sweet, Hartford S.....23d Inf.
Sweetland, Alonzo.....8th Inf. militia
Sweetzer, Benj. F., Sergt. 56th Inf. ; trans. V. R. C.
Swett, Francis F.....V. R. C.
Symonds, Chas. A., 5th Inf. militia ; 1st Bat. F. Cav.
Symonds, Edward A., 50th Inf. militia ; 3d H. Art.
Symonds, Geo. H.....S. C.
Symonds, Henry A.....40th Inf. ; trans. 24th Inf.
Symonds, Joseph P.....48th Inf. militia
Symonds, J. Shove.
Symonds, Nathaniel A., Corp. 6th Inf. militia ; 5th Inf. militia.
Symonds, Nathaniel C.....23d Inf.
Symonds, Stephen G.....7th Inf. militia
Symonds, William H.....40th Inf.
Sykes, Edwin.....57th Inf.

Tarbox, Asa.....11th Inf.
Tarbox, David.....V. R. C.
Tarbox, Henry M. (H.).....17th Inf.
Tarbox, Jonathan S.....1st H. Art.
Tarbox, Randall.....1st Inf. ; died in service
Tarbox, Samuel A.....Wagoner 23d Inf.
Tarbox, William H.....1st H. Art.
Tareno, Sareno.....19th Inf.
Tato, Charles.....Navy
Taylor, Charles.....19th Inf.
Taylor, James.....3d Cav.
Taylor, Peter.....61st Inf.
Taylor, Thomas.....1st Cav.
Taylor, William.....3d Cav.
Taylor, William H.....3d H. Art.
Teague, Amos G.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Teague, Robert.....1st H. Art.
Teague, Thomas A.....1st H. Art.
Teague, Wm. H., 5th Inf. militia ; 1st Bat'n H. Art.
Tedder, John T.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Terrance, Edward.....61st Inf.
Therin, Charles H.....17th Inf.
Thiers, Patrick.....17th Inf.
Thomas, Charles S,.....Corp. 2d Co. Sharps
Thomas, Eli C..23d Inf. ; died Andersonville Prison
Thomas, George W.....17th Inf.
Thomas, James.....19th Inf. ; died in service
Thomas, Joseph F.....6th Inf. militia
Thomas, Richard H.....23d Inf. V. R. C.
Thomas, Samuel W.....Navy
Thomas, Stephen W., Jr.....1st H. Art.
Thomas, Warren.....23d Inf.
Thomas, William H. H.....3d H. Art.
Thompson, Darius N.....Corp. 3d H. Art.
Thompson, Edward C.....19th Inf.
Thompson, F. B.....4th Bat. L. Art. ; died in service
Thompson, George A.....5th Inf. militia ; killed
Thompson, George H.....19th Inf.
Thompson, John N.....5th Inf. militia
Thompson, William.....2d H. Art.
Thorndike, Theodore A.....50th Inf. militia
Thorner, Samuel R.....40th Inf.
Thornton, John.....23d Inf.
Thrasher, Nath., 4th Bat L. Art. ; died in service.
Tibbetts, Andrew R.....23d Inf. ; V. R. C,
Tibbetts, George F.....8th Inf. militia ; 1st H. Art.
Tibbetts, William R.....1st H. Art.
Tierney, Patrick.....Corp. 9th Inf.
Timmins, Garritt.....Sergt. 9th Inf.
Timmins, Patrick.....Corp. 9th Inf.
Tirrell, William.....19th Inf.
Tiviss, John W.....Navy
Tobey, William, jr..Corp. 5th Inf. militia ; 1st Cav.
Tobin, James.....4th H. Art.
Toby, Stephen W.....1st H. Art.
Tolman, Stephen W.....40th Inf.
Toomey, John.....18th Inf. ; trans. 32d Inf.
Toomey, John.
Torr, Joseph.....40th Inf.
Towle, Albert L.....Corp. S. C.
Towne, Samuel.....1st H. Art.
Towns, Calvin L.....1st H. Art. ; died of wounds
Townsend, William H.....23d Inf. ; died in service
Tracy, John.....9th Inf. ; died in service
Tracy, Joseph, jr.....3d Cav.
Tracy, William.....9th Inf.
Tracy, William.....17th Inf.
Trafton, Charles.....3d H. Art. ; 17th Inf.
Trainer, Thomas.....1st H. Art.
Trainer, Thomas.....3d H. Art. ; trans. 29th Unat. Co. H. Art.
Trask, Amos W.....23d Inf.
Trask, David B.
Trask, Edward.....19th Inf.
Trask, Henry.....5th Inf. militia
Trask, Henry A....4th Bat. L. Art. ; trans. V. R. C.
Trask, James E.....13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia ; 50th Inf. militia.
Trask, Joseph E.....23d Inf.
Trask, Moses A.....2d Co. Sharps
Tray, James.....Navy
Trofatter, Elias A.....Wagoner 50th Inf. militia ; died in service
Trout, Bradford H.....11th Inf.

Trull, Charles W.....4th Bat. L. Art. ; died in service
Tucker, Henry G.....1st H. Art.
Tucker, Horace.....S. C.
Tucker, John H.....48th Inf. militia ; 17th Inf
Tucker, Joseph W.....1st H. Art.
Tucker, Timothy.....2d Cav.
Tucker, William W.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Tufts, John A.....4th Bat. L. Art. ; died in service
Tufts, Rufus W.....5th Inf. militia
Tukey, Greenleaf S.....Corp. 50th Inf. militia
Turner, James H., jr.....1st H. Art.
Turell, Benjamin F.....Navy
Tschopik, Leo.....28th Inf. Probably same as Leo Schopic.
Tuttle, William H.....50th Inf. militia
Twist, Joseph C.....3d H. Art. ; trans. 29th Unat. Co. H. Art.
Twiss, Joseph C., 1st.....17th Inf
Twiss, Joseph C., 2d.....17th Inf.
Twohig, John.....9th Inf.
Twomey, Thomas.....Corp. 2d H. Art.
Tyler, Alfred.....S. C.
Tyler, Jesse.....1st H. Art.
Tyler, J. H.....17th Inf.

Upham, Benjamin N.....7th Inf. militia
Upham, Franklin.....1st H. Art.
Upham, Joshua W.....1st H. Art.
Upham, Oliver W. H.....S. C. ; 23d Inf.
Upham, Warren J.....1st H. Art.
Upton, Daniel.....S. C.
Upton, Edward.....Sergt. 59th Inf.
Upton, Robert.....1st H. Art.
Upton, Warren A.....50th Inf. militia.
Upton, William R.
Usher, Horace D.....1st H. Art.

Valentine, Herbert E.....23d Inf.
Vanderford, Benjamin F.....Sergt. 4th Bat. L. Art.
Varina, William.....Corp. 62d Inf.
Varney, Henry.....1st H. Art.
Vaughn, Charles E.....32d Inf.; killed.
Veno, Felix.....48th Inf. militia ; 1st Bat'n H. Art.
Very, Abraham A.....4th Cav.
Very, Edwin.....Mus. 23d Inf.
Very, Ephraim P.....48th Inf. militia.
Very, Nathaniel O.....S. C.
Vinnah, Francis J.....Navy.
Viannah, Frank.....Corp. 23d Inf.
Vincent, Amos J.....2d R. I.
Voller, Benjamin H.....2d Inf.

Wadleigh, Curtis E.....23d Inf.
Wait, Ashbel.....1st H. Art. ; died in service
Walcott, Royal E.....23d Inf.
Walden, William W. P.....Corp. 1st H. Art.
Waldron, James.....Navy.
Waldron, John.....23d Inf. ; trans. V. R. C.
Waldron, Joseph E., Corp. 6th Inf. militia ; S. C. ; 3d H. Art.
Walker, David A.....Sergt. 33d Inf.
Walker, W. A.....Sergt. 59th Inf.
Walker, William.....Corp. 3d H. Art.
Wallace, John A.....2d Inf. ; died in service.
Walsh, James.....Corp. 48th Inf. militia.
Walsh, John.....9th Inf.
Walsh, Martin.....9th Inf.
Walsh, Patrick.....9th Inf.
Walsh, William H., Mus. 48th Inf. militia ; 1st Bat'n F. Cav.
Walton, Edward A.....1st H. Art.
Walton, John H., 7th Inf. militia ; 17th Unat. Co. Inf. militia.
Walton, Joseph A.....48th Inf. militia.
Walton, Joseph H.....Corp. 22d Inf.
Ward, James L.....7th R. I. Cav.
Warner, Abraham F., Corp. 19th Inf.; died Andersonville Prison.
Warner, Clarence A.....Corp. 1st H. Art.
Warner, Edward L.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Warner, Frank B.....50th Inf. militia.
Warner, Geo. L., Sergt. 19th Inf. ; died in service.
Warner, John V., 4th Bat. L. Art., trans. 13th Bat. L. Art.
Warner, William W., 26th Inf.; died in service.
Warren, Edward J.....5th Inf. militia.
Warren, Moses.....5th Art. U. S. C. T.
Warren, William H.....Corp. 20th Inf.
Washburn, Horace W.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Washington, John S.....54th Inf. (colored)
Waters, Henry F.....23d Inf. trans. V. R. C.
Waters, Horace.....19th Inf.
Waters, James V., 5th Inf. militia ; died in service
Watson, John F....Sergt. 13th Unat. Co. Inf. militia
Watts, Charles.....Navy.
Watts, Charles E.....1st H. Art.
Watts, Richard.....1st H. Art.
Watts, Thomas.....Navy.
Webb, Henry, jr.....40th Inf.
Webb, James H.....Navy.
Webb, John F.....Com. Sergt. 1st H. Art.; S. C.
Webber, Mendel S.....5th Inf. militia.
Weeks, William H.....5th Inf. militia.
Weir, George C.....Navy.
Welch, Charles O.....2d Cav.
Welch, James H.....Navy.
Welch, John (1st).....3d Cav.
Welch, John.....1st H. Art.
Welch, John.....41st Inf.
Welch, John (2d).....3d Cav.; killed
Welch, John A.....Navy.
Welch, Michael.....Navy.
Welch, Michael.....7th Inf. militia.
Welch, Michael, 4th Bat. L. Art. ; died in service.
Welch, Thomas.....Navy.
Welch, Walter.....9th Inf.
Welch, William.....2d H. Art.
Welch, William L.....23d Inf.
Welch, W. P.....5th Inf. militia.
Wellman, Charles C., 1st H. Art.; died Andersonville Prison.
Wellman, George O.....1st H. Art.
Wellman, Timothy A.....40th Inf., trans. V. R. C.
Wells, George A.....S. C.
Wells, S. C.....11th Inf.
Wentworth, Charles A.....40th Inf.
Wentworth, Charles F.....62d Inf.
Wentworth, Ezra N.....Navy.
Wentworth, John.....3d Cav. ; V. R. C.
Wentworth, John H.....Sergt. 1st H. Art.
Wentworth, John H., 4th Bat. L. Art.; died in service,
West, George, 5th Inf. militia ; 7th Inf. militia.
West, W. C.....Corp.
Weston, Charles.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Weston, Richmond.....Navy.
Westwood, George.....62d Inf.
Wettey, Martin.
Whalley, Thomas.....Navy.
Wheatland, Simeon J., 54th Inf., trans. 55th Inf. (colored).
Wheelan, S. B...5th Inf. militia ; 1st Bat'n H. Art.
Wheeler, Michael.....1st H. Art. ; died in service
Wheeler, Samuel B.....2d H. Art.
Whelan, John.....Navy
Whelan, John.....9th Inf.
Whelan, Michael.....9th Inf.
Whiarty, Thomas.....4th Bat. L. Art.
Whicher, Ira S.....11th Inf.
White, Francis P.....4th H. Art.
White, Henry F.....5th Inf. militia
White, John.....62d Inf.
White, Thomas.....5th Inf. militia
White, William.....Navy
Whitman, William W.....7th Inf.
Whitmarsh, Leander.....Navy
Whitmore, Wiliam W.....S. C. ; 7th Inf. militia
Whitney, Samuel.....4th H. Art.
Whitridge, Charles E.....8th Inf. militia
Whittemore, Henry.....Navy
Whittemore, William W.....1st Bat'n Art.
Wiggin, Benjamin T.....1st H. Art.
Wiggin, George F.....S. C.
Wiggins, George A.....62d Inf.
Wilber, Wesley.....Navy
Wildes, Hayward L.....4th Bat. L. Art. ; trans. 13th Bat. L. Art.
Wiley, Edwin W.....7th Inf. militia ; 3d H. Art.
Wiley, George E.....1st Sergt 59th Inf. ; killed
Wiley, John G.....2d H. Art.
Wiley, Moses, Jr.....48th Inf. militia ; 19th Inf.
Wiley, William.....1st Inf. ; 40th Inf. ; 24th Inf.
Wiley, William F.....Sergt. 24th Inf.
Wilford, John B.....3d Cav. ; trans. V. R. C.
Wilkins, Albert (2d).....Sergt. 1st H. Art. ; super.
Wilkins, Ed. M.....3d H. Art.
Wilkins, George G.....23d Inf. ; killed
Wilkins, James G.....Navy
Wilkins, Michael C.....1st H. Art.
Willburn, James.....11th Inf.
Willett, Allen.....Navy
Willey, Albert W.....24th Inf.
Willey, Edward A.....Navy
Willey, George M.....17th Inf. ; Navy
Willey, Mark L.....Navy
Willey, Mark L., Jr.....Navy
Willey, William.....(See Willey, Albert W.)
Williams, Arthur S.....U. S. Eng. Corps.
Williams, Charles A.....Sergt. 6th Inf. militia
Williams, Edward.....Navy
Williams, George.....19th Inf.
Williams, G...54th Inf. ; trans. 55th Inf. (colored).
Williams, John.....Navy
Williams, John.....Navy
Williams, John F.....Navy
Williams, John H.....Sergt. 1st H. Art.
Williams, John H.....2d Cav.
Williams, Henry.....5th Inf. militia ; 39th Inf.
Williams, Martin V.....48th Inf. militia
Williams, Richard.....Navy
Williams, Thomas.....Navy
Williams, Thomas J.....23d Inf
Williams, Thomas J.....3d Cav
Williams, William D., 5th Inf. militia ; 4th Bat. L. Art. ; died in service.
Willis, John.....Navy
Willis, Lewis.....U. S. C. T.
Williston, Samuel P.....Sergt. 4th Bat. L. Art.
Williston, William D.....2d Inf. ; killed
Wilson, James.....Navy
Wilson, John H.....Navy
Wilson, Joseph H.....2d Inf.
Wilson, Joseph H.....Navy
Wilson, Richard M.....1st H. Art.
Wilson, Thomas.....19th Inf.
Wilson, William H.....Navy
Winchester, Isaac.....23d Inf.
Winchester, S...Corp. 23d Inf. ; died Andersonville
Winn, Edward A.....Master's Mate, Navy
Winter, Lawrence.....9th Inf. ; died in service
Winters, John.....3d H. Art.
Wippich, John.....48th Inf. militia
Withington, Francis.....2d Cav.
Wood, John.....19th Inf.
Wood, John.....19th Inf.
Wood, Samuel A.....Navy
Wood, William P.....1st H. Art. ; 18th V. R. C.
Woodbine, Abel.....Navy
Woodbury, George H.....50th Inf. militia
Woodbury, Josiah H.....Corp. 23d Inf
Woodbury, Levi.....1st Bat'n H. Art.
Woodell, Eli.....Navy
Wooden, William.....19th Inf.
Wright, James.....Navy
Wright, Nathaniel F.....59th Inf.
Wright, Richard.....Navy
Wyatt, Andrew J. (W.).....Mus. 23d Inf.
Wynder, Thomas.....32d Inf.

Yasinski, Edmund A.....S. C.
York, Edward W.....3d H. Art. ; trans. Navy
Young, Aaron C.....Artificer, 1st H. Art.
Young, Charles H.....11th Inf.
Young, James.....99th N. Y. Inf.
Young, William A.....Sergt. 3d Cav.

NOTE.—The foregoing List of Soldiers of the Revolution is taken from Felt's Annals of Salem, with a little addition ; as also that of the Privateers of that War. The List of Privateers of the War of 1812 is the one made by Mr. Leavitt, found in the Historical Collections of the Essex Institute ; while the lists of those serving in the War of the Rebellion were carefully compiled for me from all sources by Mr. F. V. Wright, and are believed to be very nearly correct. It was desired to append a list of those from Salem who had attained rank and distinction in the regular army and navy throughout our history, but in the accessible rosters their residences when appointed are not given.

C. A. B.

CHAPTER XII.

SALEM—(*Continued*).

CIVIL HISTORY.

BY HENRY M. BROOKS.

SALEM was incorporated as a city March 22, 1836, and the charter was accepted April 4, 1836, by a vote of six hundred and seventeen for, to one hundred and eighty-five against it. It was the second city incorporated in the commonwealth, Boston having been the first, and Lowell the third.

LEVERETT SALTONSTALL was the first mayor, elected April 25, 1836, and resigned in December, 1838. He was a descendant of Sir Richard Saltonstall, and was born in Haverhill, June 13, 1783; was educated at Phillips Academy and at Harvard, where he graduated in 1802. In 1805 he commenced the practice of law in Salem, where he was eminently successful, and where he was always held in great esteem. A State Senator in 1831; elected member of Congress in 1838, and served with distinction until 1842. In politics he was a Whig, but had the respect of men of all parties. He was a member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences and of the Massachusetts Historical Society; author of a historical sketch of Haverhill. Mr. Saltonstall was quite interested in music and was, with General Oliver, prominent in promoting musical taste in Salem. He died in Salem May 8, 1845.

STEPHEN CLARENDON PHILLIPS was the second mayor, elected December 5, 1838, holding the office until March, 1842. He was born in Salem, November 4, 1801; graduated at Harvard in 1819. He was a distinguished merchant, at one time largely engaged in the Manilla and Fiji Island trade; Representative in Congress from 1834 to 1838, and had previously represented the town of Salem at the General Court at various periods. Originally a Whig, he joined the Free-Soil party in 1848, and was a candidate for Governor. Mr. Phillips was especially interested in the cause of education, was a member of the State Board of Education, and gave the whole of his salary as mayor to the city for the benefit of the public schools. He gave also a great deal of personal attention and time to the subject. In the latter part of his life he engaged largely in the lumber trade, and while visiting Canada in 1857 he was one of the ill-fated passengers on board the steamer "Montreal," burnt on St. Lawrence River on the 26th of June of that year. He was a very benevolent man and greatly beloved and respected wherever known.

STEPHEN PALFRAY WEBB was the third mayor, served in 1842, '43, '44, '60, '61 and '62, and was city clerk from 1863 to 1871. He was born in Salem, March 20, 1804; graduated at Harvard in 1824. He was a lawyer by profession. Besides holding the offices mentioned, Mr. Webb was elected mayor of San Francisco in 1854, during a temporary residence in that city. He was not elected a second term, as it was said he "refused to get rich" out of the office. Noted for honesty and integrity, as well as for social qualities, he made many friends. He died at Brookline, Mass., September 29, 1879.

JOSEPH SEBASTIAN CABOT was the fourth mayor, and served four years,—1845, '46, '47 and '48. He graduated at Harvard in 1815. He had been cashier and president of the Asiatic National Bank, and was at one time bank commissioner; president of the Salem Savings Bank, president of Harmony Grove Cemetery Company, president of the Massachusetts Horticultural Society; always interested in finance and horticulture. He was a gentleman of integrity, much esteemed, but rather retiring in his habits; had been in former years a Democratic candidate for Congress. He was born in Salem, October 8, 1796, and died June 29, 1874.

NATHANIEL SILSBEE, JR., was the fifth mayor, and served in 1849, '50 and again in 1858 and '59. He was born in Salem, December 28, 1804, and was the son of Hon. Nathaniel Silsbee, a distinguished Senator in Congress; graduated at Harvard in 1824. He was a merchant, and for several years the treasurer of Harvard College. He resided in Boston and Milton some years before his death, which occurred July 9, 1881.

DAVID PINGREE was the sixth mayor, serving from March, 1851, to March, 1852; a well-known merchant. He was born in Georgetown, December 31st, 1795, and inherited wealth from his uncle, Thomas Perkins, an old Salem merchant, once of the firm of Peabody (Joseph) & Perkins. Mr. Pingree did a large business in Salem, owning many vessels engaged in the East and West India and African trade; was largely interested in Eastern lands, and owned Mount Washington, in New Hampshire, which is still in possession of his heirs. He was one of the builders of the famous carriage-road to the summit. He was president of the Naumkeag Bank from its organization, in 1831, and president of the Naumkeag Cotton Company from its establishment, in 1845, until his death, March 31, 1863.

CHARLES WENTWORTH UPHAM was the seventh mayor, serving in 1852. He was born at St. John, N. B., May 4, 1802, and graduated at Harvard in 1821 in the class with Ralph Waldo Emerson. He was minister of the First Church in Salem from 1824 to 1844, for the first twelve years as colleague with Rev. John Prince, LL.D. Retiring from the ministry, he was subsequently elected member of Congress from the Essex South District, serving with great satisfaction to his constituents from 1853 to 1855; he represented the city at the General Court for several years, and was president of the State Senate in 1857 and 1858; Whig and Republican in politics. An

eloquent speaker and excellent writer, Mr. Upham was distinguished as an author. Among his most valuable works are the "History of Salem Witchcraft" and "Life of Timothy Pickering." He also wrote a "Life of Fremont." At one time he edited the *Christian Register*, of Boston, and contributed from time to time to various periodicals. Mr. Upham was noted not only for his intellectual but social qualities. He died June 15, 1875.

ASAHEL HUNTINGTON was the eighth mayor, serving from March, 1853, to March, 1854. He was born at Topsfield, July 23, 1798, and graduated at Yale in 1819. He was a prominent lawyer; elected district attorney in 1830, resigned in 1845, but was again elected in 1847, and held the office until 1851, when he was appointed clerk of the courts for Essex County, in which office he continued until his death, September 5, 1870. He was deeply interested in the cause of temperance, and frequently lectured on the subject, and was an effective speaker. He was twice a representative at the General Court; was president of the Essex Institute, also president of the Naumkeag Cotton Company. Mr. Huntington was highly esteemed by the people of Salem and of Essex County.

JOSEPH ANDREWS was the ninth mayor, having been elected on the Know-Nothing or Native American ticket in 1854 and 1855. He was born in Salem, December 10, 1808; began business as a clerk in one of the Salem banks, and in 1832 was elected cashier of the Commercial Bank, in Boston, where he remained until the bank closed, in 1838. He was always interested in military matters, and commanded at one time the Salem Light Infantry. He was brigadier-general of Massachusetts Militia at the breaking out of the Civil War, and was placed in command at Fort Warren, in Boston harbor, where he had charge of the State troops before their departure to the seat of war. He removed to Boston and died there February 8, 1869.

WILLIAM SLUMAN MESSERVY was the tenth mayor, serving in 1856–57. He was born in Salem, August 26, 1812, and began business in a counting-room in Boston about 1830. In 1834 he went into business in St. Louis, Mo. In 1839 he was a Mexican trader, and spent several years in Chihuahua and Santa Fe. When the Territory of New Mexico was organized he was elected delegate to Congress, and was afterwards acting Governor. Having had financial success in his various operations, he returned to Salem in 1854, and was soon afterwards made a director in various corporations. He was interested in literary and scientific institutions, and a great reader. He was also interested in politics; an Old Line Democrat, but during the war a strong Republican. He died February 19, 1886.

STEPHEN GOODHUE WHEATLAND was the eleventh mayor, and served in 1863 and 1864. He was born at Newton, August 11, 1824, and graduated at Harvard in 1844. He was a lawyer by profession; represented the city at the General Court for a number of years; was a director in several corporations, and has been president of the National Exchange Bank.

JOSEPH BARLOW FELT OSGOOD was the twelfth mayor (1865), and was born in Salem July 1, 1823; graduated at Harvard in 1846. He is an able lawyer; has been a member of the State Senate and House of Representatives. At present he is judge of the First District Court of Essex County, which position he has held since its establishment, in 1874.

DAVID ROBERTS was the thirteenth mayor, and served from January, 1866, to September 26, 1867, when he resigned on account of a disagreement with the aldermen. He was an attorney and counselor-at-law, having graduated at Harvard in 1824. At one time he was a representative at the General Court; was author of a work on admiralty law and practice. He was born in Hamilton, April 5, 1804, and died in Salem, March 19, 1879.

WILLIAM COGSWELL was the fourteenth mayor, and was elected on the resignation of Mayor Roberts, September 26, 1867, and held the office in 1868 and 1869, and again in 1873 and 1874. He was born in Bradford, August 23, 1838; a graduate of Harvard Law School; practiced law in Salem. He served with distinction in the War of the Rebellion; went first as captain in the Second Massachusetts Regiment and rose to the rank of brevet brigadier-general; and was with Sherman in his famous march through Georgia. Since the war he has held the office of State Inspector of Fish for several years; has several times represented the city in the Legislature, and the district in the State Senate. He is at present Representative in Congress from Essex District.

NATHANIEL BROWN was the fifteenth mayor (1870–71), and was born in Salem, March 18, 1827. He began business as clerk in the counting-room of Messrs. Stone, Silsbees & Pickman, noted East India merchants; went to sea, and was for many years an intelligent ship-master. In 1871, as president of the Salem Marine Society, he delivered an address on the centennial anniversary of that society's incorporation. He died in Salem December 10, 1879.

SAMUEL CALLEY was the sixteenth mayor, and held the office in 1872 and again in 1881 and 1882. He was born in Salem, April 13, 1821; was a house-painter by trade, but always greatly interested in political and municipal affairs; Republican in politics, and was representative at the General Court in 1870 and 1871. He died January 1, 1883.

HENRY LAURENS WILLIAMS was the seventeenth mayor (1875–76), and was born in Salem, July 23, 1815. He began business in the counting-room of N. L. Rogers & Brothers, well-known merchants. In 1836 he went into the employ of Joseph Peabody, the noted merchant. After the death of Mr. Peabody, in 1844, he founded the house of Williams & Daland, in Boston. Later he was for some years a director of

the Eastern Railroad Company, president of the Five-Cents Savings Bank and of the National Exchange Bank. He died September 27, 1879.

HENRY KEMBLE OLIVER was the eighteenth mayor, serving in 1877, 1878, 1879 and 1880. He was born in Beverly, November 24, 1800; graduated at Harvard in 1818. He was a school-teacher in Salem from 1819 to 1844; was the first master of the English High School; afterwards opened a private school for boys and, later, a school for young ladies. He was interested in military matters, and was adjutant-general from 1844 to 1848. Elected agent of the Atlantic Cotton Mills, at Lawrence, he removed to that city in 1848; mayor of Lawrence in 1859; agent of the Board of Education in 1858 and 1859; State treasurer from 1861 to 1866; chief of the State Bureau for Labor for some years. He possessed great knowledge of the art of music, and composed numerous excellent Psalm tunes, such as "Federal Street," "Merton," etc.; published a few years ago a collection entirely of his own compositions; was made one of the judges of musical instruments at the Centennial Exhibition, in Philadelphia, in 1876. He was also well versed in mathematics and astronomy. In short, he was a man of very varied talents and accomplishments. He died at Salem, after a long illness, August 12, 1885, and had a public funeral from the North Church, of which he had long been a member, and was formerly the organist.

WILLIAM MILLETT HILL was the nineteenth mayor (1883 and 1884), and was born in Salem, August 16, 1831. He was a currier by trade; a Democrat in politics; was president of the Common Council from 1873 to January 14, 1875, when he was appointed city marshal, which office he held until 1877, after which he was appointed upon the State detective force.

ARTHUR LORD HUNTINGTON was the twentieth mayor, and served in 1885. He was the son of the Hon. Asahel Huntington, a former mayor, and was born in Salem August 12, 1848; graduated at Harvard in 1870; a lawyer by profession. He was president of the Common Council in 1877 and 1878.

JOHN MARSHALL RAYMOND was the twenty-first mayor, elected December 8, 1885, and again in December, 1886, and is the present incumbent. He was born June 16, 1852, and is a graduate of the Boston University.

The following is a tabulated list of mayors:

Leverett Saltonstall	From 1836 to 1838
Stephen C. Phillips	" 1838 " 1842
Stephen P. Webb	" 1842 " 1845
Joseph S. Cabot	" 1845 " 1849
Nathaniel Silsbee, Jr.	" 1849 " 1851
David Pingree	" 1851 " 1852
Charles W. Upham	From 1852 to 1853
Asahel Huntington	" 1853 " 1854
Joseph Andrews	" 1854 " 1856
William S. Messervy	" 1856 " 1858
Nathaniel Silsbee, Jr. (re-elected)	" 1858 " 1860
Stephen P. Webb (re-elected)	" 1860 " 1863
Stephen G. Wheatland	" 1863 " 1865
Joseph B. F. Osgood	" 1865 " 1866
David Roberts	" 1866 " 1867
William Cogswell	" 1867 " 1870
Nathaniel Brown	" 1870 " 1872
Samuel Calley	" 1872 " 1873
William Cogswell (re-elected)	" 1873 " 1875
Henry L. Williams	" 1875 " 1877
Henry K. Oliver	" 1877 " 1880
Samuel Calley (re-elected)	" 1880 " 1882
William M. Hill	" 1882 " 1884
Arthur L. Huntington	" 1884 " 1885
John M. Raymond	" 1885

PRESIDENTS OF THE COMMON COUNCIL.

John Glen King (H. U., 1807), lawyer	1836–37
Richard S. Rogers, merchant	1838
John Russell, president Bank of General Interest	1839–41
Joshua H. Ward (H. U., 1829), lawyer and judge	1842–44
David Putnam, dry-goods merchant	1844
Joseph G. Sprague, cashier Naumkeag Bank	1845–47
Jona. C. Perkins (Amherst, 1832), lawyer and judge	1848
Benjamin Wheatland (H. U., 1819), treasurer Newmarket Company	1849–51
John Whipple, cabinet-maker	1852–53
Daniel Potter, blacksmith and deputy sheriff	1854–55
John Webster, treasurer Newmarket Company	1856
William C. Endicott (H. U., 1847), lawyer and justice Supreme Judicial Court, present Secretary of War, (1887)	1857
Stephen B. Ives, bookseller	1858
Henry L. Williams, merchant	1859
James H. Battis, cigar manufacturer	1860
Stephen G. Wheatland (H. U., 1844), lawyer	1861–62
William G. Choate (H. U., 1852), lawyer	1863–64
Gilbert L. Streeter, editor and bank officer	1865, '70–72
Charles S. Osgood, lawyer, deputy collector and register of deeds	1866–69
William M. Hill, currier	1873–75
George W. Williams, clerk	1875
George H. Hill, druggist	1876
Arthur L. Huntington (H. U., 1870), lawyer	1877–78
William A. Hill, leather dealer	1879–80
John M. Raymond, lawyer	1881–82
William Leonard, shoe dealer	1883
Charles H. Ingalls, manufacturer	1884
John Robinson, treasurer Peabody Academy	1885–86
William E. Meade, locomotive engineer	1887

PRESENT CITY GOVERNMENT (1887).

Mayor.

JOHN M. RAYMOND.

Aldermen.

John H. Batchelder, president.

George A. Collins.	George W. Varney.
William L. Hyde.	Oliver D. Way.
William S. McIntire.	Urban R. Williams.

President of Common Council.

William E. Meade.

City Clerk.	*City Treasurer.*	*Water Board.*
Henry M. Meek.	F. A. Newell.	Alonzo H. Smith, president.

City Solicitor.

Forrest L. Evans.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

JOHN ENDICOTT.

John Endicott was born in Dorchester, England, in 1588. In 1623 a company known as the Dorchester Company established a colony at Cape Ann, near what is now Gloucester. This colony consisted of about fifty men, under the leadership of Roger Conant, and not long afterward removed to Naumkeag (now Salem). The Dorchester Company was organized by Rev. John White, of Dorchester, who, in response to letters from Conant favoring a permanent settlement, wrote to him that if he and John Woodbury, John Balch and Peter Palfray would remain at Naumkeag, he would, as soon as possible, obtain a patent and forward more men and supplies. In accordance with this promise, Mr. White obtained a patent from the Council for New England, dated March 19, 1628, conveying to six persons—Sir Henry Rosewell, Sir John Young, John Humphrey, Thomas Southcote, John Endicott and Simon Whitcomb—a tract of country described as "that part of New England lying between three miles north of the Merrimac, and three miles to the south of the Charles River, and of every part thereof in the Massachusetts Bay; and in length between the described breadth from the Atlantic to the South Sea." Some changes were afterwards made in the list of grantees by the retirement of Rosewell, Young and Southcote, and the substitution of Sir Richard Saltonstall and others in their places.

Under this patent, John Endicott, described as "a man of dauntless courage, benevolent, though austere, firm, though choleric, of a rugged nature, which his stern principles of non-conformity had not served to mellow," was sent out from England, and arrived, with his wife and a band of emigrants, in the ship "Abigail" at Salem September 6, 1628. He had been appointed in England Governor of the plantation, while Matthew Cradock had been chosen Governor of the Massachusetts Company in London. After his arrival in New England the English Company applied for a charter, which might give them authority to establish a government within the territory granted to them by the Council for New England. The charter was granted and passed the seal March 4, 1629. This charter created a corporation under the name of the "Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England." In 1630 John Winthrop, as Governor under the charter, assumed control of the colony, having arrived in June of that year. At the first meeting of the Court of Assistants, held at Charlestown August 23, 1630, it was ordered "that the Governor and Deputy-Governor for the time being shall always be justices of the peace, and that Sir Richard Saltonstall, Mr. Johnson, Mr. Endicott and Mr. Ludlowe shall be justices of the peace for the present time, in all things to have like power that justices of the peace hath in England for reformation of abuses and punishing of offenders." On the 7th of September, 1630, he took his seat as one of the assistants, and occupied that position many years. In 1636 he was appointed one of the magistrates to hold the Salem Court, and in the same year colonel of the regiment composed of the militia of the towns of Salem, Saugus, Ipswich and Newbury. In 1637 he was chosen "to be one of the standing consell for the term of his life," and in 1641 was chosen Deputy-Governor.

In 1644 he was chosen Governor and removed to Boston, and served almost continuously in that office until his death in Boston March 15, 1665. In 1645 he was made sergeant major-general, the highest military officer in the colony, and in 1652 established a mint, which was engaged in coinage more than thirty years. He was a man of good education, of fearless disposition and determined will. Whatever credit may be due to others in the successful establishment of the Massachusetts colony, it may be reasonably doubted whether his presence and influence were not essential parts of the great whole, which gave it a permanent life.

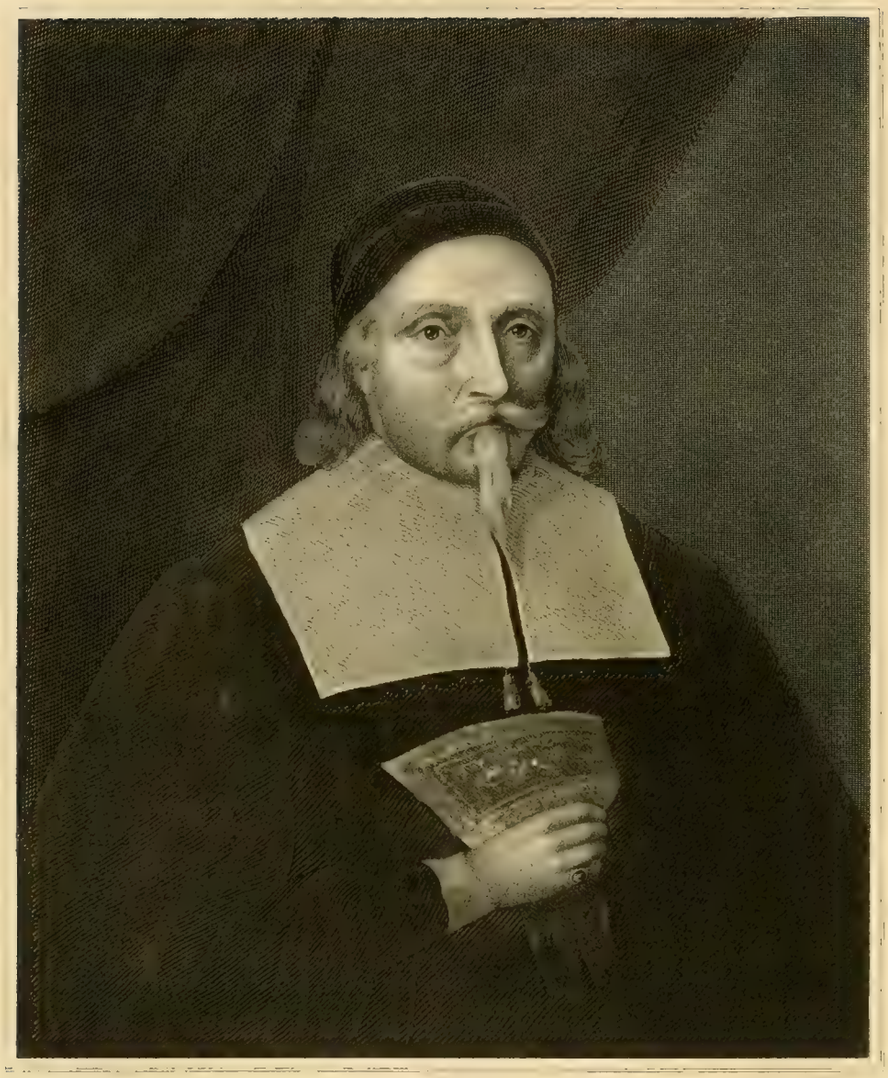
SIR RICHARD SALTONSTALL.

Sir Richard Saltonstall was born in Halifax, England, in 1586, and died in England about 1658. He was one of the grantees under the patent from the Council for New England, obtained by Rev. John White in behalf of the colony at Naumkeag, established under the leadership of Roger Conant. In the charter to the Massachusetts Company, which passed the seal March 4, 1629, he was the first named of the eighteen assistants provided for in that instrument, and came to New England with Winthrop in 1630. In March, 1635–36, he had a grant of one hundred acres of land in Watertown, and in June, 1641, a grant of five hundred acres "below Springfield." He finally returned to England, having previously revisited it in 1631. In 1644 he was in Holland, and there the portrait of him now in the possession of his descendants was painted. Breadth of mind and a liberal spirit were his marked characteristics, and have been inherited by the successive generations of his descendants. In 1651, in a letter to Rev. John Wilson and Rev. John Cotton, he lamented the narrow spirit of persecution prevailing in the colony, and urged upon them the exhibition of kindlier and more charitable judgment and treatment of those who had been subjected to persecution.

Sir Richard is spoken of more in detail in the sketch of Hon. Leverett Saltonstall, of Salem, in the chapter on the Bench and Bar, and in that sketch may be found a full statement of his family and ancestry.

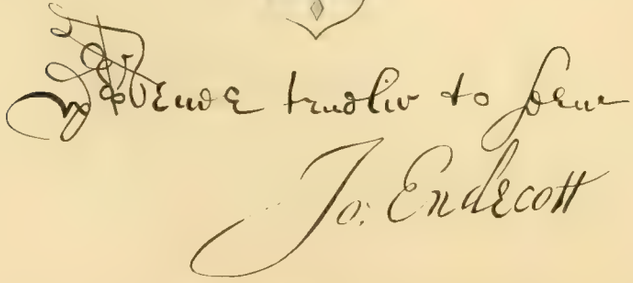
JOSEPH PEABODY.

Joseph Peabody was born in Middleton, in Essex County, which was made up of parts of Salem, Topsfield, Boxford and Andover, and incorporated June



FIRST GOVERNOR OF MASSACHUSETTS







Rie: Saltonstall



Jos. Peabody

20, 1728. His birthday was the 9th of December, 1757. He was descended from Francis Peabody, who came from St. Albans, Hertfordshire, England, in 1635, and was one of the earliest settlers of Topsfield. The American ancestor was doubtless a farmer, as were all his descendants in the line of Joseph Peabody, the subject of this sketch, down to himself. Indeed, it may be said that he, too, began the life of a farmer, for after his common-school education, not until he was eighteen years of age did he leave his father's farm to seek a fortune in the busy world.

It is probable that the popular excitement which attended the breaking out of the Revolutionary War, and the adventurous spirit which they would naturally develop, inspired that departure from the ways of his father which led him to a life of activity and finally to wealth.

It is said that when the British march on Lexington became known, though too young to be enrolled in the militia, Mr. Peabody joined the Boxford company as a volunteer, but arrived at the scene of action too late to take part in the battle. The subsequent draft of his brother-in-law into the army obliged him to take his place on the farm, and with a reluctant hand he toiled in uncongenial work until the end of his brother's campaign.

As soon as circumstances would permit, however, he went to Salem at the age of eighteen, and joined, probably as sailor, the privateer "Bunker Hill," belonging to E. H. Derby, of that town. After his recovering from a fever which afflicted him after his first cruise, he joined, probably as an officer, the privateer "Pilgrim," belonging to G. and A. Cabot. The second cruise, unlike the first, was successful and resulted in the capture of a British merchantman deeply laden and strongly armed, which Mr. Peabody, as prize-master, took into Thomaston, Me. A second cruise in the "Pilgrim" proving a failure in consequence of a storm, in which the vessel was dismasted, Mr. Peabody spent a year on shore acquiring that instruction and knowledge to which, more than any previous instruction, his future success was due. He pursued his studies during the year with Rev. Elias Smith, of Middleton, a man both of scholarship and of varied general knowledge.

In the month of August, 1778, he enlisted in the Middleton militia when they were called for to join General Sullivan in Rhode Island and aid in his attempt to rescue Newport from the British, and on his return from that unsuccessful expedition he made a voyage to Gottenburg in the letter of marque "Rambler." He next sailed as prize-master in the privateer "Fishhawk," commanded by Captain Foster, and was captured by a British man-of-war which Captain Foster had mistaken for a merchantman. After a short imprisonment at St. John, Newfoundland, he returned to Boston and, with the determination to abandon privateering, sailed as second officer in the letter of marque "Ranger," owned by Henry Sargent, of Boston, Henry Gardner and Ward & Chipman, of Salem. On this voyage a cargo of salt was carried from Salem to Richmond and a cargo of flour from Alexandria to Havana. He was now twenty-five years of age. On the next voyage a cargo of flour was shipped at Alexandria, and while lying at anchor at the mouth of the Potomac, the "Ranger" was surprised in the night by a party of American Loyalists, and only by the bravery of the master and crew and the gallantry of Mr. Peabody did she escape capture. In the engagement Mr. Peabody was severely wounded, and on the return of his vessel to Alexandria to refit, a boarding pike, richly mounted with silver and bearing a suitable inscription, was presented to him by the merchants of that place in recognition of his gallant conduct in the battle.

On account of the wounds received by Captain Simmons, of the "Ranger," the voyage was further prosecuted under the command of the first officer, and Mr. Peabody was promoted to his place. On her return from Curacoa the vessel was chased thirty-six hours by a man-of-war, but escaped into Havana, and soon returned to Salem.

After the declaration of peace Mr. Peabody was given command of a vessel owned by the Messrs. Gardner, of Salem, and was dispatched to St. Martin's from which port he sailed for Alexandria. There he was attacked by small-pox and obliged to abandon his command. On his return to Salem his earnings enabled him to purchase the schooner "Three Friends" and taking command, he made repeated voyages to the West Indies and Europe. For several years he thus acted in the double capacity of captain and merchant, assiduously pursuing the advantages which the revival of trade after the Revolution afforded, and laying firm and deep, not only by the accumulation of capital, but by a valuable commercial education, the foundations of his future wealth.

He retired from the sea in 1791, when thirty-four years of age, and married in that year Catherine Smith, the daughter of the minister of Middleton, under whose care a portion of his education was conducted. In two years his wife died, and in 1795 he married her sister, Elizabeth, with whom he led a happy life of nearly fifty years. From this time forward, with the knowledge he had acquired, in the various ports he had visited, of the methods and opportunities of profitable trade, his business rapidly increased. With his business he increased the number of his vessels, and during his whole career built eighty-three ships, which he largely freighted himself, and for which, at different times, he shipped more than seven thousand seamen. After the year 1811 he promoted to captaincies thirty-five who had entered his employ as boys. It is stated that in these vessels, before the War of 1812, thirty-eight voyages were made to Calcutta, seventeen to Canton, thirty-two to Sumatra, forty-seven to St. Petersburg, ten to other northern European ports and twenty to the Mediterranean.

The West Indies, the Spanish Main and the northwest coast came also within the range of his enterprises.

The business of Mr. Peabody always had Salem for its headquarters, and from and to that port all his vessels sailed, and from there was distributed in coasting vessels the merchandise which they had brought from all parts of the world. His ships were built and equipped there, and it may be easily imagined how much employment he gave to his townsmen and how largely he promoted the prosperity and growth of the town.

At various times he had as partners in business Mr. Thomas Perkins, who sailed with him in his early privateering voyages, and Mr. Gideon Tucker, both of whom, though men of great business capacity, reaped abundantly the benefit of the master-mind of their partner.

The career of Mr. Peabody sufficiently indicates, without a definite analysis, his character. To have accomplished it he must necessarily have possessed certain qualities, without which it would have been a failure instead of a remarkable success. His temperament was cool, his judgment was unerring, his estimate of men was almost infallible. He was cautious and careful in making his calculations and reaching conclusions, but his calculations when made were always correct and from his conclusions no argument or obstacles could swerve him. But underlying and supplementing all his qualities as a business man was the experience of his early life at the lowest round in the commercial ladder, which made his steady progress comparatively easy and sure.

Mr. Peabody died on the 5th of January, 1844, at the age of eighty-six years. His widow died on the 28th of February, 1854, at the age of eighty-seven years.

COL. FRANCIS PEABODY.

Colonel Francis Peabody was the son of Joseph Peabody, of Salem, and a lineal descendant from Lieutenant Francis Peabody, of St. Albans, Hertfordshire, England, born in 1614, who came to New England in the ship "Planter" in 1635 and first settled in Ipswich. In 1638 Lieutenant Francis Peabody removed to Hampton, in the old county of Norfolk, but in or about the year 1650 took up his permanent residence in Topsfield. He married Mary, daughter of Reginald Foster, and had children.

Joseph, one of his descendants, was born Dec. 12, 1757, whose sketch is included in this volume; married, first, August 28, 1791, Catherine, and second, October 24, 1795, Elizabeth, daughters of Rev. Elias Smith, of Middleton.

Colonel Francis Peabody, one of the sons of Joseph, born December 7, 1801, was placed, at ten years of age, in Dummer Academy, at Byfield, under the care of Rev. Abiel Abbott. At the age of twelve he was placed in a select private school kept by Jacob Newman Knapp, in Brighton, where he remained four years. Here ended his academic education. His predilection for scientific pursuits was so strong that a collegiate career was abandoned, and his time and energies were devoted to the study of mechanics and chemistry. In 1820, at the age of eighteen, he took passage in the ship "Augustus," belonging to his father, to Russia to re-establish his health, which had been seriously impaired by a fever which, during its ravages, threatened his life and had left him somewhat enfeebled. From Cronstadt, the port of destination, Mr. Peabody made a tour into the interior of Russia and returned home in the "Augustus" with renewed health and a zeal for his chosen work strengthened and matured. During the next two winters he attended courses of scientific lectures in Boston and Philadelphia, in the latter city forming an acquaintance with the distinguished scientist, Dr. Hare, which proved of special benefit to him in his course of study.

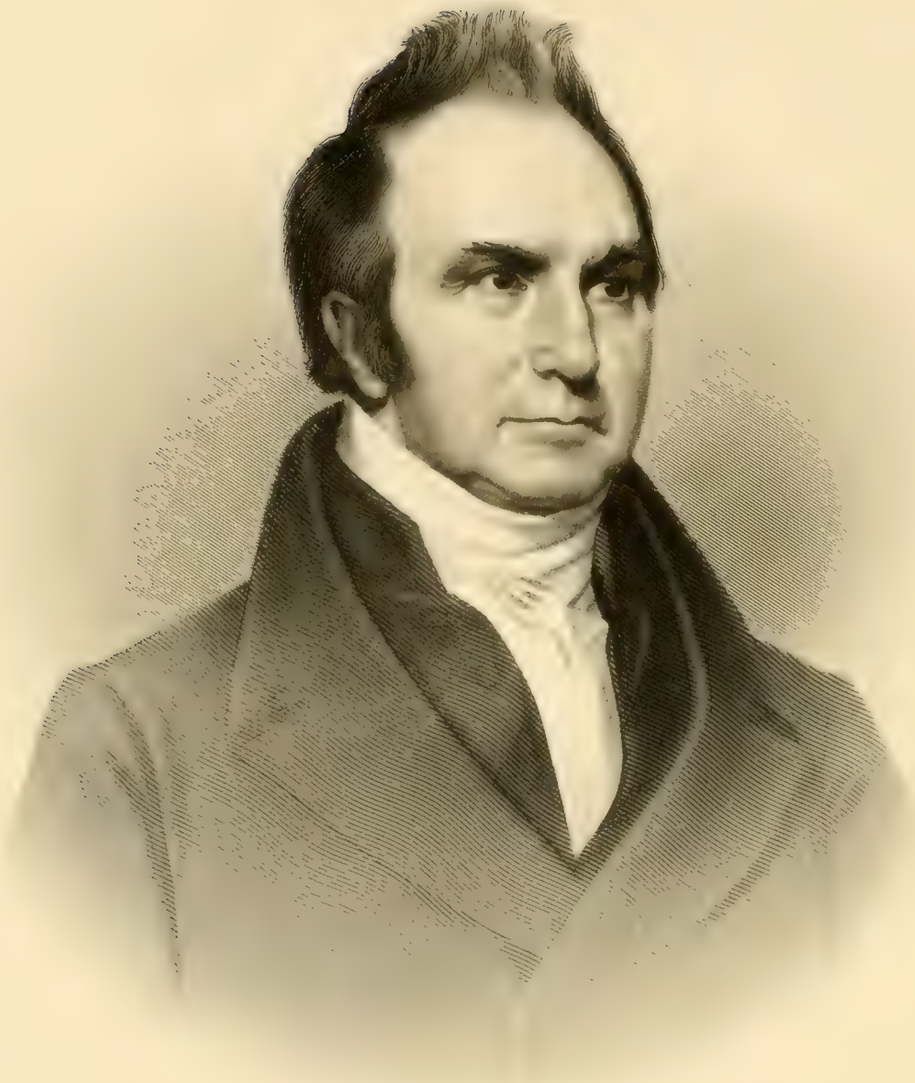
Nor was his enthusiasm confined to scientific pursuits. His attention was turned to military matters, and as whatever subject he applied his mind to he studied with earnestness and easily mastered, he was soon in command of a battalion of artillery and was rapidly promoted to a lieutenant-colonelcy of a regiment. In 1825 he was transferred to the infantry as colonel of the First Regiment, First Brigade, Second Division of the Massachusetts Militia, and ever afterwards bore the title which he then acquired. Hon. Charles W. Upham, an intimate and devoted friend of Colonel Peabody, in a memoir, to which the writer of this sketch is indebted for much of its material, says that, "having exhausted the activities of a military life, it had no charms for Francis Peabody, and he forthwith gave himself back to his predominating tastes and to the inexhaustible satisfactions they afforded him. Yielding again and now once for all to the spirit of the place, he renewed his philosophical and inventive operations and engaged in branches of business, manufacturing and commercial, to which they led him, remaining always on hand, however, to bear his part in movements for the general welfare."

Colonel Peabody was among the first to introduce the system of public lectures on scientific and literary subjects, which did so much to instruct the last generation and spread intelligence among the people. In 1828 he gave a free course of lectures in Franklin Hall, in Salem, on the history and uses of the steam-engine, and the next season gave a similar course in Concert Hall, in the same city, on electricity. These lectures awakened in the community a sense of the value of knowledge, which took form in the establishment of lyceums not only in Essex County, but throughout the commonwealth.

Colonel Peabody had, in 1826, connected himself with the establishment of the business of the "Forest River Lead Company," but in 1833 he built the paper-mills in Middleton. At a later date he began on an extended scale the business of refining sperm and



George Peabody



Dudley L. Pickman.

right whale oil and the manufacture of candles, and also erected at Middleton linseed oil mills. As Mr. Upham says, "The application of science to practical and useful arts was not only the unwearied labor, but the happy entertainment of his life." The establishments projected by him were carried on by machinery which owed their perfection to his inventive skill.

He was a member of the Academy of Arts and Sciences, and during many visits to Europe made it his business as well as pleasure "to explore whatever illustrated the application of philosophical principles to the useful arts." His services in the introduction of aluminium in dentistry and in the preparation and use of flax are well known to persons of the last generation interested in these branches of science and industry.

In 1865 Colonel Peabody succeeded Asahel Huntington as president of the Essex Institute and continued in office until his death, which occurred October 31, 1867. On the 7th of July, 1823, he married Martha, daughter of Samuel Endicott, the seventh in descent from John Endicott, the governor of the plantation in Essex, and had children.

This inadequate sketch of the career of Colonel Peabody suggests the prevailing traits in his character. He inherited wealth, but neither permitted it to lessen his activities and paralyze his usefulness nor used it for display or personal aggrandizement. The diffusion of knowledge, the elevation of public taste, the establishment of pure morality, the happiness of his home and the prosperity of his children were the ends he sought, and to these ends he lavishly devoted his time and means. He was universally respected and beloved by the community in which he lived, and the memory of his warm heart, his open hand, his cheerful spirit, his unsullied purity, his untarnished integrity and his irreproachable life is still fresh in the homes of his native city.

DUDLEY LEAVITT PICKMAN

Was born in Salem on the 4th day of May, 1779. He was the fifth in descent from Benjamin Pickman, who came to Salem from Bristol, England, about the year 1666. His grandfather, also named Benjamin, was a successful and public-spirited merchant, and it was he who built and occupied the fine old house on Essex Street, next to the present East India Marine Hall. William, the father of the subject of this sketch, was a man much respected and esteemed, although, being a younger son, he inherited but little wealth. Washington appointed him naval officer of the port of Salem, which position he held twelve years, until, on the election of Jefferson, he was removed to give place to a Democrat. He married a daughter of the Rev. Dudley Leavitt, minister of the Tabernacle Church, in Salem. Mrs. Leavitt was a sister of that sturdy old Federalist, Colonel Timothy Pickering. William's eldest son, a young man of great promise, bearing his father's name, was lost at sea, and his only daughter, Elizabeth, married Daniel Abbott, a distinguished lawyer of Dunstable, (afterwards Nashua), New Hampshire. The second son, Dudley Leavitt Pickman, after receiving a common-school education, was for a time clerk in his father's department at the Custom-House; then, like so many of his fellow-townsmen, he followed the sea for about ten years, acting as supercargo and agent for several well-known commercial houses in Boston and Salem. Soon after the War of 1812 he commenced business in Salem, associated with the brothers Nathaniel, William and Zachariah F. Silsbee and Robert Stone. This partnership continued for more than thirty years. Their business was extensive, and their vessels made voyages to all quarters of the world. They were among the first to engage in the trade with Zanzibar and Madagascar, since so successfully carried on from Salem, but their principal business was with Sumatra, Java and the Philippine Islands. The ship "Endeavour," owned by them, was built by Christopher Turner, near Frye's Mills, in Salem. The brig "Persia," which was afterwards lost on Eastern Point, Cape Ann, with all on board, was launched from near Phillips' Wharf, and the ship "Borneo" from South Salem. The "Friendship," another of their vessels, was attacked by Malay pirates off the coast of Sumatra, and after the first officer and several of the crew had been killed, was captured and plundered. In addition to foreign commerce, Mr. Pickman took a strong interest in manufacturing enterprises. Unlike most of the merchants of that time, who were free traders, Mr. Pickman was an early advocate of a protective tariff, believing that the introduction of manufacturing industries was of vital importance to the prosperity of the country. He was a member of each of the companies which purchased the land and water-power where the cities of Lowell, Manchester and Lawrence now stand, and also a large stockholder in many of the early cotton and woolen-mills in Massachusetts and New Hampshire. Later, he took the same strong interest in railroads, then a novelty and an experiment. Probably, in the records of a majority of the railroads first built in New England his name would be found as an original subscriber.

He performed valuable services in the Massachusetts Legislature, to both branches of which he was several times elected, though not a seeker after political office. Always ready to give his time and service to public or charitable institutions, the unfortunate and needy were sure to find in him a willing friend. In politics an ardent Federalist and great admirer of Alexander Hamilton, he acted, after the extinction of that party, with the National Republicans and Whigs.

He was an active member of the North Church of Salem, and took a deep interest in the rise and spread of Unitarianism, many of the clergymen of

that denomination being among his most valued friends. Strong good sense, sound judgment, great clearness of perception and statement were his most striking characteristics. Eminently just and honorable in all his dealings and despising everything false or tricky, he was nevertheless a man of strong prejudices, but he did not allow them to betray him into injustice. Mr. Pickman was not only an accomplished merchant, familiar with everything relating to accounts, the laws and usages of insurance, banking and exchanges, but extensive reading, aided by an excellent memory, had given him a vast fund of general information, particularly on historical and geographical subjects and the politics of Europe and this country, as well as a good knowledge of the best English and French literature. He was a large man physically, fully six feet two inches in height, of striking presence, with a fine head and expansive forehead, indicating decided brain-power. His manners had all the dignity and courtesy of the old school. The brick house on the corner of Chestnut and Pickering Streets, built in 1819, was occupied by him until his death, which occurred in 1846. He was married, in 1810, to Catherine, daughter of Thomas Sanders, of Salem. Three children survived him: Catherine Sanders, married to Richard S. Fay, of Boston; Elizabeth Leavitt, to Richard S. Rogers, of Salem; and William Dudley, to Caroline, daughter of Zachariah F. Silsbee, of Salem.

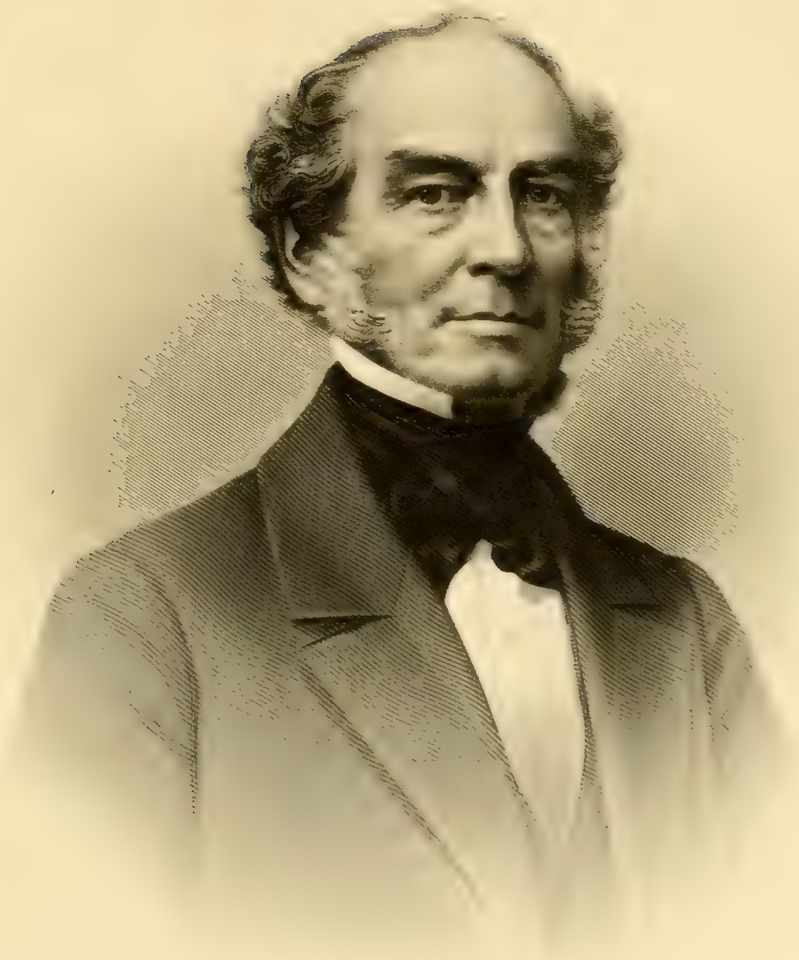
A son of the last, born in Salem in 1850, and a grandson, born at Geneva, Switzerland, in 1885, both bear the name of Dudley Leavitt Pickman.

RICHARD S. ROGERS.

Richard Saltonstall Rogers was born in Salem January 13, 1790, and was a lineal descendant, not from John Rogers, the martyr, as has been supposed by some, but from another John Rogers, a contemporary of the martyr, living in another part of England. This John Rogers had two sons,—the Rev. Richard Rogers, of Weathersfield, and John, who lived in Chelmsford. The latter son, John, was the father of Rev. John Rogers, of Dedham, England, who was the father of Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, who was born in Haverhill, England, in 1598, came to New England in 1636, and was settled at Ipswich in 1637. The Rev. Nathaniel Rogers married Margaret Crane, and was the father of Rev. John Rogers, of Ipswich, born in Coggeshall, England, in 1630, who graduated at Harvard College in 1649, and was its president from April 10, 1682, until his death, July 2, 1684. The Rev. John Rogers, the president, married Elizabeth Dennison, and was the father of another Rev. John Rogers, of Ipswich, who was born in Ipswich in 1666, and graduated at Harvard in 1684. The last John married Martha Whittingham, and was the father of Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, of Ipswich, born September 22, 1701, and a graduate at Harvard in 1721. The Rev. Nathaniel Rogers married, first, December 25, 1728, Mary, daughter of John Leverett, president of Harvard College, and widow of Colonel John Denison, of Ipswich, and second, Mary, daughter of Thomas Burnam, and the widow of Daniel Staniford. By his second wife he had Nathaniel, born March 11, 1762, and a graduate at Harvard in 1782. The last Nathaniel married Abigail, daughter of Colonel Abraham Dodge, and had Nathaniel Leverett, August 6, 1785, who married, October 24, 1813, Harriet, daughter of Aaron Wait, of Salem; John Whittingham, who married Austin, daughter of Colonel Benjamin Pickman, of Salem; Richard S., the subject of this sketch, January 13, 1790; William Augustus, who graduated at Harvard in 1811; and Daniel Dennison, who died in infancy.

About the year 1790, after the birth of his two oldest children, Nathaniel Rogers removed from Ipswich to Salem. Richard Saltonstall, with his brothers, was educated at the common schools, and in early manhood entered with energy and enthusiasm upon a business career. At that time Jerathmael Peirce, the father of Benjamin Peirce, librarian of Harvard College from 1826 to 1831, and grandfather of the late Benjamin Peirce, professor of astronomy and mathematics at Harvard, was, with Aaron Wait, under the firm name of Wait & Peirce, largely engaged in Salem in the foreign trade. Nathaniel Leverett Rogers, the oldest brother of Richard, married, in 1813, Harriet, the daughter of Mr. Wait, and through his influence Richard obtained large consignments of merchandise to Russia, and spent several years in that country engaged in the management of the affairs of that enterprising house. In 1816 he sailed as supercargo in the ship "Friendship," belonging to the same house, on a voyage to Lisbon and Calcutta, and after successive voyages in that capacity, and one voyage on the ship "Tartar," as master, he, with his next oldest brother, John Whittingham Rogers, was taken into partnership by his oldest brother, Nathaniel Leverett Rogers, who had already established himself at Salem in foreign trade, under the name of Rogers Brothers. The three brothers, all of whom were quick-sighted, quick-witted and quick to act where shrewd calculation and clear judgment led the way, started at once on a career which, during twenty years, overcame every obstacle in the way of its success.

The older readers of this sketch will remember the vessels in their employ and the captains who commanded them,—the "Grotius," "Augustus," "Tybee," "Clay," "Nereus," "Quill" and "Charles Daggett," will be recognized as names of vessels of which not a timber-head remains, while the names of their masters—Woodbury, Ward, Skerry, Neal, Farley, Vanderford, Kinsman, Lamson, King, Mugford, Bowditch, Brookhouse and Drevin—only recall the past and its busy days of active commercial life. With these ships and masters the Rogers Brothers



Rob. C. Winthrop



John Bertram

were the pioneers in the Zanzibar and New Holland trades, and besides numerous voyages to South America and various European ports, there were performed by them more than one hundred and twenty voyages around either Cape Horn or the Cape of Good Hope.

Those who are familiar with the facilities which ocean cables afford to the merchant who sends his ship to-day into distant seas find it difficult to appreciate the judgment and skill and heroic courage without which no man could successfully engage in foreign commerce fifty years ago. Now the owner communicates with his master in every port, and orders are postponed to meet the exigencies as they arise. Then a one or two or three years' voyage was planned at the start, and its successful termination was a triumph of business skill. Of this skill the Rogers Brothers were largely the possessors and until unexpected and undeserved reverses met them, in 1842, their career was smooth and prosperous.

But the reverses were not sufficient to discourage or depress Mr. Rogers. He met them with the same undaunted courage which he had always exhibited when perils threatened and disaster was nigh. He again adopted the occupation of his early life and sailed as supercargo to Australia in the ship "Ianthe," Captain Woodbury, opening with hope a new chapter in his life. He afterwards became engaged in commerce to some extent with his brother-in-law, W. D. Pickman, of Salem and Boston, and never permitted himself, as long as health and strength remained to fall away from active and absorbing pursuits.

Mr. Rogers married, May 14, 1822, Sarah G., daughter of Hon. Jacob Crowninshield, and had William Crowninshield; Richard Denison, who married Martha Endicott, daughter of Colonel Francis Peabody; Jacob Crowninshield, who married Elizabeth, daughter of Colonel Francis Peabody; Sarah and George, who died early; and Arthur Saltonstall. He married, second, March 17, 1847, Elizabeth L., daughter of Hon. Dudley L. Pickman, of Salem, and had Dudley Pickering; George Willoughby, who married Josephine Lord, of Peabody; and Elizabeth P., who married Mr. Pound, and resides in England.

Mr. Rogers was a man who never sought popularity nor office. His individuality was strong, his opinions were his own and not easily changed, his will was indomitable, and for many years his influence in political and civil life was marked. He was at various times a member of the Common Council of Salem and of the Legislature, but the methods of modern politicians were distasteful to him and he had no ambition to keep them company. He died June 11, 1873, at Salem, at the ripe age of eighty-three years.

CAPTAIN JOHN BERTRAM.

Among the names which Salem holds in loving and lasting remembrance, there are few, if any, which are more highly esteemed than that of John Bertram. He was a notable representative of a class of men who, as civilization advances, grow more and more important in their influence upon society. In a business age like our own, a great merchant is pre-eminently a factor of force. He and his work touch the community at an infinite number of points. His honest successes are an inspiration to the multitude of workers, the patience and industry by which he wins his wealth and standing are a rebuke to the idlers who take life easily and hope to find short cuts to fortune, his methods are suggestive and healthful, and his history is a school book for beginners to study. In the record of human activities there is nothing finer than the story of the career of a truly great and honorable merchant.

And both as a great and honorable merchant John Bertram was exceptionally eminent. He owed nothing to fortune. Born in humble circumstances with no friends to push him, and no capital with which to begin the world, he shouldered himself to the first rank of successful business men by sheer force of will and patient endurance. He first saw the light in the Isle of Jersey, February 11, 1796. His family were residents of the Parish of St. Saviour, to which parish his ancestry as far back as he was able to trace it had always belonged. The Bertram family belonged to the middle class, in the somewhat peculiar society of the unique island which is both French and English. The ancient parish church is still standing, and in later life Mr. Bertram had the pleasure of revisiting the very locality where, as a boy, he had played, and of entering again the old church in whose very shadow he had perhaps in his earlier years nursed ambitions and hopes that were to be realized in his later life. Beyond question, that old church and its surroundings had something to do with imparting a permanent tinge to his thoughts and feelings, for through a long life he showed a profound reverence for and interest in religious matters, and a sketch of the old church procured in his later years was one of the most highly esteemed of his household treasures.

The family came to America in 1807, and settled in Salem. Like all adventurous Salem boys of that day, John conceived a grand passion for the sea. The shop where he worked was within hearing of the lapping of the waves, and through the windows he could catch sight of the lines of masts and the white gleam of the canvass and the songs of the sailors outward or homeward bound, seemed to invite him to become a wanderer on the ocean. At last a decision was reached, and in December, 1812, Captain Bertram, then sixteen years old, shipped for his first voyage on board a vessel bound for Alexandria and Lisbon, rated on the ship's lists as a "boy" with a pay of five dollars a month. Then came the exciting times of the War of 1812, and after his return from his first voyage he followed the adventurous life of a privateer

until he found himself a prisoner on board the prison ship "Alicant," at Bermuda, and in 1815 one of the unhappy captives confined in the prison ship at Plymouth, England.

The close of the war released Captain Bertram from his captivity, and he found himself at home again, with very little to show for his years of hard service. But the boy's romance had become the purpose of the man, and he was soon afloat again, serving in vessel after vessel, voyaging to all parts of the world, rising from grade to grade, until he found himself in command, retiring from the hard life of the sea in 1832, after twenty years of tasking and faithful service. From thence on he continued in the ordinary routine of commercial business until 1848, when the discovery of gold in California set the world on fire. Captain Bertram was quick to discern the value of this new opening for business, and sent out the first vessel from the States after the discovery of gold, and the third vessel which arrived from any port. He, with others, subsequently built a number of ships for the trade, most of them clippers, some of them very large. From 1852 to 1858 he gradually narrowed the range of his commercial business, until at last he confined it to trade in the Indian seas. In 1856 he became interested in Western railroads, and carried into the new business the same energy and caution and foresight which had characterized him in other departments of activity. There, as elsewhere, his ability commanded success, and his faculty for organization enabled him to spend his last years with his business so well in hand, that he was free from anxiety and relieved from overburdensome labor. At the same time he did not intermit his vigilance. Useful occupation was his delight, and he devoutly believed that if a man wished to be well served, he must serve himself. His quiet office was an observavatory, whose windows looked north, south, east and west, and he kept watch of what was going on that concerned him, both on the far shores of Zanzibar and beyond the roll of the Mississippi. Wherever the business was the man was, to plan and oversee and superintend.

Perhaps the most notable thing about Captain Bertram—certainly the thing by which he will be longest and most lovingly remembered—was his openhandedness. He was no importunate creditor in the transaction of business. The number of obligations due him, which were cancelled without payment, will never appear upon the open record. Impatient as he might be at any attempt to defraud him, intolerant as he was of all shiftlessness and extravagance, yet when misfortune overtook his debtors, they had nothing to fear from him. Instead of being their persecutor, demanding the pound of flesh nominated in the bond, he was sure to become their helper. He took especial interest in young men in their early business struggles, and was ready to assist them, both with advice, which, however valuable, is cheap, and also with financial aid, which most men do not furnish so readily. He had been young himself, and knew all the perplexities of beginnings, and, out of his own experience, caught the impulse to save others from what he had suffered himself.

And this open-handedness was not a matter of selfish calculation. It came out of large-heartedness. This business consideration was supplemented by most munificent liberality. During the dark days of the War of the Rebellion he was a most intense patriot, in purse as well as profession. The wants of the soldiers never plead with him in vain, and he often anticipated the cry for help before it was uttered. The records of the Grand Army show that this generous interest was not a momentary enthusiasm. To the close of his life he kept in mind the needs and the deserts of the defenders of the Union, and his unrecorded liberalities in their behalf were quite as numerous as his formal donations. The forlorn condition of the race whom the war liberated was constantly and pressingly present with him, and any plan for their elevation was sure to receive generous consideration at his hand; so that he made himself powerfully felt in the schools and educational movements undertaken in behalf of the freedmen. Soldiers and freedmen alike never lost a better friend than Mr. Bertram.

The needs of his own community made constant and large demands upon his sympathy. He was always ready to listen to a story of want, and no deserving applicant failed of a helping as well as a hearing. His generous instincts often foresaw the formal appeal for assistance. He kept a list, to which he was constantly adding new names, of needy families, to whom he annually sent supplies of fuel, and he left in trust to the city a large amount, the income of which was to be used year by year in providing wood and coal for the poor, and no nobler or more judicious legacy was ever made. Morning by morning his hand kindles the fires on scores of the hearthstones of the destitute, and his memory is kept alive by the gracious light and warmth in multitudes of the homes of poverty. A benefaction of that sort is a well-considered charity.

Captain Bertram's liberalities of this nature were numerous. His gifts to the Salem Hospital, his establishment of the Bertram Home for Aged Men, his legacy to the Children's Friends' Society were all on a munificent scale, and will go on doing a work of blessing for generations to come.

No other single citizen of Salem has done more for the good name and real welfare of the municipality than Captain John Bertram. His life was a striking illustration of the fact that wise and generous giving does not impoverish a man. The serene content of his old age was the result of a useful and unselfish life,—a forcible and instructive lesson to those whose highest ideal of living is a constant struggle for merely personal advantage. The tears of the hun-



Jacob Putnam

dreds whom he had helped, that watered his grave when he was borne to his rest at the ripe term of eighty-six years, were the most satisfying tribute which any man can receive. The regret at his loss, with which his name is always spoken, is conclusive evidence that a useful and generous life is the fairest which any man can live. This is the true earthly immortality which is best worth the having.

So long as Salem is well spoken of by those who are acquainted with the ancient city, there will be coupled with its other claims to regard and renown the name of JOHN BERTRAM.

JACOB PUTNAM.

The late Jacob Putnam was one of the founders of the leather business in this vicinity. He was a man of a kindly nature, of indomitable energy and unflinching integrity, and possessed a large share of that intuitive knowledge of human nature which lies at the foundation of success in every vocation.

He was of English descent and traced his lineage back among the earliest settlers of this Commonwealth, to John Putnam, of Aylesbury, Buckingham County, England, who, with his wife and three sons, sailed from London, in 1631, for New England. He disembarked that same year in Boston, and, after a short stay in Charlestown, proceeded with his family to the then infant village of Salem, and here fixed his new place of abode. That he had been a man of note and had attained prominence in his native country is shown by the fact that a tract of land in Salem was now granted to him by the Crown for distinguished services rendered to the English government. Upon this tract he soon erected a house for himself and one also for each of his three sons, and devoted himself to the subjugation of the wilderness and the development and improvement of his new estate. His family increased and multiplied with the lapse of years, and by the achievements of many of its members the family name of Putnam has attained a deservedly high reputation both in the arts of peace and of war. The immediate descendants of this first emigrant were active, discreet and courageous men, fully alive to all the interests of the early settlers of New England and active and stirring in all the exciting struggles which marked our colonial history. They took part in all the combats with the Indians, at Bloody Brook, Brookfield, Lancaster and other now famous fights. The family soon attained prominence in Salem and, indeed, in the whole of Essex County, the sound judgment and vigorous integrity of its members making them fit leaders in all new enterprises, from the institution of a church to the prosecution of a business venture, and safe guides to wise decisions on the many knotty points that tasked the ingenuity of our ancestors as they laid broad and deep the foundations of our present commonwealth.

General Israel Putnam was from one of the branches of this family; and his impetuous zeal and daring, which might have degenerated into audacity had it not been so shrewdly tempered with New England discretion, have been displayed in many other members of the family.

One of the sons of this John Putnam, the founder of the family, was Nathaniel, and through him, his son Benjamin, his grandson Stephen, and his great-grandson Stephen, the younger, a share of the ancestral estate originally granted by the Crown to John Putnam came to Jacob Putnam, the subject of this sketch, and fifth in the line of descent from the original settler. Jacob Putnam was born at Danvers November 17, 1780, near the close of the Revolutionary War, and grew up to manhood in Salem and in Danvers. He did not enjoy great opportunities of education, having to depend upon the common schools of his neighborhood for the slender education which he obtained from others. But his best education, as is not infrequently the case, was that which he owed to himself alone. He had inherited the traits of his ancestors in no small measure, and his good judgment and common sense enabled him always to be equal to the demands of any situation in which he found himself, and fully capable of carrying on an active business career. The same adventurous spirit which had found vent in the daring achievements of General Putnam led Jacob Putnam in his early manhood to seek fortune in maritime commerce; but his sound judgment soon persuaded him to settle down into the steady pursuits of a business life. In the year 1805 he made a trip to Calcutta in the good ship "Boston Packet," and was absent from his home for two years.

Upon his return to Salem from this voyage, in the year 1807, he established himself in the hide and leather business. This business he prosecuted in all its branches, dealing in hides, tanning, currying and marketing the finished product, extending his operations as opportunities offered, and always availing himself of whatever improvements were within his reach. He also engaged in the South American trade importing both hides and India rubber from that country. He was interested in the Sumatra trade and became a ship-owner and importer. He continued the active prosecution of his business until his death, which occurred January 18, 1866, when it passed to his youngest son, George F. Putnam, of Boston, the present proprietor.

Mr. Putnam's wife was the daughter of Captain James Silver, of Salem, an East India merchant.

Though Mr. Putnam held himself aloof from any political office, he was a highly public-spirited man, and always took a sagacious and intelligent interest in all matters relating to the improvement of his native city. His generous and kindly nature was also active in many directions, especially in private charities, for he had none of that vanity which seeks to make a public display of its benefactions; and his humane and kindly disposition was known by its

fruits to many a poor family, which had good reason to mourn his death.

Mr. Putnam was also a man of deep feeling of patriotism and eager to promote the welfare of his country. He served as a soldier in the War of 1812, doing duty on the sea-coast defenses at Salem, and serving the public and his country in other directions. He took a deep interest in the prosperity and success of the religious enterprises of his day, both in his native city and in the country at large, and contributed generously towards their support. He was interested in fostering everything that would promote the progress and prosperity of his community and of his country. A man of the highest probity and honor, his character was unstained, and he died respected and honored by all who knew him.

STEPHEN C. PHILLIPS.

Stephen Clarendon Phillips was descended from Rev. George Phillips, who was the son of Christopher Phillips, of Rainham, in the county of Norfolk, England. Rev. George Phillips was born in 1593, and was educated at Tittleshall. He entered Gouville & Cain's College, Cambridge, April 20, 1610, receiving the degree of A. B. 1613 and A. M. in 1617. He came to New England in the "Arbella" in 1630, and settled in Watertown, where he died. By a first wife, who was a Hayward, he had a son, Samuel, born in 1625, who graduated at Harvard in 1650, and succeeded Rev. Ezekiel Rogers as minister of Rowley. Samuel married, in 1651, Sarah, daughter of Samuel Appleton, a native of England, who was one of the first settlers of Ipswich. By a second wife (Elizabeth Welden) Rev. George Phillips had Zerobabel, February 5, 1632; Jonathan, October 19, 1633; Theophilus, April 28, 1636; Annible, October, 1637; Ephraim, 1640; Obadiah, 1641; and Abiel. Jonathan, one of these children, married, January 26, 1680, Sarah, daughter of Jeremiah Holland (Harvard College, 1645), was a schoolmaster and magistrate, and died at Watertown, his native place, in 1704. His children were Sarah, born September 14, 1682; Abigail, April 22, 1683; Jonathan, 1685; George, Nathaniel, Elizabeth, Ruth, Sarah and Hannah. Jonathan, one of these children, was born in Watertown, and married, February 27, 1717, Hepzibah, daughter of Stephen Parker, of that place. He removed, in 1719, to Marblehead, and, about 1740, to Newport, R. I., where he died. His children were Stephen, born July 18, 1718, Ruth and others. Stephen, one of these children, was born in Watertown, and married Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Elkins, of Marblehead. He was a prominent man, deacon of the Congregational Church, and, in Revolutionary times, an ardent patriot and a member of the Committee of Safety and Correspondence. He died in Marblehead March 1, 1801. His children were Mary, born August 22, 1755; Elizabeth, November 28, 1757; Sarah, February 23, 1760; Stephen, November 13, 1764; Lydia, January 17, 1767; William, November 15, 1769. Stephen, one of these children, was born in Marblehead, and for some years was a ship-master in the employ of E. Hasket Derby, of Salem. About the year 1800 he removed to Salem, after which time he was engaged in commerce, except during the last few years of his life, when he spent his summers on his estate in North Danvers. Salem continued, however, to be his residence, and there he died October 19, 1838. He married Dorcas, daughter of Dudley and Dorcas (March) Woodbridge, of Salem, who died at Salem June 15, 1802.

Stephen Clarendon Phillips, the subject of this sketch, was the son of the last-named Stephen, and was born in Salem November 4, 1801. But the distinguished character of his ancestry is not confined to the family whose name he bore. Through his mother (Dorcas Woodbridge) he was descended from Rev. John Woodbridge, a follower of Wickliffe, in the latter part of the fifteenth century, whose son John braved the dangers of the same faith, as did a line of four direct descendants, all clergymen, and all named John. The last John, minister at Stanton Witts, in England, married Sarah, the daughter of Robert Parker, and sister of Thomas Parker, who came to New England and settled in Newbury in 1695. His son, Rev. John Woodbridge, came to New England in 1635, and died in Newbury, March 17, 1695. He married, in 1639, Mary, daughter of Governor Thomas Dudley, and thus the Dudley as well as the Woodbridge blood runs in the veins of the Phillips family. Nor is this all; Benjamin Woodbridge, son of the last Rev. John, and great-grandfather of Dorcas (Woodbridge) Phillips, married Mary, grand-daughter of Rev. Nathaniel Ward, of Ipswich, the author of the "Body of Liberties," adopted as a code of laws by the General Court of Massachusetts in 1641.

Mr. Phillips graduated at Harvard in 1819, and at once entered into active business as a merchant, and in 1822, at the age of twenty-one, was the head of a family, an extensive business man and Representative in the General Court. On the 6th of November in that year he married Jane Appleton, daughter of Willard Peele, of Salem, who died December 19, 1837. On the 3d of September, 1838, he married Margaret Mason Peele, sister of his first wife, who died at Salem July 15, 1883. The children of his first wife were Stephen Henry, born August 16, 1823, whose sketch may be found in the history of the Bench and Bar, in the second chapter of this work; Willard Peele, September 7, 1825, well known in recent years as one of the efficient and successful trustees and managers of the Eastern Railroad; George William, November 27, 1827 (Harvard, 1847); Henry Ware, August 19, 1829; Jane Peele, February 24, 1833; Margaret Peele and Catharine Peele (twins), June 30, 1835; and Abbott Lawrence, December 7, 1837. The children of his second wife were Walter Mason, May 26, 1839; Charles Appleton, January 30, 1841 (Har-



S. C. Phillips.



C. Wm. Bauer



E. D. Kimball

vard, 1860); Edward Woodbridge, August 3, 1842; and Catharine, July 7, 1844.

Mr. Phillips was an ardent lover of his native city, a man of overflowing public spirit, and with a heart which beat with warm sympathy in response to the appeals of his neighbors and fellow-townsmen in behalf of all deserving enterprises and charities. The educational interests of Salem won his early and constant aid and support, and for many years he presided over the board which had them in charge. In 1830 he was chosen State Senator, and in 1834 was chosen in the place of Rufus Choate, who had resigned his seat, to represent the Essex South District in Congress. His duties in Washington were ably performed, and by his generous spirit, his thorough integrity, his business methods and his kindly deportment, he won the confidence and friendship of both political friends and foes. The regard in which he was held by his brother Representatives was well illustrated by Mr. Hardin, of Kentucky, whom Mr. Cushing described as "the gray-haired Nestor of the House, and its perpetually snarling Thersites," who, in a reply to a speech of Mr. Phillips, said that "if all the members of the House were like this gentleman from Massachusetts, God would never have repented that he made man."

After one re-election, in 1836, Mr. Phillips retired from Congress, and in 1839 was chosen to succeed Leverett Saltonstall as mayor of Salem. He held office three years, and on his retirement gave the amount of his entire salary to the city for the improvement of the building occupied by the Bowditch and Fisk Schools. In 1848 and 1849 he was the candidate of the Free-Soil party for Governor, and during those and succeeding years was an active participant in those movements which resulted in the organization of the Republican party.

During the last years of his life he was confronted by adversities in business, and though beyond middle age, with a hopeful spirit and an undaunted courage, of which younger men might well be proud, he set himself about to repair and rebuild his fortune. He engaged in extensive timber and lumber enterprises on the St. Maurice and Three Rivers, in Canada, where his third son, George William, was established for their care and supervision. After a visit to the field of his operations, in 1857, he took passage at Quebec in the steamer "Montreal," for Montreal, on Friday, the 26th of June, with the intention of returning home. On the same afternoon the steamer took fire, twelve or fifteen miles above Quebec, opposite Cape Rouge, and only about one hundred and fifty of the four hundred passengers on board were rescued. Among those who lost their lives was Mr. Phillips. His son sent news of the disaster to Salem by telegraph the next day, stating that his father's body had been recovered, and would reach Salem on the following Tuesday. At sunset on Saturday, after the receipt of the sad news, all the bells of the city were tolled, and on Sunday appropriate allusions to the death of Mr. Phillips were made in all the churches, and the flags of the shipping and armories and engine-houses were displayed at half-mast. On Tuesday, June 30, the funeral took place at Barton Square Church, and the remains of him, whom the city regarded almost as its father and every man as his benefactor and friend, were consigned to the grave. The *Newburyport Herald* said: "With a fortune or without it, we do not know the man that Essex County could not as well have spared. He was one of nature's noblemen, and as an able, honest, sincere Christian man, added worth to the human race by belonging to it." And every reader of the *Herald* said Amen.

WILLIAM HUNT.

William Hunt was born in Salem April 25, 1804. He was in the fifth generation from Captain Lewis Hunt, who came from England and settled in Salem about 1660. His father's name was William. When a mere lad he was employed by Mr. Jonas Warren, in his store at Danversport. After remaining there a short time he entered as clerk in the store of Mr. Nathan Blood, on Derby Street, Salem, where he remained until 1823, when he was employed by Mr. Robert Brookhouse, who had recently commenced in the African trade. After a few years he was given an interest in the business, which was continued until the death of Mr. Brookhouse, in 1866. They transacted a very large business, which was extended to the interior of Africa, from whence they imported large quantities of palm oil, gold dust, ivory and hides. At one time they owned more than twenty ships and barques. After the death of Mr. Brookhouse Mr. Hunt continued the business with Robert Brookhouse, Jr., Joseph H. Hanson and Captain Nathan Frye, until March 27, 1869, when the last voyage was completed, and he retired from business with ample means.

Mr. Hunt was married to Austis Slocom, daughter of Ebenezer and Sarah (Becket) Slocom, March 24, 1831. Two sons—William Dean and Lewis—and two daughters—Mary Dean Hersey and Sarah Becket Putnam—survive him. He died August 3, 1883.

Mr. Hunt enjoyed a high reputation as an intelligent and honorable merchant. He was also a man of much intellectual culture. His reading was very extensive, he being familiar with all the best authors.

He took a deep interest in all affairs of his native city, filling many positions of trust. In his charities he was very unostentatious, knowing but the *need* to give the required aid.

EDWARD D. KIMBALL.

The subject of this sketch belonged to a New England family, which moved from Ipswich, Mass., to Bradford and Haverhill, and later to Plaistow, N. H.,

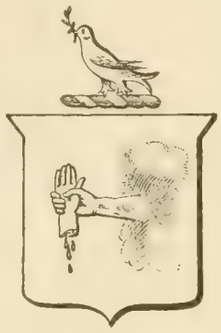
being among the early settlers of the latter place. Here Mr. Kimball was born, December, 1811, and was a son of Nathaniel and Sarah Knight Kimball. He received his education at Pembroke and at Atkinson Academy, N. H., an institution of which his grandmother was one of the early promoters, and which he attended until he engaged in business at home. By the death of his father he was left, at an early age, as the eldest son in a family of three boys and three girls, with the responsibility of assisting his mother and attending to the duties of the farm. For several years he was engaged in business in a small way, and in the fall of 1833 he made a voyage to South America. The following year, at the age of twenty-one, he left the old homestead and moved to Salem, and shortly after married his cousin, the daughter of Hon. John S. Kimball, of Belfast. He entered into the eastern produce business with Stephen Hoyt, who was afterwards made mayor of New Orleans under General Banks. This connection was dissolved in the winter of 1837 by Mr. Hoyt withdrawing from the business; and Mr. Kimball continued it until 1843, when he bought out the African business of his brother-in-law, David Pingree. This necessitated his going to the West Coast of Africa, which he did soon after, taking with him his wife, and remaining about a year and a half, to look after his property and qualify himself for the successful prosecution of the business. This, in connection with the East India business, he continued until stricken with paralysis, from which he died at Paris, France, in September, 1867, at the age of fifty-six, after an illness of three or four years. He had three sons, one of whom survives him. During his business career he was at times associated with David Pingree, Esq., his brother-in-law, and with his nephew, Thomas Pingree, but principally with his brother-in-law, Charles H. Miller, with whom he was associated many years, and who continued the business after his death. His brothers, Elbridge and Nathaniel, were interested in the business, and also Mr. Reader, on the coast of Africa, and in the East Indies Frank Reed, Esq., who died in Batavia.

Mr. Kimball was among the last of the merchants who sent vessels from the port of Salem, and in the latter part of his life he moved his business to Boston.

He, during his life, filled several other positions of trust and honor, among them the presidency of both the Naumkeag Cotton-Mills of Salem, Mass., and the Naumkeag Bank of Salem. He was successful in all his business pursuits from a rare combination of industry and judgment; managing all his affairs with great skill and success; an indomitable worker; he possessed all the requirements for a large and successful merchant, being at once a good buyer, seller and accountant, generous, polished in all his manners, decided in his opinions and prompt to act upon them, which at once gained for him the confidence and respect of all who knew him. And he at all times exhibited a rectitude of character which never wavered from the proper direction.

HENRY K. OLIVER.

Henry Kemble Oliver was born November 24, 1800, at Beverly, Mass., in the Upper Parish of which town his father was minister from 1787 to 1797. He was the third son and the eighth child of the Rev. Daniel and Elizabeth[1] (Kemble) Oliver, both of Boston, and of the seventh generation of the descendants of Thomas Oliver, "chirurgeon," who immigrated from Lewes, Sussex, England, to Boston, with his wife, Ann, and their six or eight children, in 1632, in the ship "William and Francis," from London.



Henry Kemble was christened Thomas Henry, which name was changed by act of Legislature in 1821 to that of his mother's only brother, who died in 1802.

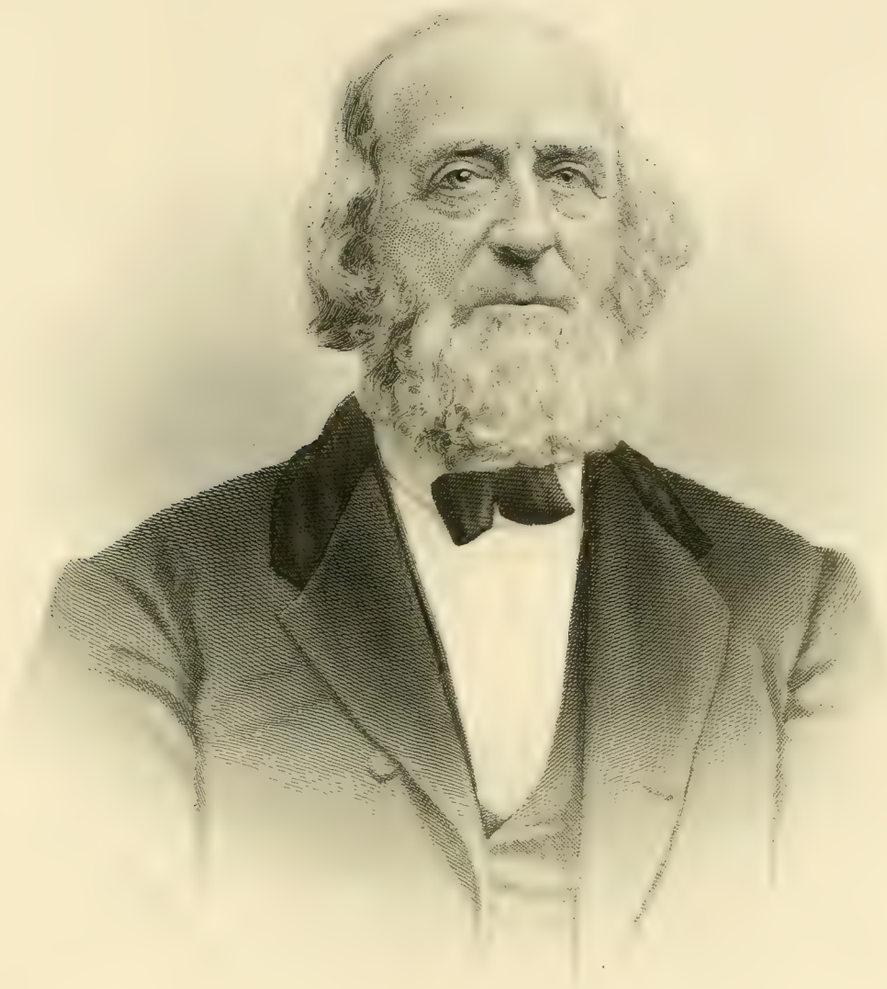
Thomas Oliver, the immigrant, a ruling elder of the First Church in Boston, died June 1, 1658, aged ninety years. The direct line of descent to the subject of this notice is as follows:

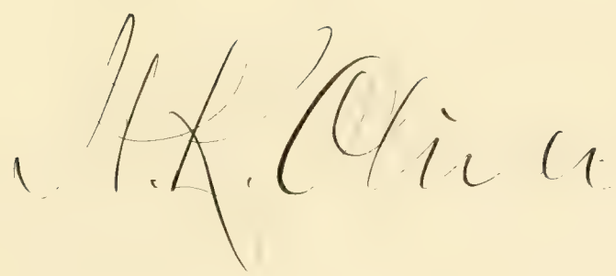
Thomas Oliver and Ann (maiden-name unknown).
Peter Oliver and Sarah (Newdegate).
Nathanael Oliver and Elizabeth (Brattle).
Nathanael Oliver and Martha (Hobbs).
Nathanael Oliver and Mercy (Wendell).
Daniel Oliver and Elizabeth (Kemble).
Henry Kemble Oliver.

In the year 1801 Rev. Daniel Oliver, with his family, removed to Exeter, N. H., and in 1802–03, to Boston. Here Henry attended, at five years of age, the school of a Mr. and Mrs. Hayslop, and acquired his earliest rudimentary knowledge. In 1809 he was transferred to the school of Madame Tileston. "The two schools," he has written, "were on the same method, a good deal of sitting still—if one could—and a very little teaching for each pupil. Not liking either, and with nothing to interest or amuse, during the dreary six hours of the day, I not unfrequently fell under the discipline of good Madame Tileston. I cannot remember that we had books or slates, and sitting still and being good was not within the bounds of my spontaneity; for I was a nervous, uneasy and playful child."

After leaving Madame Tileston's school, Henry attended the Mayhew School, on Chardon Street, under Messrs. Milliken and Holt, "both good floggers," and later, about the year 1810, the school kept by Ebenezer Pemberton, formerly principal of Phillips Andover-Academy. "With Master Pemberton—but still keeping up my elementary studies in English—I be-

[1] Elizabeth Kemble was the second daughter and third child of Thomas and Hannah (Thomas) Kemble.





gan my Latin grammar, under the old dreary method of committing everything to memory. The book used was 'Adams' Latin Grammar,' followed by the 'Colloquies of Cordevius.' I had small relish for Latin, but was quite fond of my English studies and very apt in declamation.

"Some time in 1811 my father removed me to Phillips Academy in Andover, then under care of John Adams. . . . Here, continuing my Latin, I commenced Greek grammar, and memorized, with distaste at the difficult work, all of the book before entering upon translating. When that came about it was upon 'Dalzelt's Græca Minora,' a work then in nearly universal use for lads fitting for college. . . . My stay at Andover was for about twelve months, my first three days having been indelibly fixed in memory by the most distressing homesickness."

Returning to Boston, Henry entered the Latin School,—then on School Street, under William Bigelow,—near the close of 1811. His brother, Nathaniel Kemble Greenwood Oliver (Harvard College, 1809), was for a time, with Mr. Bigelow, an usher of the Latin School, and, about the close of 1813, he opened a private school. Henry attended it, and was by his brother offered at Harvard in 1814. "I was then but thirteen years and eight months old, a mere lad, with a short jacket, having, as was the fashion of the day, a wide collar to my shirt, fringed with a ruffle and turned down over my shoulders. . . . On being taken out to Cambridge at the beginning of the term my father gave me most valuable and excellent counsel. A part of this counsel—and it was very earnestly prohibitory—was that I should not attempt to play any musical instrument whatever.[1] I had been a member of the Park Street choir in Boston, and he gave permission for my singing in the chapel choir, which performed the sacred music on Sunday, under charge of William H. Eliot (H. C., 1815). I strove to obey, but I was over-mastered by my love of music, and I borrowed a flute with one key, the upper joint of which was cracked nearly its whole length. . . . I afterwards, at college, learned to play the violoncello."

Henry remained at Harvard College during the Freshman year and until May or June (1816) of the Sophomore year, when the increase at the college of Unitarian views, and the greater expense, induced his removal to Dartmouth College, much against his inclination. He entered the Junior Class of the latter institution in the fall of 1816. "I had no inclination for a literary life, and my whole preparation for college was to me a burden. . . . When I entered college I had but little knowledge of geography or arithmetic, none of history, almost none of the great facts of astronomy. My intellectual powers had not been properly or philosophically cultivated. . . . In Latin and Greek, and in French, I held at college a pretty good rank, but I failed in mathematics and in intellectual and moral philosophy. I took an interest in what was then called natural philosophy, a good deal in rhetoric and elocution, but felt sorely my unripeness when called upon to express my ideas in composition."

Immediately on graduating at Dartmouth College Mr. Oliver returned to Boston. The commencement at Harvard College occurred one week later, and at that time he received an *ad eundem* with his old classmates, and subsequently, in 1862, the complimentary degree of A.M.

In May, 1819, he was among the applicants for the place of usher in the newly-established Latin Grammar School in Salem, and at the canvass was numbered third in the order of success. But it happened that the first candidate died soon after election, the second obtained a better place at Lynn, and so Mr. Oliver was appointed. He went to Salem on Thursday, June 10, 1819, making his home with "that most excellent man," Rev. Brown Emerson, minister of the South Church. "I entered upon my work as teacher on the following Monday, June 14th, with very great fear and trembling, and entire distrust in my own abilities, knowledge and ultimate success. Finding my imperfections, I commenced a course of self-education, first in the studies in which I was guiding others, then in French, then in Spanish and Italian; adding afterwards a wide course of mathematics and philosophy, astronomy, general literature and history. I was merciless to myself, studying as many hours out of school as I taught within. What I thus acquired I have never forgotten."

On Sunday, June 20, 1819, Mr. Oliver joined the choir of Mr. Emerson's church, his voice, which had been a high and pure soprano, having matured into a deep and very firm and clear bass, with a range from low C to high E. "I also continued my practice on the flute and violoncello, adding to them the double-bass. In 1821, on suggestion of Hon. Leverett Saltonstall,—always my friend, a noble and excellent man in every respect, and then a leading member of the North Church and society,—I commenced practicing the piano-forte and the organ, and, in 1822, I was appointed organist of St. Peter's Church in Salem, removing to Barton Square Church in 1827, in each place with full charge of the choir."

In 1821 Mr. Oliver's father, mother and two sisters came to Salem for a time, and the family resided on Carpenter Street. "Among the families calling upon us was that of Capt. Samuel Cook,[2] residing on Federal Street. I had met his elder daughter, Sarah, at meetings of the choir of the South Church, of which she and many ladies of the most cultivated families of Salem were members. An intimacy springing up between Miss Cook and my sister Margarett, I saw

[1] His father was entirely destitute of the musical sense, and he had the early dislike of the religious people of his denomination (he was a Calvinist of the Hopkinsian variety) to all musical instruments.

[2] Captain Samuel Cook was a retired ship-master, the contemporary of the many enterprising and famous master-mariners of Salem, and of its numerous and successful merchants. He married Sarah, daughter of James and Sarah Chever.

her very frequently, and was gradually drawn toward her by the loveliness of her disposition, the unvarying kindness of her temper, the quiet dignity of her demeanor, the gentleness of all her ways and all her words—till I found my whole self possessed with love for her . . . . On Tuesday, the 30th of August, 1825, we were married, at her father's house, by the Rev. Mr. Ducachet."

On the 4th of July, 1824, Mr. Oliver delivered the oration at the celebration carried out by the young men of Salem, a production which, according to a published account of the proceedings, "was received with the most flattering testimonials of approbation by a crowded and respectable assembly." While connected with St. Peter's Church, Mr. Oliver entered upon a course of theological study, with a view of entering the pulpit of the Episcopal Church. His views, however, became Unitarian, and he relinquished the study.

In 1827 he was appointed head master of the newly-established English High School, but in 1830 he resigned the position and opened a private school, building on Federal Street a house planned carefully for the special purpose. "I doubled my income within a year, and during the fourteen years I afterwards continued to teach, I had no reason to complain of either patronage or want of success. During these fourteen years I taught boys six years—fitting for college and for counting-room—and girls eight years . . . . I opened the school in the spring of 1831 with about forty scholars."

Having in 1821 enlisted into the Salem Light Infantry, at that date and long afterwards one of the best companies of the State, Mr. Oliver obtained a great deal of military knowledge. In 1833 he was elected lieutenant-colonel of the then just organized Sixth Regiment of Light Infantry, and in 1836 he was chosen its colonel, a position he resigned in 1839.

In 1844 Colonel Oliver was made adjutant-general by Governor George N. Briggs, and gave up teaching, but he retained his residence in Salem. The military force of the State at that date consisted of about seven thousand men, all volunteers. The military property was stored in an arsenal near the foot of the Boston Common, in part, and in part in another arsenal in Cambridge. During his occupancy of this office the war with Mexico broke out, and the general government called, in May, 1846, for troops from each of the New England States. This call was subsequently revoked by the Secretary of War (General Marcy). In November of the same year, however, it was renewed, but on Massachusetts alone, one regiment only being called for, infantry. Ten companies were organized. During his term of office General Oliver was elected captain of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Boston, of which organization he had been a lieutenant in 1838; and in 1847 he was appointed by President Polk a member of the Board of Visitors at the Military Academy at West Point. He was elected secretary of this board, and prepared the report to the government.

He continued in the office of adjutant-general till 1848, when he was appointed resident agent of the Atlantic Cotton-Mills, a new corporation for the manufacture of coarse cotton shirtings and sheetings, at Lawrence, Mass., to which town he removed in the early summer of the year mentioned.

In 1853 he was sent from Lawrence, with Messrs. Storrow and Parsons, to the Constitutional Convention of the State, where he was chairman of the Committee on the Militia.

He left the Atlantic Mills in May, 1858, and in November following was elected mayor of Lawrence. In 1859 he was elected Representative to the General Court.

In 1860, having been nominated thereto by the Republican Convention at Worcester, General Oliver was chosen State treasurer on the ticket with John Albion Andrew, as Governor; and he was re-elected for each of the four years which made up the five to which the office is limited by law.

In 1867 he accepted a call from Governor Bullock, of Massachusetts, to look into the condition of the factory children in the various establishments of the State. This he did for about two years, finding the several laws relating to their employment under ten years of age, and their schooling when between ten and fifteen years of age, violated everywhere. He prepared two reports on the subject, which excited not a little attention and comment, and caused more stringent legislation.

In 1869 he attained an honorary admittance to the Phi Beta Kappa Society, and in 1870 he gave the oration at Dartmouth College.

The act for the establishment in Massachusetts of a Bureau of Statistics of Labor, with a chief and deputy, was passed in 1869, and General Oliver was selected by Governor Claflin as the chief of the bureau. To the duties of this office he gave his undivided attention, having to grope his way unguided by precedent, example or experience; everything connected with the investigations being new, and nearly all those investigations rendered difficult and embarrassing by the very strong and powerful influence of the employing class of the State. He left the bureau in May, 1873.

In April, 1876, he received an appointment as one of the judges at the International Centennial Exhibition at Philadelphia, and was assigned to Group XXV., in charge of all "Instruments of Precision." Under this expression were included astronomical instruments of all sorts, trigonometrical and surveying instruments, microscopes, magnetic and electric, telegraphic and telephonic instruments. There were also added musical instruments of every variety, from organs down, these being assigned to a sub-group, of which General Oliver was chairman.

Subsequently, after the work of the judges was

supposed to have been finished, and they had left Philadelphia, a "Group of Judges on Appeals" was summoned, of which General Oliver was one, and he again repaired to Philadelphia.

A few days prior to his leaving Philadelphia for his home he received a letter from Salem, desiring him to accept a nomination for the mayoralty of that city, to which he consented, and, at the election later, he was chosen mayor. He was re-elected in the following year, and also in the years 1878 and 1879.

At the approach of the year 1881, Mayor Oliver publicly announced his decision not to be a candidate for re-election, against many requests that he would again stand. "Being eighty years of age on the 24th of November, 1880, it is quite time that I should rest," he said, "and it would not be, in my view, right to impose the natural incapacities of old age even upon a willing people."

On his eightieth birthday, with earnest expressions of gratitude for many favors shown him, during a half century of residence, by his fellow-citizens of Salem, he addressed a letter to the City Council, offering as a nucleus of a Public Library for the city, a donation of books from his own library. The city not feeling then in a position to undertake the establishment of a library, a portion of the books—about 800 volumes—was afterwards given by General Oliver to the "Salem Fraternity."

During the summer of 1882, General Oliver began to be sensible of a cardiac trouble, which, without his being aware of the fact, had been discovered several years before by his physician. The difficulty gradually increased, and his condition became very serious in the succeeding winter, but in the following spring the trouble was so far under control that he passed a very comfortable existence. But he, perforce, led a very quiet life, declining all invitations of a public nature, and passing his time in the companionship of his friends, his books and his music. His communications to the newspapers and the periodicals of the day on current subjects, and on the events of "long-ago," became now very numerous.

During the summer of 1885, up to Sunday, the 26th of July, General Oliver's health continued as good as in the two years before. On the Sunday mentioned he complained of his head, and after an unquiet night he awoke with evident cerebral trouble, aphasia being the chief, and, in fact, the only marked symptom. The inability to express his thoughts in words continued, physical weakness supervened, and he was not able to leave his bed on the morning of the 29th. He died in the early evening of August 12th, retaining almost to the last some consciousness of his surroundings.

General Oliver's death called forth extended manifestations of regret and sympathy, public and private, and his funeral, which took place from the North Church, on Monday, August 17th, was attended by a large concourse of citizens and of officials, both of Salem and of other places. His body rests in the family tomb in the cemetery on Broad Street, Salem, within sight of the school-house which was the scene of his earliest labors as teacher, and in which hangs his portrait. Upon the tomb there has been placed a natural boulder, from the neighboring fields, covered with moss and gray lichens, and upon this stone is engraved his name, date of birth and of death, and a sculptured suggestion of the pipes of an organ, emblematic of sacred music, which was the grand passion of his life.

Of the character of the subject of this notice it is difficult to speak in a brief space, his talents were so various, his acquirements so extensive, and his personality so strikingly composite. His powers as student, teacher, writer, musician and executive officer were such as are rarely combined in the same person. But the strongest note in his character—the dominant chord—was the musical one. "I had," he says, "early manifested a passion for music, acquired from my mother, who had a voice of rare excellence and great skill in singing, and I learned any music I heard my brother and my sisters perform with the greatest ease and rapidity." And again, "My amusements in college were entirely innocent, and I found great comfort and pleasure in the study and practice of music, my voice and knowledge of the flute being passport to many families wherein music, especially sacred music, was practiced. An evening so passed was to me the greatest pleasure I desired." At ten years of age he was a member of the choir at Park Street Church, Boston. He was also, early, a member of the Handel and Hayden Society, of that city, and an active member of its chorus, whenever possible, even beyond the age of seventy years, at which period of his life his voice still retained great sweetness and power. He was, from his earliest residence in Salem, largely identified with music, and he was the most active member of the Mozart Association, founded in 1825, and of the Salem Glee Club, 1832. Gradually, sacred music, as has been stated, came to be his greatest love, the oratorios of Handel, of Hayden, and of Mendelssohn, his passion, and the organ his idol instrument. He was organist of churches in Salem and Lawrence for a period of forty years. As a composer of church music he held high rank, and many of his compositions have an abiding popularity. In 1849 he published with Dr. S. P. Tuckerman "The National Lyre," and in 1875, "Oliver's Collection of Sacred Music." In 1883, Dartmouth College conferred upon him the Degree of Doctor of Music, and requested his portrait to be hung upon its walls.

As an educator of youth General Oliver really loved his profession, and he combined, in a rare degree,[1] firmness and thoroughness with youthful sym-

[1] Rev. Joseph H. Felt, in his "History of Salem," pronounces Mr. Oliver's private school to have been the most complete and successful ever carried on in that town.

pathies and feelings. His interest in education never flagged to the end of his days. He was himself always a diligent student: the classics were his delight, and he never forgot the beautiful passages from the Greek and Roman writers which he had early learned. But he was also a mathematician of unusual excellence.

His services as a member of the school committee were eagerly sought for in both Salem and Lawrence, and in parts of the years 1858, '59 and '60, he was chosen by the State Board of Education to visit the public schools in various parts of Massachusetts, and to attend teachers' institutes and conventions. He was also at various times in the Examining Board of Visitors of Harvard College, both in the classics and in mathematics.

When the high school in Lawrence was opened, he presented to it the extensive and valuable apparatus which he had collected for his private school in Salem, and he added to the gift a set of busts and statuettes, engravings and many books of reference, Latin, Greek and mathematical, for the use of teachers and pupils. As a token of gratitude the school was given his name, and his portrait was requested, which was hung upon its walls. One of the public schools in Salem also bears his name.

As a military man General Oliver showed marked ability. As colonel of the Sixth Regiment he brought it to a high degree of efficiency, and while adjutant-general, through his personal visits to the parades of the various regiments, and his encouragement of drilling, the service was greatly improved.

The *rôle* of manufacturer was ably filled by him, but it was more through his devotion to what he had in hand than through any special love for manufacturing. Nevertheless, the products of the mills over which he presided held always the highest rank in the market. The employes did their best, urged not only by the knowledge that much was expected of them, but by the personal magnetism and sympathy of their superintendent, which always so touched and quickened those under him, in every position he ever held, that they instinctively desired to do what he wished done. He thus secured from his subordinates, whether he were present or absent, their best service.

In 1851 he founded a library for the operatives of the Atlantic Mills by a present of books. He also established for them free hot and cold baths in a building near the mills.

As treasurer of the State, General Oliver directed the vast business of the office without loss to the Commonwealth, while on one occasion he saved its credit in a great and sudden emergency by pledging his private means. During his term of office the Civil War broke out, and the business of the department increased to an unprecedented degree. The treasurer acted also as paymaster to the troops raised by Massachusetts, and during the continuance of the war he handled and accounted for $77,000,000—really the sum was $154,000,000, for being received and paid out it was twice handled.

As chief of the Labor Bureau General Oliver made a profound impression. His official announcement of the existence of great abuses called forth extended comment and great antagonism. Some of his work struck at the root of great evils, or of erroneous opinions in society, and so awakened deep hostilities; but he lived to hear all his statements of these evils wholly verified, and his efforts to ameliorate them justified. During the five years of holding the office he prepared five annual reports to the Legislature upon the earnings, cost of living, and savings or indebtedness of the laboring classes of the State—their homes, education, habits of living, morals, manners, hours of labor, amusements, societies of various sorts—upon factory life, factory operatives, factory children, the schooling of the latter, half-time schools, etc., in fact, upon everything relating to the great question of labor and the laboring classes, skilled and unskilled, and of every grade and variety of them.

"I left the bureau in May, 1873, retiring with an entire consciousness that I had omitted no effort in endeavoring to do my whole duty, and that I had, regardless of personal considerations, faithfully set forth the real status of the working people, the real wealth-producers of the State."

After leaving the Bureau, and to the end of his life, he retained the deepest interest in the welfare of the working classes, and more especially in that of factory children, as the many articles written by him for the newspapers of the day testify. In April, 1885, his portrait was hung on the walls of the office of the bureau, in Boston, as its first chief.

As mayor—in two cities—his great executive ability and knowledge of men made him a valuable officer, and his retirement elicited hearty expressions of regret and good wishes from the several departments of the city government and from the citizens generally.

General Oliver's wide range of study and reading caused frequent demands for his services as lecturer before lyceums and other literary associations, and before educational, musical and agricultural societies, while his ready command of language, and his wit and humor, made him greatly sought for as presiding officer at festive occasions. Many of these occasions saw him such an officer when he was beyond eighty years of age. Of these latter characteristics, which constituted a very marked feature of his character, it has been written "His wit and humor were keen, exuberant and irrepressible, and his many tales, and his treasury of knowledge made him extremely companionable, and a delightful conversationalist on any topic." A curious feature in his character was the presence of exuberant spirits and gayety, and the passion for sacred music. But with all his gayety his feelings were deeply reverent. He loved nature ardently, and flowers were the source of the greatest delight to



A. A. Low

him; his highly cultivated garden was the home of many a prize-bloom.

Much as the subject of this notice employed his pen, he published but one little work besides his musical works mentioned. This was in 1830, "A Work on the Construction and Use of Mathematical Instruments in Portable Cases." About the same time he wrote a work on Algebra, but finding that the late Mr. Ebenezer Bailey was engaged upon a book of similar character General Oliver generously withdrew his own manuscript. But he wrote, especially in the later years of his life, a vast number of articles for the newspapers and current literature of the day on all the topics with which he was familiar, and these communications were most entertaining and instructive.

General Oliver's wife died on the 24th of January, 1866, and this was a blow which he never really recovered from. In recording the event he wrote,—"As said Carlyle of Mrs. Sterling, in his life of Edward Sterling, she was of a pious, delicate and affectionate character, exemplary as wife, mother, friend,—of timid, yet gracefully cordial ways,—with natural intelligence, instinctive sense and worth: with a soft voice, a tremulously sensitive nature, strong chiefly on the side of the affections, and the graceful insights and activities that depend on these; truly a beautiful, much enduring, much loving housemother."

Henry Kemble and Sarah (Cook) Oliver had issue,—Samuel Cook, Sarah Elizabeth, Henry Kemble, Maria Kemble, Emily Kemble, Mary Evans and Ellen Wendell.

ABIEL ABBOT LOW.

Salem has been most generous in enriching, with her worthy sons and daughters, other cities and towns of the country. Few places are more indebted to her for such noble gifts than Brooklyn, N. Y., the story of whose better history and higher prosperity could not be told without the mention of such men as Seth Low and his sons, Isaac H. and John W. Frothingham, Ripley and Reuben W. Ropes, George B. Archer, and others of most excellent repute. Hon. Ripley Ropes, after faithful and valuable service to his native city, removed many years ago to Brooklyn, where his exalted character as a man and his long and distinguished usefulness in public life have made their enduring impress upon the city of his adoption.

Abiel Abbot Low, one of the merchant princes of New York, and an eminent philanthropist and financier, was born in Salem, Essex County, Mass., February 7, 1811. He was the eldest son among twelve children of Seth Low, a native of Gloucester, West Parish, of the same State. His mother, Mary Porter, was descended from John Porter, one of the original settlers of Salem village, (now Danvers), and was a daughter of Thomas Porter, of Topsfield, the town adjacent to Danvers on the north. The Porters have been a numerous and influential race in this part of Massachusetts and elsewhere for more than two hundred years. Mary was born in Topsfield in 1786, and was a lady of superior character, illustrating all the virtues and nobleness of the Roman matron, refined and adorned with the influences and graces of the Christian faith. She lived to be eighty-six years of age and continued to be an object of much veneration among all who knew her, to the end of her useful and honored life. Her husband, Seth Low, was a man of high intelligence and of solid worth, of strong, clear and sedate mind, and of courteous and dignified deportment. He was held in great respect and love by his fellow-citizens at Salem, where he spent the earlier portion of his married life, as also at Brooklyn, N. Y., whither he removed in 1829, and where he died in 1853. A devout, upright, and public-spirited man, he was one of the foremost citizens of Brooklyn, and rendered most important service, in many ways, to that city in its earlier municipal history. Blessed with such a parentage, and inheriting the excellent qualities of both his father and mother, the son could hardly fail of an honorable and distinguished career. He grew up without any of the vices or bad habits which so often blight the hopes and promises of youth. He received his early education mainly at the public schools of his native city, and wisely and diligently improved the opportunities and advantages which were there afforded him. He was, for some time before he reached the age of maturity, a clerk in the mercantile house of Joseph Howard & Co., a Salem firm largely engaged in the South American trade. Here he manifested remarkable aptitude for business, and won, not only the heartiest commendations, but the entire confidence of his employers. In 1829 he removed to New York, and remained with his father, whose occupation was that of a drug merchant, for three years. In 1833 he sailed for Canton, China, and on arriving there became a clerk in the house of Russell & Co., which was then the largest American firm in China, and of which an uncle, the late William Henry Low, was a partner. In 1837 he was admitted into the firm, and, after three years, returned home, in 1840, to prosecute the same business here—already possessed of considerable wealth, though not yet thirty years of age. He was early distinguished for his sagacity, his far-seeing wisdom and his bold and judicious action. Soon after his arrival home, he established himself in Fletcher Street, New York, and there laid the foundation of that which was destined to become the leading house of America in the China trade. The business of the house was of rapid growth and at length assumed such large proportions that a fleet of swift vessels became indispensable.

With characteristic energy he set about building his own ships, and the construction of the "Houqua," "Samuel Russell," "N. B. Palmer," "David Brown," "Oriental," "Penguin," "Jacob Bell," "Contest," "Surprise," "Benefactor" and "Benefactress" kept

pace with the demands of his business for a while; but he was compelled to purchase several, among them "The Golden State," "The Great Republic" and the "Yokohama." For years the house carried on its immense traffic of teas and silks without the loss of any of its ships. From Fletcher Street the office was first removed to South Street, between Beekman Street and Peck Slip, and again, in 1850, to No. 31 Burling Slip, the present site of the establishment. About the year 1845, Mr. Josiah O. Low, a brother, became a partner; in 1852, Mr. Edward H. K. Lyman, a brother-in-law, was admitted into the firm; and at various subsequent dates several sons and nephews,—the firm-name becoming and remaining to this day "A. A. Low & Brothers." The firm have always maintained their justly-deserved reputation for the strictest integrity, and for the largest and most enlightened methods of mercantile pursuit and dealing. Their name has been the synonym for rectitude and honor in all business transactions, and they have been a tower of strength amidst all the changes, fluctuations and reverses in the commercial world during the past forty-six years. Their influence was most powerfully exercised and felt in the cause of maintaining the national credit; and in the gloomy years of the Civil War they bore their full share in the work of defending and saving the Republic. Refusing to allow their ships to sail under any other flag than the Stars and Stripes, they suffered the loss of the "Contest" and the "Jacob Bell," both of which were captured and burned by Confederate privateers, the latter being freighted at the time with a cargo of great value. During Mr. Low's whole business career he has received constant tokens of the high respect and consideration of the mercantile profession to which he belongs, and of the community in which he lives. His influence in the New York Chamber of Commerce has been wholesome and conspicuous, and it has also been justly appreciated and honored. He became a member of it in 1846. In 1863 his sound judgment, his ready grasp of details, his marked sagacity and his unbending rectitude led to his election as president of this world-renowned body; and on the expiration of the stated term of three years, he was re-elected. At the close of 1866 he resigned this position, in order to make a voyage around the world. On January 1, 1867, he embarked with his wife and one son from San Francisco in the Pacific Mail steamship "Colorado," the first American merchant steamer which crossed the Pacific.

On his return he was honored with a banquet, tendered by the representative men of his profession, in the city which had so long been the scene of his labors and his triumphs. He frequently has been called upon to address the Chamber of Commerce and his fellow-citizens upon subjects connected with the financial or political problems of the day. His vigorous mind has been highly cultured by reading, study, travel, observation and action. His style, both as a writer and a public speaker, is singularly felicitous and effective, and remarkable for clearness, compactness, good taste and elegance of expression. He has the faculty and the habit, not only of stating his case strongly, but of reasoning on it so wisely and fairly, as well as forcibly, that his reader or listener (as the case may be) is carried with him, and willingly, as well as from conviction, adopts his conclusions. It is because of these qualities that Mr. Low has always had such great influence in the associations with which he has been connected, and such weight in the community in matters of general interest. Had his career been in public life, he would have been as eminent in the counsels of state as he has been in the wide domain of commerce. In great crises, commercial, financial or political, in periods of depression, panic or actual disaster, he has the courage of his convictions, and his opinions are eagerly sought and freely given. During the Civil War, on all important questions of national policy or duty, his voice and his action were alike ready and sagacious, clear, loyal and determined. Holding no political office, though several times invited to do so, he often has been called or sent to the national capital in a representative capacity, for consultation with the government in relation to matters of grave commercial interest.

It is not easy to measure the value and influence of such a man in the community and the country to which he belongs. Able, wise, patriotic and of incorruptible purity and honesty, he is constantly a pillar of strength and support to all the best interests of society and is a rock of safety and defense amidst the changes and perils to which government and people are exposed, or are liable. It is not alone Presidents and Cabinets, Congressional leaders and foreign ministers, the army and navy, upon whom we must chiefly depend in the most stormy times, or in the most critical emergencies. All will be lost unless the nation is held mightily to its financial obligations, its plighted word, its sacred honor. After the war, and for many years, the land was rife with dangerous theories and pestilent heresies in regard to these matters, and *Repudiation* itself was a more or less popular cry. It was all-important, and absolutely necessary, that the mercantile and banking classes should lift their voices for the right, that the great commercial metropolis should be heard, that the Chamber of Commerce should speak, and speak with no uncertain sound. Of such occasions, one was in connection with the Centennial Celebration of the Chamber, held at Irving Hall, New York City, April 6, 1868. Mr. Low delivered an address on "The Finances of the United States," and the closing portion of it is here given, in illustration of his sound views, his exalted patriotism and the power and grace of his words:

"Finally," he says, "it seems to me that existing laws for the conversion and redemption of the public debt are good enough till the country returns to specie payment. I look to such return as our only hope of rescue from impending evil. The crisis is full of peril, as all who read and reflect will be forced to admit; the contemplation of this peril leads

me to sorrowful reflection. Three years have passed away since the War of the Rebellion was closed. The eventful month of April, 1865, witnessed the surrender, throughout the South, of all the rebel forces; the disbanding of the loyal armies of the North, and the re-establishment of the national authority everywhere; and although the country was prostrate in sorrow at the death of its great hero and martyr, there was solace and joy in the thought that the blood and treasure of the loyal States had not been poured out in vain. Not only had the life of the nation been providentially preserved, but its honor was untarnished; at home and abroad confidence in the ability of our people faithfully to redeem every obligation that was given during the war daily gained strength, and the speedy restoration of the wayward States to their legitimate place in the Union was the animating hope of every patriotic heart. How this hope has thus far been disappointed it is not my province to consider.

"We may now boast, indeed, that America *is* 'the land of the free and the home of the brave;' slavery has ceased to exist; the curse and the reproach it brought on our flag and our fame have been buried in a common grave. Have we wiped out this long endured blot on our country's escutcheon, amid all the fire and bloodshed of civil war, in order to deepen and darken the stain repudiation would leave in its stead? Has it come to this, that the Congress of the nation can deliberately entertain propositions, in less than three years after the war, that strike at the spirit and letter of laws now on the statute-book, in the presence of the very men who made them—laws that are vital to the security of those who lent their money for the prosecution of the war! Have we reason to fear that Senators and Representatives who make such demands on our confidence, in their extraordinary measures to enforce reconstruction, will subject our faith to a still severer test? Can they hope to maintain the character of friends of the Union for the sake of the Union if they expose to dishonor the life whose salvation has cost such a price in blood and treasure? Shall we go forth as hitherto, in virtue of our American birthright, proud in the consciousness that our nation's *right* makes our nation's *might*, or remain at home rather than be withered by the rebuking eye of every honest man in every other land governed by honest men? It were better, far, to dash from the American ensign every star and leave only the stripes, as a symbol of everlasting disgrace—of everlasting punishment—if we must cease to claim the respect we have hitherto enjoyed under its all-inspiring folds. No! Let me recall these despairing words! I will not believe in such a destiny. The loyal and the true will rally in behalf of the right and the good. The people and the Congress will uphold the national faith. Our eagles and half-eagles will once more circulate throughout the land, our eyes shall be gladdened with the old device, 'In God we trust,' and throughout the world the stars and stripes shall float together the glorious emblem of nationality to millions upon millions yet unborn."

At the conclusion of the meeting Mr. Low submitted resolutions, which were unanimously adopted, favoring the resumption of specie payments and the honest discharge of the national debt. No man, more than he, was fitted by talent, character, experience, rectitude and service to stand at the centre in such a time, and represent before the people and the world the commercial mind and interests of the United States. Mr. Low has been solicited many times to become the president of banking, insurance and other institutions of a similar character, but he has declined every proffered station of service save that of a director, in which capacity he is identified with a number of prominent organizations. In Brooklyn, the city of his adoption and residence, he has been one of the most public-spirited and useful citizens. He has been an ever-ready and exceptionally liberal patron of schools and colleges, churches and charities, not alone in Brooklyn and New York, but in other parts of the land; and his contributions of money to every good enterprise or institution that has appealed for aid have rarely, if ever, been surpassed in number and magnitude by those of any of our wealthy and philanthropic citizens. Thoroughly imbued with the spirit of a firm and enlightened Christian faith, the church has found in him a true, devoted, exemplary friend, and many of its branches of different names have been encouraged and prospered by his timely and generous gifts. Fully appreciating the value and importance of substantial education to every community, he has long made the public and private schools of the city objects of the highest concern. Of the Packer Collegiate Institute, in Brooklyn, Mr. Low has been for many years president of the board of trustees, giving to its affairs large and intelligent oversight, and contributing liberally to its library and scientific equipment. The Brooklyn Library and the Long Island Historical Society have found in him, from their inception, one of their most appreciative, active and munificent patrons. The City Hospital, the Society for Improving the Condition of the Poor, the Union for Christian Work and many other benevolent institutions, attest his readiness to aid in the support of well-designed and practically-managed organized charities. Perhaps no more touching illustration of this influence has been furnished than in the munificent gift, by Mr. Low, in the name of his wife, of the new and beautiful *St. Phœbe's Mission House*, which he caused to be erected as a fitting memorial of a departed daughter of wonderful beauty of Christian character and life. The building was opened May 5, 1886, and a tablet more recently erected bears the inscription:

"In Loving Memory
Harriette Low.
This house is given for the work she loved by her
bereaved parents."

In our great Civil War, Mr. Low's loyalty and patrotism were most pronounced and constant. He was a member of the Union Defense Committee of New York, and quite early in the conflict succeeded Mr. Dehon as treasurer of the committee, which place he continued to fill until the war was over. He was among the most energetic, liberal and useful members of the "War Fund Committee" of Brooklyn, which was organized in 1862, and which efficiently aided the United States Sanitary Commission. He was president of the General Committee of Citizens in Brooklyn, which, in co-operation with the committee of the Woman's Relief Association, in February, 1864, managed and carried out to its grand result of more than $400,000, the Brooklyn and Sanitary Fair.

This sketch would be quite imperfect did it omit allusion to Mr. Low's constant and most generous relief to those who are in need. It is his nature to "Do good by stealth and blush to find it fame," and the world little knows, though very many privately and gratefully know, the largeness, spontaneousness and mercy of his bounty in their hour of suffering. His sympathy and gifts have not been limited to those to whom he stood in the relation of friend or

mere acquaintance. The casual mention, in his presence, of distress that had befallen even a stranger whom he had never seen and of whom before he had never heard, has many and many a time (within the knowledge of the writer) elicited not only his warm and Christian sympathy, but his prompt and large pecuniary relief. It has often been remarked by those who have known him well, how continuously and tenderly, amidst all his manifold and arduous daily cares, he has borne such unfortunates in mind, recalling their names and circumstances and, with more benevolent intent, making fresh inquiries about them long after it might naturally have been supposed that such cases must have been forgotten. One of his honored father's last injunctions to his children was, "Remember the poor." And that they have done, not more in obedience to the paternal mandate, than from the philanthropic spirit which they inherited from their excellent parents, and which they have also imparted, it may be added, to the succeeding generation. As the acknowledged head of this very large and influential family circle that surrounds him in Brooklyn, and in every domestic relation of life, Mr. Low, it is not necessary to say, finds his own faithful devotion and affectionate care abundantly recompensed to him in the veneration and love of all. And what is thus true of him in the home and amongst his kindred is true of him also in other connections, in which to still larger numbers he has been the prudent counselor, the thoughtful sympathizer, and the helpful and steadfast friend.

Mr. Low was first married, in March, 1841, to Ellen Almira, daughter of the late Josiah Dow, of Brooklyn, N. Y., and a lady of rare worth and loveliness, by whom he had four children,—two sons and two daughters, all of whom survived their mother, who died in January, 1850. In February, 1851, he was married to Anne D. B., widow of his deceased brother, William Henry Low, and daughter of the late M. Bedell, of Brooklyn, N. Y. Mrs. Low has been very prominent in the religious, benevolent and social life of the city; and it was specially under her fond and faithful guardianship, intelligent and judicious training and earnest and conscientious Christian influence that the motherless children to whose charge she succeeded, and her son, William G., who had been born under her first marriage, received together their home preparation for their varied and prominent spheres of usefulness in subsequent years.

Of these five children, Harriette died August 2, 1884; and Ellen, who married Henry E. Pierrepont, Jr., of Brooklyn, died December 30, 1884. The surviving three, are A. Augustus Low, merchant, who married a daughter of the late George Cabot Ward, Esq., of New York; William G. Low, lawyer and Hon. Seth Low, ex-mayor of Brooklyn, and also a merchant, both of whom married daughters of the late Hon. Benjamin R. Curtis, of the Supreme Court of the United States.

LEONARD BOND HARRINGTON.

The names of men who distinguished themselves for the possession of those qualities of character which so largely contribute to the success of private life and to the public stability, of men who have been exemplary in their personal and social relations, thus winning the affection, respect and confidence of those around them, ought not to perish.

Their example is more valuable to the majority of local readers than that of illustrious heroes, statesmen or writers, and all are benefited by the delineation of those traits of character which find scope and exercise in the common walks of life.

Among the individuals of this class few are better entitled to be held in respectful remembrance than is the subject of this sketch.

The direct ancestor of Leonard B. was *Robert*, who came from England prior to 1642, and settled in Watertown, Mass.

For several succeeding generations the Harringtons were tillers of the soil, and became, through their energy and thrift, extensive landed proprietors in the various parts of New England, where they settled and were men of influence and position.

Charles, the father of Leonard B., however, was a tanner and currier by trade, and he carried on this business during the early part of his business career with a good degree of success. He also did a large business as a packer of beef, and opened up a large export trade in it. In this branch of business he was a pioneer, and was very successful until, during the French War, he suffered great losses in vessels and cargoes by French spoliations. He married Mary Bond, by whom he had five children,—Charles, born January 29, 1782; Artemus, born October 14, 1784; Ruth, born August 25, 1789; Jonas B., born August 22, 1792; LEONARD BOND, born January 29, 1803.

Leonard spent his boyhood in Salem, Mass., to which town his father moved from Watertown shortly after the Revolutionary War. He attended school in Salem, where he acquired a practical knowledge of the branches there taught, but, at the age of thirteen years, developing a taste for sea-life, he went a voyage to South America, during which he suffered from yellow fever, and recovering from it, was finally shipwrecked. These experiences led him to give up the sea, and he then chose the business of leather manufacture. He learned this trade in Roxbury, Mass., and after serving his time he worked as a journeyman for several years, and by prudence and frugality was enabled to begin business for himself in 1829, and from that time to the present has successfully maintained his position among business men.

He was married, January 8, 1831, to Margaret G. Hersey, of Roxbury, who was a superior woman, and did much to encourage and assist him in his plans, and was much beloved by all who knew her. From



L. B. Hammond



Caleb Foote

this union were four children, three of whom are now living.

Having no taste for political life, Mr. Harrington has never been prominent in politics, but has always been identified with the Whig and, later, the Republican parties. In religious belief he is a Universalist, and contributes liberally for the support of public worship.

He is a man of benevolence, easily approached, of kindly instincts, and has always in later years been ready to assist those less fortunate than himself in their business difficulties by his wise counsel and good judgment.

Mr. Harrington has for many years been prominently connected with the financial institutions of Salem. He is president of the Asiatic National Bank and vice-president of Old Salem Savings Bank.

For twenty years he was engineer of the Fire Department, and by his energy and zeal did much to improve the old system; but all this was prior to the advent of the modern steamer, and when the hand machine was made to do duty by "the boys breaking her down."

At the great age of eighty-four years Mr. Harrington is still able to attend to his large business, going to Boston nearly every day, and while having assigned much of the detail to other hands, still in the directing power exercising his business tact and method to the advantage of those associated with him. Mr. Harrington's grandfather was a noted teacher of his day, and as "Master Harrington" was widely known.

Leonard Bond, a maternal uncle, was a soldier in the Revolutionary War.

CALEB FOOTE.[1]

Hon. Caleb Foote was born in Salem February 28, 1803, of a sea-faring stock. The first of his ancestors who came to this country, Pasco Foot, who settled in Salem before 1637, had a grant of land in that year, in connection with his fisheries, at Winter Harbor. The degree to which the dangers of the sea assisted in depopulating the maritime towns of our sea-coast in the earlier days is forcibly illustrated in the family history of Mr. Foote. His great-grandfather, Captain William Dedman, died of yellow-fever in a voyage to Havana. His maternal grandfather, Samuel West, a member of the Salem Marine Society, died in a trading voyage to Virginia. His paternal grandfather, Caleb Foote, after serving in the Revolutionary army at Cambridge, engaged in the privateering service, was captured by a British ship, and immured in Forton prison, near Portsmouth, England, from which he escaped to France, and, returning home, died early of disease brought on by the hardships and privations which he had endured in the cause of his country. His father, Caleb Foote, sailed in command of a vessel from New London in 1810, and his vessel was never heard from afterward, while his wife, Martha, daughter of Samuel Massey West, had died four years before. Thus their son was left at the tender age of seven fatherless, motherless and portionless, wholly dependent on relatives, and began to earn his own living at ten years old, when he left the North Salem Public School to attend in the shop of an uncle in Salem, and later in Boston, returning to Salem again for employment in Mr. Samuel West's bookstore. He was on the point of following the sea, and had shipped as cabin-boy for a sealing voyage in Arctic regions, when the captain who had engaged his services broke the agreement in order to take a larger and stronger boy, and diverted the current of his life. He found employment in the office of *The Salem Gazette* in 1817. Here Mr. Foote has ever since remained as apprentice, proprietor and editor, never long absent from its duties and only rarely engaged in services which called him elsewhere.

The Salem Gazette was one of the few newspapers whose commencement long antedates the present century. On the 1st of August, 1768, began the existence of the *Essex Gazette*. There were for a time transfers to other places, suspensions and changes of name, but the apprenticeship of two proprietors connects without a break the first issue with that of one hundred and nineteen years later (in 1887). The founder of the line, when Massachusetts was a British province, was the sturdy Whig rebel, Samuel Hall. The accomplished and amiable Thomas C. Cushing served his apprenticeship with Mr. Hall, and took his materials and revived the paper, after a broken period, in 1786. Mr. Cushing continued the publication of the *Gazette* until January 1, 1823, when, feeling the infirmities of age and disease pressing on him, he transferred the establishment to one of his sons, Caleb Cushing, and a nephew, Ferdinand Andrews, retiring from business to die September 28, 1824. Mr. Cushing was a man of rare excellencies of character, combining faculties of the mind and qualities of the heart which secured in no common degree the respect and esteem of his fellow-citizens, and was a good master in those days of thorough business training.

The life of an apprentice was one of hard drudgery, but the printing-office is a school which gives encouragement to a boy endowed with the love of reading, for the self-education which has to take the place of the opportunities of school and college; moreover, as Mr. Foote grew up, he found kind and influential friends, who, when the opportunity arose, assisted him with a loan in establishing himself in the business by purchasing half the property in the paper. In 1825 he thus became associated with his former fellow-workman, Ferdinand Andrews, as publishers and joint owners of the *Gazette*. In 1826 Mr. William Brown succeeded Mr. Andrews, selling his interest in the paper also to Mr. Foote January 1, 1833, who

[1] By Rev. Henry W. Foote.

thus became sole editor and proprietor until January 1, 1854, when Nathaniel A. Horton, who had followed what were the traditions of this time-honored newspaper for more than a century, in growing up as an apprentice under the training of his senior, was associated with him in publishing and editing the paper. This partnership has continued till the present time (1887). On June 8, 1831, Mr. Foote had also established a small weekly paper, to which he gave the name of *The Salem Mercury*, the original title of the *Gazette*. This was afterwards enlarged and its title changed to that of *The Essex County Mercury*, and it became an important addition to the influence of the office through the wide constituency which it gained throughout the county.

Meantime such public duties as the engrossing labors of an editor would permit came to Mr. Foote. He served on the school committee in 1830–31, and was a member of the Massachusetts House of Representatives in 1832 and 1833, declining a re-election. In January, 1838, having been for some years chairman of the Whig County Committee, he was elected by the Legislature, on which the duty of choosing the Executive Council at that time devolved, a member of the Council under Governor Edward Everett, and was again elected in 1839, declining a subsequent re-election.

On the accession of the Whig party to the control of the government, a change being necessary, not for party reasons only, in the Salem post-office, Mr. Foote was appointed postmaster in May, 1841, soon after the death of President Harrison, and retained the position three years, administering the office on strict business principles, entirely aloof from political methods, making no change in the subordinate officers, and keeping the business of his newspaper apart from his official duties. A pressure, however, being brought to bear by the administration to induce him to become a partisan of John Tyler and to employ the newspaper in furthering his schemes for election to the Presidency, on refusing to do so, Mr. Foote was dismissed from the post-office in April, 1844. The subsequent years and until the present time (1887), with the exception of seven months' absence in Europe in 1867, were devoted exclusively to the business of the newspaper, in which active labors it was allotted to Mr. Foote to spend a longer period than the full term of life as named by the Psalmist.

A friend, Rev. E. B. Willson, adds the following:

"Mr. Foote's life affords a noteworthy instance—not a solitary one, to be sure—of the admirable substitute which the printing-office and editorial chair may be for the training-school and the college classroom to an apt student. His style as a writer has the better qualities of one college bred—simplicity, perspicuity and purity of diction, and the art of putting things with directness and effect. His knowledge of language and his literary taste and skill are those of the scholar well grounded in English literature and versed in other languages, ancient and modern. Naturally, history, political economy and the affairs of trade and social progress come to be the studies of the conductor of an influential press, an important portion of whose readers are educated men and women. In these departments of journalism Mr. Foote's accomplishments, at a period when such work was comparatively rare and when he was sole editor, secured for his editorial writing attention and habitual perusal and respect, which has continued during the more recent years, when the editorial responsibility has been shared with his associate. In his long career in the midst of a community characterized by a high average of intelligence and a corresponding moral standard, to have had so strong and enduring hold upon successive generations and through so many and so great changes in manners and opinions, in politics and theology, in private and in social life, bespeaks a man of weight, candor and well-balanced judgment, and of an integrity and steadiness of purpose not often paralleled. His native modesty would never permit him to obtrude his conclusions at any time where their expression was not called for; but those who have drawn from him his opinions upon topics of current interest, including such as were matters of controversy, have been pretty sure to find that he had matured opinions of his own, and that he had not only the courage of his convictions, but that he had been a courageous thinker in arriving at his convictions.

"To those who know Mr. Foote only in the common intercourse of life, and who have only come near enough to observe his unfailing courtesy of bearing, the moral courage, poise and self-reliance hidden behind these genial manners and never-ruffled tones would be likely to be a revelation wholly unsuspected. Not many a man would be able to carry himself calmly and with unshaken nerves through an interview with desperate fellows, who had, without doubt, plotted to rob him of things of value supposed to be on his person, in a retired apartment of their own selection, to which they had conducted him for this very purpose, and when he had come away unharmed from their lair would relate the affair as quietly as if it had been but a common incident. It would bring a genuine surprise to those accustomed to see one characterized by an unvarying serenity of features and urbanity of address in all situations for a lifetime, to find him capable on occasion of shielding a junior co-worker from abusive criticism by rising from the chair editorial and stepping to the front to assure a rich and influential citizen and friend in a firm and peremptory voice that, though not himself the writer, he assumed joint responsibility with the writer for what had been written, and that the course of remark which he had interrupted must cease then and there, or the visitor must leave the place. To be sure, we recognize it as the natural and right combination when courage and kindliness go together; but, unhappily, it is not a conjunction so common as not to cause the surprise of delight when we witness it."

The publication and editing of a public journal in a community like that which inhabits Essex County is a self-denying and exigent task, requiring a man to become wholly merged in his work, especially where the newspaper has had an historic part for more than a hundred years in guiding opinion and helping to mould public development. The *Gazette* was founded by a patriot who had zealously espoused the American cause, and it continued the earnest supporter of the principles of Washington and Hamilton and of Federal measures and men as long as the Federalist party continued to exist. To these principles it held faithfully through the later changes of the party-names to Whig and Republican, but without being an organ of any party or individual, and, on occasion, standing alone against an unworthy candidate for high office, and securing his defeat. If a journal of this character has fulfilled its opportunities of public teaching and public influence, in the constant interest of good morals, honest politics and the religion of good-will and charity, it is a fit memorial of the life which has been devoted to it.

Mr. Foote was married, October 21, 1835, to Mary Wilder, daughter of Hon. Daniel Appleton White judge of probate for Essex County. She died December 24, 1857. Of their six children, three are surviving.



Henry Wheatland



Nathaniel B. Mansfield

NATHANIEL B. MANSFIELD.

Nathaniel B. Mansfield was born in Salem, October 20, 1796, three months after the death of his father. His mother was left with four children,—two daughters and two sons. Of the daughters, one married Captain Brookhouse, of Salem, and the other Joseph Eveleth, of Boston, for many years high sheriff. Of the sons, one died single, and the subject of this sketch married the daughter of William Fabens, of Salem, who was one of the successful merchants of his time.

At an early age the subject of this sketch chose the profession of the sea. Having no one to put him forward, he commenced as a sailor in the forecastle, and by his energy and perseverance soon became officer and then master of a ship. He was part owner of the "Statesman" and "Newburyport," and transacted business between Havana and Russia for many years. He left the sea as a profession at the age of forty-five, and from that time until his death was interested in shipping. He was connected in business at diverse times with Benjamin Howard, Glidden Williams, Samuel Stevens & Co., of Boston, and Captain John Bertram, of Salem. During the last years of his life he was interested in the ice business at Panama, and established, in connection with Samuel Stevens & Co., a line of packets to Australia. Mr. Mansfield was also a member of the Marine Society of Salem.

He took great interest in politics, was an Old-Line Whig, and a member of the city government for many years as well as of the State Legislature. His great speech at that time was in connection with the land damages to be assessed on the Essex Railroad. He refused at various times the office of collector of the port. He was unceasing in his endeavors to accomplish a party victory.

He had the courage of a strong man with the tenderness of a child, and was loved and respected by all who knew him. He died September 24, 1863.

He was a man of unflinching integrity, and died, as he had lived, one of Salem's most honored and esteemed citizens.

BENJAMIN WILLIAMS CROWNINSHIELD.

Benjamin Williams Crowninshield, son of George and Mary (Derby) Crowninshield, was born at Salem, December 27, 1772; descended from Dr. John Casper Richter von Cronenshilt, a German physician, who came from Leipsic to Boston about 1688, and died there in 1711; married Elizabeth, daughter of Jacob and Elizabeth (Clifford) Allen, of Salem; owned lands near Lynn Mineral Spring Pond. Two of his sons, John and Clifford, came to Salem and were successful and enterprising merchants; John married Anstiss, daughter of John and Sarah (Manning) Williams, the father of George, above-named.

Mr. Crowninshield, like his ancestors, was largely engaged in commercial enterprises in connection with his father and brothers, under the name of George Crowninshield & Sons. His brother, George Crowninshield, the owner of the famous pleasure yacht, the "Cleopatra's Barge," made an excursion to the ports in the Mediterranean, returning in October, 1817. He built the large brick house on Derby Street, between Curtis and Orange Streets, now occupied as the Old Women's Home. He was a member of the Massachusetts State Senate for several years, United States Secretary of Navy from December, 1814, to November, 1818, Representative in United States Congress 1823 to 1831, one of the first directors of the Merchants' Bank, Salem (incorporated June 26, 1811); married Mary Boardman, daughter of Francis and Mary (Hodges) Boardman, January 1, 1804. He removed to Boston in 1832, and died there February 8, 1851.

HENRY WHEATLAND.

Henry Wheatland, son of Richard and Martha (Goodhue) Wheatland, was born in Salem, January 11, 1812. He was graduated from Harvard College in 1832, and its Medical School in 1837. He never, however, actively engaged in the practice of medicine. At an early age he became interested in the study of natural history, and both in the neighborhood of his home and during voyages for his health to South America and Europe, he made extensive collections, which have enriched the cabinets of the scientific institutions in Salem. He was chosen superintendent of the museum of the East India Marine Society in 1837, and held that office until 1848, when, chiefly through his efforts, the Essex County Natural History Society and the Essex Historical Society—he being an active member of both societies—became united as the Essex Institute, to the building up of which he has since untiringly given the greater portion of his life, and of which society he is now the president. Leaving the field of scientific research to younger men and those who were becoming specialists in its different branches, he later devoted himself to local history and genealogy, and is now admitted to be one of the leading antiquarians in the county, from whose fund of knowledge constant draughts are being made by workers in this field.

Dr. Wheatland is one of the original trustees of the Peabody Academy of Science and its vice-president, a trustee of the Peabody Museum of American Archæology and Ethnology of Cambridge, and a member of the principal scientific and historical societies of the country.

NATHANIEL SILSBEE.

Nathaniel Silsbee, son of Nathaniel and Sarah (Becket) Silsbee, was born at Salem January 14, 1773; descended from Henry Silsbee, of Salem, 1639, Ipswich, 1647, Lynn, 1658, died 1700, through Nathaniel[2], Nathaniel[3], William[4], Nathaniel[5]. He pursued his studies with Rev. Dr. Cutler, of Hamilton;

died July 14, 1850; married, December 12, 1802, Mary, daughter of George and Mary (Derby) Crowninshield, born September 24, 1778; died September 20, 1835. In early life he was a ship-master and supercargo, afterwards a successful and eminent merchant, a Representative and Senator in Massachusetts Legislature, for three years president of the latter body, Representative United States Congress 1817–21, Senator United States Congress 1826–35.

BENJAMIN PICKMAN.

Benjamin Pickman, son of Benjamin and Mary (Toppan) Pickman, was born at Salem September 30, 1763; descended from Nathaniel Pickman, who came from Bristol, England, with his family in 1661, and settled in Salem, through Benjamin[2] (born in Bristol, 1645, married Elizabeth Hardy, died December, 1708), Captain Benjamin[3], Colonel Benjamin[4] and Colonel Benjamin[5]; pursued his preparatory studies at Dummer Academy, then under the charge of the celebrated "Master Moody;" graduated at Harvard College 1784; married, October 20, 1789, Anstiss, youngest daughter of Elias Hasket and Elizabeth (Crowninshield) Derby (born October 6, 1769, died June 1, 1836); studied law with Theophilus Parsons (Harvard College, 1769), then residing in Newburyport, and afterwards chief-justice of Massachusetts Supreme Court; admitted to the bar; soon relinquished the practice of the profession and engaged in commercial pursuits, in which he continued during the greater part of his life; a Representative and Senator of Massachusetts Legislature; member of Massachusetts Constitutional Convention, 1820; member of the Executive Council of Massachusetts; Representative United States Congress, 1809–11. He was president of the directors of the Theological School at Cambridge, and also president of the principal literary and historical and other institutions of Salem and vicinity; died at Salem August 16, 1843.

WILLIAM REED.

William Reed, son of Benjamin Tyler and Mary Appleton (Dodge) Reed, was baptized June 9, 1776; married, November 13, 1800, Hannah, daughter of Robert and Mary (Ingalls) Hooper, of Marblehead (born August, 1778; died May 16, 1855). The first ancestor was William, son of Richard Reed, of Whittlesey, in the county of Kent, who came to America about 1630, settled first at Weymouth, then removed to Boston; Samuel[2], Samuel[3], of Marblehead, Samuel[4], Samuel[5], Benjamin Tyler[6], above-named; an eminent merchant in Marblehead, and highly esteemed for his benevolent and religious character; Representative United States Congress, 1811–15; president of Sabbath-school Union of Massachusetts, of American Tract Society; an officer and member of many other educational and religious organizations. He was so deeply interested in the cause of temperance that he was styled the "Apostle of Temperance." He died suddenly February 18, 1837. His widow, who survived several years, was always engaged in works of charity, and was regarded as a most accomplished lady and eminent Christian.

BENJAMIN GOODHUE.

Benjamin Goodhue, son of Benjamin and Martha (Hardy) Goodhue, was born at Salem, September 20, 1748; graduated at Harvard College 1766; married, January 6, 1778, Frances Richie, of Philadelphia (born June 27, 1751, died at Salem January 21, 1801); married, secondly, November 5, 1804, Ann Willard, a daughter of Abijah and Anna (Prentice) Willard, of Lancaster, Mass. (born August 20, 1763, died August 2, 1858); descended from William Goodhue, born in England in 1612, took the oath of freeman December, 1636, and probably came over in that year; settled in Ipswich and sustained the chief trusts of the town; was deacon of the First Church for many years, selectman, representative in General Court, etc.; died about 1699; through Joseph[2], William[3], Benjamin[4].

He early embarked in commerce with credit and success; a Whig in the Revolution; represented the county of Essex in the Senate of Massachusetts from 1784 to 1789, when he was elected a Representative to the first United States Congress under the new Constitution; in 1796 elected to the United States Senate, and in 1800 he resigned his seat and retired to private life. He died at Salem, July 28, 1814, leaving an irreproachable name to his then only surviving son, Jonathan Goodhue, of New York, a merchant who, in character and credit, stood second to none in that commercial emporium.

JOSEPH GILBERT WATERS.

Joseph Gilbert Waters was the son of Captain Joseph and Mary (Dean) Waters, of Salem, where he was born July 5, 1796, and a descendant in the sixth generation from Lawrence Waters, one of the first settlers of Watertown. He graduated at Harvard College in 1816, and studied law with John Pickering, of Salem. In the autumn of 1818 he went to Mississippi, and resided there some two or three years in the practice of his profession. Owing to ill health, he returned to Salem, and opened an office, where he resided during the remainder of his life. He was editor of the *Salem Observer* for several years from its commencement in 1823. He was appointed special justice of the Salem Police Court September 1, 1831, and standing justice February 23, 1842, and continued to discharge the duties of this latter office until the establishment of the First District Court in 1874. In 1835 he was a member of the Massachusetts Senate. He also held other offices of honor and trust. He married, December 8, 1825, Eliza Greenleaf Townsend, daughter of Captain Penn Townsend. He died July 12, 1878.

CHAPTER XIII.

LYNN.

BY JAMES R. NEWHALL.

THEN AND NOW.

Descriptive Passages—The Indians—The Settlers—Name of the Place—Natural Features—Productions—Embarrassments and Successes—Civil History—Statistics.

"I hear the tread of pioneers
Of nations yet to be,
The first low wash of waves where soon
Shall roll a human sea."

—WHITTIER.

If, upon the afternoon of some fair day, one should, from the summit of Bunker Hill Monument, through a clear glass, direct his eye northeasterly, he will see stretching in an irregular line of something more than three miles, and at a distance of eight or ten miles, a settlement presenting such features and having such surroundings as will be likely to secure his attention for many minutes. Between him and the settlement, far beyond the circle of busy life that lies at his feet, is a stretch of marsh land of rusty gold tinge, diversified by one or two stately groves, by inlets and by salt streams, and traversed by railroads over which locomotives are constantly puffing, and highways over which horse-drawn carriages of all descriptions are constantly moving.

Extending along the rear of the settlement is a line of dark woodland hills, with here and there cropping out a gigantic porphyry cliff, overlooking many miles of sea and land. In front lies the ocean, ever rising and falling like a thing of life, expanding quietly upon the glistening beaches or dashing sullenly against the huge buttresses of storm-scarred rock, every marine craft known to these waters skimming hither and thither upon its surface.

Directing his eye to the settlement itself, the beholder would observe white suburban dwellings scattered about in picturesque niches with gardens and groves. Then come the central portions, with ponderous business structures, the tall smoke-ejecting chimnies proclaiming the reign of industry and thrift, and in every neighborhood some lofty steeple or graceful tower, testifying to a realization of the higher duties of life.

This is Lynn. And probably no place upon the New England coast can present more attractive features and such varied scenery. It is one of the oldest settlements of Massachusetts, as distinguished from Plymouth, and has always maintained a steady, though not rapid, growth, till, at the present time, it has reached a population of very near 50,000. It is on the northern shore of the great bay which is entered from the Atlantic through the gateway formed by Cape Ann, so named by Prince Charles in filial respect for his mother, and Cape Cod, so named by the notable English navigator, Bartholomew Gosnold, from the circumstance of finding multitudes of codfish sporting about there. It was the central one of the three important settlements commenced at nearly the same time,—namely, Salem, Lynn and Boston; is five miles southwest of the former, and ten miles northeast of the latter. It is not now very extensive, territorially, but as regards population is the largest city in the United States, east of Boston.

THE INDIANS.

"Where now the poor Indian scatters the sod
With offerings burnt to an unknown god,
By gospel light shall the path be trod
To the courts of the Prince of Peace.

"And here will commerce appoint her mart;
The marble will yield to the hand of art;
From the sun of science the rays will dart;
And the darkness of Nature cease!"

—H. F. GOULD.

Before proceeding to other topics, a few words regarding the Indian race found here may not be inappropriate. But of that race we are almost entirely destitute of substantial or illustrative details. Enough, however, is known to show that they were not a superior people, but rather a poor specimen of the human family, though the poet and sentimentalist have clothed them in glowing drapery, and awarded them singular nobleness of character. It is natural to feel a deep interest in those who before us occupied the soil we inherit, whether they were of our own kindred or of other tribes, and it is hard not to assign to them ideal virtues. But yet it is unaccountable that so many writers, notwithstanding the authentic accounts of the horrid barbarities of the red men, as a people, of their ignorance and depravity, should persist in giving them such an elevated sense of honor and such refinement of sensibility. From comparisons made by some enthusiasts it would seem as if these "children of nature" were thought to be superior to all other people of all time. But in estimating the character of these, our predecessors upon the soil, would it not be well to call to mind some of the incidents that roughly touched our own Essex County—the barbarities experienced by the Dustin and Rolfe families, in the terrible attacks on Haverhill, and the fate of the "Flower of Essex" at Bloody Brook, for instance?

There is abundant evidence that there were individuals of the Indian tribes of lofty character. Gratitude is a noble trait, and of its possession they furnish touching examples. With unwavering constancy they would cleave to their friends; but with delight and remorseless vigor they would cleave down their enemies. Of physical courage, endurance of pain, and contempt of death they present conspicuous examples. But these would not be offered as evidence of true exaltation. That here and there an individual of exceptional magnanimity appeared is not denied; but the great body were degraded in the

extreme. It would be unjust to assume that they, as a people, were destitute of the innate sense of right that distinguishes human nature wherever found, or that there were not many endowed with those finer feelings which, under favoring circumstances, can modify and redeem.

To the honor of the people of the Bay settlements it may be said that their conduct towards the natives was generally marked by justice, if not generosity, and, hence, but little hostility was experienced till they had become strong enough to dismiss their fears. It was not till the great struggle of 1675, known as King Philip's War, that much occurred hereabout to cause real alarm.

The unmeasured censure that some have bestowed upon the settlers for what is termed their unjust seizure of lands, in given instances, may have been well merited, for it is sad to believe that some came with very different motives from those popularly ascribed to them, and which they professed. These were unscrupulous in their dealings with the Indians, and overreached and wronged them in every possible way; but there were comparatively few of such unworthy ones.

In treating of Indian land titles, and their absorption by the settlers, an important fact is usually left out of view,—namely, the fact that the Indians were themselves but land robbers. They boastingly asserted that the country did not originally belong to them, but that their brave fathers wrested it by bloody war from the former possessors; defiantly endeavoring to strike terror into the settlers by thus claiming to be a race of conquerors, who might, in good time, rally and drive the pale-faced usurpers into the sea over which they had intrusively ventured. Yes, they and their fathers were brave; but their bravery was far too generally that of violence and lust for blood.

And another thing: the Indians did not cultivate the soil, at least to any extent, for they were by no means an agricultural people. The great command to "till the soil" they did not obey, but remained unfaithful stewards; and there is, perhaps, room for the casuist to assume that as they would not perform their duty, there was no wrong in replacing them by those more faithful.

To follow some writers, one might imagine that the dusky dames and damsels had remarkably refined ideas and graceful accomplishments; that in music especially they were really proficient; and, though destitute of guitars and pianos, had a felicitous way of modulating their voices by the songs of birds or purling of mountain rills. And they would lead us in imagination to listen to melodious strains ringing through the forest aisles as thrilling as the song of the old Spanish troubadour and as inspiring as a cathedral symphony. That many of them had musical voices and a perception of true rhythm may not be questioned; nor need it be doubted that they had ability to express the natural feelings in song and significant action. Says the poet,—

> "The Indian maid danced on the smooth curving shore,
> And mingled her song with the wild ocean roar."

But that she danced "scientifically" or had what we understand to be trained musical powers, is hardly to be believed. Most certainly the musical instruments of our red brethren did not produce peculiarly harmonious sounds. And if the war-songs were modulated by the notes of birds, they must have been birds of rasping cry, like the crow or hawk.

To conclude: the Indian population hereabout was quite small at the time the whites came. The exact number cannot of course be known; but there could not have been above a few hundreds. They were a degraded people, but brethren of our own race, possessing in some degree every quality that goes to make up the human being. They were unrefined and governed chiefly by the lower instincts of our nature, with undisciplined minds and unawakened moral sensibilities.

THE SETTLERS.

> "Deep-minded and austere they were,
> With hearts of graver throbs,
> And their few errors but appear
> As spots on vestal robes."

It was in the autumn of 1626 that the sturdy Roger Conant broke up the unsuccessful fishing and planting station at Cape Ann, and led his little company, among whom was the clerical mischief-maker Lyford, some fifteen miles inland and located at Naumkeag, where, though subject to many privations, their "utter deniall to goe away" resulted in permanent occupation. Two years afterwards, in 1628, Endicott arrived with his large company. Presently the old Indian name Naumkeag was dropped, and that of Salem, or Peace, adopted; and the settlement soon began to be noted for its business activity, its political and ethical influence.

Some of the new-comers had hardly remained long enough to recover from the excitement attendant on the emigration, and the fatigues of the passage, when they became restless and desirous of trying their fortunes in other and, as they conceived, more promising localities. Permission seems to have been readily obtained for little companies to sit down almost any where within the Patent. Indeed, the authoritative Endicott allowed them the broad privilege to "goe where they would."

Now let us, by the light of tradition, behold, on a bright day in the early part of the summer of that eventful year 1629, a little company of white men, prospectors from Naumkeag, coming over the rocky hills into the fair Saugus territory. They pause now upon a sunny hill-top, then upon a pleasant plain; they traverse the woodland precinct, view the ponds and water-courses; but above all, delight to gaze upon the ocean, beyond which lies their native isle. But all is done with an eye to the practicability of perma-

nently pitching their tents. A few skulking Indians, perhaps, followed them unseen, filled with wonder and apprehension, because it had been foretold by the dusky prophets that men of fair complexion would one day come and occupy the land. But no hostile demonstrations were made, and the prospectors returned safe, and so well satisfied that it was determined to immediately commence a settlement.

"Over the eastern hills they came,
A sturdy, grave and godly band.
A band then all unknown to fame,
But destined to redeem the land."

And thus it was, that in June, 1629, the settlement of Lynn was commenced—three years after that of Salem, and one year before that of Boston.

The Indian population, as just intimated, was then so small as to be really insignificant; and not being a pastoral or an agricultural people, the land itself was to them of little value, excepting that the woods yielded a fair amount of game, and a few vegetable products afforded some little addition to their limited variety of food. But the sea was a never-failing source of supply; and it is not to be wondered at that the thought of being driven away to some unknown land, where its bright expanse could no more be seen, nor its winsome voice heard, and especially where its store of dainty food could no more be drawn upon, must have been depressing in the extreme. Nor is it to be supposed that, nomadic as to some extent they were, they had not local attachments; that, homely as were their rustic abodes, they were not loved with all the ardor felt by the more cultured of our race, such attachments not being governed by intellectual or moral sentiments. Yet they do not appear to have received the strangers in anything like a hostile attitude.

The names of all who composed the first little company of settlers do not seem to have been anywhere preserved. But Edmund Ingalls and Francis, his brother, were certainly prominent among them. Edmund Ingalls was a maltster, and established the first malt-house hereabout, though he undoubtedly turned his hand to other employments as exigency required. The industrial portion of the settlers necessarily pursued various occupations in different seasons. The death of Mr. Ingalls, which took place nearly twenty years after, was tragical. He was proceeding on horseback homeward from a short journey westward, when, on reaching the frail little bridge that crossed the Saugus River, he was precipitated into the stream and drowned. The General Court expressed their regrets at the untoward accident, and their willingness to do something indicative of their appreciation of the good services of the deceased by voting the sum of a hundred pounds to his children.

Francis Ingalls, brother of the foregoing, was a tanner, and established a tannery just within the present limits of Swampscott. Mr. Lewis says this was the first tannery in New England; and Mr. Thompson says the same. But it is a mistake. There were tanners in Plymouth several years before. Mr. Ingalls tannery was no doubt the first in Massachusetts, as distinguished from Plymouth. He died at the age of seventy-one years, leaving a will dated August 12, 1672. The inventory of his estate was filed soon after his decease, and the following enumeration of assets will give something of an idea of the estate and household equipment of a fairly well-to-do denizen of that primitive period:

"5 acres of medow, at Lyn, at 5 pounds, £25. A piece of land in y^e^ wilderness at Lyn, 2 coats, 2 pairs of breeches, 1 pair draws, and a leather dublet, and a wescoat, 1 hat and a pair of stockens, 1 pr. shoes, 3 prs. pillows, 3 napkins, 8 pieces of old pewter, 1 Iron Kittoll, a frying pan, 1 Bible and another book, a warming pan, and dripping pan, 3 chairs, 4 cushons, a spining wheele, 2 silver spoons. Dues to his estate from Nicholas Rich, 17£ 17s. Dues to his estate from Thomas Taylor, 11£."

With the Ingalls brothers appear to have come three others, namely, William Dixey, John Wood and William Wood, the two latter supposed to be father and son. The father, John, seems to have been a good, common-sense, plodding settler, industrious, but with little ambition. William, the son, was evidently an active, aspiring young man, something of a rover, a keen observer and one desirous of making a mark. And he did make a mark, which remains conspicuous at this day. He may well be called the first historian of Lynn, or indeed of New England. He was the author of "New England's Prospect," which was printed in London in 1634. It was a work evidently inspired by a love for his new home, and gives graphic accounts of the different settlements, their condition, advantages and prospects, with shrewd suggestions and honest deductions, but withal tinged by crude conceptions, more or less attributable to the peculiar views and circumstances of the settlers, and the conceits of the time. His quaint descriptions will continue to be quoted so long as our early history continues to interest. He also, in 1635, published a map of New England, engraved on wood.

The William Dixey who came in company with the Ingalls brothers and the Woods appears to have been a common laborer rather than a handicraftsman. He had been for a short time a servant to Isaac Johnson, of Salem,—very likely a farm laborer, as such employees were in those days called servants. In a deposition made by him some twenty-eight years afterward he speaks of others having come with him, but does not give their names, and says they kept their "cattell in Nahant the sumer following." He subsequently removed to Salem, where he kept the ferry over North River.

Thus we find that during this year—1629—at least five settlers appeared, some of them heads of families, with wives and children no doubt. We have seen, too, by their occupations, that they must have belonged to the classes accustomed to labor, and conse-

quently best fitted to endure the hardships attendant on such an enterprise.

Details regarding memorable events are always interesting, and the introduction of the actors in them renders them doubly so. And surely it is but a meet act of gratitude to endeavor to preserve the names of such as are fully entitled to live forever in the memory of those who continue to enjoy the blessings of institutions founded by them in toil and privation, even though those names may not yet have been heard beyond the circumscribed limits of their ancient home. A conviction like this may often govern in the present sketch.

During the year 1630 some fifty additional male settlers appeared. These, however, were not all heads of families. Among them are found several names still prevalent among us,—a fact indicative of their primary design to make this a permanent home. They settled in all parts of the town, which was then territorially much more extensive than it is now, some locating as many as ten miles from others. They brought with them considerable farm stock, such as neat cattle, sheep and goats, for they were chiefly husbandmen or such as at some portions of the year could turn their attention to farming. Their names are here inserted in alphabetical order, for it is well thus to preserve their memory, as many now living can trace their lineage directly to them. Occasion, however, may be taken elsewhere in this sketch to say something further concerning several of them who, for various reasons, are entitled to more than a passing notice.

Armitage, Godfrey.
Armitage, Joseph.
Axey, James.
Baker, Edward.
Ballard, William.
Bancroft, John.
Bennet, Samuel.
Breed, Allen.
Brown, Nicholas.
Burrill, George.
Burton, Boniface.
Chadwell, Thomas.
Coldam, Clement.
Coldam, Thomas.
Cowdry, William.
Dexter, Thomas.
Driver, Robert.
Edmunds, William.
Farr, George.
Feake, Henry.
Fitch, Jeremiah.
Graves, Samuel.
Hall, John.
Hathorne, William.
Hawkes, Adam.
Hawkes, John.
Holyoke, Edward.
Howe, Daniel.
Howe, Edward.
Hubbard, Thomas.
Hudson, Thomas.
Hussey, Christopher.
Keyser, George.
Lindsey, Christopher.
Negus, Jonathan.
Newhall, Thomas.
Potter, Robert.
Ramsdell, John.
Rednap, Joseph.
Richards, Edward.
Salmon, Daniel.
Smith, John.
Smith, Samuel.
Talmadge, Thomas.
Taylor, John.
Tomlins, Edward.
Tomlins, Timothy.
Turner, Nathaniel.
Walker, Richard.
White, John.
Wilkins, Bray.
Willis, Thomas.
Witter, William.
Wright, Richard.

After 1630 the population steadily increased. Among the new-comers were some of established reputation in public life and some of high social standing; so the place began to be of note and influence. It will probably be in our way as we proceed to introduce many who, at different periods and in various ways, added to the prosperity and fame of this their adopted home.

NAME, NATURAL FEATURES, PRODUCTIONS, EMBARRASSMENTS AND SUCCESSES.

"In sooth, your honor, it was a goodly place; but rich domains attract evil eyes."

The original or Indian name of the territory composing the present city of Lynn and the adjacent towns which once formed a part of her domain was Saugus, an Indian word said to signify *great* or *extended;* and by that name it was known till 1637, when the General Court passed this concise order: "SAUGUST IS CALLED LIN." The name Lynn was adopted from Lynn Regis, or King's Lynn, Norfolk, England, which is a venerable borough upon the river Ouse, near where it falls into the German Ocean. It has been a seaport of some importance for centuries, and has a peculiarly interesting history, having, apparently, maintained its loyalty to the sovereign through all the political agitations and civil wars from the time of King John, which monarch presented to the corporation a sword, a mace and one or two other regal gifts, which are still treasured there with chivalrous fidelity. In Doomsday Book, A. D. 1086, Lynn Regis is called Lenne, which means, in the ancient language of Britain, "spreading waters." The name here was adopted through courtesy to Rev. Mr. Whiting, the second minister, who had been a resident of King's Lynn. He was much beloved, being eminent for learning, piety and serenity of temper. He ministered here for the long period of forty-three years.

The extensive Saugus territory, having thus received the name of Lynn, remained intact but few years before it began to be shorn of outlying portions. But down to 1814 no very extensive tract had been severed. In that year Lynnfield, which had been called Lynn End, and having been incorporated as a district in 1782, was set off as a separate town under its present name. Another portion was, by legislative action, taken from the mother town in 1815, and incorporated under the name Saugus, thus reviving the old name in that detached portion of the territory. In 1852 still another portion was set off, and the new town of Swampscott came into being. The next year, 1853, the pleasant little peninsula of Nahant was unbound and made a separate municipality. By these facts it will be seen that it is very difficult to treat those municipal children of Lynn as having any separate early history.

Along the inland border of Lynn rise extensive ranges of rocky, wooded hills, never attaining a height of more than two hundred and twenty-five feet, though appearing, from the water or from the shoreward levels, to be much higher, which overlook the city and its village environs, with meadows, lakelets and low, level marshes, the latter sometimes

entirely submerged by the storm-impelled sea which relentlessly floats off the laboriously raised stacks of salt hay, and afford the strange sight of railroad trains apparently gliding upon the ocean's surface. This marsh hay, it may be remarked, though by no means so highly esteemed for fodder as English or upland hay, is yet well worth the labor of storing. For stock, though not very palatable, it is healthful, and for some purposes quite valuable.

Away beyond, lies the great expanse of Massachusetts Bay, with numerous green isles and headlands, the shores at night illuminated by innumerable lights, confusing, one might suppose, to the mariner, though picturesque to the beholder. Almost the whole of Massachusetts Bay is within the range of vision from the hills of Lynn. And glistening in the sunshine may likewise be seen the gilded dome of the State House, in Boston, some of the architectural piles of the city and the blue hills of Norfolk, Middlesex and Worcester. And the writer dares predict that these hills, so picturesque and pleasant in themselves, so airy and affording such charming views, and withal furnishing such abundance of substantial and handsome building material, will, ere many years have passed, be occupied by structures rivaling in grandeur and romantic conceit many that crown the famed steeps of the Old World. True, in some parts the ascents and descents are such that, for the infirm and sluggish, sidewalk stairs, such as are seen in the beautiful Mediterranean isle of Malta, might be required,—incentives to maledictions like those attributed to the impetuous Byron:

"Adieu, ye cursed streets of stairs,
How surely he who mounts you swears."

But to such as are enraptured with nature in her more untamed aspect, the hope will long remain that such desolating improvements may never come. But it is enough for the good people of this generation that they may yet, upon the sunny heights, enjoy the budding beauties of spring, in the sequestered glens find retreats for summer's fervid hours, and everywhere, as the year draws towards its close, witness the indescribable glow of autumn foliage. Yes, and winter, too, has its charms. What more enchanting than the frosted trees? Suddenly, as if by some celestial alchemy, every limb and twig seems swaying with the weight of brilliant gems. No wonder that poets have so often celebrated the charms of such fairy scenes. Our own Lewis has commemorated, in lines perhaps the most inspiring that he ever wrote, the striking display on the brilliant morning of January 29, 1829. But ours is not the only land in which may be witnessed these radiant exhibitions of Nature's scenic power. In Philip's "Epistle to the Earl of Dorset," written at Copenhagen in 1709, is this graphic passage, which may well be quoted as descriptive of the scene sometimes presented here:

"And yet but lately have I seen, even here,
The winter in a lovely dress appear;
Ere yet the clouds let fall the treasured snow,
Or winds begun through hazy skies to blow.
At evening a keen eastern breeze arose,
And the descending rain unsully'd froze.
Soon as the silent shades of night withdrew,
The ruddy morn disclosed at once to view
The face of Nature in a rich disguise,
And brightened every object to my eyes;
For every shrub and every blade of grass,
And every pointed thorn seemed wrought in glass;
In pearls and rubies rich the hawthorns show,
While though the ice the crimson berries glow.
The thick-sprung reeds which watery marshes yield,
Seem polished lances in a hostile field.
The stag, in limpid currents with surprise,
Sees crystal branches on his forehead rise;
The spreading oak, the beech and towering pine,
Glazed over, in the freezing ether shine.
The frightened birds the rattling branches shun,
Which wave and glitter in the distant sun.
When, if a sudden gust of wind arise,
The brittle forest into atoms flies,
The crackling wood beneath the tempest bends,
And in a spangled shower the prospect ends."

The "Lakes of Lynn," as Mr. Lewis felicitously calls the chain of beautiful ponds that lie upon our inland border, are a charming feature of the landscape. And during these latter years the eligibility of their romantic borders for retired and tasteful residences has become most fully recognized. From them is annually reaped an abundant winter harvest of ice for summer use—collectively some sixty thousand tons. And in various ways they are made to supply the wants and add to the comforts of the people, especially Birch and Breed's Ponds, through which comes our public water supply. The principal of these picturesque lakelets, with their areas, are as follows:

	ACRES.		ACRES.
Birch Pond	84	Gold Fish Pond	1½
Breed's Pond	64	Holder's Pond	7
Cedar Pond	43	Lily Pond	4
Flax Pond	75	Sluice Pond	50
Floating Bridge Pond	17		

Birch Pond is an artificial reservoir, or storage basin, formed in 1873, for the purpose of an additional supply of water for public use. It was made by carrying a substantial dam across Birch Brook Valley, on the east of Walnut Street, near the Saugus line. A considerable part of this pond is in Saugus.

Breed's Pond is also artificial, and takes its name from Theophilus N. Breed, who, in 1843, built a dam across the valley a few rods from Oak Street, on the north. He thus procured sufficient power for the iron works he established on Oak Street. On the 15th of April, 1851, during the memorable storm by which the light-house on Minot's Ledge was carried away, some forty feet of the dam were demolished, and out rushed the water in a current ten feet in depth, with such impetuosity that large rocks were carried across Oak Street into the meadow below. The dam was repaired and Mr. Breed continued his business, which was iron-casting and machine work, five or six years longer, and then the works were closed.

In 1860 the dam was broken, and the water suffered

to escape, leaving a bed which remained a noxious bog, where rank vegetation flourished and noisy reptiles congregated. In 1863, however, the dam was again repaired, the pond restored and other business commenced. Finally, after an interval of idleness, in 1870, the city purchased the property as the first step towards securing a suitable public supply of pure water. Repairs were made about the pond, the Pine Hill Reservoir was built, pipes were laid in the streets, the pumping engine was set up on Walnut Street and then, on the 27th of February, 1873, the water was sent coursing through the distributing pipes. The reservoir has a capacity of twenty million gallons and is one hundred and seventy-seven feet above sea level.

Cedar Pond is in the northeast section of the city, near the Peabody line, and by a small stream connects with Sluice Pond.

Flax Pond was first looked to for a public water supply. It was in 1869 that it became apparent that something must speedily be done in that direction. It was found that this pond, with its adjuncts, could furnish a daily average of three million gallons, but objections were made as to its use for domestic purposes on account of impurities. A temporary arrangement, however, was made for its use in cases of fire. Pipes were laid, and on the 8th of December, of the year named, the water was sent coursing to the hydrants in various parts of the city. And that was the first time the city received a supply from any source, by aqueduct, for any purpose. This arrangement continued till a supply for all needs was secured from other sources. Flax Pond, from the earliest times, has yielded its waters for many useful purposes. The principal stream that it sends forth is Strawberry Brook, which, in its course to the ocean, has carried mills, supplied tanneries and done many other useful things, besides answering as a highway for the alewives to reach their spawning-grounds. This pond, likewise, is to a considerable extent artificial; and its name was derived from the circumstance that much of the flax which in former times was raised hereabout was taken there to be duly rotted.

Floating Bridge Pond.—This lies in the direct line of the old Salem and Boston turnpike, and the bridge by which it is crossed floats upon the surface, a circumstance that gave rise to the name. This pond is of great depth, so much so that in former times it was spoken of as "without a bottom." The bridge lies flat upon the surface, and, as carriages pass, the water is forced up between the planks, so that some portions are always wet. Stacey's Brook, which discharges at King's Beach, has its rise in Floating Bridge Pond.

Gold Fish Pond.—This is a small gathering of water and occupies what was formerly a brambly bog. It is on Fayette Street, near Lewis, and close by the spot on which Edmund Ingalls, one of the very first settlers, established himself in 1629; hence it was sometimes called "Ingalls's Pond." It was likewise called "The Swamp," in view of its swampy condition and uncomely aspect. But in 1870, at an expense of about three thousand seven hundred dollars, such improvements were made as rendered it one of the chief ornaments of that part of the city. Especially has it a most attractive appearance at evening, in the lustre of the electric light. About 1840 it began to be called Gold Fish Pond, the name originating in the fact that in it had then appeared large numbers of goldfish, supposed to have been the offspring of five of the species which some boys procured and let loose there in 1837. These fish became so abundant that in a few years the youth of the neighborhood gained many a dime by peddling them about town from buckets of water.

Holder's Pond is a pretty little woodland lakelet among the rocky hills, with wild, tangled paths upon its borders, as sequestered as any misanthrope would desire, for his musing hours. And in winter it affords, like all the other ponds, a fine surface for the skater's sports.

Lily Pond is upon the north of Boston Street, and near the Peabody line, a portion lying within the limits of St. Joseph's Cemetery. It no doubt acquired its name from the splendid growth of white lilies that year after year, before the multitudes of juvenile depredators began to make their descents, adorned its surface, and perfumed the air around.

Sluice Pond.—At the time the matter of establishing public water-works in Lynn was under discussion, the waters of various sources were analyzed, and it was found that those of Sluice Pond were the purest. This little lake lies near the northeast border, in what used to be called Dye Factory Village, but now Wyoma. It is of irregular shape, and with it, by a gentle little stream, Cedar Pond is connected. The waters of this pond have for many years been utilized for mechanical purposes, the sluice-way through which they passed giving the pond its name; it was, however, formerly called Tomlins's Pond. A small stream connects its waters with Flax Pond, so that Cedar, Sluice and Flax form links to the chain that reaches the ocean by way of Strawberry Brook.

Spring Pond, the main body of which lies in Salem, though the famous mineral spring, from which its name is derived, is just within the Lynn border, has an interesting history which would more properly be given elsewhere. Then there is the little pond, if it can properly be so called, near the centre of the Common. This was formed in 1835, by intercepting the waters of a little brook that pursued its weedy way across that pleasant public ground. Improvements were made and the fountain placed in 1871.

Nothing need be added, perhaps, regarding the mill-ponds that have from time to time been formed by individual enterprise and for individual emolument, though they have added to the prosperity of the place and done their part in the way of beautifying. That

on Federal Street was formed as early as 1655, was dug by hand, and is still supplied by water from Flax Pond, coursing along the canal, tapping Strawberry Brook at Park Street, and running on through a part of Marion. Then there is the twenty-acre mill-pond near the foot of Pleasant Street, formed by Mr. John Alley, in 1831, by running a dam from his wharf to the marsh.

The territory of Lynn presents an interesting field for the geologist. Here are literally hills of porphyry of various colors, red and a beautiful purple predominating, which would, were the stone not so difficult to work, afford an inexhaustible store of handsome and cheap building material. It is now, however, beginning to be used to some extent, in the rubble form. The beautiful walls of Saint Stephen's Church are chiefly composed of it; also those of the First Universalist Church, in Nahant Street. There are likewise large deposits of green stone and syenite. In blasting for the pipes of the City Water-Works up the hill opposite the pumping station on Walnut Street, beautiful dendrites of manganese were found in abundance. Enormous boulders of granite are found in the woods and upon the shores; but these are now fast disappearing, for building purposes. There are also veins of quartz; and there is a tradition that some of the early settlers found gold, in small quantities. The eminent geologist, Agassiz, long had a summer residence at Nahant, and many interesting facts have been brought to light by his researches. The rugged battlements of rock that frown along the shores of the peninsula, upon which he so loved to gaze, and whose mysterious construction he so loved to investigate, we are assured, stood there in solemn majesty ages before Europe emerged from the chaotic mass.

In an examination of the geology of Lynn, Saugus, Swampscott and Nahant would naturally be included. But in this place nothing more than a mere suggestion or two can be made as to the various interesting formations. It is profitless to speculate as to what the condition of the formations and deposits was ages ago, or to endeavor by present appearances to trace the operations of nature in pre-historic times. It may, however, be noted as an interesting fact, touching the history of Essex County, that geological researches long ago led to the belief that at a remote period the Merrimac River, after entering Massachusetts from New Hampshire, instead of pursuing its present course, and discharging its waters at Newburyport, followed a more direct line, and cast its contribution into the Atlantic at Lynn. Supposing that to have been the case, and that it had continued to the present time, where now would have been that line of thrifty Essex County border cities and towns, Lawrence, Haverhill, Bradford, West Newbury and the others that so adorn the whole extent of the beautiful valley; yea, and Newburyport herself?

Lynn cannot now boast of a lordly stream like the Merrimac, but she can boast of her bright little Saugus that traverses her western border—a modest little river, to be sure, but one which has largely contributed to her prosperity during her whole history, by furnishing eligible mill-sites and other manufacturing privileges, and by yielding abundance of various kinds of excellent shore fish. Tons of eels have sometimes been speared from beneath the ice during a single winter, and the clam-banks near the mouth have yielded of their abundance many a nutritive meal for the humble board of the poor as well as savory addition to the luxurious table of the rich. Indeed, the extremity of poverty, at least in the matter of food, was never so keenly felt by the settlers hereabout as by those farther inland, the sea, like a faithful parent, being always a good provider. In addition to all these benefits may be mentioned the facilities for salt water bathing, and boating sports. And now, with its tributaries of pure water, this gentle river of Saugus is about to swell the volume of Lynn's public supply.

It was upon the border of Saugus River that the ancient iron-works, said to have been the first in America, were established. And in a romantic glen, a stone's throw from the bloomery, it is alleged, a band of pirates concealed themselves, after quitting their bloody traffic upon the seas, remaining undisturbed till a King's cruiser appeared upon the coast, when capture and swift retribution overtook most of them.

Lynn, as before stated, is about ten miles northeast of Boston, the metropolis of New England. Including Swampscott and Nahant, which, though they have now become separate municipalities, still seem to be mere territorial outposts, the seashore line measures about six miles; and inland from the sea the line measures about five miles. The main body of the city, or rather of the business portion, occupies a plain, with the sea in front. But there are some diversities of surface, Sagamore Hill and the Highlands being airy elevations, crowned by many fine residences.

It can hardly be said that the soil of Lynn is naturally fertile. It is stony, and in many places the descent towards the sea is so considerable that the droughts of summer often have a serious effect. Nevertheless, such an abundance of rich manuring material is day by day thrown up by the sea, and the means of irrigation are so near at hand, that the labors of even the indigent husbandman need not be in vain. Farming was, of course, the chief occupation of most of the early settlers, and it is stated by Graham that in 1637 there were thirty-seven plows in the whole colony, most of them being in Lynn.

In the early times of the settlement the woods, the beaches and marshes furnished irresistible attractions for the sportsman. Feathered game of various kinds was found in the woods, upon the beaches and

marshes; cod, haddock, bass and halibut sported in the offing; and the woods furnished a good share of wild meat.

Of feathered game very little is now found. The fish, or rather the fishing interest, was chiefly taken away by our undutiful children, Nahant and Swampscott, when they departed; and, of course, in the sketches of those places, some account of it will appear. As to furred game, there is now almost literally none in the woods. Occasionally a shame-faced sportsman may be seen shying from the forest at evening, possibly with a poor little rabbit, but most likely empty-handed.

William Wood, the author of "New England's Prospect," who has already been spoken of as a resident of Lynn, was inclined occasionally to give his descriptive passages in numbers. He did not, probably, aspire to the character of poet, though, with as good grace as some others, he might have done so; and perhaps, having called him the first historian of Lynn, we may as well also call him the first poet. Of the flora of this region he discourses briefly in numbers, mentioning among the trees, the oak, cyprus, pine, chestnut, cedar, walnut, spruce, ash, elm, maple, birch and some others of smaller growth; naming also the "diar's shumach," the "snake-murthering hazell" and "sweet saxaphrage, whose spurnes in beere allays hot fever's rage." Most of these kinds are still common in Lynn woods, though the chestnut and one or two others are not often seen. The hemlock, one of the most graceful native trees of New England, he does not allude to, excepting, perhaps, under some other name.

Mr. Wood mentions some of the fruits of this "Indian orchard," but does not go much into particulars. Blueberries, blackberries, cranberries, raspberries and whortleberries are still common in the woods and meadows. One of the best known shrubs at present found is the barberry, the root of which was formerly much used in dyeing, as it imparts a beautiful yellow. It bears an acid berry, of bright scarlet, from which an excellent preserve is made. It is, however, no doubt an exotic, and akin to that which in England is called the pepperidge bush. The early settlers introduced some plants for which after-generations had little cause to be thankful; among them the white-weed, now known by the more dainty name of field-daisy, and the wood-wax, that beautiful pest of pasture land. But the barberry seems to hold a doubtful rank. Its prevalence, more than a hundred years ago, became so injurious in the pastures that the law interposed to check its increase. It, however, requires such a peculiarity of soil, that to this day it has not spread over a great extent of territory. Even in most parts of Massachusetts a barberry bush was never seen. The General Court, in 1753, ordered that all persons having barberry bushes growing on their lands should extirpate them before the 10th of June, 1760. And the surveyors of highways were required to destroy all growing by the roadside within the specified time, or the towns should pay two shillings for every one left standing. The reasons for this order were that those bushes had so much increased that the pasture lands were greatly encumbered; and it was imagined that "a steam flew off" from them that blasted the English grain. So it appears that left-handed thanks were due to the people of other lands, in the early days, for questionable gifts, as well as from us of this generation for the gift of the sarcastically-twittering English sparrow. But then it should be remembered that the many nobler gifts from abroad far outnumber the few of doubtful value.

In the woods and fields, the tangled dells and damp vales, along the weedy rills and upon the rocky heights, may still be gathered wild flowers in great variety, from the brilliant cardinal to the shrinking violet. To sum up in a terse sentence of Mr. Lewis, "The forests, fields and meadows are rich in the abundance and variety of medicinal plants, and the town presents a fine field for the botanist."

Very few parts of the New England coast present so many interesting and at times sublime features as those within and about Lynn. Here bold and jagged cliffs of greenstone, feldspar and other adamantine formations rear themselves as impregnable barriers against the inroads of the ever-assaulting ocean; there, broad beaches of fine, gray sand, so compact and hard that carriage wheels scarcely make an impression, with ridges of the wonderful up-castings of the sea—shells of curious shape and glistening stones of every color and form. In pleasant weather and during the warm season there are many attractions for the pleasure-seeker in promenading, boating and fishing; and for the health-seeker in refreshing breezes, quiet retirement and the restoring sea-bath.

The principal beach is that which joins Nahant to Lynn, and has, from early times, been known as Long Beach. It is nearly two miles in length, and forms a gentle curve. The early geographers spoke of it as a very curious formation. To the first settlers it seems to have been the scene of weird mystery, awe-inspiring and not unmixed with undefinable apprehension. Its hollow moanings warned, its gentle murmurings relieved. Mr. Wood thus alludes to it,—"Vpon y^e south side of y^e Sandy Beach y^e sea beateth, which is a sure prognostication to presage stormes and foule weather and y^e breaking vp of Frost. For when a storme hath beene or is likely to be itt will roare like Thunder, being hearde six myles." The roaring is not, however, always indicative of an approaching storm, as it arises from the violent driving in of heavy seas by out-winds. The wind may change and the threatening cease. Long Beach was a favorite sporting-ground with the Indians, and gambling groups sometimes assembled here, for the Indians were great gamblers, often risking all their possessions, even to papoose or squaw, upon the turning up of a shell or fall of a stone. The

Indian sagamore dwelt upon the neighboring height that overlooks the beach, and from there was accustomed to view the athletic sports of his people, which took place on the sandy plateau, sometimes being unable to restrain himself from joining in the contests—the same picturesque height that still bears the name Sagamore Hill, and is now crowned by commodious dwellings, stores and other marks of refined and busy life.

Upon these beaches and along the rocky indentations of this rugged coast the sea has, from time to time, cast up from her mysterious store-house wonderful specimens of the deposits there. And they have also been the scene of some most appalling shipwrecks and other marine disasters. Government has done something to lessen the dangers, and still much needs to be done. Egg Rock towers up in the offing, eighty-six feet above sea level, and has an area of some three acres, on one-third of which is a shallow layer of soil. It is a precipitous cliff of feldspar, incapable of being landed upon, excepting at one point and during a calm sea. Upon this lonely rock, which is a couple of miles from Long Beach, a mile from Nahant and three miles from Swampscott, a lighthouse has been erected, which for the first time shed forth its hospitable beams on the night of September 15, 1856.

From time to time the territorial integrity of old Lynn has been raided upon. As already remarked, Lynnfield was set off in 1814, Saugus in 1815, Swampscott in 1852 and Nahant in 1853. But as to the latter, some two centuries ago, it was in danger of being severed from the parent, for it was in 1688 that Edward Randolph, who has been called the evil genius of New England, petitioned Governor Andros for the gift of Nahant, indulging, no doubt, in the pleasant dream of erecting a sort of baronial establishment for himself there. His choice of a seat certainly indicated good taste, if not a love for fair dealing. The town was notified of the petition, and great excitement ensued, it being well known that the petitioner had much influence as counselor, secretary and personal friend of the Governor. He had been sent out to report on the condition of the colonies, and was justly reputed to be unfriendly to their interests. There was no doubt of his high prerogative proclivities, nor of his being one of the chief instruments in annulling the beloved old charter. He himself says that he was regarded at Boston "more like a .spy than one of his majesty's servants," and speaks of being welcomed, on his return from a brief absence, by "a paper of scandalous verses." The nature of these "scandalous verses" may be gathered from the following extract:

"Welcome, Sr. welcome from ye easterne shore,
With a commission stronger than before
To play the horse-leach; rob us of our ffleeces,
To rend our land and teare it all to pieces:
Welcome now back againe; as is the whip,
To a ffoole's back; as water in a ship.
Boston make roome; Randolph's returned, that Hector,
Confirmed at home to be ye sharp Collector."

It can well be supposed that Randolph was by no means a favorite with the people of Boston, for among his other imprudent—or take the word as more exactly expressive without the "r,"—attempts at acquisition, he petitioned to have a house-lot on Boston Common set off to him.

Such was the man who, in 1688, petitioned Andros, who had just about as much love for the colonies and for abstract justice as he, to grant him the beautiful peninsula of Nahant. The Governor undoubtedly was inclined to comply with his favorite's petition; but decency required that the matter should not be consummated with unseemly haste.

On notice of Randolph's petition, a town-meeting was held, and a vigorous protest, setting forth the right of the town to the peninsula and the damage that would ensue from the granting of the petition, was addressed to the Governor and Council. But Randolph was persistent and renewed his petition, denying the right of the town to the land, and even going so far as to declare that Lynn never was an incorporated town, "and so not endowed with a power of receiving or disposing of such land." To this a spirited rejoinder, signed by seventy-four of the principal inhabitants, was forwarded. But it is not easy to say what the result would have been, had not the successful uprising of the people presently consigned both Andros and Randolph to the Fort Hill Prison, in which uprising the people of Lynn naturally took an active part, Rev. Mr. Shepard, the minister, heading the phalanx which marched to Boston, arriving there, as Randolph graphically said, at about eleven o'clock, "like so many wild bears." This Randolph affair formed a lively episode in Lynn's history.

Had Nahant been granted to Randolph, it is easy to see that it would have become a sharp thorn in the side of Lynn; that a continual petty warfare would have ensued. It would no longer have been, as for many years it was, a pasture for her cattle, nor would it have become, as in after-years it did, a delightful resort for parties of pleasure. And even at this day, instead of being the paradise of a certain class of reputed "dodgers," it would have been—we know not what!

From what has already been said, something may be gathered of the condition, habits, culture and general fitness of the settlers as laborers on the foundations of a new social fabric, and likewise something of the natural features of their new home. It will be observed that they came largely from the industrial classes. But they were a thoughtful people, and realized the responsibilities that rested on them. Next to ensuring the means for procuring the prime necessities of life,—food, clothing and shelter,—they felt the importance of supplying facilities for common education, for moral and intellectual training.

Lynn, unlike some other New England settlements,

has all along, in a remarkable degree, depended on herself, procuring whatever she possessed by her own industry and skill; in other words, has had only what she earned. Some of the early settlements were the outcome of foreign business enterprise, and flourished by the aid of foreign capital. Especially in later times have manufacturing communities been nurtured, if not sustained, by capital drawn from outside of their limits. Not so with Lynn. Her advancement has been made through her own enterprise, her accumulations by her own industry. Throughout all the periods of business adversity and temporal distress that have cast their shadows over the community, in colonial, provincial and later times, Lynn has ever been able not only to maintain her own sons and daughters, but to afford, not perhaps of her abundance, but of her thrift and generosity, relief to communities more severely afflicted. "When there were yet few of them, and they strangers in the land," with humble trust, patient endurance and unremitting toil, they applied themselves to their new duties, and seldom failed of meet reward. But the writer is not unmindful that there is a higher duty to perform than the boastful tracing of progress in a mere worldly way, that higher duty being to mark the development of the great principles that constitute the true foundation of human right and duty; of tracing, even in the most limited sphere, the progress of those principles on which true liberty rests—principles which contribute so largely to the sum of human happiness, and have made our nation what she is.

In the history of Lynn, perhaps as conspicuously as in that of any other New England community, may be seen the progress to which we refer—the progress of principles which were the birthright of the settlers, as Englishmen, shadowed forth in the charter of 1215, and finally appearing in more pronounced form in the Declaration of American Independence, in the established Constitutions and supplementary Bills of Rights.

The Andros administration has been referred to. That, perhaps, was the most pregnant, as it certainly was the most stirring, episode during many years of New England history. Something of its bearing upon the people here has been seen. The result, no doubt, was of great benefit politically, for it quickened the apprehension of natural rights and solidified the determination to permit upon this soil no encroachment upon them. The "tyrant of New England," as the obnoxious Governor was called, soon found that opposition attended every step, and manifested itself in every way—in grave denunciation, cutting satire and comic hyperbole. Imagine the effect of the following stanzas from the Sternhold and Hopkins version of the Fifty-second Psalm, as they are said to have been lined off with great unction by an elderly deacon, and with equal unction sung by voices old and young, smooth and rough, in tune and out, at a meeting which the Governor, in one of his tours, deigned to attend:

"Why dost thou, tyrant, boast abroad
Thy wicked works to praise?
Dost thou not know there is a God,
Whose mercies last always?

Why dost thy mind yet still devise
Such wicked wiles to warp?
Thy tongue untrue, in forging lies,
Is like a razor sharp.

Thou dost delight in fraud and guile,
In mischief, blood and wrong:
Thy lips have learned the flattering stile,
O false, deceitful tongue."

Civil History.—The civil history of Lynn, in its organic features, does not much differ from that of other early Bay settlements. The town was never formally incorporated, but by the earliest General Court was recognized as an existing municipality. That was enough, though, as we have just seen, the obsequious Edward Randolph, a counselor of Governor Andros when, in 1688, he petitioned for the gift of Nahant, denied this, saying, in answer to the vigorous protestations of the Lynn people, "It does not appear . . . that the said town of Lynn was incorporated in the year 1635, nor at any time since, and so not now endowed with a power of receiving or disposing of such lands, . . . and their town of Lynn is equal to a village in England, and no otherwise." But he and his unscrupulous superior soon found that there was a power somewhere that was able to defeat their arbitrary schemes and land them both in a prison.

The settlers were thoroughly imbued with the sentiment that political power belonged to the people. If Roger Williams was the first here to formulate this as well as certain principles of religious freedom, he was not the first to realize it. When they left the Old World they left the dogma of a divinely-appointed class, and adopted the manly idea of equal rights. Such being the case, what more natural than the establishment of the town-meeting,—the assembly in which all could meet and freely discuss the affairs by which the well-being and prosperity of all were to be affected, and in which each individual, by voice and vote, could exercise his influence? There was the charter, to be sure, and its authority was acknowledged; but its provisions would not have been allowed to override the higher demands of conscience, right and justice, had there been any apprehended attempt to do so, for the trained and ingenious mind can discover ways of interpretation that will circumvent the most crafty scheming.

Very soon the interests of the settlers broadened, and it became necessary to establish "Ye Great and Genrall Courte." And the same right of free discussion and free action was maintained there. At first every freeman was deemed a member of the court, and liable to be fined if he did not attend its sessions, for it was rightly claimed that the community was entitled to the best judgment and skill of each of its members, it being realized as well then as now that in the mind of the humblest hewer of wood and

drawer of water conceptions of unspeakable value might arise. But the time soon arrived when it was impracticable for the whole body of freemen to attend the court sessions; no room could be found large enough to contain them, and then the end had to be sought through deputies or representatives. Soon parties began to appear, and divisions, not on the primary principle of individual freedom, but on the question as to whom it would be most safe and expedient to invest with the delegated power.

Of course it would not be practicable or even desirable to go largely into detail regarding the old town-meetings. They were conducted here much as elsewhere. Every local matter was freely discussed and often the debates broadened into irrelevant dissertations on great public questions and theoretical propositions, very much as they are apt to in these days of political enlightenment. Neighborhood disagreements and jealousies would occasionally arise, and crude conceptions and selfish inclinations manifest themselves. Village orators would harangue at wearying length and village seers forecast calamities; but there were also wise, honest and patriotic men, shrewd counselors and wary watchers for the public good, and through all and in all each felt his own individual rights and acknowledged his responsibilities.

It is not wonderful that the people of the old Bay State clung so tenaciously and so long to the town-meeting. It had carried them safely through perilous times and threatening shocks; and in a broad sense it may even be claimed that it had been the very nursery of American freedom. There was no city organization in all Massachusetts till 1822, when Boston assumed the new investiture, having then a population of forty-five thousand. It was quite a number of years, however, before any other town followed her example. Salem and Lowell were the first, they becoming cities in 1836. But the adoption of the city form was so far receding from elementary freedom, and while it was desirable, if not necessary, in many respects, it also afforded greater facilities for ambitious politicians and wire-pullers to ply their arts.

Lynn adopted the city form of government in 1850. Many worthy and prominent people strongly opposed the change, and the adoption of the charter came near being defeated; indeed, a similar one previously granted by the Legislature had been defeated by popular vote. Mr. George Hood, a man of much ability and strong persuasive powers, led the opposition, and it is a little singular that he who had persistently and vehemently opposed the charter was elected the first mayor under it. In his inaugural address he thus bade adieu to the old règimè: "Before proceeding to the business immediately before us, it seems to be appropriate to the occasion to revert briefly to our venerable system of town government, of which we have taken leave forever, and to pay a passing tribute to the memory of the conscientious men who, in the midst of toil, privation and peril, founded, cherished and transmitted it to us as a rich inheritance. According to Lewis' History, the first white men known to have been inhabitants of Lynn were Edmund Ingalls and his brother, Francis Ingalls, who came here in 1629. The next year came Allen Breed, Thomas Newhall, George Burrill, Edward Baker, John Ramsdell and Richard Johnson; in 1635, Henry Collins; in 1640, Andrew Mansfield, Richard Hood, Edward Ireson and Henry Rhoades,—all of whom have representatives in this City Council, and perhaps others of whose history I have not been informed. . . . Our town government has accomplished its mission; its successful operation for more than two centuries has proved the capacity of man for self-government; it has proved that the safest repository for power is in the hands of the people. During this long period we hear of no abuse of power by them, nor of those to whom they intrusted the care of the town government. They taxed themselves liberally for all necessary objects of public improvement. The church and the school-house grew up together, both significant monuments of advancing civilization." Is it probable that at the end of two centuries more it can be said of the people under the present form of municipal government, that no abuse of power by them or those to whom they entrusted the administration of affairs, had been heard of?

Mr. Hood well said that under the old government the town prospered. Its growth was steady, but not rapid. At the time of the adoption of the charter, in 1850, the population was 14,200; twenty years before, in 1830, it was 6200; in 1765 the first recorded census gave 2198; and the increase of business was in something like the same ratio. But after the introduction of machinery in the manufacture of shoes, which was subsequent to the adoption of the charter, the increase of business and population was seemingly much more rapid, though perhaps the percentage was not much greater.

For nearly two centuries the town-meetings were held in the meeting-house, as the settlers preferred to call their house of worship, the first being an unseemly little structure, standing in a hollow, near the territorial centre, and the only public building. It was not held by the same tenure that "churches" now are, but was the property of the town. There the village orators exercised their eloquence, the village statesmen their patriotism, the incipient wire-pullers their cunning, till the house itself disappeared. "The Old Tunnel," as the parish meeting-house built in 1682 was in after-years called, then became the place for the transaction of town business. It stood near the centre of the Common, and continued for several generations to serve the double purpose of a place for public worship and a place for the transaction of public business. But it was relieved of the latter use in 1806. In the mean time the Methodists had come in and built a house of worship. And some objec-

tions having been made to the further use of the old house, the town-meetings then (1806) began to be held in the Methodist house, which stood near the east end of the Common, at the head of Market Street. There they were held till the erection of the Town-House, in 1814. That building had an interesting history, of which little can be given here. It stood on the centre of the Common, nearly opposite the head of Hanover Street, and for many years the interior remained unfinished. Of course, elections were held in it; military companies drilled there; and it was used for assemblages and exhibitions of various kinds. In 1832 it was removed to South Common Street, at the point where Blossom Street now opens, and the interior finished. On the formation of the city government, in 1850, it was thoroughly repaired and fitted for the reception of the officials under the new and more august order. Thus it remained until its destruction by fire on the morning of October 6, 1864.

It was on the 10th of April, 1850, that the Legislature granted the City Charter; on the 19th of the same month the inhabitants, in town-meeting assembled, voted to accept it; and on the 14th of May the first organization under it took place. The ceremonies were held in Old Lyceum Hall, which stood on Market Street, corner of Summer. The day was pleasant, and a large number, some of whom were ladies, were present. In the evening the new government, together with a considerable company of prominent citizens, partook of a collation in the Town Hall. There was no jubilant display at the initiation of the new government; no procession, no pyrotechnic exhibition, either oratorical or material. All parties seemed to join in a quiet but cordial acceptance of the change, and in a hopeful, if not enthusiastic spirit, determined to repress all former misgivings.

Soon after the destruction of the old Town House the necessity of a substantial City Hall was so manifest that the work of erection was set about energetically; and, on the 30th of November, 1867, the present stately edifice was dedicated. The city offices were soon removed thither, and from that time onward have the commodious chambers echoed with the eloquence of the assembled counselors.

Whether Lynn has prospered more since the adoption of the city form of government than she would have prospered had the old town form been longer continued can only be conjectured. But certain it is, that during the thirty-five years that the existing form has been in operation her progress has been highly satisfactory. The population has more than trebled; and in business, in educational facilities, in benevolent enterprises, and, may we not venture to add, in religion and morality, her advancement has been alike marked.

It has been stated that Lynn has always been fortunate in having among her people men of sagacity, energy and prudence,—men who, in the administration of her municipal affairs and in her broader interests, vigorously defended her rights and labored for her good. These are deserving of special notice, and in an elaborate history should have a place; but in a limited sketch like the present but comparatively few can be even named. In the troublous days of the Andros administration, among her heroic defenders were Oliver Purchis, Rev. Mr. Shepard, Thomas Laighton, Ralph King and John Burrill. In the stormy times of the Revolution she had the vigilant watchfulness of Rev. Mr. Treadwell, Rev. Mr. Roby, Deacon John Mansfield, Dr. Flagg and Frederick Breed, besides her brave sons who took the field. And all along, down to these later times, she has never been destitute of loyal sons to protect her good name and promote her prosperity. Especially may it be said that during the threatening times of the great Civil War scarcely a man in her whole population could be found who was not ready, if need be, to take the field in defense of the national cause.

The following is a list of the mayors of Lynn, with the dates of inauguration:

George Hood, the first mayor, served two terms; was inaugurated May 14, 1850, and April 7, 1851. He was a native of Lynn, and died June 29, 1859, aged fifty-two.

Benjamin Franklin Mudge, the second mayor, was inaugurated June 16, 1852. He was a native of Orrington, Me.; born August 11, 1817, and died in Manhattan, Kansas, November 21, 1879.

Daniel Collins Baker, the third mayor, was inaugurated April 4, 1853. He was a native of Lynn; born October 14, 1816, and died in New Orleans, La., July 19, 1863.

Thomas Page Richardson, the fourth mayor, was inaugurated April 3, 1854. He was a native of Lynn; born July 27, 1816, and died November 24, 1881.

Andrews Breed, the fifth mayor, was inaugurated January 1, 1855. He was a native of Lynn; born on the 20th of September, 1794, and died in Lancaster, Mass., April 21, 1881.

Ezra Warren Mudge, the sixth mayor, was inaugurated January 7, 1856, and January 5, 1857, serving two terms. He was a native of Lynn; was born on the 5th of December, 1811, and died September 20, 1878.

William Frederic Johnson, the seventh mayor, was inaugurated January 4, 1858. He was a native of Lynn; born [in Nahant] July 30, 1819.

Edward Swain Davis, the eighth mayor, served two terms; was inaugurated January 3, 1859, and January 2, 1860. He was born in Lynn June 22, 1808, and died August 7, 1887.

Hiram Nichols Breed, the ninth mayor, was inaugurated January 7, 1861. He was born in Lynn September 2, 1809.

Peter Morrell Neal, the tenth mayor, held the office four terms. He was inaugurated January 6,

1862, January 5, 1863, January 4, 1864, and January 2, 1865. He is a native of North Berwick, Me., and was born September 21, 1811.

ROLAND GREENE USHER, the eleventh mayor, served three terms. He was inaugurated January 1, 1866, January 7, 1867, and January 6, 1868. He was born in Medford, Mass., January 6, 1823.

JAMES NEEDHAM BUFFUM, the twelfth mayor, was inaugurated January 4, 1869. He was afterward elected for a second term, and inaugurated January 1, 1872. He was born in North Berwick, Me., May 16, 1807, and died June 12, 1887.

EDWIN WALDEN, the thirteenth mayor, served two terms; was inaugurated January 3, 1870, and January 2, 1871. He was born in Lynn, November 25, 1818.

JACOB MEEK LEWIS, the fourteenth mayor, served four terms, being inaugurated January 6, 1873, January 5, 1874, January 4, 1875, and January 3, 1876. He was born in Lynn, October 13, 1823.

SAMUEL MANSFIELD BUBIER, the fifteenth mayor, served two terms, having been inaugurated January 1, 1877, and January 7, 1878. He is a native of Lynn, and was born June 23, 1816.

GEORGE PLAISTED SANDERSON, the sixteenth mayor, was inaugurated January 6, 1879, and January 5, 1880, serving two terms. He was born in Gardiner, Me., November 22, 1836.

HENRY BACON LOVERING, the seventeenth mayor, served two terms. He was inaugurated January 3, 1881, and January 2, 1882. He is a native of Portsmouth, N. H., and was born April 8, 1841.

WILLIAM LEWIS BAIRD, the eighteenth mayor, was inaugurated January 1, 1883, and January 7, 1884, serving two terms. He is a native of Lynn; born July 29, 1843.

JOHN RICHARD BALDWIN, the nineteenth mayor, was inaugurated January 5, 1885. He is a native of Lynn, and was born May 10, 1854.

GEORGE DALLAS HART, the twentieth mayor, was inaugurated January 4, 1886. He was born in Malden, Mass., December 7, 1846, and is an offspring of the old Lynn Hart family. Mayor Hart, elected for a second term, was inaugurated January 3, 1887.

A short series of statistical statements, touching the present state of municipal and kindred affairs, will now be given. Other statistics relating to special topics will appear in their proper places.

POPULATION.—The population of Lynn, as given by the State census of 1885, is 45,867,—males, 21,752; females, 24,115. Native born, 36,099; foreign born, 9768. Of the age of eighty years, 16 males and 31 females; of the age of ninety years, 3 males and 7 females; of the age of ninety-five years, 4, all females. Colored persons, 624.

The population at different periods is shown by the following:

Years	1800	1850	1885
Population	2,837	14,257	45,867

DWELLINGS. 1885.—Whole number, 7383,—of which 7161 are of wood, 76 of brick, 2 of stone, and the others of mixed material. It will be noted that this does not include the business buildings, many of which are of brick and very large. Number of persons to each occupied dwelling, 6.33. Number of buildings erected during the year, 392. Lynn has long been famous for the moving of her buildings from place to place, and, in pursuance of the custom, 55 changed their places during the year.

VALUATION, TAXATION AND POLLS.—The following table shows the progress of Lynn in these matters, at several periods since she became a city:

YEAR.	REAL ESTATE.	PERSONAL ESTATE.	TOTAL.	NO. POLLS.	TAX PER $1,000.
1850	$3,160,515	$1,674,328	$4,834,843	3,251	$9.00
1860	6,291,460	3,357,605	9,649,065	3,933	8.80
1870	14,277,212	6,649,903	20,927,115	6,773	17.20
1880	17,913,543	5,470,192	23,383,735	10,702	17.60
1886	23,305,806	6,000,003	29,305,809	13,842	19.00

It will be perceived from the foregoing that we have made marked progress, as well in taxation as valuation and polls.

APPROPRIATIONS AND RECEIPTS, EXPENDITURES AND CITY DEBT.—The "progress" in these matters is indicated by the following:

YEAR.	APPROPRIATIONS AND RECEIPTS.	EXPENDITURES.	CITY DEBT.	
1850	$45,000.00	$36,704.19	Mar. 1, 1850,	$71,398.15
1860	110,607.28	101,569.51	Dec. 31, 1860,	123,100.00
1870	524,776.72	499,583.25	Dec. 31, 1870,	910,000.00
1880	705,099.57	653,327.90	Dec. 31, 1880,	2,169,000.00
1886	1,080,274.65	1,014,617.80	Dec. 20, 1886,	2,522,400.00

It should be remarked, in relation to the city debt, that the exact condition is not always apparent. For instance, the debt in 1886 is given as $2,522,400.00, but there were such drawbacks as reduced the net amount to $1,778,128.82.

ALMSHOUSE.—Average number of subjects, 67; average cost of each per week, $2.62. Aid was also given to 519 families, or some 1600 outside persons; 5457 tramps were during the year provided with food and lodging at an expense of $320.55.

FIRE DEPARTMENT, FIRE ALARMS, ETC.—Steam fire-engines, 5; hook-and-ladder trucks, 2; horse hose carriages, 5; hose wagon, 1; large double-tank chemical engine, 1; supply wagons, 5; fire alarm telegraph wagon, 1; jumper hose carriages, 2; hose pungs, 5; buggy, 1; small extinguishers, 6. The manual force consists of 1 chief and 4 assistant engineers, 1 superintendent and 1 assistant superintendent of fire alarm telegraph, 6 engineers of steam fire-engines, 5 firemen of steam fire-engines, 12 drivers, 10 foremen, 8 assistant foremen, 49 hosemen, 20 laddermen, 12 substitutes, making a total of 129. There are also in the service of the department 22 horses and 14,750 feet of hose. The number of hydrants scattered about the city is 557, and the number of street reservoirs, 19. The telegraphic fire alarm was established here in 1871, and has proved extremely useful and economical. The number of fire alarms during 1885 was 188, 84 being bell and 104 still alarms. Loss by fire during the

year, $169,975.85. Expenditures of the department for the year, $44,840.06.

Notices of the most disastrous fires that have ever occurred in Lynn may be found elsewhere in these pages.

Police Department.—The expenses for the year 1885 were $43,451.44; number of arrests, 1472; 511 being of persons of foreign birth, and 166 females; 828 were for drunkenness, 186 for assault and battery and 128 for larceny; 5453 persons were provided with lodgings.

Water Works.—Net cost of the public works, to January 1, 1887, $1,342,144.11. Average consumption of water per day during the year 1885, 1,920,519 gallons; average to each inhabitant, a trifle over 41 gallons per day. Total extension of pipe in Lynn, 75¼ miles. The report of the president of the board says (1886), "The department has paid all expenses of maintenance, the interest on the water debt, and shows a surplus of $26,919.18 to be carried to the water-loan sinking fund."

Births and Marriages, 1886.—Number of births, 1296; number of marriages, 616.

Under the sub-titles "Libraries" and "Schools" may be found statistics relating to those institutions, and under "Burial-Places" will appear certain vital statistics.

And here, perhaps, is the proper place to enumerate some of the institutions, associations and societies for benevolent, moral, social and recreative purposes, of which Lynn has a large number. They are, generally, worthy of honorable recognition, and some are deserving of great praise. It would hardly be practicable even to name them all here, nor is it necessary, as several are spoken of elsewhere. Yet a little space may be allowed, the name of the organization generally indicating its character. Among them are.—Associated Charities (the object being to discreetly distribute the means contributed for charitable purposes.), Board of Fire Insurance Underwriters, 7 clubs for religious, social, political, mutual improvement and recreative purposes. There are also 3 bicycle and 4 boat clubs, and 1 shooting club. Female Benevolent Society, Firemen's Relief Association, Free Public Forest Association, Grand Army of the Republic, Home for Aged Women, Houghton Horticultural Society, Inebriates' Home, Knights of Honor, Knights of Labor, Knights of Pythias, Lasters' Protective Union, Lynn Hospital, McKay Stitchers' Union, 4 Masonic lodges (spoken of elsewhere), Mechanics' Exchange, Medical Society, 9 mutual benefit associations – among them the Workingmen's Aid Association and the Accident Association, 12 Odd Fellows' lodges, Press Association, Sanitary Association, Shoe and Leather Association, Teamsters' Union, 10 temperance organizations, Young Men's Christian Association.

Lynn Banks.—There are now (1887) in Lynn five banks of discount, with an aggregate capital of $1,100,000, to wit: First National, capital, $500,000; Central National, $200,000; National City, $200,000; National Security, $100,000; Lynn National, $100,000. There are also two savings banks, namely, Lynn Institution for Savings and Lynn Five-Cents Savings Bank, with aggregate deposits, January 1, 1887, to the amount of $4,710,000.

Lynn Post-Office.—The business of a post-office may, perhaps, ordinarily be taken as a fair indicator of the business of the place in which it is located. The Lynn post-office was established in 1793, before which time the mail matter of the people here was distributed through the Boston office. Fifty years ago, that is in 1835, the gross amount of postage accruing at the Lynn office, all told, for the year ending October 1st, was $2,459.28; and the increase of business to the present time is indicated by the following items for the year ending December 30, 1886:

Receipts from sale of stamps, stamped envelopes and postal cards	$50,452.97
Expenditures for salaries, rent, gas, etc	23,671.88
Excess of receipt over expenditures	$26,781.09
Number of pieces delivered by carriers	3,214,985
Number of pieces collected by carriers	1,276,030

There are six daily mails, Sunday excepted, to Boston and the South, and four to the East. Fifty years ago the government did not provide carriers to deliver and collect mail matter, a fact that, no doubt, has had something to do with the increase of correspondence. The rates of postage were much higher than at present. The postage on a single letter from Lynn to New York, for instance, was 18¾ cents, a fact which induced many to send by private hand when opportunity offered. But the postage was not required to be paid in advance, a circumstance, one might think, encouraging to correspondence. A penny post began to run about town in 1812; but he was not employed by government, individuals paying him at the rate of two cents a letter. The first postmaster was Colonel James Robinson, and he kept the office on Boston Street near the corner of North Federal. He was a soldier of the Revolution; was succeeded in 1802 by Major Ezra Hitchings, reared a large family of sons and daughters and died, in 1832, in reduced circumstances, being the recipient, during his latter years, of a small pension.

CHAPTER XIV.

LYNN.—(*Continued*).

ECCLESIASTICAL.

Religious Societies, their Formation and Growth—Sketches of Early Ministers —Houses of Worship and their Equipment—Statistical Details.

"The sermon, learned long and cold;
The psalm in graveyard metre told;
But piety, right deep and true,
Each exercise ran through and through."
—JORDAN.

CONSIDERING the chief cause of the occupation of bleak New England, it would naturally be supposed that the very first public institution in a settlement would be a church. But Lynn was some three years without a minister. Very likely, however, some sort of public religious services were held, especially on the Lord's day.

FIRST CHURCH.—The first church of Lynn, the fifth in the Bay colony, was gathered in 1632; and it remains at this day one of the three or four of the early churches that have preserved their fidelity to the ancient Puritanical faith. Almost every one of the old churches has become Unitarian or Universalist.

The church here appears to have commenced in a way not in accordance with Puritanical or Orthodox order. But whatever irregularity existed was cured by the decision of a council held in March, 1635, "that, although the church had not been properly formed, yet, after-consent and practice of a church estate had supplied that defect, so all were reconciled." The church was instituted by Rev. Stephen Bachiler, who arrived with his family in June, 1632, the chief inducement for his coming probably being that he had a daughter residing here, the wife of Christopher Hussey. There came with him six persons who had belonged to his church in England, and to these, with such settlers as chose to join them, he commenced ministrations, without installation. He was then of the ripe age of seventy-one years, and appears to have retained great vitality, both mental and physical. He was a man of at least singular characteristics; was high-tempered and extremely tenacious. There was soon serious disturbance among his little flock, and gross scandals began to circulate, insomuch that in four months after his arrival the court was appealed to, and that august body thus decreed:

"Mr Batchelr is required to forbeare exerciseing guifts as a pastr or teacher publiquely, in or pattent, unlesse it be to those hee brought with him, for his contempt of authority, & till some scandles be removed."

This sentence, however, was soon after annulled. But the difficulty was not healed; other questions and scandals arose, and the court was again appealed to. Finally, on his promise to leave town within three months, the proceedings were discontinued. He was here about four years. Afterwards he was at Newbury and Hampton, of which latter place he was one of the first settlers. He subsequently pitched his tent in one or two other places. But in 1651 he returned to England, where, at the age of ninety, he married his fourth wife, his third still living here, and apparently of a reputation by no means unblemished. She petitioned the court for a divorce, but no record of the fate of the petition is found. Mr. Bachiler died near London in 1660, in the one hundredth year of his age. His descendants, and there are many hereabout, take some pride in the fact that Daniel Webster, the eminent statesman, and Mr. Whittier, the poet, trace their genealogical lines to him.

Rev. Samuel Whiting, the successor of Mr. Bachiler, was installed on the 8th of November, 1636. He was descended from a long line of honorable ancestors, and was a son of Sir John Whiting, mayor of old Boston, England, in 1600 and 1608. His brother John was also mayor four years and his brother James one year. Samuel, the minister, was born in 1597, and at the age of sixteen was entered at Emanuel College. He was an apt student, received the degree of A.B. in 1616, and that of A.M. in 1620. Afterwards he received the degree of D.D. His father died while he was in college, leaving a very considerable estate. Emanuel College, as is well known to readers of Puritan history, was called "the hot-bed of Puritanism," and it was while there, no doubt, that he imbibed those principles which grew with his growth, and strengthened with his strength —those principles which so strongly marked his whole life. It is well to bear in mind that what were known as the Puritan principles of that day had reference not only to church, but also to state. It was not only the grand purpose to purify the church of obnoxious rites and ceremonies, but also to free the people from governmental oppression and wrong—to circumscribe the royal prerogatives, defend against the encroachments and reduce the privileges of the aristocracy; in short, to break down every barrier to the reasonable exercise of individual right, freedom and responsibility.

Mr. Whiting took orders in the Church of England soon after graduating, and became chaplain in a refined and wealthy family in Norfolk. After remaining there about three years, apparently in great prosperity and happiness, he accepted a rectorship in Lynn Regis as colleague of Rev. Dr. Price. In that situation he remained three years, administering his office acceptably, excepting his refusal to conform to certain required usages in the established church service; in brief, he was a Non-conformist, subjected himself to the censure of the Bishop of Norwich, and was induced to resign and remove to the parish of Shirbeck, near Boston, where he again filled the

office of rector, and again came under censure for non-conforming practices.

In 1636 his situation became so uncomfortable that he resigned, and prepared to emigrate to America. The same year, 1636, in which he resigned his charge at Skirbeck, he emigrated to America, arriving in May. He does not appear to have greatly enjoyed the voyage hither, as he remarks that he would "much rather have undergone six weeks' imprisonment for a good cause than six weeks of such terrible seasickness." A few months after his arrival, November 8, 1636, at the age of thirty-nine, he was installed minister of the little church here at Lynn.

Mr. Whiting was twice married. His second partner, she who accompanied him hither, and whose remains peacefully slumber in our old burial-place, near the west end of the Common, could claim family descent more illustrious than his, for she could trace her lineage, without a break, to William the Conqueror. She was a sister of Oliver St. John, the chief justice of England during the commonwealth, and own cousin of Oliver Cromwell. But all the incidents of birth and family on his and her part, incidents which to so many, even here and among us of this day, possess a peculiar charm, seem to have weighed nothing in comparison with their strong sense of duty.

The young couple, as they then were, apparently without one longing look behind, left the bright scenes, the comforts and luxuries of their early homes, crossed the stormy ocean, and bravely entered this western wilderness, with stout hearts, to fight the battle of civilization. Nobly did they address themselves to their chosen work, and great was their success. The beneficial results of their coming did not by any means end with their lives. Children were born to them, and children's children have appeared in every path of usefulness, and adorned our whole history. The entire nation has received benefits hardly capable of being over-estimated. Some of their descendants have been conspicuous in theological, scientific and literary callings; others have filled useful and honorable positions in the national civil service; others, again, have risen to eminence in the military profession. One needs only to glance over a dictionary of American biography to learn how meritorious the family has proved.

Mr. Whiting, as might readily be supposed, took great interest in the education of the youth of the town, and, together with his accomplished wife, did everything possible to refine the manners and elevate the condition of every class. He took unwearied pains to advance every material interest—to improve the husbandry, the fisheries, the mechanic arts—indeed, all branches required for the supply of current and prospective wants. And all the time he never lost sight of oppportunities to promote the broader interests of the little community, vigilantly guarding against the imposition of wrongful burdens by the General Court, through misinformation or selfish appliances, and laboring in every honest way to elevate and dignify her name. The town grew apace during the forty years he continued so devoted to her concerns; and it was a healthy growth.

It is not to be forgotten that many of the clergy of that day had very great influence in the direction of public affairs. Indeed, it was common for the executive, legislative, and even the judicial authorities, to apply to them for the solution of intricate questions and the determining of principles. Many, if not most of them, had, like Mr. Whiting, been ministers in the Church of England, and were men of learning and deep thought. The very experiences that induced their emigration often arose from their advanced views of human rights and political liberty. It is to be remembered, too, that at that period the settlement of a minister was, under ordinary circumstances, expected to be for life; not a mere temporary sojourn, as is so often the case in our day. And it will readily be perceived how much greater the opportunity of the faithful pastor then was to inaugurate and sustain pursuits calculated to be permanently beneficial, the long continuance of his fostering care ensuring results that under frequent change could never be attained, at the same time receiving his own reward in contemplating the regenerating effects of his godly teaching.

No sooner had Mr. Whiting commenced his ministrations to the little flock here than the discordant elements that had disturbed it, and the whole community as well, under his predecessor, were harmonized, and old and young gathered around him in delightful sympathy and trust—exemplifying the truth that mental strength, coupled with genial manners, is potent to secure confidence and love.

The remains of that good old man were laid away for their everlasting repose in the then quiet village burial-place, overshadowed by ancient forest-trees, where but a small company had then been gathered, but where now lie an innumerable host, all heedless of the stately edifices that one by one have arisen around, and undisturbed by the tramp of the busy multitude. Tne spot where he rests is marked by a simple granite shaft, reared, a few years since, by the Hon. William Whiting, of Boston, a direct descendant, who himself rendered such eminent service to our government during the most trying period of the War of the Rebellion, and who has been since called to join his honored ancestor in the land whence none return. In the names of Whiting School and Whiting Street is the memory of this beloved minister perpetuated.

At this point it may be well to give the pastoral succession in this, the First Church of Lynn, with the dates at which the pastorates began, and append a few notes on some whose names appear therein.

1632. Stephen Bachiler.
1636. Samuel Whiting.
1637. Thomas Cobbet (colleague).
1680. Jeremiah Shepard.

1680. Joseph Whiting (colleague).
1720. Nathaniel Henchman.
1763. John Treadwell.
1784. Obadiah Parsons.
1794. Thomas C. Thatcher.
1813. Isaac Hurd.
1818. Otis Rockwood.
1832. David Peabody.
1836. Parsons Cooke.
1865. James M. Whiton.
1872. Stephen R. Dennen.
1876. Walter Barton.
1885. Frank J. Mundy.

Rev. Thomas Cobbet, who was settled in 1637 as colleague with Mr. Whiting, was a marked character among the early New England divines—marked for his learning, piety and unswerving principles. He was born in Newbury, England, in 1608, studied at Oxford and suffered for non-conformity. He remained here in Lynn till 1656, then left and settled at Ipswich, where he died in 1685. Mr. Cobbet preached the election sermon in 1649, and the court voted that "Mr. Speaker, in the name of the Howse of deputyes, render Mr. Cobbett the thankes of the Howse for his worthy paines in his sermon wch, at the desire of this howse, he preached on the day of eleccon, and declare to him it is their desire he would print it heere or elsewhere." He was a voluminous writer, and among his works was "A Practical Discourse on Prayer," of which Cotton Mather remarks, "Of all the works written by Mr. Cobbet, none deserves more to be read by the world or to live till the general burning of the world, than that of Prayer." The elegant Cobbet school-house, on Franklin Street, erected in 1872, is a memorial of this esteemed minister.

Rev. Jeremiah Shepard, who in 1680 succeeded Mr. Whiting in the pastorate, was a man of decided traits, and to a degree destitute of the milder qualities of his predecessor. Yet he was successful in his ministry, and his death was deeply mourned. His pastorate extended over forty years. Mr. Lewis says "he was distinguished for his unvaried piety," and "was indefatigable in his exertions for the spiritual welfare of his people." He reasoned deep

"Of Providence, fore-knowledge, will and fate."

His ministrations were characterized by great seriousness, and his views of human nature gloomy, almost to distortion. Rev. Mr. Brown, minister of the Reading Church, in his journal, under date of June 25, 1712, says: "I was ordained past[r] of this church and received the dreadfull charge from the mouth of Mr. Shepard, of Lynn."

Mr. Shepard took an active part in some of the political agitations of the day; and in the insurrection that deposed and imprisoned Governor Andros, on the 19th of April, 1689, he exhibited quite as much patriotic zeal as could be expected in a minister of the Gospel, as appears by the relation of one who was present, and who, in speaking of the array that marched in from the country to the assistance of the insurgent Bostonians, says: "April 19th, about 11 o'clock, the country came in, headed by one Shepard, teacher of Lynn, who were like so many wild bears; and the leader, mad with passion, more savage than any of his followers." The courage and discretion of Mr. Shepard no doubt did much for the welfare of Lynn during that trying period. He was inclined also to watch with jealous eye any approach of trespassers upon the Puritanical domain, and as Quakerism was beginning to make serious inroads, he appointed the 19th of July, 1694, as a day of fasting and prayer for the stay of that "spiritual plague." He died on the 3d of June, 1720, aged seventy-two years. His tomb still remains conspicuous in the old burying ground, marked by a plain oblong brick stand surmounted by a heavy stone slab, with an inscription now so eaten by time and the elements as to be almost illegible. But his name is enduringly preserved in Shepard Street and Shepard School. Mr. Shepard was a son of Rev. Thomas Shepard, who was born in Towcester, England, in 1605, received an excellent education, came over while yet a young man, and was ordained as first pastor of the First Parish Church of Cambridge, in 1636. He was conspicuous for his fervid piety. In Johnson's "Wonder-Working Providence," published in 1651, he is spoken of as "That gratious, sweete, heavenly-minded and soule-ravishing minister, Mr. Thomas Shepheard, in whose soule the Lord shed abroad his love so abundantly, that thousands of souls have cause to bless God for him, even at this day, who are the seale of his ministry." He appears to have received the name Thomas in rather a singular way, saying: "The Powder Treason day [November 5, 1605], and that very houre of the day wherein the Parlament should have bin blown up by Popish priests, I was then borne, which occasioned my father to give me this name *Thomas*, because he sayd I would hardly *beleeve* that ever any such wickedness should be attempted by men agaynst so religious and good Parlament."

A worthy descendant, Mr. George L. Shepard, of Boston, a son of the late eminent merchant, Michael Shepard, of Salem, has recently published a genealogical account of some of the descendants of the family head.

Mr. Shepard was the first minister of the "Old Tunnel," so called. That famous meeting-house was erected in 1682, two years after his settlement. It will be borne in mind that in those days, and indeed long after, a church here was so far a public institution that its temporal arrangements at least were governed by the votes of the town. To illustrate, let us quote some votes passed at town-meeting in 1692:

"January 8. It was voted that Lieutenant Blighe should have liberty to set up a pew in the northeast corner of the meeting-house, by Mr. King's pew, and he to maintain the windows against it.

"The town did vote that Lieutenant Fuller, Lieutenant Lewis, Mr. John Hawkes, senior, Francis Burrill, Lieutenant Burrill, John Burrill, junior, Mr. Henry Rhodes, Quarter-Master Bassett, Mr. Haberfield, Cornet Johnson, Mr. Bayley and Lieutenant Blighe should sit at the table.

"It was voted that Matthew Farrington, senior, Henry Silsbee and Joseph Mansfield, senior, should sit in the deacon's seat.

"It was voted that Thomas Farrar, senior, Crispus Brewer, Allen Breed, senior, Clement Coldam, Robert Rand, senior, Jonathan Hudson, Richard Hood, senior, and Sergeant Haven should sit in the pulpit.

"The town voted that them that are surviving that was chosen by the town a committee to erect the meeting-house, and Clerk Potter to join along with them, should seat the inhabitants of the town in the meeting-house, both men and women, and appoint what seats they shall sit in, but it is to be understood that they are not to seat neither the table nor the deacons' seat, nor the pulpit, but them to sit there as are voted by the town."

The pulpit of the Old Tunnel was capacious enough to contain ten persons. A small bell swung in the little tower, and in the northeast corner of the gallery was a "negro pew," quite elevated and boarded well towards the top. The colored brethren and sisters were required to sit there, where they might hear, but neither see nor be seen.

Mr. J. Warren Newhall, in his poem delivered at the celebration of the two hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the organization of the church, June 8, 1882, thus speaks of the architecture of this famous old house of worship:

"A modest cupola the roof surmounts
Of quaint design—so history recounts.
'Twas said the belfry bore a semblance fair
To an inverted tunnel poised mid air;
Hence was the structure the 'Old Tunnel' named,
And for this title evermore was framed.
Downward with quite a questionable grace,
The bell-rope fell into a central place
Within the unique auditorium, where
The sexton rang the call to praise and prayer.
We see no gorgeous fresco on the walls,
Through no stained glass the light of heaven falls;
But glinting 'mid the naked oaken beams,
Through the small diamond panes the sunlight gleams.
No richly cushioned slips the people knew,
But plain deal seats, with here and there a pew,
Built by some person, who must first procure
Permission from the town this to secure.
As time advanced these pews more numerous grew,
But were not wholly uniform to view,—
Some large, some small, of patterns manifold,
By which the owner's taste or means were told.

* * * * * * *

In place of dainty desk therein appeared
A pulpit, with its lofty form upreared,
While like a canopy o'er the preacher's head
The sounding-board its huge proportions spread.

* * * * * * *

In the bleak days of wintry wind and snow,
No furnace fire dispensed its genial glow;
To those who fain the service would attend,
The humble foot-stove was the warmest friend."

To the fidelity of this sketch the writer can well attest from childhood recollection and experience. Of the oft protracted exercises our poet also gives the following graphic description:

"No warning clock prescribed the preacher's powers;
The simple sand-glass told the passing hours,
Which, when the tell-tale sand its course had run,
Was deftly turned, and sixteenthly begun!
For they preached sermons countless in deductions;
None of our modern half-hour productions.
In continuity they excelled, 'tis true;
Always an hour in length, and sometimes two."

Rev. Nathaniel Henchman succeeded Mr. Shepard in 1720. He was born in Boston on the 22d of November, 1700, as is stated on the Lynn records in the handwriting of his son, and, if the date is correct, must have settled here at the early age of twenty. But there is doubt as to the correctness of the date. He graduated at Harvard in 1717. His grandfather was Daniel Henchman, the same who planted the historical "big elm" on Boston Common, which was destroyed by a gale in February, 1876. And this Daniel Henchman was also ancestor of Frederick Tudor, the wealthy ice merchant, who did so much to beautify Nahant. Mr. Henchman ministered here forty years, and died on the 23d of December, 1761. Rev. Mr. Barton, in his address on the two hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the church, remarks that Mr. Henchman proved to be a man of very different views from his predecessors, Whiting, Cobbet and Shepard, and adds that his "settlement gave a new and disastrous turn to affairs. Finding here a very flourishing church and society, he left, after forty years' ministry, only eighteen members, and that in the days of the great awakening under Whitefield and Edwards." In 1745 Mr. Whitefield came to Lynn, and Mr. Henchman refused permission for him to preach in the meeting-house, a step that occasioned a long and bitter controversy. The great revivalist, however, found audience-room elsewhere, one of his out-door discourses being delivered while standing on the platform of the whipping-post, near the meeting-house. But yet Mr. Henchman is reputed to have been remarkably genial in manners and to have treated Mr. Whitefield personally with much respect and politeness. It is easy to see that his ministry here was not successful, and that there were serious breaks in the harmony of the parish. He had peculiar notions of ministerial duties and ministerial rights, and was tenacious in his adherence to them. He was twice married and the father of five children. His tomb is in the Old Burying-ground, and is, like Mr. Shepard's, marked by a plain, oblong brick structure.

Rev. John Treadwell was the successor of Mr. Henchman. "And during his pastorate," remarks Mr. Barton, "two events occurred which brought in a state of things disastrous to the church in common with others, viz.: the Half Way-Covenant and the Revolutionary War." He was ordained on the 2d of March, 1763, and remained nineteen years; hence it will be perceived that he was here during the most stirring period in American history. The Provincial Congress, in June, 1775, recommended the carrying of arms to meeting on Sundays and other days when worship was held, by the men who lived within twenty miles of the sea-coast; and so we find Mr. Treadwell appearing in the pulpit with a loaded musket, cartridge-box and sermon. He was born in Ipswich September 20, 1738, and graduated at Harvard in 1758. His pastorate here ended in 1782. He then returned to Ipswich, his native place, and afterward removed to Salem; was a Representative and Senator in the General Court, and a judge of the Common Pleas Court. His patriotism was conspicu-

ous, his manners genial, and he loved to indulge in pleasantry, sometimes even out of season. His witty sayings often gained currency, and many of them are not yet forgotten.

Rev. Obadiah Parsons, the successor of Mr. Treadwell, was installed February 4, 1784, "in peace, harmony and concord," as Mr. Sparhawk, of Lynnfield, says in an almanac memorandum. He remained eight years and then returned to Gloucester, his native place, where he died in December, 1801. He had two wives and nine children. His settlement here does not seem to have promoted the prosperity of the church, and there were some scandals that hastened his removal, though he seems to have maintained a good social standing.

It was during the pastorate of Mr. Parsons that the parsonage at the corner of South Common and Commercial Streets was erected. And, as an appropriate illustration of some of the habits and customs of the time, it may be pertinent to relate an incident connected with the enterprise. The story is that a number of the parishioners of small means were surprisingly liberal in the amounts they subscribed in furtherance of the good object, though it was understood that their donations would be received in the form of labor upon the premises, at a fixed price per day. The contributors were highly applauded for their generosity and the building committee praised for their liberality in arranging with a neighboring retailer for a supply of "refreshments," as they might be called for, while the work proceeded. Cheerily and rapidly the work went on. And then—when the building was completed and the accounts brought together—the contracting parties were astonished to find that the retailer's score, for *liquid* refreshments alone, exceeded in amount all that class of subscriptions.

Rev. Thomas Cushing Thatcher was installed next after Mr. Parsons. He was a son of Rev. Peter Thatcher, of Brattle Street Church, Boston; was born in 1771; graduated at Harvard in 1790, and settled here in 1794, remaining till 1813. He attained a good old age and died in Cambridge September 24, 1849. He was affable in his social relations, but inclined to asperity in his controversial writings. He preached the funeral discourse over the bodies of the drowned men from the Scottish brig "Peggy," which was wrecked near the southern end of Long Beach December 9, 1795. The service was held in the meeting-house, the eight recovered bodies being present. There were twelve on board the brig, only one of whom escaped, and he, during the mournful service, stood in the centre aisle. Mr. Thatcher's text was, "And I only am escaped alone to tell thee," Job, ch. i., v. 19. On the 13th of January, 1800, he pronounced the eulogy on Washington. He also delivered the funeral sermon over the bodies of Miles Shorey and his wife, who were instantly killed by lightning on Sunday, the 10th of July, 1803, in the house which still stands on Boston Street, opposite Cottage. He was a descendant from that Mr. Thatcher who, with his wife, were the only survivors of the terrible shipwreck, in August, 1635, of the bark of Mr. Allerton, which was cast away off Cape Ann and twenty-one persons drowned, including Rev. Mr. Avery, his wife and six children. The island on which Mr. Thatcher and his wife were safely cast is still called Thatcher's Island.

Rev. Isaac Hurd, the tenth minister, was ordained September 15, 1813, and remained about three years. He graduated at Harvard in 1806. From Lynn he removed to Exeter, N. H., where he was installed over the Second Church of that place in September, 1817. There he remained till his death. At the closing period of Mr. Hurd's ministry the condition of the church was very low; so much so, indeed, that the question of disbanding began to be agitated. But better things were in store. This was the time when the "liberal" element was beginning to actively work in the old churches, and Mr. Hurd was inclining towards the new views. It is almost wonderful that the church did not at that time recede from the old paths, as so many of the other New England churches did. And it probably would have gone over had Mr. Hurd possessed the firmness and attractive power possessed by some others of the seceding clergy.

Rev. Otis Rockwood, who succeeded Mr. Hurd, was firm in the faith, firm in his denominational attachments, and firm in his determination to prevent, if possible, any straying from the old paths. He was sound rather than brilliant, and to his earnestness is much of his success to be attributed.

The successors of Mr. Rockwood, down to the present time, have been strong in the faith and zealous in their labors, men of ability and learning, and some of them distinguished above the common rank. So well are their characteristics known to this generation that an attempt at portrayal in detail would be needless here, did the limits allow. Their names and the dates of their settlement have already been given. It may not appear invidious, however, to remark that Rev. Parsons Cooke, who was settled in 1836 and died on 1864, was perhaps the most notable since the time of Mr. Shepard. He was especially strong as a controversialist, and seemed to take a grim delight in opportunities to attack the Unitarian, Universalist and Methodist denominations. Persons of his characteristics always make a mark, and have tenacious adherents and determined opponents. It is difficult, therefore, to form an entirely satisfactory opinion from contemporaneous estimates, and future results must indicate the amount of good achieved. Mr. Cooke published two or three works which received some attention at the time they appeared, the most interesting of which, at least to Lynn people, being that entitled "A Century of Puritanism and a Century of its Opposites." It related

to the history of ecclesiastical affairs here, and took quite an unfavorable view of some of his predecessors in the pastorate and those of their communion. Its sometimes poorly authenticated statements, as to the unworthiness of those under notice, opened the way for the future liberal-minded historian to rank him as one disposed to magnify the failings, rather than the goodness, of others.

Besides the foregoing list of regular pastors the church has, of late years, had the services of two or three acting pastors, whose names follow,—Rev. George E. Allen, who supplied in 1863–64; Rev. Joseph Cook, 1870–71; Rev. J. R. Danforth, 1872. Mr. Cook afterwards became quite famous as a lecturer, delivering several series in Boston and other large American cities. He likewise visited Europe and other parts of the world, attracting much attention. He still (1887) continues to exercise his gifts in his chosen field. While here, he delivered a series of Sunday evening lectures in Music Hall, which created considerable sensation on account of the pungency of his style, and, as many thought, indiscreet and unnecessary assertions and denunciations.

Thursday, the 8th of June, 1882, the two hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the founding of the First Church of Lynn was observed by fitting ceremonies at the house of worship, on South Common Street. The day was pleasant and the attendance good. The forenoon exercises consisted of addresses, prayers, Scripture reading and appropriate music. The historical address was given by the pastor, Rev. Walter Barton; and a poem, from which quotations have already been given, was read by the author, J. Warren Newhall. At noon an abundant repast for visitors was spread in the lecture-room. The afternoon services were all of an impressive character. It was an occasion of much interest,—something more than a mere society or denominational observance, being well calculated to enlist the sympathies and stir the feelings of all, especially natives of the town.

The history of the First Church of Lynn has here been dwelt upon more at large, perhaps, than our limits justify; but, in an important sense, it embodies a history of the place. In its communion were the fathers of the town, and, all along, many of the chief men have held it to be their spiritual home. Its influence in early days was potent for good, and in its list of pastors appear some names of more than ordinary lustre.

Having spoken thus at large of the First Church and its ministry, brevity will be necessary in speaking of the other religious societies, of which there are now thirty. Before enumerating them, however, a word should be said of the first churches of Lynnfield and Saugus, which were the Second and Third of Lynn.

The Second Parish Church of Lynn was formed in 1720, the year in which Rev. Mr. Shepard died, and became the First Church of Lynnfield. The eccentric but learned Nathaniel Sparhawk was the first minister. In the sketch of Lynnfield this parish will be further spoken of. In the mutations of New England theology it became a Universalist Society.

The Third Parish Church of Lynn was gathered in 1732, and became the First Church of Saugus. It was over this parish that the Rev. Joseph Roby was settled for the long period of fifty-one years. He was learned and pious, and withal ardently patriotic, being chosen one of the Committee of Safety at the opening of the Revolution. This society, like that of Lynnfield, finally adopted the Universalist faith.

Trinitarian Congregational.—Of the Trinitarian Congregational—or, as they are popularly called, the Orthodox—Societies, there are now four, namely,—the *First Church*, that already spoken of, and whose present place of worship is a fine brick edifice on South Common Street, built in 1872; the *Central Congregational*, founded in 1850, and whose present house of worship is also a fine brick edifice, on Silsbee Street, built in 1868; the *Chestnut Street Congregational*, commenced in 1857 as a Congregational Methodist, and becoming distinctly Calvinistic in 1860, their house of worship being a frame structure on Chestnut Street, built in 1857; the *North Congregational*, founded in 1869, and worshipping in their neat wooden church on Laighton Street, built in 1870.

Unitarian Congregational.—The *Second Congregational Society* of Lynn is Unitarian in sentiment. It was founded in 1823 and has a peculiar history, exemplifying some of the changes to which so many religious bodies were subjected at about the time of its institution. As has been seen, Mr. Rockwood, of the First Church, was a strong Calvinist. He was settled in 1818. At that time the leaven of "liberal Christianity," as it was called, and which subsequently developed into broad Unitarianism, had begun actively to work. And it was chiefly from those who dropped off from the old society, having imbibed the more "liberal views," that this was formed. Among the early members were several of the most influential people of the town, and it has always comprised some of the wealthiest. Their house of worship, which is the first and still the only one of the order in Lynn, was dedicated on the 30th of April, 1823, and is on South Common Street. It is a wooden structure, and does not compare favorably with most of the present Lynn houses of worship. It may be mentioned, as an interesting fact, that it was in a sermon preached in Boston, at the installation of Rev. Mr. Shackford, who was the sixth pastor of this society, that the distinguished Theodore Parker first publicly and clearly enunciated his peculiar doctrinal views. Another interesting fact, mentioned by Mr. Johnson in his "Sketches of Lynn," is, that the venerable Dr. Pierce, of Brookline, who was here at the ordination of Rev. Mr. Pierpont, the fifth minister, on that occasion remarked that that "was the ninety-fourth ordi-

nation that he had attended, and that it was the first one where intoxicating drinks were not used, and the first ordination dinner at which ladies were present."

FRIENDS, OR QUAKERS.—A *Society of Friends* commenced worship here as early as 1677. The rigid laws against the Quakers, which for many years deformed the statute-books of Massachusetts, and the story of their rigorous enforcement, are too well known to need recounting. But it should be borne in mind that the so-called Quakers of those days were very different from the quiet, orderly and honest people of after-years who have borne the name. They were a turbulent set, defying the government and outraging, certainly in some instances, the decencies of social life. The society here has ever embraced some of the best people, and, with the exception of one or two rather unaccountable outbreaks, has pursued the even tenor of its way. They worship in a plain wooden structure, on Silsbee Street, built in 1816.

METHODIST.—To that early pioneer of Methodism, Jesse Lee, is to be attributed the formation of the first society of the denomination in Lynn. Rev. Mr. Daniels, in his "History of Methodism," speaking of the travels and untoward experiences of Lee in New England, says,—"In Lynn a more hospitable reception was accorded to him, and there he formed his first society in Massachusetts, February 20, 1791, consisting of eight members. On the 27th of the same month it had increased to twenty-nine members, and in May following more than seventy persons took certificates of their attendance on his ministry—a measure rendered necessary by the laws of the State, in order to secure them from taxation for the support of the clergy of the 'standing order.'" August 3, 1792, was held at Lynn the first Methodist Conference in New England. "There were eight persons present besides Bishop Asbury," says Daniels, "among whom was Jesse Lee, who was now exulting in having gained a permanent foothold in this unpromising region."

The First Methodist Society of Lynn, thus formed, has maintained a prominent standing not only in Lynn, but in the denomination at large, and has sent forth several thrifty ecclesiastical offspring. Their present house of worship is a conspicuous brick edifice on the northeasterly side of City Hall Square, built in 1879. *St. Paul's Methodist Society* was formed in 1811. Their present house of worship is a wooden structure on Union Street, built in 1861. The preceding house was totally destroyed by fire on Sunday evening, November 20, 1859. Some five hundred persons, many of whom were children, as a Sunday-school concert was in progress, were in the building, but all safely escaped. The *South Street Methodist Society* was formed in 1830. Their house of worship is a neat wooden structure on South Street, built in 1830. The *Maple Street Methodist Society*, Glenmere Village, was founded in 1850. Their house of worship is an attractive structure of wood on Maple Street, built in 1872. The *Boston Street Methodist Society* was founded in 1853. Their house of worship is a wooden structure on Boston Street, built in 1853. The *African Methodist Society* was organized in 1856, and their modest house of worship, on Mailey Street, erected the next year. *Trinity Methodist Society*, near Tower Hill, was founded in 1873, and their present tasty edifice of wood built soon after. Recently a society has been organized in Wyoma Village.

BAPTIST.—The *First Baptist Society* was founded in 1816. A great deal has been said of the persecutions to which the early Baptists were subjected, and much of the rigorous conduct towards them was inexcusable. Yet it may be said of them, as was said of the early Quakers—they were not characterized by peacefulness, humility and the high sense of Christian duty which characterizes those of the name at this day. Their interference with State affairs no doubt created more opposition than their purely religious doctrines. It is probable that most students of New England history would concede that the banishment of Roger Williams even was brought about more from political than religious considerations. This, however, is not the place for discussing such questions. When the church here in Lynn was formed, the persecutions had long ceased. The house of worship of the First Baptist Society is a fine edifice of wood on North Common Street, erected in 1867. The *Washington Street Baptist Society* was founded in 1854. Their house of worship, at the corner of Essex and Washington Streets, is one of the finest in town, is of brick and stone, and was built in 1874. The *High Street Free-Will Baptist Society* was organized in 1871. Their house of worship is of wood, and stands in a commanding position on High Street. The *East Baptist Society* was organized in 1874, and have their house of worship on Union Street. The *Union Baptist Society*, founded in 1880, have their place of worship on Oxford Street, and is a society of colored people. The *North Baptist Society* have their place of worship in Wyoma Village.

CHRISTIAN.—The *Christian Society* was organized in 1835. Their house of worship is a wooden structure on Silsbee Street, built in 1840. This church has always maintained a most respectable denominational standing.

UNIVERSALIST.—The first meeting held in Lynn for the preaching of the doctrines of this denomination was in the Academy Hall in 1811. The *First Universalist Society*, however, was not formed till 1833; it was then organized in the Town Hall, and has had a steady and substantial growth till, at the present time, it is one of the largest religious bodies in Lynn, embracing many of the prominent people. The present house of worship, on Nahant Street, is built of stone and brick, and is one of the finest in the city. The *Second Universalist Society* was organized in 1837. Their house of worship is a wooden

structure on South Common Street, corner of Commercial, the same that was originally occupied by the First Church, and afterwards by a small society of another denomination. Some of the material of the edifice was first used in the famous Old Tunnel.

SECOND ADVENT.—The *Second Advent Society* have a house of worship on Liberty Street, opposite Cambridge. The society, though not large, is composed of earnest believers.

PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL.—The Episcopal Church was of slow growth in Lynn, though it is no doubt true that there were individual churchmen here at an early period. Richard Sadler, who came in 1635, and located at the present junction of Walnut and Holyoke Streets, it is reasonable to suppose, was a devoted churchman, as he took priest's orders after his return to England. His name is perpetuated in the lofty porphyry cliff that rises near the point just named, and which was granted to him by the town in 1638; and that he was a man of integrity, intelligence and prudence is apparent from the importance of the public offices he was constantly called to fill; and there were no doubt here and there other churchmen who may have veiled their sentiments, so great were the prejudices against them. From all that appears, the first service held here was on the evening of Sunday, October 18, 1818. At that time Rev. Thomas Carlisle, of St. Peter's Church, Salem, preached in the First Parish Meeting House, known as the Old Tunnel, the same in which the celebrated Whitefield had been denied the privilege of holding a service. But things had changed. The rigid fetters of the old faith were loosening, and it was actually by invitation of some of the influential members of the parish that Mr. Carlisle came. Yet, as events proved, these good men had but poorly informed themselves as to the church offices and requirements, for they were chiefly the very men who soon after formed the Unitarian Society. However, a sort of church was instituted, which existed, but did not flourish, for a year or two, and then became extinct. It was not till 1834 that another attempt was made to establish a church here. An organization was effected, and for a time they were so prosperous as to erect a modest house of worship, which was consecrated in 1837, but failure ensued; and it was not till 1844 that permanent church worship became established. It was then, in 1844, that St. Stephen's was formed. For some years it was weak and without much influence, but finally became prosperous, and is now one of the most substantial in the diocese. The house of worship, on South Common Street, is a beautiful structure of brick and stone, more costly than any other church building in the county, and is endeared to the parish, especially, as the gift of the late Hon Enoch Redington Mudge. It was consecrated on Wednesday, November 2, 1881, and cost two hundred and fifty thousand dollars. The interior is impressive for its richness and freedom from all garish display, some of the decorations being very costly. A chime of ten bells has recently been placed in the tower, and first rang out their sonorous notes on the morning of Easter day, 1886. Among the tunes played on that occasion were "Jesus, Lover of my Soul," "The Morning Light is Breaking." This is the first chime ever in Lynn; is pronounced by experts to be superior in tone and unison, and was procured by members of the parish in grateful memory of Mr. Mudge, the donor of the edifice. The weight of the largest bell is three thousand and thirty pounds, and the cost of the whole was five thousand two hundred and fifty dollars. The chime was welcomed with much satisfaction by the people generally, and two of our local poets, in pleasant strains, celebrated the acquisition. Three of the eight impressive stanzas by J. Warren Newhall are here given:

"In the Sabbath morn's hush with melodious accord,
They shall join in an anthem of praise to our Lord;
And their soul-soothing vespers, at eve's hour of rest,
Shall be wafted like notes from the Isles of the Blest.

"They shall ring at the bridal, where love's vows are breathed
By the blushing young maiden with orange-blooms wreathed;
Or chime the low dirge as the grief-bidden tear
Of affection bedeweth the cherished one's bier.

"At fair jocund morning, or peace-hallowed night,
We shall list to their music with grateful delight,
As they blend in a chorus exultant and strong,
Or soothing and sweet as a lullaby song."

And in the poem of twelve stanzas, by our fellow-townsman, Joseph W. Nye, are these felicitous lines:

"'Tis meet they first our joy should ring
Upon the glorious Easter Day,
While we responsive gladly sing
The risen Christ and own His sway.

"O bells! ye fitly grace the tower
That one of liberal soul did raise,
Who gave this fane—a sacred dower—
To which all hearts yield ready praise.

"O city loved! with grateful heart
Receive this gift so kindly free;
To thy fair name it will impart
A charm that we have longed to see."

The Church of the Incarnation was formed in 1886, chiefly by members who withdrew from St. Stephen's. They at present worship in their beautiful stone chapel near the corner of Broad and Estes Streets. There is every reason to hope and believe that this parish will soon be exercising an extensive and benign influence.

ROMAN CATHOLIC—*St. Mary's Parish.*—The first Roman Catholic service held in Lynn seems to have been in 1835, a private house accommodating all the attendants. In 1848 the numbers had so increased that they purchased a frame building on South Common Street, near Elm. This building had rather a singular history. It was first a *Methodist* house of worship, and stood on land purchased of the *Congregational* Society. In 1815 it was bought by the newly-formed First *Baptist* Society, and occupied

by them for a number of years. Next it became a district school-house; then, in 1848, it was purchased by the *Catholics* and fitted up for their services; and finally, on the night of the 28th of May, 1859, was destroyed by an incendiary fire. The first minister was Father Charles Smith, who died in January, 1851, and was succeeded by Rev. Patrick Strain, who yet, 1887, remains in charge, having served for the longest term of any of the present Lynn ministers.

After the destruction of the first house of worship the Catholics obtained the use of Lyceum Hall, which stood on Market Street, at the corner of Summer, and there mass was said, instructions given and confessions heard. In 1860 the site for the present St. Mary's Church, at the south side of City Hall Square, was procured, and the fine Gothic structure erected. It remained for some years the most imposing church edifice in Lynn. It is built chiefly of brick, its dimensions being one hundred and fifty by seventy-three feet, and having a steeple one hundred and sixty-five feet in height. The interior is imposing, has a number of costly paintings and a fine organ. The seating capacity is one thousand three hundred.

Connected with St. Mary's Church is an excellent parochial school for children of both sexes, at which the daily attendance is over six hundred. The management is in the hands of Rev. Father Strain, and the expenses are met by the members of the parish.

St. Mary's Cemetery, on Lynnfield Street, consecrated Nov. 4, 1858, is connected with this parish.

The Catholic population of Lynn has steadily increased, and at the present time outnumbers any other Christian denomination—so far, at least, as is indicated by attendance on public ministrations. There are now five Catholic priests resident here, and they are as a body worthy of commendation for their zealous endeavors to elevate the character and condition of those under their charge. The long and successful ministry of Father Strain will ever be remembered to his credit.

St. Joseph's Parish, in Union Street, embraces chiefly the Catholic population in the eastern part of the city. It was formed in 1874, and their stately house of worship erected in 1875. Like St. Mary's, it is built chiefly of brick, and is a conspicuous edifice, with a seating capacity of about one thousand two hundred. Rev. J. C. Harrington is the minister, having an assistant. St. Joseph's Cemetery, on Boston Street near Cedar Pond, is connected with this parish.

A *French Catholic Church* was formed here in 1886, and a church is already in process of erection.

The Catholics of Lynn, it is thought, form about thirty per cent. of the whole population.

SWEDENBORGIAN.—A Swedenborgian or New Jerusalem Society was formed here in 1886. Some years ago an attempt was made to establish a society of this order, but the worshippers were so few that services were not long continued.

In addition to the foregoing, there are here, as in most places as large, other religious organizations sustained by some of the churches or by pious and benevolent individuals, such as the *Bethel* and the *West Lynn Mission*, which are doing much good.

It will be seen by the following table that there are now in Lynn thirty-one organized Christian bodies, to wit:

Methodist (1 African)	8	Congregational (Unitarian)	1
Baptist (1 African)	6	Friends	1
Congregational (Trinitarian)	4	Christian	1
Roman Catholic (1 French)	3	Second Advent	1
Universalist	2	Swedenborgian	1
Protestant Episcopal	2	Salvation Army of America	1

The following gives the city assessor's valuation in 1886 of the church property belonging to some of the principal religious societies, including the church edifices and the lots on which they stand:

St. Stephen's (Episcopal)	$233,000
First Universalist	122,000
First Methodist	102,000
Washington Street Baptist	81,000
Central Congregational (Trinitarian)	73,000
First Congregational (Trinitarian)	63,200
St. Mary's (Roman Catholic)	62,000
St. Joseph's (Roman Catholic)	62,000
First Baptist	41,000
Friends	17,000
Second Congregational (Unitarian)	16,600

Some of the edifices, it will be observed are quite costly; and if the time should ever arrive when they are as heavily taxed as individual property, impecunious worshippers may regret the rich appointments. We should not have been likely to have erected so many churches nor so grand ones had taxation interposed its hungry hand. The above enumeration, as will be observed, does not include all the houses of worship. Taking in the whole, it is found that for the year 1886 the amount of church property exempt from taxation was $1,079,000.

It is easy to see from the foregoing that Lynn is by no means in a state of spiritual starvation, or, at least, need not be. Her places of worship are numerous and eligible. And as to the learning and ability of her clergy, she would probably acknowledge inferiority to very few. Perhaps there is a little overstraining that verges on the sensational in some societies, and occasional displays that have the unpleasant air of denominational rivalry; but then even spiritual emulation may result in good.

In the "leading" churches a good deal of attention is paid to music. And in some instances it really appears as if that were considered of more importance than the preaching; naturally enough, too, where the music is good and the preaching is poor. But that does not seem to be exactly the right idea. The sacred strains that resounded in the rude sanctuaries of our fathers, though not, perhaps, in full accord with the rules of harmony, were fervid and stirring to the pious heart. But is not the tendency of much of the church music of this day rather to lead from devotion

to admiration—admiration of artistic composition and artistic rendering? And does not the sedate worshipper sometimes feel as if listening to

"Light quirks of music, broken and uneven,"

such as would only

"Make a soul dance upon a jig to heaven."

The singing in some of our churches is, at the present time, congregational, with the leading of a chorus choir; in others a quartette fills the programme. St. Stephen's follows the ancient church custom of having a surpliced male choir, chiefly boys, whose young, fresh voices and natural renderings add greatly to the interest of the service. In one church an "orchestra band" has lately appeared as an attraction.

A few remarks as to religious observances in former days might be of some interest here; but it is necessary to pass on to other topics. It may, however, be remarked, by the way, that there were, at different periods, quite different views prevailing. In early times the Levitical law, in all its rigidity, was adopted; then came from time to time modifications in one way and another; and, finally, about the close of the eighteenth century, the leaven of French infidelity began perceptibly to work in some classes. But in this part of New England the stronghold of Puritanism was long maintained. Albert Gallatin, the eminent financier and Secretary of the Treasury under Jefferson, was a native of Geneva, and of rigid Puritanical stock. He was in Boston in 1783, and thus speaks of life then and there: "Life in Boston is very wearisome. There are no public amusements, and so much superstition prevails that singing, violin-playing, card-playing and bowls are forbidden on Sunday." Calvin himself would probably have sanctioned these views, though they were far from New England Calvinism. But these few mere hints on this subject must suffice.

CHAPTER XV.

LYNN—(*Continued*).

SCHOOLS—LIBRARIES—NEWSPAPERS.

Schools, their Number and Character, with Sketches of Some of the Old Teachers—Present Condition, Cost of Maintenance, with Various Statistical Items—Notice of Early Collections of Books—Free Public Library, its Formation, Growth and Present Condition—Newspapers, Sketch of the First Paper here, and its Editor—Papers of the Present Day.

Men of learning, men of training,
O, be yours a potent sway;
Writing, teaching, vice restraining,
Guiding in the better way.

—ALLAN.

SCHOOLS.—The next thing thought of after the establishment of the church was the school. And the purpose was not so exclusively then, as it now is, that the youth might be prepared for the common business transactions of life, which at that period were few and of limited range. It embraced also the higher motive of fixing in the youthful mind the principles of moral rectitude and religion. Thus, we find an enactment of the General Court in 1647, commencing: "It being one chief proiect of y^t ould deludor Satan, to keep men from the knowledge of y^e Scriptures, as in former times by keeping them in an unknown tongue, so in these latter times, by persuading from y^e use of tongues, y^t so at least y^e true sense and meaning of y^e originall might be clouded by false glosses of saint-seeming deceivers, y^t learning may not be buried in y^e grave of our fathers in y^e church and commonwealth, y^e Lord assisting our endeavors: It is therefore ordered y^t every township in this jurisdiction after y^e Lord hath increased them to y^e number of 50 householders, shall then forthwith appoint one within their towne to teach all such children as shall resort to him, to write and reade," &c. . . "And it is further ordered, y^t where any towne shall increase to y^e number of 100 families, or householders, they shall set up a grammar schoole, y^e master thereof being able to instruct youth so farr as they may be fitted for y^e university, provided y^t if any towne neglect y^e performance hereof above one yeare, then every such towne shall pay £5 to y^e next schoole till they shall performe this order." In 1654 the court prohibited the teaching of schools by persons of "unsound doctrine." Were such a statute now in force, the first difficulty would be to determine what is "unsound doctrine."

Many of the first teachers were of the clergy, and it need not be remarked that they, with perhaps a few exceptions, were graduates of the English universities, and many had been ministers in the Church of England. Naturally enough, they had a veneration for classical learning, and believed in the superlative virtues of Greek and Latin. But there was little time wasted in attempts to give a smattering of every kind of knowledge, useless as well as useful, as has been the case in later days. There were few books, but the deficiency was supplied by the instructors in various quaint ways, by brief explanatory talks, by homely and ingenious illustrations.

The first action of Lynn in her corporate capacity in relation to schools, so far as the records show, was in January, 1696, when it is recorded, "The Selectmen agreed with Mr. (Abraham) Normanton to be schoolmaster for the town for said year ensuing, and the Town is to give him five pounds for his labors, and the Town is to pay twenty-five shillings towards the hire of Nathan Newhall's house for a year to keep the school in, and that said Mr. Normanton hire said house." It seems as if, with a salary of five pounds, the town might have provided a school-room for Mr. Normanton. This, however, could not have been the first opportunity the youth of a town had to gain in-

struction; far from it. And it will be observed that the court, as just quoted, does not require that in places of only fifty householders there shall be established a school, but that a resident shall be appointed to "teach such children as shall resort to him," etc. It was when a place had increased to a hundred families, that they were to "set up a grammar schoole."

The early records of Lynn having disappeared, there seem no means for determining when the youth were first gathered for instruction. There is no doubt that Mr. Whiting and Mr. Cobbet, the early ministers, took pains to instruct the youth of their day. And Mr. Lewis remarks, under date 1687, "Mr. Shepard kept the school several months this winter." So there must then have been an established school. Many of the churches had a "teacher," so-called, connected with the ministry. The word, as thus applied, did not then have the same significance that it now has, but evidently had some connection with secular as well as religious teaching. Mr. Cobbet, who was colleague with Mr. Whiting, was called "teacher." On the 6th of October, 1680, when Mr. Shepard was ordained pastor, Mr. Whiting's son Joseph was ordained teacher. In 1718 Mr. Shepard being out of health, the selectmen were directed to employ a schoolmaster, and in their selection "to have relation to some help for Mr. Shepard in preaching." On the town records, under date December 21, 1691, it is stated that at a meeting of the selectmen "Mr. Shepard, with his consent, was chosen schoolmaster for the year ensuing." These sufficiently show the intimate relation then existing between the clerical office and teaching.

In 1702 a vote was passed allowing ten pounds for the maintenance of a grammar-master, "such master to have over and above the said ten pounds 2 pence per week for such as are sent to read, 3 pence per week for them that are sent to write and cipher, and six pence per week for them that are sent to learn Latin, to be paid by parents and masters that send their children or servants to learn as aforesaid." A grammar-school was one in which Latin was taught, English grammar not being in use. Arithmetic was taught by the instructor's writing sums on a slate; and reading and writing were taught much as they now are. These were the common and chief studies. Spelling was allowed to range loosely about the alphabet, there being no fixed standard. So long as the letters used gave the right sound to the word it was sufficient; and some of their words look queer enough to the school-boy of this day.

It appears, that for the convenience of the different neighborhoods, the school was at some periods a sort of ambulatory institution, being at one time located in one part of the town and then in another—a fact that has given rise to the supposition that there were more schools than really existed. For instance, in 1720, the school was kept in Lynnfield, in Saugus, on the Common and at Woodend. John Lewis was teacher that year; but he was very soon superseded, or an additional school was established, for another master soon appears; and it is not probable that there were two teachers to the same movable school. The name of the new teacher was Samuel Dexter, and he was probably a descendant from Thomas Dexter, one of the most enterprising of our earlier settlers, as he was certainly the progenitor of several eminent persons. He was but twenty years of age when he took the school; was a son of Rev. John Dexter, of Malden, and a graduate of Harvard. He subsequently became minster of the First Church of Dedham. He says in his diary: "Then being desirous, if it might be, to live nigher my friends, by y^{e} motion of some, I was invited to keep y^{e} school at Lyn; w^{r}fore, quitting my school at Taunton, I accepted of the proffers made at Lyn, and Feb. 17, 1720–21, I began my school at Lyn, in w^{ch} I continued a year; and upon y^{e} day y^{t} my engagement was up there a committee from Maldon came to treat with me in reference to Maldon school, w^{ch} proposalls I complyed with and kept y^{r} school for ab^{t} six weeks, and then was mostly to the present time, [4 Dec. 1722] improv'd in preaching."

The Friends, or Quakers, established a school in Lynn in 1776; and in 1784, after considerable opposition, the town voted to grant their request to have a portion of the school-money especially appropriated to its support. The annual allowance was continued some years. Micajah Collins was master of this school more than a quarter of a century, ever retaining the respect of the parents and affection of the pupils; and of those who received his instructions there are a few yet remaining who can now hardly speak of him without emotion. He was born in 1764, of Quaker parents, received a fair education, and was an approved minister of the Society for almost forty years. In his ministerial capacity he traveled much and became known and respected in many parts of the United States. He was married, but left no issue. The last moments of his life are represented to have displayed in a marked degree the true characteristics of the dying Christian. Many friends and neighbors assembled around his bed, and in kind words he dealt to them admonitions and encouragements, and expressed his own assurance of a blessed immortality. Then he took each individual by the hand and bade all an affectionate farewell. Like the setting of a summer's sun, he gently passed away, without a murmur or a sigh. He died on the 30th of January, 1827. From a poetic tribute to his memory, penned by Rev. Enoch Mudge, a clerical father in the Methodist Church, and published in the Newport, R. I., *Mercury*, the following lines are extracted:

"In temper open, amiable and mild,
In manners simple, trusting as a child;
He to the youth a pleasing pattern gave.
Of access easy, pious, cheerful, grave;
All classes felt an interest in the man,
For innocence through all his actions ran.
Long as an able minister he stood,

And spent his lengthened life in doing good;
At home, abroad, the humble Christian shone,
While all the praise he gave to God alone."

To the Lynn *Transcript* of December 24, 1886, James A. Breed contributed an article in which he named twenty-two persons living who were pupils of Master Collins, fourteen of them residents of Lynn. None were less than seventy-two years of age, and the ages of five ranged from eighty-five to ninety-three.

Down to the beginning of the present century hardly any girls attended the public schools. There were several reasons for this. One was that their services were needed at home; another, that the studies were not thought necessary for their sphere; and a third, that it was not proper to have boys and girls so closely associated—all which ideas seem to be reversed in this our day. Female pupils are first spoken of, in a Lynn school report, in 1817.

It would be tiresome to multiply details concerning the early schools. Those of Lynn maintained a creditable standing. The people were poor, and during the depressed times immediately preceding the Revolution, the stormy days of the war, and the turbulent period immediately succeeding, the cause of education was permitted to languish. But the vital fires were not extinguished, only smouldering; and when more settled times were reached, they revived with renewed activity. Teaching was not formerly reckoned as a regular profession, but was usually undertaken as a temporary calling by students preparing for other vocations. And this, no doubt, sometimes operated unfavorably for the schools. Such, to a great extent was the case in Lynn, till within fifty or sixty years. Indeed, the wages of all the teachers here, till within twenty-five years, were very low, and they were compelled to resort to various expedients to make both ends meet, if they were blessed with families. There was good old Master Blanchard, who, in 1811, came here to take charge of a district school, bringing with him in the lumbering old carriage his ten children, and finding two others added to the number in due time; he probably never had a salary above three hundred and fifty dollars a year, and to eke out was compelled to keep little private evening schools, and do odd jobs as accountant and scrivener. He was for some ten years teacher in the little square one-story wooden building, with hipped roof, that stood on the latitudinal centre of the Common, nearly opposite where Commercial Street now opens, its diminutive belfry, unoccupied save by the store of lost bat-balls which had from time to time lodged there, giving it a sort of classical aspect. There he taught reading, spelling, defining, writing, ciphering, a little grammar, and those now too often neglected, but highly desirable accomplishments,—good manners, correct deportment and respect for age.

Master Blanchard's religious principles were of the old Puritanical order, and somewhat rigid at that. And the church probably owed much to his determined stand and urgency that it did not, as did so many other churches of the order, about that time, swerve to the so-called "liberal" faith. He ever made it a part of his duty to endeavor to train the moral as well as the intellectual faculties of those under his charge, as many of the generation now nearly passed away would gratefully attest. He usually devoted an hour or two every week to lecturing the pupils on morals, manners, or some didactic subject, closing with a fervent prayer.

He was a musician of much taste and skill, led the singing in the old church from 1811 to 1824, and composed one or two psalm tunes which long continued popular, and may sometimes now be heard. He was a fifer in the Revolutionary army, and drew a small pension which did its part to help along. His musical talents, however, were never exercised in the school-room, for artistic music was not then thought a necessary accomplishment for those who were chiefly destined for the shoemaker's seat or the farm. The village singing-school afforded opportunity for those whose musical aspirations could not find adequate expression in the natural form of whistling.

Yet Master Blanchard was not a pronounced character, as the world goes, and it seemed singular to many that he should have had the influence he did. Some called him "non-committal" or "time-serving." His influence probably lay in his stern morals, his intelligence and genial manners. He was interesting in conversation, but usually grave and little given to humorous turns. He died on the 25th of May, 1842, aged seventy-eight years.

The Lynn Academy, a private institution, was opened in 1805, and had some days of prosperity, but more that were otherwise. Its beneficial influence, however, was marked, several of its preceptors being men of excellent acquirements and high character. It continued till superseded by the High School in 1849.

Having said thus much of the old schools and school-teachers, a word about the school-houses may be appropriate. Till within fifty years the Lynn school-houses were quite unseemly in external appearance and void of internal conveniences; yes, they were shabby. And such was the case in most places, excepting a few of the richer and more pretentious. Mr. Everett's picturesque conception of the tasty red-top school-house nestling so cosily and significantly at the cross-roads was ideal, for paint was grudgingly applied without, and within would usually be found dirty floors, hacked benches and wad-decorated walls. In Lynn we could boast of hardly anything shapely, to say nothing of the grand or beautiful, till 1848, in which year the commodious wooden structures on Franklin and Centre Streets were erected and supplied with such modern appliances as placed them among the best in the vicinity.

And since then the erection of such stately structures as the Cobbet, on Franklin Street, and the Ingalls, on Essex, in 1872, evince the zeal of our people in the cause of common education. There are one or two of the old school-houses yet in existence, and a comparison of them with those just named is well calculated to astonish not only for the evidence of immeasurable architectural advance, but also, perhaps, for the progress in extravagance. But the comparison must end there, for no such inequality exists between the teachers of old and their modern successors. And let us ever bear in mind that the grandest school-houses do not always insure the best teachers or turn out the best scholars.

Our present *High School* was commenced in May, 1849, in the wooden structure then standing on the west side of Franklin Street, where the Cobbet schoolhouse now stands. Jacob Batchelder, who had for fourteen years been preceptor of the old Academy, was the first teacher. The present High School house, near Highland Square, was completed in 1851, and the school was immediately quartered there. It has enjoyed almost uninterrupted prosperity, and its teachers have been uniformly learned and skillful.

Alonzo Lewis, the poet and historian, was a teacher here in Lynn, his native place, for many years; and it is not easy to determine whether, in the vigor of life, he prided himself most as a poet, historian or schoolmaster. One of his longest poems is entitled "The Schoolmaster." It comprises nearly seven hundred lines, and flows on from beginning to end in his usual melodious style. On the opening page appear these lines:

> I sing the Teacher's care, his daily pains,
> The hope that lifts him and the task that chains;
> His anxious toil to raise the gentle mind,
> His skill to clear the path for youth designed,
> His faithful watch o'er life's expanding ray,
> To guide young genius up Improvement's way.

And further on are these:

> The Teacher's lot is filled with pain and care
> Which but devoted hearts are fit to bear.
> His rank and worth in freedom's cause are great,
> Surpassed by few that bless the public state.
> His is the task to fit the youthful mind
> For all the stations by its God designed.

There are many beautiful passages in this poem, though some critics have thought that as a whole it falls short of one or two others in his volumes. It would be pleasing to quote a number of passages did the scope of this sketch permit; but we may venture to give a short selection or two as specimens of the emanations from that gifted mind, which so uniformly indicate reverence for learning and love of virtue:

> "Some shade of woe o'er every lot is thrown;
> Some secret pain each human heart must own.
> Yet, sons of learning! it is yours to rise
> Above earth's ills, to seek your native skies.
> There, with congenial stars your worth shall shine,
> And form a galaxy of rays divine!
> And though awhile outshone by some bright sun,
> Yet still ye glow when his clear course is run.
> As yonder splendid cone of torrid light
> Gleams with rich lustre on the dome of night,
> And marks the path where day's bright orb has past,
> So hallowed genius! shall thy memory cast
> Its pure effulgence o'er the shade of mind,
> To light the path for future worth designed.
> Here the glad muse her tribute pays to thee,
> Taylor, thou Shakspeare of divinity!
> From humblest scenes thy genius bade thee soar,
> The brightest realms of virtue to explore.
> Raised from the teacher's to the bishop's chair
> Life's purest honors waited on thee there;
> And youth and age, by thy instructions blest,
> Enshrined with tears thy everlasting rest."

And again:

> "Ye, who the pages of romance have scanned,
> And think to find such at the poet's hand;
> Know that refinement springs from lofty thought,
> That life's best pleasures are by virtue brought;
> That warmth of heart and excellence of mind
> Are in devotion's sacred charm combined;
> This is the joy that bows to heaven's control,
> This the exalted pure romance of soul."

Mr. Lewis gained much commendation by his "History of Lynn." But it was not voluminous, embracing but about two hundred and fifty octavo pages; yet it was so condensed as to contain much more than its proportions would seem to allow; and, unlike most works of any kind, appeared, in the mind of the reader as he proceeded, to expand and shed more and more light. It has been said that historical works are always interesting. But there is an immeasurable difference in the degrees of interest. Minute details often weary, and yet they often possess a wonderful charm. Their success depends upon the judgment with which they are interwoven. Mr. Lewis's details are never wearying. And he had a happy faculty of introducing reflections and illustrations that opened extensive fields of useful thought—a faculty of inestimable value in any writer.

Mr. Lewis took great interest in the prosperity of his native place,—judging by results, much greater than he took in his own individual advancement,—and did many good things that otherwise might have long remained undone. The construction of the road to Nahant, along the harbor side of the beach, was an enterprise carried through in a great measure by his exertions. For the light-house on Egg Rock we are, perhaps, indebted to him more than to any other individual. The names of old streets were suggested by him, and so were the names of most of the ponds and the romantic and picturesque places and objects about the woods and along the shores. The city seal was drawn by him; and, in short, we owe a debt of gratitude to him for an almost countless number of useful labors and useful suggestions. In the mere profession of teaching, no doubt, there have been a number here who would rank as the superiors of Mr. Lewis, but it may be questioned if there has been one who, on the whole, has added more to the prosperity or done more to promote the refinement and elevation of our people. He was born in the neat little cottage

still standing on the north side of Boston Street, nearly opposite Bridge, on the 28th of August, 1794. He obtained, chiefly by his own exertions, a very good education, though he was not a college graduate. His poetic talents were early developed, the first volume of his poems appearing in 1823. Another and enlarged addition appeared in 1831. But the largest collection was issued after his decease, in 1882, in a handsome volume edited by his son Ion, and formed a graceful tribute to his memory. The first edition of the "History of Lynn," by Mr. Lewis, was published in 1829, in four numbers; the next edition was issued in 1844, in the form of an octavo of two hundred and seventy-eight pages. In 1865, four years after his decease, a new edition appeared, enlarged by newly-discovered matter, and with the annals brought down to the time of publication, by the writer of this sketch. He died in his picturesque little cottage at the seaside, on Beach Street, on the 21st of January, 1861.

At the present time the female teachers of our public schools far outnumber those of the other sex; and it is well that it is so, for their influence on the young minds committed to their charge, in the lower schools especially, has unquestionably a most beneficial effect. But a glamour surrounds the mistress of old, of which she of our day is divested, distance of time lending its enchantment. Says Shenstone:

"Her cap, far whiter than the driven snow,
Emblem right meet of decency does yield:
Her apron dy'd in grain, as blue, I trowe,
As is the harebell that adorns the field:
And in her hand, for sceptre, she does wield
Tway birchen sprays." . . .
* * * * * * * * *
"Albeit ne flattery did corrupt her truth,
Ne pompus title did debauch her ear;
Goody, good-woman, gossip n'aunt forsooth,
Or dame, the sole additions she did hear;
Yet these she challeng'd, these she held right dear."

And the poet's graphic delineation has other winning touches:

"One ancient hen she took delight to feed,
The plodding pattern of the busy dame;
Which ever and anon, impell'd by need,
Into her school, begirt with chickens came;
Such favor did her past deportment claim;
And if neglect had lavish'd on the ground
Fragment of bread, she would collect the same;
For well she knew, and quaintly could expound,
What sin it were to waste the smallest crumb she found."

There was worthy "Madame Breed," who long taught her little school on Water Hill, her frilled cap without a stain, and her manners as stately as if she were a queen. Some of our "best people" of the present day can trace their pedigree to her. She was mother of Andrews Breed, so long landlord of Lynn Hotel, in the days of its greatest glory, and grandmother of our fifth mayor.

As to the condition and comparative usefulness of our present schools, there have been more or less derogatory whisperings; not so much touching their management as the course of study; but as that is to a considerable extent prescribed by law, it is so far beyond the regulation of those in whose hands the educational interests are more immediately placed. The boast that these primary seats of learning are now far superior to any heretofore known is often heard. But the important question is: Are they superior in adaptation to existing wants? The law requires instruction in "orthography, reading, writing, English grammar, geography, arithmetic, drawing, the history of the United States and good behaviour." It is highly probable that if each town could have its own way, or, in modern phrase, were "local option" permissible, this simple curriculum would in many places be changed, as the common pursuits in different localities greatly vary, rendering some studies much more desirable than others. Of course, each town must know its own wants. As a general requirement, however, perhaps the present could not be much improved. And the same may be said of high school studies, as there, in addition to those named, it is required that "general history, book-keeping, surveying, geometry, natural philosophy, chemistry, botany, the civil polity of the Commonwealth and of the United States, and the Latin language" be taught.

But the law does not end with the above requirements. It opens a wide, permissive door through which numerous other studies, some of questionable utility, may and do intrude where the authorities allow or direct. It is here that danger lies, for some that were better kept out will occasionally, by mysterious influences, find their way in; some, to say the least, as useless as necromancy. Great responsibility rests on school committees, and it is agreeable to be able to testify that Lynn has usually been fortunate in securing those who had a due sense of their responsibility and intelligence and energy sufficient to execute their great trust in a way most conducive to the best interests of the people.

In former years such studies were pursued as best prepared the pupil to meet the requirements of the position he was in homely honesty expected to occupy in after-life; not such a position as imaginative parental affection might picture. There is so much knowledge the possession of which is sure to add to our well-being that it seems unwise to occupy ourselves in efforts to gain that which is of doubtful utility. It has been said that all knowledge is useful, but most certainly all knowledge is not equally so. No one can learn everything, life not being long enough for that, and hence is it not the part of wisdom to learn as thoroughly as may be that which is indispensable or sure to be most useful? There is an old maxim that speaks of the jack-at-all-trades being good at none, and why not apply the suggestion to the departments of learning?

Are we not more prone to theorize than our practical fathers were? more charmed with the ideal? But it may be asked, Is not the mind more fully de-

veloped and strengthened, better disciplined and polished, through these modern requirements; are not more extensive, beautiful and ennobling avenues of thought opened through such means? This is a point for the wisest to discuss, and when they have determined it they will do well to let the world know the result.

The annual reports of our school committees are full and perspicuous, and it seems as if no citizen need be in ignorance of the condition of every school, nor of the ever-growing wants of our whole educational system.

The following summaries will perhaps give as much statistical information concerning our present schools as may be thought necessary. They are for 1886.

Number of Schools.—1 High School, 7 grammar schools, 66 primary schools, 2 evening schools, 1 evening drawing school.

Teachers.—Whole number of teachers in day schools, including music teacher, drawing teacher and teacher of elocution, 141; number of teachers in evening schools, 45; number of teachers in evening drawing school, 4; in High School, 5 male and 6 female teachers; in grammar schools, 4 male, 53 female; principals' assistants, 5; teachers in primary schools, 66.

Pupils.—Average whole number of pupils belonging to all the day schools, 6415; average daily attendance of pupils in all the day schools, 5614; average number of pupils to a regular teacher in High School, 29; average number of pupils to a teacher in grammar schools, 42; average number of pupils to a teacher in primary schools, 53; average attendance of pupils in evening schools, 321; average attendance of pupils in evening drawing school, 116; High School graduates, June, 1886, 28.

Cost of Support of Schools.—For such as are accustomed to estimate the value of things moral and intellectual, as well as material, on a pecuniary basis, it may be stated, in brief, that the actual expenditure from the city treasury for the support of the public schools in 1886 was $126,905.85, which included, for teachers' salaries, $82,096.37, and for each pupil between five and fifteen years, $16.86. The relative cost of the schools may be seen from the fact that the total expenditures of the city for the year were $1,014,617.80.

Libraries.—As auxiliaries in the cause of education, our libraries should be named. The first incorporated institution of the kind in Lynn appears to have been the "Social Library," which was established in 1819, though before that there were one or two collections of books to which the public generally had access; one especially, of considerable value, though limited in the number of volumes, near the close of the last century, in charge of Rev. Mr. Thatcher, of the First Church. The "Social Library" was a useful institution and continued some thirty years under its original organization, and then was united to the small collection of the Natural History Society. Its number of volumes seems never to have exceeded 1500. In 1855 the "Lynn Library Association" was incorporated and became custodian of the united collection, then numbering about 2000 volumes.

In 1862 the "Lynn Free Public Library" was established, receiving the books of the Library Association, with such additions from other sources as raised the number of volumes to 4100. Thus began the notable Lynn Public Library, the usefulness of which is too well understood to need much remark here. The city year by year makes liberal appropriations for its support and increase, and has been fortunate in the selection of those who take special charge of its interests.

There has been a steady increase in the number of volumes of the Public Library, and at the close of 1885 there were 34,411 bound volumes and 4486 pamphlets. The number of deliveries during the year 1885 was 85,355, and the largest number taken out in one day during the year was on Saturday, January 31st, when 951 were delivered. Receipts for the year, $6994.25; expenditures, $6974.27. Whole number of books purchased during the year, 888, including of religious works, 28; scientific, 61; biographical, 79; historical, 134; prose fiction, 219.

Of course there were, all along, as the town grew, small circulating libraries in the different neighborhoods, and limited collections belonging to societies and clubs. These, together with those of the religious societies, furnished probably more good reading than was availed of in those industrious times. Charles F. Lummus, the first printer, for instance, had a collection of two or three hundred volumes in connection with his office, which he called the Redwood Library.

There have not been many large donations to our Public Library as yet, though from time to time books and other appropriate contributions have been made. In this respect Lynn has been less fortunate than many other places. But there was one opportune legacy which will not be forgotten—that of $10,000 from Sidney B. Pratt. Mr. Pratt was born on the 14th of May, 1814, and died on the 29th of January, 1869, never having been married. He was unassuming in manners, liberal in ideas, diligent in business. Soon after the opening of the Eastern Railroad, in 1839, he commenced the express business, in a small way, which, by his promptness, activity and faithfulness, grew apace into large proportions, and finally, under the name of "Pratt and Babb's Express," became one of the leading lines in the vicinity. The public estimation of him was indicated by the attendance at his funeral, which took place from the Friends' meeting-house, of the mayor and other members of the city government, and a large concourse of business citizens. The donation to the library was by

will. A good likeness of him is to be seen in the Public Library.

Another liberal bequest to the Public Library was made by Lyman F. Chase, who died January 3, 1885. This gift was $5000. Mr. Chase was a native of Lynn, and much respected as a young business man, his age at the time of his decease being forty-three.

NEWSPAPERS.—There was no newspaper published in Lynn till 1825. It was on the 3d of September of that year that the *Weekly Mirror*, under the proprietorship of Charles Frederic Lummus, made its first appearance. And, as this was an event of marked importance in our history, something more than ordinary notice may surely be proper, both of the paper and its proprietor.

The appearance of the *Mirror* certainly was not brilliant, either mechanically or editorially. There were but nineteen lines of editorial matter in the whole paper. And there was no greeting to the public, nor allusion, in any shape, to the prospects, plans, or expectations of the publisher. An original tale occupied five of the little columns, and an original poem filled another. Mr. Lewis probably wrote both of these. Three or four advertisements appeared on the third page; and the rest of the paper was made up of news items and short extracts. The four pages of the sheet—that is the printed part—were each a fraction less than nine inches by eleven in size; the type was much worn, the ink poor, the paper coarse and dingy. The size of the type was long primer, excepting about one column of brevier and two of pica. And, on the whole, the expectant public can hardly be charged with undue fastidiousness for failing to bestow very high encomiums on this new-born child of the press. Mr. Lummus told the writer, among other things, while recounting the experiences of that eventful period, that he sent a copy to the *New England Galaxy*, then under the charge of Mr. Buckingham, requesting an exchange, but received his own back, with the second E in the word WEEKLY changed to an A. The fifth number appeared in a somewhat enlarged form. The same width of column was preserved, but some five inches were added to the length, making a paper of much better shape. But this was done without boasting or any flourish of trumpets. There was not a line of editorial on the subject; nor was there, indeed, a line on any subject, in that number. Two of the columns were in pica; and the use of that large type was continued, to some extent, for a long time, he, the publisher, taking all suitable opportunities to gravely assure his readers that it was for the benefit of the aged people, whose eyes were dim; and many thanks did he receive for his kindness. The *Mirror* was first printed in a small wooden building, on the west side of Market Street, just where Tremont Street now opens. But in four or five years the office was removed to another small building, at the west end of the Common, the most active business of the town at that time being centred there.

For a considerable time the *Mirror* could boast of but little in quantity, in an editorial way, though what there was, was very good in quality; and it soon became a very readable paper, for, as the proprietor gathered confidence and became more experienced, he displayed most excellent taste and judgment in his selections. He had an open eye for the substantial and useful as well as the exciting and entertaining, and was diligent in looking up matters of local interest. And his brief remarks were often strikingly comprehensive. He seldom attempted an article more than a square or two in length, and was never guilty of spreading over half a column what might just as well be expressed in twenty lines.

Mr. Lummus was very social in his disposition; was acquainted with everybody; was an accomplished musician, and something of a military man. He likewise interested himself in political affairs, but was too honest to gain a reputation for stability as a partisan. In all intellectual and recreative enterprises, from the dignified lyceum to the jovial chowder party, he was ready and active, and hence frequently found himself in a situation where he was able to pick up matter for useful or amusing "squizzles," as he termed his short articles. And he was able in a short time to gather around him quite a number of very acceptable correspondents.

Mr. Lummus earned for himself the popular nickname of "Philosopher" in a rather amusing manner. Lawyer Gates being in the office one day, abruptly inquired, "Charles, what does the F. in your name stand for?" "Philosopher," was the instantaneous response. The ready wit so struck the old gentleman that he at once gave currency to the self-bestowed sobriquet.

He had a strange propensity to frequently change the appearance of his paper. Every little while his sheet would appear, perhaps with a new head, a different width of column, or some fanciful display of ornamental type. His means were limited, and his office but poorly supplied with materials. An ancient Ramage press, which looked as if Franklin might have worked at it, a small font of second-hand long primer, a little brevier, and a very few little fonts of small ornamental letter, with a case of pica and a few pounds of great primer, were almost everything he had. His three stands were so aged as to totter on their legs, and his galleys were warped or cracked. The only large type in the office for years were two or three alphabets of four-line pica antique capitals, which served for the heading of handbills, and at one time for the heading of his paper. With such a fitting out, he could not, of course, be expected to turn out any very elegant specimens of the art. But at that time such displays in job printing as are now made were not thought of. In March, 1832, the writer purchased his whole establishment for two hundred dollars, paying quite as much as it was worth. He had, however, in the mean

time procured a small font of new long primer, and sent off the old press, hiring a small iron one.

As to the success of the *Mirror*, it may in brief be stated that small returns rewarded hard labor. The number of subscribers was about four hundred—sometimes running a little below, but seldom above. The amount of work in the office—jobs, newspaper and all—could be done by the publisher and one hand. But at first, in a corner of his office, and afterward in a separate room, Mr. Lummus kept a shop with a small stock of stationery and fancy articles, such as are usually sold in a country book-store. A few musical instruments likewise formed a part of his stock, and he would frequently, in times of the greatest hurry, abruptly drop his composing stick to perform a solo on one of them, much to the discomfiture of his journeyman. Indeed he did not possess quite so strong an attachment for manual labor as for some other pursuits. He was fond of considering the matter in a philosophical way, and would sometimes remark, "Well, I guess I won't work too hard to-day, lest I should have nothing to do to-morrow," which remark was the sure precursor of a ride, a walk or an interval of repose over a book. There was a vein of humor, without the sting of sarcasm, running through his conversation, and he much loved a harmless practical joke.

He had an original way of ridding himself of idlers and such disagreeable company as quartered in his office: it was, to immediately set them at some disagreeable work. No matter who the individual might be, old or young, high or low, he would be called to go for a pail of water, sweep the floor, or perform some other equally dignified service, a plausible excuse always accompanying the request; and when one thing was done another was ready to be commenced on, until the victim was wearied out. A gentleman of the first respectability was once seen rolling at the press with a hand-roller, his clothes, hands and sweaty brow all bedaubed with ink, while Mr. Lummus was pulling on with all possible speed, to prevent any opportunity for rest, his countenance wearing the gravity of a sphinx. His financial ability was not of a high order, and he was, moreover, of quite a liberal turn. So it is hardly probable that had his income been ever so great he would have become rich. He would occasionally hire a horse and wagon, and occupy perhaps half a day in going to Salem to procure two reams of paper. The writer was informed by a neighbor of his that he called at his place one forenoon, urging him, in great haste, to ride with him to Boston, whither he was bound, in a chaise, alone. It being a pleasant day, the invitation was accepted. On reaching the city he drove directly to a famous restaurant, and called for some favorite viand, which was speedily before them. As soon as the meal was disposed of, Mr. Lummus arose, and, with an air of great satisfaction patting the natural receptacle of all good dinners, informed his friend that he was ready to start for home.

In the matter of dress Mr. Lummus was far from being a successful imitator of Brummel, though he was always decently clad. The exterior habiliments, however, were not usually in exact keeping with the interior; for sometimes within his muddy and ungainly cow-hide boots he wore delicate silk stockings. And beneath his shaggy coat, of dingy-white and ancient fashion, was perhaps underwear of the finest linen.

He occasionally conceived strange antipathies and prejudices which would sometimes exhibit themselves in a manner rather amusing than offensive. Seeing him once seize the list of the carrier for the eastern part of the town, and begin eagerly to cross off names, the writer asked him if so many wished to stop their papers. "I don't care whether they do or not," he replied, "but if they want it any longer they've got to move out of Woodland to get it." As some of his best friends—among them Mr. Lewis and Mr. Curtin—lived in that section, it seemed odd that he should have conceived such a prejudice.

Like most editors, he was fond of having his paper talked about, and loved much now and then to create a sensation. To that end he would occasionally concentrate in one of his little paragraphs enough material to serve most editors for a column—charging a perfect little bomb-shell—perhaps offensive from its personal application, or roughly divulging some private matter.

Like most editors, too, he was pleased to see his articles going the rounds of the press; and he knew well how to accomplish the end by inserting that which, from its bare oddity, would be snapped up. For instance, he, upon one calm summer morning startled the community with the bold announcement,—"Huckleberries is ripe." And the press all over the country echoed his announcement. It was customary in former days, as well as now, for people to complain of the dilatoriness of the Legislature. And Mr. Lummus once issued his paper with the usual conspicuous heading, "Legislative Proceedings," in one of its columns, followed by a long blank space. It was thought to be a good joke; but he said the best of the joke was that it saved the setting of so many types.

The *Mirror* was discontinued in March, 1832, the proprietor having become involved, and the income not meeting the expenses. In the summer of the same year he published the first Directory of Lynn. It was a small 12mo, of seventy pages, with paper covers, and contained such information as is usually found in publications of the kind.

Mr. Lummus now passed some four years without any regular, settled employment. He worked a little at printing, kept a circulating library for a short time, had one or two classes in French and several in music. His plan in teaching French was to learn a lesson one day and teach it the next, thus keeping one step ahead of his pupils, and so near them as to see all the difficulties of the way—so he said—and his success was so satisfactory that one large class made him a valuable present.

There is no doubt that Mr. Lummus did much to awaken and foster a love for literature and other refining influences in the little community, and that we of the present generation owe a debt of gratitude for that. In the columns of his little paper the writings of Miss Fuller, Enoch Curtin, Solomon Moulton and quite a number of others first appeared. And Mr. Lewis was a contributor to its columns as long as it existed. He was in some sort a literary "head-centre," and his quaint and unpretentious criticisms doubtless had much influence in rectifying the style of inexperienced writers. Many times has the writer heard him remark, in his serio-comic undertone, while looking over a manuscript and ruthlessly drawing his expunging pen through passages, no doubt, thought by the writer to be the most brilliant: "There is a flower without any smell;" or, "There is no nub to that."

Early in 1838 the health of Mr. Lummus began seriously to fail; and it was not long before he was compelled to take to his room and then to his bed. The writer often visited him then, for, being in sickness and adversity, he was neglected by most of those who, in his brighter days, had been cheered by his friendship. He was usually cheerful, for his Christian faith was strong, and he seemed to feel no regret at the near approach of death. But to the last his natural eccentricities would occasionally exhibit themselves. One afternoon, just before his death, the bell happened to toll for a funeral. He heard it and remarked, "There, there is that old bell again; well, it will toll for me in a few days, I suppose," without any apparent conception that it would strike one as an unseemly remark. At another time he was found sitting up eating a piece of toast, and, in reply to the inquiry as to how he felt, said: "Oh, your grandsir will be well enough in a few days, I guess." But after he had retired, and one was at his bed-side to bid him good-night, he explained by saying that his remark might have savored of levity; that it had reference to his death, which would probably take place in a few days; and he certainly trusted that all would be well with him.

It was on the 20th of April, 1838, at the age of thirty-seven, that Mr. Lummus closed his life. He had marked singularities of character, but always proved so fast a friend and agreeable companion that he was universally beloved. And he had such an honesty of purpose, and strong desire to "do a little good in the world," as he expressed it, that his memory is more worthy of being cherished than many of higher pretensions and greater renown. Says Mr. Lewis: "He was an excellent musician, and a choice spirit. Few young men in Lynn were ever more extensively beloved or more deserved to be. But thou art dead! 'Alas! poor Yorick!' Thine is a loss to be thought about, and thou shalt long live in our love."

Such was the beginning of printing in Lynn; such the first printer and his outfit; such the first newspaper, its character and success. Since that time many papers have arisen, flourished for a time and passed away; but there has hardly ever been a period without one or two respectable journals. At the present time (1887) we have the following:

The Lynn Reporter (weekly), established in 1854.
The Lynn City Item (weekly), established in 1876.
Daily Evening Item, established in 1877.
The Lynn Bee (daily), established in 1880.

They are all on the high road of prosperity, in a pecuniary way, each being far in advance of all the others, according to their individual claims. But then, money-making is, of course, a mere secondary matter with the worthy publishers. And as to editorial management, it may be remarked that every sheet bears evidence that not one of the editors would reasonably be expected, in the accustomed modesty of the craft, to deny that he is the ablest of the entire brotherhood. Commendation, however, is needless here, and criticism would be unbecoming.

There are a number of book and job offices, besides the offices at which newspapers are printed. And the work turned out is quite equal in accuracy and elegance to that done elsewhere in the commonwealth.

CHAPTER XVI.

LYNN—(*Continued*).

INDUSTRIAL PURSUITS.

Iron Works, First in America—Planting and Fishing—Cloth Manufacture—The Great Shoe and Leather Trade; its History and Present Condition—Other Manufactures—Statistics Pertaining to the Different Trades, Interspersed.

"Earth is the work-shop of mankind,
And we're all workers here,
With busy hand or busy mind,
Each in his destined sphere.
Work's higher wage—content and health—
Its lesser—luxury and wealth."

In a very short time after the settlement of Lynn was commenced, mechanics of the few kinds necessary to supply the limited wants of the people appeared. Even before the Colonial Patent was removed to New England, which was in August, 1629, the company at home were careful to see that a sufficient number of skilled artificers were sent over.

Iron Works.—The first undertaking of general importance was the establishment of the iron works on the border of Saugus River. These works were commenced as early as 1643, and formed an enterprise worthy of more extended notice than can be attempted here. The undertaking was one of unquestionable importance, not only to the narrow circle of settlers in this immediate vicinity, but to the whole country. It may, indeed, like many other great projects, have been induced and fostered by hopes of pecuniary gain

to those directly concerned; but certain it is that it resulted in great general good, though it ended in financial disaster and vexation in individual instances. Yet, after all, it is by no means certain that individual selfishness was the mainspring of the scheme. The Massachusetts Company evidently realized the importance of such works to the settlers, for before the removal of the patent the subject was earnestly discussed, and at a meeting in London, March 2, 1628–29, an agreement seems to have been made with a Mr. Malbon, "he having skyll in iron works," to come hither on a prospecting tour.

These works at Lynn have been spoken of as the first in America; but the claim that those at Braintree were the first is not forgotten. After patient research, however, the writer is convinced that the claim cannot be substantiated. Mr. Malbon is known to have been here as early as October, 1629, and seems first to have settled at Salem. Now Braintree is some twenty-five miles away, and that distance, in the almost entire absence of roads, was a serious matter. Why, then, should he have gone so far away, and into another jurisdiction, when ore could be found so near at hand as Saugus?

It is evident that some of the workmen at Braintree were previously employed in Lynn, among them Henry Leonard, who came over in 1642, to engage in the Lynn works. But after all, a priority of two or three years in the establishment of such a business is of little importance, though it is well to be exact, considering that sometimes other and material facts may be dependent.

It is apparent that though the Lynn Iron Works were not sustained by local capital—for there was little here—some of our leading men were active in promoting their establishment. Robert Bridges, for instance, in 1642, took specimens of the ore to England, and was, in truth, instrumental in forming the company. And Thomas Dexter, who owned some of the land in which the ore was found also took a lively interest in the enterprise. It is, therefore, unjust to call it a mere English speculation. The people of Lynn did what they could to help along the business.

Smelting, forging and casting were carried on at these works, as well as blacksmithing and various other branches of metal work. And it is singular that there was not better success. One or two inventions of a very useful kind were perfected by some of those employed here; notably by Joseph Jenks, who delighted the farmers with a greatly-improved scythe, or "engine to cut grass," as the court called it. Here were also made, as Mr. Lewis states, by the same ingenious Mr. Jenks, the dies for the famous pine tree coins of 1652. In 1654 the authorities of Boston agreed with Mr. Jenks "for an Ingine to carry water in case of fire," which is said to be the first fire-engine in America. There must at one time have been a good deal of business, for that period, carried on at the works, as Winthrop, in a letter dated September 30, 1648, says, "The furnace runs eight tons per week, and their bar iron is as good as Spanish." The ore was obtained in the vicinity, and was of the kind called bog ore.

The site of the works was in a sheltered vale on the border of the river, in what is now the centre village of Saugus; and a picturesque little hamlet called Hammersmith grew up apace. Henry Leonard and his brother James worked here, and their descendants have to this day been identified with the iron manufacture, not only of New England, but the whole country. From the humble beginning of these Lynn works has developed the enormous iron trade of the present day. Skilled workmen went from here from time to time, and established themselves in different parts; and their children and children's children, adepts in the same calling, borne on the waves of population as they spread over the land, are still easily identified as of the old Lynn stock.

As before intimated, these iron works were not a financial success. There was very little ready money in the colony; and though the manufactured articles were sold at a very reasonable rate for coin, yet, as the General Court curtly told the company, an axe at twelve pence was not cheap to one who had no twelve pence to buy. And again, they had not been long in operation when they became involved in vexatious and expensive lawsuits. Hubbard says, "Instead of drawing out bars of iron for the country's use, there were hammered out nothing but contentions and lawsuits." They seem to have gained the ill-will of many of their neighbors, had difficulties about flowage, about contracts for wood, and so on. And a most remarkable prejudice appears to have arisen from the apprehension that they would consume so much wood that fuel would become scarce. They, however, continued in a sort of lingering consumption for many years, when the fires of the forges went out never to be relighted, the begrimed workmen departed never to return, and the chief tangible marks of their existence now remaining are two or three grass-grown hillocks of scoria, called by the people of the neighborhood the "cinder banks." Curious visitors sometimes dig through the thin soil that covers the slag and frequently find bits of charcoal as fresh as when ejected from the sooty portals, and occasionally a piece of iron casting.

In the description of New England by Samuel Maverick, recently discovered by Mr. Waters in the British archives, and probably written in 1660, appears the following: "Five miles westward (from Marblehead, 'the greatest town for ffishing in New England') lyeth the Towne of Lynne along by the sea side, and two miles above it, within the bounds of it. are the greatest Iron works erected for the most part at the charge of some Merchants and Gentlemen here residing, and cost them about 14000£, who were, as it is conceived, about six years since Injuriously outted

of them to the great prejudice of the Country and Owners." So it seems Mr. Maverick recognized their value; and he must have been familiar with their whole history, for he came over as early as 1624, at the age of twenty-two, and settled on Noddle's Island, now East Boston, which the General Court granted to him in 1633—a fact which indicates an appreciation of his character and services, notwithstanding the deep prejudice that prevailed on account of his being a zealous Episcopalian.

It may be thought that the most proper place for a notice of these works would be in the sketch of Saugus, as they were actually within the present limits of that town; and no doubt the worthy gentleman who furnishes the sketch of that place will give them suitable attention. But there was no settlement of the name Saugus during their existence, nor for a hundred years after. They are always spoken of on the records as of Lynn. While it is of little moment on which side of the present line they were situated, it may be thought that their importance entitles them to some notice in both places. They were the first considerable mechanical industry established here. Craftsmen there were in sufficient numbers and variety to supply all local needs, and that was about all.

After the now historical iron works on Saugus River were abandoned there seems to have been no attempt at iron-working here for almost two centuries, unless blacksmithing be called such. It was in 1843 that Theophilus N. Breed built a factory on Oak Street for the manufacture of shoemaker's tools and for various kinds of castings, erecting a dam and forming what has ever since been known as Breed's Pond, a description of which has already been given. After a few years, however, Mr. Breed relinquished the business, and the pond finally became the property of the city, and yet forms one of the chief sources of our public water supply, as well as a pleasing feature of the landscape, surrounded as it is by romantic hills and woods.

Planting and Fishing.—Planting and fishing were indeed the chief dependence for many years. And they insured a comfortable livelihood, so that the people hereabout were, in a sort, independent from the beginning. The land, however, was not very favorable for husbandry, though the sea yielded an abundance of valuable manuring matter; and in later years, as the cost of labor increased, farming ceased to be profitable, till it has now been well-nigh abandoned.

The fishing was at first confined to what is now known as dory-fishing, and was chiefly carried on from Swampscott. The little boats of the settlers, like the skiffs of the Indians, merely ventured into the offing. But there was no need of going farther, as the fish were abundant near the shore. It was not till 1795 that the first jigger, so called, a sail craft of some twenty tons, was procured. But from that time the business increased, affording ample maintenance to many and fortunes to some. The fishermen here have promptly availed themselves of every new discovery and improvement in the prosecution of their calling and been alert in taking advantage of propitious tides.

Shell-fish have always been taken in great quantities along the shore, and many an indigent family have found that the clam banks never refused a liberal discount.

The lobster trade, too, has been one of very considerable profit, though it has of late years been so vigorously pursued that fears have arisen lest the dainty crustacea may be exterminated. As before remarked, the fishing was chiefly carried on at Swampscott, which was a part of Lynn till 1852. And, as the writer, when preparing the proposed sketch of that town, will necessarily have something to say about the fisheries, but little need be added here.

An idea of the extent of the lobster yield on our coast may be gathered from the fact that during the year ending May 1, 1865, there were taken at Nahant 150,000, and at Swampscott 37,000. The average value, as taken from the traps, was six cents each. Since that time the annual catch has gradually diminished. And under the apprehension that the species may become extinct, as just stated, the Legislature has been invoked for their protection. But one would think there could not be much danger in that direction, as piscatory naturalists assure us that a single female lobster will lay 42,000 eggs in a year. It must be, then, that there are "denizens of the deep" as fond as we of the savory food.

The district of Lynn, Nahant and Swampscott returned, as the product of their fisheries for the quarter ending December 3, 1880, as follows: Codfish, cured, 300,000 pounds; mackerel, 400,000 pounds; herring, salted, 100,000 pounds; lobsters, 7000 pounds; fresh fish, daily catch, 315,000 pounds; fish oil, 3200 gallons. Total value, $44,141.50.

A brief quotation from William Wood's quaint description of what he saw in 1631 may close what is needful just here about the fisheries: "Northward up this river [the Saugus] goes great store of alewives, of which they make good red herrings; insomuch that they have been at charges to make them a wayre and a herring-house to dry these herrings in. The last year were dried some 4 or 5 last [150 barrels] for an experiment, which proved very good. This is like to prove a great enrichment to the land, being a staple commodity in other countries, for there be such innumerable companies in every river that I have seen ten thousand taken in two hours, by two men, without any weire at all saving a few stones to stop their passage up the river. There likewise come store of basse, which the English and Indians catch with hooke and line, some fifty or three score at a tide. . . . Here is a great deal of rock, cod and macrill, insomuch that shoales of basse have driven up shoales of

macrill, from one end of the sandy beach to the other, which the inhabitants have gathered up in wheelbarrows." Alewives still go up the fresh-water streams for a few weeks in the spring to spawn in the ponds; especially do they swarm in Strawberry Brook on their way to Flax Pond; but they are not now esteemed so highly for food as formerly. There are but few bass, some rock cod and occasionally great quantities of mackerel. The habits of the latter, however, are so peculiar that different seasons show very different accounts.

Cloth Manufacture.—In 1726 the Salem Court awarded to Nathaniel Potter, of Lynn, £13 15*s.* for the manufacture of three pieces of linen. It is not clear what kind of cloth this was, but is very likely to have been what was afterwards known as "tow cloth." Certain it is that flax was raised here in considerable quantities. The fine pond near our northeastern border, known as Flax Pond, received its name, as mentioned in the description already given, from the circumstance that much of the flax was rotted there. The tow cloth, as it came from the family hand-loom, was not regarded as a very genteel fabric, but its durability could not be questioned, and after being whitened it was fair, though not so smooth and soft as one of this day would desire for an innermost garment. The raising of flax and manufacture of tow cloth has long since been discontinued.

In the early times of the settlement sheep were raised to some extent, and of course the fleeces were by the thrifty dames wrought into comfortable clothing. But the whir of the spinning-wheel and click of the hand-loom have long since ceased to be heard.

Shoes and Leather.—*Shoes.*—The history of shoes and shoe-making seems always to have had a peculiar interest. Workers at the craft appeared at an early period of the world, for it was necessary to protect the feet from the arid sands of the torrid zone and the frosty plains of the frigid. The earliest covering of the feet in the one case was no doubt the sandal, manufactured from some vegetable production, and in the other, the moccasin, made of uncurried skin. Sandals are still worn in the eastern countries, though light shoes seem generally preferred. The manufacture of shoes in those countries is conducted in the same primitive style that was in practice here in our early days, though the sewing-machine and other revolutionizing contrivances are being introduced. The writer, while threading his way through one of the narrow old streets of Algiers, two or three years since, came across a shop in which were half a dozen shoemakers busily at work on the same kind of low seat used in the Lynn shops of sixty years ago, knee-stirrup, lapstone and broad-face hammer, fulfilling their duties as of yore. So natural did the whole look that a pause was involuntarily made; but though the jolly workers seemed not averse to have a chat, the difficulties of language rendered the communication very limited. In the same city a Frenchman was seen busily at work on an American sewing-machine.

Of all the industries of Lynn, the manufacture of shoes has taken the lead for many years; but it was not till the middle of the last century that she began to be known, to any marked extent, in that line of business. Nor is it certain that there was any special inducement for the establishment of the business here, though the manufacture of leather, which was engaged in to some extent in the earliest times, may have had something to do with it. Edward Johnson, of Woburn, writing in 1651, speaks of a Shoemakers' Corporation in Lynn, and Mr. Lewis remarks that the papers relating to it were unfortunately lost, "having probably been destroyed by the mob in 1765." But it must have been an insignificant association. And what reason there was for supposing that the papers, if any really existed, were destroyed in the Stamp Act riot, is not known. It seems more probable that they would have been destroyed in the disorderly times of Andros; but more probable still that they never had any papers.

Edmund Bridges and Philip Kirtland are usually spoken of as the first shoemakers here. They came in 1635. But John Adam Dagyr, a Welshman, who came in 1750, seems to have raised the humble occupation almost to the rank of a fine art. He took great pains to excel; and, it is said, imported the most elegant shoes from Europe, and dissected them for the purpose of discovering the hidden mystery of their elegance. This, however, appears to have been done before, but without the desired effect. Shoemakers from all parts of the town, says Mr. Lewis, went to him for information; and he is called in the *Boston Gazette* of 1764 "the celebrated shoemaker of Essex." From this time Lynn took rank as the foremost place for the manufacture of ladies' shoes in all New England—indeed, in all the provinces. But Mr. Dagyr, in a pecuniary way at least, never profited much by his skill and labor. The writer has been told by one who knew him well that he lived in a homely way, was not very neat in his dress and did not keep his little shop, which was on Boston Street, near where Carnes now opens, in the neatest order; in short, that he fell into such habits as were not conducive to a thrifty life. He finally became so destitute as to make his home in the almshouse, and there he died in 1808. Kirtland Street, in the westerly part of the city, and Kirtland Block, in Union Street, perpetuate the name of the earlier craftsman, Philip Kirtland, and so, in its way, does the Kirtland Hotel, in Summer Street. But as yet no such honor has been bestowed on the name of Dagyr, unless a wild spot in the domain of the Free Public Forest Association, lately consecrated to his memory, be taken as such.

At the time of Dagyr's arrival, 1750, there were but three men in Lynn who carried on the business to such extent as to employ journeymen; and these

were William Gray (grandfather of the rich merchant, so extensively known by the inelegant sobriquet of "Billy Gray"), John Mansfield and Benjamin Newhall; the latter, the writer is pleased in being able to say, was his great-grandfather.

Down to the Revolution the business moved onward, but its progress was slow. And during the war, like most other matters of trade, it was sadly depressed. Soon after the return of peace it began to show renewed strength, and was presently recognized as the leading employment of the place. Some of the shrewd business men seeming to have a prophetic vision of the position it was destined to occupy in future years, vigorously set about placing its interests on as firm a footing as possible. Several energetic workers to that end are more worthy of being remembered than some others who are extolled as public benefactors. There was Ebenezer Breed, a native of the town. He made himself acquainted with all that was to be learned in Lynn, and while yet a young man went to Philadelphia, where he engaged in a profitable business connected with the trade here. In 1792 he visited Europe, and not only sent over quantities of the better and most fashionable kinds of shoe stock, but also some skilled workmen to instruct the operatives at home in the more elegant mysteries of the art. He seemed determined to prove that as fine and substantial shoes could be made in Lynn as in Europe, and he succeeded. But the business in a measure languished, for shoes could be imported from England and France and sold cheaper than the manufacturers here could turn them out. Finding such to be the condition of things, Mr. Breed, in conjunction with some others in the trade at Philadelphia, set about endeavoring to induce Congress, which then held its sessions in that city, to impose a duty on imported shoes sufficient to protect the home manufacture. They resorted to a little shrewd management to effect their purpose. Among other schemes a dinner party was given, for they well knew that an appeal to the stomach is in many cases more irresistible than an appeal to the head. Sundry members of Congress were invited to the banquet, as well as divers charming ladies, among the latter the fascinating Quaker widow, Dolly Todd, once Dolly Payne, and afterward Mrs. President Madison. Mr. Madison himself, who was an influential member of Congress, was also there. One or two of the ladies appear to have been aware of the ulterior purpose of the party, and not averse to assisting in making it a success. It need only be added that a very satisfactory act was passed, and Lynn rose on the event. Perhaps facts like these may partially account for the pertinacity with which our people have all along adhered to the protective tariff system. Poor human nature is such that self-interest has much to do with shaping principles.

Without attempting to follow the progress of the trade into minute details, it may be well to state a few facts that will enable one to judge of its growth. In 1810 there were manufactured here just about 1,000,000 pairs, and they amounted in value to $800,000. The earnings of the female binders reached $50,000. Twenty years later, that is in 1830, the number of pairs made was, in round numbers, 1,670,000, Lynnfield having been set off in 1814 and Saugus in 1815. Twenty-five years later, that is, in 1855, the number of pairs is found to have been 9,275,593, Swampscott having been set off in 1852 and Nahant in 1853. From 1865 to 1875 there were made, on an average, not less than 10,000,000 pairs a year, of the average value of $1.20 a pair.

But a statement of the condition of the shoe trade at the present time would no doubt be most interesting as well as useful, and it is proposed to attempt it with some fullness.

Colonel Wright, in his synopsis of the last United States Census, gives

The number of shoe factories in Lynn as	174
The average number of employees as	10,708
Capital invested	$4,263,250
Wages paid in one year	4,931,530
Stock used	12,918,221
Value of product	20,946,867
Gross profit	3,097,296
Estimated interest and expenses	2,350,482
Net profit or loss	746,814
Average yearly product per employee	1,956
Average yearly net profit per employee	70
Average yearly earnings for each employee	461
Percentage men employed	71.7
Percentage women employed	28.
Percentage children employed	.3

These latest published figures show that $668,280 more were paid in wages, in a single year, than the total capital invested. Equally remarkable is the high yearly average of earnings for each employee, which, it should be remembered, is the average for men, women and children. It is also satisfactory to learn that less than one-third of one per cent. of all Lynn shoe employees are children. The careful attention given, in recent years, to collecting statistics of employees and wages makes the reports of statistical bureaus unusually interesting and instructive. Industrial information is eagerly sought, and an especial interest has centred in examining the progress of the shoe industry, because of its wonderful development and because that development is the result of American ingenuity.

Although the shoe business has such a powerful hold on the every-day life of the people of Lynn, lofty shoe factories do not, by any means, constitute the whole of Lynn's wealth and enterprise. Wherever factories of any kind are located, there naturally spring up a score of subsidiary industries engaged in producing articles which may be used as component parts of a staple product. Lynn, rich in its hundreds of large and small supply factories, which furnish almost everything from tacks, boxes and blacking, to the beautifully finished kid skins of the great morocco factories, is not an exception. From sumac-filled

vats, sunk deep in the ground, up five and six stories, the city is devoted to every department of its chosen industry. Above ground and below ground the business centre of the city is thoroughly dedicated to productiveness.

To speak of leather-scented Lynn is almost to speak the literal truth. From tall chimneys, which stand above ponderous boilers and powerful engines, pours forth the smoke of leather shavings and leather refuse, swept from the busy workrooms. Thus everything serves its purpose. Hundreds of leather-shaping machines furnish ton upon ton of fuel for the great boilers. As moisture from vegetation is taken up by the sun, and formed into clouds which pour forth rain to increase the same vegetation, so old leather assists in the manufacture of new leather. Every piece of discarded leather has a value. Thin shavings are pasted and pressed into some new form, fibrous pieces are ground into leather board, and even a ton of factory sweepings has a marketable value. Thus from the time the tanner sells the hair shaved from the skin, to the time the skin is cut and split into a thousand pieces, every particle has a use and value.

The activity and bustle of Lynn people is, in no small measure, due to association with swiftly-moving machinery. Indeed, it is almost impossible to work with people who are always in a hurry to keep up with machinery without catching the same habit. There is nothing lazy about Lynn. It is distinctively a city of workers when there is work to do. There are, unfortunately, seasons of the year when trade is at a low ebb, and there is therefore a necessity for making the most of it when the factories are in motion. There are two busy seasons, one during January, February and March, when summer goods are manufactured, the other during July, August and September, when winter goods are manufactured. The Western market generally requires goods earliest, the Baltimore and Southern market next, the Philadelphia, New York and New England markets latest. Western wholesale buyers order sample pairs of the next summer's styles as early as the preceding October, and for winter wear as early as the preceding March. Summer is as much a preparation for winter, and winter for summer, in shoe manufacturing, as in any other great industry. Although six months in the year probably comprise the busy seasons, yet there are often factories which run exceptionally steady through the greater part of the year. In fact, there is some trade in every factory every week in the year, as samples, sample orders and duplicate orders fill up a great amount of time between the seasons. The uncertainty of constant employment calls for good wages, so that during the busy season operatives earn a handsome sum, which, if it could only be continued throughout the year, would make the trade of shoemaking very desirable. The dull times, however, put the annual income at no more than a supporting average.

The conduct and ownership of Lynn factories is decidedly different from that of most manufacturing cities. In the large mill cities especially the factories are owned by corporations, and often only a small percentage of the stock is owned by residents. The profits of the corporation are paid to non-residents, who may have little interest in the city's prosperity. Not so in Lynn. Lynn is almost wholly owned by Lynn residents. Wages and profits alike contribute to the city's advancement. There are no stock corporations, but every firm manages its own business. By the industry and perseverance of its own citizens, Lynn has increased its wealth, and taken a proud position among the foremost manufacturing cities of the world. Prosperity is not borrowed, but is a home product.

Wages in Lynn are paid weekly. It has been so ever since factories were first established, being an outgrowth of the old custom of paying the shoemaker for his work as soon as finished. Saturday is the great pay-day. Lynn shoe manufacturers have always been well rated in the financial world, and no doubt much of their sound financial standing is due to frequent payments. They have an immense cash paid-up capital in labor alone, all of the time, and as labor is estimated as about one-fourth the value of the manufactured product, Lynn manufacturers would pay one-fourth immediate cash for all their bills, even if they did not pay any more. Labor bills are preferred bills in Lynn, and its good effect is seen on every hand. A "nimble sixpence" has always been a Lynn business principle, and any other system would seem unnatural.

Lynn operatives have never been called to work by factory bells. Nominally there are fifty-nine working hours in the week, but practically there is so much work done by the piece that operatives work a much smaller number of hours. Factory whistles give alarms at seven o'clock in the morning, at twelve o'clock noon, and at one and six o'clock in the afternoon. Those employed by the week observe these hours, excepting on Saturday, when work is over at five o'clock. Almost every kind of work is piecework, as even in work done by the week there is some stated amount to perform, which is practically the same. There is unusual freedom in entering and leaving factories, and a time-keeper from some strictly-conducted industry would no doubt consider Lynn perfectly demoralized. It would be hard to name a place where employees can be more independent and more fully allowed to regulate their own time than in the factories of Lynn.

Lynn employees live well, dress well and are very thrifty. They live for the most part in detached houses arranged for one or two families. There are very few tenement blocks, and on the average there is one house to every seven persons of the whole population. Manufacturers, as a rule, are not large real estate owners, and do not attempt to house their

own employees, as is often the case with corporations. The employees themselves are large real estate owners, hundreds of houses being owned by thrifty workmen and workingwomen, who have built for themselves neat little homes. Until recent years people still preserved land for kitchen gardening, even in streets contiguous to the business centre. These gardens are gradually filling up, but the same custom still exists in the outlying streets. Lynn owes much to its working people. Had they been less intelligent and industrious, the city could never have grown so evenly and so neatly as it has. Had the working people been less willing to build houses with their surplus earnings, the increasing population could never have been so comfortably accommodated. Manufacturers needed money for increasing business, and could never have afforded to build the houses as fast as they were needed. Lynn has been the mutual success of employers and employed, and a history of its progress which failed to give proper credit to its small property-owners would do injustice to the people—the bone and sinew of the community.

As is the case in every other great industrial community, Lynn capitalists and workmen have oftentimes disagreed on the equivalent to be paid for labor. A general disagreement has almost always resulted in a strike. It is a strange fact that strikes almost invariably occur with most frequency in years of great business depression, when manufacturers can least afford to pay increased wages, and when workmen can least afford to remain idle. The success of a strike depends greatly on the efficiency of labor organization and the confidence of the members in the leaders. There are periods when organizations spring up in great numbers, and other times when the members lose interest and the organizations are less powerful. Disagreements between capital and labor are no modern invention. The good old doctrine of "bearance and forbearance" will do more to engender good feeling than anything else. Water is bound to seek its own level. If the market will warrant it, prices go up, and if there is no demand, prices must go down. Prices get where they belong, despite remonstrance, strikes and differences of opinion. No combination of capital or organization of labor can arbitrarily permanently establish them. For a short time it may be possible to govern them, but that progress which changes trades and trade methods is no respecter of combinations or organizations, and grades and levels prices in accordance with the prosperity or adversity of the existing generation. It is for us to adjust ourselves to changing circumstances with as little friction and as peacefully as possible.

The process of shoe manufacturing does not necessitate so large a plant nor so expensive an outlay as textile manufacturing. Shoes are composite, and the shoe industry is composite. The shoemakers take a number of manufactured articles, and sew and nail them together in a stylish, shapely manner, thus producing a shoe. There are few chemicals to evaporate if manufacturing ceases for a day, a month or a year. Nearly everything in shoemaking represents work. When work stops, the factory process stops. There is no boiling, mixing or dyeing process going on while the shoemaker sleeps, but his guiding eye and hand are necessary to progress. Water, blacking, glue, paste, cement and applied finishes are all the liquids that enter into the process of shoemaking. In tempering stock, water exclusively is used, every other liquid being for external application. On account of this simplicity, shoes can be made economically in a very small compass, with little outlay, or can be made in great factories with a perfect wealth of machinery. It is a versatile business, and depends on the energy and perseverance of the manufacturer. It is more a business of the people than any great textile industry possibly can be. It is possible for a mechanic to rise from the lowest to the highest position. There are even workingmen's co-operative factories. The workmen invest a sum of money in the enterprise, are paid the same wages as are paid in other factories, and are to share in the profits. Shoe manufacturing needs industry, economy and a natural talent for making business success, like any other pursuit. Small beginnings are just as possible to-day in any business as they ever were, and are just as inconvenient. The convenience only of a large capital seemingly makes it a necessity. Oftentimes a comparatively newly established firm will outstrip veteran manufacturers in the race for trade. This has a tendency to keep trade progressive, and no doubt will contribute to its permanence. With the constant invention of improved machinery and tools, the style of conducting business changes about as often as the styles of shoes.

To small capitalists venturing into the shoe business, contractors are a great assistance. With their help a man can manufacture shoes at a very small outlay. There are contractors to do almost everything. Large manufacturers even have a large part of their upper-stitching done by contractors. But to the small manufacturer, the shoemaking contractor, with a line of machinery, is incalculably valuable. He not only contracts for making the shoe, but will even provide lasts and everything necessary to be used. It is possible for a man to have one small room for headquarters, and yet, by contract, arrange for the transaction of an extensive and profitable business. The product does not have that distinctive individuality, however, which belongs to individual factories, because several manufacturers are often supplied by one contractor. But it serves to show how thoroughly Lynn is equipped for the business in all its phases.

Not only in our country, but beyond the seas, the fame of Lynn factories has attracted notice. During the year 1885 a young man, the son of a wealthy

German, made his home in Lynn and worked on different machines in a Lynn shoe factory, studying the ways of Yankee shoemaking. American machines and Lynn machines have made their way all over the world, attracting great attention and interest. Lynn is only one large customer for her own great supply dealers who make the city their headquarters. Lynn supplies go to a dozen foreign countries as well as all over the United States.

If a person were to ask what grade of goods were manufactured in Lynn, he would be told everything in the shape of a shoe. The staple grade is a medium and low-priced article for ladies, misses and children, but there are also several prosperous firms manufacturing for men, boys and youth. In ladies' wear, everything is made from elegant hand-sewed French kid button boots and delicate beaded velvet toilet slippers to shoes of cheaper material, which are made for the million. Everything that can be thought of or desired for American wear is made in Lynn. There are some goods made for export, but the goods for foreign wear form a very small part of the year's business.

Lynn represents a city built without any natural advantages, excepting a healthy situation and beautiful natural attractions. There is no reason why it should have become a prosperous city more than many another, and it would not have become so but for the untiring industry, energy and perseverance of its inhabitants. The city is blessed with a very poor harbor, has no extensive water-power privilege, is not a great railroad centre, and, until a few years since, had only one steam railroad privilege. Its close proximity to Boston has, until recent years, been a disadvantage to local store-keepers, and there has not been that reliable country trade from neighboring towns which has contributed to the wealth of more distant cities.

Lynn is not a county-seat, and has no National, State or County buildings or institutions. The city forcibly illustrates how a whole people can, by devoting themselves assiduously to some definite calling, make themselves proficient and prosperous. The world is never surprised at rapid growth in the West, but the growth of an ancient town on the rock-bound New England coast is remarkable and noticeable. Lynn, a quiet, home-like town, grew from itself, by itself, to a position of importance, and is now the largest city in Essex County. Its inhabitants knew how to make shoes, and they made them. Increase of business called out increase of inventive power to supply the demand. Machines to make shoes called for factories, and factories called people in from towns all over the Northern New England States, where shoes had formerly been sent to be made. This remarkable city is an interesting study because of its peculiar success, as without natural or fortunate advantages it has grown and made a famous name.

And this seems a proper place to go a little into historical detail regarding the leather manufacture here, as distinguished from the shoe manufacture. But, before passing to that matter, the writer would acknowledge his indebtedness to Mr. Howard Mudge Newhall for what is most interesting in the foregoing account of the shoe trade.

Leather.—There is an old proverb which tells us that there is "nothing like leather," so necessary and useful is it in all the arts and for many domestic purposes. So well aware of this were the early settlers of New England that we find the General Court voting, in September, 1638, to "remember to provide bark in the following April for the tanning of divers hides to come." This importation of hides would seem to indicate that they had few cattle, or that they purposed to kill as few as possible, that their numbers might increase. It is probable that the hides of those killed were not well taken off or properly cured, and thus were lost through neglect or destroyed. For this reason we find an order passed in October, 1640, providing for the proper slaughtering and care of hides and skins, and for sending them to be tanned and dressed, with a fine to be imposed upon all who neglected such duty. In June, 1642, the Court passed an elaborate bill, providing that no butcher, currier or shoemaker should exercise the feat or mystery of a tanner, on pain of forfeiting six shillings eight pence for every hide or skin tanned; butchers to forfeit twelve cents for every gash or cut made in slaying; no persons except tanners to be allowed to purchase any hides; persons selling hides insufficiently tanned to forfeit them; tanners not allowed to let their liquors heat or spoil on pain of £20 for every offense; no currier to dress any leather insufficiently tanned, or burn or injure any leather in dressing, on pain of forfeiting the full value of every such hide; sealers of leather appointed, and leather not sealed to be forfeited; sealers to take oath to perform their lawful duty. This order was afterwards extended so as to include all leather made into boots and shoes. In 1646 a stringent law was made to prevent the exportation of any hides or skins, and persons so exporting, and masters of vessels receiving them, were to forfeit their full value.

A committee was appointed May 31, 1672, to look after defects in the tanning of leather and report means to prevent the same.

Although goat and sheep-skins were not classed with hides, yet the same stringent measures were taken to prevent their exportation. A number of glovers, whose names were George Hepbourne, Thos. Buttolph, James Johnson, Nathaniel Williams, Geo. Clifford and Thomas Goulby petitioned against their exportation by one Ralph Woory in 1645, and he was restrained from sending away more than eight dozens, and he and all others forbidden thereafter to export any unless made into gloves or other garments—an early instance of the protection of labor and home industry

In 1672 every seaport town was obliged to choose an officer to see that no hides or skins were improperly transported.

That the manufacture of leather from hides was carried on at Lynn at a very early day is evident. We are informed that Francis Ingalls, one of the first five persons who settled within our bounds, was a tanner and carried on the business on what is now Burrill Street, in Swampscott, and it is claimed that his was the first tannery in the colony. Mr. Lewis states that he saw some of the vats removed from their ancient position about the year 1825. George Keysar came to Lynn about 1639. In 1649 he bought from Samuel Bennett the land lying between Boston Street and Waterhill, and extending from the Newhall property to the present city pumping station. This had previously belonged to Joseph Armitage. Keysar carried on the tanning business here till his removal to Salem, in 1680. His wife was a daughter of Edward Holyoke, and he died in Salem in 1690, aged seventy-three. His son Elizur pursued the same calling at Salem, and his son John at Haverhill—this fact showing that the sons were educated to their father's trade here in Lynn. In 1665 a child by the name of Elizabeth Newhall was drowned in one of Keysar's tan-vats near Boston Street. This property was not disposed of by Keysar's heirs till after 1702, when it probably passed into the possession of the Potters, who owned the property on the opposite or northerly side of Boston Street. In 1705 Robert Potter, who was son of the first settler, Nicholas, disposed of this tan-yard with the tan-house to his son Benjamin, who was a tanner, having very likely, also, learned his trade from the Keysars; Benjamin afterwards acquired the title of captain, and pursued his calling here till 1745, leaving his estate to his children, only one of whom was a son, named Benjamin, and he became *non compos* and had a guardian for many years.

Upon substantially the same premises once occupied by Keysar and Potter a tan-yard and tan-house have been in operation within the memory of persons still living, and the last occupant, Samuel Mulliken, finished off the tan-house into tenements for dwellings. This old building has been demolished within a few years. The yard is still vacant, and the ancient vats can be found by digging.

Upon the premises covered by the factory of John T. Moulton, a tan-yard was in operation at a very early day by Lieut. John Burrill. He was a son of the first settler, George, and was probably born in England in 1631. He lived on Boston Street, in what was more latterly called the Carnes house. This stood upon the spot where Carnes Street joins Boston Street, and was exactly opposite the tan-yard. Col. John left the tan-yard and buildings to his son, Theophilus Burrill, Esq., who also carried on the same business here till 1721, when he sold out to Deacon John Lewis. He in turn, by his will, gave the tan-yard and tan-house to his grandson, Samuel Lewis, who sold it, in 1782, to Daniel Newhall and Nathaniel Sargent, who continued it. In 1793 Newhall sold out to Sargent, and he continued alone till his death in 1798. In 1805 Joseph Watson was the owner and pursued the currying trade. These premises were purchased about 1844 by Joseph Moulton, and have been occupied by him and his successors till the present time (1887), for the manufacture of morocco leather. Many of the old vats were removed by him, and some still remain. This spot, therefore, has been used for tanning purposes for nearly all the time since the settlement of the town. A fine spring of cold water, with the natural stream now called Strawberry Brook running through the yard, and in later years a head of water from the canal above, gave the place unusual advantages for a business of this kind. To Mr. John T. Moulton, son and successor of Joseph Moulton, the writer is much indebted for facts here given touching the leather business.

During the latter part of the last century and the beginning of the present the tanning business was carried on by Benjamin Phillips at the yard of the mill at Waterhill. Here he had a chance for a fulling-mill for softening his hides, running it by water-power, which was quite an advance over the old method of horse-power. To him were apprenticed the brothers Winthrop and Sylvanus Newhall, who afterwards had their tan-yards on Market and Broad Streets, then called Blackmarsh. Winthrop Newhall was succeeded, in 1818, by his son Francis S. Newhall, who, in 1822, formed a partnership with his brother Henry for carrying on the morocco leather business.

Probably Winthrop Newhall was the last of the heavy leather tanners here, the morocco trade having supplanted the heavier business which seems to have taken deep root in Salem and Danvers at about the same time.

The morocco manufacture was probably commenced by William Rose upon the same spot where the Burrills began and carried on the tanning of hides. This is inferred from the fact that when Joseph Watson made a mortgage of these premises, Rose was called upon to sign his name as witness to the conveyance. He may have been working for Watson or carrying on business in a small way for himself in Watson's shop. He shortly after had a shop for himself on a spot near that now occupied by St. Stephen's Church, on South Common Street, but left town in 1809, going to Charlestown. On Boston Street and in the vicinity of these old tanneries lived John Adam Dagyr, who has been so many times advertised as the celebrated shoemaker of Essex in 1764, and his opinion and advice in regard to the kinds of material requisite for ladies' shoes may have had something to do with the introduction of the morocco business here. At any rate, it came about in his day. His wife's father, Moses Newhall, was probably a shoemaker; the father

of Moses certainly was, as the records show. It is a very unpleasant circumstance that both Dagyr and his wife, in their last days, came to want.

Daniel Collins, many years ago, carried on a tannery on Boston Street, nearly opposite the present Kirtland Street. Levi Robinson took the business more than fifty years ago, and it has finally developed into the large morocco establishment of John E. Donallan.

From Rose and his small beginning has the business gradually increased to its present extensive proportions. This matter has been faithfully treated by David N. Johnson, in his "Sketches of Lynn." He brought it down to 1880, since which time the amount of business has somewhat increased, and two or three new firms have taken up that other branch of the trade, the manufacture of tawed and alum-tanned calt and sheep-skins.

The manufacture of leather, of one kind and another, but chiefly morocco, in Lynn, at present reaches a pretty high figure, as appears by the following from the last United States Census returns:

Number of establishments,	23
Employees,	768
Wages paid during the year,	$408,618
Capital invested,	$910,100
Stock used,	$1,657,763
Value of product,	$2,309,272

Miscellaneous Manufactures. — The other manufactures of Lynn appear almost insignificant in comparison with the shoe and leather. But something should be said regarding them. The aggregate (including the shoe and leather) as given by the last United States Census, is as follows:

Number of establishments	329
Employees, total average number	12,446
(Males above 16, 8924. Females above 15, 3487. Youth and children, 35.)	
Wages paid during the year,	$5,823,572
Capital invested,	$5,882,350
Stock used,	$15,551,938
Value of product,	$25,216,778

A very large proportion of the above, of course, belongs to the shoe business. Indeed, the same census gives as the value of the boot and shoe product $20,946,867, of the above grand aggregate of $25,216,778. A few of the other industries may be named:

Bricks.—It was early found that there were large deposits of excellent clay in and about Lynn. And it has always been used to some extent. But heretofore wood has proved so much cheaper as a building material that brick-making had no great encouragement. During later years, however, things have changed, and bricks are coming into more extensive use. The value of bricks annually made is about twenty-eight thousand dollars and the number of persons employed, forty.

Boxes.—The value of boxes—paper and wood—manufactured in Lynn during a year is about one hundred and sixty thousand dollars, and the total wages paid fifty-five thousand dollars. It will readily be supposed that these are chiefly used in the shoe trade.

Fisheries.—Lynn, with Swampscott and Nahant, belongs to the fishing district of Marblehead. But since Swampscott and Nahant turned their backs upon their aged mother she has had little to show in the matter of fisheries, and little in the way of shipping, if her ambitious yacht-fleet is excepted; but that, by hardy delvers of the deep, would probably be regarded as belonging to the ornamental rather than the industrial. Recent returns, touching the fisheries, have already been given.

It appears, by the last published returns, that the industrial employees of Lynn receive higher wages than those of any other place in the county—the average yearly earnings of each employee being four hundred and sixty-seven dollars. And this average applies to men, women and children. In Haverhill the bulk of the business is similar to that of Lynn; and there the average yearly earnings of each employee is but three hundred and forty-eight dollars, while at the same time the average number of men workers there is some four per cent. greater than at Lynn. In Salem the average earnings of each employee is three hundred and forty-three dollars. In Newburyport but two hundred and sixty-eight dollars. Peabody comes nearest Lynn, showing four hundred and fifty-four dollars per year for each employee.

In closing this division of our work, it is not amiss to remark that the manufacture of boots and shoes takes the lead of all the industries of Massachusetts. The total value of products in the State, in 1880, was $631,135,284; and of this $105,118,299 was of boots and shoes. Other manufactures, as stated by the careful hand of Colonel Wright, stood as follows: cotton goods, $68,566,182; food preparations, $68,035,755; woolen goods, $47,473,668; metals and metallic goods, $40,190,569; leather, $30,188,859; clothing, $27,253,582; mixed textiles, $21,601,038; machines and machinery, $20,894,545; paper, $18,358,361; furniture, $11,196,827; printing and publishing, $10,474,684. "These twelve industries produce $469,352,369 worth of goods out of the total product [$631,135,284] of the State."

The actual average yearly earnings of boot and shoe employees throughout the State, including both sexes and all ages, is $381.58.

A few other industries of Lynn may be alluded to in passing, which never grew to large proportions, but yet were of some importance in their day:

Ship-Building, or rather boat-building, as it would be called at this day, was engaged in here to some extent, at an early period. A sloop of fifteen tons was built in 1677, and another of about the same burden in 1685. And within some twenty-five years of the latter date, about half a score of vessels, ranging from ten to thirty-five tons burden—and one of sixty—were built here. About 1726 a ship-yard was estab-

lished on Broad Street, a little east of the foot of Market, at which were built, as is stated, sixteen schooners and two brigs. But the business there was abandoned after a few years. There seems to have been quite a number of expert workmen at ship-building in Lynn for many years, and one or two remarkably skillful naval architects. The celebrated frigate "Constitution" was built in Boston, at the ship-yard of Edmund Hart, a Lynn man. In 1832 a yard was established in West Lynn, a little east of Fox Hill Bridge, at which were built a few small vessels. The Lynn "Whaling Company" was formed about that time, and hopes of a profitable maritime business were entertained, but the enterprise proved a failure.

Chocolate began to be manufactured at the mill on Saugus River, at the Boston Street crossing, as early as 1797. In or about 1805 Amariah Childs purchased the establishment and commenced manufacturing an article that soon acquired a world-wide reputation, continuing the business till 1840.

Snuff had been made at the mill as early as 1794 by Samuel Fales, but the use of snuff becoming, by degrees, unfashionable, the business died out.

Salt.—Salt-works were established in Lynn in 1805, but the business never grew to large proportions. The works were on what is now Beach Street, near Broad.

Silk and Silk Printing.—Some fifty years ago a number of our people became much interested in the silk manufacture. They procured collections of worms and planted great numbers of white mulberry trees for their food. They were successful in a limited way, but the business never resulted in anything profitable, and in a year or two the efforts were discontinued. The results in some instances were quite satisfactory. The writer remembers being shown, by a neighbor, some handkerchiefs which were woven from silk raised by him and printed at one of the silk printing establishments, which for a number of years did an active business in Wyoma village, in the vicinity of Strawberry Brook, and on Waterhill.

Wall Paper and Rubber Goods were also manufactured here fifty years ago, and the waters of Strawberry Brook were utilized in some other small manufacturing enterprises.

New Industries.—Quite recently there have been added to the industries of Lynn one or two of much promise, which are well worthy of enumeration.

Electric Lighting.—Very soon after it had become demonstrated that electricity could be successfully utilized for the illumination of cities, a local electric light company was formed in Lynn and permission given by the city to supply customers, the city itself becoming a large customer also. This company introduced into the streets the very successful arc light of the Thompson-Houston patent, and this mode of lighting soon became so popular that in 1883 a brick building was erected on Stewart Street to enlarge the capacity to meet the local demand.

The capitalists who became interested in this enterprise, recognizing that the development of electric lighting was in its infancy, were convinced that they could profitably invest capital for the manufacture and introduction of electrical apparatus. To that end they invested money in the Thompson-Houston company, of New Britain, Conn., organized under the laws of Connecticut. The machinery and plant of the company was soon removed to Lynn to occupy the substantial brick factory building on Western Avenue, erected for them by the late Minot Terrill, a gentleman who spent nearly the whole of a large fortune, which he had inherited, in building improvements of lasting benefit to the city. The company brought many new families to Lynn, the business increased, and the factory accommodations have had to be enlarged by the addition of another large building. At the beginning of 1887 fully six hundred people were employed, and the annual product amounted to one million dollars. This product is sent all over the world, the demand increases, and oftentimes the works are kept in operation until late in the evening to keep abreast of the orders.

Prof. Elihu Thompson, an experienced electrician, from whom the company derives its name, is very versatile in discovering new methods of applying electricity, which constantly adds new departments of work in the factory. The company, although chartered in another State, is practically a Lynn enterprise, and destined to be of great importance to the city. The main business office is in Boston; the Western office in Chicago.

Hat-Finishing.—In the early part of 1887 a hat-finishing establishment was commenced on Summer Street by Mr. Timothy Merritt. The new undertaking will no doubt become a growing success, as the projector has a good knowledge of the business and energy and enterprise. Every new industry contributes to Lynn's permanent growth, and there is no reason why coverings for the head cannot be as successfully manufactured by her people as coverings for the feet.

The Ice Business may not be strictly called a manufacture unless frost is considered a working partner. But it is now an important industry, and one to be considered, more directly than almost any other, a home industry, the material being of home production and the perfected article being consumed at home. During the last three or four years there have been harvested an average aggregate of some sixty thousand tons each year. In the storing season somewhere about three hundred men are employed in the various departments. At other times, of course, the number varies, and is considerably less.

Occasion has been taken to speak of the industrious habits of the people of Lynn, and of their economy. Upon these traits have mainly rested that general thrift which has been marred by few examples of large accumulation, or of extreme penury—a condi-

tion certainly the most desirable for any community; for it is the condition that insures the greatest degree of contentment and freedom of mind. Contentment, however, is not, in a worldly sense, an incentive to enterprise, for those who feel contented in low degree seldom put forth the energies necessary to rise above it. Till within a short period Lynn has had no really rich men; and perhaps it would have been better had she remained as she was. But strife for riches in an eminent degree characterizes this period; yet how different is the course men pursue for their attainment. Some, without genius, culture or special opportunity, succeed by boldness and courage, others by frugality and carefulness, others by persistent labor. And then individuals are animated by very different motives in their desire for wealth; some desire it for the ease it brings, some for its luxuries, some for the social position it ensures; and some, it is to be hoped, for the good it enables them to do for others. And if, in the whole round of cravings, this latter incentive does not in some measure enter, one might as well remain idle.

"Labor brings the joys of health;
Labor brings the meed of wealth;
In thy brother's labors share,
And thine own the lighter are."

How much we nowadays hear about shortening the hours of labor! Our friends, the "Knights of Labor," are not the only ones exercised about the matter. If one would gain time from manual labor for purposes of health or intellectual improvement, or for any of the higher purposes of life, he is certainly to be commended; but if only for the lower and enervating indulgences which too often fill up "loafing hours," as they are aptly called, he had better be at work.

To the true New Englander

"Absence of occupation is not rest;
A mind quite vacant is a mind distressed."

CHAPTER XVII.

LYNN—(*Continued*).

MILITARY AFFAIRS.

Early History, with Sketches of Some of the Commanders—Ancient and Honorable Artillery, with List of Lynn Members and Notices of Some Achievements—Lynn in the Indian Wars, in the Revolution and Subsequent Wars, and in the Great Civil War—Her Present Military Organizations.

"Thermopylæ and Marathon,
Though classic earth, can boast no more
Of deeds heroic than yon sun
Once saw upon this distant shore."

THOUGH the Indians in this immediate vicinity manifested but little hostility towards the settlers, there were constantly disturbing apprehensions. Perhaps the promptness in military preparation did much to prevent any serious attacks, though the small number here, and their inefficient weapons, could not give them much encouragement in aggressive attempts. But it was not so in some other quarters, and Lynn soon put herself in a condition to succor any neighbor that might stand in need. The Indians quickly learned the use of firearms, and there were enough among the settlers whose base cupidity led them, without scruple, to furnish muskets and ammunition to the dusky warriors in exchange for furs and wampum currency. Even as early as 1630 the Court found it necessary to order that "noe person whatsoever shall, either directly or indirectly, imploy or cause to be imployed, or to their power permit any Indian to vse any peece vpon any occasion or pretence whatsoever, under pain of Xs. ffine for the first offence, and for the 2 offence to be ffyned and imprisoned at the discretion of the Court." This was the next year after the settlement began.

Military skill and personal bravery were naturally in high repute. Plymouth had her Miles Standish, and Massachusetts, though perhaps destitute of a leader as conspicuous as he, could boast of several commanders of experience and tried valor. Lynn was remarkably fortunate in this respect, as she had within her borders two or three well skilled in the tactics of the field. The first major-general of the colony was John Humfrey, who settled here in 1634. His dwelling was on the east side of Nahant Street, and overlooked the sea, Nahant and the Beach, and was but a short distance from the spot on which the habitation of Montowampate, or Sagamore James, the Indian ruler, stood. The writer is well aware that Mr. Humfrey's residence is thought by some to have been at Swampscott, but careful research has shown that to be an error. He indeed owned an extensive tract of land thereabout, but assuredly did not live in that then lonely place. Some even suppose that the "Farm House" on the estate, so highly improved and embellished by the late Hon. Enoch Redington Mudge, was the identical residence of Mr. Humfrey. But it is thought that even a slight examination would be sufficient to convince any one that such a house could not have been built at that period. It is in the style of a later day. He possibly had cultivated acres in the vicinity, and may have erected some rude structure for the temporary shelter of laborers. He also had a land grant in what is now Lynnfield, including the beautiful little lakelet still known as Humfrey's Pond. This latter grant was made in 1635, the year after his arrival, and in these words,—"There is 500 acres of land and a freshe pond, with a little ileland conteyneing aboute two acres, granted to John Humfrey, Esq., lying betwixte nore & west from Saugus [Lynn], provided hee take noe part of the 500 acres within 5 myles of any towne nowe planted. Also, it is agreed, that the inhabitants of Saugus [Lynn] & Salem shall have

liberty to build stoore howses upon the said ileland, and to lay in such provisions as they judge necessary for their vse in tyme of neede."

Mr. Humfrey was one of the most eminent men in the colony, was an original Massachusetts patentee, and, before the removal of the patent to New England, was chosen Deputy-Governor. It being, however, thought best for the interests of the company that he should for a time remain in England, Thomas Dudley was chosen to serve in his stead, and came over with Winthrop's company in 1630.

When Mr. Humfrey came over he brought with him, says Winthrop, "more ordnance, muskets and powder." He was accompanied by his wife and six children, and it is pretty certain would not have returned so soon had it not been for the disconsolate yearnings of his home-sick wife, who was a daughter of the Earl of Lincoln. But he had restless ambition, and perhaps felt that New England was too limited and uncertain a field for his aspirations. From his feverish dreams of advancement, however, he finally awoke. But it was the chilling pressure of disapapointment that awoke him. And when meditating on the defeat of his most cherished schemes, a gush of tenderness and even deep religious feeling overwhelmed him. Not much can be said of his exploits in the field, but as a counselor and home director, in planning, ordering and providing, his services were of inestimable value. He returned to England in the fall of 1641, and there died in 1661.

A military company was organized in Lynn as early as 1630. Richard Wright was appointed captain; Daniel Howe, lieutenant; and Richard Walker, ensign. They were provided with two iron cannon. In 1631 there was a report that some Indians intended an attack on Lynn, and Walker, with a suitable number, was detailed for the night guard. He at one time, while on duty, had an arrow, shot from among some bushes, pass through his coat and "buff waistcoat," and afterwards another arrow was shot through his clothes. It being quite dark, after a random discharge or two of their muskets, the guard retired. The next morning the cannon was brought up and discharged in the woods, and nothing more came of the attack. After that the people of Lynn suffered little or no molestation.

At the breaking out of the Pequot war, in 1636, Captain Nathaniel Turner, of Lynn, commanded one of the companies detailed to serve in the first campaign. The expedition did efficient service at Block Island, New London and thereabout. The next year, 1637, a second expedition was undertaken, and the town furnished twenty-one men. In one respect Lynn was a loser by this war, for Captain Turner became so enamored of the country through which he marched that he permanently pitched his tent there, becoming, as Trumbull says, one of the principal settlers of New Haven. But his fate was mysterious and melancholy. He was one of the five men of "chief note and worth" who sailed for England in 1647, in the little vessel commanded by Captain Lamberton, which was never heard of after; unless the "phantom ship" which appeared in the Sound after a great thunder storm the next year, and which beholders declared was an exact image, is taken as her representative.

Captain Turner received his commission as "Captaine of the military company att Saugus," in March, 1633, from the General Court. He became a near neighbor of his superior officer, John Humfrey, and the two no doubt often conferred together on military affairs. Humfrey's action, as already intimated, was in the Council, while Turner's was more in the field, and one of the first orders the latter received was the rather ignoble one to march to Nahant on a wolf-hunt. What luck he had in destroying his four-footed foes does not appear; but when he was called to meet more worthy enemies, he was brave and triumphant. His moving from Lynn at that formation period in her history was a great loss to the place, probably quite as great as that of the departure of his neighbor Humfrey.

Among the Lynn soldiers in the Pequot war was Christopher Lindsey. He was a laboring man, and kept the cattle of Mr. Dexter, at Nahant. The elevation on the peninsula, called Lindsey's Hill, received its name from him. He was wounded in the war, and in 1655 petitioned the court for an allowance, saying that he was "disabled from service for twenty weekes, for which he never had any satisfaction." He was allowed three pounds. His only daughter, Naomi, married Thomas Maule, of Salem, the famous Quaker, whose doctrinal book, together with its supplementary "Persecutors Mauled," created quite a sensation. In it he remarks they five times imprisoned him, thrice took away his goods and thrice cruelly whipped him.

It was in 1638 that the Ancient and Honorable Artillery was organized. Six Lynn men were among the first members, namely, William Ballard, Joseph Hewes, Daniel Howe, Edward Tomlins, Nathaniel Turner, Richard Walker. Daniel Howe was chosen lieutenant. A word in relation to one or two of these early members of that ancient organization may not be inappropriate. In relation to Mr. TOMLINS, it appears pretty certain that he was one in whom great trust was reposed in civil matters, as well as military. Yet it is evident that he had decided opinions, which were not always expressed in ways the most wise or gentle. On the 3d of September, 1634, the court ordered that he, "or any other put in his place by the Commissioners of War, with the help of an assistant, shall have power to presse men and carts, for ordinary wages, to helpe towards makeing of such carriages and wheeles as are wanting for the ordinances." His brother, Timothy Tomlins, was the same year appointed overseer of the "powder and shott and all other amunicon" of the plantation. In 1643, being then a member of the House of Representatives, he

was "ordred and appoynted, by both Houses of the Courte, to go uppon a messuage to ye Narragansett sachems," and dismissed from the "howse for ye present to prepare himself for ye jurney." He went in company with the celebrated Indian negotiator, General Humphrey Atherton. And it is represented that one of their first acts was to catechise the benighted Narragansetts on the Ten Commandments. It is probable that he had not much of an ear for music other than martial, for, in 1641, he was arraigned for expressing opinions against music in the churches. He, however, retracted, and was discharged.

NATHANIEL TURNER, who also joined the Ancient and Honorables at the time of their organization, has already been spoken of. The sword which he wielded against the Indians is still preserved by the Historical Society of Hartford, Conn. A picture of it may be seen in *Harper's Magazine*, volume xvii. page 3. The same weapon also did service, in other hands, in the old French War and in the Revolution.

RICHARD WALKER has also been mentioned as ensign of the first military company of Lynn, formed in 1630. And the duties of the soldiers of those days, in time of peace even, must have been burdensome, for it was ordered, in 1631, "that every Captaine shall train his companie on saterday in every weeke." In May, 1679, a new troop was formed in Lynn, consisting of forty-eight men. They petitioned the General Court that Captain Richard Walker might be appointed commander. Ralph King, who was a son-in-law of the veteran, was made lieutenant. If this is the same Richard Walker, he must then have been eighty-six years old, for he was born in 1593. He appears, however, to have been blest with a most vigorous constitution, for he lived to the great age of ninety-five years. And he is probably the same hero to whom Johnson, of Woburn, refers in the following lines, touching an encounter with some Indians:

> "He fought the Eastern Indians there,
> Whose poisoned arrows filled the air,
> And two of which these savage foes
> Lodg'd safe in Captain Walker's clothes."

But the captain of the new troop may have been his son Richard, who was born in 1611, though he even had attained the age of sixty-eight.

The venerable organization now known as "The Ancient and Honorable Artillery," but which in its charter is called "The Military Company of the Massachusetts," at its formation, in 1638, was designed for discipline in military tactics. For many years it, no doubt, served an excellent purpose, but of late years it has come to be regarded as rather a holiday institution. Lynn has furnished a fair share of members, and a list is deserving of space here:

1638. William Ballard.
1638. Joseph Hewes.
1638. Daniel Howe (Lieut).
1638. Edward Tomlins.
1638. Nathaniel Turner.
1638. Richard Walker.
1639. Samuel Bennett.
1640. John Humfrey.
1640. Thomas Marshall.
1641. Robert Bridges.
1641. John Humfrey, Jr.
1641. Adam Otley.
1642. John Wood.
1643. Benjamin Smith.
1645. Clement Coldam.
1648. John Cole.
1652. Samuel Hutchinson.
1694. Thomas Baker.
1717. Benjamin Gray.
1821. Robert Robinson.
1822. Daniel N. Breed.
1822. George Johnson.
1822. Ebenezer Neal.
1851. Roland G. Usher.
1860. Richard S. Fay, Jr.

Of the first six, those who joined at the time of the organization, enough has perhaps been said. But some of those who subsequently joined are worthy of brief notice.

SAMUEL BENNETT, who became a member in 1639, was one of the first settlers, and located in what is now the westerly part of Saugus. He owned considerable woodland. "Bennett's Swamp," so called to this day, in old Dungeon Pasture, was owned by him. His residence was not far from the ironworks, and in that vicinity he also had lands. He had a good deal of independence of character, not to say wilfulness. At the Quarterly Court, in 1645, he was presented "for saying, in a scornful manner, he neither cared for the Town nor any order the Town could make." In 1671 he sued John Gifford, former agent of the ironworks, and attached property to the amount of four hundred pounds, for labor performed for the company. On the 27th of June, the following testimony was given: "John Paule, aged about forty-five years, sworne, saith, that living with Mr. Samuel Bennett, upon or about the time that the ironworks were seased by Capt. Savage, in the year 53 as I take it, for I lived ther several years, and my constant imployment was to repaire carts, coale carts, mine carts, and other working materials for his teemes, for he keept 4 or 5 teemes, and sometimes 6 teemes, and he had the most teemes the last yeare of the Iron Works, when they were seased, and my master Bennett did yearly yearne a vast sum from the said Iron Works, for he commonly yearned forty or fifty shillings a daye for the former time, and the year 53, as aforesaid, for he had five or six teemes goeing generally every faire day." In 1644 he was presented by the grand jury as "a common sleeper in time of exercise," and fined two shillings and sixpence. There was a law forbidding the sale of commodities at too great a profit. And for a breach of this law he appears to have once or twice suffered prosecution. On the colony records, under date of May 15, 1657, may be found this entry: "In answer to the petition of Samuel Bennett, humbly craving the remittment or abatement of a fine imposed on him by the County Court, for selling goods at excessive prizes, the court having perused, and by theire committee examined, the papers in the case presented, together with the allegations and pleas of the peticoner and others, by him produced, understanding by what appeared, the peticoner received of George Wallis about forty pounds or upwards meerely for the release of the bargain made betwixt them, . . . see it not meete to graunt the petition in whole or in part." Mr. Wallis had also been fined "fivety pounds" for

"selling goods at excessive prizes," and petitioned for a remittal, and the same court judged it "meete to remit the fine all to tenn pounds," which remittal was made in consideration of his being necessitated "to be at the losse of about forty pounds or more to attayne a release of the bargain betwixt him and Samuell Bennett." It seems to have been a mere game of sharps between Bennett and Wallis, but shows the care taken by the court to prevent a circumvention of the wholesome law forbidding one to sell at an excessive profit. The maxim so prevalent in the bargainings of our day—*caveat emptor*—seems then to have been unheeded. Not much is to be found respecting Mr. Bennett in his military capacity.

John Humfrey has already been spoken of to some extent.

Thomas Marshall, who was a soldier under Cromwell, and without whose assistance, John Dunton says, "if we may believe him, Oliver did hardly anything that was considerable," has been spoken of somewhat largely in another connection.

Robert Bridges, or Captain Bridges, as he was generally called, was a man of substance and marked traits of character. He was admitted a freeman in 1641, and joined the Ancient and Honorables the same year, being then captain of a militia company. He was a good deal in civil authority, was Speaker of the House of Representatives, an assistant, an acting magistrate and a member of the Quarterly Court. In 1645, accompanied by Richard Walker and Thomas Marshall, both already spoken of as Lynn members of the company, he went as commissioner to negotiate between Lord de la Tour and Monsieur d'Aulney, the governors of the French provinces on the north of New England. The embassy did good service and the court appropriately recompensed them.

That Captain Bridges possessed rigidly Puritanical characteristics is abundantly evident. He was one of the five who, in May, 1645, were appointed by the court to draft bills for "positive lawes" against lying, Sabbath-breaking, profanity, drunkenness and kindred vices. And in 1649 was one of the assistants who, with the Governor, on the 10th of May, signed a protestation against the wearing of long hair, "after the manner of ruffians and barbarious Indians."

It was Captain Bridges who, in July, 1651, granted the magistrate's warrants against Clarke, Crandall and Holmes, the Baptist missionaries from Rhode Island, concerning which affair it is proposed to say something in the sketch of Swampscott.

In the Essex Court files may be found the following record of Captain Bridges's official action in the case of Thomas Wheeler, who appears to have been a man of character and some estate: "4th mo., 1654. Thomas Wheeler bound over to the Court by the worshipful Captain Bridges, for sinful and offensive speeches made by him in comparing the Rev. Mr. Cobbet to Corah. It being proved by three witnesses, sentence of Court is, that he shall make public acknowledgment upon the Lord's day, sometime within a month after the date hereof, according to this form following, and pay the three witnesses £12 2*s*. 6*d*. and fees of Court: [I, Thomas Wheeler, having spoken at a town meeting in February last, evil, sinful and offensive speeches against the Reverend Teacher, Mr. Cobbet, in comparing him unto Corah, for which I am very sorry, do acknowledge this my evil, to the glory and praise of God and to my own shame, and hope, for time to come, shall be more careful.] The constable of Lynn is to see it performed." Mr. Wheeler removed to Stonington, Ct., in 1664, and became the largest landholder in the place, was an honored member of the church, and died there in 1686, at the age of eighty-four.

It is not found that Captain Bridges made much of a mark in a military way, but as a business man he certainly, by his enterprise and prudence, added much to the reputation and prosperity of Lynn. He may almost be called the father of the iron works. It was in 1642 that he took specimens of the bog ore found here to London, and succeeded in forming a company which soon after commenced operations by setting up the bloomery and forge. And although the works proved pecuniarily disastrous, the country at large reaped great ulterior benefit through some of the skilled workmen, the best that England could afford, who removed to other places and engaged in works, which, under better management, grew to great importance.

Taking all points of character into view and making due allowance for the characteristics of the time, it must be conceded that Captain Bridges furnishes a fair specimen of the noble class of men who so faithfully labored in laying the foundations of the social fabric which has become our inheritance—men honest, religious, persevering, hopeful and brave. Yet it must be admitted that he was not of a specially genial disposition; nor could he have been very popular in some of his relations. He had hard points of character; was arbitrary, exacting, unyielding in the smaller concerns of daily intercourse, and perhaps not sufficiently regardful of the minor rights of those about him; for we all love to have our rights respected, even when they are of little value. In those days of difficulty and doubt, minds were trained to meet the trials of life with a fortitude that amounted to heroism. Indeed, it was a favorite idea that the afflictions men were called to endure were disciplinary; that souls were purified by such means. This, however, was probably quite as much theoretical as otherwise, for the best of us would prefer to secure by observation, rather than experience, the good that might be derived from pain and suffering.

John Wood, who joined the company in 1642, was one of the earliest comers. He settled in that part of Lynn since known as Woodend, the local name being derived from him. He is supposed to have been father of William Wood, the author of "New

England's Prospect," published in London in 1634, a book giving such lively and graphic descriptions of the Bay settlements that it has ever been held in high repute. Little or nothing seems to be known of Mr. Wood's military accomplishments. Perhaps he joined the artillery as a sort of apprentice at martial tactics.

CLEMENT COLDAM, made a member in 1645, appeared here as early as 1630. And his recollection of matters pertaining to our very early days seems to have been much relied on in after-years, his testimony having great weight in several important lawsuits. Not much is known of his military achievements. A record says that on April 14, 1691, "Clement Coldam and Joseph Hart were chosen cannoners, to order and look after the great guns." If that means him, he must have been a very old man—about ninety—but he had a son Clement, who was supposed to have removed to Gloucester many years before.

THOMAS BAKER had experience in the field during the great King Philip War, 1675, being one of the Lynn company. He was in the great swamp fight at South Kingston, R. I., in which Ephraim Newhall was killed.

This member of the artillery, who is usually called Captain Thomas Baker, appears to have been a grandson of Edward Baker, who came to Lynn as early as 1630, and from whom "Baker's Hill," in Saugus, received its name, he having settled near it. From him a line of respectable descendants has reached down to the present time. Daniel C. Baker, our third mayor, was of the lineage. And in several other places descendants have become conspicuous.

The life of this Captain Thomas Baker was so illustrative of the vicissitudes to which the people of that period were exposed, and withal so tinged with romance, that space may be allowed for a glimpse or two. He was taken captive by the Indians at Deerfield on the terrible night of February 29, 1704, and carried to Canada. He, however, the next year, succeeded in effecting his escape. In or about the year 1715 he married Madam Le Beau, whose name figures somewhat in the history of that period. She was a daughter of Richard Otis, of Dover, N. H., who, with one son and one daughter, was killed by the Indians on the night of June 27, 1689, at the time they destroyed the place. She was then an infant of three months, and was, with her mother, carried captive to Canada and sold to the French. The priests took her, baptized her, and gave her the name of Christine. They educated her in the Romish faith, and she passed some time in a nunnery, not, however, taking the veil. At the age of sixteen she was married to a Frenchman, thus becoming Madam Le Beau, and became the mother of two or three children. Her husband died about 1713. And it was very soon after that her future husband, Captain Baker, appears to have fallen in with her. He was attached to the commission detailed by Governor Dudley, under John Stoddard and John Williams, for the purpose of negotiating with the Marquis de Vaudreuil for the release of prisoners and to settle certain other matters, and went to Canada. From Stoddard's journal it appears that there was much trouble in procuring her release, and when it was obtained, her children were not allowed to go with her. Her mother was also opposed to her leaving Canada.

After her return, Christine married Captain Baker, and they went to reside at Brookfield, where they remained till 1733. They had several children, and among their descendants is Hon. John Wentworth, late member of Congress from Illinois. She became a Protestant after marrying Captain Baker, and substituted the name Margaret for Christine, though later in life she seems to have again adopted the latter. In 1727, her former confessor, Father Siguenot, wrote her a gracious letter, expressing a high opinion of her and warning her against swerving from the faith in which she had been educated. He mentions the happy death of a daughter of hers who had married and lived in Quebec, and also speaks of her mother, then living, and the wife of a Frenchman. This letter was shown to Governor Burnet, and he wrote to her a forcible reply to the arguments it contained in favor of Romanism. And there are, or recently were, three copies of the letter and reply in the Boston Athenæum. The mother of Christine had children by her French husband, and Philip, Christine's half-brother, visited her at Brookfield.

All the children of Captain Baker and Christine, seven or eight in number, excepting the first, who was a daughter, bearing her mother's name, were born in Brookfield. There is no reason to doubt that the connection was a happy one. They held a very respectable position, and he was the first representative from Brookfield. He was indeed once tried before the Superior Court, in 1727, for blasphemy, but the jury acquitted him. The offense consisted in his remarking, while discoursing on God's providence in allowing Joseph Jennings, of Brookfield, to be made a justice of the peace, "If I had been with the Almighty I would have taught him better."

In 1733 Captain Baker sold his farm in Brookfield. But this proved an unfortunate step, for the purchaser failed before making payment, and their circumstances became greatly reduced. They were a short time at Mendon, and also at Newport, R. I., but finally removed to Dover, N. H. Poor Christine, in 1735, petitioned the authorities of New Hampshire for leave to "keep a house of public entertainment" on the "County Rhoade from Dover meeting-house to Cocheco Boome." To this petition she signs her name "Christine baker," and mentions that she made a journey to Canada in hope of getting her children, "but all in vaine." A license was granted, and it seems probable that she kept the house a number of years. She died, at a great age, February 23, 1773, and an obituary notice appeared in the Boston *Evening Post*.

There seems, at first sight, to be a little confusion of dates in the foregoing, or possibly some mistake in personal identity, if the dates in the following deposition are correct. The deposition is in favor of a fellow-soldier, and bears the date June 8, 1730:

"The deposition of Thomas Baker, of Lyn, in the county of Essex, aged about 77 years, Testifieth and saith. That I, being well acquainted with one Andrew Townsend of Lyn aforesaid for more than 55 years since, and do certainly know and very well Remember that the s^{d} Andrew Townsend was a soldier in the Expedition to the Narragansett under y^{e} Command of Capt. Gardner, and that he was in y^{e} s^{d} Narragansett fite and in s^{d} fite Rec'd a wound, in or about the year 1675."

The deponent styles himself of Lynn, but it rather appears that he was then of Brookfield. Perhaps, however, he was proud to still call himself of Lynn, or merely meant that he was of Lynn at the time of the "fite." It is evident that he was somewhat of a rover.

The King Philip War, that last great struggle of the red men, commenced in 1675. It was a period when all the energy and all the patriotism were put to the test—a period, as it appeared to many, of life or death. And our people, though not apparently exposed to immediate danger, responded with a promptness worthy of all praise. The then captain of the military company of Lynn was Thomas Marshall, who had been a resident here for some forty years, though in the mean time he had been back to England, where he gained, by his bravery in the parliamentary army, a commission as captain from Oliver Cromwell. He was a man of some eccentricities, but yet must have had the confidence of the people. He kept the tavern near Saugus River for many years, and appears to have been in some respects a model landlord. He is spoken of in other connections.

It would not be easy to ascertain the exact number of men furnished nor the amounts raised in response to the public calls in this great struggle; but Lynn did her full share.

Our limits will not allow of much detail regarding the different wars that have, from time to time, spread their alarms through the land—the French and Indian Wars, the Revolution and the subsequent contests down to the great Rebellion. Nor is the little that could be given necessary, as the public records and local histories abundantly supply all needs in that direction; to say nothing of the numerous warlike events incidentally spoken of in other parts of this sketch, as the participants came under notice. A few facts, however, should be stated.

During the French and Indian War, 1754–63, some two thousand French Catholic neutrals were sent to Massachusetts to be quartered in different places. Lynn's share was fourteen. Their provisions were supplied by Thomas Lewis, and among his items of charge were four hundred and thirty-two quarts of milk at six pence a gallon. A company marched from Lynn for Canada, May 23, 1758, and two were killed.

Then we come down to the Revolution. Several Lynn men were at the battle of Lexington, April 19, 1775, the opening battle of the war, and four were killed,—namely, Abednego Ramsdell, William Flint, Thomas Hadley and Daniel Townsend. On the 23d of April Lynn chose a Committee of Safety, consisting of Rev. John Treadwell, minister of the First Parish, Rev. Joseph Roby, minister of the Third Parish and Deacon Daniel Mansfield; others were afterwards added, among them Dr. John Flagg. An alarm company was formed, and three night watches established. The memorable battle of Bunker Hill was fought June 17, 1775. The Lynn regiment was under command of Colonel John Mansfield. It mustered, but did not reach the ground in time to take part in the conflict. For his "remissness and backwardness in the execution of duty," the colonel was ordered before a court-martial, consisting of twelve field-officers, presided over by Gen. Greene, found guilty and ordered to be cashiered. The patriotic people of Lynn were greatly mortified at this untoward occurrence, which, however, had rather the effect to stimulate their zeal and determination. Lynn furnished for the war two colonels, three captains, five lieutenants, five sergeants, six corporals and about a hundred and sixty privates, which, considering the then small population, was doing remarkably well. She was poor, and her business prostrated during the war; nevertheless, in 1776, she voted fifteen pounds each to the company of soldiers furnished for the expedition to Canada, and ten pounds for every enlisting volunteer. She also, in 1780, granted as much money as would purchase two thousand seven hundred silver dollars to pay the soldiers. This was liberal, considering the losses by the depressed condition of the currency. Within two years she had granted for war purposes seventy thousand pounds, old tenor. Mr. Lewis remarks, "A soldier of the Revolution says that, in 1781, he sold one thousand seven hundred and eighty dollars of paper money for thirty dollars in silver." By this, something may be seen of the town's liberality. In the procession at the celebration of the Fourth of July, at Lynn, in 1828, were over forty who had served in various capacities and for various terms in the armies of the Revolution; among them four pensioners. The government at that day was not so able to grant pensions as it at present is, and hence comparatively few were on the lists. That was the last procession in which most of them ever appeared—excepting the great procession which knows no counter-march, in which we are all moving on, and from which every one of them soon dropped out.

Concerning several of the more prominent Lynn soldiers who served in the Revolution, it would be agreeable to say something; but the allotted space is so limited that it is necessary to be chary of its use. So deserving a commander as Colonel Ezra Newhall, however, should not be passed over in entire silence.

He was a great-great-grandson of Thomas Newhall, the first white person born in Lynn, and was captain of the Lynn Minute Men at the opening of the war; but, in consequence of the delay of the troops from Salem, was not present at the battle of Lexington. Nor was he present at the battle of Bunker Hill, as he was attached to Colonel Mansfield's regiment, as senior captain, and by the "remissness" of that officer was kept from joining the gathering squadrons. In earlier life Colonel Ezra was an officer in the French War under Colonel Ruggles. Subsequently to the battle of Bunker Hill he was major, then lieutenant-colonel in Colonel Putnam's Fifth Massachusetts Regiment, and so continued to the end of the war. He served in the campaign that sealed the fate of Burgoyne, was at Valley Forge and at the battles of Trenton and Princeton. After the war he was appointed by President Washington collector of internal revenue, and retained the office till his death, on the 5th of April, 1798, at the age of sixty-six years. There is abundant evidence that while in the army he was very popular with his companions-in-arms. While the regiment was encamped at Winter Hill some dissatisfaction was manifested concerning the rank of the captains and other officers, as they stood on the brigade major's books. The captains, therefore, on the 27th of August, 1775, held a meeting and voted to "settle the rank of officers by lot, and abide thereby," at the same time voting that Captain Ezra Newhall should rank as first captain. Indeed, he seems always to have been spoken of as a brave and prudent officer, and a man much beloved. He lived in the house still standing on Boston Street, at the southwest corner of the recently opened Wyman Street. After the Revolution he removed to Salem, purchased an estate on Essex Street, and there died at the time above stated. The *Salem Gazette*, in an obituary notice, said: "He served his country in the late war with fidelity and honor; and in civil and domestic life the character of an honest man, faithful friend, tender husband and kind parent was conspicuous in him. Society suffers a real loss by his death."

The warlike events of later years are, or should be, so familiar to every reader that any attempt at details which space would allow would be far from satisfactory, and we must content ourselves with little more than bare allusions.

The War of 1812 was essentially a naval conflict, but there was much suffering and business depression, and above all, sharp political dissension. At times there were sudden alarms in the seaboard settlements arising from threatened descents and bombardments from the enemy's ships in the bay. The gallant contest between the English frigate "Shannon" and the American frigate "Chesapeake," on the 1st of June, 1813, was witnessed by crowds of the people of Lynn, who not only climbed the hills, but clung to the housetops. And when the American flag was seen to strike, many a sorrowful eye was turned away. Watch stations were established upon several heights, and two or three alarms occurred which hastily called out the soldiery and excited the people, but no serious conflict took place.

Soon after the close of the first quarter of the present century the military interest began to fall into popular disrepute. It had, indeed from the frequency of exercise required and other exactions, become quite burdensome. The opposition developed especially in the shape of ridicule. And had it not been for the saving efforts of the uniformed or, as they were called, the volunteer companies, it is hard to tell where the matter would have ended. There were at this time three handsomely uniformed and well-drilled companies,—namely, the Lynn Artillery, organized in 1808; the Light Infantry, organized in 1812; and the Rifle Company, organized in 1818.

Sometimes totally unfit persons were designedly elected as officers, and the district "companies of the line" at times amounted to little more than tattered and jeering assemblages. One man who was elected an officer in a West Lynn company is well remembered. He was a fellow of good information and bright wit, but extremely low habits. For a supply of liquor he could be induced to play in any *rôle*. On a certain parade day he appeared mounted on a gaunt roadster wrapped in a long cloak decorated profusely with conspicuous and ridiculous badges. And so he capered around as long as he could retain his seat. Yet the fires of patriotism had by no means been extinguished, for every one saw the necessity of a properly organized militia. The disaffection was only towards the existing requirements. And the result of the popular manifestations was a radical change in the laws. And from that time to this the laws have been modified as circumstances required.

The Seminole or, as it was often called, the Florida War, commenced in 1835 and continued nearly eight years. It cost the United States some ten million dollars and several thousand lives. There were romantic as well as bloody features pertaining to this war. Its precipitating cause seems to have been some indignities offered the wife of Osceola, a chief of the Seminoles. He was the son of an English trader who married the daughter of a chief, and was of a most determined and persistent character. So prolonged was the war that the people became very impatient, and with their complaints and censures mingled ridicule, notwithstanding some of the best and bravest army officers were detailed for the service. A sharpshooting poet in 1839 thus delivered himself:

"Ever since the creation,
By the best calculation,
The Florida War has been raging;
And 'tis our expectation
That the last conflagration
Will find us the same contest waging!"

Perhaps the incident in the Seminole War that

most nearly touched the people of Lynn was the loss of Robert R. Mudge, a young officer, promising and much beloved. He was a son of Benjamin Mudge, a native of Lynn and for many years one of her most prominent citizens. Lieutenant Mudge graduated at the West Point Military Academy in 1833, and in 1835 was ordered to Florida to take part in the Seminole War as lieutenant under Major Dade. He was killed at Withlacoochie, together with the whole company of one hundred and seventeen, with the exception of three.

The Mexican War commenced in 1846. Lynn furnished twenty volunteers, no special call being made.

In 1832 the threats of revolt in South Carolina and her apparent determination to break the integrity of the Union, the zeal and oratorical vigor of her statesmen, the drilling of her troops, all tended to create serious apprehension in every quarter. And had it not been for the unflinching determination of President Jackson, his warnings and declarations, especially as embodied in his famous proclamation, there is little doubt that a rebellion would then have been precipitated. But that extremity was reserved for the next generation. And it came.

The history of the great Rebellion, the first overt act of which was the bombardment of Fort Sumter on the 12th of April, 1861, is so familiar that we need only refer to a few facts specially pertaining to Lynn. In five hours after President Lincoln's first requisition for troops arrived Lynn had two full companies armed and ready for duty. And early the next day, April 16th, they departed to meet the foe. The two companies formed a part of the Eighth Massachusetts Regiment, and were Company D, the Lynn Light Infantry, commanded by Captain George T. Newhall, and Company F, commanded by Captain James Hudson, Jr. The regimental officers belonging to Lynn were Timothy Munroe, colonel; Edward W. Hinks, lieutenant-colonel; Ephraim A. Ingalls, quartermaster; Roland G. Usher, paymaster; Bowman B. Breed, surgeon; Warren Tapley, assistant surgeon; Horace E. Munroe, quartermaster sergeant. Many volunteers stood ready and would have gone had there been time for equipment. Company D marched off with sixty privates, and Company F with seventy-six. The zeal thus early kindled did not abate during the whole war. Every call for troops was quickly and fully responded to, and everything done that could add to the comfort of the brave ones upon the field. Lynn furnished three thousand two hundred and seventy-four soldiers, which was two hundred and thirty more than her full quota. Enthusiastic war meetings were from time to time held. And the principal victories were celebrated by the ringing of bells, by bonfires and other joyful demonstrations. Many of her gallant sons fell on the field; others lost their lives by diseases contracted during the campaigns, and still others have passed away in the common course of nature since the alarms of war have ceased. Many peacefully lie in the Soldiers' Lot in the beautiful Pine Grove Cemetery, while others rest in more secluded sepulchres, or with their fathers in the older burial-places, their graves being strewn on every returning "Memorial Day" with fresh flowers by surviving comrades and loving kindred. By far the greater number, however, still sleep upon the battlefield. A stately Soldiers' Monument was erected in City Hall Square in 1873. It is an allegorical and classic work of art in bronze, cast at Munich, in Bavaria, and cost $30,000.

The Grand Army of the Republic in Lynn.—Gen. Lander Encampment, Post 5, is said to be the largest in the country. But its ranks are thinning out as member after member is drafted into that army which marches on with ceaseless step, and knows no countermarch.

As population increases, the laws governing our State military affairs are constantly undergoing changes, and it would be useless to attempt here anything like a historical account of the alterations even during the last forty years. The organizations have come to be essentially voluntary rather than compulsory. And the people have never been backward in sanctioning the most liberal provision for the discipline and comfort of her soldiery.

Our present military organizations are the Light Infantry (Company D) and the Wooldredge Cadets (Company I), both in high repute. There is also the Lynn City Guards Veteran Association.

It is quite within the recollection of the writer that the newspaper reader often saw at the close of an obituary notice the phrase "He was a soldier of the Revolution." But it is never seen at this day. It is said that the last person to whom a pension was paid on account of the Revolutionary War died at Woodstock, N. H., early in 1887, at the age of ninety-seven. She was a widow by the name of Abigail S. Tilton. Is it not a solemn thought that all of the brave ones who fought for our liberties at that trying period have lain down to that prolonged rest from which they will be aroused only by the sound of the trumpet that summons them and all of us for final review and inspection? And is it not, too, a solemn thought that the remnant of the Grand Army of our day, who took the field for the maintenance of those liberties, are fast joining the throng of their martial fathers? A few years more, and the last soldier will have marched away, and the "Grand Army of the Republic" survive in memory only as a vestige of the heroism of the past.

CHAPTER XVIII.

LYNN—(*Continued*).

BURIAL-PLACES.

The Old Burying-Ground, with Epitaphs and Notices of Some Who Lie There—Other Burial-Places and Cemeteries—Memorial Day—Ancient Funeral Customs.

"The cold dark grave—there is no care,
No pain nor gloom,
Within the tomb;
The wicked cease from troubling there."

"It is wise for us to recur to the history of our ancestors. Those who do not look upon themselves as a link connecting the past with the future, in the transmission of life from their ancestors to their posterity—do not perform their duty to the world. To be faithful to ourselves, we must keep our ancestors and posterity within reach and grasp of our thoughts and affections—living in the memory and retrospection of the past, and hoping with affection and care for those who are to come after us. We are true to ourselves only when we act with becoming pride for the blood we inherit, and which we are to transmit to those who shall soon fill our places." So wrote Daniel Webster, and who will not subscribe to its truthfulness and wisdom? No apology is needed for the introduction of an extended notice of the burial-places of Lynn, for such consecrated grounds always possess a touching interest—to the old, because there lie the departed kindred and friends of earlier years; to the young, because there they see, fast gathering around, the loved ones from the broken household and the charmed circle of glad companionship. In these often-shunned retreats lie those who have made the history of the place; and who could be more worthy than they of grateful remembrance?

One of the first objects in commencing a settlement was to select a suitable place for the burial of the dead, as all realize that such a place will surely be needed, whatever other seeming necessities may be dispensed with. True, the dead would rest just as quietly by the stony wayside or in the weedy bog, as in a flowery bed or beneath a marble monument; but to the sorrowing kindred there is something repugnant in thinking of them as resting in a dreary, uncared-for spot. The Indians, even, had great regard for the remains of their departed ancestors; and woe betide the daring enemy who would desecrate the rude necropolis upon the sunny hillside.

But yet with what different feelings do the living think of the last resting-place they are destined to occupy. Some would lie in a sequestered spot, where the soothing dirge of sighing trees is ever heard; some would lie on the ocean shore, where the spent waves murmur a ceaseless lament; some would lie in the art-adorned cemetery, whither the steps of pensive wanderers may tend at thoughtful hours; some would lie in the centre of the busy life they loved so well, but which no longer can disturb or charm; and some would have their mortal remains dissolved in the crucible of cremation. Says John Anster:

"If I might choose where my tired limbs shall lie
When my task here is done, the oak's green crest
Shall rise above my grave—a little mound
Raised in some cheerful village cemetery.
And I could wish that with unceasing sound
A lonely mountain rill was murmuring by
In music through the long soft twilight hour,
And let the hand of her whom I love best
Plant round the bright, green grave those fragrant flowers
In whose deep bells the wild bee loves to rest.
And should the robin from some neighboring tree
Pour his enchanted song—Oh! softly tread,
For sure if aught of earth can soothe the dead,
He still must love that pensive melody."

And then our own Lewis pleadingly enjoins:

"O, bury me not in the dark old woods,
Where the sunbeams never shine;
Where mingles the mist of the mountain floods
With the dew of the dismal pine!
But bury me deep by the bright blue sea,
I have loved in life so well;
Where the winds may come to my spirit free,
And the sound of the ocean shell.

"O, bury me not in the churchyard old,
In the slime of the doleful tomb!
Where my bones may be thrust, ere their life is cold,
To the damp of a drearier gloom!
But bury me deep by the bright blue sea,
Where the friends whom I love have been;
Where the sun may shine on the grass turf free,
And the rains keep it ever green!"

And thus sings Beattie:

"Let vanity adorn the marble tomb
With trophies, rhymes, and scutcheons of renown:
Mine be the breezy hill that skirts the down;
Where a green grassy turf is all I crave
With here and there a violet bestrown,
Fast by a brook or fountain's murmuring wave;
And many an evening sun shine sweetly on my grave."

The early settlers, with most unaccountable irreverence, had little regard for the resting-places of their dead, often allowing rank weeds and brambles to flourish, and wandering animals to roam at will over the reserved acres. Whittier alludes to this in these touching lines:

"Our vales are sweet with fern and rose,
Our hills are maple-crowned;
But not from them our fathers chose
The village burying-ground.

"The dreariest spot in all the land
To death they set apart;
With scanty grace from Nature's hand,
And none from that of art."

But these later generations of their children have in a measure atoned for their strange remissness by consecrating beautiful cemeteries, in which sometimes appear monuments so costly and decorative that the mind is liable to be led from meditation on the virtues of those they commemorate to admiration of them as works of art or disapprobation of them as monuments of ostentation and extravagance.

The Old Burying-Ground of Lynn is in the westerly part of the city. It is not known with certainty when the first interments were made there. The stones are no certain index, for the oldest one bears the date 1698, and multitudes must have been buried there before that time. There rest the early fathers and mothers of the place, and many whose talents and virtuous deeds made them conspicuous in their own day and generation.

The first burial in this ancient place, so far as is certainly known, was in 1637, when the remains of John Bancroft, ancestor of the distinguished historian and statesman, George Bancroft, were laid there. And it was on the 1st of April, 1687, that the remains of Thomas Newhall, the first white person born in Lynn, was buried there. He had died at the age of fifty-seven years. The oldest stone bears this inscription: "Here lyeth ye body of Iohn Clifford. Died Iune ye 17, 1698, in ye 68 year of his age." The figure nine, by some sacrilegious intruder, was, eighty years ago, altered in a rough way, so as to resemble a two, and that has led some to the erroneous belief that there was a burial here as early as 1628.

For some two centuries no complete record of interments here seems to have been kept, but since the law so required, the town and city clerks have been faithful in recording.

Mr. John T. Moulton, a worthy native, a few years since had all the inscriptions copied and published in the Peabody Institute Collections,—a labor of love for which he is deserving of the highest commendation.

A few of the epitaphs in this ancient gathering-place of the dead will be given; but it will be borne in mind that it very often happens that the name of one of the most worthy and useful is not so perpetuated, while that of another, whose memory elicits no sentiment of reverence, is blazoned on a pompous monument. It should be borne in mind, too, that many, inspired by ardent love for their native place, were overtaken by the fell destroyer when far away, never again to meet those of their generation till the sea gives up her dead.

Churchyard lore is not usually very refined in diction, however tender in sentiment, and the simple, unlettered record is sometimes more touching than the studied and stately. But a countless multitude, of whose names even there is no record, are there at rest, among them, perhaps, "some mute, inglorious Milton," or some heroic Washington. Certainly a host of the godly men and women of the early days are sleeping there, to be aroused only at the last trumpet's sound; and theirs must be the brightest dreams, should dreams come in that night of centuries.

"Sure the last end
Of the good man is peace. How calm his exit!
Night dews fall not more gently on the ground
Nor weary, worn-out winds expire so soft."

The few epitaphs for which space can be afforded in this connection will, for convenience, be arranged alphabetically.

"In memory of Rev. Thomas F. Alexander, pastor of the Second Christian Church in Lynn, who died April 2, 1838, aged 23 years.

"Precious in the sight of the Lord is the death of his saints.—Ps. 116, 15.

"O Church! to whom this youth was dear,
The angel of thy mercy here,
Behold the path he trod.
A milky-way through midnight skies;
Behold the grave in which he lies;
Even from this day thy Pastor cries
Prepare to meet thy God."

Few ever had the capacity to so win the esteem of the young people of his generation as did this youthful clergyman. He possessed uncommon talents and an uncommonly felicitous way of expressing his views and convictions. He mingled freely with those of all denominations, was neither bigoted nor heterodox, and his early death was deeply felt as a serious loss to the community.

"In memory of Mr. Zachariah Atwill, who died November 6, 1836. Æt. 81.

"Mark the perfect man and behold the upright, for the end of that man is peace."

Mr. Atwill was a Revolutionary soldier. At one time he lived in the ancient house that stood on the centre of the Common, a little west of the pond, but now stands on the easterly side of Whiting Street and which is the oldest building in Lynn of which the date of erection is positively known. It was built in 1682 for the residence of the parish sexton. Mr. Atwill kept the almshouse for many years before its removal, in 1819, from the corner of Essex and Chestnut Streets to Tower Hill. A son of his, Zachariah, Jr., was a sea captain, and, it is said, crossed the Atlantic some fifty times without the loss of a seaman.

"Here lyes ye body of Mr. Thomas Baker, who died October ye 3d 1734, aged 81 years."

Mr. Baker was drafted November 13, 1675, to serve in King Philip's War, and was in the Narragansett fight. In 1694 he was a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery, and is spoken of more at large in other pages of this sketch.

"In memory of Amos Ballard (son of Mr. John Ballard, of Boston), who was deprived of his life by the accidental discharge of a musket in a canoe in Lynn River, on the 25th of August, 1798. Ætat 77.

"The grave hath eloquence, its lectures teach
In silence louder than divines can preach;
Hear what it says, ye sons of folly, hear;
It speaks to you; lend an attentive ear."

"In memory of Mr. Josiah Breed, who died December 12, 1790, in the 59th year of his age.

"Death is a debt to nature due;
Which I have paid, and so must you."

"Here lyes buried ye body of Doct Henry Burchsted, a Silesian, who died Septbr xx, Anno Christi, MDCCXXI. Ætatis Suæ LXIIII.

"Silesia to New England sent this man,
To do their all that any healer can,

But he who conquered all diseases must
Find one who throws him down into the dust
A chymist near to an adeptist come,
Leaves here, thrown by his caput mortuum
Reader, physicians die as others do ;
Prepare, for thou to this art hastening too."

"My widow'd mother,
My only earthly friend,
Erected this monument
To tell each traveller,
Who looks this way,
That underneath this stone
Rests the ashes of her only son,
Josiah Burrage, who died Dec. 13th, 1797,
Aged 21 years.
Oft do we see the tender bud of hope,
Opening its beauties to the morning light,
When lo! a frost cuts down the tender plant,
And levels all our prospects with the dust."

"Here lyes buried the body of the Honorable John Burrill, Esq, who died Decembr 10th Anno Christi, MDCCXXI. Ætatis LXIV.

"Alas! our patron's dead! the country—court—
The church—in tears, all echo the report ;
Grieved that no piety, no mastering sense,
No counsel, gravity, no eloquence,
No generous temper, gravitating to
Those honors, which they did upon him throw,
Could stay his fate, or their dear Burrill save
From a contagious sickness and the grave,
The adjacent towns this loss reluctant bear,
But widowed Lynn sustains the greatest share:
Yet joys in being guardian of his dust
Until the resurrection of the just."

The residence of Mr. Burrill was on the western slope of Tower Hill, and there he died, leaving no children. The "contagious sickness" which proved fatal was small-pox. He was well known throughout the province, was much in public life, and sustained a high reputation as a legislator. He was ten years Speaker of the House, and greatly respected for his ability and urbanity in conducting public business.

"In memory of Mr. Thomas Cheever, a soldier of the Revolution, who died Jan. 28, 1823, Æt. 90.

"Receive, O earth, his faded form,
In thy cold bosom let it lie,
Safe let it rest from every storm,
Soon must it rise, no more to die."

"The Rev. Joshua W. Downing, A. M. Died July 15, 1839, aged 26."

Mr. Downing was one of Lynn's most promising young men. He was a son of Elijah Downing, a cabinet-maker, who lived on North Common Street, corner of Park. He graduated at Brown University, and at first intended to pursue the profession of law, but becoming converted, he joined the Methodist Conference, and soon became one of the most acceptable preachers in the denomination, insomuch that at the time of his decease he was in charge of one of the oldest and most opulent churches of the order in New England,—the Bromfield Street Church, in Boston.

"This monument is inscribed to the memory of John Flagg, Esq., in whom remarkable temperance, uniform prudence, unaffected modesty, affectionate humanity and diffusive benevolence shone conspicuous among the virtues which graced his character, endeared him to his family and friends, and secured him the respect and love of all who had the happiness to know him.

"As a physician, his skill was eminent, and his practice extensive and successful.

"To Death, whose triumph he had so often delayed and repelled, but could not entirely prevent, he at last himself submitted on the 27th of May, 1793, in the 50th year of his age.

"Heav'n now repays his virtues and his deeds,
And endless life the stroke of death succeeds."

Dr. Flagg graduated at Cambridge in 1761, and eight years after settled as a physician in Lynn, where he soon, by his integrity, affability and skill, won the esteem and confidence of all. He was active and patriotic during the trying Revolutionary period, was a member of the Committee of Safety in 1775, and commissioned as a colonel. Dr. James Gardner, for many years a public-spirited and highly-respected practitioner here, married his only daughter. Dr. Flagg lived at the eastern end of Marion Street, in the same house in which the famous merchant, William Gray, was born some twenty years before.

"George Gray, the Lynn Hermit, a native of Scotland, died at Lynn, Feb. 28, 1848, aged 78 years."

This eccentric individual lived alone for many years in what was, at the time of his appearance, a retired and forlorn retreat, little better than a brambly bog, though near a public road. Further notice of him appears elsewhere.

"This monument is erected to the memory of Mr. Samuel Hart, son of Mr. Joseph & Eunice Hart. Obt. July 18, 1802, Æt. 24.

"Farewell to friends, to science & to time,
God bids me leave you all, though in my prime,
Parents, mourn not, though I'm the fourth young son
That God hath called, he still doth leave you one,
Grieve not for me, but for the living grieve,
'Tis they who die, it is the dead who live."

The writer of this sketch well remembers hearing in early childhood, a sister of the deceased often speak in the most affectionate terms of his lovely character, especially of his amiability. He seems to have been ambitious of leaving the toilsome occupation of farmer, and preparing for usefulness in some learned profession, and was a student—in Harvard College, it is believed—at the time of his death. The family greatly mourned his loss, and the whole neighborhood partook in the sorrow. The epitaph refers to three brothers who had gone before him, leaving him the last but one of all the sons of the stricken parents. The epitaphs of these three follow, and they are all uncommonly impressive in sentiment and tenderly expressed :

"Sacred to the memory of Joseph & Burrill Hart, Obt. Nov. 15th & Dec. 8th, 1786, Aet. 18 & 11 years, Sons of Joseph and Eunice Hart.

"These lovely youths resigned their breath,
Prepared to live & ripe for death ;
You blooming youths who view this stone,
Learn early death may be your own.
The Lord, who hath all sov'reign power,
Cut short the lovely opening flower.
The sister's joy, the parent's hope,
Submit to death's relentless stroke."

* * * * * * * * * * * * *

"Sacred to the memory of Joseph Burrill Hart, son of Mr. Joseph & Mrs. Eunice Hart, who died Nov. 19, 1795, Aged 7 years.

"His opening mind a thousand charms reveal'd,
Proof of those thousands which were still conceal'd,
The loveliest flow'r in nature's garden plac'd,
Permitted just to bloom and pluck'd in haste,
Angels beheld him ripe for joys to come,
And call'd by God's command their brother home."

Joseph Hart, the afflicted father of these promising youths, was a farmer, and lived in the ancient house that stood on Boston Street at the corner of North Federal. He owned all the land on the west side of the street up to Walnut, and raised corn, potatoes and the usual products for family consumption, together with large quantities of flax, which was wrought into a durable though not elegant kind of cloth. Mrs. Eunice Hart, mother of the deceased youths, was a granddaughter of Hon. Ebenezer Burrill, who occupied the extensive farm at Swampscott, a portion of which was lately owned by the Hon. E. R. Mudge, deceased. The ancient farm-house in which Mr. Burrill lived is still standing near the elegant stone villa of Mr. Mudge.

"To the memory of Deacon Ezra Hitchings, who was born April 15, 1765, and died Nov. 26, 1829. This stone is erected by the members of the Second Congregational Church in Lynn, of which, from its formation, he was an able and efficient officer, as a testimonial of the profound respect and love for his integrity and benevolence, his piety as a Christian and his worth as a man.

"The memory of the just is blessed."

The Second Congregational Church of Lynn was the first Unitarian, and to the present day remains the only society of that denomination here. Major Hitchings, to use the military title by which he was popularly known, was a native of that part of Lynn which is now Saugus. His wife, who was a woman of much force of character, was a sister of Colonel James Robinson, a soldier of the Revolution, and first postmaster of Lynn. They had no children of their own, but adopted one or two, whom they reared with the watchful care of true parents. Mr. Hitchings kept a West India goods store on Boston Street, corner of North Federal, and did a fair village business, though it yielded nothing beyond a comfortable maintenance.

"Sacred to the memory of Benjamin Massey, who was born Nov. 19, 1786, and died Dec. 10, 1831.

"Reader, a moment pause before this stone;
It tells a husband, father, Christian gone;
These sacred names he bore; but oh, how well
Must faithful memory, not the marble, tell;
Enough, if in this hard white stone you see
His strong, firm will—his spotless purity."

The loss of Mr. Massey to the community was seriously felt. He was an active, useful citizen, his services being in constant demand wherever strict personal integrity and prudence were required. He took an important part in the management of public affairs, and filled several of the higher offices of public trust. At the organization, in 1828, of the Lynn Mutual Fire Insurance Company, that still remarkably successful institution, he was chosen secretary, and held the office till his death. He was an industrious blacksmith, his shop and dwelling being on Western Avenue, a few rods west of Federal Street.

"Alonzo Lewis, died January 21, 1861, aged sixty-six years and five months.

"Frances, his wife, died May 27, 1839.

"All angels now, and little less while here."

This is the resting-place of Mr. Lewis, the poet and historian. In the neat little burial inclosure are two or three chaste marble stones, unpretentious but strikingly appropriate. As Mr. Lewis is spoken of somewhat at large in another place, nothing further need be said here. The other inscriptions in the inclosure, however, should be given,—

"Frances Maria.
Aurelius.
Lynnworth.
Ina.

Alonzo Lewis, Jr.
Died March 7, 1852.

Irene Lewis,
Died March 26, 1853.

Mary Lewis,
Died Jan. 28, 1878.

William Lewis,
Born 1596.
Died 1671.
Amey, his wife.

Isaac Lewis, Jr.,
Born 1683.
Died 1763.
Hannah, His wife.

Nathan Lewis,
Born 1721.
Died 1804.
Mary, his wife.

Zachariah Lewis,
Born 1765.
Died 1810.
Mary, his wife."

(Five Generations.)

"Here lyes buried ye body of Ensign Joseph Newhall, aged 47 years. Departed this life January ye 29, 1705."

This Mr. Newhall was a man of some note and much respected. In 1696 the town granted him liberty to "Sett up a pewe in ye east end of ye meeting-house Between ye east dowre & the stares." He was, at the time of his death, a member of the General Court, and perished in a great snow-storm while on his way from Boston. It was a violent storm, continuing two days—the 29th and 30th of January. He was a son of Thomas Newhall, the first white person born in Lynn, and the father of eleven children, all of whom survived him. Many descendants of his are yet remaining in Lynn.

"Here lies buried the body of Mr Zackeus Norwood, who departed this life Feb. the 8th, 1756, aged 40 years."

"Here lyes buried the body of Doct Jonathan Norwood, who departed this life March 16th, 1782, in ye 31st year of his age."

These two stones are in memory of father and son. Zacheus, the father, was keeper of the old Anchor Tavern, which, as "Norwood's Tavern," augmented in fame to the close of provincial days. He is spoken of elsewhere in these pages. Dr. Jonathan, the son, was a well-educated physician, and lived on the north side of the Common, between Mall and Park Streets. He graduated at Harvard in 1771. His death, March 16, 1782, was occasioned by injuries received by a fall from his horse.

"In memory of Mr. Isaac Orgin, who died May 29th, 1831, Æt. 70.

"Afflictions sore long time I bore,
Physicians strove in vain,
Till God did please to give me ease,
And take away my pain."

Mr. Orgin was one of the youthful patriots who took the field in the Revolution, and is said to have been some time a drummer.

"Here lies buried the body of Mr. William Perkins, a gentleman of liberal education. He was bred at Harvard College, and commenced Master of Arts in y^e^ year 1761. He was justly admired for his uncommon abilities, natural and acquired; his literature, exemplary piety, modesty, meekness, and many other humane and Christian virtues which rendered him lovely in every relation of life. He died of a fever Oct^r^ y^e^ 9, 1765, and in the 28^th^ year of his age."

"Mary Pitcher.
1738–1813."

This simple inscription on a neat headstone perpetuates the name of one who attained a world-wide reputation as "Moll Pitcher, the fortune-teller of Lynn." A somewhat extended notice of her may be found elsewhere in these pages.

"The First Church of Christ in Lynn erected this monument to the memory of their faithful and much esteemed brother, Deacon Nathaniel Sargent. He died September 23, 1798, aged 38 years.

"I am the resurrection and the life saith the Redeemer."

"The Tomb of Rev. Jeremiah Shepard. The memory of the just is blessed. Mrs. Mary Shepard died March 28, 1710, Aet. 53. A prudent wife is from the Lord. Prov. xxxi. 10 & 28: the Mother of 9 children: 5 died, Jeremiah, 1700, Aet. 23: Mehetabel, 1688: Margaret, 1683: Thomas, 1709, Aet. 29: Francis, 1692.

"Rev. Jeremiah Shepard died June 2, 1720, Aet. 72.

"Elijah's mantle drops, the prophet dies,
His earthly mansion quits, and mounts the skies.
——————— So Shepard's gone.
His precious dust, death's prey, indeed is here,
But 's nobler breath 'mong seraphs does appear;
He joins the adoring crowds about the throne,
He 's conquered all, and now he wears the crown."

A notice of this venerable minister appears in another connection.

"How uncertain are human enjoyments!

"From gratitude, respect and endearing recollection, this stone is erected in remembrance of Mrs. Jane & Sally Tufts, consort & daughter of Mr. David Tufts, who died Nov. 15th & 16th, 1795, aged 28 years, the infant 1 day.

"Sacred to the memory of Mrs. Elizabeth Tufts, & dau^r^, wife and dau^r^ of Mr. David Tufts, who obt. Aug. 20th & 22d, 1801. She aged 32 years, the child Aet 5 hours.

"Why do we mourn departed friends
Or shake at death's alarms?
'Tis but the voice that Jesus sends
To call them to his arms."

"In memory of Mr. David Tufts, a soldier of the Revolution, who died July 6, 1823, Aet. 60.

"When coldness wraps this suffering clay,
Ah, whither strays the immortal mind?
It cannot die, it cannot stay,
But leaves its darkened dust behind."

This Mr. David Tufts, whose singularly severe and affecting visitations are here commemorated, lived in a comfortable two-story frame dwelling which stood on what is now Western Avenue, at the northeast corner of Federal Street, the site being now occupied by huge brick business buildings, and his land extended nearly to Centre Street. His barn was opposite the west wing of Lynn Hotel. As stated upon the stone, he was a soldier of the Revolution, and must have been in service while a mere boy. He drew a pension during the latter part of his life, for though in the way of gaining a comfortable livelihood by farming and expressing, in a small way, he was yet obliged to exercise industry and economy. He kept his sword hanging above the head of his bed as a memento of his early heroism. His last wife was Eunice, a daughter of Joseph Hart, of Boston Street, and she survived him more than forty years. He left three sons, one of whom was Deacon Richard Tufts, so long conspicuous for his rigid principles as a temperance reformer, and so highly respected for his unswerving moral integrity. He was a deacon of the First Congregational Church for many years, and died an octogenarian. Col. Gardiner Tufts, whose efficient services in the interest of the Massachusetts soldiers, during the Civil War and subsequently, were highly appreciated, and who is yet doing efficient service under State appointment, was a son of the deacon.

"John E. Weston, Minister of the Gospel, died July 2^d^, 1831, Aet. 35.

"He was ordained Oct. 1827, Pastor of the 2^d^ Baptist Church in Cambridge, and at the time of his death was pastor elect of the Baptist Church, Nashua, N. H. It was while on a journey to Nashua to preach on the ensuing Sabbath that he was drowned in Sandy Pond in Wilmington. This sudden and afflictive event occurred in consequence of a deep bank near the edge of the pond, from which, unperceived by him, he was precipitated with his carriage and sank in death.

"Thus died a most excellent husband and Father, a devoted and humble Christian, an able and energetic minister, beloved by all, and bearing the noble features of that Saviour whom he delighted to honor."

In this venerable resting-place of the dead repose the remains of three early ministers of the First Church—Whiting, Shepard and Henchman—as well as the countless host of other worthies—fathers and mothers of past generations—some of whom have elsewhere come under notice.

"Life's labor done, securely laid
In this their last retreat,
Unheeded o'er their silent dust
The storms of life shall beat.

"The storm which wrecks the wintry sky
No more disturbs their deep repose
Than summer evening's gentlest sigh,
Which shuts the rose."

The other burial-places of Lynn are as follows, arranged according to the dates of consecration:

THE FRIENDS' BURIAL-PLACE.—This seems to have been set apart for its sacred purposes early in the last century, probably in or about the year 1723, as is found that Richard Estes conveyed to the Friends Society an eligible lot of land at the corner of the present Broad and Silsbee Streets, "in consideration of the love and good will" he bore "to y^e^ people of God called Quakers, in Lyn," by a deed dated the "seventeenth day of the tenth month, called December, in y^e^ ninth year of the reign of King George, in the year of our Lord, according to the English account, one thousand seven hundred and twenty-two." The land was given "unto y^e^ people aforementioned to bury their dead in, and to erect a meeting-house

for to worship God in: I say those in true fellowship of the gospell unity with the monthly meeting, and those are to see to y^e^ Christian burying as we have been in y^e^ practice of." In 1826 the remains of a hundred and nine persons were removed from the old Friends' Burying-ground in Boston, and deposited in this at Lynn, the reason being that the society at Boston had become virtually extinct and their ground disused. Considerable feeling, however, was manifested by some, and Joseph Hussey refused to permit the removal of the remains of his two sisters to Lynn, preferring to have them deposited in King's Chapel ground. This burial-place is conveniently and pleasantly situated, near the house of worship, and has a number of neat memorial stones, without costly or gairish display. And in it rest a goodly number of Lynn's most prudent and worthy sons and daughters. Adjoining this ground is another, opened in 1825, as a free burial-place; the reason for the proceeding being that the society refused to permit the interment of a child in their ground without a compliance with their regulations.

THE EASTERN BURIAL-PLACE, on Union Street, was opened in 1812, is neatly kept, and contains the dust of many worthy ones.

PINE GROVE CEMETERY was consecrated on the afternoon of Wednesday, July 24, 1850. The weather was warm, but the sky was clear, and a great concourse attended. The exercises, conducted amid such picturesque and inspiring surroundings, were extremely impressive. The address was delivered by Rev. Charles C. Shackford, minister of the Unitarian Society. Several other clergymen took part in the exercises. An original ode, by G. W. Putnam, and original hymns, by Mr. Joseph W. Nye, Miss Anna H. Phillips and Miss Annie Johnson, were sung. This beautiful burial-place is surpassed by very few in the country for its picturesque natural features, its stately trees, fine shrubbery and flower-studded inclosures, as well as for its graceful and noble monuments. The first burial took place on Sunday, October 13, 1850; and the total number of interments up to January 1, 1886, was nine thousand six hundred, four hundred and sixty-five having taking place during 1885. As to the pecuniary receipts and disbursements, it may in brief be stated that for the year 1885 the City Council appropriated $8000; to that was added, from sale of lots, $5176.50; from interments, $1480.50; from care of lots, $2673.59; and from various other sources sufficient to make a total of $19,509.86. The expenditures for labor, grading and the numerous other needful purposes were $19,310.99.

ST. MARY'S (ROMAN CATHOLIC) CEMETERY, which comprises eight acres, is situated on Lynnfield Street, near the suburban village of Wyoma. It was consecrated on Thursday, November 4, 1858, by Bishop Fitzpatrick, assisted by six other clergymen. A violent storm prevailed on the day of consecration, and the services, so far as they properly could be, were held in the church, where the rite of confirmation was administered to some two hundred persons.

ST. JOSEPH'S (ROMAN CATHOLIC) CEMETERY, on Boston Street, in the northeastern outskirts, was consecrated by Archbishop Williams, in the afternoon of Thursday, October 16, 1879. A number of clergymen from neighboring places were present. Eighteen burials had taken place there before the day of consecration. In the forenoon of the day of the ceremony the rite of confirmation was administered in the parish church, by the archbishop, to about a hundred and twenty-five children.

ALMSHOUSE GROUND.—A small lot was set apart on the Almshouse grounds for the burial of deceased inmates. But no burials are now made there.

At the present time the burials are chiefly made in the three cemeteries, the whole number in 1886 having been as follows: In Pine Grove Cemetery, 375; in St. Mary's, 207; in St. Joseph's, 46; in the Eastern ground, 58; in the Old, or Western ground, 3; in the Friends', 5—making a total of 694. But the number of deaths during the year was 836, the remains of 142 being taken out of town for interment. In 1885 the number of deaths was 828, of which 148 were by consumption, 21 by diphtheria, 14 by typhoid fever, 70 by pneumonia, 34 by cholera infantum, 9 by scarlet fever. Of children under five years, 278.

It may be added that the old burying-ground at Lynnfield was opened about the year 1720, and that at Saugus about 1732, both of those towns being then a part of Lynn.

The interesting ceremony of strewing with flowers the graves of soldiers who fell in the Civil War has been devoutly observed in Lynn. Once a year—on the 30th of May, which has been established as a legal holiday and called Memorial Day—under the auspices of the local post of the Grand Army of the Republic, the surviving comrades proceed in procession, with appropriate music, to the various burial-places, and there, upon the graves of the departed companions-in-arms, reverentially deposit their floral offerings. The custom began here in 1868, in accordance with the manifesto of General Logan, commander-in-chief of the association, issued at Washington. The occasion calls out crowds of people, old and young. A patriotic address by a comrade, delivered in some convenient place, follows the ceremony.

Did our limits allow, it would not be impertinent to say a few words touching what may be called modern extravagances at funerals. The expenditures for casket, floral decorations and carriages have become really burdensome to persons of limited means. Many seem to think it mean not to follow the fashion in these matters, and mean also to question any charge of those who furnish essentials or decorations. Can ostentatious display relieve a truly grieving heart? Can gairish pomp and glitter at the grave give joy to the departed? It would, indeed, be heath-

enish to avoid a proper manifestation of respect and affection for deceased friends; but is it not sometimes the case that respect and affection are marked by over-wrought display? In early New England times the dead were committed to their last resting-places with very little ceremony beyond the procession of mourning friends; the coffin was rude; and seldom was a prayer offered, an omission which it seems hard to account for, excepting on the ground of anxiety to avoid anything that approached the Romish custom of praying for the dead. Lechford, writing in 1641, says, "At burials nothing is read, nor any funeral sermon made, but all the neighborhood, or a good company of them, come together by tolling of the bell, and carry the dead solemnly to his grave and there stand by him while he is buried. The ministers are most commonly present." As to prayers at funerals, Drake, in his "History of Boston," in speaking of the funeral of the wife of Judge Byfield, who was a daughter of Governor Leverett, and died December 21, 1730, remarks: "At her funeral a prayer was made, which was the first introduction of the practice in the town." And a Boston paper, speaking of the same funeral, says: "Before carrying out the corpse, a funeral prayer was made by one of the pastors of the old church, which, though a custom in country towns, is a singular instance in this place." So much for the religious exercises at burials. And now a word touching some peculiar extravagances at times indulged in.

Before the beginning of the last century some strange customs began to appear, and expenditures were made for purposes much more reprehensible than any extravagance of the present day. Indeed, funerals were sometimes made seasons of absolute jollification. Spirituous liquors were provided in abundance, and scarfs, gloves and rings presented. The General Court, in 1724, prohibited the giving of scarfs on such occasions, "because a burdensome custom." At the funeral of Rev. Mr. Cobbet, who preached in Lynn nineteen years (1637–56), were expended one barrel of wine, £6 8*s.*; two barrels of cider, 11*s.*; 82 pounds of sugar, £2 1*s.*; half a cord of wood, 4*s.*; four dozen pairs of gloves, "for men and women," £5 4*s.*; with "some spice and ginger for the cider." It was not Lynn, however, that had the honor of providing thus liberally for the obsequies of Mr. Cobbet, for he had left here a number of years before, and settled in Ipswich. But in 1711 Lynn paid for half a barrel of cider for the Widow Dispaw's funeral. It was generous of the town to see that even a poor widow's remains should not be laid away without some inducement for neighbors to attend the last rites, if no feeling of bereavement existed. And there is a temptation to add the account of expenditures at the funeral of Rev. Mr. Brown, of Reading, in 1733, partly for the purpose of showing the cost of some things required in those days on such mournful occasions:

	£	*s.*	*d.*
"To Thomas Eaton, for provisions	2	1	0
Nathaniel Eaton for fetching up the wine	0	15	0
Lt. Nathaniel Parker for 5 qts. Rhom, [rum]	0	8	0
Samuel Pool for digging Mr. Brown's grave	0	8	0
Landlord Wesson, for Rhom, [rum]	0	10	6
Wm. Cowdry, for making the coffin	0	15	0
Andrew Tyler, of Boston, 6 gold rings for funeral	10	18	0
Benj. Fitch, of Boston, Gloves, etc	17	0	0
Mrs. Martha Brown, for wine furnished	5	0	0
Eben Storer, of Boston, sundries	8	0	0
Total	45	15	6."

The old burying-grounds embody a history of the early settlements. The "cemeteries" of modern time exhibit the taste and wealth of later days. But it would be unkind to assume that either is not the bourn of true human sympathy and affection. The remains of high or low, rich or poor, wherever and whenever committed to the keeping of mother earth, occasion pangs of sorrow in some surviving breast; there are none so poor or miserable as to be void of this. To the indigent mourner there is substantial consolation in the thought that at the grave all earthly distinctions end; but far greater consolation in the conviction that for a virtuous life passed here a great reward awaits upon the other side of the dark vale. To the true duty-doer, as he draws near the bourn that cannot be repassed, the words of the great poet of our own Essex come as a refreshing breath from that other land,—

"O stream of life, whose swifter flow
Is of the end forewarning.
Methinks thy sundown afterglow
Seems less of night than morning."

There is surely no place better fitted for sombre reflection than that where lie the gathered dead of generations. But why sombre?

"All that tread
The globe are but a handful to the tribes
That slumber in its bosom."

And among them, in peaceful rest, are the good and great, the beautiful and buoyant. What is there doleful in such company? Meditations of the most cheerful kind may well be entertained. And soothing would it be to many a tired spirit could it occasionally respond to the poet's sentiment and say:

"At musing hour of twilight gray,
When silence reigns around,
I love to walk the churchyard way—
To me 'tis holy ground.
To me congenial is the place,
Where yew and cypress grow—
I love the moss-grown stone to trace,
That tells who lies below."

Yes, indeed, to a mind so touched, many a rough passage of life would be made smooth, for step by step more fully would be perceived the utter hollowness of all mere earthly promises, and the emptiness of earth's bubbles, wealth, honor and fame. The pursuit of wealth especially, which is with us so marked a feature, would soon appear like senseless phantom-

chasing. Pausing at the merely rich man's grave, the racy lines of Swift might well obtrude:

"The sexton shall green sods on thee bestow;
Alas, the sexton is thy banker now!
A dismal banker must that banker be,
Who gives no bills but of mortality."

And again:

"He that could once have half a kingdom bought,
In half a minute is not worth a groat.
His coffers from the coffin could not save,
Nor all his interest keep him from the grave."

CHAPTER XIX.

LYNN—(*Continued*).

OLD FAMILIES—PERSONAL NOTICES—POETS AND PROSE WRITERS.

Lists of Settlers—Notices of Remarkable Individuals, Eccentric and Otherwise—Lynn Writers in Poetical, Historical and other Departments.

"These flowery fields they loved to tread,
These rocky heights to scale,
The dells and tangled breaks to thread,
And snuff the fragrant gale."

REALIZING that the study of kinship, the tracing out of lines of relationship, is peculiarly fascinating and quite as profitable, perhaps, as many of the studies to which attention is usually directed, there have been introduced here and there in the different divisions of this sketch notices, more or less extended, of representative individuals who have appeared in the different periods of our history; enough to render all the assistance that could in that way be afforded to those who would trace out their genealogical lines. Such studies frequently prove of unexpected value, by unearthing facts greatly beneficial to one or another. Very few of the old New England families can be brought to mind of which may not now be found representatives whose virtues or achievements adorn the parent name. "The records of families," remarks a writer quoted by President Wilder, "constitute the frame-work of history, and are auxiliaries to science, religion and especially to civilization. The ties of kindred are the golden links in the chain which ties families, states and nations together in one great bond of humanity. Everything, therefore, which pertains to the history of our families should be carefully recorded and preserved for the benefit of those who are to follow us. He who collects and preserves his own family history is not only a benefactor in his way, but will deserve and receive the grateful thanks of all future generations. He confers a priceless boon upon those whose names and achievements are thus rescued from oblivion, and preserves the experience and wisdom of ages for the emulation and admiration of posterity." Yet there are multitudes of unreflecting people who never think of these things, and other multitudes who are so engrossed with money-making plans that they can see no good in them. Why, a while ago the writer had occasion to ask a man something about his grandfather, and got the abrupt reply, "But I don't even know who my grandfather was, and don't care; there's no money in it!"

And now as to Lynn: Though not able to boast of any very eminent persons at present within her borders, excepting in the mere business relations of life, in which she stands remarkably well, and excepting those who are "great in their own eyes," she yet can point to many living descendants of her earlier families who have made a mark in their generation. Let us give an example or two: GEORGE BANCROFT, the eminent historian, is a direct descendant from John Bancroft, one of Lynn's early settlers. GEORGE WILLIAM CURTIS, of New York, so prominent in the literary world, is a direct descendant from Ebenezer Burrill, who, July 29, 1725, married Mary Mansfield, and lived in the house that stood on Boston Street near the northeast corner of North Federal. Mr. Curtis's mother was a daughter of Hon. James Burrill, chief justice of the Supreme Court of Rhode Island and United States Senator, who died on Christmas Day, 1820, and whose father, also named James, was a son of Ebenezer, and born in the old Boston Street mansion. HORACE GRAY, a judge of the Supreme Court of the United States, and late chief justice of the Supreme Court of Massachusetts, is a grandson of William Gray, who was born in the two-story gambrel-roof house, the most easterly on the south side of Marion Street, formerly known as the Dr. Flagg house. The bold and chivalrous JOHN J. INGALLS, now a member of the United States Senate from Kansas, and one of the "best dressed" members of that body, is a lineal descendant from Edmund Ingalls, one of the first five settlers of Lynn. The catalogue need not be further extended, though many other honorable names press upon the memory. And then, if deceased ones should be brought to notice, the list could not easily be limited. There was TIMOTHY PICKERING, the friend of Washington, the sagacious and prudent counselor and co-worker on the foundation of the republic; his grandmother was a Burrill, of the same lineage from which Mr. Curtis sprang. THEODORE PARKER, the learned theologian and accomplished scholar, was a direct descendant from the sober old Lynn settler, Thomas Parker. The two Bishops HAVEN were lineal descendants from Richard Haven, whose house was on Boston Street, corner of North Federal, near that of the Burrills, the ancestral home of Curtis and Pickering just named. Then there was Rev. SAMUEL KERTLAND, who, by request of the Provincial Congress, induced the Oneidas and some other Indians of the Six Nations to espouse the American cause in the dark, opening days of the Revolution; he was a direct descendant from Philip Kertland, the first Lynn shoemaker. Then there was NATHANIEL P. WILLIS,

or, as he preferred to write it, when that style was fashionable, N. Parker Willis, the poet, a descendant of Thomas Willis, who was among the first Lynn settlers, locating at what we now call Tower Hill. He was a co-representative with Captain Nathaniel Turner and Edward Tomlins in the first General Court, 1634. And, being a man of consequence, he had allotted him, in the land division of 1638, "upland and medow, 500 acres, as it is estimated," while many of his neighbors received not above sixty. He does not appear to have spent the remainder of his days here, and it is not probable that descendants of his remain. It is at least hoped that the line was not tainted by "Old Willis," who, many years ago, kept the famous dance-house at North Bend, though he had the distinction of being a soldier of the Revolution. But this trail cannot be further pursued.

The narration of prominent events as they occurred in one's own neighborhood is seldom without absorbing interest. But when the actors in those events are introduced, the interest is greatly enhanced. It is the fashion with local historians and quasi historians to give chapters of biography; and those chapters are always interesting, at least to residents. But in view of the fact that, as before remarked, many sketches are scattered about elsewhere in these pages, a different plan must be pursued here. A few of those who have not been spoken of in other connections, but are thought entitled to special remembrance, will here receive attention. It will, of course, be borne in mind that it is not the purpose even to name all who have contributed to the prosperity of Lynn, for that would include a large portion of her population. Genealogies of a number of the old families have been published in one shape and another, and the "History of Lynn" contains many pages of such matter.

The following are the names of some of the settlers who appeared here before the year 1700, and who planted families which are still well represented among us, though they were not of the first comers:

Allen, 1636.	Estes, 1683 (?).	Oliver, 1692 (?).
Alley, 1640.	Farrington, 1635.	Parker, 1635.
Attwill, 1656.	Fuller, 1644.	Phillips, 1650.
Bachelor, 1632.	Graves, 1630.	Pool, 1639.
Baker, 1630.	Hart, 1640.	Ramsdell, 1630.
Bassett, 1640.	Hawkes, 1630.	Rhodes, 1640.
Bennett, 1630.	Hood, 1640.	Richards, 1630.
Berry, 1650 (?).	Hudson, 1630.	Richardson, 1679 (?).
Breed, 1630.	Ingalls, 1629.	Silsbee, 1651.
Brown, 1630.	Ireson, 1635.	Smith, 1630.
Burrill, 1630.	Johnson, 1637.	Stacey, 1641.
Chadwell, 1630.	King, 1647.	Tarbox, 1640.
Clark, 1640.	Lewis, 1639.	Townsend, 1636.
Collins, 1635.	Mansfield, 1640.	Waitt, 1650.
Davis, 1635.	Newhall, 1630.	

ALLEY.—John B. Alley, the first member of Congress from Lynn (1858), descended from the 1640 settler of the name.

BAKER.—Daniel C. Baker, the third mayor, was a descendant of the 1630 settler.

BASSETT.—William Bassett, the first city clerk, came from the family planted here in 1640. His pedigree may be found further on.

BREED.—Andrews Breed, our fifth mayor, and Hiram N. Breed, our ninth, descended from the 1630 settler.

BURRILL.—The Burrill who came in 1630 became the head of what was once called "the royal family of Lynn."

DAVIS.—The Davis named in the list was the ancestor of Edward S. Davis, our eighth mayor.

FULLER.—Joseph Fuller, the first president of the first Lynn bank; and Maria Augusta Fuller, the poetess, were descendants of the 1644 settler.

GRAVES.—From Mr. Graves, the 1630 settler, the section known as Gravesend (now called Glenmere) took its name.

HART.—George D. Hart, our twentieth mayor, descended from the early settler of the name.

HAWKES. — An account of the Hawkes family, planted here in 1630, will appear on a subsequent page.

HOOD.—George Hood, the first mayor of Lynn, was a representative of the old Hood family.

JOHNSON.—William F. Johnson, our seventh mayor, is of the old 1637 line.

LEWIS.—Jacob M. Lewis, Lynn's fourteenth mayor, and likewise Alonzo Lewis, the poet and historian, are descendants from the settler of 1639.

MANSFIELD.—Andrew Mansfield, who came in 1640, was, in 1660, made the first town clerk. To him we are also indebted for the preservation of a record of the land allotments of 1638, which, as he certifies, he copied "out of the Town Book of Records of Lynn," March 10, 1660. Several of his descendants became prominent, two or three in the military line.

NEWHALL.—The Newhall family, planted here in 1630, and of which the first white child born within our borders was a member, has, during our whole history, till within a year or two, maintained its rank as first in numbers, if for nothing else. The name is not now the most numerous, as, according to recent directories, it is slightly led by that of Smith. They are both old Lynn names, but it is evident that but comparatively few of the present Smiths are of old Lynn stock.

RICHARDS.—Richard Richards, who died December 19, 1851, was a descendant of the 1630 settler. He has been ranked as the most inventive genius, in a mechanical way, ever born here, some of his inventions proving of great value in the local business.

A brief notice of the TARBOX family will appear a little farther on.

In the sketch of Lynnfield a somewhat extended notice of the TOWNSEND family will be given.

A brief list of some of the subsequent families, that is, those which appeared after the year 1700, and made favorable marks which have from generation to generation been continued, follows: Bubier, Buff-

um, Chase, Curtin, Kimball, Moulton, Mudge, Munroe, Parrott, Pratt, Spinney, Stone, Tufts, Usher, Walden, Woodbury.

This short list contains the names of five mayors, to wit.: Bubier, Buffum, Mudge, Usher and Walden. And all the families have presented substantial and useful citizens.

It may be observed that several names, conspicuous in former years, do not appear in these lists. In some instances they are of those spoken of in other connections, in other instances of those who left few or no descendants, and in still other instances of those who did little or nothing to promote the prosperity or enhance the fame of this their chosen home, preferring rather to direct their life's labor to mere selfish ends,—a career that too many of us of the present day are prone to imitate.

Hawkes Family.—This family has ever maintained a respectable rank among the old Lynn families. Adam Hawkes, the founder, was one of the seventeen hundred Puritans who sailed with Endicott from Southampton and landed at Salem in June, 1630. He received large grants in the division of the common lands, and during his busy life acquired other tracts. He was an excellent specimen of the hardy, industrious and thrifty pioneer.

The doings of many of the early comers and their successors are not matters of tradition, but of history and record so clear that one can read their lives as if they were contemporaries. Of this first Adam Hawkes, for instance, we know the little knoll where he built his house, we know of the burning of that house, of the flight through the snow with his wife and infant children; we know when his second house was erected —a house which sheltered some of his descendants for more than two hundred years. In 1872 the old house was taken down, and on one of the bricks of the chimney was found the date, 1601, evidently written in the soft clay with the finger, when the brick was made in England. These bricks, which were in the first house, were relaid in the chimney of the fourth, on the same farm, by Richard Hawkes, of the sixth generation from the original owner. It is a matter of history that some of the ships of Winthrop's fleet were ballasted with bricks, and it has always been known in this family that the bricks in the first chimney came from England. The farm borders upon Saugus River, and the bricks must have been carried up that stream in boats, as there was no road. Another relic of the original chimney, which has ornamented its successors, but which is now regarded as an heirloom, is an iron fireback, some two feet square, and weighing about one hundred pounds, on which is moulded what has been supposed to be the British arms, but which has since been thought to be a coat of arms—perhaps that of the Hawkes family. The "supporters," though not distinct, seem to be similar to those in the British arms, but instead of the crown, this is surmounted by what appears to be the visors and bars of a helmet and lion. This casting was evidently made to lay in masonry, as the edge is depressed and rough. The fashion of ornamenting the chimney-back above the fire with the family arms or something national was common in early colonial times, probably borrowed from home.

John Hawkes, a son of Adam, the first comer, was a man of considerable local note in his time. His descendants can trace their ancestry to one of the group who signed the immortal compact in the cabin of the "Mayflower." His wife was Rebecca, daughter of Moses Maverick, the founder and for many years the only magistrate of Marblehead. The wife of Mr. Maverick was a daughter of Isaac Allerton, who was one of the "Mayflower" passengers, was Lieutenant-Governor of Plymouth Colony, and for a long time colonial agent. Isaac Allerton and Moses Maverick were conspicuous in the early days, and their blood mingled with that of the successors of Thomas Hawkes, who was burned at the stake in the reign of "Bloody Queen Mary," for his faithfulness to his religious principles.

On the 28th and 29th days of July, 1880, there took place a notable reunion on the grounds of Louis P. Hawkes, who occupies the very place where the father of the family established his abode in 1630. Some three hundred were present, from all parts of the country—representatives from all classes of society, the learned, the diplomatic, the mercantile, the laboring. The Hon. Nathan M. Hawkes, of Lynn, acted as master of ceremonies, and all the proceedings began, continued and ended in the most satisfactory manner. The literary exercises were of a high order, eminently appropriate and interesting. There were devotional exercises, poems, addresses, genealogical sketchings, music, and, for the younger portion, lighter diversions of various kinds. The principal address was by Senator Hawkes, the master of ceremonies, and its terse periods were enriched by historic allusions and family incidents, such as proved of absorbing interest to all present. The sentiments expressed in the closing passages must have found a response in the minds of the elder ones present; in the minds of all not cankered by worldly ambition, nor closed to the beautiful in nature and the conception of life's higher duties:

"This day is a mile-stone that marks our march of a quarter of a thousand years of American life. Individuals and generations lay down the burdens, the failures and the triumphs of life; others stand ready to go on with the duties that citizenship and family command. Let us signalize this occasion as a family by new reverence for the memory of our ancestors, and by new resolves to make our name a still better name in the future than in the past. Let us sanctify the present by making it worthy of the past, ever hopeful of the unseen, wonderful future.

"Within five miles of the ebb and flow of the Atlantic, whence civilization took its westward course, this sylvan retreat has hitherto escaped the rush and crush of busy mercantile pursuits; the snort of the locomotive is unheard; the primitive solitude is undisturbed, save by the peaceful pursuits of agriculture.

"The oratories of the Jews were beneath the shadow of olive trees; the ancient Druids of Gaul, Britain and Germany were accustomed to perform their mystic rites and sacrifices in the recesses of the forest; and our Pilgrim Fathers worshipped God under a like canopy.

"We meet to-day under the shade of the walnut. May this spot be spared from the sordid pursuits of business; may this grove he unvexed by the demands of utility for another period of two hundred and fifty years, that our successors may gather here in 'Nature's noblest sanctuary;' and may our kin in all coming time resort to this Mecca of the Hawkes family in America."

The family name, like all the surnames of colonial days, was spelled in a way to suit the user; but there were not so many variations as in most of the familiar names. In England we find it spelled Hawkes, and that has generally been followed here. Some branches of the family in America, however, spell it Hawks. This saves a letter, but does not make the word handsomer. No full genealogy of the family has yet been arranged. The materials, however, are ample, and space may be allowed for the tracing of one line as a sample. For this purpose we will take our well-known fellow-citizen, Hon. Nathan M. Hawkes, who was master of ceremonies, as before mentioned, on the occasion of the great family gathering.

1. Adam Hawkes arrived in 1630, died 1671.

2. John Hawkes, son of Adam, married Rebecca Maverick.

3. Moses[1], son of John, born 1659, married Margaret Cogswell.

4. Moses[2], son of Moses[1], born 1699, married Susannah Townsend.

5. Nathan[1], son of Moses[2], born 1745, married Sarah Hitchings.

6. Nathan[2], son of Nathan[1], born 1775, married Elizabeth Tarbell.

7. Nathan D., son of Nathan[2], born 1811, married Tacy P. Hawkes.

8. Nathan M., son of Nathan D., born 1843, married Mary Buffum.

Johnson Family.—The Johnson family has been among the most prominent and respectable of the Lynn families almost ever since the settlement commenced, and it would be agreeable to give the genealogy somewhat at large, were it practicable. As the next best thing, however, it may be well to trace the line of a single individual, as a family representative, from the first settler. Others, by their relationship to him, may trace their own lines.

For this purpose, then, let us take the line down to the late Otis Johnson, who died at his well-known residence on Federal Street, February 17, 1870, at the age of sixty-eight years.

Richard Johnson[1], the first of the family in Lynn, was born in England in 1612. He came to America with Sir Richard Saltonstall, in 1630, and after residing for seven years in Watertown and for a short period in Salem, settled in Lynn in 1637, being made a freeman the same year. He was a thrifty farmer, and owned a considerable tract of land at the eastern end of the Common, including the site of the present City Hall. His children were Samuel, Elizabeth, Abigail and Daniel.

Samuel[1] was known by the title of Lieutenant, and was a cornet in the King Philip War, 1676. For his services he received, in 1685, a grant of land from the General Court. He died in 1723, at the age of eighty-two, and was buried in the old ground, where his grave-stone may still be seen. He married Mary Collins January 22, 1664, and had nine children.

Richard[2], the sixth child of Samuel[1], was born November 8, 1674; on July 3, 1705, he married Elizabeth Newhall, and died September 26, 1754. He was town clerk for several years onward from 1722, was for three years a representative in the General Court and a deacon in the old church at the time of his decease. His sons were Samuel, known as Captain, Joseph and Benjamin.

Samuel[2], Captain, the eldest son of Richard[2], was born March 17, 1708, and married Ruth Holten, of Lynn, in or about 1731. His will was probated January 7, 1772.

Richard[3], the eldest son of Captain Samuel, was born September 25, 1731, married Lydia Batchelor March 21, 1756, and died September 27, 1765, from a fever resulting from haymaking on the marsh. He had sons,—Samuel, Enoch, Rufus, Timothy.

Enoch, son of Richard[3], was born January 16, 1761, married Elizabeth Newhall June 8, 1790, and died March 17, 1815. He was a deputy sheriff. Samuel, his son, was born April 30, 1793, married at Nassau, N. P., and long resided there, dying July 11, 1841. George, his son, was born June 7, 1796, and died October 17, 1849. He was a shoe manufacturer, and married Eliza, a daughter of Dr. Aaron Lummus.

Otis, the youngest son of Enoch, was born January 26, 1802, and died at his residence on Federal Street, Lynn, on the 17th of February, 1870, at the age of sixty-eight years, as before stated. He was married in Savannah, Ga., March 18, 1824, to Miss Virginia Taylor. They had nine children, only three of whom are now (1887) living—namely, Enoch Stafford, Maria Lillibridge and Elliott Clarke. The eldest son of Mr. Johnson was William Otis, who died August 17, 1873, aged forty-eight. He was a graduate of Harvard College, and in due time became established as a physician of more than ordinary reputation, having studied under the venerable Dr. Jacob Bigelow. His literary talents were also of a high order, his articles in the *North American Review* attracting marked attention.

Bassett Family.—William Bassett, the first of the name here, was a farmer and settled on Nahant Street on land still owned by his descendants. He married Sarah, daughter of Hugh Burt, who died in 1661. He was an ensign in the company of Captain Gardner, of Salem, in the Indian War, and was at the "swamp fight." For his services the General Court made him a grant of land. Captain William Bassett, supposed to be the same individual was one of a council of war, with Major Benjamin Church, at Scarborough, Me., November 11, 1689. His name often appears in the oldest town records of

Lynn, where, in 1691, he is called Quartermaster Bassett. He died March 31, 1703. His daughter Elizabeth was the wife of John Proctor, of Danvers, who was executed for witchcraft. She, too, was condemned, but pardoned. The wife of his son William was likewise imprisoned seven months for witchcraft. She had a child, when taken to prison, less than two years old; and the next child she had, after her release, she named Deliverance. The following gives the line of descent down to the children of the late William Bassett, our first city clerk, who was cashier of the First National Bank, and had been for many years at the time of his sudden decease, June 21, 1871:

(2) William Bassett, son of William, the first Bassett here, married Sarah Hood, October 25, 1675, and had children,—Sarah, born 1676, who married Joseph Griffin, for her first husband, and a Newbold for her second; William, born 1678, who married Rebecca Berry in 1703 (his father's lands were divided between him and his brother John); Mary, born 1680, who married a Hill; John, born 1682, who married Abigail Berry, of Boston; Hannah, born 1685, who married John Estes, of Salem; Ruth, born 1689, who married Abraham Allen, of Marblehead; Joseph, born 1692, lost at sea; Deliverance, born 1695, who, in 1719, married Samuel Breed; Abigail, who, in 1728, married Samuel Alley.

(3) William Bassett, son of (2) William, had children,—Rebecca, born 1709; Miriam, born 1712, who in 1732, married David Northey, of Salem; Joseph, born 1715, who inherited his father's lands and married Eunice Hacker; Elizabeth, who, in 1729, married Benjamin Hood.

(4) Joseph Bassett, son of (3) William, had children,—William, born 1738, who died young; Isaac, born 1741, who, in 1769, married Mary, daughter of Joshua Collins, was a farmer and shoemaker, and inherited one-half of the lands of his father, and died in 1829; Nehemiah, born in 1749, who married Abigail Fern; Rebecca, born 1754, who married James Breed; Sarah, born 1757, who married Abraham Breed; Eunice, born 1759; Hannah, born 1763, who married William Breed, of Nahant.

(5) Isaac Bassett, son of (4) Joseph, had children, —Elizabeth; William, who died young; Eunice; William again, who also died young; Isaac, who married Ruth Breed; Eunice again, who married Ezra Collins; Hannah, who married Samuel Neal.

(6) Isaac Bassett, son of (5) Isaac, resided on Nahant Street, on the site occupied by his forefathers, and was long held in repute as a citizen of energy, enterprise and wealth. He died May 24, 1867; had children,—William, born March 4, 1803, died June 21, 1871; Jeremiah, who died young; Elizabeth, who died young; Elizabeth again, who married Samuel Boyce; Mary; Jeremiah again, who also died young; Eunice, who married W. S. Boyce; Lydia, who married James B. Kite, of Philadelphia; Hannah; Joseph, who died young; Anna Green, who died April 17, 1863.

(7) William Bassett, son of (6) Isaac, died June 21, 1871, aged sixty-eight. He was the first city clerk of Lynn, and a man much respected; was prominent in the early anti-slavery movements, and a co-worker with those leading spirits, William Lloyd Garrison and Wendell Phillips, both of whom were present at his funeral. His children were Susanna Smith, who married Cyrus M. Stimson; Eliza; Mary Ann, who married Thomas Herbert; William Herschell, who died young; Joseph, who also died young; Sarah, who married William W. Kellogg; William, who died young; William, again, born September 30, 1839; Edmund Quincy, who died young.

(8) William Basset, son of (7) William, now head of the banking firm, Ba-set, Whitney & Co., of Boston, had children,—William; Ruth; Edith, who died young.

Note.—The ancient spelling of the name was with one "t;" but in later years the final letter was doubled; recently, however, a desire has been manifested to return to the old orthography.

TARBOX FAMILY.—John Tarbox, the first settler of the name here, came as early as 1640. He was a farmer, and among his landed possessions had seven acres of upland on Water Hill, where he appears to have lived, having an orchard near his house. And upon the premises, before the coming of the whites, there was probably an Indian settlement or encampment, as about there were found numerous arrowheads and other relics. He was evidently a respected settler, active and thrifty. Though farming was his principal occupation, he turned his attention to other pursuits, and was a small proprietor in the iron works. He died May 26, 1674. His will is dated November 25, 1673, and to his son John says, —"I bequeath my house and housing, with orchard and all my land and meddow, with a greene rugg and a great iron kettell, and a round joyned table." He also says,—"I bequeath unto every one of my sonn, John Tarbox, his children, and my son Samuel's children, one ewe sheep apeece." The wife of his son John was a daughter of Richard Haven, who lived on Boston Street, corner of North Federal, the site on which George O. Tarbox recently erected a dwelling-house and store. Mr. Haven was ancestor of the two Methodist Bishops, Gilbert and Erastus Otis, and George O. Tarbox, just named, was a lineal descendant from the early settler, John.

With a daughter of Mr. Tarbox the course of true love does not seem to have run with uninterrupted smoothness, for it is found that on the 11th of September, 1649, Matthew Stanley was tried for winning her affections without the consent of her parents, convicted and fined £5, with 2*s.* 6*d.* fees, together with an allowance of 6*s.* to the parents of the young lady for their three days' attendance.

The son, Samuel, married Rebecca, a daughter of Joseph Armitage, landlord of the famous Anchor

Tavern. He had eighteen children, and died September 12, 1715, aged ninety-three years. He was one of the fifteen Lynn men impressed by order of court, November 13, 1674, for service in the King Philip War. A detachment had previously been sent on the same service. In 1685 he joined in "the humble petition of several inhabitants of Lynn, who were sold, impressed and sent forth for the service of the country, that was with the Indians in the long march in the Nipmugg country, and the fight at the fort Narragansett," which petition was signed by twenty-five inhabitants of the town.

It can hardly be said that the Tarbox family became very conspicuous beyond our own borders, though of late years some shining lights of the name, and presumably of the lineage, have here and there appeared. Nor has the family with us been conspicuous for numbers, notwithstanding the good example set by Samuel, who, as just stated, was the happy father of eighteen children. Still, there always have been and yet are a fair number with us. The name of Mr. George O. Tarbox, before mentioned, has been favorably greeted throughout the land for his late effective manifesto touching the "boycott" ordered upon him by the Knights of Labor.

But this class of personal notices cannot be extended here. And the reader may, if he please, consider the foregoing merely as examples that might be greatly multiplied.

And now, with notices of a few eccentric, or rather, perhaps. we should say, abnormal, characters, of which class Lynn has always had an abundant assortment, this division of our sketch will close. Some of those referred to have made an enduring mark and done much to spread abroad the name of the place, but to what advantage or disadvantage there will be different estimates. There is, however, a sort of worldly benefit in being talked about, even if what is said is not quite so favorable. The term "eccentric" is not intended to be applied in an offensive sense, and it is feared that some reader may not see the strict applicability of its use in every instance. In the first notice, especially, it may be deemed hardly appropriate, as matrimonial misunderstandings are in these days so common as to seem "natural" rather than "eccentric." The notices are not given merely to amuse, but for use by way of example or warning, as the case may be.

MONTOWAMPATE, *alias* SAGAMORE JAMES.—It is fitting to begin with a sketch of the Indian Sagamore James, who ruled over a considerable part of the seaboard line of Essex County at the time of the arrival of the whites, though he was then quite a young man, having been born in 1609. His Indian name was Montowampate, but the settlers called him Sagamore James. He was a son of Nanapashemet, whose jurisdiction extended over a large part of the territory between the Charles and Piscataqua Rivers. On the death of Nanapashemet his "kingdom" was divided, the portion including Lynn falling to Montowampate, his second son.

The young Sagamore fixed his residence on the delightful elevation still known as Sagamore Hill, lying between Beach and Nahant Streets, and overlooking the beach, Nahant and a considerable portion of the bay. It is now (1887) a thickly-settled part of the city, though still retaining some of its picturesque features. Its proximity to the sea was, perhaps, the chief reason why this place was chosen for the "royal residence," though the lovely natural surroundings may have added their attractions. Not much is known of Montowampate, nor indeed individually of any of the Indians found hereabout, though from the narratives of the old writers glimpses of character sometimes occur. Dudley says Montowampate was "of a far worse disposition" than his brother Wonohaquaham, or Sagamore John, as the English called him, who, he says, was "a handsome young man" . . . "affecting English apparel and houses and speaking well of our God."

The Lynn Sagamore seems to have had a high appreciation of his own dignity, and not a very lively sense of the courtesies due to the gentler sex. This is shown by a matrimonial imbroglio, which Thomas Morton thus recounts in his book entitled "The New English Canaan," published in 1632:

"The Sachem or Sagamore of Sagus, made choice, when he came to man's estate, of a lady of noble descent, daughter of Papasiquineo, the Sachem or Sagamore of the territories near Merrimack river; a man of the best note in all those parts, and, as my countryman, Mr. Wood, declares, in his 'Prospect,' a great nigromancer. This lady the young sachem, with the consent and good liking of her father, marries, and takes for his wife. Great entertainment hee and his received in those parts at her father's hands, wheare they were feasted in the best manner that might be expected, according to the custome of their nation, with reveling, and such other solemnities as is usual amongst them. The solomnity being ended, Papasiquineo caused a selected number of his men to waite on his daughter home into those parts that did properly belong to her lord and husband, where the attendants had entertainment by the sachem of Sagus and his countrymen. The solemnity being ended, the attendants were gratified.

"Not long after, the new married lady had a great desire to see her father and her native country, from whence she came. Her lord was willing to pleasure her, and not deny her request, amongst them thought to be reasonable, commanded a select number of his own men to conduct his lady to her father, where with great respect they brought her; and having feasted there a while, returned to their own country againe, leaving the lady to continue there at her owne pleasure amongst her friends and old acquaintances, where she passed away the time for a while, and in the end desired to returne to her lord againe. Her father, the old Papasiquineo, having notice of her intent, sent some of his men on ambassage to the young sachem, his sonne-in-law, to let him understand that his daughter was not willing to absent herself from his company any longer; and therefore, as the messengers had in charge, desired the young lord to send a convoy for her; but he, standing upon tearmes of honor, and the maintaining of his reputation, returned to his father-in-law this answer: 'That when she departed from him, hee caused his men to waite upon her to her father's territories as it did become him; but now she had an intent to returne, it did become her father to send her back with a convoy of his own people; and that it stood not with his reputation to make himself or his men so servile as to fetch her againe.'

"The old sachem Papasiquineo, having this message returned, was inraged to think that his young son-in-law did not esteem him at a higher rate than to capitulate with him about the matter, and returned him this sharp reply: 'That his daughter's blood and birth deserved

more respect than to be slighted, and therefore, if he would have her company, he were best to send or come for her.'

"The young sachem, not willing to undervalue himself, and being a man of a stout spirit, did not stick to say, 'That he should either send her by his own convoy or keepe her; for he was determined not to stoope so lowe.'

"So much these two sachems stood upon tearmes of reputation with each other, the one would not send for her, lest it should be any diminishing of honor on his part that should seeme to comply, that the lady, when I came out of the country, remained still with her father; which is a thing worth the noting, that salvage people should seek to maintain their reputation so much as they doe."

She was, however, finally restored to his arms, but how the reconciliation was effected does not appear. She soon after became a widow, as the death of Montowampate took place in 1633. Her marital life certainly had its troubles, for besides what has been spoken of, she was taken captive by the Tarratines and held a prisoner for two months. After the death of her husband she returned to her father.

The resolute Montowampate is said to have visited England in 1631, with a letter of introduction from Governor Winthrop to Emanuel Downing, the eminent London lawyer, and while there to have received the honors of an Indian king. His errand was to procure redress for a fraud committed by an Englishman named Watts in a beaver-skin transaction.

On the 4th of September, 1632, the court ordered that "Richard Hopkins shalbe severely whipt & branded with a hott iron on one of his cheekes for selling peeces & powder & shott to the Indians. Hereupon it was propounded if this offence should not be punished hereafter by death." One of the purchasers of the proscribed articles, it appears by Mr. Lewis, was the mettlesome Montowampate.

But this youthful Sagamore of Lynn soon ended his career. Winthrop, in his journal under date December 5, 1633, says,—"John Sagamore [elder brother of Montowampate] died of the small pox, and almost all of his people." . . . "James Sagamore [Montowompate], of Sagus, died also and most of his folks."

Mary Pitcher.—The stranger on arriving in Lynn, and leaving the railroad train at the Central Square Station, may observe towering up, a furlong or so off, in a northeasterly direction, a huge porphyry cliff, which he may be told is "High Rock." It is not now, however, so readily discerned from the Square as it was a few years since, for large business buildings, recently erected, intervene. Seventy-five years ago there was but little population in the vicinity, and the whole of "Rocks Pasture," near the southern border of which rises High Rock, was lonely and wild enough, with its rocky outcroppings and stunted growth of red cedar. The highway, indeed, wound along the southerly bound, but it was rough and little traveled. In pleasant weather, however, charming views could be obtained of diversified landscape and the ever-changing sea.

Upon the southern declivity, and fronting towards the sea, was a plain little cottage, seated a short distance in from the road, with a small, unkempt garden in front, and broken rocks, thistles and nettles in the rear. And that lonely cottage was the home of "Moll Pitcher," the celebrated fortune-teller of Lynn, for many years. It was here that she entertained the numerous visitors of all classes and from all places, who anxiously sought her aid to unveil the mysteries of the life before them, never doubting that—

"She could tell by tea-ground mark,
Fortune bright or fortune dark;
And could give, O wondrous dame,
Loving swain's or maiden's name,
Showing by her mystic art
Whether true or false of heart;
And, by turning cards, could show
Life's whole span, its weal or wo."

This remarkable woman was born in 1738, of reputable parents, in Marblehead. Her father was a master mariner, and connected with some of the best families in Essex County. And her own reputation seems to have remained unsullied, unless her occult pretensions are to be taken as a stain. Her maiden-name was Mary Diamond, and Mr. Lewis says of her,—

"She was of the medium height and size for a woman, with a good form and agreeable manners. Her head, phrenologically considered, was somewhat capacious, her forehead broad and full, her hair dark brown, her nose inclining to long, and her face pale and thin. There was nothing gross or sensual in her appearance; her countenance was rather intellectual; and she had that contour of face and expression which, without being positively beautiful, is, nevertheless, decidedly interesting; a thoughtful, pensive and sometimes downcast look, almost approaching to melancholy; an eye, when it looked at you, of calm and keen penetration; and an expression of intelligent discernment, half mingled with a glance of shrewdness. She took a poor man for a husband, and then adopted, what she doubtless thought, the harmless employment of fortune-telling, in order to support her children. In this she was probably more successful than she herself had anticipated; and she became celebrated, not only throughout America, but throughout the world, for her skill. There was no port on either continent, where floated the flag of an American ship, that had not heard the fame of Moll Pitcher. . . . Many persons came from places far remote to consult her on affairs of love or loss of property, or to obtain her surmises respecting the vicissitudes of their future fortune. Every youth who was not assured of the reciprocal affection of his fair one, and every maid who was desirous of anticipating the hour of her highest felicity, repaired at evening to her humble dwelling. . . . That she made no pretension to anything supernatural is evident from her own admission, when some one offered her a large sum if she would tell him what ticket in the lottery would draw the highest prize. 'Do you think,' said she, 'if I knew, I would not buy it myself?' Several of the best authenticated anecdotes which are related of her seem to imply that she possessed, in some degree, the faculty which is now termed clairvoyance. Indeed, there seems to be no other conclusion, unless we suppose that persons of general veracity have told us absolute falsehoods. The possession of this faculty, with her keen perception and shrewd judgment, in connection with the ordinary art which she admitted to have used, to detect the character and business of her visitors, will perhaps account for all that is extraordinary in her intelligence. In so many thousand instances also, of the exercise of her faculty, there is certainly no need of calling in supernatural aid to account for her sometimes judging right; and these favorable instances were certain to be related to her advantage, and insured her abundance of credibility."

It is stated that the celebrated "Lord Timothy Dexter," of Newburyport, was accustomed to visit her, and place implicit confidence in her utterances. But whether his strange commercial speculations, which appear to have been uniformly successful, were

attributable to her promptings, cannot be known. She was married on the 2d of October, 1760, to Robert Pitcher, a shoemaker, and became the mother of one son and three daughters. And there, in the lonely home, already described, she died on the 9th of April, 1813, aged seventy-five years. Her remains were interred in the old burying-ground, near the western end of the common. The memory of such a person is not likely to be much honored by those of her own generation, and her resting-place has remained unheeded and almost unknown till the present time (1887)—nearly three-quarters of a century—when two worthy citizens—Isaac O. Guild and John T. Moulton—have erected a neat head-stone to mark the spot, which was some years since pointed out by an aged man who was present at the burial. And to that spot, in future years, many a sentimental maiden and swain will doubtless repair—a class who always had her warmest sympathies.

Mrs. Pitcher was connected with the Silsbee family of Lynn in this way: Lydia, a great-granddaughter of Henry Silsbee, the first of the name in Lynn, in 1735, married Aholiab Diamond, a son of Captain John Diamond, of Marblehead, and had two sons, Samuel and Richard, and one daughter, Mary. This daughter Mary was married, October 2, 1760, to Robert Pitcher, of Lynn, as before stated, thus becoming "Moll Pitcher." Descendants of hers still remain among us. Henry Silsbee, the old settler just named, probably located on Fayette Street not far from the corner of Essex, in which vicinity he owned considerable land. He was designated as a "shoemaker," though probably quite as much of a farmer. The family has always been respectable, but not numerous, and several eminent individuals have appeared in the line, Hon. Nathaniel Silsbee, United States Senator, among them. Silsbee Street perpetuates the name.

George Gray.—Near the close of the last century there suddenly appeared in Lynn a man seemingly of an age somewhere between thirty and forty years. He was physically well-conditioned, but in disposition unaccountably reserved. It was soon known that he had come to make this his permanent home, for he made himself possessor of a limited tract of wild land in a lonely and dismal neighborhood, and there erected a rude habitation which, for forty years, continued to be his hermitage, for there he lived "solitary and alone" during that long period.

This man was George Gray, the Lynn hermit. And the hermitage was on Boston Street, nearly opposite the entrance to Pine Grove Cemetery. He was by birth a Scotchman, and died on the 28th of February, 1848, at the age of seventy-eight years. Till population began to increase around him, which it did, much to his annoyance, his home was secluded enough for the most determined misanthrope. A high, woody hill rose in the rear; a tangled swamp on either hand, with a weedy brook winding through; while in front, beyond a little area of brambles and rank vegetation, wound the street just named. He persistently, and often with a good deal of asperity, refused to communicate to the many curious inquirers any knowledge of his personal history or the causes which induced the adoption of his comfortless and unnatural mode of life. And that very secrecy gave rise to numberless romantic surmises. Some believed that an unfortunate affair of the heart estranged him from social intercourse; others hinted that some great crime rendered his flight and concealment necessary. But he had the shrewdness to avoid entangling himself by contradicting or admitting the truth of any report.

One of the latest circumstantial surmises related to his connection with the fate of the French Dauphin, Charles Louis, son of Louis XVI. and Marie Antoinette. It gained currency by an article in *Putnam's Magazine*, a monthly periodical of high standing; the theory being that the Dauphin was taken from the custody of Simon, the inhuman ruffian in whose keeping he had been placed, brought to the wilds of America and given in charge of a woman of the St. Regis tribe, who reared him with affection, though never claiming that he was her own child, and probably never dreaming that he was not some poor, friendless waif. It was further suggested that Rev. Eleazer Williams, a missionary of the Episcopal Church, laboring with the St. Regis Indians, was the identical Dauphin. Then gained currency the belief that Mr. Gray was one of those who brought the Dauphin to America, it being declared that he was certainly in France, a red republican, at that period. It is not certain, exactly, what threads were supposed to be found connecting Gray with the transaction, unless it was that Mr. Williams—who no doubt really believed himself to be the Dauphin—came to Lynn, and, finding that Gray was dead, became very anxious to procure a specimen of his hand-writing, for which purpose he called on the writer. But these surmises and rumors need not longer occupy our attention.

At times the hermit was by no means averse to discussing affairs with his neighbors, though very seldom could one receive a welcome to his premises, and never would an invitation to enter his dwelling be extended. His calls were generally made at night. The writer was occasionally favored with one, and usually found him so forgetful of the passing time that it was necessary to remind him of the lateness of the hour by a hint like that of extinguishing the lights, nothing short of some such rudeness being effectual. He was a reflecting man, and of considerable literary and scientific attainment; but the current story of his carrying a Hebrew Bible about in his pocket was, no doubt, a fiction. He took great pleasure in attending lectures, and in studying works on the abstruse sciences. But his fondness for the mechanic arts was, perhaps, his most marked trait; and he became very skillful in some branches connected with machinery.

Strangers would sometimes vex him with untimely visits, and by unpalatable remarks induce sudden exhibitions of temper; but if one assumed to be an adept in any branch of mechanics, he was pretty sure of a courteous hearing. He claimed several useful inventions, and spent considerable money in establishing his claims against those who infringed his patents.

In religion he was probably a materialist most of life. Perhaps a dozen years before his death he remarked that it was "ridiculous for any one to contend that intelligence was not the result of physical organization." But it was understood that he subsequently abandoned his old views, and died in the Calvinistic faith. He was eccentric in his habits, and had little regard for personal appearance, oftentimes—especially during the last few years of his life—appearing in a grim and filthy condition. He was remarkable, even in old age, for power of physical endurance. Many a time has he walked to Boston, on a winter evening, attended a lecture, and walked home after it had closed, making a distance, in all, of full twenty miles, most likely with no thicker covering to his head than a dilapidated straw hat, and upon his feet coarse shoes and no stockings. He suffered much from disease during his last few years. And there, in his forlorn habitation, without the sympathy of friends or the common endearments of home, in solitude and distress, his last days were passed.

Mr. Gray, at the time of his decease, possessed property to the amount of about four thousand dollars. He died intestate, and his debts were not large; a considerable portion, therefore, went into the treasury of the commonwealth. His savings do not appear, however, to have accumulated from a miserly disposition, but rather from habits of industry and a naturally frugal turn, for the administrator remarked that from the appearance of things he could hardly have taken sufficient interest in his pecuniary affairs to have known what he did possess. In some instances the evidences of his money deposits were found thrown among waste paper.

The death of the hermit was noticed in the newspapers throughout the country, and several persons appeared, claiming to be heirs; but they failed to substantiate their claims.

Hiram Marble.—This somewhat singular individual appeared in Lynn in 1852, being then of the age of forty-seven. He brought with him his wife, a son of the age of twenty, and a young daughter. He immediately petitioned the city to sell him the famous Dungeon Rock, a greenstone cliff a mile or two back in the woods, and very difficult of access, on account of steep and tangled ascents, swamps and quagmires. He succeeded in purchasing, at a low price, the rock and about five acres of the surrounding woodland. In that lonely place he erected a rude habitation, and soon set to work building a road down towards the town. This was a severe piece of labor, for gnarled old trees, huge boulders and ledge-croppings were to be removed. But he persevered heroically till a passable way was obtained. How a man, evidently not very strong or in vigorous health, could undertake such a piece of work was astonishing. But the crowbar, pick and shovel were courageously wielded, and resounding blasts awoke the echoes during the hot days of summer, he feigning to regard it as light labor, saying that he had been seized by a weakening complaint, and found himself unable to pursue the hard work he had commenced on the rock, and so had changed to the light work of road-building.

The hard work commenced on the rock was to excavate, in search of treasure, gold and jewels, imagined to have been deposited somewhere down in its unknown depths. He had come, as he alleged, by spiritual direction, and had full faith in the assurance of the spirits, that they would watch his progress, give directions and lead him to final success. By no means deficient in intelligence, he yet was a credulous enthusiast. In person he was of medium height, had a bright, quick eye, and wore a flowing beard of sandy hue, which did not always bear evidence of having recently had the discipline of a comb. He was communicative, and in his conversation ran a pleasant vein of jocularity; was usually ready to converse on his plans, fears and hopes; and with great good nature, sometimes with an apparently keen relish, alluded to the jeers and taunts of those who were disposed to rank him as a lunatic. The writer had occasional conversations with him, and was sometimes struck by the freedom with which he discussed the pros and cons of spiritualism; nevertheless, his faith and perseverance were refreshing. He asserted that he had been a confirmed infidel, a believer in nothing beyond the visible and temporal, till he received communications that could have come from none but intelligent, invisible beings, unrestrained by any physical obstacle.

For about fifteen years Mr. Marble continued his herculean labors at Dungeon Rock, in bodily weakness much of the time, but buoyed up by the strong hope and, as he believed, supernatural assurance that his labor would not be in vain. But it was in vain, and he died there, worn out and diseased, on the 10th of November, 1868, aged sixty-five years. He remained a spiritualist to the last, and the mediums of the vicinity were invited to be present at the funeral services, which were held at the Rock on the forenoon of Wednesday, November 11th. He was a native of Charlton, in Worcester County, and thither his remains were taken for burial.

Edwin Marble, who at the time of his father's death had attained the age of thirty-six years, and had continued to participate in the arduous toil of excavation, now succeeded to the direction of the work, subject, of course, as he declared, to the engineering of the spirits. His health, however, had

already become undermined, and he was soon obliged to suspend active operations. He died on the 16th of January, 1880, aged forty-eight, and was buried near the foot of the rock, on the southwestern slope, it having been his expressed desire to be interred near the scene of his hopeful, though fruitless, labors. A considerable number of friends, perhaps fifty, most of them of the spiritualistic faith, were present at the burial service, which was simple and affecting; and held there, in the deep forest, amid the winter scenery, was peculiarly touching. The hymn "In the Sweet By and By" was sung at the close. He was a man of good character and good disposition, and a firm believer in spiritual manifestations.

Thus died these two worthy men—father and son—their deaths no doubt hastened, if not occasioned, by their operations in the dark, damp cavern their own hands had formed in the bowels of the mysterious Dungeon Rock, that unwholesome work-place, through the ragged seams of which the water dripped, and where the stifled air reverberated with sounds that might well be taken for supernatural indications. Their labors were in vain. No treasure was reached; but it need not be concluded that they suffered pangs of disappointment, for, cheered on day by day, as they believed, by guiding and unerring spirits, they were hopeful to the last.

After this brief notice of the Messrs. Marble, it would seem almost necessary to add something regarding the supposed deposit of treasure which had induced them, as well as others before them, to waste labor, strength and means at Dungeon Rock. The floating and incoherent traditions on the subject were gathered up by Mr. Lewis and published in the first edition of his history. And, perhaps, it would be most satisfactory to give his account in its original shape:

"This year (1658) there was a great earthquake in New England, connected with which is the following story: Some time previous, on a pleasant evening, a little after sunset, a small vessel was seen to anchor near the mouth of Saugus River. A boat was presently lowered from her side, into which four men descended, and moved up the river a considerable distance, when they landed, and proceeded directly into the woods. They had been noticed by only a few individuals; but in those early times, when the people were surrounded by dangers, and susceptible of alarm, such an incident was well calculated to awaken suspicion, and in the course of the evening the intelligence was conveyed to many houses. In the morning, the people naturally directed their eyes towards the shore, in search of the strange vessel; but she was gone, and no trace could be found either of her or her singular crew. It was afterward ascertained that, on that morning, one of the men at the Iron Works, on going into the foundry, discovered a paper, on which was written, that if a quantity of shackles, handcuffs, hatchets and other articles of iron manufacture were made and deposited, with secrecy, in a certain place in the woods, which was particularly designated, an amount of silver, to their full value, would be found in their place. The articles were made in a few days, and placed in conformity with the directions. On the next morning they were gone, and the money was found according to the promise; but though a watch had been kept, no vessel was seen. Some months afterwards the four men returned, and selected one of the most secluded and romantic spots in the woods of Saugus for their abode. The place of their retreat was a deep, narrow valley, shut in on two sides by high hills and craggy, precipitous rocks, and shrouded on the others by thick pines, hemlocks and cedars, between which there was only one small spot to which the rays of the sun, at noon, could penetrate. On climbing up the rude and almost perpendicular steps of the rock on the eastern side, the eye could command a full view of the bay on the south, and a prospect of a considerable portion of the surrounding country. The place of their retreat has ever since been called the Pirates' Glen, and they could not have selected a spot on the coast, for many miles, more favorable for the purposes both of concealment and observation. Even at this day, when the neighborhood has become thickly peopled, it is still a lonely and desolate place, and probably not one in a hundred of the inhabitants has ever descended into its silent and gloomy recess. There the pirates built a small hut, made a garden, and dug a well, the appearance of which is still visible. It has been supposed that they buried money; but though people have dug there, and in several other places, none has ever been found. After residing there some time, their retreat became known, and one of the king's cruisers appeared on the coast. They were traced to the glen, and three of them were taken and carried to England, where it is probable they were executed. The other, whose name was Thomas Veal, escaped to a rock in the woods, about two miles to the north, in which was a spacious cavern, where the pirates had previously deposited some of their plunder. There the fugitive fixed his residence, and practiced the trade of a shoemaker, occasionally coming down to the village to obtain articles of sustenance. He continued his residence till the great earthquake this year, when the top of the rock was loosened, and crushed down into the mouth of the cavern, inclosing the unfortunate inmate in its unyielding prison. It has ever since been called the Pirate's Dungeon."

Now, it was this Thomas Veal, who is alleged to have escaped from the Glen and concealed himself in the Dungeon Rock, or Pirate's Dungeon, as Mr. Lewis chooses to call it, who, together with a piratical companion, spiritually appeared to the Marbles, time after time, usually in jolly mood, and assured them of the rich spoils of gold and jewels still in their keeping, and seemed very willing to surrender them

whenever they could be reached by drills and gunpowder. And Veal, moreover, added some touching revelations concerning a Spanish princess and another bright maiden who had been held captive there, and were, with their grim warder, shut in forever by the awful earthquake. Is it, then, to be wondered at that the Marbles, firmly believing all this, and much more, should have pursued their exhausting labors with high hopes? It is not necessary to go into a disquisition as to the authenticity of the traditions here recounted, or an examination of the supposed spiritual revelations. The intelligent reader will perceive the utter absurdity of some and the improbability of others. But yet it can hardly be said that there is no foundation in truth; and none of us would willingly have one of our long-cherished legends entirely fade away.

There is scarcely a place on the whole New England coast that has not traditions about buried treasures of gold and silver, and where unsuccessful attempts have not from time to time been made for their recovery.

It is undoubtedly true that the old buccaneers, who were desperadoes from every nation and kindred, did for years, about the close of the seventeenth century, pursue their nefarious trade of indiscriminate piracy. And, much to their discredit, the colonists were sometimes charged with connivance at the traffic. Those sanguinary sea-rovers were accustomed to rendezvous in the West Indies, and thence fall upon the richly-laden Spanish galleons as they pursued their way homeward with the wealth of the mines of Mexico and Peru. But their depredations were not confined to these; every other craft of value that they met fell a prey, excepting in the few cases of successful resistance. Then there were the noted pirates, Kidd and Bellamy, who were known to be more or less on the coast. And if all the accounts of the treasures they buried are true, they must have secreted enough to load half the British navy.

Whether there was any connection between the earlier sea-robbers and those who made famous the Glen and Pirate's Dungeon at Lynn, may not now be known, but damaging fancies will arise in suspicious minds.

The following lines from a weird old chant, reciting the ceremony at the burial of money by pirates, are very striking:

I saw them bury their golden store at the root of the pirate tree;
Bold Blackbeard cried, "Who 'll guard this wealth?" and O, 'twas merry to see
How even the wretch who fears not hell, turns pale at the thought of death!
But one bold knave stood boldly out, and offered himself for scath—
"I'll watch it," quoth he, "for these forty years I've wandered o'er land and sea,
And I'm tired of doing the devil's work—so bury me under the tree;
And better I'll rest as I guard this wealth, than you, in the realms below,
Where the soul cannot burst amid endless groans—where the pirate's soul must go,"
So they shot him dead with a charmed ball, and they laid a broad flat stone
Deep in the earth above the gold, and they stood the corpse thereon.
Now wo betide the daring fool who seeketh that gold to win.
Let mortals beware of the noble wretch who standeth that grave within.

There is enough of this old piratical literature to form the basis of a countless number of dime novels, and Lynn would naturally be expected to have her share.

Lynn Writers.—It was a favorite idea of the author of this sketch to prepare extended notices of different Lynn writers, living and dead, who have from time to time, by their works, contributed to the edification or entertainment of their fellow-mortals, giving specimens of the productions. Among the multitude of writers who have lived and still live here, a score at least are deserving of most honorable mention; some having reveled in the delightsome fields of poetry, some in the more sombre walks of history, some in the elevating regions of science and some in the dreamy walks of romance. Such a task would be a delicate one, and in several respects difficult; for, to say nothing of incompetency on the part of the writer, it would be hard to determine what names should be selected from the long catalogue. It might appear invidious to choose only those who were natives; and then, as to those who were not natives, puzzling doubts might arise as to where the line should be drawn. Lynn has been the temporary abiding-place of quite a number of the greater lights of literature and science,—of Longfellow, the poet; of Prescott, the historian; of Agassiz, the scientist, for example. But would it not be rather assuming to claim them as Lynn authors? Their reputation, however, being world-wide, may, perhaps, be said to belong as much to Lynn as any other place. Then there are others who, though natives, turned their backs upon their good mother in early life and afterwards became eminent as writers, but never manifested any love for their deserted parent. Are they deserving of specially honorable mention? Brief notices of a number of our writers, however, are given elsewhere, and need not be repeated here. Poets and philosophers may not be the most useful citizens in the worldling's estimation, but the lights they shed illumine many a dark passage and cheer many a dismal hour in the tramp of life. Our reverence for departed worth, it is hoped, will not be measured by the length of notice; for sometimes the better one is known, the less need there is for extended details. And in no case is it our desire to pose as critic.

William Wood, one of the earliest who settled within our borders, should be first named, for as early as 1634, in his "New England's Prospect," he outlined her physical features and drew terse word-pictures of some of her pleasant and impressive localities. But as he is several times brought into view in other parts of this sketch, nothing further is demanded here.

Most of the old parish ministers, from Rev. Mr. Whiting, who commenced his labors here in 1636, down to Rev. Parsons Cooke, the last, whose ministry here ended by his death, were learned men and skilled in the use of the pen. Their published writings were chiefly on theological topics, and often tinctured by the acrimony of the times. Their discourses on special occasions were sometimes published, and the few copies preserved in the antiquarian collections are even now sought for with avidity, as developing the peculiar religious views and tendencies of the times, as much as for the genius and learning they display. Since Mr. Cooke's day the controversial hatchet has not been fiercely wielded by any of the settled pastors. Indeed, the differing sentiments of most Christian bodies seem to have become more and more assimilated. But it is hoped that the apparent drawing together is to be attributed to the awakening of true Christian love, rather than to indifference as to any religion. But in the company of the clerical worthies we may not long linger. Their fame is not local.

Rev. Enoch Mudge, 1776–1850.—This good man was a minister of the Methodist connection for a great number of years, having been licensed at the early age of seventeen. His poetical effusions were many, and appeared in various periodical publications. His longest production was "Lynn, a Poem." It was written in 1820, comprised some six hundred and fifty lines and was published in pamphlet form in 1826. In the opening lines the muse takes a view from High Rock, his eye ranging over the wonderful panorama of the sublime and beautiful in nature, occasionally pausing in view of some interesting fabric, and all the way scattering didactic reflections and useful hints. It was about this time that the famous sea serpent was first seen in these waters. And in view of the fact that he has this year, 1887, again made this coast his sporting-place, and seemingly retains his early love for our bay, the following quotation will not be deemed inappropriate:

"Hard by the shore is seen, day after day,
Surprising sight! the Serpens Marinus;
A sight so wondrous strange upon our coasts,
That multitudes collect to feast their eyes;
He with serpentine movements swiftly glides,
Though huge in bulk, and leaves his lengthened wake
Far in the smooth green sea, then darts his head
Aloft in air, and seems with careless ease
To gaze around; anon impetuous starts,
Plunging his head, and ploughs the liquid way;
Sudden he stops and rests when on the waves,
As if to give the observer leave to count
The large protuberances upon his back,
And mark with leisure eye his wondrous frame.
Each eye beholds the varying scene diverse;
Some see, or think they see, the serpent's eyes,
His mane and slender neck, and whiten'd breast;
Some see his back all clad in rusty scales,
His flippers, or his smooth and velvet skin;
His girth and length as various they describe,
From fifty to thrice fifty feet in length,
From fifteen inches through to triple that.
He is a monstrous something, all agree,
But know not what—Sea-Serpent is the name
By which this nondescript is known by us.
The literati term him Halsydous,
By Ramus and Pontoppidam described,
And seen by many in the Greenland seas."

These lines are not given for the brilliancy of their poetic conception or felicity of expression, but they are fairly descriptive. Some of his shorter poems, however, were pronounced by intelligent critics worthy of a place among the selected specimens of our acknowledged poets.

Mr. Mudge was father of Hon. Enoch Redington Mudge, the generous donor of the beautiful St. Stephen's Memorial Church, erected in Lynn in 1881.

Isaac Newhall, 1782–1858.—Mr. Newhall was known in the literary world only by his letters on Junius, a series addressed to Hon. John Pickering, in which he endeavored to show that Earl Temple was the author of those celebrated papers. The letters were published in a duodecimo volume in 1831, and showed the author to be well versed in British politics, with good knowledge of her history and literature. The chief business of his life was that of a retail trader, at one time in Macon, Ga., and afterwards in Salem, Mass. But he spent the evening of his days in quiet and comfort at the old homestead on the eastern side of Mall Street, Lynn—the same house in which he was born on the 24th of August, 1782, and in which he died on the 6th of July, 1858.

Enoch Curtin, 1794–1842.—Mr. Curtin, for some years, was a poetic and prose writer of much local repute and of real ability. But his education was limited, and his ambition to shine as a literary light so small that his name has never become known to the extent it deserved to be, and might have been. His poetic efforts were chiefly confined to the production of odes and verses for special occasions, public celebrations and so forth. And his prose articles were largely on local and every-day topics—political, sanitary, gossiping. No collection of his writings ever appeared in book-form. His residence was in the easterly part of the town—Woodend, so called.

Alonzo Lewis, 1794–1861.—It must be conceded that Mr. Lewis stands at the head of the writers Lynn has thus far produced. He published volumes of poetry and local history, besides contributing, during many years, articles on almost every current topic, for the newspapers and other periodicals. A more extended notice of him appears elsewhere in these pages.

Maria Augusta Fuller, 1806–31.—Miss Fuller was chiefly known by her poems, though her prose writings were by no means without merit. No collection of her effusions were ever presented to the public in book-form, or, we feel quite sure, her fame would have become far from local. Her father, Joseph Fuller, was the first president of the first bank in Lynn, and was our first State Senator. The house in

which he resided is still standing, at the junction of Union and Broad Streets. Miss Fuller died at the early age of twenty-four years.

Solomon Moulton, 1808–27. — Of this young man—for he died at the early age of nineteen years—a word should be said, for while we realize the utter futility of any attempt to rear upon the uncertain foundation of what "might have been" any ideal fame, it is yet natural to augur whither steps already taken may fairly lead. Young Moulton certainly made some poetic contributions to the newspapers that gave great promise for the future, besides containing in themselves passages of striking thought, touching pathos and felicitous expression. It will be remembered that it was from the columns of newspapers that our cherished poets—as Bryant, Willis, Longfellow and Whittier—first beamed. Mr. Lewis knew Moulton well, and often spoke highly of his poetic ability. He was born in the house on Boston Street, southeast corner of Moulton, but was adopted by an uncle and lived most of his days in Market Street. No collection of his writings was ever published; indeed, he never wrote enough to make a book of much size.

The writers of whom we have thus far spoken—Wood, Mudge, Newhall, Curtin, Lewis, Fuller, Moulton—have long since departed; yet, though their tongues are mute and their pens have dropped, with them we may still commune through their works.

"They are silent; silent forever! Cold, cold are their breasts of clay! Oh! from the rock on the hill, from the top of the windy steep, speak, ye ghosts of the dead!"

Among her living writers Lynn can boast of several who are worthy of far more extended notice than can be allowed in this connection. Brief recognition, however, is better than entire silence. Fugitive pieces without number have appeared in the publications of the day, many of them worthy of being preserved in durable form. And it is hoped that at some future time a discriminating gatherer may arise to rescue them from oblivion. He may not receive the deserved pecuniary reward, but his labor of love would be highly appreciated. In the present enumeration it seems highly proper that mention be first made of such as have, in one way and another, contributed to the elucidation of our history. Of these should be named:

Richard I. Attwill, who has contributed for the newspapers transcripts of interesting documents which he has here and there discovered, accompanied by apt explanations and annotations from his own pen.

George E. Emery has furnished articles which, by his well-trained descriptive powers and lively sense of fitness, have done their share to quicken the taste for historic reading.

Clarence W. Hobbs, by his "Lynn and Surroundings," published at the close of 1886, has added a work of much interest. Its mechanical execution is attractive, and the matter worthy of its neat investment. It is well illustrated, and the name indicates its general character.

David N. Johnson has done work worthy of praise in his "Sketches of Lynn, or the Changes of Fifty Years," published in 1880. He has also written articles for the publications of the day, and hymns and odes for special occasions.

John T. Moulton has done a great deal of pen work, for which he will receive the thanks of future generations. Among other things, he has had all the inscriptions in the old burying-ground copied and printed in durable form, with an introduction. He is one of the most intelligent and accurate genealogists among us. The Moulton family has not been destitute of poetic representatives; and he, true to the family tendency, has produced some metrical pieces of animating sentiment and easy flow.

Howard Mudge Newhall is yet a young man, but has already written numerous articles of real value on the business of Lynn, its history and present condition. His illustrated article in *Harper's Magazine*, January, 1885, entitled "A Pair of Shoes," attracted marked attention. He has an eminently practical turn of mind, skill in the arrangement of topics, and clearness of expression.

It may not be overstepping the bounds of modesty for the writer of the sketch now in hand to mention that he has prepared for publication many pages pertaining to the history of Lynn, its sombre and authentic side, as well as its romantic and legendary.

Edwin Thompson has, from time to time, contributed to the newspapers articles on local historical matters that have always been received with favor.

Cyrus M. Tracy has for many years been an acceptable writer as a journalist, essayist and historiographer. Nor has he neglected science and the muse. His historical sketches of several places in Essex County were published in the ponderous volume of C. F. Jewett & Co., in 1878. His "Studies of the Essex Flora" were published in 1858, in pamphlet form. He delivered the poem at the dedication of the City Hall, November 30, 1867, and the oration at the celebration of the two hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the settlement of the town.

Gardiner Tufts, in 1883, contributed a series of articles to the *Lynn Transcript* entitled "The Old Choirs of Lynn," which, in fact, embodied the musical history of the place for a long and interesting period. They were worthy of the high commendation they received. In the course of the series appeared biographical notices, anecdotes and terse descriptive passages.

For a long series of years, too, our tuneful fellow-citizens, J. Warren Newhall and Joseph W. Nye, have, as occasion prompted, celebrated in verse marked passages in our history, past and present. It is hard to say what Lynn, for almost a generation, would have done without their felicitous contributions for celebrations, dedications and similar occasions.

As we proceed, still other names press upon the recollection. And some of those who do not come within the categories named certainly deserve honorable mention; among them JAMES BERRY BENSEL, who very recently forever laid aside his pen. He was regarded by competent critics as a poetical writer of more than ordinary promise. And there seems reason to believe that had he lived he would have taken high rank as a poet.

EDWARD P. USHER has acquired note as a legal writer, and as a versifier his skill has long been recognized. He delivered the poem at the dedication of the Soldiers' Monument September 17, 1873.

FRANK R. WHITTEN, who is still a young man, has shown marked ability in the line of literary criticism, as well as in other departments. Favorable mention, too, should be made of EUGENE BARRY, JOSIAH F. KIMBALL and THOMAS F. PORTER.

There are likewise other worthy pen-charmers, whose names would be introduced here were they not presented in other connections in these pages; and some, too, there undoubtedly are whose names have eluded busy memory's pursuit.

It must be admitted that few places can boast of a larger relative number of writers than good old Lynn. And it seems as if, among us all, something considerable might be accomplished. The old pen-wielders are passing off, but much is reasonably to be expected from some of those now taking their places. The writer, indeed, dares predict that certain of our younger brethren and sisters of the pen will yet attain most enviable renown. But he does not dare record the names of those on whom the prediction rests, as his opinion may not be verified; and were it or were it not verified, his temerity would probably be met by the retributive scorn of those not named as within the horoscopic view.

Macpherson, in his preface to the poems of Ossian, says: "The making of poetry, like any other handicraft, may be learned by industry." But the writer can hardly subscribe, unconditionally, to that, having in view quite a number who have striven for many a day, with unflinching industry, to gain a seat on Parnassus, and have never been able to reach that alluring height—at least in the opinion of their envious critics. However, they undoubtedly received pleasure in picnicking by the way, and were constantly stimulated by hope and expectation. The pleasures of literature, derived from its own dear self, one would think might be sufficient for all the care bestowed on its cultivation. Says Voltaire, "Literature nourishes the soul, rectifies it, consoles it." Such, indeed, is its legitimate effect; but in stalk the hankerings after fame and the jealousies which writers, the more eminent as well as the more conceited, too often allow to diffuse their subtile poison. Dean Swift, in his pungent way, puts it thus:

> "What poet would not grieve to see
> His brother write as well as he?
> But, rather than they should excel,
> Would wish his rivals all in ——?"

It cannot be denied that much of the versification of the present day, notwithstanding its "mellifluous flow," falls far below the standard of the French writer just quoted, who, in his axiomatic way, remarks: "Verses that do not teach men new and affecting truths little deserve to be read." One may easily perceive that in much of the poetry of our days many hollow and many turbid places are bridged over and concealed by mellifluous versification. But, in the authoritative words of Percival:

> "'Tis not the chime and flow of words that move
> In measured file and metrical array;
> 'Tis not the union of returning sounds,
> Nor all the pleasing artifice of rhyme,
> And quantity, and accent that can give
> This all-pervading spirit to the ear;
> Or blend it with the movings of the soul.
> 'Tis not the noisy babbler who displays,
> In studied phrase and ornate epithet
> And rounded period, poor and vapid thoughts,
> Which peep from out the cumbrous ornaments
> That overload their littleness."

An attempt to play the critic is very far from the design of the writer, as, of course, a critic should always be better informed than he on whom he sheds his perfume. Is there any limit short of the extent of the human mind, to the knowledge and ability of even the magazine or newspaper reviewer of this enlightened day? Where, then, is the poor writer in one special department? There is an anecdote told of Rev. Mr. Parker, the first minister of Newbury, to this effect: President Chauncey and some scholastic brethren undertook to deal with him for something he had written, which they considered too liberal toward the Episcopacy. They addressed him in English, and he replied in Latin; into that language they followed him; he then charged in Greek and in Greek they rejoined; to Hebrew he then resorted, and there again they met him. Finally, he made a stand in Arabic, when, not being able to follow him, they gave up the contest. He then intimated that, as they were not his peers in knowledge, it was presumption in them to undertake to criticise him. This was an old-fashioned contest. But your modern critic, being at the head of the class in all human knowledge, heeds no obstacle. And the reflex brilliancy of the friendly commentator often has, as we all know, something to do with shaping his periods. Indeed, he sometimes sees

> "In Homer more than Homer knew."

But, unhappily for the yet unrecognized aspirant, little of the reflected light shines on him.

Our busy community has no catalogue of exclusively literary persons to exhibit. Her writers have been those who exercised the pen at intervals unoccupied by the daily round in some vocation more sure of securing a livelihood. As a general thing, the physically infirm are more inclined to intellec-

tual pursuits than the strong and healthy, for the invalid is at a disadvantage where strength of arm and bodily endurance are required; and hence it is that some of our best writings come from the retired room of the invalid. Bodily infirmity has often done much in making the scholar, by disabling from physical activity. But the bodily health of the good people of Lynn is not intended to be urged as a reason for any deficiency in mental attainment. Sick or well, let us remember that though finely-turned periods always possess a certain charm, they are of little worth to the thoughtful if deficient in backing.

As has been seen, there is hardly a period in Lynn's history when she has not had a bright company of sons and daughters curveting, pen in hand, over the fields of poetry, sentiment and philosophy, and gathering in a goodly store for the relief of the jaded minds of those fellow-mortals destined to the more ignoble pursuits of life. By their refreshing and stimulating contributions, they have performed a good part in keeping alive the vivacious tone that has always characterized our industrious home. And may the prospects of a now promising future never be darkened!

CHAPTER XX.

LYNN—(*Continued*).

TAVERNS—MODES OF TRAVEL.

Character of the Old Houses of Entertainment, and Scenes Enacted in Them—Biographical Sketches of some Famous Landlords—Incidents of Travel—Salem and Boston Turnpike—The Old Stage Lines—Opening of the Eastern Railroad—Hotels of Later Times.

"Around the glowing evening fire,
The farmer, woodsman, village 'squire,
With pointed finger, loosened tongue,
Shows right for every human wrong.
In kindling mood they sit and sip
The nectar called New England flip,
That late invented beverage,
Rare product of a guzzling age,
America's first evil gift
To help the world in toping thrift,
More sapid than old England's beer,
More potent in its vulgar cheer."

—NORTON.

NEXT to the church and the school, the attention of our fathers was directed to the establishment and regulation of the ordinary, the inn, the tavern, or the house of entertainment, as such places seem to have been indiscriminately called. The accommodation of travelers was, of course, the ostensible purpose; but other considerations had weight. In the old country the settlers had been accustomed to visit such resorts,

"... where nut-brown draughts inspired,
Where gray-beard mirth and smiling toil retired;
Where village statesmen talked with looks profound,"

and where neighborhood scandal and tainted gossip no doubt went round. What wonder, then, that the settlers here, the socially high and low, the good and bad, should, in the absence of other convenient meeting-places, have felt the need of something of the kind. There were no newspapers to float off from the press on the morning and evening wind, no news-rooms, no mail, no telegraphs, no telephones. Hither, then, all classes naturally resorted

"To take a smack of politics and ale."

There was, in the more legitimate way, to wit, the accommodation of travelers, a real necessity for houses of entertainment. But it was soon perceptible that such establishments required careful watching, lest their charges should become oppressive and their influence deleterious in a moral way. The General Court, therefore, found it necessary frequently to interpose for their management.

It is true, however, that before population had so far increased as to warrant the establishment of separate ordinaries, every house was, to some extent, a house of entertainment, and every householder a host. This was the natural prompting of the hospitable settler.

At first, ordinaries were established without license; but the court soon took them in hand and regulated their management. As early as 1634 it was "ordered that noe person that keeps an ordinary shall take above six pence a meale for a person and not above one penny for an ale quarte of beare, out of meale tyme, under the penalty of ten shillings for every offence, either of dyot or beare." It was likewise ordered that "victualers or keepers of an ordinary, shall not suffer any tobacco to be taken in their howses, under the penalty of v shillings for every offence, to be paid by the vituler, and xii pence by the party who takes it." And the court, in their horror of tobacco, went much further, forbidding its use anywhere in public, and even invaded the domestic sanctuary, ordering that "noe person shall take tobacco publiquely, under the penalty of 2*s.* and 6*d.*; nor privately, in his owne howse, or in the howse of another, before strangers, and that two or more shall not take it togeather anywhere, vnder the aforesaid penalty for every offence." What would those worthy old legislators think could they enter one of our offensive modern railroad attachments, the smoking-car? As late as 1639 it was lawful for any person to entertain strangers with "lodging and dyot, at reasonable rates," on special occasions, such as an inflow of strangers.

And at the same court it was enacted that "every towne shall have liberty, from time to time, to choose a fitt man to sell wine, the same to bee alowed by license . . . and that it shalbee lawfull for such persons alowed to retaile wine, to let wine bee drunke in his house; provided, that if any person shalbee made drunke in any such house, or any imoderate

drinking suffered there, the master of the family shall pay for every such offence five pounds." At the same time it was "further declared and ordered, that such as are alowed to keepe comon ordinaries and inns shall provide stables and hay for horses, and inclosures for pasturing, where neede is; and it is further declared, that if any shall take excessive prices for their wines or dyeting, they shalbee deepely fined for the same." So began the licensing system and the temperance legislation of Massachusetts; and how do we stand, after the lapse of two hundred and fifty years?

The first tavern in Lynn was opened by JOSEPH ARMITAGE, though at what precise date does not satisfactorily appear. But in 1643 he seems to have been in the business long enough to run himself ashore; for in that year his wife, Jane, presented a dolorous petition, reciting that her husband's labors and endeavors had "beene blasted and his ames and ends frustrated," that they were poor and had a family to maintain; that some of his creditors had, of their "clemencie and gentle goodness," lent a helping hand, with more of such pathetic pleading, and praying that she might be allowed to "continue in the custodie of the said ordinary." The petition was signed by about all of the best and most prominent men of the town, among them the two ministers, Samuel Whiting and Thomas Cobbet, and Robert Bridges, the acting magistrate. It was successful, the concise entry on the court records being "Goody Armitage is alowed to keepe the ordinary, but not to draw wine."

There is ground for suspicion that some of the causes of Mr. Armitage's misfortunes lay in the disregard of his license obligations; for, in addition to the refusal of the court to allow his wife to sell spirits, it is found that he was once fined for not informing the constable of a person being found drunk in his company. He petitioned to have the fine remitted, but the court replied that they saw "no cawse to abate the petitioner any part of that fine."

Mr. Armitage, however, seems to have partially, at least, recovered from his depressed condition, for in 1646 the court say: "In answere to y^e^ petition of Joseph Armitage, it is ordred, that whoever y^e^ towne of Linn shall choose at a legall towne meeting to draw wine, he shall have liberty to drawe wine there till y^e^ next siting of this Cort, and y^e^ same to be presented hereunto." And subsequently comes this entry: "Joseph Armitage is agreed with for this yeare for liberty to sell wine for twenty nobles." The price of his license, then, was about $32.20 of our present money.

The ordinary of Mr. Armitage soon became known as the Anchor Tavern, and under that name commenced a famous career. It was picturesquely situated on a slight elevation west of Saugus River, almost within a stone's throw of that eccentrically winding stream, and commanded a romantic view of forest and marsh land, with the ocean upon the south. It was on the road leading from Salem to Boston and about midway between those settlements. For more than a century and a half it enjoyed a reputation attained by few establishments of the kind in the colony. Its name, however, was changed from time to time, as political revolution or caprice of landlord suggested.

Being on one of the chief highways, it was of course a stopping-place for the refreshment of travelers of high and low degree, of official dignitaries and rustic tramps, and one can readily conceive that strangely-assorted groups must have sometimes assembled there.

Mr. Armitage was among the very early settlers of Lynn, having appeared here in 1630, and been admitted as a freeman in 1637. He was a tailor by trade, but in those primitive times it was necessary for most men to turn their attention to different pursuits as the seasons varied. He was undoubtedly energetic and industrious, but those good traits do not appear to have saved him from disasters attributable to other traits less valuable, for it is evident that he was of a speculative turn, and unduly credulous when promising schemes were presented. And then, again, he appears to have been fond of lawsuits. Now these two pernicious characteristics—fondness for speculation and fondness for law-suits—are enough to ruin any man, and in all but a few exceptional cases they do. It may also be fairly assumed that he had sufficient of a retaliatory spirit to defiantly meet the aggressive approaches of his neighbors. At one time he procured a warrant against a number of persons, to whose interference he probably attributed difficulties regarding his license; but they, in returning the compliment, had him presented "for procuring a warrant for seaventy persons to appear forthwithe before the Governor," a proceeding which, the court say, "we conceave to be of dangerous consequence." Notwithstanding these propensities, however, it may be said that he was, on the whole, a useful as well as enterprising settler.

Mr. Armitage ceased to be landlord of the Anchor in or about 1652. And his harassed and laborious life was ended in reduced circumstances, though perhaps not in absolute penury. In 1669 he petitioned for the payment of some small scores that Governors Endicott and Bradstreet and other officials had run up at his tavern during their journeyings. His petition was presented to the court at Salem, the charges having stood some twenty years, and reads as follows:

"To the Honered Court now sitting at Sallem. The humble petition of Joseph Armitage Humbly Sheweth that in the time that I kept Ordinary ther was sum expences at my Hows by some of the Honored magistrates & Depetys of this County as apears by ther bills charged oupon Auditor Generall, which I never Receaued. Therfor your Humbell peticioner doth Humbly request this Court that they would give me an Order to the County Treasurer for my pay & so your pour petitioner shall ever pray for your prosperity.

"JOSEPH ARMITAGE."

One or two of the charges, with the vouchers, may be given as samples:

"the gouerners Expences from the Coart of election, 1651, till the end of October, 1651 ; to bear & cacks [beer and cakes] 6d. ; bear and cacks to himself and som other gentllemen, 1s. 2d. ; bear and cacks with Mr. Downing, 1s. 6d. ; bear & a cack, 6d.—3s. 8d.

"to the Sargents from the end of the Coart of election, 1651, till the end of October, 1651, bear & cacks, 1s. 2d.; for vitalls, beear & logen, 5s. ; to Benjamin Scarlet, the gouerners man, 8d. ; bear & vitells, 2s. ; to the Sargents, 1s. 9d. ; beear and cacks, 1s. ; to a man that Caried a letter to warne a Court about the duchman, 1s. 6d. ; to the Sargents, 1s. 2d.—14s. 3d.

"Mr. Auditor, I pray you give a note to Mr. Treasurer, for payment of 17s. 11d. according to these two bills of Joseph Armitage.

"Dated the 7th of the 11th mo. 1651. Jo. ENDECOTT."

"due to goodman Armitage, for beare & wyne att severall times as I came by in the space of about 3 yeares, 4s. 3d. May 15th, '49. More for my man & horse, as hee returned home the last yeare when I was a Commissioner, hee being deteyned a sabboath day, 6s. 8d.

"SIMON BRADSTREETE."

What does our present good Secretary of War think of the expenses and fare of his worthy ancestor as he took his official journeys? Even President Cleveland, with all his democratic proclivities, would hardly hold to such economy.

After leaving the Anchor, Mr. Armitage lived in comparative retirement till his death, in 1680, at the age of eighty years. In the administration account filed in July, occur these items: "For coffin, vaile and digging the grave, 14*s*. In wine and sider, for his buriall, £2."

The immediate successor of Mr. Armitage as landlord of the Anchor Tavern was JOHN HATHORNE, who certainly does not appear to have been a very meritorious character. At all events he became involved in one or two questionable transactions. It must have been about the time that he took the tavern that he was proceeded against on a charge of slander, forgery and perjury, and was convicted. He became somewhat humbled by his sentence, and petitioned for the remission or mitigation of the penalty, and the court in its clemency ordered that in lieu of the prescribed punishment he should "pay double damages, which is twenty pounds, to the party wronged and ten pounds to the commonwealth, to be forthwith levied ; and to be disfranchised. If he doth not submitt to the sentence, then the law that provides against fforgery is to take place in every particular."

Mr. Hathorne kept the Anchor but a short time, and nothing appears to indicate that the house did not continue as prosperous as in the days of his predecessor. But little concerning him appears on the records, though the matters alluded to gave rise to grave questions of jurisdiction between the civil and ecclesiastical authorities,—questions that agitated the community for a long time, occasioning some rasping passages between church and state dignitaries.

This brings us to one of the most remarkable periods in the history of the famous Anchor: to wit., the period during which the renowned Captain Thomas Marshall managed its affairs. He was one of the most jolly and hospitable of landlords, and during his administration no wayside inn throughout the colonies enjoyed a more enviable reputation.

Captain Marshall first appeared in Lynn in 1635, and was soon after admitted a freeman. But when the great political agitations that led to the termination of the reign and the life of Charles the First had reached the culminating point, his spirit was aroused and he returned to England, where he joined the Parliamentary forces, and from Cromwell received a captain's commission. He served faithfully and was honorably discharged, and returned hither full of martial lustre and full of pride in the feats he had accomplished, some of which his envious neighbors affected to believe were achievements of the imagination alone. Nevertheless, it is apparent that he had a very good knowledge of military tactics and skill in the disposition of affairs of the field. The simple fact of his having continued to serve as a captain under the great Parliamentary Leader so long and so satisfactorily is sufficient evidence of his skill, fidelity and efficiency. He indeed seems to have had an early inclination for the military profession, and was elected a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company—or, as it was then called, the "Military Company of the Massachusetts"—in 1640, two years after the formation of that august organization, being then about twenty-four years of age.

After Captain Marshall's return from the war, his fellow-townsmen six times elected him as their representative in the General Court, first in 1659 and last in 1668, and likewise called him to various posts of municipal honor and responsibility.

On the 18th of October, 1659, Captain Marshall was empowered by the General Court to join in marriage such persons in Lynn as had complied with the preliminary legal requirements. In 1670, however, he was discharged from "officyating in that imployment," probably much to his chagrin. The cause of the revocation of his authority seems to have been that, through his "overmuch credulity," parties had imposed upon him and induced him to marry them when their intention had not been properly published or other legal requirements complied with. One or two cases were presented against him, that of Allin and Deacon being perhaps the most conspicuous. It occurred in May, 1670. Says the record: "Hope Allin (father of the bride) and John Pease (a witness) appeared in Court, and y^e^ said John Pease acknouledged that notwithstanding the counsell of the major general (an acting magistrate of another jurisdiction), who had declined y^e^ marrying of M^r^. Deacon (the bridegroom) to Hope Allin's daughter, he did accompany them to Lynn to Capt. Marshall, and Hope Allin declared he did give his consent that the said M^r^. Deacon should have his daughter, and told Capt. Marshall that he hoped they might be legally published before that time. The Court judged it meet to censure the said Hope Allin to pay ten pounds as a fine to the country for his irregular proceedure, and John Pease forty shillings." Perhaps Mr. Allin was justly punished for his over-anxiety to get his daugh-

ter off his hands, and Mr. Pease for standing by and not disclosing the fact that another magistrate had refused to tie the knot illegally. And as to Captain Marshall, it was probably this case that induced the court to promptly annul his commission, for that appears to have been done almost immediately after the irregular transaction. At this time ministers were not authorized to perform the marriage ceremony, yet the conjugal relation was not regarded on the one hand as a mere civil contract, nor on the other, in the high-church sense, a sacrament. The idea seemed to be that it should occupy a sort of middle ground. The captain, however, did not probably pause to consider as to the right or wrong of the cases that came before him, or to theorize in any way, so long as it was in his power to consummate the happiness of loving hearts.

Captain Marshall commanded the military company of Lynn at the time the great King Philip War commenced, 1675. There was no period in our whole history when there seemed so much cause for alarm within our own precincts, which had always been singularly free from savage aggression, as now, and the bravest and most experienced of the soldiery were anxiously looked to for protection. The court received a letter from the major-general dated Lynn, and in their answer say: "Sr: Wee received your letter dated at Lynn 23th instant, and have perused the particulars inclosed, which still present us with sad tidings (the Lord have mercy on us) touching the performance of yo^{r} promise to Major Pike in your designe to raise what force you can to resist the enemy's headquarters at Ausebee. Wee approove of it, only wee presume your intelligence that the enemy is there is upon good grounds. Wee cannot give yow particular orders, but leave the management of this affayre to yo^{r} prudenc and assistance of Almighty God, not doubting yo^{r} care in leaving sufficient strength to secure the frontier townes of Norfolke and Essex, least the enemy should visit them when the fforces are abooard. Without doubt, if their squawes and pappooses, &c., be at Assabee, and God be pleased to deliver them into our hands, it would be much for our interest. As for your personall marching, it will be acceptable, if God inable to prosecute it." The action recommended in regard to the squaws and pappooses does not sound very pleasantly in the ears of the sympathetic people of this day, but the peculiar dangers and threatenings of those dark times should be taken into account in estimating the character of the recommendation. Captain Marshall was at this time about sixty years of age, but it cannot be doubted that his martial spirit was at once aglow, and that he became active in the military council, if not in the field. A most creditable number of soldiers were immediately on the march from Lynn.

A sad event occurred near the tavern on a dreary night in February, 1681. Samuel Worcester, a representative to the General Court from Bradford, had walked from that town to attend an adjourned session. When he reached Captain Marshall's ever hospitable door he was chilled and extremely weary, and sought shelter and entertainment. But from some cause he could not be accommodated. Thinking that he might find lodging with a friend farther on, he departed. In the morning he was found in a kneeling posture, in the middle of the road, dead. He was a son of Rev. William Worcester, and distinguished for his public spirit and his piety. No doubt the event caused the Captain hours of keen regret.

The worthy Captain dispensed the hospitalities of the famous Anchor for forty years. He was a model landlord, attentive to guests, well versed in the political and religious movements of the time, both here and in old England, and able to intelligently discuss all the stirring questions that then agitated the assembly in the village tap-room as well as that in the hall of legislation. And he seems to have had a good share of that sort of suave underflow, so agreeable to the temporary sojourner at the wayside inn. That he had foibles is likewise apparent; but they appear to have been rather attractive than displeasing. John Dunton, the London bookseller, who passed through Lynn in 1686, and who was an uncle to the celebrated John Wesley, thus remarks in his journal: "About two of the clock I reached Capt. Marshall's house, which is half way between Boston and Salem; here I staid to refresh nature with a pint of sack and a good fowl. Capt. Marshall is a hearty old gentleman, formerly one of Oliver's soldiers, upon which he very much values himself. He had all the history of the civil wars at his fingers' ends, and if we may believe him, Oliver did hardly anything that was considerable without his assistance; and if I'd have staid as long as he'd have talked, he'd have spoiled my ramble to Salem." This genial old landlord died on the 23d of December, 1689, at the age of seventy-three years.

It is not difficult to picture in the mind scenes such as must have again and again taken place in and about the Anchor during the administration of the worthy captain. Being deeply interested in military affairs he could highly enjoy the parades of the colonial soldiery; and when he was himself in command, it cannot be doubted that, on many occasions, the troops were summoned to perform their evolutions upon the green that sloped from his house down towards the river bank. We can almost see him there, with drawn sword and commanding voice, ordering movements such as enabled him, with Oliver's assistance, to win such victories in the civil wars. And there we see him stationing here and there behind some rock or in a forest confine mock Indian squads, to show the modes of savage warfare and teach his troops to meet the dusky warrior's strategy.

Again, on occasions when the Colonial Governor undertook his eastern tour, as was customary once a year, important was the day of his arrival at the

Anchor. Early in the morning His Excellency would appear, on horseback, with gilded trappings glistening in the sun, accompanied by his secretary—one who in this day might be called a reporter—and perhaps two or three other dignitaries, the procession flanked by half a score of halberdiers, preceded by a mounted trumpeter, and perhaps followed by a throng of amazed red men.

Arrived at the Anchor, after partaking of refreshments, always the best that the cellar or the larder afforded, the Governor, seated in the most capacious chair, announced his readiness to receive all such townsmen as desired to meet him for a free interchange of views on the condition of public affairs, especially as bearing on their own local well-being. These discussions were dignified, and, no doubt, resulted in much good to individual communities, and possibly matters of private interest were sometimes cunningly interwoven to personal advantage.

Another picture might discover an excited assembly at the Anchor, perhaps in the stirring time of the Andros administration, the discordant voices of the blustering group in the common room rising above the surly creaking of the signboard that sways in the blast without. Some are urging to immediate and determined acts of violence, clamorously declaring their readiness to join in any uprising that shall hurl every would-be oppressor from power, while the more peacefully inclined and the village sages counsel patience and moderation.

The scene may shift to a winter night, dreary without but cheerful within. Before the blazing oaken logs and upon the rude benches that line the wall are seated the worn farmer, the fisherman, the woodsman and the laborer of every degree. Unambitious and void of care, they sit drowsily gossiping, and occasionally drawing forth from its concealment the corn-cob pipe for a languid whiff, till the fire burns low and the parting mug goes round.

But a prettier picture is that presented when the bright moonbeams glisten on the crusted snow, and the capacious ox-sled, with its boxed-in freight of happy youth, drives up. Its approach had been heralded by the wave of maiden laughter that rippled over the white fields, and the captain has donned his best doublet and prepared his best cheer. The sanded parlor is radiant with tallow dips, and savory fumes float from the culinary precinct. It is a time of rare enjoyment with the gallant captain. He is young again, and cannot avoid frequently joining in the merry sports. And then, as he retires to the duties of the snug little banquet-room, behold him beckon a young man aside and slyly and half by signs intimate that up over those winding back-stairs, in the attic hall, there is a bright fire and clean floor, where a little private dance may be enjoyed.

It does not appear certain who the immediate successor of Captain Marshall, as landlord of the Anchor, was.

Zacheus Norwood, who died February 8, 1756,—if the stone in the old burying-ground bearing the name is erected to his memory,—kept it for many years, and it ceased to be called the Anchor. His wife, Susanna, died January 2, 1747, but he married again, and his widow succeeded him in the management and afterwards became the wife of Josiah Martin. The house was long famous as "Norwood's Tavern."

The matrimonial adventures of Mr. Norwood seem to have been of a varied character. In the record of intentions of marriage, as copied by Mr. John T. Moulton, is to be found these entries, Mr. Moulton remarking that a pen has been drawn across them: "June 2, 1734. This may certify that whereas the intention of marriage betwixt Zacheus Norwood and Mary Richards, both of Lynn, was posted by me the above day; that on the 3d day of June, 1734, the above said Mary Richards forbid the banns." . . . "December 3, 1734. The above-named Mary Richards came to me and told me she had re-considered her forbidding the banns of matrimony betwixt Zacheus Norwood and herself, and desired me to give him a certificate." Whatever the difficulty was, it appears to have been amicably settled, for on the 13th of the next February they were married. She died on the 6th of April, 1736. On the 27th of October, 1745, was published his intention of marriage with Susannah Dunnell, of Topsfield. They were soon after married, and she died January 2, 1747. His third wife was Lydia Burrage, whom he married April 19, 1750. It was she who survived him, kept the tavern herself for some time, and then married the wayward Josiah Martin.

In 1759 that laborious, worthy and much-suffering frontier Church of England missionary, Rev. Jacob Bailey, on the 13th of December, reached here on his way to Boston, having walked all the way from Gloucester. He found a rough company, who much disturbed his needed rest. "We had among us," he said, "a soldier belonging to Captain Hazen's company of rangers, who declared that several Frenchmen were barbariously murdered by them, after quarters were given; and the villain added, I suppose to show his importance, that he split the head of one asunder, after he had fell on his knees to implore mercy." Captain Hazen never taught his men any such savage ways, for he was one of the most humane as well as brave commanders. He was a native of Haverhill, and had a command in the Crown Point and Louisburg expeditions in 1758 and '59. It was in one of these, no doubt, that the villainous act of the boastful soldier occurred. Captain Hazen also distinguished himself under Wolfe, at Quebec, and as a commander in the Revolution. He was finally commissioned as a brigadier-general in the Continental forces. Dr. Jonathan Norwood, a graduate of Harvard, was a son of Zacheus, the keeper of the tavern.

It was somewhere about the year 1760 that there

drifted into Lynn a soldier of fortune by the name of JOSIAH MARTIN. He was supposed to be an Englishman, but little, if anything, was known of his previous life. He, however, found favor in the eyes of Widow Norwood, and she married him. He was very eccentric, and by his waywardness of temper and instability of character is believed to have led her a very uncomfortable life. He evidently knew how to behave much better than he did, for at times he would act well the *rôle* of a polished gentleman. At other times he would pretend to be a most humble and devout Christian. Mrs. Martin seems to have continued in the chief management of the tavern, though he was ostensibly the keeper. Many anecdotes are told of his witty sallies, and he was by no means destitute of humor. He was much given to practical jokes, as well as witticisms. Rev. Mr. Treadwell was minister of the old church at that time, and himself fond of indulging in witty sallies. Mr. Lewis says that on a certain Sunday, observing that many of his audience had their heads in a reclining posture, he paused in his sermon and exclaimed, "I should guess that as many as two-thirds of you are asleep!" Mr. Martin, raising his head, looked round and replied, "If I were to guess, I should guess there are not more than one-half!" The next day Mr. Martin was brought up for disturbing divine service, but he contended "it was not the time of divine service; the minister had ceased to preach, and it was guessing time." He was accordingly discharged. It is said that he once rode two miles to attend meeting on a warm June Sunday, in a double sleigh, with a span of horses, the dust flying and the runners grating horribly and striking fire at every step. And his wife was a forced passenger by his side, wrapped in a heavy bear-skin robe. However, she was not long subjected to his harassing impositions, for on the breaking out of the Revolution he enlisted in the Continental army, marched off, and was never heard from afterward.

John Adams, subsequently President of the United States, but then a young lawyer traveling his circuit, accompanied by his wife, mentions, under date of November 3, 1766, having "oated" at Martin's, on his way to attend the court at Salem. And returning a few days after, he again "oated" at Martin's, "where we saw," he adds, "five boxes of dollars, containing, as we were told, about eighteen thousand of them, going in a horse-cart from Salem Custom-House to Boston, in order to be shipped to England. A guard of armed men, with swords, hangers, pistols and muskets attended."

This brings us to another important period in the history of this famous tavern, to wit, the commencement of the Revolution. It was now that JACOB NEWHALL became landlord, and for many years onward it was known as Newhall's Tavern, as is shown by the newspapers and other dingy publications of the day. Mr. Newhall was a native of the town, and a descendant from one of the first settlers, was then about thirty-five years of age, and had previously pursued the occupation of husbandman. Being an ardent son of liberty, one of his first acts was to remove the sign on which was pictured the British emblem of the lion and unicorn, that had swayed for some years from the post in front, and substitute the hopeful emblem of a rising sun. He was a most liberal provider, and unwearied in his endeavors to make his house a real "traveler's home." During the war his energies were often taxed to their utmost to make suitable provision for the unexpected descent of a squad or even an entire company of hungry soldiers. So vigilant was he that it is said he did not for some years retire to bed, but obtained fitful rest in an arm-chair. To be ready for emergencies, he kept on hand fatted cattle that might be promptly slaughtered, and their flesh hastily cooked in the great boilers he had set. His kitchen garden comprised six acres, and under his skillful management yielded an inexhaustible store for summer use, as well as a surplus to be added to his field crops for use at other seasons. He was extremely benevolent toward his needy neighbors, and especially to the families of soldiers who had marched to the war. Even the vagrant tramp was not sent empty away. Among other notable guests during the administration of Mr. Newhall was President Washington, who paused here in October, 1788, as he was proceeding eastward. And four years before, 1784, Gen. Lafayette made a halt there.

Mr. Newhall continued landlord till 1807, a period of more than thirty years; and then, the infirmities of age having somewhat impaired his physical powers, he retired. But he still continued to labor to some extent as a farmer till near the end of his life, which took place on the 18th of June, 1816, at the age of seventy-six. One of his generous disposition could hardly be expected to accumulate much, and he appears to have died in rather reduced circumstances, though not in penury.

It is evident from contemporary accounts that this tavern was, during the Revolution, one of the most notable in these parts. Being on the great road along which flowed the travel from all places east of Boston, and having established an unimpeachable name for hospitality, it was never disregarded by the marching soldier or the traveling civilian.

Under various names and different landlords for some time after the retirement of Landlord Newhall the house continued to dispense its hospitalities. But a cloud came over its prospects. The turnpike from Salem to Boston—the portion in Lynn being what is now known as Western Avenue—was opened in 1803, and rapidly diverted the travel from the old road.

As the "Anchor" was situated just within what is now the town of Saugus, then a part of Lynn, its history will not be overlooked in the sketch of that town, and doubtless many racy and captivating details will be added to what is here given.

From quite early times there had been other houses of entertainment in different parts of the town; but none of them came to be of much account. There was "Ward's Tavern" (which possibly may have been the old "Anchor," bearing another name for a short time before Mr. Norwood assumed the keepership). It was in 1750 that a New York merchant stopped here while traveling eastward. He remarks that he put up at Mr. Ward's, in "Lyn, which is a small country town of about two hundred houses, very pleasantly situated, and affords a beautiful rural prospect." He arrived at about one o'clock and "dyn'd on fryd codd." After dinner, being refreshed by a glass of wine, he pursued his journey to Salem, "through a barren, rocky country," and the next day, after visiting Marblehead, returned to Boston, stopping again at Mr. Ward's, where he "dyned upon a fine mongrel goose."

Timothy Tomlins was licensed in 1636 to "keepe a house of intertainment." He was a farmer and a man of probity, but his house did not attain much celebrity as a stopping-place for travelers, it being somewhat remote from the great traveled road. He was among those who commenced the settlement of Southampton, L. I., in 1640, but did not remain there. He was also one of the Cambridge land proprietors. The extensive range of low forest land and tangled bog lying a short distance northwest of Dungeon Rock, in our Lynn woods, and still known as Tomlins's Swamp, was a part of his estate. He was thirteen times a representative in the General Court, and in other positions faithfully served the town. In 1634 he was appointed overseer of the "powder and shott and all other amunicon" of the plantation.

In 1664 Theophilus Bayley was licensed to keep a public-house.

In the early part of the Revolution there was a tavern kept in the old house at the corner of Federal and Marion Streets. The landlord was Increase Newhall, and it was used as an alarm station—that is, a place at which, when an alarm occurred, the enrolled men in the district instantly reported for duty. At one time, in 1776, there was a midnight alarm that the English had landed at King's Beach. There was presently great commotion throughout the town, for the meeting-house bell and the drums had spread the alarm to all quarters. At the tavern station here spoken of the men promptly rallied, but the commander was not visible. They, however, quickly marched under other orders. It proved to be a false alarm, and they all returned safe. And then, to their amusement, the pusillanimous commander emerged from an oven in which, panic-stricken, he had been concealed. It was during this alarm that Frederick Breed, who lived in the vicinity, displayed so much courage and tact in rallying the men and marching them to the supposed point of danger that he received a commission in the army, and finally rose to the rank of colonel.

We now come down to the time when the old Lynn Hotel was erected. This establishment became quite as famous as had been the Anchor in its palmiest days.

It was in 1803 that the Turnpike leading from Salem to Boston was opened, making the shortest and most direct route for the eastern travel to reach the metropolis. Then old Boston Street, which had so long been the chief highway through Lynn, was doomed to lose its prestige, its honors and much of its thrift. When the building of the Turnpike was projected there was much croaking and head-shaking, as there always is when great improvements are proposed. One good man, for instance, testified that at some point where the route lay over the salt marshes, he had run a pole down twenty-five feet! It was an expensive road, but was soon made a very good one. By the charter it was to revert to the commonwealth when the proprietors had received the whole cost, with twelve per cent. interest. Accordingly, in 1869, legislative action being had, it became a public highway. That part lying in Lynn is now called Western Avenue, and affords a fine, level driveway of several miles, say from the hills of old Chelsea to the Floating Bridge in Lynn, with the exception of Farrington's Hill. In the old days of horse-racing, the portion lying over the marshes southwest of the hotel was the scene of some famous races. It was there that Major Standpole's "Old Blue" won his vaunted victory, trotting three miles in eight minutes and forty-two seconds. This was on the 6th of September, 1816, and is said to have been the first horse-trot in the country. Of late years equine contests of a different sort are held in the portion of the avenue lying immediately northeastward from the hotel. On every pleasant day in winter, when there is good sleighing, numerous gay turnouts, drawn by the fleetest steeds of which the town can boast, and many from other towns, may be seen there in friendly trials of speed. And a merry time have the excited spirits, young and old.

Immediately after the opening of the Turnpike the post-office, which had been kept on Boston Street, near the corner of North Federal, was removed to the southern end of Federal Street, where it joined the turnpike, as the mails would come that way, and business began to gather in the same quarter.

Lynn Hotel was built during the year in which the Turnpike was opened—1803. The most extensively known landlord was Andrew S. Breed, the elder. He took the house in 1813, and under his supervision it attained an enviable reputation, especially for the excellence of its table and the promptness with which the largest demands of guests would be met. He was a very stirring man and recognized by every one in the streets, as he sallied forth on his brawny roadster, in his yellow top-boots and coat of sporting cut. In addition to his large business at the hotel he did a good deal of farming, and many of us can well re-

member the jolly husking-parties which in harvest-time assembled at his bidding to divest the yellow ears of their rustling robes, and at evening received our reward in the banquet of baked beans and Indian pudding, with relays of apples and cider. He was not a man who could pass noiselessly through the world, or who could yield much to what he deemed the unreasonable demands of those about him; in short, he was of what is called an arbitrary disposition, rather boisterous in language, and strict in his requirements of those in service under him. No lazy man's excuses ever weighed with him. Mr. Breed was father of the fifth mayor of Lynn.

It was to this hotel that True Moody, the colored out-door servant, so long and so well known to travelers by his alert attentions, and so much esteemed for his obliging disposition, was attached for some forty years. In person he was stout, and possessed in a well-developed form all the physical peculiarities of the African race. His mouth was capacious and answered the novel purpose of a temporary savings-bank, for in it he was accustomed to deposit the pecuniary gratuities that were sometimes lavishly bestowed by guests, till he could find time to remove them to a more suitable place, or till he required his mouth for a more legitimate purpose. And there is an account of a wager by some young men as to the amount of silver change in his mouth at a given time. To determine the bet, he consented, with his usual good nature, to discharge the deposits into a bowl, when they were found to amount to a little more than five dollars, the whole being in small pieces. By his gains in this humble way he was enabled to secure a comfortable home and respectably support a family. By the failure of the Nahant Bank, in 1836, he lost some hundreds of dollars. And by the Eastern Railroad, which was built soon after, diverting the travel from the hotel quarter, his income was greatly reduced. It is said that at this depressing period he was accustomed to retire to a corner of the deserted stable and weep. He died on the 17th of June, 1855, at a rather advanced age, though probably far below that of ninety-seven years, as some of the newspapers asserted. It is not likely that he or any one else knew his exact age.

The history of old Lynn Hotel, which remained so long in such high repute, is, perhaps, more full of stirring incident than that of almost any other establishment of the kind in this quarter of the country. The leading men of the nation—Presidents and Governors—traveling statesmen, scholars and men of leisure from other lands, were here entertained, as well as the roving multitude of tradesmen and others of every calling and profession. Many a great statesmen, military hero and orator has addressed the assembled multitudes from the little balcony over the southern door, and the writer of this sketch, by memory's aid, plainly sees the commanding form of President Jackson firmly poised, as he addresses the enthusiastic throng, his sententious oratory more than half drowned by the prolonged cheering. From that modest balcony, too, has many and many a time irradiated the choice eloquence of the ambitious local politician.

An idea of the extent of the travel by stage at about this time may be gathered from the fact that in 1836 twenty-three stages left Lynn Hotel for Boston daily, and there were also usually several extras. They belonged to the Salem and Eastern lines. These were the brightest days of the old stage-coach, and the gaudy ones of the Salem Line and the more lumbering ones from the east drew up at those hospitable portals at all hours, that the passengers might alight for the relief of their cramped limbs, and, perhaps, for a little convivial entertainment at the bar, the jolly drivers shouting their brief orders with diplomatic unction. Private carriages, baggage-wagons and teams of all descriptions, too, were constantly passing and pausing. And for baiting and protection from inclement weather, an unbroken line of horse-sheds extended along the whole eastern side of Centre Street, from North Common to the Turnpike, and sometimes every one of them was occupied, with an overplus hitched to posts on either side of the house.

For about thirty-five years from the time the Turnpike was opened and the hotel built, incidents which had drawn the tide of travel from old Boston Street, there was a business activity and enterprise centering thereabout such as one who has known Lynn for only the last twenty years can hardly realize. The post-office was there, and so were the principal stores, the lawyers and many of the largest manufacturers. The shoe manufacturers of those days, by the way, did not congregate about a common centre, as they now do, but were planted in every neighborhood. The manner in which the business was then conducted made it just as well and more economical. The old-time shoemaker has disappeared, and shoemaking machinery taken his place, so that now, as a necessity, large numbers of workmen must assemble together in huge factories. Combinations, such as Lasters' Unions and Knights of Labor assemblies, could hardly have been formed in the days when only half a dozen worked together in the little shops that, standing widely asunder, dotted our whole territory. Those were days of individual independence, individual responsibility and unfettered effort for individual advancement.

Foot-journeying was much more common in those days than in these railroad times, when it is more economical to ride. The cost of riding was then a material item, especially as there was no considerable saving of time, for a smart pedestrian would often reach Boston about as soon as a "slow coach" or sluggish horse. The turnpike on some great occasions, like, for instance, a famous military parade or an execution, swarmed with pedestrians, and there

were often good-natured trials of speed between strangers as well as friends.

It need not be said that in the early days of the Anchor, travel by horseback and sometimes even by bullback was, in a great measure, necessary, for the roads were stumpy, stony and gullied, so that wheeled vehicles, if any had them, could be but little used. When a journey could be accomplished by water, however, that mode was usually adopted, the light Indian skiff proving remarkably serviceable where the course lay near the shore. Jonathan Dickenson, of Philadelphia, in a letter to William Smith, February, 1697, says "In 14 days we have an answer from Boston, once a week from New York, once in three weeks from Maryland, and once a month from Virginia." Then came various kinds of lumbering conveyances; but it was many years before regular lines of any sort of conveyance were established. Mr. Lewis says that the "stage" which John Stavers put on to run from Portsmouth to Boston, in 1761, was the first in New England. It was a curricle, drawn by two horses, and had seats for three persons. It left Portsmouth on Monday morning, stopped the first night at Ipswich, and reached Boston the next afternoon. Returning, it left Boston on Thursday and reached Portsmouth on Friday. The fare was thirteen shillings and sixpence—somewhere between three and four dollars of our present money—besides the expenses by the way. President Quincy, who, in the early part of the present century, was wooing the fair lady of New York who afterward became his wife, thus feelingly speaks of the difficulties that beset his way: "The carriages were old and shackling, and much of the harness made of ropes. One pair of horses carried us eighteen miles. We generally reached our resting-place for the night, if no accident intervened, at ten o'clock, and, after a frugal supper, went to bed with a notice that we should be called at three next morning—which generally proved to be half-past two. Then, whether it snowed or rained, the traveler must rise and make ready by the help of a horn lantern and a farthing candle, and proceed on his way, over bad roads, sometimes with a driver showing no doubtful symptoms of drunkenness, which good-hearted passengers never failed to improve at every stopping-place, by urging upon him the comfort of another glass of toddy. Thus we traveled eighteen miles a stage, sometimes obliged to get out and help the coachman lift the coach out of a quagmire or rut, and arriving in New York after a week's hard travelling [from Boston], wondering at the ease as well as the expedition with which our journey was effected." It was to difficulties like these, too, that the Lynn shoe "bosses" were subjected in their trips southward, for at that period the customers did not often come to Lynn to make their purchases, but were sought for at their own homes. And their reflections during the perilous journeys, tinged, as they were, by business perplexities, must have been very different from those that stimulated the ardent Quincy.

The palmy days of the stage-coach were also the palmy days of the Lynn Hotel. Both, too, were thrown into the shade at the same time and by the same means—to wit, the construction of the Eastern Railroad. A good deal of romance clusters around the old stages, and there is little wonder that even now sometimes companies of aged men, remembering the jolly rides of their youth, should wish to live over some especially happy episode. So we occasionally hear of a "tally-ho" expedition, with its old-time turn-out, its yet merry driver, trembling under the weight of years, and its resounding horn again wakening the echoes of the hills. On the 12th of June, 1878, a party of twelve gentlemen, mostly quite aged, and all lovers of old-time customs, set out from Newburyport to enjoy a ride to Boston in the old-fashioned four-horse stage-coach of their boyhood. The driver was a veteran of the road, and eighty-one years of age. The start was propitious and the ride enjoyable, till they reached Lynn, when, near the junction of Western Avenue and Washington Street, an axle broke and the stage was overturned. Two or three of the passengers were seriously injured, and the aged driver received a severe shock to his system, beside painful bruises.

It was in 1838 that Lynn was invaded by the Eastern Railroad, which soon wrought very great alterations; business centres were changed, giving rise to sectional jealousies, which festered for a number of years. The field of operation for the young aspirant for wealth seemed expanding, and there began to be high hope and expectation of renewed and augmented prosperity, though it was during one of the most protracted periods of business depression through which the country had ever passed.

As early as 1828 a proposition to construct a railroad from Boston to Salem began to be seriously considered, and a circular was sent out from the House of Representatives to various towns in the vicinity, seeking information from which a judgment could be formed as to the expediency of undertaking so formidable an enterprise, either by individuals or the State. The circular sent to Lynn was addressed to the editor of the *Mirror*, and was responded to after evidently careful investigation; and some of the statements may properly be introduced, as showing the then condition of things here, in several particulars.

"The principal manufacture of Lynn is shoes. Of these it appears that 1,038,189 pairs are annually made, which, at four shillings a pair, will amount to $692,126. These, as they are usually packed, will fill 11,535 boxes, the transportation of which, at one shilling a box, will cost $1922.50. It is considered that about three-fourths of the above amount returns to Lynn in sole leather and other articles for the manufacture of shoes, in English and West India goods and other merchandise, the transportation of which may be fairly estimated at $5768. The article of flour alone, 2500 barrels, at $6.00 a barrel, would amount to $15,000, the transportation of which would cost $750. The transportation of the same amount in shoes would cost only $41.67. And many

other heavy articles will bear an equal proportion. The transportation of a barrel of flour from Boston to Lynn is 30 cents, about the same as the conveyance from Baltimore to Boston.

[Swampscott and Nahant were at that time parts of Lynn.] "There have been about 1000 tons of fresh fish and 50 tons of cured fish conveyed on the turnpike as far as Charlestown during the past year, the transportation of which, at twenty shillings a ton, amounts to $3500. Fifty barrels of oil have also been extracted, the transportation of which, at two shillings a barrel, cost $16.66.

"The other articles transported on the Boston route are 60 tons of hay, 70 tons of chocolate, 26 tons of grain, 50 tons of cocoa, 20 tons of rice, 30 tons of ginger, 16 tons of neat hides, 12 tons of leather, 27 tons of goat and kid skins, 85 tons of sumac, 9 tons of iron, 36 tons of coal, 30 tons of barberry root and 200 tons of marble,—making in all 671 tons, the transportation of which, at twenty shillings a ton, amounts to $2236.67. Besides these, a large amount of goods is annually conveyed to the dye-house and [silk] printing establishment.

"The average number of passengers is about 11 each day, for 300 days of the year, the amount of whose conveyance, at $1.25 each, is $4125. The amount paid by Lynn people for tolls is probably about $2100.

"By this statement it appears that the annual expense to the town of Lynn, on the Boston route is $19,668.33.

"The amount of property invested in baggage wagons is about $4000."

By the foregoing it will be seen how small an amount Lynn could then promise for the support of a railroad. And several interesting facts are disclosed by individual items. What most surprises one, perhaps, is the small number of passengers—an average of *eleven* daily, and that with a thrifty population of 6000. There was comparatively little inducement for any excepting business men to visit the city. The few retail "shopping" necessities could be met at home, and the expense of the visit, both in time and money, was to be looked at. Many went to Boston but once or twice a year, and some not more than twice in a lifetime.

The few leading business men went up once a week in their own "teams," two sometimes joining, one furnishing the conveyance and the other paying the tolls and for house-baiting. Such were the terms on which two prominent townsmen—Samuel Mulliken and Jeremiah Bulfinch—on a chilly November day, set out. Mr. Bulfinch furnished the conveyance, and Mulliken was to pay the expenses. When they arrived at Charlestown in the forenoon they found that an additional toll or something of the sort, to the amount of six cents, had been recently levied. It was what neither had calculated on, and so Mr. M. contended that each should pay half; but Mr. Bulfinch declared that he would pay no part of the six cents. They were equally matched for stubbornness, and sat there arguing and disputing till the declining sun warned them that it was time to turn the horse's head homeward. And home they rode, each probably exulting in his triumph. This incident was related to the writer by one of the parties. "And," he added, his countenance radiating with the rekindled fire within, though he was then more than eighty years old, "I would have set there till this time, before I would have paid it!"

Some of the small manufacturers were accustomed to go to Boston on foot, do their buying and selling and return in the same manner.

Another thing mentioned in the answer to the circular is the amount of coal brought hither at that time—only thirty-six tons—and probably a considerable portion of even that was bituminous, or such as blacksmiths use. Anthracite was then just coming into use in New England, wood being still almost exclusively used for fuel, excepting that in a few country places peat afforded a partial supply. But enough of this.

Old Lynn Hotel has not yet closed its portals, though its business has greatly decreased. During the long period of more than eighty years, since it was erected, its hospitable doors have remained invitingly open for the traveler's entertainment. Other houses in the vicinity have in the meantime been opened and closed. Even the stately Boscobel has, within a few months, retired from the field. But there the old hotel remains, ever and anon renewing its appointments and changing its administration as years move on, becoming less and less an object of interest as those who were familiar with the forms of the elder Breed, of Deacon Field and of the vigilant "True" pass away.

A few words regarding one or two others of the earlier hotels, and matters connected with them, may be given before we pass on to other topics.

It was in 1810 that the once famous Mineral Spring Hotel was built. The situation was retired and romantic in the extreme. Almost surrounded by green hills and woods, and having at its very feet a beautiful lakelet, it was for years deemed a most charming resort. It received its name from the mineral spring which was early discovered near the border of the pond, and stood on rising land about midway between the turnpike and the old Danvers road, just upon the western border of Salem. The waters of the spring are impregnated with iron and sulphur, and were formerly much esteemed for their good effects in scorbutic and pulmonary diseases. Dr. John Caspar Richter van Crowninscheldt, who was reputed to have been educated at the University at Liepsic, and to have fled from Germany on account of a duel, and who, by the way, was an ancestor of the prominent and respectable Crowninshield family of the present day, purchased the adjacent lands and settled there about the year 1690. The celebrated Cotton Mather visited him in his picturesque retreat, partook of the waters of the spring and in one of his works extols their virtues. Earlier than this, however, the spring was known, for in 1669 a description of the boundary line between Lynn and Salem speaks of it as a "noated spring."

But the hotel here has now for many years been numbered with the things that were. In 1847 Mr. Richard S. Fay purchased the estate, together with many adjacent acres, and formed there a most attractive and salubrious summer retreat, repairing and remodeling the house and embellishing the grounds in a manner to render it a fit residence for one of wealth and refined taste.

The Mineral Spring Hotel had one or two landlords of high reputation, whose character assured the most unobjectionable and liberal management. Among them was Major Jabez W. Barton, afterwards, for many years, host at the Albion, in Boston. But there were one or two attempts to sully its fair fame; notably, in 1833, Dr. Hazeltine, a well-known and reputable physician, wrote a communication which was published in the *Boston Medical and Surgical Journal*, speaking very slightingly of the waters of the spring, and in highly derogatory terms of the management of the hotel. This elicited several sharp replies, and it seemed finally satisfactorily settled that the house, with the exception of occasional disreputable episodes—such as all public-houses are liable to—had maintained a fair character. A forcible writer in one of the papers of the day said: "We know not which most to condemn, the illiberal terms in which he [Dr. Hazeltine] attempts to stigmatize one of the most respectable, quiet and unobjectionable resorts of families and parties in the summer season from Salem and Boston, or the downright ignorance which he manifests concerning the qualities of the spring water. We have said before, and we repeat it, that we know of no place, far or near, possessing so many natural attractions and offering so many real comforts and conveniences to genteel, intelligent and moral people as this summer retreat, nor one with a more upright and every way worthy gentleman at its head, than are to be found at the Lynn Mineral Spring Hotel." This was written at the time Major Barton was landlord.

Perhaps it is incumbent to say something of the great hotel and other public-houses of Nahant, especially those established while the peninsula remained a part of Lynn; but as the writer of the sketch of that town will no doubt say all that is necessary, it might prove unneeded labor.

Nor is it necessary to speak individually of the present hotels of Lynn. We have a considerable number, and they are of various grades, from those reckoned as high-class even down to those which, in by-gone days, went by the name of "salt-hay" hostelries. Our business has been more especially with the taverns of former times—the wayside monuments of the past—around which cluster so much of the true history and the romance of our early days. The generations that knew them have nearly passed away; but their fame will survive in story long after their crumbling walls have disappeared. They have ever furnished for the historian, the poet and the dreamy novelist many of their most jovial, touching and tragic incidents, and long will they continue so to do.

And as to the modes of travel, what more need be said?

"We have spanned the world with iron rails,
And the steam-king rules us now."

CHAPTER XXI.

LYNN—(*Continued*).

MISCELLANEOUS TOPICS.

Indian Deed of Lynn—Lynn's Colonies—Slavery and its Abolition—History of Free Masonry in Lynn—Drinking Customs and Temperance Movements—Free Public Forest.

Sometimes the gleaner's quickened sight
A wealthy prize may spy,
Which in the reaper's duller light
Was passed unheeded by.

—*Old Ballad.*

INDIAN DEED OF LYNN.—The Indian deed of Lynn, which may be found recorded in the registry at Salem, bears the date September 4, 1686. It is really a mere release of all the remaining interest, if any existed, of the grantors, as heirs of Sagamore Wenepawwekin or George No-Nose, so called, and no doubt a precautionary measure, designed to show that the Indian title had been fairly extinguished. It was executed in the troublous times of the Andros administration, a period when real estate titles were greatly confused. Yet, though Andros had declared that an Indian signature was of no more value than the scratch of a bear's claw, he, in 1689, asked Rev. Mr. Higginson whether New England was the King's territory, and received the reply that it belonged to the colonists, because they held it by just occupation and purchase from the Indians.

The grantors affirm in the deed that their ancestor, the Chief Wenepawwekin, was the true and sole owner of the territory of Lynn, notwithstanding the possession of the English. And they also affirm that there had been no legal dispossession. There were many real and many colorable purchases and sales before this deed; for, to say nothing of the cupidity of the settlers, their red brethren, as a general thing, would sell anything for which they could find a purchaser, whether they had a title to it or not; and they would sell the same thing over and over again as long as a purchaser appeared. Gross fraud was, no doubt, in individual instances practiced, but the summary exercise of authority by the General Court probably rectified many wrongs. On the 6th of September, 1638, the General Court "agreed that the Court of Assistants should take order for the Indians, that they may have satisfaction for their right at Linn." The "right" is not specified, but seems to relate to land.

The Indians were not an agricultural nor a pastoral people, and had no conception of the value of land for the uses of civilized life. Poquanum, called Duke William by Mr. Wood, in his "New England's Prospect," and Black Will in certain depositions among the Salem court files, was Sachem of Nahant. And he could hardly have placed a speculative value on his beautiful dukedom, to have sold it to Mr. Dexter for a suit of clothes, though

possibly he indulged in a vagrant chuckle over his bargain, as it was finally determined that he had no title to the peninsula, which fact he probably knew all along.

This Poquanum, or Black Will, by the way, was quite a character in his time, and somewhat of a rover. It is supposed that he was the same Indian who appeared in a full suit of English clothes, to welcome Gosnold, in 1602. But where he obtained his outfit does not seem to be known. His sale of Nahant and the persistent claims of his grantee occasioned the town much vexation and expense. The end of this wily Indian was tragical. Some vessels had sailed eastward in search of pirates who had been committing depredations and atrocities in various places along the coast. At Scarborough, Me., they fell in with Poquanum, and straightway hanged him, because some Indians had, more than a year before, murdered one Bagnall, a pestilent fellow, whom Winthrop says "had much wronged the Indians." This was retaliating in a summary rather than a just way, it being altogether improbable that Poquanum had any hand in the murder. Indeed, Winthrop says the killing was by "Squidraysett and his Indians."

The tragic death of Poquanum occurred in January, 1633. He seems to have been intelligent, generous in disposition and friendly to the settlers. He left a son who was also named Poquanum, who lived to old age, and was well known in the colony. Gookin, in 1686, says: "He is an Indian of good repute and professeth the Christian religion." He, too, was friendly to the whites, and rendered efficient service during the great King Philip War.

Nothing further need be said regarding the Indian deed of Lynn. But the general remark may be added that there was a great deal of looseness about Indian titles in this vicinity. It can almost be said that heirship was sometimes asserted on no better ground than that the claimant had slain a former owner. Mr. Higginson, the first minister of Salem, in a letter dated in 1629, says: "The Indians are not able to make use of the one-fourth part of the land; neither have they any settled places as towns, to dwell in, nor any grounds as they challenge for their own possession, but change their habitation from place to place." But they soon began to learn from the settlers something of the utility of reforming their nomadic life; and then followed a conception of the value of land.

Lynn's Colonies.—Affairs in Lynn had hardly become established in good running order when some of the restless—or it might be more pleasing to say enterprising—spirits began to look for new fields of adventure. In less than a score of years from the commencement of the settlement many families departed and planted new towns, among which were Sandwich and Yarmouth, in Massachusetts; Southampton and Flushing, on Long Island; and Stamford, in Connecticut. New Haven, too, was indebted to Lynn for one of her first and most efficient founders,—Captain Nathaniel Turner, who is spoken of in another connection in this sketch. He it was who purchased from the Indians the territory forming the now beautiful town of Stamford, on the New York and New Haven Railroad, which purchase was brought about in a rather curious way.

The captain's Lynn residence was on Nahant Street, near that of his friend and superior officer, John Humfrey. On the breaking out of the Pequot War, 1636, he took the field with the first expedition and became so pleased with the territory invaded as to determine at the close of hostilities to make a peaceful invasion and form a settlement. He obtained the tract including Stamford by fair purchase from the Indian Sagamores, the recorded agreement being in these words: "I, the said Nathaniel Turner, amm to give and bring or send to the above said Sagamores, within the space of one month, twelve coats, twelve howes (hoes), twelve hatchets, twelve glasses, twelve knives, four kettles, four fathoms of white wampum."

The most important of the colonies sent out from Lynn at this period was that of Long Island. Thither went some forty families, and with them, as minister, the Rev. Abraham Pierson, a man of learning and ability. He took with him his little son, Abraham, who was born here. And that son, in 1701, became the first president of Yale College. They sailed in a vessel commanded by Captain Daniel Howe, of Lynn, who appears to have had considerable interest in the expedition. They proceeded as far west as Scout's Bay, landed and made lodgments at Flushing, Jamaica, Hempstead, Oyster Bay and thereabouts. But the Dutch soon asserted their right to the territory and assumed a decidedly hostile attitude. Kieft was then the Dutch Governor, and Captain Howe being a man of determination, things presently began to wear a threatening aspect. The settlers took down the arms of the Prince of Orange which the Dutch had erected, and in their place an Indian drew an "unhandsome face," as Winthrop graphically says, which act the Dutch took "in high displeasure." They then began to rear habitations. Naturally enough, this provoked the Dutch Governor, and to such a degree did his ire attain that he had several arrested and imprisoned. But he does not appear to have been a really ill-natured or unreasonable man, though Washington Irving does characterize him as "William the Testy."

On their promise to remove, the prisoners were readily released. They did remove some eighty miles eastward and commenced the permanent settlement of Southampton, which name was given in commemoration of the port in England from which some of them originally came.

Southampton, thus begun, still numbers among her people many who descended from that good old Lynn stock. In this colonization quite a number of the

leading residents of Lynn were concerned, though some whose names were on the roll did not emigrate. The colony grew apace, and from time to time sent off other colonies that made lodgments in various parts of the island, so that the Long Island of this day owes much to the Lynn of that day.

These colonists evidently carried with them the ideas of freedom and equality under which they had prospered here, and in their new home continued to be governed in a thoroughly democratic way, though at one time, 1644, they placed themselves professedly under the Hartford jurisdiction. "The government of the town," says an intelligent native writer, "was vested in the people. They assembled at their town-meetings, had all power and all authority. They elected town officers, constituted courts, allotted lands, made laws, tried difficult and important cases, and from their decision there was no appeal. The Town-Meeting, or General Court, as it was sometimes called, met once a month. Every freeholder was required to be present at its meetings and take a part in the burdens of government. All delinquents were fined for non-attendance at each meeting."

The Long Island enterprise thus inaugurated by the people of Lynn was really of a good deal of importance. It was with James Forrett, as agent of Lord Sterling, that the negotiations for the right to occupy the land were made. Winthrop says, "Divers of the inhabitants of Linne, finding themselves straitened, looked out for a new plantation, and going to Long Island, they agreed with the Lord Sterling's agent there, one Mr. Forrett, for a parcel of the isle near the west end, and agreed with the Indians for their right." The emigrants, however, to begin with, had a difficulty with Agent Forrett, the cause of which does not exactly appear, and he entered a strong protest against them at Boston as "intruders." Then the troubles with the Dutch came, but by persistence and fair dealing the settlers soon obtained favor and a permanent foothold.

It is not necessary to occupy space in speaking further of the colonies that early went out from Lynn. What has been said of the Long Island enterprise in a great degree characterized the others, their spirit and purposes being much the same.

Slavery and its Abolition.—The beginning of slavery in Massachusetts was in 1638, when some of the captive Pequot Indians were sent to the West Indies and sold for return cargoes of cotton, tobacco and *negroes*, but in 1641 the court, in a loose and uncertain way, set its face against such servitude, enacting that "There shall never be any bond slaverie, villianage or captivitie amongst us, unless it be lawfull captives taken in just warres, and such strangers as willingly selle themselves or are sold to us. This exempts none from servitude who shall be judged thereto by authoritie." What is there in this to prevent negro or Indian slavery? Under the clause "such strangers as willingly sell themselves or are sold to us," a door seems to be widely opened. Thomas Keyser, an early settler of Lynn, was a mariner, and appears unscrupulously to have engaged in the Guinea slave trade, conjointly with James Smith, of Boston, a church member. Slaves were most numerous in the province in 1745. In 1754 there were four hundred and thirty-nine slaves in Essex County, and in all Massachusetts forty-four hundred and eighty-nine. In 1774 the General Court passed a bill prohibiting the importation of slaves, but Governor Gage refused his assent.

At the commencement of the Revolution there were twenty-six slaves in Lynn, among them one belonging to Thomas Mansfield, named Pompey, a native prince born on the Gambia, and who continued to be duly honored by all the negroes hereabout, holding a holiday court once a year in a fragrant glade, surrounded by his gayly-clad subjects, who had been allowed their freedom for the day.

The State Constitution was established in 1780. The first article of the Declaration of Rights asserts that all men are born free and equal, and this was generally supposed to have reference to slavery, but it was a point on which there was by no means unanimity of opinion. In 1781, however, at a court in Worcester, an indictment was found against a white man for assaulting, beating and imprisoning a black. The case finally, in 1783, went to the Supreme Court, and there the defense was that the black was a slave, and the beating the necessary and lawful correction by the master; but the defense was declared invalid, and this decision was the death-blow to slavery in Massachusetts.

As to the later movements touching the abolition of slavery in the United States, it may be remarked that Lynn raised a strong and by no means uncertain voice in behalf of the slaves,—a cause so much derided and opposed in its incipient stages, but so much applauded when it had become popular.

The "Lynn Colored People's Friend Society" was formed in 1832, but it is thought that the members really did more for the cause by individual than combined action. Nevertheless, the organization was useful in arousing and centralizing attention. Speakers from abroad were occasionally here. The accomplished and piquant Grimkie ladies from the South gave one or two stirring addresses. In the early part of the summer of 1835 George Thompson, the prominent English abolitionist, visited Lynn, and lectured in several of the meeting-houses to large audiences. In the latter part of the summer he again came to Lynn to attend a meeting of the Essex County Anti-Slavery Society, held in the First Methodist meeting-house. Some hostility was now manifested by the opponents of the movement. In the evening, while Mr. Thompson was lecturing, a great crowd collected about the house, and a stone was thrown through one of the windows, causing great disturbance within. A large number pressed into the entry and attempted

to burst in the inner doors, which had been closed. During the tumult Mr. Thompson ended his discourse, and passed out, unobserved by the crowd. He was presently surrounded by a guard of ladies, and conducted to a neighboring house, whence he departed privately to his temporary residence at Swampscott. Mr. Thompson was here again in 1850, and then met with a cordial welcome. He had a public reception by his Lynn friends at Lyceum Hall, which stood on Market Street, at the corner of Summer. Though the weather was stormy, the hall was well filled, and Mr. Thompson delivered a felicitous address.

It was in 1850 that Congress passed the famous, or as many regarded it, the infamous "Fugitive Slave Law." The law intended to facilitate the rendition of slaves escaping into the free States. Much hostility to the act was manifested in Lynn, and several largely-attended meetings were held, at which it was denounced in strong terms. On Saturday evening, October 5th, a full and enthusiastic meeting took place in Lyceum Hall, at which Mayor Hood presided, and at which resolutions were adopted reaching to the very verge of loyalty. And, though one or two of them savor strongly of the nullification doctrine, they may well be introduced here as indicative of the aroused spirit of our people:

"Resolved, That the Fugitive Slave Bill, recently enacted by Congress, violates the plain intent and the strict letter of the United States Constitution, which secures to every citizen, except in cases of martial law, the right of trial by jury on all important questions; further, said bill outrages justice, since it does not secure to the fugitive, or to the free man mistaken for a fugitive, due notice beforehand of the charge made against him, and opportunity for cross-examining the witnesses against him on their oath, gives him no time to get counsel or gather testimony in his own behalf—rights which our fathers secured by the struggle of two hundred years, and which are too dear to be sacrificed to the convenience of slave-hunters, afraid or ashamed to linger amid a community whose institutions and moral sense they are outraging.

"Again, said bill tramples on the most sacred principles of the common law, and even if men could be property, no property, however sacred, can claim the right to be protected in such a way as endangers the rights and safety of free men; therefore—

"Resolved, That we protest against it as grossly unconstitutional, as fraught with danger to the safety of a large portion of our fellow-citizens, and capable of being easily perverted to the ruin of any one, white or black; we denounce it as infamous, and we proclaim our determination that it shall not be executed.

"Resolved, That we rejoice to believe that there are not prisons enough at the North to hold the men and women who stand ready to succor and protect the panting fugitive slave, and baffle and resist the slave-hunter who shall dare to pollute our soil.

"Resolved, That every man who voted for this atrocious bill, every one who avows his readiness to execute it, and every one who justifies it on any ground, is a traitor to the rights of the free States, and a criminal of the deepest die, at the head of whom stands Millard Fillmore, who from party or even baser motives, has set his name to a law, the provisions of which, so far from being fitted for a Christian republic, remind one only of the court of Jeffries or the camp of Haynau.

"Resolved, That Samuel A. Eliot, of Boston, in giving his vote for this blood-hound bill, dishonored and betrayed Massachusetts; and low as is often the moral sense of a great city, cankered by wealth, we rejoice to know that he misrepresented his immediate constituents; and we demand of them, in the name of our old commonwealth, to save us from the infamy of his presence in another Congress.

"Resolved, That since God has commanded us to 'bewray not him that wandereth,' and since, our fathers being witnesses, every man's right to liberty is self-evident, we see no way of avoiding the conclusion of Senator Seward, that 'it is a violation of the divine law to surrender the fugitive slave who takes refuge at our firesides from his relentless pursuers;' and in view of this, as well as of the notorious fact that the slave power has constantly trampled under foot the Constitution of the United States to secure its own extension or safety, and especially of the open, undisguised and acknowledged contempt of that instrument with which the slave States kidnap our colored citizens traveling South, and imprison our colored seamen, we, in obedience to God's law, and in self-defense, declare that, constitution or no constitution, law or no law, with jury trial or without, the slave who has once breathed the air and touched the soil of Massachusetts, shall never be dragged back to bondage.

"Resolved, That Lewis Cass and Daniel Webster, Senator Foote and Senator Clay, and each and every one of the 'compromise committee of thirteen,' who reported and urged the passage of this bill, as well as every one who voted for its passage, are unworthy the votes of a free people for any office for which they may be hereafter named."

The execution of John Brown, at Charlestown, Va., adjudged guilty of treason for attempting by armed force to free slaves, was signalized by the tolling of church bells in Lynn at sunrise, noon and sunset on Friday, December 2, 1859, the day of execution.

It would be pleasing to give the names of those who long and valiantly fought in the abolition ranks, those who, under reproach and sometimes personal danger, never flinched in their loyalty to the great principles of human liberty. But the list would be too long, and it might appear invidious to select a few. James N. Buffum, however, should not be forgotten; nor Frederic Douglass, who was for some time a resident here, after his successful flight from the South. Some of the more zealous of the early ones lost much of their influence by denouncing the church organizations for the alleged reason that their position was not sufficiently aggressive on that and some other reformatory questions. They were called Come-outers, and in many instances their turbulent course tended to retard rather than advance the cause they really had at heart

To one who knew the prominent actors in the reformatory movements of this community, say forty-five years ago, particularly the movements touching slavery and intemperance, it is interesting, if not wonderful, to observe the change of public opinion regarding them. No better examples can be had of the zeal and perseverance necessary to be exercised, of the contumely and misconception to be endured, in such a warfare.

But the end of slavery came in a manner not anticipated in those earlier days, and many of the pioneers in the great cause lived to rejoice over the removal of the national disgrace. Little could that great apostle of freedom, William Lloyd Garrison, have dreamed of the career that awaited him, and of the lasting honors that would surround his name so long as American principles should endure, when, in his youthful days, he quietly pursued his humble labors upon the shoemaker's bench, in the little seven by nine shop on Market Street.

History of Free Masonry in Lynn.—A brief history of the ancient institution of Free Masonry cannot be inappropriate in this sketch. It dates back

to the commencement of the present century. Tradition informs us that a number of Masonic brethren frequently met for consultation, and concluded, in the early summer of 1805, to form a lodge. These brethren resided in the western part of the town and located the lodge in the upper room of a small wooden building on Boston Street, near the corner of North Federal. The founders of the lodge were among the foremost citizens, men of character and influence, whose names to this day are revered by the fraternity. The original records show that Amariah Childs, Ezra Collins, Thomas C. Thatcher, William Frothingham, Frederick Breed, William Ballard, Francis Moore, Jr., Aaron Breed, Aaron Learned, Samuel Brimblecom, Thomas Witt, Joseph Johnson, Jonas W. Gleason, Joshua Blanchard, David Crane and Richard Johnson, being all master masons, assembled some time about the 1st of June, 1805, and agreed to form themselves into a brotherhood by the name of *Mount Carmel Lodge;* and after choosing Amariah Childs, Master; William Ballard, Senior Warden; and Francis Moore, Jr., Junior Warden, they signed a petition to the Grand Lodge for a charter, which was granted at the quarterly communication in June of the same year.

The hall of Lynn Academy, then recently erected, on South Common Street, was obtained, fitted up, all necessary regalia procured and regular meetings commenced. The first candidate proposed for initiation was Ezra Mudge, father of Ezra Warren Mudge, the sixth mayor of Lynn. The first code of by-laws was adopted November 13th, and the membership limited to fifty. The lodge so prospered that in 1807 an invitation was extended to the Grand Lodge to publicly install the officers. The use of the old parish meeting-house was procured for the purpose, and there the ceremonies took place, the Rev. Asa Eaton, D.D., rector of Christ Church, Boston, delivering the sermon. The membership was, in 1818, limited to seventy-five, by the new code of by-laws then adopted.

In 1821 the lodge erected for its use the two-story frame building which long stood in Market Square, at the corner of Elm Street, and was known as Masonic Hall. The cost was $1.325.98. The corner-stone was laid June 25th, with Masonic ceremonies, Rev. Cheever Felch delivering the address, and the hall was dedicated November 12th.

The lodge attended, by invitation, the laying of the corner-stone of Bunker Hill Monument, June 17, 1825. On St. John's day, June 24, 1826, Brother Caleb Cushing, of Newburyport, delivered a learned and eloquent address before the fraternity, in the First Methodist meeting-house.

The last meeting of record, previous to surrendering the charter of Mount Carmel Lodge, appears to have been on the 16th of December, 1834. And from that time until June 11, 1845, there is no record to show that the lodge was called together.

During the decade from 1835 to 1845 there is an unwritten history of meetings on Long Beach and High Rock held by faithful members during the stormy and troublous anti-Masonic period.

The charter of the lodge was restored on the 11th of June, 1845. A meeting was called July 19th, and officers elected, who were installed July 23d, and from that date commenced a season of prosperity which has continued without interruption to the present time. The first person to receive the degrees after the revival of the charter was Bradford Williams, the ceremony taking place September 15, 1845.

On the 17th of February, 1851, a fire destroyed much of the property of the lodge, which was at Liberty Hall, at the corner of Essex and Market Streets, where the meetings were held. After this the regular meetings of the fraternity were held at the house of their Worthy Master, W. M. Phillips, until Dec. 16th, when they met in a hall in which one or two other organizations occasionally assembled. In the winter of 1854 the hall in the Sagamore Building was fitted up and used for the regular convocations of the lodge, and if those old walls could speak, a recital of the history of the meetings of Mount Carmel Lodge would greatly interest the present members of the fraternity in our city.

On the 29th of December, 1855, the first book of records was formally closed, having served the lodge for half a century. And on September 7, 1857, a new code of by-laws was adopted, to which is appended the names of sixty-one members.

On the 8th of September, 1863, *Sutton Chapter of Royal Arch Masons* was organized.

On the 14th of October, 1864, upon invitation of the Grand Body, Mount Carmel Lodge assisted in laying the corner-stone of the new Masonic Temple, corner of Boylston and Tremont Streets, Boston.

On February 21, 1865, *Golden Fleece Lodge* was duly organized, and had for its first three officers Timothy G. Senter, W. M.; Alonzo C. Blethen, S. W.; John G. Dudley, J. W.

April 10, 1865, the ladies of Lynn presented a beautiful banner to Mount Carmel Lodge.

July 4, 1865, the Masonic fraternity joined in the celebration of the day.

November 13, 1865, an invitation was received from Mayor Peter M. Neal to take part in the ceremonies of laying the corner-stone of the City Hall; but on December 11th a communication was received from the R. W. Grand Master refusing to grant a dispensation for the lodges to appear in public to take part in the ceremonies.

October 8, 1866.—A petition was received and consent given for the formation of a lodge at Saugus.

June 24, 1867.—The Masonic fraternity of Lynn participated in the dedicatory services of the new Masonic Temple in Boston.

June 28, 1872.—Died, in Lynn, Jonathan Richardson, a native of the town, aged eighty-seven years. He was one of the early members of Mount Carmel

Lodge, and tiler for more than forty years. He remained a faithful adherent to the institution when so many of the brethren withdrew, in the troublous times of anti-Masonry. His burial took place from the First Methodist meeting-house, and was attended by a large number of the fraternity.

February, 1873.—*Olivet Commandery of Knights Templars* was organized. October 22d there was a grand parade, attracting much attention.

September 8, 1873.—Invitation received from the city government of Lynn to take part in the dedication of the Soldiers' Monument. As an organization, however, the fraternity did not join in the ceremonies.

May 12, 1879.—Invitation received from Mayor George P. Sanderson to participate in the celebration of the Two Hundred and Fiftieth Anniversary of the settlement of Lynn. But the invitation was not accepted.

December 8, 1880.—A board of trustees elected to take charge of the hall and of the property belonging to the Masonic fraternity.

May 9, 1881.—By-laws adopted granting life membership in Mount Carmel Lodge.

October 8, 1881.—Grand Master S. E. Lawrence present for the purpose of addressing the lodges on the commutation of the Grand Lodge capitation tax.

February 22, 1882.—Members from lodges in the Fifth District hold a meeting at Masonic Hall in Lynn, for exemplification of work and the lectures connected therewith. Charles M. Avery, Grand Lecturer, present as instructor.

Mount Carmel Lodge, soon after the renewal of its charter, in 1845, began steadily to increase in numbers and strength, and, from time to time, found it necessary to seek more capacious accommodations. Some years ago the hall in Tolman's Building, Market Street, corner of Liberty, was leased and fitted up in becoming style, the dedicatory ceremonies taking place in July, 1872. But now, for a number of years, the several Masonic organizations have occupied the eligible quarters in the building of the Young Men's Christian Association, on Market Street.

For fifty-eight years Mount Carmel was the only lodge in Lynn. But there are now, 1887, the following Masonic bodies:

	Organization.	*Membership,* 1886.
Mount Carmel Lodge	1805	193
Sutton Royal Arch Chapter	1863	139
Golden Fleece Lodge	1865	178
Olivet Commandery Knights Templar	1873	117

The trustees of the Masonic fraternity in Lynn, at the present time, are: William D. Pool, president; George H. Allen, treasurer; William B. Phillips, secretary; Charles E. Parsons, Charles C. Fry.

Drinking Customs and Temperance Movements.—Whether our predecessors, as occupants of this soil, the Indians, were ever excessive drinkers is not positively known. They did not have distilled liquors, but may possibly have had some sort of herbaceous concoction that operated as a more or less inebriating stimulant. But they had nothing that in its effects would compare with the "fire water" brought by their pale-faced supplanters. Their boisterous orgies, which led our fathers to call them "devil worshippers," were of a character very different from "drunken sprees." But when they got a taste of the white man's fire water, having no restraining moral sentiment, their lust for it was unquenchable. The deplorable result need not be recounted. It has been said that the first instance of Indian intoxication in this part of North America took place in September, 1609, when the ship of the celebrated navigator, Henry Hudson, was cruising about the river that still bears his name. For the curious purpose of ascertaining the natural disposition of the natives whom they encountered, it is said the navigators resolved to make some of the principal ones intoxicated. To that end, ardent spirits, "as much as they would," were administered. Only one, however, became really drunk, though all reached the merry stage. The pranks of the drunken one greatly astonished and alarmed the others, who imagined that an evil spirit had entered into him. The next day, however, everything having calmed down, some became clamorous for a renewal of the experiment. This, as remarked, is claimed to have been the first instance of intoxication ever known among the Indians. Unhappily, it was by no means the last. Many a tract of valuable land has been bought of an Indian for a quart of rum, notwithstanding the efforts of the colonial authorities to prevent such nefarious traffic. During the colonial days there was much legislation in regard to strong liquors, both on the score of their proper use by individuals and their relation to the public by way of revenue. But we must treat of our own neighborhood.

It cannot be said that Lynn in her earlier days was remarkable for abstinence from the use of intoxicating liquors. There were causes for the prevalence of the evil habit here that in some places did not exist. It was the custom of the times for all classes to use intoxicants in season and out of season. Excepting in rare instances, the ministers indulged; and the doctors. The physical injury attending the use was not so well understood; nor the moral effect. At ordinations, at weddings, at funerals, drink freely flowed; and at trainings and huskings; indeed, at all quasi social and public gatherings; to say nothing of sly indulgence at home. An illustrative anecdote is told of the eccentric Lois Hart, who lived on the north side of Boston Street, near Federal. During her last sickness the good Doctor Gardner one day remarked to her that, being so aged, she could not expect to long survive, and, in view of her approaching end, asked if he should not invite the minister to call. "Well, yes," she replied, in her rude way, "I

should like well enough to see him; and when you go up town, call into some of the grog-shops, and when you see him ask him to call." The end of the story is that he actually was found in one of the drinking groceries, and blandly received the message.

But especially as regards the youth of Lynn: The crews, usually consisting of five or six, in the shoemaker's little shops thought it necessary to have their forenoon and afternoon drams—in winter to brace up against the cold, in summer to brace up against the heat. It was customary to put boys into the shops at the age of twelve, they having obtained their education by that time, excepting, perhaps, the little they might acquire by occasionally attending an evening school. They were of just the age when character for life was forming, and it was placing them in a most perilous situation. The youngest boy in the shop was usually the one sent out for liquor, and he was entitled, on his return, to the first drink, for the service, if his breath did not betray a sly imbibition by the way.

But it is not true that people were universally blind to the evils of strong drink. From the earliest times there were some wide awake on the subject. The Lynn emigrants to Long Island, soon after getting well established at Southampton, 1655, ordained that no one should sell strong liquors within the town bounds, excepting "our neighbor, John Cooper;" and he was not to sell to any Indian, nor to any but those who would use them properly. There was Dr. James Gardner, just mentioned, who, before the present century, pointed out the evils of so prevalent indulgence, and often fearlessly warned his patients against habits which were destroying their health, as well as ruining their souls. A memorandum of his, under date May 31, 1796, is in these words: "One person died of chronic illness, said to have been occasioned by gross intemperance, or a brutal indulgence of the destroyer, *rum*. . . . He was able to walk to a considerable distance to procure the poison only six days before death closed the scene at one draught." Mr. Enoch Mudge, from whom many of the name now among us descended, was a rigid abstainer, never allowing spirits in his house or shop. He was grandfather of Hon. E. R. Mudge, the munificent donor of St. Stephen's Church.

When the general awakening on the subject of intemperance took place, more than half a century ago, the voice of Lynn was loudly raised against the evil. Sixty years ago, in 1826, a society was formed here for the promotion of "Industry and Temperance." It soon numbered more than four hundred members, and embraced, with few exceptions, the most conspicuous men of the town. The membership in 1836, fifty years since, was five hundred and fifty. Its president then was Thomas Bowler, for sixteen years town clerk. The society was at that time composed largely of middle-aged and elderly persons, as in the meantime two other societies, embracing more of the younger men, had been formed, namely, the *Lynn Young Men's Temperance Society*, organized in 1833, and the *Lynn Union Temperance Society*, formed in 1835. This latter was the first organization here that proscribed wine, cider or strong beer, which theretofore had not been popularly reckoned as intoxicants. Of this society Josiah Newhall was the first president, and George W. Keene the first secretary.

Lynn soon took rank among the most zealous temperance communities. Rev. Edwin Thompson, so well known for the last forty years as a lecturer on temperance and anti-slavery, was living here, and, though young, by his winning ways and strong arguments, did much to advance the cause. Liquors soon began to be banished from the workshops and the labeled casks from the stores. It was even facetiously said of one or two zealots that they cut down their apple trees, lest the fruit should be made into cider—contrariwise from the unsophisticated old Indian who is said to have told Mrs. Whiting, on smacking his lips after swallowing the mug of cider she had given him, that he thought Adam was rightly damned for eating the apples in Eden, as he should have made them into cider.

When the shoemakers' little shops were displaced by the large factories, more stringent rules were necessarily established, and, as a matter of course, the machinery was run without the oil of the still. One of the former traps for the young was thus removed. At the present time few, if any, places in sober New England can boast of a more temperate population than Lynn. It would be useless to attempt to give details respecting the many temperance organizations, male and female, adult and juvenile. Yet the cause here, as elsewhere, requires vigilant and unremitted watchfulness.

There are now some fifteen regular temperance organizations in Lynn, besides a number of other associations that make temperance a part of their object.

Free Public Forest.—A voluntary association was formed in 1881, the object being, in brief, the preservation of as large a portion as may be of the extensive range of forest land yet remaining upon our northern border, to be forever devoted to the free use of the public as a woodland park. Thus far about one hundred and ten acres have been secured, chiefly by the gift of those who owned the lands. Twice a year individuals most deeply interested, with invited guests, assemble in some romantic spot, on hill-top or in glen, which, with ceremonies reminding of the old mythological days, they proceed to consecrate. Sometimes it is in memory of a revered departed one, and sometimes of a marked event. An "altar," in the shape, perhaps, of a mossy boulder, is made to bear the ceremonial fire, replenished by woodland gatherings and the oil of incense. The participants, enwreathed in sylvan spoils, gather around with songs, readings and inspiring pageantry. The occa-

sion usually calls out some poem or address well worthy of preservation. For instance, there were written for the meeting on the 30th of May, 1886, four little poems, which, though untoward circumstances prevented their being sung, were published in connection with the account of the proceedings. One of the interesting features on this particular day was the release of a "Messenger Dove." Let us quote a stanza or two from each of the little poems, as, besides their appropriateness to the occasion, they afford a taste of the qualities of some of our local versifiers:

By RUTHIE TURNER:

"Once more we meet at spring's return,
And lay aside each weight and care,
While o'er us bend the leafy trees,
And round us breathes the balmy air."

By BESSIE BLAND:

"To God's first temple we repair,
In forest aisle to rest;
Lo! from the sacred altar there,
The flame uplifts its crest!
A symbol of the life so fair,
That glows on nature's breast."

By SAMUEL W. FOSS:

"Fly to the fields, thou white-winged dove,
Tell all their leafy bowers
That summer comes on wings of love
To storm the land with flowers.

"Tell to the hearts bowed down with grief
That joy returns again;
That summer comes with flower and leaf,
And hope renews her reign."

By DARIUS BARRY:

"The trees and rocks my brothers are,
There's freedom in the air,
The violet and the mossy stone
Send up a silent prayer."

Whatever may be thought of the ceremonies of the "camp days" the object of the associates is assuredly praiseworthy. And though the work undertaken is of great and yet undefined proportions, and such as in no probability can be fully accomplished during the lifetime of the present participants, future generations will doubtless honor the effort. But setting aside all other considerations, these spring and autumn woodland gatherings are highly enjoyable, resolving themselves at suitable hours into picnic entertainments, inspiring social intercourse of a refining and educating character.

CHAPTER XXII.

LYNN - (*Continued*).

SHORT NOTES, CHRONOLOGICALLY ARRANGED.

"Minute historical facts are to history as the nerves and sinews, the veins and arteries, are to the animated bodies; they may not separately exhibit much of use, elegant or just proportion, but taken collectively, they furnish strength, spirit and existence itself. An historian who hath neglected to study them knows but the half of his profession, and like one who is ignorant of anatomy, sinks into a mere manual operator."—LODGE.

IN an historical sketch of circumscribed limits there are, of course, many topics on which it is impossible to dwell at large, but which should not be passed over in entire silence, and in some instances brief recapitulations seem necessary. In the hope, therefore, of supplying deficiencies the following summary is introduced:

1004. Various accounts, derived chiefly from ancient Scandinavian manuscripts, have led to the belief that certain adventurous navigators visited this coast and made lodgments much earlier than any permanent occupation was effected. For instance, Thorwald, the Northman, a son of Eric the Red, is claimed to have been upon the New England coast in the year 1004, and to have landed at one or two places. At one landing-place he was so charmed by the prospect that he exclaimed,—"Here it is beautiful! and here I should like to fix my dwelling!" And there, indeed, was the bluff old hero's everlasting dwelling fixed, for in a hostile encounter with a swarm of savages, that presently ensued, he received an arrow wound that speedily proved fatal. As life was fast closing he said to his people,—"I now advise you to prepare for your departure as soon as possible; but me ye shall bring to the promontory where I thought it good to dwell. It may be that it was a prophetic word which fell from my mouth, about my abiding there for a season. There ye shall bury me, and plant a cross at my head and also at my feet, and call the place Krossanes (the Cape of the Cross) in all time coming." He died, the record adds, and they did as he had ordered. This was quite sentimental for a rough sea rover, but indicates warmth of heart and imagination. But what makes the incident interesting to the people of Lynn is the supposition long since put forth that "Krossanes" was Nahant, so long a part of our own territory. Possibly the supposition is correct, but those loose Scandinavian records are hardly to be taken as conclusive evidence, especially as they fail to fix geographical lines with any certainty.

1602. The celebrated navigator, Bartholomew Gosnold, is said to have anchored in the waters of Lynn this year. He seems, indeed, to have been the first European certainly known to have visited Essex County. He sailed from Falmouth, England, in

March, 1602, and reached Massachusetts Bay on the 14th of May. While coasting around it is highly probable that he cast anchor here, and, perhaps, landed for a prospecting tour. But he did not long remain. While Gosnold was in the vicinity he was greatly surprised by an Indian, dressed in English clothes, coming on board and saluting him in fair English. And that Indian is believed to have been Black Will, of Lynn, the Sagamore before alluded to. He was smart, and not over-scrupulous, as his selling Nahant, to which he had no title, to Mr. Dexter, for a suit of clothes, very well proves.

1614. There is little doubt that Captain John Smith, whose life was saved by the interposition of the dusky heroine, Pocahontas—if the tale is not mere romance—was here in 1614, and was struck by the grandeur of the Nahant cliffs, which he compared to the "Pieramides of Egypt." And for the benefit of the curious in such matters it may be remarked that the redoubtable captain lived at one time in Lynn Regis, from which our own Lynn took its name. He served in a counting-house there, but finally left, with ten shillings in his pocket, which he says were contributed by friends who desired to get rid of him. He went to France and served in a military capacity there and in other countries. In 1608 he was in Virginia, and became a master-spirit in its colonization. But his propensity for roving was unconquerable, and we find him, a few years later, drifting about the New England coast. It appears to have been Captain Smith who bestowed the name New England upon our territory, it having previously been known as North Virginia. Yet he was not, apparently, very favorably impressed by the character of the country or the climate, as he remarked that he was not so simple as to think that any other motive than wealth would "ever erect a commonwealth or draw company from their ease and humors at home" to occupy here.

The foregoing visits, however, were of little importance so far as any direct benefit accrued, no surviving settlement being made hereabout if, indeed, any was contemplated; so let us come to the day of permanent settlement.

1629. Five families, chief among them Edmund Ingalls and his brother Francis, arrive and commence the settlement.

1630. Thomas Newhall born, being the first person of European parentage born here. He died in March, 1687, aged fifty-seven. Wolves killed several swine belonging to the settlers, September 30th. Fifty settlers, chiefly farmers, and many of them with families, arrive and locate in different neighborhoods.

1631. Governor Winthrop passed through the settlement October 28th, and noted that the crops were plentiful.

1632. First church—fifth in the colony—formed. Stephen Bachiler, minister. The court order that "No person shall take any tobacco publiquely, under pain of punishment, also that every one shall pay one penny for every time he is convicted of taking tobacco in any place."

1633. A corn-mill, the first in the settlement, built on Strawberry Brook. Says Winthrop, under this date,—"James Sagamore, of Sagus, died, and most of his folks" (of small-pox).

1634. John Humfrey arrives and settles on Nahant Street. The settlement sends her first Representatives to the General Court. William Wood, one of the first comers, publishes "New England's Prospect."

1635. Philip Kertland, the first shoemaker, arrives.

1637. Name of the settlement changed from Saugus to Lynn. At this time there were thirty-seven plows in the colony, most of them in Lynn. Settlement of Sandwich commenced by emigrants from Lynn. The General Court forbade the making of cakes or buns, "except for burials, marriages and such like special occasions." And also ordered that corn should be received as legal tender, at five shillings a bushel.

1638. First divison of lands among the inhabitants.

1639. Ferry across Saugus River established. First bridge over Saugus River at Boston Street crossing built.

1643. Iron-works near Saugus River commenced, the first in America.

1644. Hugh Bert and Samuel Bennett, of Lynn, presented to the grand jury as "common sleepers in time of exercise." Both convicted and fined.

1646. Lynn made a market town—Tuesday, the lecture day, being market day.

1656. Robert Bridges, one of the most active and enterprising of the early settlers, Speaker of the House of Representatives, and assistant, died this year. He was a large proprietor in the iron-works.

1658. Dungeon Rock alleged to have been rent by an earthquake, entombing alive Thomas Veal, the pirate, with treasure.

1666. A year of disasters. Several die of small-pox. "Divers are slain by lightning." Grasshoppers and caterpillars do much mischief.

1669. Boniface Burton died, aged one hundred and thirteen years.

1679. Rev. Samuel Whiting, for forty-three years minister of the First Parish, died December 11th, aged eighty-two years.

1680. Dr. Philip Reed, the first physician, complained to the court of Mrs. Margaret Gifford as a witch. Joseph Armitage, first keeper of the famous Anchor Tavern, which continued as a public-house for more than a hundred and fifty years, died June 27th, aged eighty. The great Newtonian comet appeared in November, occasioning much alarm.

1682. Old Tunnel meeting-house built.

1688. Excitement about Edward Randolph's petition for a grant of Nahant.

1689. Sir Edmund Andros passed through Lynn on

his way to Boston from the east, making a short stay, not deigning, however, to confer with the people as to their wrongs.

1692. Great witchcraft excitement. Six Lynn persons were arrested and imprisoned; some of them were tried, and one condemned to death, but not executed.

1694. A church-fast appointed by Rev. Mr. Shepard, July 19th, for the arrest of the "spiritual plague" of Quakerism.

1697. Great alarm on account of the small-pox. This was many years before vaccination was practiced.

1706. Second division of land among the inhabitants.

1708. A public fast held on account of the ravages of caterpillars and canker worms.

1719. Northern lights observed for the first time, December 17th. Much alarm occasioned.

1720. Rev. Jeremiah Shepard, minister of the First Parish for forty years, died June 3d, aged seventy-two.

1721. John Burrill, a member of the House of Representatives for twenty years, ten of which he was Speaker, died of small-pox, December 10th, aged sixty-three.

1723. A terrific storm with raging sea, February 24th. First mill on Saugus River, at Boston Street crossing, built.

1726. £13 15*s.* awarded to Nathaniel Potter for linen manufactured in Lynn.

1745. Rev. Mr. Whitefield preaches on Lynn common, creating much excitement.

1750. John Adam Dagyr, an accomplished shoemaker, arrives.

1755. Greatest earthquake ever known in New England, November 18th. It commenced a little after four in the morning, and continued about four minutes, being apparently the same convulsion that destroyed Lisbon, sixty thousand persons perishing there in six minutes, the sea rising fifty feet above its usual level.

1759. A bear weighing four hundred pounds killed in Lynn woods.

1761. Rev. Nathaniel Henchman, minister of the First Parish for forty years, died December 23d, aged sixty-one.

1770. Potato rot prevails and canker worms commit great ravages.

1775. Battle of Lexington, April 19th; five Lynn men killed.

1776. Declaration of Independence promulgated. At this time twenty-six negro slaves were owned in Lynn.

1780. Memorable dark day, May 19th. Houses lighted as at night.

1784. Gen. Lafayette passed through town, October 28th, receiving enthusiastic plaudits.

1788. Gen. Washington passed through town, in October, and was affectionately greeted by old and young.

1793. Lynn post-office established, and first kept on Boston Street, near Federal. Dr. John Flagg, an esteemed physician and Revolutionary patriot, member of the Committee of Safety and commissioned as colonel, died May 27th, aged fifty.

1795. Brig "Peggy" wrecked on Long Beach, December 9th, and eleven lives lost.

1796. First fire-engine for public use purchased.

1800. Memory of Washington honored; procession and eulogy, January 13th. Morocco manufacture introduced.

1803. Boston and Salem turnpike opened, and Lynn Hotel built. Miles Shorey and wife both killed by lightning, July 10th; she had an infant in her arms who was unharmed, and lived to old age.

1804. First celebration of independence in Lynn.

1808. First law-office in Lynn opened by Benjamin Merrill; it was in a chamber of the dwelling corner of North Common and Park Streets. Great bull fight at Half-Way House; bulls and bull-dogs engaged. Lynn Artillery chartered November 18th, and allowed two brass field-pieces. John Adam Dagyr, the early shoemaker before named, who became widely known for his uncommon taste and skill, died in the almshouse.

1812. Lynn Light Infantry chartered June 30th.

1813. Moll Pitcher, the celebrated fortune-teller, died, April 9th, aged seventy-five. Sketch of her on previous page.

1814. Lynnfield set off from Lynn and incorporated as a separate town. First Town House of Lynn built. First Bank established—known as Lynn Mechanics' Bank till its reorganization as the First National Bank, in 1864. Battle between the "Chesapeake" and "Shannon" fought, June 1st. Intense solicitude was manifested by the people of Lynn, many of whom witnessed the contest from heights and roofs. The battle was anticipated, and multitudes came from neighboring places. The greatest amount of travel over the turnpike that ever took place in a single day then occurred. One hundred and twenty crowded stages passed, it is said, and an almost countless number of all sorts of vehicles, together with equestrians and pedestrians innumerable.

1815. Saugus set off from Lynn and incorporated as a separate town. Terrific southeasterly gale, September 23d; ocean spray driven several miles inland. Joseph Fuller, first president of first Lynn Bank, and first State Senator from Lynn, died, aged forty-two.

1816. Great horse trot on the turnpike, in Lynn, September 1st; said to have been the first in the country; Major Stackpole's "Old Blue" trotted three miles in eight minutes and forty-two seconds.

1817. President Monroe visited Lynn; school children arrayed on the Common.

1819. The wonderful sea-serpent appears off Long Beach; in the sketch of Swampscott a somewhat

detailed account of this supposed marine monster will appear. Nahant Hotel built. Almshouse at Tower Hill built.

1824. General Lafayette visits Lynn August 31st, and is enthusiastically welcomed.

1825. First Lynn newspaper—the *Weekly Mirror*—issued September 3d by Charles F. Lummus. It was published six years.

1826. First savings bank—Lynn Institution for Savings—incorporated.

1827. Micajah Collins, teacher of the Friends' school and minister of the Friends' Society, died January 30th, aged sixty-two. Solomon Moulton, a youthful writer of much promise, died May 26th, aged nineteen. Broad and brilliant night arch, August 28th.

1828. Flora, a negro woman, died October 1st, aged one hundred and thirteen. Lynn Mutual Fire Insurance Company organized.

1829. Splendid display of frosted trees, January 10th.

1830. Donald McDonald, a Scotchman, died in Lynn almshouse October 4th, aged one hundred and eight; he was at Braddock's defeat and at the battle of Quebec, when Wolfe fell.

1831. Maria Augusta Fuller, poetess and prose writer, died January 19th, aged twenty-four. Dr. James Gardner, a physician of high standing, died December 26th, aged sixty-nine.

1832. First Lynn directory published by Charles F. Lummus. Nahant Bank incorporated; failed in 1836.

1833. Extraordinary shower of meteors, November 13th.

1836. Dr. Richard Hazeltine, a learned and successful physician of the old school, died July 10th, aged sixty-two.

1837. Surplus United States revenue distributed, Lynn receiving fourteen thousand eight hundred and seventy-nine dollars, and applying it to the payment of the town debt.

1838. Charles F. Lummus, first Lynn printer, died April 20th, aged thirty-seven. Eastern Railroad opened for travel from Boston to Salem, August 28th.

1839. Ebenezer Breed—Uncle Eben, as he was called—one of the "nursing fathers" of the shoe business of Lynn—died in the almshouse, December 23d, aged seventy-four.

1841. The first picture by the new art known as daguerreotype, or photography, ever taken in Lynn was a landscape, taken this year by James R. Newhall, by apparatus imported from France.

1842. Amos Blanchard, a musician of the Revolutionary army, and for many years a teacher of a district school, died May 25th, aged seventy-eight. Enoch Curtin, a poet and prose writer, died May 28th, aged forty-seven.

1843. Dr. Charles O. Barker, a reputable physician, died January 8th, aged forty-one; his wife was a daughter of Rembrant Peale, the celebrated painter. The schooner "Thomas" was wrecked on Long Beach March 17th, five men perishing.

1845. Dr. Edward L. Coffin, physician, scientist and writer, died March 31st, aged fifty.

1846. Amariah Childs, manufacturer of a famous kind of chocolate, died January 21st, aged eighty. Mexican War commenced; Lynn furnished twenty volunteers. Destructive fire on Water Hill Street, August 9th, destroying a large brick silk-printing establishment, spice and coffee-mill, and two or three smaller buildings; total loss, about seventy-five thousand dollars.

1847. President Polk made a short visit to Lynn, July 5th.

1848. George Gray, the Lynn hermit, died February 28th, aged seventy-eight. Carriage-road over harbor side of Long Beach built. Lynn Common fenced.

1849. Lynn Police Court established. Large emigration to California. Laighton Bank incorporated; reorganized as the Central National in 1865.

1850. City form of government adopted. Samuel Brimblecom, an early and enterprising shoe manufacturer, and colonel of militia during the War of 1812, died April 24th, aged eighty-one. Pine Grove Cemetery consecrated July 24th. Thirteen persons of a picnic party from Lynn drowned in Lynnfield Pond, August 15th. Ten-hour system—that is, ten hours to constitute a day's work—generally adopted. Church bells ordered to be rung at six P.M. Previously there was no limit to work hours.

1851. On March 18th and April 15th the tide, during violent storms, swept entirely over Long Beach, the storm of the 15th of April being that during which Minot's Ledge light-house was carried away. It was so severe as to force the salt water from the sea to the Common, the wind, no doubt, driving the water up the little brook that ran across the Common in such quantities as to overflow and form a sheet that was quite salt. Hiram Marble commenced the excavation of Dungeon Rock, in search of treasure, in the summer of this year.

1852. Swampscott set off from Lynn, and incorporated as a separate town. Louis Kossuth, the Hungarian exile, was warmly received, May 6th; greeted by some ten thousand persons assembled on the Common, and escorted through the streets by a long procession to Lyceum Hall, where an enthusiastic reception took place.

1853. Nahant set off from Lynn, and incorporated as a separate town. Illuminating gas first lighted here, January 13th. Cars commenced running over Saugus Branch Railroad, February 1st.

1854. City Bank incorporated; reorganized as National City Bank, 1865.

1855. City charter so amended as to have the municipal year commence on the first Monday of January, instead of the first Monday of April. Five Cents Savings Bank incorporated.

1856. Two bald eagles appear on the ice in Lynn harbor, January 17th. Ezra R. Tebbets, of Lynn, killed by a snow-slide from a building in Bromfield Street, Boston, February 12th. Egg Rock light first shown, September 15th.

1857. Great snow-storm, with intense cold, January 18th, during which the bark "Tedesco" was wrecked on Long Rock, Swampscott, all on board, twelve in number, perishing. Goold Brown, a famous grammarian and author, died at his residence, South Common Street, March 31st, aged sixty-five. He was a native of Providence, R. I., and long taught a seminary in New York, but spent his later years in Lynn.

1858. Telegraph communication between Lynn and other places established. Impromptu Atlantic cable celebration in Lynn, August 17th, on the arrival of Queen Victoria's message—the first ever sent over an Atlantic cable—to President Buchanan. St. Mary's Catholic Cemetery consecrated, November 4th.

1859. British bark "Vernon," from Messina, driven ashore on Long Beach, February 2d; crew saved by life-boat. Isaiah Breed, active as a shoe manufacturer for nearly fifty years, and a State Senator, died May 23d, aged seventy-two. Roman Catholic Church (St. Mary's), Ash Street, burned, May 28th. George Hood, the first mayor of Lynn, died June 29th, aged fifty-two. Brilliant display of northern lights, the whole heavens being covered, August 28th. Union Street Methodist meeting-house destroyed by fire, November 20th. Church bells tolled at sunrise, noon and sunset, December 2d, in observance of the execution of John Brown at Charlestown, Va.

1860. Harbor so frozen in January that persons walked across to Bass Point. Shoemakers' great strike commenced in February. Prince of Wales passed through Lynn, October 20th, hardly stopping to receive official greetings. First horse railroad cars in Lynn commenced running, November 29th. The luck of a dory fisherman is well illustrated by the experience of Zachariah Phillips, of Lynn, during four days in the latter part of November; his first day's catch sold for twenty-five cents; that of one other day for twenty-one dollars; and, taking the four days together, he realized $46.50, the fish being chiefly cod, and selling for three cents a pound. Market Street first lighted by gas, December 7th.

1861. Alonzo Lewis, historian and poet, died January 21st, aged sixty-six. Lynn Light Infantry and Lynn City Guards, two full companies, start for the seat of the Southern Rebellion, April 16th, in five hours after the arrival of President Lincoln's call for troops. A splendid comet suddenly became visible, July 2d, the tail having enveloped the earth three days before, producing no disturbance and only a slight apparently auroral light.

1862. Lynn Free Public Library opened. Soldiers' burial lot in Pine Grove Cemetery laid out. Nathan Breed, Jr., murdered in his store, Summer Street, December 23d.

1863. Daniel C. Baker, third mayor of Lynn, died July 19th, aged forty-six.

1864. Rev. Parsons Cooke, for twenty-eight years minister of the First Church, died February 12th, aged sixty-three. The thermometer rose to one hundred and four degrees in shady places, June 25th, indicating the warmest day here of which there had been any record. Free delivery of post-office matter begins. Great drought and extensive fires in the woods during the summer. First steam fire-engine owned by the city arrives, August 11th. Town-House burned, October 6th. Schooner "Lion," from Rockland, Me., wrecked on Long Beach, December 10th, and all on board, six in number, perish; their cries were heard above the roaring of the wind and sea, but succor could not reach them.

1865. News of the fall of Richmond received, April 3d; great rejoicing, church-bells rung, buildings illuminated, bonfires kindled. The surrender of General Lee was celebrated, April 10th. News of the assassination of President Lincoln received, April 15th; mourning insignia displayed in public buildings and churches. Corner-stone of City Hall laid, November 28th.

1866. Dr. Abraham Gould, a skillful physician of extensive practice, died, February 27th, aged fifty-eight. General Sherman passed through Lynn, July 16th, and was cordially greeted by a crowd in Central Square. A meteoric stone fell in Ocean Street, in September.

1867. Thomas Bowler, for sixteen years town clerk, died, July 22d, aged eighty-one. The present City Hall dedicated with much ceremony, November 30th.

1868. Memorial Day—called also Decoration Day—observed, May 30th, being the day for decorating the soldiers' graves with flowers; in 1881 the day was made a legal holiday. Hiram Marble, excavator of Dungeon Rock, died, November 10th, aged sixty-five, having pursued his arduous and fruitless labors about seventeen years. His son, Edwin, succeeded him in the work, and died at the Rock January 16, 1880, aged forty-eight, without having reached the supposed deposits of gold and jewels. Destructive fire in Market Street, December 25th, Lyceum Building, Frazier's and Bubier's brick blocks being destroyed, the whole loss reaching about three hundred thousand dollars.

1869. Mary J. Hood, a colored woman, died, January 8th, aged one hundred and four years and seven months. Another destructive fire, on the night of January 25th, commencing in the brick shoe manufactory of Edwin H. Johnson, in Monroe Street, destroyed property to the amount of some one hundred and seventy thousand dollars. Sidney B. Pratt, who left, by will, ten thousand dollars for the benefit of the Free Public Library, died, January 29th, aged fifty-four. On the evening of April 15th there was a magnificent display of beautifully-tinted aurora-

borealis. Benjamin H. Jacobs, undertaker at the old burying-ground for thirty years, died, June 16th, aged seventy-six. Jeremiah C. Stickney, for forty years in successful practice here as a lawyer, and the first city solicitor, died, August 3d, aged sixty-four. Severe gale, on Wednesday afternoon, September 8th, destroying several small buildings and uprooting more than four hundred shade-trees about the city. The old Turnpike from Boston to Salem became a public highway this year, the portion lying in Lynn being now known as Western Avenue.

1870. Young Men's Christian Association incorporated, March 31st. Land near Central Square sold at five dollars per square foot, the highest rate known in Lynn up to this time. Operations for public water supply begun.

1871. Rev. Joseph Cook, at the time minister of the First Church, gave a series of Sunday evening lectures in Music Hall, early this year, creating considerable excitement by his rather sensational denunciations. William Bassett, the first city clerk, died, June 21st, aged sixty-eight. Terrible railroad disaster at Revere, August 26th, eleven Lynn persons being killed; whole number of lives lost, thirty-three; number of wounded, sixty. Electric fire-alarm established. William Vennar, *alias* Brown, murders Mrs. Jones, is pursued, and in his further desperate attempts is shot dead, December 16th.

1872. City Hall bell raised to its position in the tower, March 2d. Meeting of the City Council commemorative of the recent death of Professor Morse, inventor of the electric telegraph, April 16th. Dr. James M. Nye, a reputable physician and scientist, died, April 21st, aged fifty-three. S. O. Breed's box-factory, at the south end of Commercial Street, struck by lightning and consumed, August 13th, this summer being remarkable for the frequency and severity of its thunder-storms. Brick house of worship of First Church, South Common Street, corner of Vine, dedicated, August 29th. Ingalls and Cobbet school-houses dedicated. Odd-Fellows' Hall, Market Street, dedicated, October 7th. Brick and iron station of Eastern Railroad, Central Square, built. Singular disease, called epizootic, prevailed among horses during the latter part of autumn. Wheel carriages almost ceased to run, excepting as drawn by oxen, dogs or goats, and sometimes by men and boys. The disease, though disabling and evidently painful, was not often fatal. Much speculation in real estate during the year; prices high and business active. Pine Hill Public Water Reservoir built.

1873. Pumping-engine at Public Water-Works, Walnut Street, first put in operation, January 14th. English sparrows make their appearance in Lynn, no doubt the progeny of those imported into Boston; but they were soon declared a nuisance. William S. Boyce, president of the First National Bank, died, August 27th, aged sixty-three. Soldiers' Monument, City Hall Square, dedicated, September 17th. Birch Pond formed.

1874. Lynn "Home for Aged Women" incorporated, Feb. 6th. Grand celebration in Lynn of St. Patrick's Day, March 17th, by the Irish organizations of Essex County. Benjamin Mudge, captain of the old Lynn Artillery, postmaster, and a political writer of spirit, died, March 21st, aged eighty-seven.

1875. Boston, Revere Beach and Lynn Railroad opened for travel, July 22d. Great depression in business affairs this year succeeded the late unhealthy kind of prosperity. Some tradesmen failed, and real estate fell greatly in price. On the 2d of November a blackfish ten feet in length and weighing three hundred and fifty pounds was stranded on Long Beach, probably having pursued his retreating supper the night before farther than was safe. An unusual number of tramps—that is, homeless wanderers from place to place—appeared in Lynn and received temporary relief.

1876. A fire occurred on Market Street, July 26th, destroying property to the amount of some ten thousand dollars, the principal losers being R. A. Spalding & Co., Mrs. Lancy and W. J. Bowers. The destructive Colorado beetle, or potato bug, first appeared in Lynn this year. The Centennial year of the Republic was appropriately observed in Lynn, July 4th, and the *Centennial Memorial*, giving an account of the proceedings, was published by order of the City Council. Benjamin F. Doak, who by will bequeathed ten thousand dollars for the benefit of the poor of the city, and which bequest has since been known as the Doak fund, died, Nov. 8th, aged fifty. Jacob Batchelder, first teacher of the High School and first librarian of the Public Library, died, Dec. 17th, aged seventy.

1877. Charles Merritt, for some forty years deputy sheriff, died, March 13th, aged seventy-two. Sweetser's four-story brick building, Central Avenue, with an adjacent building, burned, April 7th. Loss, about one hundred and fifteen thousand dollars. In September there was an extraordinary phosphorescent glow along the shores.

1878. Successful balloon ascension from City Hall Square, July 4th—Alderman Aza A. Breed, City Marshall Charles C. Fry and Charles F. Smith journalist, accompanying the æronaut. Dennis Kearney, radical agitator and California "sand lot orator," addresses a large crowd on the Common on the evening of Aug. 12th. Ezra Warren Mudge, the sixth mayor of Lynn, died, Sept. 20th, aged sixty-six. The temperature in Lynn and vicinity at midnight, Dec. 2d, was higher than in any other part of the United States,—six degrees higher than in New Orleans, La.; seven higher than in Savannah, Ga.; nine higher than in Charleston, S. C.; and ten higher than in Jacksonville, Fla. Gold was held at par Dec. 17th, for the first time in sixteen years; that is, one hundred dollars in gold were worth just one hundred in greenback government notes. The extreme of

variation was on July 11, 1864, at which time one hundred dollars in gold were worth two hundred and eighty-five dollars in the notes.

1879. The brick house of worship of the First Methodist Society, City Hall Square, was dedicated Feb. 27th. The newly-invented telephone now comes into use in Lynn. The two hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the settlement of Lynn celebrated, June 17th. John A. Jackson, designer of the Soldiers' Monument, died, in Florence, Italy, in August, aged fifty-four. St. Joseph's Cemetery (Catholic) consecrated, Oct. 16th. Extraordinary occurrence of a perfectly clear sky all over the United States, from the Atlantic to the Pacific, Nov. 4th, as reported by the United States Signal Corps. Benjamin Franklin Mudge, the second mayor of Lynn, died, in Manhattan, Kansas, Nov. 21st, aged sixty-two.

1880. Tubular wells, Boston Street, sunk by order of the city government to gain an additional water supply; first pumping from them, Sept. 4th. The notorious "Morey Letter" appeared in the autumn, creating much sensation throughout the country. This letter made its appearance in a prominent newspaper of New York City, and purported to have been written by General Garfield, the Republican candidate for President of the United States, and addressed to "Henry L. Morey," of the "Employers' Union," of Lynn. It was in the interest of cheap labor and in favor of Chinese immigration. It created a great sensation among the politicians, especially upon the Pacific coast, in which quarter extreme indignation was manifested. But the letter was soon proved to be a base forgery, concocted to damage the prospects of General Garfield, and it would, no doubt, have had a serious effect had not timely evidence of the fraud been discovered. It was satisfactorily shown that no such person as Henry L. Morey and no such association as the Employers' Union existed in Lynn. A beautiful mirage appeared in the bay Nov. 22d.

1881. Young Men's Christian Association Building, Market Street, dedicated January 17th. Dr. Daniel Perley, a much-esteemed physician, died January 31st, aged seventy-seven years. Government weather signals on High Rock first shown February 23d. National Security Bank of Lynn organized. Lynn Hospital incorporated. Andrews Breed, the fifth mayor of Lynn, died April 21st, aged eighty-six. The "yellow day," so-called, occurred September 6th, the landscape assuming a yellow tinge for some hours in the afternoon, and the weird darkness being such that lights were required in houses. President Garfield's death announced by the tolling of church-bells at midnight, September 19th. He was shot by C. J.Guiteau, July 2d. Memorial services were held September 26th. Hon. Enoch Redington Mudge, donor of St. Stephen's Memorial Church, died October 1st. St. Stephen's Memorial Church consecrated November 2d. Thomas Page Richardson, fourth mayor of Lynn, died November 24th, aged sixty-five.

1882. On the night of February 15th a building on Monroe Street, owned by Charles G. Clark, together with one or two others, partially burned; loss, about twenty thousand dollars. The Grand Army Coliseum, on Summer Street, dedicated March 15th. On the morning of March 15th, just before the time for workmen to assemble, a terrific steam-boiler explosion took place in the rear of the Goodwin last-factory, in Spring Street. The engineer was killed and several others badly wounded. One or two adjacent buildings were much damaged, and a piece of the boiler, weighing about fifteen hundred pounds, was thrown two hundred feet up into the air, and fell in Newhall Street, seven hundred feet distant. A fire occurred on the morning of April 22d at Houghton, Godfrey & Dean's paper warehouse, Central Avenue, destroying property to the amount of three thousand dollars. Electric lights made their appearance here in the spring. Barnum's "greatest show on earth" visited Lynn July 22d. Some half a score of elephants appeared in the street parade. The giant elephant Jumbo and the nursing baby elephant were both members of the caravan. Some twenty-five thousand persons attended the exhibition, and the amount of money received for admission reached nearly eleven thousand dollars. The show consisted of a large collection of animals, equestrian, acrobatic and other circus and semi-dramatic performances. It was, no doubt, the grandest and most costly show ever in Lynn. An explosion of a part of the underground equipment of the Citizens' Steam-Heating Company, at the corner of Washington and Monroe Streets, took place July 27th, injuring the street somewhat and throwing up stones and gravel to the danger and fright of persons in the vicinity. And subsequently other explosions took place, inducing an appeal to the city authorities for protection. An extraordinary drought prevailed during the latter part of the summer. Most of the crops about Lynn were absolutely ruined, the unripe fruit dropped from the trees, and much of the shrubbery and many of the trees had the appearance of having been exposed to fire-blasts. Yet the springs and wells did not indicate any very marked deficiency of moisture somewhat below the surface. We had an uncommonly long succession of very warm days, with westerly winds and clear skies. And the peculiar effect on vegetation was, no doubt, attributable rather to the burning sun than the lack of moisture. The spring was backward by full two weeks, and the weather was, on the whole, anomalous, most of the year. Railroad competition ran so high that in October the fare between Lynn and Boston was, for a time, but five cents. The morning sky for several weeks in October and November, was adorned with a splendid comet, which rose in the southeast two or three hours before the sun.

1883. Sweetser's building, corner of Central Avenue and Oxford St., burned January 26th; loss, eighty-one thousand dollars. There were a large number of de-

structive fires in the woods during the dry months, all along from Floating Bridge to Breed's Pond. Electric Light Works established in Lynn.

1884. A high tide swept over the beach road to Nahant, January 9th. Steamer "City of Columbus" lost near Gay Head, January 18th, three Lynn persons perishing. John B. Tolman, April 22d, gave to the Young Men's Christian Association an estate on Market Street, valued at thirty thousand dollars, in trust, the income to be devoted to the suppression of the sale of intoxicating liquors. The new organization of religious enthusiasts, known as the Salvation Army, appeared in our streets, June 4th, marching about with their tambourines and other musical instruments. Lightning struck in Chatham Street, June 5th, killing a lad twelve years of age and somewhat injuring his two boy companions. Horse railroad extension to Marblehead opened for travel June 25th. Inebriates' Home, New Ocean Street, established October 27th. A building of Quincy A. Towns, on Beech Street, used for extracting grease and oil from leather, by naphtha, destroyed by fire November 26th; loss twenty-five hundred dollars.

1885. Lyman F. Chase died January 3d, aged forty-three years, leaving, among other liberal bequests, to Lynn Hospital, $5000, and to Lynn Public Library $5000. Lynn National Bank organized. A fire occurred in Henry A. Pevear's building, Washington Street, January 11th, destroying property to the amount of thirty-three hundred dollars. Lucian Newhall's building, Central Avenue, burned; loss, fifty-six thousand six hundred dollars. Lynn Associated Charities organized March 19th. Trinity Church (Methodist), near Tower Hill, dedicated June 4th. Church of the Incarnation (Episcopal) formally organized June 9th. St. Joseph's Church (Roman Catholic) consecrated June 21st. Church-bells tolled July 23d, in observance of the death of ex-President Grant. The City Council held a special meeting and passed resolutions of respect, and on the 8th of August commemorative services were held in the Coliseum, business being generally suspended. The large brick building owned by Lucius Beebe, and occupied as a glove-kid and morocco manufactory, corner of Western Avenue and Federal Street, destroyed by fire September 3d, the loss being seventy-five thousand five hundred dollars. A heavy thunder-shower, October 3d, flooded several business places on Monroe Street and vicinity and delayed railroad trains.

1886. On Easter day, April 25th, Saint Stephen's chimes rang for the first time. Terrific earthquake at Charleston, S. C., August 31st; much suffering was occasioned, and contributions for relief were sent from all quarters; Lynn contributed $2060, and Saint Stephen's Church sent a separate sum of $77 towards repairing the shattered tower of the venerable Saint Michael's. President Arthur died November 18th, and on the day of his burial, November 22d, marks of respect were shown by closing the public offices, tolling bells, raising flags at half-mast and the performance of a dirge by Saint Stephen's chimes. Society of the New Jerusalem (Swedenborgian) formed. French Catholic Church organized.

1887. February 25th, President Cleveland sent to the United States Senate a message vetoing the bill, passed by Congress, appropriating $100,000 for the erection of a post-office building in Lynn. Some indignation was expressed, but business men generally were disposed to view the President's reasoning with candor, and the unlucky slip with resignation.

Henry A. Breed, a well-known citizen, died April 15th, aged eighty-six years and eleven months. He was a native of Lynn, and commenced an active business life about 1819, did a great deal in the building line and was zealous in forwarding improvements of almost every kind, endeavoring, in some notable instances, to introduce new industries here. Being of a sanguine and somewhat credulous turn, and withal attracted by projects of a speculative character, he had serious ups and downs during his whole business career, always, however, maintaining a most respectable position, by his genial manners, his readiness to aid the unfortunate and other excellent qualities. His business prostrations were undoubtedly sometimes attributable to over-confidence in his own ability to "read" the characters of those with whom he dealt; but more often to the shrewder reading, on the other side, of those not half so honest as he. He was one of the founders of the Unitarian Society, and his connection was not severed till the hand of death interposed. For many years he was a member of Mount Carmel Lodge of Free Masons, and was likewise an accredited member of the fraternity of Odd Fellows.

On Wednesday, June 1st, was opened, under the auspices of the Grand Army, Post 5, at the Coliseum in Summer Street, a novel and interesting exhibition of the powers of electricity, especially as applied to industrial mechanism. The Governor of the State was present at the opening and many other prominent persons. The exhibition continued a month, and gave much satisfaction to the large numbers who attended. James N. Buffum, twelfth Mayor of Lynn, aged eighty, died June 12th. On Saturday, June 18th, Robert E. Lee Camp 1, Confederate Veterans, of Richmond, Va., visited Lynn by invitation of General Lander Encampment, Post 5, of the Grand Army of the Republic. The visiting party had been spending a day or two in Boston, and numbered nearly two hundred, thirty of whom were ladies. About seventy-five of the Veterans, with some ten of the ladies, arrived in Lynn early in the day, and were cordially received by the Lynn Post, which had some five hundred men in line. The weather was pleasant and the day a notable one, business being universally suspended, and the streets thronged with all classes of people. There was a grand procession, with military companies and bands of music. The city authorities took part in the

proceedings, and there was a banquet on the Common. Early in July a delegation of Post 5, numbering one hundred and sixty, made a return visit to the Confederate soldiers, and in Richmond and other places received enthusiastic greetings, with many tokens of restored brotherhood. Edward S. Davis, eighth Mayor of Lynn, died August 7, aged seventy-nine. On the 11th of September a fire occurred in the stable of J. B. & W. A. Lamper, foot of Pleasant Street, in which nineteen horses perished. Dr. John A. McArthur, much esteemed as a man and physician, died September 28, aged fifty-seven.

Lynn Regis.—It is within the knowledge of the writer that some good people of the ancient borough of King's Lynn now take a lively interest in what pertains to our own Lynn, which, during its comparatively short life, has so far outstripped its prototype, in population at least. They appear to regard us as a sort of vigorous child, a little presumptuous, perhaps, but one in whose prosperity they may delight, as if in some mysterious way it contributed to their honor. It is but a few years since they learned anything of us. Less than fifteen years ago a lawyer there assured the writer that to him our Lynn was only known through Longfellow's "Bells of Lynn."

The celebration of our Two Hundred and Fiftieth Anniversary, to which some of the authorities there were invited, had much to do with rendering our name familiar. And then the Christian sympathy engendered by the giving and receiving of the stone from the ancient wall of stately old Saint Margaret's, to be wrought into the rising wall of Saint Stephen's, was a significant occurrence.

It is true that not a large number of our early settlers came from that place; but there were one or two of more than ordinary family connection. It is not necessary to here speak of the eminent Whiting, through whose instrumentality the names of the places were made identical; nor of some others elsewhere named. But it may be interesting to note in passing, that Richard Hood, ancestor of George Hood, our first mayor, who settled on Nahant Street, was from Lynn Regis. Several old names common in both places could be mentioned--a fact which, though not conclusive evidence of near family connection, are yet strongly indicative of kinship. For instance: There was a Thomas Laighton, mayor of Lynn Regis in 1476; and one of our most active and enterprising settlers was Thomas Laighton, who located near Saugus River in 1635. Edward Baker was mayor of the borough in 1550; and from Edward Baker, who came hither in 1630, Daniel C. Baker, our third mayor, descended. Benjamin Keene (a later name with us) was mayor of old Lynn in 1683. In 1737 "Charles, Lord Viscount Townsend, was Lord High Steward of Lynn Regis." He undoubtedly belonged to the same Townsend family with Thomas Townsend, who came from Norfolk and settled as a farmer at an earlier date, and of whom many descendants remain here and elsewhere in New England. And by the way, at that date, 1737, the chief officials under Townsend were a recorder, thirteen aldermen, eighteen Common Councilmen, a town clerk, treasurer, chamberlain, sword-bearer, four sergeants at mace and five musicians, with blue cloaks trimmed with gold and badges, a jailer, two beadles and a bellman. Our city government is not organized exactly after that dignified model, which is here presented merely for comparison by the curious. Such genealogical and municipal connections are really of little importance, but the latent interest that all possess in such tracings give them a sort of charm. In the case in hand, it is thought they are sufficient to justify the occupation of space enough to recount a few prominent facts in the history of our ancient prototype.

Lynn Regis, King's Lynn, or, as it is commonly called by its own people, simply Lynn, is an interesting old place on the river Ouse, in Norfolk, a maritime county that has ever maintained its reputation for loyalty and aristocratic pride. Many illustrious Englishmen have been born there, and a long list of distinguished men have represented her in Parliament—several of them statesmen of world-wide reputations. Sir Robert Walpole was elected for Lynn, in 1702. He soon became Secretary of War, then Secretary of the Navy, and finally, after a brief period of eclipse, attained positions of still greater dignity; and, as has been remarked, for a series of years "his life may be said to be the history of England." Canning, too, sometimes called the most eloquent and sagacious statesman of his day, was elected to represent Lynn. Lord George Bentinck was returned for Lynn, in 1826, and continued her representative till his death. The Catholic Emancipation and Reform Bills had his support. He subsequently became the acknowledged head of the Conservative party, and was what we now call a protectionist. But he was never an over-strict partisan. On the death of Lord Bentinck, Stanley, Earl of Derby, was elected for Lynn. To his great ability in the management of public affairs is largely attributed the surrender of the East India Company to the crown. During his colonial secretaryship the great Sepoy revolt was brought to a close. On the decease of his father, in 1869, he entered the House of Lords. The able and accomplished Governor of Madras at the present time, 1886, was for many years Lynn's representative in Parliament. Other eminent representatives of old Lynn might be named, but the list need not be extended. What has been said may not be of great interest, but it affords ground for the question, When will our own Lynn be represented by such men in the councils of the nation? By the presentation of worthy examples a spirit of noble emulation may be stimulated.

From this ancient borough and its vicinity came some of the most valuable New England immigrants. And descendants from old Norfolk families are now

found in every direction, though, as just remarked, not a large number came to our own home. In Winthrop's company, which arrived at Salem in 1630, were a number of substantial Norfolk farmers. Says the careful Mrs. Jones: "It is not alone the relations of Coke and Roger Williams which have given to some spots in New England and elsewhere a flavor of this island's eastern shore. If it were sought to trace such international links, Norfolk would be found to have thrown out many threads across the water, which have attached it invisibly but absolutely to American ground."

Sandringham, the seat of the Prince of Wales, to which he retires for needed rest, is in Norfolk, almost within the territorial limits of Lynn. It consists of something more than eight thousand acres, and is in a high state of cultivation and adornment. It was in this princely abode that the royal heir so long lay between life and death when stricken by typhoid, in the dreary weeks of November, 1872. It was there, too, that the joyous event of the arrival of his son, Albert Victor, at the age of twenty-one, was recently so enthusiastically celebrated. There, likewise, was the last Christmas, 1886, celebrated in right royal style. The Prince and Princess were both present. To the laborers and cottagers on the estate were prime joints of beef distributed to the amount of nine hundred and eighty pounds. How much English beer and other usual Christmas adjuncts were added must be left for the imagination, as nothing appears in the account at hand of the entertainment.

A brief chronological statement of events during an interesting portion of the history of our venerable archetype must close the present record.

A. D. 1100. St. Margaret's Church founded by Herbert, the first Bishop of Norwich, in expiation of his simony. It was from the wall of this ancient temple that the stone which, with its friendly inscription, now rests in the vestibule of our own St. Stephen's was taken. It was presented by the authorities of St. Margaret's when St. Stephen's was in process of erecton, 1880, and brought over by Col. R. G. Usher. The inscription reads, "St. Margaret's Church, Lynn, England, to St. Stephen's Church, Lynn, Mass., U. S. A., 28th June, 1880."

1204. Lynn made a borough town with burgesses, in this, the sixth year of the reign of King John. And in 1268 it was made a mayor-town.

1469. King Edward IV. came to Lynn with a great retinue, took shipping and went to Flanders. One of the most interesting relics now remaining in Lynn is the ruin known as the Chapel of "Our Lady," picturesquely situated on an elevation in the beautiful "Public Walks." The visible parts, those above ground, which were built under a license granted in 1482, form a superstructure to the lower, underground parts, which were built at an unknown and much earlier period. The structure is small, but bears evidence of having originally been an elaborate and richly-adorned shrine; and was probably established for the entertainment of wandering pilgrims, and as a sacred asylum from all secular intrusion—a sanctuary. It was in this retreat that King Edward is said to have lodged when he reached Lynn on his way to Holland, in 1469, his retinue finding quarters elsewhere. It will be remembered that these were the times of the bloody strife between the houses of York and Lancaster, and that he was son of the Duke of York. While here, in the asylum of "Our Lady," he was safe.

1458. Mention is this year made of a boy choir in St. Margaret's Church.

1498. King Henry VII., his Queen and Arthur, Prince of Wales, visited Lynn, and were entertained by the Augustine Friars. He came in state, with a numerous retinue. The Augustine Friars were a mendicant order, much of the character of the Jesuits of the present day; were a learned body, and mingled more in society than most other orders. They settled in Lynn about 1275, and continued till 1539.

1519. Cardinal Wolsey visited Lynn, attended by many lords and gentlemen. It was now that the celebrated prelate was in the zenith of his glory, held the Sees of Bath and Wells, of Worcester and Hereford, together with the rich Abbey of St. Alban's. But disappointment in his ambitious yearnings soon overtook him; his downfall came; and in about ten years after his visit to Lynn death closed his eventful career.

1531. A maid, for poisoning her mistress, is boiled to death.

1535. A Dutchman is burnt in Lynn market-place for heresy.

1536. The Carmelites, the Dominicans, the Augustines and the Franciscans, four orders of friars, totally suppressed in Lynn.

1546. All the streets of the town paved. The guilds and chanteries all suppressed, and the lands belonging to them forfeited to the King, Henry VIII.

1549. Several rebels executed at Lynn.

1553. Lady Jane Gray proclaimed Queen of England, at Lynn, by Lord Audley.

1561. Popish relics and mass-books burnt in the market-place at Lynn.

1566. The first chime of bells placed in the tower of St. Margaret's Church. This seems to have been a set of five bells, the largest of which could be heard ten miles off. Some years after the number was increased to eight, and in 1887 to ten, the Mayor, on the occasion of the Queen's jubilee presenting one, naming it "Victoria," and the mayoress one, naming it "Albert." They were first rung on the jubilee day, June 21.

1567. A Dutch ship, then lying in the harbor of Lynn, shot down the spire of St. Margaret's Church and several crosses.

1568. Popish vestments, relics, crucifixes and beads burnt in the Lynn market-place.

1574. The plague prevailed in Lynn.

1575. A severe earthquake felt in Lynn.

1576. Queen Elizabeth visited Norfolk in August. The corporation of Lynn presented to her a beautiful purse, wrought with pearl and gold, and containing a hundred old angels, the whole value being two hundred pounds. On the 16th of the month, in her progress through the country, she dined at Bracon-Ash Hall, being entertained there by Thomas Townsend, Esq., who, no doubt, was grandfather of Thomas Townsend, who came over to our Lynn, in 1636, and settled as a farmer, near the iron-works. He was a cousin of Governor Winthrop. The wife of Thomas, the entertainer of the Queen, received from Her Majesty the gift of a beautiful gilt bowl in acknowledgment of the hospitality she had received. Daniel Townsend, one of the four Lynn men killed at the battle of Lexington, was a lineal descendant. Something more relating to the Townsends may be found in the sketch of Lynnfield.

1588. The "Feast of Reconciliation," so called, established in Lynn. This was a meeting of the mayor, aldermen, Common Council and ministers, "in order to settle peace and quietness between man and man, and to decide all manner of controversies." It seems as if some such institution might in our day settle more satisfactorily such controversies as fester in our inferior courts. And perhaps labor troubles might come in for adjustment.

1590. A woman named Margaret Read burnt at Lynn for witchcraft. In 1598, Elizabeth Housage; in 1616, Mary Smith; and in 1645, Dorothy Lee and Grace Wright were hanged for the same offense.

1605. A great fire occurred in High Street, Lynn, a man, his wife and three children perishing in the flames.

1621. A man, while ringing the great bell of St. Margaret's, was drawn up by the rope and killed.

1626. Lynn received from London several large cannon for the defense of the town, and St. Ann's fort was built.

1629. A stool for weighing children was this year erected at the charge of the corporation.

1636. Fourteen vessels belonging to Lynn were this year lost by the violence of storms. The plague also prevailed, insomuch that no market was held. Temporary erections were prepared for the afflicted ones of the poorer classes under the town walls.

1642. Lynn received seven pieces of brass cannon from London, for the more effectual armament of the fortifications. In August the town was besieged by the Parliamentary forces and suffered occasional bombardment till September 16th, when it was surrendered by agreement, only four having lost their lives and a few being wounded. The town was required to pay to the Earl of Manchester's army three thousand two hundred pounds. It soon became a Parliamentary garrison town, and so continued till 1652.

1643. Puritanism having gained the ascendency, the "curious painted glass" in St. Margaret's Church was ordered to be taken out and plain glass substituted.

1654. Cromwell renewed and enlarged the charter of Lynn. And in the churches the arms of the Commonwealth were substituted for the royal arms.

1655. Lynn again made a garrison town.

1660. The restoration celebrated. Three hundred young maidens, tastily arrayed in white, parade the streets. There was great rejoicing in Lynn at the restoration, for the place had always remained essentially loyal. The oaths of allegiance and supremacy were readily taken by the leading citizens, and the train-bands indulged in musters and military shows. Many of the former customs and observances were revived; among them the early divine service at St. Margaret's—five A. M. in summer and six in winter—which had been suspended for ten years.

1682. Two new May-poles set up in Lynn.

1686. Great rejoicing in Lynn at the erection of a statue of King James II.

1745. February 8th, Eugene Aram, that remarkable individual whose learning and fate have made him historical, commits the murder for which he was finally executed and his body hung in chains. He lived in Lynn, was teacher in the academy there at the time of his arrest, in 1759, and so much beloved by his pupils that many tears were shed when the constables,

> "Two stern-faced men set out from Lynn,
> Through the cold and heavy mist,
> And Eugene Aram walked between,
> With gyves upon his wrist."

The school is still flourishing. Upon the leads of Gray Friars' Tower, which yet remains one of the most conspicuous objects in Lynn, and which is near the school, may yet be seen the name of Aram, scratched, it is said, by his own hand. Bulwer's novel, entitled "Eugene Aram," was probably suggested by the familiarity of the author with the legends and surroundings of Lynn, he having an aunt residing there.

The foregoing will be sufficient for a glimpse at the history of our ancient prototype, with some of the vicissitudes to which she has been exposed and some of her doings characteristic of the times. But to occupy space with events of later date would hardly be justifiable.

Closing Remarks.—In bringing this imperfect sketch of Lynn to a close, it may be remarked that the several topics introduced have been as fully treated as the allotted space would allow. And in the choice of topics it has been the endeavor to select such as on the whole would prove most interesting and best fitted to illustrate the principal object in view.

Glimpses of its situation, its beautiful surroundings and natural resources, have been given; the labors, sacrifices and sufferings of the people in its earliest days, their leading characteristics, hopes, enjoyments and expectations, have been touched upon; and the

progress onward to the present day of comfort, thrift and attainment in wealth, education and the higher arts of life, has been traced—all according to the prescribed limits and the ability of the writer.

Something of the character of the people in the different periods is to be found in the numerous personal notices scattered through the pages. And the employments on which the prosperity of the place has grown have not been overlooked. Considering the condition in which we now find ourselves, a little self-gratulation may be pardonable. The aspect of things as they now exist may be called reasonably auspicious, and the prayer is that they may ever continue so, while generation succeeds generation as wave succeeds wave upon our shore, ceasing only when those waves cease to roll.

Could one of the old settlers arise—for instance the intelligent Sadler, whose modest habitation nestled at the foot of the hill by which the writer is penning these closing lines—what would be his astonishment! The natural features of the surroundings, the rocky ravines, the green hills, the meadows, the placid river, the sunny isles have undergone but little change. But the plain which he then overlooked, stretching from his feet to the sea, with the smoke of its few rude structures curling upward among the trees, now bears a wide-spread city. And the great waters beyond, which then presented an unbroken field of blue, are now traversed by floating craft of all descriptions, from the huge steam-puffing leviathan that bridges the watery way to his old home on a far-off continent, to the tiny pleasure-boat. Over the then silent hills and through the lonely valleys now echo at early morning the awakening whistles summoning to labor in the numerous factories, at evening repeating their shrill notes as the hours of labor close.

It can well be imagined that he often seated himself upon the mossy crest of the cliff that still bears his name, and which towered above his lonely habitation, at evening twilight,

> "When every sound of day is mute
> And all its voices still,
> And silence walks with velvet foot
> O'er valley, town and hill,"

and when

> "The music of the murmuring deep
> Sooths e'en the weary earth to sleep,"

there to meditate till the darker hours of night drew on, the primeval stillness disturbed only by the rustling of the breeze in the leafy woods, or haply at intervals by the bark of the fox, the howl of the wolf, the hoot of the owl or the melancholy note of the whip-poor-will. Could he then in dreamy forecast have imagined a time like the present—a time when

> "Over the marshes mournfully
> Drifts the sound of the restless sea,"

forming an eternal foundation harmony to the hum of a busy city, the ceaseless rumbling of railroad trains speeding along with fiery wake and echoing shriek, and the many other then unknown sounds that now succeed the feverish palpitations of bustling day? As his eye scanned the dark horizon, then unrelieved even by the glimmer of a coast light, could he have imagined that a brightly-lighted city, with its central electric illuminations and its outposts of lambent gas, would ever appear within those murky borders?

But after all our boasted privileges, inventions, progress and attainment—after all the revelations in philosophy, science and mechanics—after all our steam-driven machinery, telegraphs, telephones, gas and electric lights—are there better, wiser, nobler men and women—better rulers, statesmen, philanthropists—better fathers, mothers, children—than there were in days of yore? Probably not. Mankind preserves about the same old average, and very likely will, to the end of time. While we look with compassion upon what we call the unprogressive state of the races below us, are we sure that those above us do not look with pitying eye upon our own condition? Yet to come down to our own limited case, there appears reason for congratulation in that the great rank and file of the community are at this day in a physically better condition than at any former period; better fed, clothed and sheltered; better provided with the necessaries, conveniences and comforts of life. Some pseudo-philosophers are wont to boast that this generation has reached a higher plane in all respects than any before known. Let them take comfort in the belief; but the true moralist may well maintain that the plane of perfection is yet a great way off. So let us heed the words of the old dramatist:

> "*Fascal.* How, now, Sir Francis!
> Knowest thou not there is a niche,
> A blessed niche, provided for each one?
> The virtuous and diligent will gain it;
> The vicious and the slothful, never!"

BIOGRAPHICAL.

ALONZO LEWIS.[1]

The Lynn Bard was born at Lynn, Mass., on the 28th day of August, 1794, and the house in which he was born is yet standing in Boston Street, on the corner of Robinson. He was descended on his father's side from an old Welsh family, a family that traces its lineage, through generation and generation, back to the native princes of Wales, princes that reigned years anterior to the conquests of the Angles and Saxons, and even before the Romans made their appearance in Britain. As the Angles and Saxons absorbed the ancient Briton, so did they, in their turn, become absorbed by the later Normans, and the old Welsh Llewellyn got, in the course of time, to be translated into the more modern Lewis. The first of

[1] By Ion Lewis.



Alonzo Lewis

the family to appear in this country was William Lewis, who came here from Glamorganshire, South Wales, in 1636. There is more or less French—probably Norman French—influence in the modern family, that undoubtedly crept in at the Norman invasion, and is manifest in the family motto, "*courage sans peur.*" And the evidence of a participation in the crusades under Richard is seen in their crest, a Saracen's head. The Lewis coat of arms is a lion rampant on a field azure. The descendants of this William Lewis are not very numerous, most of the name in this country being of English descent. Governor Morgan Lewis, of New York, son of Francis Lewis, a signer of the Delcaration of Independence, was of the same family, although the latter came to this country a century later than William Lewis. In the matter of genealogies, however, anything ante-dating the Norman conquest, or even the fourteenth century, is liable to dispute.

Mr. Lewis received a sound and thorough education, but not content with the mere instruction of the schools, he pursued his studies, and with vigor, through the whole extent of his life. As a linguist he acquired considerable proficiency in the commoner modern and ancient languages. He had an evident delight for study, and loved to teach, being at one time head-master of Lynn Academy, and at others, of one or two grammar schools in Lynn. In 1831 he established a young ladies' school in Boston, but does not seem to have continued it long. In 1835 he abandoned the profession of teacher.

From his early youth he evidenced a strong poetic temperament, and several of his poems were written at an early age, some bearing the date of 1811, Mr. Lewis being then but seventeen years of age. In 1823 he collected and printed his first volume of poems, a book of two hundred pages, but, as he says in the preface, more for private than for public circulation. This volume contained many of his best poems, including "Farewell to my Harp." In 1829 was published the first edition of the History of Lynn, a work of immense labor. The work was the first in the field of local histories, and is called to this day by good authorities one of the best local histories ever written. Two years later, in 1831, appeared another volume of poems, containing many of the 1823 edition and others written in the interval. Another edition of the history was published, and in 1834 appeared the last volume of poems, which immediately became very popular and went through fourteen editions, being most favorably received by the critics both in this country and in England.

In addition to the above Mr. Lewis published a small English grammar, and another small work on geometry, beside a descriptive sketch called, "A Picture of Nahant." During his whole life he wrote much for the newspapers and magazines of the time, both in prose and poetry. He edited an anti-slavery paper in Lynn before the appearance of the *Liberator*, and was once, during the absence of Mr. Garrison, in editorial charge of that paper, as he was also of the *Boston Traveler*, then the *American Traveler*. He was a member of the Massachusetts Historical Society, and a corresponding member of many other historical bodies.

In 1851 he was requested by Ticknor & Co. to write a history of Boston, but does not seem to have complied with the request, as the only thing of the kind of his that I have discovered is a sort of chronological arrangement of the principal events in the history of Boston, called "Annals of Boston." He evidently contemplated another historical work, as a letter of Mr. Whittier's to him in 1833, says: "I hope thee will decide to go on with thy 'Witchcraft.' I certainly think it would be very popular."

That he was more happy in his prose than in his poetry no one can gainsay, and had he written more of the former, and that of a less local nature, his fame would certainly have been less circumscribed. Many of the descriptive parts of the "History of Lynn" are very beautiful, and I know of people that every now and again take up the history and read and reread for the mere pleasure of reading. In the matter of improvement of his native town he took great interest, and many works of a local nature were conceived and carried through, almost entirely by his unaided efforts. The construction of the breakwater and road along Lynn Beach are due to his efforts, as was also the erection of the light-house on Egg Rock.

In the anti-slavery movement Mr. Lewis took a most active part, being second vice president of the first Anti-Slavery Society, of which William Lloyd Garrison was secretary, and furthering the cause by his writings for the periodicals of the time.

He was naturally of a religious nature and lived a consistent Christian life, often denying himself that he might minister to the necessities of others; and exercising that grandest gift of charity that was lacking in the treatment of him by others. He was for many years the only churchman in Lynn, and walked to St. Peter's, Salem, every Sunday for service. At one time he applied to Bishop Griswold to be admitted as a candidate for Holy Orders, but does not seem to have carried out his first intention. He continued a churchman for the greater part of his life, being prominent in the establishment of St. Stephen's Parish, Lynn, and was one of the first five incorporators. Before the establishment of St. Stephen's he held services at Glenmere, himself acting as lay reader.

Mr. Lewis was twice married, his first wife being Frances Maria Swan, of Methuen, by whom he had six children, of whom two, Llewellyn and Arthur, are now living. For his second wife he married Annie Ilsley Hanson, of Portland, Maine, by whom he had two children, Ina and Ion, the former dying some months before her father. For the latter part

of his life Mr. Lewis lived in the picturesque cottage in Beach Street, close to the water's edge, a place where he loved to sit and study, and where, on the 21st day of January, 1861, he passed away, at the very beginning of that great struggle which resulted in the accomplishment of an object for which he had striven the greater part of his life.

I have here attempted no extended biography, and would say to those who desire more minute particulars and personal reminiscences to consult "The History of Lynn," as continued by Mr. Newhall and published in 1864; and also, Mr. Johnson's charming "Sketches of Lynn," published a year or two ago.

JAMES ROBINSON NEWHALL.

The brief personal sketch of the individual whose name is placed above, which appeared in the "Centennial Memorial" of Lynn, published by order of the City Council, in 1876, is introduced in these words: "It is a delicate task for one to write of himself, unless he has that in his history the worthiness of which is patent and not to be questioned, it requiring no poet to assure us that we seldom 'see ourselves as others see us.'" That "delicate task," however, fell to his lot, and to a similar behest, in the present case, he submits.

The name appeared in the "Centennial" at the dictation of the Committee of the Council having the matter in charge, who expressed a desire that sketches of the "two historians," as they were pleased to call them, should be inserted. The fitness of thus honoring the memory of Mr. Lewis could not be questioned, whatever might be said of the one whose name had been so long associated with his in delineating the progress of Lynn, the native and ancestral home of both. The sketch referred to will form the basis of the one now in hand. The supercilious autobiographer may magnify his virtues and the over-modest his errors; but the charm lies in the mean, from which, in the present case, there is little inducement to stray.

The subject of this notice was born in Lynn on Christmas day, 1809, in the old Hart house, that stood on Boston Street, at the southwest corner of Federal, the same which, on the Centennial Fourth of July, 1876, disappeared in a patriotic blaze, amid the shouts and cheers of Young America. All his genealogical lines run back to early Lynn settlers. His father was Benjamin Newhall, who was born in 1774 and died in 1857; Benjamin's father was James, born in 1731, died in 1801; James' father was Benjamin, born in 1698, died in 1763; Benjamin's father was Joseph, born in 1658, died in 1706; Joseph's father was Thomas, born in 1630, died in 1687—the first white child born in Lynn. His mother was Sarah, a daughter of Joseph Hart, who descended from Samuel, one of the first engaged at the ancient iron works established near Saugus River in 1643, said to be the first in America. Both his grandmothers were granddaughters of Hon. Ebenezer Burrill, so conspicuous in colonial times as a Representative and Crown Counselor, and who was a brother of John Burrill, the eminent speaker whom Governor Hutchinson compares with Sir Arthur Onslow, who was considered the most able presiding officer the British House of Commons ever had.

At the age of eleven the writer left the paternal roof, with his worldly possessions in a bundle-handkerchief, to make his way in the wide world, his mother having died a year or two before and his father having a large family to provide for.

But little worthy of mention occurred until the summer of 1824, when, having worked daily and attended various public schools, he entered the Salem *Gazette* office to learn the art and mystery of printing. And it is pleasing to remark that at the present time, 1887, may daily be seen in that venerable establishment the Hon. Caleb Foote, who at that time, 1824, was busy at the compositor's case. Mr. Foote, however, soon after dropped the composing stick for the editorial pen, an implement which he has wielded to this day with rare ability and acceptance. Would that all editors could realize, as he has, the dignity and responsibility of their public relations. His considerate suggestions and helpful directions to the typographical neophyte have, during these three-score years and three, been gratefully remembered.

After serving in the *Gazette* office for a few years, he felt desirous of gaining a better knowledge of book-printing than could be done in Salem at that time, and in furtherance of the desire procured a situation in Boston. Things so prospered that before attaining his majority he was installed foreman of one of the principal book offices there, his duties in a general way being to direct the work and read proofs. Of this period many pleasant recollections are retained. In the office were printed a large number of classical and scientific works, and some of the most eminent men of the time frequently dropped in. Anecdotes almost without number of such men as Dr. Channing, Dr. Bowditch, Francis J. Grund, the Cambridge professors, N. P. Willis, Samuel G. Goodrich, and shoals of the less conspicuous, but not less ambitious literary aspirants, could be related.

While still under age, in the roving spirit of young printers, he drifted to New York, and soon after his arrival found employment in the *Conference* office, the largest then in the city; and with perhaps a little excusable, if not commendable pride, may refer to his reputation there as being the fastest type-setter in the establishment. This was in 1829. And he has to the present day so indulged his early love for the printer's case as for many years to keep a font or two of type, wherewith to amuse or occupy a vacant hour. Nearly two thousand stereotype pages can be to-day shown as the fruit of these semi-recreative odds and ends of time, much of the matter having



James R. Newhall

been set up without having been previously written. As to the quality of the literary products, he cannot, of course, speak. It may, however, be admitted in regard to some, at least, that if worth is to be measured by pecuniary return, it was not very great. Yet, on the whole, there has been much reason to be satisfied, looking at a "fair average." Exposure to the undeserved adulation of sympathetic friends and the equally undeserved severity of vindictive critics is supposed to be the fate of all writers, great and small. It is well remembered that once, on the eve of the publication of a notable work, the writer overheard a debate between two of the learned editors, of this tenor: "Why, you have given nothing from ———," said one, naming a writer by no means obscure. "Well, I know that," was the reply, "but he never wrote anything worth a place in our book." "That is true," was the rejoinder; "but the omission would greatly offend him and his friends, and might lead to damaging reviews. We must have something." And something was had, prefaced by a laudatory note. It will, of course, be granted that the most ignorant critic knows more than the most learned author.

At the age of twenty-two the writer returned to his native place, and soon became engaged in the office of the *Mirror*, the first printing establishment in Lynn, commenced about five years before by Charles F. Lummus, and at that time still owned and conducted by him. It was very poorly supplied with material. There was but little work and that not well done, and it was not long before the proprietor had succeeded in sinking the little means with which he began. The writer purchased the office and commenced the publication of another paper, but was soon satisfied that much labor would yield but a scanty return, and was induced to let the new paper speedily follow the fate of the old.

After busying himself for a few years in various ways, chiefly in connection with printing and the book business, and once or twice a year taking a lecturing tour, he again found himself in New York, engaged in the editorial department of a daily journal and in writing for one or two weeklies. Of this interval many agreeable recollections are retained, among them pleasant ones of the genial young gentleman, Walter Whitman, now the world-renowned Walt Whitman, the poet, who was engaged on the same daily; and the friendly suggestions of the venerable Major M. M. Noah, so long and so fitly called the Nestor of the American press, will not be forgotten.

In 1854, meeting a friend who had for some time been in practice as a member of the Essex bar, he was kindly invited to take a student's seat in his office. The invitation was accepted, and the study of law commenced.

Completing a regular legal course, in May, 1847, he was admitted to the bar in Boston, and forthwith commenced a practice in Lynn, which soon became quite satisfactory. He was presently commissioned as justice of the peace and notary public, which offices he still holds. On the 24th of August, 1866, he was commissioned as Judge of the Lynn Police Court, with which he had been connected as special justice from the time of its establishment, in 1849. He was likewise appointed a trial justice of juvenile offenders when that jurisdiction was established. The judgeship he resigned August 24, 1879.

At the time he commenced practice there were but three acting lawyers here,—namely, Jeremiah C. Stickney, Thomas B. Newhall and Benjamin F. Mudge. Mr. Stickney was one of the leading lawyers in the county for many years. He died August 3, 1869, aged sixty-four years. Mr. T. B. Newhall commenced practice here in 1837, and now, 1887, after fifty years, may still be found in his well-worn office chair. Of him a personal sketch appears elsewhere in this work. Mr. Mudge opened his office in 1842, removed to Manhattan, Kansas, and died there November 21, 1879, aged sixty-two years. He was our second Mayor, inaugurated in 1852. The number of Lynn lawyers has increased during these forty years (1847–87) from three to about forty, while the population has hardly quadrupled. Is this to be taken as evidence that business has increased in a corresponding degree or as evidence that there has been a remarkably increasing love for litigation?

To return from this divergence. The subject of this sketch has not been much in public office, excepting as connected with the judicial department, though he has served as chairman of the School Board and president of the Common Council.

In the autumn of 1883, at the age of seventy-three years, he took a tour of several months abroad, visiting a number of famous cities and renowned places in Europe, and extending his trip to interesting Levantine points, to Algiers and Malta, on the Mediterranean; to Alexandria, Cairo and the Pyramids in Egypt. Though the tour was undertaken alone—for if alone one can, without let or hindrance, go how, when and where he pleases—he everywhere received such gratifying civilities as could only lead to regrets that he had not earlier in life thus experimentally learned that, after all, men everywhere will, on the whole, rather contribute to make others happy than miserable. Such experience increases faith in human nature, and ought to diminish self-conceit.

Being interested in historical researches, he published, in 1836, the "Essex Memorial;" in 1862, "Lin, or Jewels of the Third Plantation;" in 1865, "The History of Lynn," comprising the admirable work of Alonzo Lewis, with a continuation embracing some twenty-one years; in 1883, an additional volume of the "History of Lynn," with notices of events down to the year of publication and other matter on various topics; in 1876, by desire of the City Council, he prepared the "Centennial Memorial of Lynn," embracing an historical sketch and notices

of the mayors, with their portraits; and in 1879, also by desire of the City Council, he prepared the work entitled "Proceedings in Lynn, June 17, 1879, being the Two Hundred and Fiftieth Anniversary of the Settlement." To these may not improperly be added the sketches of Lynn, Lynnfield and Swampscott, which appear in this "History of Essex County."

If there is any achievement in a literary way with which the writer fancies that he has reason to be satisfied, it comes through his endeavor to contribute something calculated to allure to habits of industry, frugality, temperance and those concomitant virtues, the sure foundation of prosperity, and the sure way towards honorable position. A great many brief biographies and personal sketches of individuals in the various walks of life have appeared scattered about his pages—whether poorly or skillfully drawn is not the question here—sketches of individuals who have acted well their part in promoting the prosperity and extending the good fame of their home, as well as advancing their individual interests. And these personal sketches have a two-fold purpose: first, to perpetuate the names of deserving ones, and, second, to furnish, by their example, encouragement for others to follow on in a like good way. Yet we should all realize that the attainment of mere worldly fame, position or wealth is not the chief purpose of life, and that at the end we shall find there was no great gain in worshipping false gods all our lives.

One other thing has been attempted by the writer, and that is, to illustrate to some extent the romantic and legendary side of Lynn's history. There is a rich store in that direction, and oftentimes it is difficult to distinguish between truth and fiction or know exactly where to draw the line. But the aim has always been to clearly indicate the character of the matter in hand and lead no one astray.

In October, 1837, the writer was united in marriage with Miss Dorcas B. Brown, only daughter of Captain William Brown, of Salem, and by her had one son, who died at the age of ten, his mother having died soon after his birth. In 1853 he was again married, the second wife being Mrs. Elizabeth Campbell, daughter of Hon. Josiah Newhall, of Lynn, and that relation still, 1887, remains unsevered.

The writer trusts that nothing in the foregoing will tend to place him in the category indicated by our former townsman, Henry Clapp, when he said of Horace Greeley: "He is a self-made man and worships his maker," for in his life, as has been seen, few stirring incidents have occurred, no extraordinary adventures, no remarkable achievements. Whether anything of value has been accomplished is a question for others to decide. Nevertheless, it may be remarked in a general way that very few who are so long in the world lead such barren lives that nothing of usefulness or interest is found. And not unfrequently is it the case that the lessons to be drawn from the lives of those in the less prominent walks are the most widely useful, for the great multitude are companions in those walks, and can the more readily appreciate the obstacles and perceive the snares that beset the way. Every one feels that he has a hand in shaping his own destiny, though it does seem as if

> "Some were born to wealth or fame,
> While others are mere Fortune's game."

But it is dutiful in all of us to follow the injunction of our rhyming old townsman, of eccentric memory:

> "While traveling to the unknown land,
> Let each lend each a helping hand,"

ever bearing in mind that

> "What *might have been* can not be known;
> What *was* we answer for alone."

[NOTE.—It was editorially suggested that this sketch and the accompanying portrait would more appropriately appear among the lawyers of the County. The privilege of being placed in that august company is fully appreciated, though the superior lustre there might be obscuring. But inasmuch as the writer has had a considerable share in illustrating Lynn's history and always earnestly desired her Godspeed, it seemed to him that the more suitable place was in the company of those whose enterprise, industry and dignity of character have so advanced the prosperity of their home and his.]

HON. GEORGE HOOD,

The first mayor of the city of Lynn, was a native of the town of Lynn, and was born on the 10th of November, 1806.

The Hood family is among the earliest mentioned in the annals of Lynn, being descended from Richard Hood, who emigrated from Essex County, in England, about 1640, and settled at Lynn. Dying in 1695, he left three sons,—Richard, John and Nathaniel. Richard, the eldest of these, falling heir to the "Nahant road" property—some thirty acres—now bounded in part by Nahant Street, afterwards exchanged it with Jabez Breed for certain land on the peninsula of Nahant, and went thither to live, and there his descendants have ever since resided. This Richard had a son Abner, who had a son Abner, who married Mary Richardson, and they were the parents of the subject of this sketch. While he was an infant the family removed to Nahant, and there, in the little village school, he received all his youthful intellectual training. He learned the trade of shoemaking, and at the age of twenty-two, in company with John C. Abbott, he went to the then far West to seek his fortune. They directed their course to St. Louis, Mo., at that time, in 1829, a small place. In a few days they were established in business, and within a month Mr. Hood, with a part of their stock, went down to Natchez, Miss., and commenced a branch establishment, which he continued to manage until 1835, the principal business, remaining, meanwhile, at St. Louis. In the last-named year he returned to Lynn and established a commission shoe and leather business in Boston, retaining, however, an interest in the western business till 1841. In his Boston business he continued till the time of his decease.



George Hoode.



Ruth Hoyt.

1847

Not long after his return to the East Mr. Hood became active in the political field. He was a very prominent member of the old Democratic party, fought manfully for its interests, and his valuable services were acknowledged by his nomination and frequently by his election to various high positions. In addition to town offices, he was several times chosen a Representative to the General Court, and in that of 1843 was a Senator. In the gubernatorial campaign of 1846 he was the Democratic candidate for the office of Lieutenant-Governor, but that party did not prevail, nor, in fact, hope to, the Whig party at that time and for many years dominating the State.

In 1852 Mr. Hood was nominated by his party for a seat in the National House of Representatives, but was not elected, the Whig candidate, as was then usual in this Congressional district, being chosen. In the next year, 1853, Mr. Hood was a member of the convention for revising the Constitution of Massachusetts.

Continuing, meanwhile, his mercantile business, which he prosecuted with vigor and success, he took a very active part in the establishment of the Shoe and Leather Fire Insurance Company, of Boston, in 1853, and was chosen its first president, which office he continued to hold till his resignation, in September, 1858.

Mr. Hood's activity was not confined to business and political affairs, but the great social questions of the day found in him an earnest inquirer and practical worker. He manifested a generous sympathy for the laboring classes, and was one of the foremost to break up the old custom of indefinitely protracted labor, and established the so-called ten-hour system, his favorite motto being,—"The greatest good of the greatest number."

In the general improvement and culture of the people he took a lively and practical interest.

In religious matters he was, during his mature years, a prominent and efficient member of the Unitarian denomination, and a constant attendant upon its public worship.

The crowning public work of Mr. Hood was that of his two years' mayoralty. He had been opposed to the adoption of the city form of government, and in the spring of 1849 had successfully led the opposition to the acceptance of the charter granted by the Legislature of that year. His ground of objection was that a city government was less democratic—using that word in its broadest sense—than that of a town.

But the agitation was continued, and in April, 1850, another charter was granted, which, on April 19th, was accepted by the people. Despite his opposition to the system he was chosen mayor, though by a small majority of about twenty, over his opponent, Thomas Bowler, the veteran town clerk of the preceding twenty years. Mr. Hood was re-elected in March, 1851, by a large majority, which fact was an undeniable tribute to his fidelity and ability. He was a man of much more than ordinary intelligence, and of indomitable industry. Both in his public and his personal affairs he was a logical thinker and a prompt and practical worker. He died on the 29th of June, 1859, and his body is interred in his family lot in Pine Grove Cemetery. Mr. Hood married, September 11, 1833, Hermione, a daughter of Major Aaron Breed, a prominent citizen of Lynn, who for a number of years was a member of the General Court.

Mrs. Hood died January 20, 1887. They had the following children,—Harriet M., George A., Adelaide M., Edwin E., Julius S., Henrietta A., Henry, Caroline P., Aubrey, Ada H., Edward K. and Mary.

RICHARD SULLIVAN FAY.

Mr. Fay was born in Cambridge June 15, 1806, the son of Hon. Samuel Prescott Phillips Fay, judge of probate in Middlesex County. He was educated in the schools of that town, and entered college in 1821, being graduated in 1825 with good distinction as a scholar. Among his class-mates were Charles Francis Adams, Rev. Frederick H. Hedge, Rev. S. K. Lothrop, John L. Sibley, Sears C. Walker, and many others who distinguished themselves by useful and honorable service. At the close of his college career he entered upon the study of law, at the law-school in Northampton, when that institution held a high place under the direction of some of the most brilliant lawyers of the commonwealth. He established himself in business in Boston in connection with Jonathan Chapman, who became a leader at the Suffolk bar, and mayor of the city of Boston.

In 1832 Mr. Fay married Catharine Sanders, daughter of the Hon. Dudley L. Pickman, of Salem, and resided many years in Boston, in the diligent and active practice of his profession. In 1848 he took his family to Europe, and after an extensive journey on the Continent, he took up his residence in England, where he resided several years on an estate in Shropshire, known as Moor Park, one of the most beautiful and cultivated of those landed properties of England, in which are combined the elegance and luxury of a well-appointed home, and the best practical system of agriculture.

It was undoubtedly this experience in England which increased Mr. Fay's natural love of rural pursuits, and cultivated those tastes which made him an ardent and useful promoter of agriculture in his native State, to which he returned in 1853. He had previously purchased a large estate in Essex County, known as Lynn Mineral Spring Hotel, comprising more than five hundred acres of diversified land, in which fertile valleys, picturesque and rugged hills and a beautiful lakelet were combined. He commenced at once the improvement of this place, now called Lynnmere, by draining the lands and covering

the hills with innumerable trees, many of which he planted with his own hands. He imported larches, maples, firs and pines in large quantities, planted acorns constantly in his walks about the estate, and succeeded in converting a rough and somewhat unattractive landscape into a variegated forest, through which winds an avenue of great beauty, bordered by deciduous and evergreen trees distributed with great taste, and constituting a charming combination of variety and luxuriance of foliage. The forest which Mr. Fay planted has now become a profitable woodland. The bare hills which he covered with Scotch larches, the rude stone walls and the waste pasture where, originally, there was only a growth of red cedars and huckleberry bushes, through which the approach to the house led, have given way to shade-trees of great variety, which now after forty years are in magnificent beauty. Huge rocks were drawn out of the barren soil, now verdant in lawn, grass-fields and rich crops. The place is one of the most picturesque in New England in natural beauty, and in its present condition is a memorial of the taste and genius of the man who developed and added to its attractions.

In addition to this extensive forest and ornamental tree-culture, Mr. Fay encouraged by precept and practice many of the most important branches of agriculture which belong especially to the practical farmer. While in England he had observed the importance attached to sheep-husbandry, for the production of coarse and middle wools, and for the supply of mutton as a healthful and economical article of food, at that time not in general use in this country. He selected from all the heavy and rapid-growing breeds in England the Oxford Downs, as larger than the South Down, and finer than the Cotswold; and from his large flocks he made for a long time a wide distribution throughout the country. In this branch of agriculture he was considered as authority; and in connection with it he encouraged the growing of root-crops, the most improved Swedes and Mangolds, which English flock-masters and cattle-breeders consider indispensable to their calling.

To the establishment of market-days in Essex County Mr. Fay gave early and earnest attention, and contributed much instruction on this system of trade, so common in England, through the agricultural press of the country. His attendance at the meeting of farmers was frequent. As a trustee of the Massachusetts Society for Promoting Agriculture, in which body, Robert C. Winthrop, George W. Lyman, Chief Justice Bigelow, George Peabody, of Salem, Charles G. Loring, Stephen Salisbury, George B. Loring, Leverett Saltonstall and others were his associates, he did good service, and edited the first issue of the records of the society. As president of the Essex Agricultural Society, he called around that association the most eminent patrons of farming known in the country, and did much to place it in the position it now occupies. He had a sincere love of rural life, and although connected from time to time with business enterprises, he never forgot that agriculture is the foundation of all our prosperity, and that a knowledge of its economies and a taste for its pursuits add much to one's usefulness and happiness.

Mr. Fay was a man of great determination, strong impulse and wide observation. His natural powers were great. Highly favored by fortune, he never lost sight of the efforts required for the development of human enterprises, and was somewhat impatient of those theories which disturbed society and endangered its perpetuity and success. He lived in a time of great transitions, in which, although occupying no official position, he gave strong expression to his views and equal impress to his exertions. Early in the breaking out of the Civil War he organized at his own expense a company known as the Fay Guards, which did brave and honorable service in the great conflict. This company was attached to the Thirty-eighth Massachusetts, and was in the following engagements: Port Hudson, May 17 to July 9, 1863; Cane River, La., April, 1864; Mansion Plains, La., May, 1864; Winchester, Va., September 19, 1864; Fisher's Hill, Va., September 21, 1864; Cedar Creek, Va., October 19, 1864. Mr. Fay lived to see the glorious and happy termination of his country's trial.

Mr. Fay died in Liverpool July 6, 1865, leaving a widow and four children.

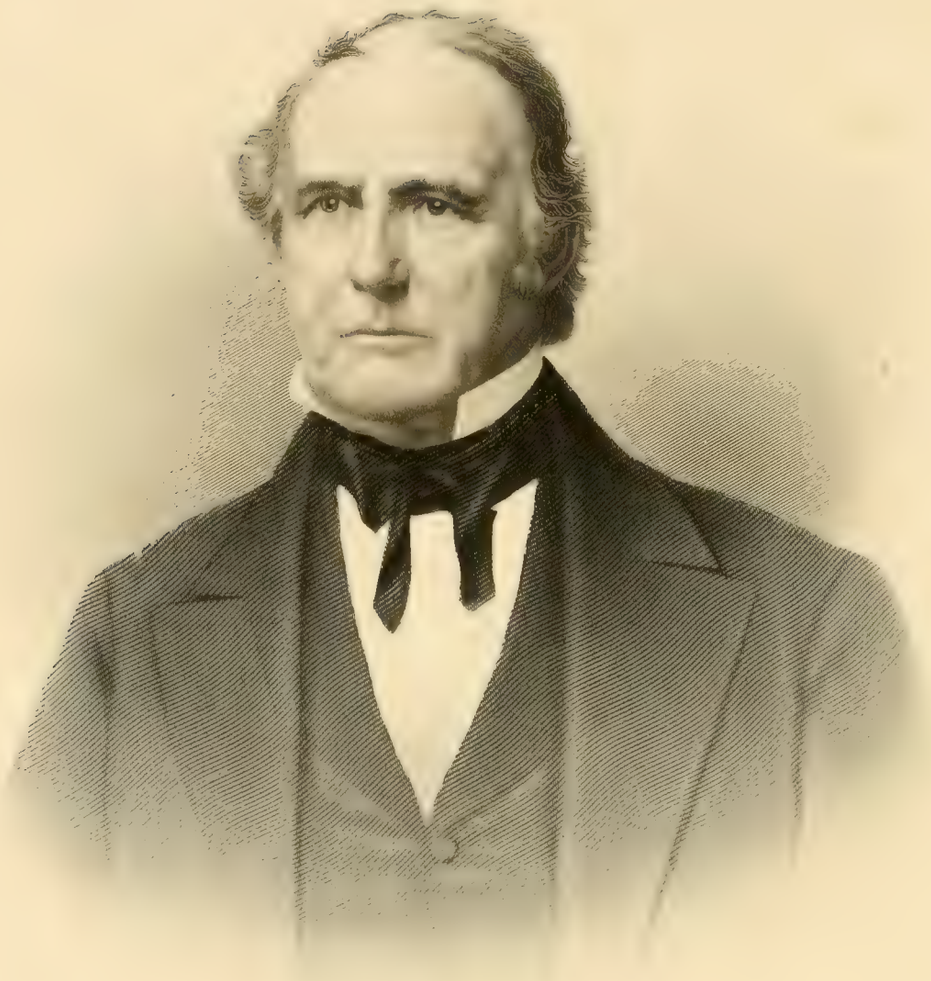
HENRY NEWHALL.

Henry Newhall was descended from one of the oldest and largest families in Lynn, his earliest paternal ancestor, Thomas N. (the son of Thomas, who came from England and settled in 1630), having been the first child born in the town. He was born March 10, 1797, and was the son of Winthrop and Elizabeth (Farrington). Winthrop Newhall was a tanner. Henry, having associated himself with his older brother, Francis S., in the morocco trade and manufacture, became a prominent merchant, the business of the firm being one of the largest in the town, having its headquarters in Lynn and Boston, with a branch house for a short period in New York. In 1850 ill health compelled him to retire from the firm, and it was several years, partly occupied in travel at home and abroad, before he was sufficiently restored to resume the responsibilities of business. Upon the death of his brother Francis, president of the Laighton (now Central National) Bank, in 1858, he was elected to the office and continued to hold it until his retirement in 1876, at the advanced age of nearly eighty years.

Henry Newhall belonged to a family marked for intelligence and capacity, and inherited those sterling qualities of mind and character that always command the respect and confidence of a community. His integrity, his quiet but penetrating insight into human



Henry Newhall



Isaac Brock



D. C. Baker

nature, his firmness of character, his careful and intelligent judgment, together with his kind and friendly spirit, made him a most useful citizen, especially in business circles. He had, also, a broad and vigorous mind, and if there were any deficiencies of early education they were more than made up through his large and thoughtful reading, his keen appreciation of the best things in thought and life and his unabated interest in human affairs. Few business men were so well-read in the literature of history, politics, biography and fiction. He was never without a book at hand, and little of the current literature that was worth reading escaped his attention. Then he was known for independent and positive opinions, for which he had no lack of courageous and positive expression ; at the same time he was most tolerant and considerate of others. He was a man of great sincerity and plain-spokenness, and his convictions had weight and influence with those with whom he was associated. In business relations he was remarkable for tact and discretion, and it was a matter of common remark that he never obtruded himself upon the interests of others.

One of his especial characteristics was a strong patriotism. And from the first he believed in anti-slavery, and, though prudent and conservative by nature, was an ardent supporter of the cause of humanity at a time when it was most unpopular. Indeed, he was a patient listener to every reform, an admirer of fair play in the advocacy of opinions and principles, and a believer in the honesty of human nature and the progressive tendencies of society.

In religious matters his convictions were not so much traditional as founded upon the dictates of conscience and reason. Of Quaker extraction, he was one of the leaders of the liberal movement in Lynn which culminated in the formation of the Unitarian Society, of which he was a constant and liberal supporter. The mottoes of his life may be said to have been sincerity, honor and fidelity, good-will and justice towards men, and there was nothing toward which he expressed a severer repugnance than their opposites.

He was a genial and companionable friend, and possessed unusually interesting powers of conversation.

He held few public offices, but was identified with most of the important business institutions of the city,—the Lynn Institution for Savings, the Lynn Gas-Light Company, the old Mechanics' Insurance Company, was president of the Exchange and Lyceum Hall Associations, held a number of offices under the old town government, and was one of the first commissioners of the Lynn City Hall and City Debt Sinking Funds, a benefactor of the Lynn Public Library in fact, a friend and adviser in all the business interests of the city.

In his old age his mind was remarkable for its vigor and clearness, while his warmth and kindliness, his patience with sickness, his serenity and cheerful temper drew around him a host of admiring friends. To the young he was as companionable as to the old. He died July 15, 1878, in his own home, situated upon Nahant Street, upon land that had been occupied by many generations of his ancestors, and was buried in Pine Grove Cemetery.

He married Ann Atwell, who died in February, 1863. His surviving children are Charles Henry and Sarah Catharine, wife of Benjamin J. Berry.

ISAIAH BREED.

Isaiah Breed was born in Lynn October 21, 1786, and was the son of James Breed, of that place. Like his father, he entered into the shoe business and pursued it successfully for nearly fifty years, becoming one of the most extensive and wealthy manufacturers in that busy and thriving town. Mr. Breed was one of the first directors of the Eastern Railroad, and president for more than thirty years of the Lynn Mechanics' Bank. He was also, at one time, a Representative in the State Legislature, and in 1839 a State Senator. He took an active interest in the welfare of his native town, and was one of the organizers of the Central Congregational Society, of which he was for some years a deacon. He was a liberal, public-spirited man, of great strength of character, and always distinguished in all the relations of life, as not merely an honest man, but one of deep convictions of duty and a high sense of honor. He was one of those sterling men who gave life and spirit to Lynn as a town, and so added to the wealth and population as to finally establish it as a city of enterprise and continuous growth.

D. C. BAKER.

The immediate ancestors of Daniel Collins Baker lived in Dighton, Mass., and were engaged in farming. Elisha Baker left his father's farm at an early age and went to Lynn, where he married Ruth, daughter of Samuel Collins. Both Mr. and Mrs. Baker were members of the Society of Friends. He had five children, of whom Daniel Collins, the oldest son and the subject of this sketch, was born in Lynn October 12, 1816. His early education was such as the town school of his native town, under the care of Master Hobbs, afforded, and afterwards, for a year and a half, he attended as pupil the Friends' Boarding School at Providence, R. I. At the age of thirteen he was apprenticed to the shoemaking trade, to which he applied himself with such an earnest desire to master its details that while yet a young man he established himself in the manufacture of shoes on his own account, and by his industry and skill soon built up a successful business.

From the manufacture of shoes he became interested in the leather and shoe finding trade, and became a partner in the firm of F. S. Newhall & Co., of Boston, in that business. In later years he resumed

the manufacture of shoes, and at the time of his death was doing business in the South, having a shoe house established in New Orleans. He died in New Orleans July 19, 1863, whither he had gone to gather up something of the fortune which the war had scattered and swept away. He married, December 19, 1838, Augusta, daughter of John B. Chase, of Lynn, and had three children,—William E., who married Lydia M. Marshall, and is an esteemed and successful merchant in Lynn; Helen A., who married A. Mitchel Collins, of Georgia; and Sarah E., who is unmarried.

Mr. Baker, aside from his legitimate business, always felt a deep interest in public affairs, and possessed qualities specially fitting him for their administration. In earlier times he was an active member of the Whig party, and his services were acknowledged by his nomination and election to various prominent positions. As a member of the Whig State Central Committee, which was always composed of the most useful men in the different sections of the State, he performed his full share in promoting the interests of the political organization which it represented. In 1849 and 1850 he was a member of the Massachusetts Senate, and in 1852 was a Presidential elector, and cast his vote for Winfield Scott. He took a leading part in the controversy, which resulted in the adoption of the act incorporating the city of Lynn, passed April 10, 1850, and as a friend of the charter was chosen a member of the first Common Council, and made its president. In 1853 he was chosen mayor over John B. Alley, his opposing candidate. In both of these positions he exhibited the highest qualities of an executive and presiding officer, and won the confidence and respect of both political friends and opponents.

As president of the Council his services were especially valuable in putting the wheels of municipal machinery, in the first year of the life of the city, successfully in motion. As a speaker he was logical and effective, and always ready without apparent preparation. As an administrator of public affairs, he was as prudent and economical as he was liberal and free in his private life. The public schools of the city reaped the advantages of the warm interest he felt in their welfare; perhaps all the warmer because his own opportunities for education in early life were not such as he felt every youth should possess.

He was also a member of the Bunker Hill Association, and his fondness for decorative gardening and for the choicest fruits and flowers, led him to become a member of the Massachusetts Horticultural Society, and enabled him to do a good work in developing and cultivating higher tastes among those about him.

As a wise and careful financial manager Mr. Baker was recognized by those in charge of money institutions, and his services were sought as director of the Exchange Bank of Boston on its establishment in 1847, and as president of the Howard Banking Company of that city, when it went into operation in 1853.

Though many years have elapsed since his death, he is remembered for his genial disposition, his generous impulses and his large benevolence, which endeared him to his neighbors and friends, and for the faithful and competent service in the performance of every public trust.

EZRA WARREN MUDGE.

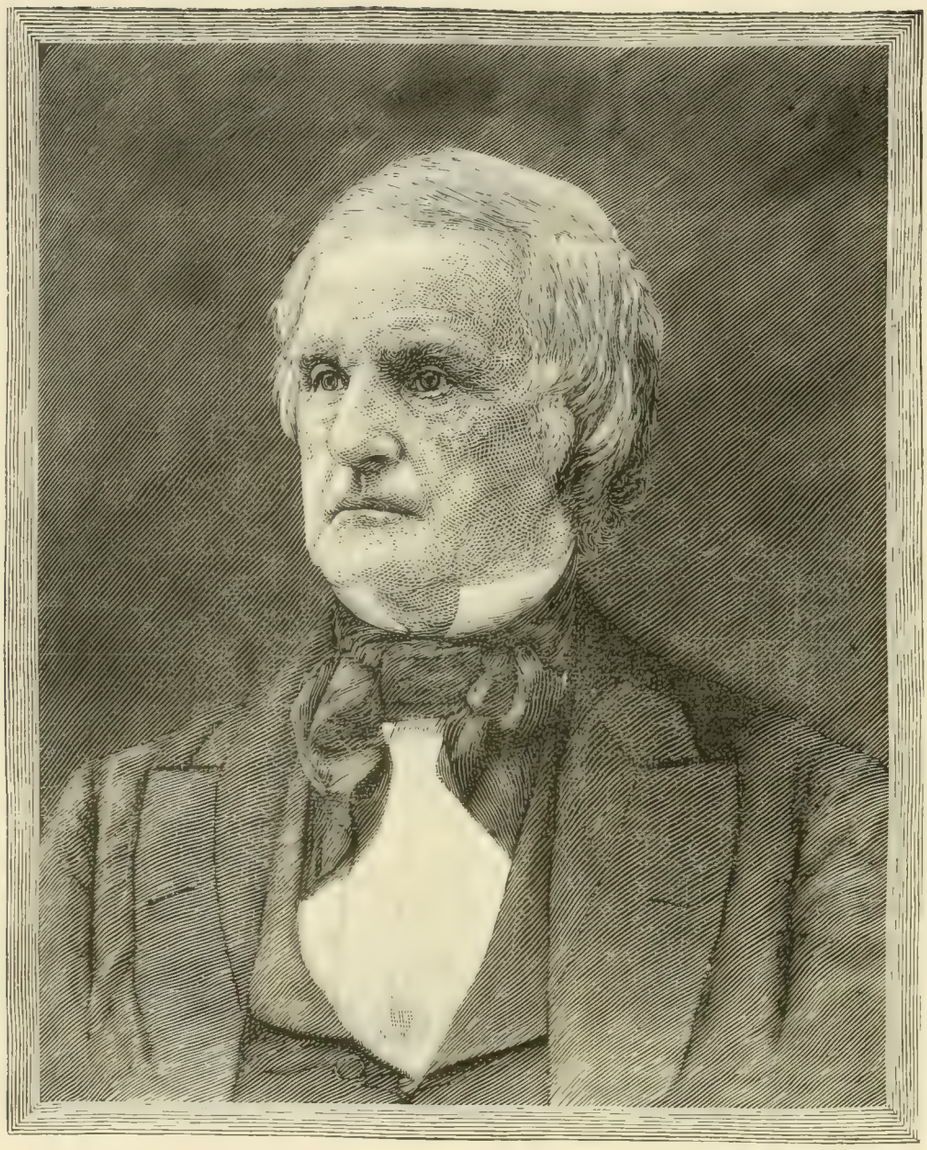
Ezra Warren Mudge was born in Lynn December 5, 1811, and was the son of Ezra and Ruth (Chadwell) Mudge, of that town. Ezra Mudge, the father, was born in Lynn April 10, 1780. He was first a shoe manufacturer, then a dealer in dry-goods in Lynn, afterwards a wholesale and retail dealer in shoes in New York City, and later a weigher and gager in the Custom-House in Boston, where he died May 25 1855. He served the town of Lynn for sixteen years as Representative from 1807, was a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1820, a member of the Council, and was, in the War of 1812, the captain of the Lynn Artillery Company, in the formation of which he was specially active. He married, first, June 28, 1801, Betsey, daughter of Captain John and Mary Brewer, of Salem; second, December 20, 1804, Ruth, daughter of Harris and Ruth Chadwell; and third, November 1, 1819, Hannah Bartlett, daughter of Lemuel and Sarah (Bartlett) Drew, of Plymouth. By his second wife he had Ezra Alden, November 17, 1805; Eliza Brewer, November 5, 1806; Ruth Chadwell, May 9, 1809; Ezra Warren, December 5, 1811; Nathan and Hannah, twins, September 12, 1814; and Sarah Wiggin, March 2, 1819. By his third wife he had Lemuel Drew, August 6, 1820; William B., May 3, 1822; Hervey Mackay, October 3, 1823; Sarah Elizabeth, May 25, 1825; Sarah Caroline, January 1, 1827; Jane and Evelina, twins, March 14, 1829; Mary Evelina, November 21, 1830; Maria Augusta, March 2, 1833; and Robert Rich, June 14, 1835.

The father of Ezra Mudge was Nathan Mudge, who was born in Lynnfield September 21, 1756. He was a Revolutionary soldier, and died in Lynn February 8, 1831.

He married, first, September 2, 1776, Hannah, daughter of John and Sarah Ingalls, and had Nathan, January 26, 1778; Ezra, April 10, 1780; John Park, November 27, 1782; Mary, March 19, 1785; Samuel, May 15, 1787; Joseph, November 15, 1788; and Hannah, December 20, 1790. He married, second, July 24, 1794, Elizabeth, widow of Shubael Burrell, and had Joseph, June 17, 1795; Enoch, October 18, 1796; Hepsey, March 13, 1798; Simon, December 5, 1799; Hepsey B., August 19, 1801; Lydia B., June 14, 1803; Shubael, July 14, 1805; Ann Alden, June



Yours Warren Mudge



Edward J. Davis.

22, 1806; and Caroline, April 2, 1808. He died in Lynn February 8, 1831.

The father of Nathan was John Mudge, who was born in Malden December 30, 1713. He was a farmer, and settled in Malden, but afterwards removed to Lynnfield. He married, May 4, 1738, Mary, daughter of Samuel and Anna Waite, of Malden, and had Samuel, March 22, 1739; Mary, April 20, 1740; Lydia, February 28, 1742; John, December 3, 1743; Simon, April 8, 1748; Ezra, April 7, 1752; Enoch, August 1, 1754; Nathan, September 21, 1756; Samuel, February 1, 1759. He died in Lynnfield November 26, 1762.

The father of John was John Mudge, who was born in Malden November 21, 1686. He was a farmer, and always lived in Malden. By a wife, Lydia, he had John, December 30, 1713; Joseph, May 28, 1716; Lydia, January 7, 1718–19. He died in Malden November 26, 1762.

The father of the last John was John Mudge, who was born in Malden in 1654. He was a farmer and tanner, and always lived in Malden. He married, in 1684, Ruth, daughter of Robert and Hannah Burditt, of Malden, and had John, October 15, 1685; John again, November 21, 1686; and Martha, December 25, 1691. He died in Malden October 29, 1733.

The father of the last John was Thomas Mudge, who was born in England about the year 1624, and was in Malden as early as 1654. By wife, Mary, he had James; Mary, 1651; Thomas, 1653; John, 1654; George, 1656; Samuel, 1658; Jonathan and Martha, 1662.

Ezra Warren Mudge, the subject of this sketch, was educated in the public schools and the Lynn Academy. He first partially learned the book-binder's trade in Fall River, and in 1828 entered the dry-goods store of Chase & Huse as clerk, where he remained until 1838, when he took the business and conducted it alone until 1842, at which time he became partner in the house of William Chase & Co. In 1849, when the Laighton Bank was incorporated, he was selected as its cashier, and he continued to hold that office until 1868, three years after the bank became the Central National, when, on account of failing health, he resigned.

Mr. Mudge was a selectman of Lynn in 1843 and 1844, a member of the school committee in 1843, '46, '56 and '57, town treasurer, treasurer of the city for six years after its incorporation, and in 1856 and '57 was mayor of the city. He was a member of the Board of Aldermen in 1862, '63 and '64, a member of the board of trustees at its organization in 1862, and its president in 1865. His religious views were those of the Universalists, and he was one of the founders of the First and Second Universalist Societies of Lynn.

Notwithstanding the early training of Mr. Mudge was purely a business one, he was by nature a man of refinement, to whom habits of elevated thought naturally came, and he early in life formed habits of study, which moulded him into a man of literary taste and more than ordinary culture. His honorable and thorough business methods, controlling the routine of his active life, were supplemented by the graces and pleasures which attach to a life of study. He was a thoroughly rounded man, and when he died, September 20, 1878, if it can ever be said of any one, it can be said of him that death closed a finished life.

Mr. Mudge married, January 23, 1836, Eliza R., daughter of John and Margaret Bray, of Salem, and had Ezra Warren, April 18, 1837; William Ropes, July 18, 1839; Mary Chadwell, August 13, 1841; Hervey Mackay, October 6, 1843; Howard Murray, December 9, 1845; Florence Howard, November 28, 1850; Arthur Bartlett, December 14, 1853; Benjamin Cushing, February 10, 1856; and Kate Gertrude, June 30, 1857.

Mrs. Eliza R. Mudge, the widow of Mr. Mudge, has since died, and the living children are Dr. Arthur Bartlett Mudge and Benjamin Cushing Mudge, both living in Lynn, and Florence Howard and Kate Gertrude, the latter of whom is a practicing physician in Salem.

Benjamin Cushing Mudge was educated in the common schools and graduated at the Lynn High School. He afterwards entered the Institution of Technology, Boston, and graduated in 1867, taking the degree of S.B.

Mr. Cushing was four years assistant agent of the Washington Mills, Lawrence, Mass., which are the largest in the world. He started the selling agency of the Dean Steam-Pump Company, Boston, and built up a very large business, was then called to the Boston office of the hydraulic works of Henry R. Worthington, becoming their New England sales-agent, increasing their business five-fold, in addition, organizing and constructing from four to five large water companies each year, and is now officiating as their treasurer. He has recently been elected the president and director of Pascoag and Webster Railway Company of Rhode Island.

EDWARD S. DAVIS.[1]

Mr. Davis was born in Lynn, on the 22d of June, 1808. His parents were Hugh and Elizabeth (Bachelor) Davis, the latter being a descendant from Rev. Stephen Bachelor, first minister of the Lynn Church, settled in 1632.

The subject of this sketch received his education partly in the public schools of Lynn and partly in the academy; which latter he left in 1826. He was soon after appointed clerk of Lynn Mechanics' Bank, and in that position remained till he became of age. His health being now such that a change of residence seemed desirable, he removed to Philadelphia, and

[1] By James R. Newhall.

commenced business as a commission merchant. There he remained till 1833, when Nahant Bank was established; and being offered a position in that institution, accepted, and returned to his native place. In the bank and in the Union Insurance Company he continued till 1837, and then resigned.

Soon after leaving the bank he began business as a shoe manufacturer, but relinquished that and returned to the institution on being appointed cashier, and remained till its affairs were finally closed up. He then spent several years of enforced idleness on account of ill health, though occupying a part of the time as book-keeper. Subsequently he was appointed to a place in the United States Bonded Warehouse, in Boston. In 1861 he entered as a clerk in the State Auditor's office, and from that time to the present he has remained in the same department, filling the offices of first and second clerk.

Mr. Davis was, in early manhood, something of a military man; was in 1835 elected major of the Regiment of Light Infantry attached to the First Brigade of Essex County, and remained in commission as major and lieutenant-colonel, most of the time in command, till 1843.

He was one of the early adherents to the anti-slavery cause, and never deserted it. The "Lynn Colored People's Friend Society" was organized in 1832, having "for its object the abolition of slavery in the United States, the improvement of the character and condition of the free blacks and the acquisition to the Indians and blacks of the enjoyment of their natural rights in an equal participation of civil privileges with white men." In 1835 this society numbered one hundred and eighty-five members, and we find Mr. Davis named as corresponding secretary.

In 1838, being an active member of the old Whig party, Mr. Davis was elected Representative to the General Court, and soon after the formation of our city government was elected to the Council. In 1852, '53, '56 and '57 he was president of the Common Council. It was in 1859 and 1860 that he was called to fill the mayor's chair, and down to the last date had been six years ex-officio member of the school committee. In 1834 he was commissioned as a notary public, and in 1837 as a justice of the peace, which last office he now fills.

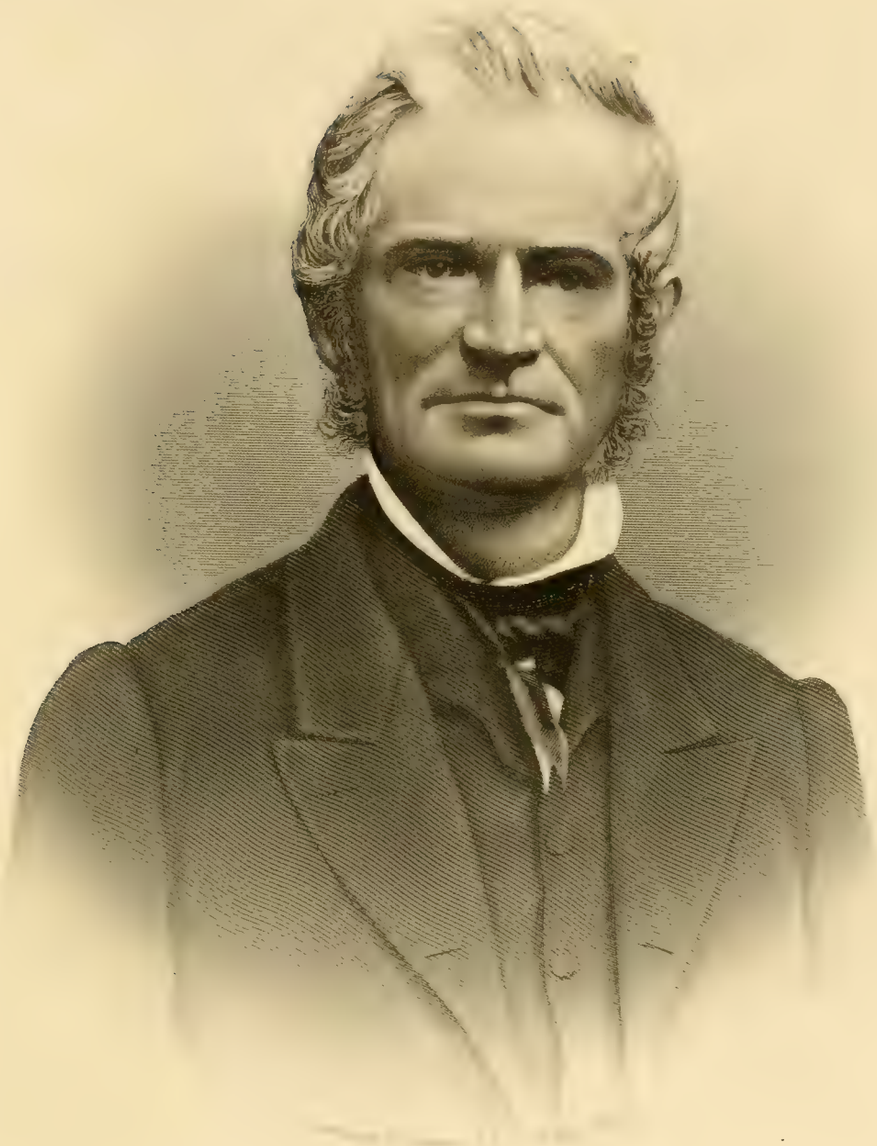
In his religious views Mr. Davis has, from his youth, been a consistent Episcopalian; and that church is indebted to him, probably, more than to any other, for its establishment in this place. From the organization in 1834, until the present time, he has continued to manifest his devotion to her by labor and by pecuniary contribution, and in the parish of St. Stephen's still continues in an important official position.

During his administration as mayor several projects of public interest were accomplished. The city debt was funded; the first street railroad located; the more systematic grading of the public schools commenced; and the substitution of brick schoolhouses for those of wood decided on—two of the former material being erected while he was in office. But perhaps the most notable, at least the most stirring event, was the great shoemakers' strike, which commenced in February, 1860. No occurrence of the kind in this part of the country, probably, ever before created such a sensation. The whole country seemed to have their eyes momentarily turned on Lynn, and through the daily journals and illustrated weeklies her travail was magnified to an extent far beyond what was dreamed of in her own borders. Nevertheless, it was a serious affair, and required the exercise of prudence and coolness in its management. The city was in a ferment for some seven weeks; processions were frequently moving along the streets; large meetings were held; and the drum could be heard at almost any hour. After all, however, there was little actual violence committed. The object of the strikers was the same that is common in all such movements, namely, the obtaining of more adequate remuneration for labor; and perhaps, on the whole, the occurrence was not injurious to the general interests of the place. During this disturbance Mayor Davis, by his prudence, foresight and forbearance, often exercised against the strong urgency of those in favor of more forcible measures, probably saved the city from the odium of violence, and himself and friends from lasting regrets.

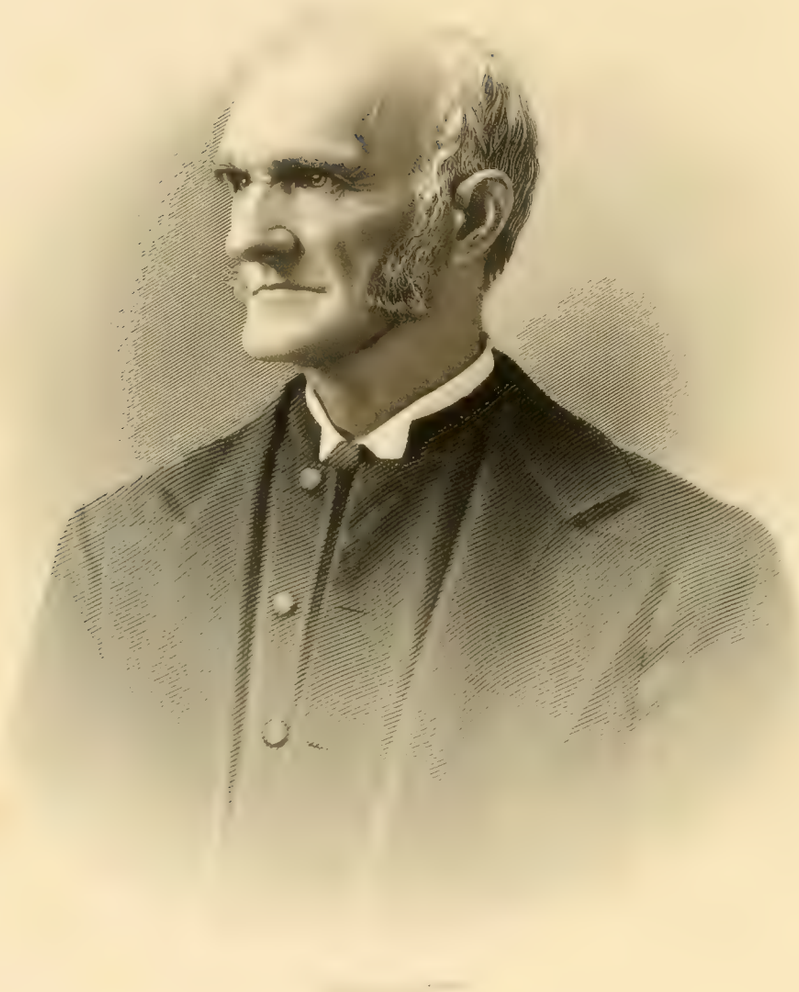
The habits of Mr. Davis were somewhat retiring, and he may be said to lead the life of a thinker quite as much as that of an actor. Having a taste for literature, he has collected, doubtless, the largest and most valuable private library in the city; and among his books he spends many pleasant and studious hours. He has also collected a variety of interesting objects of fine art. Agreeable manners, intelligence and freedom from low prejudices mark his daily walk; and few can spend many hours in his society and not feel improved.

In 1836 he married Elvira, daughter of Captain Nathaniel and Martha (Chadwell) Newhall, both belonging to old Lynn families, but has no children.

Mr. Davis took great pride in the Lynn Public Library, and rendered to it valuable service. He was first elected trustee in 1878, and in 1880 became chairman of the board, which position he held until his death. He was a member of the Historic Genealogical Society, and of the Massachusetts Horticultural Society, in both of which institutions he manifested a lively interest. His acquaintance with public men, authors, artists, clergymen and politicians, was quite extended, and his correspondence very large. It is said he preserved a copy of every letter he has written for half a century. His death, though not unexpected, will be most sincerely regretted, not only in his native city but by many in distant places. It may be said of him that all his acquaintances were his friends, and the death of such a man is felt as a loss by the whole community.



Stephen N. Breed



Isaac Newhall

Mr. Davis died at his residence on Summer Street, August 7, 1887, after a long and painful illness.

STEPHEN N. BREED.

The subject of this memoir was one of Lynn's most honest citizens. He was a man of sterling integrity of character, independent in his habits of thought, and fearless, though not ostentatious, in the utterance of his opinions, whether those opinions had received the stamp of public approval, or whether their advocacy subjected him to the adverse criticism of the majority.

He naturally, therefore, took kindly to the reforms of the day, carefully discriminating between the narrow and visionary schemes of so-called reformers, and those measures of social improvement that base their demands upon the principles of justice that appeal to man's uncorrupted moral sense. His wide reading had taught him that majorities were often wrong, and that of necessity reform must begin with the minority. Whatever such a view cost him, he was willing to bear.

Accordingly he was found in the ranks of the abolitionists when to be such made men sneer and raise the cry of fanatic. While he well knew that the world would not hear too much reform at once, he realized that such an essential villainy as human slavery struck at the fundamental rights of man. Therefore he was a Garrisonian abolitionist, though never standing on the extreme non-voting ground; being a decided Whig in his early years, and later an earnest supporter of the Republican party. No compromise must be made with slavery, no toleration must be given to it, nothing but its destruction would meet the demands of justice.

Mr. Breed was a member of the old Silsbee Street Debating Society, so famous in our local annals, and occasionally took part in the debates; but he usually preferred to listen. He had a fine sense of humor, and though undemonstrative in its manifestation, the few who knew him well saw how clearly he perceived the incongruities which lie at the root of man's humorous instincts, and how keenly he appreciated any demonstrations that presented the witty side of human nature. He was a genial, instructive companion. His tenacious memory furnished him with a storehouse of facts and reminiscences running back to the early years of the century.

Mr. Breed was born and bred in the Quaker communion, but in early life became a regular attendant at the Unitarian Church just then organized, until the establishment of the Free Church, when he attended the ministry of Samuel Johnson. In the later years of his life he again attended the Unitarian Church. He never dogmatized in matters of religion, feeling assured that there were many things concerning it which he did not know, and many more about which there was more or less uncertainty.

His prudent habits and sound judgment gave him marked success in business. He took charge of the lumber trade established by his father—an industry then in its infancy—and laid the foundations of what became in after years, with the aid of his sons, one of the most extensive retail lumber establishments in New England, yielding its owner an ample fortune. He was a man of strict business integrity, and he will be long remembered by the multitude of his patrons, for the unpretending kindness of his manners, and for his leniency when misfortune made them his debtors.

Mr. Breed was a son of James and Phebe (Nichols) Breed, and was born in 1806. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Frederick and Betsey Breed, and had six children, viz.: Mary Elizabeth, James F., Albert H., Harriet M., Stephen F. and Ella F. Of these four are living, viz.: James F., Albert H., Stephen F. and Harriet M., now Mrs. Walcott. Mr. Breed died April 8, 1886.

ISAAC NEWHALL,

One of Lynn's prominent and widely-known citizens, was born January 4, 1814, and died February 22, 1879. He was a native of Lynn and of Quaker parentage, his mother being one of the eminent preachers of that denomination.

Mr. Newhall was greatly instrumental in advancing the welfare and prosperity of the city, and was at all times interested in the municipal affairs of the city, being a member of the Board of Aldermen in 1851 and 1875 ; and the present success of many institutions and enterprises in Lynn is due to his indefatigable efforts, particularly the building of the Lynn City Street Railway, of which he was a director.

He was a man of indomitable will and perseverance. He was singularly constituted as a business man, and pursued an independent course, apparently regardless of public opinion. He had decided opinions and was not inclined to court the good opinion or the favor of only his intimate friends, apparently courting opposition, and he seemed to take great pleasure in combating public sentiment. In public and local affairs he interested himself earnestly, having filled various public positions, rarely going with the current, at times advocating sentiments adverse to those expected from a man of his comprehension and intelligence.

He was unostentatious, while frugality and abstemiousness characterized him through life, and his faith in the future welcomed the end. He early engaged in the shoe business and became one of Lynn's largest and successful manufacturers. Later still, after machinery became necessary, he kept up with the progress of the age, until, becoming largely interested in real estate operations, he gradually left the shoe business, occasioned, no doubt, by failing health, suffering intensely from neuralgia,

which no medical or surgical skill could alleviate. The last few weeks of his life were weeks of intense suffering, which he bore with remarkable patience and Christian resignation. No complaint would fall from his lips.

Mr. Newhall was twice married. He left a widow and five children.

JAMES M. NYE, M.D.

The old town of Salisbury, one of the most historic sections of the Commonwealth, has been prolific in the number of her sons who have attained honorable and leading positions among their fellow-men. Such an one is the subject of this sketch—Dr. James M. Nye.

Dr. Nye came to Lynn in 1841 and established himself in the practice of his profession, which he continued with marked success until his death. He was ever alive to the interests of his adopted city, and all measures tending to advance its welfare found in him an earnest advocate. His genial disposition, large sympathies and acknowledged skill in his profession, soon gained him an extensive practice, and his benevolence was plainly manifest in the large numbers of poor people whom he attended professionally, receiving no compensation except that arising from the inner consciousness of having performed a charity pleasing to himself and in accordance with the divine teachings of which he was, through life, a consistent follower.

Dr. Nye manifested a deep interest in educational matters and served for several years, with ability and honor, upon the school-board of Lynn, resigning his position only when compelled to by the pressure of his professional duties. His interest in matters of education was not alone confined to Lynn, but extended to the freedmen of the South, for whom he supported several teachers during the last years of his life.

Dr. Nye was a consistent Christian, and during his residence of thirty-one years in Lynn he was one of the most prominent members of the First Baptist Church, and an earnest worker in its behalf. He was superintendent of the Sunday-school and clerk of the society for a long period. Modest and unassuming in his disposition, strictly moral in his character, upright in his dealings with others, he left the example of a true Christian gentleman, and died one of Lynn's most esteemed and honored citizens.

Dr. Nye was born September 26, 1818, and died April 21, 1872. He married Hannah C. Peaslee, of Newton, N. H., June 29, 1842, who still survives him.

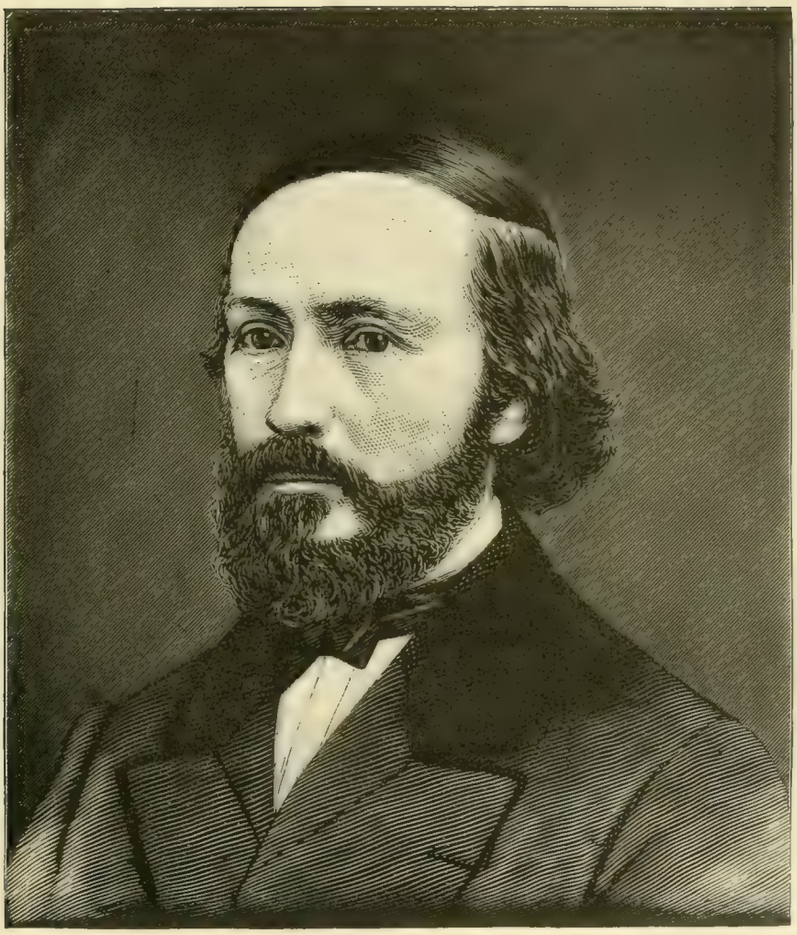
JOHN B. ALLEY.

John B. Alley belongs to one of the oldest Essex County families, and is descended from Hugh Alley, who, with his brother John, settled in Lynn in 1634. Hugh Alley was a farmer, and exhibited the same energy, activity and shrewdness which have characterized his descendents. He is believed to have been the first to take up land, and settle on it, in that part of Lynn which is now Nahant. The grandfather and great-grandfather of Mr. Alley inherited from their ancestor a desire for the possession of land, and were the largest owners of that kind of property in Lynn. John Alley, the father of Mr. Alley, and son of Hugh Alley, lived in Lynn, as did all his ancestors, and was a thriving business man. He married Mercy, daughter of Jonathan Buffum, of Salem, and sister of the late Jonathan Buffum, of Lynn, who for many years was one of its honored and distinguished citizens. Mr. Alley was born in Lynn January 7, 1817, and attended the public schools of that town. At the age of fourteen he was apprenticed to a shoe manufacturer, and at nineteen received the gift of his time. At this early age he displayed those habits of industry and fidelity which have marked every step of his successful career. Possessing by nature a clear head, a cool temperament, a sound intellect and a good judgment, he knew that to succeed in life, industry and fidelity were the only remaining requisites for success.

Immediately, or soon, after the close of his apprenticeship he went to Cincinnati, and there purchased a flat-boat, which he loaded with merchandise and carried to New Orleans. In so young a man the enterprise and skill essential to profitable results in such an undertaking are unusual. But they were possessed by Mr. Alley, and it may be truly said that the fruits of this expedition, with the lesson of self-reliance which it taught him, laid the foundation of the fortune, which he has since acquired.

At the age of twenty-one he returned to Lynn and began the manufacture of shoes. In five years, at the age of twenty-six, he was the owner of one of the largest enterprises in a city full of active, bold, shrewd men, with whom he had entered on a race for wealth. In 1847 he established a house in Boston for the sale of hides and leather, and was the acknowledged peer of the most successful men in the trade. At various times he has been the senior partner in the firm of Alley, Choate & Cummings, the firm of John B. Alley & Co., in which Griffin Place, an able and successful man, was the partner, and more recently in the firm of Alley Bros. & Place, in which the two sons of Mr. Alley and Mr. Place were the partners. In 1886 this last firm was dissolved, and after a business career of forty-eight years Mr. Alley retired, leaving with his former partners a special capital for the continuance of the business. He is now absent on a European tour, enjoying his first vacation in a life of seventy years, free from the burdens and responsibilities of a business which required his constant and conscientious attention and care.

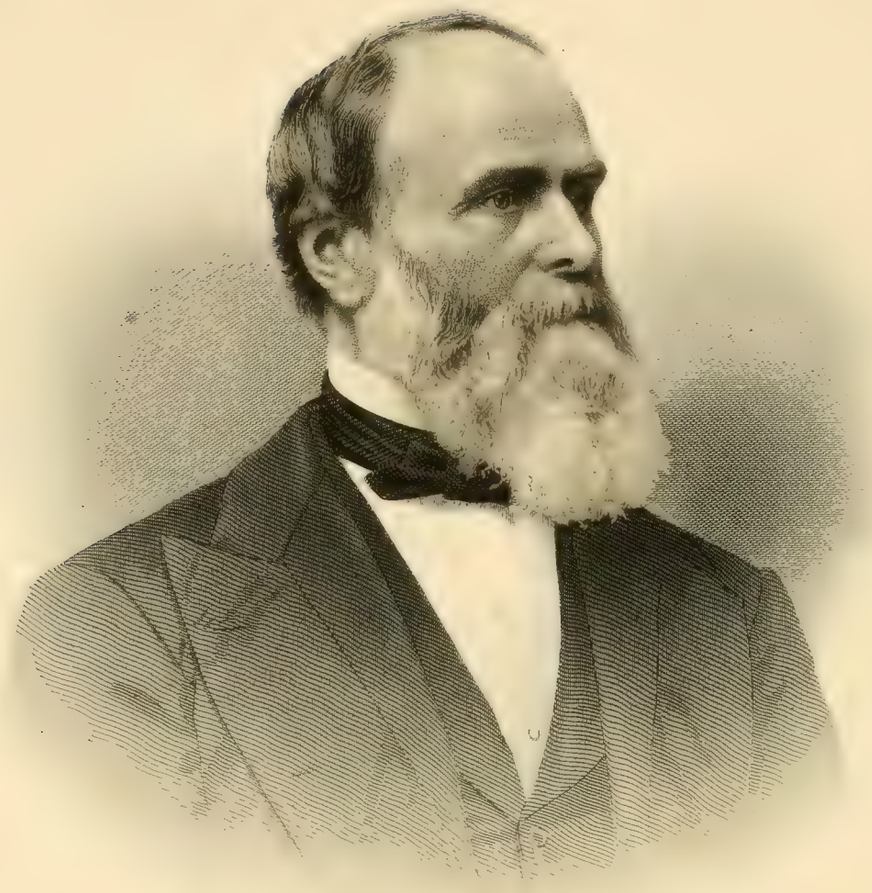
But Mr. Alley may be said to have led two lives.



James M. Nye.



John B. Alley



Edw.d Arnold

Aside from his legitimate career as a merchant, he has always felt a deep interest in public affairs, and in large operations involving heavy responsibilities, requiring heroic courage, and promotive of the welfare and growth of the country. In his earlier years, before the birth of what was called the Free-Soil party, in 1848, he was attached to the Liberty party, imbibing as he did from the Society of Friends, with which his father was associated, anti-slavery sentiments, which never abated until, by the proclamation of President Lincoln, the slave was made free. At the Presidential election in 1848, when Martin Van Buren and Charles Francis Adams were the Free-Soil candidates for President and Vice-President, he was one of the candidates for electors on the Free-Soil ticket. In 1851, during the administration of Governor Boutwell, he was one of the Executive Council. In 1852 he was in the State Senate, serving as chairman of the Committee on Railroads. In 1853 he was a member of the Constitutional Convention, and for several years was an active and influential member of the Republican State Central Committee. In 1858 he was chosen Representative to Congress, serving four terms, during two of which he performed with industry and ability the duties of chairman of the Committee on Post-Offices and Post-Roads. His service in Congress covered the whole period of the war, and no man of the Massachusetts delegation was more devoted and faithful to public duties. His speeches, though not frequent, were well-timed and always clear, well-expressed, strong and persuasive. Those more worthy than others of mention were a speech delivered on the 30th of April, 1860, vindicating the Republican party, one delivered on the 26th of January, 1861, on public affairs, one delivered January 23, 1862, on the State of the Union, and one on the 6th of February of the same year, on the Treasury Note Bill.

Mr. Alley was one of the first to appreciate the remarkable qualities of John A. Andrew. Mr. Andrew had been a member of the House of Representative of Massachusetts in the winter of 1860, and was little known by the people at large until, in the latter part of the session, Caleb Cushing, who was a member, took occasion, in a speech as remarkable for beauty of diction and powerful logic as for its peculiar spirit and sentiment, to arraign the Republican party for a want of loyalty to the Union. As when Hayne delivered his eloquent speech in the Senate of the United States, and Massachusetts men wondered how and by whom he would be answered, so the Republican members of the Legislature listened with amazement to this Democratic champion, and though they knew he must be answered, they knew not from whose lips the answer would come. But they were not doomed to be disappointed. After the recess at the noonday hour John A. Andrew rose, as Webster rose in the Senate, with the assured air of defiance on his brow, but with his clansmen full of doubt. But the power and eloquence were in him, and the time had for the first time come for their full display. It is sufficient to say that with a triumphant oratory rarely heard Mr. Cushing was answered, and the party of which from that time John A. Andrew was the champion was nobly vindicated. In the autumn of that year he was chosen Governor of the commonwealth, and in defending from attacks made on the floor of Congress, Mr. Alley said, in his speech of January, 1861: "Massachusetts has had twenty-one Governors since the adoption of her State Constitution, in 1780, all of them able and distinguished, some of them illustrious, but in everything which constitutes true greatness of character and mind, not one among them all, in my judgment, was the superior of John A. Andrew."

This encomium, as extravagant as it seemed at the time, showed Mr. Alley to possess an insight into character then shared by few, so far as Andrew was concerned, and his words have been more than vindicated in the universal judgment of men.

Since the retirement of Mr. Alley from Congress he has been engaged with others in large railroad enterprises in the West and South. His connection with the Union Pacific is well known, and since the completion of that gigantic undertaking he has been more especially interested in railroad extensions in Iowa and Texas. Mr. Alley is one of that body of courageous men to whose capital the country is indebted for the development of a vast section, which, without facilities of travel and transportation, would be still looking to the future for its prosperity and wealth. Nor has the investment of his capital been confined to railroads. He has become also largely connected with land property in New Mexico, and is to-day the largest owner in three ranches which together contain more than forty thousand head of cattle. It is needless to say that he is a very wealthy man, and that his wealth is exceeded by that of few in the State.

EDWARD NEWHALL.

Edward Newhall, son of John and Delia (Breed) Newhall, was born in Lynn, July 22, 1822. His family belonged to the society of Friends, and his early education was received at the Friends' Institute, in Providence. In 1845 he began the study of medicine under Dr. C. H. Nichols, since distinguished as the superintendent of the Bloomingdale Lunatic Asylum, in the city of New York. He afterwards entered the Harvard Medical School, from which he graduated in 1848. The next two years he spent in Europe attending lectures and walking the hospitals in Paris and as a student in the famous Lying-in Hospital of Dublin. In 1850 he returned home and settled in Lynn, where his thorough medical education and devotion to his profession soon secured to him a wide reputation and practice. He is held in no less esteem by his professional brethren than by the community in which he lives, and has been presi-

dent of both the Essex South Medical Society and the Lynn Medical Association.

He married, October 23, 1853, Eliza F. Beaumont, of Canton, Mass., who died in June, 1870, having been the mother of three sons and one daughter. In 1873 he married Mrs. M. A. (Field) Saunderson, of Quincy, Mass., by whom he had two sons and a daughter. Dr. Newhall, now sixty-five years of age, is still possessed of a physical and mental vigor which years have not impaired, and he neither seeks nor needs any relaxation from his continuous and arduous professional work.

His second son, Herbert William, A.M., M.D. (Harv.), is associated with him in practice.

EDWARD WINSLOW HINCKS.

Edward Winslow Hincks was born in Bucksport, Me., May 30, 1830. He was the son of Captain Elisha Hincks, who was born in Provincetown, Mass., September 28, 1800, and who was lost at sea January 14, 1831. In 1802 the father of Elisha removed with his family to Buckstown (now Bucksport), and there Elisha was brought up, and married, October 9, 1824, Elizabeth Hopkins, daughter of Ephraim and Hannah (Rich) Wentworth, of Orrington, Me., and had the following children: Temperance Ann, April 23, 1826; Elisha Albert, May 1, 1828; Edward Winslow, May 30, 1830.

The father of Elisha was Elisha Hincks, who was born in Truro, Mass., July 14, 1774, and died in North Bucksport, Me., March 15, 1851. In early life he followed the sea, but in April, 1802, he, with his family and brothers, Winslow and Jesse, removed from Provincetown, where they then lived, to Buckstown (now Bucksport), Me. There he bought wild land, which he cleared and improved, and on which he died. He married first, in March, 1796, Temperance, daughter of Sylvanus and Hannah (Cole) Smith, of Eastham, Mass., and had Anna, born in Provincetown January 11, 1797. He married second, December 22, 1799, Mary, daughter of Nathaniel and Anna (Rich) Treat, of Truro, and had Elisha, September 28, 1800; Temperance Smith, born in Bucksport June 24, 1803; Mary, July 30, 1805; Sarah, January 30, 1807; William Treat, March 30, 1809; Sylvanus Treat, November 21, 1810; Hannah, August 5, 1812; Naomi, May 16, 1816; Ezekiel Franklin, August 10, 1820.

The father of the last Elisha was Samuel Hinckes, who was born in Portsmouth, N. H., about 1728, and shortly removed with his father to Boston, and there lived until 1753. He afterwards taught school in Truro, where he married, about 1756, Susanna, daughter of Jonathan Dyer, of Truro, and where he continued to live until 1795, when he removed to Bucksport, and there died in 1806.

The father of Samuel was Captain Samuel Hinckes, who was born in Portsmouth, N. H., at an unknown date, and graduated at Harvard in 1701. In 1716, while a resident in Portsmouth, he was sent as a Representative of the province of New Hampshire to the Indians at the eastward, was a captain in the Indian wars and commanded Fort Mary, at Winter Harbor, from 1722 to 1727, when he removed to Boston. He died in Portsmouth shortly after 1753. He married Elizabeth (Winslow) Scott, a widow, previous to 1715. Elizabeth Winslow was a daughter of Edward and Elizabeth (Hutchinson) Winslow, and granddaughter of John Winslow, who married Mary Chilton, one of the passengers in the "Mayflower".

The father of the last Samuel was John Hinckes, who came from England about 1670, who was Councilor for the province of New Hampshire and assistant in the Court of Chancery from 1683 to May 25, 1686, when he became a Councilor in the government of President Joseph Dudley, having been named for the office by James the Second, in his commission to Dudley, dated October 8, 1685. He was also chief justice of the Court of Pleas and General Sessions in New Hampshire from 1686 to 1689. In 1692 he was named as Councilor of New Hampshire and made president of the Council. In 1699 he was appointed chief justice of the Superior Court, and remained in office as Councilor and chief justice until 1708. He was living in New Castle, N. H., in 1722, and had deceased April 25, 1734. He married, at an unknown date, Elizabeth, daughter of Nathaniel and Christian Fryer, and had Samuel, a daughter who married a Gross, Christian, Barbara, Sarah and probably Elizabeth.

Edward Winslow Hincks, the subject of this sketch, having received the rudiments of his education in the public schools of his native town, in 1845, at fifteen years of age, removed from Bucksport to Bangor, Me., where he served as an apprentice in the office of the Bangor *Daily Whig and Courier* until 1849, when he removed to Boston, where he was engaged in the printing and publishing business until 1856. He was a Representative from the city of Boston in the Legislature of 1855, and in the same year was a member of the City Council from the Third Ward. Early in 1856 he was appointed a clerk in the office of the secretary of the commonwealth of Massachusetts, and prepared for publication the State census of 1855. He remained in the secretary's office until the firing upon Fort Sumter, employing his leisure hours in the study of law, with the intention of making that his profession, being encouraged and assisted in his purpose by Hon. Anson Burlingame, of whom he was an ardent friend and supporter. Having removed to Lynn in 1856, he was chosen librarian of the Lynn Library Association, and until the outbreak of the war actively promoted the interests of that organization, whose collection of books subsequently became the nucleus of the present Public Library in that city. He was also prominently connected with the Sabbath-school of the First Baptist Church in



Edw W. Hincks

Lynn. On the 18th of August, 1859, he was appointed adjutant of the Eighth Regiment of Massachusetts Militia,—the Essex County regiment.

This appointment, trivial as it no doubt seemed at the time, proved the turning-point in his life, and was the opening door to a military career in which he won lasting fame.

At the outbreak of the war he was placed by this appointment in a position whose duties he had performed with enthusiasm, and from which he could reasonably hope to receive advancement. On the 18th of December, 1860, he wrote to General Anderson, then stationed at Fort Moultrie, the following letter, which shows him to have been the first volunteer of the war:

"BOSTON, *December* 18, 1860.

"MAJOR ANDERSON, U. S. A.,

"*Commanding Fort Moultrie:*

"MAJOR: In case of attack upon your command by the State (or would-be nation) of South Carolina, will you be at liberty to accept volunteers to aid in the defence of Fort Moultrie?

"I am confident that a large body of volunteers, from this vicinity, can be put afloat at short notice to aid in the defence of the post entrusted to your command, if necessity shall demand and the authorities permit it.

"Indeed, the men who have repeatedly responded to the call of the authorities to protect the officers of the law in their work of securing to the owners, from whom it had escaped, the chattel property of the South, will never hesitate to respond to a call to aid a meritorious officer of our Federal Republic, who is engaged not only in protecting our national property, but in defending the honor of our country and the lives of our countrymen.

"I have the honor to be, sir, your obedient servant to command.

"EDWARD W. HINKS,

"*1st Lieut. and Adjt. 8th Regt. Mass. Vol. Mil.*"

"FORT MOULTRIE, S. C., *December* 24, 1860.

"LIEUTENANT ED. W. HINKS,

"*Adjt. 8th Regt. Mass. Vol. Militia:*

"SIR: I thank you, not only for myself, but for the brave little band that are under me, for your very welcome letter of the 18th inst., asking whether, in case I am attacked, I would be at liberty to accept volunteer aid in the defence of Fort Moultrie.

"When I inform you that my garrison consists of only sixty effective men; that we are in a very indifferent work, the walls of which are only about fourteen feet high, and that we have within one hundred and sixty yards of our walls sand hills which command our work, and afford admirable sites for batteries and the finest covers for sharp-shooters; and that, besides this, there are numerous houses, some of them within pistol-shot, you will at once see that if attacked by a force headed by any one but a simpleton, there is scarce a possibility of our being able to hold out long enough to enable our friends to come to our succor.

"*Come what may, I shall ever bear in grateful remembrance your gallant, your humane offer.*

"I am, very sincerely, yours,

"ROBERT ANDERSON,

"*Major 1st Artillery, U. S. A.*"

"24 ST. MARK'S PLACE, *July* 5, 1866.

"GENERAL E. W. HINKS:

"DEAR SIR: * * * * * * * * *

"Your letter, which I received two days before I moved over to Fort Sumter, was the first proffer of aid which was made me whilst in Charleston Harbor.

"Respectfully, your obedient servant,

"ROBERT ANDERSON,

"*Major General U. S. A.*"

On the 15th of April, 1861, when the news was received of the attack on Fort Sumter, he hastened to Boston, and tendered his services to Governor Andrew, and at the same time urged the acceptance of the Eighth Regiment as a part of the contingent of fifteen hundred men called for by the President. His offer of service was accepted, and his request at once complied with. Under orders promptly issued, he, that evening, rode to Lynn, Salem, Beverly and Marblehead, and despatched messenger to Newburyport and Gloucester, notifying the various companies of his regiment to rendezvous in Boston for instant duty. The next morning, April 16th, he marched into Faneuil Hall with three companies from Marblehead, the first troops in the country *en route* for the seat of war.

On the 17th of April he was commissioned lieutenant-colonel of the Eighth Regiment, which marched on the 18th for Washington. At Annapolis, Md., on the 21st of April, a detachment from the regiment, under command of Colonel Hincks, boarded the frigate "Constitution," then lying aground, and first lightening her of her guns, floated her and worked her to sea. Leaving the ship at midnight, he learned the next morning from General Butler that Colonel Lefferts, of the New York Seventh Regiment, had, after consultation with his officers, declined to advance his command and take possession of the Baltimore and Washington Railroad, through apprehension of an overpowering rebel force. He at once said to General Butler: "Give me the selection of two companies for the purpose and I will perform the duty." He was at once placed in command of a detachment consisting of Captain Knott V. Martin's Marblehead company, Captain Geo. T. Newhall's Lynn company and several picked men, engineers and mechanics from other companies under command of Lieutenant Hodges, of Newburyport, and marched to the station, of which he took possession, with the rolling stock, materials, books, papers, etc., there found. Without delay he began the work of repair on the engines and track, the former having been disabled and the latter seriously broken up. During the first day an advance of five miles was made, and after a night's bivouce the work was resumed and continued until the road was in running order. For this service the regiment received the thanks of Congress in the following resolve:

"THIRTY-SEVENTH CONGRESS, FIRST SESSION.

"CONGRESS OF THE UNITED STATES IN THE HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES.

"*July* 31, 1861.

"On motion of Mr. Lovejoy:

"*Resolved*, That the thanks of this House are hereby presented to the Eighth Regiment of Massachusetts Volunteers, for their alacrity in responding to the call of the President, and for the energy and patriotism displayed by them in surmounting obstacles upon sea and land, which traitors had interposed to impede their progress to the defence of the National Capital.

"GALUSHA A. GROW,

"*Speaker of the House of Representatives.*

"*Attest:*

"EM. ETHERIDGE,

"*Clerk.*"

Reaching Washington on the 26th of April, Colonel Hincks was that day appointed a second lieutenant of cavalry in the regular army, the only rank in which, at that time, an officer could enter the regular

service. From the date of his entrance into the regular army his military history is borne on the records of the office of the adjutant-general, as follows:

"Appointed second lieutenant Second Cavalry April 26, 1861; colonel Eighth Massachusetts Volunteers May 16, 1861; colonel Nineteenth Massachusetts Volunteers August 3, 1861; brigadier-general United States Volunteers November 29, 1862; brevet major-general United States Volunteers March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious services during the war; resigned volunteer commission June 30, 1865; appointed lieutenant-colonel Fortieth United States Infantry July 28, 1866; transferred to the Twenty-fifth United States Infantry March 15, 1869; breveted colonel United States Army March 2, 1867, for gallant and meritorious services at the battle of Antietam, Md.; and brigadier-general United States Army for gallant and meritorious services in the assault of Petersburg, Va.; retired from active service for disability resulting from wounds received in the line of duty December 15, 1870, upon the full rank of colonel United States Army.

"*Service.*—With Regiment Eighth Massachusetts in the State of Maryland until August 1, 1861; with Regiment Nineteenth Massachusetts in the Army of the Potomac from August, 1861, to June 30, 1862, when wounded in action at White Oak Swamp, Va.; absent wounded to August 5, 1862; commanding Third Brigade, Sedgwick's division, Army of the Potomac, to September 17, 1862, when twice severely wounded in the battle of Antietam, Md.; on leave of absence wounded to March 19, 1863; on court-martial duty as brigadier-general at Washington, D. C., April 2 to June 9, 1863; and under orders of War Department to July 4, 1863; commanding draft rendezvous at Concord, N. H.; acting assistant provost marshal, general and superintendent of the Volunteer Recruiting Service for the State of New Hampshire to March 29, 1864; commanding district of Saint Mary's and camp of prisoners of war at Point Lookout, Md., April 3 to 20, 1864; commanding Third Division, Eighteenth Army Corps, to July, 1864, when wounded; on court-martial duty to September 22, 1864; commanding draft depot and camp of prisoners of war at Hart's Island, New York Harbor, to February, 1865; on duty at New York City as acting assistant provost marshal general, superintendent Volunteer Recruiting Service, and chief mustering and disbursing officer for the Southern Division of New York to March, 1865; and on the same duty at Harrisburg, Pa., for the Western Division of Pennsylvania to June 30, 1865; governor of the Military Asylum to March 6, 1867; *en route* to, and in command of, Fort Macon, N. C., until April 13, 1867; on special duty at headquarters Second Military District at Charleston, S. C., to April 27, 1867; provost marshal general Second Military District North and South Carolina to January 16, 1868; commanding Fortieth regiment and the sub-district and port of Gold-boro', N. C., to July 13, 1868; on sick leave of absence to December 4, 1868; commanding regiment in North Carolina and Louisiana until April 20, 1869, when he assumed command of the Twenty-fifth Infantry, and remained in command of that regiment and the post of New Orleans, La., until August 14, 1869; on sick leave of absence to December 4, 1869; and in command of regiment in New Orleans and *en route* to and at Fort Clark, Texas, from that date to December 15, 1870."

Such is the record borne on the pages of the army books, and no narrative could set forth the military life of General Hincks so clearly and eloquently as these authoritative words. Aside from the leading well-known generals of the war, few officers can boast of a more varied and gallant and useful career.

In concluding the narrative of the war experience of General Hincks, while the repeated testimony of his superior officers in their general orders to his gallantry will be omitted, the list of battles in which he was engaged must not fail to be mentioned.

Battle of Ball's Bluff, Va., October 21, 1861; siege of Yorktown, Va., April, 1862; affair at West Point, May 7, 1862; Fair Oaks, June 1, 1862; Oak Grove, June 25, 1862; Peach Orchard, June 29, 1862; Savage's Station, June 29, 1862; White Oak Swamp, June 30, 1862; Glendale, June 30, 1862; Chantilly, September 1, 1862; South Mountain, September 14, 1862; Antietam, September 16 and 17, 1862; Baylor's Farm, June 15, 1864; assault on Petersburg, June 15, 1864."

The services of General Hincks after the war were only less important than those during its continuance. Under General Sickles and General Canby the aid he rendered in perfecting and carrying out the reconstruction measures of the government in North and South Carolina, forming what was called the Second Military District, was recognized by his superior officers as efficient and valuable.

On the 15th of December, 1870, the general was retired from active service upon the full rank of colonel in the United States Army on account of wounds received in battle, and on the 7th of March, 1872, he was appointed, by the board of managers of the National Homes, deputy-governor of the Southern Branch of National Homes, at Hampton, Va. On the 1st of January following he was transferred to the Northwestern Branch, near Milwaukee, Wis., and resigned October 1, 1880.

After the resignation of his position as deputy-governor of the National Home at Milwaukee, General Hincks remained in that city until June, 1883, and was largely influential in the organization of the Milwaukee Industrial Exposition, a corporation then formed and still in existence, having for its object the promotion of the industrial interests of Milwaukee and the State of Wisconsin. Since 1883 he has lived in Cambridge, Mass., enjoying a period of well-deserved peace and comfort. He occupies a stately old mansion, said to be more than two hundred years old; and the books and pictures and quaint old family china and furniture with which it is replete reveal the culture and taste of its occupants.

In the autumn of 1862, after having been severely wounded in the battle of Antietam, General Hincks was urgently requested by many independent Republicans to run for Congress in the Sixth District, then represented by Mr. John B. Alley, but he positively declined to be a candidate for any office that would prevent his return to the field as soon as he should sufficiently recover from his wounds. He was sergeant-at-arms of the National Republican Convention at Philadelphia in 1872, when General Grant was nominated for a second term; and again at Cincinnati, in 1876, when General Hayes was nominated for President. In the Cincinnati Convention he was nominated by the chairman of the Michigan delegation "for his many wounds received in battle," and was unanimously elected.

General Hincks is a Knight Templar in the Masonic order, a companion in the National Commandery of the Loyal Legion and a member of the New England Historical Genealogical Society.

General Hincks has been twice married,—first, January 25, 1855, to Annie Rebecca, daughter of Moody and Clarissa (Leach) Dow, of Lynn, who died in Lynn August 21, 1862. Her only child was Anson Burlingame, who was born in Lynn October 14, 1856, and died in Rockville, Md., January 27, 1862.

He married second, September 3, 1863, Elizabeth



Francis W. Frech



John B. Tolman.

Peirce, daughter of George and Susan (Treadwell) Nichols, of Cambridge, whose only child, Bessie Hincks, born in Cambridge April 11, 1865, died in Cambridge July 5, 1885.

The death of this daughter was peculiarly sad. She had graduated in 1883 from the Milwaukee College, and had entered the Harvard Annex full of hope and promise. While walking in the street her dress took fire from a burning cracker, and she was burned to death. Her sweet and loving character, blended with high literary attainments, lent a joy and grace to her parents' home, since shadowed in perpetual gloom. It is only necessary, before closing this sketch, to add a word of explanation concerning the family name of General Hincks.

The common ancestor of the Hincks family in this country, Councilor and Chief Justice John, uniformly wrote his name Hinckes, but when copied by clerks it was usually written Hinks, and so frequently appears in the Council Records of Massachusetts and the Archives of New Hampshire. Captain Samuel, who graduated at Harvard in 1701, and his son Samuel, Jr., the schoolmaster on the Cape, uniformly wrote their names Hincks; but Elisha and his son, Captain Elisha, Jr., the father of the general, appear to have dropped the *c*, and to have written their names Hinks; and in early life the general also wrote his name without the *c* (Hinks), and it so appears in the Army Register and the official records of the war, although other branches of the family wrote their names with a *c;* but in 1871, under authority of law, the general restored the letter *c* to his name, and has since written it Hincks, and all the branches of the family descended from Chief Justice John now conform to this style. It will be noted that all of this family in this country bearing the name of Hincks are descended through the Winslows from Mary Chilton, who came in the "Mayflower," and Anne Hutchinson, the Quakeress.

FRANCIS W. BREED.

Francis W. Breed, of Lynn, is one of the most prominent shoe manufacturers, not only in that city, but in New England. His extensive factories at home and abroad give employment to large bodies of workmen, and have a capacity, when in full running order, of six or seven thousand pairs of shoes per day. Mr. Breed's rise in business, while it has been rapid, has been steady, conservative and safe. Possessing, in a marked degree, the quality of thoroughness in whatever he undertakes, he has achieved success where competition is close and where slackness or inattention might have caused disaster. His markets, both for purchase and sale, are extensive, and both are watched with a careful eye. Mr. Breed has traveled extensively, and with an elasticity of spirit and a buoyancy of heart, he has always sustained a weight of care and responsibility with calmness and composure, and kept himself young under burdens, which often crush and break down even less active business men. His residence on Ocean Street in Lynn has a beautiful outlook over the bay, and is one of the most attractive and comfortable homes on the shore.

JOHN BROAD TOLMAN.

Mr. Tolman was a lineal descendant from Thomas Tolman, who was born in England in 1608 or 1609, and came over in the "Mary and John" in 1630, becoming a settler of Dorchester, Mass. A grandson of the early settler just named, whose name also was Thomas, was a native of Lynn, and died here in 1716. And this last Thomas was the great-great-great-grandfather of John B., the subject of this sketch, who thus becomes connected with our Lynn families.

John B. Tolman was born in Barre, Worcester County, Mass., on the 30th of December, 1806, and in that town the first two years of his life were passed. His parents then removed to Needham, in Norfolk County, Mass., it being the native place of his paternal grandfather, who was severely wounded at the battle of Lexington, but on his recovery enlisted and served through the Revolutionary War, rising from the ranks to a field officer.

In this latter town most of Mr. Tolman's early life was passed and his education chiefly obtained at the public schools there. And he had manual duties to perform about the farm even at the tender age of eight years, such as a boy of this period would be thought entirely unequal to.

At the usual age for apprenticeship he was placed in the office of H. & W. H. Mann, of Dedham, Mass., to learn the printing business. It was a large and well-appointed establishment for the time, and afforded facilities for acquiring a good knowledge of the art. He faithfully served his full time and not long after went to Boston, there to follow his trade. Says the *Commonwealth* newspaper of April 9, 1881: "In 1828 Mr. Tolman came to Boston as a journeyman in the book-office of Isaac R. Butts, doing a full day's work each day and filling the berth of an extra hand two nights in the week on the *Columbian Centinel*, 'hanging out from twelve to three o'clock.'"

It was in February, 1830, that he became a resident of Lynn, where he was at once engaged as printer of the *Lynn Record*, a few numbers of which had then been issued. After several years of service as manager, not only mechanically but editorially, he purchased the office and soon did a larger business than had been done in any other Lynn office up to that time. He introduced the first machine press here, printed several papers at different times and had a good run of job work.

By middle life he found himself in circumstances where his accustomed unremitting application to mechanical labor was unnecessary. He then sold out his printing materials and business, and turned his

attention to other and less wearing pursuits. Yet the semi-intellectual employment of type-setting was always congenial to him, and he was sometimes, for years after, seen as a volunteer compositor, for hours together, in some printing-office, the sharp click of the type and the bass rumbling of the press having the old-time charm for his ear. He now engaged in real estate and kindred operations, and here, too, success generally attended him, so that his means were soon augmented.

The Rev. Edwin Thompson, himself a man of remarkable vitality, industry and perseverance, in a communication to the *Dedham Transcript* of March 15, 1884, in allusion to the physical strain to which Mr. Tolman was accustomed to subject himself in early manhood, says: "Before the days of railroads Mr. Tolman frequently walked from Lynn to Boston on business and back the same day. Whenever he wished to visit Dedham it required all day to go there by stage, starting by Lynn stage at 8 A.M. for Boston, and leaving Boston for Dedham by 'Mason's stage' at 4 P.M. In order to save time, Mr. Tolman frequently walked the whole distance, twenty miles, leaving Dedham in the morning and arriving at Lynn in season to devote half a day to business."

Perhaps no trait is more conspicuous in Mr. Tolman than his promptness in fulfilling engagements. So rigid was he in this respect, while in the printing business, that he appended to some of his advertisements a notice that if a job of work was not ready for delivery at the time agreed on, no pay would be required.

The career of Mr. Tolman furnishes a notable illustration of the certainty with which industry, promptness, indomitable perseverance and frugality insure competence.

Mr. Tolman is a strict disciplinarian and a man of marked individuality and rigidly just in all his dealings. Like a good many other thrifty men—more in number than is generally supposed—he was never addicted to the use of intoxicating liquors. Nor did he acquire the habit of using tobacco in any form. Mr. Thompson remarks: "Mr. Tolman thinks he has saved, reckoning at compound interest, about eight thousand dollars in not using tobacco, and by not using rum much more." His abstinence from "rum and tobacco," of course did much to increase his pecuniary means. And then with his other good traits of prudence in expenditure and carefulness in every way, aided by superior business sagacity, he has been enabled, during his latter years, to spare generous sums for benevolent purposes. In 1881, on the occasion of the celebration of his golden wedding, he made a donation to the Lynn Hospital of two thousand five hundred dollars, to be held for the purposes thus expressed in his letter to the president of the corporation:

"As I am interested in the project for a Hospital in this city, and as the present effort to obtain a fund to establish one happens to be coincident with the fiftieth anniversary of my wedding, I, together with my wife, desire, on this day and occasion, to make it an offering expressive of our interest in it and the city in which we have so long resided.

"We also desire to devote the gift, in part, to the benefit of members of the Printing Fraternity in Lynn, as they may be in need of hospital treatment. We both have a strong regard for the occupation to which I was brought up, and in which my wife's father and four of her brothers were long engaged.

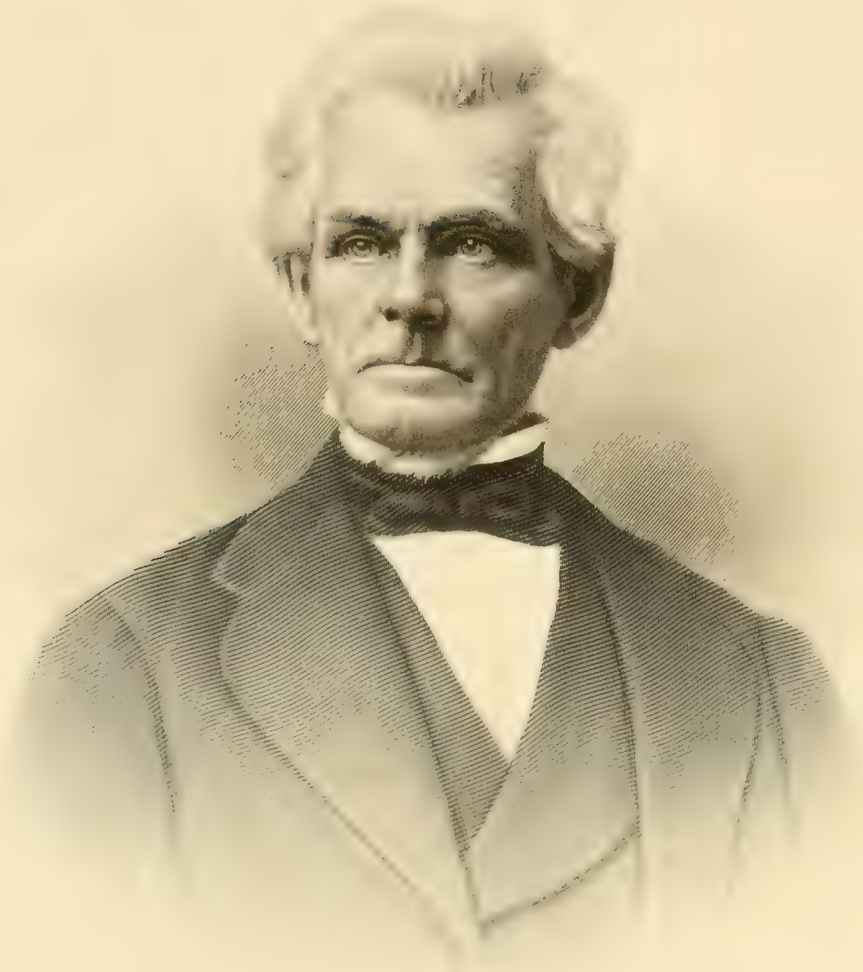
"As we desire the hospital to be established on a lasting basis, even if it shall commence in a small and prudent way, we wish the income of the fund only to be used, and offer, through you, to give to the Hospital the symbolical sum of Fifty-times-Fifty Dollars, to be received and held on the following terms:

"That the said Hospital shall hold and invest the said sum forever, and devote the income arising therefrom to maintain a bed, or beds, in said Hospital, for the benefit of all persons, under the rules and regulations of the hospital; that it shall devote said bed, or beds, to the extent of a sum equal to the whole income received from said fund, to the use of Practical Letter-Press Printers residing in Lynn (and especially to any person ever apprenticed to me), if the same shall be so required."

This donation was cordially received and duly acknowledged. In 1884 he conveyed to the Young Men's Christian Association, of Lynn, an estate on Market Street valued at thirty thousand dollars, in trust "For the suppression in said Lynn of intemperance in the use of intoxicating liquors by the cultivation of public opinion and the enforcement of laws prohibiting and restraining the manufacture and sale of the same, and by assisting in the reform of persons of intemperate habits. Also, for the education and instruction of the public, and especially the young, in all practical ways by which they may be reached in regard to the moral and physical injuries arising from the habitual use of such liquors, and also of tobacco and other stimulants." And as subordinate to this work it was further stipulated that a part of said income, as opportunity afforded, should be expended for the suppression of immoral literature, especially such as circulates among the young, the donor summarily adding that "his general intention is that of reform, rather than that of the alleviation of the effects consequent upon intemperance," and leaving the details of work for those appointed to act under the trust. This donation was also cordially accepted and duly acknowledged, and will no doubt be faithfully applied. A local paper, in speaking of this gift, says: "Mr. Tolman was an ardent temperance advocate in early life; he was also a radical and outspoken abolitionist, and advocated all the moral reform movements at a time when it required sound moral courage to do so," and adds, in reference to the gift: "He feels that in this act he has contributed to the relief of the poor and needy as expressly, and more effectually, than if he had ministered directly to their present necessities, as he believes in the adage, 'An ounce of prevention is worth a pound of cure.'"

The latest and one of the most useful of Mr. Tolman's public donations was the munificent one of one thousand dollars to the Home for Aged Women.

Mr. Tolman has not appeared much in public life, having no political aspirations, and constantly avoiding official position. It is here, perhaps, that he has fallen short of his duty to the public, which, in return



Hiram W. Beach

for the protection and benefits conferred, had a right to place him, occasionally at least, in positions where his fearless independence, caution and watchfulness would be available and effectual. He, however, has "held important and responsible positions in connection with private and corporate interests."

Mr. Tolman has been something of a traveler, having made extensive tours in the Western and Southern States and in California. He has likewise visited Europe, and, of course, with his inquiring mind, gathered much unique and useful information.

In March, 1831, Mr. Tolman was united in marriage with Miss Lydia S. Mann, of Dedham, a daughter of Herman Mann, of whom he had learned his trade, and sister of Herman Mann, Jr., and their children were two sons and a daughter, of whom the latter only is now living, being the wife of Mr. Charles J. Pickford, of Lynn.

HIRAM NICHOLS BREED.

In the "Centennial Memorial of Lynn," published in 1876, by order of the City Council, appeared a biographical sketch of Mr. Breed, which was prepared with care, and to which little need be added here excepting that now, 1887, after the lapse of another decade of years, he still retains, in a remarkable degree, that healthful vigor, both of body and mind, that has characterized him through life; and that the community still have the benefit of his mature judgment and efficient services.

Mr. Breed, says the sketch referred to, was born in Lynn, September 2, 1809, and was a son of Asa Breed, born February 21, 1783, a direct descendant from Allen Breed, who settled in Lynn in 1630. The Breed family during our whole history has maintained the highest rank, numerically, with the exception of the Newhall, which considerably outnumbers any other.

After receiving a district school education, Mr. Breed was put to the common employment of the youth of that period in this place, namely, the trade of shoemaking. And that occupation he has pursued for the greater portion of his life. The old-fashioned shoemaker's shop was an unrivalled school in its way —a school in which the free discussions on every topic of public or private interest had a tendency to make men intelligent in every way except, perhaps, in mere book-learning. The discussions often led to reflection and investigation, and whoever possessed ability was pretty sure to have it recognized.

Mr. Breed was, at a comparatively early age, called to take a part in the management of public affairs; and for many years has held responsible offices. He was in various positions in the old town government, and the office of selectman when it expired. On the adoption of the city form he was one of the first Board of Aldermen, being likewise returned for the same position the next year. He was a member of the Legislature in 1848 and 1850, and a member of the Constitutional Convention in 1853. By Governor Boutwell he was appointed Coroner, and held the office twenty-five years, until the duties were referred to the courts; and he held the office of Justice of the Peace thirty-four years. He was ten years a director in the old Mutual Fire Insurance Company, likewise City Assessor in 1858 and 1859, and Surveyor of Highways ten years. In the latter capacity he rendered eminent service, doing much to protect and beautify the picturesque drives in the outskirts, as well as to render safe, compact and cleanly the business streets. For thirteen years he was Commissioner of Pine Grove Cemetery, and for six years contractor to grade and prepare the lots. Nor should it be forgotten, while speaking of his many excellent labors, that he was active and efficient in the establishment of the Home for Aged Women.

In 1861 Mr. Breed was elected to the office of Mayor. That was a year especially filled with unusual demands, anxieties and perplexities, for it was the opening year of the great Civil War. New duties and responsibilities were then pressing, and untried measures were to be adopted. It required firmness to withstand unreasonable demands, and judgment to meet all legitimate claims. The success of his administration, under the circumstances, entitles him to much credit. It was a difficult task to shape and put in operation the measures that resulted so favorably to the soldiers and their families, while at the same time other public interests were vigilantly guarded. Something of the modest spirit with which he entered upon his duties as Mayor may be gathered from the opening passage of his inaugural address: "Called from a laborious but honorable occupation to fill the position of Mayor of this city, and well acquainted with my many deficiencies for this important trust, I feel confident that, seeking to know my duty, I shall be able by assiduity and industry to discharge the duties with a measure of satisfaction to myself and my constituents." Perhaps his habit of careful investigation, before proceeding to action, in matters of real importance, is one of his most prominent characteristics—never too hasty, and never liable to be driven on by the unadvised urgency of those who always stand ready to press others while no responsibility rests on themselves.

Mr. Breed belongs to one of the old families of the eastern section of the town, though the first Breed located in the western section, and has lived to see great improvements in the vicinity of his birth-place. Ocean Street, which is now reckoned one of the finest avenues in the county, he has seen opened through lands, not indeed barren, but occupied only for purposes of husbandry. He also had much to do with the laying out of Breed, Foster and Nichols Streets, now filled with a thrifty population. And to his energy and enterprise that whole section is indebted for many of those improvements which have changed it from its former quaint and rather ancient aspect to one pleasant and attractive.

On the 4th of July, 1830, Mr. Breed was united in marriage with Nancy, a daughter of Caleb Stone, a well known and much respected citizen, and by her had ten children—four sons and six daughters. On the 4th of July, 1880, the fiftieth anniversary of their marriage, a large company of kindred and friends assembled in a tasty pavilion, erected for the purpose, and there offered their congratulations and good wishes to the esteemed couple. It was an occasion of much enjoyment, mingled with the touching reflection that the day for final separation could not, in the common course of nature, be far distant. And since then the endeared companion with whom Mr. Breed had so long journeyed, has been called to the better land. A beloved and promising son, too, then in early manhood, has likewise passed the bourne whence none return.

ISAAC FRANCIS GALLOUPE.

One of the most noted of the early settlers of New England was John Gallop, of Strode, County Dorset, England, who, at the age of forty, set sail for America in the "Mary and John," and arrived on the 30th of May, 1630, at Watertown (now Boston). He was a descendant, in the eighth generation, of John Gallop, who, in 1465, came out of the North and settled in Dorset, his heraldic shield bearing the mottoes, "Be bold, be wyse."

Isaac Francis Galloupe, a descendant in the seventh generation from John Gallop, the pioneer, was born in Beverly, Mass., June 27, 1823. His parents were Isaac and Annis (Allen) Galloupe, both of sturdy New England stock. After receiving a suitable academical education he entered, as a student, the office of Dr. A. S. Pierson, of Salem, with whom he remained two years, at the end of which time he entered the Tremont Street Medical School, in Boston, and pursued his studies another year. He also attended three full courses of lectures at the Medical School of Harvard University, where he graduated in 1849.

Thus thoroughly prepared, in the spring of 1849 he settled in Lynn, where there were several physicians of more than ordinary reputation, who, in view of the favorable auspices under which he came, welcomed him with the utmost kindness. He was not long in gaining practice, and has from that time to the present enjoyed a reputation ever increasing, till it may now with confidence be said that very few physicians or surgeons in the county can be regarded as his peers. He is an honored member of the Massachusetts Medical Society and of the several local associations, in all of which much deference is paid to his ability and skill, and his suggestions are received as authoritative. His writings on various professional topics, which have from time to time appeared in the medical journals, have uniformly commanded attention and received warm commendation.

As a citizen, Dr. Galloupe has always received the highest respect, although the exactions of his profession have prevented his appearing much in public office. He, however, has served several times as city physician, and, as a member of the School Committee, has shown his interest in the cause of education. But it was in the Union army, during the great Rebellion, that his excellent professional attainments became most conspicuous. He was commissioned as surgeon of the Seventeenth Massachusetts Regiment July 10, 1861. The next year he served as acting brigade surgeon in North Carolina, and then division surgeon on the staff of Major-General J. G. Foster. Besides the foregoing he filled several other important and difficult positions, among them that of surgeon-in-charge of the United States Army General Hospital, medical director, surgeon-in-charge of the medical department in a number of perilous expeditions, post-surgeon at Newbern, N. C., surgeon-in-charge of rebel prisons and jails. In all of them he proved himself so diligent and faithful as to elicit the heartiest commendation of the commanding officers.

In the report of Colonel Amory, issued from the headquarters at Newbern December 21, 1862, concerning the actions of the 14th, 16th and 17th of that month, appears the following: "When all did their duty well, it seems unnecessary to mention names, but I feel compelled in this place to testify to the fidelity with which Dr. Galloupe, the senior surgeon of my brigade, discharged his duties. His efficiency at all times and his care of the wounded merit the highest praise."

In 1868 Dr. Galloupe was commissioned by the President, "for faithful and meritorious services during the war," a lieutenant-colonel of volunteers by brevet. This appointment was made in accordance with the many and strong recommendations of those best able to judge of his distinguished merits as a surgeon and soldier. Among those urgently advocating his appointment were Major-General J. G. Foster and Surgeon-General Dale. General Foster wrote, "I know Dr. Galloupe to be a most worthy and excellent officer, who, under all circumstances during the war, performed his duty with marked ability;" and Surgeon-General Dale wrote of him, "His record during the war was honorable to himself and creditable to the commonwealth." Many passages, equally laudatory, from others, might be added, showing the high estimation in which his services were held by those most competent to judge. It may not be amiss, however, to add the following letters of those well-known commanders, General Burnside and General Butler, to the Secretary of War:

"STATE OF RHODE ISLAND, EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT,
"PROVIDENCE, August 8, 1868.

"General J. M. SCHOFIELD, Secretary of War:

"*General*,—It gives me great pleasure to bear testimony to the skill, industry and and gallantry of Surgeon Isaac F. Galloupe, of the Seventeenth Massachusetts Volunteers, who served with me in North Carolina.



Isaac F. Gallaupe



Josiah C. Bennett

On all occasions during the war when his services were needed he proved himself a most efficient surgeon and brave officer. In February, 1864, he was captured by the enemy whilst operating upon the field. I believe his good services and record entitle him to a brevet, and I hope it may be found for the interest of the public service to give him the promotion.

"Yours truly,

"A. E. BURNSIDE."

"BAYVIEW, NEAR GLOUCESTER, MASS., August 10, 1868.

"*To the Honorable Secretary of War,*—

"Surgeon Galloupe served under my command at Newbern, N. C., and was captured during an attack while engaged in the strict line of his duty in removing a musket-ball from a wounded officer. He was detained in Libby a month and then exchanged. His services were more than those of surgeons of the line, and were specially mentioned. His testimonials from other commanders under whom he served are of the highest order. I urgently bespeak for him a brevet appointment as fit recognition of his efficient and assiduous and meritorious services.

"I have the honor to be

"Your very obedient servant,

"BENJAMIN F. BUTLER."

The reference to Dr. Galloupe's being taken prisoner while attending a wounded officer on the field may merit an explanatory word or two. The wounded officer was Henry A. Cheever, adjutant of the Seventeenth Massachusetts Volunteers, who says, in a letter to the Secretary of War, dated August 8, 1868: "On February 1, 1864, when the rebel General Pickett made his demonstration against Newbern, N. C., it was my misfortune to receive a dangerous wound in the left side, and my very excessive good fortune to be associated with Surgeon Galloupe, who remained with me on the field performing a surgical operation, when to remain and do his duty to me (our small force having been routed by overwhelming numbers) was to fall into the hands of the enemy. I, as well as some others belonging to the Department of North Carolina, owe our lives to the faithful manner in which Surgeon Galloupe discharged his every duty. His humanity saved many lives and cheered the dying hours of many others. As a companion he was always of high moral character. I know of nothing stronger that could be said in his behalf than that he always, whether in camp or on the march, met and faithfully discharged his every obligation, and, in my opinion, is richly deserving of all the honors that can be granted to one who served his country well."

Dr. Galloupe's army experience has enabled him to make valuable contributions to the surgical literature of war, and he has taken occasion, from time to time, in his concise and lucid manner, to describe cases that have come under his operating hand, much to the benefit of his professional brethren, so that the period of his public usefulness by no means ended with the close of the war. As an example of his intelligent way of viewing professional duties and responsibilities the following extract from a publication of 1863 is introduced, for it contains suggestions likely to prove of benefit wherever the note of war is heard:

"AMPUTATION ON THE BATTLE-FIELD.—Surgeon Isaac F. Galloupe, of the Seventeenth Regiment, has written an interesting letter to Surgeon-General Dale, in which he speaks of amputations on the field of battle from his experience in the service. He says that it is thought by many that amputations on the battle-field are sometimes needlessly performed, but this is an error in his opinion. The golden opportunity for the operation is immediately on the reception of the injury, presuming, of course, that amputation is necessary. The severe shock and depression of spirits which immediately follow a severe injury in civil life do not appear often in those wounded in battle, but the men are in a high state of excitement and exhilaration, a condition highly favorable for immediate operation, which, if performed at such time, produces no shock to the system. This condition, however, soon passes off, and if not improved, the opportunity is lost.

"He says that during the three engagements upon the recent Goldsboro' expedition, about one hundred and fifty wounded were brought to him, and as he could not attend to all the cases personally, he selected the eight worst ones and performed amputation, leaving the rest to 'conservative surgery,' and in every case among these of gunshot fracture of the long bones, not including those of hands and feet, the patient finally lost his limb, and in some cases his life also, while those who had undergone primary amputation made rapid recovery.

"In the eight cases in which Surgeon Galloupe operated on the occasion referred to, all but one lived and rapidly convalesced, the case terminating fatally being that of Private Rand, who lost his arm and leg, and who died from surgical fever after his arm had entirely healed and his leg was progressing very favorably."

Dr. Galloupe was a liberal contributor of material for the "Medical and Surgical History of the War of the Rebellion," published by the War Department.

Dr. Galloupe returned from the war with a commanding professional reputation, and quietly resumed his practice in Lynn, where he still resides.

In 1854 Dr. Galloupe was united in marriage with Lydia D. Ellis, a daughter of the late David Ellis, of Lynn, and is the father of two sons,—Francis Ellis, a graduate of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology in 1876, now practicing mechanical engineering in Boston, and Charles William, a graduate of Harvard College in 1879, and the Harvard Medical School in 1883, who is now a successful practitioner in Lynn.

JOSIAH CHASE BENNETT.

Bennett is an old Lynn name, and as some of the family left here at an early period and settled in New Hampshire, it is perhaps fair to presume that the subject of this sketch, who was born in Sandwich, N. H., on the sixth of May, 1835, was a descendant from Samuel Bennett, who came to Lynn during the first decade of our history—no doubt as early as 1636. He was a man in good circumstances, public-spirited, and withal possessed of much independence of character—was a little wilful perhaps, but on the whole, such a one as no descendant need be ashamed of.

He was a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery as early as 1639. Mr. Bennett's father was Simon Bennett a farmer, also born in Sandwich, who stood very high in the community for his integrity and sterling Christian character. He was the son of Stephen Bennett, and a grandson of Stephen Bennett who served as a drum-major during the entire period of the War of the Revolution, and who, at a very old age, froze to death as the result of a fall on the ice of Lake Winnepesaukee.

Chase, the middle name of Mr. Bennett, was de-

rived from his maternal ancestors, his mother (Mary Fogg Chase) having been of the New Hampshire Chase family, which has always numbered many eminent personages; among them two Bishops of the Episcopal Church, namely, Philander Chase, Bishop of Ohio, who acquired the title of "Father of Ohio," he having gone there in its infancy, and being largely instrumental in shaping its early history; the other was Carlton Chase, Bishop of New Hampshire, he who afterwards, on the fall of Bishop Onderdonk of New York, discharged the episcopal duties of that Diocese. In this family line, too, appeared the distinguished statesman and financial expert, Salmon Portland Chase, who was Governor of Ohio, United States Senator, Secretary of the Treasury under President Lincoln, and afterwards Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of the United States.

In Mr. Bennett's business career we have a notable example of the progress of a true New Englander, one who from the more humble ranks, by industry, perseverance, and enterprise has attained a commanding position in the community; a position, however, which could not have been reached and maintained without the additional virtues of probity, fair dealing and true manhood.

It may be well briefly to sketch his career, there being abundant material furnished by the public prints which have delighted, from time to time, to speak approvingly of his characteristics and doings. Says one writer: "He was the son of poor parents, and from an early age was thrown upon his own resources for support. When he was sixteen years of age he left his native town and went to work on the shoemaker's bench in Danvers. In those days a shoemaker made the whole shoe, and there were no large factories as at present." In another article we are informed that "From Danvers he went to Boston and engaged in the business of manufacturing silk hats." This business and that of photography engaged his attention until 1865, when he became connected with the American Shoe Tip Company of Boston, remaining with them about five years. During this time he traveled extensively, becoming acquainted with the shoe trade all over the country.

The company rose from a very embarrassed condition to become a great financial success, a result almost wholly contributed to by his personal efforts. At this time he resided in Lynn during the summer, and in Boston during the winter. In 1870 he took up his residence permanently in Lynn, and commenced manufacturing shoes, in a small way, with George E. Barnard, in Exchange Street, under the firm name of J. C. Bennett & Co. Two years afterward the business was removed to their new building in Central Square.

In Central Square the business still continues, under the firm name of J. C. Bennett & Barnard. They do a very large business, and have attained a position where no want of capital is felt, and rank among our first-class manufacturers. They manufacture none but the first grade of shoes, and put them on the market in corresponding style. The products of their factory are widely and favorably known throughout the country, and have contributed largely to place Lynn in the foremost rank in the production of fine goods.

Mr. Bennett has always been a true friend of the laboring classes and willing to consider their wants and their rights, and hence, through all the agitations that have of late years beset the trade here, he has been remarkably free from difficulties that have been encountered by such brother manufacturers as were disposed to be more tenacious of their own opinions and less considerate of those of others. If, however, troubles have at any time arisen, he has always settled them by arbitration, to the mutual satisfaction of employer and employees.

Mr. Bennett served in the State Senate in 1884–85, and in that position, by his prudence, good judgment and moderation won the universal approval of his constituents; and he likewise gained much applause from the benevolent and sympathetic of all parties, by giving to the Lynn Hospital, the entire amount of his salary as Senator.

In 1865 Mr. Bennett was united in marriage with Miss Nancy Louisa Richardson, of Rochester, N. H., and they have pursued an affectionate and Christian walk together, these many years, both being members of St. Stephen's Church, he having already served as Parish Vestryman, for several years.

JOHN AMBROSE McARTHUR.[1]

Very few of the adopted citizens of Lynn, and she can number many worthy ones who have appeared at different periods, have stood higher in general esteem than Dr. McArthur—esteem for skill in his profession, and for the high qualities that characterize the true gentleman.

He was born near Halifax, Nova Scotia, in 1831, and of excellent ancestry, his grandfather having belonged to the gentry of Lanarkshire, Scotland, and his father, being a man of finished education, having graduated from Dublin University. The latter became an officer in the Queen's Regiment, and was at the burial of Sir John Moore, and at the battle of Waterloo. His mother was a daughter of one of the Royalists who emigrated to Halifax at the close of the American Revolution.

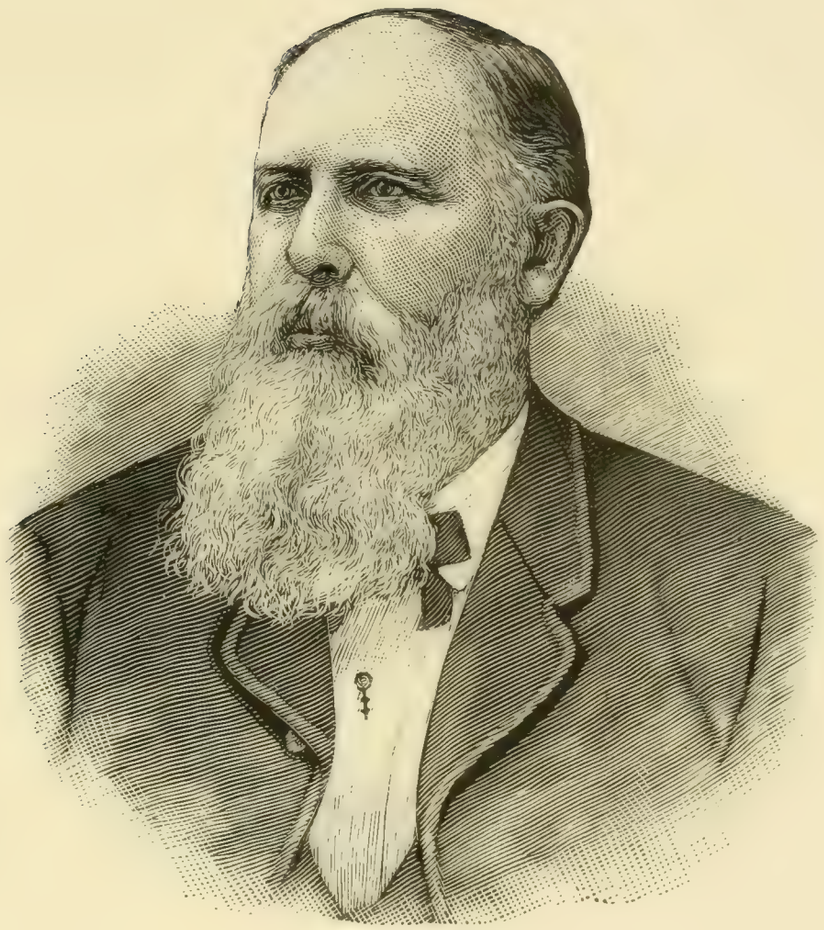
After coming to the States Dr. McArthur resided for a time in Newburyport, where he married and buried his first wife. He was subsequently in business in Montreal, but returned to Newburyport, where he was for a time in business.

Dr. McArthur pursued his medical studies in the Harvard Medical School, where he took a full course, and graduated in 1872, his previous good education

[1] By Jas. R. Newhall.



J. A. McArthur M. D.



J. W. Goodell



A B Martin

furnishing a firm ground-work for professional acquirement.

After spending a short time in Charlestown, he came to Lynn, and in a remarkably short time found himself in an extensive and lucrative practice. Soon after coming to Lynn he was united in marriage with Miss Annie E. Friend, of Gloucester. They had one child, a daughter, and the mother and daughter survive him.

Dr. McArthur's genial manners, varied acquirements, liberal views, and tender sympathies made him esteemed by all classes. And his rapidly accumulating means enabled him to indulge his naturally benevolent inclinations. He diligently followed his profession till declining health required a slackening of professional labors, and for the last two or three years of his life he was compelled to withdraw as much as possible from active practice.

He was not much in public life, as premonitions of declining health warned him to beware of exposure and excitement. In the quiet duties of church work and in the lodge-room he took delight; was an exemplary member of St. Stephen's Church, in which he served as vestryman some ten years, his earnestness and good judgment having much influence with his official associates. He was a charter member of the fraternity of Odd Fellows, and first treasurer of the Richard Drown Lodge; likewise a member of Olivet Commandery of Knight Templars, and passed through all the chairs at Newburyport.

Dr. McArthur died at his residence on South Common Street on the 28th of September, 1887, and the funeral services were held in St. Stephen's Church on the morning of Saturday, October 1, 1887. The remains were taken to Newburyport for burial in the family lot, several of his official brethren, kindred and friends, accompanying them to their final resting-place.

JONATHAN WOOODWARD GOODELL.

Jonathan Woodward Goodell was born in Orange, Mass., August 2, 1830. His father was Zina Goodell, and his mother was Polly, daughter of Amos Woodward, of that town. He was educated in the common schools of Orange, at the Melrose Seminary, in West Brattleboro', Vt., and at Saxton's River Academy, in Rockingham, in the same State. He afterwards studied medicine in the Berkshire Medical College, and graduated from that institution at the age of twenty-six. During the first ten years of his professional life he practised in Greenwich, Mass., and then removed to Lynn, where he has ever since resided. Since his arrival in Lynn, in February, 1866, he has devoted himself with energy and skill to the practice of medicine and surgery, in which he has secured a large and eminently successful business. He is a member of the American Medical Association, and of the Massachusetts Medical Society, of which latter organization he has been several times chosen one of the counsellors. He has been, also, President of the Essex South Medical Association, and in these various honorable positions has always had the confidence and respect of his professional brethren. He has neither occupied nor sought public office, but has given his time and energy to his chosen profession, indulging in the single avocation of the study of horticulture as a relief from his legitimate occupation. To the promotion of this branch of science he has lent freely his intelligent service, and is now president of the Houghton Horticultural Association of his adopted city. He is now, at the age of fifty-seven, releasing himself somewhat from the burdens of his profession, and seeking relaxation and pleasure among the fruits and flowers, to whose culture his refined tastes more and more incline. He married, November 1, 1868, Martha Jane, daughter of Jason Abbott, of Enfield, Mass., and has one daughter, now sixteen years of age. He is still in the prime of vigorous manhood, and promises many years of usefulness, both in the pursuit of his profession and in the promotion of a higher culture and taste in the community, of which he is an honored member.

AUGUSTUS B. MARTIN.

Augustus B. Martin is the son of Newhall Martin, of Charlestown, Mass., and he (Newhall Martin) was born in Boston, 1802, commenced the shoe business in what was then Charlestown, but is now part of Boston, in 1822, and remained there till his death, which occurred December 18, 1880, doing the same business in one place fifty-eight years.

In 1823 he married Hannah Phillips, who was also born in Boston, and had the following children: Newhall, born 1825; James Pope, 1827; Edward F., 1829; Augustus B., 1831; Francis A., 1833; Alphonso, 1835; Harriet, 1837. His wife dying May 19, 1839, he married a second wife, Widow Mercy (Hatch) Leach.

Augustus B. Martin was educated in the public schools in Charlestown, and at the age of fifteen entered his father's establishment, where he remained three years. He then learned the trade of morocco-dressing with James M. Waite, of Charlestown, and after working at his trade three years, in Newton, with Charles Packer, removed to Lynn at the age of twenty-four. There he started in business with Moses Norris, under the firm-name of Norris & Martin, in the manufacture of morocco. After remaining three years and a half with Mr. Norris, with his small means considerably increased, he established himself alone in the same business, remaining alone until 1867, when he admitted his brother, Edward F., as partner.

In May, 1876, he opened a store in Boston for the sale of his goods, and from the time of his arrival in Lynn, in 1855, to the present time his career has been one of uninterrupted success. Manufacturing at first

on a small scale, and selling to his neighbors in Lynn, he now has customers wherever shoes are made in the United States and Canada.

In 1881 his establishment in Lynn was burned, but was at once replaced by one which is the largest and best-appointed morocco factory in New England. Their store, near the Revere Beach Railroad station, is the most elegant and commodious store, in that line of business, in the United States, and forms part of a brick block owned by himself and built in 1884.

The goat-skins manufactured by the firm are imported by them chiefly from South America, and it is safe to say that no better product than theirs enters the market. Mr. Martin is a Republican in politics, and a Universalist in religion, and has taken an active interest in the advancement of views represented by the party and sect designated by those terms. He is a man of public spirit, interested in the welfare of his city, and the institutions which give it character. He has been a member of the City Council and Board of Aldermen, a director in the Mechanics', now the First National Bank, and is now vice-president of the Lynn National Bank.

He married, December 25, 1856, Elizabeth R., daughter of William S. Fretch, and has had the following children: Lizzie, May, Alice G., and Augustus B. Augustus B., Jr., was admitted a member of the firm January 1, 1887.

JOHN TODD MOULTON.[1]

Mr. Moulton was born in Lynn on the 7th of August, 1838. His father was Joseph Moulton, long known among us as a successful tanner and morocco manufacturer; and his mother was Relief Todd, a Vermont lady.

The ancestor of the family was Robert Moulton, who was sent over by the London Company, in 1629, to Governor Endicott, as master shipwright, with six journeymen, to begin the shipbuilding business at Salem. The large island off Beverly shore, called the Misery, "receiving that name," says Felt, "on account of a disastrous shipwreck there," but gives no particulars. Robert Moulton was quite prominent in the early town and church affairs of Salem, and was granted two hundred acres of land in Salem village, now West Peabody, and was one of eight men disarmed at Salem for sympathizing with the wheelwright in his desire for liberty of conscience and free speech.

Mr. Moulton, the subject of this sketch, graduated from Lynn High School in 1855, having prepared for college under Jacob Batchelder. But he relinquished the idea of college-life on account of failing health, caused by too close application to study. He spent several years in his father's nursery in attending to the cultivation and propagation of fruit-trees, shrubs, and plants, having a strong natural love for such employment.

The father of Mr. Moulton had served an apprenticeship of seven years at the leather manufacture, in all its branches and under him the son became an adept, so that in 1864 he was well qualified to succeed to the then firmly-established business. In that business, the manufacture of morocco leather, he still continues, employing at the present time some sixty or seventy workmen. His factory stands on the spot where one of the earliest tanneries was established, by the Lewises. In the chapter on the industrial pursuits of Lynn more may be found in relation to the business and the successive owners of the premises. The factory is quite extensive, and is located on Marion Street, opposite the foot of Centre.

Mr. Moulton was born in the old Mansfield house, on the north side of Boston Street, nearly opposite the termination of Marion. It was built in 1666 by Robt. Mansfield, and still remains the property of descendants of the builder, now of the eighth generation. The grandmother of Mr. Moulton was a Mansfield, and lineal descendant from Robert, just named.

The integrity, prudence and promptness of Mr. Moulton have made his services much in requisition for positions of peculiar trust. He has already served twelve years as trustee of the public library, and has recently been elected for a new three-years' term, being likewise treasurer of the board of directors. He is treasurer of the fraternities of Associated Charities, treasurer of the Boston Street Methodist Society and treasurer of the trustees of the Lynn Free Public Forest. As mentioned elsewhere, he is a writer of merit in both prose and poetry, and has been the poet at several High School reunions.

But the most distinguishing trait of Mr. Moulton, in a literary way, is his love for historical research. He is a member of the New England Historical and Genealogical Society, and likewise of the Methodist Historical Society.

The people of Lynn are greatly indebted to him for the collection and preservation of much that is useful as well as interesting in her history. He has prepared copies of the earliest existing town records, and had them published in the Historical Collections of the Essex Institute. He has also collected and published the inscriptions from the oldest grave-yards of Lynn, Lynnfield and Saugus, and has prepared genealogies of the Moulton and Mansfield families. A few months since, as mentioned in another connection, he, with Mr. Isaac O. Guild, was at the expense of erecting a suitable stone to mark the resting-place of "Moll Pitcher," the renowned fortune-teller of Lynn, perhaps the most remarkable personage known in our history, and of whom a somewhat extended account may be found in the historical sketch of Lynn in the present work.

Mr. Moulton, it is agreeable to add, is always ready to contribute from his abundant store any informa-

[1] By James R. Newhall.







John P. Woodbury

tion he may possess regarding our early families, and the characteristics and doings of our fathers. And all well-wishers of the community will join in rejoicing in the prosperity of one so worthy.

Mr. Moulton was united in marriage with Miss S. Fannie Sweetser in December, 1867, and their children are one son and two daughters.

JOHN P. WOODBURY.

John P. Woodbury was born in Atkinson, N. H., on May 24, 1827. He traces his ancestry through seven generations to one of the earliest settlers in Salem (1624), John Woodbury, who held the first official appointment mentioned in the old Colonial records. Later he was sent to England with full powers to settle some difficulties which had arisen between the colony and the mother country, and returned to the colony in 1628, having executed his commission satisfactorily. John Woodbury, the grandfather of John P., came to Lynn in 1820. He was a skillful master shipwright and carpenter, and the first in this part of the country to introduce the "square rule" in framing buildings. Four of his sons—Jepthah P., Seth D., Joseph P., and James A—became prominent as business men in Lynn, the last two especially as inventors. His eldest son, Rev. John Woodbury, the father of John P., was born at Beverly, and was first settled as a Baptist clergyman at Northfield, Mass., and later, as was the custom at that time, was changed from time to time to other New England parishes. He was a man of liberal views and earnest and devoted in his labors, but in 1850 his health compelled him to retire from the ministry. He was married to Myra Page of Atkinson, and John P. Woodbury, the subject of this sketch, was their only son. His early years were spent in various New England towns where his father was settled. In addition to a common school education he had the advantage of three years' study at the Hancock (N. H.) Literary and Scientific Institution, of which his father was a trustee. At the age of fifteen he was employed for six months on one of the most sterile farms in New England, at the foot of old Monadnock. Any one acquainted with farm-life of thirty years ago will understand how he welcomed a change of employment. He entered the office of the Keene (N. H.) *Sentinel*, and soon became a good compositor. The following year, having a taste for mechanical employment, he went to Bangor, Me., and spent three years of hard work in acquiring a thorough knowledge of various woodworking trades. He then came to Lynn, and was employed for a year as journeyman cabinet-maker in the factory of Seth D. Woodbury, which stood on the present site of the Boston Revere Beach & Lynn Railroad station. The following year he became the confidential clerk of Joseph P. Woodbury, and in 1849–50 visited Buffalo and the principal cities of the West, in connection with patent business. He was in Washington in the spring of 1850, while the famous compromise measures were before Congress, and heard the questions which led to our civil war discussed by Clay, Webster, Calhoun and many other distinguished members of Congress. On his return he became a partner of Jepthah P. Woodbury in the lumber and building business, which was carried on at Commercial wharf, at the foot of Commercial Street, in Lynn. In this same year (1850), he married Sarah E. Silsbee, a daughter of Nathan Silsbee, and a descendant of one of the earliest settlers of Lynn. In 1854 he sold his interest in the lumber business, and again visited the West, with the intention of settling there, but in four months he returned to Lynn and established himself in the real estate and insurance business. He was the pioneer in this line of business in Lynn. By steady and close occupation he obtained the confidence of his fellow-citizens, and succeeded in establishing the largest business of the kind in Essex County; indeed for many years only two insurance offices in the State made larger returns to the insurance commissioners.

Mr. Woodbury was a firm believer in the future growth and improvement of Lynn. He was for a time a member of the Common Council of the city, but he was too busy a man to continue long in public office. His name is intimately connected with the progress of his adopted city. He was treasurer of the Exchange Hall, the Sagamore Hotel, the Lynn Market-House, and the Lynn City Improvement Companies. It is to his organization of this latter company that Lynn owes the laying out of Central Avenue, the finest and most substantial street in the city. Having secured control of nearly all the land lying between the Central station and the City Hall, he associated with him many of Lynn's leading capitalists and laid out this wide avenue, which has proved to be one of the greatest improvements ever made in Lynn. At the time the project was started it met with violent opposition from the owners of land on Market Street, who feared the depreciation of their property; but time has shown that the improvement has rather enhanced the value of their land. Mr. Woodbury's firm belief in the future of Lynn led him to invest all his savings in real estate, frequently at what were considered high prices, but time has confirmed his judgment. In 1867, after twenty-five years of labor, he sold his business, and, with his family, enjoyed a well-earned holiday in Europe. Seven months were spent in Paris at the time when Napoleon III, then in the height of his glory, was entertaining the crowned heads of the world, and making Paris the most brilliant capital of Europe. The remainder of a year was spent in visiting the principal cities of the continent and in Southern Italy. On his return Mr. Woodbury accepted the presidency of the Exchange Insurance Company, an organization composed largely of Lynn capitalists, but in eighteen months resigned from the position, and has not since been in active business. His leisure is

largely occupied in the collection of books and engravings, and he is especially interested in extra illustrated books, of which he has a considerable collection. He still retains a summer residence in Lynn, but spends the winter months in Boston or in traveling. He is a member of the Bostonian Society, the Boston Art Club, the Grolier Club of New York and other kindred organizations.

Mr. Woodbury is a Unitarian, and was for many years a trustee of the Second Congregational Church of Lynn. In politics he was one of the original Free-Soilers, voting for Martin Van Buren in 1848, and was afterwards a steady Republican until 1883, when, dissatisfied with the nomination of James G. Blaine for President, he became an Independent voter. He has two children, Marcia E., wife of Edward P. Parsons, and John, a lawyer, practising in Boston.

Mr. Woodbury's career illustrates the fact that in this country every avenue to business success is open through steady, unremitting effort, to an earnest and reliable working man; and, better still, that through all his toil a man may carry tastes which will furnish him with delightful occupation and keen enjoyment in time of leisure.

WILLIAM F. MORGAN.

Mr. Morgan was born in Bellingham, Mass., January 2, 1839, and was a son of William F. Morgan, who was a lineal descendant from Miles Morgan, one of the early settlers of Springfield, Mass.

Miles Morgan with two brothers, James and John, sailed from Bristol, England, in March, 1636, and arrived at Boston in the following April. The family removed to Bristol from Llandaff, in Wales, a few years before the sons emigrated to New England. Miles, the youngest of the three was born in 1615, and on his arrival in Boston, or shortly after, he joined a party of emigrants, mostly from Roxbury, of whom Col. William Pynchon was the head, and settled in Springfield. The land first occupied by the settlers in that place is now traversed by the Main Street, and was divided into shares and distributed among them by lot. The tract allotted to Mr. Morgan extended from Main Street to the river, on the south side of what was once called Ferry Lane.

About the year 1643 he married Prudence Gilbert of Beverly, having made the acquaintance of the family during the voyage from England, and the tradition of the family invests the matrimonial alliance with the romance of a courtship at sea, a separation for years, an offer by letter carried by a messenger through the wilderness, an acceptance of the offer, a journey to Beverly by the bridegroom and his companions armed with muskets, and a return with the bride one hundred and twenty miles to Springfield their future home.

The records bear the names of the following children: Mary, born February 14, 1644; Jonathan, November 16, 1646; David, September 23, 1648; Pelateah, July 17, 1650; Isaac, May 12, 1652; Lydia, April 8, 1654; Hannah, April 11, 1656; Mercy, July 18, 1658.

The mother of these children died January 14, 1660, and Miles married February 15, 1669, Elizabeth Bliss, and had one other child, Nathaniel, born June 14, 1671. His death is recorded as having occurred May 28, 1699.

Nathaniel Morgan, son of Miles, married January 19, 1691, Hannah Bird, and settled on the west side of the Connecticut River in West Springfield, where he died August 30, 1752. His children were, Nathaniel, born February 16, 1692; Samuel, 1694; Ebenezer, 1696; Hannah, 1698; Miles, 1700; Joseph, December 3, 1702; James, 1705; Isaac, 1708; and Elizabeth, 1710.

Joseph Morgan, son of Nathaniel, married in May, 1735, Mary, daughter of Benjamin Stebbins, and lived and died in West Springfield. His death occurred November 7, 1773. His children were, Joseph, born February 19, 1736; Titus, who died in infancy; Titus again, July 19, 1740; Lucas, February 26, 1743; Elizabeth, December 23, 1745; Judah, March 22, 1749; Jesse, twin of Judah, and Hannah, November 29, 1751.

Judah Morgan, son of Joseph, married April 12, 1775, Elizabeth Shivoy. His children were, Festus, born January 12, 1776; Elijah, June 2, 1777; Richard, March 4, 1779; Amos, November 7, 1780; Elizabeth, June 23, 1787, all of whom were born in Northampton. He died November 13, 1827.

Festus Morgan, son of Judah, married 1799, Submit French of Northampton, and had one child, a son, William F. Morgan, who was born in Northampton, October 6, 1800. He was the father of the subject of this sketch. He learned the business of woolen manufacturing and established himself in that business in Oxford, and a few years later in Bellingham. He married, April 17, 1832, Eliza, daughter of Rufus Russell of New Braintree. His children were, Julius, born and died 1834; William H., born 1836, died 1839; William F., 1839, all of whom were born in Bellingham. He died in Bellingham, August 10, 1839.

William F. Morgan, the subject of this sketch, was a son of the above William F., and was born in Bellingham, January 2, 1839. After the death of his father his mother removed with her family to South Milford, where he attended the public schools until he was ten years of age. He then went to live with a relative on a farm in New Braintree, and while there attended the schools of the town and was later a pupil in Day's Academy in Wrentham.

In 1856, at the age of seventeen, he commenced what was in reality his business career, it being then that he entered a shoe store in Providence, R. I. Here he soon developed such aptitude and business capacity that at the age of twenty-one he was offered the position of partner, which offer was accepted.



Wm. F. Morgan



Charles O. Beede

Lynn was at that time, as it still is, the centre of the great New England shoe manufacture, and perhaps the most promising field for the development of enterprise, the exercise of industry and the investment of capital, known to the trade. He was, therefore, induced to leave Providence and accept the offer of a situation as salesman and book-keeper in one of the largest establishments here. Hither he came in 1861.

After remaining in the situation named till 1864, he commenced manufacturing on his own account, and soon found himself in a prosperous business, which continued so to flourish and increase, that in 1871 he found it expedient to take a partner. The present firm of Morgan & Dore was formed in 1871 and soon became one of the largest, most reputable and successful in the city. In addition to the factory in Lynn, they have established factories in Pittsfield, N. H., and Richmond, Me., where their liberality and fair dealing have won for them an honorable name, and where the constant employment given to a large number of residents has proved a substantial and highly appreciated benefit to the people.

On the second of June, 1863, Mr. Morgan was united in marriage with Miss Emeline B. Nichols, of Providence, and has two children, William F. (now a student in Trinity College, Hartford, Class of 1888), and Alice L.

Mr. Morgan has not been much in public office, though he has served in the Council. His peculiar fitness for other public service, however, could not remain unrecognized. In charitable enterprises he has always been an active and efficient laborer. He is president of the Board of Associated Charities and a member of the Board of Hospital Managers. He is likewise a trustee of the Five Cents Savings Bank.

In financial matters his skill and forecast have been conspicuous. He was one of the founders of the National Security Bank of Lynn, and has held the position of director ever since its organization.

In 1879 he erected the beautiful residence in Nahant Street, corner of West Baltimore, where he still resides.

Few men ever in Lynn have furnished an example more worthy of imitation than Mr. Morgan. His industrious habits, upright dealing, respect for religion, liberal aid in the promotion of worthy objects, and courtesy of manners, have made him one of exceptionally high esteem. And no well-wisher of the community can envy the prosperity of one who has thus risen to rank as one of the foremost citizens.

CHARLES O. BEEDE.

Charles O. Beede,[1] the subject of this sketch, was born in Lynn in 1840. He received his early education in the public schools of that city and of Sandwich, N. H., and added to his store of knowledge by close study for a season at the New Hampton Institute.

Being thus equipped theoretically for a business career, he returned to Lynn and entered one of the large shoe manufactories of that city, that he might gain by practical experience the knowledge necessary for business success.

In 1865 he began business for himself, and by untiring industry and honesty of purpose he soon began to climb the rounds of fortune's ladder. His progress was rapid, but he was soon admonished that close application and earnest attention to the cares and responsibilities of an ever-increasing trade demanded in his case a penalty, and in 1872 he was obliged to retire from active business and seek rest and recreation amid the rugged hills and sunny dales of his old New Hampshire home, and for a year rested from his labors.

At the end of that period, being recuperated and thirsting again for the bustle and stir of a busy life, he returned to Lynn, and at once entered the lists, setting the mark for his prize in the establishment of a business that should be favorably known throughout the country.

With a persistency that could not be abated and a zeal that knew no tire, he pushed on until the firm of C. O. Beede was known as the leading firm in New England for the manufacture of boot and shoe supplies, and his name recognized as the name of one who carved his fortune out of the rough stone of opportunity.

Mr. Beede is one of those happy men who study and understand the needs of their employees and cultivates the most friendly relations with them.

He gives his entire force an outing once a year, and joins with them in their annual games and dinner, and when the great feast day of the year comes, the day of Thanksgiving, the table of every man in his employ bespeaks the liberality and thoughtfulness of the man they labor for.

Outside of his regular business he pays attention to real estate matters, and shows the same good judgment there, ranking as among the most prominent and successful dealers in the city.

Mr. Beede, like all progressive men, takes a healthful interest in politics, and believes that that system or party is the most right that does the most toward advancing the material, the social and the moral interests of the people.

Being of a social nature it is not to be wondered at that he should make friends, and in answer to their call he has repeatedly looked after the city's interest by serving on the aldermanic board, and he always carried into his public duties the same qualifications that has made of him in his private life a man of mark.

Honest, always earnest in every cause which he knows to be right, a clear thinker and a progressive man, with a mind broad and comprehensive enough

[1] By Benjamin Pitman.

to take in the possibilities of great enterprises, and yet conservative enough to prevent any undue enthusiasm to control his judgment.

Mr. Beede stands in the community in which he lives thoroughly equipped for every public and private duty.

PATRICK LENNOX.[1]

Lynn has been fortunate in numbering, from time to time, among her adopted citizens, those who by their enterprise and other valuable traits, have added to her prosperity and the extension of her good name. And some of these have come from other and distant lands. Such individuals she has always welcomed, and in their fidelity to her interests has secured ample reward. Of this class, few now with us are more worthy of honorable mention than the individual to whom this sketch refers.

Mr. Lennox was born in Kildare, one of the eastern counties of Ireland, a short distance from the city of Dublin, on the first day of August, 1828, and was educated in the national schools. Not much need be said of his boyhood, as it was passed very much like that of other youth about him, with its pranks, its aspirations and its incipient loves. But his ambition to "rise in the world," as he entered early manhood, asserted itself, and led to such "prospecting" in regard to the future, as induced him to turn his eye to America, as the most promising field. He then left his native land without a pang, excepting such as naturally arose from the severance of youthful attachments and home associations.

At the age of twenty he found himself in New York, full of youthful ardor and buoyant hope. He landed there in 1848, and without unnecessary delay came to Lynn. Here he immediately entered the employ of Darius Barry, one of our energetic and reputable morocco manufacturers, on Monroe Street. After serving for three years in a modified sort of apprenticeship, he was competent to accept employment as a journeyman in the establishment of Smith & Clark. Such was his skill, industry and enterprise, and his ambition, too, it may be added, that within two years he was able to commence business on his own account.

The shoe business was at that time rapidly growing in Lynn, as machinery was beginning to be introduced in almost every department. This was a fortunate circumstance, and Mr. Lennox had the shrewdness to perceive the tendency of trade, and had established such a reputation for good management, and had, withal, accumulated such an amount of capital that he was able to take advantage of the tide of prosperity. He soon became numbered among our principal morocco manufacturers, and was not deficient in ample means. His business rapidly extended, and he has now about a hundred and twenty-five workmen busily employed. He has a salesroom in Boston, which was established in 1877; and at his factory, in Market Street, Lynn, large sales are constantly being made.

It was in 1871 that he built his fine business building in Market Street, opposite the station of the Narrow Gauge Railroad. It was one of the best buildings in the city at the time of its erection, and is still an ornament to the street which has now so many handsome structures. And in noticing this building a correspondent of one of the journals of the day remarks as follows:

"Every traveler on the Boston and Maine Railroad, while passing through Market Street, Lynn, has doubtless observed the substantial and handsome store and factory belonging to Patrick Lennox, who commenced business as a morocco dresser in early life, and has steadily built up a business and trade, now ranking among the first in the State with substantial tokens of his stability. His quiet, gentlemanly demeanor and carefully chosen words will not at first view impress one that he is possessed of the vital force and energy of character that has placed him among the first of the business men of the city. His candor, probity and intelligence makes him a marked man in the community, and his countrymen take especial pride in noting his prosperity in which they are joined by all the citizens. As his name indicates he is a native of Ireland, but so Americanized that none would suspect it from his speech and appearance. He is an honor to both his native and adopted country, loyal and true to both, a self-made, successful business man, deserving of his good fortune."

Mr. Lennox has usually avoided appearing much in public life, having no aspirations for official position. It would, no doubt, have been beneficial to the interests of the city had he been less chary in this respect, for his good judgment and pacific course would many times have saved from indiscreet expenditures, unprofitable discussions and mischievous disagreements. He has, however, held office as director in the National City Bank of Lynn, from January, 1882.

Six years after he arrived in Lynn, that is, in 1854, he was united in marriage with Miss Bridget Clark, and they became the parents of eight children—two sons and six daughters.

It will be seen that Mr. Lennox is not by any means an old man, certainly not in business activity and neighborly sympathies. But he has reached the age when it has become experimentally certain that a course like his, of industry, temperance and upright dealing are, under all ordinary circumstances, sufficient to ensure wealth and honorable social standing. And herein he furnishes an example worthy of imitation by all youths who have the good of the community and themselves truly at heart.

GEORGE HARRISON ALLEN.

Mr. Allen belongs to one of the oldest families in New England. His ancestor, William Allen, though not one of the Plymouth colony, came to New England not long after the arrival of the Pilgrims, and, after a short residence at Nantasket, now Hull, removed to Salem immediately after the arrival of John Endicott at that place, in 1629. At Salem he mar-

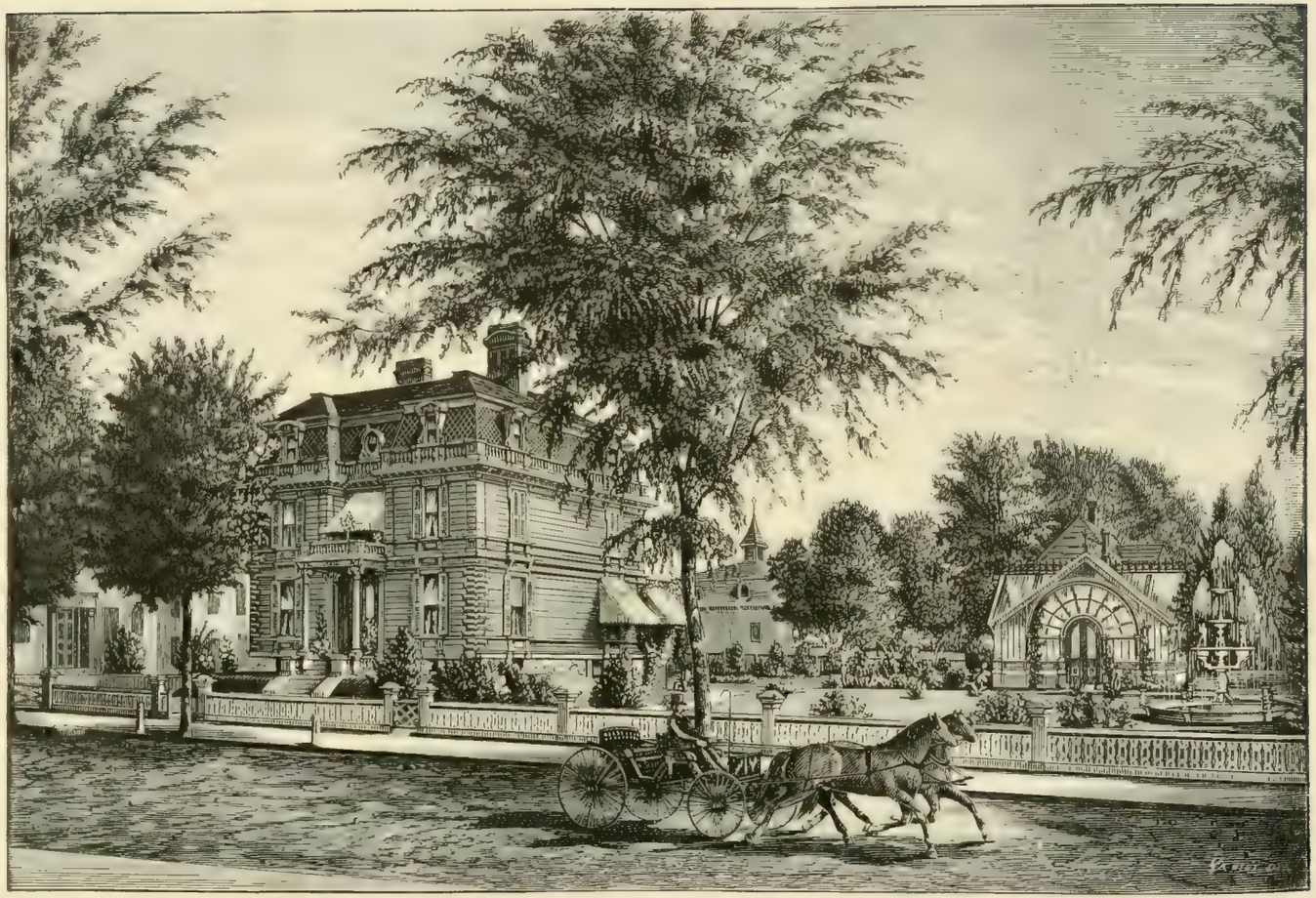
[1] By James R. Newhall.



P. Lemon







RESIDENCE OF JOSEPH DAVIS,

LYNN, MASS.

ried, in 1629, Elizabeth Bradley, and had a son Samuel, who married Sarah Luck. Samuel had a son Jonathan, who married Mary Pierce, and Jonathan a son Jacob, who married Sarah Lee. Jacob had a son Isaac, who married Rebekah Tewksbury, and Isaac a son Jacob, who married Lucy Gallop, and was the father of Jacob Alva Allen, the father of the subject of this sketch. Jacob Alva Allen was born in Beverly, March 5, 1810, and married Prudence, daughter of Shubel Hire, who came from Ireland and settled in Middlebury, Vermont, where his daughter Prudence was born, November 5, 1807. He afterwards removed from Beverly to Manchester, Massachusetts, and there George Harrison Allen was born, June 21, 1840. In 1847 he removed from Manchester to Methuen, and in 1849 to Lawrence, and in the common schools of the last two towns his son received his education.

At the age of seventeen George Harrison Allen left school to learn the trade of boxmaking, planing and mill-work on lumber, sawing logs and fitting lumber for building. He began at the first rung in the ladder, and learned the trade thoroughly from shoveling shavings into the fire-room to the clerk's chair in the counting-room. In 1865 he removed from Lawrence to Lynn, and entered into partnership with Joseph A. Boyden, for the manufacture of paper and wood packing-boxes. At the end of two years, Joseph having died, he formed a new partnership with William C. Boyden, of Beverly, under the firm-name of Allen & Boyden, and has since carried on the same business, manufacturing both at Lynn and Beverly a product valued at about one hundred and fifty thousand dollars per annum. Mr. Allen has always devoted himself with energy and industry to his chosen work, and, though he has shared with others business losses and disasters by fire, he has by the display of a determined spirit overcome obstacles in his way and won his full measure of success.

Mr. Allen, though often importuned and at times strongly tempted, has always refused to accept or seek public office. He has believed that the demands of his business were entitled to all his time, and that an entrance into the political arena and a participation in its contests would necessarily distract his mind and divert his attention from the management of his legitimate pursuits.

Mr. Allen has been placed in offices of responsibility and trust in various Masonic bodies, having been at the head of the Golden Fleece Lodge, Sutton Chapter, and Olivet Commandery. In the Grand Commandery of Knights Templars, and appendant order of Massachusetts and Rhode Island, he has passed the chairs of Grand Captain General, Grand General and Deputy Grand Commander, which office he now holds. He has also passed the chairs of the Palestine Encampment of Independent Order of Odd Fellows, having been its Chief Patriarch.

He married, December 26, 1864, Sarah Luella, daughter of Eben and Temperance McIntire, of Lancaster, N. H., and resides in Lynn, where his business headquarters are located at 188 Broad Street. He is in the prime of life, and with health and strength his continued prosperity and success are assured.

CHAPTER XXIII.

LYNNFIELD.

BY JAMES R. NEWHALL.

Early Grant—First Settlers—Natural Attractions—Ponds and Streams—Flora—Fauna.

LYNNFIELD was for more than a century and a half a territorial outpost of Lynn. It was on the 13th of March, 1638–39, that "Linn was granted 6 miles into the countrey," and a committee appointed to make a territorial survey for the purpose of ascertaining the character of the land beyond, and determining whether it "bee fit for another plantation or no." The court, while making the grant, seem to have had some doubt as to the extent of colonial rights and the security of titles, as they soon after enacted that the Governor and assistants shall "take care that the Indians have satisfaction for their right at Lynn."

The granted territory was long called Lynn End, and occupied chiefly by farmers. It was set off as a parish November 17, 1712, and the inhabitants were to be relieved from taxes in the old parish as soon as they built a meeting-house and settled a minister; this they accomplished in about eight years, the house being built in 1715 and the minister settled in 1720. In 1782 the parish became a separate district, and in 1814 the district was incorporated as a separate town. The precise time when the first settlers arrived or just where they located is not certainly known. It is presumed, however, that they came from Lynn, some of them, perhaps, before the grant was made. It is manifest by the names found on the church records—Aborn, Bancroft, Gowing, Mansfield, Newhall, Wellman—that at least the principal ones were from Lynn.

The Mansfields and Newhalls settled in the southeastern part, the Bancrofts and Wellmans in the northwestern and the Gowings somewhere between the two.

The early history of Lynnfield is, of course, interwoven with that of Lynn, and their natural features are in a large degree similar. Its woody hills form a part of the extensive range that sweeps up from old Plymouth County, varying in height, but never reaching an altitude that entitles them to the name of mountains. They present irregularities of shape, diversities of soil and modifications of geological construction, and follow the line of the coast at dis-

tances varying from half a mile to eight miles from the shore, in many places bearing strong evidence of having once been the boundary of the tide. Anciently, for the whole extent they were well wooded; but as population increased, the axe in many places laid them bare, and orchards and arable fields began to appear. At intervals the chain now seems much broken, as most portions likely for the present to repay the expense have been reclaimed. Some sections, however, still retain much of their primeval aspect, —a fact eminently true of several of the remoter parts of Lynnfield.

But Lynnfield possesses many attractions for the lover of nature, in her lonely glens and pleasant heights, in her lakelets and busy streams. She has good highways and romantic byways, green meadows and sunny plains. But she has not the ocean views that so charm, and the ocean breezes that so invigorate. Many, however, come hither for temporary homes during the vacation season, and in the quiet enjoyment of rural sights and rural sounds, in the breathing of uncontaminated airs, in the use of fresh and simple food, and in freedom from the restraints of fashionable life, find a medicine that revivifies their jaded energies, and enables them to return to their homes again to enter with zest the accustomed routine.

There can be nothing more pleasing to the wooer of nature, especially one who contemplates her changes with the eye of a true lover rather than that of a scientist, than to view the glowing pageantry of the woods hereabout in mid-autumn. The splendid coloring of the foliage takes place at different periods, the swamp maple and white birch often beginning to change in the latter part of August. Some seasons present much greater brilliancy than others, early frosts being quite certain to destroy the effect. Yet there is a strange belief with many that frost actually produces the appearance. Even the poet Whittier sings:

> "Autumn's earliest frost had given
> To the woods below
> Hues of beauty such as Heaven
> Lendeth to its bow;
> And the soft breezes from the west
> Scarcely broke their dreamy rest."

Frost comes as a destroyer, not as a beautifier. And it is a little remarkable that one so observant, who had spent his life in the theatre of such changing scenes, should have adopted the old error. But, perhaps, the singer yielded to the poetical idea.

While the foliage is so inviting to the woodland stroller, or sometimes after it has been loosened by the frost and fallen, the Indian summer comes—those few days of delicious languor, when all nature seems to be wrapped in a mantle of haze and lying down to dreamy repose. The natural cause of Indian summer, which, by the way, occasionally fails to appear, does not yet seem to be satisfactorily ascertained. And perhaps, in the absence of anything more reasonable, the red man's explanation may be adopted—namely, that it is a period when a breath from the hunting-grounds of heaven is permitted to sweep down to earth.

The geology of Lynnfield is not very dissimilar to that of Lynn, excepting that granite to a considerable extent takes the place of porphyry and greenstone. Quarries of the former have been long profitably worked. Some years ago a quarry of serpentine was opened. In various sections, in former years, peat meadows yielded an abundance of fuel, it being in some cases found fifteen feet in depth; but of late it has not been so much used, partly, no doubt, on account of the increased expense of labor in the preparation, and partly on account of the greater convenience of other kinds of fuel better adapted to the modern modes of heating.

Ponds and Streams.—There are several picturesque lakelets or ponds in Lynnfield, and two or three streams that not only add charms to the landscape, but are useful in various ways, though not largely employed as manufacturing agents. *Lynnfield Pond*, as it is usually called, though sometimes known as "Suntaug Lake" or "Humphrey's Pond," being the same "freshe pond with a little ileland" named in the old grant of 1635 to John Humphrey, is the chief of the still waters. It occupies about two hundred and ten acres, and lies partly in Peabody, is a beautiful sheet, with lovely surroundings. A melancholy accident occurred here on the 15th of August, 1850. A company, connected for the most part with the First Christian Society of Lynn, were holding a picnic on the border. In the course of the afternoon a party of twenty-five, chiefly ladies, rowed out in a large, flat-bottomed boat about a hundred yards from the shore. As some of them shifted from side to side, the boat was made to careen, and several of them, becoming alarmed, threw their weight in a manner to completely capsize it. Before aid could reach them thirteen were drowned. *Pilling's Pond* is largely artificial and of no great depth. *Nell's Pond* is remarkable for its elevation, being something like a hundred feet above sea-level.

Along the northern border of Lynnfield flows the main branch of *Ipswich River*, and the western is partially traversed by the *Saugus*. *Hawkes' Brook* meanders leisurely along, and is now charged with the useful duty of adding to Lynn's public water supply.

The *spring water* of this vicinity is uncommonly pure, for the stone through which it percolates is not soluble; and it forms a good sample of that which William Wood, Lynn's first historian, as early as 1633, thus enthusiastically celebrates: "It is farr different from the waters of England, being not so sharp, but of a fatter substance and of a more jettie color; it is thought there can be no better water in the world, yet dare I not prefer it before good beere, as some have done; but any man will choose it before bad beere, whey or butter milk."

FLORA.—The flora of Lynnfield, as it was observed by the first settlers, is no doubt well, though not fully, described in the following lines from Wood's "New England's Prospect." And well might such a promising region be coveted,—

"Trees both in hills and plaines in plenty be,
The long liv'd oake, the mournful cypress tree,
Skie-towering pines, and chestnuts coated rough,
The lasting cedar, with the walnut tough;
The rosin-dropping firr for masts in use;
The boatmen seeke for oars, light, neat grown sprewse,
The brittle ash, the ever-trembling aspes,
The broad-spread elme, whose concave harbours waspes;
The water-spongie alder, good for naught,
Small elderne by th' Indian fletchers sought,
The knottie maple, pallid birtch, hawthornes,
The hornbound tree that to be cloven scornes,
Which from the tender vine oft takes its spouse,
Who twines imbracing armes about his boughes.
Within this Indian Orchard fruits be some,
The ruddie cherrie and the jetty plumbe,
Snake murthering hasell with sweet saxaphrage,
Whose spurnes in beer allays hot fever's rage,
The diar's shumach, with more trees there bee
That are both good to use and rare to see."

Descending to the more lowly products, it may be said that in the woods and ravines, in the swamps and upon the rocky heights, are to be found shrubs and flowers of great beauty, some varieties of which, under the hand of cultivation, have become garden favorites. And many plants of rare medicinal value are to be found. But the long and persistent warfare of our learned doctors against the use of "herbs" has resulted in greatly reducing the esteem in which they were once held. The old traffic of the semi-mendicant wanderers, with their pyrola, sassafras, gold-thread, rosemary, catnip, sweet flagroot and countless other varieties of similar curative merchandise, has become nearly extinct. And so has gone all that class of irresponsible doctors, friends of the poor, as they called themselves, and sometimes were, who, for the fee of a meal, were ever ready to advise and prescribe. It did not cost so much to be sick in those primitive days as it now does.

FAUNA.—As considerable is said in the sketch of Lynn, of which Lynnfield so long remained a member, regarding the fauna of the region, no elaboration will be required here. Bears were not uncommon in the woods; moose, beaver and deer were seen; foxes and wolves abounded; and so did raccoons, weasels and woodchucks. Most of these, excepting the last two, have become nearly extinct—the first three entirely so. But no better idea of the animal life hereabout can be given than by quoting the concise, though somewhat grotesque, metrical description given by a quaint old writer. His was a style much in vogue in early times, and some of the important facts in our history have been preserved in that now seemingly irregular way. Those rhyming historians had no thought of debauching history through poetic license, but aimed at a straightforward delineation of facts, perhaps using that form to aid the memory. But to the quotation, which is from a more extended description that appears in Lynn's Centennial Memorial,—

"Some of the nobler game erst found, within these forests wide,
The moose, the beaver and the deer no longer here abyde;
Nor growling bear, nor catamount, nor wolf do now abound,
But raccoons, woodchucks, weasels, skunks, and foxes yet lurke round.
And in the broocks and ponds still rove the turtle and musk ratt,
The croaking paddock and leap-frog; and in the air the batt.
Serpents there be, but poys'nous, few, save horrid rattlesnakes,
And adders of bright rainbow hue, that coyl among the brakes.
And then of birds we have great store; the eagle soaring high,
The owl, the hawk, the woodpecker, the crow of rasping cry,
The partridge, quail and wood-pigeon, the plover and wild-goose,
And divers other smaller game are here for man, his use.
And many more of plumage fair in coo and song are heard;
The whippoorwill, of mournful note, the merry humming-bird.
In bog and pond the peeper pipes at close of springtide day,
And fire-flies daunce like little stars along the lover's way."

Upon the rocky hillsides, about the ledges, and in the sequestered forest defiles, the hideous rattlesnake is still occasionally met with, during the hottest weather. Seldom, however, is there any injury and almost never any fatal result from encounters with these old-time terrifiers. Formerly they were numerous, and occasioned much fear, but the numbers and fears have greatly decreased. It is stated, however, that during the summer of 1868 a Lynnfield farmer killed the extraordinary number of thirteen, of various sizes.

ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY.

FIRST PARISH.—The First Church of Lynnfield was formed August 17, 1720, though a meeting-house appears to have been built some five years before. It had always been a hardship for worshippers of that remote region to attend service at the First Parish house, some living more than seven miles distant. And as early as the time when the "Old Tunnel" was built, 1682, on Lynn Common, much discussion was had as to the expediency of building farther inland, in some place that would be most convenient for the four sections, now Lynn, Lynnfield, Saugus and Swampscott, separate parishes not then being contemplated. But the desire of the people near the site of the old house prevailed, and the new one was placed on the Common, where it remained, a marked object, till 1827. There does not appear to have been any ill-feeling engendered, and thither the people of Lynnfield went for worship till they became strong enough to form a separate parish.

The Rev. NATHANIEL SPARHAWK was installed minister of the Lynnfield parish at the time the church was formed, 1720, and his salary for the year fixed at seventy pounds. He was born in Cambridge in 1694; graduated at Harvard in 1715; was dismissed in July, 1731, and about one year thereafter, May 7, 1732, died, at the early age of thirty-eight years. The reason for his dismission does not exactly appear. Mr. Lewis says, "A part of his people had become dissatisfied with him, and some, whom he considered his friends, advised him to ask a dismission, in order to produce tranquillity. He asked a dismission, and

it was unexpectedly granted. A committee was then chosen to wait on him, and receive the church records; but he refused to deliver them. Soon after he took to his bed, and is supposed to have died in consequence of his disappointment." His wife was Elizabeth Perkins, and he had four children, one of whom was Edward Perkins Sparhawk, a man who became somewhat noted. He was born July 10, 1728, and graduated at Harvard College in 1753. His wife was Mehitabel Putnam, whom he married in 1759. Mr. Lewis says he was never ordained, though he preached many times in the parishes of Essex. He appears not to have approved of the settlement of Mr. Adams, the third minister of the parish, having himself been a candidate, and calls him "old Adams, the reputed teacher of Lynnfield." The historian adds, "He is the first person whom I found in our records having three names. The custom of giving an intermediate name seems not to have been common till more than one hundred years after the settlement of New England." One son of Rev. Nathaniel, the first minister, born October 24, 1730, named John, was apprenticed to a shoemaker, and afterward became a physician of Philadelphia. One of our Essex County historians has strangely enough given the Rev. Nathaniel as the one to whom we are indebted for the series of interleaved almanacs which have been so much quoted from. But he had been dead fifty years before the almanacs were made. The Sparhawk who made the almanac memoranda was most likely Edward, son of the first minister, though some have thought he was a brother or nephew.

The immediate successor of Rev. Nathaniel Sparhawk in the pastorate was the Rev. STEPHEN CHASE, who was settled in 1731. He was born in Newbury in 1708, graduated at Harvard in 1728, resigned in 1755, and died in 1778. His salary, as fixed at the time of his ordination, was one hundred pounds. Mr. Chase was here during the exciting period of the visit of Rev. George Whitefield, the celebrated English revivalist. Rev. Mr. Henchman was then minister of the First Parish of Lynn, and while he personally treated the eminent stranger with great courtesy, and even cordiality, strongly opposed his course of ministration, and refused the use of his meeting-house for one of his meetings. Mr. Henchman addressed a letter, printed in pamphlet form, to Mr. Chase, giving reasons for his opposition to Mr. Whitefield.

Some of these reasons, as clearly enumerated by Mr. Lewis, were, that Mr. Whitefield had disregarded and violated the most solemn vow, which he took when he received orders in the Church of England, and pledged himself to advocate and maintain her discipline and doctrine—that he had intruded into places where regular churches were established—that he used vain boasting and theatrical gestures to gain applause—that he countenanced screaming, trances and epileptic fallings—that he had defamed the character of Bishop Tillotson, and slandered the colleges of New England.

It does not appear that Mr. Chase publicly answered the letter of Mr. Henchman, nor, indeed, what his precise views regarding Mr. Whitefield were. The letter was, however, answered by Rev. Mr. Hobby, of Reading, who became a warm defender of Mr. Whitefield. And to Mr. Hobby's answer Mr. Henchman made a rejoinder. The controversy was protracted and warm, and perhaps some good resulted.

The wife of Mr. Chase was Jane Winget, of Hampton, and they had five children. After leaving Lynn he settled in Newcastle, N. H., remaining there till his death.

The third minister of the Lynnfield Parish was Rev. BENJAMIN ADAMS. He was born in Newbury May 8, 1719; graduated at Harvard in 1738; settled here November 5, 1755; died May 4, 1777. His wife was Rebecca Nichols, and they had seven children.

The fourth minister was Rev. JOSEPH MOTTEY. He was born in Salem, May 14, 1756; graduated at Dartmouth, 1778; settled here September 24, 1783; died July 9, 1821. His long pastorate would indicate that he was beloved by his people, though it was a period when ministerial changes were not by any means so frequent as now. He was of a retiring and sensitive disposition, had marked eccentricities, and withal a humorous vein. As a preacher he was mild and persuasive; not given to "ecstasy and holy frenzy." At times he was subject to strange fancies and singular apprehensions. The following instance is related in Sprague's "Annals of the American Pulpit," where a notice of him appears: "One extremely cold night, after going to bed, he came to the conclusion that he should certainly die before morning. While reflecting upon being found dead in his bed, he bethought him that his appearance, as he then was, would not be just what he should like; so, getting up in the cold, he put on clean linen and jumped into bed again. Very soon he fell asleep, slept soundly till morning, and on waking was quite astonished to find that he was not dead." This certainly indicates that he had little fear of death. But he was a man of high character, and, notwithstanding his eccentricities, or "oddities," as they were called, continued to enjoy the respect of his people, who seem never to have doubted his piety and conscientiousness. His reply to one who called him "odd" was witty as well as characteristic: "Yes," said he, "I set out to be a very good man, and soon found that I could not be without being very odd."

Mr. Mottey was not accustomed to exchange with his brother clergy so often as did most of the ministers of that period; neither did he take anything like so active a part in the temporal affairs of his parish as some of them, especially Mr. Treadwell and Mr. Roby, of the other Lynn parishes. This trait was sometimes commented on in a manner unfavorable to

him. But the fact was, no doubt, rather attributable to his naturally shrinking disposition than to lack of interest in public affairs. That he was industrious with his pen cannot be doubted, for it is asserted that he wrote more than two thousand, if not fully three thousand, sermons, which, if they were of the usual length of the sermons of that period, must have covered many more sheets of paper than most of the preachers of our day find it in their way to cover.

"In regard to doctrines," quotes Mr. Parsons, in a paper read before the Essex Unitarian Conference, September 8, 1881, "Mr. Mottey, in the first years of his ministry, was much inclined to what is now termed orthodoxy. Afterwards, and until the end of his life, there was a general coincidence in his opinions with what is now termed liberal Christianity." But "liberal Christianity" is a term so indefinite as to cover a wide field. And it cannot be admitted that Mr. Mottey ever became what is now known as a Unitarian or Universalist; nor was his successor, Mr. Searl, of either of these denominations. There are many shades of belief among the individuals of all denominations. And no doubt some of the theologians of Andover and Princeton are quite as well entitled to be called liberal Christians as was Mr. Mottey.

The fifth minister of Lynnfield Parish was Rev. Joseph Searl. He was born in Rowley December 2, 1789; graduated at Dartmouth in 1815; settled here January 21, 1824; resigned September 27, 1827. He removed to Stoneham. Mr. Searl was the last preacher of the old orthodox faith in this, the First Lynnfield Parish. Rev. Luther Walcott, his successor, was of the Universalist persuasion. The ministerial succession was as follows:

1720. Nathaniel Sparhawk.	1783. Joseph Mottey.
1731. Stephen Chase.	1824. Joseph Searl.
1755. Benjamin Adams.	1854. Luther Walcott.

After Mr. Walcott left the society was supplied by different ministers for a few years, and then services were discontinued.

It would be needless to repeat that this, the First Church of Lynnfield, was originally of rigid Puritanical stamp. And in its history appears another instance of the tendency to swerve from that faith, and by the force of a mere vote adopt one of a different character. Where no superior ecclesiastical authority is acknowledged there seems nothing to prevent this. This Lynnfield society changed its faith as an organization by voting to settle Mr. Walcott. The First Church of Lynn is one of the three or four of the early churches in Massachusetts that have preserved their integrity, through good report and evil, to the present day, they never having yet voted themselves out of the old faith. The right of individual interpretation may be very precious, but its tendency is to instability.

The following are the other religious societies of Lynnfield:

Orthodox Evangelical Society (Centre Village). [Trinitarian Congregational, formed September 27, 1832.]

1833. Josiah Hill.	1863. M. Bradford Boardman.
1837. Henry S. Greene.	1871. Oliver P. Emerson.
1850. Uzal W. Condit.	1874. Darius B. Scott.
1856. Edwin R. Hodgman.	1883. Henry L. Brickett.
1859. William C. Whitcomb.	

South Village Congregational. [Trinitarian, formed in 1849.]

1849. Ariel P. Chute.	1865. Jacob Hood.
1858. Allen Gannett.	

Methodist.—A society of this order was formed here in 1816, and a house of worship erected, in the Centre Village, in 1823. But regular meetings have not been held for several years.

OLD FAMILIES AND BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

Newhall Family.—*Joseph Newhall* was an early settler of Lynnfield. He was a grandson of Thomas Newhall, the first of the name in Lynn, and a son of Thomas, the first white child born here. He was born on the 22d of September, 1658, and married Susanna, daughter of Thomas Farrar. He was a man of considerable importance in his day, and was often in places of public trust. He settled, as a farmer, in Lynnfield, his homestead farm, as it was called, consisting of some thirty-four acres. He also had another estate, known as the Pond farm, consisting of a hundred and seventy acres, lying on the west of Humphrey's Pond, and being a part of the grant made to Mr. Humphrey in 1635. It is thus seen that Mr. Newhall possessed many "broad acres," comprehending woodland, tillage and meadow. But his most valuable possession was a family of eleven children—eight sons and three daughters. Just when he took up his abode in Lynnfield does not distinctly appear; but it was probably soon after he came of age, his marriage taking place at about the same time. He seems to have been a good man and a regular attendant on public worship, for by the record, November 4, 1696, it appears that the town did grant liberty for Joseph Newhall to "sett up a pewe in y^e^ east end of y^e^ meeting house [the Old Tunnell] Between y^e^ east dowre & the stares; provided itt does nott prejudice the going up y^e^ stares into y^e^ gallery, & maintains so much of the glas window as is against s^d^ pewe." He was a member of the General Court, and died while in office. And in this connection it may be remarked that the pay of representatives, and indeed of all public officers, was at a rate that did not encourage that degree of hankering for official position so lamentably prevalent in our time. Upon the records is found this item: "Dec. 1706, to his serving a Representative at the generall court in the year 1705, until his death, 76 days at 3*s* per day—11£ 8*s* 0*d*." Mr. Newhall perished while on his way from Boston to Lynn, in a great snow-storm, in January, 1705–'06. His grave-stone is in the old burying-

ground, near the westerly end of the Common, Lynn, and gives his age as forty-seven, and his title, ensign. All his eleven children survived him.

ELISHA NEWHALL, the third son of Joseph, born November 20, 1686, was a farmer in Lynnfield, and owned a tract on the northwest of Humphrey's Pond. He also owned a tract on the southeast of the pond, and on the latter his house stood. He was something of a military man and attained the rank of captain. His death took place on the 19th of March, 1773, at the age of eighty-seven. He married, February 27, 1710–11, Jane, daughter of Joseph Breed. She was of his own age and survived him but three days. They had eight children—three sons and five daughters. The church record says, "They lived very happily together as man and wife, almost sixty-five if not almost sixty-six years, then died, but three days difference between y^r^ deaths. Thus were they lovely and pleasant in their lives and in their death they were not divided."

DANIEL NEWHALL, a younger brother of Elisha, just spoken of, was born February 5, 1690–91. His wife was Mary, daughter of Allen Breed. His widow, says Mr. Waters, died suddenly January 1, 1775, in her eighty-fourth year. In a notice of her death published in the *Essex Gazette*, she is said to have left eleven children, sixty-six grandchildren, thirty-two great-grandchildren—in all, one hundred and nine.

BENJAMIN NEWHALL, another son of Joseph, and brother of Elisha and Daniel, was born April 5, 1698. He did not pursue farming, but engaged in shoemaking, and located on Lynn Common. In 1729 he sold his remaining interest in the Humfrey farm, evidently intending not to return to Lynnfield. He seems to have been successful in his vocation and was one of the three mentioned as doing sufficient business in 1750 to require the employment of journeymen. He, like his brother Elisha, had military aspirations, and in the French and Indian War was a captain. He was a Representative, first in 1748, and several times thereafter. He married Elizabeth Fowle January 1, 1721, had fourteen children, and died June 5, 1763. His son Benjamin, born September 6, 1726, was probably the same who was town clerk at the opening of the Revolution, and who died in 1777.

SAMUEL NEWHALL, the youngest son of Joseph, and brother of Elisha, Daniel and Benjamin, was born March 9, 1700–1. He was adopted by his uncle, Thomas Farrar, who was a farmer, lived on Nahant Street, Lynn, and was a son of Thomas Farrar, known as "Old Pharaoh," who was one of those accused of witchcraft in 1692.

ASA TARBEL NEWHALL was born in Lynnfield June 28, 1779; his father, Asa, was born August 5, 1732; his grandfather, Thomas, was born January 6, 1681; his great-grandfather, Joseph, was born September 22, 1658, and was the first of the Lynnfield Newhalls; and his great-great-grandfather was Thomas, the first white person born in Lynn.

Mr. Newhall was bred a farmer, and followed the honorable occupation all his life. He was a close observer of the operations of nature, and brought to the notice of others divers facts of great benefit to the husbandman. He delivered one or two addresses at agricultural exhibitions, and published several papers which secured marked attention and elicited discussion. His mind was penetrating and possessed a happy mingling of the practical and theoretical; and he had sufficient energy and industry to insure results. Such a person will always make himself useful in the world, though he may be destitute of that kind of ambition which would place him in conspicuous positions.

He was liberal in his views, courteous in his manners; and by his sound judgment and unswerving integrity secured universal respect. In his earlier manhood he was somewhat active as a politician, and was judicious and trustworthy. He was a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1820, and a Senator in 1826. He was also a Representative in 1828.

His wife was Judith Little, of Newbury; and he had nine children—Joshua L., Asa T., Thomas B., Sallie M., Eunice A., Judith B., Caroline E., Hiram L. and Elizabeth B.

Mr. Newhall died at his residence, in the southeastern part of Lynnfield, on the 18th of December, 1850, aged seventy-one, and was buried with Masonic honors.

GENERAL JOSIAH NEWHALL was born in Lynnfield on the 6th of June, 1794, and was a lineal descendant from Thomas, the early Lynn settler, his nearer ancestor probably being Joseph, the first of the family who pitched his tent in Lynnfield.

The long and active life of General Newhall closed on the 26th of December, 1879. During several years of his earlier manhood he followed the profession of teaching, but, as time advanced, grew weary of that exacting employment, and retired to the more congenial one of agriculture. He however retained his love for study, and became quite proficient in some branches, his attainments bearing his fame even to the other side of the Atlantic, where, in 1876, he received the honor of being elected a fellow of the Royal Historical Society of Great Britain. He served in the War of 1812, and was afterwards much interested in military affairs, attaining the rank of brigadier-general in the Massachusetts militia. When General Lafayette reviewed the troops on Boston Common, during his visit to America in 1824, he was present in command of a regiment.

Lynnfield was incorporated as a separate town in 1814, and General Newhall was her first representative in the General Court. He served also in 1826–27 and again in 1848. During the administration of President Jackson he held an office in the Boston Custom-House. He also, at different times, filled important local offices. But his most congenial and satisfying resort was the honorable occupation of farmer

and horticulturist. There, the results of his experiments and suggestions were often of much value. He was kind-hearted, genial in manners and ever ready to lend a helping hand to the deserving who needed assistance. The last time the writer had the pleasure of meeting him was on the occasion of the celebration of the Two Hundred and Fiftieth Anniversary of the Settlement of Lynn, June 17, 1879. He seemed greatly to enjoy the proceedings, and as the open carriage in which he sat moved along in the procession, on that pleasant forenoon, was in fine spirits and highly interested in observing the many evidences of thrift and improvement.

His wife was Rachel C., a daughter of Timothy Bancroft. They were married October 28, 1824, and became the parents of nine children, only two of whom survived him. As has appeared, even from the little that has been said here, the early fathers and mothers of the Newhall family of Lynn did their full share to increase the native population. Perhaps no family is deserving of higher praise than this in that direction. And it is found that the name soon began to prevail far and near as emigration kept pace with the rolling tide of population, till at this day representatives are to be found in every part of our broad land, some in commanding positions; but the great multitude, as in all other families, plodding "along the cool, sequestered vale of life." Henry F. Waters, Esq., of Salem, has performed praiseworthy labor in gathering so much genealogical information in his little work entitled "The Newhall Family of Lynn, Massachusetts," collating it so carefully and presenting it in such intelligible form.

Doctor John Perkins.—Among the residents of Lynnfield who have from time to time adorned her history may be named Dr. John Perkins, who died in 1780, at the age of eighty-five. He was well educated, having studied two years in London, and practiced forty years in Boston. He was quite a scientist, and proposed some theories that attracted considerable attention among the savants of the day. The greatest earthquake ever known in New England occurred on the 18th of November, 1755, near the time when Lisbon was destroyed. The same year Dr. Perkins published a tract on earthquakes, probably induced by the terrible commotions of that time. Other writings of his received much commendation, especially an essay on the small-pox, published in the *London Magazine*. Vaccination, it will be borne in mind, was not then practiced. It is said he left a manuscript of three hundred and sixty-eight pages, containing an account of his life and experience. It would, however, probably have long since been published had it contained much of real value, as it was in the custody of the American Antiquarian Society. Among other things, it is alleged to have contained a long and particular relation of a singular encounter of wit between Jonathan Gowen, of Lynn, and Joseph Emerson, of Reading. They met by appointment at the tavern, in Saugus, and so great was the number of people that they removed to an adjacent field. The Reading champion was foiled, and went home in great chagrin. Dr. Perkins says that the exercise of Gowen's wit "was beyond all human imagination." But he afterward fell into such stupidity that the expression "You are as dull as Jonathan Gowen" became proverbial. This intellectual encounter seems to have been enjoyed by the neighbors of the champions almost as keenly as are the elevating yacht or even base-ball contests of our day.

The doctor appears to have been an interested observer of passing events, active and cheerful as well as prompt and efficient in the practice of his profession.

This Dr. Perkins has been mentioned in connection with the invention of the "Metallic Tracters," which were so much ridiculed by the profession at the time they were produced. But the inventor of them was quite another man, a Dr. Elisha Perkins, of Connecticut. He was a learned man, and one of much ability and boldness in experimenting; and proved his sincerity by going to New York in 1799, when the yellow fever was prevalent there, to test the virtue of a medicine he had prepared for its cure, and falling himself a victim to the disease.

Daniel Townsend, of Lynnfield, who was killed in the battle of Lexington, was a lineal descendant of Thomas Townsend, or Townshend, as he and others of the family sometimes spelled the name, who came to Lynn as early as 1635, and in the records is called a husbandman. He owned a lot of some seven acres, on the southerly side of Boston Street, a short distance west from Franklin; and upon this lot his dwelling is thought to have stood, though Mr. Lewis says he lived near the iron works, in the present bounds of Saugus. Perhaps he lived in both neighborhoods, for he is known to have owned lands near the southwesterly border of Lynnfield, and in other places. He died December 22, 1677, at about the age of seventy-seven years. His son John was a wheelwright, and belonged to the church in Reading, though he seems always to have been called of Lynn. Perhaps the Reading church was more convenient to his home than that of Lynn. He died December 14, 1726, leaving a son, Daniel, born April 1, 1700. And this Daniel was father of the Daniel who is the subject of this notice, and was one of the first to lay down his life in the great struggle for American independence.

The Townshends were an ancient and celebrated family, whose seat had, from time immemorial, been in Norfolk, England, near the town of King's Lynn, from which our own Lynn received its name, through Rev. Mr. Whiting, who at one time was chaplain to Sir Roger Townshend. And for many generations they maintained their lordly position.

On the 24th of May, 1723, Charles Townshend was by writ, says Mackerell, "called up to the House of

Peers by the style and title of the most Noble and Right Honorable Charles Townshend, Lord Lynn, of Lynn Regis, in the County of Norfolk."

It would hardly be in place here to attempt an enumeration of the many statesmen and military heroes who have made the name of Townsend illustrious, or at least conspicuous, in the Old World. One or two, however, whose names became connected with American affairs, may be named. There was Marquis George Townsend, eldest son of the third viscount, who commanded a division under Wolfe in the Canada expedition, and after the death of Wolfe took command, and received the capitulation. He subsequently rose to the highest rank in the British army, was an active member of Parliament, and a Privy Councillor. His younger brother, Charles, though a statesman of acknowledged ability, was evidently extremely fond of popularity; insomuch that he seems at times to have been on either side of the American cause during the agitating times immediately preceding our Revolution. It was he who introduced the resolutions that did much to precipitate the war, the resolutions imposing a duty on glass, tea, paper and certain other articles. Macaulay says of him: "He was a man of splendid talents, of lax principles and of boundless vanity and presumption."

But enough of the foreign pedigree. Although it may be well to mention that in the ancient church of St. Margaret, in King's Lynn, the stately edifice in which devout worshippers have been accustomed to assemble for almost eight hundred years, and from which was taken the time-worn stone now in the vestibule of St. Stephen's in our own Lynn, there is a black marble in the north alley, bearing this inscription: "Here lieth the Body of Mr. James Townshend, who was Organist of this Church 36 Years, and died the 8th of Jan. 1724. Aged 54 Years. Also Elizabeth, his Mother, who died the 21st of April, 1733. Aged 84 Years."

The American branch of the Townsend family can boast of a full share of such as became conspicuous in various departments—of poets, scientists, legislators, and especially those who shone in the military calling. And in the circumscribed sphere of village life were many whose virtues might have adorned any position. Of this latter class seems to have been Daniel Townsend, whose memory has occasioned this notice, and who met a patriot's death at Lexington on that pregnant April day in 1775. His life was not an ambitious or adventurous one, and not much can be gathered of his history. He was born December 26, 1738, and consequently, at the time of his death, was in the prime of life. He left a wife and five young children; was sober and industrious, pious and a consistent member of the Lynnfield church. He was prompt at the call of duty on that memorable morning, and with the company of minute-men reached the scene of action soon after daylight. Mr. Lewis says Townsend was with Timothy Munroe, another Lynn man, standing behind a house "firing at the British troops, as they were coming down the road, in their retreat toward Boston. Townsend had just fired, and exclaimed, 'There is another redcoat down,' when Munroe, looking round, saw, to his astonishment, that they were completely hemmed in by the flank-guard of the British army, who were coming down through the fields behind them. They immediately ran into the house, and sought for the cellar; but no cellar was there. They looked for a closet, but there was none. All this time, which was indeed but a moment, the balls were pouring through the back windows, making havoc of the glass. Townsend leaped through the end window, carrying the sash and all with him, and instantly fell dead. Munroe followed, and ran for his life. He passed for a long distance between both parties, many of whom discharged their guns at him. As he passed the last soldier, who stopped to fire, he heard the redcoat exclaim, 'Damn the Yankee! he is bullet-proof—let him go!' Mr. Munroe had one ball through his leg, and thirty-two bullet-holes through his clothes and hat. Even the metal buttons of his waistcoat were shot off." Townsend was found to have had seven bullets through his body. His remains were taken to Lynnfield, and "lay the next night," says Captain C. H. Townsend, "in the Bancroft house, where the blood-stains remain on the old oaken floor to this day" [1875]. The *Essex Gazette*, of May 2d, in a brief obituary, speaks of him as having been a constant and ready friend to the poor and afflicted; a good adviser in cases of difficulty; a mild, sincere and able reprover. In short, it adds, "he was a friend to his country, a blessing to society, and an ornament to the church of which he was a member." And then are added, as original, the lines given below. The notice and lines were written by some sympathizing friend, the latter being transferred to the stone when erected, some time after, at his grave:

"Lie, valiant Townsend, in the peaceful shades; we trust,
Immortal honors mingle with thy dust.
What though thy body struggled in its gore?
So did thy Saviour's body, long before;
And as he raised his own, by power divine,
So the same power shall also quicken thine,
And in eternal glory mayst thou shine."

To show with what alacrity the rural population responded to their country's call, it may be remarked that thirty-one towns were represented on that dawning day of the Revolution. The loss upon the side of the British was much greater than on the side of the Americans,—a fact that may be accounted for in various ways, without supposing cowardice or remissness on either side. On the part of the British, seventy-three were killed, one hundred and seventy-two wounded and twenty-six missing. On the part of the Americans, forty-nine were killed, thirty-six wounded and five missing.

John P. Townsend, of New York, and Captain

Charles H. Townsend, of New Haven, have published much valuable matter pertaining to the family history, collected both here and in England, for which labor of love they deserve many thanks. Whether the family here have kept up a correspondence with their English cousins is not known. Perhaps in some future generation, one of those agitating dreams of an immense fortune waiting in England for American heirs may be entertained by some ambitious one of the line; if so, it is to be hoped that it may not, like so many similar dreams, prove but alluring romance.

Thomas Woodward.—Mr. Woodward was well known by the shoemaking fraternity of fifty years ago throughout this region by his famous awls. He was born in Lynnfield in 1773, and died in 1860, at the great age of eighty-seven years. His manufactory was in that part of Reading now known as Wakefield. He was a remarkably ingenious mechanic, and has been credited with a number of useful inventions. The Emerson razor-strop, which was so popular fifty years ago, when men generally kept their faces closely shaved, is said to have been a device of his. But his ingenuity does not seem to have been directed to any achievement of much magnitude, as was that of his neighbor, Dixon. His awls, however, though not strictly an invention, gave him a name and a substantial income, and probably, in a negative way, had a saving effect on the morals of many an operative who, irritated by the brittleness or rough movement of other awls, might be led to call in the aid of lubricating profanity. Mr. Eaton, in his "History of Reading," says of Mr. Woodward: "He was an honest, industrious and kind-hearted man, but possessed some peculiarities of character. He had an inquiring and rather credulous mind; any new idea, either in physic, physics or ethics, he was ever ready to adopt, and if he thought it valuable, he was disposed to pursue it with great sincerity and pertinacity of purpose; hence we find him ever trying some new experiment in manufacturing, using some newly-invented pills or cordial, making a 'tincture' that becomes, and still continues, a popular medicine; becoming an anti-Mason and abolitionist of the most approved patterns, and an honest and sincere believer in Millerism. He was, however, a very useful citizen. He lived to be aged, and his body outlived his mind."

MISCELLANEOUS MATTERS.

Newburyport Turnpike.—The turnpike from Newburyport to Boston was finished in 1806 at a cost of four hundred and twenty thousand dollars. But it did not prove a successful enterprise pecuniarily. A few stages ran over it, but not much of the travel was diverted from the large seaboard settlements. It ran through the southerly section of Lynnfield, and was expected to bring great prosperity to the place. Disappointment followed. The capacious and well-appointed hotel was built, and for many years, indeed excepting a few intervals of private occupancy, till the present time, has furnished a pleasant resort for summer visitors as well as winter parties. The surroundings are picturesque, one of the most charming features being the beautiful pond near the border of which it stands. The drives in all directions are attractive, and the quiet all that the most retiring can desire. Lynnfield Hotel (South Village) is four miles and two hundred and eighty rods from Central Square, Lynn.

Fires in the Woods.—During her whole history Lynnfield has periodically been subjected to extensive fires in her woods. Down to the present day such fires occur, frequently in the most mysterious way. And it has been suggested, perhaps with some reason, that under peculiar circumstances the pitch exuding from a pine may accumulate in such a manner as to act as a lens, and in an excessively hot sun so concentrate the rays as to produce fire. From the earliest times the attention of the authorities has been directed to this matter. But though legislation has done something, it has never succeeded in suppressing the dreaded evil, and never will while friction matches continue to be used, and careless boys, heedless smokers and thoughtless gunners range the woods. In November, 1646, the General Court passed this order concerning "kindlinge fires in wuds": "Whosoev^{r} shall kindle any fires in y^{e} woods, before y^{e} 10th day of y^{e} first mo." [March] "or after y^{e} last day of y^{e} 2th mo., or on y^{e} last day of the weeke, or Lords day, shall pay all damages y^{t} any pson shall loose thereby, & halfe so much to y^{e} comon treasury." And the same year the court generously allowed the use of "tobacko," under certain restrictions, saying, "It shalbe lawfull for any man y^{t} is on his journey (remote from any house five miles) to take tobacco, so that thereby hee sets not y^{e} woods on fire to y^{e} damage of any man."

During the severe drought which prevailed in 1864 very destructive forest fires raged. And also during the severer drought of the next year, 1865, which, continued from July 5th to October 15th. And almost every season many acres are burned over, destroying not only standing wood, but that cut and corded. The Massachusetts Legislature, in 1885–86, passed "An Act for the better protection of Forests from Fires," and it is hoped that the provisions will be energetically enforced; if they are, some good may result.

Old Currency.—About the close of the Revolution, the currency, what there was of it, was in a sad state of confusion. The Continental money, so called, the paper issued by Congress, had depreciated to such a degree that a thousand dollars of it were sold for less than twenty dollars in silver. Mr. Lewis gives the following description of different denominations of these fiscal pledges, many of which are still preserved among antiquarian collections. Doubtless many specimens are to be found among the old Lynn-

field families. The pieces of paper were about two inches square: "The one-dollar bills had an altar with the words *depressa resurgit*, the oppressed rises. The two-dollar bills bore a hand, making a circle with compasses, with the motto, *tribulatio dital*, trouble enriches. The device of the three-dollar bills was an eagle pouncing upon a crane, who was biting the eagle's neck, with the motto, *exitus in dubio*, the event is doubtful. On the five-dollar bills was a hand grasping a thorn bush, with the inscription *sustine vel abstine*, hold fast or touch not. The six-dollar bills represented a beaver felling a tree, with the word *perseverando*, by perseverance we prosper. Another emission bore an anchor, with the words, *In te Domine speramus*, In thee, Lord, have I trusted. The eight-dollar bills displayed a harp, with the motto *majora minoribus consonant*, the great harmonize with the little. The thirty-dollar bills exhibited a wreath on an altar, with the legend, *si recte, facies*, if you do right you will succeed." In a few years, however, the government succeeded in so regulating matters that confidence began to be felt. And soon after Albert Gallatin, who was perhaps the most able financier of the age, was called to the Treasury Department, things began to wear an encouraging aspect. But still there remained for many years a great diversity in the mode of reckoning, if not in real values, in different sections of the country; and the coins in circulation were variously denominated. But little was as yet coined here, and the chief silver in circulation, down to a time quite within the recollection of multitudes now living, was Spanish. Who does not remember the four-pence-halfpennies (6¼ cents), the nine-pences (12½ cents), the pistareens (at first 20 cents, and then suddenly reduced to 17 cents)?

Gold and Paper Currency.—In this connection, perhaps as appropriately as in any other, a word may be said regarding the value changes in the currency consequent on our late Civil War. On the 17th of December, 1878, for the first time in sixteen years, gold stood at par,—that is, $100 in gold were worth just $100 in greenback government notes. The extreme of variation was on July 11, 1864, when $100 in gold were worth $285 in bank bills. From this last date the difference in values began slowly to fade away. In the gold room of the New York Stock Exchange there was much enthusiasm manifested on the day when par was reached, and great cheering.

Siamese Twins.—During the warm season of 1831 the famous Siamese twins, Chang and Eng, so mysteriously united in person, were for a short time rusticating in Lynnfield. It was about the time that they were first exhibited in this vicinity. They were one day out on a gunning excursion, and becoming so irritated by being followed and stared at by men and boys, they committed a breach of the peace, were taken before a magistrate and put under bonds. It came near becoming a serious question how one could be punished by imprisonment, should it come to that, if the other were innocent. The difficulty vanished, however, when it appeared that both were guilty. They died in North Carolina in the winter of 1873, within two hours of each other, aged sixty-three years.

Prize-Fighters.—Edward O'Baldwin, known as the Irish Giant, and Joseph Warmuld, an Englishman, noted prize-fighters, were arrested by the police just as they had commenced a battle in Lynnfield, on the morning of October 29, 1868. A crowd of those who delight in such demoralizing contests had assembled from Boston and neighboring places, but they very suddenly dispersed in dismay when the police appeared. O'Baldwin and Warmuld were arraigned before the Lynn Police Court and bound over for the action of the grand jury. The former was finally sentenced to the House of Correction for two years, but the latter escaped, forfeiting his bail.

Golden Spike.—May 10, 1869, was the day on which the last spike was driven in completion of the first continuous railroad line connecting the Atlantic and Pacific. It was an eventful occasion, far away there in the Rocky Mountain shadows, and drew together many prominent persons from different parts of the country. The spike was of solid gold, and what renders the occurrence of special interest to the people of Lynnfield is the fact that it was driven by David Hewes, a native of the town, and a contractor on the road. It was, however, soon withdrawn and deposited in a museum in San Francisco, under the well-grounded apprehension that if allowed to remain, some straying traveler, curious or covetous, would appropriate it.

Epizootic.—A strange disease called epizootic prevailed among horses during the latter part of the autumn of 1872; so many were disabled that such wheel-vehicles as were drawn by horses almost ceased to run. In Boston the United States mail was carried to and from the post-office in ox-teams. Various expedients were resorted to. Goats and dogs, in many instances, were harnessed for labor; and sometimes men and boys undertook the duties of the disabled animals. The disease was not usually fatal, but such as survived were left in a weakened condition.

Surplus Revenue.—In 1837 the surplus United States revenue was distributed. The amount received by Lynnfield was $1328.29, and it was appropriated to the payment of the town debt. Other towns, by vote, devoted their shares to different purposes, some even distributing it per capita. Saugus received $3500, and appropriated it to the building of a town-hall. Lynn received $14,879.00, and applied it to the payment of the town debt. Judging from present appearances, it will be a long time before the municipalities will receive another such dividend.

Forest Hill Cemetery.—This endeared resting-place for the dead was consecrated on the 14th of October, 1856. Addresses were delivered by Rev. Edwin R. Hodgman, of the Trinitarian Congregational

Church, Centre Village, and Rev. Ariel P. Chute, of the South Village Church.

FARM PRODUCTS—MANUFACTURES—STATISTICS.—Lynnfield is essentially a farming town, and certainly an industrious one, as the following items from the latest returns show.

FARM PRODUCTS.

Number of farms	55
Tons of hay raised	970
Gallons of milk	141,329
Pounds of butter	5,228
Dozens of eggs	18,486
Bushels of potatoes (on 35 acres)	3,622
Bushels of Indian corn (on 48 acres)	1,899
Total value of products	$54,415

MANUFACTURES.

Average number of employees (males, 41; females, 33)	74
Wages paid during the year	$25,900
Capital invested	12,300
Stock used	70,350
Value of products	120,500

Boots and Shoes.—Included in the above is that of boots and shoes, the productive value of which is much larger than that of all the other manufactures combined, and foots up as follows:

Average number of employees (males, 35; females 33).	68
Total wages paid during the year	$23,800
Capital invested	6,300
Value of stock	67,000
Value of products	112,500

POPULATION.—The population at different periods is shown by the following short table:

Years	1820.	1850.	1870.	1885.
Population	596	1723	818	766

In 1885 the number of families was 185; number of ratable polls, 245; number of voters, 180; number of dwelling-houses, 167.

SCHOOLS.—There are three public schools, known as Centre School, South Grammar School and South Primary. Expenditures for schools during the year ending March 1, 1887, $1235.20. Whole number of scholars, May 1, 1886, between the ages of five and fifteen, 115.

TOWN EXPENSES.—The town expenses for year ending March 1, 1887, amounted to $7949.42, divided as follows: Highways, $1423.70; schools, $1603.82; town officers, $432.90; miscellaneous, $245.05; State and county tax, $1036.15; printing, $70.10; State aid, $216; abatements, $42.32; interest and debt, $1710; poor, $1044.56; discount on taxes, $123.82.

VALUATION AND TAXATION.—The total valuation for 1886 was $545,964; real estate, $474,097; personal, $718,67; rate of taxation, $9 on $1000.

BIRTHS, MARRIAGES AND DEATHS, 1886.—Births, 11—4 males, 7 females. Marriages, 17. Deaths, 15—5 males, 10 females; four were over 80 years old; Rev. Jacob Hood was 94 and Sophia N. Hood 90, lacking a month.

Representatives.

1826–27. Josiah Newhall.
1828. Asa T. Newhall.
1829–32. John Upton, Jr.
1832. Bowman Viles.
1833. John Upton, Jr.
1834–35. Joshua Hewes.
1836. John Perkins, Jr.
1837. William Perkins.
1838–41. David N. Swasey.
1841. James Jackson.
1843. Joshua Hewes.
1844. Enoch Russell.
1848. Josiah Newhall.
1850–51. William Skinner, Jr.
1852–53. John Danforth, Jr.
1856–57. David A. Titcomb.
1860. John Danforth.
1865. George L. Hawkes.
1869. James Hewes.
1874. Wm. R. Roundy.
1881. Andrew Mansfield.

Town Clerks.

1814. John Upton, Jr.
1818. Andrew Mansfield.
1823. Bowman Viles.
1832. John Upton, Jr.
1833. Bowman Viles.
1834. Andrew Mansfield, Jr.
1837. Joshua Hewes.
1841. Andrew Mansfield, Jr.
1842. Joshua Hewes.
1843. Andrew Mansfield, Jr.
1844. John Perkins, Jr.
1857. John Danforth, Jr.
1878. Francis P. Russell.

Postmasters.

[South Village.]

Office established May 25, 1836.

1836. Theron Palmer.
1839. Charles Spinney.
1852. James W. Church.
1855. Henry W. Swasey.
1869. James Jackson.

[Centre Village.]

Office established August 1, 1848.

1848 George F. Whittredge.
1851. Samuel N. Newcomb.
1856. Jonathan Bryant.
1868. Levi H. Russell.
1874. Francis P. Russell.

RECAPITULATION AND HISTORICAL SUMMARY.

1635. May 6th, the General Court grants to John Humfrey five hundred acres of land, including what is now called Lynnfield Pond, or Humfrey's Pond, or Suntaug Lake.

1639. March 13th, "Linn was granted six miles into the country," by the court. This was the territory now forming Lynnfield and parts of adjacent towns, and was long called Lynn End.

1658. September 22d, Joseph Newhall, the first settler in Lynnfield of the name of Newhall, is born in Lynn. He was the father of eleven children, all of whom survived him; was known as Ensign Newhall; was a Representative in the General Court; and in January, 1706, perished in a great snow-storm, on his way from Boston.

1696. The winter of this year was the coldest for more than fifty years, and occasioned much suffering.

1706. Division of public lands among the settlers.

1712. November 17th, Lynnfield set off from Lynn as a separate parish.

1715. First meeting-house in Lynnfield built.

1719. December 17th, Northern lights observed for the first time. People greatly alarmed, some declaring that they could hear a rustling.

1720. August 17th, First Church of Lynnfield (the second of Lynn) formed, and Rev. Nathaniel Sparhawk installed.

1730. August 31st, Andrew Mansfield killed in a well, by a stone falling on his head.

1731. November 24th, Rev. Stephen Chase, second minister of Lynnfield Parish, settled.

1732. May 7th, Rev. Nathaniel Sparhawk, first minister, died, aged thirty-eight.

1733. The following entry appears on the Lynnfield Church records: "December 29, 1733, att a chh meeting, Voted that every communicant of this church shall pay three pence every sacrament day, in order to make provision for the Lord's table."

1749. Hot summer. Great drought. Multitudes of grasshoppers.

1755. November 5th, Rev. Benjamin Adams, third minister of Lynnfield Parish, settled. The most severe earthquake ever felt in New England occurred November 18th.

1759. Died in Lynnfield, June 4th, Margaret, wife of John Briant, of "something supposed to breed in her brain," as the church record says.

1764. On the public records of Lynn appears the following. It no doubt refers to a marriage that took place in Lynnfield Parish, as the Rev. Mr. Adams was minister there at the time, and Gowing was an early Lynnfield name: "Married, Daniel Gowing to Mary Bowers, Dec. 25, 1764, by Rev. Mr. Adams." And it is added that the bride was clothed only in a sheet and undergarment, and those "she borrowed." Probably the bride appeared in that remarkable outfit under the apprehension that if she brought nothing to her husband he could not be held for any debt of hers. But why might she not have borrowed a gown as well as the other articles? Or could it have been a Christmas frolic? Perhaps she was a widow and that her former husband died in debt, for it appears that by an old "legal custom" the new husband could in such case be held responsible for the liabilities of his marital predecessor. At all events, such was the reason given regarding a marriage that took place in Salem, April 21, 1818, where the record says the bride was even less clothed "while the ceremony was performed."

1766. June 22d. Ensign Ebenezer Newhall, aged seventy-three, died "of something supposed to breed within him."

1772. Extraordinary amount of snow in March. Storms on the 5th, 9th, 11th, 13th, 16th and 20th. In sixteen days there fell about five feet on a level. On the second Friday in April so violent a storm occurred that drifts twelve feet deep accumulated.

1775. April 19th. Battle of Lexington; Daniel Townsend, of Lynnfield, killed.

1780. May 19th. The memorable dark day, which extended all over New England, creating great alarm. The darkness was so great that at noon houses were lighted as at night. And the succeeding night was of indescribable darkness, many declaring that it could be felt. The occurrence has never been satisfactorily accounted for. The great astronomer, Herschel, said of it: "The dark day in Northern America was one of those wonderful phenomena of nature which will always be read of with interest, but which philosophy is at a loss to explain." Dr. John Perkins, of Lynnfield, a learned physician and author died, aged eighty-five.

1782. Lynnfield Parish made a district, September 24th. Rev. Joseph Mottey, fourth minister of Lynnfield, settled.

1786. Certain memoranda by Mr. Sparhawk, of Lynnfield, in an interleaved almanac of this year, are of interest in various ways. The mode of reckoning the currency is illustrated in this: "January y^e^ 30th. Bought two piggs by y^e^ hand of Mr. Reed, the barrow weighing 62 pounds, at five pence per pound . . . the other weighing 54 pounds att five pence per pound;" the whole amounting to "two pound, eight shillings and two pence—which is eight dollars and two pence." The following relates to the installation of Rev. Obadiah Parsons over the First Parish of Lynn: "Feb. y^e^ 4th: Then was Installed att y^e^ Old Parish, in Lynn, Mr. Obadiah Parsons. Y^e^ Revnd mr Cleaveland of Ipswich began with prayer, y^e^ Revnd mr. Forbes of Capan preached the sermon, y^e^ Revnd mr. Roby, of Lynn 3d parish, gave the charge, y^e^ Revnd mr. Payson, of Chelsea, made the concluding prayer, and the Revnd mr. Smith, of Middleton, gave the right hand of fellowship. The gentleman above mentioned was settled in peace, harmony, and concord." Still another memorandum says: "From y^e^ 14th of June until the 13th of July, a very dry time. And upon y^e^ 14th of July, early in the morning, Jove thundered to the left and all Olympus trembled att his nod. The sun about an hour high; a beautiful refreshing shower. Again, July y^e^ 15th, the latter part of y^e^ night, Jove thundered to the left, three times, and Olympus trembled. A shower followed." It will be observed that these memoranda were not made by Rev. Nathaniel Sparhawk, the first minister of Lynnfield, as one or two historical writers have stated, as he died more than fifty years before.

1788. John Burnham chosen a delegate to the convention for ratifying the Constitution of the United States.

1794. Early part of the winter unusually mild. Thermometer on Christmas day reached eighty degrees in the open air. Water in the ponds sufficiently warm for boys to bathe.

1800. June 11th, Samuel Dyer, a gentleman from Boston, drowned in Humfrey's Pond.

1803. May. Snow-storm; fruit trees being in blossom.

1804. July. Snow fell this month.

1806. Newburyport and Boston Turnpike completed at a cost of four hundred and twenty thousand dollars.

1814. Lynnfield incorporated as a separate town.

1815. September 23d, terrific southeasterly gale; ocean spray driven as far inland as Lynnfield.

1820. Asa T. Newhall elected a member of the Convention for revising the State Constitution.

1824. January 21st, Rev. Joseph Searl, fifth minister of Lynnfield, settled. He was the last preacher of the old Puritanical faith settled over the first society, his successor, Rev. Luther Walcot, being a Universalist.

1833. November 13th, extraordinary shower of meteors. It occurred early in the morning, and continued several hours. As computed by Arago, not less than two hundred and forty thousand, some of great brilliancy, were at one time visible above the horizon of Boston. They radiated from a point near the zenith, and shot forth with great velocity, bending their course towards the horizon; were of various sizes, with well-defined trains. Their bodies were not very dense, and though some explosions were heard, most of them rushed noiselessly onward. The "shower," if so it should be called, extended all over the United States; indeed, over the whole of North America, if not over the whole world, invisible in some places on account of sunlight or clouds. No entirely satisfactory explanation has yet been given. It has, however, been ascertained that similar occurrences take place periodically, though there is no record of any that approached this in brilliancy.

1837. Surplus United States revenue distributed. Lynnfield received $1328.29, and applied it to payment of town debt.

1840. January 4th, the house of Widow Betsey Newhall, in the South Village, burned.

1842. September 23d, the house of Warren Newhall, in the Centre Village, burned.

1843. Splendid comet; first seen about noonday, February 1st.

1850. A son of Joseph Ramsdell, aged ten, killed a rattlesnake in July, measuring five feet in length and having eleven rattles. A tornado passed through the westerly part of the town, about three in the afternoon, August 1st, sweeping all in its path. Its track was but a few rods in width, and fortunately no buildings stood therein. August 15th, thirteen persons of a picnic party drowned in Lynnfield Pond. August 31st, railroad through South Village opened. December 18th, Asa T. Newhall died, aged seventy-one, and was buried with Masonic honors.

1852. November 26th, first church-bell in Lynnfield raised, on the South Village Church.

1853. James Hewes elected a member of the convention for revising the State Constitution.

1854. Railroad through Lynnfield Centre opened October 23d. Boundary line between Lynnfield and Reading established. There was a long and unusually beautiful period of Indian summer, ending October 28th.

1856. October 4, Forest Hill Cemetery consecrated.

1857. Boundary line between Lynnfield and North Reading changed.

1858. Magnificent comet (Donati's) visible in the northwest, at evening, for several weeks, in the autumn. The tail was determined to be, on the 10th of October, fifty-one millions of miles in length.

1859. August 28th, brilliant display of northern lights; whole heavens covered. November 18th, large barn of John Mansfield, South Village, burned, two yoke of oxen and two horses perishing.

1860. Thomas Woodward, a native of Lynnfield, manufacturer of the celebrated Woodward awls, died, aged eighty-seven years. June 29th, the meeting-house in South Village was struck by lightning during a severe thunder-storm of three hours' duration. July 18th, muster of Essex County fire companies in Lynnfield.

1861. The great Civil War commenced early in April. Lynnfield furnished sixty soldiers. John P. Mead was mortally wounded at the battle of Bull Run, July 21st. A military encampment was formed in the South Village and a number of regiments there drilled preparatory to leaving for the seat of war. July 2d, a splendid comet suddenly appeared. It was a little west of north, extended from the horizon to the zenith and moved with extraordinary rapidity; insomuch that it was visible but few nights.

1862. May 4th, Captain Henry Bancroft's barn burned, together with carriage-house and other outbuildings. A horse and several cows perished.

1865. January 17th, Dr. Thomas Keenan, a skillful physician and much esteemed citizen, died, aged sixty-one years. He was an Irishman by birth and served as a surgeon in the British army before coming here. The town, at their next annual meeting, passed resolutions of respect for his memory. April 3d, news of the fall of Richmond received. April 15th, news of the assassination of President Lincoln received. During September destructive fires raged in the woods, the weather being very dry and warm.

1866. June 22d, bell on church in Centre Village raised; weight, eight hundred and thirty pounds.

1867. January 17th, a terrible snow-storm.

1868. During the summer a Lynnfield farmer killed thirteen rattlesnakes.

1869. April 15th, in the evening there was a magnificent display of beautifully tinted aurora borealis. During the month of September Captain Henry Bancroft graded the common land belonging to the First Congregational Society, and known as the "Common," at the cost of about thirteen hundred dollars, bearing all the expense himself. September 8th, severe gale in the afternoon, next in violence to that of September 23, 1815. A multitude of trees uprooted.

1870. October 20th, a very perceptible earthquake shock felt at about half-past eleven in the forenoon.

1871. December 18th, old mill on Saugus River, near residence of George L. Hawkes, burned. Tradition says the privilege was an ancient grant by the King of England, to ensure the grinding of grain.

1872. The summer of this year was remarkable for the frequency and severity of its thunder-storms.

1873. English sparrows began to make their presence known hereabout this year — probably the progeny of those imported into Boston. It was believed that they would benefit agriculturists by destroying ravaging insects, but they did not fulfill expectations, and were soon declared worthless.

1874. March, a Lynnfield lady gives birth to three

children at one time, making up a family of four infants, under the age of thirteen months, and eight children, all under twelve years. The parents, not being in very prosperous pecuniary circumstances, were deservedly the recipients of many useful gifts.

1876. The destructive potato bug or Colorado beetle first appears in this vicinity.

1879. December 26th, General Josiah Newhall died, aged eighty-five years. He was Lynnfield's first representative in the General Court.

1881. September 6th, the yellow day, so called. Early in the afternoon the air assumed a dim, brassy hue. The obscuration was so great that common newspaper print could not be easily read without artificial light; the faces of people were of a light saffron hue, and the grass and foliage had a marked golden tinge. The day was close and warm and the smell of smoke very perceptible. September 20th, news of the death of President Garfield received. He was shot by C. J. Guiteau, July 2d.

1882. During the latter part of the summer an extraordinary drought prevailed; crops were almost ruined, and in some places the landscape had a scorched appearance. A splendid comet was visible in the southeast for several weeks in October. It rose two or three hours before the sun; its speed was almost inconceivable and the nucleus had the appearance of partial disruption, as if it had met with some violent collision.

1885. July 23d, President Grant dies. News of his death received the same day.

1886. January 17th, Rev. Jacob Hood died, aged ninety-four years.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

GENERAL JOSIAH NEWHALL.

General Josiah Newhall was born in Lynnfield June 6, 1794, and was a lineal descendant of Thomas Newhall, the first white person born in Lynn, who was himself the son of Thomas Newhall, who came from England in 1630, and was the progenitor of the Newhalls of Lynn.

General Newhall's occupation was a farmer and horticulturist, his interest in these pursuits leading him to become one of the founders of the Massachusetts Horticultural Society. During the war of 1812 he served in the American army. It was owing, perhaps, to his early experience in bearing arms that he became active in the State militia. In 1824 he commanded a regiment of nine companies which was among the forces reviewed on Boston Common by General Lafayette, at the time of his visit to Boston in 1824. Subsequently, he rose to the rank of Brigadier-general, and was six years in command of the First Brigade. He was also active in civil affairs. Under the administration of General Jackson he was several years connected with the Boston custom-house. He was the first Representative elected to the General Court from Lynnfield after the incorporation of that town, and served in the Legislatures of 1826, 1827 and 1848. He was prominent in town affairs and served as chairman of school committee twenty-two years.

In November, 1876, General Newhall was elected a member of the Royal Historical Society of London and Great Britain.

General Newhall died December 26, 1879.

JOHN PERKINS.

Captain Perkins was born in the northwesterly part of Lynnfield, on the 18th of July, 1806. His father and grandfather were respectable and thrifty farmers; and farming has been his own life-occupation.

The Perkins family probably settled here somewhere about the year 1650. It is found that Luke Perkins was a soldier in the King Philip War, and marched against the Indians in 1675. He was a pious man, and before departure requested Mr. Cobbet, then of Ipswich, but previously of Lynn, a minister famed for his fervency in prayer, to pray for the safety of the detachment. And it is added, "they all returned in safety."

John Perkins, a later ancestor, married, August 29, 1695, Anna Hutchinson, and had five children,—Anna, John, Elizabeth, Mary and William. Elizabeth became the wife of Rev. Nathaniel Sparhawk, who graduated at Harvard in 1715, studied divinity and was settled over the Lynnfield Parish, as its first minister, August 17, 1720. He had four children,—Elizabeth, Nathaniel, Edward Perkins and John. Of these, Edward seems to have become somewhat noted, and was the first person appearing on the Lynn records with three names, the fashion of giving two baptismal names then just beginning. The son John became a physician in Philadelphia.

Another of the family was Dr. John Perkins, who was born in 1695, and lived to the age of eighty-five, having spent much of his life in other homes. He was a skillful practitioner, but perhaps most widely known by his literary and scientific writings. He was well educated, having studied two years in London. And many years practice in Boston gave him an experience and reputation excelled by few physicians of the period. Some further notice of him appears in the historical sketch of Lynnfield.

It is sufficient, in this connection, to add that the Perkins family of Lynnfield has all along maintained a most respectable position. With few exceptions they have been prosperous and highly regarded.

The present Captain John Perkins, whose portrait accompanies this brief sketch, and who gained his title many years since by being commander of a



J. Newhall



John Perkins

military company, has led a quiet, unostentatious, but useful life. He has been a selectman, assessor and overseer of the poor more than twenty years, and for several years town clerk. He has likewise held a commission as justice of the peace twenty-one years, and represented the town in the General Court. His good judgment and neighborly kindness has always been much in requisition for the guidance and assistance of his less qualified neighbors. And in the settlement of estates of deceased persons, and as guardian of minors, his services and sympathies have been highly appreciated.

Captain Perkins was joined in marriage April 22, 1830, with Catharine S. Sweetser, of South Reading (now Wakefield), and they became the parents of five children,—Catherine E., born May 16, 1832; John H., born December 8, 1833; Mary F., born November 14, 1837; Addia J., born September 13, 1845; and Clara A., born July 17, 1849. All the children are now, 1887, living, excepting Mary Frances, the second daughter.

CHAPTER XXIV.

SAUGUS.

BY WILBUR F. NEWHALL, ESQ.

Situation—Boundaries—Area—River—Settlement—Set off from Lynn—Population—Saugus Centre—Cliftondale—East Saugus—North Saugus—Oaklandvale—Geology—Town Meetings—Town House—Almshouse—Cemetery—New Town Hall—East Saugus set off—Water-Pipes—Town Clerks—Representatives—Valuation, Taxation—Polls—Post Offices.

SITUATION.—Saugus is situated in the very southern corner of Essex County.

Should you open before you a map of the county, you will notice that its general shape is a square of about twenty-three miles on each side, with its opposite corners or diagonals pointing north and south and east and west. At the very southern corner you will find the township of Saugus. It is five and six-tenths miles long north and south, with a trend somewhat west of north, and two and four-tenths miles average width.

BOUNDARIES.—It is bounded northerly by Lynnfield and Wakefield, easterly by the city of Lynn, southerly by Revere and westerly by Revere, Melrose and Wakefield.

AREA.—Its area is about thirteen and one-half square miles, of which about two and a quarter square miles are salt marsh, occupying the very southern end of the township, and only separated from Massachusetts Bay by the narrow strip of land known as Revere Beach. Situated only nine miles from Boston, you will see at once that the traffic and travel to and with Boston of the whole county must largely pass over some portion of its territory. Before A.D., 1800 Boston Street, or the old Boston road, so called, was the only thoroughfare. Soon after this the Salem turnpike and the Newburyport turnpike were built, and in 1838 the Eastern Railroad was opened for travel; and these now remain the only avenues of communication, through our town, with Boston for the county of Essex.

Saugus is an Indian name, and, as near as can be now ascertained, signifies "extended," suggested, no doubt, by its broad salt marshes.

The Indians applied this name to the whole territory lying between Boston on the south and Salem on the north.

The Indian name of our beautiful river was "Abousett," and it is to be regretted that this name was ever dropped; but the white settlers fell into the custom of calling it the river at Saugus, and finally, very naturally, Saugus River; thus it was we lost the beautiful Indian name of our river.

Our river takes its rise in Quannapowitt Lake, in Wakefield, passes through the broad meadows of Lynnfield and enters midway our northern boundary, when, continuing its southerly course through North Saugus to Saugus Centre, where just below Scott's factory, it meets the tide-water and thence flows in its crooked course through the narrow salt marshes southeasterly one mile to East Saugus, where it reaches, and thence becomes, the easterly boundary of the town for the remainder of its course to the sea.

SETTLEMENT.—The first political status of Saugus is found, October 19, 1630, when John Taylor was admitted freeman to the General Court.

In 1634 Nathaniel Turner, Edward Tomlins and Thomas Willis were Representatives from Saugus to the first Legislature.

In 1636 towns were given authority to choose not more than seven "prudential men" to manage town business.

At that time Saugus not only comprised its present territory, but also that which now forms the city of Lynn and towns of Swampscott, Lynnfield, Reading, Wakefield and Nahant.

But the early settlers, evidently dissatisfied with the Indian name of Saugus, very soon sought to find some more familiar name, and very naturally recalling the old English town of Lynn, from which, no doubt, some of them emigrated, it was decided to change the name; and the Legislature granted their petition, for, November 15, 1637, we find on its records an enactment, said to be the shortest ever passed, as follows: "Saugust is called Lin."

Thus it was that our name was set aside, so to continue until February 17, 1815, when, by a legislative act, our present territory was set off from Lynn and received again its original name of Saugus. For many years previously it had had a separate ecclesiastical standing, and was known as the "West Parish."

POPULATION.—The population of the town in 1815

was very near 700 persons. April 3, 1815, there were 150 votes cast for Governor. We find by the census of 1820 the population was 748. In 1885 it was 2855. The intermediate years show a pretty constant and regular increase. And although up to 1815 our town had been largely agricultural in its interests and pursuits, yet it was the approximate period of the increase in our manufacturing industries,—shoes and woolen goods in the centre of the town, tobacco in Cliftondale and shoes in East Saugus.

Saugus Centre.—This brings us to the division of the town into its several villages. Nature provided for these by its isolated sections of territory, suitable for farms and dwelling-houses, while separating these sections were, and still are, rocky and wooded hills, rising to no very considerable height and yet sufficient to divert our connecting roads into fixed and almost necessary locations.

Beginning with Saugus Centre, by far the largest section of intervale in the town, we find it located almost exactly in the geographical centre of the town, being bounded on the north by Pranker's mill-pond and on the east by the river. Few villages are so beautifully situated as this, commanding as it does from the top of Round Hill, looking easterly towards the ocean, one of the loveliest views of the river valley.

Cliftondale.—Almost directly south of the Centre, and about one mile distant, is Cliftondale, formerly known as Sweetser's Corner, reached directly by Central Street alone. Recently this village has taken a wonderful start in the erection of dwelling-houses, there having been built within the past year about forty, mostly by business men and mechanics employed in Boston and Lynn, while some are built by speculators who hope to sell. This section already promises to be a populous portion of the town.

East Saugus.—Coming back to the Centre again, we shall find southeasterly therefrom, about one mile distant, the village of East Saugus, situated in the river valley, and only reached by one road, now called Winter Street, on the southerly side of the valley. On account of the small area of eligible territory for building purposes, this village is compactly built, and consists principally of two streets—Chestnut Street and Lincoln Avenue—leading up from the bridge to the hill at the south of the village, where stands the village church.

The crooked reach of the river, between the Centre and the East Village, through the narrow strip of salt marsh, is usually kept filled with water by the mill-dam at the East Saugus Bridge, and so serves as a mill-pond, replenished by successive flood-tides and receiving in addition thereto the fresh water from the river flowage.

Almost directly west of East Saugus is Cliftondale, one mile away, and only reached by Lincoln Avenue, formerly called the old Boston road.

Thus we see that these three principal villages of Saugus are respectively about one mile from each other, occupying the points of an equilateral triangle, across the interior of which no road passes.

It would almost seem that this triangular district, although made up mostly of rocky hills and heretofore neglected, will, some future day, be intersected by winding avenues and dotted with beautiful hillside residences. It remains to mention two smaller villages of our town.

North Saugus.—Some more than two miles from the Centre, and in the extreme northerly end of our township, is the village of North Saugus, a section of very excellent farming land. It is reached by Central Street, passing Pranker's factory, and also by the Newburyport turnpike. Saugus River flows beside this village, and its two tributaries, Penny Brook and Hawkes Brook, flow directly through the village. These two brooks have recently been taken for a water supply by the city of Lynn; their waters have been diverted by an artificial canal and carried into Birch Pond, so called, on the eastern boundary of our town.

Oaklandvale.—The last village to be mentioned is Oaklandvale. This is situated a mile and a half from the Centre, northwesterly, and is only reached by the road leading to Wakefield and Melrose. This is also an agricultural district, through which flows a stream sometimes called Strawberry Brook, which empties into Saugus River below North Saugus.

Geology.—The geology of Saugus is a continuation of that of Lynn. The rock formations in both places belong to the east and west system of Hitchcock, as given in his report of the geology of Massachusetts.

Approaching the town from the ocean side, we come to a broad belt of alluvium, beneath which is a thin stratum of sand or gravel, and underlying all is a bed of tough blue clay of unknown depth.

Succeeding this is a broad belt of felsite, generally known as porphyry. It is composed of the finely-comminuted remains of older rocks hardened by heat and pressure to a flint-like substance. It is known to scientists as the Lower Laurentian series, or the rocks that contain the remains of the earliest forms of life.

On the northern side of the felsite the formation has not been sufficiently studied. Much of it, however, is syenite, and the curved lamination in some portions of the rock indicate gneiss. Trappean dykes frequently occur in this rock and in the felsite. The dividing line between the two formations is very obscure, being generally covered by drift. On the hill one-half mile east of Pranker's mills, and at the railroad cut near the centre of the town, the junction of the two formations may be noticed. Also near the Lynn line, on Vinegar Hill, syenite is found obtruding through the felsite, which is here composed of rounded felsite pebbles, cemented by a hardened matrix of the same material.

The jasper bed, near Round Hill, in the Centre,

is undoubtedly a fine variety of felsite, the banded variety of which furnishes very fine specimens.

Round Hill is a conspicuous object, and is of undoubted volcanic origin. Hitchcock calls the composition of the rock which forms the hill "Varioloid Wacke." The base of the rock is of a pleasant green color, and is filled in places with rounded nodules of quartz, varying in size from that of an ordinary shot to that of a pea. On the north side of the hill the base of the rock is of a chocolate color; this, together with the white nodules of quartz, forms very pretty specimens.

But few minerals or metals have been found in Saugus. The jasper locality is well known and many specimens have been taken from the bed.

Epidote is common, but the crystals are too small and imperfect to be valued. Good specimens of asbestos, associated with epidote, are found near East Saugus, and calcite (nail-head spar) has been found in the deep railroad cut near the Centre.

Hematite (specular) is found in the hill near the railroad cut, also in bowlders in the northwest part of the town. Pyrite has been found near the head of Birch Pond, but the specimens are poor.

Bog iron-ore was discovered soon after the first settlement, in different parts of the town, but mostly in North Saugus, where very good specimens can now be found. This was the ore used by the old Iron-Works from 1643 to 1680.

As heretofore stated, Saugus was set off from Lynn by act of Legislature passed February 17, 1815.

Town-Meetings.—The first town-meeting was held in the parish church March 13, 1815, and subsequent ones continued to be held there until 1818, after which time the school-house in the Centre generally served as the gathering-place for the town, although, occasionally, they were gathered at the Rock School-house, so-called, in the South District.

Town-House.—In 1837 a town-hall was built, arranged for hall above and two school-rooms below. This building is still standing, and since 1875, when our new town-hall was built, it has been used for school purposes.

It may be interesting to notice some of the circumstances of the building of this first hall.

Some two thousand dollars had been given to the town as their portion of the United States revenue surplus, distributed by General Jackson.

The question was, how this should be disposed of. Five town-meetings were held from May 12 to July 8, 1837, and as may well be imagined, very strong feelings swept the town. It was first voted to divide it among the inhabitants; then this was reconsidered, and it was voted to pay it over to the treasurer.

Then this was reconsidered, at a third meeting, and finally voted again to pay to the town treasurer.

At a subsequent meeting it was voted *not* to build a town-house; and, at a still later meeting, it was voted to build,—yeas, 90; nays, 74. Two thousand dollars was appropriated, and a committee of seven chosen by ballot, to obtain a location and contract for and superintend the building of said town-house.

March 12, 1838, the town appropriated six hundred dollars more to finish the town-house.

Almshouse.—In 1823 the present almshouse, with farm formerly owned by Mr. Tudor, was purchased.

Cemetery.—In 1844 the town bought one acre of Salmon Snow, for a new cemetery. This proving too small was enlarged in 1858, by the purchase of adjoining property of Roswell Hitchings.

Again, in 1874, the two estates east were purchased of Henry Newhall and others, so as to further enlarge the cemetery substantially as it is at present. During these years the town has taken excellent care of the grounds, which have grown in attractiveness and beauty, year by year, through the interest of our townsmen and very much to their credit. Few things speak louder of the tenderness, sympathy and love of a people than its care for the resting-place of the departed.

In the most eligible part of the cemetery is the "Soldier's Lot," surrounded by hammered granite border fence and entrance-steps, ornamented with appropriate war emblems, all carved in solid granite. This was built by the town.

Our cemetery is beautifully situated on the sloping ground between Winter Street and Shute's Brook.

New Town-Hall.—In 1875 the town built their new town-hall, on the eastern side of Central Street, purchasing of Mr. Samuel A. Parker a low, wet piece of land, and at great expense filling up and grading the same. There was a great difference of opinion in the town in regard to the expediency of erecting such a building.

A number of town-meetings were held, in which adverse action was taken, but the building party finally prevailed, and the town was loaded with a debt of fifty thousand dollars in consequence. The first story is occupied for rooms for town officers, High School and public library, the second for assembly room.

East Saugus Set Off.—While the new hall was building the inhabitants of East Saugus made a vigorous effort before the Legislature to be set off from Saugus and annexed to the city of Lynn, but they did not succeed in getting a bill through both branches of the Legislature. Soon after this, in deference to the feelings and wishes of East Saugus, the town voted an appropriation of five thousand dollars for the laying of water-pipes through the village of East Saugus, connecting with the Lynn Water-Works for a supply. This work was done, and August 10, 1878, the water was let into the pipes and a public celebration made of it by the citizens of East Saugus.

Water-Pipes.—The town has just voted, July 8, 1887, to extend this system of water-pipes through

Cliftondale and the centre of the town, and for that purpose made an appropriation of thirty-five thousand dollars to lay seven miles of pipe, and chose Wilbur F. Newhall, Edward Pranker and Charles H. Bond, water commissioners, to carry out the action of the town, and said commissioners have just given the contract to Messrs. Goodhue & Birnie, of Springfield, for the laying of the cement pipes, the work to be commenced forthwith and completed this season.

Town Clerks.—The following is a list of the town clerks, with their terms of office:

1815–18. Richard Mansfield.
1819–27. Thomas Mansfield, Jr.
1828–30. Zacheus Stocker.
1831–33. Isaac Childs.
1834–40. Wm. W. Boardman.
1841–47. Benj. F. Newhall.
1848–51. Harmon Hall.
1852–87 Wm. H. Newhall.

Representatives.—The following is a list of the Saugus Representatives to the General Court. Until about 1857 it required a majority of all the votes cast to elect a Representative, and this explains why oftentimes no one was sent. In 1835 the town-meeting adjourned twice and balloted six times without making any choice:

1816, '17, '20. Joseph Cheever.
1821. Dr. Abijah Cheever.
1823. Jonathan Makepeace.
1826. John Shaw.
1827–28. Wm. Jackson.
1829, '30, '31. Dr. Abijah Cheever.
1832–33. Zacheus N. Stocker.
1834. Joseph Cheever.
1836–37. Wm. W. Boardman.
1838. Charles Sweetser.
1839. Francis Dizer.
1840. Benj. Hitchings, Jr.
1841. Stephen E. Hawkes.
1842–43. Benj. F. Newhall.
1844. Pickmore Jackson.
1846–47. Sewall Boardman.
1850. Charles Sweetser.
1851. George H. Sweetser.
1852. John B. Hitchings.
1853. Samuel Hawkes.
1854. Richard Mansfield.
1855. Wm. H. Newhall.
1856. Jacob B. Calley.

In 1857 the district system went into operation, and Saugus was united with Lynnfield, Middleton and Topsfield. We give below the names of the Representatives from Saugus alone:

1857. Jonathan Newhall.
1860. Harmon Hall.
1862. John Howlett.
1863. Charles W. Newhall.
1866. S. S. Dunn.
1869. John Armitage.
1872. Jacob B. Calley.
1875. Otis M. Hitchings.
1877. Joseph Whitehead.
1879. J. Allston Newhall.
1882. Albert H. Sweetser.
1885–86. Chas. S. Hitchings.

Valuation and Taxation.—The valuation of the town this year (1887) is:

Real Estate	$1,906,061
Personal Property	202,835
Total valuation	$2,108,896
Rate of taxation per thousand	$13.50
Number of polls	852

Post-Offices.—The first post-office was established in the village of East Saugus in 1832. This remained the only post-office in town until 1858, when two others were established—one in Saugus Centre and one in Cliftondale. The following are the names of the postmasters of each office:

East Saugus.—1832, Henry Slade; 1832, George Newhall; 1856, Herbert B. Newhall; 1863, Charlotte M. Hawkes; 1873, Charles Mills; 1885, Henry J. Mills.

Saugus Centre.—1858, Julian D. Lawrence; 1870, John E. Stocker.

Cliftondale.—1858, Wm. Williams; 1860, George H. Sweetser, A. H. Sweetser; 1877, M. A. Putnam; 1883, M. S. Fisk.

CHAPTER XXV.

SAUGUS—(*Continued*).

Early Settlers—Indians—Fish—Marshes—William Ballard's Farm—Landing Road—Edward Baker—Nicholas Brown—Samuel Bennet—Thomas Dexter—Thomas Hudson—Captain Walker—Adam Hawkes—Richard Leader and Others—Appleton's Pulpit.

Early Settlers.—The year 1630 brought a great many hundred people to our shores, and of this number some found their way to our town either through the primeval forests or, more likely, by boats; and it is not surprising that they should enter our river and select along its banks favorable spots for their rude houses, around which they were to commence their clearings.

Indians.—Long years before this the Indians had been attracted to this river, and upon its sunny banks and in its sheltered vales had built their wigwams, reared their families and cultivated their small fields of corn and pumpkins.

On the south side of the hills, in East Saugus, on both banks of the river, are found the relics of their settlements, consisting of shell-heaps, pestles, hatchets, arrow-heads and bones.

Fish.—Our river at that time abounded with fish of many varieties, some of which, on account of our mills and their obstructions, are now no longer found in our waters; but not the least attraction was the abundance of clams found in the sandy shores of our river, and, at low tide, accessible at all seasons of the year.

Marshes.—Whatever may be the changes in the aspects of the country since those early days, in consequence of the removal of forests and the incoming of civilization, yet we have one feature of our landscape presenting substantially the same appearance as then, namely, our salt marshes.

Our early settlers looked very kindly on these marshes as furnishing a sure supply of food for their horses and cattle, while they were toiling to bring into arable condition the uplands then covered with timber. These marshes certainly afforded them abundance of fodder. And even to-day they still continue to yield their crops to our farmers, as shown by the numerous stacks of hay annually gathered in the summer, to be removed in the winter when the marshes are covered with ice and snow.

William Ballard was one of our early settlers. He was a farmer, and received sixty acres in the allotment of lands in 1638. He was also admitted a freeman in 1638. His farm comprised what is now the village of East Saugus. His first house stood in the rear of the dwelling now owned by George Oliver. His two sons, John and Nathaniel, divided the farm in 1697.

It was sold to Dr. Oliver in 1710, and in 1720 to Colonel Jacob Wendell, and about 1760 to Zaccheus Norwood, who died about 1768, leaving a widow and

three children. On this farm stood the Anchor Tavern, then kept by Mr. Norwood, and at his decease by his widow, until 1773, when Landlord Jacob Newhall took charge.

About 1725 a town way was laid out by the selectmen through the farm from the old Boston road to the Lower Landing, so called.

After almost a hundred years of alienation from the Ballard family, one-half of this farm was bought back by William Ballard; the other half continued in possession of the heirs of Norwood until about 1800, when this was bought by John Ballard, Esq., of Boston, who then became the owner of the entire farm. In 1802 he built a new hotel a few rods south of the old tavern, and from 1815 to 1822 he made this house his residence.

During subsequent years the farm was partly cut up into house-lots and sold, making the present village of East Saugus,—and it was not till a few years ago that the remaining portion of the farm, on either side of Ballard Street, was sold by the Ballard family to Mrs. John Pike and Henry W. Johnson.

Edward Baker was another early settler. In the allotment of 1638 he was given forty acres. His farm was on the south side of Baker's Hill, so called. He was admitted a freeman in 1638 and died in 1687.

Nicholas Brown received in the allotment two hundred acres. His farm was on the road to North Saugus. He early removed to Reading.

Samuel Bennet, a carpenter and a member of the Ancient Artillery Company in 1639; he received in the allotment twenty acres. His farm was in the westerly part of the town.

Thomas Dexter, a farmer, was admitted a freeman in 1631, and in the allotment was given three hundred and fifty acres. He lived in the centre of the town, near the iron-works, and was generally known as "Farmer Dexter." He was an active, stirring man in the plantation, although frequently getting into trouble with his neighbors, and even quarreling with the Governor of the colony. He must have possessed an irritable disposition as well as fighting qualities.

He built a mill on the river, for the grinding of corn, and also a fish-weir in 1632, wherein were captured large quantities of alewives and bass; one hundred and fifty barrels were cured the first year.

Thomas Hudson lived on the westerly side of the river, near the iron-works. He received sixty acres in the allotment.

Captain Richard Walker, a farmer, was located on the west side of the river, and in the allotment received two hundred acres. Born in 1593, admitted a freeman in 1634 and died at the age of ninety-five years.

Adam Hawkes, a farmer, settled in North Saugus about 1634. He landed in Salem with Endicott's company in 1630, and probably soon after went to Charlestown, as his wife Sarah's name is there found on the church records. Undoubtedly he reached this remote section of land by following up the river in his boat, and his location was well selected.

In the allotment of 1638 he was given one hundred acres, but before his death, which occurred in 1671, he acquired a great deal more land, for in the division of his property, March 27, 1672, we find him possessed of five hundred and fifty acres, one-half of which was given to his son John, and one-half to his grandson, Moses. A true inventory of his estate was made by Thomas Newhall and Jeremiah Sweyen, March 18, 1672, which contains many curious and interesting items, which we would like to give here, but for its length. The total value of his property, real and personal, was £817 11*s*.

Adam Hawkes had only two children, John and Susannah. John married Rebecca Maverick, daughter of Moses Maverick, and what is very unusual, the homestead farm has continued in the Hawkes family, in an unbroken succession, down to the present time, and is now owned and occupied by Samuel and Louis P. Hawkes, and the family of Richard Hawkes.

Adam Hawkes built his first house on the hill, a few hundred feet north of the present house of Louis P. Hawkes; this house was burned down soon after it was built. Much of the iron-ore which was obtained by the old iron works, in the centre of the town, for forty years or more, was, without doubt, dug in the meadows of Mr. Hawkes. And it seems he was troubled with the flowage of his lands by the iron works, the dam being raised much higher than the present one. He obtained damages for this flowage at several different times.

The above-mentioned early settlers were all farmers, and it is to be regretted that there is not more definite knowledge of their locations and history. Could sufficient time be given, undoubtedly much more might be gleaned concerning them and others who have escaped notice.

But there were also many men connected with the iron works industry, in the Centre, some of whose names we have preserved to us. Among these were Richard Leader (general agent till 1651, after which John Gifford was agent), Joseph Jenks, and Joseph Jenks, Jr., Henry Leonard, Henry Styche (who lived to the great age of one hundred and three), Arzbell Anderson, MacCallum More Downing, John Turner, John Vinton and Samuel Appleton, Jr., who owned the works after 1677.

Appleton's Pulpit.—An interesting incident in our early history is recorded on a bronze tablet fastened to the perpendicular face of a rocky cliff on Appleton Street, in the centre of the town, a few years ago, by some of the descendants of the Appleton family. The tablet is about two and a half feet square, and firmly bolted to the rock just beneath the place where the stirring harangue is supposed to have

been made. This cliff forms the abrupt side of a prominent hill, known as Calemount or Catamount Hill.

Tradition says that in those troublous times a watch was stationed on the hill to give alarm of any approach of the Crown officers to arrest their man. The watch was to signal their approach by crying, "Caleb, mount!" and from this cry came the name of the hill.

The following is the inscription on the tablet:

"APPLETON'S PULPIT.

"In September, 1687, from this rock, tradition asserts that, resisting the tyranny of Sir Edmond Andros, Major Samuel Appleton, of Ipswich, spoke to the people in behalf of those principles which later were embodied in the Declaration of Independence."

CHAPTER XXVI.

SAUGUS—(*Continued*).

FARMS, &C., A HUNDRED YEARS AGO.

East Saugus—Old Mill—Moore Farm—Tavern—Major Parker's—Thomas Florence—Amos Stocker—Lewis Place—Thomas Stocker Place—John Stocker Farm—Boynton Farm—Jacob Eustis Farm—Breeden Place—Allen Place—Colonel Abner Cheever—Dr. Cheever Place—Ezra Brown Farm—Tudor Farm—Josiah Rhodes Farm—Asa Rhodes Farm—Master Hitchings Place—Samuel Boardman—Aaron Boardman—Ivory Boardman Farm—John Dampney—Deacon Pratt Farm—Elkanah Hawkes Farm—Hitchings Place.

It may be interesting to the reader to take a look at some parts of the town, but more especially at the farms as they appeared a hundred years ago or thereabouts.

East Saugus.—Let us begin at the bridge in East Saugus, now compactly built and covering the entire slope from the hill to the river; but, one hundred years ago very few houses were standing here. In 1775 the old one-story shed-like mill building, then used as a grist-mill, was standing on the west side of the bridge, leaving a very narrow roadway over the bridge. Adjoining the mill on the south was a two-story dwelling-house, of good size, built by Joseph Gould, who having died the year previous, the house was then occupied by his widow.

Let us proceed southerly up the hill by the only road, and a few rods will bring us to a two-story dwelling, occupied by Colonel Ebenezer Stocker, of subsequent Revolutionary fame. This house was torn down in 1851 to give place to the present house, built and owned by H. W. Brackett.

A few rods farther south we find an old-fashioned two-story house, where now stands the house of Fales Newhall. Jacob Newhall, the grandfather of Fales Newhall, then lived there and he was a farmer and shoemaker.

This house was torn down about 1825.

Continuing up the hill, and near the top, we come to a two-story dwelling, which is still standing and owned by the heirs of the late Frederick Stocker. In 1775 it was owned by a Mr. Moore. His large barn then stood on the present site of the Methodist Church.

The road soon comes to the rocky hill, where it turns to the left, and a few rods bring us to the famous tavern kept by Landlord Jacob Newhall. It stood on the left or northerly side of the road, facing the south; it was a two-story gambrel-roof house, with a long sloping roof in the rear covering the kitchen.

From the bridge we have found only five houses, including the tavern.

Should we continue along under the hill on the Boston road southerly a few rods, we should pass on the right, Major Parker's blacksmith-shop in full blast, and just beyond this his dwelling-house. This house has recently been torn down and a large two-story double dwelling built on the site.

Major David Parker came from Malden to Saugus when quite a young man—about 1760. Having married a Miss Hunnewell, of Charlestown, he settled himself in a house which stood a few rods south of the old tavern. A short distance north of the house he built his long blacksmith-shop and carried on a brisk business. He was industrious, capable and enterprising. He held an honorable rank among the people and was early honored with the office of captain of the West Parish Militia, one of the largest companies in Lynn. This was previous to the Revolutionary War, for we find that Captain David Parker mustered his company at an early hour on the day of the Concord fight and marched them with all speed to the scene of the conflict, where his company did gallant service. The courage and bravery shown by Captain Parker led immediately to his promotion as major. He was a man of great benevolence of feeling, kind and affable to strangers. He continued to work at his blacksmith-shop up to the period of his death, which occurred in the early part of this century.

The next house south of Major Parker's was Samuel Oliver's, a blacksmith who worked for Major Parker. In 1805 Solomon Brown purchased this house of Mr. Oliver and lived in it until his death. It was afterwards removed to the Centre.

Some rods still south we come to Thomas Florence's small one-story house standing on the side of a ledge to the right, just where it is to-day, in 1887.

Thomas Florence was a hero of the Revolutionary War. He was a gardener by trade, working most of the time for Landlord Newhall.

His great-grandson, Charles Florence, now lives in the house.

A few rods south of the Florence house we reach a large dwelling occupied by Amos Stocker, another Revolutionary soldier, and by trade a cooper. This house is still standing.

Still going south a short distance, just where the road turns to the west, on our right is a large two-story dwelling, built as early as 1740; it was considered in that day one of the best houses. It was the

birth-place of John Ballard, Esq., he who built the new hotel on the Ballard farm. This house is still (1887) standing, and is owned and occupied by William A. Trefethen, farmer.

Just opposite the last house there was a lane, sometimes called "Lewis Lane," leading south; some rods down this lane there was an old dwelling-house, in front of which were noble elms. This was the "Lewis Place," one of the earliest settled farms in this section.

In 1800 it passed to the ownership of Landlord Newhall.

The house was torn down a few years ago.

Coming back to the old Boston road and continuing westerly from the Trefethen house, we soon come to a dwelling known in the Revolutionary times as the "Thomas Stocker Place," then occupied by himself. This house is still standing, in 1887, and is owned by Charlotte M. Mills. Some forty rods farther on we find a large dwelling on the right hand side. It stood where now, in 1887, the "Sunnyside House" is found, and a part of the old house was undoubtedly used in the erection of the new one.

In coming thus far from the tavern we have found nine dwellings, while from the bridge to the tavern we found only five.

The large tract of land lying west of Lincoln Avenue, in Cliftondale, extending down to the Revere line, and intersected by the Saugus Branch Railroad, and now very recently bought and laid out into town lots by C. H. Bond, Henry Wait and E. S. Kent, was formerly a noted farm.

Previous to the War of 1812 John Stocker owned this farm, and built himself a house. Subsequently it passed into the possession of Captain Daniel Bickford. In about 1826 Isaac Carleton became the owner. His native place was Andover. He cultivated the farm until his death, in 1841.

Anthony Hatch became the owner in 1847, and continued such up to his death, in 1879.

Mr. Hatch, formerly a ship carpenter in Medford, did an extensive market gardening on his farm. A man of great industry; his broad well-tilled acres always presented a pleasant sight to the passer-by.

About one-half mile south of Cliftondale, on the old traveled road which bore to the east of Lincoln Avenue as now traveled, was a famous farm of olden time, being situated partly in Saugus (then Lynn) and partly in Chelsea. The road passed between the barn and farm-house, which stood at the foot of the hill then known as Boynton's Hill. This was the hardest hill between Salem and Boston, and was much dreaded by the drivers of heavy teams. Mr. Boynton was often called upon for an extra lift, and Landlord Newhall often sent extra horses or oxen to help teams which were to stop at his tavern.

Mr. Boynton lived to an advanced age, and the farm passed to his son, Ellis Boynton. The farm was soon sold to Eben F. Draper and John Edmunds, who owned it for a few years and sold to Dr. Smith, of Boston. A large part of this farm was utilized by the Franklin Trotting Park some years ago, and is still used somewhat for horse-racing.

Leaving Lincoln Avenue at Cliftondale, and taking Essex Street, a short distance brings us to a fine residence on the right, facing the depot, now owned (in 1887) by Pliny Nickerson. This dwelling-house has not always presented the beautiful appearance of to-day, for it has met with many changes since its first construction, in 1807, by Jacob Eustis, of Boston, a brother of Governor Eustis. The land in front of the house constituted his farm. Mr. Eustis was a man of untiring industry, especially scrutinizing all town expenses, and every irregularity received his scathing rebuke.

About 1830 he sold to James Dennison. It then passed to W. Turpin, and soon to Seth Heaton, who occupied it until 1853. Mr. Heaton sold to Daniel P. Wise and others, who then applied the name of Cliftondale to this section of the town, and began a scheme of improvement. Subsequently John T. Paine, Esq., of Melrose, bought a portion of the land, with the Eustis house. The location of the old road, which ran nearer the house and inside of the noble trees now standing, he caused to be relocated outside of the trees, where we find it to-day. Substantial stone walls were built around the place, and the house itself remodeled.

Continuing our way beyond Mr. Nickerson's, the road winding to the north, we pass soon on our right a tract of land (now being rapidly built over with houses) that was known seventy-five years ago as the "Breeden Place" among the old farm settlements of the town. Crossing the railroad, are fine tillage fields on the left. A large part of this farm was reclaimed from an extensive swamp by Timothy H. Brown, who settled here about 1830 and died in 1851. This was known years ago by the name of the "Allen Place," from its owner, Lemuel Allen, who married the daughter of Parson Roby. Mr. George N. Miller is the present owner, and may be reckoned one of our prosperous farmers.

Still going westerly a short distance to the corner of Felton Street, we come to an old house now owned and occupied by Mr. Walter V. Hawkes. This was the home and farm of Colonel Abner Cheever, of Revolutionary memory. The farm was one of the best of that early day. On the death of the colonel, about 1820, it passed into the hands of his son, Major Henry Cheever, who occupied it till his death in 1858.

About sixty rods to the north we come to the once famous "Dr. Cheever Place," for many years considered the most elegant residence in Saugus. A broad high two-story verandah supporting the roof on massive columns gave it at once an elegant and southern air. It was built about 1808. Noble shade-trees surrounded the house, the grounds were kept neat and

trim, ponds were formed in the rear of the house for fish, boats and bathing. He built a fine avenue, bordered with shade-trees, leading direct from his residence to the turnpike, protected by gates at either end. Dr. Cheever was a surgeon in the Continental army. In politics a Federalist, in religion a Unitarian, and for many years attended public worship with that society at Lynn.

He died about 1842, leaving two children,—Dr. Charles Cheever, of Portsmouth, N. H., and Eliza S. Cheever, both now deceased. The doctor owned about two hundred acres of land, forty acres being tillage.

About forty rods west of the Dr. Cheever place is an old house, now somewhat modernized, and owned by Mr. William H. Penny. It was formerly the house of Ezra Brown, and in the Revolution days was the abode of his father. More recently the farm was owned by Stephen Hall, who lived there many years. His daughter is the wife of Mr. William H. Penny.

About one hundred rods north of Mr. Penny's house, on the Newburyport turnpike, is the farm now owned by the town of Saugus, and occupied for its almshouse. This was one of the farms of the olden time. It was formerly known as the "Tudor Place." The old road from Sweetzer's Corner (now Cliftondale) to South Reading passed through this farm for about sixty rods south of the present house, substantially where the turnpike was afterwards built and is now traveled. Before the present house was built there was a venerable old farm-house upon the same spot. That old farm-house was owned by William Tudor, Esq., known as Judge Tudor. He inherited this place from his father, John Tudor. The late Frederick Tudor, Esq., of Nahant, was the son of William Tudor, Esq. The improvements made by William Tudor, Esq., upon this place began about the year 1800. The old house was not torn down entirely, but was made the nucleus of the new house by doubling the size of the old house and modernizing the whole structure. Judge Tudor no doubt intended to make it his permanent family residence. Its fine situation, its rich fields around the dwelling, its picturesque wooded hills, all afforded him the opportunity to display his taste. An artificial pond was formed southwesterly of the house, and into it was conducted the water from Long Pond by an artificial canal which he excavated, partly through solid ledge, at great expense. This canal can now be seen, and through it is now running a portion of the waters of Long Pond. The magnitude of this work and its speedy completion testify to the energy of Mr. Tudor.

In 1807 the house was vacated by the Tudor family, and for years was occupied by different families. In 1818 it was leased to Robert Eames, who lived there until 1822, when it was purchased of Henry I. Tudor by the town of Saugus for a poor farm.

On Central Street, near the junction of Denver Street, on what was then the traveled road to Reading, were two very old farms, one on the south side of the old road, owned by Josiah Rhodes, who died about 1794. This dwelling, which was a small one-story house, stood upon the elevated ground east of the house now standing and recently occupied by the late Salmon Snow. Mr. Rhodes' barn was upon the opposite side of the old road. The widow of Josiah Rhodes soon after her husband's death married Richard Shute, who came from Malden. He combined farming, mercantile business and school-teaching. He bought the old school-house, attached it to the farm-house as an ell and made of it a store. These buildings were all burnt one pleasant autumn afternoon, about 1820, with all their contents. Mr. Shute was an active man, and being lame, rode a great deal on horseback, even sowing his grain from the back of his bay mare. He was also tax collector for Lynn for some three years. After his death the farm passed into the possession of Benjamin Swain, and by him was sold to Salmon Snow, about 1833.

The second farm above referred to was on the northerly side of the Reading road and the westerly side of the road leading to the meeting-house. This farm was owned about eighty years ago by Deacon Asa Rhodes.

More recently it was owned by the late Deacon James Roots. The Deacon Asa Rhodes house was a venerable relic of the olden time, two stories high, with a chimney in the centre occupying a large part of the house. A little east of the house stood his small shoemaker's shop, where the deacon could always be found at his craft. The deacon was born in the old house, March 1749, and lived there all his days, dying at the age of ninety-three years. Though a farmer, yet his principal business was shoemaking. He worked his own stock and made shoes for the Marblehead market. He would repair to Marblehead with his saddle-bags, distribute their contents among his customers, take other orders and return home. His way of traveling was sometimes on horseback, sometimes on foot with saddle-bags on his shoulder, and sometimes, with leather-apron on, he would wheel a barrow. The old house was torn down soon after his death, in 1842. Deacon James Roots, who married a daughter of Deacon Rhodes, owned and lived on the place until his death.

About eighty rods eastward of the Deacon Rhodes place was what was known as the Master Hitchings place. This place is now our cemetery. Thomas Hitchings moved from Lynn to the West Parish, about 1802, so as to lead the singing in the parish church, and also to teach the singing-school; hence he was called "Master Hitchings." He lived in the old homestead and reared a large family. This old house is still standing, although removed many rods towards East Saugus, on land known as the Bowler Field.

In the westerly part of the town, now called Oaklandvale, a little over a mile from the Town Hall, on the road to Wakefield, were a number of old farms

deserving some mention. Just before the road descends to the meadow and crosses the brook the location of the old Reading way can be seen leading off to the left or south, and making a wide sweep over the meadow; the present new location across the brook was laid out in 1818. Just after crossing the meadow an old house is still seen to the north, and some rods back from the road. This was in Revolutionary days occupied by Samuel Boardman.

Just here a road branches off to the left, leading to Melrose. A few rods on this road brings us to a venerable dwelling-house on the right, a good specimen of the old time house; it is fully two hundred years old. During the American Revolution it was occupied by Aaron Boardman, and afterwards it became his son's, Abijah Boardman's, who lived and died there. When the county of Suffolk extended up as far as this farm, the line dividing the counties passed through this house, and the court had to decide where Mr. Boardman should pay his poll-tax. Chelsea finally collected it, as his sleeping-room was in that town.

Coming back to the Reading or Wakefield road, and continuing westerly, we come to some excellent intervale, where were several very old farms. In the Revolutionary days there were four farm-houses here, one of which only is now standing. This is the house on the south side of the road, the homestead of the late Joseph Cheever, and more recently occupied by his son, Cyrus Cheever. It was formerly Ivory Boardman's house. Another of the old houses also stood on the south side of the road, before reaching the Joseph Cheever homestead. This was built about 1775 by John Dampney, formerly of Salem, grandfather of the late Joseph Dampney, Esq., of Lynn.

Another of the old houses stood on the north side of the road and west of the Joseph Cheever house. It was occupied by Daniel Floyd.

But another of these houses, and the most remarkable, was the Deacon Pratt house. It stood about one hundred rods east of the old road, upon a level plot of ground. The remains of the old fruit-trees can yet be seen.

Deacon Pratt was noted for his orderly habits, his place being always in the best of shape. He was a deacon in the West Parish Church, and a highly exemplary man.

Let us now retrace our steps as far as the Oaklandvale School-house. Directly opposite this school-house is a road leading northerly. We take this road, and about forty rods brings us to a modern two-story dwelling, built by Joseph Measury, Esq., in 1847. Subsequently he sold it to G. W. Phillips, Esq., who recently died there, when it was sold to the present owner, Mr. Ziegler.

A few rods beyond this house brings us to a gate on the left; through this gate, about twenty rods, stands a venerable farm-house, now owned by Mr. Bostwick. This was one of the ancient farm-sites of the West Parish of Lynn. This farm then included all the land extending to the Wakefield road.

In 1775 it was owned by Elkanah Hawkes, who occupied it many years. He combined by occupation the blacksmith and farmer. His shop stood near the gate before-mentioned, wherein was executed what smith-work the neighborhood needed. When out gunning in the woods his hand was mutilated by an accidental discharge of his gun, rendering amputation necessary. With the aid of his son, he continued his business several years. He had a daughter, Love Hawkes, who for several years taught school in the neighborhood.

During the beginning of the present century the farm came into the possession of Nathan Hawkes, son of Nathan of the West Parish, who owned it till its sale to Mr. Saunders and Measury, in 1846. After the sale he moved to the old house farther east, near where the old road crosses the brook. He died here in 1862, at the advanced age of eighty-seven years. This old farm-house, where he died, was owned by Daniel Hitchings early in this century, and afterwards was owned by Ira Draper, Esq., until about 1840. It still stands and is occupied by Hannah Hawkes.

About one hundred rods eastward of this last farm, in a large field, stands an old farm-house, until very recently owned and occupied by the late Lott Edmunds. This farm, in the period of the Revolution, was called the "Hitchings Place." Its site is rather low, and all these fields and intervales, in the period of the old "Iron-Works," must have been covered with water to the depth of three feet and more.

To the northwest of these last farms, and contiguous thereto, is that tract of rough, wild woodland, long and still known as the "Six Hundred Acres." This was the lot of public land distributed among the settlers about 1706.

CHAPTER XXVII.

SAUGUS—(*Continued*).

RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES.

PARISH CHURCH: *Organization—Edward Cheever—Pews in Church—Parson Roby—His Salary—His Death and Epitaph—William Frothingham—Other Pastors—Secession of the Calvinistic Wing—New Church Edifice—Organization of Calvinistic Members—First Pastors—First Church Edifice—New Church.* FIRST METHODIST CHURCH: *Organization—Rock School-House—Pioneers—Pastors—First Church—Sunday-school—New Church.* CLIFTONDALE METHODIST CHURCH: *Formation, etc.* METHODIST CHURCH IN CENTRE. ST. JOHN'S EPISCOPAL MISSION. CONGREGATIONAL SOCIETY IN CLIFTONDALE.

OLD PARISH CHURCH.—The first parish church in Saugus, known as the Third Church of Lynn, or the Church of the West Parish, dates its organization in the year 1738. Previous to that time the people in

the west part of Lynn attended meeting at the parish church on Lynn Common.

The first step was the union of all the principal men to build a meeting-house. The union was named the "Proprietors of the Meeting-House." In 1736 the work was commenced, and the best of oak timber was cut for the frame. The work made considerable progress during the year, although it was not probably finished till 1737. The finishing only extended so far as to build a pulpit and cover the floor with plain seats, one side called the "men's seats," and the other the "women's seats." At this state of affairs the parish records commence. The first book of records was a present to the parish from Thos. Cheever. It is a remarkable vellum-covered book, and served the parish ninety years. On the first page of the book is written: "This book is a gift to the Society of Proprietors of the new meeting-house, in the westerly end of the town of Lynn, by Thomas Cheever."

On the 5th of March, 1738, a warrant was issued by Ebenezer Burrill, Esq., of Lynn, addressed to Joshua Haven, and requiring him to call the first meeting of the Third Parish of Lynn for organization and the choice of officers.

(The Second Parish had previously been organized in that part of Lynn now called Lynnfield).

The meeting was held by adjournment at the meeting-house, the 28th day of March, 1738, and William Taylor was chosen parish clerk, and William Taylor, Jonathan Wait and Josiah Rhodes parish committee. After this organization the parish at once proceeded to provide their first preacher. Edward Cheever, a resident in the parish, an educated man and about entering the ministry, was invited to preach for three months.

It appears that the people were pleased with the preaching of Edward Cheever, and at a meeting held June 18, 1738, they voted to settle him as their minister. For some reason which does not appear, Mr. Cheever was not at once settled. In the following October the parish voted to send letters for ordination, although it does not appear that he was ordained till October, 1739. What salary he was to have does not appear from the records, although a certain gift of the General Court was appropriated to assist the settlement, and that forty members of the parish were each to carry to the house of Edward Cheever a half-cord of wood each year, and not fail. At the same time with this settlement several things came up for the decision of the parish. One was to accept the legacy from Theophilus Burrill of one hundred pounds (three hundred dollars, silver) "to be expended in furniture and vessels for the Lord's Table." It was voted to accept and appropriate. Another was to assign a lot of land for "horse-stables," each one to build his own stable. So about ten stables were built, probably in front of the burying-ground.

We cannot sufficiently admire the zeal of our ancestors—then few in number and widely scattered—to undertake a work of such magnitude as the building of a church. It was forty-four feet long by thirty-six wide, with about twenty-feet posts. It had upper and lower windows all round, of common-sized glass. On its front, or south side, was the front door, with a large porch or vestibule, which was entered by three doors. It had, besides, a door on each end opening into the church. No doubt the model of this was found in the "Old Tunnel," so-called, on Lynn Common. Let us go into the church. The pulpit is upon the north side of the house, in the centre, raised high, with a seat in front for the deacons. A gallery runs around the front and two ends, the front gallery seats being appropriated to the singers. The floor of the church is seated with plain plank seats, divided into two sections.

What a pattern of plain Puritan simplicity must this church have presented, with its "men's seats" on one side and its "women's seats" on the other; and then the worshippers with their antique dresses!

The situation of this church was very pleasant. It was in the centre of the town, on a small elevation of land upon the west side of the road leading north to the "Old Iron Works," on a part of the "Taylor Farm," so-called, on the triangular green where now (1887) stands the flag staff. The road running westerly, now called Main Street, was not then made. For some years the people living on the old road to South Reading probably passed through the fields, opening bars, but afterwards a highway was built. This church edifice continued to stand on the same spot, although undergoing some alterations, until the year 1858, when it was moved about three rods north of its old site, and is now occupied for a grocery-store by Mr. Whitehead, with dwelling above. The elevated knoll has been graded down and is now an open square.

Let us now return to the old church in 1740. Another question was then brought up which proved in the sequel an encroachment on the "free-seat" plan. They voted to build a pew for the minister at the east end of the pulpit. Poor, blind mortals! They should have known enough of human nature to have taught them that it never would be endured to have the minister's family sit above the people. So, very soon after, it was resolved that the new church should have pews, in part at least. A committee was chosen to make a plan for the pews. At a meeting held on the 8th of December, 1740, the committee on pews made the following report in substance: "We are of opinion, there being room enough to erect twenty-nine pews in said meeting-house, nineteen wall pews and ten pews on the floor. All persons that make choice of a wall pew, they maintaining the glass against their own pews. The proprietors of the house to have the choice of pews. That each person having a pew shall pay for erection of his own pew. That the pews shall be taxed forty shillings per week as apportioned."

The foregoing report was accepted and a larger committee of seven of the best men was chosen to superintend the whole matter, and after the pews were built, to tax them.

This committee, finding that more pews were needed, made a plan to increase the number to thirty-four, by making five more. Their report read thus: "By taking two seats of the men's, and two hindermost seats of the women's, with five feet of the women's fore seat and second seat, will make room for five pews more, making thirty-four in all."

The report was accepted.

From what can be gathered, it appears that the Third Parish (now Saugus) was set off from the First Parish (Old Tunnel) on condition that the parish tax should be assessed and collected by the First Parish till the General Court should incorporate the West Parish. That during said time, the West or Third Parish might have separate preaching, and draw from the treasurer of the First Parish their ratable proportion of the money raised. Their proportion was thirty-five parts of every one hundred and eighty. It is thus seen that Saugus was no small part of Lynn, as to taxation at that day. The sum refunded, with forty shillings per week tax on pews, was deemed sufficient to meet the cash expenses of the new parish. But the young parish found very soon the same difficulties that religious societies have always found—the trouble of raising money. The people were remiss in paying the weekly assessments upon the pews, and also were negligent in supplying the yearly half-cord of wood each. Various votes were passed threatening to delinquents.

On March 6, 1745, the parish chose a committee to build the five additional pews on the lower floor, and twenty pews in the gallery, ten in the front gallery and five in each end gallery. They were also empowered to let, tax and sell, as they might judge best.

It was voted that every pew occupier should supply a half-cord of wood yearly, and more or less as the tax might be.

The course adopted by the West Parish about the construction of pews was an improvement on the "Old Tunnel" method. In that house every one made his pew to his own taste, but here the society built the pews uniformly and the pew-owner paid the cost.

In February, 1747, the parish again petitioned the General Court for an act of incorporation.

The First Parish Church at Lynn stoutly opposed all these petitions for separation; but it was finally obtained.

In February, 1749, Ebenezer Burrill issued a warrant for organization under the charter. The meeting was held the 10th inst., and Jonathan Hawkes was chosen as first parish clerk under the charter. (Rev. Edw. Cheever was dismissed December, 1748.)

At this meeting it was voted that the parish concur with the church in inviting Mr. Joseph Roby to become their minister. In this vote of concurrence the parish voted all the particulars as to the payment of Mr. Roby. We here give the vote verbatim:

"Voted for the annual support of Mr. Roby so long as he shall carry on the work of the ministry in said parish, the improvement of a suitable house and barn. Pasturing and sufficient winter meat for two cows and one horse, and to put the hay, or winter meat into the barn—the improvement of two acres of land suitable to plant, and to be kept well fenced, and sixty pounds in lawful silver money at six shillings and eight pence per ounce, and also the loose contribution."

On March 1, 1749, a committee was chosen "to inform Mr. Joseph Roby that he was chosen to settle in the ministry by the church and parish." Soon after this vote the subject of giving the meeting-house to the parish was discussed by the proprietors, and a meeting was held for that purpose, wherein it was voted that said "meeting-house, with all privileges and appurtenances, be given to the Third Parish, excepting pew No. 23, and the place where it stands; provided said parish wrong no person of their expense in building the pews in said house."

For reasons which do not appear, Mr. Roby was not settled on the foregoing vote, and at a meeting held April 21, 1750, a committee was chosen to supply the pulpit with "transient preaching." Also to see how the parish could purchase a house and land suitable for a parsonage.

From a subsequent vote it may be inferred that the support voted to Mr. Roby was not entirely satisfactory to him; we give verbatim the second vote, July 2, 1750:

"*Voted*, That if Mr. Joseph Roby accepts our Invitation and settles in the work of the ministry in this parish, his whole Salery as suport annually to innable him to Carry on the work of the ministry in said Parish shall be as followeth: The improvement of a suitable House and Barn standing in a suitable place, Pasturing and sufficient Winter Meet for two cows and one Horse, the Winter Meet put in his Barn, the improvement of two Acres of land suitable to plant, and to be kept well fenced, Thirty Pounds in lawful Silver money at six shillings and eight pence per ounce. Twenty cords at his Dore and the lose contribution. And also the Following Articles or so much money as will purchase them, viz., Sixty Bushels of Indian Corn, Forty-one Bushels of Rye, Six Hundred Pounds wait of Pork and Eight Hundred and Eighty-eight Pounds wait of Beefe, and that the Salery or annual Suport as above expressed shall begin at the time of Mr. Roby's giving his answer of Exceptance, and continues so long as he continueth in the Work of the ministry amongst us, Said Parish Reserving the Term of one year and six months from the time of his giving his answer of Exceptance to erect complete and finish the House and Barn above mentioned."

Mr. Joseph Roby finally concluded to cast his lot with the resolute and benevolent little band which constituted the West Parish of Lynn. Although a Boston man by birth, he nevertheless met his humble and rustic friends with becoming dignity of character. We give his letter of acceptance:

"Boston, July 25th, 1750.

"*Hon'd and Beloved Brethren*:—I am obliged to you for the respect you have shown me in the call you have given me to settle with you in the work of the ministry among you, and am extremely sorry that any difficulties have in time past prevented the accomplishing an affair so agreeable to you as well as myself. It is with freedom and much satisfaction that I now declare my acceptance of your call, hoping that an event so important to you and me will be overruled in great favor to each. I presume you will always consider my circumstances, and kindly supply my wants as there may be occasion. I hope we shall have an interest in

each other's affection, and that your love to me and mine to you may abound—that we shall live together in peace, and that the God of love and peace may dwell among us and bless us continually. I ask your prayers to God for me, and God forbid that I should cease praying for you, that the blessings of heaven may be your portion and that of your children after you, and that a preached gospel may be to you the power of salvation. I am, honored and dear brethren,

"Yours affectionately,

"JOSEPH ROBY.

"To the Third Church and Parish in Lynn."

Already in March, 1750, a house and barn, with thirty-three acres of land, had been purchased of John Hutchinson for three hundred pounds currency (about nine hundred dollars), for a parsonage and parsonage lands. In 1780 we find the first mention of dollars and cents—as then written, "dolers and sents." Pounds were fast becoming obsolete, their value having so depreciated that in the latter part of their use the parish voted eight hundred pounds, instead of the less sum, which appears in the settlement stipulation.

Between the minister's salary, house and barn, tillage land and pasture, wood and hay, corn and rye, beef and pork, which all had to have particular care every year, to which may be added the care of the church, the collections of rates, the building and taking up of pews, the establishing of horse-sheds, the fencing of burying ground, the building and keeping of pound, the establishing and providing for a school, with almost everything else that appertains to civilized life, it well may be judged that parish meetings were no dull or stale affairs. An old and somewhat amusing practice prevailed of recording the names of dissenters to a vote. For instance, Josiah Rhodes might dissent about the providing pork for the minister, and would at once request his name recorded as dissenting.

"Parson Roby," as he was familiarly called, had now been settled over a half-century. Peace and love had marked all his intercourse with his people. In July, 1802, the loved pastor, who had always enjoyed the best health, was suddenly attacked with disease while in his pulpit. He was taken therefrom to his home, never more to resume the duties so long and so faithfully discharged. In August a meeting was held on the matter, and Joseph Emerson was employed as a substitute for a few weeks. Thus matters went on, several ministers supplying till January 31, 1803, when the aged pastor died. The record reads thus: "January 31st, 1803, the Rev. Joseph Roby departed this life, in the 80th year of his life and the 53d of his ministry, and was buried the 4th day of February, at the expense of the parish." The following is the inscription on his gravestone, still standing in the old burying-ground:

"Sacred to the memory of the Rev^{d} Joseph Roby, who departed this life Jany. 31st, 1803, in the 80th year of his age and 53d of his ministry in this Parish.

"Through life a lover of learning and virtue, a sincere friend, a kind and affectionate husband and parent, and a devoted Christian.

"By a constant practice of the Christian and social virtues, he rendered himself greatly beloved and respected in the various walks of domestic life. Reader, would'st thou be honored in life and lamented at death, go and do likewise.

"No pain, no grief, no anxious fear
Invade these bounds; no mortal woes
Can reach the peaceful sleeper here
Whilst angels watch his soft repose.
So Jesus sleeps, God's dying Son,
Past thro' the grave and blest the bed.
Then rest, dear Saint, till from his throne
The morning break and pierce the shade."

In April, 1804, the church and parish gave a call to Rev. William Frothingham — his letter of acceptance was dated June 2, 1804, from which we give an extract:

"The office to which you have called me is greatly important and solemn. It is to be an embassador of Christ to men—to be entrusted with the word of reconciliation—to be a guide and instructor in matters of eternal moment to you—to watch for your souls as one that must give an account—to be your spiritual steward, appointed to give every one his meat in due season—to be a worker together with Christ. How sacred an office! What peculiar talents, what spiritual graces are necessary to the right discharge of it!"

He was installed September 26, 1804. Mr. Frothingham continued as minister for thirteen years, until dismissed at his own request, May 7, 1817. The parish had become weaker through the withdrawal of several prominent members and other causes, and so were unable to support Mr. Frothingham—he left his charge with grief and the society parted with him with deep regret.

The parish voted the pulpit free to ministers of any denomination, no expenses being made to the parish. This state of things existed for three or four years, and very little was done to promote harmony of action.

From 1821 to 1826 Rev. Joseph Emerson and Rev. Hervey Wilbur, being principals of the Saugus Female Seminary, also generally supplied the parish pulpit.

This year, 1826, began that conflict of opinions which finally resulted in dividing the society. The Trinitarian and Unitarian elements could no longer coalesce.

Through the great influence of Dr. Abijah Cheever, the Rev. Ephraim Randall, a strict Unitarian, was installed minister October 3, 1826. His pastorate was short-lived, lasting until the following autumn in 1827, when it was dissolved and the parish left again destitute.

The controversy became bitter. From 1827 to 1832 very little was done,—occasional preaching in the old church, rarely orthodox, but more frequently Universalist and Unitarian.

In 1832 the Calvinistic members of the parish, seeing no prospect of ever gaining the ascendancy in the parish again, formally withdrew and organized a new society. This left the old parish in a crippled condition, which lasted up to 1836.

In the winter of 1835–36 the members of the old parish waked up and began a general repairing and remodeling the inside of the old church, which had now been built one hundred years.

The old high-backed latticed pews were removed, also the venerable pulpit with the sounding board,

also the deacons' seat, and the galleries on the south and east sides, leaving a small gallery on the west end for the singers.

The broad south porch did not escape, but was torn down and its doors closed, the only entrance now being on the west side. Such was the change that the old church could scarcely be recognized.

The first minister after the renovation was Rev. John Nichols. After Mr. Nichols the pulpit was supplied from 1838 to 1848 by Benjamin F. Newhall, Esq., James M. Usher and others.

In 1850 Rev. Josiah Marvin was settled and continued till 1852.

From 1852 to 1857, preaching by Rev. Henry Eaton, Sylvanus Cobb, D.D., Rev. J. W. Talbot and Hon. James M. Usher.

From 1857 to 1859, supplied by Rev. J. H. Campbell

It was at this time that most of the parish property was sold. In 1858 some movement was made for a new church. Soon the old parish church was sold for about two hundred and forty-two dollars to Miss Eliza Townsend, who removed the church to the northerly side of Main Street, near by, and made it into a store with dwelling above. The site of the old church was sold for five hundred and seventy dollars.

In 1860 a new church was built and dedicated in the autumn of the same year. It was located a few hundred feet west of the old site, at the corner of Main and Summer Streets, where it is now standing with its modest spire. An outside clock on its tower gives the time of day to observers.

Since 1860 the pulpit has been supplied as follows: From 1860 to 1861 by Rev. Benjamin W. Atwill; 1862 to 1865 by Rev. J. H. Campbell; 1866 to 1873 by Rev. Thomas J. Greenwood; 1875 to 1876 by Rev. Albert W. Whitney; 1876 to 1878 by Rev. Thomas W. Iliman; 1878 to 1884 by Rev. Charles A. Skinner; 1885 to April, 1887, Rev. J. H. McInerney. In June, 1887, Rev. Irving W. Tomlinson is engaged to supply for one year.

Having brought the old parish history down to the present time, let us return to that portion of the old parishioners who, although claiming to be the true successors in doctrine of the old parish church, were yet by the laws of the State made the seceders, being in the minority.

In 1832 the Calvinistic members of the parish formed a society and first held separate services in the seminary building, which stood on the parish property.

Law was resorted to by the old parish, and they were finally driven out from this building and went to the public school-house.

This rupture or secession from the old society was led by Joseph Emes, David Newhall and George Pearson. Their first pastor was Rev. Sidney Holman, who was installed January 16, 1833, and dismissed December 31, 1834. From this time till May, 1836, there was not a settled minister.

Worship was regularly maintained however, the lay brethren reading sermons and otherwise assisting in the services.

On May 1, 1836, Rev. Moses Sawyer commenced to supply the pulpit, and continued his ministry for six years.

On April 19, 1843, Rev. Theophilus Sawin was ordained pastor, and was dismissed April 30, 1848.

Rev. Cyrus Stone, a returned missionary from India, now supplied for a few years, and Rev. Levi Brigham was installed May 7, 1851, and continued until September, 1868.

On March 10, 1869, Rev. F. V. Tenney was installed, and by his request was dismissed May 24, 1877.

On April 17, 1878, Rev. Samuel T. Kidder was ordained, and continued until October, 1879.

On July 21, 1880, Rev. Edw. L. Chute was installed and continued until October, 1882.

Rev. C. H. Washburn supplied in 1885 until 1886, when he was followed in June by Rev. M. S. Hemenway, who supplied the pulpit for one year, and at the present time (1887) the society is without a settled pastor.

This society built their first church in 1835, Joseph Emes, Esq., being the chief planner and manager. This was a stone church of very plain appearance, and is still standing (1887), although occupied as a grocery-store and post-office.

The society worshipped in this stone church until 1854, when they built a larger and more commodious church edifice, which still stands, and is a commanding structure in this portion of the town. Originally, as designed by Arthur Gilman, architect, it had no vestry under the audience-room, but in 1871 the society raised the whole building, with its tower, and built under the same a vestry story.

While this gave the society better accommodations, it most certainly injured its excellent proportions and took much away from its former beauty.

The First Methodist Church.—Methodism first gained a settlement in that part of the town now known as East Saugus, but then as the South Ward.

Jesse Lee, the pioneer Methodist preacher from the New York Conference, came to Lynn in December, 1790, and a church was built in Lynn in June, 1791.

Some of our inhabitants were attracted to these Methodist services, which brought to their hearts an earnestness and a consecration which they had not found in the more formal and cold services of the parish church.

Whole families were in the habit of walking down to the Methodist services on Sabbath mornings, carrying their luncheon with them, and returning at night.

We find that as early as 1810 members came up from the Lynn Church and held prayer-meetings in the old Rock School-house, so-called. This school-house, which proved to be the cradle of Methodism

in Saugus, deserves rather more than a passing notice.

The spot where this famous school-house stood is plainly to be seen to-day, although the house has long since disappeared.

It stood on the eastern brow of the rocky hill on the old Boston road, now called Lincoln Avenue, opposite to what was formerly the old Anchor Tavern. The spot was many feet above the level of the street, and being rocky and comparatively worthless, it was thought just the place for a school-house, and so here it was built in 1806.

Every one who entered must needs climb up a steep ascent and then ascend the long flight of steps into its side porch.

The building was abont twenty-four feet square, one story high, with hipped roof. On the southerly side was a porch about six feet square, from which an aisle six feet wide ran through the middle of the house north and south. At the north end of the aisle stood the teacher's desk upon a raised platform: in the middle of the aisle stood a large, capacious cast-iron box-stove.

From this central aisle three narrow passages on each side sloped up to the sides of the house; between these passage ways ran long desks or forms for the accommodation of the scholars, each tier being higher than the one in front.

In 1838, a new school-house having been built, the old Rock School-house was sold, and during the attempt to remove it from its elevated plateau some accident occurred by which it was precipitated into the street below; this necessitated its demolition.

It was in this building that the Methodist services were held for many years, beginning about 1810 and continuing until their new church was built, in 1827. Among the early converts were Solomon Brown, John Shaw, Amos Stocker and Joseph S. Newhall--men who proved themselves worthy to uphold the banner of the cross amid the increasing opposition.

It was not long, in 1815, before Edward T. Taylor, then an illiterate young man, traveling as an itinerant peddler, found a place in this school-house to begin his preaching, which afterwards became so famous. About 1818 this occasional preaching-place was joined to the Malden Circuit, and among the preachers were Orlando Hinds, Isaac Jennison, Aaron D. Sargent, Frederick Upham, Jotham Horton, Leonard Frost, Eleazer Steel, Aaron Wait, Jr., and Warren Emerson. As the converts increased they were formed into a class and were first connected with the Methodist Episcopal Church at Lynn Common. The winter of 1819 and 1820 was a period of great religious interest; hardly a family in this village but shared in some measure in the work.

The first written church records begin in June, 1825, when Rev. Henry Mayo was the Conference preacher in charge.

He was appointed by the Conference June 6, 1824. For this year there was a subscription for his support of one hundred dollars, made up by forty-eight subscriptions ranging from five dollars down to forty-two cents.

Of this amount twenty-five dollars was contributed by friends in Lynnfield; also twelve dollars and twenty-two cents by the "Honorable Mite Society." This was a woman's society which met once a month at different houses for conversation and prayer and payment of dues. This money was expended in the following manner:

Presiding elder's bill	$8.92
Preacher's traveling expenses	2.50
The table expenses	18.75
Quarterage	69.83
	$100.00

The record of the names of the members of the church, as made by Henry Mayo June 4, 1825, is headed by Solomon Brown, and contains sixteen males and thirty-seven females, with twenty-five on probation. The First Quarterly Conference met in the South School-house (also called the Rock School-house), June 4, 1825.

The following official members were present: Edward Hyde, presiding elder; Henry Mayo, preacher in charge; John Shaw and Joshua Howard, stewards; and Solomon Brown and Joseph S. Newhall, class-leaders. At this meeting Jonathan Newhall and Joseph G. Goldthwait were added to the stewards.

FORMATION OF A PARISH.

"SAUGUS, June 30, 1825.

"At a meeting of the inhabitants of Lynn and Saugus convened in said Saugus, it was voted first that we form ourselves into a society, to be called the 'First Methodist Episcopal Society in Saugus.' Second, that we petition William Jackson, Esq., a Justice of the Peace in and for the County of Essex, to grant a warrant calling a Legal meeting of the members of said Society, for the purpose of choosing officers and transacting such other business as may be found proper."

PETITION AT LARGE.

"SAUGUS, June 30, 1825.

"*To William Jackson, Esq., one of the Justices of the Peace in and for the County of Essex:*

"We, the undersigned Petitioners, at a meeting held in Saugus, Voted to organize ourselves into a Society called the First Methodist Society in Saugus, and we would therefore beg leave to request you to issue a warrant calling a legal meeting of the members of said Society, for the purpose of choosing officers and transacting such other business as shall come before the meeting.

"John Shaw.	Benj. P. Oliver.
Benj. F. Newhall.	Benj. B. Hitchings.
Jona. Newhall.	Levi D. Waldron.
Jos. G. Goldthwait.	G. W. Raddin.
Solomon Brown.	James Howard.
Edmund Brown.	Stephen Smith.
James Hall.	Joshua Howard."

The warrant, as requested, was issued by William Jackson, Esq., July 15, 1825, and the legal meeting of the First Methodist Episcopal Society in Saugus was held at the Rock School-house on July 25, 1825, when John Shaw was chosen moderator, Benjamin F. Newhall secretary and parish clerk, Joshua Howard treasurer, and John Shaw, James Howard, Stephen Smith, Jonathan Newhall and Joshua Howard a com-

mittee. The yearly meeting was to be held on the first Wednesday in March, annually, at 7 o'clock, P.M.

This gave to the society a legal status.

Rev. Henry Mayo saw the church organized in all its departments and well started in its long career of service. That the church should have started at this time with so much matured strength clearly indicates that there had been for years previous a great deal of labor put forth in the interest of Methodism. This was the case, as has already been mentioned.

Many of our people had formed a congenial religious home with the Lynn Common Methodist Church, had become members therein and had attached themselves to a "class," which met in East Saugus.

The following are the successive pastorates:

1824. Rev. Henry Mayo.
1825. Rev. Leroy Sunderland.
1826–27. Rev. Aaron Joselyn.
1828. Rev. Nathan Paine.
1829. Rev. Ephraim K. Avery.
1830. Rev. John J. Bliss.
1831. Rev. Hiram H. White.
1832. Rev. Ebenezer Blake.
1833. Rev. Joel Steele.
1834. Rev. John Lord.
1835. Rev. Lewis Bates.
1836. Rev. Newell S. Spalding.
1837–38. Rev. Sanford S. Benton.
1839–40. Rev. Daniel K. Bannister.
1841–42. Rev. Jona. D. Bridge.
1843–44. Rev. William Rice.
1845–46. Rev. Isaac A. Savage.
1847–48. Rev. Edward Cook.
1849. Rev. Wm. M. Mann.
1850–51. Rev. Daniel K. Bannister.
1852. Rev. J. A. Adams.
1853–54. Rev. Ralph W. Allen.
1855–56. Rev. Wm. H. Hatch.
1857–58. Rev. Daniel Richards.
1859–60. Rev. Jonas M. Clark.
1861–62. Rev. Cyrus L. Eastman.
1863–64. Rev. Daniel Richards.
1865. Rev. Thomas Marcy.
1866–68. Rev. Pliny Wood.
1869–71. Rev. Jesse Wagner.
1872–73. Rev. M. B. Chapman.
1874–76. Rev. Saml. Jackson.
1877–78. Rev. P. M. Vinton.
1879–81. Rev. Henry J. Fox, D.D.
1882–83. Rev. W. N. Richardson.
1884–86. Rev. David S. Coles.
1887. Rev. Geo. W. Mansfield.

At a meeting of the society held in the Rock School-house April 17, 1827, it was unanimously voted "to proceed immediately to erect a House of Worship for this society." Rev. Aaron Joselyn, George Makepeace and John T. Burrill was a committee to obtain subscriptions for the new church.

Accordingly, the work on their first church at once commenced, and was carried forward to completion with commendable dispatch, so that its dedication took place November 22, 1827.

This church was of very modest appearance, forty-six by forty feet, without spire or tower, bell or vestry. It contained forty pews and cost two thousand dollars. Its pulpit was high above the pews and was reached by two flights of stairs, at the head of which were doors through which to enter the box pulpit.

The church stood on the same spot where now stands the second church.

This edifice served the society until 1842, when it was lengthened by adding about twenty feet on the back end and building a basement vestry under the same. Twenty-two new pews were thus obtained, and fifteen hundred dollars spent. Rev. Jonathan D. Bridge was then pastor and much religious interest prevailed.

In 1854 the society sold their first church, and it was removed to the corner of Lincoln Avenue and Wendell Street, where it still stands under the name of Waverly Hall.

Active measures were taken in building their second church on the old spot, and in the meantime services were held in the school-house and in the old church.

The vestry of the new church was dedicated December 3, 1854, and public dedication services of the entire church were held February 22, 1855. Sermon by Rev. Bishop E. S. Janes.

In 1875 the exterior of the church edifice was thoroughly repaired, and the main roof and spire were slated.

In 1880 the interior was improved by stained-glass windows, new pulpit with enlarged platform and altar, frescoing, carpets and upholstering.

In 1835 the society built a parsonage just north of the church. It was a modest one-and-a-half-story dwelling, which made a home for the successive pastors until 1871, when the parsonage was sold and removed, and a new one was erected on the old site. This cost about four thousand five hundred dollars, and is still standing. It was built during the pastorate of Rev. Jesse Wagner, who raised sufficient money among this people to pay for its erection.

A flourishing Sunday-school has always been connected with this church, and even as early as 1819 we find a Sunday-school formed. George Makepeace was the first superintendent, succeeded by Harriet Newhall, Miss Brigdon, James Burrill, Fales Newhall, Martin W. Brown, George H. Sweetser, Joseph C. Hill, James S. Oliver, Alvah Philbrook, Rufus A. Johnson, Horace Lovering and Wilbur F. Newhall, who is the present superintendent, having held the same office since 1865, with the exception of two intervening years.

This church continues to be the only one in East Saugus.

Cliftondale Methodist Episcopal Church.—The Methodist Episcopal Society of Cliftondale was organized March 20, 1856. There had been preaching, however, a part of each Sabbath by Rev. R. W. Allen during 1854 and every Sabbath by James Blodgett during 1855.

The new society at first held its services in the unfinished room in the school-house, now the grammar school room. In 1857 a chapel—a plain, but substantial, structure—was built, and in December of the same year was dedicated to the purposes of Christian worship.

The first pastor was Rev. James Blodgett, a local preacher, who died a few years since. He was followed, in turn, by Revs. George F. Poole, who remained as pastor from 1856 to 1859; Solomon Chapin, 1859–61; John S. Day, 1861–63; Daniel Waite, 1863–

66; Frank G. Morris, 1866–68; J. F. Bassett, 1868–69; George E. Reed, 1869–70; J. E. Richards, 1870–71; Joshua Gill, 1871–72; Ralph W. Allen, 1872–75; C. W. Wilder, 1875–77; A. O. Hamilton, 1877–78; C. M. Melden, 1878-80; W. P. Odell, 1880–83; George A. Phinney, 1883–86, the latter being succeeded by Charles A. Littlefield, the present pastor of the church.

This church is the daughter of the East Saugus Methodist Episcopal Church, granddaughter of the First Methodist Episcopal Church of Lynn, and mother of the Methodist Episcopal Church of Saugus Centre, which latter church, in 1877, formed a society of their own, and a year later built and dedicated their present place of worship.

The Sunday-school connected with the society was formed in 1852 and organized in 1858. The superintendents of the school have been S. S. Dunn, Hon. George H. Sweetser, Horatio G. Herrick, Matthew Rawson and Albert H. Sweetser, who holds the position at the present time. The school is in a prosperous condition, its present membership being one hundred and eighty-six.

About the beginning of the year 1881 the pastor, Rev. W. P. Odell, conceived the idea of building a new church, in which plan he readily interested the members of the society, displaying commendable zeal and enterprise in the matter. The plan of building a new church was finally given up, and it was decided to remodel the chapel. The effort to solicit subscriptions met with such success that the building committee, consisting of A. H. Sweetser, J. A. Roddin, C. H. Bond, S. P. Coates and E. S. Kent, feeling assured of success, placed the matter in the hands of Henry W. Rogers, of Lynn, who submitted to the committee the plan of the present edifice, which was accepted, and work was commenced on remodeling the chapel in July, and was finished the day before its dedication.

The church is a very handsome one, giving entire satisfaction to the people and being an ornament to the community. Its seating capacity is about two hundred and twenty-five. There are two entrances in front by large double doors, surmounted with neat pitched roof hoods. The front gable is ornamented with tracery of a pretty pattern. The exterior is painted in shades of olive green, the spire, roofs and belts of cut shingles around the tower are painted red. The vestibule, audience-room and tower-room are lighted by beautiful stained-glass windows of a new and attractive design. The audience-room on the main floor is entered by two large doors, opening into aisles three and a half feet wide, with rows of ash pews, richly upholstered, on either side. The walls and ceilings are tastily decorated with rich frescoings of the Pompeiian style. Below the audience-room is a vestry, with a seating capacity of one hundred and twenty-five, also store-rooms, library and class-room.

The church is in a very prosperous condition. Both church and Sunday-school are growing rapidly. The present church membership (August, 1887) is one hundred and thirty-eight.

The Methodist Episcopal Church in Saugus Centre.—In 1875 a few Christian men invited Rev. O. J. Pettegrew to assist in starting a Methodist mission in the Centre. A Sunday-school was formed; also a Ladies' Sewing Circle, and preaching Sunday afternoons.

The services were held in Flye's Hall at first, but this proving too small to accommodate the people, a removal was made in September to "Hitchings' Hall," near the depot. Mr. Pettegrew continued his labors with them until April, 1876, when Rev. J. Thompson came for a short time.

In November, 1876, the society united themselves with the Methodist Episcopal Church at Cliftondale, and in May, 1877, Rev. E. H. McKenney began his services with them, which continued three years.

July 23, 1877, Rev. Daniel Dorchester, presiding elder of the New England Conference, met with thirty-eight members of the society and organized them into a church. Rev. E. H. McKenney was made pastor and all the usual church officers elected, including a board of trustees. Steps were at once taken towards the building of a chapel.

A lot of land on Main Street, nearly opposite Vine Street, was given by William H. Penny, and during the winter a church, thirty-two by fifty feet, was erected, so that April 24, 1878, it was dedicated by appropriate services, Rev. V. A. Cooper, of Lynn, preaching the sermon.

The church was placed in the westerly portion of the village, so as better to accommodate the people living in the neighborhood, including Oaklandvale. The following are the Conference ministers who have had charge: April, 1880, Rev. Charles M. Melden; April, 1882, Rev. Samuel Plantz; April, 1883, Rev. Arthur W. Tirrill; April, 1884, Rev. Webster Miller; April, 1886, Rev. Daniel Richards; April, 1887, Rev. C. J. Mills.

St. John's Mission (Saugus Centre).—In the spring of 1883 the diocesan Episcopal missionary, Rev. John S. Beers, held a service in a private house in Saugus Centre. A goodly number of churchmen were present. Soon after this a modest beginning was made by the establishment of a Sunday-school, which, in a few months, numbered forty scholars, and later on increased to seventy. Mr. Thomas Ashworth was the first superintendent—an earnest Christian man—but in less than two years he died, after a short and painful illness. He was succeeded by Lyman F. Merrill, a member of St. Paul's Church, Malden, who continued to hold this office until a short time previous to his ordination as deacon in the Episcopal

Church. At present Mr. Frank Knight, of St. Stephen's Church of Lynn, is acting as superintendent.

During the first year occasional services were held in a hired hall, Rev. Mr. Beers and others officiating.

In the summer of 1884 Rev. Thomas L. Fisher, minister at St. Luke's Church, Linden, added to his heavy labor in his own parish a regular Sunday afternoon service for this mission, together with such pastoral care as his time would allow.

The hall on Central Street, near Mr. Flye's, was tastefully fitted up under his direction; several gifts of church furniture, books and other necessary things were made, and the work continued to prosper under the name of St. John's Mission.

Money is now being raised for the erection of a church edifice, assistance having been received from St. Stephen's Church, Lynn, so that the society hope, in less than a year's time, to have a place of worship of their own.

First Congregational Society of Cliftondale.—This religious society was organized November, 1886. About a year previous to its formation services were held in Clifton Hall, preachers being obtained as they could be from different denominations.

A Sunday-school was gathered in connection with the society in April, 1886.

About the time of the organization of the society Rev. Theodore Haven was called as pastor, but he remained only about two months.

Very soon after Rev. Henry B. Miter was engaged as pastor, and has remained with the society up to the present time, September 1887.

The society continues to hold its services in Clifton Hall, owned by Mr. Charles H. Bond, who has been much interested in the formation of this society.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

SAUGUS—(*Continued*).

MANUFACTURING INTERESTS, PAST AND PRESENT.

Iron Works—Mill Site at East Saugus—Pranker's Mills—Scott's Mills—North Saugus—Tobacco Business at Cliftondale—Crockery—Shoe Business—Grain Mill on Ballard Street—Brick Making—Hair Business.

Iron Works.—Although iron ore was first discovered in other sections of the country, the first successful iron works were established in New England and in that portion of Massachusetts now embraced in the township of Saugus. In 1632 mention is made by Morton of the existence of "iron stone" in New England, and in November, 1637, the General Court of Massachusetts granted to Abraham Shaw one-half of the benefit of any "coles or yron stone w^{ch} shal be found in any comon ground wch is in the countryes disposeing."

Iron ore had been found in small ponds on the western bank of the Saugus River soon after its settlement in 1629, and in 1642 specimens of it were taken to London by Robert Bridges, in the hope that a company might be formed for the manufacture of iron.

This hope was realized in the formation of "The Company of Undertakers for the Iron Works," consisting of eleven English gentlemen, who advanced £1000 to establish the works. John Winthrop, Jr., had previously gone to England, and he appears to have assisted Mr. Bridges to secure the organization of the company. He became a member of the company, as did others among the colonists. Thomas Dexter and Robert Bridges, both of Lynn, were among the original promoters of the enterprise.

Workmen were brought from England in 1643, and the foundry was erected on the western bank of Saugus River, just at the head of tide water, in what is now called the Centre of Saugus, and still marked by the old banks of scoria, which have bravely withstood all changes. The village at the foundry was called "Hammersmith," from a place of that name in England, whence came many of the workmen

In 1644 and subsequently the General Court granted many special privileges to the company. On March 7, 1644, it was granted three miles square of land in each of six places it might occupy in the prosecution of its business.

On November 13, 1644, it was allowed three years "for ye perfecting of their worke and furnishing of ye country with all sorts of barr iron." The citizens were granted liberty to take stock in the enterprise, "if they would complete the finery and forge, as well as the furnace, which is already set up."

On the 14th of May, 1645, the general court passed an order declaring that "ye iron works is very successful (both in ye richness of ye ore and ye goodness of ye iron)," and that between £1200 and £1500 had already been disbursed, "with which ye furnace is built, with that which belongeth to it; and some tuns of sowe iron cast in readiness for ye forge. There will be neede of some £1500 to finish ye forge."

On the 14th of October, of the same year, the company was granted still further privileges by the General Court, on the condition "that the inhabitants of this jurisdiction be furnished with barr iron of all sorts for their use, not exceeding twentye pounds per tunn," and that the grants of land already made should be used "for the building and seting up of six forges or furnaces, and not bloomaries onely." The grant was confirmed to the company of the free use of all materials "for making or moulding any manner of gunnes, potts and other cast-iron ware."

On the 6th of May, 1646, Mr. Richard Leader, the general agent of the company, who is described as a man of superior ability, purchased "some of the country's gunnes to melt over at the foundery." On August 4, 1648, Governor Winthrop wrote from Bos-

ton to his son, who had removed to Pequod, Conn., that "the iron work goeth on with more hope. It yields now about seven tons per week." On September 30th he writes again: "The furnace runs eight tons per week, and their bar iron is as good as Spanish."

Among the many workmen who came over from England were Richard Leader, already mentioned, Henry and James Leonard, Henry Styche, Archibald Anderson and Joseph Jenks, who had come from Hammersmith in England. He was a machinist and a man of much skill and inventive genius. He prepared the moulds for the first castings. A small iron pot, holding about one quart, was the first article cast, according to Lewis' History, and is still in the possession of a lineal descendant of Thomas Hudson, who was the original owner of the lands on which the iron works were built, and who obtained possession of the pot immediately after it was cast.

Joseph Jenks, who became the founder of an eminent New England family, purchased from Richard Leader on the 20th of January, 1647, the privilege of building a forge at the iron works for the manufacture of scythes and other edge tools.

This enterprise was successful.

In 1652 he made at the iron works, for the mint which was that year established at Boston, the dies for the first silver pieces coined in New England. On one side of these coins was the impression of a pine tree. In 1654 he made for the city of Boston the first fire engine made in America. In 1655 the General Court granted him a patent for an improved scythe. This scythe we understand to be substantially the one in present use, a great improvement over the short wide-bladed scythe of English make. He died in 1683.

Henry and James Leonard were also skilled workmen at the iron works. They and their descendants were afterwards connected with other colonial iron enterprises.

They had a brother Philip, who does not appear to have lived at Saugus.

Rev. Dr. Fobes, in referring to the Leonard family in his book written in 1703, says that "the circumstance of a family attachment to the iron manufacture is so well known as to render it a common observation in this part of the country (town of Raynham), "where you can find iron works there you will find a Leonard!"

Henry and James Leonard are said to have learned their trade at Pontypool, in Monmouthshire. One or both of them superintended the erection of iron-works at Braintree, in 1648, and also at Taunton, in 1652, and at Rowley, in 1668.

Indeed, we read of many other iron enterprises by these Leonards in many parts of our State. For a hundred years after its settlement Massachusetts was the chief seat of the iron manufacture on this continent. Most of its iron enterprises, during this hundred years, were bloomeries; but there were blast-furnaces also, although the latter, as a rule, produced only hollow ware and other castings, and not pig-iron. During the period mentioned the iron industry of Massachusetts was confined to the eastern counties of the colony, where bog or pond ores formed almost the only kinds of ores obtainable.

But let us return to our own iron-works in Saugus. The General Court granted many privileges to this iron enterprise.

In 1644 all engaged therein were exempted from taxes for ten years. The workmen also were not liable to military service. They gave any of the inhabitants liberty to share in the work, by "bringing in within one year no less than £100 a person, with allowance to the adventurers, &c., for £1000 already disbursed," if they would complete the finery and forge, as well as the furnace, which "is already set up." Liberty was given "to make use of all yron ston, or yron ore," to cut wood and to make ponds and highways.

In 1646 arrangements were made with Thomas Dexter for opening a new water-course and enlarging the pond. Land was purchased of Dexter and a new dam was erected higher up the river, and probably very near the present dam. The old canal, which conveyed the water to the mills, can be distinctly seen in places, even at the present time.

This new dam raised the flowings of the water and caused damage to land of Adam Hawkes, in the northerly part of the town.

In 1652 John Gifford was the new agent at the iron-works. He seems to have increased the height of the dam again, and also to have flowed more of Mr. Hawkes' land.

In 1653 Thomas Savage and Henry Webb, of Boston, obtained judgment against the Iron Company for £2245.

In 1660 Oliver Purchis succeeded Gifford as agent of Iron-Works.

From this time onward an increased amount of trouble and annoyance attended the Iron Company. They had made great inroads into the forests in consequence of the large quantities of charcoal needed, —so much so, that fears were everywhere prevalent that the wood would be exhausted and the country impoverished.

Debts and law-suits increased.

In 1671, during the night the dam was cut away and the great pond emptied of its water. This caused much damage.

In 1678 Samuel Appleton, Jr., took possession of the Iron Works, by a grant in the will of William Payne, of Boston. It was estimated there were three thousand acres of iron mill land. Mr. Appleton then owned three-fourths of the Iron Works, valued at £1500, but, in 1683, the heirs of Major Thomas Savage sold the remaining fourth to Mr. Appleton, who thus owned the whole property.

In 1688 Mr. Appleton sold the entire works to James Taylor, of Boston, and it was about this time that they probably ceased operations entirely. Vexatious law-suits had much to do with hastening its cessation, but it would rather seem probable that the supply of iron-ore had nearly become exhausted.

From the foregoing details it is plainly established that the enterprise at Saugus embraced a blast-furnace or "foundery," and a refining forge. The term "foundery" was long a synonyme for "furnace," castings being made directly from the furnace.

This practice continued in this country down to almost the middle of the present century, and is still followed in many European countries. That the furnace was in operation in May, 1645, is certain, and that the forge was in operation in September, 1648, is equally certain.

These dates may be accepted as definitely determining the first successful attempts in this country to make "sowe iron" and other castings in a blast-furnace, and to make "barr iron" in a refining forge from "sowe iron."

Mill-Site in East Saugus.—In October, 1721, certain citizens of Lynn, viz., Benjamin Potter, Jacob Newhall and William Curtis, were granted a right to build a tide-mill at East Saugus Bridge, but these men failing to build, the right was given, in 1722, to Thomas Cheever and Ebenezer Merriam, and they at once built a mill with two run of stones for grinding corn. This mill was a small one-story building built upon the west side of the river, and likely upon the very spot now occupied by the south end of the present mill.

Merriam sold to Cheever in 1729, and August 10, 1738 Cheever sold the property to Joseph Gould for six hundred and twenty pounds.

Gould was a Quaker, but not a native of Lynn. He was a prudent, energetic business man. Within a few years after the purchase he built for himself, adjoining the mill, a two-story dwelling-house, one room of which he occupied for a small grocery-store. This dwelling-house was taken down in 1844. Joseph Gould owned and occupied the mill till his death, in 1774. His widow continued in possession up to about 1785, when, through neglect to make necessary repairs, it became unserviceable. The flood-gates no longer kept the water in the mill-pond, but it was allowed to ebb and flow with the tide.

This state of things continued for seven years, until 1792, when the Widow Gould died.

It was then, in 1792, that George Makepeace, Esq., of Boston, bought the mill of the heirs for nine hundred dollars. This was an important time for this mill privilege. Mr. Makepeace had been a leading importing merchant at Boston. He at once tore down the old one-story mill, and in its place built a good two-story building. This was built in 1794, and comprises about two-thirds of the present building, being the central part. In this mill he put two runs of stones for grinding corn and in the northerly end two mortars for grinding snuff. These snuff-mortars were rimmed out of large buttonwood-logs in their rude state with the bark on.

This was the beginning of the snuff business which has made Saugus renowned.

It was through the advice of Samuel Fales that Mr. Makepeace undertook the snuff business, which, in 1798, he transferred to his nephew, Jonathan Makepeace, who continued it for about fifty years, up to 1844, making his snuff, known as "Makepeace's snuff," which obtained a reputation in all parts of the country. He gave his constant personal attention to the making of this snuff from the very best of leaf-tobacco, cured in the most careful way; it was then ground and scented and put up in small wooden kegs, with his own autograph on each. He was a very methodical man, upright in all his dealings, and generous to all worthy objects, for many years a consistent member of the Methodist Church, and respected by the entire community. He was more familiarly known as Major Makepeace.

Chocolate Business.—About 1796 the chocolate business had its beginning in this mill. Mr. Makepeace at this time put on an addition to the northerly end of the mill for a chocolate-factory. Another water-wheel was also put in.

The machinery for roasting, cracking and fanning the cocoa was run by chains from horizontal shafts. The noise and din of such machinery was indescribable. Benjamin Sweetser, Amos Rhodes and Deacon John Wait were the first chocolate manufacturers, and the business was continued for many years by Mr. Amariah Childs.

The following extract is from the pen of my father, Benjamin F. Newhall, Esq., as printed in the *Lynn Reporter* in his sketches of Saugus :

He says in regard to the chocolate business here,—

"In 1812 the last war with England commenced, which gave a new impetus to the chocolate business.

"The mill was overwhelmed with work, so that it was carried on in summer, and the cooling was done in cellars. Mr. Childs, with others, entered quite largely into the manufacture, which yielded, in the beginning of the war, a large profit.

"Very soon, with the large demand, cocoa began to advance in price, and continued to do so till it rose from eight cents per pound to thirty-three cents, a rise of over three hundred per cent.

"After this extreme, it soon receded, and finally settled into a healthy trade.

"One of the most amusing things connected with this old chocolate manufacture was the pretended art and skill indispensable to a successful issue. This art and skill was believed to be a secret possessed by only here and there an individual.

"Even the persons who carried on the manufacture did not pretend to any knowledge of the art.

"It seemed to be a general concession by the public that the science of the manufacture was unknown, except to a very few, who had obtained it, by great labor and expense, from Spain or South America.

"This acknowledgement gave the pretenders a superiority, and placed them in a position not only to be honored, but to be well paid.

"The man who had brass enough to carry the pretence through successfully, managed everything about to his own mind.

"In my early boyhood I used to work in this chocolate-mill, as consid-

erable of the work could be done by boys better than by men. The grand magician of that early day was Josiah Rhodes, nicknamed 'Slim Cæsar.'

"He exercised the most unlimited control over the whole establishment. So arbitrary was he in the exercise of his pretended skill that scarcely anyone dared to look at the chocolate in process of manufacture. The *roaster* and *stirring-kettle* were objects forbidden by him to be examined by the ignorant world. I well remember with what veneration I used to look upon this aged, cadaverous veteran. The smoke of the roaster could be seen curling up over the fire, but none had the courage, in his presence, to smell of the forbidden odor.

"Occasionally a small, mysterious white powder, from a piece of clean white paper, would be cast into the roaster, or the kettle, in a mysterious and magical manner, completely blinding the eyes of the uninitiated. Such was the dignity and haughtiness attendant upon the exercise of his skill that he rarely ever smiled or spoke when engaged.

"Even his employers hardly ever dared to ask a question. Men who labored years under him never dared to raise a pretence of knowing anything. Such were the pretended mysteries of the trade in olden times."

About 1800 George Makepeace built himself a dwelling-house on the north side of the river, near the mill. He also built a small building for a nail factory, with machinery to cut nails by hand. This business was carried on for five or six years very vigorously.

A machine was also put in for picking oakum, but this proved a failure.

Another unprofitable expenditure of Mr. Makepeace was the erection of a saw-mill on the north side of the river. To do this he had to dig a channel across the highway. Long after the saw-mill had ceased to be used this channel was filled up by the town of Lynn in 1820.

About 1806 Mr. Makepeace leased the mill premises to Amariah Childs, and in 1812 he sold the mill property to said Childs.

In 1813 Mr. Makepeace removed to Charlestown, where he died in 1820, about eighty years of age.

Mr. Childs continued the business at the mill from 1806 to 1840, and very early in this period he added the business of grinding spices.

This spice-grinding was done for Boston merchants, the spice being teamed out from Boston, and after being ground and put into barrels, was teamed back again.

It was not then put into small packages with showy labels as we now see it on the grocers' shelves.

In 1844 Mr. Childs sold the whole mill property to Charles Sweetser, Esq., for eight thousand dollars.

During all these years, with uninterrupted fidelity, Mr. Jonathan Makepeace had continued the snuff business in the mill; but now he gave up the business to Mr. Sweetser, who took out the old snuff machinery and put in nine new snuff mortars and also new water-wheels. He also removed the chocolate machinery and instead put in machinery for roasting and grinding coffee.

Indeed, the whole mill was put into excellent order. Mr. Sweetser, who lived in Cliftondale, where was his business office, carried on the grinding of snuff in the mill, while he leased the rest of the mill to different parties. First to Childs & Raddin, then to Josiah Starr for a short time, and finally, January 1, 1858, to Herbert B. Newhall, who has continued the spice and coffee business up to the present time.

Mr. Sweetser died in 1865, but some years before this he relinquished the snuff business to his two sons, Charles A. and George H. Sweetser, who did a very large business.

The mill now, in 1887, is owned by Charles A. Sweetser. About four years ago the snuff machinery was removed and the whole mill has since been occupied by Mr. H. B. Newhall, he adding to his business the grinding and preparation of herbs.

Almost while I am writing, a fire has occurred in the above mill, which has caused its nearly total destruction. Very early Friday morning, July 8, 1887, a fire was discovered in the southerly end of the mill and such was its rapid spread that the whole mill was instantly enveloped in flames.

The fire department from Lynn responded at once, and were successful in preventing the further spread of the fire.

But the mill was left a wreck; only its charred outer walls are standing. It was insured for six thousand dollars.

Nothing was saved of the stock of H. B. Newhall.

So closes the eventful history of this noted old mill.

PRANKER'S MILLS.—The present dam is about five rods above the locality of the old iron-works dam.

About 1770 Ebenezer Hawkes made a rude dam upon the site of the present one, and excavated, in part, the present canal. He built a grist-mill and saw-mill.

In 1794 Benjamin Sweetser bought the mills and property. He was a chocolate manufacturer, and had carried the business on to some extent with horse power, in a building near his residence, which stood in what is now known as Cliftondale, on the Old Boston Road, where now stands the public house known as "Sunny Side House." This factory building was removed, in 1797, into the Village of East Saugus, and was afterwards owned and occupied for many years by Jonathan Makepeace. It has subsequently been removed again into Lynn, and now stands on Hawkes Hill, located one-quarter of a mile east of the river. But to return again to the mill site. About two years after buying, Major Sweetser built a new building for a chocolate-mill about seventy feet northwest of the grist-mill. From this period, 1796, he enlarged and extended his business, and very soon became one of the most renowned chocolate makers in the country. The name of Benjamin Sweetser stamped on every cake of the glossy chocolate gave it a reputation that none other had. About 1800 Major Sweetser erected a dwelling-house north of the factory, which is now standing; here he lived until his death, in 1819. From 1816 to 1820 the chocolate

manufacture was in a very prosperous condition, and the mill was rented to William Smith, who manufactured chocolate for Messrs. Chase & Page, of Salem. During this time the chocolate was made in exact imitation of the Spanish, and found a ready sale in the New Orleans market and for export.

From 1815 to 1822 the grist and saw-mills were leased to Robert Eames, who ground dye-woods, principally cam-wood. A very large business was done. About 1822, William Gray, of Boston, otherwise familiarly known as "Billy Gray," removed his manufacture of duck-cloth from Stoneham to Saugus. He took the Stoneham factory building to pieces and removed it to this locality, placing it between the chocolate-mill and the grist-mill, and forming but one building about one hundred and fifty feet in length. The duck was made of flax and hemp. But this business lasted only about one and a half years.

In 1824 the premises were leased to Brown & Baldwin for the purpose of bleaching and printing calico. John Haskins, of Boston, was soon associated with them under the firm-name of Brown, Baldwin & Haskins. A large amount of money was expended in new building and further improvements, followed by business embarrassment and final suspension at the end of 1825.

In 1826 the property passed to True & Brodhead, who continued the business. They repaired and raised the dam, which led to tedious lawsuits for flowage damages. During the ownership of Messrs. True & Brodhead, in 1829, the flannel manufacture was begun by Messrs. Brierly & Whitehead, who leased a portion of the old mill. This was the beginning of a business which has since given to Saugus a reputation as well as permanent prosperity.

In 1830 Mr. Brodhead withdrew, and Mr. Street entered the firm as True & Street; they continued until 1832, when their failure suspended business. It was during this time that they built a large brick factory, eighty-five by forty feet, and three stories high, which is now standing, but in consequence of a fire, in 1866, the upper story and roof were removed; it is now two stories high, with flat roof. In 1834 Whitwell, Bond & Co. were the owners; they introduced the business of cleaning and assorting wool. In 1835 another change in ownership took place, and Messrs. Livermore & Kendall, of Boston, became possessors and managers—professedly by the New England Wool Company,—the establishment was known as Rockville. In 1836 they removed to Framingham, and all business at the mills ceased for about two years.

In 1838 Edward Pranker, Esq., bought the property and removed from Salem, N. H. The mill underwent a thorough renovation and new machinery was put in. Although a period of great financial depression, yet Mr. Pranker showed energy and zeal in his business, which prospered from the first.

In 1846, finding the old brick building too small for his increasing business, he built another brick factory adjoining the old one on the west, seventy by fifty feet, three stories high. Both factories were complete, with six sets of cards, thirteen jacks and forty looms. Each jack carried one hundred and eighty spindles.

In 1857 Mr. Pranker associated with himself in the business his son, George Pranker and John Armitage, the new firm being Edward Pranker & Co. Frame buildings were built on the south side of the road for wool-pulling and tanning sheepskin pelts.

In 1860 Mr. Pranker built a new brick building, one hundred and twenty-five by sixty feet, and two stories high, putting in four sets of woolen machinery. This building was placed on the east side of the road, nearly opposite the old brick mill, and extending northerly almost to the river.

Mr. Edward Pranker died in 1865. He was born in Wilton, England, in 1792; by occupation he was a weaver of woolen goods; he came to America in 1820.

After Mr. Pranker's death his son George and Mr. John Parsons continued the business up to 1877, but the death of Mr. George Pranker brought a suspension of the business for about two years.

In April, 1879, six grandchildren of Edward Pranker associated themselves together under the name of the "Pranker Manufacturing Company," and have continued the woolen-cloth business up to the present time.

They have increased the business each year, and have constantly been adding new and improved machinery. They now employ about one hundred operatives. They manufactured the past year goods valued at three hundred thousand dollars, requiring about four hundred and fifty thousand pounds of clean wool.

The principal goods are all-wool shirtings and ladies' dress-goods and sackings of all colors and shades. Also plain and twilled flannels.

The fire, in February 1866, damaged the two brick mills adjoining each other on the westerly side of the road, and caused a change in their restoration; the older mill being lowered to two stories, while the newer mill, built in 1846, was raised to a four-story building; flat roofs were placed on both. These two buildings, together with the brick building on the east side of the road, containing six sets of machinery, now make up the principal buildings in use by this company,—in all ten sets of machinery. On the east side of [the road, opposite the oldest mill, they have a large brick steam boiler building, furnishing steam for power and heat for all the mills, of about two hundred horse-power. In 1884 they built a round brick chimney, one hundred feet high and ten feet diameter at the base, adjoining the boiler building.

Scott's Mills.—About 1810 Joseph Emes, Esq.,

then a young man of twenty-three years of age, bought this property, and in 1811 finished the dam and erected a two-and-a-half-story brick building for a morocco manufactory and other business. In 1813 Mr. Emes put in a grist-mill with one run of stones. At this time Robert Emes, Esq., his brother, united with him in business. They did a prosperous business.

In 1812 a fulling-mill for softening skins and hides was added to the establishment.

In 1817 the grist-mill was changed into one for the grinding of dye-stuffs, principally camwood. This business continued for about four years.

After 1821 Joseph Emes continued the business himself, manufacturing kid and morocco, with the grist and fulling-mills running as business could be obtained.

In 1834 James Brierly leased a part of the brick factory for the manufacture of hair and woolen rags.

In 1844 Mr. Emes erected a saw-mill upon the eastern bank of the river, which was operated for about two years.

In the spring of 1847 the brick factory was burned, with all the stock and machinery therein. This led to the selling of the property by Mr. Emes to Francis Scott, Esq., a merchant of Salem, in 1848. He at once repaired the dam, and erected on the northwest side of the river a large brick factory building, eighty-five by fifty feet and four stories high, put in all necessary machinery, and commenced the manufacture of flannel. In 1857 his son, A. A. Scott, was taken into the business as a partner, under the firm-name of Francis Scott & Son. In 1862 Mr. Francis Scott was thrown from a cart, severely injured and died soon after his injury, since which time the business has been carried on by his son, under the same style of firm.

Mr. A. A. Scott now employs about fifty workmen and workwomen. He manufactures all-wool flannels and dress goods. He makes eight hundred thousand yards annually, both fine and coarse grades. Improved machinery has been put in; also a steam-engine of eighty horse-power, with which the factory can be run whenever the water-power is insufficient.

North Saugus.—In 1814 the manufacture of linen duck was started in North Saugus. A dam was built across the river at a short distance west of the Newburyport Turnpike, and about a hundred rods above the bridge through which the river flows under the Turnpike.

A company was formed under the name of the Lynn Linen-Spinning Factory Company. The active men in the enterprise were Joseph R. Newhall and Amos Binney, of Boston. A large three-story frame building, situated on the east side of the river, was built, but the peace of 1815, together with sundry lawsuits for flowage damage, soon caused a suspension of business.

In 1816 Joel Fox undertook to revive the drooping energies of the concern by introducing machinery for making fine linen cloth, and also shoe-thread. After a trial of three years he sold out and removed. The building was divided and set off to different persons to satisfy their judgments for damages. Thus in five years arose, flourished and died the "Linen-Factory," so-called.

Let us leave this spot and go perhaps a half a mile to the north, into the present village of North Saugus. Directly opposite to the school-house, on the easterly side of the highway, where now are found the artificial works of the city of Lynn for diverting the water of Hawkes Brook for their own use; it was here, on the south slope of a bluff of land that in 1816 Nathaniel Perry built a large frame building and put in machinery for spinning and weaving linen, at the same time building a dam across the brook close by. In the same year (1816) John Clark and James Howlett purchased land about ten rods northwest of Perry's mill, on Hawkes Brook, and built a dam and a frame building, and began the manufacture of Rappee snuff.

The effort of Mr. Perry to establish a linen-factory, after about a year's labor, proved a failure. Mr. Perry sold out to John Clark and James Howlett, who at once introduced the snuff business into this building. A canal was dug across the bluff of land, about fifteen rods long, so that the water of both streams could be connected into one pond when necessary.

The snuff business continued some two years, when this ceased also.

In 1828 John Clark, Esq., put into the large building the necessary machinery for a grist and chocolate-mill. This business continued for about three years, when the whole was discontinued and the dams removed. Hardly a vestige now remains to mark either site.

There is left but one other point in North Saugus for us to notice where business was early started.

About a half a mile westerly from the school-house, on the Wakefield road, is situated an old mill-site, on Saugus River. It is now owned by Byron S. Hone, who has a saw-mill in operation.

In 1811 Dr. John Hart, David Pratt, E. Weston and others were incorporated under the name of the "Lynn Wire and Screw Manufacturing Company" at this point; land was purchased, the dam was built and a suitable building erected in 1812. Although the business was commenced with vigor, yet misfortune soon attended this company, and failure and suspension followed. From 1816 to 1819 very little use was made of the property, and in the latter year it passed into the possession of John Clark, Esq., of Boston, who at once changed its use into a snuff-mill. This purchase influenced, in part, the removal from the two other snuff-mills, before alluded to. Eight large mortars were at once introduced into this new mill, and arrangements made for a large business.

James Howlett had charge and superintendence, but

afterwards bought the mill, and at his death his son, John Howlett, bought out the other heirs, and continued the snuff business, and the cutting of tobacco into what was called "fine-cut." A few years before selling the mill to Mr. Hone, Mr. Howlett removed the snuff-mortars and tobacco-cutter and put in instead a saw and shingle-mill, which have continued in operation to the present time.

In 1871 Mr. John Howlett sold the mill property to Philip P. Hone. At his death it passed to his only son, Byron S. Hone, who is the present owner.

Cliftondale Tobacco Business.—That portion of the town now called Cliftondale was formerly for many years known as Sweetser's Corner. The growth and prosperity of this village is to be traced to its manufacture of tobacco in its various forms, viz., snuff, chewing and smoking tobacco, and cigars, which had its beginning at the very close of the last century.

The pioneer in this business was William Sweetser, known as William Sweetser, Jr. He manufactured snuff in a hand-mill previous to this century and sold his product principally in Salem and Marblehead.

Following close upon Mr. Sweetser was Samuel Copp. He was a native of Boston, and his mother was a sister of the wife of Landlord Newhall. Having the misfortune to lose his father at an early age, he was apprenticed to a tobacconist. During this time his mother removed to Saugus and resided in the family of Landlord Newhall, where she died before he reached his majority.

On completing his apprenticeship he at once repaired to Saugus and commenced a very small business, first in East Saugus, then in Lynn on Boston Street near Federal Street, but after a very few years he removed to Cliftondale built him a house and shop and married for his second wife another daughter of William Sweetser who lived close by. This was about 1807. Mr. Copp's house, with the shop a few feet west, stood on the spot now occupied by the palatial residence of Mr. Charles H. Bond.

His factory was a two-story frame building and the business then consisted mainly in the manufacture of "Fig and Pig-tail," as they were then called. The upper story was wholly devoted to hand labor and spinning "pig-tail;" in the lower story were stout wooden screws in strong oaken frames, where the manufactured tobacco was pressed into boxes or kegs.

Previous to the establishment of Samuel Copp only one house existed at the "Corner;" this was the house of William Sweetser, and it is now standing, having been owned and occupied for many years past by the late Charles M. Bond.

Mr. Copp continued the business till 1820, when he sold out to Charles Sweetser, son of William Sweetser, who added the manufacture of cigars known as "short sixes" and "long nines," and also began the manufacture of snuff, first grinding the snuff at Salem until 1844, when, purchasing the mill-site at East Saugus, he removed his snuff-grinding thereto. It will be seen that Mr. Charles Sweetser greatly enlarged the business, and a market was found all over the United States and British provinces and to some extent in foreign countries.

In 1860 Mr. Charles Sweetser gave up the business to his two sons, Charles A. and George H. Sweetser, who carried it on under the firm-name of Sweetser Brothers.

During these years many others took up the same business, viz., Charles Raddin, who was an extensive manufacturer, also S. S. Dunn, Charles M. Bond, Silas S. Trull, Thomas F. Downing, Hiram A. Raddin and John M. Raddin.

At the beginning of the Rebellion, in 1861, the cigar manufacture practically ceased, on account of the Southern market being lost and the heavy internal revenue tax placed on these low-priced goods. Pipe-smoking was resorted to.

The manufacture of snuff continued throughout and since the war with little variation until the past five years, when it began to decrease.

Now, in 1887, Joseph A. Raddin, under the firm-name of F. L. & J. A. Raddin, conducts the business of his father Charles, having also bought out the Sweetser Brothers' business in November, 1885. Mr. Raddin's business is largely in cut smoking tobacco, some brands of which have become very popular.

The other manufacturers of to-day are S. S. Trull, Edward O. Copp, grandson of Samuel Copp, M. S. Fiske and Copp & Gibbons, all of whom, excepting Copp & Gibbons, confine their business to cigars.

Crockery-ware.—The road which now leads from Cliftondale to Saugus Centre, called Central Street, soon after leaving the village of Cliftondale, descends a hill and crosses a swamp or peat meadow. This was known as "Jackson's Meadow." It contains an inexhaustible quantity of peat, which many years ago was utilized by the inhabitants to a small extent.

Underlying this peat deposit is a deposit of very fine blue clay.

In 1808, or thereabouts, William Jackson, an Englishman by birth and education, came to Saugus (then Lynn), and bought a small farm at what is now Cliftondale, together with a part of the meadow before mentioned.

He became aware of this deposit of fine clay and its adaptability for crockery-ware.

The embargo and War of 1810 and 1812 coming on rendered the importation of crockery very difficult. Mr. Jackson at once built a large building and two smaller ones. He procured the best machinery and most skillful workmen possible at that time, but he soon found out that the clay was not adapted for the finest kind of ware, and so his manufacture was confined to a superior kind of brown and red earthenware.

This factory was continued for about four years, when, becoming unprofitable, it was totally abandoned.

Shoe Business.—We will now rapidly sketch the rise and progress of the shoe business in Saugus. Let us go back to 1802, when our territory was included in the town of Lynn. It was in this year that Ebenezer Oakman, Esq., a young man of active business talents, began the manufacture of shoes on the northern side of our river, about ten rods from the bridge, in East Saugus. He built a small factory, which he enlarged in 1807, and also built a new factory in the same year, and again in 1810 he built a much larger factory, connecting it with a large barn fifty feet northerly by a lower building. At that time this was undoubtedly the largest shoe factory in Lynn. Mr. Oakman's market was found largely in Philadelphia, whither his shoes were shipped by sailing-vessels from Boston. His example and zeal were contagious in the community.

During the War of 1812, it being too dangerous to send his shoes to Philadelphia by packet, he established a line of large baggage-wagons, drawn by six horses, with two skillful drivers, making the transit to Philadelphia and back in about six weeks' time. This was continued during the war, although at great expense. Among his teamsters were Captain Jacob Newhall, Jesse Rice and Captain Jacob Baird.

During this time Mr. Oakman was indefatigable in his business, both at Lynn and Philadelphia, spending a part of his time at each place. He commenced, to some extent, also the manufacture of gentlemen's calf boots. After the peace of 1815 the business was not prosecuted with so much vigor, although Mr. Oakman continued it till about 1818. After that period he closed his business here and removed to Philadelphia for a permanent residence.

This was a great detriment to Saugus, for soon the factory buildings were cut up and removed to different parts of the town and made into dwellings. In those days shoes were manufactured very differently from what they are at this time. The leather and kid were brought to the factory and cut up in the rudest manner. The uppers, binding, soles, thread and everything necessary was counted out to the workman, who took them away in a bag or basket to his house or a small shop near the same, and while the women folks bound the uppers, he put on the soles and finished them entirely ready for market, after which he carried them to the boss, and returned home with a new week's work.

After Mr. Oakman's removal, the shoe business was carried on in a very small way for a number of years, until about 1825. It was at this period that a number of resolute and active young men, natives of our town, took up the business and carried it on with uniform success. These were Thomas Raddin, Jr., George W. Raddin, Sewall Raddin, Jacob Newhall, Jr., Abel Newhall and Benjamin F. Newhall. It was from this time until 1838 that these manufacturers did a large and prosperous business.

John W. Newhall began business in 1841; James C. Lockwood, Levi D. Waldron and Pickmore Jackson in 1842; Charles W. Newhall in 1847; Harmon Hall and Charles E. Raddin in 1850. Mr. Hall was associated with John W. Newhall from 1852 to 1855, but after this he continued the business himself for many years. But from this time onward the shoe business of Saugus began to decline.

This was caused by the entire revolution of the manner of manufacturing shoes. Machinery was taking the place of hand labor. The workmen were congregated together in large factories instead of being scattered about the town and country in their little shops.

There was an advantage, as well as convenience, to the manufacturers themselves to be in a narrow locality. So our manufacturers, one by one, began to leave us, removing their business into the centre of the city of Lynn, or elsewhere, so that at this time (1887) there is only one shoe manufacturer, L. Waldo Collins, doing business in East Saugus. Our people, men and women, find their employment in Lynn, going down in the morning and returning in the evening, either by horse-cars or steam railroad.

But we must not forget to speak of the shoe business in the centre of the town.

Among the early shoe manufacturers in the centre of the town we will mention Moses Mansfield, who died in 1806; he lived in the Capen house. Also his brother, Thomas Mansfield, who lived in the Adam Ames house, now owned by Mr. Scott. Also Richard Mansfield, who died in 1824; he lived on Main Street, where Mr. Follett now lives. His shop was opposite.

In 1818 Benjamin Hitchings moved into town and commenced the shoe business, and continued in business until about 1850. Latterly he took his two sons, John B. and Otis M., into partnership.

Mr. Hitchings at first lived in the Davis house, on the Cinder Banks, and manufactured there until he removed to his house, and shop connected therewith, on Main Street, near the turnpike, where he died.

Of the early shoe manufacturers Mr. Hitchings was by far the largest, often employing from forty to fifty hands.

David Newhall and W. W. Boardman manufactured from 1830 to 1850.

Otis M. Hitchings manufactured from 1846 to 1872, employing some years one hundred hands.

In 1852 Walton & Wilson commenced the shoe business, and continued until 1879, when they sold out to Charles S. Hitchings, who removed his business, commenced in 1867, into the three-story factory on Central Street, corner of Pearson, said factory having been built by Walton & Wilson in 1872, and occupied

by them up to 1879. Messrs. Walton & Wilson did a large business, often employing as many as a hundred hands, and manufacturing shoes to the amount of one hundred and fifty thousand dollars yearly.

William T. Ash commenced in 1877. His business increasing, he soon removed to O. M. Hitchings' factory, near the depot, where he continued until 1883, when he removed his whole business to Lynn. Mr. Ash at this time was doing a good business, employing some eighty hands.

Charles S. Hitchings, William F. Hitchings and Otis M. Burrill are now the only shoe manufacturers remaining in the Centre. Mr. Charles S. Hitchings, the largest of the three, employs from forty to fifty hands.

Grain-Mill.—In 1850 Benjamin F. Newhall purchased the lands on both sides of Fox Hill Creek, so-called, extending to the Salem turnpike, for the purpose of constructing a grain-mill, and wharf adjoining it on the northerly side. The wharf was built in 1851, and the earth for filling was taken from the southwest side of Ballard Street, making now a part of the mill-pond. Ballard Street was built from the old Boston road in East Saugus to the Salem turnpike in 1850. The grain-mill was built in 1852. From the time of its erection to the present a very large grain business has been done here. And until very recently the grain has been landed in vessels directly to the mill, being raised from the vessel by a large elevator. From fifty to one hundred thousand bushels of corn have been ground annually. Since 1864 Herbert B. Newhall, son of Benjamin F. Newhall, has owned and run this mill. During a few years last past Mr. Newhall has landed his grain by railroad at Lynn Common Depot and carted it to the mill, for the reason that it could be done more cheaply than by vessel.

Brick-Making.—It is now forty-six years since Mr. Frederick Stocker began brick-making in East Saugus, with his yard between Winter Street and the river. Mr. Stocker usually manufactured from one-half million to a million bricks annually. About nineteen years ago he gave up the business to his son Frederick, who continues up to the present time. He makes about one million bricks annually, and consumes thereby about four hundred cords of wood, and gives employment to a dozen men.

As long ago as 1812 Mr. Thomas Raddin made bricks in a yard on the northerly side of the river, where Mr. T. H. Rhodes' house now stands.

Mr. Hatch also made bricks in the same place in 1859 for about two years.

From 1850 to 1860 William M. Newhall also carried on the brick business on the northerly side of the river, not far above the bridge. He manufactured about a million bricks annually, until the clay was practically exhausted. From 1858 to 1860 Mr. H. Hurd had a yard adjoining Mr. Newhall's.

Curled Hair.—In 1848 Enoch T. Kent commenced the business of preparing hair for plastering. He then lived on the place now occupied by William A. Trefethen, in East Saugus.

In 1853 he removed to Cliftondale, and took as a business partner S. R. Marvin, when they enlarged their business, amounting to fifty thousand dollars yearly. They dissolved partnership in 1866, and in 1873 Mr. Kent built a large factory in the Centre, on what is known as Shute's Brook near the railroad depot. This factory was three stories, with basement, and was furnished with steam-power, the brook affording water for washing and scouring purposes. Here he has continued the business up to the present time, not only furnishing hair for plastering, but for spinning and saddlers' and upholsterers' use. He employs about twenty men, and does about fifty thousand dollars business annually. He ships his hair to all parts of the country.

CHAPTER XXIX.

SAUGUS—(*Continued*).

Anchor Tavern—Roads and Bridges—Boston Road—Great Bridge—Salem Turnpike—Newburyport Turnpike—Railroads—Horse Railroads.

Anchor Tavern.—Very early in the settlement of the town, probably as early as 1643, a tavern was established in that part of the town now called East Saugus, on the road from Boston to Salem, and about half-way between these two places. It was built on the Ballard farm, under the brow of the hill, just where the highway turned sharply to the south.

For about one hundred and seventy years it afforded shelter for man and beast, and became, during its history, a famous hostelry, known far and wide.

Joseph Armitage was its first landlord, and from him it received the name of "The Anchor Tavern."

Governors Endicott and Bradstreet early found entertainment here, as the court records, in 1669, show Mr. Armitage's petitions for payment of their expenses for "bear and cacks" (beer and cakes), "vitalls, bear and logen, beare and wyne att sevrall times."

Mr. Armitage died in 1680. But probably many years before this he was succeeded by Captain Thomas Marshall, who was the second landlord and continued to keep the tavern until December 23, 1689, the time of his death. Captain Marshall was a soldier under Cromwell.

We are not informed of the landlords succeeding Captain Marshall until we come to Zaccheus Norwood, who bought the tavern-stand with the Ballard farm in 1760. The house now was very famous and its patronage very large.

Mr. Norwood died in 1768, leaving a widow, who continued to keep the public-house. She afterwards

married an eccentric Englishman, named Josiah Martin, who, by his hypocrisy, gained her affections and afterwards led her a terrible life as landlord.

On May 3d, 1773, Landlord Jacob Newhall became landlord at this tavern. The time of the Revolution was now approaching, and it was not long before Landlord Newhall took down the Anchor Tavern sign, with the lion and unicorn, and substituted in its place the "Rising Sun Tavern," with a painted representation of the morning sun just appearing above the horizon. Landlord Newhall was an ardent patriot, and his means were freely spent for the country. No one was allowed to go hungry past his house. He continued its landlord until about 1800, and when he left it. carried away scarcely anything but a good name to show for his many years' labor.

It was in 1800 that the tavern and the entire farm came back into the possession of the Ballard family, and in 1802 Mr. John Ballard built a new public-house, about nine rods south of the old tavern. This was the time that the Salem turnpike was building. Mr. Ballard had prevented the turnpike from being built over his farm.

Disappointment was in store for him in regard to his new public-house, for as soon as the turnpike was opened the travel was diverted and the stand was ruined.

Joseph Palmer was the landlord of the new hotel; but he continued only until the opening of the turnpike, when he went to Lynn to take charge of the Lynn Hotel.

From 1815 to 1822 Mr. Ballard made the hotel building his own homestead.

After this it continued a checkered career as a public-house until 1871, when it was purchased by Wilbur F. Newhall, and removed a few hundred feet east, so as to make room for a new dwelling.

The old Anchor Tavern building continued to stand during these years of the new hotel, serving as a farm-house, until 1836, when it was torn down to make room for a new street—now Lincoln Avenue—leading down to the bridge.

Roads and Bridges.—The old Boston road, formerly so called, running through East Saugus and Cliftondale, was one of our earliest roads. It crossed the river at East Saugus, where the upland on either bank approached so near to the river's edge as to leave but little salt marsh. Here was a natural fording-place at low tide; and it was here that the General Court, June 6, 1639, ordered, "That those of Lynn shall have £50 from the country towards the building of a cart-bridge over the river there; when the bridge is finished, to be allowed them."

On petition of the town, October 27, 1648, the court further ordered, "That there shall from henceforth be allowed thirty shillings per annum out of the treasury of the county towards the maintenance of the said bridge, for which the inhabitants of Lynn are forever to repair it."

This action was probably caused by a sad accident which occurred at the bridge, March, 1648, to Edmund Ingalls, one of the first settlers, then an old man.

It would seem that the bridge must have been decayed and out of repair, for Mr. Ingalls, while crossing on horseback, fell through and was drowned. His heirs recovered from the State one hundred pounds. The court appropriated at once twenty pounds more for immediate repairs.

May 23, 1655, the court again ordered that a committee should rebuild the bridge, and the County Court should apportion the expense among the towns of the county. It so remained a county charge until a joint committee of Lynn and Saugus, in 1815, agreed that the two towns "shall support said bridge equally, in conjunction with the county."

This bridge, sometimes called the "Great Bridge," with Boston Street, was an important avenue of communication for the whole county, and indeed we might say the only one until the building of the Salem turnpike, in 1803. Before the bridge was built it was necessary to make a long circuit to the Centre, where was found the only safe fording-place at the head of tide water. This circuit made at least two and one-half miles extra travel up one side of the river and down the other.

There has been some difference of opinion in regard to the location of an ancient ferry. In 1639 the General Court granted to Garrett Spencer "the ferry at Linn for 2 years." The law also regulated the tolls. It is generally thought that this ferry was from Needham's Landing in Lynn, to what is now called the Lower Landing, on Ballard Street, in East Saugus. In those days it undoubtedly was a great accommodation to travelers on foot or horseback, and especially before the building of the bridge at E. Saugus.

Another very early road was from Boston Street, leaving the same near where the Methodist Church now stands in East Saugus, and going up on the southerly side of the river, substantially where Winter Street is now located; but when reaching where now is the New Cemetery it bore to the left, where the old track is now seen and can be traveled, going on westerly near where Denver Street now is to Vine and Main Streets, and then on to the west part of the town and to Reading.

Another road branched off this, going northerly, near where Central Street now is, to the iron works, and to the fording-place across the river.

The road from Lynn, now called Walnut Street, passing Birch Brook, and on to North Saugus and Lynnfield, is also a very old road.

It was near this road, on Choose Hill, so-called, that it was proposed to build the Old Tunnel parish church, so as to accommodate the parishioners from

Lynn, Saugus and Lynnfield, this being near the geographical centre. But this project was soon abandoned, and three parishes was the result.

The road from Lincoln Avenue, in Cliftondale, to Saugus Centre, now called Central Street, was built by the town in 1837.

The road running from Lincoln Avenue, in East Saugus, to the Salem turnpike, now called Ballard St., was built in 1850. The expense of its construction was borne by the town of Saugus, Essex County, the turnpike corporation and the owners of the land. A bridge was built across Fox Hill Creek. It gave a very convenient and easy access to the public town landing.

Salem and Boston Turnpike.—The charter for the construction of the Salem turnpike was obtained in 1801. Very great opposition was made to this road by the towns of Danvers and Malden, and by the Malden Bridge corporation, who had, only nine years before, built their bridge over the Mystic River, a mile to the west of the proposed Chelsea Bridge.

This turnpike was doomed to divert the great current of travel from the old Boston road, in Saugus, to a passage over its lonely salt marshes.

But public utility triumphed over local interests, and the turnpike was built and opened for travel from Salem to Lynn, July 5, 1803, and on September 22, 1803, over the entire length to Chelsea.

On September 22, 1807, the turnpike and bridges were declared to be fully finished.

The traffic over the turnpike constantly increased up to 1838, when, in consequence of the opening of the Eastern Railroad, the stage travel ceased, other travel decreased, the tolls were reduced and the stock of the corporation fell to almost or quite forty dollars a share. This turnpike was made a public highway in 1868.

The Newburyport Turnpike.—The charter for the construction of this turnpike was obtained in 1802. It was finished about 1805, and the cost was nearly $480,000.

About four miles of this turnpike is in Saugus, passing through the town from north to south. At the time this road was built Salem and Newburyport were rival commercial towns. Salem was about building an air-line turnpike to Boston, and so Newburyport could do nothing less.

It was made straight, regardless alike of settlements on either side, or of hills and swamps on the direct line. And although the shrewdest men of Newburyport were its projectors, yet it proved from its completion not only to be a ruinous investment, but a stupendous folly. Grass soon overgrew its road-bed.

From 1840 to 1846 the tolls were discontinued, and the turnpike became a public highway in the several towns through which it passed, making a heavy burden to many towns, especially Saugus.

Railroads.—The Eastern Railroad was chartered in 1836 and was opened to travel in 1838. Although its route passed through a portion of Saugus territory, over the salt marshes between Saugus and Chelsea Rivers, in the very southern extremity of the township, yet the town was not recognized in its location and charter.

But this railroad as located afforded small accommodations to our citizens, who were still obliged for many years to travel a distance of two and three miles to Breed's Wharf Depot, in West Lynn. A very small westerly portion of the town found the Boston and Maine Railroad at Melrose nearer.

Our present railroad accommodations with Boston and Lynn, in all thirty-one daily trains both ways, have not been obtained without long struggles and many changes extending through years.

The earliest efforts for a railroad through Saugus were made just previous to 1844.

Benjamin Goodrich and others petitioned for a charter from Salem to Boston, passing through South Danvers (now Peabody), West Lynn, East Saugus, East Malden (now Linden and Maplewood), Malden Centre and thence into Boston. This route was surveyed over the Ballard farm and south of Baker's hill.

After two or three years' fruitless trial for a charter before the Legislature this project was abandoned. The Eastern Railroad was the main opponent.

We wish to mention here the name of Joshua Webster, Esq., as the man, among many others, to whose untiring energy and zeal we finally obtained railroad accommodations. Formerly of Lynn, he at this early time bought a large farm in Maplewood, known as the "Wait Farm," and removed thither. He was determined to have a railroad through his farm. In 1846 he projected a railroad from East Saugus to Malden, connecting with the Boston and Maine Railroad. The route was through the centre of Saugus, thence down the valley of the Newburyport turnpike through Maplewood to Malden, a distance of over five miles. In 1847 a petition was presented to the Legislature for a charter. To oppose this project, the Eastern Railroad brought forward a scheme to build a branch railroad from Breed's Wharf Depot in Lynn through East Saugus to Saugus Centre. A survey was at once made and petitions presented to the General Court.

The war for these rival routes first began in Saugus, and then in all its warmth was carried to the Legislature. The Legislature gave a charter to the Malden route. Among the leading men who favored this route were Joshua Webster, Daniel P. Wise, G. G. Hubbard, G. W. Raddin, George Pearson and Edward Pranker. The company was soon organized, and Joshua Webster chosen president. This was in the spring of 1848. In 1849 the charter was amended,

so as to change the location from the turnpike valley and run through Cliftondale and Linden to Malden. Still another step remained. In 1850 a further amendment to the charter was obtained to extend the branch from East Saugus to Lynn Common; thus, by yearly advances, the Malden branch party obtained all they wished; Lynn could be reached in the interest of the Boston and Maine Railroad. This amendment was obtained in spite of the greatest opposition of the Eastern Railroad.

The difficult problem now was to get the stock taken and to build the road.

It was publicly stated that if the residents along the route would take half the stock, some one stood ready to take the remainder. Who could this be? Perhaps the Boston and Maine Railroad. It was now July, 1851. Something must be done at once or the charter would be forfeited. A meeting of the shareholders was called at the Saugus Town Hall. Mr. Edward Crane rose and said he would take the remainder of the stock. But another month brought new fears and complications. In August it became known that Mr. Crane had sold all his stock to the Eastern Railroad. Was this to be a defeat to the whole project? Not so; thanks to a few energetic men, led by Mr. Joshua Webster of Maplewood. Contracts for its construction were given out in November, 1851, and the ground was broken on Pearson's Neck, so-called, in Saugus, February 1852.

In October 1852, the following directors were chosen: G. G. Hubbard, Joshua Webster, Benjamin F. Newhall, Albert Thorndike, Isaiah Breed, B. T. Reed and Samuel Hooper. G. G. Hubbard was chosen president, and George Hood treasurer.

In February 1854, the branch was so far completed that an engine and two cars were provided for it, and by the latter part of the month four trains each way were run from Lynn Common Depot to Edgeworth, in Malden, there connecting with the Boston and Maine Railroad.

Then one small car more than accommodated all its patrons. The experiment of combining car and locomotive was tried. It caused a great deal of merriment and was nick-named the "tea-kettle;" this was soon set aside.

The railroad barely paid its running expenses. The Eastern Railroad now became its sole owner, and they at once built the two connecting links necessary to make the Branch a part of their railroad system, viz., a link from Lynn Common Depot to Breed's Wharf Depot, and the other link from Malden Centre to South Malden (now Everett). Thus was established, in 1854, our railroad facilities substantially as they exist to-day, only instead of four trains we now have sixteen trains each way daily.

Since the building of our railroad Malden has become a city; its territory is rapidly filling up with residences, so that the overflow is now reaching our town and everything bids fair for a rapid growth of Saugus.

Horse Railroads.—Our horse railroads began by the granting of two charters to two rival companies in the spring of 1859, requiring cars to be run on each by November 20, 1860, on penalty of loss of charter.

One was the Lynn and Boston Railroad, which built its track over the Salem turnpike, thus running across the extreme southerly part of the town over the salt marshes. So far as the accommodation to the people of Saugus, this road was of very little moment; still, after great difficulty, it was built so that regular trips were commenced over the turnpike June 1, 1861, and have continued up to the present time.

The other was the Cliftondale Horse Railroad. James S. Stone, Esq., of Charlestown, was the principal manager. Ground was broken in October, 1860, and the work was put forward with great rapidity, so that by November 20th the cars commenced running.

It was the intention to have this horse railroad run through to Lynn, but Lynn refused the location, so that its starting-point was at the bridge in East Saugus, and running to the Cliftondale Depot, thence through the woods to the Newburyport turnpike, and so on to Boston *via* Malden Bridge and Charlestown. Had this road been permitted to extend its track down to the city of Lynn, it might have had a longer life.

The principal motive for its construction was the development and sale of house-lots in Cliftondale, called the "Homes."

This land speculation not proving a success, and the passenger traffic being very light, it was only a question of time when it would be obliged to stop its running.

As it proved, it was only about three years when it was abandoned and the rails taken up. It is now very difficult to find any trace of its location.

But the time finally came when our town obtained excellent horse railroad accommodations, which it now enjoys, very much to its benefit as well as to the advantage of the road.

The Lynn and Boston Railroad extended its tracks from Lynn to East Saugus, Cliftondale and Saugus Centre, and are now running half-hourly trips throughout the day and evening.

The cars from Lynn to East Saugus commenced running June 24, 1882; they then stopped at Ballard Street, but the road was soon extended to Cliftondale, and the cars commenced running June 17, 1885.

The next year a branch was built up Chestnut Street and Winter Street to Saugus Centre, and the cars commenced rnnning July 31, 1886.

We are thus provided with a horse railroad system which will without doubt long continue.

Such is the union of the industrial pursuits and business of Lynn and Saugus, that it is a necessity, and will add greatly to the development of the town.

The Lynn and Boston Railroad is now building another link from Cliftondale *via* Lincoln Avenue to Linden to connect with the horse railroad from Malden to Revere Beach. This will give us another

connection with Boston, and also with Malden, Medford, Melrose, Stoneham and Woburn.

This route is now, September 15, 1887, just opened for travel.

CHAPTER XXX.

SAUGUS—(*Continued*).

Schools—West Parish School—Ladies' Seminary—Public Schools—High School—Principals—Cliftondale Library—Free Public Library—William Sutton Lodge—Abousett Division, S. of T.—Sunshine Lodge of Good Templars - Saugus Mutual Insurance Co.—Farms and Farmers.

SCHOOLS.—*West Parish School.*—The West Parish very early felt their need of school privileges for their children, and the people were not slow in providing them.

At first a school was opened in some private dwelling, as accommodations could be obtained, but not always in the same dwelling, and it was frequently changed to different parts of the parish. This arrangement obtained until 1775, when a small one-story building was built in the Centre, on the southeast end of the burying-ground. This building served for school uses until July 29, 1801, when it was sold for sixty-three dollars to Richard Shute, who removed it and added it to his house for a grocery-store, till its destruction by fire, in 1820.

In the year 1800 a great school-house fever prevailed in the West Parish. No less than five school-houses were petitioned for in 1801,—two of these to be at the "Centre," one at the "North End," one at "Boardman's End" and the other in the "South part," now East Saugus.

The parish voted but one, and that to be in the "Centre," southwest of the meeting-house.

It was soon built, and stood near to William W. Boardman's house, on what is now Main Street.

This school-house was standing until very recently, in the yard of William W. Boardman, and was used by him for many years as a shoe manufactory. Within a few years it has been torn down.

In 1787 the parish voted that thirteen families at the "North End" might withdraw and make a new school district.

This was the first separation in school matters.

In 1806 a school-house (old Rock School-house) was built in the "South part," now called East Saugus.

It may be of interest to speak of a private academy which was started in our town.

Ladies' Seminary.—In January, 1821, the Rev. Joseph Emerson, of Beverly, projected the establishment of a Female Seminary in Saugus.

The parish encouraged the project, and voted the use of the parsonage, with land near by, for a school building, which was built in the spring of 1822.

For two years its popularity was very great. Such numbers of young ladies flocked to the institution that board accommodations could scarcely be found.

While the seminary was in a successful tide of prosperity, the old parish affairs, now rapidly on the wane, considerably revived.

Rev. Joseph Emerson was a very popular divine, and supplied the pulpit for the greater part of the time.

It unfortunately happened that the autumn of the second year was a very sickly season.

The typhoid fever prevailed in many towns, and among these was Saugus.

Several young ladies of the seminary died, causing many of the pupils to be withdrawn and deterring others from coming, so that the school never recovered from the effects of this unfortunate sickness.

Mr. Emerson's poor health obliged him to leave, and in the autumn of 1824 he was succeeded by Rev. Hervey Wilbur, who also supplied the parish pulpit.

But in spite of Mr. Wilbur's efforts to revive the seminary he was obliged to give it up in the autumn of 1826.

Public Schools.—Our town has always maintained good public schools. If they have not been fully up to the high standard of our neighboring cities, we have spent for them a much larger proportion of our valuation. I notice in the last State report that of the thirty-five towns and cities in Essex County, Saugus is the eighth in the percentage of valuation expended for schools.

The whole number of children in our town between five and fifteen years of age is five hundred and twenty-four, divided as follows:

Ward 1, North Saugus	26
" 2, Centre Saugus	175
" 3, Cliftondale	167
" 4, East Saugus	128
" 5, Oaklandvale	28
Total	524

There are thirteen schools; the two at North Saugus and Oaklandvale are mixed schools, but those in the other wards are arranged into three and four grades.

In these schools there are five hundred and twenty pupils.

Our High School had its beginning in April, 1872. Since 1875 it has gathered in rooms fitted up for its use in the new Town Hall. It has a three years' course of study, including Latin and French.

Diplomas are given to graduates.

There are now about forty-five pupils in this school.

It has had six principals since its commencement. Mrs. Frances H. Newhall served from 1872 to 1875; Mr. James B. Atwood a few months in 1875; Mr. F. W. Eveleth from October, 1875 to 1879. He was followed by Mr. Charles E. Lord for one year, then by Mr. C. H. Smart for two years, up to 1881.

The present principal, Mr. Wilbur F. Gillette, took charge in April, 1881.

Cliftondale Library.—About two years ago a library association was formed in Cliftondale, and is now in a prosperous condition. It has about seven hundred volumes.

Free Public Library.—This last spring (1887) a free public library was started by private subcriptions from all parts of the town.

The town has furnished and fitted up a room in the Town Hall for its use.

About thirteen hundred volumes have already been purchased and carefully catalogued.

It will be opened this autumn, and it is hoped that it will form a worthy nucleus of a large and permanent public library.

The William Sutton Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons was instituted in 1866. Its lodge-room is now in East Saugus, in Mr. Sisson's building, on Franklin Square. It now has seventy-five members.

The Abousett Division, No. 10, Sons of Temperance, was organized in 1850. It now has forty members, and holds its meetings at the Town Hall every fortnight.

The Sunshine Lodge, No. 111, of Good Templars was organized in 1879. It has about sixty members, and meets at the Town Hall every week.

The Saugus Mutual Fire Insurance Company was incorporated February, 1852, and commenced business the following April.

Benjamin F. Newhall, Esq., was the originator of this company, and it was through his energy and regard for the public welfare that the company has had so prosperous a career. The community at that time was poorly provided with insurance, its cost being so great from the heavy assessments of companies located in other States particularly.

In forming this company Mr. Newhall determined to provide purely mutual insurance, receiving no cash premium in advance, but only notes to be assessed sufficiently to pay the losses and expenses as they occur.

He was chosen its secretary and treasurer, and Edward Pranker its president.

Its office was, and continues to be, in East Saugus.

On the resignation of Edward Pranker, in 1858, Hon. Harmon Hall was elected its second president and has continued to fill that office up to the present time.

Mr. Newhall being severely afflicted with rheumatism, was obliged to resign in the summer of 1861, when his son, Wilbur F. Newhall, Esq., was chosen secretary and treasurer, which offices he now fills.

On April 1, 1853, the company had $812,500 of property insured. In 1863 it had $2,208,665. On April 1, 1887, it had $2,889,300.

It has paid out for losses during these thirty-five years $36,328.

By its prudent and conservative management it has not only provided insurance at a very small cost to its members, but at the same time has given them a strong and reliable company, which has earned for itself the confidence of the public.

Agricultural.—As our farming interests are considerable, I will give a list of our farms, with a few additional items.

North Saugus.—Louis P. Hawkes, 33 acres of tillage, 47 acres pasture, 21 cows and 4 horses. He also has a large silo.

Samuel Hawkes, 13 acres of tillage and 10 acres of cranberry meadow.

Heirs of Richard Hawkes, 26 acres tillage and 9 cows.

These three farms form a portion of the original farm of Adam Hawkes, settled in 1634, and have continued down in an unbroken line from their ancestors.

Byron S. Hone, 50 acres tillage, 114 acres pasture, 42 cows and 4 horses.

Henry E. Hone, 4 acres tillage, 32 acres pasture, 7 cows and two horses.

Joshua H. Coburn, 20 acres tillage, 15 cows and 2 horses.

Heirs of George W. Butterfield, 10 acres tillage, 20 cows and 4 horses.

Elijah G. Wilson, 6 acres tillage and 23 pasture.

Francis M. Avery, 15 acres tillage and 9 cows.

These farms furnish chiefly milk and hay.

Oaklandvale.—Artemas Edmands, 9 acres tillage and 5 cows.

Samuel Simmons, 60 acres and 13 horses; this is the Lott Edmonds farm, and is now used as a veterinary farm.

Heirs of Nathan Hawkes, 4 acres tillage and 3 cows.

E. W. Bostwick, 28 acres tillage.

J. M. Hall, farm owned by J. J. Zeigler, 16 acres; this is a veterinary farm.

E. W. Saunders, 38 acres tillage, 17 acres pasture. Mr. Saunders came here in 1850, cleared his land, built him an elegant residence and has laid out his grounds into lawns, tillage, shrubbery and forest, so as to resemble an English park, presenting to us an elegance of landscape rarely found.

The long avenue, shut in on either side by tall evergreen trees, is of wonderful beauty. Mr. Saunders has expended more than fifty thousand dollars on this place.

A ride through these grounds will well repay one.



RESIDENCE OF A. A. SCOTT,

SAUGUS, MASS.

Lowell Howard, 5 acres tillage and 2 cows.

Elbridge S. Upham, 8 acres tillage, 8 cows and 2 horses.

Isaiah Longfellow, 10 acres tillage and 4 cows.

These last three farmers give attention to strawberry culture, and furnish great quantities for the market.

John Gillon, 13 acres tillage.

Arthur Watson, 10 acres tillage, 20 acres pasture and 9 cows.

J. Henry Howard, 8 acres tillage and 8 cows.

Saugus Centre.—The Town Farm, 40 acres tillage and 18 cows.

William H. Penny, 20 acres tillage, 39 acres pasture, 30 cows and 2 horses.

John M. Berritt, 10 acres tillage, 15 acres pasture and 4 cows.

Lewis J. Austin, 7 acres tillage, 14 cows and 2 horses.

Charles M. Ames, 11 acres tillage and 5 cows.

Heirs of Samuel A. Parker, 12 acres tillage.

Harrison Wilson, 10 acres tillage, 7 cows and 2 horses.

William Fairchild, 9 acres tillage and 2 cows.

Cliftondale.—Walter V. Hawkes, 10 acres tillage and 2 green-houses.

George N. Miller, 24 acres tillage, 10 cows and 5 horses. He bought this farm in 1870.

A. & J. R. Hatch, 20 acres tillage, 10 cows and 5 horses.

George W. Winslow, 19 acres tillage, 7 cows and 2 horses.

These last four farms are largely for market-gardening for Boston and Lynn.

East Saugus.—William A. Trefethen, 9 acres tillage, 16 acres pasture, 2 cows and 2 horses.

John W. Blodgett, 31 acres tillage, 15 acres pasture, 22 cows and 6 horses.

Mr. Blodgett runs his farm for market-gardening almost entirely. He has owned it since 1854.

Charles H. Libbey, 7 acres tillage, 3 cows and 2 horses.

Frederick Stocker, 30 acres tillage, 3 cows and 12 horses.

Henry W. & A. Dudley Johnson, 48 acres tillage, 34 acres pasture, 15 cows and 3 horses.

CHAPTER XXXI.

SAUGUS—(*Continued*).

MILITARY RECORD.

In the late War of the Rebellion our town nobly showed its patriotism by an early and prompt response to the country's call for volunteers. One hundred and sixty-three men enlisted, and of these, eight served in the navy.

The larger number of these were in the Seventeenth and Fortieth Massachusetts Regiments.

The following are the names of the soldiers:

Bimsley P. Guilford.
Abel Wilson.
Jesse Hitchings.
Willard Edmunds.
David H. Cheever.
John H. H. Wilson.
George H. Penney.
Joseph W. Flye.
William Chambers.
William Noble.
Edwin A. Reed.
John F. Carlton.
Nathan J. Thoms.
Charles A. Newhall.
Thomas McDowell.
Edward Hitchings.
William M. Stocker.
George H. McClary.
Warren P. Copp.
Hiram H. Newhall.
Charles F. Pearson.
Joseph Newhall.
Europe R. Newhall.
Joseph Wiggin.
Henry Baker.
Thomas Twisden.
Isaac Perkins.
Daniel Kidder.
John W. Howlett.
James Charlton.
Oliver F. Childs.
Thomas Gibbons.
Philip F. Floyd.
William H. Fuller.
William S. Copp.
Marcus M. Sullivan.
George A. Mansfield.
Abijah S. Boardman.
Elisha Bragg.
Charles Osgood.
Lorenzo Mansfield.
William H. Rich.
E. Herbert Downing.
Francis H Dizer.
Edward A. Jeffers.
Isaac B. Schofield.
Robert Harrison.
John L. Andrews.
Henry P. Nichols.
Thomas Florence.
Theodore Houghton.
Elliott W. Oliver.
Reuben B. Prince.
Jacob E. Newhall.
Benj. N. Trefethen.
Wesley Stocker.
David Brierley.
William Murray.
George W. Fairbanks.
William S. Copp.
William E. Gabriel.
Charles H. Mansfield.
Frederick Dearborn.
Benjamin Homan.
Willard Edmands.
George V. Carleton.
William Halliday.
Stiles F. Sherman.
Samuel A. Guilford.
Noah G. Harriman.
Charles A. Kidder.
Charles W. Sweetser.
William T. Ash.
Bimsley P. Guilford, Jr.
James Roots, Jr.
George McAllister.
Daniel Flye.
William L. Stocker.
Reuben R. Coates.
John H. Copp.
Samuel T. Langley.
Watson J. Thoms.
John W. Seward.
John H. Twisden.
M. Porter Newhall.
John H. Hone.
John Powers.
Edward Charlton.
George Childs.
James Herk.
Charles H. Williams.
John A. Whittemore.
Kenedy McElroy.
Augustus W. Bruce.
Benjamin E. Morgan.
John E. Stocker.
A. James Parker.
Otis A. Foster.
Edwin Mansfield.
James A. Parker.
Stephen Stackpole.
Charles Walwick.
Charles A. Hobbs.
George H. Newhall.
Elbridge S. Upham.
Thomas Twisden, Jr.
James Eaton.
Henry Kidder.
John Timony.
William Cheney.
Benjamin P. Coates.
William H. Amerige.
George S. Williams.
Frederick A. Trefethen.
Tristam Goodale.
H. Clay Cross.
James R. Goodwin
James Hughes.
William J. Love.
Porter Newhall.
Walter E. Rhodes.
Alfred B. Roots.
William Fisk.
Frederick Lewis.
Marcus M. Sullivan.
Moses Spofford.
Willard W. Burbank.
William Blanchard.
Charles S. Hicks.
Moses E. McAlpine.
James L. Pike.
George Campbell.
Harrison E. Stocker.
William C. Richards.
William W. Brown.
Luther Harriman.
Charles Maloney.
John A. Whittemore.

James H. Kent.	Henry A. Oliver.
William E. Oliver.	George Kidder.
Samuel S. Wormstead.	Frank Peterson.
George H. Oliver.	Albert Eaton.
Willard L. Fiske.	George H. Brown.

Those whose names do not appear on the above list were credited to some other town or State.

Among these soldiers, serving as they did in a great many different regiments and in almost every arm of the service, strange as it may seem, yet we cannot certainly name any who were killed in battle, although many were seriously wounded, some to die from these wounds, and some from exposure and disease in the service.

Some few were unaccounted for.

Their brave deeds and patriotic service are recorded on a more enduring tablet than any earthly scroll, and our town feels proud of the men who bore her escutcheon through the War of the Southern Rebellion.

The veterans of Saugus, in June, 1869, organized as the *General E. W. Hinks Post* 95, *Grand Army of the Republic*, with Charles A. Newhall as their first Commander.

The post held their meetings at first in the old Town Hall, afterwards in Flye's Hall, and later in the new Town Hall, until they moved into their own new hall in 1886.

Their new building is situated near the railroad depot, and was purchased of William T. Ash in the early part of 1886. The building was remodeled and an assembly room for the Post provided in the second story of ample dimensions, and elegantly furnished throughout.

The Post is now is a very prosperous condition, having a membership of some sixty, owning their building and having nearly a thousand dollars in their relief fund.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

BENJAMIN FRANKLIN NEWHALL.[1]

Benjamin Franklin Newhall was born April 29, 1802. His father was Jacob, son of Landlord Jacob Newhall. His mother was Abigail, daughter of William and Ruth Makepeace, of Norton, Mass.

She was a woman of noble presence, of exemplary Christian character, pious without ostentation, and devoted to her family, which consisted of three sons and five daughters, for whom she labored day and night and lived to see her prayers answered in their behalf.

Benjamin Franklin was her first-born child, and so very naturally upon him fell early the burdens of the family. Passionately devoted to his mother, he gave his whole energies to her assistance in the support of the family, the father being of little help the greater part of the time.

Brought up in a tavern in his earliest years, he was exposed to great temptation. In his autobiography he thus speaks of these days and experiences: "What saved me God only knows. But I was saved. I remember I always resisted, and often heard the exclamation, 'What ails the child that he will not drink!' Some spiritual guardian was about me to watch my infantile footsteps and keep me in the path of rectitude." After writing of the many beauties of his birth-place, he speaks of his mother thus: "And better still, the glowing vision of that angel form, who every day supplied my infant wants, and whose voice was sweeter to me than the sweetest music."

He writes again, "How well do I remember, in the late hours of the night, when her husband was away and her dear ones were sleeping, that she would come to my bedside and, kneeling with overflowing heart, pour out her soul in prayer that God would preserve her darling boy from the snares so thick around him. She thought I was asleep, but I was awake and still, and the silent tear moistened my young cheek, and I vowed before God that a mother's prayers should not be in vain, How often she kneeled at my bedside when I was asleep I know not, no doubt often." Again he writes, "My mother, in her extreme anxiety for my welfare, never tired in giving me good advice. She felt that there was great danger of my giving way to the use of the dreadful cup, and so there was."

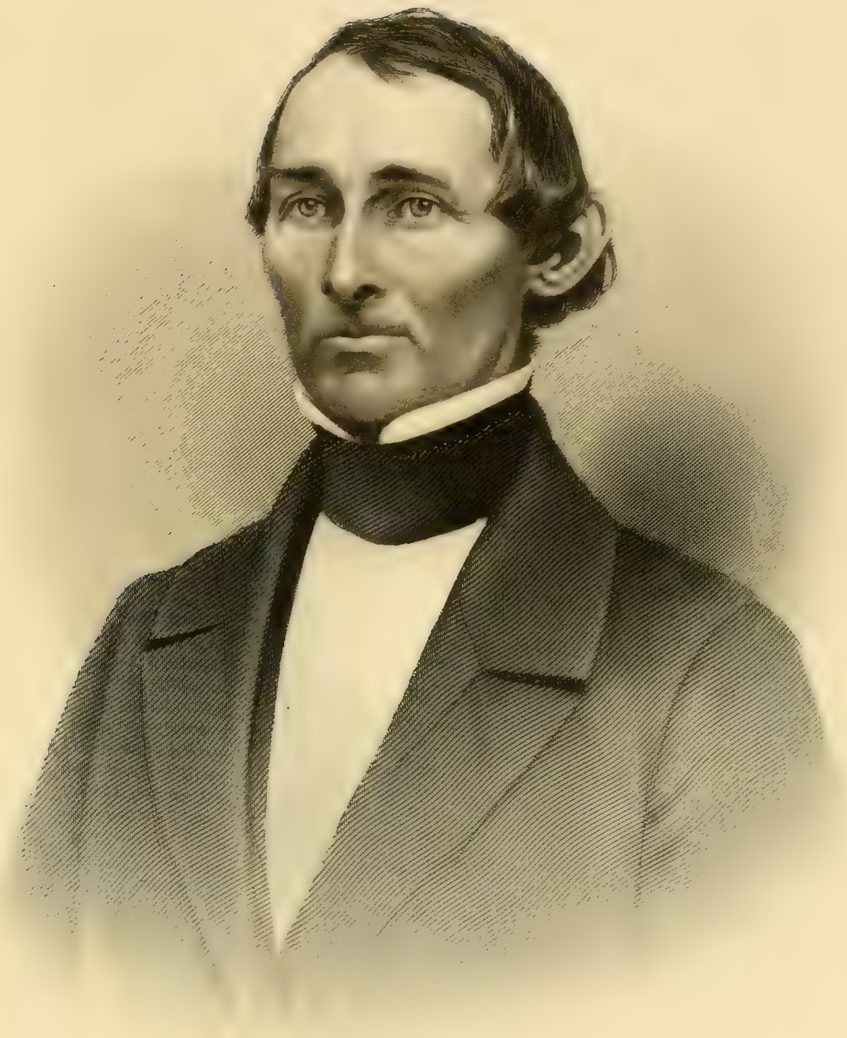
Again he writes, "When about four years of age my mother had bought me some picture books, and she commenced learning me to read. About the same time the school-house, afterwards called the "Rock," was in process of building. My mother took me into it one pleasant summer's eve, and, pointing out to me the smallest and lowest seat, saying at the same time, 'there, my son, is your seat.' This in a few days I found to be literally true, for on my first entrance into the school I was appointed to the little seat."

It was here that he attended school during its uncertain sessions, until about fourteen years of age.

It was at this early age, in the autumn before he was fourteen, that he commenced work for Mr. Childs in the chocolate mill, often working day and night.

He writes again in his autobiography, "I could scarcely endure it. I sometimes declared, 'this shall be my last night;' but when the beautiful sun shone in the morning I felt better and was encouraged to go on. I hated shoemaking and was yet determined to earn something for my mother. If I could earn eighty-three cents a day for work night and day it was to me a great sum. But with all the hard work and suffering I got through my first winter in the mill. How I bore the fatigue God only knows. Some unseen hand supported me, and when I was just on the

[1] Written by his son, Wilbur F. Newhall, Esq.



Benj. D. Newhall

point of giving up several times some impulse of mine forbade it. God helped me."

Such were his early labors that it might almost be said he had no boyhood, so early was the yoke fitted to his youthful shoulders. But he bore it with courage. He writes, "When I had nothing to do I could read, and used always to keep a book in the mill always ready." He soon also engaged in teaming for Mr. Childs. He writes of himself when eighteen years old, "I had so much per day for driving the team and twenty-five cents to buy me a dinner. I always managed to carry my dinner, and thus save and lay up twenty-five cents. This I continued for two years or more. I generally took my book with me and studied while I was driving; so I turned my labor into amusement." Of this same period he writes, "This season I found religious impressions growing more and more in my mind. I felt more and more the need of Divine strength to enable me to resist successfully the evil temptations of the world. I read the Bible, prayed often and frequently went to meeting. I began to hear with new ears, because I felt an interest in the subject preached. Night and day religious matters were in my thoughts, and I was looking forward to a period of church membership as a kind of bulwark of defense."

He identified himself at once with the Methodists and labored zealously with them. When twenty years of age he was baptized by immersion in the pond at Melrose.

He was now making his plans for more schooling, just as soon as he was twenty-one years of age, and for this object he laid some money aside until he had one hundred and seventy dollars. He reached his freedom year, and away he went to New Market Academy, in New Hampshire. We wish we had space to give his account of his start in the stage. He says of his studies: "I pored into the grammar with all my energy, but it was all darkness to me; I knew nothing about it. My boyhood's studies of grammar were but a parrot performance, as I now found by experience. What would I not have given for some one to explain to me the first principles, and know the meaning of the Parts of Speech. But I had no one and so I delved alone. I read and then thought, meditated and then studied. One night, while I was trying to penetrate its mysteries, I instantly saw it all clearly. As the sun suddenly bursts through the obscuring clouds and shines upon the earth, so a knowledge of English grammar burst suddenly on my mind. I saw it all in a glance, simple as my A, B, C. I could pass the most difficult passages instantly." He writes again: "I soon procured some French books, and commenced that language. I learned five thousand words in about a week, and in two weeks could translate the New Testament pretty well."

He remained at the Academy about six months. He then returned home and immediately procured a school in Stoneham and began teaching. As an instance of his remarkable memory, he states that while teaching this school he committed to memory the whole New Testament in thirty-seven days. This was in 1824. He taught this school six months. April 25, 1825, he married Dorothy Jewett, daughter of David and Sarah Jewett, of Standstead, Lower Canada. This explains why, soon after this, he, in company with his brother-in-law, opened a store in Canada. But this business proved disastrous and left him in heavy debt. He then returned to Saugus for good, wiser from experience, if poorer in purse.

We have thus dwelt upon his early life experiences to show the difficulties, the privations, and the hardships he met and subdued. He was stronger than all of these, even making them his servants for discipline and preparations for his remaining life's work. On his return from Canada, already in debt, he borrowed money and commenced the shoe business in earnest. His untiring zeal, his strict business rules, his steadfast integrity, his keen foresight, and his rigid economy, brought him rapid success. He never swerved from these paths, so early chosen. They brought him competence, if not wealth; respect and honor from those who knew him best.

The very poor privileges of the village school in his early youth, ending at thirteen years of age, adding a six months' term at New Market Academy when twenty-one years of age, constitute his scholastic equipment; but these were a small part of his endowments. His mind was always inquiring, extremely receptive, and, what was far more important, it grasped with a tenacity never to be loosed and never to be forgotten, everything that could be of value, benefit, use, or help to him. He might be called a self-educated man, in the best sense of that term. His heart and nature were sympathetic. Having had so many difficulties in his youth, he knew how to sympathize with young men, and many there are of these, to-day, who will testify to his personal assistance in their time of need. What he espoused was with his whole heart. Interested from his youth in the temperance cause, having witnessed the direful effects of intemperance, he never relinquished his warfare against the demon, but, with sledge-hammer blows, on the platform, in the pulpit, as well as in business and social walks of life, he lifted up his voice for total abstinence, and labored in every way to save the youth from this destroying vice, and to make of the inebriate a sober and useful man.

He showed the same characteristics in politics. Always an anti-slavery man, his home and heart were ever open to the fugitive slave, who found a shelter at his fireside, and a God-speed in his journey or mission. He saw in the old Liberty and Free-Soil party the cloud no bigger than a man's hand; he entered its ranks, fought beside its standard, and lived long enough to see the hydra-headed monster slain and buried.

He very early united with the Methodist church in

East Saugus, to which his ardent, sincere nature rendered no half-hearted service.

He had no place for hypocrisy in his heart, and he could brook nothing of the kind in others. He became an exhorter, and then a local preacher, in the Methodist Church. We may well imagine that no grass was allowed to grow under his feet. As well bid the torrent cease its flow as to curb his powers of mind and heart from progress and growth. His warmth in moral reforms often led to some friction with the stereotyped ideas of the Methodist clergy, some of whom could not allow interference with their denominational tenets and labors. The church did not, at that time, stand where it does to-day in relation to these movements. If it had, he probably would never have severed his union with the people of his early choice.

He entered the Universalist Church because he found there a more congenial atmosphere, where he could exercise more freedom of thought and action. He became a very regular preacher for this denomination, and even amid his multiplied business labors he found leisure nearly every Sabbath, for many years, to supply gratuitously some pulpit either near or far away.

He also served his native town of Saugus in nearly every official capacity. As town clerk, selectman, overseer of the poor, school committee and representative to the General Court. In the Legislature he strongly opposed capital punishment. He was chosen one of the commissioners of the county of Essex for two terms, from 1844 to 1850, when the labors of that office were as abundant and onerous as to-day, and, perhaps, far more so.

He organized the Saugus Mutual Fire Insurance Company in 1852, and was its secretary and treasurer until incapacitated by disease, in 1861.

These were but a few of his labors. From his awaking in the morning until his sleeping at night, his fertile brain was always active. He gave himself little rest or recreation. Like a locomotive, steam was always on. His style was simple, chaste and clear. He wrote much for the newspapers, among which contributions were his interesting "Historical Sketches of Saugus," which have furnished me much material for my "History of Saugus" in this work. He also wrote a great deal of poetry, indeed his writings in both prose and verse would, if printed, fill volumes.

The last ten years or more of his life were full of pain and suffering. He was afflicted with chronic rheumatism, which never loosed its grip upon him; his limbs became swollen, his joints distorted and dislocated. When walking was difficult, he rode; then was wheeled about in his invalid chair; then was confined to his house, then to his room, then to his bed for two years, until his naturally iron constitution gave way. During all these years he was busy reading and writing, and his fortitude and cheerfulness never failed him. He died October 13, 1863, aged sixty-one years.

His widow survived him twenty-three years, dying October 7, 1886. They had seven children, two of whom died in infancy; Benjamin, their eldest, a graduate of Harvard and a lawyer, died in Milwaukee, Wis., at the aged of twenty-nine years; two sons and two daughters still survive, and are residents of East Saugus.

The following verses were written by him just before his death, September 17, 1863:

For many years my prayer hath been,
That I might end this mortal race
Without severe and torturing pain,
And, calm and easy, die in peace.

And now the Lord hath heard my prayer,
Assuaged my pains, so oft severe,
And given my frail body rest
The little time that I am here.

I'll give Him praise while life and strength
Shall let me speak my gratitude,
And with my last expiring breath
I'll calmly breathe, The Lord is good.

CHAPTER XXXII.

DANVERS.

BY ALDEN P. WHITE.

OLD SETTLERS OF SALEM VILLAGE—INCORPORATION OF DANVERS.

In that part of the town which, a few years ago, belonged to Beverly, the most conspicuous feature of the landscape is a long, high hill, known as Folly Hill. On its summit once stood the lordly mansion of a colonial grandee. The cellar is still distinctly marked, and portions of the building are still in use as residences a mile or two removed from the original exalted situation. This building experiment, never since repeated, was known as "Browne's Folly;" hence the name of the hill. From its top the view includes very much of the original limits of Old Salem. Far beyond the islands of the harbor the ocean fills a wide space of the eastern horizon, while close in the western foreground lie the farms and villages of Danvers.

Many years ago three boys were together on Folly Hill. One of them is living still; his name must be often mentioned in any history of his native town, and his portrait is presented by the engraver at the close of this sketch. The second was one who reached such an eminence in the science of botany that his name will be found conspicuous in that chapter of this book which treats of the natural history of the county. The third, not a Danvers but a Salem boy, became known wherever English is read,

for he wrote the "Scarlet Letter;" he it was, indeed, who, writing of this hill long after, described its outline as a whale's back rising from the calm sea, and in one of those stories into which his wonderful pen wove much of the history of our Puritan forefathers, he told how John Endicott cut out the red cross from the baner of England.

Not long afterwards there was a military muster at Salem. Every able-bodied man in the town and neighborhood was there. All were well armed with steel caps upon their heads, plates of iron upon their breasts and at their backs, and gorgets of steel around their necks.

Endicott was the captain of the company. While the soldiers were expecting his orders to begin their exercise, they saw him take the banner in one hand, holding his drawn sword in the other.

"And now, fellow soldiers, you see this old banner of England. Some of you, I doubt not, may think it treason for a man to lay violent hands upon it. But whether or no it be treason to man, I have good assurance in my conscience, that it is no treason to God. Wherefore, I have resolved that we will rather be God's soldiers than soldiers of the Pope of Rome, and in that mind I now cut the Papal cross out of this banner."

And so he did. And thus in a province belonging to the crown of England, a captain was found bold enough to deface the king's banner with his sword.

Governor John Endicott was the pioneer of Danvers. As he sailed from Cape Ann by the rocky hills of the north shore and brought the "Abigail" to anchor off the few cabins of the "old planters," near Collin's Cove, doubtless his eyes followed the course of the river far inland, where, in the midst of the primeval forest, he was in a few years to hew out a home and found a town.

Endicott landed at Salem in September, 1628. Nearly four years later the company, who by their charter, claimed absolute disposal of all lands therein conveyed, made him a grant in these words:

"1632, July 3. There is a necke of land lyeing aboute 3 myles from Salem, cont. about 300 ac. of land graunted to Capt. Jo: Endicott to enioy to him and his heires forever called in the Indean tonge Wah quamesehcok, in English Birchwood, bounded on the south side with a ryvere call in the Indean tonge Soewampenessett, comonly called the Cowe howse ryver, bounded on the North side with a ryver called in the Indean tonge Conamabsquooncant, comonly called the Ducke ryver, bounded on the East with a ryver leadeing opp to the 2 former ryvers, which is called in the Indean tonge Orkhussunt, otherwise knowen by the name of Wooleston ryver, bounded on the West with the maine land."

Very soon the Governor entered with characteristic energy upon the work of clearing his grant. He came up in his shallop bringing men well equipped with tools, of which the ax was all important. Within a year seven thousand palisades were cut, and ground was broken for Indian corn. Very early the grant took the name of the "Orchard Farm," and the extent to which the Governor carried the raising of fruit trees may be judged from the fact that some fifteen years after he began his attack on the wilderness he gave five hundred of them to Captain Trask for two hundred and fifty acres of land. For some years the only neighbors were wolves and Indians, and until his men opened roads there was no thoroughfare to town except by water. Just where the Governor is supposed to have made his original landing a high railroad bridge spans the river, and on the slope between the river and the site of the homestead there may be seen from the car windows the famous Endicott pear tree. Just exactly how it came there, whether from the seed or by transplanting, is not known, but tradition clings with the firmest grip to the assertion that the Governor's own hands in some way had to do with this very living tree, which now for two hundred and fifty years has each spring put on the verdure of fresh youth. The Orchard Farm was a sort of training school to which presently the sons of well to do settlers were glad to come to learn the Governor's methods of agriculture which they later applied to their own farms. The little army of defence within the "palisadoes" received a supply of equipments on the 27th of the fourth month, 1636.

"This day was brought into town and carried up to Mr. Endicott's these corslets following, viz.: eighteen back peices, eighteen belly peices, eighteen peices of tassys, eighteen head peices of three sorts and but seventeen Gorgets. Itim sixteen Pikes & nineteen swords."

On the 27th of the eleventh month, 1636, John Woodbury, Captain Trask and John Balch were directed to "lay out 200 acres for Mr. Endicott next adjoining the land which was formerly granted him." This was a town grant—the simple but all important act of March 3, 1635, giving jurisdiction to towns over their own lands having then been passed—and was called "The Governor's Plain." It is that which lies at the foot of Hog Hill,—its more deserving and euphonious name, Mount Pleasant,—and includes Felton's Corner, the Collins House property and the adjacent lands.

The river which makes up from the ocean to Danversport there divides into three branches, much as one may spread the first three fingers of the hand. These rivers, beginning with the lowest, are known as Water's, Crane and Porter's. The Orchard Farm comprised the peninsula or neck between Water's and Crane; that between Crane and Porter's, upon which the principal village of Danversport is, was granted contemporaneously with the Orchard Farm, to the Rev. Samuel Skelton, a minister of Salem, in these words:

"There is another necke of land lyeing about 3 myles from Salem cont. aboute 200 ac. graunted to Mr. Sam[ll] Skelton to enioy to him and his heires for ever, called by the Indeans Wahquack, bounded on the South opon a little ryver, called by the Indeans Conamabsquooncant, opon the North abutting on another ryver called by the Indeans Ponomenneuhcant, and on the East on the same ryver."

For a long time the land included in this grant was known as Skelton's Neck, but it will be seen that until the middle of the last century it remained utterly unsettled.

The land next adjoining the Orchard Farm and northerly of the Governor's Plain, was thus disposed of on the 11th of the eleventh month, 1635.

"Granted by the freemen of Salem the day and year above written unto Mr. Townsend Byshop of the same his heirs and assigns forever one farm conteyning three hundred acres butting upon Mr. Endicott's Farme on the East and four hundred poles in length and six score poles in breadth, that is to say six score and four at the west end and one hundred and sixteen at the East end, bounded by the water between the

farme of the Executors of Mr. Skelton, an (?) him at the North east corner of his farme, and hath there allowed from Mr. Endicott's Farme Eight acres for an highway, is bounded again at the southwest corner by the Brook, provided always that in case of sale, the Town of Salem to have the first proffer of it before any other.

Roger Conant.
John Endicott. Jeffrey Massey.
Thomas Gardiner. Edm. Batter."

This was the grant in the midst of which was the famous Rebecca Nourse house, which is still standing. The house was Bishop's mansion, built when he first occupied the land. He was one of the judges of the local court and was otherwise honored, but he fell from grace on the question of infant baptism, and after a few years he concluded to sell out, perhaps to seek a place where he could think as he pleased. He sold to Henry Chickering, who held it from 1641 to 1648, and then sold it to Governor Endicott who, with this purchase, owned about a thousand acres, running from the iron foundry to beyond the Collins Street station. The price was one hundred and sixty pounds. The Governor settled the Bishop farm upon his oldest son, John, when he was married, 1653 and gave him the deed in 1662. After the death of the Governor, in 1665, there was a controversy over the settlement of his estate regarding this property, but the deed held, and instead of passing to Zerubbabel, the surviving brother, when John died without issue in 1668, it was adjudged to have been John's in fee, and he, by will, left it to his widow. She mourned from February to August, then married a Boston minister, Rev. James Allen, and died in five years, leaving the farm to him. Five years later Mr. Allen sold out to Francis Nourse for four hundred pounds. This was April 29, 1678; the real estate had more than doubled since the Governor bought it. Very likely the price was governed somewhat by the terms of the sale, which gave the grantee twenty-one years in which to pay the whole purchase money. During this time a series of long and bitter disputes and law-suits arose as to the boundaries of the farm which, though resulting favorably to the Nourses and adversely to the owner of the Orchard Farm, doubtless had its influence in the disaster which befel the family when the aged mother was taken away to die on the gallows, a condemned witch. In a little grove just west of the historic house, where are other family graves, a substantial monument marks her resting-place. It was erected a few years ago as the result of a movement began in 1875, by which her descendants organized the "Nourse Monument Association." The inscription contains these lines written by Whittier:

"O Christian Martyr,
Who for Truth could die,
When all about thee
Owned the hideous lie!
The world redeemed
From Superstition's sway
Is breathing freer
For thy sake to-day."

Just outside the northwestern corner of the Bishop-Nourse farm, near the angle of Prince Street, at "Muddy Boo," were to be seen, until quite recently, certain depressions which were the remains of ancient wolf-pits.

Having mentioned the two sons of Governor Endicott, let here a word be said of his descendants. John left no children. Zerubbabel, who lived on the orchard farm, was a physician. His second wife was a daughter of Governor Winthrop, and he had five sons, of whom John went to England and there followed his father's profession; Zerubbabel and Benjamin lived in Topsfield; Joseph went to New Jersey, and Samuel remained at home and married Hannah, a daughter of Nathaniel Felton, of Felton's Hill. The widow, Hannah Endicott, married Thorndike Proctor, who in 1764 bought the little old building which was the first meeting-house of Salem, moved it to his land near Boston Street, where it was used first as a tavern and later as part of a tannery until 1865, when it was restored and moved to the rear of Plummer Hall by the Essex Institute, and has since been visited by thousands. Samuel Endicott had four children, but he died when thirty-five years old, leaving his only son, Samuel, a boy of seven, the only representative of the name in the vicinity of the home of his fathers. But this boy lived to re-establish the family, and died an old man and "captain" in 1766, and was buried in that Endicott family burying-ground, which is plainly in sight across the river from the Danversport railroad station. One of his sisters married Benjamin Porter, the other Martin Herrick. Captain Samuel had a dozen children; of his sons John, the oldest, kept the orchard farm; and of his wife, Elizabeth Jacobs, it is related that she was at the South Meeting-house when Colonel Timothy Pickering halted his men on the way to Bunker Hill, and cried out in patriotic zeal: "Why on earth don't you march; don't you hear the guns at Charlestown?" The farm passed next to another John, oldest son of John and Elizabeth, one of whose brothers, Robert, married a daughter of Minister Holt, of South Parish, and established an Endicott family in Beverly. The oldest son of this last John was Samuel, who married Elizabeth, daughter of William Putnam, of Sterling, Mass., in 1794, and was the father of the wives of Francis and George Peabody, of Salem, and of William Putnam Endicott, who was born in 1803, graduated at Harvard in 1822, and is still living in Salem, and the father of William C. Endicott, Secretary of War. The orchard farm is retained in this branch of the family, its present owner being William Endicott, of London, England, and is this summer (1887) undergoing extensive improvements at his hands.

Elias Endicott, son of Captain Samuel, was christened in 1729; married Eunice Andrews; died in 1779, was buried in the Plains burying-ground, and left six children: Anna, married Israel Putnam, and became the mother of Hon. Elias Putnam; Elias Endicott, Jr., who was one of the early shoe manufac-

turers, and lived where his grandson, Elias Endicott Porter now lives; Israel, who was a mason, lived in the brick house at the Port, which descended to his son, William; Mary was the wife of Zerubbabel Porter, whose son Alfred was the father of Elias Endicott Porter; and Margaret ("Aunt Peggy") died unmarried.

The first and most distinguished name in our early annals has become, in the male line, utterly extinct. In the Danvers directory the name of Endicott appears but once,—"Lydia W., widow of William." The late William Endicott was one of the early anti-slavery men, was one of the last of the Danvers-port sea-captains, often served as moderator of town-meetings, and was otherwise prominent in local affairs; his daughter, Mrs. H. G. Hyde, resides in Danvers, and two sons in Haverhill.

Ante-dating the Bishops' grant by a month was one of three hundred acres to Robert Cole. This covers the region back of Hog Hill, including Proctor's corner and extending a mile or more towards West Peabody. After a short time Cole sold to Emanuel Downing, a brother-in-law of Governor Winthrop, a lawyer, a man of such high repute and so desirable an acquisition to the colonists that before he arrived a grant of five hundred acres was given him by the town. This he sold to John Porter; it included the Bradstreet farm near the Topsfield line.

Downing's son George, who was one of the first graduates of Harvard, became Sir George Downing, a prominent figure in the history of the Old Country in Cromwell's time. The old Ipswich road, the first highway connecting Lynn and Boston with the northern settlements, was laid out through this land, and in 1648 one of his tenants was allowed to keep an "ordinary" to accommodate travelers. For a time the Downings let the farm, and in 1666 it was occupied by John Proctor, who subsequently bought a part of it. Proctor, who came from Ipswich, was a strong man in every sense, and he was one of the conspicuous victims of the witchcraft delusion. Many of his descendants have been prominent citizens of South Danvers, where the family is still well represented.

The land next east of Downing's, in the midst of which is the beautiful Rogers estate, was granted, three hundred acres, to Thomas Read, who, with others, went back to England to bear a hand in the coming revolution. In 1701 it was sold to Daniel Epps, the famous school-master, concerning whom it was in 1671 "Voated that the selectmen shall take care to provide a house for Mr. Epps to keep skoole in." The honor of his name was preserved through several generations by men distinguished in our local annals.

The long, high hill south of the Governor's plain was from the first the home of the Feltons. The old homestead at the end of the road which runs from the Ipswich road along the top of the hill was built more than two hundred years ago, and the Nathaniel Felton who now owns and occupies it comes near to being the seventh Nathaniel in direct line. A Jonathan in the third generation is the only break. Besides the inclosed burying-ground, where the Ipswich road makes its steep climb, in which old stones and new contain the names of Proctor and Felton, there are here and there on the hillside traces of more ancient and unmarked graves.

The tract adjoining the Bishop-Nourse farm on the north, covering the village of Tapleyville and extending from Ash Street to a little beyond the meeting-house, at the Centre, was granted to Elias Stileman. The latter sold in 1648 to Richard Hutchinson, who came over in 1634, with his infant son, Joseph. Hutchinson was also one of the grantees of the large tract which included Whipple's Hill, named for the husband of his granddaughter, and in 1637 he was granted twenty acres on the meadow back of the meeting-house, on condition that he should "set up plowing." He died in 1681 at the full age of four score, "a vigorous and intelligent agriculturist and a man of character." It will be seen presently how the lower portion of his estate descended through his son-in-law in an unbroken line of Putnams—the Judge Putnam farm. The upper portion fell to Joseph Hutchinson, who was, like his father, a prominent and influential man, of sound sense and plain words. He it was who out of his homestead lands gave one acre for the first meeting-house and later contributed several more towards a home for the first preacher. The family name is still well represented in the neighborhood. The most distinguished name in the family history is that of Colonel Israel Hutchinson, of Revolutionary fame, of whom a notice appears elsewhere. He was the son of Elisha, who died before 1730. Elisha was the son of Joseph, who outlived the son some twenty years; Joseph was the son of that Joseph who was brought over from England in his infancy. A brother to Colonel Israel's father was Ebenezer; Ebenezer's son was Jeremy, who married a daughter of Asa Putnam, and lived from 1738 to 1805; one of Jeremy's sons was Joseph, who was born in 1770, married Phebe Upton, of North Reading, and died in 1832, leaving two sons to become heads of families—Deacon Elijah Hutchinson and Benjamin Hutchinson, both now deceased. The home of Deacon Elijah was the house just west of Nathaniel Ingersoll's training-field, formerly "the home of the widow Eunice Upton, inholder." Three fine residences just beyond are those of Deacon Elijah's sons, Warren, Alfred and Edward.

Next west of the Stileman-Hutchinson land was the grant of Francis Weston, which covered the land extending westerly from the church towards the turnpike. Weston was such a man as to be chosen one of the three Representatives of Salem in the first House of Deputies, but like Bishop he was too tolerant for the age, and was invited to leave, in 1638, and his wife was treated to an experience in the stocks.

Six years later it was sold by one John Pease to Richard Ingersoll and his son-in-law, Wm. Haynes. Ingersoll had come over in 1629, and was granted eighty acres at Rial Side. January 12, 1636–37, "Richard Inkersoll is to have 1*d.* for every person he may carry over the North Ferry, during the town's pleasure." He was for a time lessee of the Bishop-Nourse farm, and shortly after this purchase of the Weston grant he died. He was another of the right sort of men, and his son, Nathaniel, was one of the brightest characters of our early history.

Nathaniel was but eleven years old when his father died. His mother married again, and soon the lad found a home with Governor Endicott, not that he was driven to this step, but probably only as other boys and young men were glad to be educated in the practical agricultural college at the Orchard Farm. "I went to live with Governor Endicott as his servant four years." He was nineteen when he went back to the land which his father had left him, and near by the present parsonage of the First Church, he built a house of more generous proportions than were common. Here, to the end of his three-score and ten, he was mine host of an open house, the resting-place of weary travelers, the meeting-place on all sorts of occasions of the villagers. Its ample public-room was at once town-house, church and military headquarters, and the whole-souled landlord was looked upon as the natural arbiter of neighborhood quarrels. He was a just man, whose guide of life was the golden rule, and the love and respect universally accorded him were but the natural tribute to his worth. There is nothing out of harmony with such a character in the following permit granted in 1673, though at present men of his stamp are not found keeping bar: "Nathaniel Ingersoll is allowed to sell bear and syder by the quart for the tyme whyle the farmers are a building of their meeting-house and on Lord's days afterwards." When his only child, a little girl, died, he and his wife took and brought up Benjamin, one of the sons of his neighbor Joseph Hutchinson, who was "an obedient son until he came of one and twenty years of age." Ingersoll was not rich, but he gave the young man a liberal marriage gift out of his comparatively small farm. This was but one of a series of gifts of land. When the church was organized, as will hereafter appear, Nathaniel Ingersoll and Edward Putnam were colleagues as first deacons. It will be seen that Deacon Putnam's farm was on the Middleton line two or three miles from the church, and in 1714 he had reached a time when a man sees old age approaching. Ingersoll desired his dear friend to pass his declining years in the comfortable proximity to the church which he had himself ever enjoyed. Therefore, "for the good affection" which he bore to him, he freely gave Deacon Putnam "a piece of land bounded northerly upon the land of Joseph Green (the minister) next to his orchard gate, westerly on the highway, and southerly and easterly on my land," and thither, it is thought, Deacon Putnam came to dwell. When pipes were laid for the water-works, an old well was dug into, thought to have been his. Long before this he had given four acres and a half to Rev. Samuel Parris. By his will he gave the church fifty shillings "for the more adorning the Lord's Table, to be laid out in some silver cup." He gave a life estate in the lands of which he died possessed to his wife, with remainder to his adopted son, except one piece, "a small parcel of land of about two acres, that lyeth between Mrs. Walcots and George Wyotts by the highway, which I give to the inhabitants of Salem Village, for a training place forever." Forever! What better monument can a man leave to his memory than a reservation of land for the use of the public, forever. The pleasant common at Danvers Centre, bounded on one side by a street which bears the giver's name, is the old training-field of Nathaniel Ingersoll. These words are Mr. Upham's: "Within its enclosure the elements of the military art have been imparted to a greater number of persons distinguished in their day, and who have left an imperishable glory behind them as the defenders of their country, a brave yeomanry in arms, than on any other spot. From the slaughter of Bloody Brook, the storming of the Narragansett Fort and all the early Indian wars; from the Heights of Abraham, Lake George, Lexington, Bunker Hill, Brandywine, Pea Ridge, and a hundred other battle-fields, a lustre is reflected back upon this village parade-ground. It is associated with all the military traditions of the country, down to the late Rebellion."

About a mile northwest of the training-field is the high hill, upon which is situated the Danvers Lunatic Hospital, ten great buildings in one, whose roofs and pinnacles and central tower are seen for miles around, and form a landmark for fishermen far out in the harbor. This hill was in the midst of a grant to Captain William Hathorne, soldier, lawyer, judge, legislator, whose "many imployments for towne and countrie" were publicly recognized. A well-preserved old house in which Francis Dodge lived, when he sold the farm to the State, stood just south of the main building. Two hundred years ago it was the home of Joshua Rea. The hill retains the name of Hathorne.

Thus the line of original grants swept inward from the Orchard Farm. Still to the westward three hundred acres near the crossing of the two turnpikes were owned as early as 1650, by Job Swinerton, whose brother was a physician in Salem town. Job Swinerton had formerly lived on the place now owned by Andrew Nichols, Jr.; he sold this to John Martin, and Martin to Dale. From the latter, who was the ancestor of Surgeon General Dale and of those of the name in Danvers, came the name "Dale's Hill." Swinerton died in 1689, nearly ninety years old. One of the old Swinerton homesteads stood where Daniel

P. Pope lives, and some parts of the original estate are still owned and occupied by Swinertons. The tract between the Swinerton grant and the Ipswich River, on both sides of the Andover turnpike, was granted in 1648 to Captain George Corwin, a rich merchant of Salem. William Cantlebury purchased three-quarters of this land. "Buxton's Lane" perpetuates the name of John Buxton, a son-in-law of Cantlebury, and a man whose name appears with Nathaniel Ingersoll's and a few others, on a bond which saved the Rev. George Burroughs from unjust imprisonment. Some five hundred acres south of Corwin's grant, and covering much of West Peabody, came, by numerous conveyances, to be owned by Robert Goodell, some of which is still owned by descendants of the same name.

The present residence of Rev. Willard Spaulding, in West Peabody, stands on the site of the first Pope homestead. The land about it was first granted in 1640, to another man of the cloth, the Rev. Edward Norris, pastor of the First Church of Salem. It was bought by Joseph Pope in 1664, and his homestead, which remained in the family until 1793, when it was sold to Nathaniel Ropes, of Salem, was standing thirty years ago.

Joseph Pope came over in the "Mary and John," in 1634. He and his wife Gertrude were both in sympathy with the Quakers, and were excommunicated. He died about 1667, leaving nine children. Three sons founded families,—Joseph, Benjamin and Samuel. Samuel married Exercise Smith, whose parents were persecuted Quakers in Governor Endicott's time. It is through Joseph that most of the Popes in this vicinity trace their ancestry. Joseph's wife, Abiah Folger, of Nantucket, was an aunt of Benjamin Franklin. They had four sons to grow up. Three of them,—Enos, "clothier;" Eleazer, "cordwainer;" and Nathaniel, "blacksmith," went to Salem. In 1813 the third Enos, who followed the business which the first began, died at the age of ninety-two, the oldest man in Salem. Joseph, oldest of the four sons of the second Joseph, was born in 1687, married Mehitable Putnam, and died in 1755. While he was in occupation of the homestead young Israel Putnam, afterwards major general, came and married his daughter Hannah. Israel Putnam went to Pomfret, Conn., and so did his wife's oldest brother, Joseph. The sons of another brother, Ebenezer, were of Salem, while Eleazer's descendants are found principally in Vermont. Another brother, Nathaniel, kept alive the family name at the village. He lived from about 1724 to 1800, married first, a daughter of Jasper Swinerton; second, a daughter of Peter Clark, the minister. Among his children were Mehitable, wife of Caleb Oakes, and mother of the distinguished botanist, William Oakes; Amos Pope, the father of Zephaniah; and Elijah. Elijah died in 1846, eighty years old; the last of his sons, Jasper, died while yet these notes are unfinished, June, 1887, having reached an age some five years greater than his father's. Jasper leaves no children living. The Popes now living here are the children and grandchildren of the late Nathaniel and of the late Elijah.

Going back to Skelton's Neck, the territory just north thereof, aptly called the Plain, or, more commonly, the Plains, was originally granted to Samuel Sharp, "the godly Mr. Sharp who was ruling elder of the church of Salem." It will later appear what became of this and other lands reaching toward the Topsfield line. East of the Topsfield road, one hundred and sixty acres, of which Augustus Fowler's farm is a part, was granted to Daniel Rea, who first came to Plymouth and then to Salem. He died in 1662, and his only son, Joshua, founded an influential and widely connected family, though the name has passed out of the voting lists. Daniel Rea, son of Joshua, was living in Mr. Fowler's house two hundred years ago. To the eastward of the Reas, the Birch Plain region, the Rev. Hugh Peters had a grant of two hundred acres, which, after his execution, was sold by Captain John Corwin's widow to "Henry Brown, Jr., of Salisbury, yeoman." Browns are still living on a part of the estate. Far to the east, in what is now North Beverly, the land including Cherry Hill was one of the first grants. It was given to William Alford in 1636, and the hill was long called after his name. He sold to Henry Herrick, a younger son of Sir William Herrick, of Beau Manor Park, and the good blood of the ancestors showed itself in the sterling character of many of the descendants. The land between Cherry Hill and the Burley Farm, originally granted to John Holgrave, was later occupied by two Reas, two Bishops, a Watts and Captain Thomas Raymond. The latter was of a family of military renown; Colonel J. W. Raymond, now one of the County Commissioners, is a descendant. Three Raymonds were in the Narragansett fight, and one, John, was the first to enter the narrow pass to King Phillip's redoubt, which proved fatal to so many who went out from this vicinity, among others to Captain Joseph Gardner, son-in-law of Emanuel Downing, and to Charles Knight, Thomas Flint and Joseph Houlton, Jr., members of his company.

Covering the Burley Farm, east of Frostfish Brook, were some two hundred and fifty acres originally belonging to Charles Gott, Jeffrey Massey and others, a neighborhood for some time called "Gott's Corner." To the southward of the Ipswich road were the farms of the Barneys and Leaches, through which runs the road to Beverly town. Folly Hill was then Leach's Hill, and its length was bisected by the division line between the farms of the two families. Both names have passed away from the locality; in the little burying-ground by the highway in which doubtless are nameless graves, one is marked with the name of Martha, wife of Richard Leach, who died in 1756.

From the head of canoe navigation at Frostfish Brook, by the way, there began a well-defined Indian trail, leading, Mr. Nichols says, as far north as Canada. A glance at the county map shows that the location was well-chosen as a terminus of such a trail.

All of this region from Beverly to Reading was known in very early times as "Salem Farms," and the early settlers and their descendants were commonly called "the Farmers." The settlement which grew up along the brooks, which come together near Peabody Square, was at first called Brooksby, later as the Middle Precinct, and became the South Parish of Danvers. Since 1855 it has been a separate town, and an account of its early settlers and growth belongs to the history of Peabody, and will there be found.

Hints of the character of some of the Farmers have been given. As a whole they were a sturdy, intelligent set of men, with the energy and vigor requisite to convert the wilderness into pleasant homes, jealous of their rights, too prone to lawsuits, fair types of New England yeomanry.

Presently, children who had been born upon the lands, intermarried, established themselves on farms, carved out of the ancestral acres, and took the places of the aged fathers. A feeling grew that they were separated, alike by distance and by manner of life, from the dwellers in the town. It was far to go to church over rough roads and in all weathers, and the church was the centre of all things. They wanted to be a parish by themselves and provide their own minister. In 1670 this desire was expressed in a petition to the town, and some two years later the town's consent was ratified by an act of the General Court. October 8, 1672, the parish known as Salem Village was established; October 8, 1872, the first church of Danvers observed the two hundredth anniversary of that event.

"All farmers," so ran the vote of the town, "that now are or hereafter shall be willing to join together for providing a minister among themselves whose habitations are above Ipswich Highway, from the horse bridge to the wooden bridge at the hither end of Mr. Endicott's Plain, and from thence on a west line shall have liberty to have a minister by themselves and when they shall provide and pay him in a maintainance, that then they shall be discharged from their part of Salem minister's maintainance." The bounds of Salem Village, though a source of grievous dispute, especially between the farmers and "the Topsfield men," substantially included all of the present town except the two necks of Danversport, a part of North Beverly, considerable of West Peabody and much of the town of Middleton.

This Middleton land was an original grant of seven hundred acres to Governor Richard Bellingham, made by the General Court in 1639. It was bought for two hundred and fifty pounds by two poor men, Bray Wilkins and John Gingle, who paid down a ton of iron and one pound in money, in all twenty-five pounds, and gave a mortgage back for the balance. They paid off the debt, Wilkins and his sons bought up the Gingle interest, and, in 1702, Wilkins died at great age, a patriarchal land-owner, in the midst of the farms and homes of his descendants. Though beyond the six mile limit, these lands were by special act of the General Court, in 1661, made a part of Salem.

There were within the village, twenty years after its establishment, some hundred and fifty houses. Among the farmers not already mentioned were Daniel Andrew, himself sometimes a school-master, and founder of a family in which a number have followed that calling; the Flints, some of whom remain on the lands of their ancestors in West Peabody; Joseph Houlton, the honored head of a fine family, most conspicuous among whom is Samuel Holten, whose name will often appear in these annals; the Kettels, a name now extinct here; the Needhams, whose farms were divided by the village line, are still represented in West Peabody by descendants of the family name; Robert Prince, of whom the late Moses Prince was a descendant in the fifth generation, the latter a man who was eminently distinguished for the extent and accuracy of his knowledge of local history. The Prince farm contained about one hundred and fifty acres and the house which Robert occupied and probably built, is still standing on the estate of J. E. Spring. The widow of Robert married Alexander Osborne, and under that name she was one of the first three arrested for witchcraft, and was taken from this very house to Boston jail, where she died May 10, 1692.

Lying partly within the Village limits and partly in Topsfield, was the land of William Nichols, a large farm which he had bought about 1650, of Henry Bartholemew. "Nichols Brook" which flows through these lands perpetuates his name. He lived to be very old and from his only son, John, came an extensive family. One of the most prominent figures in our local history during the first half of this century was Dr. Andrew Nichols, a son of Andrew of the sixth generation, and were it not for the fact that a notice of his life from the pen of his son Andrew will be found accompanying the engraving at the close of this sketch, it would be fitting at this point to pay a tribute to his worth. Andrew Nichols, civil engineer, son of the doctor, whose home is not far south of the old Nichols farm and whose land includes a part of the Prince land, of which latter family he is a descendant through the marriage of John Nichols and Elizabeth Prince, has written a genealogy of the Nichols family and has collected a rich store of material for local history. Abel Nichols, a brother of the doctor, was the father of the late Abel Nichols, artist, father of Mrs. William E. Putnam and Lewis A. Nichols, and brother of the late Mrs. E. G. Berry.

In the extreme southeastern corner of the town, pleasantly situated on the southern bank of the river below the confluence of its three branches, is a very old and interesting house. It has always remained in the Jacobs family, whose ancestor, George Jacobs, was another of the victims of the witchcraft delusion, and, according to tradition, was hung on an oak tree on his own land and there also buried. It was his great-granddaughter, Elizabeth Jacobs, who married John Endicott and spoke out loud to Colonel Pickering as before related. She lived to be over ninety and died in 1809. Her ancestor had received from Salem a grant of a few acres and six "cow leases," on Rial Side, and it is recorded that the old lady used to tell how, before her marriage, she used to paddle a canoe across the river to milk the cows on this very land, and when the tide was out she would go across the flats on stepping-stones and wade the channel. It must be explained that the channel was much less deep then than now, and, although years ago it was written that "the stones are to be seen to this day," they are out of sight now beneath the mud.

One of the sons-in-law of Francis Nourse was Thomas Preston, the ancestor of a family which has always had representatives prominent in local affairs. Much more space deserves to be here given them than can be afforded. The present Massey estate was long in the Preston family. There, a hundred years ago, lived Levi Preston, who married Mehitable Nichols, and was the father of eleven children. One of these, Levi, built the present meeting-house of the First Church; Mehitable married Ebenezer Berry, inn-keeper; Polly married Nathaniel Felton; Sukey and Eliza, the brothers Asa and Nathan Tapley; Daniel was the father of Major D. J. Preston, deputy sheriff and tax collector, recently deceased; Abel, Hiram, William, John and Samuel—not in the order of their birth—all of these went out from the house on the hill. John went not far. He married Clarissa, the only daughter of Joseph Putnam, the next neighbor, and building an addition to her father's place, they lived there. John Preston died May 28, 1876, in his eighty-sixth year. He was the oldest Free-Mason in town; was many years a selectman; representative to the General Court; for many years chorister at the First Church in the days of 'cello and double-bass; was one of the early shoe manufacturers, and, after he gave up that business, a good farmer. His widow still survives, and her great age is mentioned in connection with the Putnams. His son, Charles P. Preston, resides on the site of the old house in which his father and grandfather, it might be carried farther, lived. According to the Directory of 1887, but three men in Danvers to-day bear this family name, two of whom are C. P. Preston, just mentioned, and his son.

Deacon Samuel Preston, brother of John, was one of the most distinctive figures, especially in the history of the First Church, of the past half-century. In his later years, as he came regularly to the ancient place of worship, there was coupled with a venerable form and appearance a youthful, elastic step. "There was no good service which he was not prompt, eager and faithful to render. He was of robust mind, of pure tastes, and he had a firm grasp of spiritual and eternal things." He read much and the best books, and it is not strange that in his family there is to be found a highly developed taste for literature. Miss Harriet W. Preston, the well-known authoress and magazine contributor, is his daughter. Something more of him in connection with the shoe businsss.

Present space permits only this brief and incomplete mention of the first settlers. Until 1752, when the district of Danvers was incorporated, the history of the parish of Salem Village is practically the history of that part of the town which still retains the name of Danvers, and its outline will be found in the chapter of church history. In the mean time some families thus far purposely omitted in the mention of the early settlers will here be somewhat more fully noticed.

The Putnams.—One of the most beautiful estates in Danvers is that known as Oak Knoll, which owes much of its attractiveness to the taste of its former owner, William A. Lander, Esq., of Salem. It is in the midst of pleasant surroundings, a mile's drive from the Plains, and passers-by peer through the trees to the unostentatious but comfortable mansion which will ever be memorable as the home of one who now for a number of years has been a member of the family of its present owners—the poet Whittier. But this very estate is, in itself, of deeper historical interest. It is the home of the first Putnam, the ancestor of that family which not only is to-day the largest and most distinctive of Danvers, but has its representatives far and wide, and has illuminated our national history with the names of many of its illustrious individuals.

John Putnam, this progenitor, came from Buckinghamshire, England, when well along in years. The land upon which he settled lay just north of Elder Sharpe's grant. This latter, resting on Skelton's Neck, and covering the whole of the present central village of the Plains, ran northwesterly to a point at the little pond at Beaver Dam. Putnam's land, including his own grant of a hundred acres, made in 1641, and previous grants to Ralph Fogg, Thomas Lathrop and Ann Scarlett spread out easterly from this point, so as to cover nearly the whole territory west of the Topsfield road from Lindall Hill to beyond the Putnamville school-house.

John Putnam had three sons, all born in the old country. Thomas, the oldest, was a young man of twenty-six at the time of his father's grant in Salem farms; he seems to have first struck out for himself in Lynn, where his character and good education qualified him to act as magistrate, and where he married Ann Holyoke, sister to the grandfather of President Holyoke of Harvard College. Nathaniel who was

just then arriving at his majority, and John, a lad of fifteen, probably came with their father to the new home at Beaver Dam. The father was one of the most energetic and successful of the pioneers, and became a very large land-owner. A few months before he died he bought, in company with John Hathorne, Richard Hutchinson and Daniel Rea, two very large tracts, the one including Hathorne's Hill and the surrounding territory; the other Davenport's, afterwards Putnam's Hill, and the surrounding territory. It would seem as though the lion's share of these lands fell to the Putnams.

John, the youngest son of the pioneer, married Rebecca Prince, and remained on the father's homestead.

Thomas, who had moved from Lynn to Salem town and married, some four years after his father's death, for his second wife, the rich widow of Nathaniel Veren, receiving as his double inheritance a portion of the original grant to Captain William Hathorne, built at the foot of the easterly slope of the hill which perpetuates the grantees' name, a house which, with subsequent additions, still remains, not only in perfect preservation, but in the hands and occupation of Putnams, who are lineal descendants of the builder, and who cherish, with fond interest, the history and traditions of their family. This house is about a mile due west from Oak Knoll, and, according to the location of modern roads, is at the intersection of the highway to Middleton and the Newburyport turnpike, and is directly opposite a fine avenue, which at this point begins its winding climb of Hathorne's Hill to the new lunatic hospital.

Nathaniel, the other son of the pioneer, married Elizabeth, daughter of Richard Hutchinson, the man who bought the original grant covering the whole region of Tapleyville, from Walnut Grove Cemetery to the site of the first village church. It was on a part of this tract which came to him by this marriage that Nathaniel built his home. Though not itself standing, another house of respectable age stands on or near its site. Mr. Nichols thinks the original house stood near the town gravel-pit, on Hobart Street. Notwithstanding the laying out of streets and house-lots in the most thickly settled portion of the town, including the grounds of the town-house, the Peabody Institute and the cemetery, some of the original farm remains about the house which, long the home of Judge Samuel Putnam, a lineal descendant of Nathaniel, has of late years been owned by other Putnams collateral to the Judge, but running back to the same ancestor. This Putnam estate, also very familiar, is on the main thoroughfare from the Plains to Tapleyville, something over a mile in a straight line, nearly south of Oak Knoll. It is on the banks of the stream which drains the meadows of Beaver Dam, and a short distance below the house the stream is met by another which drains the meadows far to the west and south. This confluence takes place in a natural basin easily and effectively dammed for water-power, and from very ancient times these Putnams have utilized this power for milling, just where Otis F. Putnam is to-day sawing, grinding and storing ice at the old stand.

From these three homes, then,—of Thomas, near Hathorne's hill; of Nathaniel, near the mill-pond; of John, at Oak Knoll,—came the three great families of Putnams.

a. The family of Thomas.—Thomas had three sons who became heads of families, — Sergeant Thomas, Deacon Edward and Joseph. The two former pushed up a mile toward Middleton, and established themselves close together on what is now Dayton Street, near the railroad station at Howe's crossing. Joseph remained on the home place.

No male descendants of Sergeant Thomas are left here. A short time ago William Putnam, an old man, died in his ninetieth year, in the old farm-house on the lower hill, directly in front of the hospital. He was the son of Deacon Eben Putnam, and grandson with three "greats" of Deacon Edward; and of the two living sons of this old man, one, James Warren, keeps the place, and, rare in these days, has a fine family of eight children, six of whom are boys, to keep the good deacon's name alive at home. The brother of William, Deacon Ebenezer, was the father of Rev. Hiram B. Putnam, now at Derby, N. H., and of Harriet Putnam. One of Deacon Edward's sons, Elisha, moved away to Sutton, Mass., and thus Danvers claims some of the honor which belongs to the name of General Rufus Putnam, son of Elisha, and a native of that town.

No history of this town will be complete without a full account of the part which Danvers took in the settlement of the Northwest Territory. The earliest wagon-train, under command of Captain Haffield White, a Danvers man, started on its long journey from here. Invitations have just been received by descendants of these pioneers to join in the great centennial celebration, to take place at Marietta in 1888.

General Rufus Putnam, Washington's friend, a famous engineer of the Revolution, presided at the convention in Boston, March 1, 1786, at which the Ohio Company was formed, and April 7, 1788, he laid out at Marietta the first permanent settlement in Ohio. Major Ezra Putnam, his cousin, also a grandson of Deacon Edward, was another of the Ohio pioneers. Nearer home, another descendant of Deacon Edward, Oliver Putnam, honored the family-name by establishing at Newburyport the Putnam Free School. Another descendant was the late lamented Professor John N. Putnam, of Dartmouth College.

Both the second and third generations, and, indeed, at least one of the fourth generation of Putnams, played prominent parts, and some of them very unfortunate ones, in the terrible witchcraft tragedy which

spread over this neighborhood. Nearly all of them were deluded. How otherwise, when one of the worst afflicted of the "afflicted children" was the daughter of Sergeant Thomas Putnam, recorder of the parish, and oldest son of the richest man in the village? It struck the proud and powerful family to the centre, and they were not so superior to the unreason of the age as to see that spanking was much more needed than hanging. The sad, dark days of 1692! None who have grasped from the wonderful monograph of Mr. Upham anything of their reality will speak in jest of Salem witches. They were taken, most of them, from Danvers homes, homes still standing in our midst, and, condemned by blind terror in the name of Law, after mockeries of trial their necks were broken on the gibbet. The Putnams had a hand in this business, save one. Against the black background there stands one grand stirring picture. It is of a young man twenty-two years of age standing at his farm-house door, with loaded firelock and saddled horse, ready to resist arrest or flee from overpowering force. It is Joseph Putnam, youngest of the sons of the first Thomas, who, in the face of brothers and uncles, from the first denounced the proceedings through and through. Such a course was almost sure death, and for six months gun and horse had been ready day and night. He had been married but a year to a young bride of less than seventeen, a granddaughter both of old John Porter and Major William Hathorne, and she was a worthy wife of a noble husband. It was this son who remained on his father's place, the one opposite the entrance to the hospital.

They had three sons, this young couple, Joseph and Elizabeth, whose names were William, David and Israel. There is a little chamber in the oldest part of the old house, which, through the kindness of the occupants, is often visited with great interest. Perhaps here all three of these boys were born, but, alas for the heroes of peace, it is the heroes of war whom men most idolize, and as one enters beneath the oaken beams of the low ceiling, and sees in the quiet room the ancient furniture, the fire-place and other relics of long gone years, the mind strives only to grasp the strange reality that in this very spot that favorite hero of the Revolution, to whom tales of bravery and courage seem as commonly attributed as to the demi-gods of old, "Old Put," Major General Israel Putnam, Washington's "uncut diamond," actually kicked and cried just like any other baby. The wolf's den, the rapid ride from the plow to the Lexington alarm, the tender of the first commission at Boston from the hands of Washington, the dashing plunge at Horseneck, the long service of one of the most trusted commanders, these and all other events of his distinguished life, had a sort of potential existence in this same little room.

He was a little more than twenty-one years old when the event happened to which this item found in an old memorandum book refers: "July ye 19 1739 Israel Putnam and Hannah Pope were married together." Immediately the young couple struck out, took a farm at Pomfret, Conn., and returned thither no more. The descendants of the general are numerous in the State of his adoption, in New York, and especially so, through his son, Colonel Israel, an officer with his father in the Revolution, about Marietta, O.; and some also in Kentucky and other Southern States.

William, the oldest brother of the general, had no sons. David, the next son, remained on the home place. It was a mistake to insinuate that Israel monopolized the military spirit of the family. David, so Mr. Upham says, was a celebrated cavalry officer, but, being much older than Israel, flourished in the period anterior to the Revolution. Colonel Timothy Pickering used to mention as one of the recollections of his boyhood, that David Putnam "rode the best horse in the province."

To follow briefly down the old house which may now understandingly be identified by the name it commonly bears, the "Old Put" house, David had these sons,—William, Joseph, Israel and Jesse. Joseph was "Deacon Joseph" of the Village Church, for whom David built that other Putnam house a short distance from his own, known as the "Colonel Jesse house." Of Colonel Jesse and his children, a few words farther on.

William, eldest son of David, moved to Sterling, Mass. A daughter of his became the wife of Captain Samuel Endicott, of Salem, and their son, William P. Endicott, who married Miss Crowningshield, is the father of Hon. William Crowningshield Endicott, President Cleveland's Secretary of War. Another descendant of William Putnam, of Sterling, was the Rev. George Putnam, D.D., long and well known as pastor of the First Church of Roxbury.

Jesse, the youngest son of David, was a graduate of Harvard, and a well known merchant of Boston, whose earlier residence was on Summer Street, near Trinity Church. His daughter Catherine was that lady of fine culture and patriotic spirit who, in her eighty-fifth year, presented a silk banner to the Putnam Guards of Danvers as they went out to war.

Israel, the third son of David, the fourth in line of ownership, remained on the old place, and from him it descended to the only one of his three sons who married,—Daniel. Daniel married the daughter of another Putnam, Stephen, whom we shall meet in the family branch of Nathaniel, and of his twelve children, two, Miss Susan and her brother Ansel W., are the present occupants of the historic house. The youngest daughter Julia, widow of Hon. John D. Philbrick, of whom something is written in connection with our schools, resides nearly opposite. Allen, the oldest, and Benjamin Wadsworth, the youngest son, reside in Boston. Daniel and Ahira manufactured shoes in a shop still standing within the yard of the old house; the widow and a granddaughter of

Daniel, who reside here, are his only living representatives; Ahira's son, Granville B., is a well known teacher in Boston, and the name of his other son, Major Wallace A. Putnam, stands first on the monument erected to the Danvers men, who lost their lives in the late war. Deacon William R. Putnam tilled his ancestral acres some thirty years, removed, to reside with his children at Redwing, Minn., in 1874, and there died in 1886. The male lineage of the old General Putnam house runs back then thus, —Ansel, Daniel, Israel, David, Joseph, Thomas. There are now living but five grandsons of Daniel in the male line, and none of them live in Danvers.

A few words concerning the family of Jesse, "Col. Jesse" before alluded to. He was himself one of the prominent and widely known citizens of his day, one of the foremost advocates of the early temperance reform and one of the strongest opponents of slavery. In his manner he was somewhat brusque, and, like his grandfather, he was fond of a good horse.

He died in 1860, but his widow, Elizabeth, daughter of Dr. Silas Merriam, of Middleton, whom he married in her twentieth year, still living, celebrated November 14, 1884, her *one hundredth birthday.* Rare event; fitly celebrated. The "tribe of Jesse" were six sons and six daughters, a family in all respects to be proud of. Four of the surviving five were present with their mother on the occasion just mentioned. These twelve children were, in order, Catherine, Andrew, Elizabeth, Francis P., Henry F., Calvin, Mary J., Martha A., Sarah W., Charles, Emily A. and John M. The latter lives on his father's place, and in his family is another Jesse. The other survivors are Calvin; Sarah, widow of George W. Fuller; and Emily, widow of Rev. Richard T. Searle. Francis died at his home near by his father's a few years ago, much respected. Henry and Charles died in the West, the latter having been superintendent of schools in St. Louis. (Mrs. Putnam died September 20, 1887, at the age of 102 years, 10 months, 6 days.)

b. The family of Nathaniel.—Nathaniel, "Lieutenant,"—military titles were common in the family—had two sons, Benjamin and John. The latter went beyond the westerly slope of Hathorne's hill and established himself near the Log Bridge over the Ipswich River, on the farm now owned by George H. Peabody. He was known as "Carolina John," and this name occurs on a rough diagram of a division of land drawn in ink on the parchment binding of one of the old volumes of records in the registry of deeds at Salem. The site of his home is marked by a very old but well preserved house, situated beneath ancient elms, where the high land begins to slope to the river meadows. It was in the immediate neighborhood of the other river farms upon which the brothers Deacon Edward and Sergeant Thomas Putnam, cousins of this John, were settled. John had these sons,—Josiah, John, Amos, Samuel and Daniel. A grandson, Daniel, was a deacon of the village church and lived close by his grandfather's place on one of the Peabody farms, and died in 1801, aged sixty-three years. Neither of the brothers, except John, leave descendants of the male line in Danvers. A descendant of Josiah, Hon. Harvey Putnam, born at Brattleboro, Vt., in 1793, was a prominent lawyer in Schenectady, N. Y., a member of Congress, and his son, Hon. James O. Putnam, of Buffalo, has long been one of the most distinguished men of western New York. John, brother of Josiah, had three sons,—John Amos, Edmund. An eccentric old man well-known some years ago, published a rambling autobiographical sketch called "The Life and times of Peter Putnam." Peter's grandfather was the brother of Amos and Edmund, just mentioned, and their estate was on the turnpike, south of Hathorne's hill.

Amos Putnam was a physician, and one of the active patriotic spirits of Revolutionary times. His name often occurs in honorable connection on the records of the town. His residence was the brick house near Felton's corner, where afterwards the late Daniel Tapley lived. A son of Dr. Amos, James, also a physician, is to be remembered with his estimable wife who long survived him, as the parents of those two teachers "Hannah and Betsey," names always spoken together because they always taught together, and fondly cherished by many of our older people. Recently a number of the survivors of their old scholars met with Mrs. Harriet P. Fowler to consider the erection of a memorial over their hitherto unmarked graves. Something further of them will be found in the chapter on schools.

Edmund Putnam, brother or rather half-brother of Dr. Amos, was "Deacon Edmund," whose name is revered by Universalists as the pioneer of the departure of that denomination from the old faith. He served as deacon in the village church from 1762 to 1785, and died in 1810, aged eighty-six years. He lived in the old house standing between the Topsfield road and the railroad, a well preserved relic of witchcraft times, now owned by Augustus Fowler. Deacon Edmund's sons were Andrew, Israel and Edmund. Israel was the father of Elias Putnam, "Squire Lias," a name at which the pen halts to find words of fitting tribute and then passes altogether, on the announcement that a distinguished son, Rev. Dr. Alfred P. Putnam, is to contribute a sketch of his father's life, to appear in subsequent pages of this book. In the number and character of descendants the line of Edmund, Israel and Elias is well represented at home and abroad.

Poplar and Locust Streets cross each other a third of a mile above the Square at the Plains. Both are ancient roads; the former, the old "Dyson Road" from Beverly to Andover; the other, the "Topsfield Road." At this corner was the old homestead of Judge Timothy Lindall. Speaking roughly, the roads cross at right angles, the Topsfield road running north, the Andover road running west. Another road,

now called Summer Street, starts from the Andover road about a half mile west from the Lindall corner, and runs north parallel to the Topsfield road, till it meets a fourth road, now called North Street, which, starting from the Topsfield road a mile and a half above the Lindall corner, runs west, the "back road" to Topsfield. About the sides of the parallelogram which, still roughly speaking, is formed by these four roads, are a number of old Putnam homes. Oak Knoll, the family starting-point, is itself on the easterly side of Summer Street, about midway of its length. The first Putnam to push much northward was Benjamin, elder of the two sons of Nathaniel. He was "Deacon Benjamin," who settled on the place now owned and occupied by Miss Goodhue, the very old house standing on or near the ancient site, being on North Street, midway between Summer Street and the Topsfield road. Deacon Benjamin died in 1714, fifty years old. By will he gave his son Daniel "one hundred and fifty pounds for his learning." Daniel went to Harvard, and among his college mates during the last year of his course was Joseph Green, son of the village minister. Daniel graduated in 1717, the first of a long list of subsequent graduates of the same name. He became a minister in North Reading, and died there, leaving descendants.

Nathaniel, oldest son of Deacon Benjamin, moved back south to his grandfather's, Nathaniel's, place by the mill-pond. He, likewise, was a deacon, serving twenty-three years, dying in 1754, and he was the father of still another deacon, Archelaus, who at one time lived where the late Gilbert Tapley died, and of whom the story is elsewhere told how he was the pioneer of Danversport.

Tarrant Putnam, next son of Deacon Benjamin, and the first of a number of other Putnams to bear that peculiar name, was the father of Gideon, still another deacon, who died in 1811, eighty-four years old. Gideon was a store-keeper, who lived and carried on his business at the well-known corner where subsequently Jonas Warren, Daniel Richards, and the sons of the latter, succeeded him. It was Deacon Gideon who, by selling cheese in Revolutionary times at nine shillings per pound, was declared an enemy of his country, though he so far regained popular favor as to be sent soon after to the General Court. He will be remembered as the father of that distinguished citizen whose name has been already mentioned—Judge Samuel Putnam, who died about thirty years ago on the homestead estate of the original Nathaniel. He is remembered as an old gentleman courtly and refined, of the manners of the old school, esteemed and respected by all who knew him.

After a highly honorable and extensive practice at the bar, in which his severe application showed itself in the fruits of exact and comprehensive legal learning, he was appointed in 1814, on the death of Chief Justice Sewall, to a seat on the bench of the Supreme Court. This he held until January 26, 1842. The late Alfred A. Abbott thus spoke of him at the celebration of the centennial of the town, 1852: "For more than a quarter of a century did he fulfill, ably and faithfully, the duties of his high station, doing his full part to sustain and elevate that reputation of our Supreme bench which has made its decisions standard and indisputable authority throughout the land. Our reports contain a great number of his opinions, elaborate and rich, than which few are cited with more frequency, or held in greater respect. At length, when the weight of increasing years began to oppress him, Judge Putnam voluntarily put off the judicial ermine, with a rare delicacy and commendable good sense resigning his lofty trust while yet his mental vigor was unabated, and retiring from his well-earned and still fresh laurels to the joys and comforts of private life. No one has illustrated the family name with a purer life, higher virtues or juster fame." He was the grantor of the lands of the Walnut Grove Cemetery, Peabody Institute and surrounding estates. He carried on the milling business before alluded to, and numerous documents are on file in the Town-House showing with what courteous firmness he asserted and maintained his rights whenever the mill privilege was in danger of being infringed, as when Sylvan Street was laid out in 1842 over his dam. As early as 1820, so wrote an aged citizen a few years ago, Judge Putnam was the only man in Essex County who laid in ice for market. Then the ice was cut from the pond with an axe, loaded upon sleds without tools, stored in a cellar built for that purpose and was delivered to consumers with the naked hands. A load was driven twice a week to Salem. This cellar held but a hundred tons; the present harvest is more than five thousand tons. The descendants of Judge Putnam reside chiefly in Boston. A son, Samuel R., married a sister of James Russell Lowell, and their son, Lieutenant William Lowell, fell bravely fighting at Ball's Bluff in 1861. His mother was the writer of a remarkable series of sketches on Hungary at the time of the struggle of Kossuth and his compatriots for liberty. Dr. Charles G. Putnam, second son of the judge, was an eminent practitioner in Boston, president of the Massachusetts Medical Society, and through his generosity the town possesses a substantial memorial of the family in the reservation known as Pickering Park, at the meeting of several streets laid out through the old farm. This was presented to the town by Dr. Putnam in 1875.

Deacon Tarrant Putnam, uncle to Judge Samuel, was the father of Dr. Israel, of Bath, Me., and Tarrant, a New York merchant of great wealth. A son of Dr. Israel is Hon. William L. Putnam, ex-mayor of Portland and a leading lawyer there, at present prominent as representing the United States in the fishery controversy with the Dominion.

Just opposite the junction of Summer and North Streets, situated on a high hill at the northwest corner of the parallelogram and looking directly southerly to Oak Knoll is a pleasant old farm-house known as the Wallis farm. This was the home of Benjamin, one of the seven sons of Deacon Benjamin and the ancestor of Benjamin C. Putnam, now of Danvers, the sixth Benjamin in line. The fourth son of Deacon Benjamin, and the last to be here mentioned, was Stephen. He pushed around to the easterly side of a long high hill which monopolizes much of the northerly portion of the land included by the roads spoken of and which fittingly bears the name of Putnam's Hill, and established himself on the site of the present residence of Henry A. White. The descendants of Stephen have been more conspicuous and are at present more numerously represented than any others of this branch of the family. The old house is still remembered by some, standing under a great willow, beneath which was a large horse-block. Here, as well as on some other estates, slaves were kept; one, "old Rose," was bought in Jamaica by the pound.

The sons who grew up on this hill-side farm included Timothy, a Tory, who went to Nova Scotia; Moses, a Harvard graduate of 1759, who went to Wilton, N. H.; Phinehas, Aaron and Stephen, Jr. Phinehas went westward and established his home a half a mile north of the "Old Put" house; of his five sons, Joseph remained at home, and Charles P. Preston, a son of his only child Clarissa, widow of John Preston, now in her ninety-fifth year, is the present owner and occupant of the premises. Matthew, another son of Phinehas, went south to the Rebecca Nourse homestead of witchcraft history, which place has come down through another Matthew and Orrin to the heirs of the latter. Timothy, another son of Phinehas, came to the Plains and lived long on the site of the present residence of his grandson, Otis F. Putnam; he was the father of Elbridge, Willard, Adrian and Gustavus, of whom the latter only survives, and through these sons, except Willard, numerous descendants of "Uncle Timmy" are living in the town.

Pushing south from his father's home, Stephen's son Aaron went to the southern slope of Putnam's hill and probably built the pleasant old house which one can see through the leafy lane leading in from the Topsfield road near the residence of Israel H. Putnam. Aaron had two sons to establish families, Simeon and Rufus. Simeon's sons were Simeon, Aaron, Augustus, Edward B. and Israel H., the latter retaining the ownership of the old place; the well known face and figure of the former, "Uncle Sim," for many years tax-collector, will be long remembered; he died April 14, 1880, in his seventy-fifth year. Rufus, soon after his marriage, struck out into a new quarter for the Putnams, and bought one of the old Leach homesteads, under the easterly slope of Folly Hill; William, the survivor of his two sons, is still living near the site of the old house in his eighty-fourth year; the other son, Rufus Putnam, after a long and honorable service as teacher in the higher schools of Salem, built about thirty years ago on his portion of his father's farm, the house in which he died in November, 1875. He brought back to his native town the ripe wisdom of mature years and the benefit of his counsel was often sought, especially in the settlement of estates. He was long president of the Savings Bank, and long on the school committee; he was quiet in his life, of unspotted character, and greatly respected.

To go back a step now to the farm of Stephen: Stephen, Jr., the youngest brother of Phinehas, Aaron and the others, just mentioned, remained at home. Stephen, Jr., was a carpenter who built or helped to build the village meeting-house of 1786, and he was the father of these children,—Stephen, Moses, Jacob, Susanna, Ruth, Samuel, Eben, Hannah and Sally. The first and the last two died unmarried. Moses and Samuel established themselves close by their grandfather's home, and each built up a large and successful shoe business in the neighborhood, which as an involuntary tribute to the energy and worth of these brothers has for some forty years borne the name of Putnamville. The old name of this locality to the Topsfield line was Blind-hole, after a swamp. Jacob learned the tanner's trade at Elias Endicott's, bought the old Frye's Tavern, between Peabody and Salem, and built up a successful business there. George F. Putnam, of Salem and Boston, is his son. Eben, the last survivor of the children, came early down to Danvers Plains, in the days when there was no village to speak of, where now is the business centre of the town. Of the daughters, Susanna married Daniel Putnam, lived in the "Old Put" house, and was the mother of the present occupants. Ruth was the wife of Andrew Batchelder, and lived in the old Lindall house. A number of old clocks bear his imprint as "clock-maker;" by a second wife his descendants are likewise numerous and respectable.

The three sons who remained at home all lived to a good old age, to be popularly known as "uncles"—Uncle Moses, Uncle Sam and Uncle Eben—and were fathers of very large families. Uncle Moses was according to the tax-list of 1847 the richest man in town. Those next approaching him were Daniel P., Jonathan and Samuel King, Gilbert Tapley, Benjamin Porter, Samuel Putnam and Elias Putnam. He died September 10, 1860, in his eighty-fifth year. Four of his children are living,—Harriet, the wife of Deacon S. P. Fowler; Susan, widow of Daniel F. Putnam; Moses; and Emeline, wife of Charles A. Putnam, of Boston. Of Samuel's children, these,—Mary, widow of Elbridge Trask; Thomas, Albert, Charles A. and Henry. Of Eben's children, these,—Edwin F.; Elizabeth, wife of William Cheever, of Staten Island; Margaret, widow of Joseph W. Ropes; and Mrs. Hannah Bomer, in the west.

C. The family of John. It was "Lieutenant," afterwards "Captain" John, youngest of the three sons of the pioneer, who remained on the original Putnam homestead at Oak Knoll. He was impetuous, rough, ever ready to stand by his rights if need be with force and arms, but when the farmers realized that education was lax among them, it was this same man whom they selected "to take care that the law relating to the catechising of children and youth be duly attended," and to see "that all families do carefully and constantly attend the due education of their children and youth according to law." In his family the minister, George Burroughs, and his wife lived nine months in the year 1680, and on these beautiful premises where the poet is passing his declining years, the minister gave evidence of that great strength which twelve years later was credited to the devil and cost him his life.

John Putnam had four sons,—Jonathan, James, Eleazer and John. Stretching eastward from Oak Knoll a broad fertile plain lies between Lindall Hill and Putnam's Hill. Skirting the northern limits of this plain was an ancient road, traces of which are yet visible, which coming from Wenham passed by Oak Knoll and so on through a part of the pleasant avenue which leads by the old Prince house, a relic of witchcraft times, which is now the farm-house of J. E. Spring's place, around Beaver Dam to the village church, a road over which, without doubt, many sad and anxious hearts passed to trial and condemnation in the terrible days of 1692. Just opposite the residence of the late Nathaniel Boardman, and included within his estate, is an old well-preserved house, the oldest in Putnamville. It marks the point at which a traveler coming across the meadow from Oak Knoll would strike the Topsfield road, and thither Jonathan Putnam pushed out and built, it is thought at least a part of this very house. Jonathan's son Jonathan is the ancestor of Nathan T. Putnam and the descendants of his son David in town are the Boardman family.

James, second son of John, seems to have taken the homestead, Oak Knoll. To follow down this interesting estate, it probably passed next to James' son Jethro, at any rate Jethro's son Enoch lived there. Colonel Enoch Putnam was one of the distinguished men of his time. He was forty-three years old when the Revolution broke out, and as a lieutenant in Colonel Hutchinson's Minute-men went to Lexington; by good service in the war he won his higher title of colonel. It was the two daughters of Colonel Enoch whom two sons of Phinehas Putnam, Joseph and Timothy, married, and as Mrs. Preston, the aged lady before referred to is the daughter of Joseph, she is likewise the granddaughter of Colonel Enoch, and to a young lady, her own granddaughter, has passed a plain gold ring, worn quite smooth, but with this inscription legible,—"Remember the giver.—E. P." The giver was the colonel and the wearer was the great-great-grandmother of the present owner. The only son of Colonel Enoch, Jethro, married a daughter of the distinguished Dr. Holten, and of his family the representatives of his son Philemon still live here. As Jethro went to live on the Holten place it is probable that about that time the old homestead went out of the Putnam family. Some fifty years it was owned by Nathaniel Smith and wife, and was sold with sixty-five acres of land to William A. Lander, April 9, 1841. By subsequent purchases Mr. Lander became owner of nearly as much more adjoining land. The old house was allowed to stand two or three years after the present residence was built. It stood on the level field where now is the pear orchard and not far from the old well and the large elm which was dug and planted by slave labor. Mr. Lander lived on the place which his own taste has made so beautiful until 1875, when he removed to Salem, and the place then passed to its present owners, the family of the late Colonel Edmund Johnson, of Boston, who died in 1877. Mr. Whittier is a relative of the family, and has spent most of his time at Oak Knoll, a name which he himself gave the estate.

But another and later Putnam homestead, just this side of Oak Knoll, remained in the family much longer than the original homestead. It was probably built by James Putnam, an uncle of Colonel Enoch, and passed down through Archelaus to his son, Doctor Archelaus, then to his son, James A., whose heirs sold it to Mr. Lander..

John A. Putnam, of Danvers, is one of the children of James A. Hon. James Putnam, of whom Chief Justice Parsons said, "he was the best lawyer in North America," an uncle of Dr. Archelaus, was undoubtedly born in this old house. He practised in Worcester, and among his students was John Adams, the second President; he succeeded Edmund Trowbridge as Attorney-General of the province, was raised to the bench and held other high positions. But he threw the weight of his powerful influence and character in favor of the Royalists and was proscribed as a Tory.

Two (Jonathan and James) of the sons of Lieutenant John have been thus mentioned. The next (Eleazer) went over to the site afterwards occupied by Phinehas Putnam, of the branch of Nathaniel, and now owned by Charles P. Preston, Eleazer being of the third generation and Phinehas of the fifth. One of the sons of Eleazer, Henry went to Medford, and it will be read elsewhere how he followed his sons to Lexington and was killed. Samuel, another son, established his home where the late Sylvanus B. Swan died, which was long the home of Samuel's son, Eleazer, "Squire Ely," pronouncing it with the "E" long and the "ly" short, widely known and trusted as magistrate, surveyor and conveyancer. Of the 'Squire's three sons, Rev. Israel Warburton Putnam, D.D., born in 1786, was a very distinguished clergy-

man, who was settled twenty years at Portsmouth, N. H., and thirty years at Middleboro', Mass.; Archelaus, a physician, practised in Windham, N. H.; and Samuel was for many years a distinguished teacher of Brooklyn, N. Y.

Reference has been made to the fact that Henry, son of Eleazer, son of Lieutenant John, was killed at Lexington. One of his sons, also Henry, was wounded in the same engagement. Allen Putnam, a young son of this Henry, is said to have been the first to leap ashore of the colonists who went out to found Ohio. The Danvers home of Allen's grandfather seems to have been the old Amos Wilde house, on Locust Street, opposite Chestnut Street.

It was John, another son of Lieutenant John Putnam, who, in connection with his father, is supposed to have built the "old Clark house," still standing, not far north of Oak Knoll. Among his descendants the name of Caleb often occurs; none are known in Danvers.

At a gathering of the descendants of Deacon Benjamin Putnam, held a few years ago, one of our oldest citizens, as orator, recalled how, in his childhood he sat in the old brick meeting house when the familiar faces of the Putnams were in every part of the church, their titles, positions and scriptural names all objects of veneration. There were, he said,—

> "Benjamin and Joseph, Timothy and Eleazer,
> Philemon and Hiram, James and Ebenezer,
> Amos and Stephen, Seth and Simeon,
> Israel and David, Peter and Gideon,
> Phinehas and Matthew, Ezra and Nathaniel,
> Moses and Samuel, Jesse and Daniel."

No genealogy of the family has been published, though Dr. A. P. Putnam has collected a rich store of material, of which, doubtless, he will some day gave the public the benefit. For what is here given the writer is indebted to certain members of the family and others in Danvers, and to Dr. Putnam for a number of interesting notes which have been mainly incorporated in the manuscript.

THE PORTERS.—Among the records of old deeds at Salem is an agreement made the 10th day of the Third Month, 1643, between Samuel Sharpe, of Salem, and John Porter, of Hingham:

> "The sd Samuel doth hereby sell unto ye said Jno. his fearme lying North ef Mr. Skelton's farme Deceased with ye meadow ground thereto annexed & all appurtenances thereto belonging for ye summe of one hundred & ten pounds to be paid in money Cattle & corne at such rates as 2 or more indifferent men shall apprize them te be paid at 3 several payments that is to say fifty pounds the 20th of this present month being 3rd month 1643 and thirty pounds of ye 3d mo 1644 & other thirty pounds on the first day of ye 3rd mo in 1645 In witness whereof the parties above sd have hereunto set their hands the day and year above written
>
> "SAMUEL SHARPE
> "JOHN PORTER"

The deed, acknowledged before Governor Endicott, conveyed all the land now covered by the central village of Danvers, "the Plains." The purchaser, John Porter, came from England and settled at Hingham, where he was in 1635. He was sent from Hingham as a deputy to the General Court in 1644, and that same year moved his family and his goods, probably by water, to make a new home at Salem Farms. According to the family tradition, he lived in the old house which was standing in the field near the present location of the Unitarian Church within the memory of living persons. He was a tanner by trade, and some remains of his tan-yard were discovered many years ago near the old house. An ancient well is still to be seen close by. John Porter was a man of energy and influence; he was well known throughout the colony, held many official positions, —selectman, deputy to General Court, etc.,—and he became probably the largest individual land-owner in what is now the town of Danvers. He and John Putnam stand together as prominent figures in our earliest history. Both were the ancestors of a very numerous and honorable line of descendants. If the Porters at first owned the most acres, certainly the Putnams came next, and the two families together held fully two-thirds of the present town and extended beyond its limits. Their farms were adjacent, inter-marriages, of course, occurred, and many now living here and elsewhere trace back their ancestry, often in more ways than one, through Porter-Putnam unions to the two Johns.

John Porter's oldest son, John, was a distinguished exception to the "honorable line" above referred to; he was a reprobate. He abused his parents till they appealed to the law. He was punished condignly, and were it not for his mother's forbearance would probably have been hung. Later his case became very conspicuous, because upon his appeal for redress made to the four commissioners of Charles II., sent over in 1664 to curb the liberties of the colonists, occurred a memorable struggle, in which the General Court had every advantage of position, and used it, to the final rout of the royal emissaries. The elder John refers in his will to his "sonne John Porter, who, by his Rebellious & wicked practices, hath been a great grief to his parents, & greatly wasted my estate." The man left no descendants to be ashamed of such an ancestor. Three other sons, like the three sons of John Putnam, became the heads of great families,—Samuel, Joseph and Israel.

Samuel, "mariner," settled in Wenham, on the easterly shore of the lake, and a part of his original farm is still occupied by his descendants. His only son, John, did much to wipe out the dishonor with which his uncle had stained his grandfather's name. This John was of high respectability, representative to the General Court and moderator of town meetings during the first quarter of the last century, and he married into another eminent family, the Herricks, of Alford's—now Cherry Hill. From the single thread of an only son the line now branched out in the families of five sons, they being of a family of eleven children, whose ages at death aggregated nine hundred and fifty-five years. Of these five sons,

Samuel, the oldest, lived on the lake-side homestead, and he, too, married well, his wife being a granddaughter of Governor Simon Bradstreet. Samuel's grandson Isaac was the father of Colonel Paul Porter, commander of the Ipswich regiment of militia in the war of 1812, and a very prominent citizen of Wenham, through whose children to the third and fourth generation the name is preserved in that town. One of the younger of the five sons just mentioned was Jonathan, an inn-holder of Wenham, who was also sent to the General Court. His oldest son was Benjamin, and with him the name returns to Danvers, and adds to our list of military heroes one of the most distinguished. On the pleasant southern slope of the first hill which one meets in driving from Danvers Plains to Topsfield is a well-preserved gable-roofed house, once one of the Rea homes. In a portion of this old house Zerubbabel Rea lived, a hundred and twenty-five years ago, more or less. Through his marriage with Sarah, widow of Bartholomew Brown, and daughter of Zerubbabel Rea, the place thenceforth became the home of Benjamin Porter, who had four sons. Of these, Moses was the oldest,—General Moses Porter, of whom a sketch appears in what is written concerning the Revolution. He was never married. The homestead passed to the third son, Zerubbabel. He, too, was a tanner, and certain stone door-steps in the vicinity are relics of his bark-mill, which stood in the rear of Augustus Fowler's residence, itself a well-preserved relic of two centuries ago. Zerubbabel Porter was also the very first shoe manufacturer of Danvers, the pioneer of that industry for which the town soon become noted. Until within a few years ago the little square shop was sitting in the angle between the highway and the drive to the Rea-Porter house, hugging close to the hill, which was the cradle of our shoe business. Of the men who were there employed, and of the growth of the business from the beginning, a few words will be found elsewhere. Zerubbabel Porter was one of the early Universalists, "was of rare intelligence, a ready speaker at town-meetings, wrote much and well for the newspapers, especially upon political subjects." The writer happened to come across this letter in the files of old papers at the Town-House:

"Gentlemen Assessors of Danvers:

"I lately received my tax bill for 1839, find addition to my former taxes for many years past about fifty per cent. I think, gentlemen, you must have wrong conceptions of my property and circumstances. I am bordering on eighty years of age and feeble health, . . . as to property, not five dollars has been added to my estate the year past. . . . Perhaps you think I have stock in the Village bank, by the advice of friends I gave my note on Interest for five shares and have paid the interest ever since, you of course will judge the value of such property. . . . It has always been my fortune to labor hard, at the age of twenty-one it was my fortune to loose one of my hands, of course it made work extremely hard, now I am done, think of these things and doo what is right—if you can consistently with your feelings I think will abate some of my tax—I am gentlemen myself some acquainted with assessing taxes. I very well know it is a difficult office to perform, but certainly we ought feel for the sick and feeble, for they are not in a capacity to gain property.

"I am Gentlemen, your friend and Servant,

"Z. Porter."

Zerubbabel Porter died November 11, 1845, in his eighty-seventh year. He left two sons, Warren and Alfred. The former was lieutenant in the War of 1812, and afterwards was commissioned lieutenant-colonel. Three males only of the next generation are living in town, Elias Endicott Porter, son of Alfred; and Dr. Warren Porter and John W. Porter, attorney, sons of Colonel Warren, and upon one little boy, the son of the latter, at present depends the preservation in Danvers of this branch of the family name.

Of the male descendants of pioneer John Porter's next son, Joseph, there are none at all left here. They early scattered. One—Samuel, son of Eleazer, son of Samuel, son of Joseph—graduated at Harvard in 1763, became an eminent lawyer in Salem, was proscribed as a Tory, went to London and died there, after revisiting this country in 1798,—"a gentleman of culture and refinement, who contributed greatly to the enjoyment of the band of refugees at the weekly meetings of the New England Club in London during the war."

One of the purchases which the first John Porter made, was that of the Emanuel Downing grant of five hundred acres near the Topsfield line. This farm he gave to Joseph upon his marriage with Anna, daughter of Major William Hathorne, and for many years it remained in the family, probably longer than any other in Danvers. It went down to the fourth consecutive Joseph, who died in 1805, and then passed to Captain Dudley Bradstreet, who married this last Joseph's daughter Polly, from whom it descended to his son, Major John Bradstreet. This is why this old Porter farm is commonly called the "old Bradstreet farm."

To Israel, who established the third and last branch of the Porter family, his father by will bequeathed "my new mansion-house, with all ye housings thereupon, orchards and lands adjoining, so much as was by me purchased of Mr. Sharpe, also I do give him sixty acres of Skelton's necke, *i. e.* that pt wh I purchased of Mr. Skelton's daughters," also "my interest in the Saw-mill near Skelton's neck." By purchase from his brother Benjamin, who was unmarried, and otherwise, Israel retained all the southern portion and, as now settled, by far the richest, of his father's great landed property. One of these deeds from Benjamin to Israel, dated January 23, 1700, conveys "a certain parcel of land given unto me by will of my dearest father, and by him purchased part of it of Mr. Gott, part of Jacob Barney, Jeffry Massey, William Watson, John Pickard and Pasco Foot, all which parcels are commonly called Gott's Corner." This "Gott's Corner" included a part of the beautiful estate which is known as the Burley Farm, now owned by George A. Peabody, Esq., and also the Proctor farm, and

other lands eastward. It was on or near the site of Mr. Peabody's residence that Israel Porter himself was living in witchcraft times. Israel died in 1706, leaving by will to his oldest sons, John and Israel, all of Sharpe's farm above the Ipswich Road. A deed of partition was made between John and Israel in 1809. John was a "mariner," and probably died in Boston. By virtue of a power in his will his widow Elizabeth, in consideration of twelve hundred and ten pounds, "good bills of credit on the Province," sold to Timothy Lyndall, of Boston, gentleman, four tracts embracing about two hundred and fifteen acres, July, 1715. The old Lindall house, which stood at the corner of Locust and Poplar Streets, has been referred to in what has been said of the Putnams.

Israel Porter's second son, Israel, one of the clerks of the Village parish, was the father of Ginger, a name now somehow gone out of fashion, who married Elisha Hutchinson and became the mother of another Danvers military hero, spoken of later, Colonel Israel Hutchinson.

William, the third son to leave descendants, seems to have lived east of Frost Fish Brook, then Beverly, now East Danvers; but, April 19, 1750, he sold his farm of two hundred and forty-six acres to "King" Robert Hooper, and thus another great slice of the Porter lands passed out of the family.

Benjamin, the fourth and last son of Israel to leave descendants, was the father of John, an inn-holder, and Benjamin, potter. One of the latter's sons was Israel, who lived during the last half of the last century, and was the father of Abijah and Benjamin. Abijah lived and died in the old house, on High Street, nearly opposite Aaron Warren's. This his son Isaac inherited, and, in a little cottage close by, the widow of Isaac, Eliza Jocelyn Porter, is living, in her ninetieth year. Abijah's brother, Benjamin, was well known as "Cap'n Ben," who made a fortune in the fishing business at Marblehead, came back to Danvers about 1835, and bought the Nathan Read mansion, near the Iron-Works. His son, Benjamin F. Porter, with his children, now live on the same estate; and it depends solely upon the young grandsons of Capt. Ben and the lawyer's little boy, before alluded to, whether the family-name shall be longer preserved where once it was so numerously and powerfully represented. A few other Porters in town are not of this stock.

The Mudges.—Though this family cannot be reckoned among the early settlers, they have been prominent in town for more than a century. Their ancestor was Thomas Mudge, who was born in England, about 1724, and came to Malden, where he was in 1657. His oldest son was killed at Bloody Brook in 1675, and two others were in Captain Moseley's company. His son John was one of the grantees to whom land was given for services in King Philip's War. John's son was Deacon John, and the deacon was the father of another John, who was a Malden farmer and died in 1762. This last John had a number of sons, the eldest of whom was killed in his nineteenth year in the French War, under General Amherst; the youngest died from the effects of service in the Revolution; Simon, the fifth of a family of nine, is of especial interest here.

Simon Mudge was born in Malden, April 8, 1748. He was a carpenter, and he came to Danvers to live two years before the Revolution. The farm which he bought is the one now owned by Amos Pratt, on Centre Street. Subsequently, his widow went to live with her brother, William Whittredge, on the farm at the corner of Dayton and Newbury Streets, where her son Amos continued to live and bring up his family. Simon Mudge also served in the Revolution, and, in July, 1776, marched away with a Danvers company for Ticonderoga. A diary which he kept of his march is preserved in the family and extracts have been printed. Very likely its custodian, who is one of the most zealous of temperance men, fails of being touched by this pitiful complaint:

"August the 6, 1776. Last night Ly in tentes the town being so full that we could neither get vituals nor Logeing till this morning there and Rum sells for nine Shillings and fore Pence a gallon and the most miserable stuff j ever Drank. Drawd for 62 men but no sauce recd. Orders to march to Ticonteroga to-morrow."

He was at Lexington in Captain Flint's company. His wife was Elizabeth Whittredge, of Danvers, who died in 1836, ninety years old; he died in 1799, in his fifty-second year, leaving six children. Of these, two were sons,—Simon and Amos, and but one daughter married,—Nancy, wife of Elijah Hutchinson, of Middleton. Simon was like his father, a farmer and carpenter, and lived and died, 1775–1853, on his father's homestead. His wife was a daughter of Silas Merriam, of Middleton, and the family of Amos Pratt are their only descendants in town; a son, William Whittredge, married a daughter of Jonathan Perry, and moved to Bedford, Mass., in 1856.

Simon's son Amos, born in 1782, was also a carpenter and farmer, and died April 7, 1853. His wife was Sarah Wilson, and they had six children, four sons and two daughters. Josiah, the oldest son, to whom the double occupation descended, is represented by the families of his son Albert H. Mudge and by those of George H. Peabody and Walter T. Martin. Otis, the next son of Amos, received a good academy education, for several years was a successful school teacher, and then began the manufacture of shoes, a business in which he was successfully engaged until the close of his life. He died in 1862 in his forty-ninth year, on the old homestead, leaving no children. He was in the Legislature of 1851, and helped to elect Sumner; was on the school committee and a selectman.

Edwin and Augustus Mudge sons of Amos, are among the most respected and influential citizens of the town. Both have represented their fellow-citizens at the State House, the former in the House, the latter in the Senate. Edwin Mudge's contribution of

his legislative salary towards the erection of the Soldier's Monument is mentioned in the chapter on the Civil War. Augustus is president of the savings-bank. In 1849 the partnership of E. and A. Mudge, shoe manufacturers, was formed, which, with the addition of Edward Hutchinson, in 1858, has remained since unchanged. Of this business something further appears in the sketch of the shoe industry of the town.

The two daughters of Amos Mudge,—Nancy and Caroline, married, respectively, Zephaniah Pope and James Marsh.

INCORPORATION.—The municipal individuality of Danvers begins January 25, 1752. For a considerable time previously there had been a growing desire for separation from Salem both at the Village and the Middle Parish. During the preceding summer a special committee, consisting on the part of the Village, of Samuel Flint, Cornelius Tarball and James Prince, and on the part of the parish, of Daniel Epes, Jr., Malachi Felton and John Proctor, considered the matter, and in anticipation of securing their end proposed that plan which, for more than a hundred years, was substantially lived up to, namely,—"Ye major part of ye selectmen and assessors shall be Chosen one year in one parish, and ye next year in ye other parish successively." The committee were instructed at once "to labour," both at old Salem and in the General Court,—a mild sort of lobby, perhaps, which was successful in obtaining desired legislation. The full text of the act of incorporation is as follows:

"Anno Regni Regis Georgii Secundi &c., Vicessimo Quinto.

"An act for erecting the Village parish and middle Parish so called, in the Town of Salem into a Distinct and separate District by the Name of Danvers.

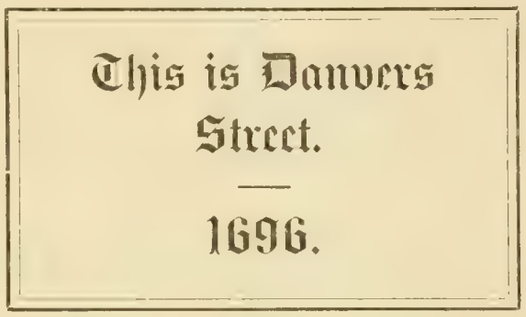
"Whereas, the Town of Salem is Very Large and the Inhabitants of the Village and Middle parishes so called within ye same (many of them at Least,) live att a great Distance from that part of Salem where the Publick affairs of the Town are Transacted and also from the Grammer School which is kept in ye sd first Parish.

"And Whereas, most of the Inhabitants of the sd first Parish are Either Merchants, Traders or Mechanicks & those of ye sd Village and Middle parishes are chiefly Husbandmen, by means whereof many Disputes & Difficultys have Arrissen and May hereafter arise in the manageing their public Affairs Together, &, Espeacially touching ye Apportioning the Public Taxes, For preventing of which Inconveniences for the future.

"Be it Enacted by the Lieut. Governour, Council, and House of Representatives, That that part of ye s'd Town of Salem which now constitutes the village and middle parishes in sd Town according to their boundaries and the Inhabitants therein, be Erected into a separate and Distinct District by the Name of Danvers, and that said Inhabitants shall do the dutys that are Required and Enjoyned on other Towns, and Enjoy all the Powers, Privileges and Immunities that Towns in this province by Law Enjoy, except that of seperately chuseing and sending one or more Representatives to Represent them att ye Genll Assembly, &c.

"Jany ye 25, 1752."

A "district" differed from a "town" only in the matter of sending representatives to the General Court. A district could not do that; it sent a "delegate." And so jealous was the King of that body that the Governor was charged to consent to no division of territory which would add to its members. The act was considerably more than half a loaf, and the rest soon came. As to the origin of the name "Danvers," there is yet some doubt. "D'Anvers" is an old English family name, evidently of French origin. In one of the numbers of the *London Art Journal* an article on ancient street tablets gives a cut of one in Chelsea with this inscription:



The conclusion accepted by S. P. Fowler, who has made the subject a study, is that "in some way not yet discovered the name came from Sir Danvers Osborne, Bart., the unfortunate Governor of New York, in 1753." Mr. Rice has added: "I think it must have been through Lieutenant-Governor Phipps."

It is believed that there is but one other town of the same name in the country, and that one, in McLean County, Illinois, is a namesake of the first. The western town was laid out about fifty years ago "and it was agreed to call it Danvers, out of regard to Israel W. Hall, who came from Danvers, Mass." A speaking acquaintance is maintained between the two towns through the medium of local papers.

It may be interesting to see the record of the first meeting of the district, verbatim:

"At a Legall Meeting of ye Inhabitants of the District of Danvers, March|ye 4th, 1752, in ye first Parish in sd District—

"Voted Daniel Epes, Esqr., Moderator for sd Meeting, Voted Daniel Epes, Junr., Esqr., Clerk, & Mr. James Prince Treasurer.

"Voted to Chuse Seven Selectmen for this present year, viz.: four in ye first Parish & three in ye Second Parish, & to chuse by written Votes, & chose Mr. Archelaus Dale, Mr. John Andrew & Mr. Henry Putnam, to tell ye Votes Chosen Selectmen, Daniel Epes, Junr., Esqr., Captain Samuel Flint, Dea Cornelius Tarball, Mr. Stephen Putnam, Mr. Samuel King, Mr. Daniel Gardner, & Mr. Joseph Putnam; & the above Named Persons were chosen Assessors and Overseers of ye Poor.

"Voted to Chuse four Constables, viz.; Two in ye first and Two in ye Second Parish; & Chose Mr. David Goodale for ye West Ward in ye first Parish, & Mr. Samuel White for ye East Ward in sd first Parish, and Chose Mr. Roger Derby Constable in ye East Ward, and Mr. Jonathan Twiss Constable in ye West Ward in ye Second Parish.

"Voted to Chuse five Tithingmen, & Chose Mr. Samuel Putnam, Junr., and Mr. Archelaus Putnam, Junr., for ye first Parish, & Chose Mr. Samuel Osbon, Junr., Mr. James Upton & Mr. Timothy Upton, for ye Second Parish.

"Voted Mr. John Andrew, Mr. John Preston, Mr. Francis Nurse, Lieut. David Putnam, Mr. Jacob Goodale, Mr. George Goold, Surveyors of High ways for the first Parish.

"Voted Ensn John Procter, Mr. Andrew Mansfield, Mr. Jasper Needham, Mr. Jonathan Russell, Mr. James Goold, Mr. James Buxton & Mr. John Southwick, Junr., Surveyrs of High ways for ye Second Parish.

"Voted Mr. Jonathan Putnam and Mr. John Osbon Haywards.

"Voted Israel Cheever and Mr. James Upton, Sealers of Leather.

"Voted Mr. Samuel Holton, Mr. Benjamin Pntnam, Mr. John Osbon and Mr. Ebenezer Marsh, fence Viewers.

"Voted Jonathan Putnam & Mr. David Goldthawyt, Clerks of ye Markett.

"Voted Mr. Daniel Rea to take Care that ye Laws Relating to ye Preservation of Deer be observed.

"Voted Mr. Henry Putnam & Mr. David Goldthawyt Survr of Lumber.

"Voted Mr. James Chapman, Mr. Ebenezer King, Mr. John Brown & Mr. Gideon Foster, to Take care that ye Laws relating to ye preservation of alewives be observed.

"Voted Mr. Walter Smith, Mr. John Vinne, Mr. George Wiat, Junr. Mr. Israel Hutchinson, Mr. John Oaks, Mr. Ebenezer Goldthawyt, Mr Daniel Marble, Junr., Mr. Jonathan Osbon & Mr. Jonathan Trask, Junr. Hog Reaves.

"Voted Mr. Hugh Kelly, Mr. David Foster & Mr. Ebener. Boyce, Pound keepers.

"Voted that ye Selectmen be Hereby fully Impowered to agree with the Town of Salem concerning our proportion of the poor in the Alms House, & Settle ye Number, and take care of them as they shall think best, and make Report of their doings att the Adjournment of this meeting.

"Voted To mend the High ways in sd District by Days' works, and that Surveyors be chosen in Different parts of ye Distr., & that ye selectmen shall appoint ye surveyors their Respective Wards, and the selectmen to Tax ye Polls & Estates, and such persons as chuse to pay their sd Tax in Labour, shall have free Liberty so to do; and such persons as will not pay their Tax in work on ye sd High ways, shall be oblidged to pay the same in mony, according as they are Taxed, and the Surveyors are Hereby fully Authorized and Impower'd to Collect and Gather the sd Taxes in there Respective Wards, & to be accountable for ye same, to the Selectmen, & the Allowance shall be, Two Shillings and Eight pence p. Day for a man, & that boys & Teams be Left to ye Surveyors to sett ye Vallue, & ye Surveyors shall give Timely Notice to the Persons Taxed in their Lists, not Less than three days and the High way work shall be done, some time between the first day of April & ye first Day of November, and att no other Times, Except in Cases where it may Happen that there may be Necessity.

"Voted That this meeting be Adjourned to ye 18th Instant, att one of the Clock in ye afternoon, to this Place.

"DANIEL EPES, Junr., Distt. Clerk."

"The Inhabitants met according to Adjournment.

"Voted to Excuse David Goodale from being Constable this year.

"Voted John Swinerton Constable in ye room of David Goodale.

"Voted Jonathan Twiss Surveyor of high ways in ye room of James Goold.

"Voted Samuel Osbon, Junr., Surveyor of high ways in ye Room of James Buxton.

"It being put to Vote whither ye Inhabitants will raise Two Hundred Pounds Lawfull mony, to Defray ye Charges of ye District, & the County Tax, Exclusive of high ways for this present year It passed in ye Affirmative.

"It being put to Vote whither ye Inhabitants will raise one Hundred & Fifty pounds Lawfull mony, to Defray the High way charges. It past in the Affirmative.

"Voted That ye Swine may go att Large, provided that they are yoaked & wringed, &c., according to Law.

"Voted That Meetings of the District shall be warned for ye future, by posting attested coppys of ye Warrants for Calling sd Meetings, on the Meeting-House in ye first parish, & on ye Meeting-House in ye second parish.

"Voted That ye Selectmen take ye Care of our Interest in ye Almshouse in Salem.

"Voted That ye Selectmen be Hereby fully Impower,d to Settle with ye Town of Salem, Relateing to ye School mony, & all other accounts, and to Receive ye Mony that may be Due from sd Salem to us.

"Voted that ye Selectmen be Impowered & Desired to Agree with some meet Person to keep a Gramer school in ye District as soon as may be.

"Voted Ebenezer Jacobs Constable in ye Room of Roger Derby.

"DANIEL EPES, Junr., Dist. Clerk."

Within two years boundaries were run between the district and all the adjoining towns, and many other measures taken, but the more the inhabitants acted after the manner of towns, the more impatient they grew to become a town. So on the 3d of February, 1755, they passed a vote "that it be the minds of the Inhabitants that the said District be erected into a seperate Town Ship, & that the said Daniel Epes, Junr., Esq., be and hereby is desired and impowered to prefer a Petition to the Great and General Court, and to use his Endeavours to get the same affected."

The act which conferred the full powers of a town upon Danvers, was not, however, passed until June 9th, 1757, and then only after persistent demands and against the protest of Thomas Hutchinson, Governor.

The population of the town at its incorporation was not far from 2000. The first State census, 1765, gives it then 2133. Subsequent figures may, for convenience, be given here:

1776	2,284	1840	5,020
1790	2,425	1850	8,106
1800	2,643	1860[1]	5,110
1810	3,127	1865	5,114
1820	3,646	1870	5,600
1830	4,228	1880	6,598

In 1759 this memorandum was entered on the town records:

"Recd of Daniel Epes, Junr., a Province Note of twenty pound For supporting the French Neutrals the year past, Being the Charge the Town was at for the Same."

It recalls the melancholy event of Longfellow's "Evangeline." The English expelled some thousand of these inoffensive people from Acadia in 1755, and in the scattering a few came to Danvers. The only other mention of the unfortunate people is eight years later, when, on the question of supply, "they being gooing off," these votes were passed:

"*Voted:* to give the French Neutrals something.

"*Voted:* that the Overseers of the Poor shall allow the French people what they shall think just, and to be drawn out of the Treasury, and then the moderator dissolved the meeting."

It is common to find in the town records of a hundred years ago assessors' returns of the "Number of Coaches, Chaises, etc., in the Town of Danvers." There is an air of aristocracy in these lists, containing the names of those rich enough to "ride in chaises." But twenty-three persons in the whole town owned these vehicles in 1784. Those owning "fall back" chaises were Hon. Samuel Holten, Israel Hutchinson, Esq., Nathaniel Pope, Arch. Rea, Colonel Jere. Page, Joseph Flint, Widow Mercy Porter, Daniel Jacobs, Jr., Samuel Gardner, Captain Timothy Orne, Widow Elizabeth Poole. Nathaniel Putnam owned two "standing-top" chaises, and the following, one each: Benj. Putnam, Zorub. Porter, Colonel Enoch Putnam, Captain Wm. Shillaber, Jos. Southwick, Jr., John Dodge, Ebenezer Dale, Arch. Putnam, Phinehas Putnam, Amos Putnam, Gideon Putnam.

Regarding maps of the town, as early as 1794, the selectmen were directed to take a plan of the town in accordance with a Legislative act. No further action was taken until 1830, when the same instructions were repeated, and the next year the selectmen were

[1] Town divided in 1855.

authorized to publish a map if they should think proper. After some sixteen years, three lawyers, Northend, Abbott and Proctor, were directed to make a complete survey of the town for the correction of the plate. The maps of the old town of Danvers, now somewhat rare, embellished with cuts of "The Naumkeag House, North Danvers, E. G. Berry," "Moses Black, Jr., Wood and Coal-Yard, Danversport," "Third Congregational Church," and a few scenes in South Danvers, are printed from this plate.

For about half a century, commencing with 1816, it was the custom of Danvers people to be reminded of the dinner-hour and of bed-time by the ringing of church-bells. In the year mentioned it was first voted "that the Bells be rung at 12 o'clock at noon and at 9 o'clock A. M. (P. M.), provided it does not cost more than $25 at each Meeting-House."

In 1832 Moses Black and others succeeded in adding the music of "the Bell at the Neck." The practice has been discontinued since 1863, except for a single year (1874), when the sextons rang its final knell. The dinner-hour seems likely to take care of itself, but if the later alarm could shorten the average "evening out" it might be well to bring it back again.

There were at least two flourishing local military companies a half a century ago. These were the Artillery Company and the Danvers Light Infantry. Doubtless much of interest might be written concerning both. This requisition was found among the old papers in the town-house.

"Danvers Oct. 4th, 1816.

"Gentlemen:

"Having been ordered to parade the company which I command for the purpose of inspection and review of arms on the 10th day of the present month, it is my duty to request you, Gentlemen, and I do hereby request you, to provide a quantity of *good* powder sufficient for 100 men (that being the number born on the company roll) agreeable to the 23d section of Massachusetts Militia Law.

"Yours with respect,

"Daniel Preston.

"Gentlemen Selectmen for Danvers."

Captain Felton presented a similar requisition for blank cartridges for his company of forty-five; and Captain Asa Tapley, Jr., for seventy men.

By-laws respecting fires, "better to promote the more populous part of the town" against danger, were formulated as early as 1819.

At the annual meeting of 1840, the need of a more complete system of by-laws was met by the election of Dr. Andrew Nichols, J. W. Proctor, John Page, Eben S. Upton and Elias Putnam as a committee of revision and construction, which committee reported to the meeting which elected them that "on examining the existing by-laws, they find them so imperfect and incomplete as to demand an entire revision and new arrangement. . . . They would recommend that a committee of one from each school district, together with the selectmen and clerk prepare such a system of by-laws as in their judgment the interests of the town require, etc.," and that the same be printed, distributed and acted upon the next year.

This committee were: No. 1, John W. Proctor; No. 2, Moses Black, Jr.; No. 3, Elias Putnam; No. 4, John Preston; No. 5, Jeremy Hutchinson; No. 6, Nathaniel Felton; No. 7, Daniel P. King; No. 8, Samuel Brown, Jr.; No. 9, John Mansfield; No. 10, Elias Needham; No. 11, Andrew Nichols; No. 12, Henry Poor; No. 13, Samuel Preston.

Eight years afterwards the subject was revived, and John W. Proctor, Dr. Nichols, Moses Black, Jr., A. A. Abbott and Nathaniel Pope were appointed to draft a new code. At the first annual meeting after the division of the town, that is, in 1856, it became necessary to take a fresh start, and Moses Black, Jr., Edwin Mudge and Francis Dodge were appointed to perform the duty. In 1874 important revisions were made at the suggestion of a committee chosen for the purpose, namely, Rev. C. B. Rice, Israel W. Andrews and Henry A. Perkins. The last revision, 1883, was made by a committee consisting of Rev. C. B. Rice, D. N. Crowley, I. W. Andrews and George Tapley.

The part which Danvers took in the Revolution which came soon after the incorporation of town has been spoken of separately. During and some time after the Revolution the people of the town were concerned about small-pox, which in October, 1773, seemed "to spread in several of our neighboring Towns," and Ebenezer Goodale and Dr. Joseph Osgood were chosen to take preventive measures against its appearing here. Though in some respects an unpleasant topic to write of or to read of, nevertheless much may be learned from the records of these years, before Jenner's great discovery, of the way in which inoculation, which preceded vaccination, was regarded. In the spring of 1777, Benjamin Porter and others petitioned "to see if the town will grant Leave to inoculate for the Small-pox in that part of the Town called the Neck from the house of Benj^{a}. porter to the Bridge By Abel Watterses, the Town inhabitants only unless their should not so many of the inhabitants appear to Be Inoculated as could be convend in that case to take in persons From other towns; also to choose a committee to regulate the affair," and another committee to apply to the General Court for their approbation. The record of the meeting which considered this petition is short and to the point:

"At a Leagel meeting of the inhabitants of Danvers, may 19th, 1777, Voted, Dr. Amos putnam moderator; Voted not to Act on the Request of Benj^{a}. porter and others; Voted to Desolve s^{d} meeting, the moderator Declared s^{d} meeting Desolved."

The next year, measures were taken for suitable quarters "for the reception of those persons belonging to this Town who shall be taken with the Small Pox the natural way." Another move was also made for "Liberty to Inoculate such persons as shall chuse to take the Small Pox that way belonging to this town;" it had a momentary success:

"*Voted* to Inoculate in the Town for the Small Pox.

"*Voted* to reconsider the vote respecting Inoculation.

"*Voted* to dismiss the clause in the warrant respecting Inoculation: Voted that this meeting be Disolved."

In May, 1778, the advocates of inoculation gained more substantial yet temporary success. It was then voted "that Captain Derby's house be set apart for the Inoculation in this Town," and three men, whose names signify the interest taken in the matter, Captain Daniel Jacobs, Major Caleb Low and Major Samuel Epes, were appointed "to regulate said affair." In less than a fortnight Ezekiel Marsh and others brought to the selectmen their petition to put a stop to inoculation at the Derby farm, though when the selectmen issued their warrant it contained also another petition, of Benjamin Balch and others, for inoculation "in that part of the town called the Neck." The former petition was granted; the latter, refused.

Feeling ran high on the subject. This last meeting, held on the 8th of June, set the seal of its condemnation unequivocally upon the new and absurd idea. But it was not enough; it should be killed and buried beyond resurrection. Therefore, four days later another warrant was posted at the meeting-houses giving notice of a meeting on the 15th of June to take into consideration the desire of Mr. Arch's Dale and others for a final stop of the business, and it seems worth while to quote at length from the record of this meeting. Mr. Dale was himself moderator.

"Voted to put a final Stop to the Small Pox by Inoculation in Capt Derby's House, that was allowed of by the Town dureing their Pleasure; voted that the Stop take place this Day; voted no person be allowed to enter into Said Derby's House after the 15th of June, 1778, for Inoculation; voted if any Doctr or any other person after the Said 15th Day of June, 1778, Shall Inoculate any Person whatever with the Small Pox in sd House or Teritories thereto belonging, Shall be liable to pay the Same fine that they would have been liable to have paid had they Inoculated without leave from the Town, and incur the Town's Displeasure; voted if any Person whatever Shall, after the Said 15 of June, 1778, Enter the Said House or teritories thereunto belonging and be Inoculated contrary to the True Meaning of the Town, Shall pay the Same Fines & Suffer the Same Penaltys, which by Law they are liable to as those Persons that Inoculate in their own Houses.

"Voted that all the votes and orders of the Town respecting the Stoping of the Inoculation that have or Shall pass be fairly Copied of by the Clerk and immediately Sent to the Docters and others Concerned; voted to Choose a Committee; voted the Committee to Consist of three; voted Capt William Shillaber, Stephen Needham and Aaron Osborn be Said Committee, whose business Shall be to duly Inspect into and See that every vote and order of the Town respecting the Stoping of Said Inoculation be faithfully Complied with, and to prosecute any and every Person (if need be) that doth not Comply with the Same. *Voted* to Disolve this Meeting, and the Moderator declared the Meeting Disolved accordingly.

"Attest: Stephen Needham, *Town Clerk.*"

Thus the matter remained for twelve years. Not till 1792 was any proposition bearing upon the subject brought before the town, and then public opinion had so far changed as to allow "persons to inoculate in proper places," under the superintendence of another committee of solid men.

At the annual meeting of 1793 the town was asked to consider if any allowance should be made "to some of the Persons that have had the Small pox that are poor;" and three pounds were voted to Nathan Upton, who was an unfortunate victim of the "natural way."

More than twenty years later "vaccination" was for the first time the subject of public action. General Gideon Foster's name was at the head of a petition for a town-meeting, held in July, 1815, for the especial purpose of considering the expediency of accepting certain proposals offered by one Dr. Fansher. They were as follows:

"Dr. Fansher begs leave respectfully to propose to the Town of Danvers that he will (in case it meets the approbation of the Town) Vaccinate at such places in the different Neighborhoods throughout the Town as shall be designed by a Committee for the Children to assemble for that purpose, and attend and examine his patients at the proper time to see that each individual are secure from the danger of the small Pox at 25 cents per head, and he believes that no person can possible do this nice business and do it justice for a smaller fee and be the gainer."

These proposals were accepted with the provisions reserved—there must be some Yankee to the trade—that all above six hundred were to be treated gratis. And if any one doubts that this Dr. Fansher was an important man just at this time, let him read the names of the committee chosen to inspect him, "two from each district and three in the districts where the clergymen reside:" No. 1, Rev. Samuel Walker, Squires Shove, Fitch Pool; 2, Rev. Jere. Chaplin, Nath'l Putnam; 3, Zerub'l Porter, Eben Putnam, Jr.; 4, Eleazer Putnam, Daniel Putnam; 5, Rev. Benj. Wadsworth, Joseph Hutchinson; 6, Nathan Felton, Jonathan Proctor; 7, Jesse Upton, Asa Gardner; 8, John Marsh, Amos King, 3d; 9, John Mansfield, John Douty; 10, Jona. Walcut, John Jacobs; 11, Gideon Foster, Elijah C. Webster; 12, Rich'd Osborn, Nathan Poor.

The following resolutions passed also at this time are well in advance of the times:

"Resolved, That this Town entertain a high opinion of Vaccination, and consider it (when conducted by skilful and experienced hands) a sure and certain substitute for the small Pox.

"Resolved, That this Meeting deems it the indispensable duty of a community to make use of the means that Divine Providence has given us to guard against every impending evil to which we are exposed, especially those which involve the health or the Lives of the Inhabitants."

CHAPTER XXXIII.

DANVERS (*Continued*).

REVOLUTIONARY HISTORY.

Not long after the incorporation of Danvers, began the muttering of discontent all through the colonies because of the hardness of heart of the Pharaoh beyond the seas, and his oppression of his people. Long, long years was the storm brewing, and only the few saw with prophetic eye in the play of lightning on the distant cloud the outlines of that fearful word, Revolution. These years sifted out the hearts of men with crucial test, and when from the nearing cloud rolled out the thunder of war, patriotism had heroes for leaders.

The "writs of assistance" were issued in 1761; the

odious stamp act passed in 1765, when Franklin wrote, "The sun of liberty is set," and American merchants agreed to non-importation until its repeal. In that year the Colonial Congress met in New York at the invitation of Massachusetts, which formulated the rights of colonists, beginning "No taxation without representation." New taxes and the act for the enforced quartering of troops by citizens in 1767; the refusal of Boston to furnish quarters; the order for the arrest and transmission to England of leaders of the opposition; three years of constant irritation and a massacre in the streets of Boston, March, 1770; the tea-party, December, 1773; the Boston Port Bill; the first Continental Congress; John Hancock's Provincial Congress at Cambridge and its measures for committees of safety and minute men, 1774; then Lexington, war, independence, the United States of America.

Danvers kept pace with these events. How well its citizens grasped the situation of the times and how forcibly and well they expressed themselves, it has been left on the records for any to read who will. They came together after the passage of the stamp act; Thomas Porter was their representative in the General Court, and these are the words in which they instructed him:

"Sr, we the Freeholders and Other Inhabitants of said Town of Danvers, in Town Meeting assembled the Twenty-first of October, A. D. 1765, Professing the Greatest Loyalty to our Most Gracious Sovereign and our Sincere Regard and Reverence for the Brittish Parliament as the Most Powerfull and Respectable Body of Men on Earth, yet being Deeply Sensible of the Difficultys and Distresses to which that August Assembly's Late Exertions of their Power in and by the Stamp Act, must Necessarily Expose us, Thinks it Proper, in the Present Critical Conjuncture of affairs, to give you the following Instructions, Viz: That you Promote and Readily Joyn in Such Dutifull Remonstrances and Humble Petitions to the King and Parliament and Other Decent Measures as may have a Tendency to Obtain a Repeal of the Stamp Act or aleviation of the Heavy Burdens thereby Imposed on the Brittish Colonies.

And in as Much as great Tumults Tending to the Subversion of Government have Lately Happened & Several Outrages Committed by some Evil Minded People in the Capital Town of this Province, you are therefore Directed to Bear Testimony against and do all in your Power to Seppress & prevent all Riortoss Assemblys and unlawfull Acts of Violence upon the Persons or Substances of any of his Majesty's Subjects; And that you Do not give your Assent to any Act of Assembly that shall Imply the Willingness of your Constituants to Submit to any Internal Tax that are or shall be Imposed on us Otherwise than by the Great and General Court of this Province, according to the Constitution of this Government, and that you be carefull not to give your Assent to any Extravigant Grants out of the Publick Treasurery.

"Other Matters we leave to your Prudence, Trusting you will Act with Honour & Justice to your Constituants and Due Regard to the Publick Wellfair.

"Attest: ARCs. DALE, *T. Cler.*

On the 20th of September, 1768, a meeting was held at the North Meeting-house to "see if the town shall send one or more persons to joyn committies of Boston and other towns in a convention to be holden at Fanueil Hall on the 22nd instant," and by unanimous vote Mr. Samuel Holten, Jr., was desired to represent the town in the convention. In December following he was voted two pounds and fifteen shillings for his service. Dr. Holten was charged "to look well to the rights of the people," and so conspicuous was his service among the "Sons of Liberty" that, as will be seen, they were in constant requisition wherever there was work for a mind ready for wise counsel and a heart full of untiring devotion. Let a few words be here written of him, just as his name first appears, though it be partly in anticipation of events which should follow later.

Samuel Holten was born June 9, 1738; he died January 2, 1816, in the seventy-eighth year of his age, and is recalled as an old man by a few very old citizens. He was of the third generation from Joseph Houlton, an original settler of Salem Village, and one of the honored heads, the line being Joseph, Henry, Samuel, Samuel. Samuel, Jr., studied medicine with Dr. Jonathan Prince, whose home was on the southern slope of the Asylum hill. He began practice when quite young in Gloucester, but soon returned here. In his thirtieth year he was chosen representative to the General Court. His services in the convention of 1768 have been alluded to. He was in the Provincial Congress of 1775, an active member of the general Committee of Safety, a member of the Executive Council under the provisional government, and soon his profession and all other interests, save those of his country, were abandoned. He was a delegate in 1778 to the Congress which framed the Articles of Confederation, being forty years old when his sphere of usefulness so broadened, and at some time he presided over the body, thus occupying temporarily "the first seat of honor in his country." He was five years in Congress under the confederation, and two under the constitution. Ill-health prevented his longer acceptance of the willing suffrages of his constituents. At home, he was five years in the Senate and twelve years in the Council. Though he seems to have made no special study of law, his reputation for probity and good sense was such that he was appointed as early as 1776 a judge of Common Pleas for Essex County, a po-ition which he held about thirty-two years. From 1796 to 1815 he was judge of probate for Essex County. Duties to the State and the country did not, however, alienate him from the small affairs of his own town. His name will appear most conspicuously in the lists of town officers,—selectman, town-clerk, moderator, treasurer for twenty-four years, even hog-reeve. In the church and parish he was equally useful, being often instrumental as an arbiter in matters of difference and delicacy to bring them to a happy issue. His home was the somewhat ancient and stately house where the street which bears his name makes, after passing through Tapleyville, a sharp bend to the Village church,—now owned by Thomas Palmer. A reminiscence of his early practice as a physician has been preserved,—

MR. JEREMIAH PAGE to SAM'L HOLTEN, Jun., Dr.

1763.	£	s.	d.
Jan 28 to Feby 3d. To eleven visits & divers preparations of medicines for your first child	1	17	10

Feb 16 to March 7. To 15 visits & sundry medicines prepared and exhibited for your last child 2 12 0

4 9 10

28th. By medicines returned 2s. 8d.

March 14. By cash to make change.

Errors Excep'd

SAM'L HOLTEN Jr

four shillings and 13d. gave in.

The Holten High-School and the Holten Cemetery, wherein he is buried, also bear his name. He was one of the incorporators of the Massachusetts Medical Society in 1781, and of the Massachusetts Society for Promoting Agriculture in 1792. He is described as majestic in form, yet graceful, of pleasing countenance and engaging manners. "He was not a brilliant man, and perhaps not a great man in ability for any one line of action; but he was great in capacity for general accomplishment, in balance of mind and in the easy and regular and effective working of all his faculties upon whatever service they might be employed. He was faithful, too, in every trust. All things considered, he was the most remarkable man the town has ever produced." He left two daughters, one of whom married Dr. George Osgood, the other, Jethro, son of Colonel Enoch Putnam, and the descendants of Jethro's son, Philemon, are still living near the old homestead. Having in mind the traditional dignity and courtly appearance of the doctor, it occasioned a smile to come upon Gideon Putnam's record of a certain very lively meeting over the Water's River Bridge, when, "there being a Considerable Noise, the moderator got up on his seat and Called for order and made a Speech to the people." This was the doctor.

The men of Danvers were warned to meet May 28, 1770, "to see what methods said inhabitants will come into, in regard to the Publick Grievances the Province Labours under at this Day, in Particular, In regard to a Duty on Tea, etc., for the sole purpose of Raising a Revenue out of America, and to Act upon said affair what may be thought most proper." Dr. Holten, Arch. Dale, Captain William Shillaber, Dr. Amos Putnam and Gideon Putnam were instructed to consider and report, and what they reported was thus adopted:

"*Voted* that this Town Highly Approve of the Spirited Conduct of the Merchants of our Metropolis, and the other Maritime Town in this Province in an Agreement of Non importation well calculated to Restore our Invaluable Rights and Liberties. *Voted* that we will not ourselves (to our knowledge) or by any person for or under us, Directly or Indirectly Purchase of such Person or Persons any Goods whatsoever, and, as far as we can effect it, will withdraw our connection from every Person who shall Import Goods from Great Britain Contrary to the agreement of the Merchants aforesaid.

"*Voted* that we will not Drink any foreign Tea ourselves, and use our best Endeavours to prevent our Families, and those Connected with them, from the use thereof; from this Date until the Act imposing a Duty on that Article be repealed, or a general Importation shall take place, Cases of sickness Excepted.

"*Voted*, that the Town Choose a Committee of Twelve men to carry a Copy of these votes to every Householder for him to sign, and in case any Person refuse to sign; as above said, he shall be Looked upon as an Enemy to the Liberties of the people, and shall have their Name Regist'er'd in the Town Book.

"*Voted*, that a copy of these votes be printed in the *Essex Gazette*, that the Publick may know the sentiments of this town. The foregoing report being several times read, voted to accept the report by a unanimous vote.

"*Voted*, John Nichols, Arch^{s}. Dale, Benj^{r}. Putnam, Dr. Amos Putnam, Capt. Flint, Benj^{a}. Russell, Jun^{r}., Samuel Gardner, Jona. Tarbel, Jesper Needham, Wm. Shillaber, Joseph Seccomb & Deacon Benj^{a}. Sawyer; Be a Committee for the purposes mentioned in the foregoing report. Then the Moderator Dissolved the Meeting.

"Attest: SAM'L HOLTEN, JUNR., T. Cler."

In this connection a story is told of the wife of a distinguished patriot who, not quite able to forego the luxury of enjoying with a few callers a sip of the forbidden beverage, kept within the agreement not to drink a drop within the house, by entertaining them on top of the house. The incident has been charmingly told in the verse of Lucy Larcom. The old house is a conspicuous figure on the Plains, and one can easily imagine, within the low railing which still surrounds the easy slope of the upper portion of the gambrel roof, that little party enjoying their innocent rebellion. A story is told, too, of the suspicion of certain husbands of the south parish that a large coffee-pot "several sizes smaller than a common light-house," was surreptitiously used by their wives at quiltings and such gatherings, for tea-drinking, and the practice was effectively broken up by the discovery, one night when the grounds were being concealed as usual behind the back-log, of what remained of one of those little creatures which inhabit gardens, hop well and look ugly.

A number of years after, licenses to sell tea were issued, in this form:

"Mrs. Mercy Porter is permitted to sell Bohea and other India Teas by Retail for one year to commence from the Day of the Date hereof.

"Danvers, Feb'y 20, 1782.

"SYLVESTER PROCTOR. } Selectmen
"DANIEL PUTNAM. } of
"STEPHEN NEEDHAM. } Danvers."

Similar permits were at the same time granted to Major Samuel Epes, John Dodge, Eben'r Sprague, Captain Gideon Foster, Zach. King, David Foster, Nathan Proctor and Captain Samuel Page.

In the middle of January, 1773, the worshippers at the North Meeting-House and at the South Meeting-House, found posted conspicuously a warrant under the hand of Gideon Putnam, town clerk, calling upon the freeholders and other inhabitants to assemble in town-meeting at two o'clock on the afternoon of the following day at the South Meeting-House "to see what method said inhabitants will take in order that our civil Privileges may be Restored and transmitted Inviolate to the latest Posterity." At the meeting so called Joseph Southwick was moderator. A motion was carried to choose a committee to take into consideration our civil privileges and to "Draw up something proper for the town to act." It was voted that Francis Symonds, Benjamin Proctor, Gideon Putnam, Captain William Shillaber, Doc'r Amos Putnam, Tarrant Putnam, Jun., and Wm. Pool be this committee. In two weeks the committee presented this report:

"The Freeholders & other Inhabitants of the Town of Danvers Legally assembled, by adjournment ye 1st Day of February, 1773, Taking into Consideration the Unhappy Situation of our Civil Privileges,—Proceeded to Pass the Following Resolves--(viz.:)

"I, that we will use our utmost Endeavours that all Constitutional Laws are Strictly adheared to, and Faithfully Executed, believing that Next to our duty to God, Loyalty to our King (in a Constitutional way) is Required in Order to the wellbeing of the Community.

"II, that when Government becomes Tyrannical & Oppresive we hold ourselves bound in Duty to Ourselves, & Posterity, to use every Lawful Method to Check the Same, least it Deprive the Subject of Every Privlege that is Valuable.

"III, that it is the Opinion of this Town, that the Rights of the Collonists in General, & this Province in Particular, have of late been greatly Infringed upon by the Mother Country by unconstitutional Measurs which have been Adopted by the Ministry, tending wholly to Overthrow our Civil Privileges, Particularly in Assuming the Power of Legislation for the Colonists, in Raising a Revenue in the Colonies without their Consent, in Creating a Number of officers Unknown in the Charter, and investing such Officers with Powers wholly unconstitutional, and Distructive to the Liberties we have a right to Enjoy as Engleshmen; in Rendering the Governor Independent of the General Assembly for his support, and by Instructions from the Court of Great Brittain the first Branch of our Legislature has so far forgot his Duty to the Province, as that he hath Refused his Consent to an Act imposing a Tax for the Necessary support of Government, unless Certain Persons Pointed out by the Ministry were Exempted from Paying their just Proportion of said Taxes, and hath Given up the Chief Fortress of the Province (Castle William) into the Hands of Troops, over whoom he Declared he had no Controul; in Extending the Power of the Courts of Vice Admiralty to such a Degree as Deprives the People of the Collonies (in Great Measure) of their inestimable Rights of Tryals by juries, & in that we have Reason to fear (from Information) the judges of the Superior Court & &c., are Rendered independent of the People for their Liberties.

"IIII, that an act of Parliament intitled an Act for the better Perser_vation of his Majesties dockyards & &c. (in consequence of which, Com missioners have been Appointed to inquire after the Persons, Concerned in burning his Majesties Schooner, the Gaspee, att Providence) has Greatly Alarmed us tho we are very far from Pretending to justyfy the Act, yet we Apprehend Such Methods very Extraordinary, as the Constitution has Made Provision for the Punishment of Such Offenders—by all which it appears to us, that in Consequence of Some Unguarded Conduct of Particular Persons, the Colonies in General, and this Province in Particular are, for our Loyalty, Constantly receiving the Punishment due to Rebellion Only.

"V, that we will use all Lawful Endeavours for Recovering, maintaining & Preserving the invaluable rights & Privileges of this People and Stand Ready (if need be) to Risque our Lives & fortunes in Defence of those Liberties which our forefathers Purchased at so Dear a Rate.

"VI, that the Inhabitants of this Town do hereby Instruct their Rep_resentative, that he use his Influence, in the Great & General Court, or Assembly of this Province, & in a Constitutional way Earnestly Con_tend for the just Rights & Privileges of the People that they may be handed down inviolate to the Late t Posterity, and as this depends in a Great Measure on the Steady, firm and United Endeavours of all the Provinces on the Continent, we further Instruct him to use his influence that a Strict Union & Correspondence be Cultivated & Preserved between the Same, and that they Unitedly Petition his Majesty & Parliment for the Redress of all our Publick grievancies; we further Instruct him, by no Means to Consent to give up any of our Privileges, whether Derived from Nature or Charter which we has as just a Right to Enjoy as any of the Inhabitants of Great Brittain; also that he use his Endeavours that ample and Honerable Sallaries be Granted to his Excellency, the Governor, and to the Honerable judges of the Superior Court & &c., adequate to their Respective Dignities.

"The foregoing was Put to vote Paragraph by Paragraph and they all past in the affirmative.

"*Voted*, that a Committee of three men be appointed to Correspond with the Committee of Correspondence of the Town of Boston and Other Towns in this Province as Ocation shall or may Require.

"*Voted*, Doctor Samuel Holten be one of Said Committee.

"*Voted*, Tarrant Putnam, Jur., be one of Said Committee.

"*Voted*, Capt. William Shillaber be one of Said Committee.

"*Voted*, that the above Committee be Desired to Send an attested Copy of the Resolves of this Town to the Committee of Correspondence of the Town of Boston."

"*Voted*, that this meeting be Desolved & the moderator Desolved it accordingly.

"Attest, GIDEON PUTNAM, T. Clerk."

Early in June, 1774, the Royal Governor, General Thomas Gage, finding Boston too hot to be comfortable, came out into the country and made his residence in Danvers. The place thus distinguished, not far from the present division line of Danvers and Peabody, called the "Collins House," the residence of Francis Peabody, has been kept in repair and preserved with fine taste in colonial style, and with its approach bordered by lines of ancient over-hanging trees, is one of the finest old mansions to be seen anywhere. It was built by Robert Hooper, a magnate of literal "codfish aristocracy." He was the son of a poor man but rose to great wealth, and for a time nearly monopolized the fishing business of Marblehead. Partly from the grandeur of his mode of life and equipages, but more especially because of his personal honor and integrity he was commonly called "King Hooper." It is a tradition among the fishermen that he, rare exception to men similarly engaged, never cheated them or took advantage of their ignorance. He built this house in Danvers about 1770. While Governor Gage resided here he was attended by a strong detachment of the Sixty-Fourth Royal Infantry, who were encamped on the opposite plain. The presence of these soldiers was to the growing hostility of the people, what the color of their uniforms is to the animal typically representing English character. They were under good discipline and generally behaved themselves well. The grandmother of Deacon Fowler, a daughter of Archelaus Putnam, remembers that one day two officers surprised her in Colonel Hutchinson's, her stepfather's, orchard at New Mills. To one who commenced to climb the fence, the other said, "Wait till the girl goes away; do not frighten her." Mrs. Fowler used to relate of Governor Gage that he often conversed with Colonel Hutchinson, was affable and courteous, and once, while sitting on a log before the door, he said, "We shall soon quell these feelings and govern all this," sweeping out his arm with an expressive gesture. The camp was watchful against surprise, realizing how unwelcome was its presence, and of what a lively spirit of rebellion they were in the midst. "Part of the Sixty-Fourth Regiment encamped near the Governor's, we hear, were under arms all last Friday," reads a contemporaneous newspaper item. Some pranks were played on the troops; at the drum-call to arms, a man so well disguised as to make his identity uncertain, but said to have been Aaron Cheever, dashed in on horseback shouting "Hurry to Boston! the Devil is to pay!" Early in September the regiment departed. There was a large oak on the plain which had been used for a whipping-post in the camp. The timber of this tree was afterwards used in

building the frigate Essex at Salem. The iron-staple to which the British soldiers were strung up for the lash was found imbedded in the wood, which, by a singular turn, became the stern-post of the frigate.

As one passes the old Collins house it is common to hear of a bullet-hole which has been preserved in the door, and there are various stories as to where the bullet came from. Hon. Daniel P. King stood sponsor to one of which this is the substance: On the gate-posts were large balls, ornamented with lead. A party of patriots going to join the army helped themselves to this precious material. The owner came to the door and remonstrated with such abusive epithets that a man hinted that his presence could be dispensed with by firing pretty near where he stood. "King Hooper" was supposed to be tainted with toryism. At a town-meeting in May, 1775, "a letter was read from Mr. Hooper, voted not satisfactory to the inhabitants." Later he made, in Marblehead, a more public recantation, and was received again in public favor, but he died, in 1790, insolvent. The house passed to the hands of Judge Benajah Collins, whose name it commonly bears. At one time it was in the Tapley family, and again owned and occupied by Rev. P. S. Ten-Broeck, who kept a girls' boarding-school there. It is said there were but two native born Danvers tories,—Rev. William Clark, son of Rev. Peter Clark, who, in 1768, was an Episcopal minister in Quincy, and was afterwards confined in a prison-ship in Boston harbor; the other, James Putnam, went to Halifax, became one of the council and a judge of the Supreme Court, and died at St. Johns in 1789.

In the winter of 1774–75 the clouds grew very black, the mutterings more unmistakable. On the 21st of November the town turned its back to England by voting to adhere strictly to all the resolves and recommendations of the Provincial Congress. Early in January each man was supplied with "an effective fire-arm, bayonet, pouch, knapsack, thirty rounds of cartridges and ball," and discipline was required three times a week, and oftener as opportunity may offer. Before long something happened.

One of the characters of New Mills was Richard Skidmore, a drummer at the siege of Louisburg, a soldier and privateersman in the Revolution, and, as will be noticed, a member of the alarm list of 1814. At the head of the latter company, an old man, he vigorously beat the same drum which he had used at Louisburg. A barrel of rum once fell to his share of a prize; as long as it lasted, he said, he heard "How do you do, Mr. Skidmore?" but as soon as the rum was gone, it was "How are you, old Skid?" again. Skidmore was a wheelwright, and had made several vehicles of a pattern not commonly seen in village shops, gun-carriages. The guns themselves were concealed somewhere, it is supposed, at the North Fields. Information of their existence reached Boston, and Colonel Leslie's regiment was sent to effect their capture. Of the bloodless repulse at North Bridge, the persistent yet prudent conduct of Colonel Leslie, the valiant resistance of the men who blocked the march, the story belongs to Salem, and will there be found. Danvers men flew to the spot as the alarm spread swiftly over the country. Had one shot been fired, right there would have begun the war. This was the 26th of February, 1775.

Some seven weeks later a similar search party stealthily moved out from Charlestown to seize stores reported concealed at Concord. Paul Revere was out that night. Then followed Lexington, and Liberty entered upon her baptism of blood.

It was between five and six o'clock on the morning of April 19, that the engagement took place on Lexington common. The British moved on and arrived at Concord, some six or seven miles beyond, about nine o'clock. By that time the rapid alarm had reached Danvers, sixteen miles away. It met with instant response. Two companies of minute men and three companies of militia, from one hundred and fifty to two hundred men, hurried to the scene of action. Learning of the retreat from Concord, the objective point was to reach Cambridge soon enough to cut off the British from effecting a return. To do this they went on a run, and in a few hours they were in the midst of action. Few well men could be found in Danvers that day; at New Mills not one.

The women who were left alone at New Mills gathered at the house of Col. Hutchinson to watch and wait together. To their anxious vigil news of the fight came on the evening of the nineteenth. Were the men safe? Most of them. Were any hurt? Some. Were any ——? Yes, young bride of a few weeks, your husband, Jotham Webb, was one of the first martyrs to Liberty. Six others, only one more than twenty-five years old, lost their lives, of the men who went out from Danvers,—Henry Jacobs, Samuel Cook, Ebenezer Goldthwaite, George Southwick, Benjamin Daland, Jr. and Perley Putnam. Nathan Putnam and Dennison Wallace were wounded; Jos. Bell, missing.

On the evening of the twentieth, several men on horseback drove up to the house where the women waited, escorting a horse-cart which bore a precious burden. On the kitchen floor of that house which is still standing, the dead were unrolled from the bloody sheets, and the next morning were taken away for burial. Danvers suffered more than any other town after Lexington. The corner-stone of the monument at the corner of Main and Washington Streets, Peabody, was erected in commemoration of the dead, April 20, 1835, the sixtieth anniversary of the fight. Gen. Gideon Foster, who led the way to Lexington, took part in the exercises, and a number of survivors of the fight were present.

Of the five Danvers companies which took part in the flight, two, commanded by Captains Samuel Epps and Gideon Foster, were composed mostly of south

parish men, and their muster rolls will be found under the history of Peabody. The three other companies were composed of the following men, most of them then living within the present limits of Danvers:

HUTCHINSON'S COMPANY.—*Captain*, Israel Hutchinson; *Lieutenants*, Enoch Putnam, Aaron Cheever; *Ensign*, Job Whipple; *Privates*, Samuel Goodrich, Eliphalet Perley, Nathaniel Cheever, Eben Andrew, James Burley, Samuel Chase, Nathaniel Durton, Henry Dwinnels, John Francis, William Freetoe, Nathan Putnam, James Porter, Tarrant Putnam, Thomas White, Samuel Baker, Samuel Fairfield, Benjamin Porter (3d), Jonathan Sawyer, William Towne, W. Warner, Perley Putnam, Benjamin Shaw, William Batchelder, Jotham Webb. Also twenty-four men from Beverly.

PAGE'S COMPANY.—*Captain*, Jeremiah Page; *Lieutenants*, Joseph Porter, Henry Putnam; *Ensign*, Richard Skidmore; *Privates*, Samuel Stickney, James Putnam, Benjamin Putnam, Sr., Daniel Bootman, David Bootman, John Nichols, Jr., John Brown, Jethro Putnam, Jeremiah Putnam, William Fenno, John Ward, Michael Webb, Benjamin Kimball, Benjamin Kent, Stephen Putnam, Joseph Smith, Elisha Hutchinson, Benjamin Stickey, Mathew Whipple, Enoch Thurston, Philli[illegible] Nurse, Robert Endicott, David Felton, Daniel Verry, David Verry, Archelaus Rea, Jr., James Goody, Nathan Porter, Samuel Whittemore, Nathan Putnam, Peter Putnam, Samuel Fowler, Samuel Dutch, Eben Jacobs, Jr., Samuel Page.

FLINT'S COMPANY.—*Captain*, Samuel Flint; *Lieutenants*, Daniel Putnam, Joseph Putnam; *Ensign*, Israel Putnam; *Privates*, Asa Upton, Abel Nichols, Thomas Andrew, Amos Tapley, William Putnam, Joseph Daniels, Joshua Dodge, Jonathan Sheldon, William Goodale, Benjamin Russell, Mathew Putnam, John Hutchinson, Jr., Aaron Tapley, Levi Preston, Peter Putnam, John Preston, Daniel Lakeman, Israel Cheever, Eleazer Pope, Jr., Aaron Gilbert, Nathaniel Smith, Jonathan Russell, Daniel Russell, Jethro Russell, John Hutchinson, Stephen Russell, Geo. Small, Jr., Nathaniel Pope, Jr., Joseph Tapley, Simon Mudge, William Whittredge, Josiah Whittredge, Eben McIntyre, John Kettel, Benjamin Nurse, Eleazer Goodale, Amos Buxton, Jr., Reuben Barthirk, James Burch, Michael Cross, Israel Smith.

There was another Danvers man killed at Lexington, the only one credited to Medford,—Henry Putnam. He was the youngest son of Deacon Eleazer Putnam, and sold his father's homestead about 1745 to Phinehas Putnam, great-grandfather of Charles P. Preston, the present occupant of the estate. Of this Henry, it is related that, while on a journey from Medford to Connecticut, he stopped over night at Bolton, fell in love with his host's daughter, proposed in the morning, was immediately married, and, with his bride, drove back her dowry, consisting of two cows and twelve sheep. He was captain of a company at Louisburg, and was exempt by age from duty, when he followed his five sons to Lexington.

The record of the next town-meeting after the battle, held on 1st day of May, is expressive of the watchfulness of Danvers:

"*Voted* that there be two watches kept in the town of Danvers. *Voted* that one watch be kept on the road near the new mills and the other watch at the croch of the roads near Mr. Francis Symonds. *Voted* that each watch consist of 13 men every night. *Voted*, to choose a Committee of Seven to regulate the watches. *Voted*, John Nichols, Benjamin Proctor, Benj. Porter, Capt. Shillaber, Nathaniel Brown, Stephen Needham and Deacon Asa Putnam be said Committee. *Voted* that if any person refuse to watch if warned by the Committee (or any one of them) his name shall be returned to the Committee of Inspection for this town, and if his reasons are not judged sufficient he shall be posted in the newspapers. *Voted*, to choose a Committee of three persons to procure teams to cart stones to Watertown. Mr. Arch Dale, Capt. John Putnam & Mr. Jonathan Tarble was chosen. *Voted*, to be concerned with the nabouring towns in establishing a post between the towns of Newbury Port and Cambridge. Doctor Putnam, Mr. Stephen Needham & Capt. Epes be a Committee to settle the affair with the nabouring towns. *Voted*, as the sense of this Body of people that we Disapprove of Fireing any Guns except in cases of alarm or actual engagement."

A minute may here be made, that in 1850 Danvers received a courteous invitation to be present at the 75th anniversary of the "Concord Fight," and the delegation sent were John W. Proctor, John Page, Robert S. Daniels, Samuel Preston, Henry Cook, Moses Black, Dr. George Osborne, Daniel Putnam, Jonathan King, Samuel P. Fowler, Eben Sutton, Elias Savage and Fitch Poole. At the centennial anniversary our selectmen added to the occasion the dignity of their presence.

After Lexington the yeomanry suddenly found themselves a besieging army about Boston. The second Centennial Congress met May 10, 1775, recognized the actual existence of war, appointed Washington commander-in-chief and commissioned four major-generals; but the only commission delivered, and that by the hands of Washington, was to Israel Putnam, a son of Danvers, whose biography is a matter of national history.

The watch, which had been maintained since Lexington, was discontinued July 17, 1775, Congress having provided a guard for sea-port towns. In September following, Colonel Benedict Arnold camped at Danvers on his march to Quebec.

And now that which at first was the dream of only the most daring of the leaders, became moulded into a great popular idea—Independence. On the 7th of June, 1776, Lee, of Virginia, offered in Congress the resolutions of freedom, which were not adopted until the 2d of July. But two days after its introduction, and irrespective of it, for news did not travel by lightning, the citizens of Danvers were warned to meet at the South meeting-house, June 18, to consider a resolve of "the late House of Representatives passed on the 10th Day of May, 1776," to the effect that each town should come together to instruct their representatives in the next General Court whether, in case of a declaration of independence by Congress, "they, the said inhabitants will Solemnly Engage with their Lives and Fortunes to Support them in the Measure."

Captain William Shillaber was moderator of the meeting at which these votes were passed:

Voted that if the Hon^ble^ Congress for the Safety of the United Coloneys Declare them Independent of the Kingdom of great Britain, we the Inhabitants of this Town do Solemnly Engage with our live and Fortuens to Support them in the Measure.

Voted that the Town Clark be, and hereby is directed Immediately to Deliver an attested Copy of the Proceedings of this Town Respecting Independentcy, to Maj^r^. Samuel Epes Representative of said Town, for his Instructions how to Proceed in Case the Important question of Independentcy should come before the Hon^ble^ House of Representatives of this Colony.

The Town taking into Consideration the Paragraph in the Warrant Respecting giveing a bounty to their minute men voted to give a Bounty to one quarter part of the militia that shall be Drafted out and stand at a minutes warning Provided they March voted that the Bounty or present Given shall be one pound p^r^ month to Each minute man so long as they Continue in the Province Service. voted to disolve this meeting and the moderator declared this meeting Disolved accordingly.

"Att STEPHEN NEEDHAM, T Clark.

When, on the nation's birth-day the Declaration was finally adopted by Congress, it was eagerly welcomed in Danvers, adopted without a dissenting vote, and spread for all to read upon the clerk's records. The Articles of Confederation were likewise unanimously approved, February 9, 1778, but the Constitution proposed for Massachusetts that year met an unanimous vote the other way. From the summer of 1777 consideration was from time to time given to enforcing the "acts respecting the prices of goods and all other articles in the Town." A meeting was called July 5, 1779, "to have the proceedings of Boston of the 17th of June last communicated, and to know the minds of the Inhabitants of the Town respecting a convention of Delegates from the several committees of correspondence, etc., in the State proposed to be held at Concord on Wednesday, the 14th instant."

On this it was resolved "that the town will do all in their power to reduce all the Exorbitant prices of the necessaries of Life, and Desire one of the Committee of Correspondence, etc., to attend at the said convention at Concord if they shall think proper."

Dr. Amos Putnam was moderator of the meeting, which, August 2, 1779, heard and considered the action of the convention. Deacon Edmund Putnam, Colonel Hutchinson, Archelaus Dale, John Epes, and Dr. Putnam withdrew, and, after a short adjournment, reported "that the resolves and addresses of the convention are well planned for the Public Good," and on their recommendation this vote was passed:

"(Viz.): *Resolved*, That we will Exert ourselves and do all in our power to carry the Same with all the wholesome Laws heretofore made for the Like Purpose into Execution, and in Testimony of our Sincerity therein we recommend that the Inhabitants of this Town here unto Set their hands by Subscribing their Names from Twenty one years old and upwards and that the Committee of Safty be Directed to offer y^e^ same to the Inhabitants, afforesaid and deal with all that refuse to Sign the Same (if any should be) as Directed in the Resolves afforesaid, and that the Town Clerk be Directed to Give out Copies to the Several members of the Committee afforesaid for the Like Purpose."

Dr. Putnam, Aaron Cheever, Captain Shillaber and Archelaus Rea were added to the Committee of Safety. At a later time it was voted that "the prices Set by the Selectmen and Committe of Saftie to the Several Articles now read with Several resolves accompaning the Same be accepttable to the Town Voted Saml. Epes be a Committe to git a Sefient Number of the above Prices and resolves Printed."

There was one conspicuous instance of violation of these regulations. In the record of a meeting, 13, 1779, appears this:

"Voted Mr. Gideon Putnam has violated the resolves of the Convention at Concord by selling cheese at nine shillings per lb., as by evidence fully appeared.

"Voted Mr. Gideon Putnam be posted in one of the Public Newspapers of this State for Breaking one of the resolves of the Convention at Concord, as an enemy to his cuntrey.

"Voted not to excuse those persons who have not subscribed their names to carry the resolves of Concord into Execution. Voted to Post the Several Persons in the public prints for not complying with the vote of the Town, as by a List from the Committee of Safety will appear."

Cheese at $1.50 per pound seems rather high, but scarcity and inflated currency account for it. Rum was quoted at from $20 to $25 per gallon; molasses, £3 19*s.*; Bohea tea, £5 6*s.* per lb.; iron, £30 per cwt., and other things in proportion. An idea of the purchasing power of continental money may be had in the appropriations made by the town in October, 1880, for "beef for the army." It was voted that the sum of thirty thousand pounds be raised and assessed upon the inhabitants for the purpose of procuring beef, and Enoch Putnam, Jona. Sawyer and Timothy Patch were appointed a committee to carry out the vote. The vote to procure beef was then reconsidered, and, instead, it was voted to send the money direct to the county committee, of which Samuel Osgood, Esq., of Andover, was one. The following January, 1781, it was voted to raise eighteen hundred pounds in silver or an equivalent in paper money "for the use of the town to procure Continental soldiers." The recruiting committee were Ezra Upton, John Dodge and Capt. Samuel Page, who were instructed not to exceed one hundred and eighty silver dollars for each man for three years or the war, "exchange of paper money for silver money at seventy-five for one." At the same meeting these votes were passed:

"Voted that this Town be formed into as Many Classes as there are Soldiers to procure for the Town for three years or During the War. Voted that the Friends be Excused from being Classed with the rest of the Town. Voted to reconsider the vote respecting not Classing the Friends, and that the Friends be subject to be Classed with the other Inhabitants of the Town."

Thus all through the war those who remained at home helped to uphold the government and supply the army. There were brave patriots, then as ever, who never fired a musket, but were none the less devoted and useful.

During the eight terrible years Danvers was represented at the front as well among the leaders as in the ranks. On the roll of honor the names of some of her sons are written very high. Ranking highest were three Generals, Israel Putnam, Moses Porter, Gideon Foster; next, three Colonels, Jeremiah Page, Israel Hutchinson, Enoch Putnam; two Majors, Caleb Lowe, Sylvester Osborn; six Captains, Samuel Eppes, Samuel Flint, Jeremiah Putnam, Samuel Page, Dennison Wallis, Levi Preston, Johnson Proctor.

Some of these men will be mentioned in the history of Peabody, and others are noticed in other connections in this sketch. Of two of them, Porter and Hutchinson, something will here be said:

Moses Porter was an apprentice, eighteen years old when the war broke out. He helped to work one of the guns at Bunker Hill, and stuck to his piece when most of the men had fled. His country never allowed him to quit it afterwards, says Mr. Upham, whose words also are these: "From that day he bore a commission in the army of the United

States. He was retained on every peace establishment always in the artillery, and at the head of that arm for a great length, and until the day of his death. No man who fought at Bunker Hill remained so long a soldier of the United States. After the Revolution, in which he was wounded, he served with Wayne in the Indian campaign, and was at the head of the artillery when the War of 1812 took place. He was in active service on the Niagara frontier, and on the 10th of September, 1813, was breveted for distinguished services. He defended Norfolk, Va., in 1814, with great ability and vigilance, and saved that most vital point of coast defense. At successive periods after the war he was at the head of each of the geographical military divisions of the country." He died at Cambridge in 1822, and was buried on his father's farm, from which his remains have been removed to Walnut Grove Cemetery. A letter preserved from Captain Simeon Brown to General (then Lieutenant) Porter, 1781, says, "I went yesterday to Salem to get a Dictionary, but there are none to be had, therefore I cannot send one this time, but .will try at Boston the first opportunity, and if one can be obtained I will send it on." Though a reflection on Salem as a literary centre, the letter speaks well for the young artillery officer who wanted a dictionary. Moses Porter never married.

The house which Colonel Israel Hutchinson built, the one in which the women gathered during that nineteenth of April and saw laid out on the floor the dead heroes brought back from the fight, is still standing at Danversport, close by the "new mills" which Archelaus Putnam built. Indeed, Hutchinson's second wife was the widow of Archelaus Putnam. For many years this house remained in the family as the residence of Briggs T. Reed, who married the colonel's granddaughter, Betsey; it is now owned by the Eastern, or Boston and Maine Railroad Company, and before long may give place to a much needed new station. Colonel Hutchinson was a descendant of the fifth generation from Richard Hutchinson, the emigrant, who came from Arnold, England, in 1634, and with his wife Alice and four children, settled near Hathorne's hill. He was born in 1727 and was living on the Plains in 1762, moving soon after to New Mills. His long and honorable military record began when he enlisted as a scout in Captain Herrick's company, in 1757. The next year, in the Lake George and Ticonderoga campaign he was a lieutenant in Captain Andrew Fuller's company; the next year a captain, he led a company, under General Wolfe, up the Heights of Abraham. A man with this experience was naturally enough chosen as a leader of the minute-men of '75. Soon after Lexington he was commissioned a lieutenant-colonel in Colonel Mansfield's regiment, and soon was promoted to full rank of colonel. He was at the siege of Boston, and his regiment was one of those detailed to fortify Dorchester Heights. He went to New York, commanded Forts Washington and Lee, and was with Washington throughout the memorable retreat through New Jersey. On his return from the war he was conspicuously honored by his fellow-citizens, who sent him repeatedly to the General Court and elected him to other offices, until politics entered more into consideration, and Federalists carried the day against the colonel and his fellow-Democrats. In his old age he kept busily engaged at his business, which had been interrupted by the war. He worked in his saw-mill until he met there the accident which, in his eighty-fifth year, caused his death, March 16, 1811. He is buried in the Plains Cemetery. His son, Israel Hutchinson, Jr., was a deacon of the Baptist Church and long clerk of the society. The colonel's orderly-book, from August 13, 1775, to July 8, 1776, is in possession of the Massachusetts Historical Society. It contains a "descriptive list of non-commissioned officers and privates enlisted in the county of Essex to serve in the army of the United States," comprising five hundred and twenty-two names, including thirty from Danvers.

Colonel Hutchinson is recalled by Deacon Fowler, who was a boy of eleven when he died, as a smart old man, small in stature, clad in a white frock, working in his saw-mill. He was accustomed to call the boys in from the street to help him roll logs. He had not himself a lazy bone, and he abhorred laziness in others and despised loafers. His son, the deacon, entertained visiting ministers, and when one of these guests strolled in to look over the mill, the old man, taking him for a loafer, threatened to throw him into the pond.

How gladly the townspeople welcomed the close of the war, and withal, how vigilant they were for the preservation of the rights so dearly bought, may be judged from instructions given Colonel Hutchinson, June 9, 1783. After alluding to his conspicuous services during the war and at the General Court, the instructions proceed,—"The contest is over and a complete Revolution is happily acomplished. This town, sir, congratulates you on so glorious a period. . . . As the Independence depends solely (under Divine Providence) in the Union of these United States, you are to consider the confederacy of the States as Sacred and in no point to be violated. . . . You are to use your endeavor that no Absentee or Conspirator against the United States, whether they have taken up arms against these States or not, be admitted to return, and those persons that have returned, you are not to suffer such persons to remain in this Commonwealth. . . . In any matters that turn up, which you think militate against your Constituents, you are to apply for further Instructions."

Danvers was represented in the march of Colonel Wade's Essex County Regiment, to suppress Shay's Rebellion. An orderly-book, now in possession of Dr. A. P. Putnam, gives the names of sixty-eight men of the company of Captain (afterwards Colonel) John Francis, fourteen of whom were from this town,

including four officers,—Daniel Needham, lieutenant; Daniel Bell, drummer; Josiah White, sergeant; Moses Thomas, corporal.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

DANVERS—(*Continued*).

ECCLESIASTICAL.

THE FIRST CHURCH.—By the terms of the act already referred to, which constituted Salem Village, all the farmers within the Village limits were to contribute "to all charges referring to the maintenance of a minister and erecting a meeting-house," and five persons were to be appointed "among themselves or town of Salem," to collect rates and levies, the constable of Salem to have power to make distress on the goods of any neglecting to pay. At the first meeting of the Farmers, about a month after the establishment of the Village, namely, November 11, 1672 (old style), five persons were chosen "to carry along the affairs according to the court order,"—Lieutenant Thomas Putnam, Thomas Fuller, Joseph Porter, Thomas Flint and Joshua Rea.

The first preacher at the Village was then also formally engaged,—Rev. James Bayley. He was a young man, but little over twenty-one years of age, a native of Newbury, and a graduate of Harvard in 1669.

For some seventeen years there was no separate and independent church. The condition of things was anomalous. While a considerable number of the members of the church of Salem Town worshipped, for convenience, at a place nearer home than formerly, but yet were not allowed to sever their connection with the parent church, there was, on the other hand, a complete parochial organization, corresponding somewhat to the modern "society," in which, contrary to the usual Puritan polity, the franchise was not confined to church members. From this half-and-half state of things came, from the very first, trouble. The householders far outnumbered the church members. It can easily be imagined that certain non-church members, from the natural inclination to exercise newly acquired power, took too prompt and vigorous a part to suit those who had hitherto not been obliged to consult them. However that may have been, the young minister soon found his congregation divided into very marked factions for and against himself. A majority favored him, but the other side was a good instance of a "strong-working minority." Mr. Bayley was employed from year to year, and each renewal of his engagement added to the determination of the opposition. That he had the courage to stay some seven years, as he did, speaks better of his grit than of his wisdom. But, after appeals to the parent church from both sides, and a thorough investigation by the General Court, out of which Bayley came triumphant, "orthodox and competently able, and of a blameless and self-denying conversation," he at last, about the beginning of 1680, gave up. He continued to remain in the village for some time after his resignation on land given him by certain parishioners, among whom was his most conspicuous opponent, Nathaniel Putnam. The land consisted of about forty acres, situated in part on the meadow and hill east of the meeting-house. The deed, though dated after his resignation, seems to be in confirmation of a gift promised or actually given soon after his engagement to preach. The recitation that "the providence of God having so ordered it, that the said Mr. Bayley doth not continue amongst us in the work of the ministry, yet, considering the premises, and as a testimony of our good affection to the said Mr. Bayley," goes far to show that, after all, the spirit of fair play prevailed. Mr. Bayley eventually studied medicine, practiced in Roxbury, and died January 17, 1707.

In the latter part of 1672 it was determined to build a meeting-house "of 34 foot in length, 28 foot broad and 16 foot between joists." The first meeting-house stood on the acre which Joseph Hutchinson donated for that purpose; its site is the northern side of Hobart Street, a little east of the old Hook house. Part of the meagre furnishings of this building consisted of the "old pulpit and deacons' seats" taken from that very meeting-house preserved in Salem by the Essex Institute, the parent church having about this time built a new meeting-house, and bestowed these things on the Farmers.

Mr. Bayley's successor was George Burroughs. He was engaged in November, 1680, having then been out of college ten years. He came from a rough experience in the wild district about Casco, where life was in peril from Indian assaults, but after three years stay he went back among the woods and savages, and, doubtless, preferred the certain dangers of the frontier to the treatment he received at Salem Village. The farmers voted sixty pounds for his first year's support, one-third in money, the balance in provisions at stated rates, but they neglected to fulfil their agreement, and compelled him to run in debt to pay his wife's funeral expenses. The unjust suit brought against him by John Putnam, in whose family he had boarded has been mentioned.

The third minister was one Deodat Lawson. Gift of God, his name implied, but Mr. Rice pithily says he could not have been divinely given to this people, save in the way of bare allowance. He remained from early in 1684, and left in the summer of 1688. Daniel Epps, the famous school-master who lived on the present Rogers estate, supplied the pulpit as a layman before Lawson was finally settled.

On the 19th of November, old style, 1689, a church was at length organized, and on that day began the pastorate of a man whose name will ever stand out

most conspicuous in the blackest chapter of New England history, the Reverend Samuel Parris. For in his family broke out and by him was fostered to its direful end, the Salem Witchcraft Delusion. In Mr. Upham's book the events of the preceding years which had a bearing in the accusations and trials, especially the divisions and animosities which, commencing with the Bayley troubles, grew from bad to worse through Burroughs' and Lawson's stay, are all collected and told with the skill of a novelist unfolding his plot to the climax of the catastrophe. Elsewhere in this book appears a summary of the sad story. Only here let it be said that to Danvers, this very town, and not to the present limits of the city of Salem, belongs the melancholy distinction of being the place in which the delusion had its origin. A little back from the present parsonage there is a distinct depression which marks the cellar of Parson Parris' house; here and there "witch houses" are still standing and lived in; and about the present meeting-house of the First Church, in some manner as of lineal descent, centre those associations of the scenes of 1692 with which the whole region is filled.

The covenant "agreed upon and consented unto by the Church of Christ at Salem Village, at their first embodying on y^e^ 19 Nov., 1869," was subscribed by these twenty-seven persons:

Samuel Parris, pastor.	Eliz. (wife to Sam.) Parris.
Nathaniel Putnam.	Rebek (wife to John) Putnam.
John Putnam.	Anna (wife to Bray) Wilkins.
Bray Wilkins.	Sarah (wife to Joshua) Rea.
Joshua Rea.	Hannah (wife to John, Jr.) Putnam.
Nathaniel Ingersoll.	Sarah (wife to Benjamin) Putnam.
Peter Cloyes.	Sarah Putnam.
Thomas Putnam.	Deliverance Walcott.
John Putnam, Jr.	Persis (wife to William) Way.
Edward Putnam.	Mary (wife to Sam.) Abbie.
Jonathan Putnam.	
Benjamin Putnam.	
Ezekiel Cheever.	
Henry Wilkins.	
Benjamin Wilkins.	
William Way.	
Peter Prescott.	

Parris rid the church of his ill-fated presence on the last day of June, 1696, having doggedly hung on to a position where he served but to perpetuate and keep alive the troubles for which he was so largely responsible. It is human nature to feel one's blood boil at the thought of the part this man, a minister of God, took in the murder of innocent people, but greater than he were not great enough to rise above the accepted ideas of their time. Through these poor instruments One that is greater than all was working in a way they knew not of. Only such a sacrifice could arouse mankind to the horror of their own unreason. The rocky summit of Gallows Hill bears witness that never again under civilization shall human life be imperiled by such superstition.

With the departure of Parris, a leaf was turned on the record of the dark days of the earliest history of the parish and church, and brighter days appeared, when after much effort to fill the vacancy, an invitation to Rev. Joseph Green was accepted. He was a Harvard man, and was not quite twenty-three years old when he was ordained, November 10, 1698. Before this he had preached many months, the people had ample opportunity to know him and to become settled in their own minds. It was with unanimity that he was called, and the response which he made he entered in the church book: "I gave an answer to the church and congregation to the effect that if their love to me continued, and was duly manifested, and if they did all study to be quiet, I was then willing to continue with you in the work of the ministry." As an evidence of the new peace brought about by his ministry, certain members who had had nothing to do with the church since the witchcraft days, came to communion February 5, 1699, a red-letter day in the history of the church.

Two years later, and a day of thanksgiving was observed for continued peace and prosperity. The change, says Mr. Rice, was permanent. "Nothing, scarcely, before the settlement of Mr. Green, had been done by a united people. Nothing of importance, scarcely, since, in the space of a century and three-quarters, has been done in any other manner. No minister has been settled except with a practical unanimity; and in each case but one, I think, there has been no dissenting vote in church or parish. Nor has there been, in all that long period, a single serious and obstinate contention among the members of this church and society."

With the beginning of a new century the people determined to have a new meeting-house. Very likely more room was needed, but there were plenty of reasons why the old building should be abandoned. It might well have been dragged where the gibbets had stood and there burned to ashes, but with less poetic justice it was taken down and set up again as a barn on the opposite side of the road, where it stood, Mr. Upham says, "until, in the memory of old persons now living, it mouldered, crumbled into powder-post and sunk to the ground." The new building was erected on "Watch-house Hill," the site of three succeeding meeting-houses, including that now in use. The hill had been leveled considerably and otherwise cleared; it can easily be seen that the spot was wisely chosen by the earliest settlers for the location of a block-house defense against the Indians. The meeting-house of 1701 fronted north, facing Deacon Ingersoll's house. It was first occupied July 26, 1702. From the thirty-four by twenty-eight of the first building the dimensions were increased to forty-eight by forty-two. The building committee were Captain Thomas Flint, Joseph Pope, Lieutenant Jonathan Putnam, Joseph Herrick and Benjamin Putnam. The cost was about three hundred and seventy pounds, part of which was raised by subscription among persons outside of the village limits. Mr. Green contributed liberally and the town people helped somewhat.

A diary kept by Mr. Green has been preserved and printed by the Essex Institute, with notes by Deacon Fowler. It reveals the lovable character of the writer and gives many a glimpse of life in Salem Village during his pastorate. On the 26th of November, 1715, having just reached the age of forty years, and having completed eighteen years of ministry among his people, Joseph Green died, and was buried in the old cemetery which bears the name of one of his successors. Good and just man, the greatness of his work far exceeded the length of his life. Deacon Edward Putnam made this minute in the church-book.

"Then was the choyces flower and grenest olif tree in the garden of our Lord hear cut down in its prime and flourishing estate at the age of forty years and 2 days, who had ben a faithful ambasindor from God to us 18 years, then did that brite star seet and never more to apear her among us: then did our sun go down, and now what darkness is com upon us. Put away and pardon our Iniqutyes, o Lord, which have ben the cause of the Sore displeasure and return to us again in marcy, and provide yet again for this, thy flock, a pastor after thy one hearte as thou hast promised to thy people in thy word, one which promise we have hope, for we are called by thy name; o leve us not."

June 5, 1717, a year and a half after Mr. Green's death, the Rev. Peter Clark was ordained. He was also a Harvard man, five years out, and about twenty-five years old. Hobart Street is named for Peter Hobart, the father of Mr. Clark's wife, who came here to live about 1730. Mr. Clark's pastorate lasted fifty-one years. Mr. Rice says of him: "Mr. Clark was a man very unlike his predecessor, and yet well fitted to serve the people among whom he came. He had a sharp and vigorous mind, with a taste for theological discussions." A modern congregation would find it hard to sit through a single sermon such as the Rev. Peter's people had to endure every week. A delegation once went to him to suggest that he administer his teaching in less heroic doses; but he said "No; any could leave when they had heard enough, but the sermons must go on to their appointed ends." Two volumes of his works, as well as a number of scattering sermons have been published. One of these, which Mr. Rice seems successfully to have analyzed back to its original plan, presents a scheme of heads and sub-heads, fearfully and wonderfully made—in all, eighty-four separate divisions. No wonder he was widely known as a stalwart preacher, and was called upon to deliver choice specimens of his literary and oratorical skill on special occasions in Boston and elsewhere. Once he had neglected for some reason to join in the prayers of neighboring ministers for the cessation of existing drought, but having been formally requested so to do, he also the next Sabbath prayed for rain, and it soon rained. His negro man, who knew well his master's character, said "he knew that when Massa Clark took hold, something would have to come."

During Mr. Clark's pastorate the first church bell was hung, in 1725; the town of Middleton was incorporated, 1728, and a church there organized in 1729 occasioned the withdrawal of twenty-four members of the Village Church; and in 1752 the Village was separated from Salem and became a part of Danvers.

This entry in the church book, made by Deacon Asa Putnam more than half a century after Deacon Edward Putnam entered his touching obituary of Mr. Green, tells its own story:

"Now, it has pleased God in his holy Providence to Take away from us our Dear and Rev'd pastor by Death, Mr. Peter Clark, who departed this Life June ye 10, 1768—in ye Seventy-Sixth Year of his age, and on ye 15th day was his funeral. itt was attended by Great Sollemnity; his Corps was Carried in to ye Meeting-house; a prayer was made by ye Rev'd Mr. Diman, of Salem; a Searman Delivered by the Rev'd Mr. Barnard, of Salem, from Galatians, 3 Chap., 14 verse. Then Removed to his Grave with ye Church walking before the Corps, assisted by 12 Bears, with a great Concours of People following. . . . Now he is gone, Never to see his face no more in this world, no more to hear the Presious Instructions and Examples out of his mouth, in Publick or in Private, any more; that ye God of all grace would be pleased to sanctifee this great and Sore bereavement to this Church and Congregation for good, and in his own Due Time Give us another Pastour after his own heart to feed this People with Truth, Knowledge and Understanding, that this Church may not be Left as Sheep without a Shepherd, &c."

It was not until after more than four years that the vacancy occasioned by Mr. Clark's death was filled. The church repeated its action of a half century before. It took to itself another young man fresh from his studies, and relinquished the services of his life-work only when death called him to the fullness of his years. More than fifty-three years was Dr. Wadsworth pastor of this people. Over more than a hundred years the two pastorates of himself and his predecessor extended. It was but twenty-five years after the witchcraft times—they seem far back in our annals—that Mr. Clark was settled. The Missouri Compromise had been effected some years before Dr. Wadsworth's death. What chapters of history were enacted while these two men preached at Salem Village and the First Parish of Danvers.

Benjamin Wadsworth was born in Milton, July 18, 1750, graduated at Harvard in 1769, and was licensed to preach a few months before his ordination in Danvers. This event occurred December 23, 1772, and it was an especially great time for the parish. Certain festivities incident thereto have been the subject of local tradition which gives some hint of the nature of the liquid refreshment dispensed by some of the villagers to numerous guests from out of town. Judge Holten made this minute:

"The utmost decency was preserved through the whole of the Solemnity and the Entertainment consequent, was generous and elegant, reflecting great Honour upon the Parish."

Among the items of the bill of costs for the "Entertainment," are:

"For Bisket, £2 5*s*. 0*d*.; Pork, Beef, Salt (?) and Rye and Injun Meal, £20 17*s*. 0*d*.; about one Ton of Good Hay, £25; for Turkeys, £8 14*s*. 0*d*.; for Malt, £0 7*s*. 6*d*.; for Rum, £0 8*s*. 0*d*.: Syder about half a Barrel £0 15*s*. 0*d*.; New England Rum, £0 16*s*. 0*d*."

Mr. Wadsworth's salary was at first fixed at ninety pounds. Not long after his coming, came the stirring times of the Revolution. The young minister was among the Danvers men who flew to the North Bridge

at Salem to repel Colonel Leslie's march. About 1784, by way of compromise for a new parsonage, the parish gave Mr. Wadsworth an acre of land on the road west of the old parsonage lot, upon which he erected the rather stately mansion which still bears his name. At this time, too, the square hip-roofed meeting-house which had stood the use of some eighty-four years, was considered too old and small, and in 1786-87 a new meeting-house, the third in the history of the parish, was erected. It was sixty feet long by forty-six wide, twenty-seven feet post, with an ordinary pitch roof. A square tower ran up in front, surmounted by a belfry which in turn was surmounted by a tall and slender conical steeple. The old bell of 1725 was hung in the belfry, but in 1802 a new bell was procured weighing six hundred and seventy four pounds and costing $299.56.

This meeting-house was burned on the morning of September 24, 1805. "It was supposed to be set on fire by some incendiary," wrote the parish clerk. The accused person was so evidently insane that he "was therefore sentenced to receive no punishment but that of confinement as a lunatick." The greater part of the plate was stolen and suspicions were strong and well grounded that the real criminals were certain persons who used the poor imbecile for a cats-paw, but through lack of evidence they escaped conviction. The ruins had not ceased smoking when the standing committee,—Amos Tapley, Asa Tapley and Jonathan Porter, Jr.—issued their warrant for a meeting to be held the next week at the Upton Tavern, to consider rebuilding. It was voted to rebuild, that the new building should be of brick, that it should have a dome. The dimensions of the "Brick Church" were sixty-six feet by fifty-six feet, twenty-eight feet to the eaves, and the tower was "sixteen feet four inches square, having two wings, covered with a cupola, and terminated with a vane ninety-six feet from the foundation,"—Dr. Wadsworth's words. The corner-stone was laid May 16, 1806, and the finished building was dedicated November 20th of the same year. Dr. Wadsworth's sermon, then delivered, was published. Its rhetoric, especially in descriptions of the fire, is sufficiently lurid to meet the demands of the occasion. By an act of the Legislature, March 8, 1806, a number of Danversport people were transferred with their estates, from the South Parish to this parish; they had for some time maintained a practical connection here, though the territory of Danversport was never within the original limits of Salem Village and its inhabitants, belonged to the Middle Precinct or South Parish. "Ten respectable characters with their families," Dr. Wadsworth calls them. They were Samuel Page, John and Moses Endicott, Nathaniel Putnam, Samuel Fowler, Caleb Oakes, William Pindar, Jasper Needham, John Gardner, Jr., and Amos Flint, the last three being from what is now West Peabody.

A vote was passed in 1819 that the minister might read a portion of the Scriptures at the opening of the meeting on the Sabbath and on "all other Publick Days, as in his opinion shall be to the advantage and benefit of his hearers."

In March, 1825, Dr. Wadsworth felt the approach of the end. Previous to that time he had scarcely known sickness. On the 18th of January, 1826, he died, in the seventy-seventh year of his life and the fifty-fourth year of his pastorate. In his last sickness he bought the old burial-ground which bears his name and gave it to the parish, and there is his own grave. An outline of his character, as presented by Mr. Rice, is here condensed:

"Dr. Wadsworth was a man of fine personal appearance, and with the bearing of a thorough gentleman of those days. He is described by the late Judge Samuel Putnam as 'of great bodily vigor, with limbs finely proportioned; about five feet ten inches in height, with a handsome and florid countenance.' But there are those of yourselves, with whom the figure of this former pastor is still familiar. 'I can see him now,' says Dea. Samuel Preston, 'precisely at the minute appointed, with a dignified step passing up the broad aisle, dressed in surplice and band, cocked hat in hand, the curls of his auburn wig gracefully waving over his shoulders; slightly recognizing the powdered dignitaries, such as Judge Holten, Judge Collins and others, as he passed; ascending with an agile step, the stairs of his high pulpit, and taking his seat under the huge canopy or sounding-board which hung suspended over his head.'

"The doctor was formal and ceremonious, but courteous without exception to all, and warm and kindly, withal, at heart. He kept his position, as the manner of those times was with ministers, a little apart from his people. The children looked upon him with a kind of awe; and the feeling extended to his family and the house in which he lived. The lad who drove his cows to their pasture was not expected to enter the yard by the front way. He could keep persons at a distance from him whenever he chose to do so, with wonderful civility and ease. He was reckoned by many to be reserved; and he was so with many, but not with his intimate friends. In his intercourse with his brother ministers he was often facetious and witty, which may be thought a singular circumstance. But even with his brother ministers he was understood to be a person of dignity. By one of them, Mr. Huntington, of Topsfield, it used to be said that 'when any of the brethren called upon Dr. Wadsworth, they were civil enough,' but when they came to his house 'they threw in their saddles at the front door.' The former part of this only should be believed.

'He was conservative in all his tastes and habits, and did not enter readily into new methods. He introduced the observance of the monthly concert near the end of his ministry, held in the afternoon of Monday; but there were at that time no other prayer-meetings.

"The weekly meeting on Friday evening dates from the settlement of his successor. The service of public or social prayer by the brethren of the church had fallen, indeed, considerably into disuse at this period, so that at the establishment of the Sabbath-school there was some difficulty in finding persons who were willing to offer the opening prayer.

"But, if Dr. Wadsworth had the weakness of a conservative temper, he had also its strength. He was steady and judicious in his work. He did little that ever needed to be undone, either by himself or by any one else. He was a lover of peace, and had wisdom to maintain it. He was able in his own life to illustrate, in a good degree, the principles of the religion he taught. He exhibited remarkable patience and calmness in the midst of difficulties, and resignation in time of trial. He had a steadiness of devotion and of trust, the power of which was not lost upon his people. And thus, if in its later years his ministry failed somewhat in general and marked popular effect, it did not lack in thoroughness and beauty of impression upon those that cherished its influences. It was long afterwards to be noticed that among those whose lives had been moulded by his ministry, there was to be found a rare and admirable type of Christian character."

In a little less than three months after Doctor Wadsworth's decease there was another ordination in the village. Once again the church took unto itself a young man who, in his turn was to grow old in its service. The young man, Milton Palmer Bra-

man, had preached somewhat during Doctor Wadsworth's sickness, and was speedily and unanimously called to become his successor. The date of the ordination was April 12, 1826. He resigned March 31, 1851, after a pastorate of nearly thirty-five years. Nearly one hundred and sixty three years before, the revered young Joseph Green came to Salem Village, and only four lives bridge the span between his coming and Doctor Braman's resignation. A single pastorate of half a century is here and there met with in the history of other churches, but a series of life pastorates like this, aggregating so many years, will not be easily paralleled.

The present parsonage property was purchased May 26, 1832, and was first occupied by Mr. Braman January 8, 1833. In 1835 a vestry or chapel was built on Hobart Street, east of the parsonage, where it stood until 1871, when it was bought and removed by G. B. Martin. In 1838 an act of the Legislature incorporated Samuel Preston, Samuel P. Fowler, Jesse Putnam and their associates under the name of the First Religious Society in Danvers, and a month later, April 18, 1838, this act was repealed, and a new act passed, beginning, "The North Parish in Danvers, of which the Rev. Milton P. Braman is pastor, is hereby made a corporation," etc., and slightly altering the provisions of the former act so that the society "may assess the pews in any meeting-house hereafter erected by them or conveyed to them."

The new meeting-house to be "hereafter erected" was not long in coming. Fears were entertained of the safety of the brick meeting-house. "A certain cracking and settling of the walls which had for years been noticed, became too serious, it was thought, to be longer neglected." There was a unanimous vote to pull it down and build once more a new house. The present meeting-house, the fifth in line of succession, was finished and dedicated November 21, 1839. Its cost was about twelve thousand dollars. Jesse Putnam, Samuel Preston, William Preston, Nathaniel Pope, Peter Cross, Daniel F. Putnam (on his decease, Nathan Tapley), and John Preston were the building committee; Levi Preston, master carpenter. Dimensions of the building, eighty-four by sixty feet.

Early in Mr. Braman's ministry, 1832, a Benevolent Circle was formed among the ladies of the parish. Mrs. Braman was its first president. Some interesting reminiscences, written by Harriet P. Fowler, are here condensed:

"Let your readers come with me in imagination to some old-fashioned farm-house in the North Parish, now Danvers Centre. It is fifty years ago. From one to two in the afternoon the members are arriving, some in chaises, some in wagons, while others walk over the hills and pastures, not much impeded by stone walls or fences, as trains and pull-backs are not in vogue. At two o'clock quite a large company has assembled, the President reads a chapter from the Bible, and business commences. Some of the ladies have brought large bags and boxes. In one corner a smart, energetic woman is dealing out shoes to bind; a trying ordeal for novices to sit by an old shoe-binder and try to turn off as many as she does. In another part of the room a lady is giving out material for stocks, those elaborate structures of hair-cloth, bombazine and Satin, in which men of that generation arrayed their necks. Wonder they were not stiff-necked for life! Press-boards, holders and flat-irons show that the ladies mean business.

"A group of elderly women are deftly plying their knitting-needles—wise women, who know that cold hands and feet make cold hearts—so they are providing warm mittens and stockings for fathers, husbands, sons. There is a table where shirts and collars are being made for the luckless wights who have neither mother nor wife to provide for them. A bevy of young misses are tastefully arranging patch-work for quilts, to be given to invalids, or sold to increase the funds of the society. At twilight work is suspended, and after a cup of tea and simple refreshments, it is again resumed till nine o'clock. In the evening the men drop in, making themselves useful by holding yarn for the young ladies or perchance threading the needles for the older ones, and generously responding when the collection was taken at the close of the evening.

"With the money earned we relieved the wants of the poor, clothed Sabbath-school children, and bought them books; we carpeted the church and helped to build the chapel; we gladdened the heart of the home missionary, and accumulated quite a little fund found useful in subsequent emergencies. In such a meeting in one of these old-fashioned rooms could be seen the graceful and energetic Mrs. Braman, the quiet but efficient Mrs. Kettelle, and many others whom we of the present might be proud to claim as mothers or grandmothers."

At the fiftieth anniversary of this society, celebrated November 8, 1882, ten of the fourteen original members then living were present.

In the year 1844 the church suffered the loss of those of its members, who formed what is now the Maple Street Church, at the Plains. This division occurred chiefly through consideration of convenience. The earlier losses, when Middleton was incorporated, and when the South parish was established, were of the same nature. But from time to time in the history of the church, members have separated from it to accept the doctrines of other denominations. All of the churches hereafter to be mentioned, except the Catholics, have drawn for their organization in a greater or less degree on the strength of the parent church. Yet the numerical strength of the First Church, in 1867, when there were two hundred and two members, was greater than ever before. The congregations were largest just before the withdrawal of the Plains people, a fair attendance on a pleasant Sabbath being about four hundred.

March 31, 1861, has been mentioned as the date of Dr. Braman's resignation. He had a number of times previously expressed a desire to be dismissed, but his people would not let him go. This time he had decided. "I have reached that time of life when I wish to retire from the labors which the ministry imposes on me, and when it is usually better to give place to younger men."

Dr. Braman was the son of a minister, Rev. Isaac Braman, of Georgetown, and his mother was the daughter of a minister. The father, in response to an invitation to attend the George Peabody reception in 1856, wrote: "If Barzillai, the Gileadite, when only four score years old, could think himself excusable for not going up to Jerusalem with his King, whom he highly esteemed and loved, much more may one who is in his eighty-seventh year be excused from



Milton P. Braman

going to South Danvers." The son, Milton Palmer Braman, second in a family of five children, went from Phillips Academy to Harvard, graduated from there in 1819, and after a year's teaching entered the Andover Seminary. He preached his first sermon at Danvers, in December, 1825. He married Mary Parker, of Georgetown, in November, 1826, seven months after his settlement here. He moved to Brookline shortly after his resignation, then to Auburndale, where he died April 10, 1882, in his eighty-third year. He was buried in the town of his birth after a brief service at the home of his aged mother.

Dr. Braman was a strong man. Some have placed him at the head of eminent divines reared in Essex County. He was greatly assisted by his wife, one of the wisest and best of women, who relieved him of family cares, so that he could devote his time to parish duties, and in these she was ever a thoughtful assistant. The son, grandson and great-grandson of ministers, all of whom were exemplars in their generation in the discharge of the pastoral office, he likewise, by his earnest and faithful preaching, made a deep impression upon his hearers, many being led to a saving knowledge of the truth and a devoted Christian life, of whom shining examples yet remain.

The present pastor of the church, Dr. Braman's successor, Rev. Charles B. Rice, was installed September 2, 1863, and is approaching the twenty-fifth anniversary of his settlement. Mr. Rice is a native of Conway, Mass. His father, Colonel Austin Rice, who died July 15, 1880, at eighty-six years of age, was for fifty years one of the leading men of western Massachusetts in religious and educational movements, but a few years before his death was sent to the Legislature, was one of the founders of Mt. Holyoke Seminary and a trustee of that institution at the time of his death. Rev. Mr. Rice has always taken an active interest in town affairs, has served on the school committee almost continuously since 1865, has represented his fellow-citizens in both houses of the Legislature, and has served on the State Board of Education. A permanent monument to the memory of Mr. Rice is the published "History of the First Parish in Danvers," which is an amplification of the address delivered by him at the celebration of the two hundredth anniversary of the parish. This book has been chiefly followed in the preparation of this short sketch of one of the oldest, most historic, and in all respects most interesting churches to be found in this country. Many interesting details have been altogether omitted for the reason that they are there easily accessible. Doctor Braman was living at the time of the anniversary. Something more must here be said of him, and from a sermon delivered by Mr. Rice, April 28, 1882, these extracts are taken:

"His strength was in the pulpit. Preaching stood foremost with him, and it was preaching fit to stand in that place of forwardness. His mind was logical, and thus he went clear of all mist and vagueness, and his thoughts ran steadily toward some point he meant to reach. But he was not dull and dry in reasoning. Along with his logical movement there went a certain enlivening measure of imaginative and almost poetical fancy. Then he had a clear, shrewd sense concerning common life and common things, so that his style was terse and direct and struck sharply on actual practice. And then, hiding behind this shrewd practical sense, or in it, was a line of humor, ready to come into play where it might, and not coming into sight where it ought not. And then he had a gift of sarcasm at hand for use when it might be called for. By all these means he held attention to what he said, and his hearers were interested and entertained, and sometimes in a manner fascinated, even while they might be severely smitten upon.

"He was forcible, direct, clear and pungent. He laid hold on the intellect and sensibilities of his hearers both together. To an unusual degree his sermons ran close to life. I think this was their most distinguished characteristic. They were apt to concern, in some manner, those that heard them; and thus they entered into their thoughts and clung upon their memory. They were not uniform in strength, a thing not to be expected; but they were apt, all of them, to be in some part thoughtful, and of a quality to move one to some thoughtfulness for himself.

"He preached upon all Christian doctrines, and with frequency upon some. The doctrine of justification by faith was dear to him. He was skilled in depicting the lives of men, and he called often into use the great Scriptural biographies. The dead of those former ages rose up here, with bones and flesh and breath, and lived again under his hand. He dealt in this way with the good and the bad, with Moses and David and Pilate and Judas, and he may seem sometimes to have had a certain grimness of satisfaction in the work he might thus make with the bad.

"Dr. Braman drew great attention upon what are termed 'occasional sermons,' discourses preached upon the occurrence of the Fourth of July on a Sabbath day, or in connection with the death of prominent men, as General Harrison or Daniel Webster, or upon the annual days of Fasting or Thanksgiving. On these days this house was filled. People came sometimes in barges from the neighboring towns, and strangers were here often from a greater distance.

"His sermons were always written. He never spoke in the pulpit without notes. Upon one occasion, as he went to preach at South Danvers, now Peabody, his manuscript was forgotten, and he was greatly disturbed when he made the discovery, and unwilling to attempt to preach; but when the time, in the midst of the service, was come, and while yet he scarcely knew upon what he should speak, he went down to the platform before the pulpit, that he might not seem to preach, and there he did preach and in a manner which seemed to those that heard him to surpass his usual powers. He preached also, though he did not call it preaching, in the prayer-meetings he held in the chapel. It is remembered thus that at the chapel prayer-meeting, held on the evening of the day of Daniel Webster's burial, he spoke for a full hour, dwelling upon the burial scenes of great men, and making emphatic as he drew to a close, the insignificance of all earthly honors to one who had just entered into the presence of the holy angels and the Saviour and Judge of men.

"He spoke usually with little of gesture and nothing of oratorical art. His ordinary manner could not be called graceful. He had a well-known habit of rolling a strip of paper upon the fingers of his right hand, and after a certain established order of procedure, and he might be troubled if this resource failed. But when he was once under way in the pulpit upon a theme that stirred him, and was kindled with his topic, his ungraceful manner was either forgotten or it was changed, he gesticulated often with force and freedom, and the spirit of an orator was upon him.

"Dr. Braman was faithful and utterly fearless in rebuking wherever it seemed to him rebukes were needful. He was a conservative man. He was not changeable. He was not like the Apostle Peter. He was apt to stand for the cool side of things. But he stood for the cool side of things sometimes, it must be admitted, in a hot way, that would not have been unbefitting even to Peter.

"He was a strong opponent of slavery. They have misjudged him who from anything that occurred in his later years have thought of him differently. But in this matter his natural conservatism, and his legal habit of mind, had much force in shaping the course he took. As events moved rapidly forward, he himself advanced less rapidly, and in his dislike of all that seemed revolutionary in its origin or nature, he was led, we may think, too far in distrust or opposition toward those great popular movements which were designed under the shining

providence of God, to bring the gigantic evil he himself deplored—though by ways that did not please him—fearfully and gloriously to an utter end.

"Dr. Braman was a member of the School Committee of the town for twenty-five years, and Chairman of the Board for a considerable portion of that period.

"He was also a member from this town of the Convention held in 1853 for revising the Constitution of the State, and he bore an active and influential part in its proceedings.

"He went little into general society, and had not a liking for social assemblies."

Mr. Rice reached the twentieth anniversary of his settlement, September 2, 1883. Even then his pastorate was longer than any other in the Essex South Conference. In the twenty years, one hundred and ninety-one had been added to the membership; the number of members was then two hundred and seven; largest number in the history of the church, two hundred and twenty-three, in 1877. In 1882 the ratio of church membership to the population of the parish, was larger than ever before. Nearly one-quarter part of all who had ever been members were then still living. Mr. Rice had married one hundred and twenty-six couples, one hundred being of the parish, had attended three hundred and fifty funerals, preached five hundred and thirty-four written sermons and three hundred and ninety-eight unwritten, of which he says with characteristic humor "all ought to have been better, and some ought not to have been at all." Mr. Rice observed the anniversary by a discourse from the pulpit from which the foregoing statistics have been taken, and the following evening the event was made the occasion of a gathering of his own parishioners, friends from other parts of the town, ministers from neighboring churches, and others, for congratulations and social enjoyment. Augustus Mudge presided, and after remarks reviewing the period, he presented Mr. Rice an envelope containing a very substantial token of the esteem of his people. Among the letters read during the evening was this:

"Oak Knoll, Danvers, 9th mo., 3d, 1883.

"Hon. Augustus Mudge:

"*Dear Friend:*—I very much regret that I am not able to be with you at the gathering this evening. I am, it is true, better acquainted with the gentleman whom you so deservedly honor on this occasion, as a kind friend and neighbor, as a public-spirited citizen, than as a minister; but the fact that he has held his pulpit for twenty years is proof that he has done good service in it. During this long period I have never heard that his parish have been troubled by the bodily presence of that evil and disreputable Personage with whom his predecessor, Parson Parris, fought such a losing battle. As a consequence of this he has had no occasion to spend his time in searching for witches among the elderly ladies of his congregation; and the sound theology of his people under his ministrations has made heresy-hunting so unnecessary that the solitary Quaker who has sojourned within the parish limits still remains unchanged!

"Pleasantry apart, I beg leave to add my congratulations to yours, and to express my best wishes for my friend Rice and his family.

"Thine truly,

"John G. Whittier."

The Sabbath-school was organized in 1818, in Dr. Wadsworth's pastorate. The names of an even hundred of the first scholars are given by Mr. Rice, fifty-six females, forty-four males. The largest number at any time connected with the school was in 1867, four hundred and four, with an average attendance of nearly three hundred. The school had its origin at a meeting held at Dr. Wadsworth's house, July 30th of the year mentioned. Those present were the first teachers,—Samuel Preston, Edwin Joselyn, Edith Swinerton, Betsey Pope, Eliza Preston, and Betsey, Hannah, Harriet, Nancy, Eliza and Clarissa Putnam. The latter, Mrs. Preston, now living, has been mentioned in another connection. The idea of having a Sabbath-school seems first to have been entertained by Miss Betsey F. Putnam, who had seen the working of such a school in Beverly, started some years previously. The fiftieth anniversary of the Sabbath-school was observed August 9, 1868. Mrs. Emma Putnam Kettelle, who died the year before, had been a teacher from the first year. The first superintendent was Samuel Preston. His successors have been Porter Kettelle, Nathan Tapley, Samuel B. Willis, John Peabody, Ebenezer Putnam, George W. Endicott, Ahira Putnam, Wm. R. Putnam, Moses W. Putnam, Augustus Mudge, Edward Hutchinson, George W. French, Samuel A. Tucker, William Siner.

A number of the above served several different times. The longest consecutive term was that of Mr. Mudge, from 1848 to 1868. There were in 1886, connected with the school three hundred and four members, with an average attendance of one hundred and sixty-seven.

A LIST OF DEACONS.

1690–1719. Nathaniel Ingersoll.
1690–1730. Edward Putnam.
1709–18. Benjamin Putnam.
1718–33. Eleazer Putnam.
1731–54. Nathaniel Putnam, son of Benjamin.
1733–40. Joseph Whipple.
1741–62. Cornelius Tarbell.
1756–57. Archelaus Putnam, son of Nathaniel.
1757–62. Samuel Putnam, Jr.
1762–95. Asa Putnam.
1762–85. Edmund Putnam.
1785–1804. Gideon Putnam.
1795–1802. Daniel Putnam.
1802–18. Joseph Putnam.
1807–19. James Putnam.
1818–31. Jonathan Walcott.
1820–31. Eben. Putnam.
1832–61. John Thomas.
1832–44. Frederick Howe.
1845–48. Ebenezer Putnam, son of Eben.
1848–61. Samuel Preston.
1861–85. Elijah Hutchinson.
1861–74. William R. Putnam.
1886. Alfred Hutchinson, son of Elijah.
1886. Edward A. H. Grover.

STANDING COMMITTEES (partial list).

1672.
Lieut. Thomas Putnam.
Thomas Fuller, Sr.
Joseph Porter.
Thomas Flint.
Joshua Rea.

1700.
Lieut. Jonathan Putnam.
Benjamin Hutchinson.
John Tarbell.
Benjamin Putnam.
Thomas Fuller, Jr.

1725.
Samuel Flint.
Joseph Fuller.
John Preston.
Nathaniel Putnam.
Joseph Putnam.

1775.
Tarrant Putnam.
John Swinerton.
Cornelius Tarbell.
Abel Nichols.
John Preston.

1800.
Jonathan Porter, Jr.
Levi Preston.
Elijah Flint.

1820.
Moses N. Putnam.
Jesse Putnam.
Amos Pope.

1840.
Jesse Putnam.
Samuel Preston.
Nathan Tapley.

1860.
Samuel Preston.
Augustus Mudge.
Sylvanus B. Swan.

1870.
Wm. R. Putnam.
W. B. Woodman.
Augustus Mudge.

1874.
Augustus Mudge.
S. B. Swan.
S. Walter Nourse.

1880.
Augustus Mudge.
Alfred Hutchinson.
Samuel W. Nourse.

1887.
Augustus Mudge.
Alfred Hutchinson.
J. Peter Gardner.

CLERKS (partial list).

First clerk, unknown.
—— to 1699. Thos. Putnam.
1700. Jonathan Putnam
1702. Daniel Rea.
1703. John Putnam.
1705. Benj. Putnam.
1706. Jonathan Putnam.
1707. Daniel Rea.
1708. Edward Putnam.
1709. Samuel Andrew.
1710. Israel Porter.
1720. Joseph Porter.
1731. Joseph Putnam.
1740. Samuel Holten.
1750. John Preston.
1760. Asa Putnam.
1770. Archelaus Dale.
1781. Samuel Page.
1790. Ebenezer Brown.
1806. Hezekiah Flint.
Israel Andrews.
1820. Amos Pope.
1832. Daniel F. Putnam.
1836. Wm. R. Putnam.
1837. Franklin P. Putnam.
1838–65. Rufus Tapley.
1866–87. Augustus Mudge.

BAPTIST.—On the authority of a letter written in 1817 by Israel Hutchinson, clerk, the Baptist Society was formed November 12, 1781. The first recorded meeting was November 26, 1781. Captain Gideon Foster was chosen Moderator; Dr. Nathaniel Gott, clerk; and Jere. Hutchinson, Israel Porter and Nathaniel Pope, a committee to supply preaching. On the 10th of December, Nathaniel Pope, Samuel Fairfield and Captain Foster were chosen to procure a spot of land to set a meeting-house upon; later they were directed to "go on the spot or spots and see which is most comodose for the society and what it can be purchased for." Ebenezer Moulton and Benjamin Jacobs were added to the committee and the dimensions of the building fixed, "sixty feet in length and forty-five in wedth." January 9, 1782, it was voted "to Build the Meeting-House on Hooper's Plane, so called." In April this vote was reconsidered, and at a meeting held in Mr. Aaron Cheever's house it was voted to "chuse a committe to purchis the Land for the Meting-House." Captain Foster was retained on the new committee, and Aaron Cheever and Ebenezer Dale were the others. They were directed "to purchis a Land to Sett the meting-House on, and agree for a fraim and Git the underpinning." Charles Hall, Brickmaker, conveyed to this committee the land on which the building was erected, twenty-nine poles, by deed dated September 20, 1783, the consideration being twenty-six pounds.

Early in November, 1783, "Voted to Except of Mr. Henry putnams plan for the pews. Voted, that the pews be Sold at Vandue. Voted to choose a Committee to attend the Vandue and make sale of the pews, and to Notify to attend the Sale in ways and manner the Committee shall think proper. Voted that this committee consist of Seven persons." Colonel Israel Hutchinson, Nathaniel Webb, Jona. Sawyer, Nath. Pope, Ebenezer Moulton, Joseph Osborne and Samuel Fairfield were this committee.

A meeting was called just before the following Christmas at the house of the Rev. Benjamin Boltch, to consider the method of settling the outstanding accounts for work on the new meeting-house; the matter was entrusted to Colonel Hutchinson, Nathaniel Webb and John Felt. Jonathan Sawyer was here appointed the first treasurer of the society; he was already "clark," Dr. Gott having early resigned.

The record of the sale of pews is in this form:

"Mr. Aaron Cheever, Vandue master, Vandue open Jonathan Sawyer Clerk.
"Jona. Sawyer, bid of No. 8 at 82 dollars.
"And sold to Colonel Israel Hutchinson.
"James Richardson, Bid of No. 35 at 81 dollars.
"Joseph Smith, Bid of No. 32 at 77 dollars."

And so on. Other bidders were James Richardson, Henry Putnam, Captain Samuel Page, Nathaniel Webb, Samuel Fairfield, Captain Jeremiah Putnam, Captain Gideon Foster, Nathan Upton, Ebenezer Dale, Samuel Fowler, Charles Hall, Aaron Cheever, Simon Pinder, Richard Skidmore, Nathaniel Putnam, John Felt, John Gammell, Nathaniel Smith, John Chapman, Benjamin Kent.

The first pastor really settled over the new society was Rev. Benjamin Foster, and the society was remarkably fortunate at having such a man at hand. He knew his people and they knew him, for he had grown up among them. His father was Gideon Foster, a native of Boxford; his mother, Lydia Goldthwait, of Danvers. He was born in the house which formerly stood on Lowell and Foster Streets, South Danvers, June 12, 1750. His brother Gideon, about a year and a half older, the hero of Lexington, was one of the founders of the church. Benjamin attended the town schools, and when about twenty years old entered Yale College, from which he graduated in 1774. In college he became a decided convert to the belief that immersion is the only valid mode of administering the ordinance of baptism. After graduating he joined the First Baptist Church in Boston, under Rev. Dr. Stillman, who directed his theological studies. He was ordained pastor of a Baptist Church in Leicester, Mass., October 23, 1776. He evidently had preached somewhat at New Mills as a supply during the latter part of 1783.

January 27, 1784, the society met "at the house where they commonly met on the Sabbath days" to see if they would agree with the Rev. Benjamin Foster to preach any longer. They voted to request him to fill the pulpit for the next Sabbath, adjourned over, and then sent Joseph Osborne, Nathaniel Upton and Thomas Stevens "to waight upon him" with a result thus reported,—"the Rev'd. Mr. Foster will Stay with the Society six months unless something extraordinary prevents." When the six months were out, December 8, 1784, it voted to agree with Rev. Mr. Foster to preach till May next, and he, cautious as before, agreed "if sickness don't prevent."

Mr. Foster remained here two years and then ac-

cepted a call to Newport. Another two years and he was pastor of the First Baptist Church of New York. In 1792 the College of Rhode Island (Brown University) conferred upon him the degree of "D.D.," probably because of the talent and learning displayed in his work, "A Dissertation on the Seventy Weeks of Daniel, the particular and exact fulfillment of which Prophecy is considered and proved."

Dr. Foster was a fighter with arguments, and he stood manfully by the guns of Pedo-baptism. He had a controversy with Rev. John Cleveland, of Ipswich, on the baptism question, and his pamphlet, "Primitive Baptism Defended," published September 3, 1784, was widely noticed and a second edition called for and published in 1788. The introduction to this pamphlet, which is really a letter to Mr. Cleveland, contains a passage revealing the character of the man, which it would be well for every minister in the land to adopt:

"May God grant that my pen be directed by truth, and governed by candor and moderation, while I attempt to correct the mistakes of one whom I trust I shall ever have reason to respect! And the more we imbibe of the happy temper of our divine Master, the greater caution we shall use to suppress language which is bitter and censorious towards Christians who differ from us in those points of religion which are of lesser importance."

In the year 1798, in his forty-ninth year, he died in New York, the death of a hero. Not in that glory of military renown, clothed with which his brother Gideon lived to a very old age, but in a scourge of yellow fever. When panic was everywhere and people fled from the city, he remained at his post and fearlessly visiting the sick and dying, he took his life in his hands and lost it. True heroism! When the general roll is called how these instances of unselfish devotion, untrumpeted from the house-tops, will far outshine and outnumber the brave deeds of war.

Dr. Foster was buried in the Baptist Cemetery, N. Y., and on the marble over his grave are these words written by an eminent Presbyterian clergyman of that city:

"He excelled as a preacher; as a Christian he shone conspicuously; in his piety he was fervent; the church was comforted by his life, and now laments his death."

At a meeting, early in 1786, Nathaniel Putnam, Benjamin Kent and Simon Pindar were chosen to provide preaching for that year. A similar committee the next year were Jonathan Sawyer, Aaron Cheever, Nathaniel Webb; 1788, Nathaniel Upton, Nathaniel Webb, Israel Hutchinson; 1789, Messrs. Upton, Hutchinson and Ebenezer Dale; 1790, Israel Porter, Eleazer Wallis, Colonel Hutchinson; 1791, the same; 1792, the latter two and Newall Wilson. But little other business was transacted in these years. A vote, of 1789, that the committee provide preaching once a month and as much oftener as they can, is significant. In 1792 the clerk, Israel Hutchinson, Jr., was directed to draft three subscription papers for the committee to see "how much money they can gitt sined for the support of the gauspill the present year."

In the fall of 1792, we have a hint of a law-suit in which the Society was involved with the Second Parish in Beverly. Richard Waitt had been representing the society and Joseph Batchelder, Israel Porter and the clerk were chosen to help him fight. March 26, 1793, the society met to see what measures they would take "respecting the Rev. Thomas Green preaching for the present year." Ebenezer Wallis, Israel Porter, Josiah Swett, I. Hutchinson, Jr., and Nathaniel Upton considered the matter, and their report was accepted "Respecting giving the Revd. Thos. Green all the monies that may be Subscribed on the subscription papers, and that he shall Have all the Light Contributions and all other advantages witch may arise by sd society."

"A COPPEY OF THE SUBSCRIPTION PAPER.

	£	s.	d.
Nathl. Webb	2	8	0
Israel porter	2	8	0
Israel Hutchinson, Jr	2	8	0
Timothy Fuller	1	0	0
John Creasey ye 2	0	12	0
Nathl. Upton	1	0	0
Amos Sawyer	1	0	0
Wm. Johnson	0	16	0
Jos. Swett	1	10	0
Simon Dodge	1	10	0
Asa Woodbury	3	0	0
E. Wallis	2	0	0
Charles Dennis	0	18	0
Wm. Trask	1	10	0
John Makentiar	1	4	0
Jona. Wilson	0	12	0
Samuel Dutch	1	4	0
Josiah Rayment	0	10	0
Joseph Pettengill	0	18	0
Lemual Childs	1	6	0
Rich. Skidmore	0	12	0
Joshua Prinse	2	8	0
Daniel Usher	0	18	0
Jerem. W. Putman	0	12	0
Nath[l]. Putman	1	4	0
Aaron Chever	1	0	0
Saml. Fairfield	0	9	0
Jona. Robbins	0	8	0
James Burch	0	6	0
Widow Fowler	0	12	0
Simon Pinder	1	16	0
Richard Elliott	0	10	0
John Endicott	1	16	0
Thos. Putnam	1	12	0
John Welch	0	8	0
Gideon Foster	1	16	0
Dennison Wallis	2	2	0
Benj. Jacobs	1	4	0
John Bushby	0	12	0
Jona. Felton	0	12	0
Newall Wilson	1	4	0
Barnabas Conant	0	12	0
Peter Woodbury	1	4	0
Nathl. Prinse	1	0	0
Jona. Prince	0	12	0
Wm. Trask ye 2	0	18	0
Jona. Waitt	0	6	8
Israel Hutchinson, Esq	2	10	0
Moses Endicott	0	12	0
Edw. Dodge	1	10	0
Israel Putnam	2	0	0
Richard Waitt	0	12	0
Josiah Batchelder	1	0	0
Joshua Osborne	0	12	0
Gideon Batchelder	0	12	0
Seth Richardson	0	9	0
Samuel McKentiar	0	9	0
Richard Skidmore, Jr	0	6	0
Wm. Hilbort, Jr	0	9	0
Joseph Hilbort	0	9	0
Wm. Hilbort	0	4	6
Eph'm Smith	0	6	0
Ebenez'r Browne	1	4	0
Nicholas Browne	1	10	0
Sam'l Cheever	0	12	0
Bartholomew Smith	0	12	0
Elias Endicott	0	15	0
Edmond Putnam	0	12	0
John Hutchinson	0	6	0
Nath'l Batchelder	0	12	0
Auth. Buxton	0	18	0
Elisha Fuller	1	4	0
Abigail Broadstreet	0	6	0
	£69	19	2

A proprietors' meeting was held in April, 1793, to further consider the settlement of accounts and disposal of unsold pews. The committee were directed to hang the pew doors and make the end doors to the house; James Richardson was given a certain time in which "to cap his lot of pews." The next year a subscription paper was again passed around, "to see how much they can get sined for Rev. Thomas Green;" and he was also given the light contribution. It may have been from excessive lightness

that Mr. Green resigned, November 26, 1796. The next March it was voted "to procure sum person who possesseth a good Carrictor to preach for the Society this year, and the committee is to promise the minister all the contribusian that arises by the Society or otherwise all the money that the committee shall see proper." Nothing like having these little financial matters between pastor and people plainly understood. It is not shown in the society records who first succeeded Mr. Green. There was no settled minister for six years. Elder Joshua Young was supplying in the fall of 1800. In December, 1802, the standing committee made a report on Lord's Day evening, after the service that they have agreed with Mr. Jeremiah Chaplin "to preach to the Society one year Exclusive of Two Days the committee agreed to give him; we are to pay 312 dollars, equal to 6 dollars pr. day, wich the Society appeared to be very well satisfied with, and also voted to pay the same."

A minute has been preserved of certain donations to Mr. Chaplin for the society:

"The above money was given by Rev. Samuel Stilmon's Church, Mr. Baldin's Church and the church at Charleston, that is to say,

From Doc. Stilmon's	$51.25
From Mr. Baldin's	61.8
From Charlston	20.10
	$132.43

"By a box of Glass 100 f 8 by 10 Inches.
"Given by Deacon Waitt, of D. Stilmon's
"Church cost $13.75 cents.
"1804, Sept. 13, I Recd Eight Dollars of
"Deacon wild, it being a Remnont Not
"paid to Collector when Mr. Chaplin recd
"The above money." . . . . . 8.
$140.43

Dr. Stillman was the pastor of the First Baptist Church of Boston, with whom Benjamin Foster studied. The society sent grateful acknowledgment of the prompt and liberal assistance thus afforded in repairing the meeting-house.

In 1805 Mr. Chaplin's salary was raised to four hundred dollars, but the ordinary formula of the annual meetings was a vote for a subscription paper, "to see how much could be raised for the continuance of the gospel, as the Revd. Jeremiah Chaplin's time is nearly expired." Contributions were taken, one year every Sabbath; again, by passing the box around twice in every three months to collect the money of the subscribers. To be impartial in this business, in 1816 Samuel Whipple, collector, was directed "to carry Round the Book in the gallery at the time they pass Round below to colect the Subscription."

On the 17th and 18th days of September, 1817, the Salem Baptist Association met with the New Mills people.

There were at this time fourteen churches within the association, namely, the First Haverhill, the pioneer of Baptist Churches in this vicinity, founded in 1765; Chelmsford, 1771; Rowley, 1786; Danvers, 1793; Beverly, 1801; First Salem, 1804; South Reading, 1804; Nottingham West, 1805; Newbury, 1805; Gloucester, 1807; Marblehead, 1810; Methuen, 1815; Lynn, 1816; Reading, 1817.

That the meeting was quite an event may be judged from the preparations. A month before, there was a special meeting of church and society, at which there were appointed to act with the standing committee, a special committee of ten,—Dea. Isaac Porter, Benjamin Kent, Captain Thomas Putnam, William Trask, Captain Thomas Cheever, Captain Edward Richardson, Major Joseph Stearns, James Carr, William Johnson, Israel Hutchinson. They met at Mr. Hutchinson's house, to perfect arrangements. Major Black was made chairman. Messrs. Kent, Porter and Hutchinson were detailed to see that provision was made for the care of horses; Captain Putnam, Major Black and D. Hardy—the latter not of the ten—were directed "to visit the Nabours to see what entertainments they will make both as to provisions and Lodging for the ministers and messengers who may attend the association;" "to Seete the Ladies"—there the ten passed around sly jokes, of course, at the expense of each other, but they settled down with commendable fitness on the three men with handles to their names most suggestive of chivalry,—Captain Putnam, Captain Cheever, Captain Richardson; "to keep the Dores of the meeting-house," Dea. Porter, Messrs. Kent and Hutchinson; "to attend in the galleries and place the people at the best advantage to prevent Disorder," Major Stearns, Mr. Allen Gould; "to examine the meeting-house and report what it will be necessary to do," Captain Putnam, Messrs. Trask and Kent. The general committee met again and "maid a report what they had Dun for the association, as it Respects vitling & Lodging, & Likewise to the Keeping of horses. Rev. Mr. Chaplin, Messrs. Kent and Hutchinson, were appointed to make a division of the guests among the people; it was voted "that Mr. John Dock have the Sole Care of the Singing, & that he may invite what assistance he may think necessary, to assist him." One more meeting the committee had; William Trask and Major Black were appointed "to keep good order round the meetinghouse in Divine Sarvis." The only record which Mr. Hutchinson made of the occasion, which presumably was carried out with pleasure and profit, was in regard to the singing; he himself was called upon to manage this part of the service, owing to John Dock's previous engagement. He employed, he writes, Mr. Kinne, of Salem, Mr. Carey, of Salem, Mr. Timothy Berry, of Beverly and many others attended with them. "Kinne's bill, $14—Berry's bill, 4$50—Mr. Carey came with others gratis."

The Salem Association met with the New Mills Church again in 1836 and again in 1854; in the latter year it was comprised of twenty-four churches.

In April, 1818, Mr. Chaplin's salary was made five

hundred dollars, to be raised by tax assessed on the polls and estates of those persons who are or who may be petitioners for an incorporation act, and as if to give comfort and encouragement to the minister, a copy of the record of this action was sent to him. But a month later he accepted a call to another position. For sixteen years he had lived and labored among this people, how devotedly and with what mutual affection can be judged from the extracts of letters which follow. The meagreness of his salary forced his domestic economy into narrow straits; it is said that he often was seen fishing from Spite Bridge, and whether or not he had a weakness for angling, doubtless the catch was welcome to the frying-pan. It is a pleasant thing to record that his reputation for sterling manhood, conscientious work and scholarly attainments brought to him an invitation to accept the presidency of the institution since known as Bates' College.

May 18, 1818, his release was reluctantly granted, and the unfeigned thanks of the society were tendered him for his long and faithful services. Further, three persons were chosen "to form an address to be presented to him." Their names appear below:

"DANVERS, May 30, 1818.

"REV. JEREMIAH CHAPLIN:

"*Rev. & Dear Sir*,—We are authorized by the unanimous vote of the Baptist Society in Danvers, in behalf of the same, to present you our unfeigned thanks for your long and faithful labors with us as a minister of the Gospel and preacher of morality; and to express our sincere wishes that wherever you may in providence be called the smiles of Heaven may accompany you. You would deem it superfluous were we to enlarge upon the high estimation which we have ever placed on your ministerial performances or the love which we have ever borne toward you as a citizen. The reluctance with which we have lately assented to your dismission sufficiently bespeaks these sentiments. Nothing but a sense of duty in consideration of your present feelings has drawn this assertion from us. Although your removal is to us not joyous, but grievous, yet the occasion of this removal and the circumstances under which you leave us, afford us a very pleasing reflection. We have the satisfaction to believe that no want of attachment to us, love of honor, pecuniary views nor sinister motives, of whatever nature, had any part in inducing you to request a dismission. And much as we regret the loss which we must sustain by this separation, we are not disposed to complain of any injustice on your part. No, Sir! We are rather disposed to feel grateful for the privileges which we have already enjoyed, and to hope that the usefulness of your labours will be more extensive than it could be with us. We should be criminally contracted and selfish in our views were we to wish the general good to be sacrificed to our particular interest. That your removal will be for the general good we have not undertaken to decide from our own knowledge, but have acted with deference to your superior judgment, and so far as self denial would admit have acted with cheerfulness.

"We request and trust we shall ever have an interest in your supplications at the throne of Him who gave and who taketh away. Be assured dear sir, we possess the most affectionate feelings for yourself and family. Wishing you may receive a hundred-fold in this time, and in the world to come eternal life.

"FREDERICK EMERSON,
"JOSEPH STEARNS,
"THOMAS PUTNAM,
} Addressing Committee.

"June 1, 1818. Read in parish meeting and approved.

ISRAEL HUTCHINSON, Clerk.

Many years after Mr. Chaplin's departure, one of his successors wrote: "The parting scenes as they still linger in the memories of the aged, and as rehearsed by them with tearful eye, show how deep a hold he had upon his people."

It was at the beginning of Mr. Chaplin's ministry that the Beverly people withdrew to form a church of their own, and by reason of their dismissal and from other causes, the parent church was left in a low condition, with but thirty-eight members. At the close of Mr. Chaplin's ministry the membership was seventy-four.

On the 21st of June, 1818, the next Sabbath after Mr. Chaplin left, Rev. James A. Boswell preached. Three or four weeks later a meeting was held to see if the society were so "satisfied with the gifts and tallants" of this preacher as to wish to have him supply longer. The meeting left it to the committee and the committee engaged him for three-quarters of a year. A well-known lady who was then a young Miss attending Miss Martin's "Dame's School" at New Mills, remembers being present at his installation, and that the new minister looked very young and small when the old divines were talking to him. Very likely any man would have felt somewhat diminutive on such an occasion.

On the 12th of February, 1819, the act was passed which has been hinted at, incorporating the First Baptist Society in Danvers. The original incorporators were, Andrew Batchelder, Martin Bates, Michael Barry, Moses Black, James Carr, Benjamin Chaplin, Thomas Cheever, Caleb Clarke, Parker Cross, John Doak, George Ellis, Solomon Emerson, Israel Endicot, George Ervin, Levi Fish, Benjamin Foster, William Francis, Elijah Fuller, Timothy Fuller, Daniel Goodhue, Allen Gould, Andrew Gould, Daniel Hardy, Stephen Haynes, Israel Hutchinson, Aaron Jacobs, Ebenezer Jacobs, Henry Johnson, Wm. Johnson, Hercules H. Josselyn, John Kenny, Benj. Kent, Benj. Kent, Jr., Jos. Kent, John Kent, Robert Lefavor, Nathaniel Mayhew, Samuel McIntire, Jonathan McIntire, John Mitchell, William Morris, Amos Osborn, Jeremiah Page, John Page, Benjamin Perry, Allen Peabody, Samuel Pinder, John Porter, Jonathan Proctor, Amos Putnam, Allen Putnam, Andrew Putnam, Jeremiah Putnam, John Putnam, Thomas Putnam, Parker Richardson, Briggs D. Reed, William Shillaber, Samuel Slater, Ephraim Smith, Joseph Stearns, Seth Stetson, Timothy Stevens, Asa Stickney, Thomas Symonds, William Trask, Daniel Upham, Benjamin Webb, Nathaniel Webb, Nathaniel Webb, Jr., Samuel Whipple, Stephen Whipple, Amaziah Whitney, Noah Whittier and Moses W. Wilson.

The first meeting under the new act was held at School-house, No. 2, on Monday, March 29, 1819, at six o'clock, P.M., to choose officers and levy a tax for support of the Gospel and other expenses for the ensuing year. Sixteen votes were cast for moderator, all for Thomas Putnam; twenty for clerk, all for Israel Hutchinson. Thomas Putnam, Moses Black and Benjamin Kent were elected assessors; Joseph Stearns, treasurer; Hercules H. Joslyn, collector. The first votes of money under the new order were in this wise: "Voted to Raise $400 for the Benefit of

the Gospel; Voted to Reconsider the Vote for $400; Voted to raise $350 Dollars for the Benefit of the Gospel; Voted to Reconsider the Vote for $350; Voted unanimously to Raise $300 for the support of the gospil in Said Society the present year." Evidently a case of a strong working minority. The sum finally voted was not, however, let it be hoped, the limit of the minister's salary. The old subscription was not abandoned, but the committee were directed to present it to those persons who did not "come under the incorporation act," or any others disposed to help.

In April it was voted without, dissent - his "gifts and tallants" had stood the test—to give Mr. Boswell a call to settle. On his acceptance, it was voted unanimously to give him an ordination on the second Wednesday of June, and that the Rev. Benjamin Wadsworth and the Rev. Samuel Walker be invited to attend. Ten dollars was subsequently voted to Benjamin Chaplin to defray expenses of singing on the occasion.

At the beginning of the next church year, March, 1820, there was not a unanimity in the invitation to Mr. Boswell to continue, and after careful consideration he asked to be dismissed. Dismission was granted, but the fact that both a letter of recommendation and—what was of much greater import, judging from the monetary votes of the society—a present of one hundred dollars, were given him, goes far to remove the idea that any ill-feeling existed between pastor and people.

Rev. Arthur Drinkwater preached more or less during the following spring and summer, and in August the society met to consider his gifts and talents, and requested him "to make them a visit and supply the pulpit for a certain term of time as the Society may think proper." In September advice was received from Dr. Chaplin, their old pastor, "respecting Mr. Drinkwater's character as being a good gospel minister," and he was invited to settle over the church. December 7, 1821, was appointed for installation.

In November, 1822, there were certain votes passed which must have had a meaning to somebody,—"Voted that there be a committee chosen to wait on the man who stole the wood from the Society. Voted that the man that stole the wood be allowed 24 hours to produce the man he bought the wood of, and if he does not he must take the course of the law."

In 1824 Abednego Rust and Nathaniel Tuttle were chosen "thything men to keep the boys still;" about the time of Mr. Drinkwater's installation William Johnson had been empowered to present to the grand jury any persons making any disturbance in or about the meeting-house on the Sabbath; in 1825 Daniel Hardy was deputed to take care of the boys in the galleries, and the tything men chosen by the town were requested "to take cognizance of the boys that throng the porch before divine Service, to the inconvenience of the females that are going into the meeting-house." Does any grandfather wink slyly to himself?

In January, 1826, Gideon Foster, Benjamin Kent and Briggs R. Read were commissioned to draft a bill and secure its passage by the Legislature, authorizing the taxation of pews; such a bill became a law in the following March. By its provisions a person must own, in order to vote thenceforth in the society meetings, at least one-half a floor pew or the whole of a gallery pew.

The year 1828 is conspicuous in the annals of the Baptist Society as the year of a new house of worship. Though the first house was but forty-five years old, suspicions were entertained as to its strength. An association of subscribers, afterwards proprietors, was formed to build a new house.

The proprietors of the new meeting-house, though composed, of course, of the leading Baptists, were separate and distinct from the society. They held their own meetings and kept their own records, Samuel P. Fowler acting as clerk. At their first meeting, in March, 1828, it was voted, "That if the proprietors of the old meeting-house are willing to dispose of their house and the land on which it stands, for a reasonable consideration we purchase it for the purpose of removing the house and erecting a new one in its place, to be governed by the present incorporation. The property in the house to belong to the subscribers to the new meeting-house. It is understood, in case we purchase the old meeting-house, a new one will be erected on its site within eighteen months." Eben Hunt, Arthur Drinkwater and Moses W. Wilson were appointed to see if the proprietors of the old meeting-house were willing to dispose of their house under such conditions.

The society held a series of meetings about the same time, at which the standing committee were empowered to sell the building "for four hundred dollars and nothing less, and more if they can get it," the purchasers to remove the same before the following June; and the "subscribers" were permitted to erect a new meeting-house on the old lot for the use of the church and society, to be governed by the act of incorporation already in force.

That old church is still in existence. It was bought by John A. Learoyd and removed to the Plains, not far from Lindall Hill, where its timbers grew, and has ever since been used as a currier-shop. It was thought, as has been said, old and unsafe when sold, but as Mr. Rice, with characteristic humor, remarks, "it has upon it at the present time a certain air of breadth and settlement in configuration of such a sort that the eye of the beholder may not readily discern to what end it should ever fall down."

The new building committee were Samuel Fowler, Arthur Drinkwater, Daniel Hardy, Briggs R. Reed, and Ebenezer Hunt. The chairman was directed, among other things, to ascertain whether any compensation could be obtained for the land belonging to

the meeting-house lot, but used as a highway since the widening of the road in 1802, and he found that the society had slept too long on their rights. The proprietors held meetings through the summer and fall, and from time to time instalments of subscriptions were paid in. In December, 1828, they wished to know whether their subscription paper was an instrument sufficiently binding to sue upon for non-payment, and Messrs. Fowler, Hunt and Reed were sent to obtain advice from Rufus Choate, then at South Parish, and 'Squire Benj. Merrill. The advice was that the paper would hold.

On the 17th of March, 1829, the house was finished, and the committee were directed to "inform the Baptist Society at their annual meeting (when it is understood that the house will have been accepted) that the house is ready for their use, and that they be desired to make arrangements for the opening of the house with appropriate religious services."

May 1st, John Porter, Benj. Kent and Benj. Porter were chosen to arrange for dedication. May 25th Mr. Kent and Daniel Hardy were authorized to sell the pews in the new church at public auction by bidding for choice over and above the appraisal, the appraisal to cover the cost of the house; and they were also directed "to obtain a legal title to the land under a part and adjoining said meeting-house of the family of the late Captain Thomas Putnam, deceased." A summary statement of the cost of the church is this:

E. Felt,		$135.00
Nathaniel Galucia,		110.80
E. Perry,		20.63
Jona. Perry,		20.00
Israel Endicott,		58.24
Ebenezer Hunt,		2.00
Edmund Needham,		18.90
M. Pulsifer,		100.00
Sam'l Fowler,		44.27
S. P. Fowler,		3.00
Henry L. Gould,		21.70
M. Wilson, W. Francis, J. Ross,	Carpenters,	$4290.60
Total,		$4825.14

At this time when the people moved out of the old house into the new, the relations of pastor and people and of the people to one another should have been particularly harmonious. Mr. Drinkwater closed his pastorate June 26, 1829. During the last year of his service some very unpleasant differences of opinion arose in the society which resulted in the organization of the Universalist Society, weakening not inconsiderably the society in which the division occurred. Universalism had its beginnings in Danvers much earlier than this, as will hereafter appear. A hint at the feeling which existed in 1829 may be found in a vote that the committee be instructed "to inquire into the story that has gone abroad that the Unitarians want to get the new meeting-house."

Mr. Drinkwater is remembered by certain old people as one of the sort of men that Cæsar liked to have about him, not a bit "lean and hungry." He was of a light, florid complexion, of talents not rising high above the average; he made many friends outside of his own church.

In the spring of 1830 the Rev. James Barnabee was by unanimous vote invited to fill the vacant pulpit. He is remembered by old people as a man with a very loud voice. Mr. Barnabee's year commenced on the first of May, and six hundred dollars was voted for his support and incidental charges. His pastorate was short, ending in May, 1832, but very eventful; soon after he came the great revival all through the churches was felt here with so great effect that the membership was increased from ninety-three to one hundred and thirty-nine. At the old church, Dr. Braman's, there were added in the same period one hundred and twelve members, increasing the membership from about one hundred, in 1828, to one hundred and ninety-five in 1833.

July 23, 1832, the society united with the church in giving a call to the Rev. John Holroyd, at a salary of five hundred dollars for the first year. Five years later, November 8, 1837, Mr. Holroyd died while at Providence, R. I.,—the only instance of a vacancy in the pastorate caused by death. During his labors the membership of the church reached its highest limit—one hundred and fifty-five. He was about sixty years old at his death; a quiet, venerable appearing man, greatly beloved and lamented by all who knew him. He left a widow, but no children; she was the daughter of Dr. Benedict, of Providence, a somewhat noted Baptist preacher and writer.

May 26, 1838, Rev. E. W. Dickinson accepted a call of the church and society, at a salary of six hundred dollars. His stay was short. He resigned in October of the next year; in his letter of resignation he wrote: "The causes which lead to this step, it is presumed are already known, and their capitulation at this time is not needed. The subject has long been before our minds, and although the separation, to me at least, is painful, still the feelings natural to such an event are less poignant than if it had been sudden."

For more than a year after Mr. Dickinson's resignation there was no settled pastor.

Rev. J. Humphrey Avery supplied the pulpit some of the time, and in January, 1841, he was invited to become settled. In response he wrote that he would come on the following conditions:

"That I receive the ninety dollars now due for supplying your pulpit, before the close of the present week; that my salary commence the first day of February; that I have seven hundred dollars per annum, to be paid quarterly; that I have two Sabbaths during the year to dispose of as I may think fit; that the church and society have the right to dismiss me at any time by giving me three months notice; that duplicates of this contract be signed by the committee of the church and society and myself, in presence of competent witnesses; that one of the duplicates be left with the clerk of the church or the clerk of the society and the other with me. Should any apology be deemed proper, brethren, for the formality of this statement, I have only to say that in mere business transactions I have but one method"

The business men at New Mills were evidently not displeased with a business-like pastor; the conditions were accepted. After seven or eight months he addressed another letter to the committee in equally plain terms, giving them the choice of accepting his resignation February 1, 1842, or of making his salary six hundred dollars after that date and, in addition, furnishing him "with a good room near the meeting-house, to which he might remove his library," and of giving him a regular installation as soon as might be convenient. And the terms of the latter alternative were promptly accepted. Mr. Avery had been a Congregationalist.

On the 5th of July, 1843, the society voted unanimously to concur with the church in giving the Rev. Joseph W. Eaton a call, at a salary of five hundred dollars for the first year. His letter of acceptance is dated July 17, 1843. The next spring he wrote:

"The satisfaction, which you have been pleased to express with my poor services for the past year has been particularly grateful to my feelings. . . . The union which I am informed pervades your body gives me reason to hope that my labors among you may yet be useful, and so long as this state of things continues I shall be encouraged to exert myself for your spiritual benefit."

But times were hard for the church and society during Mr. Eaton's pastorate. Among the founders of the church, it will be remembered, none were more prominent than Gideon Foster and certain other South Parish men, and for a number of years the New Mills Church was supported by all people of that denomination, far and wide in this vicinity. But we have seen how, in 1801, the Beverly people withdrew to form a church of their own; then, in 1804, the First Baptist Church of Salem was established, and, doubtless, a number of South Parish people who found themselves more conveniently situated to Salem than to New Mills, at once associated themselves with the Salem Church. But in the meantime there had been a growing desire among those parishioners of the New Mills Church who lived in the southern part of the town to have a church of their own. They began to hold meetings in Armory Hall in 1843, settled a minister and built a chapel that same year. This was about the beginning of Mr. Eaton's pastorate at New Mills, during which thirteen of his church-members were dismissed to join the new church. These dismissals, though not great in number, came at a time when the parent church could ill afford any loss of strength. But a much more serious element of disturbance was the storm of the anti-slavery movement which centered on the old church and struck hard. An account of the "Come-outers" appears elsewhere. About the only mention of anti-slavery which appears on the society's records are these votes:

April 4, 1839. "Voted that the Lectors on Pees, Temperance and antislavery be free of expense, after having the Concent of the Standing Committee.

April 21, 1840. "Voted it be left with the Standing Committee whether there shall be lectures in the meeting house on the subject of slavery the ensuing year."

It was well understood that Mr. Eaton was to have six hundred dollars after the first year, but it was not easy to raise the money. They asked him to take five hundred dollars. "On listening," he replied, "to the description you gave me of the financial concerns of the society, I stated that I was at a loss to know exactly what my circumstances were, but promised that if I could do anything to help to extricate the society from its embarrassments, I would cheerfully do it. On looking over my accounts, however, I find myself much more largely indebted to others than I supposed myself to be, and that my salary has been barely sufficient to enable me to meet my expenses. I do not see how they can be reduced. The idea of being in debt without having the means to pay it, is to me distressing, both from the sinfulness of the thing and from its influence on the cause of religion. I have nothing to depend upon for a support but the compensation I receive for my services, and must look therefore to the people whom I serve for the means of a comfortable maintenance. Still, I cannot endure the thought of being a burden to the society; hence, hoping we may have health and strength, considering the dull state of business, and desirous of affording the society what relief I can, I will try, though I know not how I shall succeed, to do this year with five hundred and fifty dollars."

To add to the difficulty of the situation, on the morning of September 6, 1847, the church and vestry were destroyed by fire, and there was no insurance. An adjoining dwelling, owned by Aaron Eveleth, was burned at the same time.

The standing committee pluckily issued a warrant before the close of the day, calling upon the society to take action as to building a new house. In one week from the date of the warrant, the shortest time allowable, the society met and voted "that we feel it our duty to make an effort to erect a new house in place of the one destroyed by fire," and appointed twelve men to circulate a subscription paper for the purpose,—Daniel Goodhue, Jr., Tristram Woodbury, Hiram Preston, David H. Caldwell, William Putnam, Henry Johnson, Benj. Porter, Moses Black, Rev. J. W. Eaton, Abijah Porter, Peter Waitt and Jacob F. Perry. Both the Universalist Society and the new society at the Plains promptly tendered the use of their churches to the Baptists. Arrangements were made with the former.

On the 20th of September, Benjamin Porter, Moses Black and David H. Caldwell were instructed "to select such a model of a house as they think will best suit the society."

On the 18th of October a building committee were chosen to carry out the vote of its society to rebuild,—Benjamin Porter, David H. Caldwell, Moses Black, Henry Johnson and Josiah Ross. The third meeting-house of the society was erected within the next year and is the one now in use. The present church bell was then purchased by certain "proprietors," and was hung in the tower on the following conditions:

"That the bell be rung by the sexton of the Baptist Society on Sundays, the Universalist Society paying one-half the expense; that the bell be rung at any other time by either Society, not interfering with our religious services, by each paying their own sexton; the door to be locked —one Key to be kept by the sexton, one to the care of the Fire Department. The remains of the bell, if ever burned, to ge to the proprietors of the bell. The bell to be hung on a good substantial bell frame secured to the deck."

The following clipping from an old newspaper is interesting in this connection:

NOTICE.

The Ladies of the First Baptist Society in Danvers will give a Tea Party on Wednesday, Oct. 4th, in Citizens' Hall, New Mills, to aid in furnishing the new house of worship, now erected on the site of the one destroyed by fire last year. Good music will be secured for the occasion, etc., etc.

On the 23d of April, 1849, Mr. Eaton addressed to the society a letter of resignation. Like his other communications it is full of Christian manliness and forbearance; and it gives an insight into the state of things which, by reason of circumstances beyond his control, made his pastorate not a bed of roses. "Just before your former meeting-house burnt, I was led to canvass the question whether I ought not to resign my office, but after the occurrence of that event I concluded it was my duty at any rate to remain with you and aid you in every way in my power until another edifice should be erected." It was after the completion of the new church that he resigned. In explanation he wrote: "I do this not because as great an amount of success has not been realized as could have been anticipated, considering the distracted state of things when I came among you, the adverse influences with which I have had to contend, the disaster you experienced in the burning of your meeting-house, the many removals of whole families from town, the deaths that have occurred among you, some of whom have been your prominent men, the formation of two new societies at the Plains, the excitements of different kinds that have existed in the place, and the low state of religion. If I mistake not, this society is in a far better condition than any one, acquainted with the facts in the case, could reasonably expect it to be in. I take this step not because, could a change be effected which might easily be done, I could not labor on with zeal and hope; but because of the want of that spirit, energy and co-operation, which characterizes new enterprises; which allows nothing to be undone which should be done, and which is essential to success."

In March, 1850, a call was extended to Rev. Aaron W. Chaffin. This was his first pastorate, and he remained here fifteen years, an average preacher and an excellent pastor, greatly beloved not only by his own people but by his fellow-citizens generally, for he took great interest in all that pertained to the good of the town, and especially in the schools. Genial, kind, witty, "everybody liked him." He accepted a call to Manchester, N. H., died at Lynn in 1874, and was buried here in Walnut Grove Cemetery.

Rev. Foster Henry succeeded Mr. Chaffin, and occupied the pulpit from December 5, 1862, to May 1, 1865. Then followed Rev. Charles H. Holbrook, from November 14, 1865, to September 2, 1870; Rev. J. A. Goodhue, from November 22, 1870, to May 1, 1872; Rev. G. W. McCullough, from June 20, 1873, to April 1, 1876; Rev. Lucien Drury, from August 3, 1877, to April 29, 1883; Rev. Gideon Cole, from July 1, 1884, to the present time.

These notes have treated chiefly of the Society. The Baptist Church was organized July, 1793, with thirty-six members. The first deacons were Eleazer Wallis and Israel Porter. Benjamin Kent was appointed 1823; Hercules Joselyn, 1832; John Hood, 1835; Parker Brown, 1838; Ichabod Sawyer, 1839; Abijah Porter, 1845; Henry Johnson, 1855; James Felton, 1855; Charles H. Whipple, 1855; Monroe B. Brigham, 1859; Francis Bowen, 1874; Wm. A. Jacobs, 1880. Deacons Whipple and Jacobs are the present incumbents.

The committees appointed "to supply preaching" in the earlier years of the society have already been given. They were the precursors of the regular standing committees. A complete list of the latter cannot be given for lack of space, but the names which appear at the beginning of each decade of this century will give some idea of the prominent supporters of the society from time to time:

1800. Deacon I. Porter.	1840. Daniel Hardy.
Nathaniel Prince.	Hiram Preston.
Nicholas Dodge.	1850. Benj. Porter.
Wm. Trask.	James Holt.
Amos Sawyer.	Henry Johnson.
1810. Benj. Porter, Jr.	1860. John Burns
Benj. Kent.	M. B. Brigham.
Richard Elliot.	Elnathan Dodge.
L. Leonard.	1870. Wm. Putnam.
Wm. Trask.	M. B. Brigham.
1820. Benj. Kent.	Wm. A. Jacobs.
Wm. Trask.	1880. C. H. Whipple.
Stephen Whipple.	W. A. Jacobs.
1830. Daniel Hardy.	Geo. H. Perkins.
Jacob F. Perry.	1887. C. H. Whipple.
John Porter.	W. A. Jacobs.
1840. Benj. Porter.	Solomon Fuller.

The first clerk of the society, chosen November 26, 1781, was Dr. Nathaniel Gott, but he did not serve through the successive adjournments of the first meeting, and Jonathan Sawyer, chosen in his place, held the office about five years, until 1786, when Nathaniel Fowler's name appears. Ebenezer Dale was clerk in 1789, Israel Porter in 1790. On April 5, 1792, Israel Hutchinson, Jr., was chosen, and after thirty years of continuous service, his neatly kept records end with the oath administered by him to his successor, Stephen Whipple, April 17, 1821.

Stephen Whipple served but one year.

Hercules H. Josselyn was chosen at the annual meeting of 1822, and he served till April, 1841, nineteen years, when it was voted "that the Thanks of this Society be presented to Hercules Josselyn for his long and faithful services as Clerk of the Society."

Parker B. Francis held the office to April 1843:

Hiram Preston, 1843–45; Charles E. Smith, 1845–53; Maurice C. Oby, 1853–58; Isaac N. Roberts, 1858–62; M. H. Dorman, 1862–64; Josiah Ross, 1864–75; William H. Stetson, 1875–80; Charles A. Gentlee, 1880, to the present, 1887.

Last April, 1887, the Sunday-school observed its sixty-ninth anniversary. The original records, if there were any, are not to be found. John Hood, Peter Waitt and Captain Benjamin Porter were superintendents before 1854, since which time, thirty-three years, Deacon Charles H. Whipple, has been in continuous service. There are now one hundred and sixty connected with the school.

January 26, 1879, the standing committee were instructed "to inquire into the cost of buying the land adjoining that of the society on High Street, and of building thereon such a building as the Society needs." This vote was the beginning of the new chapel which was dedicated this spring, 1887.

"Among the favorable causes under the blessing of God," these were Mr. Chaffin's words thirty years ago, "which have conspired to keep this somewhat ancient church in existence, we should not fail to notice the general unanimity of its members and their steadfastness in sound doctrine and wholesome discipline. Besides, there never has been a time when there have not been some noble, self-denying brethren and sisters whose faith in the darkest hour faltered not. In the early, as well as the later history of this church, especially will the names of Porter, Kent, Richardson, Whitney and Hardy, with others of kindred spirit, now at rest in Heaven, be held in long and sacred remembrance. While living they were known in the churches, and, though dead, their deeds live."

Universalist.—The pioneer of Universalism in Danvers was Edmund Putnam. He was born here in 1724, moved to Topsfield in early life, returned when about thirty-five, and occupied the well-preserved old house off Locust Street, afterwards the home of his distinguished grandson, Elias Putnam, and at present owned by Augustus Fowler. Edmund Putnam was for twenty-three years, from 1762, a deacon of the old Church. Probably his changed views of theology led to his resignation in 1785. Dr. Nichols' centennial poem contains this:

> "Still people would think, read their Bibles,
> Embrace
> Other doctrines than those we have named;
> Deacon Edmund, with new-fangled views of
> God's grace,
> Universal salvation proclaimed."

An item in the records of the old church is significant in this connection,—"In 1788 rates were abated of Samuel Cheever, Jer. Hutchinson, James Smith, John Swinerton, Henry Putnam, Nath'l Webb, Wm. Gifford, and Mrs. Eunice Hutchinson, because they entertained religious sentiments differing from those professed by the church." Though, as has been seen, this was about the time the Baptists organized their church, some who were thus "differing" are known to have been early Universalists.

It was in the little community at Putnamville—Deacon Putnam's neighborhood—that the new ideas were most thought about and talked about, and where they first assumed organic form.

Rev. Henry P. Forbes delivered a historical address of the society on the occasion of its fiftieth anniversary, October 19, 1879, which is here liberally used in connection with the series of historical letters written by Rev. Dr. Alfred P. Putnam, a great-grandson of Deacon Edmund. Mr. Forbes has thus well and concisely spoken of those families in Putnamville in which Universalism was especially fostered:

"In true Danvers fashion, they were nearly all related to each other. Israel Putnam, 2d (Dea. Edmund's son), married Anna, sister of Elias Endicott, Jr. Zorobbabel Porter married Mary, another sister. Elias himself, when a young man, worked at the currier's trade in Gloucester, where John Murray was settled over the First Universalist Society organized in America. He returned to Danvers, and, having married, came to live in the house where dwelt his sister Anna. This family of families—Endicotts, Porters, Putnams—seems to have been of one mind in religious matters. They were all persons of character and influence, and chiefly from them came the impetus toward the formation of an Universalist Society. But they were not alone. The Browns, the Richardsons, the Bakers, and Woodburys of Wenham, with various others, had come to be more or less earnest believers. In the year 1815 the fluid sentiment began to crystalize into an organization. On the 22d of April a company of them assembled, organized themselves into a society, and drew up a *Declaration of Principles*."

At this first meeting, Israel Putnam, 2d, was chosen moderator and treasurer; Colonel Warren Porter, clerk; John Baker, Joseph and Zorobbabel Porter, committee. The committe were instructed "to inquire after a minister as soon as funds can be obtained to pay him, and invite any suitable person that may be willing to preach." The committee found a very suitable person in Rev. Hosea Ballou, who came up to preach occasionally in the little school-house and gave the new movement the impetus of his powerful help. For a number of years there was slow and quiet progress, the number of members recorded in 1823 being thirty-six; in 1825, forty-four. Besides Mr. Ballou many other ministers came to preach in the school-house, among others Rev. Charles Hudson, who, at the semi-centennial was living, in his eighty-fourth year, at Lexington, Mass.

The last recorded meeting of the society at Putnamville was May 28, 1827. "With this, the ecclesi-

astical stream sinks from the ledges of Blind-hole into the sands of the Plain, and working its way southward bubbles up at the New Mills." This latter place, the thriving commercial centre of quite an extensive territory, by all odds the liveliest portion of the town, having but one church, and that of rigid tenets, seems to have been good ground for the larger growth of Universalism. It has been shown from the records of the Baptist Society how about this time defections were occurring, and how in 1829 a considerable number of Baptists formally withdrew. This withdrawal marked the occasion of the formation of the Danvers Universal Society, which was brought about by a simple agreement of association in the handwriting of Dr. Ebenezer Hunt, dated October 15, 1829, and signed by William Francis, Hathorne Porter, Josiah Gray, John Ross, Moses W. Wilson, Nathaniel Boardman, Joshua Silvester, B. C. Brickett, William E. Kimball, Daniel Woodman, Ebenezer Hunt, Benjamin Potter, Isaac Caldwell, William Rogers. A petition was immediately issued to Dr. George Osgood, justice of the peace, and by him a warrant was issued for a first meeting for the legal establishment of a new religious society. Upon this petition are the additional names of John Hines, Joseph Porter, Sylvanus Dodge and Simeon Pendar. These eighteen men are regarded as the charter members of the present society; five were living at the semi-centennial, 1879, and four were present, but today but one of all the number is surviving, Joshua Silvester. (Since writing, he, too, has passed away).

For some months efforts were made to form a union with certain early Unitarians at New Mills, of whom Capt. Jeremiah Page, Jonas Warren and Maj. Moses Black were leaders. A coalition committee were appointed to agree on a name, but no report was ever made, and March 8, 1830, these efforts seem to have been acknowledged fruitless, and it was voted "that this society be called the First Universalist Society of Danvers."

The first standing committee, William Francis, Elisha Pratt and Joseph Porter, were at once instructed to consider the expediency of hiring the old Baptist meeting-house, which had been removed in 1828, as has been noticed in the sketch of the Baptist Society, to make room for a new house on the original site. The committee hired the old house at forty-five dollars for a year. No clergyman was yet settled, and preaching was irregular; but the society grew, there being one hundred and seventeen males at the beginning of the next year. Though a vote was in the meantime taken "that the contemplated meeting-house be located at or near the Plains so called," the old house was hired again, but the contract was made not without bitterness. Major Black and John Page now owned 11-16ths of the building, and were willing enough to let their part at forty-five dollars, but Deacons Kent and Hardy, of the Baptist Church, owners of the other 5-16ths, charged one hundred dollars for their share. Evidently the latter did not wish the building used by the society at all, and one of them made some remark about wishing to feed pigs in his part, with, it is alleged, a tinge of comparison not altogether complimentary to the Universalists. The society simply took the 11-16ths, and fenced off the remainder. It is not difficult to imagine the feeling of which this little episode is but a hint. It could not be otherwise. Not even Baptist human nature could look with equanimity on what, from their standpoint, was an upstart and heretical body, which, having sapped the strength of the old church by withdrawing a considerable number of its members, had the audacity to set up in their old building and, within ear-shot of their sterner doctrine, to utter the alluring promise of universal salvation.

The first regular pastor of the new society was Rev. F. Hodson, who remained from the spring of 1831 to June of the following year. During this time the old school-house in Putnamville was occasionally used for services, as were also the school-houses at the Centre and at the toll-gate.

The settled intent of the Universalists to have a church of their own came to a head in September, 1832. Forty-eight shares at fifty dollars were taken in a new house "to be erected between Berry's tavern and the Baptist meeting-house," and the shareholders became and remained a separate, corporate body until 1847, when they merged by mutual vote with the society. A building committee, Nath'l Boardman, J. Silvester, Hathorne Porter and Joseph Porter, "fixed on the piece owned by Mr. Israel Endicott as the most eligible," and this lot was purchased. Moses W. Wilson contracted October 29, 1832, to build a house fifty-six by forty-two, twenty-two feet posts, for twenty-five hundred dollars. With alterations and additions the total cost reached thirty-one hundred dollars. The building was dedicated Friday, June 28, 1833. Rev. Hosea Ballou, of Boston, made the dedicatory prayer; Rev. Hosea Ballou, 2d, of Roxbury, delivered the sermon; Revs. L. Willis, of Salem, and S. Streeter, of Boston, also old helpers in the society's infancy, took other parts. An original hymn by Dr. Hunt was sung, beginning

"Eternal Source of Light and Love,
Of all we are or hope to be,
Dwelling in majesty above
We dedicate this house to Thee."

Rev. D. D. Smith was at this time settled over the society, though living in Boston. There were one hundred and thirty-one male members, a number which has since remained as high-water mark. Soon after the dedication of the church, Dr. Braman, from the citadel of his pulpit, preached a strong sermon against Universalism and the danger of its incursions, out of which grew the memorable debate between Dr. Braman and Dr. Whittemore, November 6, 1833, mentioned elsewhere, in which, of course, Danvers

Universalists lent their champion decided aid and comfort.

Rev. H. Knapp was installed as pastor of the society, December 20, 1833, and remained until August 16, 1836; he died in Cambridge in 1878, aged sixty-seven. Rev. S. Brimblecom, of Westbrook, Me., succeeded him here and remained until 1840; he was an earnest anti-slavery man, was orator of the day, July 4, 1837, at a meeting of the Danvers Anti-slavery Society, and president of the Young Men's Anti-slavery Society. He died in Haverhill, 1879, in his eighty-first year. Soon after his resignation, on motion of Dr. Hunt, it was resolved that the committee procure, if practicable, the services of laymen in conducting Sabbath worship; accordingly Moses Black, Jr., Joseph Merrill, John Hines, Dr. Hunt, and perhaps others officiated as occasion required. In July, 1840, Rev. A. A. Davis, then recently from Ohio, accepted a call and was settled at a salary of six hundred dollars. He gave an impetus to all departments of the society's work, and in his pastorate the church was organized. The church was first publicly recognized October 21, 1840; it numbered about sixty members. John Hines was chosen clerk; M. Bodge and Eben Putnam, deacons. Mr. Davis' pastorate was brief, closing in October, 1841, when he went to Jamaica for his health, but it was especially important, happening in the height of the anti-slavery storm which burst upon the community and the churches at this period. Something is said of anti-slavery troubles elsewhere. Rev. D. P. Livermore supplied during the following winter; and in the spring of 1843, Rev. S. Bulkley, of New Market, N. H., was chosen pastor. Rev. J. W. Hanson succeeded him in 1846. Mr. Hanson was a young man of active mind, a ready debater, inquiring and critical. Though here but two years, he has left a memorial behind him in Hanson's "History of Danvers," a book accustomed to be spoken of as containing many inaccuracies, but as the work of a stranger, on short preparation and with scarcely any previously printed material to rely on, it is remarkable that the book is as valuable as it is. Mr. Hanson resigned in 1848, went to Norridgewock, then to Gardiner, Me., was editor of *Augusta Gospel Banner* six years, then settled at Haverhill, and was chaplain of the Sixth Massachusetts Regiment; removed to Dubuque, Iowa, and in 1870 to Chicago, where, in 1879, he was living, and had then been D.D. for three years, editor of the *New Covenant* for nine years, and author or editor of some thirteen volumes.

The next pastor here was Rev. J. W. Putnam, who came in 1849, a pupil of Rev. Dr. Sawyer, at Clinton, N. Y., and remained in this his only pastorate till his lamented death, November 4, 1864. He left a widow and two children, a daughter and a son, all living. Throughout his pastorate "he grew in mental stature and in favor among the people" to the end. His townsmen honored him, his people loved him. He would not leave his society; his parish would not let him go. In the noon of his manhood they gave him to the messenger from whose call there is no appeal. As a scholar, thinker, writer, speaker, pastor, he ranked high in his profession.

It was during Mr. Putnam's pastorate that, in 1858, it was decided that the "new church" was no longer new,—in fact so old that another building was demanded. There was not, at first at least, a unanimous concurrence in this opinion, but after several meetings it was decided to build nearer the Plains, which had by this time usurped the former distinction of New Mills as being the principal village of the town. A building committee was chosen, consisting of Joshua Silvester, J. W. Ropes, W. J. C. Kenney, George Porter and Moses Black, Jr. A lot of land was purchased of Eben G. Berry, and the present house was erected under a contract with Josiah Ross for four thousand three hundred and thirty-seven dollars. The church was completed in July, 1859, and was dedicated August 18th. From many of the surrounding heights and from many of the approaches to the town, the twin Gothic towers of the Universalist Church present one of the most prominent and picturesque views of a landscape beautiful in many respects. It is one of the many monuments of Joshua Silvester. The society formally tendered him their thanks "for the energy and assiduity with which he has labored in this work,—to him more than any one else, perhaps more than all else combined, do we owe the valuable suggestions and services resulting in this beautiful edifice."

The basement of the church was soon fitted up as Gothic Hall, and until the day of the Peabody Institute was the best hall in town and much used for lectures, entertainments, and for the graduating exercises of the High School.

The society bid farewell to the old meeting-house, July 31, 1859, which was then sold at auction for twenty-five hundred dollars, and soon was converted to the use of the new Catholic Church, in whose hands, much enlarged and remodeled, it still remains.

The vacancy in the pastorate caused by the death of Mr. Putnam was filled by Rev. H. C. Delong, of Binghamton, N. Y., who served from 1865 three years, and was succeeded by Rev. G. J. Sanger, who, as faithful pastor and eloquent preacher for six years and business man for several more, was one of our best known and worthiest citizens, upon whom his fellow-citizens bestowed political honors with a generous hand. A few years ago he decided to return to the ministry, and accepted a call to Essex. Rev. Henry P. Forbes was installed November 22, 1875,—a man of scholarly tastes and fine literary ability, a pastor much loved and respected, and a citizen especially useful on the school committee. He resigned after five years to accept a professorship in the St. Lawrence University, Canton, N. Y. Rev. F. A. Dillingham, his successor, was installed in the spring

of 1881, and remained until February, 1885, when he in turn was succeeded by Rev. Winfield S. Williams, whose pastorate extended from June, 1885, to October, 1886. The church is at present (June, 1887) without a settled pastor. (July 5th, a call was extended to Rev. C. B. Lynn, of Boston, accepted.)

In the old days of the Putnamville school-house, it is said that Abijah Richardson sustained the burden of worship in song, singing four parts at once. A permanent choir was organized after the society built a church of their own, of which William Black was chorister. For twenty years he did not miss the preaching service, and to his own and his brother Moses' family the society were continually indebted for important musical services. Among the earlier singers were Henry and Augustus Fowler, Philip Smith, W. J. C. Kenney, Moses Black, Jr., Mrs. Benjamin Osgood, Mrs. Sawyer and Louisa Hines. Later, Mrs. S. E. Howe led the soprano for twenty years. The organ was purchased some time in the forties, over which Miss Hattie Black first presided. Before that, was the customary church orchestra, in which Mr. H. Dwinell played the violin; Aaron Putnam, viol; J. Sawyer, clarionet; assisted sometimes by W. J. Kenney and M. Black, Jr., on the clarionet and viol.

The Sunday-school was organized in 1830. Among the earlier superintendents were I. W. Andrews, Aaron Eveleth, Henry Fowler, Edwin F. Putnam and Moses Black, Jr. In 1840 there were eighty-eight members, including nineteen teachers. Among the later superintendents were John Hines, William E. Putnam, William Rankin, Andrew W. Trask, Edward Tyler, John H. Elliott, Ezra D. Hines, Rev. George J. Sanger, and, at present, Howard R. Burrington. The school now numbers about one hundred and fifty. In December, 1880, a successful effort was made to raise a debt of two thousand five hundred dollars against the society, and the event was celebrated by a supper early in January.

Maple Street Church.—On the 15th day of March, 1844, Nathaniel Silvester, Moses J. Currier, Henry T. Ropes, Benjamin Henderson, Aaron Bateman, Gustavus Putnam, represented to George Osgood, a justice of the peace, that they were about to form themselves into a religious society for the worship of Almighty God, and requested him to issue a warrant for the calling of a meeting to be holden at the school-house on Danvers Plains on Monday evening, March 25th, to organize such a society under the name of the Third Orthodox Congregational Society of Danvers. Dr. Osgood issued his warrant accordingly to Nathaniel Sylvester to warn a meeting according to the terms of the petition. At this meeting Henry T. Ropes was chosen the first clerk of the society; Winthrop Andrews was chosen moderator; Moses J. Currier collector; Benjamin Turner, Samuel Brown, Nathaniel Silvester were the first parish committee; George Osgood, Henry T. Ropes, and Benjamin Turner were appointed committee on by-laws; Nathaniel Silvester, Samuel Brown, and Henry T. Ropes, to take into consideration a more suitable place of worship; M. J. Currier, W. Andrews and John A. Learoyd, to solicit subscriptions for preaching.

At the adjournment of this first meeting, by-laws were presented and accepted; the house committee reported in favor of a subscription in shares of one hundred dollars each, the cost not to exceed four thousand dollars; the same committee were instructed to see what land could be obtained in several parts of the plains; Rev. Mr. Thayer was employed to preach for six months at seven dollars per day; Watts' Select Hymn Book was adopted; John A. Learoyd was "authorized to procure a Bass Vial." At a further adjournment a building committee of eight were chosen, as follows: Samuel Putnam, John A. Learoyd, Henry T. Ropes, Benjamin Turner, Joseph Adams, Samuel Brown, Daniel Richards, Samuel P. Fowler.

April 29th it was decided to purchase the lot of land offered by Ezra Batchelder, "8 Rood front by 11½ Roods deep, for $800." The committee was instructed to build a basement story of rough granite of suitable dimensions for a hall. The material subsequently suggested the name, Granite Hall. Rev. Loren Thayer was employed "to supply the desk until the meeting-house is completed." Benjamin Turner, Gustavus Putnam and Moses J. Currier took into consideration the expediency of organizing a choir of singers. Daniel Richards and Mr. Currier were instructed to purchase a bell not to exceed twelve hundred pounds. The new house was dedicated Wednesday, January 22, 1845, Mr. Thayer preaching the dedication sermon. This year fifty dollars was paid Parker B. Francis for singing, and seventeen dollars was "paid Mr. Stanley for a flute;" later the society purchased "the Bass Vial of J. A. Learoyd" for $30.75. Moses Putnam was thanked for the handsome sofa and chairs he had furnished the society, as were also the ladies for carpeting the house. The first person called to settle as minister was Rev. F. A. Barton, of Chicopee Falls, who declined on account of ill health. Rev. Richard Tolman, of Dorchester, accepted a call, and was ordained September 17, 1845, the first pastor of the new church and society,—salary, six hundred dollars for the first year, afterwards seven hundred dollars. The ordination sermon was preached by Rev. E. N. Kirk. Mr. Tolman remained until November, 1848. On April 3, 1849, this letter was sent to Rev. James Fletcher, of Acton, then at Andover Theological Seminary:

"DEAR SIR: We, the undersigned, as a committee in behalf of the Third Cong. Church and Society in Danvers hereby extend to you an invitation to become our pastor and teacher. The salary which the society offer you is six hundred dollars.

SAML. P. FOWLER, BENJ. TURNER, } *Com. of Church.*
FRED'K HOW, M. W. PUTNAM, } *Com. of the Society.*"

Mr. Fletcher accepted and was ordained June 20, 1849, to a pastorship which lasted nearly fifteen years.

The expense of the new church was about eight thousand dollars, for more than half of which sum indebtedness had been incurred. Strenuous efforts were made to liquidate this debt, and, February 1, 1847, eighteen men entered into a written obligation to contribute, by way of loan or advancement, in four annual payments a total of four thousand two hundred and eighty dollars; of this sum Moses Putnam subscribed eighteen hundred dollars, his brother Samuel five hundred and twenty dollars, Nathan Tapley and Jesse Putnam each three hundred dollars. The other names which appear in autograph in the records are Elbridge Trask, Joseph S. Black, Moses W. Putnam, Samuel P. Fowler, Frederick How, F. Howes, Eben G. Berry, Richard Tolman, Daniel Richards, Stephen Granville, Rebeckah Perry, James M. Perry, John A. Learoyd, Nathaniel Silvester. In May, 1850, but seven hundred dollars of the debt remained, and "whereas Moses Putnam, Esquire, has generously offered to pay the sum of $250," measures were taken to meet the balance. Upon the very next leaf to that which records this happy state of things appears this memorandum of Deacon Fowler's:

"Burning of the Meeting-House.

"On the night of July 10th, 1850, the meeting-house of the Third Cong. Society was destroyed by fire. It broke out in the entry of the Hall about 11 o'clock, and was the work of an incendiary. It was insured at two mutual offices in Salem for the sum of $6,000.

"The house was completely destroyed, but the walls of the basement story were left standing, and by many persons supposed to be not much injured. The sheds and fences around the house are but little injured, in consequence of there being but little wind at the time of the fire. The House, with its furniture, Church plate, and Sabbath-school library, was consumed.

"The Selectmen of the Town have offered a reward of 500 dollars for the detection of the sacrilegious villian who burnt our beautiful House and laid waste our pleasant things. The Sabbath evening after the fire, Wm. Duffee, a young man living on the Plains, was, on the complaint of Geo. Perkins, arrested and lodged in Salem jail, being accused of setting fire to the Meeting-House. He was carried before justice Rantoul, of Beverly, and, pleading guilty of the charge, he was sent to the Salem jail to await his trial, Perkins being also sent with him as a witness. Both effected their escape in November following. Duffee was retaken, convicted and sentenced to the *State Prison for life*. Perkins who was suspected as an accomplice with Duffee in the burning of the house, some weeks after returned to Danvers, gave himself up, was carried back to jail, and, no one appearing against him, at the the term of court following he was discharged.

"On Sunday, July 14th, public worship was held by the Society at the Free Chapel, on the Plains, where an appropriate and interesting discourse was delivered by our pastor. The text was from the 14th chapter of Exodus, 15th verse, "And the Lord said unto Moses, Wherefore criest thou unto me? Speak unto the children of Israel, *that they go forward*."

"In this discourse our Pastor, in a forceable manner, enjoined upon us the importance of immediately going forward in the work of rebuilding our Meeting-House."

The very next day the standing committee issued their warrant for a meeting to consider rebuilding. It was voted "that we proceed immediately to rebuild our meeting-house—the vote passed unanimously." The offer of the use of the Free Chapel was accepted. The new building committee were S. P. Fowler, Nathan Tapley, Daniel Richards, Alfred Fellows, J. S. Black, Elbridge Trask, J. C. Butler, Nathaniel Silvester and Stephen Granville. They went to work with six thousand dollars insurance and trusted to raise the balance. The contract was originally given to Boston parties for six thousand eight hundred and seventy-five dollars, but they failed to meet their engagements—"the winter came upon us with its snow and rains with the building completely exposed." The contractors were paid two thousand eight hundred and fifty dollars to leave the job, and Abel Preston's proposal to finish the building for four thousand dollars was accepted. On Sunday, March 9, 1851, services were first held in the new Granite Hall, and the church itself was ready for dedication September 17, 1851. The total cost of the new or present church was $8485.66; the new bell cost two hundred and thirteen dollars. The present organ was purchased by subscription, as was also the clock in the tower, and at a meeting of the subscribers to both, August 15, 1854, both were "unconditionally presented" to the society. About the same time certain pews were set apart to be sold for the benefit of the eighteen subscribers who assumed the debt of the old church, they suffering a loss of twenty-five per cent. of their subscriptions—the proportional loss of pew-holders over insurance. The new bell was not up to the standard of orthodoxy, and cracked; the present bell dates from 1856.

Moses Putnam, foremost of the friends and supporters of the church and society, a few months before he died, which was September 10, 1860, in his eighty-fifth year, gave up several notes amounting to fourteen hundred dollars, which he held against the society. A communication was sent to him expressive of the heart-felt gratitude of the society for this and former generous donations.

Rev. Mr. Fletcher tendered, May 21, 1864, a letter of resignation.

A call was extended, February 1, 1866, to Rev. William Caruthers, of North Cambridge, who accepted, and was installed April 18th. This call was not nearly unanimous, and after a little more than two years Mr. Caruthers tendered his resignation, to take effect July 31, 1868. On the 22d of February, 1869, by a large and unanimous vote, Rev. James Brand, then a student at Andover, was invited to become pastor, and he was ordained October 6, 1869. Shortly after, December 5th, the church celebrated its twenty-fifth anniversary. In the spring of 1872 the subject of making extensive and radical changes in the house was first brought up, and continued to be talked about and voted upon for two years, when it was finally decided to take the work in hand. Andrew M. Putnam, Winthrop Andrews, Charles H. Gould, John S. Learoyd and Daniel Richards were the supervising committee. An addition was built on the rear of the church, the interior was entirely remodeled, the old

galleries were abolished, the organ and choir-loft moved behind the pulpit, modern black-walnut pews were substituted for the old ones, which are now occasionally seen adorning gardens and back piazzas. With the change in the building came also a change in the organization of the society. It was proposed to abandon the system of individual pew-ownership for a system of annual rental. By act of the Legislature the existing corporation was dissolved March 24, 1874, and a new society was immediately organized under the general statutes, the first meeting of which was held the next day. Under the by-laws of the new society all property was vested in a board of five trustees, three at least to be members of the church. Membership was open to any person renting a sitting and receiving a majority vote at any regular meeting. There have been but three elections of trustees,—

1874.	Moses J. Currier.
Chester H. Gould.	Charles H. Gould.
Edward A. Lord.	John S. Learoyd.
Moses J. Currier.	**1885.**
John S. Learoyd.	C. H. Gould.
John A. Putnam.	Samuel L. Sawyer.
1879.	G. W. Fiske.
George W. Fiske.	John A. Putnam.
John A. Putnam.	J. S. Learoyd.

Before these changes, however, Mr. Brand resigned his pastorate, to take effect November 1, 1873. He went to Oberlin, Ohio, "to accept a place where my usefulness in the ministry, if I have any, can be more than doubled." He went "with the kindest words to say and the pleasantest memories to carry," and left with his parishioners an abiding love and respect towards himself. He has not failed by reason of "the greatness of the field and the urgency of the call." After nearly two years Rev. Walter E. C. Wright accepted the invitation to fill the vacancy, and was installed October 12, 1875, his brother, Rev. G. F. Wright, of Andover, and Rev. James Fletcher, a former pastor, taking part in the exercises. During his pastorate of seven years he not only endeared himself to his own people, but won and merited the greatest respect of his fellow-citizens by the many manifestations of his active public spirit. Upon him fell most of the responsibility of the re-arrangement and new catalogue of the Peabody Library, a work which will remain a substantial monument to his memory. He was also largely instrumental in lifting from the church a heavy load of debt. He was an able debater, and the occasion in Gothic Hall when he stood alone against an array of advocates of woman-suffrage will long be remembered. His letter of resignation dated August 12, 1882, contains this: "The experience of the past few months has indicated the importance, for the health of my wife and perhaps my own, of a change of residence to a milder climate." An urgent call to take up a congenial and important religious and educational work at Berea College, Kentucky, was therefore accepted, and his resignation was tendered, to take effect the last of September, 1882. Rev. Edward P. Ewing, formerly of Enfield, Mass, his successor and the present pastor, was installed November 1, 1883.

The first deacons of the church were Frederick Howe and Samuel P. Fowler; subsequently elected: John S. Learoyd, Samuel P. Trask, Eben Peabody. Messrs. Fowler, Learoyd and Peabody survive in office. The membership of the church at its organization was 42; at present, 1887, 305; total membership since organization, 537.

The moderator of the first meeting of the society, 1844, was Winthrop Andrews. Moderators of subsequent annual meetings have been as follows:—Samuel P. Fowler, 1845, '47, '48, '49; Nathan Tapley, '46, '51, '53, '54, '59, '60; Joseph S. Black, '50, '58; Dr. D. A. Grosvenor, '52; William L. Weston, '55, '56, '57, '61, '68, '74; Rufus Putnam, '62, '63, '64, '65, '67; John A. Putnam, '66, '75, '76, '77; John S. Learoyd, '69; John R. Langley, '70, '72, '73; Moses J. Currier, 71; Samuel L. Sawyer, '78, '81; George W. Fiske, '79, '80, '83, '84, '85, '86, '87.

Until 1882, the offices of treasurer and collector were considered as one, and the persons holding the office were as follows:—Moses J. Currier, 1844; Moses W. Putnam, '45–'47, '51; Elbridge Trask, '48; John C. Butler, '49, '50; James M. Perry, '52–'70, eighteen consecutive years; John A. Putnam, '71–'81. In 1882 the offices were divided. Webster F. Putnam was elected treasurer, and served two years; George W. Fiske, '84, '85; Charles H. Gould, '86, '87. Winthrop Andrews has held the office of collector from 1882 to the present, 1887.

Henry T. Ropes was the first clerk of the society and served for three years. Joseph S. Black succeeded him and served three years. Deacon Samuel P. Fowler began to keep the records in 1850 and has entered on the thirty-seventh year of his service. During the whole period since the organization of the society, the records have been kept admirably.

The list of standing committees is as follows:

STANDING COMMITTEES.

1844.	Joseph S. Black.
Benj. Turner.	Daniel Richards.
Saml. Brown.	**1848.**
Nathl. Silvester.	Nathan Tapley.
1845.	Joseph S. Black.
Saml. Putnam.	Daniel Richards.
Saml. P. Fowler.	Moses J. Currier.
Henry T. Ropes.	Samuel P. Fowler.
Nathl. Silvester.	**1849.**
1846.	S. P. Fowler.
Nathan Tapley.	Joseph S. Black.
Jesse Putnam.	Moses J. Currier.
Nathl. Silvester.	Francis P. Putnam.
Henry T. Ropes.	Samuel Putnam.
Benj. Turner.	**1850.**
1847.	Saml. P. Fowler.
Nathan Tapley.	Joseph S. Black.
Jesse Putnam.	Moses J. Currier.
Moses J. Currier.	Frederic How.
	Nathan Tapley.

1851.
Nathan Tapley.
S. P. Fowler.
Moses J. Currier.
Joseph S. Black.
Daniel Richards.

1852.
Nathan Tapley.
Jos. S. Black.
Frederick Perley.
Francis P. Putnam.
Alfred Fellows.

1853.
N. Tapley.
F. P. Putnam.
S. P. Fowler.
Alfred Fellows.
M. J. Currier.

1854.
Nathan Tapley.
M. J. Currier.
F. P. Putnam.
Wm. L. Weston.
Allen Knights.

1855.
Nathan Tapley.
M. J. Currier.
Allen Knights.
W. L. Weston.
D. A. Grosvenor.

1856.
Nathan Tapley.
F. P. Putnam.
Allen Knight.
M. J. Currier.
W. L. Weston.

1857.
Nathan Tapley.
Moses J. Currier.
F. P. Putnam.
W. L. Weston.
Allen Knight.

1858.
Nathan Tapley.
M. J. Currier.
W. L. Weston.
F. P. Putnam.
Joseph S. Black.

1859.
John A. Learoyd.
Jos. S. Black.
M. J. Currier.
W. L. Weston.
F. P. Putnam.

1860.
Nathan Tapley.
W. L. Weston.
M. J. Currier.
F. P. Putnam.
J. S. Black.

1861.
Nathan Tapley.
W. L. Weston.
M. J. Currier.
John C. Butler.
F. P. Putnam.

1862.
Nathan Tapley.
Rufus Putnam.
M. J. Currier.
F. P. Putnam.
J. C. Butler.

1863.
Rufus Putnam.
Nathan Tapley.
F. P. Putnam.
J. C. Butler.
M. J. Currier.

1864.
Nathan Tapley.
Rufus Putnam.
J. C. Butler.
M. J. Currier.
John R. Langley.

1865.
Rufus Putnam.
Nathan Tapley.
J. M. Perry.
Nathaniel Hills.
M. J. Currier.

1866.
Nathan Tapley.
Rufus Putnam.
M. J. Cnrrier.
J. M. Perry.
J. R. Langley.

1867.
J. R. Langley.
Rufus Putnam.
John S. Learoyd.
M. J. Currier.
Daniel Richards.

1868.
Daniel Richards.
J. S. Learoyd.
Rufus Putnam.

1869.
J. S. Learoyd.
Robert S. Perkins.
M. J. Currier.
J. A. Putnam.
J. M. Perry.

1870.
Nathan Tapley.
J. M. Perry.
R. S. Perkins.
Charles H. Gould.
M. J. Currier.

1871.
Nathan Tapley.
R. S. Perkins.
M. J. Currier.
C. H. Gould.
J. R. Langley.

1872.
J. S. Learoyd.
R. S. Perkins.
M. J. Currier.
C. H. Gould.
J. R. Langley.

1874.
J. S. Learoyd.
George W. Fiske.
Winthrop Andrews.
M. J. Currier.
E. Warren Eaton.

1875.
John S. Learoyd.
M. J. Currier.
G. W. Fiske.
E. W. Eaton.
Winthrop Andrews.

1876.
Winthrop Andrews.
Addison P. Learoyd.
M. J. Currier.
Samuel P. Trask.
Beverly S. Moulton.

1877.
Winthrop Andrews.
B. S. Moulton.
S. P. Trask.
A. P. Learoyd.
Samuel L. Sawyer.

1878.
Winthrop Andrews.
B. S. Moulton.
S. L. Sawyer.
A. P. Learoyd.
Edward A. Lord.

1879.
Winthrop Andrews.
B. S. Moulton.
A. P. Learoyd.
Amos A. White.
S. L. Sawyer.

1880.
Winthrop Andrews.
A. P. Learoyd.
A. A. White.
S. L. Sawyer.
B. S. Moulton.

1881.
Winthrop Andrews.
A. P. Learoyd.
J. Frank Porter.
S. L. Sawyer.
B. S. Moulton.

1882.
A. P. Learoyd.
J. F. Porter.
S. L. Sawyer.
Eben Peabody.
Webster F. Putnam.

1883.
S. L. Sawyer.
J. F. Porter.
W. F. Putnam.
Alden P. White.
Eben Peabody.

1884.
J. F. Porter.
Eben Peabody.
W. F. Putnam.
Wallace F. Perry.
A. P. White.

1885.
Leroy L. Abbott.
W. F. Putnam.
A. P. White.
W. P. Perry.
Eben Peabody.

1886.
W. P. Perry.
W. F. Putnam.
A. P. White.
Abram S. Beal.
Dr. E. A. Kemp.

1887.
A. P. White.
W. P. Perry.
E. A. Kemp.
A. S. Beal.
Herbert M. Bradstreet.

The Sunday-school in connection with the Maple Street Church was organized December 4, 1844. It then consisted of one hundred and fourteen members and twelve teachers. The first superintendent was Francis P. Putnam. Succeeding superintendents have been Moses W. Putnam, Joseph S. Black, Nathaniel Hills and John S. Learoyd.

By far the longest term of office is that of the present superintendent, Mr. Learoyd, who is now in his twenty-second year of consecutive service. There are at present connected with the school, four hundred and thirty-six members, forty-two teachers, two hundred and seventy-eight scholars in main school, ninety-one primary, and twenty-five in the pastor's Bible-class. The average attendance is three hundred and six. Yearly collection for 1886, three hundred and forty dollars. Number of library books, eight hundred and sixty-five.

CATHOLIC.—Before 1850 there were very few natives of Ireland residing in Danvers. Between 1850 and 1855, or even later, they came here in considerable numbers and made homes for themselves. The first man of Irish birth to settle here, about 1840, was the late Daniel Crowley, whose children are an honor to his name. Another early settler was Edward McKeigue. It was in the latter's house, November 1, 1854, that the first Catholic service was held in Danvers. Rev. Thomas H. Shahan, then of the Church of Immaculate Conception in Salem, officiated. Afterwards regular services began to be held in Franklin Hall, and then a chapel was erected south of the High Street Cemetery. When the Universalists gave

up their church in 1859, the Catholics bought it. This building, since altered and enlarged beyond recognition as to its original condition, is the present church of this denomination. A fine new pastor's house has been very recently erected on a pleasant site in the rear of the church, overlooking the river. It is a fact significant of the increase of the Catholic population since the time above referred to, that in this church worships a congregation by far the largest in town; and it is also significant that while many of the old names, common a hundred or two years ago, have become entirely extinct, and others are in danger of becoming so, the names of Sullivan, Collins, Gallivan, McCarthy and others appear in increasing numbers in each new directory and voting list, and indeed those names mentioned seem already to be more numerous than any other save one. The largest collective settlement of the people of this church radiates from the crossing of Hobart Street and the Eastern Railroad. It used to be called after the capital of the old country. Much of the land was bought by Captain Andrew M. Putnam, and by him was first opened up for building purposes. At his death, May 6, 1881, the family received a touching letter from a committee of Irish citizens, requesting permission to march behind the funeral procession to the grave. Twenty-eight of them did this, and some of their number filled the grave with earth. "No pen can write," such was the tribute, "nor mind describe the love, the veneration, we have for him, who was 'a friend in need and a friend indeed.' The name of Captain A. M. Putnam shall be forever near and dear to us. Many a heart has he made glad, by putting them in a way of having a little home for themselves when every one else seemed against them."

The first resident pastor of the church was Rev. Charles Raioni, who also had charge of the church in Marblehead. Thither he removed on the separation of the parishes in 1872. He was a gentleman advanced in years, and greatly beloved. His successor, Rev. Fr. O'Reilly, remained but one year. Rev. Patrick Joseph Halley was appointed to Danvers in April, 1873, and his pastorate extended to September, 1882; Rev. D. B. Kennedy's, from the last date to April, 1885, when the present pastor, Thomas E. Power, was appointed.

Episcopal.—Calvary Parish was organized on the 14th of April, 1858. Joseph Adams and John S. Pratt were the first wardens. Rev. Robt. F. Chase entered upon his duties as rector, May 9th, 1858, services being held at first in Bank Hall.

The corner-stone of the present church at the corner of Holten and Cherry Streets, was laid by Bishop Eastburn, May 11, 1859, and the church was consecrated by him, May 25, 1860. Mr. Chase resigned in 1862, but was again rector from 1863 to 1865. His successors were as follows:—Rev. George Horvill, rector from 1865–66; Rev. William W. Silvester, deacon in charge of the parish, 1868; Rev. S. J. Evans, rector, 1869–71; Rev. William I. Magill, 1872–77. Rev. George Walker, the present rector, took charge of the parish October, 1877.

Unitarian.—As was hinted in the sketch of the Universalist Society, there were, many years ago, a number of influential families who had accepted the Unitarian faith. It was not, however, until 1865, that the present society was organized and worship begun, the first service being held in the Town Hall, and conducted by Rev. A. P. Putnam, then of Roxbury.

Mr. and Mrs. P. H. Wentworth, with their family of children, had recently removed to Danvers from Roxbury, where they had been parishioners of Mr. Putnam, and it only needed their presence and earnest zeal in the town, to insure success to the new movement. One or more meetings of the friends were held to consider the matter, previous to the first public service, and arrangements were soon made for regular Sunday worship in the Town Hall until more suitable accommodations could be had. The desk was supplied by different preachers until April 1st, 1867, when Rev. Leonard J. Livermore became the pastor of the infant church, and remained the minister until his death, in the summer of 1886, having his residence throughout at Cambridge, and being the guest of Mr. and Mrs. Wentworth, on his weekly visits to Danvers. The little church prospered, and in a few years erected its present neat and commodious chapel, which is located very near the site of the first house at Danvers Plains, that of pioneer John Porter. The cost of land and edifice was about $13,000. The building took the name of Unity Chapel, and was formally dedicated as a house of worship on the evening of the 16th of March, 1871. The opening prayer was by Rev. S. C. Beane, of Salem; the reading of the Scriptures by Rev. J. B. Moore, of Lawrence; the sermon by Rev. A. P. Putnam; the act of dedication by the pastor and people; the prayer of dedication by Rev. J. T. Hewes, of Salem; chants and hymns were sung by a quartette and by the congregation. The church suffered a great loss in the death of Mr. Wentworth, about the time of the decease of its first minister. For a fuller notice of these two excellent men and faithful friends, see Dr. Putnam's sketch of Mr. Wentworth on a subsequent page. Mr. Livermore's successor is Rev. J. C. Mitchell, who entered upon his work here during the last winter (1886–87), having previously been the minister of the Orthodox Congregational Church in Wenham.

Methodist.—This is the only church located in the village of Tapleyville, and draws its strength and support largely from that neighborhood.

The first preaching service, preliminary to organizing a church, was held in Lincoln Hall, October 22, 1871. As a result of this and successive meetings it was determined to build a meeting-house. G. A. Tapley gave the lot of land, and he and his father otherwise contributed liberally. The present building was dedicated early in 1873. It cost about fif-

teen thousand dollars. The church was organized March 17, 1872. The first pastor was Rev. Elias Hodge, to whose enthusiastic work much of the first success of the new church was due. He served until 1874, the conference year beginning with April. His successors have been Rev. R. H. Howard, 1875–76; Rev. Garrett Beekman, 1877–79; Rev. W. J. Hambleton, 1880–82; Rev. W. M. Ayres, 1883–85; Rev. C. A. Merrill, the present pastor, came in 1886.

The Sunday-school was organized November 5, 1871; its first superintendent, Oliver D. Ham.

SEVENTH DAY ADVENT.—In the summer of 1877 a very large tent was pitched in the open lot on Hobart Street, opposite the station, and large congregations went nightly to hear Elder Canright's expositions of the doctrines of the above sect. He succeeded in making numerous converts, some from other churches, more from those not previously in the habit of attending church. Notwithstanding the practical inconvenience of keeping Saturday as the Sabbath, a considerable number hold firmly to that way. A chapel was dedicated January 6, 1878. It stands very near the site of the tent. The church was organized December 11, 1877. There has been for some time no settled pastor. Very recently there have been quite a number of baptisms. Charles Hartman is superintendent of the Sunday-school.

CHAPTER XXXV.

DANVERS.—(*Continued*).

EDUCATIONAL.

ONE of the reasons why the Village and Middle Parishes petitioned to be set off from Salem was because they were so far from the grammar-school. But there were schools, probably of lower grade than grammar, in both the Village and Middle Parishes many years before the district of Danvers was incorporated. The first action taken towards a separate school within the present limits of Danvers and Peabody was in 1701, under a vote entered in the village parish records that "Mr. Joseph Herrick and Mr. Joseph Putnam and John Putnam jun. are chosen and empowered to agree with some suitable person to be a school-master among us, in some convenient time; and make return therefor to the people." The man instrumental in building the first school-house was the minister of the Village church, Rev. Joseph Green. Certain passages of his diary, March, 1708, bear upon the subject:

"March 11. . . . I spoke to several about building a schoolhouse and determined to do it, &c.

"18. I rode to ye neighbors about a schoolhouse and found them generally willing to help.

"22. Meeting of the Inhabitants. I spoke with several about building a schoolhouse. I went into ye Town Meeting (village meeting) and said to this effect: Neighbors I am about building a schoolhouse for the good education of our children . . . Some replyed that it was a new thing to them and they desired to know where it should stand, and what the design of it was. To them I answered that Deacon Ingersoll would give land for it to stand on, at the upper end of the Training field, and that I designed to have a good school-master to teach their children to read and write and cypher and everything that is good. Many commended the design and none objected to it.

"25. Began to get timber for schoolhouse."

The teacher first mentioned by name is Katherine Daland; she taught before Mr. Green's house was finished. In 1714 Samuel Andrew taught and is the first mentioned master.

To pass now at once to the separate existence of the town and the manner in which it managed school affairs. At first the schools were left to the selectmen. The first school-committee, as a distinctive board, were chosen in 1756, under the following votes:

"Voted, to chuse a com'tee to regulate ye Grammar School & to be five men. Voted, Dan'l Gardner Dan'l Purington Dan'l Epes Jun'r Nath'l Felton Sr. David Putnam voted, that the School Com'tee Draw up Something and lay it before ye District on ye adjournment."

In the annual warrant for 1766 there occurred for the first time a proposition for the division of school money between the parishes according to the proportion of their taxes, but no action was then taken. The next year the question of establishing other than grammar-schools came up again. It was four years since the same matter had been referred to the discretion of a committee, and now the growing need of such schools seemed so imperative that it was directly voted "that there be a number of schools provided by the selectmen besides the Grammar Scool in the winter Season in this Town as the Selectmen Shall think proper, To be at Town Cost." The next year, 1768, "the claws in the warrant" relating to division of the school money between the parishes was dismissed as before, and again the monopoly of public education was restored to the grammar-school; but before winter set in the selectmen were instructed "to set up what schools they shall think proper."

So matters went, at times only a grammar school, at times "other schools set up," until, in the midst of the Revolution, December 1, 1777, on a petition headed by Col. Jeremiah Page, a decidedly progressive step was taken. At a meeting held in the North Meeting-House, Archelaus Dale, Moderator, it was voted that there be Ten Schools set up in the Town for three months each, and that the selectmen regulate the schools and provide proper persons for School-masters.

In 1780 the expression "district schools" is first used; it was then voted "that there be District Schools set up for three months to begin as soon as may be."

In 1783 nine schools were "set up" for two months, but whether or not nine schools were insufficient to meet the law, or the setting-up thereof was too largely on paper merely, the inhabitants found themselves this year presented before the Court of General Sessions for not keeping schools according to law,

and Samuel Cheever was sent to Ipswich to answer for the town on the first Tuesday of April, and he was instructed "to use his influence, that the Town be not fined for their neglect in not keeping schools." The potency of Samuel's endeavors may be inferred from the fact that there is no further mention of the subject.

The 10th of November, 1794, is the beginning of a new epoch, it marks the first step towards the establishment of a systematic district system. It was then voted that the selectmen "divide the town into as many districts as will best accommodate the town;" and the next month the first distinct and separate appropriation of money for school purposes was made,—£90, exclusive of the grammar school. Gideon Foster's record of the laying out of the school districts must here be omitted. There were nine in all; number one including the present central village of Peabody; two, the Port; three, Putnamville; four, Beaver Brook; five, the Centre; six, Felton's Corner; seven and eight, West Danvers; nine, towards Humphrey's Pond. The establishment of division lines caused some uneasiness among those who lived on the outskirts of the respective districts. For instance, Col. Jethro and Dr. Archelaus Putnam, and the dwellers on the Derby Farm, found themselves, by the new dispensation in No. 3, wished to be in No. 4, and evidently succeeded in getting there; for the next year, Aaron Putnam and others of No. 3 petitioned that the lost sheep be brought back again. Daniel Taylor and others soon wanted a division of No. 7 by a North and South line. In 1800 Amos King wished to be set off from No. 8 to No. 6, but the inhabitants said no.

Early in 1802 a special meeting was called, to see if the town would make some general alterations in district lines; the only changes made were in numbers two, three and four, all within the present limits of Danvers.

In 1806 John Jacobs and others presented a petition for the division of No. 7 and, succeeding in obtaining it, the new district, number ten, was the result. In the same year the subject of rules for the government of schools was first considered, and the following code drawn up by Parsons Wadsworth and Walker, and Hon. Nathan Read, David Daniels and Capt. Samuel Page, will prove interesting reading:

DR. WADSWORTH'S CODE.

"1. It is recommended that each Instructor open his School in the morning and close it in the evening with a short prayer.

"2. On every School day except Saturday, each instructor shall employ at least six hours in the instruction of his pupils, and not less than three on that day.

"3. The instructor of each School shall class his pupils in such manner as he shall judge most conducive to their improvement, not making less than two Classes.

"4. To facilitate the acquirement of an accurate & uniform mode of Spelling & pronunciation, Perry's Spelling-book and Dictionary shall be taught in all the Schools; and the following shall be the Catalogue of Books from which the Scholars shall be supplied at the discretion of the Instructor, viz.: 'Murray's English Grammer Abridged,' 'Morse's Geography, abridged Constitution of the State of Massachusetts,' &c., 'Wakefield mental improvement,' 'Pikes Arithmatic' & the 'holy Bible,' together with such Latin & Greek Classics as are usually taught in Grammer Schools.

"5. To abridge the time commonly consumed by Children in learning to write, the plan discribed in Jenken's 'Art of Writing' shall be adopted in all the schools; & Copper-plate copies furnished by the Instructors shall be used by those Scholars who are able to write joining hand.

"6. The Scholars shall be taught punctuation notes or marks, interrogation, admiration, accent, emphasis & cadence.

"7. Every Instructor shall establish & maintain order & good Government in his school, not by inflicting cruel & unusual punishment, but by addressing the understanding & ingenious feelings of the youth committed to his care, & by endeavouring to excite a spirit of industry & emulation stimulating them to their duty by the hope of reward rather than by the fear of Punishment.

"To carry these rules & orders (should the Town adopt them) into effect the Committee sensible that the improvement of Scholars depends greatly on the attention & fidelity of instructors beg leave to recommend *a particular regard* to the moral & literary quallifications of those who shall be employed in that capacity the *annual choice* of a School committee, faithfully to discharge the important trust reposed in them by law, & likewise *to direct the Town Clerk* to furnish the Grammer School Master at least with a written copy of the laws of this State respecting the power & duty of the School committee & instructors of Schools prefixed to a copy of these regulations.

"BENJA. WADSWORTH, pr. order."

In 1808 another sub-division of districts occurred; the people living in the western part of No. 1 were set off as No. 11; and within a few months Clark Wilson and others secured a division of No. 11, and a portion thereof was established as No. 12. At the March meeting of 1816 another very important advance towards system was made. Three persons—Nathan Felton, Daniel Putnam and Dr. Andrew Nichols were chosen "to define the powers and duties of School Committee."

Ten years in advance of the law of the State making it the duty of towns to choose a school committee, Danvers accepted the report of these men, which contained, among other recommendations, this,—

"That it be proper and expedient to choose a School Committee, whose powers and duties shall be the same as is given to the ministers of the gospel and the selectmen of the town by the laws of the Commonwealth, excepting such as have or may be given to the school districts by a special vote of the town."

And twenty-two years in advance of the State law requiring school committees to make annual reports, Danvers adopted this recommendation,—

"It shall be the duty of the School Committee to make a report of so much of their doings and such other particulars respecting the several schools as they may deem worthy the consideration of the town at their annual March meeting."

At the same meeting at which this action was taken it was voted "that District No. 2 be divided, agreeably to a Petition of John Page and others, dated April 19th, 1816, and is on Town files." A search among the old papers in the town-house vault was rewarded by the finding of this interesting autograph petition, the origin of the present Plains District, now No. 1,—

"TO THE SELECTMEN OF DANVERS:—

"GENTLEMEN: We, the subscribers, inhabitants of School District number two, request you to insert a clause in your warrant at the May

meeting for the choice of Representatives to this effect: to see if the town will pass a vote to seperate that part of District number two. Beginning at Frost fish brook bridge, so called, and from thence following the mill-pond down untill you come to the point of land owned by John Page, thence up a branch of said pond, untill you come to the bridge near brick yards; thence running down by the Salem road untill you come to the east corner of Seth Stetson's pasture; thence running as the fence stands to the south corner of said pasture; thence southerly as the fence runs to Crane river, so called; thence following said river to the Bridge with all the land, polls and estates, to the northward and westward said line now belonging to District number two, with all the powers and priviledges belonging to other school Districts in the town of Danvers.

"Danvers, April 19th, 1816.

"JOHN PAGE.
"GEORGE OSGOOD.
"EZRA BATCHELDER.
"EBENR BERRY.
"TIMOTHY PUTNAM.
"EBEN PUTNAM, JR.
"ANDREW BATCHELDER.
"ALLEN PEABODY."

Very soon Benjamin Wellington and Jonathan Perry, with their polls and estates, were set off from No. 3 to the new district, No. 13, and the next year "the land of Wm. Burley, of Beverly, which lies in Danvers" was subjected to the same transfer.

In 1820 the town directed the school committee to return the number of children between five and eighteen, with the following result:

No. 1.....162	No 4..... 51	No. 7.....69	No. 10..... 46
" 2.....184	" 5.....104	" 8.....85	" 11.....116
" 3..... 53	" 6..... 98	" 9.....16	" 12.....120

No. 13.....66.

About this time it is apparent that the old "grammar school" was being neglected. In the summer of 1821 Dr. Nichols and others petitioned for such a school, and as cumulative evidence of its non-existence this vote appears on the record of the next annual meeting,—

"Voted, To choose a committee to answer a communication received by the selectmen from the county attorney, relating to Grammer Schools. Voted, that John W. Proctor, John Page and William Sutton be said committee."

The spirit of Samuel Cheever seems to have descended on these men, for, as in the case of his mission to Ipswich forty years before, nothing was thereafter heard of this threatened indictment.

Since the code of 1816 there had been annually elected three committee-men at large, and each year these three were the ministers of the three churches. After seven years it seems that it was thought well to give laymen a representation, and at a meeting called for that purpose and no other, and on the petition of the school committee themselves, it was voted then and thereafter to add three to the committee at large; and those first added were Dr. Nichols, Nathan Felton and John W. Proctor.

In 1827 the term "at large" was dropped. The body which had been thus distinguished now became, with the addition of one more, simply the School committee; while the committee, chosen as formerly, one from each district, received the new title of Prudential Committee. To further distinguish the "upper house" from the latter, for several years the phrase "Committee of Superintendence" was applied to it.

In 1831, by vote of the town the Prudential Committee were thenceforth to be elected by the several districts at district meetings.

In 1835 just forty years had passed since the original establishment of districts. In the mean time many alterations, only some of which have here been noted, had taken place in the way of changing individuals and their estates from one district to another, until there might well have been more or less uncertainty about the true dividing lines. They were therefore carefully examined and re-located by a committee of delegates from each existing district, and their report was recorded by Dr. Shed in a volume of school records.

In 1836 occurs the first mention of compensation to the school committee. They were authorized to appoint three of their number to visit all the schools in town, and these three were to receive for their services the same rate per day as other town officers.

The next year, 1837, the Massachusetts School Fund is first mentioned. The manner of disposal of the town's share was referred to the school committee.

The Legislature of 1838 passed an act, changing the authority to employ teachers from the prudential to the general committee unless towns should otherwise order, and Danvers did so otherwise order. But lest the district goverment should smack too highly of one-man power, it was, the next year, recommended to each district to choose two other persons to act and advise with the prudential man in superintending the concerns of the district.

The year 1839 marks the beginning of our printed school reports. The first school report proper ever made to the town was in 1817, and was committed to the "files." Resurrected from its long repose, this old document, somewhat blotted, scratched and interlined, signed "B. Wadsworth, Chairman, pr. order," makes very interesting reading to-day, and shows that school-report literature has departed not far from the standard thus early set,—the very small iron hand in the glove of well wadded velvet. There seems to be a certain familiar sound about expressions such as these:

"The Committee are enabled to report that the schools generally appeared advantageously in comparison with their condition in past years. . . . Notwithstanding the respectable character of the schools generally, there is still room for improvement. In some districts the committee did not find the scholars had made so great proficiency in their studies as might have been reasonably expected. . . . In some districts many of the children have been sent very inconstantly to school, and the efforts of the Instructors have not been met with that zealous support from Parents which is essentially necessary to give the desired effect. In some instances the committee did not find that degree of Silence and regular order which is necessary to enable schollars (Ah, Doctor!) to pursue their studies most advantageously. . . . But the committee with pleasure add that in no instance was there discovered any marks of negligence, or want of constant and faithful atten ion to their laborious employment on the part of the Instructors. . . . The committee would close their remarks respecting the several schools

by stating, that they derived the highest gratification in witnesing the regular order and highly respectable attainments of the schollars in the school kept by Mr. Samuel Preston, District N. 4, in the North Parish, and in the school kept by Mr. Amory Felton, District N. 11, in the South Parish.

The Committee conclude by earnestly exhorting all concerned to exert all their influence and abilities to improve their respective schools by employing the best Instructors, by sending the children and youth to school as constantly and as many years as possible, and by affording them all the aid and encouragement in their power to attain at least a thorough acquaintance with the several branches, or, rather, rudiments of science which are taught in English schools."

Following the custom thus set in 1817, reports were for eighteen years annually read at town-meeting and filed away. From 1835 to and including 1838 the reports are recorded at length, together with many interesting returns, in Dr. Shed's book of "School Records."

At the annual meeting of 1839, after Rev. Allen Putnam had read the report of the year then ended, it was recommitted with authority to the committee to cause as many copies of it to be printed as they should think proper for the benefit of the inhabitants. Israel H. Putnam appears in this earliest printed report as a teacher in No. 7; subsequently he was given the much larger school in No. 5. One of his successors in No. 7 was John G. Walcott, and following Walcott, in the winter of '42–43, was a young man from the Village, Augustus Mudge. Of the latter the committee said, "the teacher seemed to feel an active interest, and the appearance of the school justifies us in saying that in his first attempt, he has succeeded in imparting that interest to his scholars." In the sequence of events, Mr. Putnam and Mr. Mudge are now associated the one as treasurer and the other as president of the Danvers Saving Bank.

Oliver A. Woodbury, who became a physician in Nashua, N. H., deceased, taught in No. 10. Among the lady teachers were Elizabeth P. Pope, Fidelia Kettelle, Margaret Putnam, Harriott A. Pope, Emily Gould and Hannah J. Putnam. The mention of the then young men, Putnam, Walcott and Woodbury, calls to mind the fact that just about this time they were themselves attending school at Pembroke Academy, N. H. And this was a thing not uncommon among the ambitious young fellows of Danvers, who desired something more than the meagre education of a few weeks each winter at the home schools. They left their work and their wages not for the fun of a term or two at boarding-school, but to get the most out of it; sometimes spurred on by a friendly word of advice, but as often impelled merely by personal determination. Quite a number went to Bradford, a few to Atkinson, N. H., and perhaps elsewhere, but Pembroke seems to have been the favorite. In the few catalogues which have been preserved the following names appear of North Danvers young men and women who were at Pembroke about 1840: Israel H. Putnam, Oliver A. Woodbury, Israel P. Boardman, Francis Noyes, Charles A. Putnam, Albert Putnam, Elias E. Putnam, Israel E. Putnam, Moses W. Putnam, Thomas M. Putnam, William Putnam, John G. Walcott, Joseph S. Black, Charles P. Preston, Aaron W. Warren, Charles H. Gould, Harrison O. Warren, John H. Porter, John Reed, Caroline E. Page, Sarah P. Page, Emiline Putnam, Nancy Putnam, Mary O. Black, Sarah A. Kent.

At Topsfield Academy there were, about 1830, these: Ezra Batchelder, James D. Black, Thomas J. Bradstreet, Moses K. Cross, John C. Page, Charles Page, Ebenezer Putnam, Francis Putnam, William R. Putnam, Henry F. Putnam, Charles H. Rhoades, Asa T. Richards, Richard West, Lydia Bradstreet, Harriet N. Page, Harriet Putnam, Clarissa Putnam, Elizabeth A. Putnam.

A fellow-student with some of these Danvers young people at Pembroke was a young man from Deerfield, N. H., who went to Dartmouth College, and helped to pay his way by teaching, winters. About Thanksgiving time, during his first year, he drove from his home looking for a school, and spent a night in Danvers with Oliver Woodbury, calling the next morning on "Uncle Moses," father of Israel E. Putnam, a young man of great promise who had died at Pembroke, and by Uncle Moses he was taken over to the old General Putnam homestead to the shoe-factory of Daniel and Ahira Putnam, to see in particular the latter who was prudential committee-man, and to Ahira the young man made application to teach the district school, No. 4, the ensuing term and was engaged. Julia Putnam, a daughter of the homestead, helping about the household work which by well-established New England custom falls to Monday morning, noticed the arrival of the young stranger, and was interested in his errand for she was the teacher of the summer school. The young man's name was John D. Philbrick. It is a proud thing for Danvers that a name since so widely and honorably known should find itself connected with her annals. Mr. Philbrick taught the No. 4 school three winters. He became engaged to Miss Putnam, and was married to her after his graduation, and after his great life-work was accomplished came back to these scenes of his early labors and of his early love to die. It is interesting to read in the light of his subsequent career what was said of the young student-teacher by the committee of 1839: "At the commencement of his term we feared that Mr. Philbrick might fail to meet the reasonable demands of the district; but are happy in being able to state that both he and his school made progress that was *highly* gratifying to the committee and creditable to themselves. We have seldom found in school so general and thorough acquaintance with the various marks of punctuation as was possessed here; and as a necessary consequence we found some of the best readers here that we have listened to in town. The various recitations approached to uniformity in character and were very fair."

John Dudley Philbrick was born in Deerfield, N. H., May 27, 1818. He graduated from Dartmouth

in 1842, having some weeks previous to graduation entered upon the duties of a position in the Roxbury Latin School. While at Roxbury he married, August 24, 1843, Julia A. Putnam, of Danvers. He next went to the Boston English High School, was master of the Mahew School in 1845–46, and achieved great reputation for his admirable work as master of the Quincy School, 1847–52. For a few years his labors were then transferred to Connecticut, first as principal of the State Normal School, and again as State superintendent of common schools. In December, 1856, he was recalled to Boston by his election as superintendent of public schools, a position which, except for an interim of a year and a half, he held continuously until March, 1878. His published official reports during this term are a part of the standard literature of education. He was sent by the United States to represent our educational department at the Vienna Exposition in 1873, and again to Paris in 1878. From France he received the decoration of Chevalier of the Legion of Honor, and the Gold Palm of the University of France. St. Andrew's University of Scotland conferred upon him, in 1879, the degree of D. C. L. He was one of the original incorporators of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, and remained on the board as long as he lived; was ten years a member of the Massachusetts State Board of Education, and ten years a trustee of Bates' College. In his later years he was especially instrumental in the establishment of free evening schools and the State Normal Art School, and in the enactment of the truancy law and teachers' tenure of office act. He died at Danvers, February 2, 1886. In a private letter to John G. Whittier, I. E. Clark, of Washington, says: "I cannot express to you what a personal grief to me was the news of the death of Mr. Philbrick. . . . He was a great educator, I think worthy to stand beside Horace Mann in the memory of his countrymen." The immediate successor of Mr. Philbrick in this district school, of Danvers, was the man who is now librarian of the Boston Public Library, Hon. Mellen Chamberlain, who also married a Putnam of the neighborhood, a daughter of Jesse.

Mrs. Philbrick has furnished these names of other old teachers in No. 4: Asa Cummings, long editor of the *Portland Mirror;* Samuel, William and Eliza Preston (the latter Mrs. Nathan Tapley), Catherine, Elizabeth, Susan, William R., Francis P. and Julia A. Putnam, Dr. Joseph E. Fiske, Otis Mudge.

Dean Peabody, now clerk of Essex County Courts, taught in Putnamville, beginning in 1843–44.

In the winter of 1846–47 a young man, now widely known as Rev. Dr. Alfred P. Putnam, taught the "senior department" of the Plains School. "This was Mr. Putnam's first experiment in school-keeping. He entered upon the work in his own district, and under peculiar disadvantages. Yet the committee present at the closing examination testified to the general good appearance of the school and its decided improvement during the year." Charles A. Putnam, who became superintendent of schools in St. Louis and there died, taught at No. 4, in 1847–48. Freeman N. Blake, who some years ago became a permanent resident of Danvers, was teaching thirty-seven years ago in No. 12. Harrison Gray taught at No. 7. Rufus Sawyer at No. 10, in 1850. Arthur A. Putnam, brother of Alfred, son of Elias, lawyer, of Uxbridge, began his first experiment, 1852, where he grew up, in No. 3. John W. Sawyer, who recently died at the head of the Butler Insane Asylum, Rhode Island, was teaching in 1852 at the "little border school," in No. 10.

Other well-known names than those already given which appear in the list of teachers from 1840 to 1845 are,—Hannah Pedrick, Sarah A. Osgood, Hannah P. Bradstreet, Sophronia Fuller, Asenath P. Pope, Sarah B. Pedrick, Almira A. Putnam, Eliza W. Preston, Melicent P. Peabody, Matilda Peabody.

From 1845 to 1855,—Elizabeth Hopkinson, Clarissa A. Preston, Mary P. Tapley, Eliza W. Preston, Nancy Perry, Mary J. Sawyer, Adeline F. Bomer, Sophronia E. Tapley, Mary E. Porter, Nancy E. Boardman, Sarah E. Symonds, Susan Putnam, Julia A. Page, Lydia A. P. Tapley, Harriet Felton, Amanda B. Hood, Hannah P. Pope, Harriet A. Putnam, Lydia A. Felton, Mary A. Richards, Sarah J. Putnam, Harriet M. Putnam, S. A. Hyde, M. A. Wilkins, Pamelia Needham, Sarah F. Emery, Ann J. Emery, Ellen F. Towns, Cornelia Putnam, Sophia J. Richards.

In the year of the first printed report, 1839, the subject of high schools was first brought up. William D. Joplin, John W. Proctor, Allen Putnam, Samuel Preston, J. M. Austin, Daniel P. King and Benjamin Porter were appointed to consider the propriety of establishing one or more such schools agreeably to the statutes. They reported that a majority at least felt that the credit and interest of the town demanded better and higher schools than those existing. In view of the scattered location of the inhabitants, they said, it would not be practicable to agree upon a site for the establishment of one school to accommodate all, and, perhaps, it would be equally difficult to agree upon two. Although there were wise men on this committee, the concluding paragraph of their report is a bit of that rare wisdom which confesses its own limitations,—

"They are satisfied that something ought to be done, and they hope something will be done; but it requires wiser heads than theirs to determine how it shall be done in a manner that will prove satisfactory."

In the face of such an avowal it is not surprising that high schools remained in the realms of the ideal for many years to come. After three years some determined souls had the courage to bring up the subject again, it was referred to the school committee and that was the end of it. Then after one of the periods of Jacob's courtship, in 1849, it was brought up a third time, and again referred to the school committee. The next year, for the third time in its

history, an indictment hung over the town. High-schools were no longer a matter of choice, but of necessity, and the citizens stirred themselves to get at once out of the unpleasant situation. J. W. Proctor, Samuel Preston, Moses Black, Jr., Andrew Nichols and Fitch Poole were appointed to act in concert with the school committee.

On Monday, the 8th of April, 1850, Rev. Thomas P. Field of the South Church read the report of this committee in town meeting. It was voted that he read it over again. And after various attempts at amendment, it was adopted.

The report begins,—

"It is obvious that the Town is under an absolute necessity of establishing a High School. The Law on this subject is imperative, and we cannot neglect its requisitions, without Incurring a heavy penalty. But so extensive is our Terrritory, and so scattered our population, that One High School will by no means satisfy the desires or meet the wants of our community. If we have One High School, we must have two, in order that all the Inhabitants of the Town, may participate in the benefits of Education, in the higher branches of knowledge. The Committee have considered the subject of uniting the High Schools, in some way with one or more of the District Schools, in order, if possible, to obivate the necessity of establishing Independent Schools. They have come to the conclusion, however, that no satisfactory arrangement of this kind can be made. It is uncertain whether any of the Districts would consent to it, and if they would, it is thought by the Committee that the plan could not be made to work, in a manner advantageous to the interests of either District or High School education."

The committee proposed certain votes, which by the acceptance of the report, became the action of the town:

"First, That it is expedient to establish two High Schools, independent of the District Schools,—One in the North and one in the South part of the Town, the said Schools to be free to all the Inhabitants, under such uniform regulations for the admission of Pupils as the school committee shall establish. . . . That the School Committee be instructed to provide two suitable school rooms, with Furniture and apparatus, and establish High Schools, according to Law, as early as the first of May next, or as soon after as practicable."

On the third day of June, 1850, the two high schools were opened for the admission of such scholars as should pass the examination. Thirty-eight entered the south, thirty-one the north school. John P. Marshall, now of the faculty of Tuft's College, was the first principal of the north school. The building in which the north school was inaugurated was situated on Conant Street, in a corner of the lot now occupied by the dwelling of Roswell D. Bates. It is described by one of the original pupils as "a long, narrow and low structure, a little back from the road, with two large trees before it. The room was very low studded, at one end the desk and at the other the recitation platform; between were only three rows of double seats. The pupils were of good age and ability." The first examination was awaited with great interest. "In consequence of the desire of so many to be present at this time, it was deemed proper to hold the examination in the new spacious schoolhouse at New Mills. The performances were of a high order, and most gratifying to the committee and the numerous visitors."

After a few months better quarters were found for the school. On the present town-house lot was the chapel of the Wesleyan Society and, being then little or not at all in use, the real estate was sold to the town, and the meeting-house became a school-house. This chapel had been called the "Quail Trap," and the name clung to it so long as it was used as a school-house. When the town-house was built, the 'quail trap' was moved to Essex Street, where, ever since, it has been a residence in good and regular standing. At the close of the second term of the second year Mr. Marshall resigned to take a better position; A. P. S. Stuart succeeded him, and remained till the close of the fall term, 1853. Mr. Nathaniel Hills, late principal of the high school at Great Falls, N. H., was selected as Mr. Stuart's successor. Rev. James Fletcher succeeded Mr. Hills. The present principal is H. R. Burrington; Miss S. F. Richmond, Miss Annette Sawyer, assistants.

By a letter dated London, 30th November, 1853, addressed to the committee of the Holten and Peabody High Schools, George Peabody, in acknowledgment of the compliment paid him in the name of the south school, stated that he would transmit in the autumn of 1854, and thenceforth annually during his life, the sum of two hundred dollars for prizes as rewards of merit to pupils of both high schools at their yearly examinations, the entire amount to be common to both, and distributed as among the pupils of one school. The school committee determined "that a suitable medal shall be awarded and presented to every pupil who shall pass three years—constituting the entire course—in either of these schools, and whose attendance, deportment and advancement shall have been uniformly satisfactory to the teachers and committee." Later, 1867, Mr. Peabody established a fund of two thousand dollars, the income of which has been annually devoted to the purchase of medals and books for graduates.

The first graduates of the Holten High School to receive the Peabody Medal were the

CLASS OF 1855.

Emily G. Berry.	Addison P. Learoyd.
Mary A. Black.	Charles Learoyd.
Harriet G. Bradstreet.	Clarence Fowler.
Susan E. Perley.	Samuel P. Fowler.
Mary F. Putnam.	John H. Parker.
Nancy W. Proctor.	Adrian L. Putnam.
Asenath A. Sawyer.	Daniel W. Proctor.
Elizabeth P. Swan.	

In the spring of 1849 a lively episode occurred in No. 6. There the Rev. Daniel Foster, the preacher at the Wesleyan Chapel, was teaching, and things did not run smoothly between himself and the committee. Rev. Mr. Eaton, one of the committee, went in to examine the school. He undertook to hear a class in geography, but Foster remarked that the time was up, and cut short the committee-man's questions by sending the class to their seats. Mr. Eaton called a meeting of the board and reported what had occurred, and the board voted "that the whole committee pro-

ceed this afternoon to examine the school in District No. 6;" and they all filed into the school-house at half-past one. Foster gave them seats, and went on with his business. In a few minutes the chairman, Mr. Braman, said: "We have come here to examine this school." "It was examined yesterday," said Foster, with the inference that it wasn't to be examined again. Then followed a scene. The committee ordered scholars to stand up and recite, and the teacher told them to sit down. They were more in awe of their teacher than of the committee and they sat still and some cried. The committee finally withdrew as gracefully as they could, leaving behind a note in Foster's hands, informing him that he was forthwith dismissed.

At the adjournment of the annual meeting the matter was piping hot. The committee read a long report, covering nearly four newspaper columns, giving the facts of the case and justifying their action. On a motion to print twelve hundred copies, Foster himself moved to strike out all concerning No. 6; followed his motion by a violent attack on the committee and carried his point. And further, at the subsequent election, he was a successful candidate for membership of the board which turned him out, and the Rev. Mr. Eaton failed of re-election.

By an act of 1850 the Legislature gave towns the option of abolishing the district system. There was an immediate effort in Danvers to take advantage of this act. The larger expenses made necessary by the establishment of the two high schools just at this time gave a special incentive to the movement. In response to instructions to consider the subject of a radical change in the school district system with a view to greater economy and more efficient management, the school committee, through A. A. Abbott, Esq., presented in 1851 a very strong and clear report setting forth the desirability of abolishing the system. But Danvers never voted to abolish the system, though a number of attempts were made to secure this action. On March 24, 1869, the Legislature took the matter into its own hands and broadly enacted that "the school district system in the commonwealth is hereby abolished."

At the annual meeting of 1853 William L. Weston made a motion that a superintendent of schools be employed. Subsequently it was voted that the committee be instructed to hire Charles Northend. Mr. Northend, a native of the northern part of the county, had been long and favorably known as a teacher; his name appears in the first printed report, 1839, as principal in No. 1. His salary as superintendent was at first eight hundred and fifty dollars. The great extent of territory to be covered, from the "Rocks" to "Beaver Brook," from the "Devil's Dishful" to "Blind-hole" must have made the occupation somewhat akin to that of a circuit-rider. Mr. Northend served faithfully a number of years, and was the first and only school superintendent of Danvers.

In April, 1841, a move was first made for the establishment of what is now the Tapleyville district. Gilbert Tapley presented a petition with his own signature and thirty others for a new district to be carved out of Nos. 5 and 6; but inasmuch as his brother, Asa, was on hand with a list of remonstrants twice as long, the petitioners were respectfully given leave to withdraw. They withdrew just five years, and at the end of that time a division of No. 6 was effected on the petition of its own district committee, and the northern part thereof set off as a new district,—the last—No. 14. No record of a dividing line was made further than to adopt the one described in the petition, which has not been found.

With the division of the town it became expedient to readjust the districts. Six districts, namely, Nos. 2 (Port), 3 (Putnamville), 4 (Beaver Brook), 5 (Centre), 13 (Plains) and 14 (Tapleyville), together with a part of No. 6 (Collins House), were left to Danvers. One from each—S. P. Fowler, I. H. Putnam, Francis Dodge, Augustus Mudge, Calvin Putnam, Orrin Putnam and Hix Richards—were appointed to renumber and relocate the districts. No alterations were made in the lines of Nos. 2, 4 and 13. A portion of No. 14 was annexed to No. 5, and another portion to No. 6. No. 5 previously had 141 scholars and lost 7; No. 14 had 193 and lost 49; No. 6, having but 31 left in Danvers after the division of the town, gained 66. The districts numbered 13 and 14 in the old town became 1 and 7, other numbers remaining unchanged.

A short time after the dissolution of the annual meeting at which this report was accepted, dissatisfaction was manifest in the calling of a special meeting to alter the new lines of Nos. 5, 6 and 7. It was then voted to annex all of No. 6 that remained in Danvers to No. 7, and to call the consolidated district No. 6, with the proviso that if a majority of voters residing south of a certain line should within thirty days express to the selectmen their wish to form a district by themselves, they should then be allowed to organize as District No. 7.

The people south of the given line did wish to remain a district by themselves, and did not wish to be deprived of the old number, which had been a familiar designation of their locality for more than sixty years, and in June the numbers were changed back, —No. 6 to the old "Turkey Plain" District, and No. 7 to Tapleyville.

In the mean time the people of the old Village district, No. 5, were having a hot little war. The people in the immediate neighborhood of the church, and so on to Tapleyville, wanted to be a separate district and have a school-house of their own. They were outnumbered in the district, but succeeded in obtaining a vote of the town for the division of No. 5 by a line crossing Centre Street four rods east of the house of John Roberts; and all that portion lying east of the line was established as District No. 8. A

nice large school-house was erected just opposite the church; but the triumph of the seceders was short. Although they had fortified themselves with the opinion of eminent counsel, the division was tested by a suit at law and pronounced illegal. For a time the disappointed divisionists held out, and many of them actually let their places be sold under the hammer for the taxes levied for No. 5, and one man remained in Salem jail six months rather than pay them. But better counsels soon prevailed, the sold property was redeemed, and now only broad smiles wreath the faces of certain town fathers when the nearly-forgotten subject is mentioned.

The school-house stood for a number of years in melancholy emptiness, and was finally moved to the Plains, where it was used first as a shoe manufactory, and was then changed to a fine-looking dwelling, as innocent of anything like neighborhood quarrels as is its respected owner and occupant, Deacon Eben Peabody, of the Maple Street Church.

It was during the ephemeral existence of this No. 8, that the annexation of territory, east of Porter's River and Frost Fish Brook, from Beverly to Danvers took place. This new territory was, February 1, 1858, established as School-district No. 9. But at the March meeting of 1859, there being no longer a District No. 8, it was voted to change the new territory from No. 9 to No. 8, and thus without further change the districts have since remained: No. 1, Plains; 2, Port; 3, Putnamville; 4, Centre; 5, Beaver Brook; 6, Collin's House; 7, Tapleyville; 8, East Danvers.

In 1795 the total appropriation made by the town for schools was four hundred dollars; the proportion received by each district is interesting as showing their relative numerical importance: No. 1, $111.11; 2, $50.90; 5, $46.92; 3, $43.95; 7, $43.90; 6, $43.85; 4, $33.33; 8, $15.50; 9, $10.64.

In 1810 the appropriation had increased to $1250; 1820, $1800; 1830, $2500; 1835, $3000; 1840, $3500; 1845, $3 for each scholar between four and sixteen years; 1855, $5.50 for each scholar, four to sixteen, $1 of which amount for each scholar was devoted to high schools,—estimated, 2,400 scholars.

After South Danvers was set off, the first appropriation of Danvers, 1856, for schools was $3800 for common schools, $1200 for the Holten High School. In 1865, $5000 for common, $1300 for high; in 1875, $10,000 for common, $2100 for high; in 1880, $10,000 for common, $1750 for high; in 1887, $15,600 in all. The income on the Massachusetts School Fund and the dog tax have been added, and are not included in these figures.

At the annual election of 1880, next after the passage of the law enabling women to vote for school committee, twenty-seven Danvers women availed themselves of the right. Mrs. Andrew Nichols was the first woman to vote.

At the last annual meeting, 1887, the town voted an appropriation for evening schools. The first and only previous instance of similar action was in 1850, when some provision was made for evening schools for the poor from the State school fund.

The first school-house at the Plains was brought from Middleton the first part of this century by private enterprise, for the use of primary scholars. Older scholars went to New Mills until the Plains district was established, in 1816. The first district school-house was a small building erected under contract by Stephen Whipple, carpenter, near the spot occupied by the bakery.

The present grammar-school building at the Port was finished in 1849, and was dedicated July 25th, with considerable ceremony. There were addresses by the presiding officer, S. P. Fowler, by Charles Northend, then a teacher in Salem, by J. W. Proctor, Rev. Messrs. Appleton, Fletcher and Braman, Mr. Rust, commissioner of schools for New Hampshire, and "Mr. R. Putnam, an experienced teacher of Salem." The immediate predecessor of this building was the "old brick school," situated on a part of the same lot but much nearer the street. Hon. James D. Black has furnished the writer with some reminiscences of the brick house: "With my brothers and sisters my school days were spent in the district school-house at the Port till we attained the age of fifteen or sixteen years. Andrew Wallace taught most of the time of my earlier school days. I recall among my schoolmates Henry and Augustus Fowler; Jeremiah and Timothy Page; John, William and Parker B. Francis; Samuel and Josiah Pender; Warren M. and John Jacobs; William B. and Augustus Read; William and Joseph Lamson; Benjamin, Charles and William B. Chaplin; William Cheever, Edward Stimpson, William Endicott, George Kent, Philip Smith and Seth Stetson. Our schools were not graded; all ages attended the same school, from children in A B C to those in studies now confined to the high school. Quills were used in writing, steel pens came later. Most of Mr. Wallace's pupils made good penmen. He was succeeded by Richard Phillips, of Topsfield."

There was another smaller building called the "green door school-house," near the present railroad station, which was in use some eighty years ago, and was long ago moved by Peter Wait's father to Ash Street, where it has since been used as a dwelling; and of still earlier date was a school-house, close by the First Baptist Meeting-house.

The very first schoolmaster at the New Mills was Caleb Clark, who kept his school in the house of farmer Porter. His writing desks were boards laid upon barrels. Of his discipline, Deacon Fowler has written:

"He was in the habit of whittling a shingle in school and for small offences compelling the disobedient to pile the whittlings in the middle of the room; when this was accomplished he would kick them over, to be picked up again. He would sometimes require them to watch a wire, suspended in the room, and inform him when a fly lighted on it. For

greater offences he would sometimes attempt to frighten them into obedience by putting his shoulder under the mantel piece and threaten to throw the house down upon them. It is said of the worthy pedagogue, when deeply engaged in a mathematical problem that he became so absorbed in the work as to be wholly unconscious of anything transpiring around him, and the boys taking advantage of this habit would creep out of school and skate and slide by the hour together."

At a meeting held in District No. 3, Putnamville, July 6, 1812, a vote was passed to build a new school-house after the plan of the brick house at the New Mills and also "voted to purchase a piece of land of Rufus and Simeon Putnam in this district, being on the northwest corner of the school-house pasture, so called, adjoining the road and Zadoc Wilkins land, and the same land on which the old school-house stood before the present school-house was built."

The "present school-house" was built in 1787, under this vote passed at a meeting of "School ward No. 3," at the house of Zerubable Porter, namely: "voted that there be a school-house erected for the education of children on or near the spot where the old one formerly stood if the ground could be obtained."

Both the original building, the building of 1787, and the brick building of 1812 stood farther up the Topsfield road than the present Putnamville school-house, namely, at the head of North Street.

The second one of these buildings is still in useful existence, having been bought and moved, some half a century ago, by Perley Tapley, to become part and parcel of the little village which bears his name. It forms a portion of the house next west of the late residence of Gilbert Tapley. Among those who taught in this building were Master Andrews, a famous teacher, college educated, Jonathan and Benjamin Porter, Thomas Savage, Charles Wheeler, Charles Kimball, probably Clarissa Endicott, and surely Esther Forsaith, to secure whom Jonathan Porter went up to Chester, N. H. It was in this building, too, that Universalist meetings were first held. Elias Putnam taught the first winter school in the brick house in 1812–13, and his youngest son, Arthur, taught the last in 1851–52. Between them were, among others, Philemon Putnam, Oliver Woodbury, Edwin Josselyn; ladies, Clarissa Endicott (Porter), Nancy Putnam (Boardman), Sarah Rea (Bradstreet), Sally Shillaber.

The old school-house which preceded the present one in No. 5, the Village, both being in the line of succession to that first school-house of Parson Green, has been thus described by a former pupil: "The old brown house stood on a small barren, unfenced, unattractive triangle at the corner of Centre and Dayton Streets. There were three rows of benches on each side of the house, one side for the girls, the other for the boys. At one end there was a large open fire-place, and opposite it stood the master's lofty desk, to which he ascended by two or three steps. The windows were so high that scholars could not look out from the seats, and outsiders could not look in without climbing. No paint or ornament of any kind was indulged in. My earliest recollection goes back about sixty years, when Miss Edith Swinerton (Mrs. Aaron Tapley) was the teacher.

"The only other lady teachers to whom I went were Hannah and Betsey Putnam. They were sisters, 'solemn sisters.' They always taught together. Though very unlike in temper, they were devotedly attached to each other, and would consent to no other arrangement, no matter if they together received no more than enough for one, as was generally the case. Each had a chair and table, and sat facing each other. Both were very pious. Betsey read the Bible; Hannah opened with prayer. Betsey heard the lesson. She was of a very sweet and gentle spirit, and much beloved by her scholars. Hannah was more fiery and quick, and a terror to evil-doers. They always spoke with punctilious accuracy and dignity. A little girl was sent one day into the clothes-room to get the teacher's hose. Not knowing what was meant, and yet not daring to ask, the messenger brought in, perhaps, a shawl. 'I sent you for my hose, not my shawl.' Again the timid messenger retired and brought in a bonnet, when the exasperated teacher, in a sort of desperation, spoke, in unmistakable terms, 'Well, if I must so speak, bring in my stockings.'

"Betsey's way of showing her regard for a favorite pupil was by calling him out occasionally to read for her entertainment 'The Bears and the Bees,' 'The Beggar's Petition,' 'Procrastination' or some other choice selection from the 'English Reader.' Hannah's attentions were commonly bestowed in a somewhat different way when correction was needed. A reverend gentleman recalls an occasion of this sort, when his young form bent, at an ungraceful angle, over Hannah's knee, and the room reverberated more or less with the emphatic correction applied to that portion of a boy's body by nature designed to receive it. Their prized 'rewards of merit' consisted of little oblong bits of paper with yellow borders, and mottoes written thereon in their own hands. On Saturdays hymns and Bible verses were repeated as a sort of special exercise."

This present summer of 1887 a number of the survivors of the pupils of these estimable sisters have taken steps to erect a memorial over their hitherto unmarked graves in Wadsworth Cemetery.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

DANVERS—(*Continued*).

VILLAGES OF THE TOWN.

DANVERS is notably a town of many villages. There are in all eight railroad stations, not counting the junction, within its limits and five post-offices.

The first post-offices in Danvers, it may here be mentioned, were established as the result of a town-meeting held in 1828, when Dr. Nichols, Jonathan Shove, Nathaniel Putnam and Samuel and John Preston were chosen "to devise or digest any scheme relative to the Establishment of Post-offices in this Town." The action of the meeting is thus recorded:

"*Voted*, That there be but one post-office in this Town.

"*Voted*, That there be one more post-office added in this Town.

"*Voted*, To reconsider the last, 65 votes for and 65 votes against, the moderator decided the vote."

The committee's report was, however, adopted, in which it was recommended that the town have two post-offices, one between the old South Meeting-house and Pool's Bridge, to be called the South Danvers Post-office, and one at the New Mills, to be called the North Danvers Post-office, and this action was communicated to the Postmaster-General. For many years this office at New Mills or Danversport remained the only one within the present limits of the town. Mail addressed "Danvers" now comes to the Plains. The other offices are Danvers Centre, Tapleyville and Asylum. The latter, established chiefly for the convenience of the hospital, accommodates that locality in the midst of which is the General Putnam homestead, the home of the Prestons, Nichols, Verrys and other well-known names, commonly spoken of as "Number Four." While there is no central village there, the community has always maintained a distinctive identity, and has borne an enviable reputation for the character of its inhabitants. The name Danvers Centre is misleading; its only appropriateness is in the way of reminiscence and lies in the fact that the locality to which it is applied is the seat of the church which was the religious and political center, not only of Salem Village, but, for many years after the incorporation of the town, of all the northern portion thereof.

It is often called "the Village," a name altogether better, inasmuch as it is suggestive of the historic associations with which the locality abounds. Though by the destruction of the Mudge shoe-factory the Village no longer has any manufacturing business of its own, its people are full of life and public spirit. They keep up their end in public affairs, turn out to caucuses and town-meetings, and exercise a strong influence usually on the safe and conservative side of things. The history of this community, most interesting of all the villages of the town, has been given somewhat in the sketch of the early settlers and in that of its church.

Forty or fifty years ago, perhaps more, Putnamville, the name given to school district number three, extending from Porter's Hill to the Topsfield and Wenham lines, was the centre of much wealth and culture; of its people, Rev. Dr. A. P. Putnam has written in a series of very interesting letters. Concerning the Plains, the Port and Tapleyville, something remains to be said here.

THE PLAINS.—About the time Elder Sharpe sold his grant, which included nearly all of this present principal village of the town, to John Porter, the General Court formally laid out, as a great highway connecting the lower and upper settlements of the Colony, "the Ipswich Road." It crossed Farmer Porter's lands at their greatest width,—entering them at some point on Ash Street, and continuing through Elm and Conant Streets to Frost-fish Brook,—and it often served as a fixed boundary in the many subsequent divisions of the Porter estate. Almost exactly midway between the limits of "Porter's Plains," so these level lands were soon called, as measured on the Ipswich Road, another road or path was at a very early date opened northward, which, in due course, became the highway to Topsfield along the line of the present Maple and Locust Streets. The point at which the Topsfield road left the Ipswich road is the present "Square."

This meeting of roads had no immediate effect in the formation of anything like a village. As late as 1692 there was but one house in all the region, and that was the original Porter homestead, near the Unitarian Church. More than a full century had passed, when, in 1755, another road, High Street, was pushed down to the embryo settlement at New Mills and across the river to Salem, and even then the Square was scarcely more than a country cross-roads.

At the head of High Street there is standing a well preserved gambrel-roofed house, which was built about the time the street was laid out. It is the homestead of a family which, though not numerous, has been honorably prominent in the town's history. About the middle of the last century, an Andrews, then living on the Shillaber farm at Putnamville, wanted some bricks, and had to go to Medford for them. Andrews told the brickmaker that there was excellent clay in Danvers, and asked him to send some one to commence working it. "Here's my son," the brickmaker said, "just turned twenty-one, he can go if he wants to." The son came, boarded with Andrews, married his daughter, started the brick business here and built the house just referred to. His name was Jeremiah Page. He died June 8, 1806, in his eighty-fifth year, and is always spoken of as Colonel Jeremiah. At the breaking out of the Revolution he took a very active part, and commanded a company of militia at the fight on the retreat from Lexington, and throughout his useful life he was one of the leaders in town affairs. He had twelve children, three of whom were by a second marriage. His oldest son, Samuel, went with his father to respond to the Lexington alarm, and was where bullets were thickest. Subsequently he joined Washington's army about Boston, with a captain's commission. He was at the crossing of the Delaware, at White Plains and Monmouth, and shared the sufferings of Valley Forge. He was with Wayne at the storming of Stony Point, and to insure success to the bayonet

charge his company were ordered to remove the flints from their muskets. After the war he became a successful merchant at New Mills, Danversport. In the following sketch of that village, which, for a half century after the Revolution, was the commercial centre of the town, Captain Page must be again mentioned, and as a matter of convenience, some further reference to the family will there be made. Capt. Page died September 2, 1814, aged sixty-one, and with his father is buried in the High Street Cemetery. He held many public offices, and represented the town many years in the General Court.

At the beginning of this century there were but twelve dwellings in all the Plains, including two taverns, one store, one blacksmith's shop, one butchery and two brick yards. Until 1816 there was no public school here, and children had to go to New Mills. That year, on the basis of sixteen houses and one hundred and thirty inhabitants, a new school district was formed, as told elsewhere.

Several years before this, however, an effort had been made to educate the smaller children near home, and Deacon Gideon Putnam, Ezra Batchelder and Timothy Putnam bought a small school-house in Middleton and moved it here. Ezra Batchelder's house stood where the Maple Street School-house stands; "Uncle Timmy's" stood where his grandson, Otis F. Putnam, now lives. Deacon Gideon kept tavern and store at Richards' Corner. Deacon Gideon was the father of the courtly Judge Putnam, as has been said, and it is related that when the son was home on a vacation from college, and was obliged to play host to a stranger, he was chagrined at the meagre fare—it was probably washing-day—and paid the price of the meal to the guest "for picking the bones." In 1820 there were but twenty-one houses from the square along the whole line of the Centre horse-car route. The only house on the easterly side of Maple Street between the store at the corner of Conant Street and the Perry farm was the Captain Eben Putnam's house, which was once a part of the mansion on Folly Hill.

The butchery stood on Conant Street beyond Alfred Trask's residence, and was carried on by James Sleeper, who lived in a three-story brick building, which stood on the corner of Maple and Elm Streets, but projected far into the present widened location of Maple Street. This brick building was where the bank was first located. An "ell" fronting on Elm Street was long since moved some distance west, and is now owned by H. M. Merrill. In this "ell" Porter Kettelle did a small store-keeping business. The principal storekeepers then were Jonas Warren, who had bought out the Putnam's, but did not keep tavern, and "Johnny Perley," at Perley's Corner. Great was the rivalry of these two, and great was the business they did. For fair and liberal dealing Uncle Johnny's reputation suffered somewhat in comparison with Mr. Warren's. The former was a bachelor, of modest and soft speech, but sharp to keep the half cents on his side of the bargain. Amusing stories are told of the way war was waged between the two corners. The amount of goods sold and bartered was enormous. Heavy teams from far back in the country came in loaded with produce, as many as forty in a single day, and generally they went no farther than Danvers Plains, but exchanged their produce here for a long supply of fish, salt, molasses and other staples, including, of course, New England rum. Clerks were sometimes busy till midnight loading for the return trips.

The old hotel on the site of the present one was owned by Ebenezer Berry, who bought it of Jethro and Timothy Putnam in 1804. Mr. Berry came from Andover, and married a daughter of Captain Levi Preston. His two children,—Eben G. Berry and Mrs. Sperry are living, a sketch and portrait of the former appearing in subsequent pages. The building was sold at auction in three sections, 1838, and these were removed to make room for the erection of the present hotel. One of these sections has long been the home of Benjamin Henderson on Elm Street; a second sojourned for a while on Cherry Street, and was finally settled near the soap factory, while the hall was removed to a lot on Maple Street, owned by Amos Brown, was there occupied by Amos Proctor Perley as a dry-goods store, and burned in the fire of 1845. This hall had been originally a part of the mansion on Folly Hill, referred to in the opening lines of this sketch. Its floor was painted to represent mosaic work and its finish was thorough and costly. It was so annexed to the hotel that its length ran parallel to High Street, and the uses to which it was put were many and various. Here the Danvers militia congregated, with their burnished flint-locks and the paraphernalia of destruction, awaiting officers' inspection. Here the North Danvers Lyceum met, as chronicled where other literary societies are spoken of. Here the selectmen and assessors met. Here was the lodge-room of Jordan Lodge of Masons, and here, by no means last to be mentioned, were held those dancing parties at the mention of which old eyes kindle, and limbs, no longer sprightly, beat time to the echoes of the darkey Harry's fiddle, which linger still in their ears.

At both Warren's and Perley's corners grocery business is still carried on. Both are decidedly "old stands." Samuel Preston succeeded "Uncle Johnny" and kept store awhile in connection with the shoe business, then Amos Proctor Perley took it, and subsequently formed a partnership with his brother-in-law, Moses J. Currier, under the name of Perley and Currier. Mr. Currier survives; Mr. Perley, known and respected far and wide as "Uncle Proc," a man of sterling integrity, died a few years ago; his son, Charles N. Perley, present post-master, carries on the store.

Mr. Warren sold out his property at the Plains in

1841, and thenceforth carried on a wholesale business at the Port. Frederick Perley was the purchaser, perhaps a nominal one, for he very soon re-conveyed the whole to Elias Putnam. There were nine acres in all, on which Mr. Putnam built his shoe factory and the house in which he died, and through which he laid out Park Street. One acre on the corner, including the old store buildings, he sold for three thousand dollars to Daniel Richards. Mr. Richards was a native of Atkinson, N. H., who came here as a clerk to Mr. Warren in 1828, two months before he was twenty-one. "It was hard work to be a grocery clerk then,"—these are his own words—"but I weighed one hundred and seventy-five pounds and was pretty strong."

In 1833 the temperance-reform movement was working. The old store-keepers were unwilling to be "driven" to give up the time-honored custom of selling spirits and, as a consequence, Mr. Richards started a new "temperance store" in a building which stood where Beal and Abbott's store now is, and was well supported.

After Mr. Richards' purchase of the old corner, he sold the buildings and built the present store. A part of the old store-tavern is the Dougherty house on School Street, and another part is the Abbott house, corner of Elm and Park Streets. Mr. Richards died last November, 1886, in his eightieth year. He was for thirty years president of the National Bank, was a life trustee of Peabody Institute, and, in addition to the grocery business which is still carried on by his sons, he bought the Fowler mill property at Liberty Bridge, and built the grist-mill, now used for grinding rubber, using as many as one hundred thousand bushels of grain a year.

The open level land at the Plains made it a favorite place for military musters. In 1809 the brigade of General Eben Goodale formed a line nearly a mile long, from Perley's corner to the old house owned by Augustus Fowler. Twenty-five hundred troops, infantry, cavalry, bands, Governor Christopher Gore, a big dinner and a sham fight,—it was something of a day.

In 1813, during the war, another brigade of three thousand men mustered on the same ground, and Lindall Hill was covered with spectators, who nevertheless took themselves out of the way when a fort, which had been constructed on the hill, was stormed and burned. The Plains, too, was the place of celebration on "'Lection Day," the last Wednesday in May, when the Legislature used to first meet. "Who does not remember," wrote Dr. Osgood in his little pamphlet, "how thousands upon thousands congregated on Danvers Plains to see the horses run, the mountebanks tumble, the fandango whirl around and the drinking of egg-pop, punch, and something a little stronger? And then what lots of 'lection cake, buns, and molasses ginger-bread, rolling marbles and nine-pins, running and wrestling!" A colored man, Milan Murphy, a veteran of the Revolution, and called "Colonel," a chronic victim of all sorts of pranks, was a prominent figure in these festivities. He marched wearing his old three-cornered hat, a blue coat with brass buttons, and accompanied his voice to an old fiddle on which he played his one tune, "sometimes on one string, sometimes on no string at all." Colonel Milan was great at butting, making nothing of going through the head of a molasses hogshead. He found his match one day in an old ram, presently to be made, after the manner of his kind, into "spring lamb," at the butchery already mentioned. There was but one round, and the details have not been so well preserved as the conclusive fact, that "the ram knocked Milan more'n a rod."

It was about 1830 that the Plains began to be something. Then Samuel Preston was manufacturing shoes on the site of the present bank building; Eben Putnam, in a shop near his house; and others before long came in. Joshua Silvester moved his business from the little shop at the foot of Porter's Hill, and built a large factory and fine residence on the westerly side of Maple Street, in 1837. No man deserves more special mention in a history of Danvers than he, and a word might as well be written here as elsewhere. He was eighty-four years old, July 9, 1887, and is able to be about, though his sight is failing. He was born in Wiscasset, Me.; his family moved to Andover, Mass., when he was a child; he came here when he was eighteen to work at shoe-making; went with Frederick Perley one term at Atkinson Academy; clerked a year or two at Jonas Warren's store; began shoe-manufacturing in the shop at Porter's Hill, with a partner named Brickett, and remained after the dissolution of the partnership until the date of his removal to the Plains, as above. The fire which destroyed the new buildings at the Plains will be noticed. His numerous trips to England in connection with subsequent business enterprises, and his acquaintance there with Mr. Peabody, are spoken of in connection with the history of the Peabody Institute. He has served the town as selectman, in the legislature, and in other capacities, but what he is to be chiefly remembered for, is the far-sighted public spirit which he has always shown in the matter of public improvement, and especially in encouraging the setting out of shade trees. He has lived long enough to see the sticks which he set in the ground by hundreds, years ago, transformed into bowers of beauty, and children, who have grown to manhood as the trees have grown, and who realize the richness of their legacy, rise up to bless this benefactor. Last winter a public testimonial was made to him. (His death occurred, since writing, July 29, 1887).

Mr. Silvester married a sister of Francis Noyes, who had a large factory and dwelling just above Mr. Silvester's. Mr. Silvester's sister Mary married Thomas Bowen, the first post-master at the Plains, and his sister Sarah married John A. Learoyd. Mr. Learoyd

learned the currying trade in Byfield, came here in 1829 and worked as a journeyman for Brickett & Silvester, at Porter's Hill, and boarded with Mr. Silvester. He soon came down to the Plains, bought and moved the Baptist meeting-house of 1783, and began in it the currying business, which he carried on through life, and which one of his sons continues. He was from the first a leader in the Maple Street Church. His own house was planned for the convenience of neighborhood prayer-meetings, when all went to Dr. Braman's church, and when the separation took place the new church was formally organized in his parlors. He died February 1, 1880, and his wife survived him but three weeks. They left a family of children trained after their own hearts, and strong in church work. Among them one son an Episcopal minister; a daughter, the wife of a minister; another son for nearly twenty-five years superintendent of a model Sunday-school.

Amos Brown's wheelwright shop and house were between Noyes' factory and the place where Cherry St. was soon laid out. He and his brother Samuel, mason, came from North Beverly. If the life of wheels depends on sound stock and honest work, every pair which ever came out of Amos Brown's shop is running yet. Right across the street from Brown's shop was Deacon Frederick Howe's house and blacksmith shop. The Deacon was born in Methuen, in 1793, learned his trade of the Wilkinses, at the Centre, and at length established himself here. He died July 2, 1880, eighty-seven years old. He was a deacon of the First Church when he was made one of the first deacons of the Maple Street Church. He entered from the first into temperance reform, and early attached himself to the anti-slavery movement, without for a moment losing his interest, as many did, in the church. His blacksmith shop was naturally a centre for discussion on such questions, and was one of the rallying-points of the Liberty party. "It is remarkable that a man so occupied and of so laborious a life found time and strength to do so much in so many good causes. Between his anvil-strokes rung out true words that formed opinions of other men, and the tired hand was never too weary to use the pen for the same purpose." None of Deacon Howe's family remain here. One of his sons, Joseph W., is a prominent member of the New York bar, and had a hand in the conviction of Tweed.

Frederick Perley, a brother of "Uncle Proc," lived and manufactured shoes opposite Ezra Batchelder's. Joseph W. Ropes came here from Salem in 1838, and engaged in the tinware and stove business, which his son carries on. In subsequent pages will be found a sketch of Alfred Trask, who came to the Plains about 1835, and built up a large and prosperous business as a drover.

The establishment of the Village Bank here in 1836 was brought about by the efforts of leading shoe manufacturers, Elias Putnam foremost, and tended very much to the making of the Plains the business centre of the town. The new church was organized in 1844, there were better and larger schools, lands which had long been used only for farming were laid open for building, and the prosperity of the place may be judged from this clipping from the *Courier*, May 18, 1845, a paper published for a few years at South Danvers:

"But the greatest improvements seem to have been made in North Danvers. New streets have been opened, old ones built up, old houses transformed to new, and the whole village presents a thrifty and go-ahead appearance to the occasional visitor—not appreciated by the constant resident. The beautiful church, the noble public house, the large shoe factories and long ranges of handsome dwellings seem to have arisen by magic. High Street is so filled up that we can hardly tell where the New Mills village leaves off and where the 'Plains' begins. They are fast joining hands, and when they come together they will have quite a city-like appearance."

But a few months later a different story appears in the files of the same paper.

"Disastrous Fire in Danvers!

"A very alarming fire took place in the North Parish, in Danvers, at the Plains, last Tuesday afternoon (June 10, 1845), commencing at 2 o'clock.

"It broke out in an outbuilding belonging to the dwelling house of Mr. Joshua Silvester, and was said to have been occasioned by some children playing with friction matches. The fire spread with great rapidity, and seemed at one time beyond human control. The number of buildings of all sorts destroyed is said to be eighteen.

"These consisted of the dwelling, extensive store and barn of Joshua Silvester; the building occupied by John Hayman, painter, and F. E. Smith, tailor; the large building occupied by Francis Noyes as a shoe manufactory, together with his dwelling and stable; the building occupied by Amos Brown, wheelwright; and Coffin & Co., painters; two dwelling houses, shoe manufactory, barn and store house of Samuel Preston, who saved nothing but a couple boxes of shoes; Francis (Frederick) Howe's blacksmith shop; barn and store house belonging to A. Proctor Perley; a new building occupied by the post-office, and Clough's restorator. The Village Bank Building was a good deal injured by fire and water, and most of the furniture of W. L. Weston, the cashier, was greatly injured; but all Bank property was saved. The goods of Henry T. Ropes, who occupied part of the building as a tailor's shop, were saved. Mr. John Page's house was completely emptied, but uninjured by fire. The streets were filled with property taken from the stores and houses. A. P. Perley & Co.'s store was saved by unparalleled exertions, though for a long time in imminent peril. The stock was removed.

"There was a great scarcity of water, it being necessary to connect eight engines to obtain a single stream of water upon the fire. The nearest body of water was Frost Fish Brook, over a half a mile distant, at the Beverly line.

"The alarm reached Salem about a quarter past two o'clock, and several engines and fire companies immediately started, guided by the direction of the smoke, although it was not then known where the fire was, nor how imminent was the danger. Express messengers arrived some time afterwards for assistance, when the alarm was again sounded, and several more engines were despatched, making seven in all from Salem, preceded, accompanied and followed by great numbers of our citizens. The progress over the length of dusty road was exceedingly toilsome, with the almost vertical sun beating down upon their unsheltered heads, at a temperature of 120 to 130 degrees. Some were very much overcome by the exposure and fatigue. One man fell at the brakes of No. 6, and when the engine, having exhausted the water at the cistern where it was posted was withdrawn, he was lying upon the grass insensible, under the care of the physicians belonging to the company.

"The amount of loss is variously estimated, some going as high as $80,000. There was insurance in various offices—mostly of mutual companies—to the amount of over $30,000."

The work of rebuilding went speedily on, but, with the exception of the new bank building, there was a

lamentable want of anything like architectural design, and it must be confessed that from this want of foresight our main street presents a shambling and irregular appearance, not worthy of the general appearance of the town. There is not space to speak of the later development and prosperity of the Plains. Suffice it to say that Farmer Porter's fields are so well built up that few desirable house-lots remain unutilized, and, generally speaking, Danvers Plains is a beautiful village, and its residents have many rare advantages.

Danversport comprises two peninsulas, formed by three divergent forks of tide water, into each of which flow inland streams, known, commencing with the most southerly, as Water's, Crane and Porter's Rivers. As the highway across them runs, the main road to Salem, these rivers are about a third of a mile apart; at each bridge, tide-gates and mills. It is the lower peninsula between Water's and Crane Rivers that formed Governor Endicott's orchard farm, the first settled land in Danvers. The upper peninsula—Skelton's Neck, wherein came to be much commercial activity, and for many years the principal village of the town—was for a long time wild and unsettled. It was quite a hundred and twenty years after the Governor had broken ground on his grant that Archelaus Putnam went down through the woods and selected as a site for a tide-mill the place where the outcurving banks of the Crane River make the stream quite narrow. From his father, Nathaniel's, farm (the Judge Putnam place) he floated down the stream, or moved down its frozen surface, a cooper-shop, landed it about where the railroad station now is, moved it across the point made by the sharp bend of the river, and near the present location of Aaron Warren's brick store he made it into a dwelling, wherein, with his wife Mehitable, he lived, the pioneer of Danversport. Soon after the settlement of Archelaus, his brother John moved down, and together they built a grist-mill. Tradition is that the whole district was covered by a dense thicket, in which foxes abounded. This was a path through the neck to the upper settlements, marked by blazed trees, by which wood was taken to the water-side and boated to Salem. A more respectable way, two rods wide, was soon laid out from Porter's Plains to the mills, the origin of High and Water Streets. In 1760 this road was pushed on over Endicott's Neck, across Water's River, and so on to Salem. It was welcomed by land-owners on the lower side of that river, who conveyed to Samuel Clark, Jeremiah Page, Benjamin Porter and others for the benefit of the public "two rods wide through our land in a straight line as may be from the Bridge when built to North Field Proprietors' way, so called, at the Gate going into said Small's land." But there was almost no end of trouble within the town. The road was strongly opposed. For one thing the New Mills, as the little community soon came to be called, belonged territorially to the south parish, and the people there were unwilling to see the diversion of business and interest which the short cut to Salem would render inevitable. This is what Colonel Israel Hutchinson meant when he wrote in his private papers, "After they found they could not get it discontinued, they proposed to make it a toll-bridge. We found that would not by any ways do, as those people (of Salem and Marblehead) who had assisted us in repairing the way and building the bridges would be great sufferers, and it would promote traveling that way, which was what the leaders, who were sellers of rum, tobacco, etc., wished to prevent." Application was made to the North Parish "if they were willing to take us with all ways and bridges, but they (the South Parish) would not let us go. We then, after contending in the law more than seven long years, and although we had gained our cause in every case, being almost ruined, were under the necessity of proposing to the General Court that we would take all ways and bridges on ourselves." And the General Court looked on the proposition with favor, and in 1772 passed "An Act for the subjecting the Inhabitants of a Part of the Town of Danvers, called the Neck of Land hereafter described, to the charge of maintaining and supporting certain Bridges and Highways." After reciting the unhappy divisions and controversies, and the final and amicable compromise in ratification of which the act was passed, it was provided that the inhabitants of the Neck should constitute an independent highway district to maintain existing highways and bridges therein, and also any others constructed at the special instance and request of the inhabitants. The district, containing about three hundred acres, was bounded by a line commencing at Crane River Bridge on the Ipswich Road (Ash Street); thence following the river channel to Lieutenant Thomas Stevens' land (about at the southerly end of the railroad bridge); then straight across Fox Hill to the high-water mark on the south side of Water's River, a little west of the bridge; thence across the further end of the bridge to Porter's River, up the whole length of Porter's River, to the Ipswich Road again at Frost-fish Brook Bridge; and so on by the Ipswich Road (Conant, Elm and Ash Streets) to the place of beginning. These limits embraced a large tract now included in the Plains. The act remained in force nearly seventy years, until its repeal March 7, 1840. Evidently matters, however, had not been conducted in strict conformity to requirements, for in 1836 the Legislature confirmed the recorded proceedings, giving them the same effect as if the officers had been proprietors and all meetings called by competent authority.

From the beginning made by Archelaus Putnam, other mills were in a few years established on Crane River—wheat-mills in 1764, and a saw-mill in 1768. Associated with him in ownership were John Buxton,

Samuel Clark, John Pickman and Israel Hutchinson.

In the mean time other dwellings were erected along the new highway, the woods were cleared away, and a little village speedily grew up at "New Mills." On the banks of Porter's River sharp-eyed men from the ship-building towns saw excellent facilities for that business. The pioneer of ship-building here was Timothy Stephens, of Newbury, an enterprising and skillful builder. Presently a number of young men came down from the North, worked with Stephens and learned his trade, and permanently established themselves here. Some of these will be mentioned again.

For nearly half a century after the first mill on the Crane River the tide-power on the other two rivers remained unutilized. About 1798 Nathan Read enters into the history of Danvers. He was a graduate of Harvard, 1781, a tutor there of Harrison Gray Otis and John Quincy Adams, and afterwards studied medicine and kept an apothecary store in Salem. There he married, October 20, 1790, Elizabeth Jaffrey, and built the house in which the historian Prescott was born, on the present site of Plumer Hall. Among the achievements of his inventive mind was the first machine for cutting nails. He purchased the water-power on the Water's River, and with associates erected the Salem and Danvers Iron Works. At the same time he purchased part of Governor Endicott's old Orchard Farm, and on a sightly eminence overlooking the river built a mansion, which, after the successive ownership of Captain Crowningshield, Captain Benjamin Porter and the heirs of the latter, still retains much of its original stateliness. When the company were incorporated, March 4, 1800, Nathan Read is described "of Danvers;" seventeen others, of Salem. The corporation was authorized to hold thirty thousand dollars of real and three hundred thousand dollars of personal property, and reference is made in the act to the date of the original partnership, May 5, 1796.

In the mill-pond, in front of his residence, Read experimented by applying steam to the paddles of a small boat long before the Hudson was the scene of Fulton's larger results. He was the first man to apply to the government for a patent, and himself framed the first patent law. He represented the district in Congress, 1800–03. A political *jeu d' esprit* was current at the time of his candidacy for re-election to Congress, when his party, the Federalists, were called "Jacobins" by their opponents, the Republicans, and the candidate of the latter party was the Hon. Jacob Crowningshield:

To The Feds.

With disappointment how *you'd* pout,
With joy how *we* should grin,
Should we keep *Federal* Nathan out,
And get a Jacob *in*.

Soon after his service in Congress he removed to Maine, where he had purchased a large tract of land. He was there appointed a judge of Common Pleas. He died in Belfast, January 21, 1849, in his ninetieth year, leaving a numerous family. Nathan Read's petition:

"To the freeholders & other inhabitants of the Town of Danvers the Petition of Nathan Reed respectfully sheweth that he has it in contemplation to build certain Mills near Water's bridge, so called, on Waterses river, so called, & requests the Town to grant, convey & quit claim to him, his heirs and assigns forever its consent, license, right & permission to erect a dam or dams on & across said River; to build mills, piers and wharves & to construct a lock & flood gates any where nigh or adjoining said bridge, & to do every thing necessary for compleating & using said mills without any let, hindrance or molistation whatsoever of said Town.

"Nathan Reed.

"Salem, March 9th, 1795.

"At a legal meeting of the inhabitants of the Town of Danvers, March 9th, 1795—voted that the prayer of above Petition of Nathan Reed be granted.

"Att.: Gideon Foster, T. Clerk."

The business at the foundry brought up from the towns of the south shore, nurseries of iron-workers, several men who established families here. John Joselyn was one of the earliest of these, among whose children was Edwin Joselyn, who for thirty years was a noted teacher in Salem, and among whose descendents are the wife and children of Hon. Augustus Mudge. John Bates who followed an older brother here from Dedham a few months after he was twenty-one, is still living within sound of the machinery, and on the 20th of this present month May, 1887, will be ninety years old. Besides the foundry on the north bank of the river there was a nail-shop, and also an anchor-shop on the south bank. In the latter were forged the anchors of the frigate "Essex," an occasion celebrated by much punch. Work was steady at the anchor-shop, the plan being to manufacture a supply for some time ahead, mostly of a size for fishermen and coasters, and when the stock was too much reduced, a gang of expert anchor-men were called up from the south-shore who kept the one trip-hammer and the two pairs of bellows busy until anchors were sufficiently plenty again. One of these anchor-men, John Silvester, after a progressively successful career in the iron business, about 1858 bought the works at Danvers, and it is his son Benjamin Silvester who is at present carrying on the business of rolling iron at the old stand. The nail and anchor shops have long since been removed, the former fulfilling a mission of usefulness at Calvin Putnam's lumber yard, the latter now a barn in the neighborhood. Before Mr. Silvester's purchase the works were carried on by Matthew Hooper who built the large brick residence on the Salem side of the river. Within a few years a spur track has been laid from the railroad to accommodate the works.

The old-time ferry between Salem and Beverly, some two miles down the river, gave place to the Essex Bridge, now "Beverly Bridge," the proprietors of which were incorporated November 17, 1787. The people at New Mills were much opposed to the new

bridge for more reasons than one. It interfered somewhat with free navigation, in compensation for which the proprietors were required to pay £10 annually to the town treasurer; then travel from Ryall Side and the back country would naturally be more diverted from New Mills, and for this, while there was no compensation, the energetic inhabitants attempted a remedy. They built a bridge of their own across Porter's River in 1788. The land on the other side of the river then was a part of Beverly. Later, some three years after the incorporation of the iron works at Water's River, Samuel Page, Thomas Putnam, Caleb Oakes, Samuel Endicott, John Page and Hezekiah Flint were, June 23, 1803, incorporated as the Danvers and Beverly Iron Works Company. They were authorized to build a bridge of stone, thirty-two feet wide, for which Captain Burley furnished the material from his land on the Beverly side, to erect and use forever an iron manufactory and any other mills for useful manufacture, and to hold property to the value of three hundred thousand dollars, in two hundred shares. Option was given to Beverly to build the bridge, but the committee of that town preferred to relinquish the right of improving the river for a mill-pond and to pay twenty dollars annually towards the support of the bridge. Both the original structure and the stone bridge were for a long time called "Spite Bridge." Those who built it gave the name of "Liberty Bridge." By an act, February 8, 1811, the company having "lately discontinued their operations," the Salem establishment was sold to the company at Water's River. Nathaniel Putnam was many years agent and manager of the works. Subsequently the works were changed into a grist-mill, were long known as "Fowler's Mills, then "Richards' Mills," and within a few years have entered a new stage of usefulness, that of grinding up old rubber.

A man without a handle to his name must have been at a discount in New Mills. The busy little port was thick with "Cap'ns," with here a "Colonel," there a "Major." It was the home of a considerable number of men who were masters of ships out of Salem, of others who were prosperous ship-owners, merchants and millers. Such families were not numerous, and they naturally became connected and inter-twisted by marriages in a way perplexing to unravel.

Among the young men who were attracted by the ship-building at the new settlement was Samuel Fowler, of Ipswich, born there January 9, 1748–49. He was but seventeen when he came. At that time a young girl was just entering her teens who had the distinction of being the first white child born at New Mills. She was Sarah Putnam, daughter of Archelaus, the pioneer, and step-daughter of Colonel Israel Hutchinson. Two years before the battle of Lexington Samuel Fowler and Sarah Putnam were married. She is said to have been a very handsome woman, "with a snowy complexion and black eyes and hair." She lived to be over ninety-two years of age, and died November 19, 1847, having survived her husband nearly thirty-five years. Samuel Fowler, shipwright, became a ship-owner, engaged in trade with the West Indies, and is called on the records "merchant."

Captain Samuel Page, the oldest son of Colonel Jeremiah, married Rebecca, daughter of that William Putnam who went to Sterling, Mass, and he came down from Porter's Plains to become one of the first and leading citizens of New Mills.

Simon Pinder (sometimes Pindar, Pendar) was of the same age as Samuel Fowler, and came also from Ipswich. He married here Mehitable Dutch, and probably built the old house on Fox Hill, in which he lived and died, on the site of which is the new house of Mr. Dennett's. He was engaged in the fishing business and also kept a store near his house. He died July 4, 1813. An older house than his, by the way, on Fox Hill is the "Fairfield House," so called for Samuel Fairfield, who married Anna, a daughter of Colonel Hutchinson, and died November 26, 1810, aged sixty-two.

Aaron Cheever, some seven years older than Fowler and Pindar, was a blacksmith. He came early to New Mills from Newburyport.

Nathaniel Putnam was a son of Archelaus and a brother of Samuel Fowler's wife.

Moses Black, a full generation younger than those just mentioned, was born in Haverhill in 1779, and came here at the close of the last century. He was a "wool-puller," and established a prosperous business, was known as "Major Moses," and was the founder of the Black family, than which few in town have been more prominent and influential.

Nathaniel Putnam had a large family, among whom were Nathaniel, known as "Cap'n Nat," Mehitable and Phebe. Aaron Cheever had two sons, both sea-captains,—Thomas and William. Simon Pinder had seven or eight children, among whom were Samuel, Hitty, Hannah and Sally. Jere. Putnam, not previously mentioned, was the father of two other sea-captains, "Captain Jerry" and "Captain Tom."

Captain Nathaniel Putnam married Hannah Pindar; Samuel Pindar married Mehitable Putnam; Moses Black married Phebe Putnam. Captain Thomas Cheever married Sally Pindar; William Cheever married Betsey Waters, and at his death she became the third wife of Captain Nathaniel. Hitty Pindar became the wife of "Captain Jerry" Putnam.

One of Hannah Pindar Putnam's children, Nathaniel, married a daughter of "Captain Tom" Putnam, and subsequently moved to New York; and one of Betsey Waters (Cheever) Putnam's children, Abby, was married to a son of Captain Tom's, Captain Albert. Samuel Pindar lived in the "Mead House" on Endicott Street—a part of his father's estate—and worked at times for Major Black; he

died in 1838, was the only son who had a family here, and the removal of his own sons leaves no one now to represent the family name. A link between the Pindars and Pages was the marriage of a daughter of John Pindar, of Beverly, son of Simon, to Captain Samuel Page's oldest son, Jeremiah.

"Captain Tom" Cheever and his wife, Sally Pindar, lived with his brother, William, in that large house on Water Street which has fallen to such decay that the roof is tumbling in. Captain Thomas sailed forty years for Captain Joseph Peabody, of Salem. Captain William died at Calcutta when but thirty-two years old, and left no children to grow up; his widow re-married as noted. Of Captain Thomas's children, two daughters became wives of Dr. Ebenezer Hunt; William and his wife, Elizabeth, daughter of Captain Eben Putnam, live at Staten Island, N. Y.; and George, Miss Hannah P. and Mary P., widow of William, son of Major Moses Black, live here.

Captain Jerry Putnam, who married Hitty Pindar, lived in the house which he built, now owned by Charles Warren; he was of the fraternity of sea-captains, lived to be about seventy, and his oldest daughter, Mehitable, married into another family, not yet mentioned, well savored with salt—the Johnsons. The Johnson home was a small house which stood near Dr. Frost's residence. The father, William, and three sons, William, Henry and Thomas, were all sea-captains. The son William lived in Salem; Thomas lived in the house next north of Charles Warren's, and of his children, Thomas W., of Salem, is the secretary of the Holyoke Insurance Company, and George was lost at sea, leaving two boys now in our schools. It was Captain Henry Johnson who married Captain Jerry's daughter; he first went to sea when twelve years old as cabin-boy for Captain Tom Cheever, and after he gave up the sea, settled down on his father-in-law's place. His son, the late James A. Johnson, was the last to follow the traditional occupation of the family.

The family trees of the Pages and Fowlers intertwine in various ways. Samuel Fowler, the young man who came from Ipswich, had four children to grow up. Colonel Jeremiah Page was twice married, and his eldest son, Captain Samuel, was much older than the children of the second wife. It is not, strange, therefore, that while Samuel Fowler's son, Samuel, married Captain Samuel Page's daughter, Clarissa, that the younger son, John Fowler, should have married Captain Samuel's half sister, Martha, and that Martha's brother, John, should have married Mary, a sister to Samuel and John Fowler. Samuel Fowler, Jr., born in 1776 and died in 1859, lived in the square brick house on the corner of Liberty and High Streets, and carried on an extensive milling and tanning business about Liberty Bridge. His tan yard, which remained in the family until a few years ago, is one of the longest established in the country. Of his children three sons survive,—Deacon S. P. Fowler, whose life runs parallel with the century, and of whom a sketch follows this article, Henry and Augustus. A daughter, Rebecca, married Aaron Eveleth; another, Sally Page, James D. Black, a son of Major Moses. The latter and Miss Maria L. are the surviving daughters. John Fowler built the Bates house near the iron foundry, from whom it passed to two sea captains, Captain Edward Richardson and Captain Stephen Brown, and from them to John Bates, its present venerable owner. John Fowler's oldest son, "master mariner," died in the Gulf of Mexico in 1840; another, Jeremiah, was one of the pioneers of California, established the first diary in San Francisco, is still living, a successful old man, in Placer County, that State, and within a few years his family has re-allied itself to Danvers, through the marriage of one of his sons to a daughter of the late Captain Andrew M. Putnam.

John Page and his wife, Mary Fowler, lived in his father's homestead at the Plains. He saw the growth of the Plains village from almost nothing to the business centre of the town, and contributed to this progress. The manner in which he carried on his father's business of brick-making will be noticed when that industry is spoken of. He was an honored and representative citizen of the town. His widow long survived him, and died, lacking a month of ninety years. Like her mother, Sarah Putnam, she was distinguished in her youth for the fine personal appearance, which she retained in a remarkable degree in her old age; she was of more than ordinary intelligence, and read extensively to the latest period of her life. The connection between Major Black's family and the Fowlers has been noticed. A direct Black-Page alliance was made by the marriage of the Major's son, Moses, Jr., to Harriet N., daughter of John and Mary Page. Mrs. Black and four sisters, Mrs. Hunt, Mrs. Edgerton, Mrs. Weston and Miss A. L. Page are the surviving children of John Page. It is unpleasant to know that in the male line this name, which has been so conspicuous in our history, is here extinct.

Beside the children of Major Moses Black already mentioned were Mrs. Sarah L. Holroyd, Mrs. Mary O. Smith, Archelus P. and Joseph S. The latter was a son-in-law of Moses Putnam, and his partner; he died in 1861. William, Moses, James D. and Joseph S. Black were, each in his peculiar way, prominent and leading citizens. James D., the only surviving son, who lives at Harvard, Mass., has furnished the writer with some interesting reminiscences which have been used in the sketch of the schools.

These families here mentioned by no means included all of the "first families" of New Mills. There were Captain Crowningshield, and later Captain Ben Porter, at the Read mansion, Captain Israel Endicott and other Endicotts, Caleb Oakes, Major Joseph Stearns, Deacon Benjamin Kent, ship builder, Josiah

Gray, Captain Jacob Perry, the Webbs and so on. Much might be written of them were there plenty of space and time. Some will be mentioned again in connection with brick-making and other industries, and other representative names than those already mentioned will appear in the sketch of the local church, the Baptist, in the account of the anti-slavery excitement, and especially in the list of the company formed during the war of 1812, an account of which here immediately follows.

In the summer of 1814 nearly sixty men, mostly of New Mills--the solid men of the place in more senses than one, who were exempt from service—voluntarily associated themselves into an independent company of defence. They met in the school-house July 16th, organized by the choice of Captain Samuel Page as moderator, and Captain Thomas Putnam, clerk, and passed, among others, these votes:

"*Voted*, That the Alarm post be the front yard of Capt. Saml. Page's house. *Voted*, That the company meet at their Alarm Post on Saturday next at 4 o'clock P. M., well equipped, including Knapsack, etc.

"*Voted*, That as we have pledged ourselves on the points of Honor to be *Always Ready* and willing to obey the commanding officer of said company, therefore any member who does not at all times (when ordered) attend at the Alarm Post in good season and well armed and equipped shall be liable to be reprimanded for each neglect by the commanding officer."

The muster-roll of the New Mills minute-men:

Samuel Page	Captain.
Thomas Putnam	Lieutenant.
Caleb Oakes	Sargent.
John Endicott	Sargent.
John Page	Clerk.
Richard Scidmore	Drummer.
Stephen Whipple	Fifer.
Ephraim Smith	Fugle-man.

Privates.

Thomas Cheever.	Daniel Hardy.
Edward Richardson	Jona. Sheldon.
Hooper Stimpson.	Seth Stetson.
Stephen Brown.	Michael Saunders.
Samuel Pindar.	Ezra Batchelder.
John Fowler.	Thos. Symonds.
Benjamin Kent.	Ephraim Smith.
Moses Black.	Hercules Jocelyn.
Daniel Putnam.	Jeremiah Page.
Samuel Trickey.	Benjamin Wellington.
William Francis.	William Trask.
Samuel Fowler.	Moses Putnam.
Joseph Stearns.	Israel Andrew.
Jonas Warren.	Nathl. Mahew.
Eben Dale.	John Wheeler.
George Waitt.	David Tarr.
Nathaniel Putnam.	John Russell.
John W. Osgood.	John Kenney.
Allen Gould.	Jacob Allen.
Ebenezer Jacobs.	Daniel Usher.
George Osgood.	Israel Endicott.
Henry Brown.	James A. Putnam.
Ebenezer Berry.	Israel Hutchinson.
William Cutler.	

Of the *personnel* and appearance of this company fortunately an interesting sketch has been written by Deacon Fowler. Here were men whose age had added breadth to shoulders and rotundity to forms, men who held commissions in the Revolution, shipmasters who had visited foreign climes, skippers and hook-and-line men; shipwrights, wealthy shoe manufacturers, men who first pressed bricks by machinery and found a mint in the clay-pit; tanners, merchants, farmers, artisans, officers of the town, county, church, State, physicians, and—enough! Truly a company extraordinary in its make-up. They marched, a little stiff in the knee-joints, from their Captain's down to the woods in the lane (River Street) for practice in firing, till "The Girl I Left Behind Me" quickened their energies and warmed them up. Amid generous plaudits it is to be presumed the veterans moved on with taciturn dignity. The young men smiled, but only some sour Federalist growled," There goes the old ring-bone company." The weapons were of every sort—the King's arm, good for a charge of ten fingers, two balls and five buck-shot; the long heavy ducking gun, requiring liberal allowance of ammunition; the large-calibre "refugee." The firing by platoons was somewhat theoretical—there was too much individuality about it. Blank cartridges being used there was little danger in front. Not so in the ranks, for from the vents of the old firelocks a generous discharge of powder was at each shot directed towards the exposed ear of the man on the right, until the word was passed down, "Turn up your guns when you fire." At one of the numerous false alarms that the British were landing at Salem, the company marched at midnight as far as Gardner's farm. It was noticed that they were divided somewhat peculiarly. The well-fed, heavy, short-legged and short-winded men held the rear, under the lieutenant, while the front rank, composed of the leaner and longer-legged, advanced faster under the captain. The people of Salem were in constant fear of naval attack, and people inland were so alert that it is said a shot from a battery, alarmed by some harmless fishermen, caused quick commotion to the extreme limits of New Hampshire. The escape of the "Constitution" from English ships into Marblehead harbor was witnessed by Danvers men from Folly Hill. Earthworks, mounting two iron four-pounders, were thrown up at Water's River, and several prize vessels laid off the ship-yards during the war. The last survivor of the New Mills minute-men was Jonas Warren.

A school-boy of sixty years ago recalls that then Capt. Samuel Page was the leading merchant, and that his mercantile business was not confined to coasting, but foreign goods were largely imported. His fine mansion, still standing, was regarded as the most aristocratic residence of the village. He had years before erected several large warehouses to accommodate his business.

Capt. Nat Putnam and Capt. Tom Cheever were partners in store-keeping in the brick building until recently occupied by Aaron Warren. Capt. Nat built as his residence the large brick building opposite, known as the Bass River House, and a very fine residence it must have been in those days. After Capt. Page's death, Putnam and Cheever occasion-

ally used the storehouses, and so also Major Black, to store sheeps' pelts. Into one of them a cargo of smuggled rum was surreptitiously unloaded in the dead of night. Though a blacksmith, who had to be aroused to mend the broken cann-hooks, was let into the secret, the vessel got away before daylight, and nothing was for a long time known of the close proximity of so much exhilarating fluid. But the stuff could not be sold, and remained an elephant in somebody's hands until long after its advent somebody else "peached," and a long line of government trucks entered the village and confiscated the whole stock.

The following list of the earliest Danversport vessels was made by Mr. Crowley, of the Salem Custom-House, at the writer's request. The date is that of register. The owner's name follows the name of the vessel.

1789.	Schooner "Nancy"	Samuel Page.
1792.	Schooner "Sally"	Samuel Page.
1792.	Schooner "Alice"	Haffield White.
1792.	Brig "Lucy"	Caleb Low.
1793.	Schooner "Hawk"	Samuel Page.
1794.	Schooner "Clarissa"	Samuel Page.
1795.	Schooner "Industry"	Samuel Fowler.
1796.	Schooner "Sally"	Fowler & Pindar.
1798.	Schooner "Esther"	Samuel Fowler.
1799.	Schooner "Eliza"	Samuel Page.
1799.	Schooner "Two Brothers"	Samuel Page.
1800.	Schooner "Five Sisters"	Samuel Page.
1801.	Brig "William"	Samuel Page.
1802.	Ship "Putnam" 266 tons	Samuel Page and others.
1804.	Schooner "Jeremiah"	Samuel Page.
1804.	Schooner "Rebecca,"	Samuel Page and Sol. Giddings.
1804.	Schooner "William"	Wm. Pindar, Thos. Putnam, Simon Pindar, Caleb & Oakes.
1806.	Bark "Wm. Gray"	Wm. Pindar & Thos. Putnam.
1806.	Schooner "Polly"	John Fowler & John Page.
1807.	Schooner "Augusta"	Caleb Oakes.
1810.	Brig "Rebecca"	Samuel Page, J. H. Andrews, Samuel Endicott.

One of Samuel Page's partners in the ship "Putnam" was the merchant, Abel Lawrence, and her master was Nathaniel Bowditch.

The sturdy ship-wrights at New Mills helped out their country in the times that tried men's souls. Beside the smaller craft, three fine ships,—the "Grand Turk," the "Jupiter," the "Harlequin,"—were built here during the Revolution. Before the war, Pindar, Kent and Fowler took a contract to build a three hundred and fifty ton ship for a London house. Capt. John Lee was sent from England to superintend her building. Impending hostilities prevented the owners from rigging and fitting her, and as long as she remained on the stocks the builders could not, according to contract, demand their pay. Capt. Lee refused to allow her to be launched, but all the carpenters mustered one night and slid her into the water. The builders might better have thrown up the bargain and make the most of the ship, but they chose to bring a fruitless suit against the American agent of the Englishmen, and in the meantime the good ship, utterly uncared for, floating with the tides, rotted in the river.

Old newspapers which contain "arrivals" at the "Port of Danvers" give an insight into the amount and character of the business here transacted. A few sample entries during the summer of 1848 are here given,—

"June 2d.—Arr. sch. 'Albert,' with frame of Baptist Meeting House.
"3d.—Arr. sch. 'Henry Chase,' corn and flour, to J. Warren.
"4th.—Arr. sch. 'New Packet,' lumber, to J. W. Roberts.
"5th.—Arr. sch. 'Franklin,' lumber, to Asa Sawyer, Jr.
"7th.—Sld. sch. 'Franklin.'
"8th.—Sld. sch. 'Aurora."
"9th.—Sld. sch. 'New Packet.'
"11th.—Arr. sch. 'Pilgrim,' corn, to D. Richards.
"20th.—Sld. sch. 'Minor,' bricks, from Nathan Tapley.
"22d.—Arr. Sloop 'Lady Temperance,' stone, to M. Black.
"27th.—Arr. Brig 'Ellen,' corn, to D. Richards. Schs. 'Franklin' with lumber, to A. Sawyer, Jr.; 'Regulator,' wood and sleepers, to E. R. R.
"30th.—Arr. schs. 'Otter,' lime, to A. W. Warren & Co.; 'Henry,' lumber, to Calvin Putnam."

From April 1 to November 30, 1848, there were 172 arrivals including 58 cargoes of lumber, 31 wood and bark, 43 flour and grain, 17 lime, 3 molasses, 2 salt, 4 coal, 12 in ballast, 2 unknown. Seventeen vessels loaded for shipment to other ports, two cargoes being sent to the coast of Africa. It is said that the first cargo of coal ever landed here was owned by Parker Brown, but nearly as early a venture in this new combustible was that of J. W. Ropes. His advertisement thus appeared in August, 1849.—

"*Coal.*

"Now landed at Black's wharf, and for sale by the subscriber, a cargo of very superior anthracite coal which will be sold at the wharf or delivered as cheap as can be purchased in Salem.

"JOSEPH W. ROPES."

The following is the summary of the arrivals in 1860:

Jonas Warren, lime, flour, grain, etc.,	44
Joshua Silvester, iron,	12
Daniel Richards, grain,	16
H. O. Warren & Co., coal and wood,	32
Josiah Gray & Son, wood,	5
Moses Black, Jr., coal and wood,	34
Samuel Low, wood,	1
——— Beckford, grain,	5
Augustus Tapley, coal,	1
Calvin Putnam, lumber,	25
J. Bragdon & Co., lumber,	10
Aaron Eveleth, lumber,	12
D. Cann, lumber,	1
Whole number of arrivals,	198

The Legislature authorized the town to put down channel poles in the rivers in 1844. Recently the draw-bridges at Beverly were widened to accommodate larger coal vessels than could otherwise come to Danversport. Calvin Putnam established the present extensive lumber business, on the site of Deacon Kent's ship-yard, about thirty-five years ago.

THE TAPLEYS AND TAPLEYVILLE.—About the first of this century an old man was driving a heavy load of oak ship-timber, along one of the roads in the western part of the town. There had recently been a very heavy fall of snow, and the roads were so full that turning out was a matter of great difficulty. Suddenly out of the drifts there appeared an approaching sleigh, and behind the driver sat the magnate of whom something has been said, "King" Hooper. "Turn out," cried Hooper. "Can't do it, load's too heavy," said the old man, "let your man take one of these shovels and we'll soon make room." "No, half the road's mine, and I'll wait here till I get it." "All right" was the complacent reply, and slipping out the pin he went back home with his oxen, leaving the load of logs effectually blocking the narrow path. This was Gilbert or, as it more often appears "Gilbord" Tapley, the ancestor of the numerous family of that name in Danvers, many of whom have borne prominent and honorable parts in the quiet annals of the town. He was the brother of John Tapley, from whom Tapley's Broook, in Peabody, derived its name. Another brother located in Maine. Gilbord came up to Salem Village and bought, in August, 1747, of Joseph Sibley, a farm of sixty-seven acres, bounded by Amos Buxton, Joshua Swinerton and others, the river-meadows, and a "way" now called Buxton's Lane. His dwelling on this farm was standing until within thirty to forty years on the Andover turnpike, a few rods south of the Wm. Goodale place. He was married three times; first, to Phebe, daughter of John, and sister to Dr. Amos Putnam; second, to Mary, widow of Nathaniel Smith; third, to Mrs. Sarah Farrington. Phebe was the mother of Amos, Daniel, Phebe, Joseph, Aaron, Asa, Elijah; Mary was the mother of Sally, eight children in all. Through only two of these was the name preserved here, Amos and Asa. Of the daughters, Phebe married Wm. Goodale, of Hog Hill; Sally, Porter Putnam. Of the other sons, Daniel married Mary Tarbell; Joseph went to Lynnfield and left very numerous descendants; and Elijah established a family at Wilton, N. H. Amos Tapley's home was in near neighborhood to his father's, the present Joel Kimball place. His wife was Hannah, daughter of John Preston, who lived where George H. Peabody does now, not far away. They were the parents of twelve children, seven sons. Of the sons,—David, Amos, Moses, Aaron, Daniel, Philip and Rufus,—Moses and Daniel were among the pioneers of Indiana; Amos went to Lynn and was the father of Amos P. Tapley, one of the most respected citizens of that city; Philip died at sea, young; and upon David, Aaron and Rufus depended their father's branch of the family name at home. David's son Alvin was the father of Joseph A. Tapley, of Danversport. Aaron lived close by his father, on the James Goodale place, and left no son. Rufus took his father's home, and later moved next south of the First Church; three of his children went to Saco, Me., of whom Rufus P. was for seven years a judge of Maine Supreme Court; none of the children are left here. Thus the only lineal male representatives of Gilbord's son Amos, now in town, are Joseph A. Tapley and his sons.

Now of Gilbord's son Asa. It was said that Gilbord's second wife was the Widow Smith; she brought three daughters into the family, two of whom quite conveniently became wives of two of the sons, while a third, Ruth, married Matthew Putnam, and thenceforth presided over the old Nourse witchcraft homestead, and became next neighbor to her sister Elizabeth. For it was Elizabeth Smith whom Asa Tapley married, and their home was the old house which was sold to the late Elisha Hyde, and until within a few years stood on the street which bears that man's name. Asa came to own a great deal of land in that neighborhood. His children were Daniel, Asa, Betsey, John, Gilbert, Sally, Nathan, Perley, Jesse, Mary. Daniel lived first in the brick house which was the old home of Dr. Amos Putnam, near Felton's Corner; Nathan and Asa were brick-makers, the former living first in the house which he built, now occupied by his son-in-law, William H. Walcott; Asa in the house next south; while the house of Hix Richards, who married their sister Betsey, completed the trio of adjoining Tapley houses. The son John settled in Dover, N. H. Gilbert and Jesse established themselves near their father's home; the former in the old Tarbell house, which stood on the corner of Hyde and Pine Streets, where he made shoes and money, the latter at the other end of Hyde, on Collins Street. Perley lived and died in the house into which Gilbert afterwards moved and died, on the corner of Pine and Holten Streets. Looking back at the character and standing which these sons who remained in Danvers maintained, it is using a very moderate expression to speak of them as a remarkable family. Some of them died wealthy, all respected. None now survive. Gilbert reached the greatest age, eighty-five, and was the last survivor, his death occurring October 10, 1878.

Perley Tapley was a famous mover of buildings, and many are the feats which he and his long team of oxen accomplished in this direction. About 1843 he moved a building in which Matthew Hooper had manufactured boxes, near Felton's Corner, to the brook at "Hadlock's Bridge," and in it Perley and Gilbert Tapley began the manufacture of carpets. This building was burned in June, 1845, and another was immediately built. Gilbert Tapley carried on the business alone from 1847 to 1864, when the Danvers Carpet Company was formed. For many years the industry thus established gave employment to many people. In 1876 there were about one hundred employees, who turned out one hundred and fifty thousand yards of ingrain carpets.

About the time the carpet business was started Perley Tapley began moving buildings from far and

near, and converting them into dwellings. Many of these remain, the original settlers of the village, which, thus created, very properly took the name of Tapleyville. A humorous squib which appeared in the *Danvers Eagle* October 30, 1844, was concocted on one of those trips which leading South Parish men used to make to hear Dr. Braman preach Fast-day and Thanksgiving sermons. It was headed "Tapleyville in 1844." "There is one peculiarity," it says, "which we believe is not common to any other place. By the city regulations it is provided that no house or other building shall be erected within the territory, and the city is entirely composed of buildings which have been moved into it, and by this means it is constantly increasing. Nothing is more common than to see houses of all sizes and shapes and of every quaint style of architecture traveling into the place and seating themselves down in some comfortable situation to rest just so long as the mayor will allow them to remain. . . . We had the curiosity to look into the City Hall when the Council was not in session, and found it ornamented with various agricultural implements. Like the rest of the city, it looked like a traveling concern, and was built of rough slabs. We understand it once took a tour of observation through the streets of Salem, and afterwards returned to its native place." The "mayor" was, of course, Perley Tapley. The building last alluded to was a log cabin, which had been conspicuous in the Harrison campaign processions. It was the great feature of a great procession at Salem, when people gazed in admiration at Perley Tapley's skill in managing the forty or fifty yoke of oxen attached to the cabin, especially in turning corners. A glee club sang from the balcony, and a halt was made on Salem Common, where there was a great dinner, and an able and eloquent speech by Daniel Webster.

Mr. Tapley is said to have been the first to move a brick building. Having a church-steeple on his hands at one time, he cut it up sectionally into shoemakers' shops; one is to be seen near the Tapleyville Station. He was moving a building on floats from Boston to East Boston once, and being somewhat out of his element on any other than a solid foundation, was in danger of being blown out to sea; in the crisis he is said to have called vehemently to the pilot to "gee." Wishing a new school-house for his village, he did what he could to make the old Number 6 building "too small" by loading every child of school age in his neighborhood into his ox-cart and filling the room to overflowing. Many characteristic stories of his energetic way of doing things might be collected. He was not forty-eight years old when he died. He leaves no sons, but two daughters in town. In addition to the single family mentioned as the representatives of old Gilbord's son Amos, there are now in town but five other adult male Tapleys,—George and his two sons, of the line of Daniel, son of Asa, and Gilbert Augustus and his only son, of the line of Gilbert, son of Asa.

Tapleyville is supplied with a post-office and a railroad station. As a school district it ranks among the three largest; as a business and manufacturing centre it is one of the busiest in town. Within a few years a large tract of land bounded by Holten, Pine and Hobart Streets has been opened and is well taken up by new dwellings. The new streets are named for the pastors of the First Church,—Clarke, Wadsworth, Braman, &c. Within the present year, 1887, a fine three-story building has been erected by the Agawam Tribe of Red Men for society and business purposes.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

DANVERS.—(*Continued*).

MISCELLANEOUS.

Temperance.—It is a fact too well known for comment that a typical New Englander of a century ago loved rum. It was potent at "raisings," it added to hospitality, it lent wisdom to council, eloquence to speech, strength to effort. It was as necessary to settle a minister as to swap a horse. It was the article most often charged on the grocer's day-book; it was absolutely common. And it made men drunk. After the revolution home production greatly increased, and during the first part of this century intemperance became a crying evil.

In the year 1812 a temperance society was formed. It was the first in this State, perhaps the first in the world,—The Massachusetts Society for the Suppression of Intemperance. Three Danvers men were of its members,—Hon. Samuel Holten, Rev. Dr. Wadsworth and Joseph Torrey, at least two of them leaders anywhere. And this accounts for the fact that so early, two years after the parent society, a temperance society was started here. It was called the Danvers Moral Society, and had for its officers a fine set of men who neither shrank from the work nor feared the opprobrium of an unpopular reform,—Dr. Holten, president; Rev. Messrs. Wadsworth and Walker, vice-presidents; Drs. Torrey and Nichols, secretaries; Fitch Pool, treasurer; Eleazer Putnam, Samuel Page, John Endicott, Sylvester Osborne, James Osborne, James Brown, William Sutton and Nathan Felton, counsellors. Deacon Samuel Preston gave in his old age some reminiscences of his early connection with the society, himself one of the early secretaries. The board of managers, he said, met once a month. "As cases one after another came up, to particular members of the board was assigned the duty of visiting and trying to persuade the fallen one to break off his habits and to lead a sober and useful life. This was followed until reform was effected or the case became hopeless, when his or her name was added to a list of

names which were to be handed to the selectmen of the town to be 'posted' as common drunkards, and the dealers in intoxicating drinks were forbidden to sell or give to any person whose name was so 'posted.' Several lists of some eight or ten names were so made out and posted in public places. The process created so much bitter feeling that it was abandoned after some years of trial. The binding principle of the societies was not, in the beginning, total abstinence; other methods had to be tried before." The Moral Society at first went no farther than to declare against the daily use of ardent spirits. It took nineteen years of progress to strike out, in 1833, the word "daily."

The first indication of the new reform upon the records of the town is a vote passed at the annual meeting of 1818, thanking the selectmen (Nathan Felton, Jonathan Walcot, Sylvester Proctor, Daniel Putnam, Nathaniel Putnam), for the measures by them adopted "to prevent those given to intemperance in drinking, from wasting their health, time, and estates by the excessive use of ardent spirits; and that the present board be instructed to pursue the system commenced by their predecessors."

Nine years later, May 27, 1827, Caleb Oakes carried a motion for a committee of nine to enforce the laws and "to give notice to the selectmen of every licensed person known to violate the laws that their approbation of such person may hereafter be refused." This committee consisted of Caleb Oakes, Fitch Pool, Samuel Fowler, John Peabody, Samuel Preston, John W. Proctor, Elijah Upton, Nathan Poor and Samuel Taylor. It was in this year, 1827, that the first public address advocating total abstinence was delivered in Danvers. The speaker was a young physician, Ebenezer Hunt, who thus early took the advanced stand upon this question, which throughout the course of his well-rounded life he fearlessly took on other great questions which later agitated the country.

In 1830 the town were asked to take certain measures "agreeable to a request of the Danvers Moral Society." The next year the overseers of the poor were instructed not to furnish liquors at the almshouse, except as recommended by the attending physician.

Two years later, and at a meeting held at the Brick Meeting-House in the north parish March 4, 1833, public sentiment had been so far affected that the first no-license vote was passed. John W. Proctor, a lineal descendant of the original settlers of that name, a young lawyer whose name must appear often and honorably in any chronicles of his native town, then wrote in lead-pencil certain resolutions which were offered to the meeting by a young man whose birth was contemporaneous with that of the century, and who to-day is still with us, despite his advanced age maintaining the active superintendence of the one of the most important departments of town affairs, of whom more may be learned in the biographical sketch which follows, Samuel P. Fowler. The resolutions were these:

"*Voted* that the following order be adopted:

"*Whereas* in consequence of the Change that has taken place in public Opinion in regard to the use of Spirituous liquors, it is very generally believed that the Public convenience does not require licenses to be granted for the vending of Ardent Spirits.

"*And whereas* it is desirable to discountenance the use of Ardent Spirits in all reasonable and practicable ways, Therefore voted as the sense of the town that it is not expedient to license the Sale of Ardent Spirits within the town, and that the Selectmen be hereby instructed and requested to withhold their Approbation of such licenses."

Col. Jesse Putnam headed a petition for no-license next year, and Daniel P. King, Alfred Putnam, Abner Sanger, Robert S. Daniels and Joshua H. Ward were appointed to correspond with other towns on the question. Women were in no ways backward in the temperance movement. At the annual town-meeting of 1836, this petition signed by about eight hundred of them was presented:

"To the Citizens of Danvers in Town Meeting assembled:—

"We, the undersigned, your Mothers, wives, sisters and daughters, ask your attention for one moment to the temperance cause, as it now exists in this community. We are aware that you are not unmindful of this cause, and that you have heretofore done much in support of it, and the present year have instructed your Selectmen not to approbate the sale of Ardent Spirits within the town. We are also aware that you were among the first publicly in town meeting to denounce the traffic in ardent Spirits and to proclaim its evils. All this is well, but still much remains to be done. Notwithstanding all your efforts, there are many still intemperate, and the means of gratifying their insatiable appetites are still at hand.

"Yes, and they who furnish these means go unpunished and disregarded. Of what are laws or resolutions in word only? Better by far to have no laws, than permit them to be violated with impunity. Have you not again and again resolved that the sale and the use of ardent spirits are destructive of the Peace and well-being of Society? Do you not all feel and see that this is true? Then why permit it? We beseech you delay no longer. Banish the evil from among you. Beseech those who transgress, in kindness to desist. But if they will not, in kindness, compel them to do it. Never hesitate or falter in doing that you know to be right. We your friends, your own consciences, and the God of heaven, will sustain you in the path of duty. As you love us, as you regard your own welfare, both here and hereafter, suffer not the evil of drunkenness to be any longer within your borders; and unite with us in prayer that our neighboring Citizens may share the same blessing."

At a special meeting held April 3, 1837, a committee, in the nature of a temperance vigilance committee, and the first of the sort, was appointed; it consisted of John Peabody, Rufus Wyman, Jesse Putnam, John B. Peirce and Samuel P. Fowler. At this meeting a resolve was passed which reveals a state of things unremedied to this day and which might with greater pertinence than efficacy be at any time re-enacted:

"Whereas, this town for several years past, while endeavoring to prevent the sale and use of intoxicating liquors within it, has found its efforts thwarted, and its citizens allured and enticed away to their injury, by the Licensed shops and houses on its borders in the City of Salem. *Therefore* ——— ———

"*Resolved*, That the Selectmen in behalf of the town be requested respectfully to beseech the Authorities of the City (if such dram shops shall still be thought necessary in the City) not to locate them immediately upon our Borders; but to remove them as far off as possible."

There followed a period of inactivity for some seven years. Then, in 1844, more resolutions were passed, and another vigilance committee was appointed, on which with others previously mentioned were Joseph Osgood, Elias Putnam, William and Joseph S. Black,

Samuel Tucker and Samuel Preston. Four years later and another committee, another in 1849, several in the fifties, and one, the last, as late as 1871, upon the earlier of which appear as leading temperance men of the day these additional names: Allen Knight, Israel Adams, Deacon Frederick Howe, William Walcott, Gilbert Tapley, Nathan Tapley, Wm. J. C. Kenney, Eben Putnam, Israel W. Andrews, Edward T. Waldron and Moses Black, Jr. In 1849 these rather unique votes were passed:

"That each minister, each Lawyer and each Doctor be requested to deliver to the citizens of the Town, one Lecture at least, each, during the year, on the subject of Temperance and Gambling

"That the Town Clerk send a certified copy of the above vote to each of the gentlemen referred to and to publish it in the *Danvers Courier*.

"That the Gentlemen referred to have the liberty to make use of such language as they please on the evils of using tobacco."

About 1849, too, the subject of lotteries received the attention of condemnation, and committees were especially instructed to prosecute violations of the law.

Agreeable to the law of 1855, the selectmen appointed as the first liquor agent of the town, Needham C. Millett. He was required to keep pure and unadulterated liquors, for medicinal, chemical and mechanical purposes only, at his place of business on Maple Street; to sell for cash only at twenty-five per cent. net profit; to make quarterly returns to the town treasurer; and his compensation was one hundred dollars. His successors as liquor agents were: 1856–57, Olive Emery, High Street; 1858–61, Hiram Preston, Maple Street; 1862–65, Levi Merrill, Maple Street; 1866, Daniel Richards, corner High and Elm Streets; 1867, A. Sumner Howard, Cherry Street; 1869–72, Abram Patch, Jr., Maple Street.

From the stand taken so early, when the resolutions of 1833 were adopted, neither the old nor the present town of Danvers has ever receded. Once only, in 1883, the vote went in favor of license, four hundred and twenty-one to two hundred and eighty-three; but by a singular coincidence, the proceedings of this meeting were technically illegal, through the omission to use check lists in balloting for moderator, and on a subsequent trial the result was reversed by a close vote, four hundred in favor of license, four hundred and thirty-eight against. The first vote under the local option law of 1868 was a negative answer, one hundred and forty-nine to five, to the question "Shall licenses be granted for the sale, to be drunk on the premises, of either distilled or fermented liquors?" Late votes on the license question have been: 1884, 476 no, 275 yes; 1885, 391 no, 233 yes; 1886, 384 no, 183 yes.

Not always, however, has the real state of the temperance question been in harmony with this showing. A dozen years ago the saloon element, for a time, successfully defied the law, and endeavored, by terrorizing prosecutors, to avoid prosecution. At least one extensive fire has been traced to such a source. But the people at length aroused to meet the emergency, and, under a police who deserve great credit for so well performing their duty, have brought back the town to a place essentially of law and order, where liquor-selling timidly skulks and drunkenness is not common.

Within recent years a number of temperance societies have been organized. Apparently the oldest is the Catholic Total Abstinence Society, whose good work cannot easily be over-estimated. It was organized November 19, 1871, and bought and fitted up its present building some four years later. Its hall was dedicated February 17, 1879. The Danvers Reform Club was organized, January 21, 1876; the Woman's Christian Temperance Union of Danversport, January 17, 1876; a similar Union at the Plains, February 6, 1876.

Fire Department.—The first action of the town regarding fire-engines was in the first year of this century. On the 25th of August, 1800, Robert Shillaber, Israel Putnam and Edward Southwick were chosen "to purchase two fire engines for the use of the town, whenever a sum of money shall be raised by subscription equal to one-half the cost of said engines, and deposited in the hands of the committee aforesaid for that purpose."

"*Voted:* Said engines shall be kept in repair at the expense of the town and one of them shall be placed near the house formerly called the Bell Tavern and the other on the neck of land near the new mills so called provided the inhabitants who may be likely to receive the most benefit therefrom will at their own expense erect suitable buildings to receive them."

By a law of the Commonwealth, the selectmen of towns owning fire-engines were empowered to nominate "engine-men." At the beginning of 1801, the selectmen made these appointments:

"FOR ENGINE NO. 1.	"FOR ENGINE NO. 2.
Edward Southwick.	Thomas Putnam.
Nathl. Storrs.	Caleb Oakes.
Henry Cook.	Benj. Kent.
Joseph Buxton, Jr.	James Carr, Jr.
Danl. Reed, Jr.	Joseph Kent.
Isaac Frye.	Willebe Wells.
Caleb Osborn.	Nathl. Putnam.
Jona. Osborn.	Wm. Trask.
John Osborn.	James Gray.
Amos Osborn.	Currier True.
George Stone.	Saml. Pinder.
John Pierce.	Wm. Pinder.
Wm. Woods.	Saml. McIntire.
Wm. Reed.	Saml. Fairfield.
David Osborn.	Joshua Goodale.
Saml. Osborn, Jr."	James Carr."

The names of Edward Southwick, William and Daniel Reed, Jr., Caleb Osborne, George Stone, John Pierce and Samuel McIntire were subsequently, for some reason, erased.

Officers known as "fire-wards" were first chosen at the annual meeting of 1801. The persons then chosen were Ebenezer Sprague, Samuel Page, Edward Southwick, Ebenezer Shillaber, Simon Pindar and Israel Hutchinson, Jr. Ten years later Page and Southwick were both on the board, and with them

Samuel Fowler, Jr., Gideon Foster, Joseph and Sylvester Osborne and Benj. Crowninshield.

Some records of the meetings of No. 2, about this time, have been preserved. At Nathaniel Putnam's store certain preparations were made one day in February, 1808, which show that charity went hand in hand with festivity.

Voted, That the company have a supper to-morrow night, as per vote the last meeting.

Voted, The committee be authorized to invite the minister and schoolmaster to sup with us in free cost, and that they invite the fire ward in said district to sup with us in club.

Voted, That the remaining part of the fines that may be had after paying for said supper, &c., be given to the most needy persons in said district.

Voted, That there be a committee to distribute the same and inform them what fund it came from.

Voted, That this committee consist of Mr. Caleb Oakes, Mr. Israel Endicott and Mr. Wm. Trask.

Voted, That the clerk pay over to the committee last chosen the balance that may be in his hands after settling for the supper.

Voted, That the committee make a return of their doings at the adjournment.

At the adjournment the report was accepted and the committee duly thanked. They received from the clerk thirty dollars for distribution, and fourteen persons received from one to four dollars each.

In 1810 the "Columbian Fire Club" is first mentioned in the town records. The club petitioned for an additional number of buckets to be placed under it s care. Three good men and true considered the subject,—Jona. Ingersoll, Jas. Foster and Samuel Page; but whether the club secured the buckets or not is a question of distressing uncertainty. A survivor of this club relates that each member was required to keep a fire-bucket, a bed-key and a canvas bag, hanging ready for use in the front entry.

In 1815 there were ten fire-wards,—Sylvester Osborne, Benj. Crowninshield, Caleb Oakes, Thomas Putnam, Joseph G. Sprague, James Brown, Moses Black, John Upton, Jr., Samuel Fowler and Ward Pool. In that year the New Mills engine was thus manned:

Thomas Cheever.	Jacob Jones.
Wm. Francis.	Samuel Pindar.
Hercules H. Joselyn (gone to sea).	Ebenzr. Jacobs.
	Daniel Brady.
Allen Gould.	Benj. Chaplin.
John W. Osgood.	Thos. Symonds.
Saml. W. Treaky.	Nathaniel Putnam.
Andrew Gould.	Jona. McIntire.

Appropriations, by direct vote, for the fire department were few and far between in the early years of its existence. In 1837 the selectmen were authorized "to furnish the new mill engine company with fire Buckets, as they think proper, provided they do not find those they lost at the late fire" and the only other recorded appropriation for the first twenty years was on a vote in 1819, authorizing the repair of the hook-and-ladders belonging to the town, and the purchase of as many new hooks, ladders, pikes, not to exceed fifteen, as the fire-wards should think proper.

In 1821 Oliver Saunders and others petitioned for a new engine. The first thing was to inquire into the status and condition of the old engines. It was evidently an important matter. Notice the number and character of the committee of inspection: Ebenezer Shillaber, Andrew Nichols, Nathl. Putnam, John Upton, Jr., John Page, Sylvester Osborne, Caleb Oakes, John W. Proctor, Danl Putnam, Warren Porter and Samuel Fowler. But the committee was considered still lacking somewhat in weight and five more were added,—Briggs R. Reed, Oliver Saunders, Eben Putnam, Jr., Joseph Spaulding and Allen Gould. All these were appointed by the moderator, yet "the inhabitants" were not quite satisfied. They voted "to add two more to the above Committee, the Town to have the liberty of nominating them, and Edward Southwick and Nathaniel Watson were added." Verily, if the old engines were not thoroughly overhauled, it was not the fault of the town-meeting. Subsequently it was voted to procure two new engines and repair the old ones, provided half the cost of the new ones be raised by subscription. Squires Shove, Caleb Oakes, Nathaniel Putnam, Ebenezer Shillaber and Wm. Sutton, were delegated to pass around the hat.

In 1826 two sets of sail cloths were provided at an expense of one hundred and fifty dollars, one set to be located near the south meeting-house, the other at New Mills. The men who ran with the machine this latter year at New Mills were

John Ross.	James Smith.
Josiah Gray.	John Bates.
James Smith.	John Kent.
John Burns.	Andrew Porter.
Hiram Perley.	Moses Wood.
Frederick A. Tufts.	Daniel Woodman.
John T. May.	Franklin Batchelder.
James Haynes.	Daniel Caldwell.
Richard Elliot, Jr.	David S. Barnard.
James Perry.	Jesse P. Harriman.
John Herrick.	Daniel Hartwell.
Benjamin Kent, Jr.	

In 1830 another engine was purchased for the south parish; the same year an act of the Legislature was passed "to establish a Fire Department in Danvers." The act provided for the choice of twelve fire-wards; changed the power of appointment of engine-men from the selectmen to the fire-wards; limited the number of engine-men to forty "for each hydraulion or suction-engine, twenty-five to each common engine, four to each hose-carriage, twenty to each sail-carriage and twenty for a hook-and-ladder company;" authorized the engine-men to organize themselves into distinct companies under the direction of the fire-wards; and made the fire-wards custodians of all fire-apparatus. The first board chosen under this act consisted of R. H. French, Lewis Allen, Caleb Low, Richard Osborne, S. P. Fowler, Moses Black, Caleb L. Frost, Benjamin Wheeler, Henry Cook, Edward Upton, Enoch Poor and Jacob F. Perry.

In 1835 the New Mills people petitioned for a new

engine-house, and secured it. The same year "Johnny" Perley, the storekeeper at the little village which was springing up at Porter's Plains, petitioned for a fire-engine, to be located near Berry's tavern, and the next year Philip Osborn and others wanted a new engine-house at the "Pine Tree Corner" (Wilson's Corner), and secured an appropriation of three hundred dollars for that purpose.

Mr. Perley's petition not having met with success, another store-keeper, Daniel Richards, headed a petition in April, 1836, "for a good and sufficient fire-engine to be located at the Plains, and to provide a convenient building for the same." The fire-wards at this meeting presented a report which, doubtless, influenced favorable action,—"The engine Niagara, No. 1, is not suitable or fit to work with the Salem engines, they being suction . . . ; the Forrest, No. 3, is in good order and well manned . . . ; the Erie, No. 2, is in a bad condition and not man'd, wants repairing and altering . . . ; the , No. 4, a good, new engine, is wanted at the Plains, with hose and a house for the same." A vote was passed to raise two thousand three hundred dollars for the purpose of purchasing two new engines, one to replace the old "Niagara," the other for the Plains, and for hose, etc., and the repairing of the "Erie." Richard Hood's bill "for finishing the engine-house at the neck" in 1836 was $102.85.

But the new engine for the Plains was not immediately forthcoming. At the March meeting of 1837 one of the articles was "To inquire of the Fire Department what they have done towards obtaining a Fire-Engine to be located at the Plains, agreeable to the request of Eben Putnam." At an adjournment a committee which had been appointed to consider the report of the fire-wards reported "that it is expedient to procure a middling-sized engine of good construction to be located at the Plains, provided an efficient company of thirty men can be found in that vicinity ready to take charge of the same; that, in case an engine is procured, a suitable house should be built for the accommodation of the same." These recommendations were adopted, and eight hundred dollars appropriated. But the committee added in their report,—"It is worse than useless to expend a thousand dollars for an engine and to have it, when the alarm of fire is given on a cold night, frozen up and unfit to be used." Two hundred dollars was soon after added to the appropriation of eight hundred dollars.

The election for fire-wards in 1840 resulted as follows, the number of votes each received being given:

Miles Osborne	297	Henry Fowler	299
Francis Baker	300	George Porter	296
Amos Osborne, Jr	300	Simeon Putnam	190
Jere L. Kimball	297	John Hart	190
Benjamin Wheeler	298	William H. Little	189
Edwin F. Putnam	299	Eben Sutton	186

E. F. Putnam and Simeon Putnam declined, and Daniel Richards and Ezra Batchelder were chosen to fill the vacancy.

In 1842 Otis Mudge and one hundred and twenty-eight others petitioned for an engine and house, "to be located near the North Parish Meeting-House (Rev. Mr. Braman's);" the matter was referred to Mr. Mudge, Miles Osborne and W. J. C. Kenney, but when a vote was taken—this was a meeting held in the South Parish—only 51 voted for the measure, and 59 voted against it. It was "tried again." Mr. Mudge and John W. Proctor were appointed tellers. They reported 65 in the affirmative and 65 in the negative. Then the house was polled, and the tellers having reported "68 for locating an engine, and 78 against it," it was then voted that the subject be dismissed. In 1843 the engine at New Mills was replaced by a new machine, called the "Ocean," at a cost not exceeding a thousand dollars; and what became of the old Niagara appears in this item of the fire-wards' report for 1844:

"No. 2.—This engine, with its apparatus, is in good order, it having been removed from the Neck to the Tapley Village, and is now under the charge of Perley Tapley, who has engaged to furnish a house for it at his own expense."

In this report the story is told at length of the great fire which swept through what is now Peabody Square, burning the South Meeting-House, the old Essex Coffee-House and many other principal buildings in the vicinity. "The sun, this morning, rose upon a scene of desolation never before witnessed in our town, disclosing more fully to view crumbling walls and smouldering ruins in the place of those buildings which the devouring element had swept from our view. The destruction of property was very large." Further details will doubtless appear under the sketch of the history of Peabody.

Perley Tapley soon requested the town to purchase his engine-house, and the fire-wards were directed to buy it unless they could do better otherwise. In 1849 Tapleyville was given a new engine, and the "Niagara" was finally disposed of.

The number and value of the several fire-engines, houses and apparatus belonging to the town at the time South Danvers was set off as a separate town, will be found in the inventory of town property in this sketch, where the history of the division of the town is given. A few days after the act was passed which incorporated South Danvers, the Legislature amended the act of 1829, which established the Danvers Fire Department, so that the town of Danvers was required thenceforth to choose five fire-wards annually instead of twelve.

The men elected as the first fire-wards of Danvers, after the division of the town, were Winthrop Andrews, R. B. Hood, A. G. Allen, W. B. Richardson and Josiah Ross.

The rising generation knows little of the glory which once surrounded the country fire department.

Only certain grandfathers remember the halcyon days. Now and then an item in old newspaper files recall them, days of reception or visitation, the carefully polished machine, the well-drilled company of choicest young manhood, rivalry not a little, admiration unbounded. There was such a day in the fall of 1849, when a great event happened in Wenham,—its first new engine came. On the shore of the big pond where Hugh Peters preached in the wilderness of Enon, there was a grand exhibition of prowess, and Danvers was there by her board of firewards, and the "General Putnam, No. 4;" the company dressed in uniform of white frocks, dark pants and glazed caps.

"They marched under the direction of that pattern of directors, William J. C. Kenney, to the music of Osgood's excellent band, and the way they performed the military evolutions would have done honor to a company of veteran soldiers."

The idea of having a "steamer" first came up in town-meeting in 1866, on the petition of Henry F. Putnam and others. It was then referred and indefinitely postponed. Two years later George W. Bell headed a similar petition, and on the last day of March, 1868, a series of votes were taken on the motion, "that the town purchase a steam fire engine." The first hand vote was declared lost; it was then voted to poll the house; the motion was again put and declared carried, eighty to forty; the minority, not satisfied, doubted the count; the voters passed in front of the moderator, and were counted as they passed, and the motion was finally declared carried, seventy-six to twenty-five. No money was immediately appropriated, but at the annual meeting of 1869 it was voted, after another close fight, sixty-seven to sixty-five, to appropriate five thousand dollars, and the fire-wards, namely, Timothy Hawkes, George W. Bell, Charles T. Stickney, Wyatt B. Woodman and John C. Putnam, together with Winthrop Andrews, William L. Weston, R. B. Hood, H. A. Perkins and Nathan Tapley were entrusted with the weighty business of buying the only "steamer" which the town ever indulged in. Three thousand dollars more was appropriated for apparatus for the new engine and fifteen hundred dollars for accommodations. And, at a final adjournment, each of these votes were reconsidered, and the whole matter indefinitely postponed. Thus it is ever with town-meetings. But the next year and the next the steamer agitation was renewed, three self-acting extinguishers, "soda fountains," having been purchased in the meantime, and so on until in 1873, the first and only steam fire engine came to stay—but a short time. The fire wards, who were entrusted with its purchase, were G. W. Bell, George Kimball, J. C. Putnam, Thomas Curtis and William J. Murphy. The basement of the building known as Bell's hall, on Maple Street, was fitted up as a steamer-house.

But now for some time the advance guard of public sentiment had been laboring to bring up the rank and file to the belief that Danvers was ready to indulge in the metropolitan luxury, nay, necessity, of a water-supply system. It is now some eleven years since the pure water of Middleton Pond first appeared in our streets and kitchens. Who would part with it? Yet it came only after much agitation and much honest opposition. The matter of water supply was first brought up in town-meeting in 1870, and was referred to S. P. Fowler, Daniel Richards, Oliver Roberts, C. T. Stickney and W. L. Weston. They reported next year, recommending acceptance of certain terms offered by the city of Salem for supply for five years, keeping an eye to Middleton and Swan's Ponds for an ultimate supply. Nothing further until November 17, 1873, when another committee of consideration was appointed. They reported at the annual meeting of 1874 in favor of building a reservoir on Will's Hill, in Middleton, at an estimated cost, with pipes, etc., of two hundred and fifty thousand dollars. The following April, 24th, the Legislature passed the Danvers Water Act, authorizing the town to take water from Middleton and Swan's Ponds, to issue bonds to three hundred thousand dollars, payable in not exceeding thirty years, to choose three water commissioners, and to provide for a sinking fund. The validity of the act depended upon its acceptance by the town within two years. In the meantime another factor entered into the water question. The State needed a new insane asylum; sites were examined here and there; finally the summit of Hathorne Hill, in Danvers, was fixed upon as the most eligible. The asylum commissioners wanted water and were willing to co-operate with the town. Their hill lay almost in a direct line from the square to Middleton Pond and about midway. They offered the town a part of the hill for a reservoir, thirty thousand dollars towards the cost of works and one thousand dollars annually for their supply. The proposition gave new energy to the water men. A motion to raise two hundred thousand dollars June 15, 1875, received 364 yeas to 314 nays, but, two days before, a law went into effect requiring a two-thirds vote for such extraordinary appropriations, and the proposition thus failed of being carried. They tried again very soon, July 2nd. Then the Water Act was accepted, 506 to 290, but a motion to proceed with construction still failed of two-thirds,—512 to 336.

George H. Norman, the great contractor, in September, 1875, made this offer; to put in the works, including a five million gallon reservoir, twenty miles of pipes and one hundred and fifty hydrants, and keep them as a private speculation or sell them to the town for two hundred thousand dollars. The offer was accepted September 13th. The first water commissioners were elected September 21st; they were John R. Langley, Otis F. Putnam, Harrison O. Warren. Then the question arose as to the authority of the town to transfer its rights under the act to

Mr. Norman, and the matter was dropped. The next month the town of Beverly made a proposition to supply Danvers, and a vote was passed to take water from this source provided a fair bargain could be made, but no bargain was made. In the meantime the asylum people would wait but little longer for further action on their offer. The question was put to vote April 28, 1876, on proceeding to introduce water, in connection with the State, at an expense to the town, not exceeding one hundred and fifty thousand dollars. Yeas, 409, nays, 230,—not two-thirds. The water men kept at work. May 13, 1876, they were successful. Then, on the same question, the whole number of votes—the largest number ever cast up to that time—were 933. Of these 637 were yeas; 296 nays. Samuel Waitt, an old man of eighty-four, threw the last vote, a yea.

Early in July following, the water commissioners closed a contract with G. H. Norman for complete works and twenty-one miles of street pipes for one hundred and sixty-two thousand five hundred dollars. The State built the reservoir, paid twelve thousand five hundred dollars, and agreed to pay one thousand dollars annually for twenty years. Thus the net first cost of the water-works to the town was one hundred and fifty thousand dollars, which was met by the issue of five per cent. bonds. The principal main was completed to the square August 17, 1876, and water first appeared, direct from the pond, the reservoir not being completed, Wednesday, November 8th. Early in December the reservoir was ready for use, and on Thursday, December 23d, the entire system was in working order and opened by a formal trial. The head was found to be strong enough to throw a $1\frac{3}{8}$-inch stream, not only over the highest buildings, but well over the flag-staff to a hight of over one hundred and twenty-five feet. Fire-engines were immediately at a discount. At the annual meeting of 1877 it was recommended that the steamer be sold, and notices of its sale at auction were sent broadcast to towns and cities. Hose companies have taken the place of the engine companies. Nine of these companies and one hook-and-ladder company comprise the present fire department. Fires have happily been comparatively infrequent, but on more than one occasion the ready presence of Middleton water has prevented what otherwise threatened to the square a repetition of the ruin of '45. Two lamentable and disastrous conflagrations have within a few years occurred in spite of the water.

Benjamin E. Newhall was appointed superintendent of the water-works in September, 1876, while they were in process of construction, and held the office efficiently to his resignation, July 1, 1883. The duties of the office were then divided. Henry Newhall was appointed registrar; David J. Harrigan, superintendent of pipes, and no change has since been made.

In December, 1880, the commissioners were obliged to defend a suit brought by the Ipswich mills for damages alleged to have been sustained by the diversion of water from Ipswich River by lowering Middleton and Swan's Ponds, they being tributary to the river. The commissioners who heard the evidence, Judge Choate of the Probate Court and Messrs. Frances and Darrascott, engineers, reported in favor of the mills, and awarded five thousand four hundred and ninety-five dollars for the diversion of water from Middleton Pond, and two thousand and five dollars for Swan's Pond, "if in the latter case the petitioners are entitled to an assessment under this award." The Superior Court at the October term, 1881, ruled against the Swan Pond assessment. Another law-suit was the result of a ballot for water commissioner at the annual meeting of 1881. Josiah Ross was declared elected by one vote, five citizens having been appointed to count the votes, and having so reported to the moderator. A motion thereupon made that the votes be recounted by a new committee was carried. The new committee reported that the opposing candidate, Otis F. Putnam, was elected by one vote, and the moderator so declared the vote, stating it so appeared on recount. These are all the facts of record. But it seems that the moderator and town clerk subsequently counted the ballots which had been preserved, and their results coincided with the original count. Under the circumstances the two members of the board recognized Mr. Ross as having been elected. Presently Mr. Putnam brought a petition to the Supreme Court for a writ of mandamus, compelling the two commissioners to recognize him and to refrain from recognizing Mr. Ross. The question was practically the legality of the recount, important and hitherto undecided. Judge Endicott, before whom was the original hearing, dismissed the petition, but by request reported the case to the full court. The case was argued at the bar in November, 1881, and the judges present not agreeing, the court afterwards directed it to be submitted on briefs to all the judges. The final decision reported in One Hundred and Thirty-third Massachusetts Reports was "by a majority of the court" in favor of the petitioner, Mr. Putnam.

At the expiration of John R. Langley's term in 1882, resolutions were passed in recognition of his efficient and valuable services as chairman of the board from its establishment. He was one of the earliest and most zealous advocates of water. The full list of water commissioners is,—

1875–82. John R. Langley.	1882–85. George H. Peabody.
1875–90. Otis F. Putnam.	1883–86. G. A. Tapley.
1875–81. Harrison O. Warren.	1885–88. C H. Giles.
1880–83. Daniel Richards.	1886–89. C. S. Richards.

Law-Suits.—The early records of the town give evidence that the inhabitants in their corporate capacity not infrequently indulged in law-suits, and as usual this species of entertainment seems to have

been rather expensive, especially as the town was commonly at the unsuccessful end of the verdict.

In March, 1767, this action was taken,—

"*Voted*, Thomas Porter and Gideon Putnam be agents in behalf of the Town and they or either of them be fully Impowered to defend and settle the actions or Pleas of the Case which Benj. Sawyer & Gilbord Tapley has brought against the Town as Surveyors of Highways for the year 1766."

In the following May, this,—

"To see if the inhabitants will prosecute their appeal against Benjamin Sawyer at the next Superior Court to be holden at Ipswich.

"*Voted* that the appeal shall be prosecuted."

The town was beaten, but in that prime fighting condition when it hated to let go. An article was inserted in the warrant of 1768, "to see if it be the minds of the Inhabitants to Petition the General Court for a Rehearing at the Superior Court on the case of Deacon Benja. Sawyer, and in another County if it can be obtained." But moderation prevailed: it was voted "to dismiss the claws," and—perhaps with no reflection on their efficiency—"also the agents."

In March, 1769, Samuel Holten, Jr., and William Shillaber were appointed agents "to answer at the next Court of General Sessions of the Peace for the County of Essex to a presentment carryed into said Court against sd Town of Danvers."

Two years later the two men just named and Gideon Putnam, Jona. Buxton, Benj. Porter, William Putnam and Robert Shillaber were chosen "to take legal advice respecting Mess. Aaron and Enoch Putnam with regard to their taking timber which the town provided to repair the bridge over Water's River and to prosecute them in their discretion." They did prosecute, with what disastrous result the following document shows:

"DANVERS, December 23, 1771.

"Then received of Mr. Gideon Putnam and Samuel Holten, Jun'r. (two of the Select-men of Danvers), the sum of Two Hundred and Fifty-eight pounds fourteen shillings and two pence Lawfull money in full of a judgment of the Superior Court & costs in favour of Mr. Aaron Putnam and Enoch Putnam (two of the Surveyors of Highways in the Town of Danvers for the present year), against the Inhabitants of the said Town of Danvers.

"Witness: pr. us, GIDEON PUTNAM,
"JEREMIAH PAGE, "ENOCH PUTNAM,
"ISAAC DEMPSEY."

For some time after this law-suits were at a discount. When next the town was sued, by Archelaus Dale, in 1781, he seems to have been satisfied by a conference committee, and when, in 1783, the inhabitants were asked what they would do respecting an action commenced against them by Major Caleb Low, they voted to pay the cost of the action upon his withdrawing it.

Commencing in 1784 and extending over a period of two years there was a long and obstinate series of encounters at law and otherwise between the town and Daniel Prince, on account of taxes collected by him. Concerning the merits of the case it is difficult now to understand. Prince was committed to Salem gaol, where the town clerk was sent to desire him to send proposals as to his release, but "no proposals were sent by Mr. Daniel Prince in writing." His real estate was taken on execution and agents were appointed to bid off the same for the use of the town. In 1814 the town was indicted for not being sufficiently provided with powder. Several indictments for not conforming to the school laws have been mentioned in connection with the schools.

"The inhabitants of the town of Danvers" have been parties to a number of cases which have gone to the Supreme Court upon points of law. The first, reported, 10 Mass., 514, was on a question of taxing the Iron Foundry Company. In 6 Pickering, 20, there was a question between the town and the county commissioners on a highway matter; in the same volume the case of Joseph Osborne against the town to recover money paid for taxes is reported. A question of a pauper's settlement which arose between Danvers and Boston was decided in 10 Pickering, 513. Another case in which the town and the county commissioners were parties arose on the laying out of a new highway from Haverhill to Salem, through Boxford, Topsfield and Danvers, 2 Metcalf, 185. A case in which John Page was plaintiff, 7 Metcalf, 326, on a question of damages from the laying out of a road over his land, involved the validity of the action of a Topsfield town meeting in selecting a jury-list. In 1860 Gilbert Tapley was sued by School District, No. 6, for "taking and carrying away a school-house," a case in which the real defendant was the new district, No. 7—1 Allen, 49. The injunction to restrain the payment of fifty thousand dollars, voted for bounty, reported 8 Allen, 80, is spoken of in the war history; as the case of Gustin *vs.* School District No. 5, is spoken of in the School History. Putnam *vs.* Langley *et. al.*, involving a disputed election, has been referred to in connection with the water department.

BURYING GROUNDS.—When Salem filled the North River basin in the summer of 1885, gravel was taken from West Danvers (West Peabody) and on the farm which was owned in witchcraft times by the widow of Joseph Pope, neighbor of old Giles Corey and of the Flints, the steam shovel unearthed some ancient graves, and before the work went on, the remains were carefully removed to a new resting-place. It was one of the many family or neighborhood burying-grounds which are to be seen here and there all over the town, the time-worn head-stones relieved now and then by a fresh marble, signifying that one of the later generation had gone to sleep with the fathers. Over on the old "Boston path" is a lot in which the Popes buried their dead from the earliest times. Here lies Caleb Oakes, his wife, Mehitable Pope, and their son, William, the distinguished botanist; Sarah, "relict of Nathaniel Pope & daughter of the Rev. Peter Clarke, who was more than 50 years the worthy minister of this Parish," 1802, and many others,—the

familiar "Jasper," of which the Popes have been fond, several times appearing.

On the summit of Hog Hill, well worthy of the modern name of Mount Pleasant, the Proctors and Needhams, families from the first occupying the heights, have a private ground. A short distance back of Governor Endicott's old residence, plainly to be seen from the passing train, in a quiet, secluded spot, rest the remains of many of the great pioneer's early and late descendants.

Of the larger, more public burial-grounds, that on Summer Street, known as the Wadsworth Cemetery, is the oldest. It was an ancient burial-place, originally set apart by the Putnam family and purchased by Rev. Dr. Wadsworth of Jonathan Perry, and by him conveyed to the First Parish, to whom it still belongs. The most interesting stone here is that of Elizabeth, wife of Rev. Samuel Parris, the "witch minister," who died July 14, 1696. Judge Holten is buried in the old ground on Holten Street, near his home, as are many others who were honored in their day and generation. The High Street Burying-ground, at the Plains, contains stones a hundred years old or more, many of which are of prominent citizens of New Mills in the earlier part of the century, the Pages, Captain Benjamin Porter, Deacon Benjamin Kent and many others.

These old grounds are now seldom used. By the foresight of certain men whose names, hereafter appearing, are worthy of all honor, a large tract of land, originally twelve acres, and subsequently much increased, was purchased of Judge Samuel Putnam, and laid out as Walnut Grove Cemetery. This tract, extending from Sylvan to Ash Streets, embracing the valley of the two brooks which by their union make Crane River, and the sloping hills on either side, well wooded with walnut, beech and other trees, is of rare natural beauty, and is prized inestimably by the town. The movement for a new cemetery was initiated at a meeting held May 5, 1843, at the Plains school-house. Captain Eben Putnam was chosen chairman; Henry Fowler, secretary. Another meeting was held October 17th, Elias Putnam, chairman. A committee reported a form of organization with by-laws, and recommended the names of fifteen men as trustees: Elias Putnam, Gilbert Tapley, Moses Black, Joshua Silvester, Henry Fowler, Nathaniel Boardman, Thomas Cheever, Eben G. Berry, William J. C. Kenney, Daniel Richards, Nathan Tapley, Samuel P. Fowler, A. A. Edgerton, John Bates and Samuel Preston. The first regular officers were chosen at a meeting held the next day at Joshua Silvester's shoe factory, and Elias Putnam was elected president; Henry Fowler, clerk; Joshua Silvester, treasurer. Samuel P. Fowler was chairman of this meeting. He is now both president and treasurer, and his brother, Henry, has been the clerk from the beginning.

Incorporation was granted at this time. The grounds were consecrated Sunday afternoon, June 23, 1844. The exercises, beginning at five o'clock, were,—

I. Hymn, written for the occasion by Andrew Nichols, M.D. II. Introductory Prayer by Rev. S C. Bulkley. III. Hymn, written for the occasion by Rev. James Flint, D.D. IV. Address by Rev. John Brazer, D.D. V. Hymn, written for the occasion by G. Forrester Barstow, M.D. VI. Concluding Prayer by Rev. J. W. Eaton. VII. Parting Hymn. VIII. Benediction by Rev. T. F. Field.

The services were held in the grove, and were attended by not less than two thousand persons. The address of Dr. Frazer was said to have been a very appropriate and beautiful discourse, and that it made a deep impression on the many hearers. It remained unpublished for nearly forty years, when, through the efforts of Dr. A. P. Putnam, the original manuscript was traced to the possession of Mrs. Annie W. Ellis, of Dorchester, who kindly furnished him a copy, which was published in full in the *Danvers Mirror*, December 31, 1881.

April 13, 1885, the corporation was empowered by the Legislature to hold property in trust for the improvement of lots, etc.

Up to quite recent times the town so far cared for the burial of its deceased citizens as to own and provide hearses. They are first mentioned in 1818, when this action was taken:

"*Voted:* to choose a committee of five persons to consider on the clause respecting procuring herses to make an estimate of the cost of one or more and to make report at the adjournment.

"*Voted:* that Sylvester Osborne, Doctor George Osgood, Jesse Putnam, Caleb Oakes and Sylvester Proctor be of said committee.

"*Voted:* that there be two herses and two houses for the same provided within in this Town."

In 1842 Moses Black and thirty-five others petitioned "for a Hearse and Hearse-house near the Burying Ground on the Plains, near the house of Joseph Danforth." The petition was referred to the selectmen, with instructions to cause the things prayed for "to be placed in such a location as will best accommodate those who have occasion to use them."

In 1854 similar accommodations were asked for, to be located near Mr. Braman's church. A house was there erected, and remained until 1871, when the selectmen were instructed to sell it. In the appraisal, at the division of the town, these items were charged to North Danvers: house at cemetery, 10 by 15, $45; house at Braman's 12 by 18, $120; two hearses, new, $440; one old, $20.

The Anti-Slavery Movement.—A few slaves were owned in Danvers before slavery was abolished in the State. At the time of separation from Salem there were twenty-five such chattels, sixteen of whom were women. A number of documents such as the following have been preserved:

"Danvers, April 19th, 1766.

"Rec'd of Mr. Jeremiah Page Fifty Eight pound thirteen shillings and four pence lawful money and a negro woman called Dinah which is in full for a Negro girl called Combo and a Negro girl called Cate and a Negro child called Deliverance or Dill which I now Sell and Deliver to ye said Jeremiah Page.

"Witness. { Jona. Bancroft. / Ezek Marsh." "John Tapley.

A story has been told that Cudjo, owned by a neighbor of General Israel Putnam, was of fierce and revengeful temper, and having suffered some real or fancied injury at the hands of his mistress, threatened her life. To get rid of him his master sent him on a play-day trip to deliver a load of potatoes on some vessel at Salem. He took his fiddle and played to the sailors, went below to "rosin his bow," and when he reached deck again was far out at sea, consigned to the same southern market as his potatoes.

During the struggle on the admission of Missouri, Danvers addressed to Nathaniel Sillsbee, representative of the district in Congress, a very forcible letter on the subject of slavery, signed by Edward Southwick, William Sutton, Thomas Putnam, Andrew Nichols and John W. Proctor, committee.

The history of Abolitionism is, to a great extent, the biography of William Lloyd Garrison, a native of this county of Essex. For some ten years after the conflict over the admission of Missouri, a sort of lethargy prevailed over the country in regard to slavery. On the 4th of July, 1829, Garrison, then not quite twenty-five, delivered an address which excited much attention from its bold and vigorous assault on the peculiar institution of the South. That fall, as joint editor of the *Genius of Universal Emancipation* with Quaker Benjamin Lundy, of Baltimore, he issued over his initials his distinct avowal of the doctrine of immediate emancipation. He at the same time attacked the colonization societies, and was soon thrown into jail, convicted of libel for characterizing as "domestic piracy" the transportation of a cargo of slaves from Baltimore to Louisiana in a ship owned in Newburyport. Coming North, he lectured in the principal cities, finding all halls in Boston closed against him save that offered by a society of infidels. But to his mind Boston was the best centre from which to arouse the public sentiment of the North to a revolution in favor of emancipation. He issued the first number of the *Liberator* on the first day of the year 1831. "I am in earnest; I will not equivocate; I will not excuse; I will not retreat a single inch, and I will be heard." He was heard. In December the Georgia Legislature offered five thousand dollars for his arrest and conviction under the laws of that State. January 1, 1832, he and eleven others organized the New England (afterward Massachusetts) Anti-Slavery Society, the first based on the principle of immediate emancipation. He continued to be heard to such effect that in October, 1835, to save his life from a mob who were dragging him through the streets of Boston, the mayor jailed him as a disturber of the peace. On the other hand, his burning words kindled here and there sympathetic hearts, and probably there were few earlier and certainly no more ardent and enthusiastic supporters of Garrison and his doctrines than a number of young men of Danvers, chiefly residents of New Mills, and the leading spirits of these young men—James D. Black, Joseph Merrill, Jesse P. Harriman, William Endicott, Richard Hood, John Hood and John Cutler—came to be called "the Seven Stars."

Of these, Black and Harriman are the only survivors at the time of this writing. Mr. Black, now of Harvard, Mass., was a member of that family of Moses Black, already spoken of as having filled prominent and honorable parts in our town life. When not more than twenty years old he took an advanced position in favor of immediate and unconditional emancipation as the only adequate remedy for the evil of slavery. The occasion was at a meeting of a Lyceum, the first established at New Mills, in 1833, and he made such an impression that he was invited to deliver a fuller address on the same subject on the 4th of July of that year, in the Baptist Church. With the exception of a lecture by the distinguished Oliver Johnson in Mr. Braman's church some time in 1832, the words of this young man, uttered in the face of such circumstances as only the courage of strong convictions would have led him to oppose, seem to have been the first public utterance of such radical and unpopular views in Danvers. To the position thus early taken he remained constant, foremost with his tongue and pen in the hot times which were to follow. Others, who were quick to ally themselves with the Abolitionists, were Hathorne Porter, Alfred R. Porter, William Francis, Dr. Eben Hunt, Rev. S. Brimblecom, Job Tyler, Hercules Jocelyn and a number of ladies. The cause grew by continual agitation. Local societies were formed, the *Liberator* and *Herald of Freedom* went into the shops and the homes. Eloquent and dauntless speakers spoke wherever they could get a hearing, and the seed thoughts grew by earnest talks over the anvil and cobble-stone or by the formal debate of the Lyceum. Among the earlier orators at New Mills was the Rev. C. P. Grosvenor of Salem, in whose parlor was organized the Essex County Anti-Slavery Society. George Thompson, of England, spoke in the Baptist Church in 1835, after a fruitless attempt had been made to procure a church or hall in Salem. The earliest organized society in Danvers was among the women, chiefly of the South Parish, in 1837. Very soon the men at the North Parish, chiefly of New Mills, formed the Danvers Anti-Slavery Society, and this society celebrated the 4th of July, 1838. Alfred Porter wrote a hymn for the occasion; Rev. S. Brimblecom was the orator. A "Young Men's" Society was organized in August following, at the Universalist Church. Joseph Merrill, Thomas Bowen and John R. Langley drafted the constitution. Rev. Samuel Brimblecom was the first president.

The meetings were commonly held in the brick school-house, or in the engine-house at New Mills. Dr. Putnam, who has devoted much attention to gathering up the details of this chapter of local history, has well said, of the records of these early meetings, that they "all attest how these younger citizens

of the town were in the habit of debating and forming opinions in relation to matters of great public interest. Their organization opened to them a school of no little importance, where they learned many valuable lessons, and became fully imbued with the sentiments and principles of Liberty. So it was that the New Mills became in due time a well-known centre of Abolitionism. Thence the influence spread through the town and beyond its limits." Early in 1839 a change was made in the name: "This society shall be called the North Danvers Anti-Slavery Society and shall be auxilliary to the Massachusetts State Society." These are the names of the members at this time: William Endicott, Thomas Bowen, Joseph Merrill, William Alley, J. R. Langley, Samuel Brimblecom, Jonathan Richardson, J. F. McIntire, M. Black, Jr., Elias Savage, J. D. Andrews, J. M. Usher, C. P. Page, Hercules Jocelyn, J. D. Black, John Hines, Hawthorne Porter, Richard Hood, Jesse P. Harriman, Wm. Francis, Oliver O. Waitt, James Kelley, Archibald P. Black, John Hood, John Cutler, Winthrop Andrews, George Kate, Eben Hunt, Joseph W. Legro, Benjamin Potter, I. K. McIntire, Job Tyler, Daniel Woodbury, Henry A. Potter, Josiah Ross, A. R. Porter (withdrew), Edward Stimpson, Jonathan Eveleth, Charles Benjamin, S. P. Fowler, O. O. Brown, A. A. Leavitt, William Needham, E. G. Little, J. R. Patten, Ira H. Clough, Abner Mead and Joseph Porter.

Of these men and others, if any, like them, N. P. Rogers at a later time wrote in his *Herald of Freedom*, "The people of New Mills are mostly working people, and therefore favorable material for the abolition movement. They embrace it readily and it has done everything for them in the way of mental improvement and moral strength. Young men bred to labor and unbred to learning have risen up by intimacy with the Anti-Slavery enterprise to an astonishing degree of mental power and eloquence." From time to time delegates were sent to the State Society, often traveling in the only way they could afford, on foot. On Thanksgiving Day, 1839, the name was again changed to the Danvers New Mills Society. It was the custom of the members to express their feelings in resolutions, a long series of which, more or less spirited, have been preserved. A sample, selected for its brevity, is this:

"*Resolved*, that it is inconsistent and unbecoming in us as Abolitionists to celebrate the Fourth of July as the Birthday of a free country while nearly three millions of our countrymen are held in most abject slavery."

In a hasty review it is necessary to take long strides. It was not for some ten years after Garrison began his crusade that the excitement of the times reached its extreme in Danvers, in the collision with the churches. In the meantime, the young men here more than kept pace with the forward movement of the Abolitionists. They talked, wrote, agitated. The files of abolition papers abound in letters from Endicott, J. D. Black, the two Hoods, Harriman and others, sharp and caustic, abounding in flings at the churches, enlivened now and then by a controversy with some minister. Garrison himself came, February 16, 1841. Of the meeting he wrote in the *Liberator*:

"It was our privilege to lecture in Danvers, New Mills, on Sabbath evening last, to a densely crowded audience in the Universalist Meeting House—a house to the praise of its proprietors be it told—that has never been shut against the advocacy of the anti-slavery cause, not even in the troublous times of mobocracy in the Commonwealth."

Other speakers, especially Foster and Pillsbury, showed no such courtesy to the churches, and, indeed, about this time the trouble, which had long been brewing, culminated. The old First Church, Dr. Braman's, did not escape condemnation, but was outside the storm-line. On the Universalist and Baptist churches the storm broke. At first both of these churches opened their houses freely to the anti-slavery meetings, but the speakers so often immediately turned to the open and violent denunciation of the churches themselves, that considerations of self-respect and self protection forced themselves upon the churches. After sundry experiences of this kind the committee having charge of the Universalist Church called a meeting of the Society for instructions, and a committee was appointed to consider and report upon whether the further use of the church should be allowed. Through the chairman, Elias Putnam, this committee reviewed the state of things and concluded: "We think this Society should pursue a liberal policy in granting the use of their house for moral and religious purposes, but to say that we should give up the house to every one who would please to occupy it, would be in effect to surrender our claim to the house and would leave the Society without the use of the house for any specific purpose," and a resolve was recommended and adopted, allowing the use of the church "on all suitable occasions for the promotion of religion and morality, and that the committee should refuse the house when they have reason to believe that it will not be used for the promotion of these objects." This majority report was accepted, and in a few instances the standing committee refused applications for the church. The sentiments of the more radical reformers were expressed in a minority report by Dr. Hunt. Upon premises of the great liberality of Universalism, and the doctrine it has always taught that truth has nothing to fear in conflict with error, he said that "any action of the Society in closing their meeting-house against the discussion of any question deemed by any one of sufficient importance to gain the attention of the public, and not incompatible with sound morality, would be a gross departure from those principles by which we as a denomination professed to be governed, anti-Republican and anti-Christian."

About the middle of June, 1841, the anti-slavery society passed a resolve "that it is the duty of the Baptist and Universalist Societies to open their meet-

ing-houses for the sacred purpose of pleading the cause of our brethren and sisters in bonds on all proper occasions free of expense to the Anti-Slavery Society as such," and talk began to be common about the duty of anti-slavery Christians to withdraw from or come out of the churches to which they belonged. Richard Hood had asked for and received letters of dismissal and recommendation from the Baptist Church to a church of the same denomination in Wenham, but a private letter prevented his admission to the Wenham Church. Mr. Hood turned upon the home church in vigorous rebuke for its unfaithfulness to the slave, and quoting the text, "Come out from among them and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing and I will receive you," asked that his name be erased from the church record. Mr. Hood was only one of many who, by similar action, received and were doubtless proud of the name of "Come-outers." At a special meeting of the Anti-Slavery Society August 19, 1841, it was "Resolved that nothing should be allowed to hinder the progress of Abolitionists in their work of deliverance to the slave. If they find themselves attached to a pro-slavery political party or a pro-slavery religious church they should come out from them immediately or we cannot consider them in any other light than loving party and sect more than they love the slave." A week later, Parker Pillsbury in the chair, the church was characterized as "the stronghold of slavery." No wonder that feeling between man and man at New Mills was wrought to a very high pitch. No wonder that conservatives retaliated by calling the disturbers fanatics, "Gab-olitionists," "Long-heels," "the school-house gang" and other epithets even less expressive of endearment. So matters went through the following winter and spring, and if interest had in any respect flagged, a two days' convention of the Essex County Anti-Slavery Society, held at New Mills in the latter part of June, 1842, rekindled the fires to fiercer flames. Wendell Phillips was there, and Rogers, Foster, Pillsbury, Thomas P. Beach and others from abroad. There was no lack of material for rousing meetings. The third Sunday after the convention Rev. Mr. Mansfield, a Baptist "supply," had closed the long prayer, and was proceeding with the service when a man, who was recognized as Beach, one of the convention speakers, rose from his place in the congregation and began an anti-slavery appeal. He was temporarily choked off by a hymn, but when the music ceased he was at it again. Major Black and Captain Caldwell with righteous indignation descended upon the intruder and dragged him out of the house. Beach was accustomed to this sort of thing, was non-resistant, limp as a wet rag, and while the guardians of the churches were struggling to carry his dead weight, he quoted to them texts, "Love your enemies," "If a man smite thee, etc." Worship was broken off. The congregation, or most of them, were thoroughly mad. The minister called for a sheriff, and certain ones jumped out of a window to run to the Universalist Church for an officer. Something was said about ducking Beach in the horse-trough near by, but the plug was pulled out and no such attempt was made. Service was resumed, but in came Beach at a side door and again interrupted: "Come down from the pulpit, and not stand there like a whited sepulchre." In his own subsequent account, "the committee-man took a vote of the meeting and they decided I should not stay in the house. Whereupon they rushed upon me like tigers and landed me in the street." After church an officer went to arrest Beach at the house of Jesse P. Harriman. Beach assumed his putty state. The officer was unable to handle his weight alone, and commanded his host to keep him. Harriman, an ardent come-outer, refused in the name of God. Dr. Hunt was commanded to assist, and in terse English gruffly declined to obey. Somehow, with the help of prominent Universalists, Beach was put into Salem jail, but back he was at a meeting in the Universalist Church at five o'clock, speaking to a large audience, at which, he wrote, "the Spirit of God was present, and several were convinced of the truth and openly confessed Christ by identifying themselves with the despised and hated Abolitionists." Dr. Hunt was fined a hundred dollars for refusing to assist the officer, and Harriman went to jail for the same offence. Later William Black renewed the complaint, which had been withdrawn, against Beach and united with the Quakers of Lynn in keeping him for some time in the jail at Newburyport, to the freely expressed indignation of his friends.

In September, 1842, Richard Hood was another guest from Danvers in Salem jail. His offence was attempting to speak on anti-slavery at a Friday evening prayer-meeting in Amesbury, against the orders of the minister to desist.

It was through such times as these that the people finally emerged to a calmer consideration of the great principles which soon organized the advocates of universal freedom into a great political party. The New Mills Society disbanded about 1844. Much bitterness and personal feeling could not fail of being engendered by the events of which only the merest outline has been given, but these men were but the skirmishers preceding the awful, inevitable conflict, in which differences were merged in loyalty, and Liberty, unthroned, was re-crowned with the blood of heroes.

Out of this agitation came the beginnings of a great political party, the principle of which was opposition to slavery. These beginnings were very small and the men who first stepped out of the old parties braved not a little unpopularity and opprobrium. The names of some forty Danvers men who voted with the "Liberty Party" in 1840, the first year of its existence, have been recalled. They are Frederick Howe, Jesse Putnam, J. A. Learoyd, Jonathan Perry,

Peter Cross, Elias Savage, Peter Wait, Samuel Wait, Samuel Harris, Jr., Warren Sheldon, Elijah Hutchinson, Otis Mudge, Kimball Hutchinson, Nathan Tapley, Allen Knight, Henry Dwinell, Joseph Danforth, Eben Hunt, Winthrop Andrews, Joseph Verry, Jr., Benjamin Hutchinson, Charles Page, Samuel Brown, Edward Waldron, Amos Brown, Abel Nichols. Of these, Dr. Hunt was perhaps the most active. From interesting reminiscences furnished the writer by James D. Black these extracts are made: "The Free Soil party was not organized until some years subsequent to the earlier struggles of the Abolitionists. We used to vote at the State elections scattering votes for Garrison for Governor, &c. At that time a majority of votes were required to elect, and our scattering votes counted against the regular tickets and made politicians mad, and many times as I approached the ballot-box the epithet, "Long-heel" would be hurled at me. After the Free-Soil party got a foothold the dominant party, the Whigs, were put to their wits ends to retain control of elections."

It was the campaign of 1848, which consolidated the anti-slavery elements. Throughout the summer and fall of that year politics waxed hot. On the 4th of July a social gathering of the Friends of Liberty in Essex County was held in a beautiful grove in the northern part of the town. The convention was attended by from fifteen to twenty thousand persons during the day. Addresses were made by Rev. W. B. Dodge, of Illinois, by clergymen from Salem, Lynn and Boston, Dr. Hunt and Dr. Nichols representing home talent. The Kimball family, of Woburn, sang a number of liberty songs, and a glee club and choir of singers from North Danvers, "by their sweet music added greatly to the enjoyment of the people." Letters were read from Hon. S. C. Phillips and the Hon. D. P. King, breathing the spirit of liberty, and Dr. Nichols' muse was inspired by the occasion.

The voters in District No. 13 who were dissatisfied with the nominations of both the Whig and the Democratic Parties, and were in sympathy with the Convention of Freemen held at Buffalo in August, 1848, at which the Free-Soil Party had its birth, immediately held weekly meetings for free and candid discussion of the candidates and principles of that convention. Early in September they formed a Free-Soil Club, and upwards of eighty out of the hundred and fifty voters of the district signed a

CONSTITUTION OF THE NORTH DANVERS FREE-SOIL CLUB,

with this Preamble: "We, the undersigned, beholding with feelings of deep regret, the disposition of the slave power of this Union, to subvert the spirit of our Government by extending American Slavery over territory now free, and the determination to control the policy and interests of our country, and seeing, as we have seen, that spirit of truckling to the slave power, on the part of the two great parties of our country—the Whigs and the Democratic—as shown by their past acts, but more recently and more clearly in their chosen leaders, we feel called upon as Patriots, as lovers of Freedom, if we would be true to our own interests and the interest of our nation to renounce both these parties; and

"WHEREAS, We behold in the Buffalo Platform, principles to which every friend of free institutions should subscribe, and candidates worthy our support, we do therefore endorse these principles, and that we may act with greater efficiency in the election of the candidates do form ourselves into an organization to be called the Free-Soil Club, and to be governed by the following constitution."

Under the articles which follow, these officers of the club were chosen: President, Elias Putnam; Vice-Presidents, Nathan Tapley, John Hood, Augustus Mudge, I. W. Andrews; Corresponding Secretary, Daniel Foster; Recording Secretary, Jeremiah Chapman; Executive Committee, William Dodge, John R. Langley, Allen Knight, Otis Mudge and William J. C. Kenney.

Who managed the caucuses forty years ago? was a question put to Mr. Black. "I can't tell," he writes, "who ran the Whig and Democratic caucuses. The Free-Soil caucuses had such young men as John A. Putnam, J. R. Langley, Alfred Fellows, Winthrop and I. W. Andrews, Ira Clough, E. F. Putnam, Richard and John Hood, E. T. Waldron and the writer." A clipping from a newspaper of the day gives some hint of the prominent Whigs:

NOTICE.

"The Whigs of Danvers are requested to meet in Union Hall on Monday Evening, August 28th, at 7½ o'clock, for the purpose of forming a Taylor Club, and to adopt such other measures as may be necessary for the thorough organization of the party for the coming election; and to choose six delegates to the Whig Convention at Worcester, Sept. 13.

"A full attendance of Whigs from all sections of the town is earnestly requested.

"WM. D. NORTHEND,	HENRY FOWLER,
"SAMUEL PRESTON,	JOSHUA SILVESTER,
"EBEN S. POOR,	A. A. EDGERTON,
"GEORGE R. CARLETON,	ELIJAH W. UPTON.

"Danvers, August 26, 1848."

At this meeting A. A. Edgerton was chosen secretary; George W. French and Joel Putnam, delegates from the north parish; town committee from No. 2, H. Fowler, William Endicott; No. 3, I. P. Boardman, Joseph S. Black; No. 4, Albert Bradstreet, Charles P. Preston; No. 5, Nathaniel Pope, Edwin Mudge; No. 6, Aaron C. Proctor, Jesse Tapley; No. 13, N. Silvester, Dr. Osgood; No. 14, G. W. French, Augustus Tapley. The vote of Danvers at the election of 1848 resulted, 560 for Taylor, 503 for Van Buren, 146 for Cass.

With the formation of the Republican party Danvers promptly wheeled into line. Out of a total vote of 1382 cast in 1856, 1076 were for electors representing the candidates of that party. In 1860 John G. Whittier, elector for this district, received 564 out of 769 votes; in 1864 Mr. Whittier received 592 votes to 125 for S. Endicott Peabody, of Salem. Subsequent presidential elections have resulted as follows:

	Republican.	Democratic.
1868	720 (Grant.)	204
1872	545 (Grant.)	195
1876	701 (Hayes)	335 (Tilden.)
1880	637 (Garfield.)	295 (Hancock.)
1884	565 (Blaine.)	276 (Cleveland.)

In 1880 there were also 227 "Greenback votes;" in 1884, 254 Greenback and 34 Prohibition. The

Greenback party held its first caucus in Danvers in the fall of 1878, when a local committee and delegates to conventions were elected. The party grew with surprising rapidity, enlisting great numbers of active and earnest young men, who developed great skill in political organization, and suceeeded in controlling the Legislative elections in 1879, '82 and '83. See lists of Representatives. This party lost much of its cohesive strength after the disappearance of General Butler from politics, and a number of the leaders openly returned to the Republican fold this past spring, 1887.

RAILROADS.—One day in the summer of 1847 two men might have been seen on the summit of the hill which is now crowned by the asylum, eagerly scanning the winding valleys to the south and to the north. Presently they went on, and climbing one of the high hills of Andover followed again the course of the lowland to the great mills in the new manufacturing town on the Merrimac. These two men, Elias Putnam and Joshua Silvester, always progressive, were full of the new idea of steam and iron, which had already begun to revolutionize travel. Following closely the old stage route from Boston, east, were laid the rails of the Eastern Railroad. These men on the hill-tops saw in the valleys the course of an iron highway, which uniting Lawrence to the main line at Salem, would "bring the railroad to Danvers."

And soon it came, but not while Mr. Putnam lived. Cutting through the high ridge south of Water's River, it crossed the stream almost at the little cove, where Governor Endicott is said to have landed from his shallop; passed within a gun-shot of the ancient pear-tree which the Governor planted; bridged the river down which was brought, in a little shop, the genesis of Danversport; entered Parson Skelton's grant close by the old home of the Revolutionary Colonel Hutchinson; pushed on across the old Ipswich road through Porter's Plains; beyond Beaver Dam, almost under the windows of that little room where "Old Put" was born, and so on northward. But the railroad did not come all at once. It seems to have halted on the way. This letter which appeared June 9, 1848, signed "North Danvers," is a sample of other communications:

"Why cannot the inhabitants of North Danvers be accommodated with two or three trains on the Essex Railroad per day? The rails are laid and seem to be in good condition to run upon. The engine and cars now have to remain at South Danvers doing nothing—waiting for time. Cars have been running to accommodate South Danvers for a year and a half while we have waited patiently until now. The people of this part of Danvers labored and toiled, and did what they could to have this road built. The time has been designated repeatedly by one or more of the directors when we should have this accommodation, but thus far we have not seen it."

On the 1st day of July, 1848, the road was formally declared open to North Danvers. There were on the first time-table three trains a day, each way, to and from Salem. On the Fourth of July three thousand persons passed over the road. Before the end of the summer trains were running to Andover. On the 4th of September the whole line was opened and a train of eight cars filled with stockholders and guests took a trial-trip to Lawrence. It has been recorded that during the passage up a canvass was taken for presidential preferences. While General Taylor was the choice of 401, Van Buren 62, and Cass 41, the inference is somewhat amusing from the fact that on the return-trip, after a first-rate dinner, the number of Taylor's adherents was reduced by 51, while those of his rivals were increased.

The first station-agent at the Plains was Samuel W. Spaulding. He came here, a young man, from Merrimac, N. H., and worked for John Grout, coaching between Danvers and Salem. Spaulding bought out Grout, and was running the line himself when appointed on the railroad. Not being willing to relinquish the coaching business, he soon gave up the other. About twenty years ago Parker Webber took a half interest in the coach-line, and a few years later Spaulding sold out his interest to Webber, who carried on the business until the latest competitor for public travel—the horse-car—made this business unprofitable. In November, 1878, Benjamin Henderson resigned the position of station-agent, which he had then held twenty-eight years and more. He is still living, approaching his ninetieth year; he was chorister of the First Church, and a famous singer in days gone by.

Danvers has long been provided with double railroad facilities to Boston. Both lines are, by the recent consolidation of the Eastern with the Boston and Maine, under the control of the latter company, and the "know-nothing" has become an important junction. Instead of the "Eastern" and the "Maine," it is now "the eastern division" and "the western division." The latter was originally built and incorporated in several pieces: Haverhill to Georgetown, Newburyport to Georgetown, Georgetown to Danvers, Danvers to Wakefield, and the main line of the present western division of the Boston and Maine. Travel was opened through Danvers in 1854, and by successive changes and consolidations the entire branch became the property of the Boston and Maine.

In 1841 the subject of town clocks was brought before the town. Petitions for clocks, one at South Parish, and one on the Baptist Church at New Mills, met with indefinite postponement.

About ten years later a subscription paper, which had its origin in the grocery-store of Gould and Emerson, dated December 24, 1852, was circulated to raise money "for the purpose of defraying the expense of placing a clock upon the meeting-house (Rev. Mr. Fletcher's), at the plains." These items of expense are summarized on the original paper:

Paid Perkins & Cressey	$ 83.73
Paid Putnam & Kenney's bill, freight	3.37

November 19th, paid Howard & Davis, cash	115.00
Eben Putnam's bill	2.00
Paid balance to Howard & Davis	150.00
	$414.10

The town-clock thus established was soon transferred to the Maple Street Society, and has ever since been maintained by the society. Once only, 1861, a petition was introduced for the town to keep the clock in repair, but the subject was indefinitely postponed.

The "gold-fever" of '48–49 struck Essex County and did not leave Danvers untouched. The local papers devoted much space to the subject, and many heads were filled with dreams of sudden wealth. "At present," so run a sample letter, credited to the Alcalde of Monterey and copied into the *Danvers Courier*, "the people are running over the country and picking gold out of the earth here and there, just as a thousand hogs, let loose in the forrest, root up ground-nuts." An item of January 13, 1849, speaks of several young men of this town who will leave for San Francisco in a day or two. About the same time twenty-one members of the Naumkeag Mining and Trading Company embarked in the ship "Capitol," for San Francisco, among them two Danvers men, George K. Radcliffe and Franklin Ward. Early in March following, some thirty men from Salem and vicinity, comprising the "Essex Mining and Trading Company," left Boston for Corpus Christi on the schooner "John W. Herbert." Of this number was Mr. Henry Fowler, whose reminiscences are of experiences far at variance from those depicted by that alluring old Alcalde.

Those who paid the largest taxes forty years ago in North Danvers may be found in the following list, 1848:

TAX OF OVER $100:		TAX OF OVER $50:	
Wm. A. Lander	$ 322.38	Nathaniel Boardman	$ 59.74
Nancy Oaks	100.80	Ebenezer G. Berry	69.82
Moses Putnam	382.30	Peter Cross	53.20
Samuel Putnam	122.48	Daniel Goodhue	50.78
Est. Elias Putnam	113.68	Charles Lawrence	71.50
John Page	112.38	James A. Putnam	75.98
Benj. Porter	176.22	Asa Tapley	54.14
Gilbert Tapley	194.14	Jonas Warren	88 30
Gilbert Tapley, in trust	84.00	Stephen Wilkins	57.50
Matthew Hooper	119.66	John Bates	58.62

THE CENTENNIAL.—With the year 1852 a round century had passed since the farmers of Salem Village and the settlers of the Middle Precinct separated from Salem and began their corporate existence as the district of Danvers. Early in the previous fall those spirits who never allow such anniversaries to pass unforgotten were on the alert. At a town-meeting held in Granite Hall, September 22, 1851, a committee of nineteen,—five at large and one from each school district,—were chosen with full authority, to make such arrangements and adopt such measures as in their judgment should seem most appropriate to the occasion. This centennial committee consisted of the following persons:

AT LARGE.

Fitch Poole.	John W. Proctor.
Andrew Nichols.	Rev. Milton P. Braman.
Ebenezer Hunt.	

FROM THE SCHOOL DISTRICTS.

1. Robert S. Daniels.	8. Samuel Brown, Jr.
2. Samuel P. Fowler.	9. Joseph Brown.
3. Aaron Putnam.	10. Leonard Cross.
4. Albert G. Bradstreet.	11. Francis Baker.
5. Nathaniel Pope.	12. Miles Osborne.
6. Moses Preston.	13. John Page.
7. Francis Phelps.	14. Gilbert Tapley.

The day chosen for the celebration was Wednesday, June 16th. The scene of the festivities was the Middle Precinct, South Parish, through whose streets a procession a mile and a half long moved amid a very large and enthusiastic throng and beneath a very warm sun. The committee had half a thousand dollars at their disposal, and this, together with private enterprise in the way of decorations, gave the town a gala-like appearance. There are plenty of men still in their prime who were in that procession; but it was thirty-five years ago; a new generation has sprung up since then and the fathers will pardon a smile as their children read of the pride and pomp of that day. It was the day of days for the engine companies. The choicest young manhood of Danvers tugged at the ropes of their polished machines. Coming at the very head of the line, after the escorting military was General Scott, No. 2, of Tapleyville—ah, Fame, where is the old tub now?—drawn by Captain Calvin Upton's forty-eight men, dressed in fire hats, plaided sacks and black pants. Next the Torrent, and next General Putnam No. 4, of Danvers Plains, Captain Albert G. Allen, with forty men, likewise in plaided frocks and black pants, and carrying a banner on which was emblazoned "General Putnam—I never surrender." This engine also appeared well, says the record. Of course it did; it appeared well on that little occasion already referred to, when Captain Kenney took it over to pump out Wenham pond, and that occasion to this was but a candle to a comet.

After the "Eagle" came the "Ocean," No. 6, of Danversport, Captain Welch, whose thirty-five men, clad in white shirts, black pants and Kossuth hats, were assisted by a pair of roan horses. Seven companies in all there were, nearly four hundred strong.

Then came the civic division headed by Chief Marshall, Dr. S. A. Lord and his assistants. In a long line of open barouches the people saw a live Governor and many distinguished guests. Then came old School Master Epps and other representatives of his time. A "Blind Hole Shoe Shop of 1789," and an ancient up-in-the-lane pottery were both in active operation.

Next followed the schools. Sylvanus Dodge was chief of this division, aided by Jeremiah Chapman,

Edward W. Jacobs, Augustus Varney, Alden Dempsey, James P. Hutchinson, Dr. J. W. Snow, George Tapley, Albert J. Silvester, Loring Dempsey, Abner Mead and Gilbert A. Tapley. Fifteen hundred pupils presented a most beautiful feature of the occasion, but no adequate description—the record again—can be given of the ingenious and admirable designs they displayed. The Peabody High School came first, then the Holten High School, followed by the schools from the different districts.

The last division of the procession was a cavalcade of three hundred horsemen. After great exertions on the part of the chief-marshal and his assistants the streets were so far cleared of the multitude of people and vehicles that the procession was put in motion. Moving down Main Street it countermarched at the Salem line, near the Great Tree," but, alas, the streets then spanned with arches and gay with banners and bunting are not now Danvers streets. At noon the line reached the Square again. The schools moved up Lowell Street to a large tent provided for them, and the rest of the procession entered the Old South, in which the following exercises had been appointed.

1. Voluntary.....By the organ.
2. Invocation.....By Rev. James W. Putnam.
3. Anthem.
4. Reading the Scriptures.....By Rev. James Fletcher
5. Prayer.....by Rev. Israel P. Putnam, of Middleborough.
6. Original Hymn.....By Fitch Poole.
7. Address.....By John W. Proctor.
8. Music.....By the band.
9. Poem.....By Andrew Nichols.
10. Psalm, selected from a collection in use one hundred years ago, "Faithfully translated into **English Metre**; for the Use, Edification and Comfort of the Saints in Publick and Private, especially in *New England*."

    Psalm lxvii.

    To the Musician, Neginoth. *A Psalm of Song.*
11. Prayer.....By the Rev. F. A. Willard.
12. Old Hundred.....Sung by the whole congregation.
13. Benediction.

On account of the heat Mr. Proctor's address was abridged, and Dr. Nichols' poem was entirely omitted. At a full town-meeting held shortly after, however, the Doctor was cordially invited to read his poem on an occasion to be specially appointed, and such an arrangement was carried out.

Dinner was served after the exercises at the church in a large canvas pavilion erected near Buxton's hill on the Crowninshield estate. After the feast the Chief Marshal introduced as President of the Day, Rev. Milton P. Braman, and after the Doctor's own remarks there was enough talking, both from men prominent in local affairs and from others of wider renown, to last perhaps another hundred years. The Commonwealth was represented by its Governor, George S. Boutwell, and its Secretary, Amasa Walker. Salem, the mother-town, sent her mayor, Charles W. Upham, afterwards author of "Salem Witchcraft;" Daniel A. White, Judge of Probate for Essex County; William D. Northend, Esq., who begun his practice in South Danvers; and another young lawyer who to-day sits in the Cabinet as Secretary of War, William C. Endicott. The historian of New England, John G. Palfrey; the annalist of Salem, Rev. J. B. Felt, at this time of Boston; Rev. Messrs. Thayer, of Beverly; Stone, of Providence; Sewall, of Medfield; and Putnam, of Middleboro'; Allen Putnam, of Roxbury; Lilley Eaton, of South Reading; John Webster, of Newmarket, N. H.; and George G. Smith, of Boston, were nearly all present and delivered the contributions which are credited to them. Alfred A. Abbott, Esq., P. R. Southwick, R. S. Daniels, S. P. Fowler, J. W. Proctor, Rev. F. P. Appleton and Dr. Hunt were called upon as representative citizens of the town. Letters were received from the Hon. Robert C. Winthrop, Rufus Choate, Robert Rantoul, Jr., Daniel Webster, Edward Everett, Jared Sparks and others.

In the meantime the school children were enjoying themselves at a feast of their own, prepared by a committee on which William L. Weston and Henry Fowler represented the northern districts. William R. Putnam, of the school committee, presided, and to his own remarks and those of the toastmaster, Augustus Mudge, were added addresses from Charles Northend, then recently elected superintendent of schools, and John D. Philbrick, then of the Quincy School of Boston.

The printed volume of something over two hundred pages, containing a full record of the Centennial Celebration, forms an important contribution to the material for local history.

These books are seen here and there in family book-cases, but they are not popular reading. There remain, however, as constant and conspicuous reminders of the day thus celebrated, certain memorials of another sort.

The biography of George Peabody properly belongs to that part of old Danvers which now for nearly twenty years has borne his honored name, and there it will undoubtedly be found. Let a few meagre facts and dates appear here.

He was born February 18, 1795, in a house still standing near the junction of Washington and Foster Streets, on the old Lynn Road, in Peabody. His earliest business experience was as a store-boy for the man whose friendship he cherished to the last, Capt. Sylvester Proctor. At sixteen he became a clerk for his oldest brother, David, in a dry-goods store at Newburyport. Before he attained his majority he was taken into partnership by Elisha Riggs, a wealthy New York dry-goods merchant. In 1815 Riggs and Peabody moved their business to Baltimore and subsequently established branch houses in Philadelphia and New York. In 1827 he made his first voyage to Europe in furtherance of his business. During the next ten years he often repeated the trip, and at

times the United States Government, taking advantage of his business sagacity, entrusted him with important financial negotiations. He went to England for a permanent residence in February, 1837, at the age of forty-five. In 1843 he retired from the American house of Peabody, Riggs & Co., and thenceforth was George Peabody, Banker and Merchant, of London.

It was for fifteen years then, when Danvers celebrated her Centennial, that her illustrious son had been a stranger to his native land, and nearly twice that time since the sixteen-year-old boy went away from the place of his birth to seek and find his fortune.

An invitation had been sent to him. When John W. Proctor arose to respond to the toast in his honor, it was somehow generally expected that something of especial interest was about to be made known. Mr. Proctor held up to the view of all a sealed envelope, and, in explanation thereof, read a letter from Mr. Peabody, regretting his inability to be present, concluding in these words,—

"I enclose a sentiment, which I ask may remain sealed till this letter is read on the day of celebration, when it is to be opened according to the direction on the envelope."

This direction was as follows,—

["The Seal of this envelope is not to be broken till the toasts are being proposed by the Chairman at the dinner, 16th June, at Danvers, in commemoration of the one hundredth year since its severance from Salem. It contains a sentiment for the occasion from George Peabody, of London."]

The seal was broken and the sentiment disclosed, which has long since become as household words,—"Education, a debt due from present to future generations." It was followed by the announcement of a gift of twenty thousand dollars for the purpose of erecting and maintaining a public library and lyceum.

Among the conditions annexed to the gift was one that the town should accept the gift and choose a committee of not less than twelve to carry out its purposes. Both of these things were done at a town-meeting, June 28, 1852, the action of the town being embodied in a series of resolutions submitted by Dr. Andrew Nichols. The committee of twelve were chosen on such tenure that two vacancies were to be filled by election each year. The committee thus first chosen and their terms of office decided by lot were as follows,—Eben King, Joseph S. Black, one year, to 1853; William L. Weston, Aaron F. Clark, two years, to 1854; Francis Baker, Joseph Poor, three years, to 1855; Elijah W. Upton, Miles Osborne, four years, to 1856; Joseph Osgood, Eben Sutton, five years, to 1857; Robert S. Daniels, Samuel P. Fowler, six years, to 1858. Subsequent elections for terms of six years were as follows,—In 1853, Henry Poor, Joel Putnam; 1854, Philemon Putnam, John B. Peabody; 1855, Francis Dane, Israel W. Andrews; 1856, Franklin Osborne, Isaac Hardy, Jr.

Dr. Nichols' resolves provided also that the committee or trustees should themselves annually appoint a lyceum and library committee from the town at large. The trustees made this latter committee equal to their own number. The first appointees were Dr. Andrew Nichols, who died during his first year of service, Fitch Poole, George A. Osborne, Benjamin C. Perkins, Ebenezer Hunt, John B. Peabody, W. N. Lord, Eben S. Poor, Wm. L. Weston, A. A. Abbott, Philemon Putnam, Eugene B. Hinkley, Wm. F. Poole. The latter is now widely known as the author of "Poole's Index of Periodical Literature."

The corner-stone of the new building was laid August 20, 1853, and after its completion was dedicated September 29, 1854—a substantial brick edifice, eighty-two feet by fifty, bearing on its front the words PEABODY INSTITUTE, situate on the main street from the South Meeting-house to Salem, on the opposite side and a little northwest of the Lexington monument.

Division of the Town.—It is the intention to speak particularly of the Peabody Institute, not of Peabody but of Danvers. It is necessary, therefore, here, as the sequence of events will show, to speak of no less an important matter than the dismemberment of the old town, which had celebrated its hundredth anniversary, and the separation of the southern half of its territory into a new town, leaving to the upper half alone the name of the old town. The separation was no sudden movement. From the very first, the communities north and south of Waters River and the long chain of hills, separated, as they were, by natural barriers, found themselves possessed of different interests and associations. There was no common centre. Town-meetings were held, as has been seen, one year at a meeting-house in the North Parish, the next at the South Parish, and each parish made hay for itself when the time came. A recent letter from a former resident contains something of this sort: "No. Danvers was rich in oratorical talents, while So. Danvers was exceedingly deficient in that material. They had money and votes, but no orators, and when the town-meetings were held at So. Danvers, there all the appropriations in that part of the town could easily pass the ordeal; and when the town-meeting was held at No. Danvers, that was the golden opportunity for appropriations for that part of the town." Before division was finally accomplished the anomaly was presented of two town-houses in one town. The history of the agitation which brought this about goes back to 1772, when Ebenezer Goodale and others prayed that the inhabitants might assemble and make known their minds as to whether meetings for the future should be held alternately in the Village and Middle parishes according to the agreement made between the parishes before incorporation, and "also to see if it be their minds to Erect a House near the Centre of the Town, to hold their Town-Meetings and other Publick Meetings in, &c." "The question was put to

see whether the inhabitants would act anything respecting the holding the Town-Meetings for the future, and, a Poll being demanded, it was determined that way, Ninety-four for acting and Ninety-three against. Voted, not to act upon the paragraph in the warrant respecting the erecting of a House near the Centre of the Town."

At the annual meeting of 1828 a committee was chosen to consider the building of "one or more Town Houses," but whatever their report may have been, it was gently but effectively disposed of by a motion that "the subject subside for the Present."

The matter next came up in 1834. Another large and representative committee was appointed, who were instructed to make estimates for "one or more, designating the place of location of the same." But their report met no better fate than the one of 1828. It was "deferred,—" just twenty years.

In the warrant for the annual town-meeting of 1854 were two articles,—one for the erection of a town-house "near the centre of the population and business of Danvers South Parish," another for the erection of "two school-houses for the accommodation of the Peabody and Holten High Schools."

After much discussion and several special meetings, these two propositions were combined. The High School buildings were a necessity. It was voted "to construct them so as to make each building suitable to convene the town-meetings," and twenty-two thousand dollars was appropriated in all. The report of the building committee was accepted in 1856, and ordered "placed on the file." From this oblivion a part is here brought back to the light of day. It is interesting to know what hands helped to build our temple of democracy and how much it cost:

Net cost of land	$1350 00
Benjamin Moor's bill, contract and extras	7800 00
Architect's bill	85 00
John Rollin's bill for well	26 25
Perkins & Cressy, building fence, etc	115 63
Clark & Blether, stone gate-posts	18 50
Hezekiah Dwinell, gate	28 00
Smith & Wallis, chestnut rails for fence	42 09
William H. Walcott, teaming	2 50
Simeon Putnam, freight	12 22
Benjamin Turner, building fence	49 84
E. T. Waldron, turning-posts and furnishing same	87 00
Calvin Putnam, lumber	43 70
Eben Putnam, painting	61 40
Eliot & Kimball, masons	8 85
Stephen Granville, furniture, curtains, etc	174 49
Joseph W. Ropes, furnace	380 00
Joseph L. Ross, furniture	445 00
William O. Haskell, settees	125 47
Total	$11,148 05
Total cost, South Danvers	$11,803 48

The building committee were Fitch Poole, Joseph Poor, Nathan Tapley, Calvin Putnam, E. T. Waldron, Josiah Mudge. In the summer of 1883 the Danvers town-house was enlarged to its present proportions.

Thus much of the town-house. To take up the broken thread of the division of the town: in February 16, 1855, a warrant was issued under the hands of Lewis Allen, Leonard Poole and Nathan H. Poor—the names of Benjamin F. Hutchinson and Joel Putnam, North Parish members of the board of selectmen, did not appear—warning the voters to meet at Union Hall, in the South Parish, "to see what action the Town will take on the order of Notice from the Legislature on the petition of Benjamin Goodridge and others, relstive to a division of the Town."

Lewis Allen was chosen moderator. Alfred A. Abbott presented the following resolution:

"*Resolved*, That the time has arrived when the true interests of all portions of the Town of Danvers, and the convenience and well-being of its citizens imperatively demand a division of its extended territory and numerous population into two separate and independent municipalities—that an equitable and convenient division would be made by a dividing-line drawn from the mouth of Water's River on the East, thence westerly through the centre of said River, to Pine Street, and thence straight, in a northwesterly course, to the bend in Ipswich River, the point of intersection of the stream running from Phelp's Mill; all remaining on one side of said line to constitute a town by itself; and all remaining on the other side of said line to constitute another and separate town; and that our Representatives in the Legislature be hereby requested, and a committee of Ten to be appointed by this meeting be and they are hereby instructed to use all fair and honourable means in aid of the prayer of the petition of Benjamin Goodridge and others, and to secure by an Act of the Legislature, the division of the Town substantially in accordance with the plan above indicated."

An adverse amendment offered by Samuel Preston was voted upon four different times, and each time the amendment was declared lost.

Messrs. Hardy and Andrews polled the house, but could not agree in their count.

The South people had the advantage of position. As the day wore away the northern farmers had to think of the cows and the chores. To take off the keen edge of the contest, a motion was interpolated that a committee of ten—five from each section—be chosen "to take into consideration the subject as to see what names shall be applied should a division take place, and report at the next annual meeting." It would take a long time to choose ten men; it was getting really dark; the cows would be suffering, and, then the committee just elected were to report at the next annual meeting. So some went—enough to decide the contest against the non-divisionists, for the South people had no idea of deferring the matter. They had come to stay. The main question was put, and this time the work of the tellers was not difficult. At five minutes past seven o'clock the moderator declared the result: one hundred and forty-one opposed to the resolution and two hundred and thirty-five in favor.

By vote of the meeting the chairman nominated as the committee called for by the resolution: Dr. George Osborne, R. S. Daniels, Winthrop Andrews, Henry Poor, Moses Black, Jr., Eben Sutton, Philemon Putnam, Joseph S. Needham, Amos Merrill and Francis Dane.

Within a very short time, March 8, 1855, a special meeting was held in the new town-hall in North Parish, to vote by ballot on the question: "Is it ex-

pedient to have the Town divided agreeably to the petition of Benjamin Goodridge and others?"

Though the polls were kept open from nine o'clock to five, the advocates of division, relying on the vote already secured, wisely let the day go by default, and the count showed but four yeas to four hundred and thirty-six nays. The clerk was instructed to send to the Legislature on the next day a copy of the record of this meeting, and Kendall Osborne, Samuel Preston, Andrew Torr, Daniel Richards, Joseph Poor and Henry Fowler were appointed to remonstrate against division. James D. Black was in the Senate, and Israel W. Andrews was in the house. The latter was the champion of the opposition to division, and by a great effort he succeeded in obtaining an adverse vote in one of the earlier stages of the bill; but on May 18, 1855, the Legislature finally passed "An Act to Incorporate the Town of South Danvers." This act established a division line, but provided that if a majority of the voters of Danvers should by vote express within thirty days their desire to have the line changed, that the Governor should appoint three commissioners to consider, and finally determine the same. The present line was in this manner established by commissioners.

An examination of this line as shown on any good map shows that instead of following the channel of Water's River to the Salem line, it leaves the river and turns southerly, so as to include about fifty acres south of the bridge. Upon this territory is a part of Hanson's Grain-Mill, the large brick-house built by Matthew Hooper, a three-story brick tenement house now owned by John Bates, the old witchcraft house of the Jacobs' family, and several other dwellings. Matthew Hooper and some, if not all, of his neighbors petitioned the Legislature to be set off from Danvers to South Danvers, but Danvers was unwilling to let them go, and nothing came of their petition.

A special meeting of that part of the inhabitants of the territory which still retained the name of Danvers, was called on 28th of May, to take such steps as the new phase of their muncipal career demanded. Certain vacancies in offices formerly held by citizens of the new town were filled. In the place of Francis Baker, William L. Weston was chosen treasurer, a position to which he was annually re-elected for eighteen years. Samuel Preston and Zephaniah Pope were elected overseers of the poor in the places of Wingate Merrill and Andrew Torr. Daniel P. Pope was added to the health committee; Aaron Putnam was chosen auditor. There were already three Danvers men on the old board of selectmen, and seven out of twelve on the school committee, and in each case it was voted "to dispense with choosing any more." It was here voted that the chairmen of the several boards and the clerk procure all the books and records remaining in South Danvers, and that the Danvers members of the town-hall building committee provide a suitable place for them.

Another very important subject was considered at this first meeting of Danvers after division. It is sufficiently explained in the vote passed, namely, "that a committee of —— persons be chosen to confer with a committee of the town of South Danvers for the purpose of adjusting the division of town paupers, town property, town debts, State and county taxes, the government of the Peabody Institute, the expenses of the bridges now existing in the town of Danvers, and any other matters arising from the division of the town, and if the said committee shall disagree they are directed to apply to the Court of Common Pleas for the County of Essex for the appointment of three disinterested persons to hear the parties and award thereon." At an adjournment a week later the blank in the vote was filled by the appointment of one from each of the old school districts remaining in Danvers, as follows: No. 13, William Dodge, Jr.; No. 2, Henry Fowler; No. 3, Aaron Putnam; No. 4, Francis Dodge; No. 5, Nathaniel Pope; No. 6, Nathan Tapley; No. 14, George Tapley.

South Danvers was represented by George Osborne, Henry Poor, Robert S. Daniels, Francis Baker, Eben King and Abel Preston.

The two committees, acting in conference, first met on June 25, 1855, and proceeded then, and at successive adjournments, to a very systematic appraisal and adjustment of accounts between the two towns. The report, which was accepted in all particulars save that part which referred to the government of the Peabody Institute, on March 2, 1857, and which was finally accepted as a whole on February 1, 1858, covers nearly twenty large-sized pages of record, and, though very interesting reading, is too long to insert here. A few general items may be culled from the report, however. The footing of the appraisal of the property of the old town, on May 18, 1855, the day of division, exclusive of the two town houses, the Surplus Revenue and the Massachusetts School Fund, was $39,184.50.

The assessors' valuation, 1854, of property north of the division line was $1,444,900; south of the line, $2,732,600. Danvers was, therefore, entitled to $34\frac{587}{1000}$ per cent. of the corporate property, or the value of $13,553.14, and South Danvers to $65\frac{413}{1000}$ per cent., $25,691.36.

To the town of Danvers was assigned property scheduled as follows:

Engine General Scott, fixtures and hose	$814 00
Engine General Putnam, fixtures and hose	586 50
Engine Ocean, fixtures and hose	657 00
Sail car at Danversport	15 00
Engine House No. 2	275 00
Engine House No. 4	300 00
Engine House No 6	350 00
Hearse House at Cemetery	45 00
Hearse House at Braman's	120 00
Two new hearses, $440; one old hearse, $20	460 00
Liquors and fixtures at J. W. Snows	100 50
Iron safe, 1400 lbs. at 8c	112 00
Case for weights and measures	5 00
Bookcase, 7, Pound at Whipple's Brook, 33	40 00
Five ballot boxes, 3, stereotype maps of Danvers, 1	4 00

Reservoir near E. Putnam's	89 25
Reservoir near C. Putnam's	164 00
Reservoir near Village Bank	89 25
Reservoir near Baptist Church (interest in)	1 00
Hooks-and-ladders near Baptist Church	25 00
Hooks-and-ladders near Fox Hill	5 00
Hook-and-ladders near Berry's Stable	15 00
Hooks-and-ladders near P. Tapley's house	25 00
Total	$4297 50

The residue of town property, including the town farm and almshouse (appraised at $22,050, and personal property thereon, $5,519), the whole valued at $34,887, was assigned to South Danvers.

The Surplus Revenue Fund ($10,000), by the terms of the act was to be apportioned according to the number of children between five and fifteen years of age, on May 1, 1855, on either side of the line. The number of children was ascertained to be as follows:

District.	Danvers.	S. Danvers.	District	Danvers	S. Danvers.
1	.....	359	10	.....	47
2	239	.....	11	.....	359
3	53	.....	12	.....	170
4	71	.....	13	228	.....
5	126	.....	14	181	.....
6	32	44			
7	.....	51	Totals	930	1170
8	.....	125			
9	.....	22	Grand Total		2107

To Danvers was, therefore, assigned $4,413.85; to South Danvers, $5,586.15. The amount of the Massachusetts School Fund, $862.72, was, on the same basis, apportioned, $383.45 to Danvers, and $485.27 to South Danvers.

The cost of the two new town houses was found, as has been already noticed, to be $22,951.53. The north building cost $11,148.05. On the basis of valuation, Danvers was entitled only to the $34\frac{587}{1000}$ per cent. of the value of both buildings, namely, $7,938.24; therefore, Danvers was indebted to South Danvers in this matter, $3,209.81.

The total tax for 1855 was found to be $44,698, of which $15,460.15 was due Danvers, and $29,237.85 South Danvers; and the balance of accounts showed that Danvers owed South Danvers, $9,016.98.

The total indebtedness of the old town, on May 18, 1855, was $65,167.38, of which $20,000 was held by the Salem Savings Bank, about $19,000 by the Warren Bank, $10,000 by the Trustees of the Surplus Revenue Fund, and $3,500 by the Danvers Savings Bank; and the total assets, $4,829.18—leaving the balance of indebtedness, $60,338.20. Of this balance, Danvers was holden to pay, according to the fixed ratio, $20,869.78; South Danvers, $39,468.42. And it was decided that South Danvers pay to Danvers this latter amount in full discharge of its proportion of indebtedness, with interest from May 15, 1855, and that Danvers, retaining all the assets, continue liable for the whole amount of indebtedness.

One point the joint committee could not agree upon. The Danvers men claimed that South Danvers was liable to pay its proportion of two roads, Town's road and Endicott Street; the South Danvers men refused to allow the claim, and the matter was passed unsettled.

After a careful examination of all the bridges in the old town, the committee awarded eight hundred and seventy-five dollars to be paid by South Danvers to Danvers as an indemnity to the latter for the greater burden thenceforth to be borne by reason of their maintenance.

The final balance of all accounts passed upon showed that South Danvers was indebted to Danvers in the sum of $33,931.86.

It was found that of the thirty-seven paupers at the almshouse, seven had gained or derived a settlement within the limits of Danvers, and the remainder within the new town and mutual releases were recommended from each town to the other from liability for support of those paupers not found to belong to the respective towns.

The relative interests of the two towns in the government of the Peabody Institute were adjusted so that South Danvers should have nine of the twelve trustees, a lion's share, and inasmuch as four of the board were already residents of Danvers, it was provided that the first vacancy occurring among these four should be filled from South Danvers.

Finally, as a matter of courtesy, it was agreed that Danvers should pay its proportional expense of the cost (two hundred dollars), of copying the records for South Danvers, and that the latter town should pay its proportion of J. C. Stickney's bill of one hundred and fifty dollars, for services in behalf of the North people before the Legislature.

And so, now for more than thirty years, there have been two towns where there was but one. Those who went out are richer and more populous than those who are left; but to the latter, within narrowed limits, belong the name and fame of the old town. The question of division gave rise to much bitter feeling, but the fact of division was sooner or later one of necessity. It is only strange that it did not come earlier. Traces of this feeling, it must be acknowledged, might still reward patient research, but the younger generation know it not. While there is little mutually attractive between the towns, but each looks to Salem as a centre, there is nothing repellant between them, and with increased traveling facilities the people are learning to know each other better to the end of a more perfect cordiality and unity.

And, now, to return to the broken thread of the story of George Peabody's benefactions. In the latter part of the summer of 1856 it was known that the man whose name had become so widely honored intended presently to leave London for a visit to this country. On the petition of the trustees of the institute the selectmen of South Danvers called a town-meeting, August 21, 1856, at which resolutions of

welcome were passed, and a committee of twenty, together with the selectmen, were appointed to meet Mr. Peabody on his arrival at New York "to invite him to the home of his youth, and the seat of his noble benefactions; and, if he shall accept their invitation, to adopt such measures for his reception and entertainment as, in their judgment, will best express the love and honor which we bear him." An attested copy of the action of South Danvers was sent to Danvers, with an invitation to unite in the proposed reception.

On September 10th a Danvers town-meeting passed a series of resolutions, thanking "our sister town of South Danvers for the invitation to co-operate with them in the reception and entertainment of Mr. Peabody," heartily concurring in the sentiments of the resolutions adopted by them, and a committee of twenty-one were chosen to act with the South Danvers committee. The gentlemen chosen were,—

Joshua Silvester, chairman.

Samuel Preston.	Philemon Putnam.
Ebenezer Hunt.	Levi Merrill.
Samuel P. Fowler.	Charles Page.
William L. Weston.	Reuben Wilkins.
Matthew Hooper.	William Endicott.
Israel H. Putnam.	William Green.
Augustus Mudge.	Charles P. Preston.
James D. Black.	Benjamin F. Hutchinson.
John A. Learoyd.	George A. Tapley.
Nathan Tapley.	Arthur A. Putnam, secretary.

The committees of the two towns henceforth acted as a joint committee, and the general expenses of the celebration were borne by the inhabitants of both towns in due proportion, as if no division had taken place. Delegations from the joint committee were sent to New York to welcome Mr. Peabody on his arrival, and, despite numerous invitations to accept of metropolitan honors, he declined to accept any public demonstration except from the hands of his own townsmen. And so on the 9th of October, 1856, the old town gave her son a royal welcome. Because of Mr. Peabody's modest refusal to be honored elsewhere, those who wished to show him their respect were obliged to come to him. "From being simply a village festival, it became almost national in its character."

The day of the reception opened auspiciously—one of the fine Indian summer days. Mr. Peabody had come from Georgetown, driving over the road in a private carriage with his two sisters and a nephew. A salute of a hundred guns announced his arrival at the Maple Street Church, Danvers Plains. Here he was met by the committee, and was seated in an elegant barouche, drawn by six horses, accompanied by Robert S. Daniels, Joshua Silvester and Rev. Milton P. Braman.

"The scene here was very beautiful. The spire of the church and private buildings were gayly dressed with flags and streamers, and in full view was an elegant three-fold arch spanning the wide street, the centre arch rising high above the others, and being adorned with evergreens, wreaths, medalions, flowers and flags." This arch deserves more than passing notice. One cannot easily imagine its imposing and graceful proportions. It was designed and executed by Mr. Silvester, and coming first in the long series of decorations with which the streets of both towns were adorned, Mr. Peabody personally expressed his surprise and grateful admiration to its designer at his side.

Two cavalcades were drawn up just below the arch; one wholly of ladies, added greatly to the attractiveness of the escort. Each lady threw into Mr. Peabody's carriage, as he passed, a bouquet of flowers. The procession moved on through High Street to Danversport, and so on to South Danvers, "through streets lined with decorated houses and under waving flags and triumphal arches, attended by the booming of cannon and strains of martial music. The shouts and salutations of the people were gracefully acknowledged by Mr. Peabody as he bowed to the throng on either side." The cavalcades and carriages forming as escort about half a mile long, proceeded thus through and out of Danvers and into South Danvers.

At Wilson's Corner Mr. Peabody and his escort found drawn up to receive them the main body of a large and notable procession.

It is unnecessary to enter into the details of the day. The pageant of joy was equalled only by the pageant of sorrow, when through the same streets the great benefactor was years later borne to his grave. On the day following the reception Mr. Peabody went back in company with his sisters to Georgetown. A large crowd was gathered in Danvers Square, intent on having a last hand-shaking. Tired, as he must have been, it was evidently his intention to proceed with only a passing greeting, but he found his way blocked by a barrier he could not resist. A chain of little children stretched, hand in hand, clear across the wide street. He stopped, and the informal reception held from the open carriage, and his expression of pleasure at the enthusiastic welcome accorded him, made a pleasing close of the great reception.

Branch Library and Peabody Institute.—Reference has been made to the fact that Joshua Silvester had partaken of Mr. Peabody's hospitalities in London. Mr. Silvester went to England in the latter part of 1846, the year after the disastrous fire which swept away his business on Danvers Plains. He took with him his brother-in-law, J. M. C. Noyes, and Jacob Cross, Samuel Knights, Chas. Wait, and one Story, of Essex, and introduced the business of making pegged shoes in Manchester. Mr. Silvester came back within a year, the others soon following, except Noyes, who remained and carried on the business until his death, about ten years ago. Between 1850 and 1855 Mr. Silvester made four other trips to England. On one of these, in '53, he took letters to

Mr. Peabody, was invited to attend his annual Fourth of July dinner, and being the only Danvers man in London, was asked much by him concerning the progress of the Institute he had then recently given. This acquaintance thus formed, ripened with later visits.

It was to Mr. Silvester that, soon after the reception here in 1856, Mr. Peabody wrote from Georgetown, requesting a meeting on the arrival of a certain train at the Danvers station. While walking together on the station platform, Mr. Peabody first made known his intention to give ten thousand dollars to establish a Branch Library for Danvers, so that the citizens of this part of the old town would not be obliged to depend on the Institute at South Danvers. He asked Mr. Silvester to bring to him at the Revere House, Boston, a list of suitable persons to receive the gift. Mr. Silvester found him enjoying buckwheat cakes at a late breakfast; and over an informal cup of coffee the list was accepted, with Mr. Silvester's name, which Mr. Peabody insisted upon adding. This letter, soon written, is self explanatory.

"REVERE HOUSE, BOSTON, Dec. 22, 1856.

"GENTLEMEN:—During my recent visit to the old town of Danvers, I had opportunities of examining into and understanding the operations of the Institute, and of ascertaining to some extent the comparative advantages derived from it by different portions of the town.

"In compliance with my original directions the Institute was located within one-third of a mile of the site of the meeting house formerly under the pastoral care of Rev. Mr. Walker; and while thus the population of South Danvers is within a reasonable distance of the Institute, the population of Danvers is mostly too remote therefrom, and cannot very conveniently share fully in its privileges. It has occurred to me that a Branch Library might be established in Danvers, in some central position, probably the Plains, which would remedy the existing difficulty and would secure to the inhabitants a more equal participation in the benefits which it was my design to confer upon all.

"I therefore propose to make a donation of Ten Thousand Dollars for the purpose of establishing a Branch Library, to be located as before mentioned provided the suggestions and conditions hereinafter stated are satisfactory to all the parties interested.

"First, the Library shall be called and known as the BRANCH LIBRARY of the PEABODY INSTITUTE, and shall be under the direction and control of the Trustees of the Institute, in the same manner and to the same extent as are the funds of the Institute and its library at South Danvers.

Second, Three Thousand Dollars of the amount to be expended at once for the purchase of books, and the fitting up a room or rooms for their reception; the remainder, Seven Thousand Dollars, to be safely invested by said Trustees, and the income thereof to be used by the Lyceum and Library Committee of the Institute for the increase of the Library, the payment of rent, and for defraying such other expenses as may be incurred in the proper care and management of the same; the whole income to be used for the exclusive benefit of the Branch Library.

"Third, the inhabitants of Danvers are to be still entitled to the full enjoyment of all the privileges and advantages of the Parent Library and of the Lyceum, and the inhabitants of South Danvers are to have the right of participating equally in the privileges of the Branch Library. If, however, it should be found hereafter that this arrangement ought to be modified for the better accommodation and the greater advantage of all concerned, then this last provision, as also either of the others, may be altered by general consent; such alteratien being subject to my approbation.

"It is my desire, gentlemen, that you will, as soon after the receipt of this as convenient, confer with some of our friends in Danvers, in which conference it is my wish that the Lyceum and Library Committee of the Institute should take part, as in all proceedings relating to this matter. "Very respectfully and truly yours,

"GEORGE PEABODY."

Mr. Peabody designated Rev. Milton P. Braman, Samuel Preston, Joshua Silvester, James D. Black, Matthew Hooper and William L. Weston, to act in the conference, suggested by the above letter, with the trustees of the Institute and the Lyceum and Library Committee. Appropriate resolutions were passed at a town-meeting held January 12, 1857; and at the same time it was voted to offer to the trustees for the use of the branch library certain rooms in the Town-House over the selectmen's and town-clerk's offices. And here the library was situated for about a dozen years. The first delivery of books from the branch library was September 5, 1857. It then contained two thousand three hundred and seventy volumes.

But as early as the March meeting of 1857, the town took action towards securing a suitable lot on which some time to erect a library building. The matter was referred with full powers to a committee consisting of the selectmen and Matthew Hooper and Wm. L. Weston at large; and, by districts, Joshua Silvester, Moses Black, Jr., Aaron Putnam, Francis P. Putnam, James Goodale, Israel W. Andrews, George Tapley and Frederick A. Wilkins. This committee purchased, for four thousand dollars, about four and a half acres, fronting on Sylvan Street, of land formerly a part of Judge Samuel Putnam's estate. Mr. Silvester, Mr. Hooper and Augustus Mudge were appointed to lay out the ground in a suitable manner. This latter committee expended $347.13 in grading, laying out walks, etc., and they set out two hundred and sixty-one rock-maple trees. In their report they say:

"When Mr. George Peabody was riding through these grounds last August, he seemed to inquire with much interest, what grounds they were; he was answered that it was Peabody Park, a lot purchased by the Town for the Branch Library Building site, and as there is no name sanctioned by the Town, the Committee would advise the adoption of Peabody Park as the future name of this lot. . . . The committee would also express their appreciation of the valuable services of one of their number who has been removed by death, Mr. Matthew Hooper, and add their testimony to his worth as a member of the committee and the high estimation in which he was justly held by citizens of the town."

Ten years passed, long, trying years; and after the war was over, in the spring of 1866, it was known that Mr. Peabody intended to visit this country again. At a special town-meeting, April 23, 1866, Rev. Milton P. Braman and Daniel Richards were sent to meet Mr. Peabody at New York, and in concert with a delegation from South Danvers to tender him a cordial welcome in behalf of both towns.

This visit was especially auspicious to Danvers. Not contented with the generous gift of the branch library, Mr. Peabody had come prepared to make a far more notable donation. The endowment of the PEABODY INSTITUTE of DANVERS is contained in the following letter:

"To Rev. MILTON P. BRAMAN, JOSHUA SILVESTER, FRANCIS PEABODY, JR., SAMUEL P. FOWLER, DANIEL RICHARDS, ISRAEL W. ANDREWS, JACOB

F. Perry, Charles P. Preston and Israel H. Putnam, Esqrs., all of Danvers.

"Gentlemen:—In a letter to the Trustees of the Peabody Institute at South Danvers, bearing date of the 22d of last month, I expressed to them my purpose of giving, in addition to the Ten Thousand Dollars formerly given by me to them for the foundation of the Branch Library in your town, the sum of Forty Thousand Dollars, making in all Fifty Thousand Dollars for the foundation of a separate and distinct Institution in your town; and with the understanding that by the necessary muncipal action on the part of South Danvers and Danvers, each town should formally relinquish all rights and privileges in the Library, Lectures or other benefits of the other; and I then also stated that it would be necessary that the fund heretofore placed in the hands of the Trustees of the Institute at South Danvers for the especial use of the Branch Library should be transferred to those who should hereafter have it in charge.

"The Town of South Danvers having taken the municipal action indicated in the letter to which I have referred, I now, with the understanding that the Town of Danvers has taken or shall take like action, designate you, gentlemen, as the persons to whom the funds heretofore held by the said Trustees for the benefit of the Branch Library, shall now be transferred, and give you in addition the sum of Forty Thousand Dollars; which with the amount thus transferred to you, shall be by you held in trust, or expended under the provision of such Trust, for the establishment of an Institute, for the promotion of knowledge and Morality, in the Town of Danvers, similar in its general character to that which now exists at South Danvers.

"Of the amount, I direct that the sum of thirty thousand dollars be and always remain permanently invested as a Fund, of which the annual income shall be expended, under the direction of yourselves and your successors for the maintenance, increase, and care of the Library, and the delivery of such Lectures or courses of Lectures, as shall be conducive to the purpose proposed in the establishment of the institution.

"The remainder of the amount I have placed in your hands as above, shall be used for the erection of a suitable building for the Library and other purposes of the said Institute, which shall be completed within two years from the date hereof. In the event of any and all the vacancies occurring in the number of you, my Trustees above named, by resignation, by death, or in what manner soever such vacancy shall occur, I direct that such vacancy shall be filled by the choice of the Inhabitants of the Town of Danvers legally qualified to vote at Town-meetings, who shall, at a Town-meeting to be called for the purpose as soon as conveniently may be after such vacancy occurs, make such choice; and I further direct that my said Trustees shall annually make and print a Report, which shall be made public and published setting forth the condition of the Library and of the funds invested.

"And wishing as I do to promote both now, and for all coming time a spirit of Peace, unity and brotherly love, I enjoin upon you and your successors forever the same principles and directions for your guidance in relation to party politics or sectarian theology, or any allusion to them whatever in any of the lectures, meetings or transactions of the Institute, which I have already enjoined upon the Trustees of the Peabody Institute at South Danvers, in my letter September 22, 1866, and I beg to refer you specially to that letter, for the rules to be observed in relation to your future course.

"I have further to ask, that you will communicate the contents of this letter of trust to a town-meeting of the citizens of Danvers at as early a day as convenient.

"I am with high respect your humble servant,

"George Peabody.

"Oakland, Md., October 30, 1866."

RULES REFERRED TO IN MR. PEABODY'S LETTER.

"My earnest wish to promote at all times a spirit of harmony and good will in society, my aversion to intolerance and party rancor and my enduring respect and love for the happy institutions of our prosperous republic, impel me to express the wish that the Institute I have purposed to you shall always be strictly guarded against the possibility of being made a theater for the dissemination or discussion of sectarian theology or party politics; that it shall never minister in any manner whatever to infidelity, to visionary theories of a pretended philosophy which may be aimed at the subversion of the approved morals of society; that it shall never lend its aid or influence to the propagation of opinions tending to create or encourage sectional jealousies in our happy country, or which may lead to the alienation of the people of one state or section of the Union from another.

"But that it shall be so conducted, throughout its whole career, as to teach political and religious charity, toleration and beneficence, and prove itself to be, in all conditions and contingencies, the true friend of our inestimable Union, of the salutary institutions of our free government, and of liberty regulated by law."

Some question arose as to the best location for the New Institute. At the annual meeting of the town, 1867, the matter was referred to a committee, of which Wm. L. Weston was chairman, who reported, "There are many considerations which would make it desirable that a building such as is proposed should be more centrally located; but, after conferring with the Trustees, they are nearly unanimous in the conclusion that the interests of the town will be best promoted by its location on the spot originally selected. They therefore recommend the passage of the following vote: That the Selectmen of the town be and they are hereby authorized to transfer to the Trustees of the Peabody Institute the lot known as Peabody Park, for the purpose of erecting thereon, at such time as the Trustees may deem expedient, a Lyceum and Library building."

These recommendations were accepted. Time adds each year to the beauty of the grounds and emphasizes the wisdom of the choice.

Plans for a building were laid before Mr. Peabody and approved by him. On the 10th of February, 1868, a contract was made with Charles H. Smith, of Newburyport, for its construction, for the sum of $18,500. The institute was completed in January, 1870, at a total cost of $29,241. It is a wooden building, inclined to the Gothic style of architecture, eighty-six by fifty-two feet, and contains on the lower floor the Peabody Public Library, and on the second floor a large lecture-hall.

Mr. Peabody was again expected from England during the summer of 1870. The formal opening of the institute was deferred to the 14th of July, when he, himself, was present. A permanent record of the events of that memorable day was made by the graphic pen of Dr. Braman.

A few months later, and the world received in sadness the news that George Peabody was dead. He died on the 4th of November, 1870, in London. Once more he was borne across the Atlantic, and the cannon of a noble ship of the Queen of England announced to his native land the arrival of his body.

According to his dying request he was buried from the place where he was born, and the funeral pomp was such as when a king dies.

The citizens of South Danvers had already honored and perpetuated his name by the acceptance of an act passed by the Legislature April 13, 1868, that "the town of South Danvers, in the County of Essex, shall take the name of Peabody."

The people of Danvers hold Mr. Peabody's name very dear. His gift to them was especially generous, for, were his only motive to remember his birth-place, that might well have been satisfied by his original gift to the old town. The Peabody Institute of Dan-

vers is a potent influence for education, which, in the words of the donor, "is a debt due from the present to future generations."

Of the original life Trustees Francis Peabody, Jr., Samuel P. Fowler, Israel W. Andrews and Israel H. Putnam are still on the board.

The first vacancies occurred in 1871, when Mr. Braman and Mr. Preston resigned. It was then voted that the term of office of trustees elected by the town should be four years; and Mr. Preston and Melvin B. Putnam were elected. In 1875 Mr. Preston and Ezra D. Hines were elected. In 1877 Mr. Perry resigned, and Dr. W. W. Eaton was elected in his place. In 1879 Mr. Preston and Mr. Hines were re-elected. At the expiration of Dr. Eaton's term, in 1881, J. Peter Gardner was elected. In 1883 Lucius A. Mudge and William T. Damon were elected. In 1885 Mr. Gardner was re-elected. In 1887 Mr. Mudge and Mr. Damon were re-elected, and Joseph W. Woodman was also elected to fill the vacancy caused by the death of Daniel Richards.

A course of free lectures, concerts, etc., have been annually provided since the winter of 1867–68, at an average expense of about $500.

By an act of the Legislature, March 16, 1882, the trustees were incorporated to hold property to the extent of $300,000.

The list of librarians since the opening of the Branch Library,—April 1, 1857, Nathaniel Hills; June 24, 1865, S. P. Fowler, pro tem.; October 9, 1865, Wm. Rankin, Jr.; January, 1867, A. Sumner Howard; April, 1882, Lizzie M. Howard; January 3, 1885, Emilie K. Davis. A few summers ago the library was closed and the books classified and catalogued according to modern scientific methods. The special committee were Dr. W. W. Eaton and Rev. W. E. C. Wright, of the Maple Street Church. A contemporaneous report says that "upon the latter rested the heaviest burden of gratuitous work which he has shouldered, although it was a labor of love, and carried through almost without stopping to rest for six months. With what assistance the doctor could find time to give, Mr. Wright has directed and superintended every detail of its preparation, and performed himself a large part of the most responsible and difficult work."

The whole number of volumes now in the library, 12,024; number of borrowers' cards issued, 2300; average number of books delivered each day, 185.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

DANVERS—(*Continued*).

INDUSTRIAL PURSUITS—SOCIETIES—PHYSICIANS, ETC.

AGRICULTURE.—Farming has of necessity been most developed within recent years in the line of market-gardening. Probably nowhere in the county can finer cultivated fields be seen than in this town. Sun and rain, bugs and worms, remain as ever uncertain elements, but there has been a wonderful advance in the application of scientific principles. Very much of that broad plain, up which swept the tide of original settlement, is devoted to this sort of farming. The land here is rich and level, and every acre is worked for all it is worth. The Danvers onion is famous everywhere. Hundreds of barrels are raised within half a mile of the Collins House. Much of this land is comparatively new, "Turkey Plain," as it used to be called, having been covered with bushes within the memory of some living, and a hundred years ago thought to be the poorest land in town. The older farms are generally under thorough and enterprising management. Many of them make a specialty of producing milk.

An article by the editor of the *Massachusetts Ploughman*, in that paper November, 1880, is authority for the statement that the reputation of Danvers exceeds that of Weathersfield, Conn., for the cultivation of the onion, and, further, that "no town in the State is so distinguished for its superior orcharding." This statement will not here be challenged. If it be true, it is well, and fits well to the fact that here on the "Orchard Farm" of Governor Endicott the first fruit trees of any account in New England—perhaps the whole country—were raised. A hundred years ago pear-trees were to be seen near every farm-house. Some had a few plum and peach-trees. These bore abundantly. Most of the apple-trees were then of natural fruit, and the apples were largely consumed in the shape of cider. An old cider-mill which stood on the General Putnam place was thus constructed. A trench was dug, fifteen inches wide and fifty feet in circumference, and flat stones were placed on the bottom; the sides were of brick, eighteen inches deep. Apples were thrown in this circular trench, and a heavy stone wheel, drawn by horse-power and revolving about a central upright, did the squeezing. The apparatus was taken down about 1819. Deacon Joseph Putnam, who owned and carried on this mill, and Abram Dodge, of Wenham, were the first in the county to plant apple orchards of improved varieties for growing winter apples for market. This was soon after the Revolution. At that time farms were valued not so much for their location as for the amount of stock they would keep. The Clark farm was then considered the best farm in Danvers, so Wm. R. Putnam has written. Before the discovery of the uses of coal relieved the fear of a scarcity of wood, every well-appointed farm included one or more peat lots. Here and there peat sheds are still seen in the meadows, but it is not common, as formerly, to see about the farm-buildings carefully piled blocks of this sort of fuel. Its most general use was from about 1780 to about 1830.

The Essex Agricultural Society has from the first

been warmly supported by the farmers of Danvers. Among the incorporators of the society, June 12, 1818, were Frederick Howes and Jesse Putnam. The Danvers men have always taken a good share of premiums at the annual exhibitions, and they now stand at the head of membership. Charles P. Preston was for twenty-five years secretary of the society, resigning in 1885. Some minutes of the exhibition of 1848 show that Elijah Pope received the first premium for ploughing with double team, and Francis Dodge the second. For working oxen, Orrin Putnam, fourth; Francis Dodge, fifth. Working steers, Elijah Pope, second. Fat oxen, Perley Goodale, first. Bulls, Orrin Putnam, second. Milch heifers, Eben Putnam, third. Yearlings, Francis Dodge, first. Sheep, Elijah Pope, gratuity, no premiums given. June butter, Charles P. Preston, first; same, second for September butter.

Jonathan Perry came to Danvers in 1803, when he was twenty-one years old. In 1815 he bought the Towne farm of some fifty acres, which has remained in the family since that time. Mr. Perry was the first farmer in Essex County to raise strawberries and dandelions for the market, and for over thirty years he drove a vegetable wagon to Salem. His sons, Horatio and James, followed the same business, and will long be remembered and missed. Shortly before the death of the former, a few months ago, he furnished the writer with some information in regard to his father, who was a most excellent citizen. In the cause of temperance and liberty he was first and foremost; he was one of the five who first signed the total abstinence pledge and stood alone for more than a year; he labored earnestly to start the first temperance store in town; he was one of the twelve Liberty Party voters in 1840; was captain of the militia company for a number of years.

Shoe Business.—All over this part of the country, outside of the thickly settled villages, a peculiar type of building may be noticed. It has grown dingy from lack of paint, and cob-webs and old hats have not uncommonly usurped the glazier's work. Here a hospital for decrepit plows and rusty guns, there converted into sleeping apartments for poultry, now freshened up into quarters for a "hired help," again abandoned altogether, sitting cozily by the roadside and near by the home, equipped with a chimney and well supplied with windows, the observing stranger—and it must be considerable of a stranger not to know all about it—struck by the number of its duplicates, could not fail to conclude that it was originally designed for some use to which it is not now put.

The little building is a monument to the departed days of the industry here spoken of. It is a shoemaker's shop. Here, for many years, the "stock" was brought from some one of the manufacturers, and in the intervals between farm chores was made up. It was a family work shop, the boys learning early to use hammer and awl, and the girls "closing" and "binding." It was, too, a sort of educational and political exchange. While the pegs flew in at the swift strokes or the black-ball stick coursed round the freshly trimmed edge, ears were open to some one who read aloud what Horace Greeley said in the last *Tribune* about Kansas. Town topics and national legislation were here freely discussed, and the forever unsettled questions, which no man will solve until the mystery itself comes, were likewise earnestly and thoughtfully debated. Pair by pair the finished shoes went back into the stock box, and when the sixtieth completed the "set," the hinged lid was fastened down and the old horse took a trip to town for pay and fresh work. Business was steady, pretty much the year round, and there was always the little land to fall back upon,—no fear of slack times between trades, and no labor troubles.

Machinery has closed the little shops. First a simple roller replaced the old lap-stone. That made no difference. Even when the pegging-machine was successfully introduced "gangs" were formed, and for a time the shops struggled against steam. But steam conquered, and here, as elsewhere, shoes have been made by the hands of many men and women, from cutter to packer, all working under one roof, and, so far as possible, by the aid of power machinery.

Danvers was a representative shoe-town in the days of the old regime, and much business is here done in the modern way. The first shoe manufacturer in town was Zerubbabel Porter, and a little shop at the foot of Porter's Hill, standing until within a few years, was the cradle of the business. Mr. Porter was a tanner by trade, and he commenced making shoes in order to work up leather unsaleable for custom trade. This was about the time of the Revolution. That little shop, which was raised from its first condition so that tanning was carried on in the basement and shoemaking above, became a sort of normal school in the latter art, from which many graduated to success. About the time young Elias Endicott married Nancy Creasy, of Beverly, in 1791, he, likewise a tanner and currier by trade, built a little shop for that business. That shop now forms the parlor of the present residence of Elias Endicott Porter, above Putnamville. The young man presently added a second story, moved into it, and kept at his business beneath.

More additions were made, and about the commencement of this century, in a small shop still used as a woodshed, he too, following the example of his brother-in-law, began to manufacture shoes. Both found markets in Baltimore and other southern ports, packing their goods in barrels and shipping them from Salem on board of coasters.

Jonathan Porter worked for his cousin Zerubbabel as early as 1786, and among his apprentices was Caleb Oakes, who commenced to manufacture in the little shop, and later built up a large and prosperous busi-

ness at Danversport. His widowed mother, who was a Putnam, came here from Portsmouth when he was but two years old. He was brought up by Colonel Enoch Putnam, married Mehitable, daughter of Nathaniel Pope, and is buried with her in the old Pope burying-ground. He was the father of William Oakes, the distinguished botanist.

About 1789 a young boy of fourteen went to Jonathan Porter, to learn his trade, and when he became of age he took out work a year for Caleb Oakes. One day, when he returned a set of shoes and found no stock ready for him, Mr. Oakes sold him a little leather and told him he might cut it up himself. The next set of shoes he made he put into saddle-bags and took them to Boston on horseback. From this beginning Moses Putnam continued with patient industry and sagacity until he became, in the neighborhood which bears his name, the chief shoe manufacturer of the town. He followed the business steadily for fifty-seven years, surviving two sons and a son-in-law, all of whom had been associated with him.

Among other early manufacturers were Samuel Putnam, Nathaniel Boardman, Eben Putnam, Major Joseph Stearns, Daniel Putnam, Gilbert Tapley, the Prestons, Elias Putnam and Joshua Silvester. Fifty years ago the business was confined mostly to Putnamville, the Plains and the Port. About that time James Goodale and Otis Mudge began to manufacture at the Centre. In 1854 there were thirty-five firms, making more than a million and a half pairs annually, and giving employment to about twenty-five hundred men and women.

Samuel Preston and Joshua Silvester were carrying on business on opposite sides of the square at the time of the great fire of 1845. About 1830 Mr. Preston was also running a store at Perley's corner. David Wilkins did his teaming, going into Boston four times a week with a pair of horses. He would load up with cases of brogans and start at one or two o'clock in the morning, and deliver the shoes at the various wharves along old Commercial Street. Then, with a load of groceries previously ordered,—molasses, great boxes of sugar bound with raw hide, and with a hundred sides of leather on top of all,—he drove back. One Hartwell at the Port was, at the same time teaming for the Putnamville people, and did a good business. Later Mr. Wilkins, still a familiar figure with his lumber-wagon in our streets, formed a partnership with the late D. J. Preston, and took all the Boston teaming. It was the growing importance of the shoe business and the need of banking accommodation that led to the establishment of the Village Bank in 1836. During the financial crisis of the next year Danvers men lost heavily with others. For twenty years there was prosperity, and then the crisis of 1857 and the demoralization of business occasioned by the breaking out of the war, forced many to the wall. Those who pulled through or rallied afresh, had prosperous times during the war.

Among those who have contributed to the fame of Danvers as a shoe town within the past twenty or thirty years, and who have either retired, deceased or engaged otherwise in business, are John Sears, Daniel F. Putnam, J. C. Butler, C. H. Gould, Ira P. Pope, Alfred Fellows, J. R. Langley, Amos A. and Henry A. White, Joel Putnam, Aaron Putnam, I. H. Putnam, William E. Putnam, I. H. Boardman, Henry F. Putnam, Phinehas Corning, J. M. Sawyer, G. B. Martin, G. H. Peabody.

The oldest established firm still in business is that of E. and A. Mudge & Co. Edwin Mudge, senior partner, commenced manufacturing in 1837, when nineteen years old. From 1840 to 1847 he was associated with his brother Otis. In 1849 he formed the partnership with his brother Augustus, which, with the admission of Edward Hutchinson in 1858, has since remained without further change. After a number of expedients to accommodate their extensive business, the firm erected a large three-story factory, well fitted with all modern conveniences. It was situated close by the residences of its owners, and was the life of the Center, but at present the tall chimney is the melancholy monument of its former existence. It was burned about the first of June, 1885. Its loss has not proved so disastrous to the Center as was feared, for it so happened that the firm were able to move at once into the factory they now occupy at the corner of Pine and Holten Streets, Tapleyville, taking their old help with them, and the horse cars make the two villages practically one. Upon the corner mentioned, George B. Martin manufactured shoes, and built up a prosperous business in a factory which, by successive additions, had grown to great size, and was occupied by Martin, Clapp and French (W. T. Martin, son of G. B.), when, on the night of February 23, 1883, the whole establishment and five adjoining dwellings were burned. The firm at once rebuilt, but they had not long occupied their fine factory before they experienced serious labor troubles and were induced to move their business to Dover, N. H. Thus the Mudges were enabled to move into it at once after their fire. G. W. Clapp withdrew from the Martin firm at the time of its removal, and with W. A. Tapley commenced the business carried on near the old carpet factory. Other large shoe manufacturers are C. C. Farwell & Co., J. E. Farrar & Co., Glover & Co. and Eaton & Sears; numerous other firms do a smaller business.

Brick-Making.—Danvers bricks rival Danvers onions in their reputation for sterling qualities. Farmer Andrews' trip to Medford and young Jeremiah Page's return with him, the origin of the business here, has been mentioned in the sketch of the Plains. Mr. Page continued the business, of which he was the pioneer, to the close of his life, 1806, and at his decease his son, John Page, and son-in-law, John Fow-

ler, carried it on a few years in partnership. Mr. Page then continued the business alone, and with such energy and success that Page's bricks were widely known and in great demand. He is said to have made the first "clapped bricks," which were really pressed bricks, made before the invention of machinery facilitated this most important feature of brick-making. For many years Mr. Page was a large contractor for government work, and many of his bricks were used in fortifications and light-houses. A very large number were sent to Forts Taylor and Jefferson on the Florida coast. In fact Danvers bricks were the government standard, specifications calling for them or others as good. Mr. Page had yards on both sides of High Street, that on the westerly side extending beyond the location of the railroad and others on South Liberty Street near the Peabody line.

Deacon Joseph Putnam and Israel, his brother, nephews of General Israel, many years ago made bricks near the driving-park on Conant Street. The Webbs, too, were early brick-makers, Nathaniel Webb, grandfather of Putnam Webb, now living at the Port, having a yard near the horse-car stables on High Street. Jotham Webb was just beginning business below the box-mill at the Port, when at the Lexington alarm, he hurriedly donned his wedding suit, and was brought back to his young bride slain by a British bullet.

Josiah Gray was born in Beverly, but his parents moved to Bridgeton, Me., when he was a small boy. He came thither when a young man and learned to make bricks under John Page. He then worked some fifteen years making nails and anchors at the iron works, but on the occasion of a sharp cut in wages he began to make bricks in East Danvers, then Beverly. He virtually made Liberty Street what it is to-day, erecting a number of dwellings and setting out the first shade trees. He died in 1873 at an advanced age, having been a most excellent citizen. The business which he began has continued prosperously in his family for more than fifty years. In 1881 the old yard off Liberty Street, then carried on by S. F. and J. A. Gray was bought by the New England Pressed Brick Company. Expensive works proved, however, a poor substitute for simpler processes and the company failed. J. A. Gray went to Maine, and S. F. Gray, is carrying on the yard off High Street, formerly worked by W. H. Porter.

Asa and Nathan Tapley and Matthew Hooper were early brickmakers in District No. 6. William H. Walcott succeeded Nathan Tapley, and William T. Trask succeeding Mr. Walcott, at present carries on that yard. Isaac Evans, Samuel Low and Moody Elliott were also among the early makers. G. H. Day commenced business in 1861; his sons, G. H. and E. F. Day, later. Samuel Trask, who succeeded Mr. Evans, W. H. Porter, Edward Carr and H. E. Elliott, began about the same time. At some time, John C. Page made bricks on Lefavour's Plain, South of Water's River, near Kernwood; and Charles Page in the large pasture near Crane River bridge; this latter yard was reopened by the Grays, and some of the bricks for the Danvers Lunatic Hospital, for which they had the contract, were made here.

John Grout had a yard in the rear of his residence on High Street. It is estimated that about five million bricks are now annually made here, divided as follows:

G. H. Day	1,500,000
S. F. Gray	1,000,000
Edward Carr	1,000,000
P. A. Gallivan	800,000
Samuel Trask	600,000
Wm. T. Trask	400,000

Of these, at least, a fifth are of first quality front brick, rated in the market as good as any made in New England.

PHYSICIANS.—With the exception of an uncertain report of a Dr. Gregg, said to have lived at Salem Village in 1692, there is no evidence that the town had any settled physician until about 1725, but depended for medical and surgical services upon the Salem doctors.

Jonathan Prince was probably born in Danvers, and was certainly the first resident physician of whom there is any clear account. He studied medicine with Dr. Toothaker, of Billerica, and was the preceptor of Drs. Amos Putnam and Samuel Holten. He lived on the southern slope of Hathorne Hill, at a spot marked by a cluster of pines. The house was long since removed to the corner of Hobart and Forrest Streets, where it is known as the "Hook house."

AMOS PUTNAM was born in Danvers 1722. He pursued his medical studies with Dr. Prince, and practiced in the town till the opening of the French War, when he entered the service as a surgeon. At the close of the war he returned to Danvers, and followed his profession until he was more than eighty years of age. He was a justice of the peace for many years, and one of the most influential citizens of the town. His grave is in a small inclosure near the Collins House, marked by a plain head-stone, on which is the following inscription: "Sacred to the memory of Doct. Amos Putnam and Hannah Phillips, the wife of A. P." He died July 26, 1807, aged eighty-five. She died Oct. 2, 1758, aged thirty-three.

SAMUEL HOLTEN was more distinguished in our history in other respects than as a physician. An outline of his biography has been already given.

ARCHELAUS PUTNAM was born in Danvers in 1744. His birth-place and residence through life was the old Putnam homestead, near Wadsworth Cemetery. He graduated from Harvard College in 1763, and soon after commenced to practice his profession in town. He was a skillful physician and surgeon, and a man of great influence among his fellow-citizens. His death occurred in 1800, and his remains are buried in Wadsworth Cemetery.

JAMES PUTNAM, son of Dr. Amos Putnam, was born in Danvers about 1760, studied medicine and was associated in practice with his father.

ANDREW NICHOLS was born November 2, 1785, died 1853. See sketch of his life and portrait.

Dr. Shed was a druggist rather than a practicing physician. He was long town clerk, and something is said of him in connection with that office. He lived in the South Parish.

During the first years of this century quite a number of physicians began business in town, but after a brief period removed to other localities. Among these may be mentioned, Drs. Clapp, Cilley, Gould, Porter, Patten and Carleton.

Dr. Carleton located at the Port, and was famous as a "singing-master." Dr. Patten lived in what is now the Bass River House.

GEORGE OSGOOD was born in North Andover, March, 1784. After receiving his medical degree he came to Danvers and commenced practice in 1808. He also joined the Massachusetts Medical Society the same year. His home was for a time near the village bank building, and afterwards near the Essex depot, in the Abbott House. He was in active practice more than half a century, and during this long time he was one of the most familiar figures in the town. He was a son-in-law of Dr. Holten, and is buried near the grave of the latter in the Holten Cemetery. The headstone bears this inscription:

GEORGE OSGOOD, M.D.
He practiced medicine in this town fifty-five years.
Beloved and respected by all who knew him.
He passed to his rest, May 26, 1863,
Aged 79 years, 2 months.

EBENEZER HUNT, whose name has often appeared in these pages, for more than half a century practiced in this town of his adoption. He was born in Nashua, N.H., April 13, 1799; died at Danversport, October 27, 1874. He graduated at Dartmouth Medical College in 1822, and the next year settled here. He was among the earliest and foremost in the temperance and anti-slavery movements, and so ardent was his patriotism that when war came he enlisted as assistant surgeon in the Eighth Regiment. Radical in his views, gruff in manner, he was warm of heart and skillful in his profession, and will long be remembered as a useful citizen.

DAVID A. GROSVENOR, JR., a son of Dr. Grosvenor, of North Reading, was born in Manchester, Mass., 1812. He pursued his medical studies with his father, and also with Dr. Mussey, of Hanover, N. H. He received his diploma as Doctor of Medicine from Dartmouth Medical School in 1835. He commenced practice in Rutland, Mass., in 1836, but three years later came to Danvers and settled. His residence is on Elm Street, near the Essex depot. He became a member of the Massachusetts Medical Society in 1840.

J. W. SNOW, born in Eastham, Mass., October 10, 1820. Studied medicine at Harvard Medical School and Hospital. Graduated at Pittsfield College; commenced practice at Liverpool, Nova Scotia, in 1847; settled in Danvers, January 1, 1850; removed to Saco, Me., in 1867, and shortly after to Boston, where he now resides.

DR. P. M. CHASE was born in Bradford, Mass., May 11, 1828; entered Phillips Academy, Andover, in 1847; attended a medical course at Woodstock, Vt., in 1853; was a pupil of Dr. H. B. Fowler, of Bristol, N. H.; entered the Medical Department at Dartmouth College in 1854, and in 1855 entered Harvard Medical School, and graduated from Harvard Medical College in 1857; located at Danvers as practicing physician in 1857; was commissioned examining surgeon for recruits in the Rebellion in 1861; in 1874 was commissioned United States Examining Surgeon for Pensions; in 1875 was commissioned surgeon in the Eighth Regiment, M. V. M.; was a Democratic candidate for State Senator in 1874-75. He died at his residence, corner of Locust and Oak Streets, January 4, 1887.

LEWIS WHITING, homeopathist, was born in Hanover, Mass., January 24, 1832; he graduated from the Bridgewater Normal School, and taught school till his health failed; began the study of medicine at Bellevue Hospital, N. Y., in 1861; was afterwards two years in the navy as surgeon's steward; continued his studies in 1864 at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, in New York, and graduated in 1865 at the New York Homeopathic Medical College; settled in Danvers August, 1865. Residence on Putnam Street.

WILLIAM WINSLOW EATON, born in Webster, Me., May 20, 1836; graduated from Bowdoin College in 1861; began the study of medicine, in 1860, with Dr. Isaac Lincoln, of Brunswick; took his first and second course of lectures in 1861 and '62, at the Maine Medical School; was a pupil of Dr. Valentine Mott in the winter of '63 and graduated at N.Y. University in 1864; entered the military service as assistant surgeon of the Sixteenth Regiment, Maine Infantry, in 1862; was promoted to surgeon and served three years; began practice in South Reading, Mass., in 1865; removed to Danvers in April, 1867; was elected a member of the Maine Medical Association, and of the Massachusetts Medical Society in 1865. Residence on Holten Street, near the Peabody Institute. Dr. Eaton has served on the school committee, as trustee of Peabody Institute, and in other public capacities, and has been recently elected president of the Walnut Grove Cemetery corporation.

D. HOMER BATCHELDER, born in Londonderry, N. H., 1811, graduated at Berkshire Medical College in 1840, practiced thirteen years in Londonderry, then removed to Cranston, R. I., from which town he came to Danvers in December, 1876. His residence was at the Port, and after a few years he moved elsewhere and was succeeded by Dr. Frost.

Edgar O. Fowler was born in Bristol, N. H., May 7, 1853; graduated at New Hampton Institute; studied medicine with his father, Dr. H. B. Fowler, of Bristol, N. H.; was a student at Bellevue Medical College and Long Island Hospital, N. Y., in 1872 and 1873; graduated at Dartmouth Medical School with the degree of M.D. in 1873; commenced practice in Danvers in 1874; joined the Massachusetts Medical Society in 1875; died suddenly of heart disease, May 1, 1884.

Woodbury G. Frost was born in Brunswick, Me.; graduated at Bowdoin College in 1860; taught school before and after graduation; received degree of A.M. in 1863, and the degree of M.D. in 1866; was acting assistant surgeon under Farragut in the W. G. B. Squadron; practiced medicine twenty years in Freeport and Portland, Me., and in Danvers, Mass.; served on school committees in Maine, and at present is on the Danvers board.

Drs. F. A. Gardner and Cowles recently practiced here a short time.

Dr. H. F. Batchelder, homeopathist, has lately settled.

Lawyers.—At least three natives of North Danvers have risen to high judicial positions,—Samuel Holten, as probate judge of Essex County; Samuel Putnam, as justice of the Supreme Court of Massachusetts; and Rufus Tapley, as justice of the Supreme Court of Maine. Hon. Nathan Read came also to be a Maine judge. Arthur A. Putnam has been, if he is not still, judge of a local court in Worcester County. Judge Cummings of the Massachusetts Supreme Court; Frederick Howes of the Burley Farm; Abner C. Goodell, long Register of Probate at Salem; and Mellen Chamberlain, ex-chief justice of the Municipal Court of Boston, and now superintendent of the Boston Public Library, have lived in North Danvers. Wm. Oakes was a lawyer, and practiced somewhat in Ipswich, but devoted himself chiefly to botany. Among those who have practiced here and gone elsewhere are William G. Choate, A. A. Putnam and Horace L. Hadley. A few devoted martyrs still remain to pour on oil when life's waters are troubled. Their names,—J. W. Porter, E. L. Hill, D. N. Crowley and A. P. White. Stephen H. Phillips, at one time attorney-general of Massachusetts, has within a few years taken up his residence on a part of the estate which was formerly owned by his father. A number of distinguished lawyers, including Rufus Choate, practiced in that part of Danvers which is now Peabody, and their names, here purposely omitted, will be found in the sketch of that town elsewhere in this book.

The Danvers Lunatic Hospital.—That is the official name, and though it doesn't slide so easily from the tongue as insane asylum it doubtless is professionally more correct. The act of 1873 authorized the Governor to appoint commissioners to select and buy a site for a new hospital for the insane, to be located in the northeastern part of the State. S. C. Cobb, of Boston, C. C. Esty, of Framingham, and Edwin Walden, of Lynn, were so appointed, and they selected Hathorne Hill, in Danvers, then owned by Francis Dodge, as the best location. From an æsthetic and hygienic point of view, the situation of the great institution is superb, and the beautifully kept grounds on the summit of the sightly hill add much to the attractiveness of Danvers, yet on practical grounds, the wisdom of placing the building so high has been questioned.

Work was commenced on the hill May 1, 1874. The hospital was ready for use in May, 1878. The cost of buildings, land, etc., at the latter date was $1,599,-287.49. The first superintendent was Calvin S. May, M.D., who served from May 13, 1878, to August 9, 1880. William B. Goldsmith, M.D., was appointed superintendent March 1, 1881, and resigned February 1, 1886, to accept a similar position at the Butler Hospital, Providence, R. I. During the year's absence of Dr. Goldsmith in Europe, July 15, 1883, to July 15, 1884, Henry R. Stedman, M.D., was acting superintendent. William A. Gorton, the present superintendent, was appointed on the date of Dr. Goldsmith's resignation.

The first board of trustees were Charles P. Preston, of Danvers, Daniel S. Richardson, of Lowell, Gardner A. Churchill, of Boston, Samuel W. Hopkinson, of Bradford, James Sturgis, of Boston. The present board, 1887, include Messrs. Preston, Richardson and Hopkinson, and also Harriet R. Lee, of Salem, Solon Bancroft, of Reading, Dr. Orville F. Rogers, of Boston, Florence Lyman, of Boston.

Dr. May was treasurer as well as superintendent. After his resignation the offices were separated, and Stephen C. Rose, of Marblehead, was appointed treasurer. He served from August 9, 1880, to September 1, 1882, when his successor, Charles H. Gould, of Danvers, who at present holds the office, was appointed. There are now, July, 1887, in the institution seven hundred and fifty patients. The receipts for the past year were $151,598.95; payments, $149,-887; balance in favor of the institution, $1711.95. The coal bill was about $2500.

The officers at the hospital, 1887, are as follows: superintendent, William A. Gorton; lady physician, Julia K. Carey; first assistant physician, Edward P. Elliot; second assistant, Milo A. Jewett; third assistant, Arthur H. Harrington; treasurer, Charles H. Gould; steward, Nathaniel W. Starbird, Jr.; clerk, C. A. Reed; engineer, G. A. Lufkin; farmer, S. S. Pratt.

Literary Societies.—Probably the first was the "New Mills Lyceum," organized December 24, 1832. Its original members were Wm. Francis, Alfred Porter, J. P. Harriman, Edward Stimpson, Hathorne Porter, Samuel McIntire, Jr., Benj. Porter, Aug. Fowler, Jere. Page, Jr., Wm. Black, Wm. Endicott, Wm. Cheever, Edward Perry, Wm. Chaplin, David

Taylor, John Perkins, Samuel D. Pindar, H. G. Bixby, Moses W. Wilson, Edward D. Verry, Joseph Merrill.

The meetings were held in the school-house or Baptist vestry. Many of the young men who became conspicuous in the anti-slavery movement "learned to talk" in this debating club.

Nearly fifty years ago the North Danvers Lyceum used to hold its meetings in the hall of the old tavern, which hall was part of the mansion once standing on Folly Hill. On one side sat the ladies, on the other the gentlemen. The dignitaries, chief among whom were the ministers, Dr. Braman and others, sat at the head of the hall. Just how long the Lyceum continued its existence cannot be stated, but that for a time its meetings were the scenes of many vigorous and beneficial discussions on all sorts of topics, and by men who were no mean gladiators in such combats there is ample testimony. Mrs. Philbrick has preserved this interesting notice:

"The question for debate on Wednesday evening, December 25th, provided there be no lecture is—

"Will the present pressure in business on the whole be a benefit to the community?

"DISPUTANTS.

I. P. Proctor, J. D. Philbrick,	*Affirmative.*	O. A. Woodbury, Otis Mudge.	*Negative.*

"NORTH DANVERS, December 18, 1839.

"MR. PHILBRICK:

"At a meeting of N. D. Lyceum you were chosen one of the Library Committee for coming season.

"I. P. PROCTOR, Secretary."

The BOWDITCH CLUB, which had its origin among the young men of Putnamville, grew to a flourishing and very useful existence, and lived far longer than such societies usually do. Its first meetings were held in the Putnamville school-house in 1857, and one of its original members and most enthusiastic supporters has informed the writer that so earnestly were questions debated that after adjournment certain members who lived at the Port would be accompanied and argued with all the way home.

The club held its meetings at the Plains after 1858 or 1859, and in 1870 moved into very comfortable quarters in the Bank Building. A half a dozen years later it died the inevitable slow death of its kind. It has left a fine record, and was long an efficient agency in the promotion of culture. The club maintained an annual lecture course, before the Peabody free course, and brought here the best talent to be had. Its own entertainments were of a high tone and always interesting. The "Bowditch Club Dinner" was long a feature of each winter, and a "picnic" was held each summer. It would be well, indeed, for the town, were just such another society in existence to-day.

The Holten Lyceum, Wadsworth Association, and perhaps other societies, have had their day and ceased to be, at the Centre. A number of others might be mentioned, the Shakespeare Club, the Atlas Society, etc., etc.

The Danvers Scientific Association was organized September 27, 1882, and has held fortnightly meetings at Peabody Institute. The Sawyer Club is an active literary and social organization composed principally of members of the Universalist Society.

THE DANVERS WOMEN'S ASSOCIATION.—On the 18th of April, 1882, a number of ladies met with Miss A. L. Page, under a call to all interested in forming a society among the women of Danvers for consideration of matters of common interest, furtherance of woman's work, general improvement and social enjoyment. One week later, the first regular meeting was held at Miss Shepherd's, where, also, officers were elected and a code of by-laws adopted, under the name of the "Danvers Women's Association;" and until November following, meetings were held in private houses. Then the Grand Army Hall was used until January 1, 1884, when the Association took and fitted rooms especially for its own use, in the Ropes building. Upon the completion of the new post-office building it moved into its present quarters, comprising the whole of both upper floors. The membership of the Association has been for some time necessarily limited to one hundred and twenty, and the number is always full. Meetings have been regularly held on Tuesday afternoons, for seven months each year, at which instructive papers or talks have been given, usually by friends from out of town. Three times each winter "social teas" have been held, to which gentlemen have been invited.

To a remarkable degree the club has been successful in its aim towards "general improvement and social enjoyment," and in tending to break down whatever prejudices or exclusiveness naturally clung to the several religious societies it has been a potent influence in the right direction. Mrs. Harriet L. Wentworth has been its president from its formation. The other officers at present (1887) are: Vice-Presidents, Mrs. E. A. Spofford, Mrs. C. E. Whipple. Treasurer, Mrs. V. A. Burrington. Secretary, Miss Mary W. Nichols. Directors, one year, Miss Maria L. Fowler, Mrs. Sarah D. Merrill, Mrs. Abby Hutchinson, Mrs. Alice G. Richards. Two years, Mrs. Mary L. Ewing, Mrs. Julia S. Spalding, Mrs. Hattie R. Keith, Miss Isabel B. Tapley.

SECRET SOCIETIES.—They are a small legion. Yet let no man with a new "improved" or "ancient" or otherwise peculiar "order" hesitate to come. There are still plenty of "joiners."

Free Masonry goes back nearly a hundred and ten years in Danvers, to the organization of the "United States Lodge," May 1, 1778. It ante-dated the Essex Lodge of Salem by one year. Among the members of the "United States" were Samuel Page, Jethro Putnam, Daniel Squiers and the famous drummer of New Mills, Richard Skidmore.

The latter was Tyler, and the jewels and regalia were destroyed at the burning of his house in 1805. The lodge had ceased to hold regular meetings be-

fore this, its decay being attributed to the enlistment of so many of its members in the Revolution. A new lodge—the Jordan Lodge—was established in 1808, the meetings of which were held many years at Berry's tavern, but during the anti-masonry excitement, from 1825 to 1835, meetings were held in South Danvers, and only often enough to preserve the charter. The furniture, regalia, etc., were moved there, and when regular meetings were resumed the lodge kept and has since retained its establishment in South Danvers (Peabody). Many North Danvers Masons went thither until 1863, when Amity Lodge was established here and provided itself with the comfortable quarters in the Bank building, which are exclusively used for secret society purposes. The first regular communication of Amity Lodge was held October 26, 1863. Seven years later thirty-three of the members petitioned for a new lodge, and the present Mosaic Lodge, which was chartered October 30, 1871, was the result.

The Holten Royal Arch Chapter was constituted March 12, 1872.

There is but one lodge of Odd Fellows,—Danvers Lodge, Number 153. It was instituted September 13, 1870.

The following list of other societies is perhaps not full; the date is that of establishment:

Ward Post 90, G. A. R.	June 8, 1869
Agawam Tribe, Imp. Order of Red Men	Feb. 24, 1875
Fraternity Lodge, Knights of Honor	Mar. 14, 1877
Arcadian Council, No. 249, Royal Arcanum	Feb. 10, 1879
Danvers Union Equitable Aid, No. 28	Nov. 29, 1879
Danvers Lodge, A. O. of United Workmen	May 28, 1881
Tuesday Evening Aid Society	Oct, 24. 1881
Hawthorne Council, No. 755, Legion of Honor	Oct. 1881
State Grand Union Equitable Aid	May 15, 1882
Ward Relief Corps, No. 12 (Women)	April 12, 1883
Waukewan Tribe, No. 16, Imp. Order of Red Men,	April 3, 1886
Daughters of Pocahontas	1887

CHAPTER XXXIX.

DANVERS—(*Continued*).

CIVIL HISTORY.

Old Officers.—Under the act of February 13, 1789, any town might "give liberty for swine to go at large during the whole or part of the year," provided they were yoked throughout spring and summer, and "constantly ringed in the nose," the legal yoke to be "the full depth of the swine's neck, above the neck, and half as much below the neck, and the soal, or bottom of the yoke full three times as long as the breadth or thickness of the swines." To see that the laws were enforced, officers called "hog-reeves" were regularly elected until 1827. Many honorable and well-known men were incumbents of this office, seemingly not alluring to ambition. Israel Hutchinson, Jonathan Osborn and Jonathan Trask were on the first board.

Daniel Rea was, in 1752, commissioned "to take care that ye Laws Relating to ye Preservation of Deer be observed." "Deer-reeves" were chosen from 1765 to 1797; the first, William Poole and George Wiatt; the last, Eleazer Putnam and Timothy Fuller.

A Sealer of Weights and Measures was first chosen in 1759, and but for the resignation of Francis Symonds, of the Bell Tavern, his posterity, instead of the descendants of Joseph Pairpont, might now claim the ancestral honor of having first adjusted the pints and pecks of the town to legal standard.

Sealers of Leather were chosen from the very first, and the office was not altogether discontinued until within a few years. Israel Cheever and James Upton were the first leather measurers. Deacon S. P. Fowler has in his possession one of the old iron seals mentioned in this memorandum:

"June 18, 1765. Two Sett of Marks or Seals, was Provided at the Cost of the Town for Sealing of Leather according to the Law of the Province and the same delivered to the Sealers of Leather for the Present year, the Tees are for Sealing of Tanned Leather, and the Cees for Curried Leather. By order of Selectmen.

"Arch. Dale, T. Clerk."

"Wardens" were elected from 1761 to 1790. The first to hold that office were Jeremiah Page, Bartholomew Rea, Gideon Foster, and Joseph Osborne; and the last, Benjamin Proctor and Oliver Putnam.

The last "clerks of the market," chosen in 1800, were Joseph Osborn, Jr., Gideon Foster, Samuel Page and Nathaniel Putnam, Jr.

Whether or not it was common for the selectmen to appoint sextons, the only record of such appointments is in 1821, the appointees being Isaac Munro, Bartholomew Dempsey and William Johnson.

From 1752 to 1791 "haywards" were annually chosen. Jonathan Putnam and John Osbon were the first; Jno. Dodge and Gideon Putnam the last. That hay-scales were not in existence here earlier than 1770, witness the following interesting petition:

"The Petition of Francis Symonds to the Selectmen of Danvers for the Present year 1770 Signifieth that they grant him the following Request on the following Conditions Namely that he may Erect a Convenient pair of Skails or Stilyards that will answer to way Cart or Sled Loads of hay that are Bought and Sold in our Markets, and that Said Selectmen Enter it in our Said Danvers Town Book.

"That no other Person within two miles of the Petitioner shall have the Liberty or Grant from us to Entercept him by Entering the like or any Skails or Stilyards for said purpose for Twenty year provided and it is understood that said Symonds hath this Grant allowed him by us the said Select Men on those Conditions That he keep said Skails or Stilyards in good order and see them well tended and that he Charges no more for his waying hay or anything Ells Then the Comon Price Now Gentlemen as I trust you will Observe the need we have of such a Convenience and how Likely to Bennefit our Nabourwhod for which Reson I trust you will due it as well as this to oblige your hombul Sarvent. Signed Francis Symonds Danvers June 17th 1770.

"William Shillaber.
"Jonathan Buxton.
"John Preston.
"John Putnam.

"The four Persons Above named was Select Men of the Town of Dan-

vers for the year 1770; and I have Recorded the above in the Town Book According to their order.

"Att: Sam: Holten Jun. T. Cler.

Captain Jonathan Ingersoll, Benajah Collins and Samuel Page were chosen in 1811 "to consider the expediency of the Town erecting hay-scales," and their report sets forth the need of such scales near the south meeting-house, "and we also find that a considerable quantity of hay is annually purchased on the road leading from the plains (so-called) to Salem, and that a hay-scale erected in some suitable place on that road would make it very convenient for the inhabitants of that part of the Town, and further, we find from the best information we can obtain that the expense of erecting one hay-scale with all the apparatus thereto will amount to about one hundred and seventy-five dollars."

The acceptance of this report was doubtless the origin of certain massive arrangements of beams, tackle and steel-yards, which, within the memory of older citizens, stood nearly in front of the Baptist Church at Danversport, and which weighed whatever was driven beneath by lifting wagon and load bodily from the ground. The selectmen were, in 1836, instructed to sell "the Hay Scales at the Neck."

Among those who were licensed to knock down the goods and chattels of their friends and neighbors under the auctioneer's hammer in the first quarter of this century were Sylvester Proctor, John Fowler, Benjamin Porter, Captain Thomas Putnam, Eleazer Putnam, Joseph Shed, Porter Kettell and Stephen Upton. Dr. Shed was an auctioneer from 1818 nearly or quite all the time to his death, in 1853. Those who began service in the second quarter were William D. Joplin, Hathorne Porter, Edward Stimpson, Squires Shove, Daniel P. Clough, Thomas Trask; since 1850, Richard Hood, William Dodge, S. D. Shattuck, Alfred Porter, John A. Putnam, Charles H. Rundlett, William B. Morgan, George Faxon, T. P. Conway.

The tax collectors of the early years of the town glad enough doubtless to meet with ready payment in any sort of money, were nevertheless bothered to reduce the several kinds of currency, silver and continental notes of old and new issues, to a common standard. Distraining and tax sales were rare, and abatements common. The assessors left short minutes of their reasons for abatement, such as "Gone," "Poor and dead," "G. P's dam gave way," "Under captivity by the Indians," "Taxed twice," "Taxed wrong," "Old and lost his faculty," "Poor widow," "Being gone to sea fishing," "Being not well," "Broke his leg," "Not 16 years old."

A move was made as early as 1813 towards the creation of a Board of Health. At that time certain persons asked the town to petition the Legislature for authority to elect such officers. The proposition was dismissed, however, and not till nearly twenty years later, 1832, was the first board chosen. Its members were Benjamin Jacobs, Oliver Saunders, J. W. Proctor, Thomas Cheever, Samuel Preston, Joseph Stearns, Jeremiah Putnam, Robert S. Daniels and Richard Osborn. Since then a Board of Health have been annually chosen.

Town Clerks and Records.—The records of the town clerks have reached the thirteenth volume. As a whole, they have been kept remarkably well. A good recording officer must have continually in mind the fact that the writing will outlive the writer and must preserve in his records a full and clear statement of events which shall be of use when they can no longer be aided by the memory of any. Such true quality was possessed by our earliest town clerks, and the spirit has been, for the most part, transmitted through the line. In one hundred and thirty-five years of town life there have been twenty different clerks, the average length of whose terms is about six and a half years. Since 1800 there have been but seven, the terms of three of whom comprise seventy-three years. Here follows a complete list of

TOWN CLERKS.

1752–53. Daniel Epes, Jr.
1754–56. James Prince.
1757. Benjamin Prescott, Jr.
1758–60. James Prince.
1761. Benjamin Prescott, Jr.
1762. Gideon Putnam.
1763. Thomas Porter.
1764–66. Archelaus Dale.
1767. Thomas Porter.
1768–71. Samuel Holten, Jr.
1772. Gideon Putnam.
1773-75. Samuel Holten, Jr.
1776. Stephen Needham.
1777. Samuel Flint.
1778–86. Stephen Needham.
1787. Jonathan Sawyer.
1788-90. James Porter.
1791-94. Gideon Foster.
1795-1800. Joseph Osborn, Jr.
1801-28. Nathan Felton.
1829-34. Benj. Jacobs.
1835-53. Joseph Shed.
1854-55. Nathan H. Poor.
1856. Edwin F. Putnam.
1857-85. A. Sumner Howard.
1886. Joseph E. Hood.

Mr. Howard's twenty-eight years is the longest service, and was appropriately recognized by appreciative resolutions when he declined to serve longer. Mr. Poor, who was clerk of the old town at the time of division, has ever since been retained as clerk of South Danvers and Peabody. Before the building of the town-houses the records followed the abode of the clerks. A small projection in front of one of the houses where the old Ipswich Road crosses the Andover turnpike, and begins to climb Hog Hill, is recalled by a few aged people as the headquarters of Nathan Felton, whom they remember as an old man dispensing the rude justice of a country squire. Much of biographical interest might and ought to be written of many of these town clerks, but space here forbids. Perhaps the model clerk of all was Dr. Shed, a man who evidently loved to make his records clear and beautiful. He was a physician of the South Parish, residing on the main street opposite and a little below the old bank building, where he also had an apothecary store. Dr. Shed was a justice of the peace, and he drew and acknowledged most of the deeds by which his fellow-citizens made their real-estate conveyances. His death was formally announced at a meeting in Granite Hall April 11, 1853,

when Dr. Hunt presented resolutions of regret and respect, and the selectmen and other town officers were directed to attend, in official capacity, the funeral.

Up to the annual meeting of 1887, the town has held nine hundred and forty meetings. Of this number, 309 were held in the several meeting-houses of the First or North Church (of which number 25 were in the "Brick Meeting-house," and 22 at "Village Hall," the basement of the present meeting-house), 293 were held in the South Meeting-house, 2 in school-house No. 5, 17 at Liberty Hall, 2 at Chapman's Tavern, 4 at the hall of Benjamin Goodridge, 96 at Union Hall, 39 at Granite Hall (vestry of the Maple Street Church), 172 in the Town-Hall, 6 at places not named. One of the meetings at "Liberty Hall, in the house occupied by Geo. Southwick, Jun., Innholder," was called there in 1828 by reason of the refusal of the proprietors of the South Church to allow the use of their house, and at this meeting a familiar parliamentary form was slightly but pungently varied; it was voted "that the communication from the Proprietors of the South Meeting-house pass under the table."

The first attempt at a systematic index of the records was made in 1832. Then the selectmen were directed to have made a "digested index of the town records from the commencement thereof in a book specially for this purpose, with reference to the volume and page in which the subject may be found." They were to allow such compensation for the work as when completed they should judge it worth. Nine years later, on petition of J. W. Proctor and others, the index was brought up to date, and it was then made the duty of the clerk to make an annual index. Measures were taken in 1846 "for keeping the records in one office, rather than in separate places, as now kept." But the old indexes have been found to be imperfect, and, with the accumulated records of later years, need has been felt of a new index, based upon a thorough and systematic overhauling of the originals. A few years ago J. W. Porter, J. A. Putnam and I. W. Andrews were appointed to take the matter in hand. They consulted at first and from time to time with William P. Upham, an expert in such matters, and obtained the services of Miss Helen Tapley to do the practical work. The town clerk's records have all been thus indexed, and it is safe to say that no other town can surpass the accuracy and general excellence of this work, and but few can equal it. A new vault has been constructed for files and plans in the basement, and the old one for ordinary use has been much enlarged.

Moderators.—From 1752 to 1887, inclusive, thirty-five different men have presided over the one hundred and thirty-five annual town-meetings. A list of these moderators arranged chronologically according as their names first appear, with subsequent years of service, if any, given, is as follows, the right hand column showing at a glance the total service of each:

	Years.
Daniel Epes, Esq., 1752, '53	2
Capt. Thos. Porter, 1754	1
Daniel Epes, Jr., Esq., 1755, '56, '57, '59, '60, '65, '66, '67	8
Samuel Flint, 1758	1
Thomas Porter, 1761, '62, '63, '71, '72	5
Deacon Malachi Felton, 1764	1
Samuel Holten, Jr., 1768, '81, '84, '86, '87, '89, '90, 1796–1812	24
Gideon Putnam, 1769, '79, '83, '85, '93, '94, '95	7
Archelaus Dale, 1770, '73, '76	3
Capt. Wm. Shillaber, 1774, '75, '77, '78, '88, '91, '92	7
Amos Putnam, 1780, '82	2
Samuel Page, 1813, '14	2
Dr. Andrew Nichols, 1815, '16, '17	3
Dr. Joseph Shed, 1818	1
Dr. George Osgood, 1819, '21, '25, '35	4
Capt. Thos. Putnam, 1820	1
Nathan Poor, 1822, '23, '24	3
Robert S. Daniels, 1826	1
Elias Putnam, 1827, '29, '31	3
Lewis Allen, 1828, '46, '48, '50, '52, '54	6
John W. Proctor, 1830, '32, '34, '36, '38, '40	6
John Preston, 1833, '37	2
Samuel P. Fowler, 1839, '43	2
Abel Nichols, 1841	1
Daniel P. King, 1842	1
Jonathan Shove, 1844	1
Moses Black, Jr., 1845, '47, '51	3
James D. Black, 1849, '53, '55, '57, '65	5
Israel W. Andrews, 1856, '70, '77	3
Wm. Endicott, 1858, '59, '62, '63, '66, '67, '68, '69	8
A. A. Putnam, 1860, '61	2
Charles P. Preston, 1864	1
George Tapley, 1871, '72, '74, '78, '79, '80, '81	7
George J. Sanger, 1873, '75, '76, '82, '83, '84	6
Daniel N. Crowley, 1885, '86	2
Alden P. White, 1887	1

It may be noticed with what regularity honors alternated from say, 1826, to division, 1856, the office being held by north parish men odd years, and by south parish men even years.

Treasurers.—There have been from 1752 to 1887, inclusive, twenty-one treasurers of the town, as follows:

	Years.
James Prince, 1752, '53	2
Samuel King, 1754	1
Joseph Osborne, 1755, 56	2
Cornet Samuel Holten, 1757, '58	2
Joseph Southwick, 1759	1
James Smith, 1760–69	10
Thos. Porter, 1770–72	3
Jeremiah Page, 1773, '74	2
Stephen Proctor, 1775–83	9
Gideon Putnam, 1784–88	5
Samuel Holten, 1789–1812	24
Samuel Page, 1813, '14	2
Ward Pool, 1815–18	4
Edward Southwick, 1819–24	6
Ebenezer Shillaber, 1825–31	7
Robert S. Daniels, 1832, '41–48	9
Stephen Upton, 1833–40	8
Abner Sanger, 1849	1
Francis Baker, 1850–55	6
William L. Weston, 1856–82	27
A. Frank Welch, 1882–87	6

Representatives.—The following men have represented Danvers in the General Court, arranged by consecutive years after 1802, when the town began to send several representatives annually:

Daniel Epes, Jr., 1754, '55, '56, '57, '65, '67.
Daniel Gardner, 1759.
Thomas Porter, 1760, '61, '62, '63, '65.
John Preston, 1764.
Samuel Holten, Jr., 1768, '69, '70, '71, '72, '73, '75, '80, '87.
Wm. Shillaber, 1775.
Samuel Epes, 1776.
Jeremiah Hutchinson, 1777, '78, '79, '80–83, '85–88.
Gideon Putnam, 1784.
Israel Hutchinson, 1789, '91–95, '97, '98.
Caleb Low, 1790.
Gideon Foster, 1796, '99, 1800–2.
1804.—Gideon Foster, Capt. Samuel Page, Dr. Nathan Read.
1805.—Gideon Foster, Samuel Page, Nathan Felton.
1806.—Gideon Foster, Samuel Page, Nathan Felton.
1807.—Nathan Felton.
1808.—Samuel Page, Nathan Felton, Squiers Shove.
1809.—Samuel Page, Nathan Felton, Squiers Shove.
1810.—Samuel Page, Nathan Felton, Dennison Wallis.
1811.—Samuel Page, Nathan Felton, Dennison Wallis, Daniel Putnam.
1812.—Samuel Page, Nathan Felton, Dennison Wallis, James Foster.
1813.—Samuel Page, Nathan Felton, Dennison Wallis, James Foster.
1814.—Samuel Page, Nathan Felton, Sylvester Osborn, Hezekiah Flint.
1815.—Nathan Felton, Sylvester Osborn, Hezekiah Flint, William P. Page.
1816.—Nathan Felton, William P. Page, Frederick Howes, John Swinerton, Jr.
1817.—Daniel Putnam, Sylvester Osborn, Frederick Howes, Thomas Putnam.
1818.—Frederick Howes.
1819.—Nathan Felton, Dennison Wallis, Daniel Putnam, Thomas Putnam.
1820–21.—Nathan Felton.
1822.—William Sutton.
1823.—Ebenezer Shillaber, John Page, Nathan Poor, Nathaniel Putnam.
1824.—Nathan Poor.
1825.—John Page, John Endicott.
1826.—Jonathan Shove, Rufus Choate.
1827.—Rufus Choate, Jonathan Shove.
1828.—Jonathan Shove, Nathan Poor, Robert S. Daniels.
1829.—Jonathan Shove, Elias Putnam.
1830.—Elias Putnam, Jonathan Shove, Robert S. Daniels, Nathan Poor.
1831 (May).—Nathan Poor, John Page, William Sutton, John Preston.
1831 (November).—John Page, John Preston, Nathan Poor, Jonathan Shove.
1832.—John Preston, John Page, Ebenezer Shillaber, Jonathan Shove.
1833.—Jonathan Shove, Henry Cook, John Preston, John Page.
1834.—John Preston, Henry Cook, Andrew Lunt, Eben Putnam, Jacob F. Perry.
1835.—Jacob F. Perry, Andrew Lunt, Daniel P. King, Allen Putnam, Joshua H. Ward.
1836.—Joshua H. Ward, Jacob F. Perry, Andrew Lunt, Caleb L. Frost.
1837.—Caleb L. Frost, Eben Putnam, Samuel P. Fowler, Lewis Allen.
1838.—Lewis Allen, Samuel P. Fowler, Henry Poor, Abel Nichols.
1839.—Joshua H. Ward, Henry Poor, Samuel P. Fowler, Allen Putnam.
1840.—Allen Putnam, Fitch Poole.
1841.—Fitch Poole, Samuel Preston,
1842.—Daniel P. King, Samuel Preston.
1843.—Frederick Morrill, Joshua Silvester.
1844.—Richard Osborn, Henry Fowler.
1845.—Henry Fowler, Richard Osborn.
1846.—Henry Fowler, Elijah W. Upton.
1847.—Elijah W. Upton, Joshua Silvester.
1848.—William Walcott, William Dodge.
1849.—A. A. Abbott, John Hines.
1850.—William Walcott, Otis Mudge, Henry A. Hary.
1851.—John Hines, Philemon Putnam, Alfred A. Abbott.
1852.—William Walcott.
1853.—David Daniels, Philemon Putnam, James P. King.
1854.—Joseph Jacobs, Francis Dodge, Israel W. Andrews.
1855.—Israel W. Andrews, Eben S. Poor, Alonzo P. Phillips.
1856.—Arthur A. Putnam, Israel W. Andrews, Richard Smith.
1857–58.—Francis P. Putnam.
1859.—Arthur A. Putnam.
1860.—George Tapley.
1861–62.—James W. Putnam.
1863–64.—Charles P. Preston.
1865–66.—Simeon Putnam.
1867–68.—Edwin Mudge.
1869.—Abbott Johnson, of Wenham.
1870–71.—George H. Peabody.
1872–73.—George J. Sanger.
1874.—John L. Robinson, of Wenham.
1875–76.—Charles B. Rice.
1877.—Israel W. Andrews.
1878.—Charles B. Rice.
1879.—Henry Hobbs, of Wenham.
1880–81.—Gilbert A. Tapley.
1882.—Alonzo J. Stetson.
1883.—Andrew H. Paton.
1884.—N. Porter Perkins, of Wenham.
1885–86.—Malcolm Sillars.

To the great convention called in 1820 to make the first revision of the State Constitution, in which Daniel Webster, Judge Story, Leverett Saltonstall, Josiah Quincy and others were prominent figures, Danvers sent Caleb Oakes, John Page, Ebenezer Shillaber and Ebenezer King. At the gubernatorial election of 1851 voters were called upon to decide whether or no a convention should be called for another revision of the Constitution. The citizens of this town said "No," 681 to 556. The next year on the same question, "Yes," 638 to 636; in each case the voice of the town was the voice of the State. Delegates were chosen to meet at the State House, May 4, 1853. In this convention were Rufus Choate, Sidney Bartlett, Nathan Hale, George S. Hillard and others from Boston. Robert Rantoul, Marcus Morton, Jr., Henry K. Oliver, John B. Alley, R. H. Dana, Jr., Asahel Huntington, Otis P. Lord, Charles W. Upham and others from Essex County. John A. Putnam, now of Danvers, represented Wenham. At the election, March 7, 1853, the vote of Danvers was as follows:

Whole number of votes	736
Necessary to a choice	369
Milton P. Braman had	399
Samuel P. Fowler had	397
Alfred A. Abbott had	370
Andrew Nichols had	300
James D. Black had	297
Charles Estes had	289

Sixteen other candidates had from 1 to 39. Messrs. Braman, Fowler and Abbott were elected delegates. Each of the eight propositions submitted by the convention to the people were rejected by this town at the fall election of 1853 by an average vote of about 715 nays to 515 yeas.

Selectmen.—The following is a complete list:

1752.—Daniel Epes.
Captain Samuel Flint.
Deacon Cornelius Tarball.
Stephen Putnam.
Samuel King.
Daniel Gardner.
Joseph Putnam.
1753.—Daniel Epes, Jr.
Captain Thomas Flint.
Corntt. Samuel Holten.
Samuel King.
Lieut. David Putnam.
Ens. John Procter.
Jasper Needham.
1754.—Daniel Epes, Jr.
Jasper Needham.

Samuel Putnam.
James Prince.
Ebenezer Goodale.
1755.—Daniel Epes, Jr.,
Jasper Needham.
Capt. John Proctor.
James Prince.
Capt. Samuel Flint.
1756—Daniel Epes, Jr.
Daniel Marble.
Capt. Thomas Flint.
Deacon Cornelius Tarble.
James Prince.
1757—John Preston.
Francis Nurse.
Daniel Gardner.
Benj. Prescott, Jr.
Joseph Southwick.
1758.—James Prince.
Nathan Procter.
Jasper Needham.
Bartholomew Rea,
Benj. Upton.
1759.—James Prince.
Capt. Samuel Flint.
John Epes.
Ezekiel Marsh, Jr.
Ebenezer Jacobs.
1760.—James Prince.
Jasper Needham.
John Epes.
John Nichols.
John Preston.
1761.—Samuel Holten.
Nathaniel Pope.
Abel Mackintire.
Lieut. Saml. King.
Benj. Prescott, Jr.
1762.—Abel McIntire.
Benj. Russell, Jr.
Daniel Purrington.
Gideon Putnam.
Joseph Putnam.
1763.—Thos Porter.
Saml. Holten.
John Epes.
John Proctor, Jr.
John Preston.
1764.—Benj. Putnam.
Archalas Dale.
John Putnam.
Stephen Procter.
Benj. Moulton.
1765.—Benj. Moulton.
John Putnam.
Stephen Procter.
Jona. Buxton.
Arch. Dale.
1766.—Archelaus Dale.
Benj. Upton.
Jonathan Buxton.
John Swinerton.
Jonathan Tarble.
1767.—Samuel Holten, Jr.
John Epes.
Jonathan Tarbell.
Jonathan Buxton.
Ebenezer Goodell.
1768.—Jonathan Buxton.
John Epes.
Samuel Holten, Jr.
Ebenezer Goodell.
Gideon Putnam.
1769.—Samuel Holten, Jr.
Ebenezer Goodale.
Samuel Gardner.
William Shillaber.
Samuel King.
1770.—Saml. Holten, Jr.
Lieut. John Preston.
John Putnam.
Jonathan Buxton.
Capt. Wm. Shillaber.
1771.—Capt. Wm. Shillaber.
Jonathan Buxton.
Gideon Putnam.
Benj. Proctor.
Samuel Holten, Jr.
1772.—Samuel Flint.
Wm. Shillaber.
Gideon Putnam.
Jonathan Buxton.
Benj. Procter.
1773.—Samuel Holten, Jr.
John Putnam.
Lieut. Arch. Putnam.
Benj. Porter.
Stephen Needham.
1774.—Samuel Holten, Jr.
Lieut. Arch. Putnam.
Wm. Poole.
Stephen Needham.
Jonathan Buxton.
1775.—Dr. Saml. Holten.
Capt. Wm. Shillaber.
Capt. Wm. Putnam.
Stephen Needham.
Ezra Upton.
1776.—John Epes.
Wm. Shillaber.
Stephen Needham.
Ezra Upton.
Edmund Putnam.
1777.—Capt. John Putnam.
Capt. Samuel Flint.
Capt. Wm. Shillaber.
Stephen Needham.
Phineas Putnam.
1778.—Stephen Needham.
Capt. Wm. Shillaber.
Benj. Procter.
Capt. John Putnam.
Phinehas Putnam.
1779.—Colonel Enoch Putnam.
Ezra Upton.
Stephen Needham.
Major Samuel Epes.
James Prince.
1780.—Jona. Sawyer.
Daniel Putnam.
Capt. Joseph Porter.
Ezra Upton.
1781.—Capt. Joseph Porter.
Daniel Putnam.
Stephen Needham.
Samuel White.
Major Samuel Epes.
1782.—Stephen Needham.
Daniel Putnam.
Jonathan Sawyer.
Capt. Jos. Porter.
Capt. Gideon Foster.
1783.—Capt. Gideon Foster.
Daniel Putnam.
John Walcut.
Aaron Putnam.
Stephen Needham.
1784.—Stephen Needham.
Major Caleb Low.
Aaron Putnam.
Capt. Gideon Foster.
Daniel Putnam.
1785.—Jona. Sawyer.
David Prince.
Stephen Needham.
Daniel Putnam.
Col. Jeremiah Page.
1786.—Stephen Needham.
Stephen Putnam.
Daniel Putnam.
Capt. Jona. Procter.
Capt. Gideon Foster.
1787.—Jona. Sawyer.
Samuel Gardner.
Amos Tapley.
David Prince.
Timothy Leech.
1788.—David Prince.
Capt. Samuel Page.
Amos Tapley.
James Porter.
Stephen Needham.
1789.—David Prince.
Samuel Page.
John Kettell.
Amos Tapley.
James Porter.
1790.—David Prince.
Capt. Samuel Page.
John Kettell.
James Porter.
John Brown.
1791.—Stephen Needham.
Gideon Foster.
John Kettell.
David Prince.
Amos Tapley.
1792.—Gideon Foster.
David Prince.
Samuel Page.
John Kettell.
Stephen Needham.
1793.—Gideon Foster.
David Prince.
John Kettell.
Joseph Putnam.
Stephen Needham.
1794.—David Prince.
Stephen Needham.
Samuel Page.
John Kettell.
Gideon Foster.
1795.—Joseph Osborn, Jr.
Stephen Needham.
David Prince.
John Kettell.
Zerubbabel Porter.
1796.—Joseph Osborn, Jr.
Samuel Page.
John Kettell.
Stephen Needham.
Daniel Putnam.
1797.—Joseph Osborn, Jr.
Nathl. Webb.
Zerobabell Porter.
Amos Tapley.
Elijah Flint.
1798.—Joseph Osborn, Jr.
Samuel Page.
John Kettell.
Daniel Putnam.
Nathan Felton.
1799.—Nathan Felton.
Daniel Putnam.
John Kettell.
Amos Tapley.
Joseph Osborn, Jr.
1800.—Joseph Osborn, Jr.
Daniel Putnam.
Samuel Page.
John Kettell.
Nathan Felton.
1801.—Samuel Page.
Joseph Putnam.
Nathan Felton.
Zerobabell Porter.
Elijah Flint.
1802.—Nathan Felton.
Johnson Procter.
Sylvester Osborn.
Jona. Walcut.
John Fowler.
1803.—Nathan Felton.
Sylvester Osborn.
John Preston.
Jona. Walcut.
John Fowler.
1804.—Nathan Felton.
Sylvester Osborn.
Jonathan Walcut.
Johnson Procter.
John Fowler.
1805.—Nathan Felton.
Amos Tapley.
Sylvester Osborn.
Jona. Walcut.
John Fowler.
1806.—Nathan Felton.
Sylvester Osborn.
Jonathan Walcut.
Thomas Putnam.
John Fowler.
1807.—Nathan Felton.
Sylvester Osborn.
Jonathan Walcut.
John Fowler.
Amos Tapley.
1808.—Thomas Putnam.
Nathan Felton.
Sylvester Procter.
Daniel Putnam.
Amos Tapley.
1809.—Nathan Felton.
Amos Tapley.
Levi Preston.
Thos. Putnam.
Daniel Putnam.
1810.—Nathan Felton.
Nathaniel Putnam.
Sylvester Procter.
Daniel Putnam.
Peter Cross, Jr.
1811.—Nathan Felton.
Levi Preston.
Jona. Walcut.
Daniel Putnam.
Andrew Nichols, Jr.
1812.—Nathan Felton.
Jona. Walcut.
Richd. Osborn.
Daniel Putnam.
Nathl. Putnam.
1813.—Nathan Felton.
Jona. Walcut.
Daniel Putnam.
Nathl. Putnam.
Richd. Osborn.
1814.—Nathan Felton.
Jonathan Walcut.
Nathaniel Putnam.
James Brown.
John Page.
1815.—Nathan Felton.
Nathaniel Putnam.

Jonathan Walcut.
John Page.
Sylvester Procter.

1816.—Nathan Felton.
Sylvester Procter.
Nathaniel Putnam.
Jonathan Walcut.
Daniel Putnam.

1817.—Nathan Felton.
Jona. Walcut.
Sylvester Procter.
Daniel Putnam.
Nathaniel Putnam.

1818.—Joseph Shed.
Israel Putnam, Jr.
Thomas Putnam.
Jesse Putnam.
Moses Preston, Jr.

1819.—Israel Putnam, Jr.
Thomas Putnam.
Jesse Putnam.
Joseph Shed.
Moses Preston, Jr.

1820.—Israel Putnam, Jr.
Thomas Putnam.
Jesse Putnam.
Joseph Shed.
Moses Preston, Jr.

1821.—Thomas Putnam.
Joseph Shed.
Jesse Putnam.
Moses Preston, Jr.
Elias Putnam.

1822.—Jesse Putnam.
Elias Putnam.
Nathan Felton.
Moses Preston, Jr.
Joseph Stearns.

1823.—Jesse Putnam.
Joseph Stearns.
Elias Putnam.
Moses Preston, Jr.
Jonathan Shove.

1824.—Jesse Putnam.
Joseph Stearns.
Elias Putnam.
Moses Preston.
Jonathan Shove.

1825.—Jesse Putnam.
Elias Putnam.
Joseph Stearns.
Moses Preston.
Jonathan Shove.

1826.—Jesse Putnam.
Jonathan Shove.
Joseph Stearns.
Elias Putnam.
Moses Preston.

1827.—Jesse Putnam.
Elias Putnam.
Jonathan Shove.
Robert S. Daniels.
Nathan Felton.

1828.—Jesse Putnam.
Jonathan Shove.
Robert S. Daniels.
Nathan Poor.
Elias Putnam.

1829.—Jesse Putnam.
Elias Putnam.
Jonathan Shove.
Nathan Poor.
Daniel P. King.

1830.—Elias Putnam.
Jonathan Shove.
Nathan Poor.
Jesse Putnam.
Benjamin Jacobs.

1831.—John Preston.
Benjamin Jacobs.
Jacob F. Perry.
Eben Putnam, Jr.
Joseph Shed.

1832.—Benjamin Jacobs.
Kendall Osborn,
Lewis Allen.
John Preston.
Jacob F. Perry.

1833.—John Preston.
Kendall Osborn.
Jacob F. Perry.
Benjamin Jacobs.
Nathaniel Pope.

1834.—John Preston.
Joseph Tufts, Jr.
Benjamin Jacobs.
Nathl. Pope.
Kendall Osborn.

1835.—Nathaniel Pope.
Samuel P. Fowler.
Eben Putnam.
Lewis Allen.
Henry Poor.

1836.—Lewis Allen.
Nathaniel Pope.
Eben S. Upton.
Samuel P. Fowler.
Joseph Tufts, Jr.

1837.—Nathaniel Pope.
Abel Nichols.
Samuel P. Fowler.
Joseph Tufts, Jr.
Ebenezer Sutton.

1838.—Samuel P. Fowler.
Elijah Upton.
Joseph Tufts, Jr.
Eben Sutton.
Nathaniel Pope.

1839.—Elijah Upton.
Nathaniel Pope.
Samuel P. Fowler.
Joseph Tufts, Jr.
Abel Nichols.

1840.—Elijah Upton.
Nathaniel Pope.
Andrew Torr.
Andrew Lunt.
Samuel P. Fowler.

1841.—Henry Poor.
William Black.
Nathl. Pope.
Elijah Upton.
Joshua Silvester.

1842.—Elijah Upton.
Joshua Silvester.
William Black.
Joseph Poor, Jr.
Wingate Merrill.

1843.—Wingate Merrill.
Joseph Poor, Jr.
Joshua Silvester.
William Black.
Perley Goodale.

1844.—Wingate Merrill.
Joshua Silvester.
Joseph Poor, Jr.
Henry Fowler.
Eben King.

1845.—Wingate Merrill.
Lewis Allen.
Henry Fowler.
Nathaniel Pope.
William Dodge, Jr.

1846.—Wingate Merrill.
Kendall Osborn.
Nathaniel Pope.
William Dodge, Jr.
Lewis Allen.

1847.—Lewis Allen.
Wingate Merrill.
Nathaniel Pope.
William Dodge, Jr.
Moses Black, Jr.

1848.—Nathaniel Pope.
Wingate Merrill.
Moses Black, Jr.
Lewis Allen.
Kendall Osborn.

1849.—Otis Mudge.
Elias Savage.
Abel Preston.
William Dodge, Jr.
Eben S. Upton.

1850.—Lewis Allen.
Richard Osborn.
Samuel Preston.
Kendall Osborn.
Francis Dodge.

1851.—Kendall Osborn.
Francis Dodge.
William Endicott,
Daniel Emerson.
Aaron F. Clark.

1852.—Kendall Osborn.
Richard Osborn.
William Endicott.
Aaron F. Clark.
Edwin Mudge.

1853.—Kendall Osborn.
Leonard Poole.
Edwin Mudge.
Aaron Putnam.
Elias Savage.

1854.—Lewis Allen.
Leonard Poole.
Joel Putnam.
Benj. F. Hutchinson.
Nathan H. Poor.

1855.—Abel Preston.
William Walcott.
Nathaniel Bodge.
Moses J. Currier.
Augustus Fowler.

1856.—William Dodge, Jr.
Augustus Fowler.
Charles P. Preston.

1857.—Augustus Fowler.
Charles P. Preston.
William Dodge, Jr.

1858.—Rufus Putnam.
Chas. P. Preston.
Otis Mudge.

1859.—Rufus Putnam.
Chas. P. Preston.
William Dodge, Jr.

1860.—Rufus Putnam.
Chas. P. Preston.
James M. Perry.

1861.—Francis Dodge.
William Dodge, Jr.
Charles Chaplin.

1862.—William Dodge, Jr.
Charles Chaplin.
Augustus Fowler.

1863.—James M. Perry.
Jacob F. Perry.
John A. Putnam.

1864.—Jacob F. Perry.
John A. Putnam.
William Dodge, Jr.

1865.—Jacob F. Perry.
William Dodge, Jr.
John A. Putnam.

1866.—Jacob F. Perry.
William Dodge, Jr.
John A. Putnam.

1867.—William Dodge, Jr.
Simeon Putnam.
Henry A. Perkins.

1868.—William Dodge, Jr.
Simeon Putnam.
Henry A. Perkins.

1869.—William Dodge, Jr.
Simeon Putnam.
Henry A. Perkins.

1870.—William Dodge, Jr.
Henry A. Perkins.
Josiah Ross.

1871.—William Dodge, Jr.
Henry A. Perkins.
Josiah Ross.

1872.—William Dodge, Jr.
Henry A. Perkins.
Joshua Bragdon.

1873.—Henry A. Perkins.
Joshua Bragdon.
Samuel W. Spaulding.

1874.—Joshua Bragdon.
Henry A. Perkins.
Otis F. Putnam.

1875.—Henry A. Perkins.
Joshua Bragdon.
Otis F. Putnam.

1876.—Henry A. Perkins.
Joshua Bragdon.
Otis F. Putnam.

1877.—Henry A. Perkins.
Joshua Bragdon.
Otis F. Putnam.

1878.—Charles H. Adams.
Otis F. Putnam.
Josiah Ross.

1879.—Henry A. Perkins.
Josiah Ross.
Harrison O. Warren.

1880.—Henry A. Perkins.
Harrison O. Warren.
Daniel P. Pope.

1881.—Henry A. Perkins.
Daniel P. Pope.
Josiah Ross.

1882.—Daniel P. Pope.
Otis F. Putnam.
Joshua Bragdon.

1883.—Daniel P. Pope.
Otis F. Putnam.
Joshua Bragdon.

1884.—Daniel P. Pope.
Joshua Bragdon.
Otis F. Putnam.

1885.—Daniel P. Pope.
Joshua Bragdon.
Otis F. Putnam.

1886.—Daniel P. Pope.
Joshua Bragdon.
Otis F. Putnam.

1887.—Daniel P. Pope.
Joshua Bragdon.
Otis F. Putnam.

One of the propositions for disposing of the new school building in the short-lived district No. 8 was to convert it to a lock-up and tramp-station, but the town then refused to believe itself sufficiently advanced in modern civilization to need a separate building devoted to such uses. Soon, however, 1864, accommodations for guests of the public, voluntary and otherwise, were fitted in the basement of the town-hall, and there for ten years some sin and vagrancy retired behind the bars. When in 1874, better conveniences were demanded, a part of the basement of Bell's Hall, on Maple Street, was fitted up. This past year, 1886, a considerable addition was made to the old brick school-house on School Street — the original building being now occupied by two companies of the fire department—and ample and respectable police headquarters have there been established, with plenty of room above for a local court,—when it comes. Michael J. Mead has been for some years chief of the small police force, which is efficient much beyond its numerical strength. William O'Neil presides over the station and dispenses the town's hospitality to certain of the traveling public.

CHAPTER XL.

DANVERS—(*Continued*).

THE CIVIL WAR.

At twenty minutes past four o'clock on the morning of April 12, 1861, a shell from Sullivan's Island aimed at Fort Sumter announced the open defiance of rebellion. The loyal cities and towns of the North were alert for such tidings. About a week previously two of the selectmen of Danvers, William Dodge, Jr., and Charles Chaplin, had issued their warrant for a town meeting "to hear an act on the petition of A. A. Putnam and others to see if the town will raise or appropriate any money in aid of the families of such citizens of the town as may enlist to serve in the Volunteer Militia of the Commonwealth or take any action thereon." This is the first intimation on the town records of preparations for probable war. But the news from Sumter brought the citizens together sooner than the day appointed for town meeting. The first "war meeting" was held in the town hall, April 16th, and was crowded with earnest and enthusiastic men. Arthur A. Putnam, Esq., presided. In some recently written reminiscences he says, "the meeting, though stormy in applause and verbally bellicose, was very aimless and likely to end in talk alone until a modest and unfamiliar voice in the town hall reminded the assemblage that the meeting was not for eloquence, but enlistment." The voice was that of Nehemiah P. Fuller, who stepped forward to sign the company roll which Nathaniel A. Pope had received permission from the State Department to recruit. At least one other name preceded Fuller's, that of Ruel B. Pray, who has the distinction of being the first recruit in a Danvers company; others followed that night, and in six days the roll was full and ready for organization. As the company was soon given the name of the Danvers Light Infantry, it will be spoken of by that name. Election of officers resulted as follows: Captain, Nehemiah P. Fuller; First Lieutenant, William W. Smith; Second Lieutenant, Ruel B. Pray; Third Lieutenant, William W. Gould; Fourth Lieutenant, D. W. Hyde. Captain Fuller, who was promoted during the war to major of the Second Heavy Artillery, was a son of Putnam Fuller, of this town, and a descendant of Lieutenant David, brother of General Israel Putnam, being a grandson of Major Ezra Putnam, one of the founders of Ohio. He had seen service in the Mexican War, and was just the man to command a company of willing but raw recruits. After the war he removed to Missouri, but returned here in broken health in the fall of 1880, and died February 3, 1881.

Immediately after the meeting of April 16th, some young men at the Plains took steps to organize another company. In the course of a week the number, fifty, were recruited, and met in the unfinished rooms of the Maple Street School-house, where the first lessons in drill were given by Benjamin E. Newhall. Organization was effected in due form, April 30th, in the Bank Hall, where the following officers were elected: Captain, Arthur A. Putnam; Lieutenants, Benjamin E. Newhall, Charles H. Adams, Jr., William J. Roome, George W. Kenney. Mr. Newhall not qualifying, the other lieutenants were each promoted one degree, and Elbridge W. Guilford was added.

Captain Putnam, then a lawyer here, now of Uxbridge, Mass., was a native of Danvers, a son of Hon. Elias Putnam. This year, 1887, he delivered the Memorial Day Address before an audience which included many survivors of his old comrades, and later published in the *Danvers Mirror* a full and interesting account of the history of his company up to the time of leaving for the front. Mr. R. B. Pray had previously printed a short sketch of Capt. Fuller's Company. A newspaper clipping says of Capt. Putnam that he had no previous military training, "but possessing that energy and spirit noted in the Puritan blood, will soon make himself a proficient commander."

No sooner had the two companies organized than the ladies of the town devoted their energies to the making of uniforms and other necessary clothing. Gothic Hall was the busy scene of their labors. The men who enlisted expected active service at once, and were eager for it. But the time which ensued between organization and final acceptance by the State authorities and assignment to a State camp extended from days to long weeks, and made it serious business

keeping the men together. Many of them had families to support, and while patriotism did not flag, the bread and butter question at home was quite as vital as the question of slavery a thousand miles away. There were no bounties at this time; it was only by constant and generous contributions of money and provisions that the men were encouraged to hold out. But by dint of much patient forbearance both companies were kept intact, and maintained thorough drill. Long practice marches were taken through neighboring towns, and charges were occasionally made at double-quick to dislodge an imaginary enemy on the top of Folly Hill. For some time the Light Infantry went into camp by themselves, at East Gloucester, such a move being deemed expedient. Captain Putnam's company used Berry's pasture, now the Trotting Park, for a training-field. The local newspapers of the day contain such items as these:

"On Sunday morning, May 19th, the two Danvers companies marched with drum and fife to the Maple Street Church, and in the afternoon they attended the Universalist Church.

"The appearance of the men, one company in grey, and one in blue, is described as having been remarkably fine."

"Tuesday, May 28th. The Putnam Guards, a well ordered company of 79 men, of an average age of 27 years, passed through our place this afternoon, on their way to Salem. Their motion was nimble, their action strong and their eye quick and piercing. They have been accustomed to toil and moderate fare without luxuries, and will do the State good service when summoned to the field."

Of the origin of the name of "Putnam Guards," Captain Putnam thus writes:

"Of visitors at Gothic Hall while the ladies, as before mentioned, were immersed in the manufacture of the uniforms, there came one day Mrs. Julia A. Philbrick, of Boston, who, warmed at the sight of the scene, went away carrying it as an impressive picture in mind. A few days later she addressed an appreciative letter to one of the chief workers, Miss Anne L. Page, and in it embraced a proffer in these pleasant words:—

"'I have used my pen in your behalf, and to-day have the pleasure of informing you that, if your Company is called the *Putnam Guards*,' they shall have a Banner worthy the name they bear. There is living in Peterborough, N. H., a most noble and patriotic lady, who bears that honored name, whose father was born in Danvers, yes, beneath the very roof with the old General (that dear old home, the home of my childhood)—to this lady, Miss Catherine Putnam, you are indebted for this proffered benefaction.'

"The proposition for the *name* was duly submitted to the Company, unanimously adopted and the Flag at once became a matter of joyous anticipation."

The presentation of the flag, May 22, 1861, was an event of great interest. A stand draped with the national colors was reared in front of the Bank Building, and during the exercises the Square and all the surrounding buildings were densely crowded with spectators. Mr. Nathaniel Hills, principal of the High School presided, and Hon. John D. Philbrick, then superintendent of schools in Boston, to whom this honor had been assigned by the donor of the flag, made the presentation speech. On the same occasion Rev. A. P. Putnam, then of Roxbury, a brother of the commander, presented each member of the company with a Bible, accompanying the act with an impressive address. The flag was of heavy silk, and a silver plate upon its oaken staff was thus inscribed:

"PRESENTED
to the
PUTNAM GUARDS
of
DANVERS, MASS.,
BY
Miss Catherine Putnam,
Daughter of a Son
of
Danvers.
Our Birth-right is Freedom
and God is our Trust.
May, 1861."

It is now, and has been for many years, in the custody of John G. Weeden, one of the original members of the Guards. The Danvers Light Infantry were also given a reception before their departure for the State camp, on which occasion Rev. J. W. Putnam presented them with a silk banner in behalf of the citizens, and Allen Putnam, of Roxbury, in behalf of Miss Putnam, presented an elegant sash and sword to Captain Fuller. Side-arms were also presented to the officers by certain citizens.

It was nearly two months after the organization of the companies that they were finally called for by the State authorities. On June 11th, 1861, the Danvers Light Infantry were ordered to report at Camp Schouler, Lynnfield, and on June 24th the Putnam Guards reported at Fort Warren. The Light Infantry were assigned to the Seventeenth Volunteer Infantry, three years' men, as Company C, were mustered into the service of the United States July 22, 1861, and left for the front August 22d.

The Putnam Guards became Company I of the Fourteenth Volunteer Infantry, were mustered into service of the United States July 5, 1861, and left for the seat of war August 7th. The regiment was changed, January 1, 1862, to the First Massachusetts Heavy Artillery. It saw hard service and participated in engagements at Spottsylvania, North Anna, Tolopotomy, Cold Harbor, Petersburg, Strawberry Plains, Deep Bottom, Poplar Spring Church, Boydton Road, Hatcher's Run, Vaughn Road. The original members of both these Danvers companies may be determined by inspection of the list of soldiers which follow later on.

The first military funeral of the war, in Danvers, was that of Thomas A. Musgrave, of Captain Fuller's company, who died August 9, 1861, at the Lynnfield camp hospital. The whole regiment marched to the Universalist Church, where the services were held. Private William F. Guilford, a member of the Salem City Guards, was buried under arms a few weeks later from Dr. Braman's Church.

At the town meeting of May 25, 1861, which had been already called when news came of the attack on Fort Sumter, A. A. Putnam presided and Dr. Ebenezer Hunt presented a series of resolutions, which were adopted, one hundred and eighteen to three, in the following form,—the clergymen of the

town having first been added to the committee therein called for:

"WHEREAS, War has been forced upon us without justifiable cause by traitors whose avowed object is the subversion of the Government and the dissolution of the Union by armed resistance to Law, and whereas our Patriotic fellow-citizens have been barbarously slain while hastening to the defence of the Capitol at the call of the Chief Magistrate in pursuance of his solemn Oath of office, and whereas our flag has been insulted, and our existence as a nation put in peril, therefore,

"*Resolved*, By the citizens of Danvers, in town-meeting assembled, that we will co-operate, to the fullest extent in our power, with all the good citizens throughout the whole country, in prosecuting the war with such vigor as to bring it to a speedy close.

"*Resolved*, That animated by the glorious memories of the past, our duty to posterity, our love for the Union, our reliance upon a just God, in a righteous cause, we will devote our whole energies in the accomplishment of the object, regardless of its cost in treasure or in blood.

"*Resolved*, That in this Contest there can be no neutrality; whoever is not *for* us is *against* us; and that *all* bearing arms and not ranged beneath the flag of the Union, wherever found, shall be dealt with as traitors.

"*Resolved*, That the Treasurer of the town be authorized to borrow a sum, not exceeding Ten Thousand Dollars, for the uses of the town for the above purposes, which shall be designated as a War Fund. In order to carry out the above *Resolutions* it is further

"*Resolved*, That a committee consisting of the Selectmen of Danvers, together with Daniel Richards, John R. Langley, C. P. Preston, E. Hunt, S. P. Fowler (a committee appointed by the citizens to disburse the fund raised by Voluntary Contribution), and five other gentlemen be appointed to take into consideration all applications for aid consequent upon our citizens being called upon to enlist in the service of our Country, either during the time of Drilling in anticipation of being enrolled, or while in actual service, and the said Committee are hereby authorized and empowered to render such aid to the families of any such citizens as in their judgment is needful, by a draft on the Treasury of the Town, on the War Fund, signed by such a sub-committee as said Committee shall select; that said Committee shall hold stated and regular meetings as often as once in two weeks, of which due notice shall be given, and they may hold meetings at such other times as they may deem necessary and may make all such rules and regulations in reference to the disbursing of the money appropriated as a War Fund as may from time to time be deemed expedient.

"They recommend to fill the blank in the committee, by selecting the following gentlemen, who together with those above named will distribute the Committee in the various parts of the town, viz.:

"Jesse W. Snow, Philemon Putnam, Nathan Tapley, Josiah Gray and John A. Sears. All of which is respectfully submitted."

Seven months after the first town meeting, another was called for December 19, 1861, to provide for aid to the families of soldiers agreeable to an act of the special session of the Legislature. Information was first desired as to the disbursement of the ten thousand dollars raised in May, and the committee were prepared with a report containing these items:

"There has been paid out for drilling $1901.37. There has also been paid to one hundred and seventy-three families as aid in various sums of from one dollar to five dollars and a half per week, making in the gross amount $8016.36. There is now due to families and undrawn one hundred and thirty-nine dollars, making the amount drawn from the Treasury $9917.73. Of this sum your Committee estimate that the sum of five thousand-eight hundred dollars will be received from the Commonwealth."

"The Committee will also say that the number of families assisted at the present time is one hundred and forty-three, the amount now paid each family is from one to four dollars per week. Your Committee would further say, although the amount of money expended is a large sum in the aggregate, yet, when we consider the condition of many of the families of the Volunteers owing to the stagnation of business and the want of employment for several months previous to their enlistment, we think the wonder is that so little has answered for the purpose. If by even a greater sacrifice of property the Government of the Country is rescued from the unscrupulous attacks of a widespread and atrocious rebellion, which threatens our very existence as a Nation, we ought to be exceedingly thankful:—at any rate, the tax-payers of the Town will have reason to feel that the old Town of Danvers, by encouragement of the enlistment of her patriotic sons, has not fallen from the reputation acquired in the times of the Revolution.

"And may God grant us a speedy and honorable peace. All of which is respectfully submitted. In behalf of the Committee.

"EBEN HUNT."

At an adjournment of this meeting $5000 was appropriated for soldiers' aid, in accordance with the act of May, 1861, and $500 additional to be expended under the authority of the committee appointed May 3d.

At the annual meeting, 1862, the finance committee recommended the adoption of annexed votes proposed by the chairman of the relief committee, which were, first, that a relief committee, like that of last year, be chosen for the ensuing year to aid in the distribution of the War Fund; second, that the sum of $15,000 be raised and appropriated for aid to soldiers' families, under the statutes; and, third, that $500 be placed at the disposal of the relief committee. These measures were all passed and the committee re-elected. $1000 was at the same time added to the appropriation for the town's poor.

At a meeting held in midsummer, July 25, 1862, the Governor's call for one hundred and four volunteers was considered, and, agreeable to the expressed desire of a mass-meeting of citizens held ten days before, the matter of bounty was the chief object of action. The first offer of bounty here made by the town was on the adoption of J. D. Black's motion, 96 to 1, to pay $125 "to whatever person may report himself to the selectmen of Danvers, upon his being or having been accepted into the United States service, as furnishing a part of our quota."

On August 4, 1862, the first draft was ordered, for 300,000 nine months men. Early in that month a town-meeting was held, at which it was first voted to continue the payment of bounty until our quota of volunteers was full, and to include also drafted men; but this action was reconsidered, and Henry Fowler, Wm. E. Putnam and the Selectmen were appointed "to wait upon the Governor and to ascertain if our quota can be reduced, to get further information in regard to the draft, and to report at the next town-meeting."

On the heels of this meeting came Lincoln's call for 300,000 more men. Immediately another warrant was posted, calling upon the citizens of Danvers to meet on Monday, August 25th, to consider the call. A motion that the selectmen open a recruiting office and pay $100 bounty to each recruit volunteering and making one of the quota under the call, was successfully amended to $125.

The committee appointed August 12th, to attempt to secure a reduction of the quota, presented a letter to the Adjutant-General in the following forcible and direct terms:

"To Hon. Wm. Schouler, Adjutant-General.

"Dear Sir,—We, the undersigned, would represent that the town of Danvers has furnished the following volunteers for the war:

3 months men	37
3 years men, to June 1st, 1862	285
Salem Cadets, Fort Warren	10
Salem Light Infantry, Co. B	6
Under General Order No. 26	70
	398
3 months men re-enlistod	17
	381

"The Town has paid to Volunteers under General Order No. 26 Eight Thousand Seven Hundred and Fifty Dollars ($8750). By the Adjutant-General's Report to the Leg. of 1862 the town of Danvers had furnished for the war Eight officers and Two hundred and fifty-six privates, giving one Volunteer to fifteen inhabitants of the town, under the State census of 1855.

"This proportion exceeds that of the towns of Beverly, Gloucester, Haverhill, Ipswich, Lawrence, Lynn, Marblehead, Newburyport, Salem and South Danvers, from 9 to 57 per cent.

"The ninety-nine Volunteers received and put into the service of the United States since last December makes the same disproportion between the town of Danvers and the towns above referred to, hold good.

"The assessors of 1861, in Danvers, mistaking the law on this matter, returned aliens on the Militia Roll, which materially increased our number liable to do military duty.

"The town of Danvers does not shrink from any duty imposed on her in this great crisis of our Country, neither will she fail to do her part in furnishing men to crush out this rebellion, but knowing from the above facts that the town has furnished more men in proportion to her Inhabitants than the other large towns in the County, and feeling that the payment of the bounty to the thirty-four Volunteers required to fill the quota for Danvers of 104 men, will be burdensome beyond what strict equality would require of us, we ask, therefore, that the town, by furnishing seventy men under General Order No. 26, may be considered as having filled her quota."

Respectfully submitted,

William Dodge, Jr.
Charles Chaplin.
Augustus Fowler.
} Selectmen of Danvers.

Danvers, August 14, 1862.

Approved,
Wm. Schouler,
Adjt.-General.

In seventeen days, another meeting to act on propositions for more bounties, for three-years' men and drafted men, principals or substitutes. A motion made by Samuel Moore in the afternoon failed of passing, because but fifty-four voted for it, less than the by-laws required—it was hard work to get the requisite number together, so many were away during the war—but in the evening it passed, eighty to twelve, namely to pay one hundred and twenty-five dollars to each person, resident in town, who had enlisted for three years of the war, and was not already in receipt of a bounty, "provided said person has served nine months, or has been earlier discharged on account of injuries received in service; said bounty to be payable at the end of said volunteer's service." It was immediately voted to extend the bounty to drafted men.

Busy times, these, for selectmen and voters. While this meeting of the 11th was in session a warrant for still another meeting had already been two days posted, the special object being the consideration of a matter, which was disposed of by the unanimous adoption, eighty-six voting, of these resolutions presented by W. L. Weston:

"Whereas, at a legal meeting of the town on the 25th day of August last, it was voted 'to pay a bounty of $125 to each recruit volunteering in the service of the United States, and making one of the town's quota under the call of the President for 300,000 military for nine months service,' and

"Whereas, acting under the belief that the town might be called upon for a considerable number of recruits to fill this requisition, a successful effort has been made to raise a Company under Capt. A. G. Allen—said Company having made arrangements by which it is to form a part of the 8th Regt. now being recruited under Col. Coffin, and have already placed themselves in Camp, and

"Whereas, it now appears to be uncertain whether the men so raised will be required as part of the town's quota, thus rendering said vote inoperative,

"Therefore, in view of the patriotic action of the young men composing said Company, and that the faith of the town has been pledged to them and also in view of the fact that other calls for men may be made upon the town, it is hereby

"Voted, that the town will pay a bounty of 125 dollars to each resident of Danvers who has volunteered, or may volunteer as a member of Capt. A. G. Allen's Company, upon his having been accepted and sworn into the United States service.

"Voted, that the town Treasurer be and is hereby authorized to hire a sum of money sufficient to pay the bounties mentioned in the above vote."

The names of the company here referred to, Company K, Eighth Regiment, nine months' men, mustered in October 1, 1862, and discharged August 7, 1863, will be found further on. The regiment sailed from Boston November 7, 1862, under Colonel Coffin, of Newburyport, for Newbern, N. C., and in June, 1863, was transferred to Baltimore, thence to Maryland Heights and experienced hard service in the pursuit of Lee after the battle of Gettysburg.

The adoption of the resolutions in regard to Captain Allen's company was the only business this meeting could in strictness consider. But there was a man present with something in his pocket to read, the man who in the first war town-meeting had voiced the determination of his fellow-citizens to stand by the government, who, long years before, had stood up to strike the first blow for temperance, and had been foremost in every reform and the uncompromising foe of wrong in whatever guise, and who, with the courage of his convictions, entered active service in the war despite his advancing years—Doctor Ebenezer Hunt. There is a ring to his words not unlike certain resolutions already quoted which came from the ancestors of these very men, citizens of Danvers in town-meeting assembled, in those other days which tried men's souls:

"Whereas—The town of Danvers has already furnished more than her full quota of men, and is ready and willing to send more if necessary, and to expend her last dollar in defence of the Common Country, Therefore—

"*Resolved*, that the citizens have a right to ask and do ask the Government for a vigorous prosecution of the war and that nothing shall be permitted to stand in the way of the progress of our armies in crushing out the rebellion and restoring to our country a speedy and permanent peace.

"*Resolved*—That had there been no slavery, there would have been no rebellion, and as the rebellion will continue so long as slavery exists, we, the citizens of Danvers, in town meeting assembled, ask, that the war forced upon us by the rebels in defence of slavery, shall be so prosecuted as to leave no vestige of that accursed institution."

The first of these resolutions was passed unanimously; three voters could not accept the second. At the fall

election, 1862, John A. Andrew received four hundred and twenty-six votes to one hundred and fifty for Charles Devens, Jr. February 9, 1863, five thousand dollars was appropriated for military aid.

At the annual meeting of 1863 the relief committee which had been at work during the previous year, reported that they had assisted two hundred and fifty-one families. "At the present time," they say, "the number is reduced to one hundred and ninety families receiving aid in various ways from one dollar per week to twelve dollars per month." A relief committee for the ensuing year were chosen,—Drs. Hunt and Chase, William Dodge, Jr., Nathan Tapley, John A. Sears, C. H. Gould, Josiah Gray, C. P. Preston, S. P. Fowler and Philemon Putnam.

At this time S. D. Shattuck and others petitioned for the purchase by the town of a lot in Walnut Grove Cemetery for the burial of deceased soldiers, and the selectmen were instructed to purchase the lot which has been used for this purpose.

The vote of September 11, 1862, as to bounty for three years' men was prospective; no appropriation was then made. It became necessary to think about a large appropriation. If at any time after nine months' service the war should end, these bounties would be at once payable. So in midsummer, 1863, a special meeting was called to see if the town would raise money to defray the expenditure contemplated by the vote of September 11th. This meeting, held first July 3d, after several adjournments unanimously voted to appropriate fifty thousand dollars for the purpose, a sum so large that Mr. Howard underlined the words when he entered the vote on the permanent records of the town. This amount was never paid nor raised, for the reason that certain citizens petitioned for an injunction, on the ground that such an appropriation was illegal, prohibiting the borrowing or payment of money under said vote. The case came before the Supreme Court in January, 1864, and is reported in Massachusetts Reports, 8 Allen 80, under the title "Samuel P. Fowler and others *vs.* Selectmen and Treasurer of Danvers." The decision turned on the interpretation of the statute of 1863, ch. 38, entitled "An act to legalize the doings of towns in aid of the war," and the court held that the statute while covering appropriations for bounties to induce enlistment, did not legalize a vote to pay money to persons who had already enlisted in the service of the United States.

There was a light vote for Governor in the fall of 1863,—Andrew receiving two hundred and seventy, Henry W. Paine forty-seven. At the March meeting of 1864, Dr. Hunt was again on hand with a report from his relief committee; two hundred and forty-five families, he said, had received State aid.

"Your committee propose to make no prediction in relation to a speedy peace. This subject is still a question of time. We can only say the omens are auspicious, and that if the people of the Loyal States shall do their duty in sustaining the Government in a vigorous prosecution of the war, and in following the leadings of Providence in the path of Justice and Humanity, and if the heads of the Departments and other Politicians at the Capitol interest themselves as heartily in crushing out the Rebellion, as in making a new President, our honored flag will at length wave in triumph over a regenerated and glorious Union, inhabited only by Freemen."

At this same March meeting of 1864, fifteen thousand dollars were appropriated "for families of volunteers who have enlisted or may enlist during the present war." Once only in the summer of 1864 was there a special meeting, occasioned by the President's call for five hundred thousand more men, and at this time an appropriation of eleven thousand two hundred and fifty dollars was made for the purpose of filling our quota under this call.

At the presidential election in the fall of 1864, the Lincoln electors received five hundred and ninety-two Danvers votes against one hundred and twenty-five for the McClellan electors; John G. Whittier, of Amesbury, whom Danvers is now so proud to claim among its residents, was chosen elector from the Essex District over S. Endicott Peabody, of Salem. For Governor, John A. Andrew received five hundred and ninety-six votes; H. W. Paine, one hundred and twenty-five.

December 19, 1864, another call. "We're coming, Father Abraham, three hundred thousand more!" On the day after Christmas men read a warrant, summoning them to meet on the fourth day of the new year to face a demand for still more money. Voters were slow of coming forward, and, as on some other occasions during the war, adjournments and rallying-committee tactics were necessary; but finally, by a large vote, it was decided to pay another bounty of $125 to each volunteer going to fill the town's quota under the new call.

Before November the men whom the majority of Massachusetts citizens had kept at the head of the State Government in these years of trial, had done with life. At the election of 1865 Danvers helped to elect his successor, Alexander H. Bullock, of Worcester, by a vote of 588, to 64 for Darius N. Couch, of Taunton.

Recruiting was ordered to be discontinued on April 13, 1865. Danvers furnished in all seven hundred and ninety-two men for the war, which was a surplus of thirty-six over and above all demands. Forty-four were commissioned officers. The total amount of money raised on account of the war, exclusive of State aid, was $36,596. The amount of State aid raised during the war for soldiers' families, 1861–65, amounted to $66,068.11. The appropriations for aid made subsequently were,—1871, $5000; 1872, $4000, also $200 for special cases not within the law; 1873, $2000 and $200 special; 1874, $4000, $200 special; 1875, $3500, also $150 special; 1876, $2500, $150; 1877, $2500, $150; 1878, $150; 1879, $100; 1880, $800; 1881, $1000; 1882, $1000; 1883, $800; 1884, $600; 1885, $600; 1886, $700; 1887, $700.

Of the voluntary contributions all through the years of the war, of money, materials, labor, amount-

ing in value to perhaps thousands of dollars, and cheerfully given, no record has been kept.

In the warrant for the annual meeting of 1868 appeared this article: "To see what action the town will take on the petition of S. P. Cummings and others to appropriate a sum of money for the purpose of erecting a suitable monument or tablets whereon shall be inscribed the names, age and date of death, of all Danvers soldiers and sailors who fell in the late war for the union." The matter, when reached, was referred to a committee, one from each school district: No. 1, William Dodge, Jr.; No. 2, E. T. Waldron; No. 3, J. F. Bly; No. 4, William R. Putnam; No. 5, Dean Kimball; No. 6, George Andrews; No. 7, Timothy Hawkes; No. 8, Rufus Putnam. S. P. Cummings was added.

At an adjournment, this committee reported recommending the erection of a monument at a cost of not less than three thousand dollars, that fifteen hundred dollars be appropriated by the town and the balance by subscription, through a committee of one from each district. The committee already appointed were made a subscription committee, to report at a meeting specially called when they should have secured the required sum.

At the March meeting the next year, 1869, the committee reported that they "have attended to their duty, and by the patriotism and generosity of our citizens we have been enabled to raise the required sum. The committee would, with the consent of the Trustees of the Peabody Park, recommend that place as the most appropriate for the erection of said monument."

The old committee were elected for the ensuing year, with the addition of the selectmen. But the question of location was not easily settled. At the next March meeting, 1870, a motion was introduced to place the monument in front of the Town House, but was withdrawn to give place to the proposition that, at the adjourned meeting a ballot-box be so placed that citizens might informally express in writing their preferences for location. The result of this ballot showed ninety-three votes for Peabody Park, and sixty-six for the Town House yard.

May 2d, Simeon Putnam was added to the committee. On that same day it was reported that the Trustees of the Peabody Institute had declined, on account of some legal objection, to allow the monument to be erected in the park. In the meantime, March 21st, an additional appropriation of sixteen hundred dollars was voted.

In June a special meeting was called to consider several important subjects, first of which was the report of the monument committee. Those who strongly favored the park as a location disliked to accept the decree of the trustees as final. Some one, to fame unknown, succeeded in getting recorded a pithy motion "that the Monument be paid for and stored until consent be obtained of the original grantors and the Trustees," but not in getting it passed.

Mr. Augustus Mudge moved that the committee be instructed to place the monument on the Common at Danvers Centre. The motion was declared carried, was doubted, and on division was declared carried, one hundred and thirty-five to eighty-five. To clinch the matter, a vote was taken to re-consider, and lost.

This seemed decisive. Doubtless the inhabitants of the Centre, as they passed old Deacon Ingersoll's training field on some of those summer evenings, saw with no great stretch of imagination certain ghostly monumental outlines rising from the green sod, where soon the substantial shaft would consecrate anew the historic ground. But no. In just one week a warrant was issued to act on a petition for the re-location of the Soldiers' Monument. The meeting was held July 11th. Dr. Hunt moved for a re-location within half a mile of the flag-staff at the Plains. On a large vote by ballot the motion was carried,—yeas, 264; nays, 161. The definite location was then left with the committee, who decided upon the Town House yard. The monument was dedicated November 30, 1870. It is of Hallowell granite, thirty-three and one-quarter feet high, and seven and three-quarters feet square at the base; its total cost, $6298.-20, towards which sum Edwin Mudge contributed the larger part of his two years' salary as the Representative in the Legislature of the district composed of Danvers and Wenham, the remainder being presented to the latter town for a similar object. The names inscribed upon the monument are these:

MAJOR WALLACE A. PUTNAM,

LT. JAMES HILL.

Hector A. Aiken.
Henry F. Allen.
James Battye.
Edwin Beckford.
Isaac Bodwell.
Sylvester Brown.
James H. Burrows.
Lewis Britton.
John H. Bridges.
William H. Croft.
Simeon Coffin.
H. Cuthbertson.
Thomas Collins.
Wm. H. Channell.
Charles W. Dodge.
George H. Dwinell.
Moses Deland.
William C. Dale.
George A. Ewell.
George W. Earl.
Reuben Ellis.
George A. Elliott.
William S. Evans.
Nathaniel P. Fish.
Benj. M. Fuller.
Eph'm Getchell.
E. I. Getchell.
William F. Gilford.
John Goodwin.
C. W. C. Goudy.
Alonzo Gray.
Daniel H. Gould.
Samuel S. Grout.
Ambrose Hinds.
Levi Howard.
James J. Hurley.
Thomas Hartman.
Abiel A. Horne.
James H. Ham.
Everson Hall.
Charles Hiller.
T. C. Jeffs.
William W. Jessup.
James W. Kelley.
Moses A. Kent.
James E. Lowell.
Samuel A. Lefflau.
Joseph Leavitt.
Charles H. Lyons.
Charles E. Meader.
John Merrill.
T. A. Musgrave.
James Morgan.
Michael McAuliff.
William Metzgar.
Allen Nourse.
William H. Ogden.
William H. Parker.
George W. Peabody.
J. Frank Perkins.
George W. Porter.
Samuel M. Porter.

Alfred Porter.
Robert W. Putnam.
Isaac N. Roberts.
S. P. Richardson.
S. A. Rodgers.
Israel Roach.
Daniel Smith.
Henry A. Smith.
Wm. E. Sheldon.
Charles W. Shelden.
John Shackley.
Frank Scampton.
Cornelius Sullivan.
Patrick F. Shea.
Joseph T. Smart.
Edward Splane.
Milford Tedford.
Patrick Trainer.
Wm. F. Twiss.
John N. Thompson.
Austin Upton.
Angus Ward.
William Ward.
Joseph Woods.
C. E. M. Welch.
George Woodman.
John Withey.
Nathan'l K. Wells.
George T. Whitney.
Joseph F. Wiggin.
Charles H. Young.

A special meeting was called a week before Decoration Day, 1872, to see if the town would appropriate a sum of money in aid of Post 90, G. A. R., for the expenses of Memorial Day, and by a vote of eighty-four to two, two hundred dollars was appropriated. Each subsequent year at the annual meeting an amount varying from one hundred and fifty to two hundred dollars has been devoted to this purpose. Ward Post, 90, G. A. R., was organized June 8, 1869.

The list of Danvers volunteers which follows is made up chiefly from the official lists of Massachusetts volunteers compiled by Adjutant-General Schouler. These two large volumes contain a hundred and fifty thousand names, more or less, arranged only according to organization, and not according to towns, and therefore a close scrutiny of the entire list has been necessary to ascertain every Danvers volunteer credited to the quota of the State. It is thought that no omissions have been made. Some errors have been noticed and corrected; if others appear, the responsibility must rest on the official authority, referred to. The figures opposite the names give the age of first enlistment.

The members of the Danvers Light Infantry and of the Putnam Guards were not the first volunteers from Danvers. A number enlisted in the two Salem companies assigned to the Fifth Regiment, three months' men, mustered in May 1, 1861. In Company A, known as the Salem Mechanic Light Infantry, were these:

	Age.		Age.
James H. Sleeper, corporal	32	James Hill	20
Charles W. Allen	20	John H. Howard	19
Edwin Bailey	25	William Lufkin	25
Henry T. Briggs	21	Joseph C. Munsey	19
William Burroughs	28	James D. North	21
Jacob Burton	25	Chas. H. Phippen	22
Lyman D. Crosby	23	Chas. W. Ricker	18
George M. Crowell	29	Henry Sloper	29
George H. Fuller	25	Robert Smith	20
John T. Gilman	19	Mendall S. Webber	23

In Company H of the same regiment, the Salem City Guards, were these:

	Age.		Age.
Wm. F. Bickford	23	Henry H. Richardson	20
Charles W. Chase	20	Wm. H. Richardson	22
David A. Gilford	36	Edgar M. Riggs	24
John M. Hines	21	John N. Thompson	30
Edward Kelley	26	Herbert W. Very	22
James W. Lowe	19	George Webster	23

These men arrived at Annapolis April 24th, and were mustered into United States service as stated. They bore an honored part in the disastrous battle of Bull Run, July 21st, exactly three months after the regiment left Faneuil Hall. Henry T. Briggs was there taken prisoner, and was exchanged in 1862.

A list of Danvers volunteers in the three years' regiments:

Second Regiment.

	Age.		Age.
David A. Fuller, Co. C	28	John Smith, Co. I	28
Levi E. Goodale, Co. C	19	James Patterson, recruit	32
John Stonehall, Co. C	20		

Ninth Regiment.

	Age.		Age.
John Fitzpatrick, Co. B	26	Abram Yates, Co. E	21
James Brown, Co. D	23	Jas. McLaughlin, corp., Co. F	23
Daniel Buckley, Co. E	18	Ulick Burke, Co. F	24
Richard Bush, Co E	32	Patrick Shea, Co. F	20

Tenth Regiment.

	Age.		Age.
Wallace A. Putnam [1]	24	George W. Bigelow, 2d lieut	32

Eleventh Regiment.

	Age.		Age.
Alexander Spinney, Co. C	29	George A. Ewell, Co. I	28
Michael McAuliffe, Co. D	22	Henry Beckett, recruit	22
Wm. Shackley, Co. G	30	James Finnerty, recruit	23
Horace L. Hadley, corp., Co. H.	21	George A. Wilson, recruit	27

Fourteenth Regiment.

(See 1st Heavy Artillery below.)

Seventeenth Regiment.

	Age.		Age.
Robert W. Jessop, Co. A	36	Chas. M. Goldthwaitt, Co. D	22
Geo. Putnam, Jr., corp., Co. B.	18	Dominick McDavitt, Co. D	31
James Battye, Co. B	43	Thomas J. Shea, Co. D	26
Patrick Carr, Co. B	33	Artemas Wilson, Co. D	34
David Coleman, Co. B	44	Joseph H. Coley, Co. G	18
Lawrence Fox, Co. B	39	Nicholas Congdon, Co. G	25
George H. Goss, Co. B	22	Ephraim Getchell, Co. G	35
Thomas Hartman, Co. B	42	Wm. Ober, Co. G	27
James McCarty, Co. B	47	Seward Sylvester, Co. G	18
Andrew Patton, Co. B	38	Jas. Smith, sergt., 2d and 1st lieut., Co. I	30
George Pitman, Co. B	34		
Reuben H. Coffin, Co. D	29		

COMPANY C, SEVENTEENTH REGIMENT.—Those marked with a star were original members of the Danvers Light Infantry.

	Age.
* Nehemiah P. Fuller, capt., promoted major 2d H. Artillery	31
* Wm. W. Smith, 1st lieut., promoted capt., major, lieut.-colonel	23
* Ruel B. Pray, 2d lieut., 1st lieut	24
* Lewis Cann, sergt. 2d lieut., 1st lieut., capt	23
* Henry G. Hyde, sergt., 2d lieut., 1st lieut	22
* Uriah Robertson, sergt., 2d lieut., 1st lieut	30
Timothy Hawks, priv., 2d lieut., 1st lieut	44
* Robert Smith, sergt., 2d lieut., 1st lieut	31
* Malcolm Sillars, 2d lieut., 1st lieut	29
* Andrew Cook, sergt., 2d lieut	30
* James Inman, sergt., 2d lieut	25
* Joseph G. Martin, sergt., 2d lieut	35
* George H. Putney, sergt	28
* Richard W. Fuller, pr., sergt	19
* Timothy Hawks, Jr., corp., sergt	26
* John B. Moores, pr., sergt	26
* Allen Nourse, sergt	21
* William H. Ogden, pr., sergt	21
* John F. Wells, pr., sergt	24
* Isaac Bodwell, corp	38
* Charles F. Brown, corp	27
* James Cochrane, corp	23

[1] Enlisted as 1st lieut., promoted major 56th Infantry; died of wounds.

	Age.
* David Cook, corp	35
* David H. Ogden, corp	23
Patrick Sexton, pr., corp	20
George C. Wilson, musician	18
Charles Hartman, musician	18

Privates.

	Age.		Age.
* Samuel D. Benson	23	* Lewis D. Moore	18
* Charles H. Burchstead	22	*Archibald Morrison	25
* Joseph N. Burchstead	29	* George H. Moulton	28
* James H. Burrows	25	Andrew Mullen	24
Simeon Coffin	21	* John Mundie	27
* Wm. R. Crawford	19	Martin Murray	20
Wm. H. Croft	17	Owen Murphy	23
John L. Cunningham	31	Wm. J. Murphy	27
* James W. Dickey	19	Edward North	19
* George H. Dole	28	* David Pettingill	31
* Samuel W. Durgin	22	* Richard Poor	19
Joshua Goss	43	* Nathaniel W. Pope	23
* George W. Goss	18	James Prince	29
* Rufus Hart	26	Charles H. Putnam	21
* Thomas Hartman	19	* George F. Putnam	23
James A. Holt	31	* Wm. Reynolds	23
* Daniel A. Hyde	38	* Michael Riley	30
* Thomas Hynd	41	John A. Roberts	18
Andrew Kelly	40	Frank Scampton	39
John Kelly	35	* George Scampton	32
* Jackson Kennedy	31	Joseph E. Shaw	18
* Ezra D. Kimball	23	* John Shackley	33
Michael Kirby	21	* Daniel Smith	28
* David P. Lang	24	* Philip Sullivan	20
Joseph Leavitt	42	Jeremiah Toomey	21
* James Lee	22	* Patrick Toomey	23
* James E. Lowell	22	* Patrick Trainer	19
* Melville Maley	18	* Ezra W. Watson	24
John McCreary	36	Charles F. Wells	18
* Alexander Mon	43	Edwin G. Wells	18
* George E. Moore	24	Edwin F. Welsh	38
* John Moore	23	* Henry R. Wiggin	43
* John B. Moores	26	* Joseph F. Wiggin	37
John K. Moore	31	* Frederick Wright	28

In the list of original members of the Light Infantry Company are these names which do not appear above:

Edward Murphy.	Wm. W. Flynn.
Jonas S. Monroe.	Jona Fogg.
Alden C. Shaw.	Thos. A. Musgrave.
John P. Stiles.	Peirce Butler.
Florence H. Crowley.	Geo. R. Wentworth.
Newell Durgin.	Wm. Sillars.
George W. Elliott.	Geo. S. Lowe.

Nineteenth Regiment.

	Age.		Age.
John N. Thompson, Co. B	30	John Berry, Co. H	18
Robert W. Putnam, Co. F	18	Joshua Berry, Co. H	28
Levi Trask, Co. H	44		

Twentieth Regiment.

	Age.		Age.
Robert McKenney, Co. H	34	John T. Brown, Co. K	33

Twenty-second Regiment.

	Age.		Age.
Daniel P. Clough, Co. A	18	Edwin Starkey, Co. D	15
John H. Moser, Co. D	19	Thomas Caldwell, Co. E	34
Samuel F. Pray, Co. D	23		

Twenty-third Regiment.

	Age.		Age.
Isaac N. Roberts, hosp. stew.	28	James Kelley, Co. A	45
Joseph Blake, corp., Co. A	22	James W. Kelley, Co. A	28
William Webber, Co. A	18	Thos. B. Kelley, Co. A	19
Edward Blake, Co. A	20	Moses A. Kent, Co. A	20
Nathaniel W. Chaplin, Co. A.	23	Albert Kimball, Co. A	18
Wm. A. Chaplin, Co. A	18	Jefferson Nichols, Co. A	35
Albert T. Cressey, Co. A	18	Henry H. Richardson, Co. A.	22
Benj. M. Tuller, Co. A	18	Wm. H. Richardson, Co. A.	22
Matthew C. West, Co. A	32	Alonzo P. Dodge, sgt., Co. G.	23
Abel N. Tyler, Co. A	18	Tristram C. Jeffs, corp., Co. G.	33
Daniel Fuller, corp. Co. B	22	Jacob Bradbury, Co. G	41
Geo. D. Choate, sgt. Co. C	28	Richard Hood, Co. G	58
Francis S. Dodge, corp. Co. F.	19	Chas. P. Trask, Co. G	19
Francis S. Caird, Co. F	24	Chas. Annable, Co. K	34
Jeremiah Cook, Co. F	35	Abraham North, Co. K	35
Geo. H. S. Driver, Co. F	19	Isaac N. Roberts, Co. K	28
Charles H. Field, Co. F	46	Richard B. Withey, Co. K	25
George Newhall, Co. F	20		

Twenty-fourth Regiment.

David H. Cunningham, Co. E..... 18

Twenty-sixth Regiment.

George T. Welch, Co. B..... 20

Twenty-eighth Regiment.

	Age.		Age.
Jeremiah Murphy, Co. A	26	Patrick R. O'Grady, Co. E	23
John Dowdall, Co. E	20		

Twenty ninth Regiment.

	Age.		Age.
Chas. D. Bedell, Co. D	21	John Smith, Co. D	19
George W. Field, Co. D	21		

Thirty-second Regiment.

Warren Thomas, Co. D..... 28

Thirty-third Regiment.

	Age.		Age.
Jas. Hill, sgt., Co. C	22	John Smith, Co. E	28
Geo. O. Smith, corp., Co. C	40	Joseph McKenney, Co. F	23
James Hopkins, Co. C	18	John J. Smith, Co. F	22
James Reynolds, Co. C	18	Patrick Dunlay, Co. K	18
Richard Landers, Co. E	22		

Thirty-fifth Regiment.

	Age.		Age.
Daniel J. Preston,[1]	45	Joseph E. Hood	21
Edgar M. Riggs, 2d Lieut.	25	Samuel L. Knight	26
		Charles P. Le Gro	25
COMPANY F.		Christopher Metzgar	19
Jas. H. Ham, corp.	24	Wm. A. Peabody	21
Seth S. Stetson, corp.	23	Israel Roach	38
Wm. G. Colcord	20	Jonas M. Rollins	32
Lewis W. Day	29	Levi A. Trask	21
Henry G. Dockham	43	Lewis Verry	34
Chas. W. Dodge	25	Chas. E. M. Welch	27
John F. Eveleth	19	George T. Whitney	27
James A. Green	21	Jonathan E. Whitehouse	21
Thomas E. Green	22	Oliver P. Wiggin	21
George W. Hanson	19	Joseph Wood	24
Ambrose Hinds	26	Wm. H. James, recruit	22

Thirty-eighth Regiment.

George W. Stanley, unassigned recruit..... 24

Thirty-ninth Regiment.

	Age.		Age.
Chas. W. Hanson, sergt.-major.	26	John H. Perkins, Co. A	23
Wm. S. Evans, Co. A	21		

Fortieth Regiment.

	Age.		Age.
Patrick Brannan, corp., Co. B.	22	George H. Dwinell, Co. B	25
John Rosenthal, corp., Co. B.	18	Henry Fish, Co. B.	45
John Withey, corp., Co. B	44	Wm. W. Jessup, Co. B	18
Sam'l P. Withey, muc., Co. B.	18	Wm. H. Parker, Co. B	31
Joseph E. Annis, Co. B	32	Samuel M. Porter, Co. B	40
Edwin Beckford, Co. B	19	Wm. F. Twiss, Co. B.	31
Horace Beckford, Co. B	20	George Woodman Co. B	35
Chas. W. Benjamin, Co. B	27	Charles A. Young, Co. B	21
Wm. H. Channell, Co. B	29	Charles E. Meader, Co. K	18
George H. Day, Jr., Co. B	18	Lorenzo A. Quint, Co. K	32
Stephen S. Day, Co. B	37		

Fifty-sixth Regiment.

Wallace A. Putnam. (See Tenth Regiment.)

[1] Enlisted 1st Lieutenant, aged 45, promoted Captain, and December 6, 1863, commissioned Major 36th U. S. Col. Inf.

Fifty-ninth Regiment.

Thomas Carney, Co. I..... 42

FIRST REGIMENT HEAVY ARTILLERY (three years).—Those marked with a star were original members of the "Putnam Guards."

	Age.
* Elbridge W. Guilford, sergt., 2d lieut., 1st lieut., Co. A.....	33
James Skene, Co. B.....	30
Frank W. Taggard, 2d lieut., 1st lieut., Co. D.....	25
Henry P. Fowler, sergt., 2d lieut., Co. D.....	22
Charles H. Masury, sergt., 2d lieut., Co. D.....	19
John P. Withey, pr., sergt., Co. D.....	21
William F. Beckford, corp., Co. D.....	24
Charles R. Brown, corp., Co. D.....	21
James Murray, corp., Co. D.....	24
George H. Chaplin, Co. D.....	21
William H. Dockham, Co. D.....	21
Charles W. C. Goudy, Co. D.....	21
Everson Hall, Co. D.....	30
John M. Hines, Co. D.....	21
Charles L. McGill, Co. D.....	21
George O. Shattuck, Co. D.....	34
Daniel R. Usher, Co. D.....	23
Daniel Berry, Co. H.....	21
* Charles H. Adams, 1st lieut., Co. K.....	24
Edward Murphy, Co. L.....	22
Nathaniel K. Wells, corp., Co. M.....	22
Samuel P. Richardson, Co. M.....	34

Company I.

* Arthur A. Putnam, capt.....	30
* Jonathan B. Hanson, sergt., 2d lieut., 1st lieut., capt.....	32
* William J. Roome, 2d lieut., 1st lieut.....	22
* James Mack, sergt., 1st lieut.....	31
* George W. Kenney, 2d lieut.....	
* Andrew O. Carter, sergt., 2d lieut.....	22
Charles F. Kelley, pr., sergt.....	24
* George G. Clark, pr., sergt.....	26
* Charles A. Shepard, pr., sergt.....	28
* William H. Shirley, pr., sergt.....	28
* George E. Smith, sergt.....	26
Edward Callahan, corp.....	21
William F. Davis, pr., corp.....	23
* Edward W. Thomas, pr., corp.....	27
* Sidney M. Pearson, corp.....	25
Benjamin D. Miles, corp.....	30
* John G. Weeden, corp.....	32

Privates.

	Age.		Age.
* Hector A. Aiken.....	32	George H. Jones.....	18
* Chas. G. Ansenberger.....	25	* Frank S. Kittredge.....	23
* George D. Batchelder.....	19	* Samuel F. Lefflau.....	24
* Chas. E. Brown.....	23	George S. Low.....	19
Gustavus Brown.....	23	Thomas Maloney.....	21
* Henry T. Chalk.....	23	* John Merrill.....	26
Frank B. Colby.....	21	* John Metzgar.....	27
Wm. Cunningham.....	19	* William H. Moser.....	44
* Oscar F. Curtis.....	22	* Simon Murray.....	25
* William C. Dale.....	22	* Elbridge G. Pearson.....	27
* James Drysdale.....	35	* Franklin Perkins.....	25
* George W. Earle.....	24	* George W. Perkins.....	29
* Isaac O. Evans.....	18	George Peterson.....	21
* Nehemiah P. Fiske.....	20	* Oliver A. Plummer.....	27
George E. Fleet.....	32	* Charles W. Sheldon.....	26
* Edwin A. Fuller.....	40	* William E. Sheldon.....	27
* Edwin I. Getchell.....	22	Daniel H. Smith.....	26
* John Goodwin.....	37	* David Smith.....	29
* Warren F. Goodwin.....	18	* James C. Smith.....	23
Orlando C. Guppy.....	26	George W. Stevenson.....	25
* James H. Ham.....	21	* Milford Tedford.....	18
* Albert Henderson.....	22	Angus Ward.....	23
John V. Hennessey.....	22	* William Ward.....	28
Charles Hiller.....	22	* Robert Weigand.....	26
* John Hobbs.....	20	* John Westcott.....	26
* Levi H. Howard.....	42	* James F. Whittier.....	21
* Charles Hurd.....	22	* Carlton Woodward.....	21
* George Ingraham.....	22		

Names of original members of the "Putnam Guards" not given above, are Thomas Turney, corp., George Beard, Frank A. Burrill, John F. Dudley, Ezra S. Dudley, George A. Dodge, Edwin E. Dodge, George G. Esty, Charles M. Goodwin, Wm. Johnson Charles F. Jordan, Albert F. Putnam, Addison W. Putnam, Kendall F. Richardson, Philemon R. Russell, Jr., Wm. Shackley, Ira T. Trask, John E. Tiney, drummer, John Wesel.

SECOND REGIMENT, HEAVY ARTILLERY.

	Age.
Nehemiah P. Fuller, capt., major.....	33
Arthur A. Putnam, 1st lieut., capt.....	25
Charles H. Adams, 2d lieut.....	27
Archelaus P. B. Kelly, Co. A.....	16
George A. Elliott, sergt., Co. B.....	25
Abraham North, sergt., Co. B.....	39
Albert D. Webber, corp., Co. B.....	21
Richard P. Abbott, Co. B.....	25
Samuel D. Benson, Co. B.....	25
George H. Fuller, Co. B.....	26
James H. Kelley, Co. B.....	18
Edwin H. Marshall, Co. B.....	25
Henry Maud, Co. B.....	37
Stephen W. Roberts, Co. B.....	29
William H. Stetson, corp., Co. C.....	29
George D. Goldthwait, Co. D.....	32
Abraham North, Co. D.....	39
Wm. H. Southwick, Co. D.....	26
Joseph G. Whitehouse, Co. D.....	30
Addison W. Fowler, sergt., Co. E.....	22
John McCoy, Co. E.....	39
John Shackley, Co. E.....	44
Henry Sloper, Co. E.....	31
Joseph Leavitt, Co. F.....	43
Edward P. Mayhew, Co. F.....	18
Wm. Brown, Co. G.....	19

Company K.

	Age.		Age.
Charles H. Adams, Jr., sergt....	26	Geo. W. Jellison.....	18
Daniel P. Clough, sergt.....	19	Franklin Johnson.....	18
Fredk. A. Wentworth, sergt....	24	Chas. T. Mosier.....	18
Wm. S. Forrest, corp.....	42	Allen Peabody.....	44
Ezra W. Watson, corp.....	26	Jos. S. Peabody.....	18
Henry F. Allen.....	18	Shepard Pierce.....	18
Orion W. Clough.....	18	John F. Pillsbury.....	22
James M. Collins.....	23	Alonzo A. Rackliffe.....	18
Albert A. Fowler.....	22	Amasa L. Ross.....	19
George A. Freeze.....	31	Albert Spaulding.....	18
Andrew J. Goodwin.....	21	Fredk. T. Stone.....	18
Eben J. Griffin.....	18	Robert Tough.....	20
John C. Harris.....	23	Wm. H. Weeks.....	18

THIRD REGIMENT HEAVY ARTILLERY.

	Age.
Edward Mitchell, 2d lieut.....	26
William O. Blake, Co. D.....	26
Edward Mitchell, sergt., Co. F.....	26
Joseph Inman, Co. F.....	23
Benjamin F. Larrabee, Co. F.....	28
Frederick Marr, Co. F.....	20
Edwin F. Morrill, Co. F.....	18
Prince W. Nash, Co. F.....	18
Thomas Nugent, Co. F.....	37
John P. Thomas, Co. G.....	21
William H. Chadwick, corp., Co. H.....	27
Henry G. Abbott, Co H.....	22
Henry T. Briggs, Co. H.....	22
James Finnekin, Co. H.....	35
Joshua Goss, Co. H.....	41
Ezra D. Kimball, Co. H.....	25
Solomon B. Lane, Co. H.....	31
Thomas McKeag, Co. H.....	21
John A. Roberts, Co. H.....	19

	Age.
Douglas R. Wilson, Co. H	18
Albert Woodbury, Co. H	26
Calvin F. Richardson, Co. M	21
John Shea, Co. M	40
Ansel C. Smart, Co. M	18
John Stowell, Co. M	26
William H. Mosier, Co. M	44

FOURTH REGIMENT HEAVY ARTILLERY.

Company A.

	Age.		Age.
John Ambrose	21	Edward F. Gourley	23
Thomas H. Bailey	25	Benj. F. Grover	23
Wallace Bailey	20	Charles A. Guppy	23
Elbridge Cothran	21	John Kelly	22
Eben F. Creesy	22	Elbridge Kennedy	18
Florence H. Crowley	21	Charles Newhall	25
Timothy D. Crowley	18	Albert Parry	36
Lewis W. Day	30	Joseph F. Pitman	18
Stephen S. Day	41	John W. Rollins	27
Wm. G. Dickey	38	William B. Ross	28
Thomas H. Dodge	19	Jacob C. Spaulding	21
John S. George	24	John Q. Welch	22
Thomas B. George	27	Douglass R. Wilson	22

Two companies of sharpshooters, three years' men, were recruited at Lynnfield, and left for Washington in December, 1861. In the first company, which was ordered to report to General Lander near Maryland Heights were the following Danvers men :

	Age.		Age.
Chas. N. Ingalls, sergt.	40	Joseph T. Smart	30
Austin Upton, corp.	37	Alfred M. Trask	21
David S. Huse	18	Austin Upton	35
Horace Kimball	34	Samuel A. Waitt	28
Joshua Severance	37		

In the second company, attached to the Twenty-second Regiment Infantry, were these :

	Age.		Age.
Wm. I. Adams	34	Richard Goss	40
George Beard	35	Hiram B. Kenniston	36
Moses Deland	22		

In the Salem Cadets, which organization performed garrison duty in Boston Harbor from May 26, 1862, to October 11, 1862. were these Danvers men :

	Age.		Age.
Eben F. Creesy	20	Alonzo Gray	24
Florence H. Crowley	19	Samuel F. Gray	27
John G. Dervan	19	Arthur C. Kenney	23
George F. Dockham	18	John T. Ross	32
Addison W. Fowler	21	Charles F. Sleeper	25

In Company B, of the Seventh Regiment Infantry (six months), July 1, 1862, to December 31, 1862, were :

	Age.		Age.
Geo. M. Crowell, sergt.	29	Alexander Caird	19
John H. Howard, corp.	20	Warren P. Dodge	23
Henry Sloper, corp.	29	Richard Poor	19

The company of Danvers men previously referred to as having been recruited in the summer of 1862, was as follows:

Company K. Eighth Regiment, Volunteer Infantry, Nine Months' men.

	Age.		Age.
Albert G. Allen, capt.	42	Lorenzo C. Rogers, corp.	43
Edwin Bailey, 1st lieut.	25	Denis W. Regan, corp.	27
Benjamin E. Newhall, 2d lieut.	27	Alfred Porter, corp.	36
Charles W. Allen, 1st sergt.	22	Frederick N. Putnam, corp.	21
Thomas Barnett, sergt.	37	John Proctor, corp.	34
Henry D. Wallace, sergt.	22	Abiel A. Horne, corp.	32
James H. Sleeper, sergt.	34	Jacob Bradbury	44
Samuel P. Fowler, sergt.	24	William Brady	33
Thomas Carney	40	Cleaveland Gould	29
Orion W. Clough	18	Daniel H. Gould	17
Henry Collins	29	James P. Margeson	35
Patrick Collins	20	John M. Martin	25
Thomas Collins	22	John McAuliffe	30
William Collins	18	William O'Neil	38
Edward Darling	30	Albert Parry	34
Judson W. Dodge	29	Amos Pearson	43
Henry F. English	27	Charles W. Peart	22
William T. Fay	38	Joel F. Phelps	40
James L. Fish	18	Joseph M. Proctor	32
William Fowle	41	Albert F. Putnam	21
Cyrus Fuller	30	William Reynolds	47
Solomon Fuller	26	John Russell	28
Charles W. Giddings	23	John H. Sears	19
Charles A. Gilman	19	Asa J. Spaulding	41
Mark Glidden	43	Alonzo J. Stetson,	24
Samuel Glover	53	Walter F. Tarleton	27
Charles Goother	44	William Webber	18
William W. Goodwin	31	Douglass R. Wilson	18

In the other nine months' regiments which left for the front, in the latter part of 1862, were these :

	Age.
Salmon B. Lane, Co. C, 42d	30
Joseph N. Burchstead, Co. I, 47th	30
Michael Joyce, Co. E, 48th (deserted)	27
Wendell P. Hood, Co. F, 48th	22
Augustine Upton, Co. E, 50th	18

But four men are credited to Danvers in the cavalry. These are

George S. Osborne, asst. surg., 1st Cav	24
Charles H. Lyons, Co. E, 1st Cav	21
Samuel W. Lewis, 1st sergt, 3d Cav	25
Reuben Leighton, Co. G, 5th Cav	18

But two are credited to the light artillery :

Daniel P. Avery, 2d Batt., 3 years (deserted)	23
John L. Edwards, 4th Batt., 3 years	28

FIFTH REGIMENT, (100 days), mustered in July 23, 1864 :

William Metzgar, Co. C	18
Samuel W. Nourse, Co. C	23
Amos Pearson, Co. C	44
Gideon Rowell, Co. C	33
Samuel P. Trask, Co. C	19
Erdix T. Turner, Co. C	20

SIXTH REGIMENT, (100 days) mustered in July 15, 1864 :

George M, Crowell, 2d lieut., Co. I	34
Warren P. Dodge, corp., Co. I	25
Allen W. Bodwell, Co. I	18
Daniel A. Caskin, Co. I	20
Patrick Collins, Co. I	20
William Collins, Co. I	19
Thomas Hartman, Co. I	22
Orris K. Huff, Co. I	21
William S. Inman, Co. I	18
Jeremiah Kirby, Co. I	19
Frank B. Messer, Co. I	19
Hugh Murphy, Co. I	18
Edward North, Co. I	21
Thaddeus Osgood, Co. I	18
Richard Poor, Co. I	21
Walter F. Tarlton, Co. I	28
John Thompson, Co. I	21
Joseph Thompson, Co. I	18
Austin Towne, Co. I	19
Frederick Wright, Co I	33

EIGHTH REGIMENT, (100 days) Dr. Ebenezer Hunt, aged 64, mustered in as assistant surgeon July 29, 1864; discharged November 10, 1864.



Amelia Nichols

VETERAN RESERVE CORPS, July, 1864:

	Age.		Age.
Thomas Caldwell	36	Wm. Reynolds	28
Hiram S. Faye	33	W. Shackley	28
John McCreary	44	Edward F. Welch	40
John O'Keefe	39		

THIRTEENTH, UNATTACHED COMPANY, INFANTRY (90 days), May, 1864, William Francis, aged 45.

TWENTY-NINTH, UNATTACHED COMPANY, HEAVY ARTILLERY (1 year) George W. Kenney, captain, aged 34.

REGULAR ARMY, Louis E. Goodale, Signal Corps, aged 21; John W. Wiley, Engineer Corps, aged 19.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

DR. ANDREW NICHOLS.

Dr. Andrew Nichols was born in the northern part of Danvers, on that portion of the "Prince Farm" now owned by heirs of Philip H. Wentworth, on the 22d of November, 1785. His father was Major Andrew Nichols, an efficient and progressive farmer. He introduced the Lombardy Poplar into this section of the country, his farm being lined with them. His mother was Eunice Nichols, the daughter of John Nichols and Elizabeth Prince. It was Elizabeth Prince, granddaughter of Captain Robert Prince, who set out the large elm tree now standing near the main entrance to the Wentworth estate. Sarah Warren, of Watertown, wife of Robert Prince, and grandmother of said Elizabeth, who was afterward married to Alexander Osborne, was cried out upon as a witch, and died in jail.

The first of his ancestors to settle in this country was William Nichols, born about 1596, who took grants of land in "Brooksby" (now Peabody), and settled on them in 1638. In 1652, as by his deposition on record in the office of the clerk of courts, he was living on his farm of about two hundred acres, situated between Ipswich River and Salem line. The farm in Middleton, now owned by Walter L. Harris, of Salem, and adjoining lands bounded by Nichols Brook, including the hill called "Ferncroft," were a portion of it. His only son was John Nichols, who married Lydia Wilkins, a daughter of Bray Wilkins, of Wills Hill, Middleton. Their son, John Nichols, by his second wife, had two sons, John Nichols, who married Elizabeth Prince, before mentioned, and Deacon Samuel Nichols, who married Abigail Elliot, and they were the parents of Major Andrew Nichols. They were all well-to-do farmers, and lived within a mile and one half of Dr. Nichols' birthplace.

After the completion of the course at Phillips Academy, in Andover, in 1804, he studied with Dr. Waterhouse, at the famous "Cragie" or Longfellow Mansion at Cambridge, and attended the course of lectures at the Harvard Medical School in 1806 and 1807.

He commenced the practice of his profession in the southern part of the town (now Peabody), in 1811; it soon spread to every part of the old town, also to Middleton, Lynnfield and a portion of Topsfield and Salem, where, as the beloved physician, he might be seen early and late, either walking or riding. I think it can well be said, that no practitioner had more names of persons who were unable to pay upon his books than he. He seldom asked twice for the very moderate fee, and never asked for it where he knew or mistrusted it was hard for them to pay. But to rich or poor alike, he always responded cheerfully, and was very sympathetic to all. I have seen him performing surgical operations and appear to suffer more than the patient.

He was admitted to the Massachusetts Medical Society in 1811, and was for many years president of the Essex South District Medical Society. He was always a diligent student, and in the advance guard of his profession, delivering an essay on the irritation of the nerves before the Massachusetts Society in 1836.

He was interested in all that was going on about him. He was a charter member and first master of Jordan Lodge of Masons, and during his whole life an active member, of which his poem on "The Spirit of Free Masonry" in 1831, gave evidence.

He was a distinguished botanist, assisting Dr. Bigelow in his well-known book. He gave the first course of lectures ever delivered upon that subject in Salem in 1818; his keen love of it led him to discover the minute Arctic flower, the *Draba Verna*, on the bleak hills of Peabody, upon the melting of the winter snows. He was the first president of the Essex County Natural History Society in 1836, which, with the Essex Historical Society of 1821, formed the Essex Institute of 1848.

Though in active practice and living in the southern part of the town, he showed a great interest in agriculture. He was intensely interested in the management of his farm in Middleton, some seven miles away next adjoining the old William Nichols farm of 1652, which fell to him through his first wife, Ruth Nichols.

He was one of the founders of the Essex Agricultural Society, and its treasurer for thirteen years. He delivered the address at its first cattle show, held at Topsfield, in 1820.

He was one of the old line Abolitionists, and at the head of the Free Soil party in Danvers. I have seen the poor fugitive slave at his house being fed and instructed on whom to call as he went northward. He carried on the anti-slavery lectures in town, lecturing and entertaining the lecturers of those days, Garrison, Phillips, Pillsbury, Pierpoint, Henry (Box) Brown and many others, and doing all in his power to advance the cause of the oppressed. He did not live

long enough to witness the results. In this connection I would state that his brother, Abel Nichols, cast the first vote in town in the anti-slavery cause, and the only one at that particular election.

The reading and study of the poets, ancient and modern, was a recreation which he thoroughly enjoyed, and which gave him many happy hours. He wrote many poems and hymns, some for special occasions, that have been published, among them the "Centennial" poem of Danvers in 1852.

It was his regular habit to write one every Sabbath, many times quite late at night, as his professional duties would give him no regular hour. Also poems to his wife, mother, children, friends and self, on their recurring birth-days.

He was active in the temperance cause, and as early as 1819 lectured before the "Society for Suppressing Intemperance and other Vices," of which he was a member. He took an active part in the Washingtonian movement in 1840, and in his profession he did all in his power to stay its evils.

He was very inventive, and constantly at work with mind or hands upon something to the advancement of science, as his improvement of Dr. Arnott's Hydrostatic Bed, upon one of which he died. He had, that very week, given instructions to a mechanic for additional improvements to it. The rubber air pillows and beds used at the present day take its place. Tubes for the introduction of fresh air from the window to the bed of the patient. The making of zinc paint. The coupling of railroad cars while in motion. Object cards and letters to place upon the blackboard in our schools while upon the School Committee, of which he was for many years a member. In this connection it is proper to state that he made the first move for the establishment of the High School within the town.

He was one of the founders of the First Unitarian Congregational Society of Danvers (now Peabody), and was a sincere friend and helper to all of its pastors from the first to the last. The Rev. Frank P. Appleton truly said of him, "His heavenly Father was a dear and sacred presence to him." In all the brighter scenes of life he saw that Father's love; and he laid his soul meekly, cheerfully before that infinite Friend . . . His was a guileless worship. He was open-hearted to God, as he was to man. No fear mingled in his communion; his cheerful love cast out all fear, or rather his unselfishness made fear of God impossible. . . . To serve his Father and to help his brethren, this was the aim of his life. He never lost his love for his fellow-beings,—they were always God's children; and the deep interest in others which rose uppermost in his heart during his last sickness, the sacred counsel, "*to live for man, to work for humanity*," which, with faltering lips, but unfaltering soul and faith he gave, were only simple repetitions of what his whole life had said.

His monument in the Monumental Cemetery in Peabody has the expressive inscription, "Erected by the friends of Humanity to Humanity's Friend."

An intimate friend of George Peabody from his boyhood, in the apothecary shop, when he removed the wen from his forehead, to his success as a London banker, and corresponded with him until the time of his death.

He married his cousin, Ruth Nichols, daughter of Deacon John Nichols, of Middleton, and wife of Sarah Fuller, the 1st of June, 1809; she died without issue, March 31, 1832.

He married secondly, Mary Holyoke Ward, daughter of Joshua Ward, of Salem, and wife Susanna Holyoke, daughter of Dr. Edward Augustus Holyoke, the 3d of October, 1833.

He died the 30th of March, 1853, and his widow the 15th of April, 1880.

He left two children, Andrew Nichols, civil engineer, who now occupies the northwesterly corner of the Robert Prince farm, which, to this time, has never been out of the ownership of his descendants, though for one hundred years in the name of Nichols, and a daughter, Mary Ward Nichols.

Of the next generation four sons and three daughters are living children of Andrew Nichols and wife, Elizabeth P. Stanley, of Salem. The eldest Andrew inherits his grandfather's taste for Natural History.

HON. ELIAS PUTNAM.

Elias Putnam, son of Israel and Anna Putnam, was born in Danvers, Mass., June 7, 1789, and was descended from John and Priscilla Putnam, who, in or about the year 1634, as stated in a previous page, came from England to America with their three sons, and settled in Salem village. The second of these sons was Nathaniel, whose son John had a son, also named John, the father of Edmund and grandfather of the above mentioned Israel. Through the various matrimonial alliances of this line of ancestors, Elias might trace his pedigree back to many others of the emigrant colonists whose history has more or less been made known to us, and whose progeny is now very numerous throughout the country. Edmund Putnam dwelt for the greater part of his long life, and died in the year 1810, at the old Daniel Rea house, which still stands at the north of the Plains, and at a little distance east of the direct road from Salem to Topsfield, and which, having been the property and home of four successive generations of this branch of the Putnam family, passed many years ago into the possession of Mr. Augustus Fowler, who now occupies it. He was commonly known as "Deacon Edmund," having served as deacon of the First Church from 1762 until 1785, when he became a Universalist. While holding this office, he was unanimously chosen captain of a Danvers Alarm List Company, March 6, 1775. In 1776 he was made selectman and assessor, and in 1778 was appointed



Elias Putnam.

one of a committee of the town to consider and report upon the New State Constitution then proposed for adoption. Israel, the third of his five children, was born November 20, 1754, at the old Rea place just referred to, and his wife, Anna, was a daughter of Elias Endicott, Sr., and lineal descendant of the old Puritan Governor, John Endicott, whose "Orchard Farm" was her father's native spot. Immediately after their marriage, in 1788, they began housekeeping on another farm owned by the family, situated at a point on the road two miles farther north and about a third of a mile south of the Topsfield line. The house, which is still standing, was built during the last century, and marks the site of one of the earlier Porter homes, which was destroyed by fire. There Elias, and also two of four other children, were born, the family then removing for a time to the *New Mills* (Danversport), and next to the original homestead, where they might have a more immediate care of the grandparents in their declining years. It was here that Elias took his first real lesson in manual work, serving about the house and in the field in such ways as New England lads were then generally expected to learn and practice. Meanwhile, the short winter terms of the rural district schools, located about midway between the upper and lower farms, afforded him about all the opportunities for education, which he enjoyed in his boyhood. Early in 1812, in company with several other young men of the neighborhood, he entered Bradford Academy, but had not long been a student at that institution before he gave much offence to its teachers and officers by a composition which he prepared and presented as one of the required exercises, and in which he ably and boldly advanced views at variance with the theology there dominant and almost everywhere prevalent. Unwilling to remain where he found that he could not enjoy full religious freedom, he withdrew from the school and repaired to Topsfield for private instruction under Mr. Israel Balch, and there finished the one short term that was to end his school-day life. His classmates or companions from Danvers sympathized with him, approved his action, and all joined him at once in his new scene of study and endeavor. Their concurrent and life-long testimony, as well as his own subsequent career, bore abundant witness to the fidelity with which, at both places, he improved his all too limited advantages, and to the rapid progress he made in his work. Desiring to qualify himself especially for the plain, practical pursuits that engaged so many of his fellow townsmen, he devoted himself to the common English branches, and gave particular attention to the art of surveying, which he so mastered that he subsequently made his proficiency in it, very useful to many others as well as to himself. But however much he might have been indebted to books and schools, nature gave him a still better outfit in a strong mind, in excellent judgment, good common sense, a high moral purpose, indomitable energy and a spirit of industry and activity that never seemed, from first to last, to crave, or even need, relaxation or rest.

He was now twenty-three years of age, and was asked to teach the school of his native district for the following winter of 1812–13, and this he did. The old school-house had been condemned, and a new brick one had just been erected, of whose long line of "masters" he was to be the first, as a youngest son was to be the last, about forty years later. Having married Eunice Ross, daughter of Adam Ross, of Ipswich (who had been a soldier at Bunker Hill and in the Revolutionary War), he and his bride commenced housekeeping, like his parents before them, at the upper farm. His father had offered to send him to college, or to deed to him this estate, as he might choose. Too distrustful, perhaps, of his chances of success in professional life, and fond of agricultural pursuits, he decided to hold to his ancestral acres. Soon after he had served out his single term as a teacher, he concluded to unite with his occupation as a farmer, the business of manufacturing shoes. Amongst the intelligent and sturdy inhabitants of the district and its vicinity, this industrial interest, which was destined to be of prime importance to the town, had already attracted the attention and engaged the enterprising spirit of such men as Caleb Oakes, Zerobbabel Porter, Moses Putnam, Elias Endicott, Jr., and a few others of like character. Elias Endicott, Jr., was a near neighbor as well as an own uncle of the subject of our sketch. The latter had learned not a little from him about the art of the "gentle craft," and now wished to set up business on his own account. He bought the old abandoned school-house, moved it up near his own home, reconstructed and enlarged it, and began in it what was to be the chief avocation of his life. Not, however, without serious discouragement at the very outset; for, through the insolvency of a Southern tradesman to whom he had sold a large lot of goods, he lost the first thousand dollars he had earned by hard and patient work. But the misfortune only nerved him to greater exertion, and his shop, as well as his land, became ere long still more the busy scene of labor.

In 1814, or about that time, "Deacon Edmund" and his wife having died, Israel returned with his household to the scene of his early married life to spend the remainder of his days with the son and his family, enlarging the habitation with a northern "L," the future birth-place, it may be noted by the way, of that distinguished soldier and civilian of the West, Major-General Granville M. Dodge. Israel, like his father Edmund, was a Universalist, and soon began, with some of his neighbors, to take the necessary steps for the promulgation of the doctrine within the district. He presided over a meeting, held at the school-house, April 22, 1815, at which the friends of the new movement presented a declaration of their principles and

made arrangements to secure preachers. Here was the origin of the present Universalist Church of Danvers. Israel and Elias, both, were among the signers of the declaration, and the active participants in the enterprise, and they subsequently welcomed to their home many of the early apostles of the faith who came from time to time to expound it to such as were willing to hear, Hosea Ballou, Charles Hudson, the Streeters and many others. As the father was prominent in the society in its infant history, so the son was a staunch supporter of it in its more prosperous years, both of them being identified with its fortunes as long as they lived. Farmer Israel was a deeply religious, as well as a very intelligent man, and in his zeal for Universalism he wrote able sermons in its advocacy and defence, several of which were published in pamphlet form for circulation. He died in the summer of 1820, at the age of sixty-five, and the *Essex Register*, in announcing his decease, referred to him as "a highly respected and worthy citizen." His wife, who was characterized by a full share of the traits and qualities of her race, died long years afterward, at Danversport, at the residence of her only surviving daughter, Mrs. Mary P. Endicott.

In 1832 Elias, finding that shoe manufacturing was, and was likely to be, a more lucrative calling than farming, and that the prospective needs of his family of ten children, to which one other was added in the following year, required him to engage in it more extensively, let out his house and land and moved down once more to the ancient homestead on the lower and smaller farm, where he could be nearer the heart of the town, and enjoy ample facilities and opportunities for the end in view. Building for himself, out by the road-side, a more commodious factory than he had thus far occupied, he embarked more and more largely in business, furnishing employment to increasing numbers of workmen in Danvers and surrounding towns, and supplying with the products of their labor the markets of still other cities in the Middle, Southern and Western States.

The qualities of character which distinguished him had a long time before fixed the attention of his fellow-citizens, and he had already received not a few marks of their confidence and respect. He had again and again been chosen moderator of the annual town meetings, and had repeatedly been a member and also a chairman of the Board of Selectmen, in years when such offices were posts of honor more than they are now. In 1829 and also in 1830 he was elected as Representative to the General Court, and served for the two years. In 1833 he was chosen Senator and served for one term in that branch of the State Legislature. Here he had the great pleasure of renewing his former friendship with that sterling man, Charles Hudson, who had been an inmate of his home while preaching in Danvers ten or twelve years previously, but who had now entered political life, and was destined to high civic honors. The two men were the members from the Senate of the joint standing committee on railways and canals. It was at an important juncture in the history of such internal improvements in the old commonwealth. The Boston and Lowell Railroad was the only one then in existence in Massachusetts. The eastern company was now fighting, against much opposition and under many difficulties, for a charter. Mr. Putnam was very earnest and active in his efforts in behalf of the measure, and his zeal for it, taken in connection with his acknowledged ability to deal with such matters as these, and his position as a leading member of the committee, and the only member of it from the county which he represented, and in which the line was to have one of its immediate termini, and with the interests and needs of which, so largely to be affected by a successful issue, he was quite well acquainted, enabled him to exert, as the late and lamented Mr. Joshua Silvester and others testify that he did, a very controlling influence towards the favorable result that was finally reached. In like manner he defended and supported other measures of public utility while thus at the capitol.

More and more, as life went on, Mr. Putnam had at heart the prosperity of his native town, and gave to it, in no stinted degree, his thought and care, his time and his means. With that object still in view, he was, as Mr. Silvester again remarks, in a recent biographical sketch of him, accompanied with some personal reminiscences, the first to propose the establishment of a bank in North Danvers. The two men were near neighbors, had already known each other for some years, were both engaged in the same kind of business, and were associated intimately in political, religious and other relations, and were on terms of mutual trust and friendship which continued to strengthen and ripen with each advancing year. "During all this time," says the account or tribute of the revered and veteran survivor of his long since departed companion and co-worker, "scarcely a day passed that we were not together. I can safely say that I knew the man perfeetly. One day he asked me if I did not think we needed a bank in North Danvers? I told him, yes, I thought we did. We then called a meeting of the business men of the town at the old Berry Tavern to consider the matter. It was unanimously voted that application should be made for a charter, and that other necessary steps should be taken." The end was at length accomplished. The bank was duly incorporated in 1836, and Mr. Putnam was chosen the first president, and held the office to the close of his life. Mr. Silvester, who was made one of its directors, adds,—"the bank immediately went into a successful business, which was soon checked, however, by the general crash of 1837. Nearly all the banks of the country suspended specie payment, and well nigh all the business houses failed or asked extensions, in consequence of the embarrassments occasioned by the

removal of the government deposits and by the destruction of the National bank. There followed the greatest depression and stagnation ever known before or since to the industry and trade of the people. But under the management of Mr. Putnam, the village bank was safely carried through it, and to the most perfect satisfaction of the stockholders." And, notwithstanding great personal losses, the business of his own manufacturing establishment was conducted with like wisdom and success.

In 1842, with the view of extending still more his operations, he built in the village of the Plains, at a distance of about a mile south from his home, a dwelling-house, and a much larger factory than his last one, on land he had just purchased of Mr. Jonas Warren. Thither he moved his family in the following January, and soon took into business with him as a partner, his son, Elias E., giving to the firm the name of "Elias Putnam & Co."

It was in the summer of 1843 that he united with others to promote the plan of purchasing and laying out the beautiful grounds of the Walnut Grove Cemetery as a new and fitting place for the burial of the dead. In pursuance of the object, a suitable organization was formed at successive meetings of citizens, and on the 18th of October, the first regular officers of the corporation were chosen, Mr. Putnam being elected president. The consecration services took place June 23, 1844.

He was a warm friend of the cause of education. While in the Legislature he had made the acquaintance of Horace Mann, then and for a long time a member from Dedham, and was deeply interested in the better system of common schools which the future renowned philanthropist had already there advocated and urged. He became a diligent reader of his writings upon the subject, and especially of his long-continued and most useful *Common School Journal*. Some trace of this influence may perhaps be seen in the part which he took in causing the large amount of surplus revenue that was apportioned to Danvers in 1838, to be set apart as a permanent fund for the benefit of her schools. The proposition encountered much opposition, but it was finally carried a few years later, and John W. Proctor, Esq., in his Centennial address of 1852, says,—"Considering the many jealousies brought to bear on this topic, the act whereby the investment was made will ever remain most creditable to the town. No man did more to bring this about than the late Elias Putnam who, in this as in all his other public services, showed himself a vigilant friend of Danvers." If, in the same connection, Mr. Proctor, long after Mr. Putnam's death, allowed himself to indulge so publicly in a less just and generous word, those who were then conversant with affairs, were not slow or mistaken in referring it to the old frequent controversies between the northern and southern sections of the town, in which these two men not seldom stoutly and uncompromisingly antagonized each other, and in which the able and distinguished lawyer, as he could but remember, was not always successful, even as he was not always in the right.

Mr. Putnam was also among the very first to devise and agitate the project of a railroad that should connect Danvers and other towns north of it with the seaboard and more populous and commercial places at the south. One of his sons-in-law recalls a ride which he was early invited to take with him through Middleton to Andover, and the pleased interest with which the latter sought out and discovered a feasible route for the proposed line. Along that way the Essex Railroad, extending from Salem to Lawrence, was constructed at length, but comparatively few to-day are aware what a protracted and determined struggle it cost to give it that direction, and thus to ensure to Danvers the increased facilities and advantages for transportation and inter-communication which she has consequently so long enjoyed. The road was chartered in 1846, though not opened until 1848, and Mr. Putnam was one of the several persons in whose names the grant of incorporation was vested, and subsequently, at the organization of the Board, was made one of the directors, though he was not to live to see fully completed the enterprise which had commanded so much of his interest and energy, and which he had done so much to put into the way of success.

Among the numerous offices which he held at one time or another, was that of county commissioner, and on various occasions he was appointed a delegate to county, State and National political conventions. He was a member of the Whig party, and few felt more keenly disappointed than himself at the defeat of Henry Clay in 1844. As a personal friend, he had often taken counsel and been much associated in these relations, with such men as Daniel P. King, Rufus Choate, Leverett Salstonstall, Stephen C. Phillips and others of like repute in Danvers, Salem and vicinity, sharing fully their Whig principles and sympathies, and working with them to supplant the Democracy. He had a deep and abiding interest in political and national affairs, and kept himself well informed in regard to what was going on at Washington, as well as to matters of legislation nearer home. He had a natural and instinctive abhorrence of the system of slavery, and greatly desired to see it brought to an end, but he was opposed to all rash and violent measures to compass the result, and was persuaded that the best good of the country and the higher interests of freedom itself, would most surely be realized through the triumph and continued supremacy of the party with which he was connected and whose illustrious leaders and statesmen he sincerely trusted and honored. He was fond of argument, had debated similar questions long before in the old Danvers Lyceum, and still liked to discuss subjects of this kind with his friends and neighbors, and such

was the intelligence and candor of the man that they were equally ready and glad to exchange views with him, however much they might differ with him in opinion. Whatever his prepossessions, he was a lover of the truth, had an inquiring mind, aimed to get at the reasons of things, and was most conscientious and deliberate in arriving at his convictions. We quote again from Mr. Silvester,—"He had supreme control of himself under all circumstances, and was a deep thinker and reasoner. Every question, or new movement, presented to him he traced out in all its bearings to the end, after which he was ready to express his feelings on the matter, and when you got his opinion on any subject, you could rely on it as his best candid judgment and most likely to be correct." Nor is it difficult to say where he would have stood had he lived somewhat longer, only to see his old party utterly recreant at last to its better principles and high trusts, and men taking sides anew for the momentous conflict at hand.

Mr. Putnam was, morever, a person of rare inventive skill. As he was one of the early shoe-manufacturers of the town, so he was one of the very first in the country to invent machines to facilitate the various processes of the art, and to economize, in connection therewith, labor, time and material. It is a curious circumstance that when, in 1833, his neighbor, Mr. Samuel Preston who, like Mr. Silvester, was engaged in the same business, had invented a machine for pegging shoes and had got out a patent for it, Mr. Putnam had at the same time and in the same quiet or secret way, been studying and toiling to accomplish a like result, and had actually constructed a machine of his own that did the work. In a letter which he addressed to a friend, and a copy of which, in his own handwriting, lies before us, he manifests a desire to know more fully the principle of Mr. Preston's invention, having received an intimation that it was essentially the same as that of his own, yet suspecting his own might have certain merits which the other had not. Doubtless the discovered resemblance was such as to discourage him from applying for a patent in his own case, since, as a matter of fact, the two machines worked about equally well, though poorly at best. But neither of these gentlemen followed up his advantage so as to make his achievement practically useful to himself or others. It was reserved to men of a later time to bring to wonderful perfection what they had created as only humble beginnings. Mr. Putnam turned his attention to other contrivances, and a few years later obtained a patent for a machine which he had invented for splitting leather, and which was found to be of so much benefit to the manufacturers, that it commanded a brisk sale amongst them, far and near. Two others, of like utility, were soon afterward invented and patented, both ingenious, yet simple in plan. The inventor had connected with his shop a private apartment to which few were admitted, and in which, amidst a promiscuous array of drawings, mouldings, castings and patterns of great variety, he beguiled in such studies or pursuits as these whatever hours he could snatch from his busy and stirring life in the world without. In such, as in so many other ways, he advanced the chief business of the town and wrought for the general good.

It has always and justly been said of him by those who knew him that he was one of the most public-spirited of men, and he was not less disinterested and benevolent in motive and feeling than he was honest and upright in thought, word and deed. His worldly possessions might have been abundant, indeed, had he not given himself so constantly and freely to the service of others. He was the helper and not the hinderer of men around him, and many were those, in Danvers and elsewhere, to whom he gave a good start in life, or whom he assisted in their worthy struggles by generous advances of money, or by other not less valuable forms of encouragement and aid. He was a prodigious worker himself, and he had a decided liking for men who had in them the very spirit of work, who were industrious and virtuous, and showed signs of thriftiness and prudent living, and it was a genuine pleasure to him to extend to them his sympathy and support whenever they chanced to get into a hard place and needed a friendly hand. In other words, he was ever quick to help those who tried to help themselves, and also those who were helpless, indeed, yet were really deserving. He had small patience with the lazy and shiftless ones, even as the vain, the double-minded and the false-hearted found him an uncongenial presence. It was pleasant to see what a wide reputation he had in Essex County for wisdom, goodness and rectitude, and in what varied and numerous ways the feeling of absolute trust, on the part of families or private individuals in the region round about, was wont to manifest itself. He was constantly called upon to arbitrate between contentious parties, to compose difficulties, to give advice, to settle estates, to readjust boundary lines and to be himself a sort of savings-bank for widows and orphans and others at a time when no legally incorporated institution of the kind existed in the town. Such depositors felt that their little all, principal and interest both, was safe for them beyond all question in the hands of "Squire Lias," as he was popularly called, and so it was. It was often at no little inconvenience and sacrifice that he rendered these different kinds of service to strangers and acquaintance alike, but he never declined the request if it was in his power to fulfil it, and so to discharge an act of kindness. We can hardly refrain from quoting once more from the simple and heartfelt tribute of Mr. Silvester,—"His personal character," he says, "was the noblest." He was frank and generous, sincere in all he said and did, scorned a trick or an unworthy act, and was incapable of either, and he bore about with him wherever he went that



Alfred P. Putnam

deportment and dignity which secured for him the perfect confidence of every man with whom he came in contact. He was one of those who believe that there is a pleasure beyond that of benefiting one's self—the pleasure of doing good to others, and this he practiced. Selfishness was the last trait which the spirit of truth and goodness could have imputed to him."

In person he was tall, large and well proportioned of stature, was of reddish brown hair and fair florid complexion, with full blue expressive eyes, and was of great physical strength and of remarkably good health through all his life until his last, lingering and fatal sickness. He was generally of grave aspect, yet was not without a native element of humor and not seldom indulged in more hearty sportive moods, was marked by a certain puritan simplicity of manner, and was plain in his dress and frugal in his habits. He was a member of one of the earliest temperance societies in Essex County, and was a total abstinence man all his life, even at a time when it was well nigh a universal custom to make use, in some form or another, of spirituous liquors. He was an early riser, and was early to bed, filling the waking hours with incessant work, and while he was so faithful to all the many interests which we have enumerated he had a supreme and loving care of home and kindred.

After months of severe suffering, occasioned by a wrench or a strain of the side, which finally proved the cause of his death, he passed peacefully away, July 8, 1847, at his village home and in the presence of his family and other loving friends. The trustees, or directors, and officers, of the various institutions with which he had been prominently connected, such as the village bank, the Essex Railroad Company and the Walnut Grove Cemetery corporation at once met, passed resolutions expressive of their respect for the memory of their deceased associate, and of their deep sense of the great worth of his character and services, and of their own private as well as of the public loss, and voted to attend, each board as a body, his funeral obsequies. The local and other papers contained just tributes in his honor, voicing the general sorrow of the hour and the sentiments of high esteem and grateful regard entertained towards him by all who had known him. We copy from one or two of these journals the following extracts. Said the *Salem Gazette*, of July 12, 1847,—"It is with sincere regret that we are called upon to chronicle the decease of the Hon. Elias Putnam, of North Danvers, a gentleman of great worth, and a highly influential and useful member of the community where he dwelt. Mr. Putnam was much respected wherever he was known. Enterprising, sagacious, of comprehensive views and upright action he was foremost in all schemes for the promotion of the general good within the sphere where his influence could be felt, and filled many offices of public trust, from a State Senator to those more immediately local, with unswerving fidelity and acknowledged usefulness. His death cannot but be regarded as a public loss by his own community, and he will be sincerely mourned by a very large circle of neighbors and friends." And the *Danvers Courier*, of July 10th, said,—"For many years he has been looked to as the counsellor and friend of all around him. Ever ready to lend his aid to all who asked it, ever cool and considerate in his judgment,—the want of his judicious advice will be deeply felt in the circle in which he moved. For the last thirty years he had been repeatedly called to the discharge of duties of trust and confidence by his fellow-citizens, and uniformly met them to their entire satisfaction. He never sought office, but never refused it when he thought he could be useful in the fulfilment of its duties. There are none among us who have done more to promote the prosperity of the town than Mr. Putnam. Discriminating in his judgment, persevering in his industry and efficient in his operations, the influence of his example will long be remembered with admiration."

The funeral services were held at his residence, July 10, and were attended by a large assemblage of people, and the burial took place on the same day at the grounds which he had been so much interested in having set apart and consecrated as a receptacle of the dead. Shortly after, Rev. Mr. Hanson, the pastor of the Universalist Church, preached an eloquent sermon in which he bore touching testimony to the virtues and usefulness of his departed friend and parishioner, and to the conspicuous exemplification which his life and character had given of the value and power of the faith he had cherished.

Mrs. Putnam survived her husband twenty-six years. Of their eleven children, seven are still living. Of the other four, Emily died in 1843, and Elias Endicott, Israel Alden and Louisa Jane, in 1848.

REV. ALFRED P. PUTNAM, D.D.

Alfred Porter Putnam, the eighth child of Elias and Eunice (Ross) Putnam, was born January 10, 1827, in Danvers, Mass., in the house in which also his father was born thirty-eight years before. He was the lineal descendant of the famous John Putnam, who immigrated to this country in 1634, and whose death, eighteen years later, simultaneous with the appearance of a great comet, was publicly proclaimed, by the clergymen of the time, as affording this "very signal testimony that God had then removed a bright star and shining light out of the heaven of his church here into celestial glory above."[1] In the female line he traces his pedigree to some of the ablest founders of our New England civilization, such as Governor John Endicott, Francis Peabody and William Hawthorne, men who have made their

[1] See Morton's "Memorial," pp. 251, 252.

impress on every succeeding generation in Essex County to the present day. Educated in the common schools of his native town, he first turned his attention to mercantile pursuits. After a short apprenticeship in the village bank of which his father was president, and, subsequently, a year's study at the Literary Institute at Pembroke, N. H. he entered, as book-keeper, a dry goods establishment in Boston, where he at once discovered an uncommon aptitude for a business career. The intellectual and reformatory movements of the time, however, soon engrossed his attention; and seeking a wider field and a higher aim for his life work, he determined to fit himself for college, and thus acquire a mental equipment with which, in the mighty contests then impending, he might do some service in behalf of his fellow-men.

Accordingly, in 1848, at the age of twenty-one, he began his preparatory studies at an academy in Vermont, and the next year entered Dartmouth College. Attracted by the new elective system under President Wayland at Brown University, Providence, he transferred his membership to that institution in 1850, where he was graduated with high honors in 1852, delivering, at the spring exhibition, the valedictory oration of his class on "Religion and Art." Thus, in the brief period of four years after leaving his desk in Boston, he had won his A. B.

During the following autumn, as in the preceding winters, he was engaged in teaching, and then he entered the Divinity School at Cambridge, under Drs. Noyes and Francis. Approbated in due time to preach by the Boston Association of Unitarian Ministers, he delivered his first sermon in the Unitarian Church at Sterling, Mass., December 17, 1854. The next year, and while yet a student he received unanimous calls to settle at Sterling, Bridgewater, Watertown and Roxbury, the latter of which he accepted. He was graduated at the Divinity School July 17, 1855, and was ordained to the ministry and installed as pastor of the Mount Pleasant Congregational (Unitarian) Church, Roxbury, December 19th, Rev. Dr. George W. Briggs, of Salem, preaching the sermon.

His ministrations at Roxbury continued, to the great acceptance of his people, nearly nine years, interrupted only by a visit to Europe, Egypt and the Holy Land in 1862–63. Perhaps the most notable incident, connected with his travels abroad, was the speech made by him at the dinner of Americans in London, on the Fourth of July, 1862. It was at one of the darkest periods of the Civil War. Banks' campaign in the valley of the Shenandoah had just culminated in disaster, and the Army of the Potomac, the focus of every loyal heart, seemed to hang on the perilous edge of annihilation, between the Chickahominy and the James. Under these disheartening circumstances and in the midst of a people flaming with prejudices, the assemblage of Americans to celebrate the anniversary of their national independence was an event that gained wide publicity on both sides of the Atlantic. Called upon to respond to the toast, "The Constitution of the United States," Dr. Putnam rose to the full height of the occasion. It was a speech long to be remembered by those who heard it. Of commanding form and with a voice of extraordinary richness and power, he roused his audience to the highest pitch of enthusiasm. The following extract (which we copy from a London journal), referring to our flag, may afford some conception of the speech and the effect it produced at that critical juncture of our affairs:

"And then, sir, that old flag of the Union which so fittingly symbolizes what the constitution makes a reality—that, too, shall go down to those who are to come after us, more precious far than ever it has been before—more significant in its meaning—glowing with brighter radiance—not a single star erased from its field of blue—a thing of beauty and a joy forever. Baptized anew into ten thousand deaths, that azure field takes on a deeper blue for the faithfulness unto the end of all who have fallen martyrs to the righteous cause—those crimson stains wear an intenser red for the blood that has been shed so freely in our behalf—and every line and star of light upon that banner of our love is whiter still for the purity of the souls that have mounted from the battle fields of the Union up to God. Oh! within these few past months, how many brave men has that national emblem made braver! How many a struggling host it has inspired and led on to victory! How many a noble fellow has been called upon to sleep his last sleep, enwrapped in its sacred folds! How many of our Southern brethren have wept like children as they have caught once more a glimpse of its stars and stripes! And what a promise it seems to give us of the hour when the great deliverance shall come to us all, freeing us not only from the hand that has been lifted up against our country, but also from that evil and scourge of our land which is the source of all our woe. Yes, sir, it is the flag of our pride and our affections, growing richer in associations and more terrible in might with every passing day. As new Stars shall be added to its already splendid constellation, it shall continue its mission of beneficence and power. It shall mean peace and love forever to all who befriend it—defiance and war to those only who insult it."

Returning home in 1863, Dr. Putnam delivered before various Lyceums lectures on "The Nile," the "World's Indebtedness to Egypt," and other topics suggested by his tour abroad, all of which added to his reputation and enlarged the sphere of his usefulness.

From time to time, while in Roxbury, urgent calls came to him to settle elsewhere,—from Salem, Boston and Chicago churches,—all of which, however, were declined. In the spring of 1864 the First Unitarian Church of Brooklyn, N. Y., presented a strong claim for his services. This was everywhere recognized as one of the most important posts in the denomination. To hold its ground in the City of Churches, it needed an exceptionally able and vigorous champion of the faith it professed. Considerations of duty, strongly urged upon him by leading men of the denomination, finally induced Dr. Putnam to sunder the peculiarly tender and affectionate ties that bound him to the hearts of his people in Roxbury. He accepted the call, and on the 28th of September following he was installed as pastor, Rev. E. S. Gannett, D.D., of Boston, preaching the sermon.

In the long and eventful pastorate that ensued, Dr. Putnam made his pulpit a centre of wide influence in the city.

His own society testified their appreciation of his pastoral work by the erection, in 1866, of a beautiful chapel for the use of its Sunday-school, and, at the same time, responded generously to his appeals for the religious instruction of the children of the poor, so many of whom he had observed spending the sacred hours idly in the streets and alley-ways of the crowded city.

For this class, accordingly, a Sunday-school was immediately opened in a room over the Wall Street Ferry-house, and after a time passed under the superintendency of Mr. A. T. White an active member and efficient co-worker in Dr. Putnam's Church. Six children only attended the first session, but by the persistent and indefatigable exertions of the founder and his willing assistants, the numbers rapidly increased, until now [1887], it is a large and flourishing institution, with a fine, commodious chapel, erected for its use, a permanently settled missionary to carry on its beneficent work, and a constituency of about a hundred families to share its blessings and send down the stream of its influence, it is to be hoped, to many succeeding generations.

Another philanthropic enterprise, to which Dr. Putnam directed his attention at this time, was the founding of the Union for Christian work, since become one of the most important and influential charities of Brooklyn. The first conferences of the projectors were held in his study. At a subsequent meeting, already large and enthusiastic, he presented the report, as chairman of the committee on constitution and by-laws, which was adopted, and, by request, delivered an address on the love, pursuit and practice of truth, striking the key-note of the organization and enlisting still broader sympathy in its behalf. From these beginnings, the Union has grown to be a recognized power in the community. Nobly endowed and established in a beautiful edifice of its own, with its library, reading and lecture rooms, its labor bureau and schools of industrial art, it stands to-day a worthy monument to those who, in the providence of God, laid its foundations deep in human brotherhood and love.

In 1867 Dr. Putnam again signalized his pastorate by the establishment of the Third Unitarian Church, in the suburbs of the city. The rapid growth of Brooklyn toward the East, which he foresaw, has abundantly justified the wisdom of the movement, though, at the time it was undertaken, there were not wanting among well-tried friends some misgivings of the result. Sunday services were opened at first in a small hall over a fish-market, and conducted there regularly, with ever deepening interest, for about a year, when Dr. Putnam, appealing to his people, secured the sum of ten thousand dollars for a house of worship. The building was dedicated December 9, 1868, Dr. Putnam preaching a powerful sermon on the "Freedom and Largeness of the Christian Faith." Latterly the society has again out-grown its accommodations, and has purchased and fitted up anew the ample and attractive structure it now occupies. Professor Foster, in his published sketch of the new church, thus testifies to its paternity: "Above all other human sympathy and aid, does it cherish the friendship and services of Rev. Alfred P. Putnam. It is simply just to affirm that the Third Unitarian Society of Brooklyn is the offspring of his hope and zeal."

During his ministry in Brooklyn Dr. Putnam delivered, from time to time, to his people courses of lectures on a variety of important subjects, such as the Great Religions of the World, the History of the Bible, the History of Sacred Song, the Doctrines of Liberal Christianity, the History of Unitarianism, the History of Universalism, the Religious Aspects of Europe, and on Egypt, Sinai and Palestine.

Two of these courses, on the Great Religions and the History of Sacred Song, were subsequently repeated to the students of the Meadville (Pa.) Theological School. Out of the latter series grew Dr. Putnam's "Singers and Songs of the Liberal Faith," a work which required the finest taste and most extensive research, and which gives biographical sketches of nearly one hundred Unitarian hymn-writers, with selections from each, and copious illustrative notes. This work was published in 1874, and received with high encomiums by the press, religious and secular, and by critics and reviewers of every sect. The late Dr. Ezra Abbott said of it: "It seems to me in every respect admirably edited. I find unexpected richness in the book every time I open it." Indeed, that a work like this, avowedly denominational in its scope, should yet, by the sweetness of its tone and the catholicity of its spirit, win universal praise, is almost without a parallel in our literature.

The terrible conflagration at the Brooklyn Theatre December 5, 1876, was an event that called forth the profoundest sympathies of every class in the community. In obedience to a common impulse, the citizens at large promptly organized a Relief Association for the benefit of the surviving sufferers and the families of the deceased. From this was formed an executive committee, and Dr. Putnam, who had delivered the address at the burial, in one common grave, at Greenwood Cemetery, of the unrecognized dead, was appointed a member to represent the churches and charities of the city. His capacity for hard work, combined with a practical knowledge of affairs, brought him at once to the front. The special disbursement of the fund among the beneficiaries for whom it was intended largely devolved upon him. The burden was cheerfully and faithfully borne. It may afford some conception of the extent of his labors in this cause, if it be stated that the sums disbursed, mostly in small checks about once a week and covering a period of two years, amounted to nearly fifty thousand dollars, and that the families receiving aid,

all of whom required personal visitation, numbered one hundred and eighty-eight. At the close of the trust, Dr. Putnam was requested by his associates to draw up the final report. This he did; and its publication in the daily papers and in pamphlet form was followed by a popular verdict of approval as spontaneous and hearty as it was well-deserved.

One of the most interesting events of his life in Brooklyn was the celebration of the centennial anniversary of Dr. Channing's birth, April 7, 1880. It may well be deemed a landmark in the history of the Christian Church in America. Representatives of every denomination took part in its impressive ceremonies. To Dr. Putnam, who conceived, and, as chairman of the committee, carried out the novel arrangements for the occasion, it was truly a labor of love, for Channing's spirit and teachings were greatly instrumental in leading him into the ministry and are still very dear to his heart.

A memorial service in the evening, at the Academy of Music, presided over by Mr. A. A. Low, brought the exercises to a fitting close. It was a brilliant assemblage. Five thousand people, including men eminent in every walk of life, filled the auditorium. Henry Ward Beecher, George William Curtis, Rufus Ellis, Robert Collyer and others made addresses, in which the dawn of a new and better era of Christian fellowship was confidently proclaimed. Dr. Putnam published the unique proceedings in a volume, entitled "The Brooklyn Channing Celebration," containing the addresses and letters of sympathy from distinguished theologians and publicists in all parts of the world.

He has also published during his ministry a considerable number of his sermons in pamphlet form, such as those on the "Death of Rev. George Bradford," 1859; the "Life to Come," delivered in 1865 at the Cooper Institute in New York and afterwards printed as a tract by the American Unitarian Association; "Edward Everett," 1865; the "Freedom and Largeness of the Christian Faith," 1869; "Unitarianism in Brooklyn," a historical address, preached on the twenty-fifth anniversary of the dedication of the First Church edifice, 1869; the "Unitarian Denomination, Past and Present," 1870; "Broken Pillars," 1873; "Christianity, the Law of the Land," 1876; a "Tribute to the Memory of Mrs. Elizabeth Frothingham," 1877; "William Lloyd Garrison," 1879; "The Whole Family of God," 1884. Also biographical memorials of Mrs. Josiah O. Low and Mr. Ethelbert M. Low, 1884; and of Mr. and Mrs. Ephraim Buttrick, 1885.

For many years, and until he removed from Brooklyn, Dr. Putnam was a director of the Long Island Historical Society, and much of the time chairman of its executive committee, writing its annual reports for publication during the period of 1876–81, and giving to its interests, at all times and in full measure, a firm and loving support. He was also corresponding secretary and member of the invitation committee of the Brooklyn New England Society from the date of its organization, and at one of the annual dinners he gave an account of a visit made by him, in 1883, to Scrooby, the original seat of the Pilgrims in England.

In the line of historical investigation, which he pursued in intervals of leisure, *con amore*, we owe to his fruitful pen, strong articles, published in denominational and other magazines, on "Hosea Ballou," "A Visit to Haworth," "The Origin of Hymns," "Helen Maria Williams," "A Story of Some French Liberal Protestants," and "Paul's Four Great Epistles and his Visits to Jerusalem," etc. He also contributed one of the chapters in Judge Neilson's volume, "Memories of Rufus Choate."

Scores of extended articles in the *Danvers Mirror* on local history and traditions, running through a series of years, attest his fondness for this sort of literary work. Future historians will find in them a rich thesaurus of materials, historical, biographical and genealogical, carefully collated for their use.

In 1882, under the pressure of his long-continued and laborious pastorate, Dr. Putnam's health began to decline. His robust constitution could no longer resist the strain to which his multifarious cares and engagements subjected it. Promptly and affectionately, his church voted to give him a year's leave of absence, that he might revisit foreign shores, to continue to him his salary, and to supply his pulpit. He was also generously supplied with funds to defray his personal expenses abroad.

Removing his family for the year to Concord, Mass., the ancestral home of his wife, he sailed for Europe on his birthday, January 10, 1883. After a delightful winter in the south of France, where his restoration to health and to the natural elasticity of his spirits was, as he thought, assured, he visited London in May, and was a welcome guest at the Unitarian Conferences, then in session in the city. Here, before various bodies, he delivered several addresses, one of which, by special request, was on the Aspects of Unitarianism in America. Its decidedly conservative tone awakened at once a profound interest among his hearers, and at its close drew a running fire of criticism, for and against the positions assumed, from the eminent scholars and divines who were present. Subsequently, the discussion was taken up by the religious press, on both sides of the Atlantic, Dr. Putnam publishing trenchant articles in his own defence.

He sailed from Liverpool for home July 4, 1883. With some misgivings, confirmed indeed by medical advisers, he immediately returned to his pulpit, and re-assumed all the burdens his versatile talents had hitherto imposed upon him. The struggle, however, was in vain. His enfeebled constitution soon admonished him that a longer period of rest was imperatively necessary. Accordingly, early in April, 1886,

he resigned his pastoral office, with regretful sympathy on the part of the church he had so long and so faithfully served, and heartfelt sorrow on his own. A testimonial from his grateful parishioners, accompanied by the munificent gift of fifteen thousand dollars, fitly expressed their appreciation of his high character, and the esteem and affection in which they held him. Resolutions of similar import were passed by the other organizations with which he was officially connected; and the papers of the city made warm, eulogistic mention of his life and labors in Brooklyn.

The Long Island Historical Society generously put on record "the deep sense entertained by all its members of the value of the service which Dr. Putnam has cheerfully rendered it for many years, by his wise counsels, by his faithful and intelligent participations in its discussions, and his generous and efficient assistance in accomplishing its plans," Rev. Dr. Storrs, president, adding that "the highest regard and esteem of all the members of the board will follow Dr. Putnam to his future home, wherever that may be, with their best wishes for his speedy and complete restoration to health, and for his continued enjoyment and usefulness in the service which they do not doubt he will render elsewhere, as he has so signally rendered it here, to the cause of good letters, of historical enquiry, and of the best social culture."

The opening words of a *Brooklyn Eagle* editorial were as follows: "The resignation of the Rev. Dr. Putnam, of the First Unitarian Church, will occasion regret beyond the boundaries of the society. He has been a faithful and devoted pastor, and this implies a good deal in a term of service of twenty-two years, including, as it does, not merely the delivery of sermons, but the personal work which brings the minister into intimate relations with many people in the sharp crisis of life and death. Dr. Putnam, during that period, has been also an active and useful citizen, bearing an interested part in those public enterprises which in Brooklyn know no denominational lines. An unanimous expression of good will, with hearty hope for his restoration to health and his prosperity everywhere and at all times, will accompany him in his retirement."

The *Brooklyn Union* closed an article with this: "His name has been connected with many benevolent movements. He was an earnest worker for the Union for Christian Work, the Mission School and many other charitable enterprises. He was a conspicuous figure in helping to relieve the distress of those who were made widows and orphans by the destruction by fire of the Brooklyn Theatre. He also did much towards familiarizing people of all denominations with the life of Dr. Channing in the services which were held in his commemoration. Apart from his ministerial work Dr. Putnam has filled a large space in the public mind by his untiring labor in forwarding the great and growing interests of the city in which, as pastor and citizen, he has spent the best years of his life."

Rev. Almon Gunnison, D.D., pastor of the All Souls' (Universalist) Church, in Brooklyn, wrote to the *Christian Leader*, of Boston, of which paper he has long been the regular correspondent:

"We record with great sorrow the resignation of Rev. Dr. A. P. Putnam, the pastor of the First Unitarian Church in Brooklyn. He has had a long and triumphant pastorate of over twenty years, and gives up a successful work on account of ill-health. He has gone South, and it is expected that freedom from care and rest, will bring complete restoration. Dr. Putnam is well-known in our denomination, as he is of Universalist parentage, and has always been in thorough sympathy with our faith and the genius of our church. He has been outspoken in his utterances and fraternal in his fellowships. A preacher of large ability, a gentleman of noble instincts, he has been identified with every good work in the City of Churches, and his strong personality has counted for much in educational, philanthropic, reformatory and religious work. He has been the most helpful of yoke-fellows, ready always for neighborly service, quick in his sympathy in sickness, swift to speak the appreciative word and to do the kind act. His resignation will be regretted not only by his own people, but by all liberal believers, and, in fact, by all of every faith, who can appreciate the influence of a strong, sweet-souled, consecrated Christian worker."

Of the various biographical sketches of him which have appeared from time to time, and to which we have been greatly indebted for our materials here, we copy the following extract from J. Alexander Patten's "Lives of the Clergy of New York and Brooklyn," as showing his character as a preacher and his theological position:

"Dr. Putnam preaches with much effectiveness. There is great comprehension in his thought, and he is able to give expression to it in terms of rare conciseness, and not less of beauty. All that he says has this vigor of meaning and force of application, and much of it is delivered in the most classic and glowing picturings of eloquence. In his argument, he addresses himself to an elaborate and practical consideration of his subject, and you are led along with him, without tediousness, but rather allured by the attractive interweavings of a warm and chaste fancy. And herein is it that this gifted preacher excels. Your attention is instantly riveted by the smoothness of his periods and the elegance of sentiment which usher you to profound discussion and lofty imagery. He belongs to the Channing school of Unitarianism. Holding to his particular tenets with all the strength of his intellect and his love, he stands prominent among their ablest expounders, and in a pure, consistent life seeks their practical illustration before his fellow-men."

One of his sermons, delivered in Roxbury in 1861, at the outbreak of the civil war, on the Flag of our Country, has become widely known, and is published in text-books, as a model of fine diction and impassioned eloquence.

Dr. Putnam received his degree of D.D., from his *alma mater*, Brown University, in 1871.

In 1877 he was invited to become the pastor of the Unitarian Church in Quincy, Mass., but he declined the call. While in Roxbury he was elected president of the Unitarian Sunday-school Society. After his removal to Brooklyn he was made vice-president of the New York and Hudson River Unitarian Conference, and was also elected as its president, but the latter position he declined. For a time he edited the *Liberal Christian*, a Unitarian weekly paper, published in New York City. When, years ago, the project was on foot to remove the Meadville (Pa.) Theological School to Chicago, Ill., and there enlarge

and endow it, the leading man of the denomination who had charge of the enterprise asked Dr. Putnam to become president of the new institution, but the friends at Meadville could not be reconciled to the loss of the school, and the plan was therefore abandoned. Dr. Putnam was a member of the Century Club in New York, and also of the similar organization, of later origin, in Brooklyn, the Hamilton Club, as well as of the Brooklyn Art Associatian. He is also a member of the New England Historical and Genealogical Society, and of the American Historical Association.

In politics Dr. Putnam was an ardent Free-Soiler in old anti-slavery days, and often preached from the pulpit and spoke at political meetings in behalf of the slave and the cause of liberty. While a student in the Divinity School in 1854, he was sent, as a delegate from his native town, to the convention at Worcester that founded the Republican party and gave it its name. He has generally acted with that party since, but not seldom has on occasion assumed a more independent attitude.

In his pleasant retirement at Concord, whither he has again removed his family, he is now rapidly regaining his health. Surrounded by his books, and by many beautiful works of art which are the mementoes of loving friends, or which have been gathered by him in his extensive travels at home and abroad, he is devoting his leisure to favorite literary pursuits.

In person Dr. Putnam is tall and imposing. His well-proportioned form, his cultivated bearing, his classic, intellectual face in which strength and benignity combine, make him always a marked man among men.

His voice, sonorous and flexible in a high degree, is also wonderfully sympathetic. It can touch the tenderest chords of feeling, or express in thunder tones, as so often wont to do, hatred of wrong and oppression. The courage of his convictions is invincible. No man has hurled more scathing anathemas against intolerance, or held up to public scorn corruption in high places, more fearlessly than he. Courteous, affable, open-hearted, blessed with hosts of friends, he has preserved in its freshness and integrity, through all the vicissitudes of a laborious and useful life, the charming personality with which nature so richly endowed him.

Dr. Putnam was married to Miss Louise P. Preston, daughter of Mr. Samuel Preston, of Danvers, January 10, 1856. She died in June, 1860. For his second wife he married, in 1865, Eliza K. Buttrick, of Cambridge, daughter of Ephraim Buttrick, Esq., long a prominent member of the Middlesex bar. Their five children are Endicott Greenwood, Alfred Whitwell, Helen Langley, Ralph Buttrick and Margaret Ross.

JONAS WARREN.

The man whose portrait accompanies this short sketch, one of the best business men who ever lived in Danvers, was not a native of the town. His ancestor, Joshua Warren, emigrated from Dover, England, and settled in Watertown. Joshua's son, Daniel, married Rebecca, daughter of Captain Benjamin Church, the famous Indian fighter. Daniel had fifteen children, and one of his sons, Phinehas had a family of the same number, of whom five sons were in the battle of Bunker Hill. Phinehas' youngest son, Jonas, married, first, Apphia Stickney, and they were the parents of the subject of this sketch, who was born in North Beverly July 29, 1787. In his early boyhood the family moved to Boxford, and there, when he was still quite young, the mother died. He was brought up by his uncle, Ancil Stickney, and when he reached the age when young men struck out for themselves, he came to Danvers, and soon found a place of usefulness in the store kept by Deacon Gideon Putnam in his old tavern, which stood at the corner of High and Elm Streets. Before many years he bought the whole establishment of the late Judge Samuel Putnam, son of Deacon Gideon. "Jonas," said the judge, "here you will live and here you will die." Though the prophecy was not fulfilled as to his death, Mr. Warren did live many years, full of activity and thrift, on the old corner, and he built up there a business more extensive than can be easily appreciated at this time. Some days, a half a century ago, as many as forty great teams came into Danvers Plains from surrounding towns and far back into the country, to dispose of their produce and take back a season's load of staple groceries. It was chiefly Mr. Warren's fair treatment and broad and far-sighted manner of doing business that transformed a mere country cross-roads into a busy commercial centre. The amount of goods handled thus in the way of sale and barter was enormous, and it was no rare thing for clerks to be obliged to work till midnight, loading these teams, so that customers could start away bright and early in the morning. His policy was to offer such inducements that there was no object to farmers to carry their produce four miles farther to find a market in Salem, and, as a consequence, he and "Uncle Johnnie" Perley, on the opposite corner, so controlled the situation that Salem dealers often had to come to Danvers to buy at second-hand, and, of course, at the seller's price. In all this there was no trickery or meanness on the part of Mr. Warren. Mr. Joshua Silvester, just deceased, was in his early days a clerk in the old store, and a few weeks before his death he was speaking of Mr. Warren: "For an up and down square dealer he had no superior."

In 1841 Mr. Warren sold out at the Plains and removed to the Port, where he became the pioneer of the wholesale flour and grain business, entering into the larger field with the same energy and sagacity which had characterized his previous operations. He was the first to bring grain to this port by water, and from the cargoes of the many vessels in his employment he supplied a very extensive inland trade.



Jonas Warren



Samuel T Fowler

Mr. Warren was one of the earliest Unitarians of Danvers, and was always a steadfast supporter of that denomination. Long before the establishment of the church here, he regularly attended the church in North Beverly. Rev. E. M. Stone, long the pastor of that church, has written of Mr. Warren,—"He was a parishioner whose constant attendance on public worship greatly cheered my ministry. During the thirteen years of my pastorate there I do not recollect of his being absent from church for a single Sabbath, unless detained at home by sickness, and I do remember of his being present after heavy snow storms and before the roads were broken, when persons living near the church excused themselves from attendance for the same reason. He was an attentive hearer, a devout worshipper, and an unostentatious Christian believer." He was much interested in the building of Unity Chapel in this town, and attended there as long as advancing age would permit, contributing always liberally towards its support.

He married Hannah, daughter of Enoch Kimball, of Boxford. She died the year following Mr. Warren's removal to Danversport. Mr. Warren was himself nearly ninety years old when he died. The date of his death was November 18, 1876, and the place, the home which he built, now occupied by his only daughter, on High Street. Besides his daughter, two sons survived him—Aaron W. and the late Harrison O. Warren. Mr. Warren was a director of the Naumkeag National Bank of Salem from its organization to near the close of his life. He was the last survivor of New Mills Alarm List of 1814.

Though Mr. Warren kept aloof from politics, and rarely, if ever, held office, his business relations were such that scarcely any man was more widely known in the county. His strict integrity secured the confidence of all. He wronged no man intentionally, and his word could always be depended upon. In his family, too, he was just and kind, a true husband, a wise father. He left to this community the priceless example of the life of an honest man, and to his family the legacy of an unspotted name.

SAMUEL P. FOWLER.

Samuel Page Fowler was born in Danvers New Mills (now Danversport), April 22, 1800. His parents were Samuel Fowler and Clarissa (Page) Fowler. Among his ancestors are to be found the names of men, who, by their patriotism, military genius, business activity and enterprise commanded the respect of their contemporaries, and left their impress upon the times in which they lived.

The first of the name who came to this country was Philip Fowler, born in Wiltshire, England, in 1590, settled in Ipswich, 1634. Joseph, his son, born in 1629, married Martha Kimball. Philip, their son, born in Ipswich, December 25, 1648, was "a man of superior ability, and as a merchant, deputy-marshal and attorney, left a good record. He strongly opposed the witchcraft delusion, was employed as attorney by the Village Parish in its lawsuit with Mr. Parris, and in 1692 conducted the proceedings in Court against the head and front of the witchcraft prosecution." He married Elizabeth Herrick, daughter of Henry and Editha (Laskin) Herrick, and died 1715. Their son Joseph, born August 7, 1683, married Sarah Bartlett, died December 25, 1745. Joseph, born October 9, 1715, married Mary Prince, died February 1, 1807. Samuel, their son, left Ipswich in 1765 and became one of the pioneer settlers of "Danvers New Mills." A shipwright by trade he assisted in building many vessels, both before and after the Revolution, some of which he partly owned; he was a private in Captain Jeremiah Page's company, at the battle of Lexington. He married Sarah, daughter of Archelaus and Mehitable (Putnam) Putnam. Deacon Putnam, in the spring of 1754 moved a small building used as a cooper's shop from his father's farm, now known as the "Judge Putnam farm," by floating it down Crane River to the bank of the river at what is now Danversport. He fitted it up as a home for his family, and here his daughter Sarah was born, September 14, 1775. She was the first white child born in that part of the town, which was then covered with woods, where she was often lost when a child. She lived to see the small hamlet a prosperous village, and died in 1847, aged ninety-two years, having had six children, twenty-seven grand-children and sixty great-grand-children. Deacon Putnam built grist and chocolate mills near his house, which gave to this section of the town its name of New Mills.

Samuel Fowler, the son of Samuel and Sarah (Putnam) Fowler, was born in Danvers, September 15, 1776. He was a man of large enterprise and carried on the business of his grandfather, having a grist mill, a mill for pulverizing spices, as well as one for grinding bark, besides pursuing the occupation of a tanner. He died February 22, 1859. He married Clarissa Page, the daughter of Captain Samuel and Rebecca (Putnam) Page. "She was greatly endeared to a large circle of relatives and friends by her social and domestic virtues." She died April 14, 1854. Captain Samuel Page was the son of Colonel Jeremiah Page and Sarah (Andrews) Page, born in Danvers, August 1, 1753. "He enlisted in the cause of his country at the breaking out of the Revolutionary War, and was engaged in the battles of Lexington, Monmouth, and Stony Point. He was with Washington at the crossing of the Delaware, and in the severe winter of 1777 shared in the sufferings of the American army at Valley Forge, and he, with his company, was present when Wayne stormed Stony Point. After the close of the war he successfully engaged in commercial pursuits." He married Rebecca, the daughter of William and Elizabeth (Putnam) Putnam. William was a son of Lieutenant David Putnam (brother of General Israel Putnam) and Rebecca (Perley) Put-

nam. David was the son of Joseph and Elizabeth (Porter) Putnam. Joseph the son of Thomas Putnam and Mary Veren. Thomas was the son of John Putnam, 1st. Samuel Page's father, Colonel Jeremiah Page, was an officer in the Revolutionary War, and was the son of Samuel Page, who was the pioneer settler of Fitchburg, having been found there with his wife and family by the surveyors, sent out by the General Court, to lay out the town in 1719. Captain Page died in Danvers, September 2, 1814.

Descended from so worthy and patriotic an ancestry, we might reasonably expect that Mr. Fowler would inherit their many virtues and worthy traits of character, and in this we realize our expectations. In boyhood he attended the district school, where he read from the well-known books: "The Columbian Orator," and "American Preceptor," also "Jedediah Morse's Geography," then a popular reading book. He learned the rudiments of grammar from the "Young Ladies' Accidence," and mastered the difficulties of "Walsh's Popular Arithmetic," but the best advantages the town then furnished its children, were meagre when compared with those enjoyed by the youth of the present day.

New Mills at that time was the home of ship-owners and sea-captains, who, on their return from their voyages, would tell their listening townsmen of the lands they had visited, so that the boys of that period were made familiar with foreign countries and the characteristics of their inhabitants. Another factor which helped to develop a desire for knowledge and a taste for reading in the subject of this sketch, was the New Mills Social Library, formed in 1808, with the best books then to be found in the range of English literature, selected by Jeremiah Chaplin, D.D., pastor of the Baptist Church.

In the War of 1812 the inhabitants of Danvers shared in the excitement and the patriotic spirit of their more maritime neighbors, and Mr. Fowler, then a lad of twelve years, readily imbibed that love of country, and hatred of oppression, which he has shown through a long life.

He has always manifested a deep interest in everything pertaining to the welfare of the town, and has often been chosen to fill important offices, and to represent his fellow-citizens in many ways. Before the division of Danvers, he held the office of selectman and assessor from the years 1835 to 1840, was auditor in 1833, 1841 and 1842, moderator of town meeting in 1839, was a member of the school committee for seven years, and one of the board of health for three years. He was one of the fire-wards of the town upon the first organization of the fire department, and continued so for several years. He was elected representative to the General Court in the years 1837–38–39, and with the Rev. M. P. Braman and Hon. Alfred A. Abbott, represented the town in the Constitutional Convention held at Boston in 1853. He was one of the committee appointed to make arrangements for the celebration of the One Hundredth Anniversary of Danvers, on the 16th of June, 1852, and at the dinner on that occasion responded to the following toast: "The Women of Danvers in Revolutionary Times—like the staple manufacture of the town—firm, tough and well *tanned*, but *unlike* it, as they were not to be *trampled* upon."

He was, also, one of the trustees elected by the town to hold the surplus revenue funds, and one of the members of the first committee chosen to confer as to the best methods of introducing water into the town. But it is as overseer of the poor, a position which he still holds, that Mr. Fowler's tenure of office has been the longest, extending over a period of forty-four years, with only one year's exception, and a greater part of the time he has been chairman of the board. His knowledge of the poor-laws is complete and exhaustive, and his decisions are undisputed in the settlement of the many vexatious questions which arise in the administration of these laws. His faithfulness to the interests of the town, and his kindness and consideration to the poor have given him for many years the nomination of all parties. Although taking such an active part in all town matters, Mr. Fowler has never been a politician, was a member of the old Whig party, and has been a supporter of the Republican party since its formation.

He was one of the trustees of the Peabody Institute, appointed by Mr. George Peabody, served as a member of the building committee, and upon the resignation of Rev. M. P. Braman, was chosen president of the board of trustees, which office he held till March, 1879. At the present time he is chairman of the committee on buildings and grounds, and in connection with Mr. Joshua Sylvester, has done much toward the laying out and beautifying of the park about the Institute, making it one of the most attractive places in the town. He has also been chairman of the lecture and library committee, and in the latter capacity gave much time and thought to the selection of those books which would instruct and elevate their readers, and cultivate in them a desire for useful knowledge, having the experience gained by many years of reading and study, to help him in this work. From his youth he has shown a great taste for natural history, and during his long life has been a close observer of nature, in all her varied forms. By constant observation and study, he made himself thoroughly conversant with the notes and habits of our native birds, and contributed a series of most interesting and instructive articles to the *New England Farmer*, on "The Birds of New England." A lover of flowers, he has always taken great pleasure in their cultivation, and has had equal success with plants from widely separated localities, so that in his garden the variously-tinted blossoms of our woods and fields grow side by side with the more gorgeous flowers of China and Japan. Nor is he selfish in the enjoyment of his garden, but freely gives its treasures to all—

from the little child, who timidly asks for a few flowers, to the learned botanist, who solicits specimens for analysis. It has been his pleasure for many summers to arrange a bouquet each week for the church, and the ladies of the Parish showed their appreciation of this work by presenting him with a beautiful engraving. He has not devoted his attention exclusively to the cultivation of flowers, but has also studied the characteristics of our native trees and shrubs. The results of his close observation in this direction are apparent in various articles written by him on our "Native Trees and Shrubs," published in the *New England Farmer*, in which he shows himself a nice and accurate observer in this department of nature. He has carefully noted the habits of the various insects injurious to vegetation, and in an essay read before the Essex County Agricultural Society, gives many valuable suggestions as to the best methods of destroying the numerous insects, which infest the orchards and gardens of the county. Possessing these tastes it might be expected that when the Essex County Natural History Society was formed, Mr. Fowler would be one of its first members. He is now the only one living of the founders of this organization. At its fiftieth anniversary, held at Topsfield, in June, 1884, he was present, and in an address delivered on that occasion, alluding to the first meeting of the society, says: "After dinner a stroll was taken in the woods and fields, and among the plants gathered was a fine specimen of Blood Root (*Sanguinaria Canadensis*) which was taken up with a spade, and upon our return it was placed in the middle of the table, with a newspaper under it, when we pledged ourselves to sustain the Essex County Natural History Society, and promote its interests." When the Essex Institute was formed by the Union of the Essex Historical and Essex County Natural History Societies in 1848, he was chosen curator of Natural History, and vice-president in that department in 1861, and remained so for several years; he was also on the Field committee as early as 1857.

Fond of historical research, the rich field of his town, county and State has furnished him abundant material, so that he has not his equal as a local historian, and has given especial time and thought to the study of the witchcraft delusion, and the causes which led to its origin and continuance. He has published an "Account of the Life and Character of the Rev. Samuel Parris, of Salem Village, and of his Connection with the Witchcraft Delusion of 1692," and edited an edition of "Salem Witchcraft, by Robert Calef, published by H. P. Ives and A. A. Smith, in 1861." He has also made a large manuscript collection bearing upon this subject, copied from the church and court records of that period. Upham, in speaking of Philip Fowler, of Ipswich, and the bold stand taken by him in 1692 against the decisions of the clergy and magistrates, says: "It is an interesting circumstance that one of the same name and descent, in his reprint of the papers of Calef, and other publications, has done as much as any other person of our day to bring that whole transaction under the light of truth and justice." It is largely due to his research and interpretation of Mr. Parris' conduct in the affair, that has led to a more favorable construction of the motives which actuated him and the neighboring clergy in their treatment of those persons accused of practising witchcraft. Mr. Fowler has published in the Historical Collections of the Essex Institute the following articles: "Journal of Captain Samuel Page, in the Campaign of 1779, with Notes;" "Biographical Sketch and Diary of Rev. Joseph Green, an Account of the Life of Rev. Peter Clark and Rev. Benjamin Wadsworth, Ministers of Salem Village," (now Danvers Centre); "Records of Overseers of the Poor of the Old Town of Danvers for the years 1767 and 1768, by the Chairman of the Board, Captain Elisha Flint, with Notes." "Craft's Journal of the Siege of Boston, with Notes."

He is thoroughly conversant with the early history of the town, and often contributes to the columns of the local paper articles full of historical facts, which will yield a rich harvest to the town's future historian.

He became a member of the New England Historic Genealogical Society, in Boston, in 1862. His literary work has been performed in the midst of his regular occupations, for Mr. Fowler learned the trade of a tanner, and carried on the business in the same establishment formerly owned and occupied by his father, on Porters river.

He was one of the corporators of the Danvers Savings Bank, incorporated in 1850, and one of its first trustees; he was also actively engaged in the formation of the First National Bank, and has been one of its directors since 1863. He was admitted to Jordan Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons, March 26, 1823, and is at present an honorary member, and one of the oldest masons in the State.

He has always shown a deep interest in the temperance cause, more especially before it became so intimately connected with the political questions of the day. At the annual meeting of the old town of Danvers, on the 4th of March, 1833, the subject of intemperance in the town being under consideration, an order and vote to be presented to the moderator was drawn up by J. W. Proctor, Esq., instructing the selectmen to prohibit the sale of intoxicating liquors in the town, which vote was presented to the meeting by Mr. Fowler, who is now the only one living of that band of temperance workers, who, in one of the square pews in the brick meeting-house at the Centre, conferred together as to the best means to arrest the drunkenness in their community. The passing of this vote made Danvers the first town in the State that took action in its corporate capacity against licensing the sale of intoxicating liquors, and it has ever since maintained the same position. Before the general awakening of the public mind to the subject,

Mr. Fowler was keenly alive to the fact that our burial-places were neglected and unattractive, and it was largely through his efforts, and that of his brother, Mr. Henry Fowler, that a tract of land was purchased to be laid out as a cemetery, and the Walnut Grove Cemetery Corporation formed, of which he has been president for many years.

In the year 1832, he joined the First Church during the pastorate of the Rev. M. P. Braman. When the Maple Street Church was organized in 1844, he became one of the original members, was chosen one of its first deacons, which office he still holds, and has ever been mindful of all that concerned the temporal and spiritual welfare of the church. He was a member of the building committee to erect the first meeting-house, and when this new and beautiful edifice was destroyed by fire only a few years after its completion, he was one of the members who bravely took up the work of building the present house of worship. He has been clerk of the parish for more than thirty years, and the distinctly written pages of this record will be a pleasure to the society's future historian. Before his advanced years he was a constant attendant upon the prayer-meetings of the church, contributing to their interest by his words of instruction and wisdom, and was for many years an efficient Sunday-school teacher.

Although in his eighty-eighth year, Mr. Fowler possesses the physical and mental activity of a man of much younger years, filling with acceptance and fidelity the various offices bestowed upon him by his townsmen. The reading of his favorite books, the cultivation of his garden are as great sources of pleasure to him as they ever were, and his interest is unabated in whatever concern the public goods.

The record of such a life shows what a man can accomplish for himself and others by habits of industry and patient thought, combined with a desire for the best good of those who are associated with him as fellow-citizens. The public favors he has received have not been obtained at the sacrifice of truth and honor, for in all things he has shown himself an honest man, just and upright in his dealings with others.

Mr. Fowler was married December 3, 1833, to Harriet Putnam (who was born in Danvers, May 11, 1806) daughter of Moses and Betsey Putnam. Like her husband, she retains in a remarkable degree her youthful feelings, possessing those virtues which make her a devoted wife, a good mother and an earnest Christian.

Their children are, (1) Clara Putnam, born March 20, 1836, married November 25, 1856, George E. DuBois, of Randolph, Mass., who died November 3, 1859; their child, Ellen Tucker, born December 16, 1857, married, April 22, 1886, Nathan Putnam Proctor, of Danvers; they have a son born June 7, 1887. (2) Samuel Page, Jr., born December 6, 1838. (3) Harriet Putnam, born July 25, 1842.

CHARLES LAWRENCE.

Mr. Lawrence was among the thirteen children of Abel and Abigail (Page) Lawrence, of Salem, Mass. He was descended in the seventh generation from John Lawrence, of Wisset, England, who came to this country and first settled at Watertown, but removed to Groton in 1662, where he died.

The subject of this notice was born October 7, 1795, and was graduated at Harvard University in the class of 1815.

About 1833 he married Miss Lucy A. Ward, sister of Thomas Ward, the banker of Boston. Delicate health prevented him from studying a profession or entering upon a business career. He made several voyages to India in early life, and spent a winter or two in the West Indies and Florida to combat dangerous symptoms of lung disease.

With his brother and sisters he afterwards left Salem and established a home upon what was then known as the Phillips Farm, Danvers. There for nearly forty years Mr. Lawrence resided and found occupation in open air pursuits, which no doubt were the means of prolonging to eighty-four years a life which was never robust. Gardening was a favorite occupation, and he had a passion for flowers, which always flourished under his care.

Combined with these pursuits was a love of literature, which did not fail him while life lasted.

Though mixing little with the world, he was always acquainted with the best and newest books, and wholly alive to the political questions of his time.

In November, 1820, he was made a member of the Salem East India Marine Society, and was elected corresponding secretary January, 1828, remaining in that position till January, 1838. He was also an original member of the Essex Institute, and through life he felt a strong interest in the welfare and success of that society.

A warm friend, a kind neighbor, a genial and pleasant companion; his charity to the unfortunate was only fully known to the many recipients of his benevolence. He died December 21, 1879.

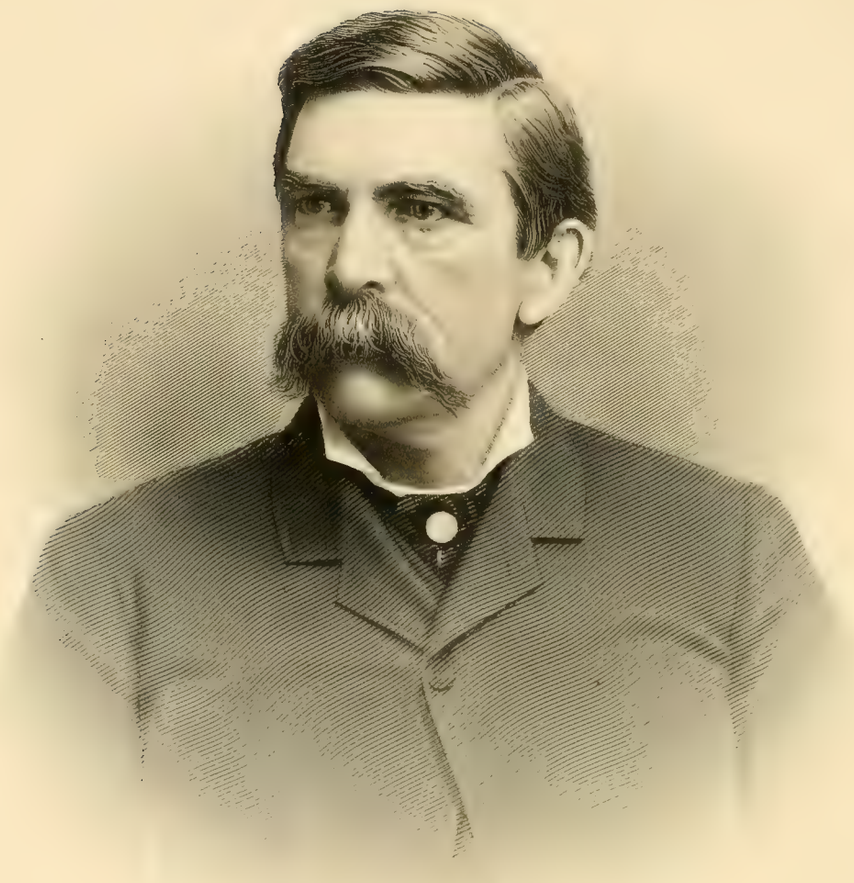
GENERAL GRENVILLE M. DODGE.[1]

Essex County has given birth to but few more remarkable men than General Grenville M. Dodge, now, and for many years, resident at Council Bluffs, Iowa. Perhaps no one of her sons has wrought a wider, and more varied and important public service than has he. He is not yet an old man, but is still in his prime, and is as active and busy as ever. Yet, as civil engineer, military commander, member of Congress, projector of many of the great railroad enterprises of the West and Southwest for the last thirty years or more, and as president or director of most of the companies established to forward and

[1] By Rev. A. P. Putnam.



Charles Lawrence



C. W. Dodge

complete these vast works of internal improvement and national development, he has done quite enough for fame, and quite enough to entitle him to the lasting gratitude and honor of his country. The story of his career, however much it has to do with practical matters, is yet invested with a wonderfully romantic interest, and we are glad to learn that a more extensive biography of him than we can give here, or than has ever been written of him, is in course of preparation by Mr. N. E. Dawson, of Washington, for a large, voluminous work to be entitled, "Iowa in the War." To Mr. Dawson's kindness we are indebted for some of the advance sheets of his full and excellent sketch, from which we have culled many of the facts of our hero's maturer life.

General Dodge is a native of Danvers, Mass., and was born April 12, 1831, in a farm-house which was situated a short distance south of the Topsfield line, and which was then the home of the family of Elias Putnam, who was himself born there more than forty years before, as stated elsewhere in this volume. Israel Putnam, the father of Elias, having removed his household, about the beginning of the century, several miles down the road, the premises were let to Captain Solomon Dodge, who had lived in Rowley, Mass., and was a descendant of one of the two brothers of the name who early emigrated from England, and settled in Essex County. There came with Solomon a son, Sylvanus, who had been born, November 25, 1800, at the old Rowley home, in what has long been known as the "Old Dodge House." Not long after the family had taken possession of their new quarters, the mother of Sylvanus died, and by and by, it is said, the surviving members returned to the ancestral seat whence they came. The son was married, November 22, 1827, at New Rowley (now Georgetown), by Rev. Dr. Isaac Braman, to Julia T. Phillips, who was born in that town January 23, 1802. The same evening the nuptial pair rode to Danvers, to enter there upon their early wedded life on the farm where the husband had lived as a little child, and in an L which the Putnams, who had themselves long before returned to the place, had attached to the northern side of the house. Their first child was born to them September 23, 1829, but died about two weeks afterward. The second was born April 12, 1831, as we have said, and received the name that had been given to the other, Grenville M. Dodge. He first saw the light in the chamber of the L to which reference has been made, and which, many years later, was detached from the main part of the building and removed to a point about an eighth of a mile further south, on the other side of the road, where it was enlarged, and has since been tenanted by various families. The Dodges remained on the farm about six years, and then went to Rowley, where they lived for a year or two, at the expiration of which time they returned to their Danvers abode, which Mr. Putnam and family had recently left to fix their home two miles below, in the old house now occupied by Augustus Fowler. While Sylvanus Dodge and his family came back to live again in one part of the farm-house, there came from Wenham, Benjamin Dodge and his family to dwell in the other. Sylvanus was then a butcher, and many of the present inhabitants of the town will recall his regular visits at their doors, as, arrayed in his clean white frock, he rode about in his well-covered and amply-supplied wagon and ingratiated himself into the favor of his patrons by his genial spirit and honest dealing. The slaughter-house was a barn which stood at the foot of the hill, a little distance north of the house, where there is now, if there was not then, a beautiful grove. Long afterward it was moved to the plains, and then again outside of the village, where it was finally burnt.

The second sojourn of Mr. Sylvanus Dodge and his family upon the farm continued for only about one year. Thence they proceeded to Salem, where also they spent a couple of years, and next went to Lynn, where they remained one year, living during the twelve-month in three different houses. In April, 1837, they found a home in South Danvers, now Peabody, where, August 20, of the same year, was born a third child, Nathan P. Dodge. In 1840 they removed to the north part of the old town, and settled for a time in Tapleyville, the native place of their fourth and last child, Julia M. Dodge, now Mrs. J. B. Beard, born January 14, 1843. During their stay at Tapleyville, Mr. Dodge was made postmaster for South Danvers, and accordingly returned thither with his wife and children, and there continued to reside until they all emigrated to the distant West. He held the office to which he was thus appointed for ten years, and through various changes in the national administration, securing the confidence and favor of both political parties and of his fellow-citizens generally. In politics he was a Democrat, and was an active and earnest friend of such men as Robert Rantoul, Jr., N. P. Banks and George S. Boutwell. In due time he came to be much interested in the organization of the Republican party, and was henceforth to the end of his life its sincere and efficient supporter.

Grenville, the eldest of the three living children, sought his fortunes in the West as early as 1851. Between the ages of ten and sixteen he had worked at gardening, had been employed as a clerk in a store, had attended the common schools, and had also improved his leisure hours in fitting himself for college. He entered the Military University at Norwich, Vt., in 1847, and there completed his course of education just before he set out to seek his fortunes in a more distant part of the country. He first settled in Peru, Illinois, as a civil engineer. He participated in the construction of the Chicago and Rock Island, and Peoria and Bureau Valley Railroads; and in 1853 he was appointed assistant engineer of the Mississippi and Missouri Railroad of Iowa, now the Chicago, Rock Island and Pacific Line. In the same year,

having removed to Iowa City, he explored and examined the country west of the Missouri, and became convinced that the great Pacific Railway would have its starting point where it now is, at Council Bluffs, or Omaha, on the Missouri river. At Council Bluffs, therefore, he decided to fix his permanent residence. He had married Miss Annie Brown, of Peru, Ill., at Salem, Mass., May 29, 1854, and in the following November he left Iowa City, where his brother Nathan from the East had already joined him, for his future home, accompanied by his wife. During the same month he made a claim, and opened a farm in the Territory of Nebraska, on the Elkhorn river, occupying it in February, 1855, but staying there only six months, the Indians driving him away, and obliging him to return with his family to Council Bluffs.

Early in 1855 his father, Sylvanus Dodge, went on from South Danvers, followed in the autumn by the mother. They lived, in the winter of 1855–56, at Omaha, which the reader will remember is on the western bank of the Missouri, directly opposite Council Bluffs on the eastern; and in May, 1856, they, too, sought a home on the Elkhorn, but at the expiration of eighteen months they returned to be with Grenville, and Council Bluffs has been the home of the family from then until now. The father had taken an active part in settling the territory and organizing the government of Nebraska, and was subsequently made the Register of the United States Land Office for the district where he had lived. He died about sixteen years ago, surrounded by his wife, children and grandchildren, and greatly respected and beloved by all who knew him, while his last days were made happy with the thought that, after all the toils and struggles, changes and pilgrimages of seventy years, his household was finally established in a secure home, and had risen to prominence and prosperity.

Grenville, after his return from the Elkhorn to Council Bluffs, in 1855, busied himself for several years in civil engineering, banking, real estate and mercantile business. He was active and influential in advancing the interests of the rising town, and organized for it a military company, known as "The Council Bluffs Guards." He was chosen its captain, and at the breaking out of the war he tendered the services of this company to the Governor of the State, as the nucleus of the First Iowa Infantry. The Governor deemed it best that this organization should remain where it was, in order to protect the exposed western frontier border; but accepted the individual services of Captain Dodge himself, and sent him to Washington to arrange for the arming and equipping of the Iowa troops. The result was that Captain Dodge, gaining the confidence and favor of Mr. Cameron, Secretary of War, was remarkably successful in his mission, and at once returned to raise the Fourth Iowa Infantry Regiment, of which he was duly commissioned as the colonel, and also the Second Iowa Battery, which took his own name. With this command he marched, in July, 1861, to Northwestern Missouri, and drove out thence a considerable force of insurgents, who were under the lead of Poindexter. During the next month he reported with his regiment and battery to General Fremont at St. Louis, and, in October, was ordered by him to the frontier post at Rolla, Mo., where he was placed in command. At the head of the Fourth Brigade of the Army of the Southwest, he advanced upon Springfield, in the same State, and captured it. Pursuing the enemy southward, he led the advance, was in the engagements at Cane and Sugar Creeks, in February, 1862, and on the 27th of the same month, defeated Gates at Blackburn's Mills, Ark. He bore a very prominent part, and stubbornly met the very brunt of war, in the famous battle of Pea Ridge, where the rebel power was broken in Missouri and North Arkansas. Here he had three horses shot under him, and was severely wounded; and for his gallantry in this fight he was made brigadier-general, at the request of Major-General Halleck, who had succeeded Fremont in charge of the Western Department. After recovering from his wounds he reported by telegraph to the War Department, and was assigned to the command of the District of Columbus, Ky. Soon after receiving this appointment, he accomplished with great vigor and success the rebuilding of the Mobile and Ohio Railroad, which had been wholly destroyed by the rebels, and then, in June, he had a sharp skirmish with a body of the enemy, handling his forces with such skill and effect as to call forth the hearty commendation of both Halleck and Quimby. In further recognition of these services, he was honored with the command of the Central Division of the Mississippi, with headquarters at Trenton, Tenn. While here his troops captured various towns, and defeated Villipigne on the Hatchee river, after which his command was enlarged, and his headquarters were again established at Columbus. He signalized his return to this post by another signal victory, capturing General Faulkner and his forces near island No. 10, and taking many prisoners.

In the autumn of 1862, immediately after the battle of Corinth, he was charged with the Second Division of the Army of the Tennessee, in the district organized and commanded by General Grant. Perhaps it was here that began the strong friendship which, for so many years, has subsisted between our hero and the great chieftain. General Dodge was soon assigned to the command of the District of Corinth. In the spring of 1863 he defeated the Confederate forces under Forrest and other conspicuous rebel officers. He raised and equipped large numbers of colored troops. His education and experience as a civil engineer proved of invaluable service to him and the cause in rebuilding the railroads destroyed by the enemy. But he knew how to smash things as well as to repair them, as when he shortly conducted the im-

portant campaign up the Tennessee Valley to the neighborhood of Decatur, in the rear of Bragg's army, breaking up its connections and cutting off and wasting its supplies, and aiding in the rout and destruction of that general's forces. The Confederate government estimated the stores and property of various kinds which he thus destroyed at many millions of dollars. On July 5, 1863, he was appointed to command the left wing of the Sixteenth Army Corps, with headquarters at Corinth, Miss. In connection with a movement from Vicksburg, he made a raid on Grenada, of that State, which drove the enemy south of the place, and resulted in the capture of an immense number of cars and locomotives. While at the head of the Sixteenth Army Corps he joined General Sherman in his march to Chattanooga, and wintered with his men on the line of the Nashville and Decatur Railroad. "He is an able officer," wrote Grant to Sherman, "one whom you can rely upon in an emergency." And the reliance was to be on his skill and energy as an engineer, as well as on his sagacity and prowess as a warrior. Grant could not subsist his forces at Chattanooga except as the Nashville and Decatur Railroad should be rebuilt; and this herculean task was fulfilled by General Dodge with amazing despatch and efficiency. Within about forty days he reconstructed and completed the whole line, including one hundred and eighty-three bridges, trestles and other structures, while in the same period he captured Decatur, Ala., with all its garrison, in a well-planned night attack. In the spring of 1864 he was entrusted with the advance of the Army of the Tennessee, one of the three armies consolidated for the Atlanta campaign. As the mighty host moved forward, Dodge drove back the enemy on their railway at Resaca, and participated in the battle at that place a few days later. He repulsed a dangerous night attack of the foe at Nickajack Creek, Dallas, and it was his men who reached nearest the rebel lines on the crest of Kenesaw Mountain. At Ruff's Mills he defeated a strong force from General Hood's Corps, and shortly afterward constructed, with his usual lightning speed and wonderful skill, a substantial double-track bridge across the Chattahoochee, seventeen hundred feet long and twelve feet high, over which the entire Army of the Tennessee, with all its trains and artillery, marched with safety. For his brave and faithful and effective services in this campaign he was made major-general by the government at Washington. When the Confederates under General Hood made the fierce attack under which McPherson fell mortally wounded, Dodge's corps bore the brunt of the encounter, and through his skill and intrepidity, rescued the Army of the Tennessee and turned the tide of battle, capturing eight flags and a very large number of prisoners. Says a competent authority: "It was one of the fiercest-fought contests of the whole war. It is not too much to say that here, as at Pea Ridge, General Dodge saved the Union army from terrible disaster. Riding rapidly up and down his lines, he encouraged his men to hold their ground or die in the attempt. This corps was in all the battles in the march to Atlanta, and no one, in proportion to its size, in the whole consolidated army, lost so many killed and wounded."

During the siege of Atlanta General Dodge was himself again wounded, receiving a gun-shot in the forehead while he was standing in the rifle-pit on the skirmish line, superintending an advance. This was on the 19th of August, 1864. The writer of this sketch contributed some account of the hero and this peril to his life, together with a narrative of occurrences that took place immediately afterward, to the *Danvers Mirror*, in 1877; and the following extract from his communication may not be amiss here:

"The papers, I remember, reported him killed, and some of them gave obituary notices of him, which the general must have read some time afterward with a lively interest. Our sorrow was, however, soon turned to joy, for it was soon announced that he was not dead, but was still living and would doubtless recover. In his weakened condition he was granted a furlough, and took the opportunity to visit his friends at the East and there recruit his strength. I met him on his way to Boston, on board one of the Sound steamers. It had been many years since I had seen him, but I readily recognized him among the passengers who swarmed the deck, and we had a long chat about the recent occurrences, and the great events of the war, and about old personal friends and associations. I told him that Edward Everett was to speak on the afternoon of the next day at Faneuil Hall, in advocacy of the re-election of Abraham Lincoln, and that he ought certainly to be present. He said he had never heard Mr. Everett, and expressed a desire and purpose to be there. On our arrival at the Parker House early the next morning, I looked into the first-issued papers and ascertained who were the committee of arrangements for the meeting. The notices made mention of various distinguished men who were expected to grace the occasion, but the name of General Dodge was not in the list, for none knew of his coming. I immediately despatched a messenger to one of the committee, and informed him that General Dodge had just arrived in town. The general was speedily waited upon and invited to a place on the platform, with other eminent men, at the approaching meeting. The hour of assembling came at length, and I was with the crowd on the floor. By and by the long line of State and city officials, and of the gifted sons of Massachusetts who usually surrounded the matchless orator whenever he spoke in public there in Boston, began to file up from below and to appear upon the stage, where they seated themselves as best they could. The general was there, occupying a place at the left of the speaker and near the front of the platform, and arrayed, like certain other army officers who were with him, in his military costume.

Charles G. Loring presided, and in his opening and well-prepared address, referred to some of the renowned heroes of the war and friends of the country. I doubt whether he knew that General Dodge was close at hand. Certainly the thousands before him did not. But Mr. Everett did, and I shall never forget the thrilling effect which his words and action produced, when, on being presented to the vast multitude, he came forward in his most spirited, yet ever graceful manner, and said, with eloquent voice, that the chairman had given us the names of not a few who had deserved well of the nation, and whom they all delighted to honor, but he had forgotten to mention one who was present with them, who was fresh from the battle-fields, and who could tell us that all was well at the seat of war—*Major-General Dodge, of the Army of the West.* The enthusiasm was very great, and cries immediately came from all parts of the hall —"Dodge!" "Dodge!" "Dodge!" until the modest soldier was obliged to rise and allow himself to be seen of the assembled thousands. The applause that greeted him was simply tremendous, and the scene which was there witnessed, as the Western warrior with his ghastly wound, and the polished and silver-tongued orator of the East, stood side by side before the excited multitude, only lacked one thing to make it beggar all description. A master of the art like Mr. Everett could not fail at such a moment. "Yes! fellow-citizens," he exclaimed, with deepening emotion and ringing tones, as he pointed his quivering finger at the brow of the hero—"Yes, fellow-citizens, and wearing upon his forehead honorable scars, which he gained while imperiling his life in the defence of the Union!" This was the needed climax, and it was perfect. I think I do not say too much when I add that what I have here described was the most interesting and inspiring incident of the occasion, and I felt quite satisfied with the success of my little plan, and the reception which was extended to the Danvers soldier boy. The honors which were showered upon him a few days later, in his native town and its vicinity, your readers all remember."

Concerning the terrible wound which the general had received, a writer said: "The ball struck the forehead at the upper edge over the left eye, tore off a portion of the scalp, and then, passing backwards, tore a gutter two or three inches in length through the scalp. The skull is not fractured, though it received a severe stroke. He was immediately conveyed to his quarters, where he now lies. He will be sent North as soon as practicable."

As soon as he was again fit for duty, General Dodge once more reported to General Sherman, who thought he was still too weak to continue the great march to the sea, and President Lincoln, at the instance of General Grant, assigned him to the Department of the Missouri, where he relieved General Rosecranz. The national troops in Missouri had become quite demoralized, and the State was run over by guerillas and marauders. General Dodge brought order out of anarchy, notwithstanding he had been called upon to send the great body of his organized troops to General Thomas at Nashville, who, by this timely aid, was all the more enabled to win the glorious victory he gained immediately afterwards. At the same time, Kansas and Utah were merged into his command, adding greatly to his cares and responsibilties. Winter had come, and the States and Territories which were entrusted to him were vast in extent; yet he set in motion the fresh forces he had raised from the loyal men in each county, broke up the bands of guerillas and marauders, and compelled the Indians, who were warring on the settlements from the Red River of the North to the Red River of Texas, to sue for peace. He received the surrender of four thousand of Kirby Smith's army in Missouri and of the Confederate General Jefferson Thompson, with eight thousand officers and men in Arkansas. His experience and observations in these parts of the country led him to advocate the handing over of the Indian tribes to the War Department, to be treated as wards of the nation and as no longer independent and treaty-making powers.

Of the military merit and the patriotic services of this gallant and battle-scarred soldier of the Union, it is meet that we should here let those testify who have been most competent to judge and from whose words there is no appeal. Among them are the greatest of the generals and not a few of the war Governors and other illustrious leaders of the nation's cause, to say nothing of the concurrent and unanimous voice of subordinate officers and privates in the armies which he commanded. He continuously and abundantly shared the trust and admiration of General Grant, through whose influence or direct appointments he was repeatedly promoted to higher positions and honors, as has already been sufficiently indicated. Their strong friendship for each other remained unbroken, and is a matter of history. Ex-Governor Noyes, of Ohio, himself a maimed and noble veteran of the war, says: "We all regarded General Dodge as one of the best officers of the army, —a man of great practical, common sense, of distinguished gallantry, of a patriotic spirit and of military genius." General Sherman writes: "General Dodge is one of the generals who actually fought throughout the Civil War with great honor and great skill, commanding a regiment, brigade, division, and finally a *corps d'armée*, the highest rank command to which any officer can attain." General Sheridan acknowledges the timely and effective aid he received from him while he himself was chief quartermaster and chief commissary, and says that he "did splendidly" at Pea Ridge, and was "spoken of by officers and men of the army in the very highest terms." Governor Kirkwood, of Iowa, writes: "General Dodge is one of the very best military men from this State. He is emphatically a fighting man. There is not a

more gallant soldier in the army, nor one more worthy or capable." Said the excellent Senator Grimes: "There are very few officers the equal, and none the superior, of General G. M. Dodge, of this State, now and for a long time in command at Corinth, Miss. He has always been selected for the most responsible posts, and has always filled the highest expectations formed of him." Judge Dillon, the eminent jurist, testifies: "No officer in the service from Iowa has acquired more just and deserved distinction; no one has been more faithful, and I may and should add, more useful and efficient;" and in the same connection he speaks of "his great experience, his sleepless vigilance, his unconquerable energy, and, above all, his solid judgment and great practical talents." Major General Oglesby, anxious to serve the country's best interests, urged on President Lincoln his nomination as major general, saying: "I know of no officer at this time more deserving, nor of any who seeks the honor less. I am willing to be held reponsible for his official acts." But it is not necessary to proceed further with such tributes, which might easily be multiplied to whatever extent.

Another momentous service was entered upon by General Dodge after the war was ended. Soon after he first went to the West, and while yet a youth, he wrote to his father a prophetic letter, which was published in the local paper in his native town, and in which he indicated a plan or route for a transcontinental railway. It was a cherished dream which one day he was to see realized, and that, too, very largely through his own instrumentality. To this end, extensive surveys and reconnoissances were made by him as early as between the years 1853 and 1858. The Union Pacific Railroad was chartered by the United States Government, July 1, 1862, and the next year the first regular organization was effected, General John A. Dix being elected President. Other surveyors were in the field, and the work was in process of construction during the war. When the bloody conflict was well over, General Dodge was unanimously chosen by the directory as the chief engineer of the line. This was on the 1st of May, 1866. The service was most congenial to him, and he readily accepted it, General Sherman, who was in command of the vast department beyond the Mississippi, yielding his consent as General Dodge resigned for the purpose his commission in the army. The latter entered upon his new undertaking with all his accustomed courage and zeal, and "organized a systematic exploration of the country from the Arkansas River on the South to the Sweet Water on the North, and developed the country with preliminary lines from the mouth of the Lodge Pole through to the California State line." His judgment, long years before, as to the best practicable route for the road, was confirmed by these fresh and extensive surveys, and the Union Pacific of to-day follows very nearly the line which he himself was the first to mark out.

Scarcely had he begun thus to superintend this colossal enterprise, when his grateful and admiring fellow-citizens in Iowa, while he was absent from home, nominated him, in July, 1866, as representative to Congress. Although he had been and still was an ardent Republican, and had been a warm friend and supporter of President Lincoln and other great men of the party, it would have been strange if his name should have failed to win the sympathy and favor of men of other political associations. Consenting to be a candidate, he was triumphantly elected by about five thousand majority over a very popular competitor; but after serving for a single term at Washington, he declined to allow his name to be used again in this connection, choosing rather to return to a more uninterrupted, personal supervision of his responsible and gigantic interests and cares in the West. As a member of the National House of Representatives, he served on the Committee on Military Affairs, secured the reimbursement of Iowa for her expenses during the war, gave special attention to the re-organization of the army and to the defence of the border against the Indians, and advocated the claims of the Union Pacific Road upon the country's favor and support. He was not a frequent speaker on the floor; but whenever he felt called upon to address the house, his words were pertinent and weighty, and were listened to with marked attention. Yet his influence was more particularly exercised in a practical direction, and his exceptionally large and intimate acquaintance with military matters and with the immense Territories of the West, with all their native tribes and boundless resources and capabilities, enabled him to be a most valuable counsellor and helper in many important questions of legislative or governmental action.

From May, 1866, until May, 1869, the corps of engineers under the direction of General Dodge had run not less than fifteen thousand miles of instrumental lines and made as many as twenty-five thousand miles of reconnoissances, so as thoroughly to develop the country and determine the location of the road. Impressive or astonishing as may seem the bare statement, it yet fails to give any adequate idea of the toil and the hardships that were endured, and the difficulties and perils that were overcome, in this three years' service. The engineers were frequently exposed, not only to severe inclemencies of the weather and to much scarcity of food and water, but also and especially to the hostility of the Indians, whose roving bands or more formidable organized forces beset them and threatened them from beginning to end. Nothing could be done without the protection of troops; but even with this safeguard, members of the corps were often killed, and their parties dispersed. Again and again General Dodge and his men were obliged to give battle to these wily and savage foes, and rout them, and pursue them to a distance, so that the work could go on. It was not

alone that his explorers and surveyors had to find their hazardous way across streams, and through forests, and along deep valleys, and over high mountains, and amidst heavy falls of rain or snow; but at every point the location of the line had to be determined, with the utmost scientific skill, with reference to the extraordinary natural features of the territory, its climatic influences and the grade and protection necessary to guard the road against the effects of storms and floods. Not only was the general the chief engineer of the road, but he was also the agent and trustee of the company, to secure its right of way, to receive and dispose of the lands granted to it by the United States government and to lay out and locate the towns and town sites along the route. If he was brave to fight and strong to scatter the Indian bands that molested him, he knew well how to treat with them, dealing with them equitably and never betraying their confidence. So far as his engineering achievement was concerned, the chief difficulty was to be met in carrying the road over the Rocky Mountain range. But this Titanic work was accomplished at length. The tracks of the Central Pacific and the Union Pacific finally met on Promontory, and as the lightning flashed the intelligence to the nations, "swiftly the telegrams of congratulation began to pour in upon the then most conspicuous engineer in the world." General Sherman sent word to him: "All honor to you, to Durant, to Jack and Dan Casement, to Reed and the thousands of brave fellows who have wrought out this glorious problem spite of changes, storms, and even the doubts of the incredulous, and all the obstacles you have now happily surmounted." General Dodge was immediately charged with the delicate task of adjusting the relations between the two roads, and this, too, after much negotiation, was successfully done. And so another great victory was won in the brilliant and eventful career of this gifted and enterprising son of old Essex. In the prosecution of the undertaking, other difficulties than those which have been particularly referred to had to be met. There were unfriendly criticisms, and unfounded accusations, and nameless hindrances on the part of politicians and newspapers. But the general knew what he was about. The government saw, as well as himself, the unspeakable importance of this transcontinental railway to the nation then and in all the future. While he was in Congress and while he was out of it, he commanded the entire confidence of Lincoln and Johnson, Grant and Sherman, and all the leading men at Washington, as well as the officers of the company whose salaried servant or agent he was. Such was his influence with them that, in connection with others whose names will ever be honorably associated with the work, he was instrumental in securing the constantly favorable action of Congress, and so making sure the end in view. More and more, as the years go on, the vastness and beneficence of this service will be apparent, and the approving words of the several successive committees appointed by Congress to examine, investigate and report in relation to it will find a still ampler justification.

While General Dodge still held the position as chief engineer, the famous Chinese embassy, with Anson Burlingame at its head, visited America, passed over the Union Pacific Road, and made known their desire to secure the services of some one who should take charge of like public works in their own vast empire. President Grant at once recommended to them General Dodge, who signified his readiness to accept the position, willing to serve for a limited time and desiring to see the country; but Burlingame died shortly after, and the plan was abandoned.

In 1868 General Dodge was elected a director of the Union Pacific Railroad Company, and has since remained in that relationship. The same year he was delegate-at-large from Iowa, and the chairman of the Iowa delegation to the National Republican Convention at Chicago, and was very influential in determining the results of the proceedings of that occasion. When, in 1870, the Iowa Legislature passed a law for the erection of a new State-house, he was made a member of the Board of Capitol Commissioners, and was charged with the duty of supervising the work. It was in 1870, also, that he tendered his resignation as the chief engineer of the Union Pacific, and received the "very hearty thanks" of the company for his "eminent services," Oakes Ames, the president, writing to him a letter in which he said, "When we consider the great difficulties and dangers that beset you on all sides while locating the road through an uninhabited country, and the rapidity with which the work was accomplished, we are gratified and surprised that you should have finished this work in so perfect and acceptable a manner." Early in April, 1872, he became the chief engineer of the company which had contracted to build the Texas and Pacific Railway, and has continued for ten years to develop the wild regions, and bring to light the hidden resources of the territory south of the Red River, as before he had rendered a like, yet larger, service north of it. A portion of the latter line was built by the Pacific Railway Improvement Company, a corporation which he organized, and of which he became the president. Of other such companies he has also been president: the American Railway Improvement Company, the International Railway Improvement Company, the Texas and Colorado Railway Improvement Company and the Missouri, Kansas and Texas Railway Company, and he is, at present, the president of the Pan Handle Construction Company and the Colorado and Texas Railway Construction Company. These lines have been projected with the view of connecting together the most important and widely-separated points in the West and Southwest, and of opening the vast interiors to the tide of immigration and



P. A. Wentworth

travel, and to the commerce of river, gulf and ocean. One has but to study a little the advancing railway system that is spreading over all those immense tracts of territory, to see what an inestimable service General Dodge is still rendering to his country and to the future.

Of all his pioneer life, and his explorations into every part of this mighty domain; his personal ventures, perils and escapes; his extensive banking and stock operations and connections; his active participation in political conventions and campaigns, and in reunions of military organizations; his repeated visits abroad and tours in other lands; his business interests at Council Bluffs and vicinity, and his domestic relations, there is not space here for us to write as we gladly would. In character he is modest, earnest, faithful and true. He is quiet, but forcible in conversation, using no superfluous words, but expressing his thought in language that is simple and direct. Possessed of a friendly spirit toward all, and most affectionate in his relations to family and kindred, he is an object of great regard and pride at home, and amongst all who know him. In person he is of medium height, of spare build and agile frame, with strongly marked features, indicative, in every line, of the patience and perseverance, the intelligence, courage and energy, that have crowned his career with such success.

The general's family consists of his wife and three children. Again and again, when he was sick or wounded during the war, Mrs. Dodge travelled great distances to be at his side, and to tenderly and faithfully nurse him into health and strength once more for his country's service. The children, who have received their education abroad as well as at home, are Lettie, Ella and Annie. The first is the wife of Mr. R. E. Montgomery, a lawyer of Fort Worth, Texas; the second married Mr. Frank Pusey, son of ex-Congressman Pusey, of Council Bluffs; the third lives with her parents, and "has displayed considerable literary talent, being an occasional contributor to some of the magazines." The family mansion is one of the finest and most attractive in the city, elegant in its appointments and beautiful for its situation. Nathan P. Dodge, the brother of the general, is a banker, and a prominent and very highly esteemed citizen of Council Bluffs. Julia, sister of the two brothers, married, as previously stated, Mr. J. B. Beard, and they also reside in the same place with their two sons. Living amongst this circle of her children and descendants of two or three generations is the venerable mother, Mrs. Sylvanus Dodge herself, now in her eighty-sixth year and much burdened with the infirmities of old age. From this remarkable woman the renowned engineer and soldier inherited no small share of his fortitude, energy and determination. In all her changeful and checkered life, and amidst all its manifold struggles and solicitations, her devotion to her family, and her faith in their brighter future, have never flagged or wavered. For many years she has seen her hopes for their prosperity and usefulness pass into fulfillment, and she still survives to receive the grateful care and undying affection of the objects of her maternal love and service.

PHILIP H. WENTWORTH.

Philip Henry Wentworth, though not a native of Danvers, was a valued citizen of the town during many of the last years of his useful life, and there ended his days. He was born in Boston, July 6, 1818, and was the son of Philip Wentworth, who was born in the same city, in 1787. His mother's name, previous to her marriage, was Eliza Orrok. While yet very young he was sent to a boarding-school in Dorchester, kept by a Mr. Vose, and afterward to school at South Hadley. Subsequently, he attended the English High School in Boston. At the age of sixteen he entered the dry-goods commission house of Sayles & Hitchcock, better known in later years under the name of Sayles, Merriam & Co. Of this firm he became a partner when but twenty-one. In 1841 he married Mary M. Loing, of Newburyport, but formerly from the State of Maine. A twelvemonth or more afterward he went to New York and accepted a partnership with Mr. C. Langley, in that city; but in 1848 returned to Boston, and thenceforth was prominently known as of the house of Stanfield & Wentworth, or, still later, Stanfield, Wentworth & Co. He had been for some years a resident of Roxbury, when, his wife having died, he was again married, June 4, 1856, to Miss Harriet Lucetta Daniell, daughter of the late Mr. and Mrs. J. N. Daniell, also of Roxbury, and both of blessed memory. Mr. Daniell will be remembered as having long been at the head of a large dry-goods establishment in Summer Street, Boston, and all who ever dealt with him or knew him, gratefully call to mind the purity, rectitude and loveliness of his character. Mrs. Daniell was a worthy helpmeet of such a man; possessing a singularly sweet and beautiful spirit, and richly adorned with the virtues and graces of Christian womanhood. The influence of such a parentage found a new sphere for its exercise as the new bride entered the home of the husband and his four motherless children. Early in 1865, he removed, with his family, to Danvers, and established himself on a large and valuable estate which, with its elegant mansion and charming grounds, continued to be the place of his residence to the end of his life. It was after four other children had been born to him under his second marriage and while yet he was pursuing still his successful business in Boston that the great fire which devastated so extensive a portion of that city and swept away in an hour the fortunes of so many of its merchants visited, with the rest, the house of Stanfield, Wentworth & Co., with its destructive fury. Like so many others, Mr. Wentworth never quite re-

covered from the terrible effects of the calamity. Says an obituary notice of him, which appeared in the *Commercial Bulletin*, shortly after his death,—"He met with heavy reverses at the time of the great fire; but, having the undiminished confidence of his business connections soon reinstated himself, and was for several years in active business in the firm of Wentworth & Case. Of late, he had withdrawn to a large extent from active business, spending much of his time at his home in Danvers, retaining, however, an office in Boston, where he was to be seen during business hours."

Among the most marked features of Mr. Wentworth's character were his indomitable courage, energy and perseverance. Not even the appalling disaster that had befallen him, and that has just been referred to, had any effect to frighten or paralyze him. It only nerved him to more heroic exertions, and it was quite touching to see with what manly patience and determination he bravely strove, through successive years and against fearful odds, to retrieve his shattered fortunes. Thoroughly honest and just, he could not bear to owe a debt which he could not pay, and if ever one purposed and labored that none should be losers by any mishap or calamity of his own, it was he. It was quite wonderful what victory he wrung from the jaws of such defeat. His losses were great, but his gains were greater.

Whatever his discouragements, his cheerfulness never forsook him. His fine face was always lighted with its glow of good feeling and of the joy that was within and that was too deep to be much disturbed by change of outward circumstances. He was habitually hearty and cordial. His welcomes were warm and free, and his hospitality was genuine and bountiful. He was one of the most generous of men and was one of the truest of friends. He scorned things that were false or base, and impressed all who knew him or had to do with him with a sense of the nobleness of his nature. Nothing was more characteristic of him than his straightforwardness and transparency of mind and conduct. It was an element that revealed itself in every word, look and deed. He was just what he seemed, and no one could for a moment mistake his thought or motive, or misinterpret his action or life.

Full often the child is the father to the man, and a pretty story is told of Mr. Wentworth as a lad, that goes to show how the truthfulness and frankness that marked him in all his mature years, was with him even at the very first. It seems to us as good as the story of young George Washington and his hatchet, and we venture to say it is much more authentic. The boys of the neighborhood where "Phil," or "Harry," as he was also called, lived, were once on a time at their winter play on the Common in the vicinity of Tremont Street. There was then no fence, as now, between the mall and the thoroughfare, and where to-day extends along the eastern side a row of shops and stores, there was a continuous line of handsome residences of princely merchants, "Harry" threw a snow-ball that went directly through a window of one of these fine mansions. The little urchins all knew very well that the proprietor was a hot-tempered and violent man, and at once cried out, "Run, Harry, run!" And run he did; not away, as doubtless many a boy would have done, but straight up the steps to tell the family within just what he had done. Before he had a chance to ring the bell, the old gentleman of the house appeared at the door in a furious state of mind, but at once grew calm and gentle as the little fellow openly acknowledged himself to be the offender and offered a manly apology. The affair was instantly treated as of no consequence, and "Phil's" companions were quite amazed at the friendly consideration which was accorded to him.

Very soon after their removal from Roxbury to Danvers, Mr. and Mrs. Wentworth were foremost in starting a new Unitarian Church in their adopted town. The history of this enterprise is related elsewhere in these pages, yet the briefest sketch of Mr. Wentworth's life would be defective, indeed, without a conspicuous reference to his agency and activity in this work and to all which such a beneficent service implies. It is no disparagement to the efforts and zeal of others who were associated with them to say that he and his wife were exceptionally prominent in the movement, watching and guiding faithfully the fortunes of the young society, and giving to it their time, means, energy and constant sympathy and presence for more than twenty years, and until their common devotion to it was broken by death. It was at their beautiful home that Rev. L. J. Livermore, who was so long the pastor of the church, and the many others who from time to time supplied its desk, were most heartily welcomed as guests and there found strength and encouragement in the work of the ministry. Both and all had the satisfaction of seeing that their unselfish labors and care were not in vain. A tasteful and convenient house of worship was ere long built and paid for, and it stands as no unfit monument of the earnest and unfailing fidelity of those who ensured its erection, but especially of him who was the one main reliance in "the day of small things," as also afterward in seasons of greater prosperity. In such relations or interests Mr. Wentworth was ever ready and prompt to discharge any task or duty which seemed to be required of him, or in which he might be useful to the cause. Nothing here appeared to be menial or trivial. No matter what the service, it was to him important, and he was glad to do it, as unto the Lord. He made small pretensions or professions, but he was a man of deeds, and his whole soul was in what he wrought.

He died in the fulness of his manhood, April 10, 1886. His funeral obsequies took place on the 14th, at the church he had done so much to erect and in



Alfred Trask

which he had so often worshipped. The services, consisting of the reading of the Scriptures, by Rev. Mr. Hudson, of Peabody; prayer by Rev. Mr. Israel, of Salem, and an address by Rev. S. J. Barrows, editor of the *Christian Register*, were very appropriate and impressive, and a memorial pamphlet has since been published, giving just and eloquent tributes, from Mr. Barrows and others to the noble qualities of the departed. One who knew him perfectly has written of him,—"His spiritual and religious life grew and deepened to the end. He so loved to think and talk of the future life that, when the summons came, he was only happy in the thought of exchanging his faith in the unseen to the light of the glorious reality. It was such an accustomed thought that the change, though it came so suddenly, did not disturb his peace more than a summons to take a day's journey would have done."

Mr. Livermore, his beloved pastor, survived him just seven weeks. In death, as in life, they were not divided. Their friendship for each other was peculiarly strong and affectionate, and the trust and admiration which the minister is well known to have cherished towards his parishioner could not have been warmer or profounder than the same sentiments entertained toward him by the writer of this sketch, who knew him even longer, had sustained like relations with him, had seen him much in the church, in the home and in society, and can only think of him as one who was, indeed, a man, in the true sense of the word.

ALFRED TRASK.

Alfred Trask was born in Newport, N. H., December 7, 1811, his father, John Trask,[1] having moved from Beverly, Mass., the previous year. He was the youngest of nine children, five sisters and three brothers. Mrs. Benjamin Woodbury, Mrs. John Moulton and Mrs. Andrew Boker resided in North Beverly; Mrs. Timothy Endicott, Mrs. Nathaniel Bachelder and a brother, John Trask, residents of Newport and Sunapee, N. H. Another brother, Israel Trask, settled in Gloucester, Mass.

From boyhood blest with perfect health and great energy, he early displayed good judgment and executive ability, developing in manhood sagacity in business affairs. He was repeatedly urged to accept positions of honor and trust, thereby proving the confidence and esteem reposed in him by his fellow-men, but preferred, with his retiring disposition, to see others enjoy the honor, and rely on his helping hand to sustain them in keeping it. With equal generosity is he ever interested in matters pertaining to the public welfare of the town.

At twenty-one, with an extremely limited school education, he started in life to make his own fortune without a farthing. His mother gave him the *making* of a freedom suit, the cloth being afterwards paid for from his own earnings. For two summers he hired out for ten dollars a month, and the rest of the season logging and wood chopping engaged his attention. His twenty-third year, in company with others, he worked a farm on shares, clearing one hundred dollars profit. At twenty-four, tired of farming he left Newport and came to what was then called Danvers Plains, resolved to try his hand in business as drover. With the small amount of money saved he made short trips into the country, buying pigs and cattle, selling and trading them on his way home, where he arrived after two weeks' absence, usually with a profit that was an incentive to continue in this line of business, the same in which his father before him had engaged.

His indomitable will and self-reliance gained for him the encouragement he craved from business men who recognized his ability, and an offer of money to execute his plans was kindly tendered from an old resident of his boyhood home. The indebtedness of one hundred dollars was promptly paid and a continuance of the favor politely declined, but, with an energy redoubled and a renewed will to do and dare, he pluckily kept on. At twenty-eight years of age, on the 5th of March, 1839, he married Mary J. Blackey, of Sandwich, N. H. Of this union nine children were born.

Alfred Moulton Trask, born June 25, 1840; Julia Ann Trask, born December 15, 1841; Charles Wesley Trask, born February 14, 1844; Mary Elizabeth Trask, born February 26, 1846; George Edward Trask, born February 6, 1848; Sarah Bachelder Trask, born September 1, 1850; Nancy Ellen Trask, born January 18, 1853; Henry Woodbury Trask, born November 10, 1856; Frank Boker Trask, born February 12, 1859.

Realizing how much he lacked from his own limited amount of schooling, it was his greatest desire that his children should enjoy the advantages of a liberal education, and to further the project no expense was spared. After completing their education, with rare forethought and generosity, he established each in a good business and also purchased homes for those who were married.

The eldest, Alfred M. Trask, attended school at New London Academy, N. H., and afterwards was started in the stock business in Canada, and some years later settled in Brocton, where a house was presented to him.

The eldest daughter, Julia Ann, was graduated at Tilton Academy, N. H., but died September 7, 1862, in her twenty-first year.

Charles Wesley Trask, after graduating at the Danvers High School, also attended school in Tilton, and for a business was started in a fine market in Waltham, but for several years has been living on an extensive farm given by his father in Sandwich, N. H.

[1] John Trask was a major and fought at Bunker Hill, also used his own oxen, horses and teams to throw up the earth works at the building of the entrenchments.

Mary Elizabeth Trask married quite young, but died when only twenty years of age, leaving one son, William Alfred Patch.

George Edward Trask was graduated from Danvers High School and afterwards attended a Commercial College in Boston. A house was given him in Western, and he started in the slaughtering business.

Sarah B. Trask attended school at the Female Academy in Ipswich, Mass., and on her marriage with Roswald D. Bates, was presented with a house on Conant Street, Danvers.

Nancy Ellen Trask was a graduate from the High School in Danvers and later from the Abbot Academy in Andover, and on her marriage with Henry W. Swett, was given a house in Haverhill, Mass.

Henry W. Trask also graduated at the Danvers High School and then attended the school of Technology in Worcester, Mass. At present he is unmarried and living in the State of Colorado.

The youngest son, Frank B. Trask, is the only member of the family residing in the old home. He learned the upholstery trade, and has recently opened an extensive furniture establishment on Maple Street, Danvers.

Aside from the benefits conferred on his own family, to numerous others has his helping hand been extended. By some the confidence has been abused, while others have profited by the aid rendered, to the mutual pleasure of all concerned. It is well to note the prominent characteristics that mark Alfred Trask one of the most successful self-made men of Essex County.

His business of drover was carried on for a period of thirty years, then he changed it to a wholesale butcher for ten years more, when he concluded to retire from active business and attend to private affairs and the care of his spacious house and grounds,—the realization of his boyhood's hopes, acquired by years of constant toil, backed by energy and courage, which the rising generation would do well to emulate.

June 8, 1872, he met with a great loss in the death of his wife who, with marked energy and frugality, had ever been a ready helper in amassing a competency for the future.

His second marriage occurred September 1, 1873, to a very estimable woman, Dora T. Webster, of Lawrence, Mass., who has made herself much beloved by all those who enjoy her acquaintance, and for the many Christian acts of unostentatious charity and kindness. To do good for others is the one thought uppermost, having great sympathy for young and old, and their good and welfare. The esteem in which she is held by the little flock of grandchildren must indeed be flattering to her, with her keen appreciation of the beautiful in all things in life.

May the Angel of Peace and Contentment hover for many years over the home of Mr. and Mrs. Alfred Trask, is the heart-felt wish of their numerous friends and acquaintances.

EBEN GARDNER BERRY.

For many years no man has been more familiarly associated with Danvers Plains than Eben G. Berry, and no portrait will be more generally recognized, not only by Danvers people, but by many others throughout the county, than that of him which here appears. For a period extending from 1808 the site of the present Hotel Danvers has been sufficiently identified by the name of "Berry's Corner." In the year named Ebenezer Berry, who had come down from Andover, bought out the old tavern and began innkeeping. He married Hitty Preston, a daughter of Captain Levi Preston, of Danvers. The subject of this sketch, the son of these parents, was born February 19, 1809. He was the only son, and about the time of his coming of age he succeeded to his father's business. Since then, for nearly sixty years, both in the old tavern and in the new hotel which he himself built, he has either himself or by lessee entertained such of the public as sought his hospitality.

The hall of the old tavern was the scene of many events of great local historical interest, concerning which Mr. Berry has contributed many reminiscences, which have been incorporated in the sketch of the Plains in previous pages. These reminiscences, very properly a part of his biography, Mr. Berry modestly insists are sufficient to accompany his portrait. He has been twice married—first to Elizabeth J. Abbott of Andover; second to Mrs. Sarah (Nichols) Page. The latter died recently. He has but one surviving child—Mrs. Emily B., wife of Deacon John S. Learoyd. Another daughter was Caroline, wife of the late Captain James A. Johnson, who left two children, now living in Danvers. He has a sister, Mehitable, widow of Henry Sperry, living in close neighborhood to him. A few years ago he built the fine dwelling in which he resides, on Conant Street, next east of the hotel.

CHAPTER XLI.

IPSWICH.

BY M. V. B. PERLEY.

PRE-HISTORIC.

DISCOVERIES.

1. *Phœnicians and Norwegians.* — This territory, once the abode of the red man, and known to him by the name of Agawam, was settled by our ancestors some more than two hundred and fifty years ago. It was, however, known to the white race, no doubt, at a very much earlier period. The learned suspect



Eben. G. Berry.

that the Phœnicians visited our New England shores in ancient times, and that Norwegian adventurers sojourned here about nine hundred years ago. Certainly, their annals treat of voyages of adventure and discovery, and it only remains to find the places they describe. Their "vinland," Mr. Fewkes, a summer sojourner with us, and an archæologist, declares to be located here, citing the ocean beacon, the changed channel, the cellars and foundations of nine houses, and the remains of three wells, which evince a greater antiquity than do any known works of a similar nature of Puritan origin.

2. *Maps.*—In the eagerness of navigators to find a short northwest route to the East, Canada was well and very accurately mapped, while New England's "cartography," says Kohl, "remained very defective through nearly the whole of the sixteenth century.

3. *Champlain.*—In 1604 Champlain, who afterwards attached his name to the beautiful lake at Vermont, explored the coast from the St. Lawrence River to Plymouth Bay, following the sinuosities of the shore. At Saco Bay he observed a marked change in Indian habits, mode of life and language. The tribes at the East were nomadic, living wholly by fishing and the chase. At Saco and at the West they were sedentary, and subsisted mainly on the products of the soil. Around their settlements were fields of Indian corn, gardens of squashes, beans and pumpkins, and a generous patch of tobacco. At the headland we call Cape Ann, the land of Masconnomet, of whom we are soon to speak, the natives were cordial and highly intelligent. Furnished with a crayon, they made an accurate outline of Massachusetts Bay, and indicated their six tribes and chiefs by as many pebbles.

4. *Hardie et al.*—In 1611 Captain Edward Hardie and Nicholas Hobson were kindly received here. In 1614 the famous adventurer, John Smith, found "a multitude of people." He explored and mapped the territory, naming it Southampton, at the suggestion of Prince Charles, and thus described it,—"Here are many rising hills, and on their tops and descents are many corne fields and delightfull groues. On the east is an isle of two or three leagues in length, the one halfe plaine marish ground, fit for pasture or salt ponds, with many faire high groues of mulberry trees. There are also okes, pines, walnuts and other wood to make this place an excellent habitation." A mere mention of these must suffice; though they may have left traces of their handiwork, they embalmed no thought or feeling.

Indians.

1. *Territory.*—The Atlantic Ocean on the east, Cochichawich (now Andover), on the west, the Merrimack (Sturgeon) River on the north, and the Naumkeag (now North) River, at Salem, on the south, enclosed the beautiful territory of one hundred and eighteen thousand five hundred acres, called Agawam. The name signified "Resort for fish of passage," and was eminently appropriate. With the spring came the myriad-swarming alewife and the bone-burdened shad, and river and brook and pond became an Eden of new life. In late summer schools of mackerel darkened the waters of the bay, as they migrated to their southern sequestered home. Here the blue fish sported and the doughty sturgeon pursued his prey.

2. *Sagamore.*—The name of the Sagamore of this princely domain was Masconnomet, sometimes called Masconnomo, or John. His exact relation to other tribes is unknown. He may have been a sub-tribe of the Massachusetts, or the Aberginians, a great nation, the power of whose sachem is said to have extended from the Charles River to the Merrimac; but he seems to have been under the leadership of the powerful Pennacooks. His subjects are represented as kind-hearted and tractable. Captain Hardie and Nicholas Hobson, exploring the coast in 1611, testified to kinder treatment by these natives than by others.

3. *His Conversion.*—After Governor Winthrop had arrived in Salem harbor, 1629, Masconnomet and one of his men went on board the Governor's ship, Sunday morning, June 13th, and remained all day. The governor's object in coming to New England was to Christianize the Indians. He so far succeeded here that March 8, 1644, Masconnomet put himself, his subjects, and his possessions under the government protection of the Massachusetts Bay, and agreed to be instructed in the Christian religion. The purpose of this chief and a few of his friends is shown in the following examination:

1. *Will you worship the only true God and not blaspheme?* Ans. We do desire to reverence the God of the English, and to speak well of him, because we see He doth better to the English than other gods do to others. 2. *Will you cease from swearing falsely?* Ans. We know not what swearing is. 3. *Will you refrain from working on the Sabbath, especially in Christian towns?* Ans. It is easy for us—we have little to do any day, and can well rest on that day. 4. *Will you honor your parents and all your superiors?* Ans. It is our custom to do so. 5. *Will you refrain from killing any man without cause and authority?* Ans. It is good, and we desire it. 6. *Will you put away fornication, adultery, incest, rape, sodomy and beastiality?* Ans. Though some of our people do some of these things, we count them naught, and do not allow them. 7. *Will you put away stealing?* Ans. We answer this as the sixth question. 8. *Will you allow your children to read the word of God, so that they may know him aright, and worship him in his own way?* Ans. We will allow this as opportunity will permit, and as the English live among us, we desire to do so.

4. *Friendly Tokens.*—The examination was satisfactory; they were "solemnly received," and were then presented to the court. They gave the court twenty-six fathoms of wampum, and the court gave to each of them two yards of cloth, a dinner, and at their departure a "cup of sac."

5. *Depopulation.*—At the date of Champlain's and Hardie and Hobson's visits the tribe seemed numerous and valiant, but the pestilence that prevailed among the tribes generally, about 1617, reduced their number and greatly enfeebled the strength of this tribe.

6. *Suspicion.*—In 1642 several tribes were suspected

of an intention of rising against the English, and were, therefore, deprived of their arms for several months. But generally the English experienced no trouble from the Agawams.

7. *Tarratines.*—At the north of Agawam lay the imperial realm of the Pennacooks, and next to them, as allies, were the Pawtuckets on the north side of the Merrimack River, and the Penobscotts in the vicinity of the Penobscott, or, as they called it, Pentegoet River. Somewhere in that territory wigwamed the Tarratines, agile, warlike, blood-thirsty and, as some say, cannibal. It is said that Masconnomet had slain some of the tribe, and so had incurred the price of blood, and endangered the safety of the English. Accordingly, July 5, 1631, he was banished from the house of every Englishman for one year, under penalty of ten beaver-skins for every offence. Of the Tarratines the Agawams had a mortal dread. In 1629, and several times after, they applied to Governor Endicott for aid, and received it. Sagamores James and John, of Saugust and Charlestown, often assisted them. One instance of such alliance was August 8, 1631, when the Tarratines, to the number of a hundred, in three canoes, surprised the Agawams, slew seven men, wounded Sagamores John and James and some others, and took, among other captives, the wife of James, who, however, was returned the following September with a demand of wampum and ten beaver-skins for her ransom.

8. *Indian Arts.*—Their arts were simple and their wants were few. Their wild dance and song were the life of the wigwam; tobacco was their solace; they delighted in smoking, or "drinking the pipe;" fishing and hunting were their sustenance, and they exulted in the capture of a salmon, a shad, or a sturgeon, of a fox, a bear, or a deer. In spring their food was largely fish, in summer berries, in autumn harvest products, and in winter clams. They cultivated only the Indian bean and corn, which was always their staple food. Rude granite mortars and pestles served to powder the corn; their tomahawks were stones about the length of a man's hand, with one end fashioned for a handle and with the other end beveled to an edge. Their arrow-heads were of slate, and a lapidary for their manufacture has been discovered near Prospect Hill. Abundance of clam-shells have been found on high ground, which, doubtless, mark the sites of their wigwams. These implements, even now after the flight of two hundred and fifty years, the plow-share sometimes discovers. Their highest art was expended upon the bow and arrow; their proudest skill was in throwing the tomahawk, shooting the arrow and spearing the fish.

9. *Masconnomet's Death.*—Masconnomet saw his tribe fade away, as a summer cloud; his rich domain become the abode of the pale-face; his scepter broken fall from his nerveless grasp. In 1655, 21st February, the selectmen granted him a life-interest in six acres of planting ground. He died 6th March, 1658. The 18th of the following June, his widow was granted the same ground during her widowhood. Both were buried on Sagamore Hill in Hamilton. With him were interred his gun, his tomahawk and other implements of the chase. The tribe lived in scattered wigwams, much at the town charge, till it was practically extinct, about 1730.

PLANTERS.

1. *Definition.*—These were such as obtained tracts or parcels of land, and occupied them as fishing stations or for the purpose of traffic with the natives. Two parties principally are concerned in this history, John Mason and William Jeffrey.

2. *John Mason* was a member of the Plymouth Company, whose corporation was incident upon the published maps and description of this section, by Capt. John Smith, about 1615. Sir Ferdinand Gorges was president of the company. They held the land between the Charles and Merrimac Rivers, and had trading posts and fishing stations along the coast as early as 1619. About 1621, Mason obtained from the company the land between the Naumkeag and Merrimac Rivers. Perchance he never occupied the grant, or if he did, he had abandoned it and removed all trace of his occupancy, before the settlement by Winthrop in 1633; for to his claim made, in 1680, the settlers replied: "We have subdued the wilderness with great pains and cost; our lands have passed through several hands; we were confirmed in our rights by the law of 1657 for settling inheritances, which was not designed against Robert Mason, of whom and of whose claim we were then wholly ignorant. So we continued till surprised by order of the General Court, according to your letter of September 30th, requiring us to furnish agents and evidences, as to our lands." Thus it was; Ipswich had been settled; the lands bought, sold and improved; houses erected; and the bustle of business felt for nearly half a century, when suddenly before the king appeared Mason with his claim. He went before the local court for justice. Litigation continued two years and a half. At last Mason won his case. "The General Court allow John Wallace and Content Mason, relict of John Tufton Mason, to give deeds as her husband had done. Some paid a quit-rent of two shillings a year for every house built on the land of his grant, which was in their possession." Mason's heirs hoped to establish their inheritance, name it Mariana, and hold it "in fee and common socage." Thus the decision, which was against the settlers, was favorable.

3. *William Jeffrey* obtained his title to Jeffrey's Neck of the Indians and presumably of Masconnomet. His alleged right to the territory of our Ipswich may have been derived from Mason. He was here very early. Winthrop called him "an old planter." He was probably associated with John Burslin, Edward Hilton and David Thomson, fishmonger of London, in

the employ of the Plymouth Company, and belonged to Robert Gorges' party, who settled at Wessagusset, in September, 1623. Mr. Fewkes' old cellars and wells, evincing to him traces of the Norsemen, referred to above, may have been Jeffrey's trading and fishing station; and so to Jeffrey's diminutive city-by-the-sea the Court of Assistants may have referred, when, in 1630, by warrant, they "ordered those planted at Agawam forthwith to come away." However this may be, William Jeffrey, in 1660, to satisfy his claim to Jeffrey's Neck within the bounds of Ipswich, is granted five hundred acres of land on the south side "of our patent, to be a final issue of all claims by virtue of any grant heretofore made by any Indians whatsoever."

4. *Notice.*—Mr. Jeffrey is referred to in one of the company's letters of instruction as "William Jeffries, Gentleman." He was an Episcopalian; was made freeman May 18, 1637; was one of the proprietors of Weymouth, in 1641–42, where he was commissioned to solemnize marriages. Very early he had property rights at the Isles of Shoals. He and his business associates,—Hilton, Blackstone, Burslin and Thomson's widow contributed to meet the expense of the expedition, that dislodged that "merry, rollicking, scholar, adventurer and scape-grace, Thomas Morton, Gentleman," from Merry-Mount, about 1628. In 1634 Morton called him "My very good gossip." He witnessed the will of William Waltham, of Weymouth, in 1642; and his daughter Mary was born there "20: 1:" of the same year.

CHAPTER XLII.

IPSWICH.—(*Continued*).

MUNICIPAL.

SETTLEMENT.

1. *Pioneers.*—About twelve years after the Pilgrims landed at Plymouth, four and a half years after Captain John Endicott colonized Salem, and three years after Governor John Winthrop established the colony of Massachusetts Bay, a rumor spread in Boston that the Jesuits were about to establish a mission. This it was a part of the Governor's duty to prevent, and he immediately organized a company of thirteen men with his son John as leader, to forestall the movement. Accordingly Mr. John Winthrop, Jr., Mr. John Thorndyke, Mr. William Clark, John Biggs, Robert Cole, John Gage, Thomas Hardy, Thomas Howlett, William Perkins, William Sergeant and three others, in March, 1633, wooed and wed the virgin soil of Agawam.

2. *Incorporation.*—"A Court holden att Newe Towne,—Cambridge—August 5th, 1634, ordered that Aggawam shallbe called Ipswitch," wherefore August 16th, new style, 1634, dates the beginning of our corporate capacity. The name is derived from Ipswich, England, "in acknowledgment of the great honor and kindness done to our people who took shipping there." The House of Commons, in the memorable resolve of the 10th of March, 1642, gave New England the title of *Kingdom*, and *Wonder-working Providence*, in consonance, calls Ipswich an *Earldome.*

3. *Deed.*—The colonial records read that Masconnomet sold his fee in Ipswich to John Winthrop, Jr., March 13, 1638, and that he expressed himself satisfied with the consideration, March 5, 1639. The following is the deed:

"I Masconnomet Sagamore of Agawam do by these presents acknowledge to have received of Mr. John Winthrop the sum of £20, in full satisfaction of all the right, property, and claim I have or ought to have, unto all the land, lying and being in the Bay of Agawam, alias Ipswich, being so called now by the English, as well as such land, as I formerly reserved unto my own use at Chebacco, as also all other land, belonging to me in these parts, Mr. Dummer's farm excepted only; and I hereby relinquish all the right and interest I have unto all the havens, rivers, creeks, islands, huntings, and fishings, with all the woods, swamps, timber, and whatever else is, or may be, in or upon the said ground to me belonging; and I do hereby acknowledge to have received full satisfaction from the said John Winthrop for all former agreements, touching the premises and parts of them; and I do hereby bind myself to make good the aforesaid bargain and sale unto the said John Winthrop, his heirs and assigns forever, and to secure him against the title and claim of all other Indians and natives whatsoever.

Witness my hand, 28th of June, 1638.

Witnesss hereunto:
John Joyliffe,
James Downing,
Thomas Coytimore,
Robert Harding.

Masconnomet.
his ⊂ mark.

Ipswich is ordered November, 5, 1639, by the Court, to refund to John Winthrop, Jr., the twenty pounds named in the above deed. The town voted February 22, 1705, "That Samuel Appleton, Esq., and our two representatives, Nehemiah Jewett and Nathaniel Knowlton, treat with Hon. Wait Winthrop about Masconnomet's deed of Agawam, made to his father, deceased.

4. *Extent.* When the town was settled in 1633, the boundary on the north and west was the boundary of ancient Agawam; on the east the ocean; on the southeast Cape Ann, (Gloucester); and on the south Jeffrey's Creek, (Manchester); Enon, (Wenham); and Salem Village, (Danvers), four hamlets then belonging to Salem. Newbury, 12,300 acres, was set off in 1635, and contributed to the sisterhood Newburyport, 4575 acres, in 1764, and Parsons, 8072 acres, in 1819, which became West Newbury, June 14, 1820. The court, in 1636, established our western limit six miles in the country, the southern and eastern boundaries remaining the same. In 1639, Ipswich with Newbury contributed Rowley, 10,310 acres, for which the two towns received £800, and out of which were cut the towns of Bradford, 4564 acres, in 1675, of Boxford, 14,200 acres, in 1685, of Middleton, in part, about 2500 acres, in 1728, of Georgetown, 7548

acres, in 1838, and of Groveland, 5230 acres, in 1850. In 1650 Ipswich contributed the part of Topsfield, north of the river, part of 7375 acres. The Hamlet of Ipswich, 9440 acres, was incorporated Hamilton in 1793, and the Chebacco of Ipswich, 7839 acres, became Essex in 1819. In 1774, certain families of Ipswich were set off to Topsfield; in 1784 certain others to Rowley; and in 1846 still others to Boxford, and there now remains 25,478 acres, the heart of the grand old town, pulsating strong in her original integrity and enterprise, and in her wealth and pleasant memories.

5. *First Settlers.* These men were largely citizens of wealth and learning, and some were merchants. They were thoughtful, conscientious, heroic, righteous, God-fearing; thoughtful, for they had clear views of the tenets of their religion and of civil life; conscientious, for they could not brook known errors: heroic, for they suffered for principle; righteous, for they made a righteous civil code; God-fearing, for it was their purpose in all things to serve Him.

The Wonder-Working Providence reads:

"The peopling of this towne is by men of good ranke and quality, many of them having the yearly revenue of large estates in England before they came to this wildernesse." In Rev. Joseph Felt's history of the town, we read: "A large proportion of the inhabitants possessed intelligent minds, virtuous hearts, useful influence and remarkable character. They well understood how the elements of society should be for the promotion of its welfare, and how such elements should be formed and kept pure from ignorance and irreligion. They were careful of their own example, and thereby gave force to their precepts. They attended to the concerns of society as persons, who felt bound to consult the benefit of posterity as well as their own immediate good."

6. *Citizenship.* The next month after the settlement by Winthrop and his associates, April 1, 1633, it was ordered by the Court of Assistants, that "noe pson wtsoeuer shall goe to plant or inhabitt att Aggawam, without leave from the Court." This order obtained for some time; there for a considerable period the rule and practice obtained that no one should be admitted as townsman without the consent of the town's freemen. This practice served to preserve the unity of their religious belief and the high standard of their civil and social life, by excluding the immoral and the idle, the ignorant and the contentious.

7. *Names.* The following catalogue has been gleaned from the town records, and, probably, contains nearly all the names of settlers in the town during the first twenty years, arranged in the years when they were first observed:

1633.

Winthrop, John, Jr.
Thorndyke, John.
Clark, William,
Biggs, John.
Carr, George.
Cole, Robert.
Gage, John.
Hardy, Thomas.
Howlett, Thomas.
Perkins, William.
Sellman, Thomas.
Sergeant, William.
Shatswell, John.

1634.

"Probably some from New Town, now Cambridge, since 'they sent men to Agawam and Merrimack, and gave out that they would move' to Connecticutt; Rev. Thomas Parker and his company of about one hundred, from Wiltshire, England, sojourned here about a year before settling Newbury; there were also,—

Currin, Matthias.
Dillingham, John.
Easton, Nicholas.
Elliot.
Fawne, John.
Franklin, William.
Fuller, John.
Manning, John.
Newman, John.
Parker, Thomas.
Perkins, John.
Robinson, John.
Sewell, Henry.
Spencer, John.
Symonds, Mark.
Ward, Nathaniel.

1635.

Andrews, Robert.
Bartholomew, William.
Bracey, Thomas.
Bradstreet, Simon.
Bradstreet, Humphrey.
Bradstreet, Dudley.
Cogswell, John.
Covington, John.
Cross, John.
Denison, Daniel.
Dudley, Thomas.
Dudley, Samuel.
Firman, Thomas.
Foster, Reginald.
Fowler, Philip.
French, Thomas.
Fuller, William.
Gardner, Edmund.
Gidding, George.
Goodhue, William.
Haffield, Richard.
Hassell, John.
Hubbard, William.
Jackson, John.
Jacob, Richard.
Johnson, John.
Jordan, Francis.
Kent, Richard.
Kinsman, Robert.
Knight, Alexander.
Lancton, Roger.
Metcalf, Joseph.
Moody, William.
Mussey, John.
Mussey, Robert.
Osgood, Christopher.
Perley, Allan.
Procter, John.
Saltonstall, Richard.
Saunders, John.
Sayward, Edmund.
Scott, Thomas.
Sherrat, Hugh.
Short, Anthony.
Short, Henry.
Symonds, William.
Treadwell, Edward.
Tuttle, John.
Varnum, George.
Wade, Jonathan.
Wainwright, Francis.
Webster, John.
Wells, Thomas.
White, William.
Whityear, John.
Williamson, Paul.
Woodmouse, Mr.
Wyatte, John.
Wythe, Humphrey.
Younglove, Samuel.

1636.

Bishop, Thomas.
Clark, Daniel.
Dorman, Thomas.
Hall, Samuel.
Harris, Thomas.
Hart, Nathaniel.
Jennings, Richard.
Lord, Robert.
Merriall, John.
Norton, John.
Norton, William.
Peabody, Francis.
Rogers, Nathaniel.
Sawyer, Edmund.
Seaverns, John.
Sherman, Samuel.
Wilson, Theophilus.

1637.

Appleton, Samuel.
Archer, Henry.
Averill, William.
Bishop, Nathaniel.
Bixby, Nathaniel.
Boardman, Thomas.
Browning, Thomas.
Challis, Philip.
Clark, Thomas.
Colby, Arthur.
Comesone, Symond.
Cross, Robert.
French, Edward.
Hayes, Robert.
Heldred, William.
Hovey, Daniel.
Jordan Stephen.
Kimball, Richard.
Ladd, Daniel.
Lawson, William.
Lord, Widow Katherine.
Morse, Joseph.
Northe, John.
Perkins, Isaac.
Pike, ———.
Purrier, William.
Quilter, Mark.
Rawlinsone, Thomas.
Reading, Joseph.
Symonds, Joseph.
Thornton, John.
Turner, Capt.
Vincent, Humphrey.
Warren, William.
Wattles, Richard.
Wedgewood, John.
Whitred, William.
Whittingham, John.
Williamson, Michael.

1638.

Baker, John.
Brown, Edward.
Burnham, John.
Cochame, Henry.
Cartwright, Michael.
Commings, Isaac.
Cooley, John.
Crame, Robert.
Dane, John.
Dix, Widow.
Emerson, John.
Emerson, Joseph.
Emerson, Thomas.
English, William.
Eppes, Daniel.
Gibson, Thomas
Graves, Robert.
Greenfield, Samuel.
Hanchet, John.
Kimball, Henry.
Kingsbury, Henry.
Knight, William.
Lumkin, Richard.
Mitcalfe, Thomas.
Miller, William.
Morse, John.
Newmarch, John.
Nichols, Richard.
Paine, William.
Scott, Robert.
Sherman, Thomas.
Silver, Thomas.
Stacy, Simon.
Swinder, William.
Taylor, Samuel.
Tredwell, John.
Tredwell, Thomas.
Whipple, Matthew.
Whipple, John.
Whitman, Robert.
Wilkinson, Henry.

1639.

Andrews, John.
Belcher, Jeremiah.
Bellingham, Richard.
Bird, Jathnell.
Bird, Thomas.
Boardman, Samuel.
Bosworth, Nathaniel.
Button, Matthias.
Cochame, Edward.
Castell, Robert.
Chute, Lionell.
Davis, John:
Farnum, Ralph.
Filbrich, Robert.
Firman, Dr. Giles.
Gilvin, Thomas.
Hadley, George.
Hodges, Andrew.
Humphrey, ———.
Hattley, Richard.
Knowlton, John.
Mohey, Robert.
Newman, Thomas.
Pitney, James.
Preston, Roger.
Smith, Thomas.
Storey, Andrew.
Thompson, Simon.
Tingby, Palmer.
Wallis, Robert.

1640.

Bachelor, Henry.
Lee, John.
Paine, Robert.
Urann, ———.

1641.

Hart, Thomas.
Hoyt, John.
Safford, Thomas.

1642.

Adams, William.
Annable, John.
Beacham, Robert.
Bitgood, Richard.
Brown, Thomas.
Brown, John.
Cowley, John.
Dane, Francis.
Davis, Richard.
Day, Robert.
Douglass, William.
Fellews, William.
Green, Henry.
Howe, James.
Knight, Oleph.
Knowlton, William.
Knowlton, Thomas.
Lee, Thomas.
Lamson, Edward.
Lammas, Richard.
Perry, Thomas.
Pettis, John.
Pinder, Henry.
Pengry, Moses.
Podd, Daniel.
Redding, John.
Scofield, Richard.
Setchell, Theophilus.
Smith, Richard.
Warner, Daniel.

1643.

Andrews, Richard.
Buckley, William.
Low, Thomas.
Windall, Thomas.

1644.

Bridges, Edmund.
Chapman, Edward.
Chilson, Robert.
Roberts, Robert.
Wood, Daniel.
Whittingham, Thomas.

1647.

Burnham, Thomas.
Denison, John.
Heard, Luke.
Hunter, Robert.
Lovell, Thomas.
Silsbee, Henry.

1648.

Appleton, John.
Ayers, John.
Betts, Richard.
Birdley, Gyles.
Bishop, Job.
Bosworth, Haniel.
Bragg, Edward.
Catchame, John.
Choate, John.
Chute, James.
Clark, Malachi.
Cogswell, William.
Colburn, Robert.
Dix, Ralph.
Dutch, Robert.
French, John.
Gilbert, Humphrey.
Gillman, Edward.
Granger, Lancelot.
Green, Thomas.
Gutterson, William.
Harris, Anthony.
Harris, Thomas.
Heiphar, William.
Lancton, Joseph.
Leighton, John.
Long, Philip.
Long, Samuel.
Pierpont, Robert.
Pendleton, Bryan.
Perkins, Jacob.
Pindar, John.
Pengry, Aaron.
Podd, Samuel.
Ringe, Daniel.
Roffe, Daniel.
Roffe, Ezra.
Salter, Theophilus.
Satchell, Richard.
Smith, George.
Smith, Robert.
Stacy, Richard.
Stone, Nathaniel.
Story, William.
Walderne, Abraham.
Walderne, Edward,
Ward, Dr. John.
Warner, John.
Warren, Abraham.
West, John.
Whitred, Thomas.
Wooddam, John.
Woodman, John.

1649.

Bixby, Joseph.
Palmer, George.
Potter, Anthony.
Prichard, William.
Wood, Obediah.

1651.

Griffin, Humphrey.
Harinden, Edward.
Leigh, Joseph.
Walker, Henry.

GOVERNMENT AND OFFICERS.

1. *Object and Origin.*—The object of our early ancestors was religious freedom, and when they had obtained the right and privilege to exercise it, they established governments to protect, sustain and foster it. The Bible was to them the Book of books: it contained the principles of all municipal, moral and religious governments, and was absolute authority in all such matters. Here is the origin of our unique town-government—a pure democracy—a government of the people, by the people, and for the people, which was confirmed and established by law, in 1636, when the General Court conferred upon the towns the power to grant lots of land, to make by-laws for their own common weal, under colonial approval, to impose and collect fines not above twenty shillings, and to elect such officers as necessity required. But March 3, 1635–36, it was ordered that at the next term of the General Court, Ipswich, with other towns, "shall have libertie to stay soe many of their ffreemen att home for the safety of their towne as they judge needful, and that the saide ffreemen that are appointed by the town to stay att home shall have libertie for this Court to send their voices by proxy." Thus, necessity foreshadowed our present representative form, which was afterwards inaugurated in place of the unwieldy assemblies of the congregated towns. In 1631, it was enacted that only church members could vote, a law which was practically repealed in 1644. In 1692, a voter for representative must be worth a realty of forty shillings a year, or other estate of forty pounds, yet it was practically a government of equal rights.

2. *Sevenmen.*—The highest office in the municipal gift was the committee called The Sevenmen, a title suggested, doubtless, by such scriptures as these: "Wisdom has hewn out her seven pillars," "Seven men that can render a reason," "Look out seven men of honest report to appoint over this business." The Sevenmen are now called the Selectmen. They were entrusted with the concerns of church and town, and managed them; cardinal questions and general principles being settled in town-meeting. The duty of exercising this duplex order, civil and religious, was a most important and responsible one; but notwithstanding the weight of responsibility, the breadth of trust, and the possibility of satisfaction, they, from year to year, acquitted themselves so justly, that they long since received, as a badge of honor, the title: "The Town Fathers." They began their work when the town began. In 1638 they were expanded to eleven men. For 1723 the number was five. After 1740 the *seven* seems to have lost its power. In 1794 one man was *selected* from the north side of the river, one from the south side, and one from Chebacco. In 1798 it was voted to have five selectmen, at a salary of nineteen dollars. Fifteen men were chosen, and all declined to serve. Afterwards the salary was made thirty-eight dollars, and the five were thereupon elected. In 1791 their office was in the school-house chamber. The present chairman of the Board, Nathaniel Rogers Farley, Esq., was first elected in 1844, and this is his nineteenth year of service.

3. *Clerks.*—To be clerk of a town was then, as now, a most important service. His records become history as time advances; they may be the basis of legal investigation, and so be arbiter between man and man; they must approach absolute correctness, to be trustful. It has been the practice of this town to continue this officer for a series of years. Elder Robert Paine and William Bartholomew are said to have been the first elected to this office. Daniel Denison was chosen in 1635–36, and probably was continued till 1639, when Samuel Symonds was chosen. Mr. Symonds was successively chosen till 1645, when Robert Lord succeeded, and served till his death, August 21, 1683. John Appleton appears to have been his immediate successor till 1688. Thomas Wade was clerk, 1688 to 1696–97; Francis Wainwright, 1696–97 to 1699–1700; Daniel Rogers, 1699–1700; John Wainwright, 1719–20 to 1739; Samuel Rogers, 1739 to 1773; Major John Baker, 1773 to 1785; Nathaniel Wade, 1785 to 1814; Joseph Swazey, 1814 to 1816; Ebenezer Burnham, 1816 to 1843; Samuel Newman, one month; Ebenezer Burnham, 1843 to 1846; Alfred Kimball, 1846 to 1855; John A. Newman, 1855; Alfred Kimball, 1856 to 1864; George R. Lord, 1864; Wesley K. Bell, 1865, his twenty-third year to the present time. He has been an obliging and efficient officer.

4. *Constables.*—The early duty of constables was principally the collection of taxes. Their badge of office was a staff, some five or six feet long, and tipped with brass. A similar badge may now be seen in the hand of the court-crier, an officer who announces the opening of a court. The officer, however, with all its insignia and distinction, often sought the man, and not the man the office. In 1738 Robert Wallis was chosen, and paid a fine of five pounds rather than serve. The records show several such cases at earlier dates. This duty appertains to the officer now if a collector is not chosen.

5. *Tithingmen.*—The General Court as early as 1677 ordered tithingmen to be chosen in the several towns, and Ipswich, December 20, 1677, chose twenty-five. In 1681 thirteen were chosen for the north side of the river, and twelve for the south side. Their duty was to guard the public morals, to note infractions of laws, and cite offenders to justice. But, in the presence of a vigilant police, they were not needed, and so they were not chosen after 1871.

6. *Treasurer.*—The duties of this office were the same then as now. Most, if not all, of them were at the same time county treasurers. The following are confidently named as long time in office: Robert Paine (1665–83), John Appleton, Nathaniel Appleton, Aaron Porter (——1766), Michael Farley (1766——), Nathaniel Wade, William Foster Wade, Jeremiah Lord, and the present genial officer, Mr. Jonathan Sargent, who has served since 1872—sixteen years.

7. *Surveyors.*—These were the guardians of the king's highways—sometimes builders, but commonly only repairers of roads and bridges. The town was divided into districts for the purpose by the selectmen, pretty much as the business is conducted now.

8. *Firemen.*—In relation to fires, our ancestors showed a characteristic caution and precaution. Their houses had wooden chimneys, plastered with clay, and thatched roofs—a condition which rendered care particularly necessary. In 1642 it was voted that "as much hurt hath been done by fire, through neglect of having ladders in readiness at men's houses, and also by the insufficiency of chimneys and due cleaning of them, every householder shall have a ladder in constant readiness, twenty feet long, at his house." In 1649 the town adopted the following order: "Whereas complaint hath been made of the great danger that may accrue to the inhabitants by reason of some men's setting stacks of hay near their dwelling houses, if fire should happen, ordered that whosoever hath any hay, or English corn, or straw by their houses, or hath set any hay-stacks within three rods of their houses, shall remove it within six days after notice, on fine of 20s." In 1681 it is ordered that every house must be provided with a ladder, and the tithingmen were instructed to note infractions of the order. In 1804 smoking in the streets was considered dangerous to buildings, and the practice which had become prevalent was prohibited, on penalty of one dollar for each offence. In 1803 the

town, by subscription, raised money to purchase a fire-engine, and January 3, 1804, the South Parish voted to join with the North Parish and build a house for it. In 1808 the town voted to have four fire-ladders and four hooks with chains, two of each to be kept in the body of the town, one of each to be kept at Chebacco, and one of each at Linebrook." In March 13, 1821, the selectmen were ordered to purchase a fire-engine and to build a house for it. The cost of the engine was four hundred and fifty dollars. The department now is in good, serviceable condition, and is constituted of the Warren Engine Company, a hand-machine, with fifty-five men; the Barnicoat Engine Company, another hand-machine, with fifty-five men; and the Hook-and-Ladder Company, of twenty men. The fire apparatus is valued at $5000; the cost of running the department is nearly $800.

9. *Commissioner of Taxes.*—Here is a long name for a short service. The duty was to assist the selectmen in assessing the tax. A commissioner was chosen in 1646, and continued to be for several years thereafter.

10. *Hog-reeves, Hog-Ringers, etc.*—In the primitive days of the town swine ran at large. How naturally they would poke their noses in human affairs. As a badge of their mischievousness, they wore a ring in their snout. In 1640 they should be yoked; in 1661 they were liable to be arrested and impounded, and in 1794 should not go at large at all. Deer-reeves are mentioned in 1739. The woods between Chebacco and Gloucester abounded in those animals.

11. *Hay-wards.*—This word found little favor with us. Our forefathers brought it from England, but seldom used it. It is from an obsolete word "hay," which meant *hedge*, and it signified persons whose duty it was to guard the hedges, and hence to keep cattle from breaking through them, and then to impound cattle running at large. It seems to have combined the duties of our field-driver and fence-viewer.

12. *Fence-viewer.*—It was enjoined by the General Court, October 31, 1653, that all farms of less than one hundred acres be fenced "of pales well nayled or pined, or of fine rayles well fitted, or of a stone wall three foote and a halfe high at least, or with a good ditch between three and foure foot wyde, with a good banke of two rayles or a good hedge upon the banke, or such as is equivolante to these." As might be supposed, this order was not complied with in haste. In March, 1663, the town ordered that all "fences general and particular be made sufficient before April 4 next." Fence-viewers, or judges of legal fences, were chosen as early as 1668, and are now annually chosen.

13. *Town-crier.*—This service, by law of the Colony, began in 1642. The office was a walking advertisement to announce sales by vendue, the lost, strayed or stolen, or to give immediately any public notice. The pay was two pence per article cried.

14. *Clerk of the Market.*—In 1637, by Colonial order, the purchase of venison was forbidden unless legalized by the town. Buns and cakes must not be sold except for funeral or marriage occasions. The Indians used to steal the townspeople's swine and then return them by way of sale; and so, in 1672, the English were ordered to mark one ear of their swine. The Indian must not mark his at all, neither must he offer for sale a swine without ears. The medium of exchange in those days was largely the vital commodities. Taxes were paid in them and the minister stipulated to receive a part of his salary in them. The town in its corporate capacity bought and sold them, and thus helped the poor and facilitated business. In the latter part of the eighteenth century there was also the Clerk of the Hay-Market. Other officers, whose duties are obvious, were early mentioned in the records: Sealers of weights and measures, in 1677; Packers of fish, in 1678; and cullers of fish, in 1715; cullers of boards and staves in 1686, and of bricks in 1801; corders of wood in 168–; gaugers of casks, in 1691; surveyors of boards and timber, in 1760, and of leather in 1681; and measurers of grain and salt in 1801.

15. *Inference.*—These various offices indicate somewhat the varied mechanical skill of our ancestors. The town then plied quite all the practical arts that now employ the county. The exchange, now by transportation, was then between townsmen and neighbors. They made their implements of husbandry, converted the raw hide into wearable leather, and the wool of the sheep and the flax of the field into garments. Conspicuous among the common trades were coopers, whitesmiths, cabinet-makers, cloth and leather tailors, millers, mill-sawyers, tanners, curriers, spinners, weavers, fullers.

WAYS AND MEANS.

1. *Roads.*—The early roads were generally laid out one and a half rods wide, but in practice were hardly more than pathways, since walking and horseback riding were the common modes of traveling. The earliest carriage-roads led to the marshes and meadows, whence our ancestors derived hay for their cattle and peat for fuel; and the earliest of these was the river road which led to the great meadow, and over which Governor Winthrop passed in 1634. In 1637, "all those who have planting-grounds by the river side, beyond Mr. Appleton's, are to take the lot-layers and lay out a highway most convenient for them." The General Court, March 5, 1639, ordered all roads to be laid out. This act gave all roads a legal status and assured proper care of them. It relieved travelers of trespass, and protected them in their public rights. The position of the town laid upon it a vigilant care of its own roads. The town is in the direct communication between Boston and Salem on the south and Newburyport, commercial New Hampshire and Maine on the North; so Haver-

hill and Andover on the west and Gloucester and Cape Ann on the east.

In 1635 a pathway to Newbury was opened; in 1641 the road to Salem was determined; in 1652 the road to Andover. The present Andover road in town was a footpath in 1692. The highway to Essex was laid out about 1651; that from Newbury to Topsfield through Linebrook Parish, in 1717. The bridge in the Salem road, at Mile Brook, was "broken up by the flood" in 1665. In 1667 John, Nathaniel and Samuel Adams, Joseph Safford, Nicholas Wallis and Thomas Stacey had built a bridge over the river and were exempted from highway service "for seaven years." In 1730 John Lamson, John Lamson, Jr., Joseph Cummings and Israel Cummings, Jr., ask for an allowance, having built a bridge over the river, and a way having been laid out from the old Lamson house, on the south side, to Gravelly Brook. In 1832 the length of our roads was seventy-two miles. Our public ways are pronounced by bicyclists the best of country roads.

2. *Turnpikes.*—"The Ipswich Turnpike" was incorporated March 1, 1803. The corporators' names were John Heard, Stephen Choate, Wm. Gray, Jr., Jacob Ashton, Asa Andrews, Joseph Swasey, Israel Thorndyke, Nathan Dane, Wm. Bartlett and James Prince. The road began at the blacksmith's shop of Nathaniel "Batchelder" in Beverly, ran by Nathan Brown's in Hamilton, over the "old road" to the stone bridge in Ipswich; thence through Rowley, over the Parker bridge to Newburyport,—four rods wide, with toll-gates. This road was built in the interest of the town, and it served its purpose well. How long it was a road with pikes, or if it paid well we know not. It certainly was the great thoroughfare for land transit between the east and south, and its width and quality to-day attest the excellence of its construction. The railroad robbed it of its prestige and left it only a county road.

3. "*The Newburyport Turnpike Corporation*" was incorporated March 8, 1803, and the corporators were Michael Sawyer, William Coombs, Nicholas Pike, Arnold Welles, Wm. Bartlett, John Pittingell, Wm. Smith, John Codman and James Prince. This route was to be the passenger express, the dispatch for freight, the swift mail,—in short, the rapid transit from Newburyport to Boston. Perhaps it was designed to favor Newburyport especially, by setting Ipswich one side, but Ipswich enterprise was equal to the emergency. The Ipswich road was incorporated a week earlier. This route was thirty-two miles long, and so straight, that all the angles together in the first twenty miles increased the distance only eighty-three feet. Many a strange story is told of the drivers' skill, of short-time passages, of equestrian speed, of frightened passengers, and of the fearful, headlong drives down the precipitous hills. Tradition says, that the construction was done with wheelbarrows, and not with dump-carts, as is the practice in road-building at present. It is further told that the road was ultimately to be straight and level, condition consonant with absolute dispatch. The task was herculean. It was the wonder of the people, the glad era of the laborer, the joy of the proprietors, the hesperian garden of the capitalist. One thousand less five shares were sold. The construction was begun August 23, 1803, completed in 1806, and cost nearly four hundred and twenty thousand dollars. Many of the heaviest capitalists were involved in it. As an enterprise it deserved a better fate, and a generous remuneration; but taste and the exigencies of business led the traveling public over the Ipswich road, through the shires of Ipswich and Salem, and away from this, which is now only a costly monument of the enterprise and perseverance of its proprietors. That portion of the road lying in this county was sold to the County Commissioners May 10, 1849, for two thousand two hundred dollars. Ipswich's share of it was two miles less seven rods, and the town was fortunate; for one mile of it has been very serviceable and none of it very expensive.

4. *The Railroad.*—This is a more satisfactory route than its air-line predecessor. It runs where the people want to go, where business and taste lead the way. It introduced comfort and speed. "The Eastern Railroad Company" was incorporated April 14, 1836. The iron-horse entered the town first in 1839. It was thought to be the beginning of a golden era; general business would be urged forward by steam, workshops enlarged, dwellings erected, wharves extended, vessels multiplied, the streets more populous, manufactories more varied and extensive, farms more remunerative, merchants busier and less exacting, and the whole hive of industry more alive by perpetual endowment. But the corporation has not cultivated our soil, nor built our houses, nor much enlarged our factories, nor removed the river impediments, nor retained our courts, nor fostered our commerce, nor enlarged our fisheries. It has, however, removed "the center" of the county to the extremes, and clustered the various trades around other manufacturing and commercial points. Yet we must not undervalue the road; it has uses peculiarly our own, which the crowded city and summer heat, and our taste and enterprise are developing year by year, and which will bring full compensation.

5. *The Choate Bridge.*—This bridge deserves a particular notice, because it was the first of such construction in these parts, and hence was so wonderful during its construction and has been so serviceable since. The Town and County built it in equal shares of the expense. The width was to be not less than twenty feet, the length between the abutments sixty-eight feet, with one pier, twenty by eight feet, and a water passage beneath each arch thirty feet. The guards were to be three feet high, fifteen inches thick at the bottom, and nine at the top. The building committee were Hon. John Choate, Aaron Potter, Esq.,

and Joseph Appleton, Esq. It was completed in 1764, at a cost of £996, 10*s.*, 6*d.*, 3*f.* It was widened, as it now is, in 1837.

6. *The Canal.*—In 1652, 22: 12, Thomas Clark and Reginal Foster were "to have ten pounds for cutting a passage from this river to Chebacco river of ten foot wide and soe deepe as a lighter laden may pass, and making a forde and foote bridge over." In 1669, the selectmen are "to take care that the bargain concerning the cutting of the creek at Castle-hill be forwarded." In 1681, February 7, any townsman has liberty to "perfect the cutting the Cut that comes up to Mr. Eppes, his bridge." In 1694, whoever will cut the Cut through the marsh at Mr. Eppes' shall have liberty,—who pays five shillings towards it "shall have liberty forever to pass as they have occasion;" others must pay three pence a cord or a ton, in money. "The Proprietors of the Essex Canal" were incorporated June 15, 1820. The corporators' names were William Andrews, Jr., Adam Boyd, Tristram Brown, Robert Crowell, John Dexter, Moses Marshall, Parker, Jonathan, Benjamin, Samuel, Francis, Jacob, Jr., Ebenezer, Jr., and Nathan Burnham: Dudley, George and Joseph Choate; Enoch, Winthrop and Joshua Low; Jonathan 4th, Jacob, Jonathan, Abel, Daniel, Perkins and Epes Story. The canal was opened in 1821; was half a mile long and cost one thousand, one hundred dollars. The stock was twenty-seven shares at forty dollars each, and paid nearly six *per centum*. It connected the Merrimack River with Chebacco River and so let in ship-timber at reduced rates. Late years it has been of little use, and within a year its walls have fallen in decay.

7. *Carriages.*—These were at first the rudest sort of vehicles, a cumbersome hay-rack, or a pair of wheels. Conveyance for business or to church was on horseback by saddle for a man, side-saddle for a female, or saddle and pillion for both. The first kind of vehicle for personal conveyance was introduced about 1725, and consisted of the body of a chaise upon a pair of wheels, and called a curricle. Richard Rogers, Esq., had one in 1730. About 1750, a top was put to the seat, which made it a full-grown chaise, one of which a year or two latter was owned by Rev. Samuel Wigglesworth. Family conveyance to church or social party was upon clean straw in the bottom of the cumbersome dray. In 1762 John Stavers began to run a two-horse curricle between Portsmouth and Boston, making the round trip in five days, and stopping two nights at Ipswich. The advent of the stage with four horses was as early as 1774. This welcome conveyance made two trips weekly between Newburyport and Boston, passing through Ipswich both ways. About 1800, horse-wagons began to be used. Merchandise by horse had formerly been carried in saddle-bags, wallets and panniers. The wagon-body at first set firmly upon the axle-trees, next upon wooden-springs, upon the principle of a spring-hole; then upon long leather straps, or thorough-braces; and, lastly, as now upon steel-springs. Rev. Felt remarked, in 1834: "Should the improvements in journeying be as great for two centuries to come as they have been in the two already elapsed, posterity will as much wonder that we are contented with the present degree of such improvements, as we do, that our ancestors were satisfied with their mode of travelling." This remark was penned five years before the steam-cars entered the town.

8. *The Mail Service.*—The earliest method of forwarding letters was by such means as chance offered. Thus William Jeffrey, "the old planter," brought a letter to John Winthrop, Jr., from Merry Morton in 1634, Jeffrey doubtless having been over to Morton's on business. The earliest stated carrying of the mails was on horseback, and during the early Indian Wars the messengers were watched for with the greatest anxiety and hailed with the greatest earnestness and suspense. *The Essex Gazette*, established 1768, the first newspaper published in Salem, was delivered to the subscribers here and as far east as Newburyport, by a post-rider for that express purpose. One of the most active of the distributors of that paper was Thomas Dimon, doubtless a descendant of our Mr. Andrew Diamond, who died in 1708. Early in 1775, our town chose five delegates to a convention of delegates from the several towns concerned, to establish a regular post between Newburyport and Cambridge. The convention met May 4th in this town; their action was to be binding upon all alike. Immediately following this convention—before May 24th—a post-office was established here by the Provincial Congress, and Deacon James Foster was the post-master. The following is a list of the post-masters that have served since Deacon Foster, with the dates of their respective appointments: Daniel Noyes, October 5, 1775; Joseph Lord, November 25, 1800; Isaac Smith, July 1, 1805; Nathan Jaques, September 14, 1807; Ammi Smith, October 5, 1818; James H. Kendall, August 10, 1829; Stephen Coburn, August 28, 1832; John H. Varrell, April 18, 1861; Joseph L. Ackerman, July 20, 1865; John H. Cogswell, January 3, 1868; Edward P. Kimball, August 2, 1886.

9. *Town-House.*—About two years after the full completion of the church edifice, the people began to desire a town-house and a school-house. They proposed a two-story building, with school-room on the first floor and town-house above. Accordingly, May 11. 1704, the town voted to build "forthwith, if the county would pay half, as it did for the town-house in Salem." Thus their economy devised the triple service of school, town and court-house in one. The same year, December 28th, a committee was chosen to contract for a building "about 32 feet long, about 28 feet wide and about 18 or 19 feet stud, with a flat roof raised about 5 feet." Abraham Felton was the contractor. A steeple was constructed upon it at a cost of £29 7*s.* 8*d.*, which was voted August 2, 1767.

Another town-house was built about 1794–95. This was also used for a court-house, and the county paid half the cost. Its use as a town-house was discontinued in 1841, when, October 12th, the town sold its interest to the county for twelve hundred and fifty dollars. From that time to 1843 they had no town-house. In that year, January 23d, the town instructed a committee to purchase the unused Unitarian church edifice, if it could be bought at two thousand dollars or less. Early in that year the purchase was made. The building has undergone considerable alteration and enlargement, and now is very serviceable for all the purposes of the town, for which such building is needed.

10. *A List of Voters* in town affairs, made by a committee for the purpose, to be corrected at the next town-meeting." Presented December 2, 1679: Maj. Gen. Denison, Mr. Thomas Corbet, Mr. William Hubbard, Elder Paine, Mr. John Rogers, Capt. John Appleton, Maj. Samuel Appleton, Corp^{l}. Jo: Andrews, Corp^{l}. Jo: Andrews, Nathaniel Adams, Nehemiah Abbott, Arthur Abbott, Naniel Bosworth, John Brewer, Sen^{r}., Tho: Borman, Edmund Bridges, Sergt. Belcher, Henry Bennett, Ens. Tho: Burnam, Thomas Burnam, Jr., Edward Bragg, Moses Bradstreet, John Burnam, Sen., John Caldwell, Sergt. Clarke, Corp. Tho: Clarke, Tho: Clarke, mill, Robert Cross, Sen., Mr. William Cogswell, John Choate, Mr. John Cogswell, Edw. Colburne, Rob't Day, John Denison, Sen^{r}., John Dane, Sen^{r}., Mr. Daniel Eppes, Nathaniel Emerson, Philip Fowler, Renold Foster, Sen^{r}., Renold Foster, Jr., Jacob Foster, Joseph Fellows, Eus. French, Tho: French, Abraham Fitts, Isaac Fellows, Ephraim Fellows, Isaac Foster, Abraham Foster, Dea. Goodhue, Wm. (?) Goodhue, Tho: Giddings, Joseph Goodhue, Mr. Richards, Daniel Hovey, Sen., Daniel Hovey, Jr., Sam: Hunt, George Hadley, Wm. (?) Howlett, James How, Sen^{r}., James How, Jr., Nehemiah Jewett, John Jewett, Samuel Ingalls, Nathaniel Jacobs, Tho: Jacobs, John Knowlton, Sen., John Kimball, Dea. Knowlton, Rob't Kinsman, Daniel Killam, Sen., Tho: Lull, Robert Lord, Sen., Robert Lord, Jr., John Layton, Thomas Lovell, Edwd. Lumas, John Lampson, Thomas Metcalf, John Newmarch, Sen., Dea. Pengrey, Aaron Pengry, Quart.—Mr. Perkins, Sergt. Perkins, Jacob Perkins, Abraham Perkins, Anthony Potter, Samuel Podd, Samuel Perley, Mr. Samuel Rogers, Walter Roper, Mr. Smith, Richard Smith, Wm. Story, Sen., Wm. Story, Jr., Symon Stace, Wm. Smith, Simon Tuttle, Nathaniel Treadwell, Thomas Varney, Mr. Jonathan Wade, Rob't Whittman, Obediah Wood, Mr. Wainwright, Sen., Mr. John Wainwright, Daniel Warnex, Sen., Nathaniel Warner, Capt. John Whipple, Isaiah Wood, James White, Wm. White, Nicholas Wallis, Corp^{l}. John Whipple, Twisford Westt, Nathaniel Wells, Rich: Walker, Joseph Whipple, Samuel Younglove, Sen., Samuel Younglove, Jr., Tho: Low, Mr. Jos: Willson, Nath'l Rust, Simon Chapman, Mr. Wm. Norton, Mr. Thomas Andrews, Joseph Quilter.

11. *Villages.*—The Town Village, with the First Church as a centre, is about one mile from the sea in latitude 42° 41′ *N.* and longitude 70° 50′ *W.*,—or exactly, according to the United States Coast Survey in 1850, the former runs along and crosses High Street from the front of the Lord Mansion to Mineral Street, and the latter crosses Market Street into Union. It is five and a half miles from the Linebrook Church; five and a quarter from Castle Neck or Patch's Beach, and three from the Almshouse. It is 27.8 miles from Boston, the State capital; 11.5 from Salem, the county capital; and 9.5 from Newburyport. Other villages, as reported by the United States Census of 1880, were Argilla, Candlewood, Goose, Ipswich, Linebrook, Mill, Peatfield, Turkeyshore and Willowdale.

12. *Population.*—The population about 1650, according to *Wonder-working Providence*, was "about one hundred and forty-families," which, we compute, was about 700 inhabitants. In 1680 there were one hundred and twenty-six voters, which, we presume, represented about 825 people. The growth has been slow, many decades making little increase, a few slightly retrograding. The population in 1830 was 2951; in 1885, 4207, with a proportion of 47 males to 53 females. The growth in fifty-five years has been 42 per centum, making an average *per annum* of 77-100 of 1 *per centum*. The growth of the last decade has been 12 *per centum*. There are at present, by the Manual of the Legislature for 1887, 1,016 voters. The census of 1880 reports 694 dwellings and 861 families, and a population of 3,699, of whom 3,257 are native-born and 442 are foreign-born; 219 being Irish, 129 English, 54 Canadians, 16 Nova Scotians, 11 Scotch and 6 Germans. There were 25 colored persons of African descent.

SCENERY.

1. *Its Character.*—Our town has no White Mountains, nor Berkshire Hills,—nothing wild, awful, or grand; but our landscape affords an agreeable variety and a peculiar beauty. The diversity of hill and vale, of meadow and marsh, of woodland and field, of river, and pond, and brook,—enhanced by the variety of the seasons; verdure and flower, the cattle upon the hillside and the husbandman in the field, the fruit-setting and the waving grass, the ripening apple and the purpling plum, the yellow corn and the nodding grain, and the enchanting beauty of our frost-painted forests, gratifies the eye, educates the heart and sheds over the mind a soft radiance of perennial joy.

2. *Pond.*—In the Linebrook District is a beautiful sheet of water, called successively Baker's, Pritchard's, Great and Hood's Pond, by which last name it is now known. Its surface is eighty feet above Town Hill, or one hundred and ninety-two feet above sea-level. It might be made an excellent reservoir for

fire or other purpose, for the village of Topsfield, or Ipswich, or perhaps both. Rev. Jacob Hood, of Lynnfield, who died, in 1885, at the age of ninety-four years, surveyed it, in his youth, and computed the area, at nearly eighty acres. In the winter of 1861–62, the writer surveyed it, and made, by traverse-table, sixty-five and nine-tenths acres. A third of the pond is in Topsfield, and a dozen years ago that town stocked it with perch and black bass, thus availing itself of a State law, which, for that purpose, gave that town exclusive control of the waters for fifteen years. On its bosom blooms the fragrant, white-petaled lily; and boats for rowing and sailing invite to healthful recreation; and it lends a charm to the surrounding hills. On the west, rising seventy feet above its surface, is a broad grazing field, where General Israel Putnam, in his boyhood, when in the tutelage of his stepfather, went to find and "fetch" the cows; and on the east is Burnham's Hill, named from James Burnham, who, in 1717, owned the land.

3. *Streams.*—The principal streams are Winthrop's, Norton's, Howlet's, Mile and Bull Brooks, which used to be good fishing for pickerel and trout. Other streams are North, or Egypt River (now Bull Brook), and Muddy and Ipswich Rivers, all of which have been serviceable for fishing, for irrigation and for mill-privileges. The Ipswich River rises in "Maple Meadow Brook," in the town of Burlington, and meanders through Wilmington, North Reading, Middleton and Topsfield, entering our town upon the southwest border. Upon its banks, throughout its length, are saw, grist, paper, cotton and woolen-mills, enhancing its picturesqueness by its utility.

4. *Elevation.*—The seeming discrepancy in the area of the pond, above mentioned, and the subsidence of Egypt River, serve to illu-trate the fact of a general elevation of the territory. Old deeds speak of ponds in the vicinity of the West Meadow, which are unknown to the present generation; yet there are swamps which answer to the location and size.

5. *Hills.*—We have two hills more than two hundred and fifty feet high, three more than two hundred, and nine more than a hundred and fifty. A thoughtful view from either is delightful and instructive. It was Heartbreak Hill, one hundred and ninety-six feet high, from which an ancient hunter's fair daughter watched in vain for the return of her sailor-lover, and died of a broken heart. Turner's Hill, two hundred and fifty feet high, shows the State Asylum at Danvers, and the nearer and magnificent view of forest, and farm, and river. The hill is upon the "Bracket Farm," in Willowdale. It is surmounted by a commanding look-out; the grove upon its slope has been prepared for picnic parties, an artificial pond of an acre's extent, drawing its supply from a generous spring above, is furnished with boat for recreation, and a huckleberry field, from which fifty bushels have been gathered in a day, is near and free to all. Drive-ways, and stables, and pond, and boat, and spring, and field, invite the weary to rest and recuperation, and the grounds which have recently been christened "Mount Turner," are fast becoming a noted public resort for peoples far and near. There is also Bartholomew's Hill, two hundred and four feet high, at whose foot once dwelt William Bartholomew, an early benefactor of the town; Turkey, two hundred and forty feet high; Jewett's, or Muzzy's, two hundred and twelve feet high; Little Turner, one hundred and ninety-seven feet high; Bush, one hundred and ninety-three feet high; Scott's, one hundred and eighty feet high; and Sagamore, one hundred and seventy-two feet high, where, instead of Sagamore in Hamilton, should rest the bones of our Masconnomet. Prospect Hill is two hundred and sixty feet above the sea-level, and shows us the White Mountains, Old Monadnock and Wachusett. Town, or Cemetery Hill, is one hundred and eighty-four feet high, and shows the village and surrounding farms, the Pow-wow Hill of Amesbury and the white church spires of Newburyport. Castle Hill, the grand old sentinel of "ye anciente tyme," located on the famous Ipswich Beach, at the mouths of Ipswich and Plum-Island Rivers, rises one hundred and sixty-eight feet, and embraces in her view the winding stretch of the river, the busy mills, the cattle-grazed hillsides, the cultivated fields, the bustling village, far lonely Agamenticus, the island-bound coast of Maine, the Isles of Shoals, the white crests of the ocean, the spreading sails of commerce, the headland and silvery beach and rolling surf of Cape Ann, the villages of Lanesville, Bay View and Annisquam, and the summer homes of Col. French and Gen. Butler, depicting a panorama of exquisite beauty and rare interest. This is the native hill of Mr. John B. Brown, of Chicago, who, after years of absence and success, having never forgotten the haunts of his boyhood, is now grading and terracing it, planting upon it trees and laying out drive-ways, and otherwise beautifying it and making it as attractive as the view from the summit.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

1. *John Winthrop, Jr.*, the founder of this town, was born in Groton, County Essex, England, February 12, 1606. He was a son of Governor John Winthrop of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. He graduated at Dublin University, at the age of nineteen; he became a barrister of the Inner Temple; he was a member of the relief expedition to the Huguenots, at Rochelle, in 1627; he came to this country in 1631, and to this town in 1633. He had two houses in town, one on the Essex Road, and one at Castle Hill. Soon after the settlement of the town, his first wife died; he had a second wife, Elizabeth, youngest daughter of Edmund Reade, of Wickford, County Essex, England. She was the mother of all his chil-

dren. After her father's death, her mother married the celebrated Hugh Peters. John visited England many times, and while there was serviceable in many ways to the colony. He was one of the founders of the Royal Society, and so wore the honorable title F.R.S. He was the founder of the Connecticut Colony, and several years its Governor. He was efficient in all his enterprises. He belonged to a highly esteemed family. After the dissolution of the monasteries almost the whole of the parish was given to them as their future domain. Why they resigned their wealth and distinction for the wilderness can hardly be conjectured. Governor Winthrop, the younger, "appears in history without a blemish. Highly educated and accomplished, he was no less upright and generous. In the bloom of life, he left all his brilliant prospects in the old world to follow the fortunes of the new. When his father had made himself poor in nourishing the Massachusetts Bay Colony, this noble son gave up voluntarily his own large inheritance to further the good work." He died in Boston, April 5, 1676.

2. *Governor Thomas Dudley* was born in Northampton, England, in 1576. He settled in this town soon after the settlement, and during or shortly after his first term as Colonial-Governor. He owned land on the north side of the town upon which he built a house, all of which he afterwards sold to Mr. Hubbard. He also owned land near Heartbreak Hill. He disposed of most of his estate in the town about the time of his second inauguration as Governor. He was a resident here some nine or ten years. He was assistant six years, Deputy-Governor thirteen years, and Governor four years. He died July 27, 1653.

3. *Governor Simon Bradstreet* was born in Holling, Horbling, Lincolnshire, England, March, 1603. He matriculated, July 9, 1618, as a sizer, Emmanuel College, when he was fourteen years old. In two years he took the degree of Bachelor of Arts, and, in 1624, the Master's degree. When he was about twenty-five years old, he married Anne Dudley, daughter of Governor Dudley, who became the first New England poetess. He came here in 1630. He was assistant forty-eight years, colonial secretary thirteen years, Deputy-Governor five years, and Governor ten years. He was a resident of this town about twenty years. In March, 1658, he was a resident of Andover. He died in Salem, March 27, 1697, at the great age of ninety-four years.

4. *Deputy-Governor Samuel Symonds* came from Yieldham, County Essex, England, and settled here in 1637–38. He was made fireman in 1638, was town clerk from 1639 to 1645, was professor of the Grammar School, deputy to the General Court from 1638 to 1643, then assistant to 1673, when he was elected Deputy-Governor, an office which he held till his death. He was long time a justice of the Quarter Court. He was one of the committee to draft a body of laws in 1645. He addressed Governor Winthrop, in 1646, urging more activity in the divine purpose in the settlement of New England—Christianizing the Indians. He was of the committee "to pass the articles of Confederation with the United Colonies," in 1643, and to examine the proceedings of the commissioners in May 10, 1648. The Legislature granted him five hundred acres of Pequod land, and in 1651 he was granted three hundred acres of the land beyond the Merrimac. He was one of these several committees: To visit and settle a government at Piscataqua, 1652; to prepare the case of the United Colonies against the Dutch and Indians, 1653; to prepare and present the case of the Colony to Cromwell, 1654; to receive the allegiance of the natives to Colonial authority, July 13, 1658; to consider the matter between the King's Commissioners and the Assembly, in 1665; to revise certain laws annulled by the King, one of which abolished the observance of Christmas, as a relic of Episcopacy, 1667. He held court in York County in 1672; and he often performed such service outside the jurisdiction of the Ipswich Court. He was away from home so much on public business, and his house was so remote from neighbors, that two men were appointed to guard it, during the war, in 1675. In December the enemy burned his mills at "Lamperee River."

He died in October, 1678. The Legislature as a token of respect, voted £20 towards his funeral charges. His first wife was daughter of Governor Winthrop, and was living September 30, 1648. His second wife was Rebecca, widow of Daniel Eppes, and died July 21, 1695, aged seventy-eight years. His estate was £2534 9*s*. His Argilla Farm is a noted district in town at present.

5. *Joseph Metcalfe* was born about 1605; he died August or September, 1665, aged sixty years. He held various town offices; he was deputy eight years between 1635 and 1661. He was a committee to collect gifts made by friends in England, in 1655, and also one of the Essex committee for trade. He owned an estate in the village, and lands in the Linebrook district, which continued in the family name till 1829, when it was sold to Samuel Dane Dodge.

6. *Nehemiah Jewett* was son of Jeremiah, who died in 1714. He was town officer in several capacities, was deputy sixteen years, between 1689 and 1709, three of which he was speaker. He was a justice of the Court of Sessions. He was on a committee to compensate for damages in the witchcraft trials. He was esteemed and respected in every walk in life. He died near the beginning of 1720.

7. *Robert Paine* was born in 1601. He was influential in town affairs. He was professor of the grammar school, and contributed very largely of his estate to its permanent establishment. He was a deputy three years. He was one of the Essex Committee for trade, in 1655; was county treasurer from 1665 to 1683, inclusive; was ruling elder of the First Church. He was an exemplary man. *Wonder-working Provi-*

dence says: "A right godly man, and one whose estate hath holpen on well with the work of this little commonwealth."

8. *Francis Wainwright* lived with Alexander Knight, inn-keeper in Chelmsford, England, and came with him to Ipswich. He was a soldier in the Pequod War, and was greatly applauded for his brave exploits. He became a wealthy merchant. He died suddenly, May 19, 1692.

His son Francis was born August 25, 1664; he graduated at Harvard, 1686. His first wife, Sarah Whipple, married March 12, 1686, died March 16, 1709, aged thirty-eight years. He made an engagement with Mrs. Elizabeth Hirst, of Salem, but died before married. He was engaged in commerce and as merchant. He bequeathed five pounds to the First Church. His estate was valued at nineteen hundred and fourteen pounds. He was a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company; was colonel, town clerk, representative, feoffee, general sessions, justice, commissioner and collector of excise for Essex. He died in the strength of ripe manhood, August 3, 1711.

9. Among the early settlers was that Spartan company who met at the Appleton Mansion, the 23d of August, 1687, and settled the question for themselves, that Andros, the King appointed Governor, had no right to tax the people without the consent of an assembly, and who *dared* "render a reason." That miniature Provincial Congress, who counseled for righteousness, principle and honest government, were Rev. John Wise, John Andrew, John Appleton, Robert Kinsman, William Goodhue, Samuel Appleton and Thomas French. The first two were of Chebacco, the rest doubtless of Ipswich. Goodhue had a house-lot in town in 1635, was afterwards large land owner, was commoner, was a Denison subscriber, was selectman, representative and a deacon. He was a man of rank and influence. He died in 1700, at the age of eighty-five. John Appleton was born about 1622, and came here with his father, Samuel, from Waldringfield, England, in 1635. His parental home in this town was a grant of six hundred acres of land, bounded by the river and Mile Brook, a part of which is still retained in the family name. He married 1651, Priscilla, daughter of Rev. Jesse Glover. She died February 18, 1697; he, November 4, 1699. He had been selectman, militia captain, marine captain, county treasurer, representative to the General Court sixteen years. Samuel Appleton, brother of the above John, was born about 1626. He married, first, Hannah, daughter of William Payne, and had Samuel, born 1644; second, Mary, daughter of John Oliver, of Newbury, December 2, 1656, and had ten children. She was born June 7, 1640, and died February 15, 1697. He was selectman, lieutenant-major, colonel, and with his regiment achieved distinction in the war against King Philip, in 1676. He was assistant six years, and was a member of the first council under the charter of William and Mary, 1692. He died May 15, 1696. Of his sisters, Sarah married Rev. Samuel Phillips, of Rowley, and Judith, Samuel Rogers, son of Rev. Samuel, April 8, 1657.

CHAPTER XLIII.

IPSWICH—(*Continued*).

ECCLESIASTICAL.

THE FIRST CHURCH.

1. *Origin and Methods.*—The church at this time was the object and end of government; and there can be no doubt that the organization of the government here and an organization for religious instruction and worship were practically simultaneous. Governor Winthrop recorded in his journal, November 26, 1633, that "Mr. Wilson (by leave of the congregation of Boston, whereof he is pastor), went to Agawam to teach the people of that plantation, because they have yet no minister." Again, he wrote, April 3, 1634, that himself "went on foot to Agawam, and because the people wanted a minister, spent the Sabbath with them, and exercised by way of prophecy, and returned home on the 10th." There was, therefore, no church organized at that time, but there must have been shortly thereafter; for Mr. Parker came the next month and Mr. Ward the second month. According to James Cudsworth, 1634, "a plantation was made up this year, Mr. Ward P[astor] and Mr. Parker T[eacher]." This was the ninth church in the colony and the third in the county.

The teacher appears to have been an assistant who might or might not be ordained. His service was merged into the duty of the pastor about 1745, though the idea still obtains in many parishes where the minister is installed as pastor and teacher. The Sabbath service ran thus: The pastor began it with prayer; the teacher then read and expounded a chapter; the ruling elders announced a Psalm, which was sung; the pastor read a sermon, and sometimes followed it with an extemporaneous address, consuming frequently an hour or more; singing followed; then a prayer and the benediction. In the afternoon service, just before the benediction, the congregation recited: "Blessed are they that hear the word of God and keep it." The singing was peculiar. One of the ruling elders read a single line of the Psalm, then such of the congregation as could sing, rose in different parts of the house and sang it; then other lines were successively read and sung till the conclusion of the Psalm. When elders were not chosen the deacons performed their duty, which gave rise to the phrase, "Deaconing the hymn." About 1790 the whole stanza was read at once, and about three years

later the whole hymn was read at once by the pastor. Singing choirs began to form as early as 1763, when seats were assigned them, but they were not elevated to the gallery till about 1781. A contribution every Sabbath was the rule till some part of 1763. To deposit the offerings, the magistrates and chief men first walked up to the deacon's seat, then the elders and then the congregation. There was also weekly service, which was as carefully observed as the service of the Sabbath. It was called "The Lecture," and was attended each week on Thursday, which was known as "Lecture Day." It consumed the best part of the day, beginning at eleven o'clock. It became monthly, in 1753, and our weekly prayer-meeting is its successor. The old churches had a practice of holding a Fast just before and in reference to calling a pastor. The practice has much fallen into disuse, much to our disadvantage and discredit, for if prayer with fasting means anything, to discontinue it is like cutting the telegraph wires when we need a message of instruction from a friend. It is observable that the various town offices, the status of eligibility to them, the offices in the church, the church services and requirements were a practical, business-like method of securing a punctual observance of religion and a highly moral and religious community. Cotton Mather said, in 1638, that this "was a renouned church, consisting mostly of such illuminated Christians, that their pastors in the exercise of the ministry might, in the language of Jerome, perceive that they had not disciples so much as judges."

The first to come among this people as pastor or teacher was Rev. Thomas Parker. He came in May, 1634, with a colony of about one hundred, who subsequently settled in Newbury. They sojourned here about a year, and Mr. Parker meanwhile exercised the office of teacher. He labored, says Mr. Sewell, "preaching and proving, that the passengers came over on good grounds, and that God would multiply them as he did the children of Israel."

The following will treat the several church societies by pastorates; for in all the work of the church and society the pastor takes the lead, and as is the pastor so are the people.

2. *First Pastorate.*—The first pastor of this church was Rev. Nathaniel Ward. He was the son of Rev. John Ward, and was born in Haverhill, England, about 1570. He was educated at Cambridge; he studied and practiced law, and he traveled on the Continent. On his return to England, he was ordained a minister of the gospel, at Standon, where, for the expression of his Puritan views, he was suspended, till he made a public recantation. He became a Puritan exile, and soon after his arrival here, in June, 1634, became pastor of this church. The early church records were destroyed by fire, and we have no account of him as undershepherd. His great learning fitted him for any of the professions; his want of health was the only impediment to a very high distinction. His legal attainments fitted him pre-eminently for the important civil and legal service of the colony, wherein he received many appointments, and they served him well in expounding clearly and cogently the immutable law of God, wherein he exercised his gifts of prophecy even after his resignation of his pastorate, which took place February 20, 1637.

3. *Church Edifice.*—It is probable that during the early part of his ministry the first house of worship was built. The earliest record referring to it is found in the public laws of September 3, 1635, which reads that "Noe dwelling house shallbe builte above halfe a myle from the meeting-house," (except mill-houses and farm-houses of such as have their dwelling houses in town), in Ipswich, Newbury, Hingham and Weymouth. It stood on the rise of ground where the *Wonder-Working Providence* says it "was a very good prospect to a great part of the town and was beautifully built."

Mr. Ward was appointed March 12, 1638, on a committee to draft a code of public laws. He was the leader and learning of the committee. He handed the result of their labors to the Governor in September, 1639.

About the middle of 1640 he, with assistance from Newbury, formed a settlement at Haverhill, where his son John became the minister. He was granted six hundred acres of land near Haverhill, May 10, 1643, probably, as Mr. Felt expresses it, "for his public services." He was chosen May 25, 1645, on a committee to codify the laws for the consideration of the next Legislature. The laws were printed in 1648. The justice and foresight which the laws embodied, are conspicuous in our present code. Soon after completing the work, he returned to England, and became minister of Shenfield, in county Essex. He once preached before the House of Commons. He published, in New and Old England, several works of a religious character, the most noticeable of which were "The Simple Cobbler of Agawam," and "The Simple Cobbler's Boy." He brought out the former in 1647. It illustrates the length to which good people could go in vindication of intolerance in days when antinomian and aggressive views were troubling many minds. "It is a sparkling satire," says one, "known and appreciated for its keenness and wit. Its character and style were suited to the times, and it served to encourage opposition to King and Parliament, and to moderate party excess."

He died in 1653, at the age of eighty-three years. He was a man, says Mr. Felt, whose "talents, attainments and piety were of a high order; and after an examination of his public and religious service, and with a good knowledge of the public's opinion of him,—since he had probably then left the colony, the *Wonder-working* Providence declared him, a judicious man, a very able preacher, and much desired."

His son John was minister of Haverhill. James

went to England with his father, and became a physician, and Giles Firman married a daughter and followed them over the sea.

Mr. Felt speaks of a Rev. Thomas Bracey, who resided here in 1635. Cotton Mather did not know him. He probably assisted Mr. Ward a short time, and early returned to England.

4. *Second Pastorate.*—The second pastorate was begun by Rev. John Norton. Rev. E. B. Palmer, of the tenth pastorate, says that Mr. Norton "was settled here in 1636, and continued in his relations to the church till about the year 1653, when he removed to Boston and became pastor of the old church of that place." He was probably a colleague with Mr. Ward, who resigned in 1637, and then became acting pastor till the settlement of Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, February 20, 1638, when he was ordained teacher. Mr. Norton was born May 6, 1606, in Starford, county Hertford, England. He entered Cambridge at fourteen years of age, was a brilliant scholar, and took his first degree. On account of parental pecuniary embarrassment, he left college to become usher and curate in his native place. His intellectual promise attracted the attention of many. A prominent Catholic sought to win him to Popery; his uncle offered him a "considerable benefice;" he declined a fellowship at Cambridge; he served meanwhile as chaplain to Sir William Masham. He could not subscribe to the church conformity, and cast in his lot with the Pilgrims.

He arrived at Plymouth October, 1635, and settled here the next year. He expected friends to follow him, and he asked for grants of land to be held in reserve for them. Accordingly, lands were reserved in several parts of the town. His friends did not come, and the lands are now known as the "Norton Reserves." He was an influential member of the Synod that heard the case of Mrs. Hutchinson in 1637; he composed, in 1645, the reply of the New England ministers to the questions on ecclesiastical government, proposed by Rev. William Apollonius, of Middlebury,—a work in Latin, the first book in that language printed in this country,—an able *exposé* of the usages of the church fathers. He was influential in the formation of the Cambridge Platform in 1647; and in 1651 he made the reply before the General Court to the treatise of Mr. William Pynchion. Rev. John Cotton, of Boston, who died in 1652, advised his church to call Mr. Norton. They did call him, and his friends and admirers here demurred. The controversy was long and warm, but he, having accepted the pastorate in 1653, was installed July 23, 1656. While of Boston he published several works, and was for two years in England as colonial agent. He was twice married, but had no children. He died April 5, 1663, in his fifty-seventh year.

He is said to have been learned and eloquent, an able disputant and a ready writer, a warm friend and a pious man. If failing he had, it was a natural irascibility, and a weakening under compliments, of which few men received or merited more. In this ordeal, among the most searching, his good sense and sterling piety kept his mind and heart. When he left England, a venerable minister remarked that "he believed that there was not more grace and holiness left in all Essex, than what Mr. Norton had carried with him." Mr. Felt remarks, "He was, undoubtedly, one of the greatest divines, who ever graced this or any other country. He was emphatically 'diligent in business, fervent in spirit, serving the Lord.' As a result of this, many souls were given him as the seals of his ministry."

The pastor of the church at this time was Rev. Nathaniel Rogers. He was the second son of John, best known as minister of Dedham, in England, and was born in 1598, while his father ministered in Haverhill, England. He was a lineal descendant of the Smithfield martyr. He had a pious mother, and rewarded her Christian care and instruction with evidence of early piety. He entered Emmanuel College, Cambridge, when about fourteen years old, and was eminently scholarly in his attainments and Christian in his deportment. He began his labors as chaplain, then he was curate, but conformity to the established church troubled him and he must flee its power. He had married Margaret Crane, of Coggshall, daughter of a gentleman of wealth, who offered to maintain him and his family if he would remain at home. His heart spoke his conviction, and he declined the generous offer. He arrived in Boston in November, 1636, "after a long and tedious voyage."

In 1637 he was a member of the Synod convened in reference to the antinomians; he received a call to settle at Dorchester, but chose to fraternize with Ward and Norton and Winthrop, and he was ordained here February 20, 1638. The same year he took the oath of freeman. Mr. Palmer says that "seventeen male members of his church in England came with him to this town," and that tradition names them,—William Goodhue, Nathaniel Hart, Nathaniel Dav, Robert Lord and Messrs. Warner, Quilter, Waite, Scott, Littlefield, Lambert, Lumax, Bradstreet, Dane and Noyes.

He was long in feeble health, and in consequence was subjected to periods of despondency. Hemorrhage of the lungs was his boding trouble. He was obliged to reduce his manual labors to their minimum, and his later sermons were not written. He, however, kept a diary; but, as he requested, it was burned after his death. He little realized how much value for other days he thus destroyed. He left a manuscript production, in fine, classical Latin, a plea for Congregational church government. He was much exercised in mind and heart when Mr. Norton went to Boston. He was burdened with his infirmity and with cares, and an attack of an epidemical influenza proved fatal. With his latest breath, he ex-

claimed,—"My times are in Thy hands." Thus the "reverend and holy man of God fell on sleep," July 3, 1655. During this pastorate, "this church, says *Wonder-Working Providence*, consisted of about one hundred and sixty souls, being exact in their conversation, and free from the epidemical diseases of all reforming churches, which under Christ, is procured by their pious Learned and Orthodox ministry." It calls the pastor "a very sweet, heavenly-minded man, . . . whose mouth the Lord was pleased to fill with many arguments for the defense of his truth." Rev. William Hubbard, his son-in-law, says of him,—"He had eminent learning, singular piety and holy zeal. His auditory was his epistle, seen and read of all that knew him." He left an estate of £1200. His widow died January 23, 1666. His children were John, Nathaniel, Samuel, Timothy, Ezekiel and the wife of Mr. Hubbard.

The amount of all the salaries had been £140 previous to 1652, but was then changed to £160, which in 1656 was paid "three parts in wheat and barley and fourth part in Indian."

Third Pastorate. From the death of Mr. Rogers till Mr. Cobbett's settlement, the church was without a pastor. This was the REV. THOMAS COBBETT, who was born in Newbury, England, in 1608. He studied at Oxford, then with Dr. Twiss, of his native town, and prepared for the ministry. Soon after his settlement, he was confronted with conformity. He came to this country, arriving June 26, 1637. He was colleague at Lynn, till he was invited to succeed Mr. Rogers. Mr. Palmer says he was settled in 1656.

5. *Church Edifice.*—During his pastorate a new house of worship was built. Ezekiel Woodward and Freegrace Norton contracted, June 10, 1667, to furnish timber, and June 18, 1668, to furnish shingles for a new meeting-house. The steeple was completed October 22, 1667, when the committee was discharged with thanks. In 1673 they voted to repair the house "with speed." In 1674 seats were put in the gallery. Early in 1677 a committee was to see about keeping the house "tite." In 1681 it had a "pouder Roome." It stood where the present First Church edifice stands. In 1665 the salaries amounted to £210.

Mr. Cobbett was a noted public man, sought out for his learning, his diligence, his readiness in debate, the dexterous use of his pen and his stability of purpose and action. Yet amid arduous public labors he found time to attend carefully and dutifully to his flock. In about four months, beginning in December, 1673, nearly ninety were added to the church, some in full communion and some by "taking the covenant." There were sixty-five males. Twenty-four of the "young generation" took the covenant. He conferred special privileges on the children of his laity in full communion, thus enacting in advance a half-way covenant, like that sanctioned by the synod shortly after and drafted, doubtless, by his own hand; a covenant so noble in purpose, so mischievous in practice. He was watchful of the needs of the pious poor, and promptly excommunicated the scandalous. His ministry was noted for its Christian fervor.

In 1643 his pen advocated a negative vote for the Assistants; in 1644 he preached the Election Sermon; in 1657 was of a committee of thirteen to answer ecclesiastical questions, proposed by the Legislature of Connecticut; in 1661 was one of a committee on "our patent," our laws and privileges and duty to His Majesty; in 1668 was one of six ministers to reason several Baptists out of their peculiar views; in 1676 was one of twenty-four to counsel in the case of Gorges and Mason; in 1677 he handed Increase Mather "a Narrative of Striking Events." He published, in 1645, "Defense of Infant Baptism," "Prayer," "First, Second and Fifth Commandments," "Toleration and Duties of Civil Magistrates;" in 1653, "Vindication of the New England Government," "Civil Magistrates in Religious Matters;" in 1656, "Duties of Children to Parents and of Parents to Children;" and in 1666 an Election Sermon. "He wrote more books than any man of his generation, yet not one has survived to this day."

He was a great man. The great and learned and wise of his day regarded him as their noble peer. He was equally at home in matters of Church and State. No invective deterred him, no flattery swerved him; once planted on his judgment of duty and righteousness, he remained firm and garnered success in the end. Says Mr. Felt, "So far as human imperfections permitted, he was a pastor after God's own heart." He went to his reward November 5, 1685, at the age of seventy-seven. Provisions for his funeral included a barrel of wine, half a hundred weight of sugar, men's and women's gloves, and spice and ginger for "Syder." His widow, Elizabeth, died the next year. Three children crossed the bound of life before he did and three remained to mourn,—Samuel, Thomas, John, who was located at Newbury at the time, and Elizabeth. His estate was valued at £607. His epitaph, as conceived by the great Cotton Mather, ran thus: "Stay, passenger, for here lies a treasure, Thomas Cobbett, of whose availing prayers and most approved manners, you, if an inhabitant of New England, need not be told. If you cultivate piety, admire him; if you wish for happiness, follow him."

This was the office of

REV. WILLIAM HUBBARD,

Whose father was William and who was born in England in 1621, and crossed the ocean with his father in 1630. He graduated at Harvard College in 1642, a member of the first class. The same year, 4th July, he was called as colleague with Mr. Cobbett, and, says Mr. Palmer, was "probably settled as such in 1656," which statement seems corroborated by a vote of the town, recorded in Mr. Cobbett's pastorate. This pastorate he occupied till his death, September 14, 1704, when he was eighty-three.

In 1667 he testified against the "Old South, in Boston, in the settlement there of John Davenport; in 1671 he and fourteen others memorialized the Legislature against the censure of its committee for advising the formation of South Church Society in Boston; in 1675 he was of a council to advise in Mr. Jeremiah Shepard's case, as minister in Rowley; in 1676 he preached the Election Sermon. About 1677 he brought out his "Troubles with the Indians in 1676–77," to which was appended "The War with the Pequods" in 1637, and also "Troubles with the Indians from Piscataqua to Pemaquid." The works are now known as "Hubbard's Indian Wars." In May, 1680, he had compiled a history of New England. The Legislature voted him £50 for the work. It was then much needed, was done in a commendable manner and has proved to be of great value. He was appointed to "manage" the Commencement of Harvard College, July 1, 1684; and, in June, 1688, he was appointed by Andros acting president at the following Commencement, a high honor which he probably did not accept. In 1699 he arraigned the Brattle Street Church, in Boston, for irregularity in doctrine, baptism and communion. In 1701 his decrepit age was overburdensome and he asked for more assistance; and in 1702 gave up pastoral labors entirely, when his people voted him a gift of £60, and in 1704 he rested from his toils.

6. *Church Edifice.*—In 1686 all the salaries paid were £160, and in 1696 the salaries were paid, one-third money and "the rest in pay." The same year the church edifice was repaired, but November 4th, two years later, Abraham Perkins contracted to build a new house, for £900—£500 money and £400 as money. The house was to be "26 feet stud, 66 feet long and 60 feet wide, with ⅔ gables on every side, with one Teer of gallery round said house; as far as necessary, having five seats in the gallery on every side thereof, with as many windows or lights as the committee or said Perkins can agree for." In 1700 Abraham Tilton agreed to finish the meeting-house, and Abraham Perkins is released. The house stood where the present First Church edifice stands. The same year the old bell, the gift of "Hon. Richard Saltonstall," was sold to Marblehead for £37½, and a new one, weighing 200 pounds, was bought in England for £72. In 1702 a clock was purchased.

Mr. Hubbard's first wife was Margaret Rogers, daughter of Rev. Nathaniel, a lady of rare social worth. Their children were John and Nathaniel, and Margaret, the wife of John Pynchon, of Springfield. His last wife was Mary, widow of Samuel Pearce, who died in 1691. She was alive in 1710.

He was a judicious adviser, a faithful laborer in the Master's vineyard and righteous in his intercourse with men. John Dunton said of him: "The benefit of nature and the fatigue of study have equally contributed to his eminence. He is learned without ostentation or vanity, and gave all his productions such a delicate turn and grace, that the features and lineaments of the child make a clear discovery and distinction of the father; yet he is a man of singular modesty, of strict morals and has done as much for the convertion of the Indians, as most men in New England." He "certainly was, for many years, the most eminent minister in Essex County, equal to any in the Province for learning and candor, and superior to all of his contemporaries as a writer." For his great labors and his moral and Christian worth, he is held in grateful remembrance.

Another minister of this pastorate was Rev. John Rogers, M.D., the eldest son of Rev. Nathaniel, of the second pastorate. He came to this country in 1636, with his parents. He entered Harvard College in his tenth year, and graduated in 1649. He studied medicine and divinity. He wore the title "Rev.," though there does not appear to be any record of his ordination. He was called here to preach July 4, 1656, by Mr. Hubbard, and afterwards became assistant to him and Mr. Cobbett. Tradition assigns to him "The Lecture," as his particular service, and refers to his small salary as commensurate with his duty. He was the while, the principal physician in town. Although his youth was marked with periods of hereditary despondency, the business of active life wore off the sharp angles of his temperament, and made him one of the great men of his day. He was invited to the presidency of Harvard College upon the death of President Oakes. He accepted and entered upon his office August 12, 1683. This was a place of honor and responsibility, for which his dignity and firmness, his deportment and culture, his wisdom and learning, particularly fitted him; but his sun hardly rose above the morning's gray twilight. Just before his first commencement he was prostrated by a "sudden visitation of sickness." Mr. Hubbard, of this pastorate, was appointed to "manage" the commencement, and Mr. Rogers died on the *regular* Commencement Day, July 2, 1684.

His wife was Elizabeth, daughter of Gen. Daniel Denison, and died June 13, 1723, at the age of eighty-two years. His children were Elizabeth, Margaret, John, Daniel, Nathaniel and Patience. His tomb is in Cambridge, and his epitaph is as follows:

"There is committed to this earth and this tomb a depository of kindness, a garner of divine knowledge, a library of polite literature, a system of medicine, a residence of integrity, an abode of faith, an example of Christian sincerity. A treasury of all these excellencies was the earthly part of Rev. John Rogers, son of the very learned Rogers, of Ipswich, and grandson of the noted Rogers of Dedham, Old England, the excellent and justly beloved president of Harvard College. His spirit suddenly taken from us July 2, A. D., 1684, and in the fifty-fourth year of his age. Precious is the part that remains with us even while a corpse."

Another minister of this pastorate was Mr. John Dennison, whose father was John, whose grandfather was Gen. Daniel and whose mother was Martha Symonds, daughter of the deputy-governor. John fitted for college at the grammar school, and

graduated from Harvard in 1684. Mr. Palmer says that, according to generally received testimony, he became the actual pastor of this church in 1686. Other statements represent him to have been elected to the pastoral office, but on account of failing health, he was not ordained. He was permitted, however, to render pastoral service to this people for quite three years. Mr. Felt says: "He engaged, April 5, 1686, to preach one-quarter of the time as helper to Mr. Hubbard, and the next year one-third of the time. The affection of this people was strong towards him, and their estimation of his merits uncommonly high. They elected him for their pastor, but he was not ordained." He was, no doubt, a young man, of rare attainments and virtue; his ill-health, however, crippled his activity, and finally prostrated him. He slept in Jesus September 14, 1689, in his twenty-fourth year.

His wife was Elizabeth Saltonstall, daughter of Hon. Nathaniel, of Haverhill. She survived him, and married Rev. Rowland Cotton, of Sandwich, and died in Boston July 9, 1726. He left a son John, who was born in 1689. Cotton Mather describes him as "a gentleman of uncommon accomplishments and expectations," and "a pastor of whose fruit the church in Ipswich tasted with an uncommon satisfaction."

7. *Fourth Pastorate.*—This was Rev. John Rogers', son of Rev. John, president of Harvard College, a native of this town, born July 7, 1666. He studied in the grammar school and graduated at Harvard College in 1684, when his father died and when he was eighteen years old. He was called to this church during the service of Messrs. Hubbard and Dennison, March 9, 1686. He complied as early as 1688, and December 24, 1689, was asked to settle. In relation to his salary there was a difference of one hundred acres of land, and for that reason he was not ordained till October 12, 1692. In 1702 Mr. Hubbard was too feeble to preach, and August 13th Mr. Rogers acceded to the full ministerial duty, wherein he continued till the next year, when Rev. Jabez Fitch came as colleague.

During this pastorate, in 1712, the old diminutive turret was removed to give place to a commodious belfry. In 1743 there was a very extensive revival of religion, as a result of the evangelical labors of Revs. Whitefield and Tennant, a full account of which was published by Mr. Rogers in the "Christian History."

In 1726, when he had served his people, he said, "thirty-seven years," he had sold a part of his property and mortgaged the rest to meet the requirements of his family, his salary having depreciated through a depreciated currency. Although depreciation was a common burden, his people promptly lifted his mortgage by a gift of a hundred pounds, and in 1733 they gave him forty pounds to repair his house. He died December 28, 1745, and his society voted a funeral benefit of two hundred pounds old tenor. His portrait is with the Essex Historical Society.

His first wife was Martha Smith, whom he married January 12, 1687. His second wife was Martha Whittingham, daughter of William, whom he married November 4, 1691, and who died March 9, 1759, at the great age of eighty-nine years. His children were John, Samuel, Nathaniel, Richard, Elizabeth (who died an infant), Martha, Mary, William and Daniel and Elizabeth, twins.

Mr. Felt says of him: "Such was the strength of his mind, the amount of his acquisitions in learning and theology, the prominence of his piety and the persevering labors of his ministry, that he held a high rank in the estimation of his people and of the public." Mr. Wigglesworth, of the Hamlet, January 5th, the Sabbath after the funeral, thus referred to him: "If the tree is to be known and judged by its fruits, we have reason to think him as eminent for his piety as learning; as great a Christian as a divine. There are many living witnesses of the success of his ministerial labors, as was a multitude who went before him to glory, both of whom shall be his crown when the great Shepherd shall appear. His old age was not infirm and decrepid, but robust, active and useful, whereby he was enabled to labor in word and doctrine to the last, and quit the stage of life in action."

Another minister of this pastorate was Rev. Jabez Fitch, who was the son of Rev. James Fitch, of Norwich, Conn. He graduated from Harvard College in 1694, was tutor there 1697–1703, and was elected Fellow in 1700. The town voted, October 5, 1702, to call him to the office of assistant to Mr. Rogers. He accepted December 11, 1702, and was ordained October 24, 1703. His settlement was £150 current money. His salary was £60 for the first year; £70 for the second year; and £80 for the third year, "and so to continue." In 1724 he complained that his support was not sufficient, and though the parish tried hard to meet his demand, he began to preach at Portsmouth with a view to settle there, which he did the next year. His claim upon this society was adjusted by referees September 22, 1726.

He assisted Dr. Belknap in the preparation of the "History of New Hampshire. The earthquake of 1727 called forth a sermon which was published. He was a man of great learning, had a strong, clear mind, a cheerful disposition, a benevolent spirit and a pious heart. He was eminently useful during a long life, falling asleep in his seventy-fifth year, November 22, 1746. His wife was Elizabeth Appleton, daughter of Col. John, married June 10, 1704.

8. *Fifth Pastorate.*—This we must call Rev. Nathaniel Rogers' pastorate. He was son of Rev. John, who then occupied the pulpit, and was born March 4, 1702. He fitted for college at the Grammar School, and graduated from Harvard College in 1721. He succeeded Mr. Fitch, and assisted his father for a year or more, when August 16, 1726, the church gave him a call to settle. In the call the society concurred September 15th, and he was ordained October 18

1727, as colleague. His salary was £130 annually for three years, and £150 annually thereafter.

9. *Church Edifice.*—Mr. Rogers built a new meeting-house. The frame was raised April 19, 1749. It was twenty-six feet stud, forty-seven feet wide and sixty-three feet long. On either side of the broad aisle were seats instead of the old box-pews, one row of seats for females, and the other for males. The house was supplied with wood-stoves. Hitherto the foot-stoves had furnished all the warmth. In 1743 there was a fine of fifteen shillings for leaving a foot-stove in church, and of five shillings for the careless use of them. The weather-cock surmounting the steeple was one hundred and eighteen feet above the base.

In 1739 Mr. Rogers preached a memorial of Col. John Appleton; in 1743 he made with others a written statement "that there has been a happy and remarkable revival of religion in many parts of this land, through an uncommon divine influence, after a long time of great decay and deadness." This was the great awakening that was felt throughout New England. This church invited Messrs. Tennant and Whitefield, and engaged, heart and soul, in the work, with these gratifying results: In the five years following 1741, during the ministry of father and son, one hundred and forty-four persons were added to the church, one hundred and twenty-three of whom are said to have been the result of the Whitefield revival. In 1746 there were more than three hundred members. The same year he refused the assistance of Mr. John Walley as colleague. Mr. Walley had declined pulpit exchanges with a minister who had officiated for a new church, in Boston, composed of members from other orthodox churches. The stand taken by Mr. Rogers caused a deep excitement, and the germination of the South Church. In 1747 he helped to ordain Mr. Cleaveland over a new church in Essex; in 1763 preached the sermon at the ordination of Mr. John Treadwell, of Lynn, and a memorial of Deacon Samuel Williams of his own church, which were printed. In 1765 he gave the right-hand of fellowship to Rev. Joseph Dana of the South Parish; in 1752 he asked for a colleague, and offered to relinquish a third of his salary for that purpose. He had assistance March 30, 1764, because of sickness. His natural infirmities had been to him for many years a cause of anxiety, and they seemed to grow with his years. He owned their power and peacefully submitted May 10, 1775.

Mary Leverett Denison, daughter of President Leverett of Harvard College, and widow of Col. John Denison, was his first wife, married December 25, 1728. His second wife was widow Mary Staniford, married May 4, 1758, and died in 1780. His children were Margaret, Sarah, Elizabeth, Martha, Lucy and Nathaniel.

He was emphatically a strong-minded man; he could state exactly his reason for the hope within him; he could not brook irregularity in faith or practice. Clearly perceiving his way, he pursued it without fear or favor and with few or many. His object was a clear conscience. He was an industrious man and charitable. The welfare of his church was his pride, and deeds of kindness his solace. Read the record upon the tomb:

"A mind profoundly great, a heart that felt
The ties of nature, friendship and humanity,
Distinguished wisdom, dignity of manners;
Those marked the man; but with superior grace,
The Christian shone in faith and heavenly zeal,
Sweet peace, true greatness, and prevailing prayer.
Dear Man of God! with what strong agonies
He wrestled for his flock and for the world;
And, like Apollos, mighty in the Scriptures,
Opened the mysteries of love divine,
And the great name of Jesus!
Warm from his lips the heavenly doctrine fell,
And numbers, rescued from the jaws of hell,
Shall hail him blest in realms of light unknown,
And add immortal lustre to his crown."

Mr. Rogers' assistant was Rev. Timothy Symmes, who was born in Scituate, graduated from Harvard, and ordained at East Haddam, Conn. He began his work here in 1752, and labored in season and out of season, in whatever his hands found to do, for the stability of the church and the good of souls. He was called to his reward in the midst of his usefulness, and the ripeness of his manhood. He died April 6, 1756, in his forty-first year. His wife was Eunice Cogswell, daughter of Francis and Hannah. He left two sons,—Ebenezer and William, born about 1755 and 1756; his widow married Richard Potter.

10. *Sixth Pastorate.*—This was held by Rev. Levi Frisbie. Mr. Frisbie was born in April, 1748, at Brantford, Conn. At the age of sixteen he joined Dr. Wheelock's Indian Charity School, at Lebanon, where he became seriously affected, and began a preparation for college, which he completed with Dr. Bellamy, of Bethlehem. He entered Yale College and remained more than three years, but graduated at Dartmouth College, with the first class, in 1771. He was much attached to Dr. Wheelock, interested in the permanency of the school, and was devoted to the cause of Indian education. While a senior at Dartmouth College, he sung the labors, the anxieties and the remarkable occurrences attending the removal of the school and college and their establishment at Hanover. His poem concludes as follows

"Thus *Dartmouth*, happy in her sylvan seat,
Drinks the pure pleasures of her fair retreat;
Her songs of praise in notes melodious rise,
Like clouds of incense to the listening skies;
Her God protects her with paternal care
From ills distractive and each fatal snare;
And may he still protect, and she adore,
Till Heaven and earth and time shall be no more."

To prosecute his desire to Christianize the Indians, he and, at the same time, David McClure were ordained missionaries at Dartmouth College May 21, 1772, and the next month proceeded to occupy their chosen field along the Muskingum. But the year

belonged to the decade of war, the country was exercised with questions of statecraft, and agitated with the precursors of war, and, more than all to him, the Indian was inimical to the English. He abandoned his mission, traveled in Canada, labored awhile in Maine, and visited the South. In March, 1775, he became an assistant to Mr. Rogers, and after the death of that venerable pastor, accepted a call to settle, and was installed February 7, 1776. His salary was one hundred pounds. He was patriotically devoted to his calling. His heart and hands were warm and active for his country. He labored for her salvation, and hoped as he hoped for the salvation of souls. As his heart succeeded in his country's welfare, so the Blessed Spirit aided him in the church. Especially was His power manifest in the years 1799 and 1800, when twenty-eight were added to the church. During his ministry there were added eighty of such as should be saved.

In 1781 he published an oration upon the announcement of peace; in 1784 a memorial of Rev. Moses Parsons, of Newbury; in 1799 two fast sermons and a fellowship address at the ordination of Mr. Josiah Webster; in 1800 a eulogy on George Washington and a thanksgiving sermon; and in 1804 a sermon before the Society for Propagating the Gospel among the Indians.

In 1805 his church contributed largely to the formation of a Baptist society in town, which not a little disturbed the well-earned quiet and the tender sensibility of his age. His last official service was to administer the sacrament September 21, 1805. He died February 25, 1806. His parish voted a funeral benefit of one hundred dollars, and Rev. Asahel Huntington, of Topsfield, preached at his interment the 28th.

His first wife was Zevirah Sprague, eldest daughter of Captain Samuel Sprague, of Lebanon, Conn. She was born March, 1747, and she died August 21, 1778, in her thirty-second year. His second wife was Mehitable Hale, of Newburyport; married June 1, 1780, and died April 6, 1828, aged ninety-six. His children were Mary, Sarah, Levi, Nathaniel and Mehitable. In his personal appearance he was, says Mr. Felt, "of light complexion, above the common height, and rather large." Dr. Dana, of the South Church, pays the following tribute to his memory: "His manner was serious, his conception lively, his expression natural and easy. He was interesting and profitable. He read, thought and conversed much. His labors were blessed. In his catechizing and visits he was affectionate. He had great tenderness of conscience. The loss to his family and flock was great. The vicinity was greatly bereaved. The Society for Promoting the Gospel have, in him, lost a worthy member. Zion at large will mourn. But to him it is believed that death was a blessed release."

11. *Seventh Pastorate.*—Mr. Frisbie's successor was Rev. David Tenney Kimball. He was born in Bradford November 23, 1782, to Lieutenant Daniel and Elizabeth-Tenney Kimball. He united with the Bradford Church November 13, 1803, where his parents had consecrated him in baptism years before. He dated his conversion from a period in his college life. He graduated at Harvard College in 1803, taught one year in Phillips Academy, Andover, studied divinity, or theology, with Rev. Jonathan French, of same place, and was approbated by the Andover Association August 6, 1805. He was introduced to this pulpit by Rev. Mr. Frisbie on the communion Sabbath, September 22, 1805. He was called to settle, without a dissenting voice, June 17, 1806, was ordained October 8th following, and continued in the ministry till 1851, when he withdrew from the activities and responsibilities of pastor, retaining, however, his relationship till his death, February 3, 1860. He had a settlement of six hundred dollars and a salary of six hundred dollars.

Father Kimball's was a long and useful service. He left nearly two thousand fairly written sermons, and the Good Spirit crowned his labors with remarkable success, as appears from his last pulpit utterance —his semi-centennial address, October 8, 1856. At the time of his settlement the membership of the church was twelve males and forty-one females—a total of fifty-three. He had admitted three hundred and fifty—three hundred and twelve by profession, and thirty-eight by letter. The address further states that he had attended more than a thousand funerals, nine hundred and seventy of which were in his own parish; he had united in marriage more than a thousand persons; and that only two of the members of the church when he was ordained were then living.

He was an esteemed and useful member of the Essex North Association of Ministers, was chosen Scribe May 12, 1812, and continned in the office till his death. He survived all who were members of the association when he was settled, and all but two of those who were clergymen in the county at that time. He was a warm friend of the cause of education, a member of the American Educational Society, whose object it was to assist young men preparing for the ministry, and did much to enlist the efforts of the churches in its behalf, and his service for the schools in his own town was valuable.

The following are among his publications: "A Fellowship Address at the Ordination of Messrs. Cyrus Kingsbury and Daniel Smith as Missionaries to the West," in 1815; "Female Obligations and Disposition to Promote Christianity," in 1819; "Sermon before the Massachusetts Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge," "The Installation Sermon to Rev. William Ritchie, of Needham," and "Ecclesiastical History of Ipswich, in 1821; "The Fellowship Address at the Ordination of Mr. Daniel Fitz over the South Church," in 1826; "An Address before the Essex County Foreign Mission Society," in 1827 "An Address before the Essex County Auxiliary

Educational Society," in 1828; "First Church Centennial Sermon," in 1834; "Sermon," in 1838; "Sermon," in 1839; "Last Sermon in Old Meeting-house," in 1846; "First Sermon in the New Meeting-House, in 1847:" "Semi-Centennial of his Ordination," in 1856; "Memorial of Rev. Isaac Braman, of Georgetown," and "Memorial of Rev. Gardiner B. Perry, D.D., of Groveland,"—which he was preparing for the press, when prostrated with his last sickness —in 1860. He also contributed to various religious publications.

He married October 20, 1807, Dolly Varnum Coburn, daughter of Captain Peter and Elizabeth-Poor Coburn, of Dracut, and granddaughter of Deacon Daniel Poor, of Andover. They had seven children and one adopted child. See "Noted Natives" below.

Mr. Kimball was a learned, laborious and eminently useful man; he had a welcome and honored place among the titled and learned men of his day; yet it was not beneath his dignity to recite nightly, with his worthy consort, their cradle hymn:

"Now I lay me down to sleep,
I pray the Lord my soul to keep;
If I should die before I wake,
I pray the Lord my soul to take,"

—a practice which seldom outgrows childhood, but which, if continued, would tend to banish dissipation and profanity, to polish speech, and to ennoble character.

Says one who knew him: "The distinct impression which he leaves on the memories of all who knew him, is his fidelity and untiring industry. As the old divines used to say, he was a painful preacher, a painful pastor, a painful scholar, a painful man. This mark pervaded all his performances. His voice was confined in its compass and husky, and yet he contrived to impress on his audience the conclusion of most of his sermons. He always disappointed you on the right side, making a deeper impression than you had anticipated. His sermons were very carefully written. He visited his people with uncommon diligence. He was a respectable scholar in sacred Greek, but began Hebrew after he was forty years old, and by perseverance enabled himself to profit by the exegetical commentaries of the times. O, departed brother! if we have something to forget, we have much to remember; and may thy activity and devotion preach to us forever."

The remains of this worthy man repose in the High Street Cemetery, where a monument is erected to his memory. The shaft is of Oak Hill granite, and is fifteen feet high, surmounted with a cross and crown. The inscription reads:

"Rev. David Tenney Kimball, born in Bradford, Mass., Nov. 23, 1782: graduated at Harvard College in 1803, ordained the eleventh Pastor of the First Congregational Church in Ipswich, Oct. 8, 1806, in which relation he died, Feb. 3, 1860, aged 77 years.'

"A fine classical scholar, a vigorous writer, a man of unsullied purity and humble piety, a kind husband and tender parent, a sincere friend, a faithful pastor."

"When the summons came, catching a glimpse of heaven, he said, 'The gates of the New Jerusalem are open, I see within the city.'"

12. *Eighth Pastorate.*—Rev. Robert Southgate succeeded Father Kimball. Mr. Southgate was born in Portland, Me., January 28, 1808. His parents were Horatio and Nabby-McLellan Southgate. He fitted for college in his native city, and graduated at Bowdoin College in 1826, when he was eighteen years old. He dated his conversion from the week of prayer for colleges; he unhesitatingly consecrated himself, as four of his other brothers had done, to the Christian ministry. He completed the prescribed course at the Andover Theological Seminary, then studied a year in the Yale Divinity School, New Haven, Conn. After spending a year in various ministerial labors, he was called to the Congregational Church, at Woodstock, Vt., and he entered upon the duties January 4, 1832. During the winter of 1834–35, he experienced a shower of divine grace, which brought into the churches in the town more than two hundred persons, and the greater part to the Congregational Church. In 1836, his health failing, he resigned, and he was dismissed October 26th. He was settled over the Congregational Church in Wethersfield, Conn., February 7, 1838, as colleague pastor with Rev. C. J. Tenney, D. D., and became full pastor on the resignation of Dr. Tenney, January 10, 1841. He had there three marked seasons of religious interest. The church membership was enlarged by one hundred and seventy-three accessions. He requested a dismission, which took place November 22, 1843. The church keenly regretted his withdrawal. He was next settled over a young and small Presbyterian Church, in Monroe, Mich., in October, 1845. In two years the society built and furnished a beautiful and commodious house of worship; and while he was there, he experienced many seasons of refreshing and many accessions to the church. Malarial troubles in his family forced him to relinquish the pleasant place and goodly heritage for the green hills and healthful air of New England.

In December, 1850, he was called unanimously and urgently to this church, and was installed July 24th following. Here also his labors were blessed with many tokens of divine favor, and one hundred and twenty-five persons became members of the church. In his seventeenth year he tendered his resignation, which was not accepted. He renewed it, and was dismissed March 31, 1867. He then preached a year in Hartford, Conn., while the pastor of the church was in Europe; then a year at Oxford, N. H.; and then a year at Hartford, Vt., where he was called to settle, and was installed December 20, 1871. During his service there, the society repaired and beautified the house of worship, and the church membership was enlarged. In that vineyard of the Lord, "he was not for God took him." He died of apo-

plexy, Thursday, February 6, 1873, while visiting his daughter at Woodstock, and passed

> "In the wink of an eye, or the draught of a breath,
> From the blossom of health to the paleness of death."

Mr. Southgate contributed forty-two years of earnest Christian labor; five churches were blessed and strengthened by his efficient ministry, and left harmonious and sorrowing at his departure. Says the memorial of him: "He was a sensitive, modest, self-distrustful man, whose full merit was slowly discovered. He was a plain, direct, earnest preacher, glorying in the cross of Christ. He had a tropical exuberance of feeling and language through which he always made Christian truth seem like a garden well-sown and cultured, and bearing precious fruit in abundance. He had an extraordinary gift in prayer, that showed he dwelt in the prophet's own chamber, whose windows looked out upon the glorious heavens. He excelled as a pastor, his heart was quick and sympathetic, and carried on it the burden of his people." That "*he was a good minister of Jesus Christ*" was the people's verdict.

Mr. Southgate married, October, 1832, Miss Mary Frances Swan, daughter of Benjamin Swan, Esq., of Woodstock. She died October 2, 1867. There were five children. One died young, the others are worshippers with the people of God, one of whom is a minister of the gospel; another, a native of this town, is noticed in "Noted Natives" below.

13. *Ninth Pastorate.*—Rev. Thomas Morong was installed February 5, 1868. His pastorate continued about eight years, closing January 12, 1876, which we believe was a season of general prosperity.

14. *Tenth Pastorate.*—Rev. Edwin Beaman Palmer was born in Belfast, Me., September 25, 1833. He fitted for college at North Bridgeton, 1850–52; graduated at Bowdoin College August 6, 1856, and at the Bangor Theological Seminary in 1859. For a year, while studying in the Seminary, he held the principalship of the high and grammar schools in Brunswick. He was ordained, September 20, 1859, over the Second Congregational Church in New Castle, which he resigned because of nervous exhaustion from over work, and from which he was dismissed, February 10, 1862. From October 10, 1862, to March, 1863, he served in the field as chaplain of the Nineteenth Regiment Maine Volunteer Infantry, and from March to October, 1864, the Pine Street Church, Lewiston, when the pastor was temporarily in the army. He was installed, December 26, 1864, at Southbridge, Mass., and was dismissed, May 3, 1869, to accept a call to the Third Congregational Church, Chicopee, where he was installed June 10, following. That pastorate closed March 23, 1875, in which year he was called to this church, where he was installed January 12, 1876. He gave a devoted Christian service, amid many untoward circumstances. "His first year," said a friend, "seemed full of funerals; it seemed as if he had been called to bury the people." The same year the seminary closed, and some fifty pupils were taken from his congregation. He received eleven members by profession of faith and seventeen by letter. There were two baptisms, and strange enough there were, during the time, but two births where both parents were in the church, and only four where either parent was a member. He soleminized seventy marriages, and attended two hundred and three funerals, forty-one of which were members of his church. He was dismissed, upon his request, May 3, 1885, and June 17th, following, was elected treasurer of the Massachusetts Home Missionary Society, where he now serves, with office in Boston and residence in Winchester.

15. *Eleventh Pastorate*—Rev. George H. Scott is the present incumbent. He is a native of Bakersfield, Vt,; he graduated at Williams College in 1865, and at the Andover Theological Seminary in 1873. The same year he became pastor at Plymouth, N. H., where he continued with gratifying results till 1881, when he returned to the Andover Seminary to pursue a post-graduate course, during which he received a call to settle over a church at Lawrence, Kansas. There he labored and nourished a healthful growth of the church for two years, when he was obliged to resign and return East. He supplied one year at Rockland, Me. Upon call he was installed here December 30, 1885.

The church and society are practically free from debt, and meet their current expenses without difficulty. The church is heartily united and enjoying a healthful growth, there having been additions at each communion season during the year. There is now, Christmas, 1886, a membership of about one hundred and seventy-three.

16. *Deacons.*—Rev. David T. Kimball has furnished the following list of deacons, which, for want of sufficient records, cannot be made satisfactory:

John Shatswell was a resident in 1634, and served for some time. Deacon Whipple is recorded in 1651. William Goodhue was called deacon in 1658, and his son Joseph some time after. Moses Pingry served 1658 to 1683; Thomas Knowlton, 1667 to 1678; Deacon Jewett, 1677; Robert Lord, 1682; Thomas Low, 1696; Jacob Foster, 1697 to 1700; Nathaniel Knowlton, 1700 to 1723; Deacon Abbott, 1710 to 1715; John Staniford, 1721; Thomas Norton, 1727 to 1737; Jonathan Fellows, 1727 to 1736; Aaron Potter, 1737; Daniel Heard, Mark Haskell, Aaron Potter and Samuel Williams (who died in 1763), 1746; Jeremiah Perkins, 1763–90; Joseph Low, 1763 to 1782; John Crocker, 1781 to 1790; William Story, Jr., 1781 to 1788; Caleb Lord, 1790 to 1804; Thomas Knowlton, 1801 to 1832; Mark Haskell, 1804 to 1825; Moses Lord, 1825 to 1832; Isaac Stanwood, 1832 to 1867. The present incumbents are Zenas Cushing and Aaron Cogswell, chosen April 2, 1866.

17. *Conclusion.*—This church has had fourteen pastors, the present incumbent is the fifteenth. They

served during a period of more than two hundred and fifty years, and during that time rendered a colleague or double pastorate service of more than a hundred years, making an aggregate service of three hundred and fifty-five years. The longest pastorate was Mr. Rogers', 1692–1745, fifty-three years; the average service has been twenty-five years. A double pastorate in the early times seems to have been necessary, because of the extent of territory covered by the parish, including Essex and Hamilton, and the triple labor of catechizing, lecturing and sermonizing. There seems to have been very little colleague service after 1745, about the time the Linebrook and South Parishes were formed.

This church is said to have been, in early times, the most flourishing and vigorous in New England; and probably no element contributed more to give the town the prestige it enjoyed than this church, holding forth such luminous names as Ward and Norton, as Cobbett and Hubbard and the Rogerses, authorities in the church and molding influences in the land. Thus we conclude our notice of this mother of churches.

SOUTH PARISH AND CHURCH.

1. *First Pastorate.*—This church came off from the First Church, during the pastorate of Rev. Nathaniel Rogers. The first effort in that direction was a petition dated November 17, 1745. Little or nothing was done about the request at that time, because of the death of Rev. John Rogers, that soon followed. The petition was renewed the next year. The church then had three hundred and four members, and the edifice was crowded and unfit for its purpose. Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, Rev. John's colleague and successor, opposed the movement. Then came the question of pastoral succession, Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, the late colleague, or Mr. John Walley, of Boston. To effect a compromise, two houses of worship were built, and each minister occupied his own pulpit in the morning and exchanged in the afternoon. The plan failed of its purpose, and December 2, 1746, sixty-eight members of the Parish resolved to petition the Legislature for a new parish. Accordingly a petition, dated December 24th, was sent in to the General Court. The south part, however, made further overtures of settlement January 6, 1747; and again, May 27th, petitioned the Legislature. The new parish was incorporated June 20th, following. The act provided, however, that the parish was to remain intact, if they took "effectual care for building a new meeting-house" on the south side of the river before July 20th, and settled another minister, and supported the two churches out of the common fund, as a joint-stock company,—which they did not do, and so the new parish was established. The church was embodied July 22d, of twenty-one or twenty-two members from the First Church. The following 7th of August, they voted unanimously to call Mr. John Walley, at a salary of £150, and a settlement of £1200, old tenor. Mr. Walley was a son of Hon. John Walley, of Boston, and was born in 1716. He graduated at Harvard in 1734, and was a member of the South Church, Boston. In his letter of acceptance he refers to his feeble health. He was ordained November 4, 1747, the day on which the frame of the church edifice was raised. He labored faithfully more than sixteen years, and was dismissed February 22, 1764, because of sickness.

The meeting-house was first occupied May 22, 1748. It was two-stories high, and sixty feet long by forty feet wide. It was finished and furnished in the usual manner of that period. In 1819 two stoves were added to the furniture, much to the good sense and comfort of the people.

Mr. Walley was installed at Bolton, in May, 1773. He was dismissed to that church in 1784. He died in Roxbury, March 2, 1784. His wife, was Elizabeth Appleton. In his will he says: "I give, as a token of my love, to the South Parish in Ipswich, £13 6*s*. 8*d*., the yearly income to be given by them to such persons in the Parish, as they shall judge to be the fittest objects of such a charity." He was a man of average height, and light complexion, of an affectionate disposition and a pious heart; he held the pen of a ready writer, and was an eloquent speaker, and possessed a clear, able and learned mind.

2. *Second Pastorate.*—Rev. Joseph Dana, D.D.—He was born in Pomfret, Conn., November 2, 1742, to Joseph and Mary Dana. His father was an innkeeper. His boyhood eyes really looked upon Gen. Putnam's historical wolf.

He graduated at Yale College in 1760, studied divinity with Rev. Dr. Hart, of Preston, Conn., and was licensed to preach before he was twenty-one years old. He preached here several months as candidate, and was ordained November 7, 1765, at a salary of £100 lawful money, and a settlement of £160. "No man entered upon a duty with a more devoted interest." During his pastorate was the struggle for Independence, and in word and deed he displayed a Christian patriotism. Many were added to his church. His sixtieth anniversary sermon reads that all who were heads of families when he was settled, were dead except five; that he had followed about nine hundred of his parishioners to the grave. He was then eighty-three years old.

He was eminently worthy of the doctorate, which, in 1801, Harvard College conferred upon him. Mr. Felt says: In person, he was about the common height and size, quick and active in his movement. In his manner he was kind, accessible and gentlemanly. In morals he was exact, being diligent in business, punctual in his engagements, refined and improving in his conversation and upright in his actions. His intellectual endowments were of a high order, and richly improved with attainments in literature and theology. His style of writing was strong, lucid and sententious. His piety was the same

everywhere, and at all times, bearing the impress of the Holy Spirit and appearing as a sacrifice, acceptable in the sight of Deity. He published twenty or more sermons. He died of lung fever, after an illness of four days, November 16, 1827. His funeral sermon was preached by Rev. Robert Crowell, of Essex.

His first wife was Mary Staniford, daughter of Daniel and Mary-Burnham Staniford, and daughter-in-law of Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, who died May 14, 1772, in her twenty-eighth year. His second wife was Mary Turner, daughter of Samuel, of Boston, and died April 13, 1803, in her fifty-third year. His third wife was Mrs. Elizabeth-Green Bradford, daughter of Rev. Jacob Green, of Hanover, N. J., and widow of Rev. Ebenezer Bradford, of Rowley, who was married December, 1803, and who died 1824, aged about seventy-five years. His children were Mary, who married Major Thomas Burnham; Joseph and Daniel by first wife; Elizabeth, Samuel, Sarah, Abigail and Anna, by the second. See "Noted Natives."

3. *Third Pastorate.*—Rev. Daniel Fitz, D.D.—He was born in Sandown, N. H., May 28, 1795. He studied in the Derry and Atkinson Academies in New Hampshire, and August 11, 1818, graduated at Dartmouth College. He assisted in the Derry Academy one quarter, was principal of the Salisbury Academy two years and being called to the Academy at Marblehead, Mass., taught there one and a half years. He became converted during a revival in 1819, while principal of the Salisbury Academy, and united with the church in that place in 1820. He then resolved upon a theological course, and graduated at the Andover Theological Seminary in 1825. He was approbated to preach by the "Hopkinton (N. H.) Association," June 15th, the same year, and the next year, June 28th, was ordained colleague pastor with Dr. Dana, of this church, of which he became the sole pastor upon the death of the doctor, November 16, 1827.

He published the following sermons: Memorials of Mrs. Hannah C. Crowell, wife of Rev. Dr. Robert Crowell, of Essex, in 1837; of Dr. Crowell in 1855, of Rev. David T. Kimball in 1860, and the thirtieth anniversary of his settlement. The doctorate was conferred on him by Dartmouth College in 1862. His pastorate closed in 1866; he died September 2, 1869.

Dr. Fitz had a mild, gentle, sympathetic nature, was socially agreeable and public-spirited,—an exemplary man. He was a man of prayer and piety, and delighted in the service of the Master. He had a long, peaceful and useful pastorate.

4. *Fourth Pastorate.*—Rev. William H. Pierson.—Mr. Pierson succeeded to the pastorate January 1, 1868. He was born in Newburyport, June 12, 1839; he graduated at Bowdoin College, Me., in 1864, and at the Princeton Theological Seminary, N. J., in April, 1867. This was his first pastoral charge, and he held it four and a half years. A parsonage was purchased during his service. At the beginning of his ministry a marked revival occurred, which resulted in some fifty accessions to the church. His pastorate was dissolved July 15, 1872, and in the August following he began to serve the church in Somerville, where he remained nearly nine years. During the latter pastorate he saw cause to change his religious views and to become a Unitarian. He accepted the charge of the First Parish, Fitchburg, Mass., and was installed June 7, 1881, and is now serving as pastor.

5. *Fifth Pastor.*—Rev. Marshall Ballard Angier was born in Southborough, Mass., March 22, 1819. His father was Calvin Angier, a farmer, and his mother, Anna-Parker Angier.

Mr. Angier fitted for college at Leicester Academy, and graduated at Yale College in 1844. He graduated at the Union Theological Seminary, New York City, in 1847. He was resident licentiate at the Theological Seminary, Princeton, N. J., 1847–48. He was acting pastor at Worcester and Orange, Mass., 1848–52, at Hopkinton, N. H., 1852–53, where he was ordained and installed June 8, 1853. During the following twenty years, till 1873,—in addition to his eight years' ministry in Hopkinton—he filled pastorates in Dorchester, Sturbridge and Haydensville, Mass. He preached the first time in this church in March, 1873, and filling the pulpit from time to time during the year, he was installed pastor of the church February 4, 1874. His pastorate continued till August 1, 1878—four and a half years. During the early part of his ministry he enjoyed a refreshing from the presence of the Lord, resulting in accessions to the church, at *one Communion*, of fifty-three persons, varying in their ages from thirteen to seventy-nine years. The whole number uniting with the church during his ministry was about sixty.

During the time, the sum of $1500 was raised and expended for repairs on the church and parsonage. A debt of $3500 upon the property of the society was lifted, being raised by voluntary subscription. These make a grand total for repairs and debt of more than $5000. He is now preaching at New York, with residence at No. 839 E. 168th Street.

He married, September 29, 1864, in Newburyport, Miss Emma S. Brewster, daughter of Wm. H. Brewster, of Newburyport. They have a daughter, born in Plymouth, Mass., June 23, 1868. Mrs. Angier belongs to the tenth generation, in lineal descent, from Elder Brewster, of the May Flower.

6. *Sixth Pastorate.* — Rev. Thomas Franklin Waters is the present pastor. He was born in Salem, to Thomas S. and Mary A. Waters, April 12, 1851. He graduated at Harvard College in 1872, at Andover Theological Seminary in 1875, and the August following entered the pulpit service at Edgartown, Martha's Vineyard, where he was ordained October 23, 1876. He was installed here January 1,

1879. In 1885 the house of worship was entirely remodeled; the galleries, pulpit and pews were removed, and a portion of the auditorium was cut off by a partition, erected some fifteen feet in front of its posterior walls. The smaller room thus made was finished with a small vestry and a ladies' parlor on the first floor, and a large vestry and a kitchen on the second floor. The former rooms are both connected with the main audience-room, by sliding sashes, by which the three rooms may be converted into one. In the main audience-room, by a new arrangement of pews, thus economizing the space, there are about four hundred sittings, an alcove for an organ on the left of the pulpit platform and a platform for the choir. The windows were furnished with inside blinds, the walls and ceiling were frescoed, gas was fully supplied and the audience-room newly furnished with pulpit-set, carpet and cushions. They have now a very pretty, convenient and commodious house, and a very pleasant and prosperous pastorate.

LINEBROOK PARISH AND CHURCH.

1. *Incorporation.*—This parish is centrally located with reference to Topsfield, Boxford, Georgetown, Rowley and Ipswich, and is distant from them respectively, from church to church, from three to four miles. It was originally constituted of the last two towns.

Much inconvenience was felt as early as 1738–39 in attending church service at the above places, and thirteen of the freeholders of Ipswich, December 20, 1739, o.s., petitioned the First Church to be set off to Topsfield. The petitioners, March 18th of the same year, were denied the set-off, but were "discharged from all parish rates for the future." Soon after they began to employ a religious teacher. They again petitioned the First Church, and were answered December 2, 1742, that "the West End do not become a parish, but keep up preaching among them."

In 1743 they and freeholders of Rowley erected a meeting-house; April 12, 1744, they all voted to be set off as a distinct parish, and accordingly petitioned the Great and General Court for incorporation. Fifteen Rowley men remonstrated. The committee of court, to whom the matter was intrusted, reported favoring the petition, March 21, 1745 o.s. The act of incorporation is dated June 4, 1746. The first meeting of the parish was held July 7, the same year. The precinct was bounded on the south by Howlett's Brook and Ipswich River, on the east by Gravelly, Bull and Batchelder's Brooks, and on the west by Strait Brook and was therefore by vote January 27, 1746–47, called *Linebrook Parish.*

2. *Meeting-House.*—The church was finished in the following manner, as the parish voted June 27, 1746–47: First, the pulpit and deacon's seat; second, the body-seats below; third, three fore-seats in each gallery; fourth, the gallery stairs, and plaster under the gallery; fifth, a pew for the parish. It was voted May 18, 1747, that the meeting-house be finished by the last of October. It was a two-story, square house, was finished with box-pews, and was entered by a front door and a door on each side. It stood in Rowley-Linebrook, perhaps an eighth of a mile across the Ipswich-Rowley town-line, on the road leading from the Ipswich-Linebrook school-house, a spot now called "up in the woods." The house was removed to the location of the present church, and rebuilt in 1828 by Daniel Searl and Mark K. Jewett, contractors, of Rowley, for six hundred dollars. Rev. David Tullar was present at the raising, and offered prayer. The rebuilding followed the old model. The site was purchased of Miss Mehitable Foster, about a third of an acre, for twenty dollars, May 24, 1828. The house was dedicated January 1, 1829.

The present church edifice was built in 1848. In 1847 the First and South Parishes gave this parish a bell, which was accepted June 23, 1847, when it became a question whether the old house should receive needed repairs and be remodeled to accommodate the bell, or whether a new house should be built. The parish determined, December 22, 1847, to build a new house, and to set it on the site of the old one. The necessary funds were raised by subscription at twenty-five dollars per share. Eighty shares were sold, amounting to two thousand dollars. Charles E. Brackett, who died at Quincy on the night of Easter, 1885, was the contractor, at nineteen hundred and five dollars and the old house, which did not include pay for painting and pews. The whole cost, $2197.55, for structure, painting, graining slips and hanging the bell. The house was furnished by the Ladies' Sewing Circle. A stockholders' or proprietors' meeting was held December 2, 1848, when they voted not to relinquish any of their rights to the parish; they voted also to adopt the action taken by the parish in relation to the house, and to proceed in the sale of the pews. Forty slips were sold for twenty-four hundred and eleven dollars, one hundred and sixty more than the appraisal. The seating capacity of the house is about two hundred and fifty. It was dedicated November 22, 1848.

3. *Parish Lands.*—The parish leased for nine hundred and ninety-nine years from July 5, 1753, a parcel of land for a cemetery. The land is a few rods north of the site of the old meeting-house in Rowley-Linebrook, and has long been abandoned. The town granted ten acres in Bull-brook pasture to this pastorate November 15, 1790, which subsequently were exchanged for ten acres in Long-hill pasture, which the parish now owns. The site of the old meeting-house was sold to Mr. Joseph B. Perley for twenty dollars.

4. *The Church.*—The church was embodied with twelve or thirteen male members November 15, 1749. They then adopted the belief and polity of the Cambridge platform made the year before. The following is a list of the deacons:

John Abbott, chosen December 13, 1749; died December 18, 1759.

Jona. Burpee, chosen December 13, 1749; transferred to N. B. May 6, 1764.

Mark Howe, chosen May 22, 1760; died February 17, 1770.

Moses Chaplin, chosen October 13, 1765; died October 18, 1811.

Anthony Potter, chosen January 3, 1771; died June 21, 1791.

Abraham Howe, Sen., chosen March 12, 1792; died November 5, 1797.

Isaac Potter, chosen ——; transferred to Rowley, October 1, 1809.

Joseph Chaplin, Sen., chosen October 1, 1809; transferred to Byfield October 4, 1812.

Philemon Foster, Sen., chosen October 4, 1812; died May 10, 1818.

William Dickinson, chosen September 30, 1831; resigned November 2, 1844.

William Foster Conant, chosen September 30, 1831; died May 7, 1886.

Jacob Symonds Potter, chosen November 2, 1844; transferred to Georgetown November 4, 1876.

John Harrison Tenney, chosen June 9, 1884.

James Davis and George Hibbert were elected *Elders* December 19, 1749; the former died March 11, 1752; the latter April 29, 1750. Deacon John Abbott was chosen January 7, 1752, and subsequently David Perley. Both declined to serve February 1, 1757. Amos Jewett and Jeremiah Burpee were elected February 15, 1757, and were ordained April 19th. Elder Burpee was transferred to St. John, N. B., May 6, 1764, and Elder Jewett to Hamilton August 30, 1789. Abraham Howe was chosen June 11, 1787.

In 1773 "the tuners" of the hymns were Nathaniel Howe and Joseph and Jonathan Chapman. In April, 1791, the singing-school was invited to assist Messrs. Howe and Joseph Chapman in psalmody.

5. *First Pastorate.*—Rev. George Lesslie was born in Scotland in 1728, and came to this country when about two years old. His father was Rev. James Lesslie. I spell the name as Rev. George spelled it in legal documents. Our subject graduated at Harvard College in 1748, at the age of twenty years. He joined the Topsfield Church March 5, 1749, presumably upon profession of faith. He studied for the ministry with his own pastor, Rev. John Emerson. He began to preach for this parish, in August, 1748, shortly after his graduation, and received six pounds a Sabbath for his services. He began to preach as candidate March 19, 1749, fourteen days after joining the Topsfield Church. His transfer from that church was October 6, 1749. He was ordained and installed here November 15, 1749, the day of the organization of the church. His settlement was £700 old tenor, or $311.08, and his salary was £100 lawful money and twelve cords of wood. The depreciation of paper money and the failure of the parish to supply the deficiency, and an urgent call to the new society of Washington, N. H., determined him to ask a dismission October 22, 1779. A council convened November 4, 1779, and advised that the pastorate be dissolved November 30th, the date that had been mutually agreed upon by the church and the pastor. His transfer by letter was December 10th. Mrs. Ruth Conant, daughter of Deacon Foster, wife of Esquire William Conant, and mother of Deacon Conant, wrote: "The Church was embodied with thirteen male members. In that year twenty-two members were added. From 1749 to 1770 forty-six members were added. There is no account of other additions during Mr. Lesslie's pastorate."

Mr. Lesslie, one of the organizers of the Essex North Association of Ministers, at New Rowley (now Georgetown), September 8, 1761, signed the rules of government. The fifth meeting of the association was with him November 30, 1770. He was a learned and serviceable member. About the time of his removal from this place, he was invited to a professorship in Dartmouth College, which he declined, probably because of his promising field at Washington. He preached the ordination sermon of his divinity student, Mr. Samuel Perley, at North Hampton, N. H., January 13, 1765. The sermon was printed. He has also left two sermons written in stenography, preached in 1760. In July 2, 1778, he attended Ezra Ross, at the gallows, in Worcester, and his church kept the day with fasting and prayer. Young Ross was a member of his society, and Ross' parents were members of his church.

He early adopted the following covenant:

"I take God, the Father, to be my chief good and highest end; I take God, the Son, to be my only Lord and Savior; I take God, the Holy Spirit, to be my Sanctifier, Teacher, Guide and Comforter; I take the truth of God to be my rule in all my actions; I take the people of God to be my people in all conditions. I do likewise devote and dedicate unto the Lord my whole self, all that I am, all that I have, and all that I can do. This I do deliberately, sincerely, freely and forever."

He was not only a fine scholar, but, we may judge, an apt teacher. Many students resorted to him for instructions; in modern phrase, his house was a boarding-school. He had students learning the useful sciences, fitting for college, and preparing for the ministry. A few names of them between 1752 and 1759 are preserved: Symonds, son of Capt. Baker, and Asa, son of Samuel Bradstreet; Timothy Andrews and Daniel Fuller; Thomas Stickney, Samuel Perley, Thomas Gowing, Moses Nichols and Samuel Porter. In September, 1757, he went to Cambridge with Asa Bradstreet. Mark Howe of his own parish studied with him six months in 1757, and gave six pounds in payment.

Mr. Lesslie was accustomed to write deeds, wills and other legal documents. He had a wide range of knowledge, and was practically useful to such of his people as sought his service or advice.

In July, 1753, he exchanged land with his parish for "land to set a house on." He built on it a few rods west of his meeting-house a two-story house and a barn. He sold his interest in the property September 13, 1780. The house was burned some dozen years ago; the barn is still standing.

He was a man of mental strength, of studious habits, of correct sentiments, of strict integrity, of conscientious action, was a fine scholar and enjoyed the confidence of the people. He had decided orthodox views, and was a pious and learned minister.

He married, October 26, 1756, Hephzibah Burpee, youngest daughter of his junior deacon. She joined the church June 25, 1756. Their children were

George, David, James, Jonathan, William, Hephzibah, Joseph and Mehitable. This family left Linebrook March 6, 1780, and was nine days making the journey of eighty miles, there being at that time no roads worthy the name. Their privations the first year were great, provisions were obtainable only at a distance of thirty or forty miles. Their first winter was unusually long, a burden of snow lasting from October till late the next spring. Of the people's cattle twenty-seven died of starvation. They lost their only cow, and were the while without salt, a bushel of which in the spring cost five dollars. The society observed a day of fasting and prayer in view of the dismal prospect.

Mr. Lesslie was installed at Washington, July 12, 1780, in a barn belonging to John Safford, his house of worship not being completed till 1789. His salary was fifty-five pounds, payable in eatables and wearing apparel, and his settlement was two hundred acres of land "to him and his heirs forever." He died September 11, 1800, at the age of seventy-two years.

6. *Inter-pastorate.*—During this period of nine years the records are very unsatisfactory. In 1780 Rev. Joseph Motley supplied; in 1783 Rev. Joshua Spaulding who, by vote, March 31st, was requested to "draft rules for the government of the church on the basis of the Cambridge platform; in 1785, Mr. Ebenezer Cleaves supplied. Each one was called to settle.

7. *Second Pastorate.*—Rev. Gilbert Tennent Williams was invited, December 23, 1788, to preach here six months, and February 18, 1789, the church called him to the pastorate. He was ordained and installed, August 5, 1789, when the membership was nine males and fifteen females. His salary was one hundred pounds lawful money. He lived in the house formerly owned and occupied by Mr. Lesslie. Eight members were added during his pastorate. The society was small and unable to give him adequate support, and April 19, 1813, according to advice of council, dismissed him from pastorate and membership. His farewell discourse, which was printed, was preached May 2, 1813.

He was well armed with "the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God;" was a plain and easy writer; was a man of sound orthodoxy, of pure motives, of lovely temper, of sterling integrity, of deep piety, and an earnest laborer for the common good.

He was son of Rev. Simon Williams, of Windham, N. H., born at Fagg's Manor, Pa., October 8, 1761. He graduated at Dartmouth College, 1784, and studied for the ministry with Rev. John Murray, of Newburyport.

He was installed at West Newbury First Church, June 1, 1814, and labored till a paralytic shock unfitted him for parochial duties. He was dismissed September 26, 1821, and died at Farmington, September 24, 1824.

His wife was Martha Morrison, of Windham, N. H. She left this church, May 25, 1814, and in 1834 resided in Boston. Their children's names and births in Linebrook were: Simon Tennent, 1790; Martha, 1792; Samuel Morrison, 1794; John Adams, 1799; Constant Floyd, 1802.

8. *Inter-pastorate.*—From this time to 1860 this church was without a pastor. It was a period of decay, darkness and trial resulting in a new lease of life. From 1829 the society had pecuniary aid from the Domestic Missionary Society. In 1814, when the membership was only one male and three females, an effort was made to establish a Baptist church. The faction called a *quasi* parish meeting and voted to relinquish the church to the new society every alternate Sabbath. The Congregational Society held to their purpose, Rev. Joseph Emerson, of the Byfield Female Seminary, supplied, and the effort was baffled. In 1819 the parish voted to occupy the church to the exclusion of the Baptist brothers. This action augmented the strife, deepened the bitterness, and bandied threats; but legal advice showed that "possession was nine points of the law," and wisdom brought in peace. Rev. Joseph Emerson, in the kindness of his heart, was very serviceable to this society during his four years at Byfield, from 1818.

During these years was the dark period. The society had preaching but part of the time, till 1824, when Rev. David Tullar became the stated supply. In 1818 Deacon Foster died, at the age of eighty-two years; September 3, 1819, Mrs. Martha Perley died, aged eighty years and ten months, and October 8 (6), 1831, Mrs. Mehitable Chapman died, aged eighty-five years. Mrs. Chapman was lame and unable to get about, so Mrs. Ruth Conant was practically alone in the church from 1819 to 1826, when three males and two females joined. Between 1826 and 1831, when, by reason of age and infirmity, Mr. Tullar retired, eight males and nine females became members. The membership, January 1, 1829, was four males and five females. A particular notice of this truly good man belongs to Rowley history, and we will only remark that he was a judicious and faithful undershepherd. He purchased half of the Joseph Holt farm of William P. Kimball, December 14,1825, and sold it to Jeremiah Ellsworth, December 31, 1835.

Rev. Moses Welch took charge of this church January 1, 1831, and labored with success. Four males and five females were added in that year, two males and four females the next year, and three females in 1833 and 1834. The membership in 1833 was thirty-four.

Mr. Welch was born in Plaistow, N. H., in 1784, and was son of Colonel Joseph Welch, a Revolutionary patriot. He was a member of the first class of the Bangor Theological Seminary. While there he was licensed a missionary in that State, where he labored several years. He thence came to Amesbury,

where he became a stated supply for five years. Then he returned home to Plaistow, where he was installed and continued five years more. His people were devotedly attached to him, but ill health forced his resignation. Before coming here he preached awhile on Cape Ann, that the climate might help his complaint. His salary here was $300. Our older people remember him with affection.

Rev. John P. Tyler came here probably in the fall of 1834. He continued through the winter; a schism resulted.

Rev. James W. Shepherd followed. He proved a physician, indeed. After service, May 24, 1835, he asked the church to remain. The question of the schism was discussed, and the 30th instant was agreed upon as a day of fasting and prayer. The day was duly observed and the church voted a Public Confession, on the first Sabbath in June, when accordingly all but two males and one female stood forth in and made public confession." In 1835 three males and four females became members.

Rev. Samuel Harris was the stated supply in 1836. In this year eight males and one female joined. Mr. Harris' father, Deacon Jacob, was a native of this town and born in 1741. Samuel studied divinity with Rev. Seth Payson, D.D. (1809), of Ringe, N. H. He was ordained and installed at Windham, N. H., in 1805. He lost the use of his voice, and was dismissed in 1826, after a long and useful pastorate. A partial recovery permitted a limited parochial service, and he preached in several places, including this parish. He died at Windham September 5, 1848, aged seventy-four years. He had twelve children; ten were learned, influential and useful citizens; five of the six sons were professionally educated.

Rev. Moses Dow was born in Atkinson, N. H., February 4, 1771. He studied in part at the Atkinson Academy, and prepared to enter Dartmouth College. He studied divinity with Rev. Jonathan French, of Andover. He married Miss Hannah Knight, of Atkinson, and had two daughters and one son, who died at the ages of forty-one, forty and forty-four respectively.

He was settled over the First Church, York, Maine, November 9, 1815. Rev. Benjamin Wadsworth, of Danvers, preached the installing sermon, and said,—"We are not strangers to Mr. Dow. We have long known him. We have loved and esteemed him. We believe him to be an able and faithful, a discreet and devoted minister of Christ." He was dismissed in 1829, and he removed to Hampton Falls, N. H., "where he supplied the pulpit, and also in the adjoining town of Kensington." In the spring of 1833 he removed to Plaistow, N. H., and preached in several pulpits, including this. He died at Plaistow, of paralysis, May 9, 1837.

Rev. Francis Welch was the stated supply from 1838 to 1842. He was son of Joseph Welch, a farmer, of Hampstead, N. H., where he was born March 30, 1805. Rev. Moses Welch above and Rev. Francis Welch, of Amesbury, were his uncles, and sons of Joseph Welch, of Plaistow, who was a colonel in the Revolution. They were lineal descendants of Philip Welch, who was kidnapped in Ireland, and sold in Ipswich as a slave for twenty-nine pounds in corn or cattle in 1654; and Samuel Welch, of Bow, N. H., who was a grandson of Philip, and who died at the age of one hundred and twelve years and seven months, was Rev. Moses' great-uncle.

Francis studied at the Hampton Academy and in Bowdoin College. He was approved a minister by the Haverhill Association May 15, 1833. He preached at Brentwood, N. H., where he was ordained, at Perry, Maine, and in this pulpit. He has for many years resided upon his farm in Topsfield. He married, April 4, 1839, Miss Harriet Atwood Conant, daughter of William, Esq., and Mrs. Ruth Conant, of this parish. She was born March 9, 1818, and died at Topsfield October 22, 1886. She had ten children; nine survive her, one of whom is a lawyer in St. Paul, Minn.

In 1838 and 1839 six males and four females became members, which made the membership between forty and fifty; from 1840 to 1843, inclusive, one male and five females.

Rev. Jacob Coggin followed and continued till 1848. He preached the last sermon in the old meeting-house, and also the dedicatory sermon in the new house, Rev. Isaac Braman making the prayer.

Mr. Coggin was born in Woburn September 5, 1781, to Jacob Coggin, who graduated at Harvard College in 1761, and became a teacher by profession, though he sometimes preached. Jacob, the son, graduated at Harvard College in 1803, studied divinity with his pastor, Rev. Joseph Chickering, of Woburn, and was ordained pastor of the Congregational Church in Tewksbury October 22, 1806, and continued in that relation till his death, serving the last years as senior pastor.

He represented his town in the State Legislature two successive years; he was a member of the convention called to revise the State Constitution in 1853; he was a Presidential elector in 1852; was an inspector of the State Almshouse from its institution, and the chaplain there till his death, from congestion of the lungs, December 12, 1854, at the age of seventy-three.

Mr. Coggin was one of the acceptable preachers of his day, sound in doctrine and faithful in its presentation. He was a careful, wise, social and beloved pastor. He was the author of the Ladies' Benevolent Society here, the fruit of whose earnest, meritorious work furnished the new church in 1848—a society which, after some years' relapse, was revived in the acting pastorate of Rev. Joseph W. Healy. The writer, then a mere lad, now well remembers the tall, erect, manly form of that servant of God, as he

ascended the pulpit stairs, and his polite and genial manner in his visits. His labors here covered a period of some three or four years and were blessed. In the years 1840 to 1843, inclusive, one male and five females became members, and from 1844 to 1852, inclusive, eight males and sixteen females.

Rev. Eliphalet Birchard was the first minister to occupy the new church edifice. He preached here while an undergraduate at the Andover Theological Seminary, and, after completing his course there, became the stated supply here. He was born in Lebanon, Conn., January 21, 1812, and died there September 20, 1854. He was always an invalid; he called his affliction *rheumatism*, but it ended in consumption. He was a great sufferer, but patient and hopeful. His parents were Arial and Abigail-Metcalf Birchard. He had a brother, Rev. William Metcalf Birchard, born February 14, 1810, died March 20, 1883, and a sister, Abbie Correlia. He graduated at Harvard in 1843. This church voted February 24, 1849, to call him to settle on a salary of four hundred dollars. He did not accept. He drafted a government for the Church, which was adopted May 28, 1849. In 1850 Rev. James Galagher, a revivalist, labored with Mr. Birchard, and there was a very general awakening. Many indulged a hope; but only four joined the Church. In 1850 there was a membership of fifty-six. He remained here about three years, and afterwards preached at Andover, Conn. In the pulpit he was serious, awakening and effective, and left a very desirable impression upon the people; he was excellent in visitations, a reliable spiritual counselor and a firm friend.

Rev. Willard Holbrook and his wife joined this church April 14, 1851. He began to preach here some time before, and remained about four years. A sketch of him properly belongs to Rowley history. He was one of those noble spiritual workers whom this church must hold in grateful remembrance,—Tullar, Holbrook, Kimball and Dana,—names to be respected everywhere, but here to be revered for their labors, advice and prayers.

Rev. Joseph Warren Healy, M.D., D.D., LL.D., was, by this church, made a life-member of the Foreign Missionary Society, April 10, 1856. He then had been preaching here probably about six months. He was at the time the enterprising, able and popular principal of the Topsfield Academy. This church under his guidance enjoyed a period of harmony and prosperity, and grew in numbers and healthful strength. He remained about three years.

He was born in South Hero, Vt., April 11, 1827, to Nathaniel and Jane-Tabor Healy. He fitted for college at Newbury Seminary and Bradford Academy, Vt. He graduated at the University of Vermont in 1852. He was principal of the Bath Academy, N. H., and afterwards of the Topsfield Academy. He attended lectures at the Andover Theological Seminary, and was licensed by the Salem Congregational Association. After supplying this pulpit, he preached at Royalston, Gardner and Walpole. Then removing to the West, he preached six years in Milwaukee, and four years in Chicago. While there he was called to the pastorate and presidency of Straight University, in New Orleans, La. There he attended medical lectures and received the medical degree. In 1871, Olivet College, Mich., conferred upon him the doctorate of divinity. The same year he was delegated by the American Missionary Association to visit Great Britain, and organize an auxiliary to that society. He resided in London as its secretary for three years. While abroad, he visited the Continent and the East, and lectured in the principal cities of Great Britain. Returning home he was elected professor of English literature and pastoral theology in Maryville College, Tenn. Preferring an active pastorate to the routine of professional life, he returned to Milwaukee in 1878. The death of his wife prostrated him. Subsequently he went to California for his health. In 1853 he was a pastor in Oakland, Cal. Upon the incorporation of Sierra-Madre College, at Passadena, in 1884, he was selected as the president, a position which he now holds.

The writer remembers him at the academy with sentiments of high esteem. He excelled as a teacher, and readily won the regard of his pupils. He was an exemplary man—one of nature's noblemen. He was magic to untie purse-strings. Several societies regard him as their pecuniary savior. He has risen by his own exertions, and achieved a grand success. His titles are emblems of his character and attainments.

He married, October 8, 1848, Miss Jane Hibbard Clark, who was born in Groton, Vt., May 12, 1830. She studied in the Female Seminary, Burlington, Vt., taught with her husband at Bath and Topsfield, and adorned the place of a pastor's wife wherever he labored. She died at her mother's home in Corinth, Vt., September 12, 1880, beloved and lamented, a pure and gentle spirit. Their children,—Jane Corinne, born March 6th, and died October 8, 1850; and Frank Joseph, born March 4, 1857, studied at Olivet College and London Universities, admitted to the bar, 1878, and is now editor of *The Gazette*, Fort Wayne, Ind.

9. *Third Pastorate.*—Rev. Ezekiel Dow was settled. He was born April 9, 1807. His father was James, of Warren, N. H., and was born in Plaistow, April 23, 1775; his mother was Hannah Merrill, and was born in Warren, May 24, 1781. Ezekiel was the second son of five children, four of whom were sons and became farmers. He studied at the Academy, Haverhill, N. H. He commenced preaching as a Universalist, but early in his ministry changed in his belief, and studied in the Theological Seminary, Andover, for the Congregational pulpit. He preached in Massachusetts, at South Welfleet, Monument, Chiltonville, Linebrook, Huntington and Becket, where

he closed his labors in 1880. He was settled over this society December 25, 1860, and dismissed November 14, 1866. He was a good-hearted man, socially peculiar yet agreeable, took good care of his pastorate, had a good mind, never overworked, and we may say was fairly successful.

10. *Fourth Pastorate.*—Rev. Alvah Mills Richardson was born in Woburn—now Winchester—April 30, 1833, to Gilbert and Hannah-Davis Richardson. He had four brothers—Gilbert Brainard, who died February 20, 1883, and Martin Luther—who were ministers, and two sisters. He fitted for college at the Warren and Phillips Academies, Woburn and Andover, and graduated at Amherst College in 1862. He entered the service against the Rebellion for nine months in September, 1862, a member of the band of the Forty-fifth Massachusetts Regiment. He graduated at the Andover Theological Seminary in 1866. He was ordained and installed here November 14th, the same year. He tendered his resignation October 10, 1870, and his pastorate closed when his successor was installed, May 3, 1871. (He left the church with a membership of fifty-nine). Part of 1871 and 1872 he managed for the Lincoln County, Me., Bible Society, and since then has superintended his widowed mother's farm. He was a pious man, scrupulously exact, conscientious, studious, a good writer, but an unsuccessful preacher. He has never married.

11. *Fifth Pastorate.*—Rev. Benjamin Howe was a native of this parish, and born November 4, 1807. His parents were Joseph and Mehitable-Stickney Howe. He was eighth in a family of ten children. When a mere lad, he was thrown upon his own resources. Any acquisition he made was wholly his. He commenced his studies at the Topsfield Academy, shortly after the founding of that institution, in 1828, and completed his preparatory course at the Meriden Academy, N. H. He graduated at Amherst College in 1838, and at the Theological Seminary, Hartford, Conn., in 1841.

He married, May 31, 1842, Miss Waty Williams Tyler, born August 27, 1814, a lady of excellent worth, of a gentle and godly spirit. They had two children: Homer, who was born August 16, 1848, and Cecil Putnam, who was born November 8, 1857, and died February 13, 1866.

He joined the Topsfield Church November 7, 1830, and was transferred to the Seminary August 30, 1839. He was acting pastor at Coventry, Conn., 1833–34, and at Wells, Me., 1844, till he was ordained and installed there November 5, 1845. He was dismissed November 5, 1849; was teacher and preacher at Brooklyn, Conn., 1850–55; acting pastor at Meredith, N. Y., 1855–60; without charge, N. H., 1860-66; acting pastor at Hudson, N. H., 1866–67; at Lempster, N. H., 1867–70; and was settled here May 3, 1871. His death October 18, 1883, closed his pastorate. His walk was exemplary. His service for the Master was sincere; he had an exalted and abiding faith and an earnest love for souls committed to his care. Frowning upon sin as such with the severest rebuke, but charitable to the erring, he was a man of noble and generous impulses. As a neighbor, he was kind, obliging and discreet; as a citizen, intelligent and declared; in his home, gentle and kind, loving and loved. His life, as we knew it, was a perpetual benediction. Taking into the account the severity of his teacher, *Experience*, the quick impulses of his nature, his wise discretion and his godly life, he stands before us a massive character, a grand and noble manhood, commanding our respect and winning our love. He rests in Harmony Cemetery, Georgetown; his widow is living at Hudson, N. H.

12. *Sixth Pastorate.*—Rev. Edward Holman Briggs was installed December 6, 1883. He was born in Boston Highlands, March 8, 1851, to George Washington and Anna Matilda-Ross Briggs. In the autumn of 1857, after the death of his father, he went to live in Columbus, Ga., with his paternal aunt, the wife of John Johnson, Esq., Judge of Probate. His preparatory studies were pursued with a private teacher. He entered the Sophomore class, half-advanced, in June, 1869, in the University of Georgia, at Athens, and graduated there in 1871. His scholarship was excellent. He matriculated at the Presbyterian Theological Seminary, Columbia, S. C., in September, 1871, and completed the course in April, 1874. He was licensed to preach April 19, 1874, by the Presbytery of Macon, Ga. He supplied at Whiting and Newton several months, and at Mount Tabor and Smyrna about two years. In January, 1877, he went to Palatka, Fla., where he was installed July 8, 1877. The pastorate was dissolved in November, 1880. He then labored a few months at Memphis, Tenn., a work he was forced to relinquish, being stricken with malaria. In November, 1881, he resumed his ministerial labors, and served in Good-Water, Hatchet-Creek, Hackneyville and Nixbury, Ala., till the close of 1882. Early in 1883 he returned to Massachusetts, and had no regular ministerial work till his settlement here. In his labors he appears to have been fairly successful. He began to preach here in mid-summer. The circumstances of his settlement were very favorable. The death of our venerable pastor, Mr. Howe, and the memorial service of him left a marked seriousness upon the minds and hearts of all. An awakening among the young was already observed, and in January following his settlement, some fifteen, it was said, were ready for church membership. Eleven joined the first Sabbath, and several others soon after. Such haste against the wishes of older and official members was not wise. From a remarkable unity in his favor at first, he held till there was a remarkable unity against him at last. The church was in a ferment for nearly three years—from the Sabbath he administered the sacrament, of which he did not partake, till he arbitrarily refused to administer it at all,—a usurpation,

which apparently forced his resignation November 7, 1886, to take effect as soon as his successor could be installed.

Mr. Briggs may purpose well, but he reads books better than men, and he is wedded firmly to the Presbyterian Church polity; he will, therefore, succeed better as a Presbyterian clergyman or as a business man, than as a Congregational pastor.

13. *Seventh Pastorate.*—Rev. William Penn Alcott, the present incumbent, was born in Dorchester, July 11, 1838. His parents were William A., M.D. and lecturer, and Phebe L.-Bronson Alcott, who was a student in the Ipswich Academy when Misses Grant and Lyon taught. They are natives of Wolcott, Conn.

The son graduated at Williams' College in 1861, and at the Andover Theological Seminary in 1865. After his college graduation he taught in the Pittsburgh Female College, Pennsylvania, and in 1867 was elected tutor in Williams' College, and taught chemistry and mineralogy. As minister, he was seven years pastor of the Congregational Church, in North Greenwich, Conn., and two years in the First Church in Boxford. He preached for short periods at Barton Landing, Vt., and at West Newbury, this State. In 1877, he traveled extensively with Dr. Philip Schaff, in the Orient—Palestine, the Sinaitic region and Egypt—and Southern Europe.

During his pastorates, he was accustomed to make scientific studies his relaxation. The practice gradually conducted him into correspondence for the press, and to authorship. His contributions to the press have been principally upon temperance and scientific subjects. He edited the Natural History department of Dr. Schaff's Bible Dictionary, and, as a member of the Lowell Hebrew Club, is interested in the publication of a *de novo* translation of the Book of Esther, with notes and excursuses, exhibiting much careful and patient philological and scientific research and study,—to which he was a liberal contributor. He is now at work upon the Books of Ezra and Nehemiah, to be presented uniform in matter and size with Esther.

He married, in 1868, Sarah Jane Merrill, daughter of Rev. David Merrill, of Peacham, Vt. She died in 1876, and he married, two years later, Lucy R. Davis, daughter of Andrew Davis, Esq., of Boston. He has three children in "the better land," and two, a daughter by the first wife and a son by the second wife, living.

His service began here the last Sabbath in September, 1886, and his installation took place May 4th following.

The notice of this church would be very incomplete without reference to the society's liberal benefactor, John Perley, Esq. He died May 11, 1860, and by will placed in trust seven thousand dollars, as a perpetual fund, "the income of which shall be paid to the Orthodox Congregational Society, Linebrook Parish in the towns of Ipswich and Rowley, for the support of preaching and a Sabbath-school in said society annually, while said society has a settled minister."

Mr. Perley was born September 3, 1782, in Rowley-Linebrook. Becoming of age, he went to live with his uncle (afterwards deacon) Philemon Foster, in Ipswich-Linebrook, where he plied his trade as cordwainer. Upon "breaking ground" for the Newburyport turnpike, he opened a shop in connection with his trade. The enterprise was a success, and he there laid the foundation of his subsequent wealth. He never married. He devoted most of his estate to public benefactions, eleemosynary, educational and religious, among which was an annuity fund of three thousand five hundred dollars for the worthy poor of Georgetown, another of seven thousand dollars for the Orthodox Congregational Society, where he worshipped, and another—the residue of his estate—to found a free school in Georgetown.

This man's body has long since returned to its mother earth, but he still lives. So long as wealth has value, and learning is sought, and charity is kind, his name will be mentioned with praise, and his life will be fresh and fruitful as the dew, and redolent as the lily upon the bosom of crystal waters.

THE BAPTIST SOCIETY.

"This society," says Mr. Felt, "was formed in February, 1806. Their first preacher was Rev. H. Pottle. They occupied the building formerly a woolen factory. Their church contained sixty-eight communicants in 1813. A secession took place from the church, because discipline was not exercised, June 4, 1816. This secession was justified by a council July 16th. The seceders formed themselves into a new church August 27th, and met in a building on High Street, opposite North Main. They were incorporated "The First Baptist Society in Ipswich," June 16, 1817.

The names of the corporators were Samuel, Samuel G. and Timothy Appleton, Samuel and Robert Stone, Josiah Symonds and Charles Simonds, William Dennis, Frederick Mitchell, Jacob M. Farnum, Daniel, Jr., and Joseph L. Ross, James Caldwell, Moses Graves, John Lord, Daniel W. Low, Nathan Perkins, Major Woodbury, Simeon Spafford, Amos Jones, Francis, John, Levi and Joseph Hovey. William Taylor was their first minister. He continued with them till August, 1818, and took his dismission, because his people were few and unable to support him. When he left the church, it contained thirty members. Thus, destitute of one to guide them, they continued to hold meetings and have the sacrament administered occasionally till August, 1823. In the course of this year they dissolved. The original Society of Baptists continued, after the secession from them, only one year."

PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL CHURCH AND PARISH.

1. *First Rectorship.*—The Parish was organized in 1867. The service of the church had been regularly maintained from 1861, and occasional services had been held for some time before that date. REV. HENRY WALL was the first rector, and occupied the office about two months.

2. *Second Rectorship.*—REV. BENJAMIN ROWLEY GIFFORD, the second rector, was born in Falmouth, Mass., October 18, 1819. His parents were Braddock and Mary. He received his education at the Falmouth Academy and Amherst College, leaving the latter institution in 1840. He subsequently went to St. Francesville, La., and pursued his theological studies under the direction of the Rev. Daniel Lewis, D.D., rector of the church in that town. He was ordained to the ministry of the Episcopal Church in Davenport, Iowa, August 28, 1857, by the Right Rev. Henry W. Lee, bishop of that diocese. He was rector of parishes in Cedar Falls, Waterloo, Mount Pleasant and Ottumwa, in Iowa, and in Kewanee, in Illinois. Early in 1866, he returned to Massachusetts, and then traveled extensively in Europe and the East, visiting Palestine, Egypt, Turkey, Greece and other countries, returning the following spring.

He entered the rectorship of this church November 3d of the same year. The services were then held in the Damon Hall; subsequently they were held in the Town Hall. In 1869, his second year here, October 26th, the corner-stone of the present church edifice was laid, by the Right Rev. Manton Eastburn, bishop of the diocese of Massachusetts, in the presence of a large audience of the people, the bishop making the address.

In the spring of 1870, before the edifice was completed, Mr. Gifford resigned, and in June, 1871, entered the rectorship of Trinity Church, Bridgewater. In 1873 he visited England, and there, September 9th, he married Miss Mary M. Hewett, in All-Saints' Church, near Taunton, Somersetshire. The following March he returned to America and resumed the charge of the Parish of Bridgewater. His connection with the church continued till the next spring, when he went to Natick and became rector of St. Paul's Church there. He continued in Natick five years, when in May, 1880, mainly owing to ill-health, he resigned, deciding not to take regular charge of another parish. In 1882 he and his wife spent the summer in England, when he preached in various parts of the country. Returning to America he took up his permanent residence in Wood's Holl, a famous summer resort in his native town. In the meantime he has quite frequently officiated in the local church and the neighboring parishes. After Mr. Gifford's resignation, there was a vacancy in the rectorship till 1873, when Rev. B. F. Newton was elected.

3. *Third Rectorship.*—REV. BENJAMIN FRANKLIN NEWTON. He was born October 20th, 1846, in St. Albans, Vt. He graduated at Hillsdale College, Hillsdale, Mich., in 1870; at the Union Seminary, New York, in 1873; and at the Episcopal Theological School, Cambridge, Mass., in 1874.

This was his first rectorship, and he continued in it till 1877, when he removed to St. James' Church, Texarkana, Texas, whence, in 1881, he went to the rectorship of the Church of the Good Shepherd, St. Louis, Mo., where he is at present engaged.

While he was here the church made steady and substantial progress, increasing in numbers and efficiency, and doing a large amount of missionary and benevolent work. Some progress was made upon the church edifice.

4. *Fourth Rectorship.*—REV. REUBEN KIDNER succeeded, and entered upon the duties of the office January 1, 1878. Mr. Kidner is a son of James Frederic Kidner, merchant, of Bristol, England, and was born March 18, 1848. He graduated at Harvard College in 1875, and at the Episcopal Theological School, Cambridge, in 1878. He resigned the rectorship February 1, 1882, to become assistant minister of Trinity Church, Boston, where he is in active service. He married July 3, 1878, Miss Katharine Clinton Simonds, and has one son, Frederic Clinton. Mr. Kidner's successor is the present incumbent.

5. *Fifth Rectorship.*—REV. JULIUS W. ATWOOD, who entered upon the duties of this office in 1882, was born in Salisbury, Vt., June 27th, 1857. He graduated at Middlebury College in 1878, where in course he took the Master's degree; studied a year in the General Theological Seminary in New York City and in 1879 entered the middle class of the Episcopal Theological School, Cambridge. In 1880–81 he spent a year in study and travel in Europe and the East. Returning in the latter year, he resumed his studies in the Cambridge Theological School, where he graduated in 1882 with the degree of B.D. Shortly after graduation, the same year, he was elected to the rectorship of this church.

In 1883, during Mr. Atwood's rectorship, the church edifice was completed, and was consecrated as the *Ascension Memorial Church*, in memory of the generous contributions and personal efforts of the Rev. John Cotton Smith, D.D., of New York City, who was the principal donor of funds and who, from the organization of the parish, was a warm and devoted friend of the church. Dr. Smith and Joseph E. Bomer, M.D., might be considered the founders of the society and church. Some one has given a very just and vivid description of the edifice:

"It stands forth in all its architectural beauty unadorned by tree or paling. Within it has all the richness and refinement of the costly cathedrals of the old world, which it resembles so much in miniature. Nothing flashy or gaudy can be seen. Its very richness is softened to harmonize with the spirituality of its creations. It has none of the unfinished look which so often mars otherwise elegant church edifices. Its very coloring seems to give a restful, quiet atmosphere to the place. It contains two memorial windows, one given by the citizens of Ipswich to the late Joseph E. Bomer, who did so much in creating and fostering the Episcopal Church in Ipswich. On the lectern we noticed a large Bible presented to the church by his wife, who plays the organ, and who takes

a deep interest in the church. The other memorial window is dedicated to a little daughter of Dr. and Mrs. John Cotton Smith, to whose generosity Ipswich is indebted for one of the most beautiful church edifices that we ever have seen in this country. The pulpit used by the late Dr. Smith in his church in New York was sent to the Ipswich Church after his death. Over the door is a tablet stating that the church is dedicated to the memory of Dr. Smith."

The church organizations are: The Benefit, the Church-Aid, the St. Agnes Societies, the St. Andrew's Guild and the Children's Mission Circle. The officers, teachers and scholars of the Sunday school number about one hundred and twenty-five. The wardens are E. H. Martin and C. S. Tuckerman, Esquires. The society enjoys a harmony of sentiment and a unity of purpose, and has a hopeful future.

6. One of the founders of the church and society was JOSEPH EDWARD BOMER, M.D. Dr. Bomer was born in Beverly, March 14, 1819. His father, of French descent, went, in early life, to Windham, N. H. At the age of twenty-eight years, he removed to Beverly, where he married Abigail Friend, who was descended from the old Puritan stock. He was a farmer and highly respected. He had a family of nine children. Joseph E. was the fifth son. He had a delicate constitution, was unequal to farm labor, was fond of books, and so was devoted to intellectual pursuits. He was a Beverly scholar till he was fourteen years old; then he became a student in the Topsfield Academy, under principal Edmund F. Slafter, who became very much interested in him and soon engaged him as assistant teacher. Leaving Topsfield, he studied in the Phillips Academy, Exeter, N. H., and afterwards in the Phillips Academy, Andover. Having completed his course at Andover, he entered Harvard Medical School, from which he graduated in 1848. In February, 1849, he settled in this town, a physician of the old-school of practice. His office was next to the Agawam House, and near the residence of Dr. Thomas Manning, then the oldest and most skillful physician of the town, through whose influence and kindness the young physician soon secured a large and lucrative practice.

In October, 1850, Dr. Bomer married Miss Caroline Elizabeth Hayes, of Gloucester. Soon after this event, Dr. Manning, feeling the burden and cares of business and professional life weighing upon him, and wishing on that account to retire, invited our young doctor to reside with him and assume his practice. Dr. Bomer accepted and lived in reciprocal confidence, till the death of his aged friend.

Dr. Bomer was physician to the House of Correction and the Insane Asylum from 1850 till his death. He was examining surgeon, of the Eastern District, of those who enlisted for the War of the Rebellion, during which time he attended professionally the families of the soldiers free of charge. He was placed upon the school board and served while he lived. A high school graduate gives the following estimate of him: "I refer to him who was so respected and beloved among us. The physician who was always welcome in the schools, and for his ready tact in asking questions and eliciting answers, as well as pleasant manner, won the favor of the schools." In politics, in early life, he was a "Webster Whig." He believed in freedom of thought, and was courteous and liberal to all who differed from him in politics or religion. In the latter he was a firm Episcopalian, and an earnest worker. Some years before his day, the service of that church had been started, but failed to succeed for want of interest and funds. Through the doctor's influence and perseverance it was again revived. Dr. Bomer and John F. Clothey, of Marblehead, then a resident and merchant here, secured, though the kindness of the trustees of the Methodist Episcopal Church, the use of their church edifice, and then invited the Rev. Robert F. Chase, of Danvers, to officiate. He preached to an audience of devout listeners, and from that service sprung the present church. The doctor continued a firm supporter of the church and society through life. He was a devout, genial, sympathetic and exemplary Christian. He was, too, eminently a public-spirited citizen, and among the foremost in all works of public utility. He bore an unblemished reputation.

METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH AND SOCIETY.

Origin.—This denomination of Christians arose in England, in 1729, and derived their name from the exact regularity of their lives, a very pleasing commentary upon their character. In 1741 they divided into two parties, under George Whitefield and John Wesley. The former adopted the views of John Calvin; the latter of Arminius. The followers of Arminius compose the great body of Methodists in this country and Great Britain. In 1830 seceders from the Wesleyan Methodists established a government and discipline of their own and styled themselves "The Methodist Protestant Church." This church differs from its parent church only in certain matters of discipline, particularly those relating to Episcopacy and the manner of constituting the general conference.

Methodism first came into this country with Rev. George Whitefield in 1739, and was an important factor in the deep and extensive revivals that soon after followed. Its power was first felt in Ipswich when that eloquent divine electrified the populace from "the Whitefield-Pulpit" rock near the First Church, and "Pulpit Rock," in Linebrook.

Methodism, as now taught, "was first introduced in New England, in 1789," says Miss Archer, in her excellent and serviceable sketch of this church, and "in Ipswich in the year 1790, by Rev. Jesse Lee, who was sent by the venerable Bishop Francis Asbury, still active and ardent in the cause." The sketch relates that the first convert, by the preaching of Mr. Lee, was the mother of Gen. James Appleton. She

fixed the date August 12, 1791, and ever after remembered the day with adoring gratitude.

Mr. Felt, in 1834, wrote: "The remainder of the first Baptist Society and some Methodists began to have preaching of the latter denomination in 1817" but Miss Archer, discriminating in the call and the doctrine, says "no other Methodist preacher labored in Ipswich till October, 1821, when REV. AARON WAIT (1821–25 or '26) came." His coming was fortuitous. Passing through the town on business, on Saturday, the 6th, he stopped at the "Treadwell tavern." He was invited to preach, and the next day addressed three audiences in "the old woolen factory," in which the Baptists had worshipped, and which stood north of and contiguous to the famous Choate Bridge. In November, he came again and preached three times. In four weeks he came again, and again preached three times, and held a prayer-meeting, when five inquirers came forward. On Christmas, he preached twice, and held an inquiry-meeting. Two weeks later he made a fourth visit, and found the work he had done was "good." Soon after he removed his family to Ipswich, but, like Paul, "coveting no man's silver," he worked at shoe-making during the week and preached on Sundays. Mr. Charles Dodge was Mr. Wait's first convert.

The seed thus sown by Mr. Wait budded and blossomed in the spring of 1822, and was named THE METHODIST EPISCOPAL SOCIETY. The first class-meeting was held in the dwelling of Mr. Aaron Wallace, afterwards of Mr. Amos Jones, on South Main Street. It had twenty-two members, eight of whom came from the Baptists. Prayer-meetings were held in various parts of the town. The first love-feast was had with Capt. William Gould, in the Robbins house, on High Street, near the North Cemetery. The Sunday-school was organized in the summer of 1824, with three classes and twenty members, and Charles Dodge as Superintendent. The first meeting-house was begun in September, 1824, and dedicated the Christmas following, Rev. John Lindsey preaching the sermon. It was built, fifty by forty feet, with galleries, and cost, all finished, less than two thousand dollars, including two hundred and fifty dollars, the price of the land. It stood where now stands the residence of Mr. Robert Jordan. Within six months after this time, the society was called to mourn the deaths of Dr. John Manning, Aaron Treadwell, Sr. and Judge Sutton, three ardently active friends.

In 1825 Mr. Wait joined the New England Conference. Ipswich and Gloucester were made a circuit, and Rev. Aaron Wait and Rev. Aaron Josselyn were appointed Circuit preachers. The first Quarterly Conference for this circuit was held September, 1825, and there were present Rev. E. Hyde, Presiding Elder; Rev. Aaron Wait and Rev. Aaron Josselyn, Pastors; and Charles Dodge and Daniel B. Lord, of Ipswich, and Thomas Hillard, of Gloucester, Stewards.

Mr. Wait was a native of Malden, and was born September 24, 1799. He united with the church when quite young, and with the Conference in his twenty-sixth year. His appointments were to Ipswich, Gloucester, Wilbraham and Ludlow. About 1830 he retired, though he preached, more or less, till his death, September 1, 1864. His personal presence was good; he was an easy, pleasant speaker, had a fair pulpit ability and an unblemished Christian character.

REV. AARON JOSSELYN was born in Pembroke May 4, 1804. He entered the ministry August 9, 1825, and continued twenty years, but preached occasionally till age and infirmity disqualified him for pulpit labor. He was an ardent advocate of Anti-slavery, was a member of the Legislature three years, a justice of the peace fourteen years and held various town offices. He was thirty years a resident of Duxbury, but now resides with his daughter, in East Cambridge. This church had a steady growth during his ministry, and among the number added was Apollos Hale, afterwards Rev. The number returned for this circuit this year was forty-six.

1826. REV. NATHAN PAINE.—The number returned this year for this church was twenty-eight members. Mr. Paine was born in Burrellville, R. I., September 30, 1791. He was converted in his seventeenth year, and soon received a license to preach. He joined the New England Conference in 1815, and continued in active service till 1853, a period of thirty-eight years. In 1853 he took a superannuated relation, and removed to New Bedford, where he lived with his children, till his death, September 9, 1863. Says Rev. Dr. Allen: "He was remarkably cheerful, affectionate and unpretentious; he was wise in counsel, and of unswerving integrity. He was a true, earnest and faithful minister, and accomplished great good, though his pulpit ability was not of the highest order. Few ministers have lived of purer character, of nobler purpose, of more unselfish aims and of greater devotedness to their work. He was a noble specimen of ministerial purity and goodness. The closing years of his life were full of Christian joy and hope."

1828. REV. JOHN THOMPSON BURRELL.—Mr. Burrell was born in Lynn December 25, 1799, and he died in Chelsea September 20, 1885. He qualified for membership in the Conference under direction of pastors, while a local preacher, and entered when he was twenty-eight years old. This was his first pulpit, to which he was returned in 1833 and 1834. He preached in the *Methodist Episcopal Ministry* till 1850, then in the *Methodist Protestant Ministry*. His were among the best pulpits. Rev. J. L. Estey records him as a man "of fine presence, of gentlemanly bearing, of eloquent oratory and faithful instruction. He was, wherever he labored, beloved and successful." He is said to have been one of the most pleasing and talented men ever stationed here. The mem-

bers returned for his first year number fifty-two, and the number returned for the two years is twenty probationers.

1829. Rev. John J. Bliss.—Mr. Bliss united with the Conference in 1826 or '27, and for about seven years was an earnest, active and successful minister. In 1834 he was excluded from the church, upon charges that may not have affected his character, and, it is thought, went West. He was a man of considerable ability, and had been highly esteemed by those who knew him.

His pastorate here was very successful. Rev. John N. Maffitt assisted and preached sixty successive nights. The religious interest was so great that for an entire week business was suspended, most of the stores were closed, the cotton-mills shut down for want of help, and people seemed bent on seeking "first the kingdom of God and his righteousness." The number returned for this year is two hundred.

1830. Rev. Jacob Sanborn.—Mr. Sanborn entered the ministry in 1812, and continued fifty-five years. He died March 16, 1867, at the age of seventy-nine. During his pastorate a parsonage was built.

1831. Rev. Enoch Mudge.—This man was the first native Methodist preacher in New England. He was born in Lynn June 28, 1776. He entered the New England Conference when seventeen, received Deacon's orders when nineteen, and Elder's when twenty. He continued in active service fifty-seven years. His fields of labor were chiefly in Maine. In Massachusetts he was a member of the convention to revise the State Constitution, and was two years a member of the Legislature.

He occupied this pulpit ten months and was called to the responsible charge of the Seaman's Chapel, New Bedford. He remained there as chaplain of the Port Society, abundant in labors and honored by all, till 1844, when failing health compelled him to seek repose. He went to his kindred at Lynn, where he died April 2, 1850. Enoch Redington Mudge, the famous Boston mill-agent, recently deceased, was his son.

1832. Rev. Epaphras Kibby.—He served the church well, and there was a steady growth. He entered the ministry in 1798, and after a service of forty-three years, died, August 16, 1864, at the age of sixty-six years.

1833-34. Rev. J. F. Burrell.—This pastor is noticed in 1828, above.

1835. Rev. Newell S. Spaulding.—During this pastorate there was quite an extensive work of grace, and fifty probationers were received. Mr. Spaulding began to preach in 1822, and after a ministry of sixty-two years, died August 17, 1884, at the age of eighty-four years.

1836-37. Rev. Edward Murphy Beebe.—During this pastorate the church edifice was enlarged at a cost of one thousand and forty dollars, and a bell was purchased at a cost of three hundred dollars, raised by subscription. Mr. Beebe was in the ministry sixteen years. He died March 19, 1845, aged forty years.

1838-39. Rev. Joel Knight.—Mr. Knight continued in the ministry thirteen years. While here forty probationers were received. He died August 13, 1843, at the age of thirty-nine years.

1840-41. Rev. Daniel Wise, D.D.—This church kept the 1st day of January, 1841, with fasting and prayer. It was the beginning of a very gracious revival. The following winter was also a season of refreshing. Eighty-eight were received on probation. Because of failing health, he resigned in March, 1842.

The doctor was born in Portsmouth, England, June 10, 1813. He was educated in the Portsmouth Grammar School, a classical institution, under the patronage of the dean and canons of Christ Church, Oxford. He removed to America in the summer of 1833. He received the Master's degree in 1849, and the doctorate in 1859, from the Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn. He was licensed to preach in 1834, ordained deacon in 1839, and elder in 1843. He has published two books, highly recommended: "Boy Travelers in Arabia," and "Our Missionary Heroes and Heroines." He resides in Englewood, N. J.

1842. Rev. Daniel Webb.—During this pastorate a steady growth was maintained, and "a few valuable members were added to the church." "Twenty-five members withdrew and joined the 'Methodist Wesleyan Church in the United States.' Some of them soon returned." Mr. Webb was sixty-nine years in the ministry, and died March 19, 1867, aged eighty-nine years.

1843-44. Rev. John S. Springer.—In this pastorate the church edifice was re-modeled, and a new pulpit constructed. The expense was about two hundred and fifty dollars. He joined the Conference in 1839, and for seven years was a very successful minister. In 1847, while stationed at Lowell, he withdrew from the church. It is thought he stood well in his Christian and moral character. He was a man of considerable ability, was popular, and filled some of the best puipits in the Conference.

1845. Rev. Joseph Denison, D.D.—Though he left no special vestige of his service here, he was an able and learned man. He was born in Bernardston October 1, 1815. He entered Wesleyan Academy, Wilbraham, in 1833, and the sophomore class of the Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., in 1837, graduating in 1840. He taught the languages in Amenia Seminary, Dutchess County, N. Y., three years; he spent about twelve years in the ministry, and in 1855 went to Kansas. He was one of the founders of the State Agricultural College, and was its president from 1863 to 1873, and was president of Baker University from 1874 to 1879. He received the doctorate from McKendree College. He is an

ardent and active Prohibitionist. He is now presiding elder of the Atchison District (Kansas) Conference, and resides in Atchison.

1846-47. Rev. Lorenzo R. Thayer.—During this time a vestry, fifty by forty feet, was built, in the rear of the church, at a cost of four hundred dollars, and about twenty probationers were received. He preached at the dedication of the new church edifice in 1860. He was born in Winchester, N. H., December 2, 1814. He studied for college in the Newbury Seminary, Vt., and in 1841 graduated at the Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn. He joined the New England Conference the same year. He was stationed at Lynn in 1848–49; is now in Newtonville.

1848. Rev. Stephen Cushing.—This pastorate was pleasant, and attended with much spiritual interest. Fifteen were received into the church. Mr. Cushing was born in Boston March 15, 1813. He was two years at Wesleyan Academy, Wilbraham, and took a partial course in the Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., in 1832. He entered the New England Conference in June, 1833. He now resides in Boston.

1849. Rev. Charles Baker.—During this pastorate about thirty were received on trial, He was born in Scituate, R. I., April 7, 1798. He did not graduate. After a ministry of forty-three years, he died at Somerville, August 16, 1864, aged sixty-six years.

1850-51. Rev. James Shepherd.—During the first year of this pastorate the meeting-house was again enlarged, at a cost of seven hundred and fifty dollars. He preached twenty-two years. He died May 22, 1855, at the age of fifty-three years.

1852. Rev. Moses A. Howe.—With Mr. Howe the New England Conference held its annual session. He died January 27, 1861, aged sixty-one years, after a successful ministry of twenty-two years.

1853-54. Rev. John William Dadman.—This was a period of great harmony, in the church and out of it. Mr. Dadman and Mr. Southgate made the first pulpit exchange between the Methodist and Congregational Churches, and the event marked a new era in Christian fellowship among the good people of the town. Mr. Dadman was born in Hubbardston, December 20, 1819. He entered Wesleyan Academy, Wilbraham, in 1840, and graduated in 1842. Indigent circumstances obliged him to forego a collegiate course, and he at once entered the ministry. He was licensed April 10, 1841, joined the Conference June 29, 1842, and was ordained elder May 3, 1846. His fields of labor have been Boston, Worcester, Lowell, Roxbury and the western part of the State. The last twenty-two years he has been chaplain and superintendent of schools in the city institutions, Deer Island, Boston. One of his children, Luella Jane, was born here June 30, 1853.

1855-56.—Rev. Jeremiah L. Hanaford. At this time there was another great outpouring of the Divine Spirit, and one hundred and fifty were received on trial, and Rev. George S. Noyes and Rev. F. G. Morris were among them. Mr. Hanaford was born June 7, 1824, at Northfield, Vt.

1857-58.—Rev. William Carpenter High. Mr. High took up the good work and labored earnestly and well. He baptized about sixty. He was born in Waitsfield, Vt., March 30, 1822. He was educated at the Montpelier Academy and the Newbury Seminary. His first appointment was at Danvers (now Peabody). He took a supernumerary relation, and has since resided in Somerville. Mr. High conducted several large revivals, and was generally considered a successful minister.

1859-60.—Rev. C. L. Eastman. At this time the present house of worship was built, and, marvelous to relate, not a dollar was pledged. The trustees became personally responsible for it. Their names were Joseph Wait, Ezekiel Peabody, Oliver Underhill, Daniel L. Hodgkins, Daniel P. Nourse, William H. Graves, Abraham D. Wait, James M. Wellington, Frederick Willcomb, ever worthy of remembrance. The size of the house is eighty-four by sixty-two feet; chancel, twenty-nine by eleven feet; vestibule, eight and a half feet wide; tower, eighteen feet square; and several hundred sittings. Rev. George Bowler was the architect, and our townsman, William H. Smith, the contractor. The cost was twelve thousand dollars, including the site. It was dedicated January 8, 1861, Rev. L. R. Thayer, noticed above, preaching the sermon. Mr. Eastman was born in Weare, N. H., June 11, 1822. He joined the conference in 1844. His pulpits have been among the most onerous and best. He now resides in Chelsea.

1861-62.—Rev. Austin F. Herrick. Mr. Herrick was born in Otis, June 17, 1824. He entered Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., in 1849; but left before graduation, and entered the Biblical Institute, Concord, N. H. (now the Theological School of Boston University), graduating in 1852. He joined the conference, at the session with this church, April 27, 1853. He came here as pastor on that memorable April 19, 1861. In two or three months, Ipswich's first company for the war, in full military dress, on the Sabbath before marching, worshipped with his church. Those were years of thrilling events, and of general prosperity to this church; some twenty were received on trial.

1863.—Rev. Joseph Chapman Cromack. This clergyman was born in Boston, May 11, 1812, to Joseph and Judith Millett Cromack, who were sometime of Amesbury. He was educated at Wesleyan Academy, Wilbraham, and was licensed to preach in 1835.

1864-65.—Rev. I. J. P. Collyer. This pastor was in the ministry twenty-eight years. While stationed here, twenty persons were received on trial. He died May 7, 1872.

1866–68.—Rev. Jesse Wagner. Mr. Wagner was born in Williamsburg, Pa., August 14, 1835. He graduated at the Methodist Biblical Institute, Concord, N. H., in 1861, and entered the ministry the following year. While here, by his personal efforts, an organ was bought at an expense of two thousand dollars, and twenty probationers were received.

1869–70.—Rev. Charles Atwood Merrill. This pastor is a native of Woodstock, Me. He graduated at the Biblical Institute, Concord, N. H. While located here, twenty persons were received on probation.

1871–72.—Rev. Charles H. Hanaford. Mr. Hanaford was born at Northfield, N. H. He was educated at the New Hampshire Conference Seminary, without graduation. He entered the ministry in 1858, and joined the New England Conference in April, 1859. The semi-centennial of the establishment of the church was celebrated in this pastorate, when money enough was raised to liquidate the debt of the society, and also a large part of the cost of the present parsonage. Twenty-eight persons were received on probation the first year.

1873–75.—Rev. E. A. Smith. Mr. Smith is a native of Howard, Pa. He fitted for the Junior Class of Dickinson Seminary, Williamsport. He afterwards taught three years there, filling the chair of natural sciences one year. In 1858 he joined the New Hampshire Conference, and graduated at the Biblical Institute, Concord, in June, 1859. He preached in the chief cities in the State, built the Main Street Methodist Episcopal Church, at Nashua, had extensive revivals in many of the churches, and bought and built several parsonages. He entered the New England Conference in 1873, and while stationed here, the society built and furnished a parsonage, at an expense of nearly six thousand dollars; and, in December, 1873, a great revival began, which continued nearly a year. More than three hundred persons knelt at the altar, and persons of all ages, from seven to eighty-five, were among the converts.

1876–77.—Rev. Frederick Woods, D.D. Dr. Woods is a native of St. John's, Newfoundland. He studied in Sackville Academy, N. B., Genesee College, Lima, N. Y., and graduated in 1859, at Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., where he received the Master's degree in 1862. He joined the New England Conference in 1859, and has done very efficient pulpit service. He has published several sermons and addresses. He preached the baccalaureate sermon at Mount Alleston University, Sackville, N. B., 1886, and received the doctorate. His service in this pulpit was efficient and progressive.

1878.—Rev. George Whitaker. This pastor was born in Boston, May 14, 1836. His father was a government official, son of Rev. Jonathan Whitaker, of Sharon and New Bedford, and nephew of Rev. David T. Kimball, of the First Church. George prepared for college at the Wesleyan Academy, Wilbraham, graduated at Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., in 1861, and entered the ministry the same year. He was presiding elder of the Springfield District, 1874–77. His pastorate here was very satisfactory. The church was repainted, frescoed and generally improved; the society debt of about three thousand three hundred dollars was canceled; and a gracious revival blessed the church.

1879–80.—Rev. P. M. Vinton.

1881–82.—Rev. Charles Nelson Smith. Mr. Smith was born in Brookfield, Vt., December 14, 1816. He studied at Newbury Seminary, entered college, but did not graduate. In 1865 he received the Master's degree from Wesleyan University, Middletown. He joined the conference July, 1842, was presiding elder in New Hampshire one year, and in Massachusetts one year; he has had nine two-year pastorates, four three-year pastorates, and was a member of the General Conference in 1856. He has built and repaired several churches, and by the blessing of Heaven has had his full share of success. He reported his full membership to be two hundred and sixty-one.

1883–84.—Rev. Charles T. Johnson. He was born in Lynn—now Nahant—October 16, 1838. His father was a grocer there nearly fifty years, and was postmaster thirty-two years. He studied at Wesleyan Academy, Wilbraham, and graduated at Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., in 1863, and entered the ministry the same year. His pastorate here was blessed, the society prospered, several united with the church. The membership reported was two hundred and seventy-eight full members and thirty-two probationers.

1885.—Rev. John Galbraith, Ph. D. Dr. Galbraith is a graduate of Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., whence he received the Master's degree in 1882. He is also a graduate of Boston University, whence he received the degree of Doctor of Philosophy in 1886. The present church membership is two hundred and thirty-six full members and forty-two probationers.

THE UNITARIAN SOCIETY.

A society of this belief was formed in 1830, the several churches contributing to the membership. Their services were held in the court-house till, at a cost of three thousand dollars or more, they built a church edifice, which was dedicated October 23, 1833. They continued a worshiping congregation some six or seven years, and then formally dissolved. A few years later—1843—they sold their house of worship to the town for a town-house, at a price not exceeding two thousand dollars. The house, with alterations and additions, is the present town-house, and the pews are those of the Linebrook Church.

ST. JOSEPH'S CATHOLIC SOCIETY.

This is a mission society. At first it belonged to Rev. Father Teeling's parish in Newburyport, but in

1871 was transferred to Rev. William H. Ryan's parish in Beverly. They have a very pretty church edifice, which was completed in 1872. The society consists of about five hundred and fifty worshipers.

Conclusion.—The proportion of service, by the various denominations, is about as follows: The First Church, by its double pastorates and colleagues, 355 years; the South, 140 years; the Linebrook, 138 years; the Methodist, 65 years; the Episcopal, 26 years; the Catholic, about 20 years; the Baptist, 17 years; and the Unitarian, 7 years, making a total of more than 750 years for one man, which is equivalent to three pastorates for the actual time. The several pastors and assistants have been, almost to a man, liberally educated. They have brought an apparent zeal to their work, and a good conception of their duty therein. They have been watchful, diligent, laborious, prayerful. A good proportion of them have been dignified, trusty, efficient leaders. They have been able to read the signs of the times, to understand the needs of their people, and to utilize circumstances, as well as actual means. They have watched the ripening grain in their respective fields of labor, and gathered their gracious harvests; their doctrines have been a leaven that has permeated the whole mass of the populace; that has endowed the legislator, the justice, the mariner, the mechanic, the manufacturer, the farmer; that has impeded crime and corrected the erring; that has superinduced a nobler, truer, more earnest and more effective manhood; and has first, last and midst, been our people's enlightenment and guide. Such is our hope of the future.

CHAPTER XLIV.

IPSWICH—(*Continued*).

EDUCATIONAL.

Initial Status.—It has been said that the Plymouth Colony had only one University man, the Elder Brewster, while the Massachusetts Bay Colony was noted for its men of wealth, social position and education. Ipswich, in this respect, was a representative town—not a whit behind the metropolis in mental and educational influence and ability. She understood and appreciated the value of a varied learning practical and polite, of a thorough knowledge of home arts and social culture, and of the acquisition of ancient history, literature and tongues; and to this end she was willing to contribute, even to a sacrifice, to obtain them.

Why Latin?—It may be asked why our forefathers so valued a knowledge of the ancient languages, especially the Latin, as to give them immediate attention. Doubtless they studied them for the same reasons we do to-day, but we apprehend that they did then chiefly because they were intensely English; and on that ground anything that did not conflict with or savor of religious tenets must be intensely English also. The Latin language, at that time, was in its old age, only dead in the sense that it had passed the period of its growth. It may be said to have been *the* language of the time, the English tongue sharply vying with it for the supremacy. It embodied the laws of the realm and Biblical exegesis, and scientific essays and important documents were presented in it. The learned addressed their compeers in public assemblies, and statecraft was orally discussed in its elegant phrases. Queen Elizabeth spoke it, and Lord Bacon, "the great glory of literature," composed most of his writings in it. The devotion, benefactions and labors of our emigrant ancestors in the matter of schools excites not our wonder so much as our gratitude. The kind and degree of learning at their native homes must be the kind and degree here, so far as practicable; and while the exigences of the occasion made the family a school in the rudiments, and the mother the teacher, a grammar school, in the English sense, was early established for preparing young men for college.

The Grammar School.—According to the records, a grammar school was "set up" in 1636, and Lionel Chute appears to have been the teacher. The record further states that the school did "not succeed." It began some two years after the incorporation of the town, and the young town doubtless made no appropriation for its support. Its success would have been phenomenal. Mr. Chute died in 1644 or '45.

The School Endowed.—This attempt of Master Chute was followed by "several overtures and endeavors among the inhabitants for settling a Grammar School," which failed to realize their object, as did he. The spirit of education, however, had taken possession of the public mind, and when about 1649, Robert Paine, the leading spirit in the endeavor, offered to "erect an edifice for the purpose, provided the town or any particular inhabitant of the town would devote, sett apart or give any land or other annuity for the yearly maintenance of such one as should be fitt to keep a Grammar School." The town accordingly, January 11, 1650, granted to Robert Paine, Mr. William Paine, Major Denison and Mr. Bartholomew in trust "for the use of schools all that neck beyond Chebacco River and the rest of the ground (up to Gloucester line) adjoining to it." Soon after this the land was leased to John Cogswell, his heirs and assigns, for the space of one thousand years, at an annual rental of fourteen pounds. The tenants began to build upon the land as early as 1723, and a part of the village of Essex now occupies a large portion of it, and the rent continues to be paid.

The citizens are now fully awake to the occasion, and give body, shape and purpose to the enterprise by ordaining, January 26, 1651, the following:

"*The Feoffees.*—For the better ordering of the school and the affairs thereof, Mr. Simonds, Mr. Roggers, Mr. Norton, Maj. Denison, Mr. Robert Paine, Mr. William Paine, Mr. Hubbard, Dea. Whipple, Mr. Bartholomew were chosen a committee to receive all such sums of money as have or shall be given toward the building or maintaining of a Grammar School and school-master, and to disburse and dispose such sums as are given to provide a school-house and school-master's house either in building or purchasing the said house with all convenient speed. And such sums of money, parcels of land, rents or annuities as are or shall be given towards to the maintenance of a school-master they shall receive and dispose of to the school-master that they shall call or choose to that office from time to time to his maintenance, which they have power to enlarge by appointing from year to year what each scholar shall yearly or quarterly pay or proportionately; who shall also have full power to regulate all matters concerning the school-master and scholars, as in their wisdom they think meet from time to time; who shall also consider the best way to make provisions for teaching to write and cast accounts."

In 1652 Mr. Robert Paine purchased a house, with two acres of land belonging to it, for the use of the school-master, and in 1653, at his own expense, as per agreement, erected an edifice upon the land for the grammar school, and October 4, 1683, he and his wife gave the house and land to the town for the school's use. About the same time Mr. William Hubbard gave about an acre of land adjoining the school-master's house. In 1650 Mr. John Cross "secured" on his farm near Rowley a perpetual annuity of ten shillings towards a free school in the town. In 1696 the town grants ten acres of marsh at Castle Neck. These gifts were sold by order of the General Court in 1836, and netted the feoffees about three thousand two hundred dollars. In 1660 Mr. William Paine gave the land near the mouth of the river called Little Neck. In 1661 "the barn erected by Ezekiel Cheever and the orchard planted by him were, after his removal to Charlestown, bought by the feoffees," as the trustees were then and have since been called, and presented by them for the school-master's use or for rent.

We can hardly say too much in praise of the exertions, devotion, benefactions and leading spirit of the original donor of this school, Mr. Robert Paine. He was timely, efficient, provident, public-spirited, noble, wealthy, generous. Of a hundred and fifty-five subscriptions "to encourage Major Denison in his military helpfulness," Mr. Paine's was the largest, to be paid annually. He was a ruling elder in the church, ranking next to the minister. He was representative three years. He was county treasurer from 1665 till his resignation in 1683, the year before he died, at the age of eighty-three years.

William Paine, brother of the above, seems to have been wealthy and active for the public good. He removed to Boston about 1656, where he died October 10, 1660. He was buried in the Granary Cemetery, and his tombstone forms a part of the basement wall of the Athenæum. Besides his liberal bequest to our Grammar School, he gave twenty pounds to Harvard College.

Mr. William Hubbard, another original benefactor of the school, came with the elder Winthrop to Boston in 1630, and settled in this town in 1635. He was representative six years between 1638 and 1646. In 1651 he was commissioned to solemnize marriages, clergymen at that time being denied such authority. He removed to Boston in 1662, where he died in 1670. He left a large estate. Two of his children, Richard and William, the historian and colleague of Rev. Mr. Norton in our pulpit, were professors of the school.

The Board of Feoffees consisted originally of nine members; in 1662 the town voted that the number be "increased to nine." In 1664 the number was ten, but after the death of Robert Paine, Jr., the number never appears greater than nine. The town by vote, April 7, 1687, ordered the selectmen to obtain deeds of all the school lands, that they may know the power the feoffees have to order the schools; and May 19th, of the same year, voted that the former feoffees now living (Rev. William Hubbard, Robert Paine and Elder and Captain John Appleton) with the selectmen shall manage the schools till further action by the town. If this vote was inoperative or effective we know not. Vacancies in the board seem to have been filled by the remaining members without reference to any action of the town. Their history for the colonial period seems to have been only the routine work of the school.

The First Master.—The first master of the school was Ezekiel Cheever. He kept it ten years. He then removed to Charlestown and afterwards to Boston, where he was master of the Boston Latin School. He was born in London, England, January 25, 1615, and died in Boston August 25, 1708, at the great age of ninety-three years and seven months, after seventy years of tedious labor as school-master.

In six years from the opening of the school this town had six students in Harvard College. They were Robert Paine, son of the founder of the school; John Emerson, son of Thomas, and afterwards minister of Gloucester; Nathaniel Saltonstall, son of Richard, and afterwards minister of Haverhill; Ezekiel, Rogers, son of Rev. Nathaniel; Samuel Cheever, son of the master; Samuel Belcher, son of Jeremy, minister of the Isle of Shoals and later of Newbury. Other pupils of Master Cheever's, who were students in Harvard, were William Wittingham, son of John; Samuel Cobbett, son of Rev. Thomas; and Samuel Symonds, son of the deputy-governor.

Mr. Cheever's successor was Thomas Andrews, who began August 1, 1660, and kept it twenty-three years. During this time Ipswich sent to Harvard College Samuel Bishop; Samuel and Daniel Epes, sons of Daniel; John Norton, son of William and nephew of Rev. John; John Rogers, son of President John of Harvard; John Denison, son of John and grandson of General Daniel, and pastor-elect of this church; Francis Wainwright; and Daniel Rogers, another son of the president, and many years master of the school. Mr. Andrews died July 10, 1683, and

left a considerable property to his relatives, probably never having married.

Mr. Noadiah Russell, of Cambridge, succeeded Mr. Andrews, and took charge of the school October 31, 1683. He was a graduate of Harvard in 1681. He continued master of the school till his resignation February 23, 1686–87, when he was succeeded by Mr. Daniel Rogers.

Mr. Rogers' mastership completed the colonial period and began the provincial, probably from 1687 to 1715. It was during his service, also, that the old school-house was abandoned, having been the subject of extensive repairs several times, and the new rooms in the court and town-house occupied, which change was made about 1704.

From Mr. Rogers' tuition fifteen pupils entered Harvard College, among whom were John Wade, son of Colonel Thomas; Francis Goodhue, son of Deacon William; Jeremiah and Henry Wise, sons of Rev. John; John Perkins, son of Abraham; William Burnham, who became a minister; Benjamin Choate, son of John; Francis and John Wainwright; John Denison, son of Rev. John; Nathaniel Appleton, son of Colonel John, and afterwards minister of Cambridge; and Francis Cogswell, son of Jonathan.

Made a Free School.—The town and feoffees agreed April 8, 1714, to make the Grammar School for the present year "absolutely free to all such scholars belonging to the town." The town appropriated twenty-five pounds and chose a committee, who with the feoffees, provided a master, who shall attend "constantly in teaching grammar scholars and also English scholars, to perfect them in reading and instruct them in writing and ciphering." Master Rogers is sketched as registrar of probate.

Ebenezer Gay, who graduated at Harvard in 1714, was the next teacher for one year, and had a salary of fifty-six pounds. He was afterwards the celebrated Dr. Gay, of Hingham. He was followed by Mr. Thomas Norton, who was master in 1716. He was a deacon. His son, Thomas, graduated at Harvard in 1725, and taught this school ten years, 1729–39, under the direction of the selectmen.

Benjamin Crocker took the school June 4, 1717, at a salary of eighty pounds, old tenor, and left it November, 1719 [1718?]. He taught afterwards two years, 1746–47, at a salary of one hundred pounds, old tenor, and again two years, 1759–60. He graduated at Harvard in 1713. He was feoffee 1749–64; he occasionally preached. Deacon John, of the First Church, was his son.

Revolution in School.—At this date began the period of contention and revolution in the school. For the encouragement of the school the town voted, May 8, 1718, to make up sixty pounds to the school, if necessary, after the collection of rents and a tuition of twenty shillings per scholar, for that year. The selectmen, it was voted November 5, 1718, shall provide "with all convenient speed" a master for the rest of the present year. The town chose a committee February 9, 1719, to eject the tenants of the *great farm*, leased to John Cogswell, and release it for a period not exceeding twenty-one years. Rev. John Rogers and Rev. Jabez Fitch enter their protests. The dissatisfaction seems to be "especially of the younger sort." The town voted June 6, 1720, to hire a grammar school teacher; and also chose a committee to recover the *great farm*, and re-lease it for twenty-one years. The town thus took control of the school and the school property; the feoffees entered their protest in their records and retired. The tenants of the *great farm* took advantage of the quarrel and refused to pay the rent till it might be determined who was entitled to receive it. The town January 4, 1720–21, constituted John Wainwright, Ens. George Hart and Mr. Thomas Boardman trustees, to eject all persons in possession of school lands, but failed in the Court of Common Pleas March, 1722, to establish their claim. An inadvertence of the clerk failed to enter their appeal to the Superior Court, and Sarah, the widow of John Cogswell, still held possession.

In 1721 the town brought an action at law against the tenants of the school farm, and in 1729 Gifford Cogswell is ordered to pay £100 in adjustment of the claims, which sum was apportioned to the several parts of the town according to their proportion of the Province tax, whence dates the beginning of the district school system.

Reading and Writing School.—The above appropriation of £100 probably lasted about three years; but no other is recorded till after the town is required, April 26, 1739, to answer to the Court of General Sessions, for not maintaining a Reading and Writing School according to law. Then, March 4, 1739–40, the town appropriated £150 for both the grammar and the reading and writing schools, put them under one teacher and began the practice of moving them at the judgment of the selectmen. The appropriations were thus applied while the town had control of the school property.

Incorporation.—In 1749 Jonathan Wade was the only survivor of the feoffees, and February 10th, of that year, he filled the vacancies by appointments; but in 1756, the General Court incorporated Thomas Berry, Daniel Appleton and Samuel Rogers, Esqs., with Mr. Benjamin Crocker, on the part of the private persons who granted lands for the school, together with Francis Wash, Esq., Capt. Nathaniel Treadwell and Mr. John Patch, Jr., three of the board of selectmen of the town, a Joint Committee, or Feoffees in Trust, with full power to grant leases, recover rents and annuities, appoint masters, regulate their salaries, appoint clerk and treasurer and if necessary, impose a tuition. The act was limited to ten years; it was, at the end of the period, continued twenty-one years; and at the end of that period, or February 14, 1787, it was made perpetual, the feoffees representing private persons filling vacancies in their

number, while the three senior members of the successive Boards of Selectmen represent the town.

Masters.—MR. HENRY WISE was the first master in the employ of the selectmen. He accepted the trust June 20, 1720, and continued eight years. His salary was £55. THOMAS NORTON, JR., before mentioned, succeeded and continued ten years. After him was DANIEL STANIFORD, a graduate of Harvard in 1738, who continued five years, 1740–45. He was master of both schools, at a salary of £80. He was afterwards a successful merchant; and also a Representative three years. His successor was BENJAMIN CROCKER, above mentioned, who taught two years, 1746–47, at a salary of £150. JOHN DENNIS taught in 1753, for the school rents. In 1754 the town claimed to have conducted the affairs of the school for more than twenty years; yet she practically relinquished the school at the close of Mr. Crocker's mastership.

Under the act of incorporation, the first master was SAMUEL WIGGLESWORTH, son of Rev. Samuel of the Hamlet. He graduated at Harvard in 1752, and taught the school two years, 1757–58. His salary was £40. He afterwards practiced medicine. BENJAMIN CROCKER, before mentioned, taught two years, 1759–60. JOSEPH HOW succeeded and taught one year, 1761. His salary was £33 6*s.* 8*d.* He graduated at Harvard in 1758, married Elizabeth, daughter of Hon. Thomas Berry and died March 26, 1762, at the age of twenty-five, and his wife May 6, 1759, at the age of twenty-two years. DANIEL NOYES, who is sketched in "Registrars of Probate," kept the school thirteen years, 1762–73 and 1780, at a salary of £46 13*s.* 4*d.* THOMAS BURNHAM, a graduate of Harvard, in 1722, kept the school five years from 1774, at a salary of £50, and than entered the army, where he attained the rank of major. After the war he taught six years, 1786–91; then one year, 1793; then eleven years, 1807–17, when, in 1815, the income was $205.78, a total service of twenty-three years. NATHANIEL DODGE, a graduate of Harvard in 1777, taught two years, 1779 and '84. JACOB KIMBALL, a graduate of Harvard in 1780, taught one year, 1781. REV. JOHN TREADWELL, a graduate of Harvard in 1758, taught two years, 1783 and '85. DANIEL and JOSEPH DANA, graduates of Dartmouth College in 1788, taught two years, 1792 and '93 respectively, at a salary of £65. SAMUEL DANA, a brother of the above Daniel and Joseph, and son of Rev. Joseph, of the South Parish, and a graduate of Harvard in 1796, taught three years, 1797–99, when, in 1797, the income was $139.66. JOSEPH MCKEAN, a graduate of Harvard in 1794, taught three years, 1794–96. His salary was £80. He became a minister and a professor in Harvard College. AMOS CHOATE, a graduate of Harvard in 1795, taught seven years, 1800–6. He was afterwards registrar of deeds for the county. GEORGE CHOATE, a graduate of Harvard in 1818, taught four years, 1818–21. RICHARD KIMBALL taught nine weeks in 1822, "for the income of the school lands." CHARLES CHOATE, son of Hon. John, taught in 1823–24 on the same terms. STEPHEN COBURN taught in 1825; RICHARD KIMBALL in 1826, when the income was $165.23; JAMES W. WARD in 1827; NATHAN BROWN in 1828; DANIEL PERLEY in 1829; DAVID TENNEY KIMBALL, JR., in 1830; JOSEPH HALE in 1831–33, when, in 1831, the income was $163.61; TOLMAN WILLEY in 1834; DAN WEED, JR., in 1835–40; EBENEZER S. STEVENS in 1841; DAN WEED, JR., in 1842–45; GEORGE W. TEWKSBURY in 1846; EZRA W. GALE in 1847–48; CALEB LAMSON in 1849. Arrangements were made with REV. JOHN P. COWLES, of the Seminary, to instruct the grammar scholars, at forty cents a week, per *capita*, 1850; then with the town for a High School, wherein BENJAMIN P. CHUTE taught, 1851–52; JOSEPH A. SHORES, 1853–56; ISSACHAR LEFAVOUR, of Beverly, 1856–74. In 1874, when the present Manning School was established, the feoffees arranged with the trustees and town, to meet the obligation of the enfeoffment, and *practically* have contributed since then three hundred dollars annually.

Present Value of the Fund.—The condition of this trust, March 28, 1887, according to the treasurer's report, was as follows: "26⅔ old rights in Jeffrey's Neck, 2 house-lots in Revere, school-farm in Essex, Little Neck, deposit in Savings Bank, town notes, Lynn water-bond and cash, valued at $11,514, and yielding an income of about $500."

The school has been practically in the control of the town from a very early period, by right, assumption, or agreement, and since 1851 has been popularly called *the Ipswich High School.* Along near the close of the first century, and again near the close of the second, it was less efficient than at other times; and perhaps, on the whole, has not attained to the very high distinction hoped for by its founders, yet it has been a permanent good always, and most of the time of excellent worth. The trust is now rapidly growing in pecuniary value, and wisely managed, as now, will be in the future a large and efficient educational support.

THE MANNING SCHOOL.

The Founder.—This school was established in 1874. Dr. Thomas Manning, from whom it took its name, was the founder. He was son of Dr. John Manning, who died in 1824, at the age of eighty-six years, after a long, useful, public service, especially given—aside from his professional service—to the cause of education. Dr. Thomas inherited his father's sterling qualities, his generous public spirit, and perchance excelled him. He was devoted to the prosperity of the town, energetic in advancing her business interests, and, when in age he bethought him "to set his house in order," as a crowning service of his life, he devoted the greater part of his ample fortune to the purpose of establishing "a High School in the town of Ipswich, which should be free to the youth of the town of both sexes."

He was born February 7, 1774, and died February 3, 1854. He gave the property to Richard H. Manning, of Brooklyn, Francis C. Manning, of Boston—brothers—and Francis H. Blanchard, of Waltham, in trust, and provided that the school-house should be built and the school begun in the year of the one hundredth anniversary of his birth, the cost not to exceed one-third of the devise.

The Trust.—The doctor's son, however, thought that his father's long and serious illness in his old age had

improperly influenced the making his will, which made what was thought by many an inadequate provision for him, and he contested it, and it was disallowed. The son then paid all the minor bequests, and, to carry out the views of his father, generously gave the trustees, in 1857, about one-third of the remainder, the sum of $10,000.

Here Mr. Blanchard declined to serve and Mr. Otis Kimball was elected to the vacancy. The board thus constituted made and declared the deed of trust. In 1869 Mr. F. C. Manning died, and Mr. Joseph Ross, of Ipswich, was elected to his place; and in April, 1874, Dr. Y. G. Hurd was appointed a trustee in place of Otis Kimball, who had then died. About this time Otis Kimball, Jr., was elected.

Other Bequests.—When the century was nearly completed and the house was to be built, and the fund was found too small to meet the desired end, providentially came to hand the generous bequest of $4000 from Dr. Joseph Green Cogswell, of New York and Cambridge, one of Ipswich's most distinguished sons and a gentleman of unusual scholarly attainments. About this time, too, one of the trustee, Mr. Richard H. Manning, contributed the princely sum of $15,000. The present condition of the trust, exclusive of the buildings and land, which cost $32,000, is about $40,000.

The House and Appointments.—The school-house is a two-story, square structure, with mansard roof, and has rooms for cabinets, apparatus and recitations, and, on the third floor, a spacious and serviceable hall. The architectural design was by Edward R. Brown; the interior design, by George W. Archer; the trustee supervision of the work, by Joseph Ross and Dr. Y. G. Hurd; and the design of the furniture, by Joseph L. Ross—all Ipswich men.

The cabinets illustrative of natural history and mineralogy, and the apparatus for chemical and philosophical experiments are excellent. In 1842 Mr. Abraham Hammatt donated to the school his private cabinet of minerals, which, with additions presented by friends of the school, is now large, choice and well arranged.

Its Dedication.—Thus the trustees were enabled to meet the desire of the founder in establishing the school. It was dedicated in the afternoon of Wednesday, August 26, 1874. The exercises were conducted by the trustees and the school committee of the town, and consisted of addresses, the reading of a paper on the Genealogy of the Manning Family, and music. The president of the trustees, in his opening addresses, remarked: "The noble legacies of the dead and more noble gifts of the living have completed and furnished a structure which the citizens of Ipswich may look upon with grateful pride and satisfaction."

Mr. R. H. Manning, secretary and treasurer of the trustees, on the same occasion said, that the equipments of the school were ample to prepare students for professional studies, but its special object was "to lay the foundation, and do what time and opportunity may allow towards the superstructure of a useful education of *all* the children of the town." "The school has but little to do with regularly organized religious matters." It was open for "all who are qualified to receive its instructions without distinction of sex, color, race or religion." "While, therefore, it will be quite within its province to do much for those who intend to make literary pursuits the business of their lives, its purpose will rather be to provide an education which, through its general influence as well as by its special teaching, shall tend to make all who receive it able to perform the common duties and enjoy the common blessings of life; to make them better observers and thinkers, and consequently better farmers, engineers and men of business; and also, by laying a good foundation, better lawyers and doctors and ministers and statesmen; and above all, better neighbors and citizens; better and manlier men and better and more womanly women."

The Principals.—The teachers have been Martin H. Fiske, 1874–80; George N. Cross, 1881–82; A. M. Osgood, 1883–84; and George M. Smith, the present incumbent. The school has graduated one hundred and twenty-three pupils, and is now, more than ever, growing in popular favor and influence.

The Trustees.—The Board of Trustees, as at present constituted, is Dr. Yorick G. Hurd, president; Richard H. Manning, secretary and treasurer; Joseph Ross, Otis Kimball and Theodore F. Cogswell.

Richard Henry Manning.[1]—The subject of this sketch was born in Ipswich, February 1, 1809. His name at first was Henry. It was after his father's death, which occurred in 1815, that he assumed his name. His mother, whose maiden-name was Lydia Pearson, died when he was only a few months old, and soon after he was taken home by his grandfather, Dr. John Manning, and his wife, Lucy Bolles, with whom his father also lived until his death. The grandfather was a leading pioneer of woolen manufacturing in Massachusetts, if not the first. The father also engaged in this business in the old building which stood where the "Caldwell Block" now stands. A good mathematician and surveyor, he was, for one winter at least, master of the district school, and his little son, six years old when his father died, was subject to his instruction. The death of his grandmother, with whom his early years were very happy, consigned him to the care of his paternal aunts, whose good intentions sometimes failed of meeting the requirements of the sensitive and growing boy. It was probably on this account that he acceded to their plan for sending him to Dummer Academy, in Byfield, where the preceptor was Nehemiah Cleaveland, who had married his cousin, Abby P. Manning. But it was a heart-breaking business to leave his grandfather, who had been very kind to him and to whom he was very necessary, and he dared not trust himself to say good-bye, but stole away early in the morning. The experience entered on so painfully was very beneficial, Mr. and Mrs. Cleaveland proving admirable directors of his studies and helping the formation of his character with affectionate and judicious guidance of his habits and his tastes. To a period of repression succeeded a period of genial growth. "I have often thought," he wrote not long before his death, "that if I had grown up from

[1] By Rev. John W. Chadwick, Brooklyn, N. Y.



R. H. Manning.

early childhood with more sunshine and less wind, I should not have wrapped the cloak of reserve so closely about me, and might have been less censorious, of gentler and more considerate speech, and altogether a more agreeable member of society." But if he ever was censorious, harsh, or inconsiderate, it must have been at a period to which the memory of his later friends did not go back.

In 1825, after about eighteen months at Byfield, his school-days came to an end, and on the day before the laying of the corner stone of Bunker Hill Monument, June 24th, he entered on his business life in Boston, which continued with a single change of employers till he removed to Philadelphia in 1831. At this time his intellectual tendency of mind and earnestness of character had already sensibly declared themselves. With no taste for dissipation, refusing the summer evening punch and winter Sunday toddy proffered by his employer, in whose family he lived, he devoted his leisure hours to the reading of well-chosen books and to various literary exercises under the auspices of the Mercantile Library Association, of which he was a director. He was a lover of the poets as well as of the historians and novelists, and could "drop into poetry" himself upon occasion, once keeping up for some time a tilt of verse, *incognito*, with Mrs. Frances Osgood, not unknown to fame; and he never got to be so practical or scientific but that he could revert to this early habit. He was fond of revising the hymns sung at church in accordance with his scientific predilections, and he often turned a graceful rhyme to bless some birthday festival or other happy anniversary of home and friends.

Within a year after his going to Philadelphia he became a partner in the firm of Farnsworth & Manning, and the confidence with which he had inspired his employer in Boston was evidenced by his willingness to go security for him to the amount of several thousand dollars. In Boston he had not taken kindly to the Unitarianism of his employer, but in Philadelphia, coming under the influence of Dr. Furness, he became an ardent Unitarian, and with increasing liberality and growing satisfaction in rationalistic and scientific methods, he remained a Unitarian until his death, connected for the last thirty-five years of his life with the Second Unitarian Church in Brooklyn, N. Y., of which he was a trustee for several terms, and in which he was always greatly loved and honored for the wisdom of his counsels and the goodness of his heart. It was during his stay in Philadelphia that he made the acquaintance of Frances Augusta Moore, who became his wife Jan. 15, 1835, and died in March, 1839, leaving a daughter Adeline. Mr. Manning was again married, Nov. 7, 1840, to Sarah P. Swan, who died leaving a daughter Sarah, Dec. 21, 1841. The domestic happiness, twice laid in ruins, was again renewed June 29, 1843, when he married Mary D. Weeks, who remained until his death the fit companion of his earnest purpose and generous heart. They never wearied in "devising liberal things" for those of their own household and for many far and near who were in need of such encouragement and help as they could give. The children of this marriage were Henry Swan and Mary Channing, and their children, with those of the daughter Sarah, were the crowning happiness of Mr. Manning's later life. Through all the vicissitudes of his domestic life, from 1835 until her death, in 1880, his sister Elizabeth was a member of his family, with a mother-heart for all his children and a helping hand for every needful work.

Mr. Manning's business life in New York had hardly begun when the great fire of 1835 and the financial crash of 1836 gave a sudden check to his incipient prosperity. With a courageous heart he set out again, this time alone, as a dry-goods jobber, and he remained in the same business till 1851, with two or three different partners at different times. After a year of leisure, he entered into partnership with William C. Squier, of the New Jersey Zinc Company. In 1855, with the same partner, he took the selling agency of the Passaic Zinc Company, and made no further change for the remainder of his active business life, which terminated only four years before his death. His partner testifies, that in the thirty-two years of their connection, they never had one hour's misunderstanding or one word of anger or reproach. His year of leisure, 1851, was marked by one of the most agreeable and characteristic episodes of his career. For some years he had been deeply interested in the teachings of Fourier and other writers upon social reorganization. With others, he had induced the Rev. William Henry Channing to come to Brooklyn as minister of a society wholly free from any conventional limitations. Mr. Channing was profoundly interested in social questions and stirred up a generous enthusiasm for them in the minds of his hearers. For two or three years there was a series of parlor meetings, at which the times and the eternities were discussed with equal warmth. To these meetings came many able men and women—Horace Greeley not the least among them, and Margaret Fuller, in Mr. Manning's estimation, the greatest; or, at any rate, the ablest talker. For several months she was a member of his family, while on the staff of the *New York Tribune*. In the summer of 1850 Mr. Manning boarded at the North American Phalanx, the New York "Brook Farm," with several friends and their families. The doctrines of social reorganization which he had been brooding on so long, were thus practically tested, and the result was so assuring that in 1851 he built a cottage on the Phalanx grounds and spent the summer there. This was the episode to which we have referred. Mr. Manning always maintained that the failure of the movement was owing more to accidental circumstances than to intrinsic causes, and held to the necessity for changes in our present social order in the direction of co-operative life.

Mr. Manning never forgot his native town and had

at all times relations of kinship and affection with many Ipswich folks; but that which brought him into the closest and most gratifying contact with his former townsmen was his connection with the "Manning School." His uncle, Dr. Thomas Manning, dying in 1854, left nearly all his moderate fortune in trust to him, his brother Francis and Francis H. Blanchard, of Waltham, for the establishment and maintenance of a High School in Ipswich. The will was contested by the only son of Dr. Manning and it was disallowed by the Probate Court. But after the son had paid all the minor bequests of the will, he gave one-third of the sum remaining, about ten thousand dollars, to the trustees named in the will, with which to carry out his father's wishes. As only one-third could be spent for the building, it seemed best not to build until investment had considerably increased the sum in hand. The investment was made by Mr. R. H. Manning, and so successfully, that in 1874 the original sum had increased to more than forty thousand dollars, and then the bonds representing the whole amount were stolen by a thief, who had followed Mr. Manning into his office. The loss of no other money could have been so hard, but though his cheek was for a moment blanched, the next morning (New Year's day) he made his usual round of calls with his habitual cheerfulness. Of the stolen money, he at length recovered the larger part. What could not be recovered, he made up; adding to this a sum which, with a bequest made in his will, constitutes an amount more than double that originally in hand. These were the benefactions of a man of moderate means, of whom a friend has said that "he was wisely economical, in order that he might be nobly generous." But he gave the school more and better than money. He gave a well-selected library, into the choice of which he put hundreds of thoughtful hours. He gave his constant oversight and private counsel, and several times some well-considered public word in furtherance of the cause he had so much at heart.

Mr. Manning apprehended his position as a citizen in the most serious manner. He was always deeply interested in State and national politics and in questions of municipal reform. His anti-slavery sentiments dated from the beginning of the great debate. Horace Greeley had no more honored friend, and he made him one of the administrators of his will. He was a stanch Republican, and when the ordeal of battle succeeded to the strife of words, he was proud to have a soldier-son, and with the co-operation of his wife and sister, did what he could for the alleviation of the suffering and sorrow of the time. His connection with civil service reform was close and earnest from the start, and the last public duty he assumed (but did not live to perform) was that of an examiner under the civil service rules. His last illness began October 25th and he died Nov. 2d, 1887.

There was no more hospitable roof than his in all the land. There was welcome under it not only for the fortunate and happy who could bring their health and cheer, but for those who had been bruised and maimed in life's hard fray. Madame Zulavsky, an exile from Hungary, the sister of Louis Kossuth, had her last sickness here. The gravity of Mr. Manning's mind and character attracted to him many wise and noble spirits. He had a genius for friendship, and his friends were often persons of exceptional ability and worth. Horace Greeley and Margaret Fuller have been already named. Samuel Johnson, the Salem thinker and reformer, was another. Professor E. L. Youmans, with whose scientific thought he was entirely sympathetic, was perhaps the closest of them all But he did not demand high culture and ability from all his friends. To be simple and sincere and kind was a sufficient claim on his regard; or to be in need of any help that he could give. He had a gift for doing

"Little kindnesses which most leave undone or despise."

An "advanced thinker" always, he never lost the art of sweet, old-fashioned courtesy. He was remarkable for the comprehensiveness and balance of his powers. With great practical ability he united an admirable gift for speculative thought, and while thus profoundly intellectual, he was pre-eminently a "man of sentiment," without ever being sentimental. His feelings were extremely sensitive and warm. And so it was that, however admirable in every wider sphere, it was in his home-life that he revealed his most essential character. He wrote such letters as men used to write when as yet there was no penny post. They were not often long, but they were always carefully considered and gracefully expressed. For other forms of literary expression he was well equipped. His printed speeches and addresses and the papers that he published upon various subjects, though but few, are evidence that if he had devoted himself exclusively to a life of thought and literary expression, he might have won an enviable fame. But there is nothing to regret. He could have done no better than to show by his example that a life of constant and exacting business cares can be conjoined with intellectual pursuits and noble charities and genial fellowship, and such social usefulness as is still alive and operative when the places that have known us know us no more forever.

THE DISTRICT SCHOOLS.

Origin.—This system has been the growth of years and exigencies. In 1642 the town voted that there be a free school. Such a school was to teach "reading, writing and cyphering." In 1664 Mr. Andrews was invited to teach. In 1695 Nathaniel Rust, Jr., taught at Chebacco, and the following year was invited to settle as master. In 1702 Chebacco was allowed to erect a school-house on the common, and in 1713 William Giddings was master there. In 1714 the town voted to have a school in the watch-house, and in 1719 it was used for the same purpose. William Sone, a fisherman, by reason of sickness, was granted a room in the Almshouse for a school. The

Hamlet voted March 10, 1730, to build a school-house for their accommodation; and on the 30th the town appropriated one hundred pounds for three masters for the First, Chebacco and Hamlet Parishes. This was the sum paid by Gifford Cogswell in settlement of the Grammar School claim. The First Parish had £41, the Hamlet committee £20, the Chebacco committee £20, Mark How for West Parish (afterwards Linebrook) £4 18*s.* 9*d.*, Moses Davis for his neighborhood £6 11*s.* 10*d.*, and Deacon Fellows for his neighborhood £2 4*s.*, thus outlining the present district system. The selectmen, May 22, 1732, engaged HENRY SPILLAR to teach, and granted him the use of one end of the Almshouse for that purpose.

Supervision.—The committee of the First Parish agreed with him to teach a quarter for eight pounds. No further appropriation was made till ordered by the Court of General Sessions, when, 1740, the Grammar School (which see) and the reading and writing schools were served together. In 1742 eighteen pounds of the school rents, old tenor, were "adjudged" to each Chebacco and Hamlet, and twenty-eight pounds of said rents, old tenor, "to those parts of the First Parish as have least benefit from the Grammar School," and the same year the selectmen were to visit the schools once a quarter, and invite the minister to attend with them, the germ of our present committee supervision.

In 1743 a committee of five were chosen to visit the schools, as often as they thought proper, and inquire into the conduct of the master and the behavior of the scholars, and report to the town. In 1756 the town appropriated two hundred and fifty pounds, old tenor, for a master who was to be employed three months and two weeks at Chebacco, three months and two weeks at the Hamlet, two months at Linebrook, and otherwise as directed by the selectmen. This amount and plan of appropriation continued a number of years.

In 1761 the General Court authorized the sale of school rights in Birch Island, Bush Hill, Bartholomew Hill and Chebacco Woods, and the next year rejected proposals to sell the school farm. A school house was built at Linebrook, on land two rods front and four rods deep, enfeoffed by Jeremiah Smith October 30, 1765, so long as used for the purpose of a school. In 1783 the town employed two masters, and raised one hundred and forty pounds for schools, and granted land for a school-house near Joseph Fowler's lane.

Appropriations.—The yearly appropriation, 1785–94, was £160; 1795–96, £230; 1797–1801, $766.66; 1802, $900; 1810, $1200; 1816, $1500; 1840, $1600; 1854, $2000; 1861, $2500; 1866, $3000; 1868, $3500; 1871, $4000; 1886, $4400 and $2300 for High School.

In 1791 the visiting committee consisted of forty members; eleven in the body of the town, seven at Chebacco, nine at the Hamlet, five at Linebrook, two at Candlewood, two at Argilla, two at Moses Jewett's and two at John Patch's.

The Studies.—The variety, extent and relative importance of the studies a century ago, may best be learned from perusing the committee's instruction from the town April 2, 1792, viz.: "To go with the Latin scholars to the Grammar School, are those who study English grammar, those who are to be taught in book-keeping and after them, the foremost in reading and spelling, until the number in the Grammar School shall rise to a third part of the whole existing number in both. To read well in the Bible and spell should be necessary qualificatious for entering as students in English grammar. To be taught in book-keeping, the pupil must have gone through the four first rules of arithmetic, simple and compound; Reductions in both parts; the Rules of Proportion, direct, inverse and compound; and the rules of Practice. The master of the English school shall attend upon all in Arithmetic except the Latin scholars and those in book-keeping as aforesaid. In both schools the Catechism of the Assembly of Divines with Dr. Watts' explanatory Notes and the Catechism by the same author be constantly used as much as three or four times a week according to the different grades of the scholars, until the same are committed to memory." The practice of teaching the Catechism lasted till 1826.

Committees Chosen.—In 1794 a committee of seven was chosen to consider the subject of schooling. They recommended a committee "to regulate and visit the schools, as it is thought it would be an encouragement to the masters and scholars, and consequently would be beneficial to the education of the youth." A committee of nine were chosen. In 1795 five were chosen; in 1796, nine; in 1798, seven; and the same in 1800. The number now is three.

Districts.—Shortly after 1800 the school districts were defined by metes and bounds. Some twenty-five years later, prudential committees were employed. This plan was probably the remains of the old system of parish committees respectively. Still later, by some ten years, the prudential committees were empowered to hire their respective teachers. The prudential system was abolished in April, 1869, when the district property was appraised and purchased by the town.

Expense.—The present number of pupils enrolled is six hundred and eighty, distributed in seven ungraded schools, three primary, three intermediate and one high. The total cost for the year is seventy-six hundred dollars, making a per capita cost of eleven and eighteen-one-hundredths dollars.

Our Schools Free.—The existence and importance of schools was inbred in our ancestors, and the first and leading thought in relation to them was that they should be *free.* Their first vote declared the sentiment, and along the years circumstances have been made subservient, and pecuniary ability has been

pledged to hasten the grand consummation. With free text-books in the hands of the scholars, as has been the case for the last year or two, our schools are absolutely free. If the spirits of the departed are conversant with the affairs of men, there is a multitude of our citizen benefactors with the Paines, and Hubbard, and Cross, and Burley, and Manning, and Cogswell at their head, uniting with the generous living in one glad acclaim for the fruition of their hope—absolutely free schools for all our sons and daughters.

THE IPSWICH FEMALE SEMINARY.

The Academy.—The institution now or lately known by the above title was incorporated February 28, 1828, by the name of the *Proprietors of Ipswich Academy*. The incorporators' names were Nathaniel Lord, Jr., Joseph Farley, Ammi R. Smith, George W. Hart and Charles Kimball. They could hold a personal estate of ten thousand dollars and a real of eight thousand dollars. The building was completed early in 1826, fifty-six feet long, thirty-five wide and two stories high, at a cost of four thousand dollars. The last Wednesday in the following April, REV. HERVEY WILBUR opened the school and with a female assistant taught one year. In his advertisement he called the school a *Classical Seminary for Young Ladies.* In May, 1827, JAMES W. WARD began, and he continued to March, 1828.

The Seminary.—In 1818 Rev. Joseph Emerson, a descendant of Thomas, of Ipswich in 1642, opened in Byfield the pioneer school for educating young ladies. Two of his assistant pupils, Miss Grant and Miss Lyon, went out and opened schools on the same plan. These designs were not long in maturing; female schools soon became a settled fact, and the proprietors of the Ipswich Academy, imbibing the sentiment, made their school a seminary, and, in the well-chosen words of another,

"Ipswich was favored for nearly half a century with a celebrated school for young ladies. A large and commodious edifice, erected in 1825, was in April, 1828, placed without rent in the hands of Miss Z. I. Grant, then already well and widely known as an instructor. Many of her scholars followed her from the Adams Female Academy in Derry, N. H., where she had taught with great success, and her Ipswich School became at once the resort of young ladies from all parts of the country. Her able associate, Mary Lyon, and other competent assistants helped her to make it one of the best in the land. She arranged a course of study, liberal for the times, established regular classes—junior, middle and senior—to which students were admitted on examination, and introduced the custom of conferring diplomas on those who completed the course. She made education the handmaid of religion, the Bible a daily study, and the school a nursery of character and scholarship. Her scholars were in great demand as teachers, and so known and prized for purity of intention and active usefulness that wherever they went their presence was a recommendation and advertisement of the Seminary.

"Miss Grant's hope of founding a college for ladies at Ipswich was frustrated more by the delicate state of her health than by the want of funds, but her ideas were happily incorporated in the Mt. Holyoke Seminary by her associate, Mary Lyon, its eminent founder. Miss Grant resigned the charge of the school in 1839, having had during her eleven years at Ipswich 1458 scholars, of whom 130 were full graduates, and to that date twenty had become missionaries of the American Board, and 488 teachers in various parts of our own country.

"In 1841 Miss Grant was married to Hon. Wm. B. Barrister, of Newburyport; she survived in honor and usefulness till 1874. Her memory is preserved in an excellent volume, "The Use of a Life," printed by the American Tract Society.

"In the spring of 1844 the trustees, after various changes and disappointments, installed Rev. and Mrs John P. Cowles as principals. Mr. Cowles was a graduate of Yale College, class of 1826, and has been professor of Hebrew in the Oberlin Theological Seminary, while Mrs. Cowles, for ten years before her marriage, had been associated either as pupil or teacher with Miss Grant or Miss Lyon. They brought to their work industry, energy and zeal, and with the aid of vigorous and accomplished assistants, mostly of their own training, they not only kept up the previous moral and religious tone of the institution, but raised its classical and literary character to equal, if not surpass, the general advance in the country. Young ladies, from one to two hundred, according to the accommodations for boarding in the village, soon gathered around them, often continuing with them three, four or five years before graduation.

"Although the stockholders had granted the use of their property rent free, yet, for the sake of much needed improvements, the principals bought it and added to it the adjacent Dutch estate, thus extending the grounds to the river, and by means of fencing, terracing, grading and planting fruit and ornamental trees, shrubs and vines, they transformed it into one of the fairest, as it had always been one of the airiest and healthiest, sites of the village. For thirty-two years they continued their onward and upward way, ever teaching and training minds in the line of natural development, faithful study, careful investigation and unshackled freedom and independence of thought. Their students, no less than Mrs. Barrister's, have enrolled themselves as thinkers, toilers, teachers and writers, whose names their country-men and country-women will not soon nor willingly let die."

The school was closed in 1876.

SUNDAY-SCHOOLS.—One of the most powerful educational agencies of the present time is the Sunday-school. Our schools enroll as many scholars as the day schools and even more. They embrace all ages, and although they have one grand central theme there is a correlation of themes, which gives breadth and scope to their work and enhances their influence and importance. The youngest are taught to talk, to read, to memorize; others study geography, history, biography, and still others comparative ethics, and the methods and principles of Christian living, preparing the mind and heart and soul for an intelligent reception of the gift of eternal life. As reported, there are 8,034,478 scholars thus engaged in the United States, seven millions of whom are children and youth. The same report estimates nine million children and youth not yet reached—a glorious work and opportunity. The schools here were organized in the First and South Churches in 1816, and at Linebrook about 1818. In 1832 or 1833 the First Church school had two hundred scholars and three hundred and eighty-four volumes in the library; the South Church school had two hundred scholars and four hundred and fifty volumes; the Methodist Church school one hundred and thirty scholars and three hundred and ninety volumes. The First Church school now has two hundred scholars and three hundred and fifty volumes. The Line Brook Church school fifty scholars and two hundred and fifty volumes. These teachers labor without pay; they give their time and exertions for the love they bear the cause. Their influence upon the moral and social condition of the town is great, and their office deserves a more helpful public recognition.

LIBRARIES.—There were two libraries in town in 1833. They were called the social and the religious, and had each about three hundred volumes. They are now out of remembrance. One was kept in the town house, and unpaid fines and dues excluded one and another of the proprietors till only two or three remained, when the books were divided to each, and the library closed.

The present "Free Public Library" was founded in 1868 by the munificence of Captain Augustine Heard. It was opened to the public, March 1, 1869. Captain Heard donated the building, three thousand volumes, and an endowment fund of $10,000, making a grand total of about $40,000. This gift was supplemented by Prof. Daniel Treadwell, of Harvard College, who gave his private library, some valuable paintings and a fund of $20,000. These princely gifts have made the lives of these gentlemen a perpetual blessing. The trustees are Hon. George Haskell, Zenas Cushing, Joseph Ross and *ex officio*, the principal of the Manning High School and the pastor of the First Congregational Church. Miss Lydia Caldwell has been the librarian from the very first and has proved herself very efficient. The library contains some more than ten thousand volumes, which have been selected with great care, especially the works of fiction, which are scrupulously standard, and which constitute three-fourths of the books loaned.

BOOKS.—New England's first book of poetry was by Mrs. Anna Bradstreet, early of Ipswich. One of the first histories of New England was by an Ipswich clergyman, William Hubbard. The first Latin book printed in America was by Rev. John Norton, of Ipswich. The "Body of Liberties," containing the essence of our civil rights to-day, and the "Simple Cobbler of Agawam," long to be remembered as an old-time classic, were the work of the author, preacher, jurist and scholar, Nathaniel Ward, of Ipswich. These are a few of the most illustrious names. For two centuries, Ipswich clergymen and scholars issued many publications; but now the profession of authorship precludes the double vocation that formerly obtained, and clergyman and scholar and author have each his respetive province. A little volume of poems, from the pen of Mr. Edward G. Hull, was issued in 1886. Mr. John Patch has published a volume of poems. He was a poet of very high, if not the highest rank. He had genius of a marked character. His compositions evince poetic fervor and keen appreciation of both moral and physical beauty. He had warm partialities for the sea and all that concerns it, and for nature in all her varying moods. Many of his best poems are sea pictures and descriptions of rural scenes. His versification is noble, and his poems in general have worthy completeness. A tone of calm elevation and hopeful contemplation is well sustained throughout. The rhythm is well modulated, and in some of his shorter poems inexpressibly pathetic. His poems are richly ideal, and abound in detached images of exceeding beauty and of high merit.

NEWSPAPERS.—One of the best popular educators is a carefully edited family newspaper. The first newspaper started here was *The Ipswich Journal*. It was issued weekly by John H. Harris, who began its publication in July, 1827, and discontinued it August, 1828. The next venture was *The Ipswich Register*, edited by Eugene F. W. Gray, and published by Gray & Smith. It was a weekly; it began June 1, 1837, and, we presume, was issued last, May 25, 1838. The next was *The Ipswich Clarion*, begun February 23, 1850, and issued fortnightly by Timothy B. Ross. It was folio and very newsy. The first Saturday in January, 1868, the *Ipswich Bulletin* first appeared. It continued till about August 1st. The proprietor, Mr. Charles W. Felt, of Salem, proposed to furnish a paper to each of several towns, cheaply, by having local correspondents who were to manage their respective localities, and by changing the name of the print to correspond. Thus the *Rockport Quarry* and the *Ipswich Bulletin* were the same with change of name. The plan was new, an advance thought, and had merits, besides being the first deviation from the old method. Soon after came the "patent" sheets, then sterotyped stories and news. The next was *The Ipswich Advance* with Mr. Edward B. Putnam as editor and proprietor. He began July 3, 1871, and continued till March 16, 1872, when Edward L. Davenport and Frederick W. Goodwin, having purchased the establishment, began its publication as *The Ipswich Chronicle*. They ran it about ten months, and Mr. Goodwin sold his interest to his partner, who alone began January 4, 1873, and continued four years, when Lyman H. Daniels bought it and began its publication January 6, 1877. Mr. Daniels associated with him, January 1, 1881, Mr. I. J. Potter, who purchased Mr. Daniels' interest, June 4th, of the same year, and September 9, 1882, changed the large, unwieldy folio to the present neat quarto. Within a year or two, Mr. Potter has associated himself with his brother, J. M. Potter, and is now joint proprietor of the *Ipswich Chronicle*, the *Amesbury Villager*, the *Lynn Reporter*, the *Lynn Bee*, and the *Yankee Blade*, Boston. Recently, September 10, 1886, began *The Ipswich Independent*, a sizable folio, edited by Mr. Charles G. Hull.

THE BURLEY FUND.—Captain William Burley was a native of Ipswich, born January 6, 1750. He died in Beverly December 22, 1822, and left to his native town a bequest of fifty dollars to be paid annually for ten years "for the sole purpose of teaching poor children to read and instructing them in the principles of the Christian religion." The town voted, April 7, 1823, "expressive of their respect to his memory." The executors agreed with the town that the equity should be liquidated in one payment. Accordingly, an act of incorporation, dated June 18,

1825, was obtained, and "Nathaniel Lord, Jr., and William Conant, Jr., Esquires, Josiah Brown and John Kimball, gentlemen, and Daniel Cogswell, merchant," became a "body politic" by the name of "The Trustees of the Burley Educational Fund in Ipswich." The amount of the trust was five hundred dollars, but the Sunday-schools and the Bible societies, and our admirable system of free schools and school-books, are performing the mission of this bequest almost entirely, and the fund only labors to grow. It is now seven thousand five hundred dollars. Some future Legislature may reappropriate it, when, in a maturer growth and strength, it will perform a wider range of service, and the generous thoughtfulness of the donor build wiser and better than he planned.

Abraham Hammatt.—Among the men who have fostered the educational growth of our town, and deserve a warm sentiment of regard, is Mr. Hammatt. He was born in Plymouth in 1780 of Puritan ancestry, and there learned the trade of rope-making. In 1800 he removed to Bath, Me., and began business for himself. Years of industry and frugality gave him a competence. He then devoted his time and talents to literature and science, for which he had a fine taste. He was said to have been the best scholar in Bath, not excepting the men of any of the learned professions. He died August 9, 1854, aged seventy-four years. About eighteen years before, he removed to this town. He was a member of the New England Historical-Genealogical Society, and was by them considered a true antiquarian and an accurate genealogist. In his death they sustained a severe loss. He was for a long time feoffee of the grammar school and member of the Town School Board. He was an earnest and efficient officer, and his genial presence was always welcome in the school-room. In his later years he prepared "Early Inhabitants of Ipswich," copied the ancient inscriptions in the High Street Cemetery, and wrote a bi-centennial history of the grammar school—all noble, serviceable labors. His death closed a blameless, benevolent and useful life.

Anne Bradstreet was born in Northampton, England, in 1612. She married at the age of sixteen, and in 1630 came to this country. Her father was Governor Thomas Dudley, her husband Governor Simon Bradstreet. She resided in Ipswich about twenty years, and then removed with her husband to Andover. She was the earliest poet of New England, and was noble and gifted. Rev. Cotton Mather wrote,—"Her poems, divers times printed, have afforded a grateful entertainment unto the ingenious, and a monument for her memory, beyond the stateliest marble." Rev. John Norton calls her "the mirror of her age and the glory of her sex." The second edition of her poems is said "to be the work of a woman honored and esteemed where she lives for her gracious demeanor, her eminent parts, her pious conversation, her courteous disposition, her exact diligence in her place, and discreet managing of her family occasions; and, more than so, these poems are the fruit of but some few hours curtailed from her sleep and other refreshments." She was as much loved for gentleness, discretion and domestic diligence as she was admired for her genius, wit and love of learning. Her death occurred September 16, 1672.

CHAPTER XLV.

IPSWICH (*Continued*).

MILITARY AND MARTIAL.

The Situation.—Although this town had a very fortunate situation as regards the Indians, yet, in the same manner, though not to the same extent, as the frontier towns, our ancestors were obliged to be ever on the alert, and ever ready to meet an active display of the treachery, perfidy and jealousy of the red man. As our later New England ancestors planted the school-house by the church, very truly and wisely our early ancestors planted a fort also. The Eastern Indians were jealous, blood-thirsty and cruel, and any day or night their war canoes might float in our harbor. They were active, among other tribes, in plotting mischief and instilling a spirit of dissatisfaction. At the south—in Eastern Connecticut and Western Rhode Island, and extending from the sea several leagues to the north—were the Pequods, a race, the quintessence of jealousy, cruel mischief and murder. Their emissaries were in every camp; they were a scourge from the very first. Every hamlet, every home, was in jeopardy and fear. The sudden rush of attack and the startling war-whoop were their declaration of war, and whoever was surprised thereby paid the penalty with his blood and scalp.

Caution.—This condition of circumstances occasioned a careful carriage, and an adequate protection of some weapon of defence. The musket was the white man's *vade mecum* upon the road, in the field and workshop, and at church and home. To meet this emergency the town's people maintained watches and erected forts; powder was kept in store under penalty; night signals and day signals of alarm were established; companies were formed, and the entire populace were minute-men.

Means.—In 1633 it was ordered that Saugus, Salem and Agawam assist Boston in building a fort. The next year the Ipswich assistant is ordered to solicit funds for a movable fort at Boston; every man must be trained for service. Daniel Denison and Nicholas Easton have charge of the powder here. The town was to receive its proportion of muskets, bandoleers and rests, just then imported, and to have

the use of two sakers, if they will provide carriages for them.

In 1635 the company was ordered to maintain its officers; eight swords were added to their equipments. In 1636 the military force of the jurisdiction was divided into three regiments—Saugus, Salem, Ipswich and Newbury making one, with John Endicott, Esq., of Salem, colonel; and John Winthrop, Jr., of Ipswich, lieutenant-colonel. The next year it was ordered that "no person shall travel above a mile from his dwelling, except where other dwellings are near, without some arms, upon pain of 12*s.* for every default;" each town must have a watch-house, and keep a watch; eight annual trainings were ordered; Daniel Denison was commissioned captain.

THE PEQUOD WAR.—This year occurred the memorable Pequod War, wherein Ipswich was represented by twenty-three soldiers and William Fuller as gunsmith. History depicts the overwhelming disaster of the Indians. Therein Francis Wainwright attacked a knot of Pequods, expended his ammunition, broke his gun over them and brought in two scalps. John Wedgewood was wounded and taken prisoner, and John Sherman was wounded in the neck. The following-named persons were granted from two to ten acres of land for their services: John Andrews, John Burnum, Robert Castell, Robert Cross, Robert Filbrick, Edward Lumus, Andrew Story, William Swynder, Palmer Tingley, Francis Wainwright and William Whitred. In 1668 Edward Thomas was granted six acres of land for services rendered at some time, against the Indians.

OTHER MEANS.—In 1639 a reservation is made for a fort on Castle Hill, where the land was granted John Winthrop, Jr. The town has two barrels of powder, and may sell, on the county's account, at two shillings per pound; and the following year the meeting-house was used as a watch-house. In 1642 there was a general suspicion and alarm. It was thought the various tribes of Indians had conspired to annihilate the white man, and Ipswich, Rowley and Newbury were ordered to disarm the Merrimac sachem. Forty men went the next day, and not finding the chief, they took away his son as a hostage. The town record allows "twenty men 12*d.* each per day for three days." That year a retreat for wives and children must be provided; twelve saker bullets were allowed to the town; the town must have special alarms—sentinels who, going to the houses, shall, in case of attack, cry: "Arm, Arm!" This general suspicion and alarm of the colonists was the precursor of the famous colonial league of March 19, 1643, and its earnest, unanswerable though silent advocate. In 1643 worshippers must go in arms to meeting on Lord's day. In 1644 the counties of Essex and Norfolk—which extended from the Merrimac River and included Exeter, Dover and Portsmouth in New Hampshire, while Essex then extended only to the Merrimac—form one regiment, and Captain Daniel Denison was commissioned colonel.

In 1645 all lads from ten to sixteen must be drilled in the use of the musket, the half-pikes and of bows and arrows. Thomas Whittingham was lieutenant, and Thomas Howlett ensign of the Ipswich company; every town must set a guard, a pike-man and a musketeer, about sunset, and must keep a daily guard on the outskirts and scour the woods for lurking foes; each company was divided in two-third musketeers and one-third pikemen, who were to wear corselets and head-pieces.

In 1648 boys, allowed by their parents or guardians on the training fields, were to be "exercised" in military discipline. In 1649 each town must provide for each fifty soldiers, one barrel of powder, one hundred and fifty pounds of musket bullets, and twenty-eight pounds of match, which, for a long time, subserved the use of flint.

In 1652 a company was to consist of sixty-four or more privates, and to have at least two drums, and the military affairs of each town were to be administered by a committee of magistrates and three chief officers. In 1653 John Appleton was commissioned lieutenant of the troop of horse for the Essex regiment. General Daniel Denison ordered a squad of twenty-seven men from Ipswich and Rowley, to "descry the distant foe, where lodged, or whither fled; or if for fight in motion or in halt;" for it was reported, as ten years before, that a general conspiracy had been formed to sweep the white man from the soil. Each private was allowed a shilling, the sergeant two shillings, and two troopers two shillings, six pence a day for four days.

OFFICERS.—In 1664 the following were confirmed as the officers of the Ipswich Company: Thomas French, ensign; Thomas Burnam, Jacob Perkins and Thomas Wait, sergeants; and Thomas Hart and Francis Wainwright, corporals; and in 1668, John Appleton, captain, and John Whipple, cornet, of the troop. In 1672 a new fort was built; Gen. Denison wrote the Governor that great fear and alarm prevailed; that the enemy had crossed the Merrimac, and that a detachment of fifty men, under Capt. John Appleton, was proceeding to Andover. The following year Ipswich was required to furnish her quota of one hundred men for service against the Dutch.

PHILIP'S WAR.—The year 1675 is memorable for the beginning of King Philip's War. It was a long, agonizing struggle. Philip was sagacious, crafty, of great native mental strength, and as chief of a civilized people, would have been known as their patriotic defender. He was, with all, a powerful monarch, chief of thirty tribes and the powerful Passaconaway was his ally. His eagle-eye scanned the encroachments of the English upon his lands, their usurpation of his fruitful hunting-grounds, their growth in numbers and power, and in all this and more, the doom of his race, which he could no longer brook.

FURTHER MEANS.—"The Indians lurked in every forest and covert; they watched for the lonely settler as he opened his door in the morning, as he was busy at his work in the field, as he rode out on business or followed the forest path to church." The fearful war-whoop, the deadly tomahawk and the treacherous ambuscade were a terror to every English home. The soldiers of every town were ordered to scour and ward to prevent the skulking and lurking of the enemy about it and give notice of danger; the brush along the highway must be cut up; and the watch must not come in till sunrise, when the scouts go out; the inhabitants shall flee to the garrisons for defense, if invaded.

FEARFUL COST OF THE WAR.—The war cost the Colonial League a million of dollars and six hundred lives, of which Ipswich's proportion must have been about forty. Every eleventh house in the colony was burned, and every eleventh soldier killed. Ipswich was represented in Capt. Prentice's troop, and in the "Flower of Essex," that perished at Deerfield, and she furnished her quota of the four hundred and sixty men levied the next year and led by Maj. Samuel Appleton; of eighty men called for sixty days; and of seventy for service in the East.

FATALITIES.—In this war fell Edward Coburn, Thomas Scott, Benjamin Tappan, Freegrace Norton, sergeant John Pettis. John Cogswell was a prisoner. In the great battle of the war,—with the Narragansetts,—three were killed and twenty-two were wounded in the Ipswich Company. One of the saddest events of the war was "the Deerfield Massacre." Of a company of eighty men, known as the "Flower of Essex," forty perished by one fell swoop of the savages. Here Robert Dutch was prostrated by a ball which wounded his head, was mauled with a hatchet, stripped and left for dead. After several hours he was discovered and restored to consciousness. In a list of the names of the slain the following look like Ipswich names: Thomas Manning, Caleb Kimball, Jacob Wainwright, Samuel Whittridge, Josiah Dodge, William Day, John and Thomas Hobbs.

OFFICERS.—In 1680 Ipswich had three companies; the year following a magazine is kept in the meeting-house, and in 1682 the companies' officers were: Capt. Samuel Appleton, Lieut. Thomas Burnum, En. Simon Stacey; Capt. Daniel Eppes, Lieut. John Appleton, En. Thomas Jacobs, Lieut. John Andrews and En. William Goodhue, Jr. In October, Thomas Wade was cornet in place of John Whipple, promoted to lieutenant in place of Lieut. Appleton, who assumed command of the troop upon the death of Capt. John Whipple; and in 1689 Thomas Wade was captain, John Whipple lieutenant, John Whipple, Jr., quarter-master; and under Maj. Samuel Appleton, Simon Stacey was lieutenant and Nehemiah Jewett ensign. That year wards were ordered to guard the churches, during service.

WILLIAM'S WAR.—This year began King William's War, which, by sympathy, extended to and involved New England. Ipswich contributed her proportion of three hundred soldiers to be raised in the county. The Ipswich troops rendezvoused at Haverhill. The following year she furnished her quota of sixty-five recruits from the Essex Middle Regiment, composed of Ipswich, Rowley, Wenham, Gloucester, Topsfield and Boxford, and her quota of four hundred from the Province. Nathaniel Rust was quarter-master in the expedition against Canada, and in 1691 Samuel Ingalls was lieutenant, and Robert Kinsman quarter-master in Thomas Wade's troop. About 1700 the town voted to purchase three field-pieces; to supply themselves with powder and flints; and to repair the watch-house and fort near the meeting-house. The town's proportion of fourteen men from the Essex Middle Regiment was called for; Maj. Samuel Appleton led sixty men to defend Gloucester; Col. Symonds Eppes was ordered to "empress" a man into the service at York in place of Archelaus Adams, whose time had expired, and the colonel was also to hold his regiment for immediate service. The town furnished her quota of ninety men; she stored her powder in the meeting-house; her troops use carbines. In 1697 William Wade was killed and Abraham Foster was wounded. These particulars, in which we have thus far indulged, serve to show the small beginning, the inadequate means, the slow but steady growth and the peculiar phases of primitive warfare.

ANNE'S, GEORGE'S AND FRENCH WARS.—Queen Anne's War followed; it fell with merciless force upon New England. Ipswich was true to English instincts; she honored every call for men with her quota, and gave a devoted and efficient service. Ipswich was represented at Port Royal, in 1707, where Samuel Appleton had a command. In 1710 William Cogswell was killed, and ten years later Samuel Clark was wounded. In 1737 John Hobbs was wounded, and ten years later asked of the General Court pay for his care of the sick at Cape Breton.

So in the Austrian succession, known as King George's War, wherein Louisburg, the Gibraltar of America, was reduced by four thousand fishermen and farmers of New England, with whom served the strength and support of Ipswich homes.

Peace returned in 1748, but it was of short duration; it served only for recuperation and preparation for an intenser struggle. This was known as the French and Indian War, and was waged for conquest; for long years of conflict had demonstrated that the French and English could not live contiguously in peace. Five points of attack were agreed upon, and Ipswich men served at three, Crown-point, Quebec and Nova Scotia. In 1756 the town appropriated £50 for powder and other military stores. Dr. John Caleffe was surgeon in the expedition to Quebec; Abraham Smith and Philemon How died at Louisburg. Mr. Smith made his will about the time of enlisting, and

gave "the residue and remainder" of his property to Linebrook Parish. In 1760 the town voted that "such private soldiers, as are in the war, exclusive of tradesmen and carpenters, shall be excused from their poll-tax." Besides the town's occasional individual appropriations, she met with promptness every provincial demand for men and tax.

This war solved an old and vexatious problem, which is stated and illustrated in Longfellow's unique and beautiful *Evangeline*, and is called *The French Neutrals*. In the distribution of that people, Essex County had about two hundred. Ipswich had the families of Francis and John Landrey and Paul Breau, twenty persons. At the expense of the State, the town rented them a house and furnished them with provisions, in which were included, as the State archives show, items of "Cyder and Rum," at a total cost of about a shilling per week for each person. In June, 1758, the General Court ordered that the "sick, infirm and aged" among them be maintained at the expense of the government, but that others must earn their living. In 1760 the province distributes its entire ward among the various towns according to the rate of taxation. Ipswich's proportion was twenty-three. The original number of twenty had been augmented at the time of the distribution by four births, and there had been one death, or else one was removed, to adjust the proportion. Our next notice of them was August 18, 1766, when the town refused to appropriate money to convey them to Canada, and November 25th following, when £20 was voted for their support for that year. They probably soon after removed to Canada. They were apparently a clever, sober, industrious people, and on the whole desirable citizens.

The Revolution.—Our narrative has now advanced a century and a quarter. Ipswich has assisted, by her treasures and skill and bravery, in silencing the fierce Tarratines, in annihilating the Pequods, in forcing the Narragansetts to sue for peace, in burying King Philip and four thousand of his brave warriors, in gathering scalps in the North for the bounty, in keeping at bay the powerful Pennacooks, and has fought the allied French and Indians, to defend their homes, their religion and their country. What a fearful cost. "The dear purchase of our fathers." But that, appalling as it was, was only part of the price. The war-whoop had hardly ceased its terror, when the precursor of another ordeal stalked through the land and inaugurated the War of *The Revolution*.

Though occasional irritations from the same source had been felt from the early days of the colony, this contest was unexpected. Our fathers had faithfully labored and hoped; they had "fought and bled and died" with only one purpose in reference to their nationality, and that purpose was to be Englishmen "first, last, midst and without end." But while they were English the same spirit that made them true and devoted patriots, gave them a deep sense of justice, so that they could not brook a scathing insult or endure a flagrant wrong, though they be inflicted by a brother.

For nearly a hundred years they had fought for their homes and freedom to worship God, in the wildest, most barbarous and bloodiest wars. They had sued for no peace; they had begged no quarter. Their brothers across the sea had furnished few troops, little money, and perchance no sympathy; and when the strife for territorial acquisition came, when the valor of English arms was on trial, and the grand old flag beckoned them by its waving folds to service and duty, they stood shoulder to shoulder in the serried ranks with the confident regular; they fought while he fought; conquered where he fled. Mainly by their spirit and skill was English rule established over these verdant hills and picturesque vales, and English arts and arms extended from the Great River on the west to the ocean on the east, and from frozen seas on the north to the delightful savannahs of the south.

For all this devoted service and baptism of blood, not a word of sympathy, nor an expression of thanks, and only a pittance to reimburse an impoverished treasury. The service and baptism only inflamed old jealousies, fashioned new rigors and forged new chains. History is replete with the mockery of justice, the travesty of righteousness, by which a jealous hatred sought to stamp our ancestors as an inferior class and to bind them to perpetual dependence. But the flinty purpose that brought our forefathers to these shores struck fire upon the steel rigors of the laws forged for their subjugation. Magazines of indignation were fired from Maine to Georgia. Subjugate! Why, as well attempt to draw out leviathan with a hook or to turn back Niagara by command. The seed sown in the compact penned in the cabin of the May Flower had its fruitage in the Declaration of Independence; and while John Adams and Patrick Henry, in advocating the principles of that immortal document, electrified the people, the stout-hearted yeomanry, in town-meeting assembled, voted and recorded the sentiments, and by their votes pledged money and life to the cause. Ipswich met the issue on the threshold with no uncertain voice. "No representation, no taxation," was a sentiment indigenous to her very soul. She recorded her instructions to her representatives, October 21, 1765: "We must maintain the Charter. When our fathers left their native land, they left its laws, its Constitution and its peculiar institutions and customs,—all but what was secured by their Charter. Three things are necessary to make this otherwise: first, the migrations should have been authorized and regulated by legal authority; second, the expense of the colonization should have been borne by the government; and third, the colony should have been sent to settle some place or territory that the nation had before, in

some way or other, made their own, as was usual—if not always—the case with the ancient Romans. But neither of them obtained in this case. Our only hope of freedom in religion and law, and our only ground of patriotism and manhood, is the Charter." Again, August 11, 1768, the town recorded a vote of thanks to the ninety-two members of the House who stood firm against rescinding the resolves of the last House, and so declared anew the righteousness of the cause and their determination. The town voted Captain Michael Farley delegate to Convention at Boston, to advise measures for the peace and safety of the people. A meeting was "called for February 28, 1770, to determine upon some satisfactory method to prevent the use of that pernicious weed called Tea," to advise in the matter of withholding our custom from those merchants who traffic in it. A committee, to whom the questions involved were submitted, reported, "That we retrench all extravagances; and that we will, to the utmost of our power and ability, encourage our own manufactures; and that we will not, by ourselves or any for or under us, directly or indirectly, purchase any goods of the persons who have imported, or continued to import, or of any person or trader who shall purchase any goods of said importers, contrary to the agreement of the merchants in Boston and the other trading towns in this government and the neighboring colonies, until they make a public retraction or a general importation takes place." It was voted also, "that we will abstain from the use of tea ourselves and recommend the disuse of it in our families, until all the revenue acts are repealed."

The Crisis Approaching.—Affairs grew in interest and importance; the situation became more trying; but their brave hearts grew braver and stronger. Learning the action of Boston in the crisis, the town, December 17, 1772, recounted the common grievances at length, complimented the metropolis for the stand she had taken, pledged her support and chose the following "Committee of Correspondence": Captain Farley, Mr. Daniel Noyes and Major John Baker. In December, 1773, the town was gratified with the action taken by Boston and records resolutions of sympathy and firmness of purpose. The people are now fully aroused. June 29, 1774, Daniel Noyes, Deacon Stephen Choate, Captain Michael Farley, John Choate and Nathaniel Farley were voted a committee to see what could be done "in the distressing state of affairs." The same year a lot of land, fifty by twenty-five feet, east of the town-house, was granted for military discipline; a committee was chosen to fix the compensation of "Minute-Men;" the proposals and resolves of the Continental Congress were adopted; a committee of eleven members was chosen to see that "said resolves are most punctually observed;" and Colonel Michael Farley and Daniel Noyes were members of the Great and General Court ordered to meet at Salem, and, meeting in the absence of the Governor, resolved themselves into a Provincial Congress and adjourned to Concord.

The next year was 1775, the ever-memorable one in the annals of the province. In April Ipswich met with other towns, by committee, to plan for coast defences; the town voted to hire money to pay "minute men." Then came the clash of arms the 19th. In May five men were chosen a committee of intelligence; a watch was set on Castle Hill, lest an armed cutter come and take away cattle; Michael Farley and Dummer Jewett were chosen to represent the town in the Provincial Congress at Watertown. It was now time to put none but Americans on guard. Congress ordered that committees of safety and correspondence be sworn. Hence such committees were dismissed, and these chosen and sworn in their stead, —Daniel Noyes, Captain Daniel Rogers, Captain Isaac Dodge, John Crocker, Samuel Lord, Captain Ephraim Kindall, Major Jonathan Cogswell, Captain Abraham Howe, Mr. John Patch, 3d.

The Alarm.—It was a beautiful moonlight evening of the 18th of April, 1775, when Governor Gage sent out Lieutenant-Colonel Smith and Major Pitcairn, with eight hundred regulars, to seize the stores at Concord. It was Paul Revere and William Dawes who simultaneously started and gave the alarm. The ringing of bells and the firing of guns told the patriots of their needed presence and valor. Early on the 19th, the day when the bloody die was cast, five Ipswich companies of infantry and a troop of horse left their homes for the scene of conflict. They were led by Captains Thomas Burnham, Daniel Rogers, Abraham Dodge, Elisha Whitney, Abraham Howe and Nathaniel Wade, and Colonel John Baker. As Putnam left his cattle yoked in the field, so no less, if not the same, did Ipswich men. Nearly three hundred stout-hearted yeomanry marched to the defence of righteousness against tyranny, with banner streaming and drums beating and hurried pace, "while their zeal outran their footsteps."

The following rolls of Ipswich minute-men have been gleaned from the State archives, and will doubtless gratify many a patriotic interest. They marched upon the alarm of April 19th.

COMPANY ONE.

Captain, Thomas Burnham. 1*st Lieut.*, Charles Smith.
2*d Lieut.*, John Farley.

Sergeants.

Daniel Lord. John Potter.
Ebenezer Lord. John Lakeman.

Privates.

Nehemiah Abbott, Nicholas Babcock, Samuel Baker, Elijah Boynton, John Brown, 4th, Isaac Burnham, Jr., Jeremiah Brown, Thomas Caldwell, Thomas Chun, Benjamin Cross, Nathaniel Cross, Nehemiah Choate, Nathaniel Dennis, Benjamin Emerson, Ephraim Fellows, John Fellows, Isaac Fellows, Nathan Fellows, John Glazier, James Harris, John Harris, Abraham Hodgkins, Nathaniel Heard, John Heard, Jr., Thomas Hodgkins, Amos Heard, Ebenezer Kimball, Moses Kinsman, William Kinsman, Abraham Lord, Aaron Lord, Caleb Lord, Samuel Lord, John Manning, Elisha Newman, Samuel Newman, Nathan Parsons, William Goodhue, Francis Pickard, James Pickard, Jr., John Porter, Jeremiah Rose, Simeon Safford, Moses Smith, Jr., Henry Spellar,

Henry Spellar, Benjamin Sweet, Daniel Lowe, Richard Shatswell, Philip Lord, Elisha Treadwell, Samuel Wallis, Nathaniel Wells.

Total pay was £26, 9*s*, 4*d*. for thirty miles and three days.

COMPANY TWO.

Captain, Nathaniel Wade. 1*st Lieut.*, Joseph Hodgkins.
2*d Lieut.*, William Dennis.

Sergeants.

Aaron Perkins. Jabez Farley.
Michael Farley, Jr. Thomas Boardman.

Corporals.

Asa Barker. Francis Merrifield.
John Graves. Joseph Appleton, Jr.

Privates.

Thomas Appleton, Samuel Burnham, Stephen Dutch, Jonathan Foster, John Fowler, Jr., Joseph Fowler, 3d, John Fitts, Jr., Isaac Giddings, Daniel Goodhue, Jr., William Goodhue, Ephraim Goodhue, Francis Hovey, Benjamin Heard, John Harris, 5th, Nathaniel Jewett, Abiah Knowlton, Nathaniel Lakeman, Nathaniel Lord, 3d, Charles Lord, Samuel Lord, 5th, James Fuller Lakeman, Nathaniel Ross, Benjamin Ross, Nathaniel Rust, Jr., Jabez Ross, Jr., Kneeland Ross, Thomas Hodgkins, 4th, Henry Spellar, Jabez Sweet, Jr., John Stanwood, Isaac Stanwood, Daniel Stone, Nathaniel Souther, Edward Stacy, James Smith, Nathaniel Treadwell, Ebenezer Lakeman, Nathaniel March, John Peters, Nathaniel Brown.

This company was in service as minute-men till May 10th. The distance was eighty-eight miles and their pay £101, 15*s*. 2*d*.

COMPANY THREE.

Captain Abraham How. 1*st Lieut.* Thomas Foster.
Ens. Paul Lancaster.*

Sergeants.

How. Dresser.*
Smith. Chapman.

Corporals.

Fisk. Chaplin.*
Potter. Abbott.

Drummer, Foster.

Privates.—Jeremiah Smith, John Daniels,* Joseph Chapman,* Caleb Jackson,* Amos Jewett, Jr.,* John Perley, Jonathan Foster, Jr., Samuel Woodbury,* David Chaplin,* Moses Chaplin, Jr.,* Moses Foster, Abraham How, 3d, Allen Foster,* Charles Davis, John Fowler, Jr., Daniel Kimball, Jr., Joshua Dickinson,* George Abbott,* James Smith, Joseph Nelson,* Philemon Foster, Timothy Morse, John Fowler, Elijah Foster, Moses Chaplin,* Daniel Kimball, Allen Perley, Ezekiel Potter, Edmund Tenney,* Moses Conant, John Chapman.

The distance for most of this company was eighty miles, and their total pay was £22 6*s*. 8*d*. 2*f*. Those marked with a star (*) belonged to Rowley-Linebrook, and perhaps two or three others.

COMPANY FOUR.

Captain Daniel Rogers. 1*st Lieut.* Thomas Burnham.
2*d Lieut.* Abraham Dodge.

Sergeants.

Martin. Wallis.
Wade. Treadwell.

Corporals.

Kimball. Pearson.
Lord. Appleton.

Privates.—John Andrews, William Baker, Philip Abbott, Jonathan Appleton, Samuel Beal, Benjamin Brown, Thomas Caldwell, Abraham Choate, John Cross, Aaron Day, Jeremiah Day, Thomas Day, Ebenezer Caldwell, Joshua Fitts, Ebenezer Goodhue, Barnabas Dodge, Samuel Henderson, Mark Haskell, John Hodgkins, Thomas Hodgkins, Jr., Cols. (?) Jewett, Richard Kimball, Jeremiah Kinsman, Israel Kinsman, Ephraim Jewett, Nathaniel Grant, Ebenezer Hovey, Purchase Jewett, John Lord, Daniel Lord, Jr., Gideon Parker, Nathaniel Perley, Daniel Potter, Joshua Smith, Simon Smith, Robert Stocker, Richard Sutton, Moses Treadwell, Asa Warner, William Warner.

Their distance was sixty miles, their time was four days, and their total pay was £28 12*s*. 6*d*.

TROOP OF HORSE.

Captain Moses Jewett. *Lieut.* Robert Perkins.
Cornet, John Kinsman. *Quartern.*, Elisha Brown.

Corporals.

Nathaniel Smith Pelatiah Brown.
Nehemiah Choate. Nehemiah Brown.
Trumpeter, John Brown. *Clerk*, John Pearson.

Privates.—Ebenezer Brown, John Bradstreet, Samuel Bragg, Allen Baker, Francis Brown, Joseph Brown, Jonathan Cummings, Pelatiah Cummings, William Conant, Abner Day, John Emerson, Joseph Goodhue, Seth Goodhue, Mark Haskell, John Harris, Nehemiah Jewett, Aaron Jewett, Michael Kinsman, Joseph Metcalfe, Nehemiah Patch, Thomas Smith, Zebulon Smith, Nehemiah Jewett, Jr.

The distance was sixty miles, they served ninety-nine days, and their total pay was £16 9*s*. 3*d*. 2*f*.

Ipswich hamlet furnished thirty-eight minute-men, under Captain Elisha Whitney. They were out three days, and returned to Cambridge, 1st of May.

Captain Abraham Dodge's company did not go into the conflict, except such as volunteered. They were encamped in sight.

THE WAR.—They, however, soon returned; but enlistments immediately began. Captain Abraham Dodge enlisted forty men; Captain Gideon Parker, twenty-two; Captain Elisha Whitney, thirty-nine; Captain Daniel Rogers, fifty-one; Captain Nathaniel Wade, sixty-nine. Our statement is necessarily short. Enlistments were constant. The only business that received first attention was the war. The citizens contributed of their service, their sympathy, their kindness, their money, their prayers for the one great end. They were represented in every department. Our soldiers fought at Bunker Hill, and helped drive Howe from Boston. They fought under Gates at the North, on Long Island, in New Jersey and Pennsylvania and Rhode Island. They helped conquer Burgoyne, and they guarded his troops at Prospect Hill, near Boston. They suffered in the retreat through New Jersey and at Valley Forge.

Colonel Hodgkins wrote February 22, 1778: "What our soldiers have suffered this winter is beyond expression, as one-half has been barefoot and all most naked all winter; the other half very badly on it for clothes of all sorts; and to com Pleat our messery, very shorte ont for provisions. Not long since our brigade drue but an half days Lounce of meet in eight days. But these defettis the men bore with a degree of fortitude becoming soldiers." The bloody foot-track in the "Flight through Jersey" and the extreme sufferings at Valley Forge are no myth. "These benign institutions, the dear purchase of our fathers, are ours," bought at a price unparalleled. On June 10, 1776, "Voted that this Town instruct their representatives that if the Continental Congress should, for the safety of the said Colonies, declare them independent of the Kingdom of Great Britain, they, the said inhabitants, will solemnly engage with their lives and fortunes to support them in the measure." The town had expended November 28, 1777,

£1737 5*s*. That year was voted £1000 for recruits. In February the town voted to pay, in addition to Continental and State bounty, £18 for three years, or during the war, or *in lieu* of it, £6 for the first year, £8 for the second, and £10 for the third, if detained so long.

In May £16 was voted for eight months' men. Voted in September that the selectmen supply the families of soldiers, who were enlisted for three years, or during the war. In November a committee was chosen for that purpose according to law, and it was voted to raise £100 for the purpose. In April, 1777, at a very full meeting, the town approved the General Court's order to prevent monopoly and oppression, and instructed the selectmen "not to approbate any innholder or retailer that does not strictly adhere to it." In 1778 the town instructed her representatives to vote for the "Articles of Confederation," and voted to hire £900 to supply the families of soldiers in the Continental Army. In 1779 voted to raise £3000 for town charges and war services, and £12,000 (old tenor) to pay men to be hired, if need be. In 1780 the town's proportion of supplies is 106 shirts, 106 pairs of shoes and stockings, 33 blankets and 31,800 pounds of beef. Voted £1200 for hire of soldiers. In March, 1781, voted £1000 to pay interest,—taxed for that purpose alone. In 1781 voted £500 for soldiers' pay, £220 for Rhode Island service, £400 for hiring four months' men, £200 for clothing, and £300 for beef. On January 1, 1782, the town earnestly desires instruction to be given the Commission for negotiating peace, that they make "the right of the United States to the fisheries an indispensable article of treaty." The town voted £440 to pay four men lately engaged, and old Continental soldiers. These extracts exhibit the town as among the foremost in sustaining the cause and the most discerning in the conditions of treaty. Our fathers hailed with joy the return to the arts of peace and the amenities of home.

Biographical.—Conspicuous in our Revolutionary history is the name of Col. Nathaniel Wade. He began as captain of "Minute-Men," in the town during their "discipline" for service. He led his company out on the memorable 19th of April, and commanded them at Bunker Hill, where they rendered efficient service. He was afterwards in the siege of Boston, and participated in the joyous acclamations of the citizens, when Gen. Howe sailed with his army, navy and tories for Halifax. He was in the campaign on Long Island, participated in the dexterous manœuvering of the troops through New York, and in the noble stands at Harlem Heights and White Plains. He suffered in the "Flight through New Jersey," where "many of the patriots had no shoes and left their blood-stained foot-prints on the frozen ground;" and at Valley Forge, where a paucity of provisions and clothing severely tried their patience and endurance and cemented their patriotism. He attained the rank of colonel in the Continental Army. He was actively engaged in the whole campaign in Rhode Island. He was president of a court-martial there, December 23, 1777. He was under Gen. Arnold at West Point in 1780, and upon Arnold's defection succeeded to the command of the fort. On this occasion Gen. Washington wrote him, under date of September 25, 1780:

"Gen. Arnold has gone to the Enemy. . . . The command of the Fort for the present devolves upon you. I request you will be as vigilant as possible, and as the Enemy may have it in contemplation to attempt some enterprise even to-night, against those Posts, I wish you to make, immediately after receipt of this, the best disposition you can of your force, so as to have a proportion of men in each work on the west side of the River. You will hear from or see me to-morrow."

Col. Wade was suspicious for some time, that all was not right about Gen. Arnold; but the general was so vigilant and adroit, that nothing could be obtained upon which to base a charge.

The most tearfully joyous occasion of the colonel's life was probably the greeting of Gen. Lafayette, when the latter visited this country in 1824. At a collation provided by Col. Treadwell in honor of the town's distinguished guest at which were delegations from Ipswich, Haverhill and Newburyport, Col. Wade was presented to the general. Their embrace was cordial and "affecting beyond description." They had been companions in arms; they had planned together for success in the noble cause; they had fought for the same purpose; they had hoped together for the fullest realization; and now they rejoiced together in the grand consummation and the glorious fruition of their hope. Their converse was earnest; their theme was familiar and involved points of the deepest interest; and their feelings at times bearing sway "became too strong for utterance."

Col. Wade retired from the army near the close of the war and returned home; but upon the insurrection led by Captain Daniel Shays, he entered the service under Gen. Lincoln and commanded the Middle Essex Regiment. The winter campaign was particularly severe, and he often afterwards spoke of his sufferings. This campaign closed his martial career.

He enjoyed the esteem and confidence of his fellow-citizens, and held many important civil trusts as their gifts. He was town clerk from 1784 to 1814, and Representative to the General Court from 1795 to 1816 inclusive, and was county treasurer twenty-five years. He is said to have possessed a remarkable equanimity and mildness of temper. Says one, "He did not have a blot on his character." He died October 26, 1826, at the age of seventy-seven years.

Another pleasant name of Revolutionary memory is Col. Joseph Hodgkins. He was first a lieutenant in Captain Wade's company of "Minute-Men." He was one of the score or more who were voluntarily led by Captain Wade into the battle of Bunker Hill. He was in the siege of Boston, the campaign of Long Island, the battles of Harlem Heights, White Plains and Princeton. He witnessed the surrender of Bur-

goyne's army and guarded it on parole near Boston. He wrote numerous letters to his family while he was in arms, valuable mementos of his noble patriotism and descriptive of his campaigns, his sentiments and his sufferings, to which reference is made in the quotation above. He succeeded Col. Wade as commander of the Middle Essex Regiment, was Representative to the General Court from 1810 to 1816 inclusive, and held various town offices. It is needless to speak of his exemplary character. He died September 25, 1829, eighty-six years old.

Another illustrious man, the Gen. Denison of this period, who deserves an extensive notice, was GEN. MICHAEL FARLEY. He was a man of commanding influence, of varied ability and comprehensive views. He was a tanner by trade. He excelled in Statecraft. He was elected for many years to the principal town offices. He was a long time town treasurer and feoffee of the grammar school. During the Revolutionary period he was vigilant, earnest, active, efficient, in meeting, in behalf of the town, the demands of the government, for men, clothing and provisions. He was a member of the General Court from 1775 to 1779 inclusive, and of the Provincial Congress 1774 and 1775. The General Court according to the Governor's warrant for the election was to convene at Salem October 5th. Gen. Farley was chosen a deputy. Meanwhile the Governor recalled his warrants, but ninety deputies, including Gen. Farley, appeared and after waiting a day for the Governor, resolved themselves into a Provincial Congress and adjourned to meet at Concord the 11th. He was high sheriff, was a major-general of the militia, and a member of the executive council, that administered the government from 1775 to 1780. When Gen. Lafayette came to this country to offer his services to this government, he came to Ipswich and was the guest of Gen. Farley. The general was a very polite man, and "remarkably hospitable." Rev. Levi Frisbie wrote: "He was generous, public-spirited, humane and impartial; a great loss to the town and country." He died June 20, 1789, aged seventy years.

GENERAL DANIEL DENISON.—These annals of the wars would be very incomplete without some notice of General Daniel Denison, the foremost man of the times. He was born in England in 1612, and came to this country with his parents when about nineteen years old. He was at first a citizen of Roxbury, then of Newton, now Cambridge. He married Patience, daughter of Governor Thomas Dudley, and shortly after chose a permanent home in this town, then the home of his wife's father. He entered upon public life shortly after his majority, being elected deputy in 1635. He was deputy the five following years and in 1648, 1649, 1651 and 1652. Three years he was speaker. He was town clerk in 1636, and probably held the office till Mr. Symonds was chosen in 1639. In 1636 he was made captain. In 1638 he, with others, began a plantation at Merrimack, now Salisbury. In 1641 he was one of a committee to advance trade in the town. In 1643 he had a grant of two hundred acres to encourage him to remain here. Soon after the union of the colonies, March 19, 1643, he was called as a military leader. In May of that year he was one of five who were to organize and equip an army and set up fortifications. He was chosen the leader or drill master of the Ipswich militia, and they agreed to pay him £24 7*s.* annually. *Wonder-working Providence* calls him "a good souldier, of quick capacity, not inferior to any other of these chief officers."

He was one of three commissioners with full powers to treat with D'Aulney in the La Tour-D'Alney *imbroglio.* In 1647 he was made a justice in the Inferior Court. He assisted in organizing and establishing the grammar school and was one of the feoffees. He was made major-general in 1653, and was appointed several times afterwards. In 1657 he was one of a committee to adjust the claims of Gorges to Kittery, York and other places, which they did with satisfaction. In May, 1658, he was requested by the General Court thoroughly to revise and codify the colonial laws, for which service he received half of Block Island, which was sold in 1660 for four hundred pounds. In 1660 he joined the Ancient and Honorable Artillery and was chosen their commander. In June, 1664, himself, Bradstreet and Symonds, who were sometime Ipswich men, prepared a "Narrative" defending the course of Massachusetts in "the great confederacy of colonial times," against the accusation of the other colonies. He entered the Quaker controversy with decided views, and advocated strenuous measures to prevent their "mischief." He took an active part in the controversy with the Dutch, and it was chiefly by his advocacy that war was averted. He was one year colonial secretary.

In the troubles between King and colony in 1660, Denison and Bradstreet counseled "the golden mean," basing their advocacy upon kingly prerogative and law, a course which was wise and prevailed. He was called to the front again when the Dutch took possession of New York. He was the general commanding the Bay forces in the King Philip's War. His general's commission for this war, dated June 26, 1675, is in the State Archives, 67: 206. This war closed his military career. In 1680 he was chosen assistant, an office which he held, by re-election, till his death, September 20, 1682.

He was continually in the public service, and we know nothing of his private life except as it is mirrored in that service. The fact that he was a deputy ten years, assistant twenty-nine years, major-general eleven years, inter-colonial commissioner eight years, shows, after allowing for double service, that his public career began soon after he attained his majority; that he was continually honored by his towns-

men shows his home life to have been exemplary, and that public honors crowned the service of his youth, his manhood and his age, exhibits him a man of varied talents and learning, of stout-hearted virtue, of fullest integrity and unswerving purpose. He was quick to adapt means to ends, was a persuasive advocate, a faithful, judicious and wise counselor. He was an earnest Christian man and defender of the faith. He was one of the greatest men of his day.

A Painful Incident.—It is proper here to digress a little and relate an incident of peculiar sadness, the capital punishment of a youth of sixteen, who was accidentally made partaker of a heinous crime.

Jabez Ross was the father of seventeen children, of whom nine were living in 1775—six sons and three daughters. Five of the sons were in the army of the Revolution; four fought at Bunker Hill; one perished in the army of the North; three were enlisted for three years, and one, Ezra, the youngest, for one year. This son, only sixteen years of age, is the subject of this narrative. He had served the term of his enlistment and was returning to the home of his parents. The toils, hardships and sufferings of the war had been too much for his tender years, and he fell sick at Brookfield. He was brought very low, and for a time his life depended upon kind attention and watchful care. Providence placed him in the home of Mr. John Spooner, whose wife gave him "every kind office and mark of attention that could endear and make grateful a child of sixteen, sick and destitute." "After the evacuation of Ticonderoga, in his march to reinforce the Northern army, gratitude for past favors led him to call on his old benefactress, who then added to the number of her kindnesses and engaged a visit on his return."

The woman in question was Mrs. Bathsheba Spooner; she was the sixth and favorite child of Chief-justice Ruggles, a graduate of Harvard, a man of wealth, honor and social distinction. She was born February 17, 1745; was in the vigor of womanhood and well educated. She had inherited wealth and social pride, and was haughty and imperious. Mr. Spooner, her husband from 1766, was a retired trader, a weak character, and the marriage was not happy. Dissension followed dissension, till she hated him and flew to criminal indulgence. Ross had a fine *physique*, and stature far beyond his years. He was youthful, ruddy, active, social, handsome. His youth and inexperience unconsciously became the prey of the strong-minded, artful, seductive, profligate woman. Once in her toils, his youth furnished him with no power to extricate himself. He heard her hellish proposals and her flattering promises, but he "never attempted an execution of the detestable crime, notwithstanding repeated solicitation and as frequent opportunities, until on an accidental meeting he became a party with those ruffians who, without his privity, had fixed on the time and place."

The news of the deed spread far and wide; the case became famous as the crime was heinous. Its secret could not long be kept; the perpetrators were soon ferretted out, and Mrs. Spooner, two vagabond soldiers and young Ross were arrested. The trial was short, the evidence conclusive and the sentence severe and condign. Much sympathy was felt for the woman because of her *delicate condition*, and for Ross because of his accidental knowledge of the deed, his youth and inexperience; but several petitions for executive clemency, in both cases, were of no avail. The criminals met their fate upon the gallows, July 2, 1778. This history is a solemn warning to youth, and will ever excite our sympathy and pity.

Shays' Rebellion.—The town was active in suppressing the Shays' Rebellion in 1786–87. This grew out of the scarcity of money, caused by the interruption of trade and the long, tedious drain upon the energies and finances of the government by the late war, and was led by Captain Daniel Shays, who himself participated in the Nation's struggle for freedom. Ipswich furnished twenty-five men, who were out sixty days, a winter campaign of great severity.

War of 1812.—In speaking of the War of 1812, we must begin with the Embargo Act, or, as the opponents of the administration, spelling it backwards, called it "The *O-grab-me* Act." England and France were in a desperate struggle. Between the "Berlin" and "Milan" decrees of Napoleon on the one hand and the "Orders in Council" of England on the other, the commerce of the United States suffered in the extreme. We reasoned, we remonstrated, we expostulated—all in vain. England was haughty, morose, insulting. She vauntingly searched our vessels and impressed our seamen, with apparent impunity. This government retaliated by passing the "Embargo Act," by which all American vessels were prohibited from sailing for foreign ports, all foreign vessels from taking out cargoes, and all coasting vessels were required to give bonds to discharge their cargoes in the United States. The effect of this act was to embitter political parties more deeply and to work disastrously upon the remnant of our commerce. It fell particularly heavy upon Boston and Essex County, of which Ipswich was an important element and factor. The feeling was so intense in Massachusetts—and Ipswich representatives aided in expressing that feeling—that the President was informed "that New England, if the measure were persisted in, would separate from the Union, at least until the obstacles to commerce were removed; that the plan had already been adjusted, and it would be supported by the people." In 1808 the obnoxious act was in part repealed.

But our difficulty with England continued. She stirred up the Indians to prey upon our western border; she searched our vessels upon the high seas; she stationed vessels at the entrances of our harbors, and there searched our vessels and impressed our seamen under the pretense that they were English born. In

eight years nine hundred American vessels were captured, and more than six thousand seamen had been impressed. These wrongs had to be avenged. The United States at last declared war June 19, 1812. It was a Democratic measure and was bitterly opposed by the Federalists, and the seaports were particularly bitter.

A short time before the declaration of war our town held a convention to consider "the momentous subject of our national affairs," to reply to communications from Boston and Salem and to pass upon addresses from Congress and the Legislature. They declared "that the county of Essex has of late been most grossly misrepresented to the agents of our country by men in whom this town have no confidence; they animadverted upon the administration; they "were not convinced that *any* war in *any* case should be declared;" and they exclaimed, "Who is not convinced that enlarging the power of the authors and aiding the common enemy of free States was its prime object!" They heartily approved the minority address of Congress, and declared the address of the State House of Representatives to be a true expression of the will of the people. The records further declare "We are, nevertheless, determined to do our duty to bring our beloved and afflicted country to a better state of things."

A company of "Sea Fencibles" was raised, and commanded by Major Joseph Swasey, captain; Colonel Joseph Hodgkins, first lieutenant; Jabez Farley, second lieutenant; and Colonel Thomas Wade, orderly. Of the three hundred men raised in Essex County, Ipswich furnished her quota, and October 3, 1814, voted to make the pay of drafted men seventeen dollars per month for the time in actual service. Ipswich commerce, however, never recovered from the stroke.

The last of these war veterans to fall was Thomas Smith. He died September 29th of last year, at the great age of ninety-three years, three months and twenty-six days. He was a hatter by trade, but had not worked at it since the use of machinery in that industry. He drew a pension for many years. He was a good kind of man, always well posted in Democratic measures and principles, was of a retiring disposition, generous and a good citizen. He never married.

THE REBELLION.—The spirit with which Ipswich entered the war against the Rebellion was fervent and active. It was a vital resurrection of the same spirit that bearded the tyranny of Andros, and that pledged life and treasure to support the Declaration of Independence. She met the issue squarely and effectively. At an initial meeting she voted three thousand dollars in aid of the families of volunteers, which she supplemented from time to time with ample supply. Her bounties were commensurate with those of sister towns. She was instant in season and out of season in providing comforts and delicacies for the soldier upon the field and in the hospital. There were committees of the town, of the societies, of the churches, of the lodges and of the citizens, vying with each other in "the labor of love." The town's average enrollment during the war was about three hundred and eighty. She furnished about three hundred and seventy-five. She furnished her full quota upon every call. Fifteen of her men were commissioned officers. At the end of the war she had furnished a surplus of thirty-three men. She expended $52,692; $13,200 exclusively of State aid.

THE MONUMENT.—When the cruel war was over, in 1869 the town selected a conspicuous and central location, and erected upon the rock-ribbed earth, at a cost of two thousand eight hundred dollars, a sightly granite memorial, "a single shaft, simple and plain," commemorative of her patriot dead. The front panel, which faces the north, is inscribed,—

"ERECTED
BY THE TOWN OF IPSWICH
IN MEMORY OF HER
BRAVE AND LAMENTED SONS
WHO GAVE THEIR LIVES TO
THEIR COUNTRY IN THE WAR
FOR UNION AND LIBERTY
1861–1865."

The other panels record their names. On the plinth in front is the year "1871," when the shaft was erected; on the west, "THEIR DEEDS WE CHERISH;" on the south, "OUR PATRIOT DEAD;" and on the east, "THEIR RECORD OUR UNION."

When the Roman matron, Cornelia, was asked to exhibit her jewels, she *naïvely* turned towards her boys and said, "These are my ornaments." These are our jewels.

THE ROLL OF HONOR.—[The roll includes the names of those who died in the service, and have their names upon the soldiers' monument. The first semi-colon is the name; second, age; third, company; fourth, branch of service; fifth, mustered in; sixth, mustered out; seventh, remarks. The abbreviations are: B., battalion; Bat., battery; Cav., cavalry; d., died, or dead; H. A., heavy artillery; I., infantry; ss., sharpshooters; tr., transferred; V. R. C., veteran relief corps; en., expiration of term of enlistment.]

Andrews, Luther B.; 31; D; 48 I.; 10 Oct.'1; d. 2 June, '4.
Barker, John A.; 42; I; 23 I.; 9 Oct.'1; d. Phila. 30 Aug. '4.
Batchelder, Chas. P.; 18; L; 1 H. A.; 28 Feb. '2; d. of wounds, Washington, 23 Aug. '4.
Bridges, Gelois F.; 23; I; 23 I; 16 Oct.'1; d. Richmond prison, Va., 16 May, '4.
Bridges, John O.; 27; I; 23 I.; 16 Oct. '1; d. Newbern, N. C., 26 April, '2.
Brown, Henry A.; 18; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept. '1; d. Newbern, N. C., 21 April, '2.
Brown, Jeremiah W.; 19; —; 4 Bat. H. A.; 24 Feb. '4; 14 Oct. '5.
Butler, Pierce L.; 20; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; d. 2 Jan., '5.
Cash, William; 33; L; 1 H. A.; 20 Mch., '2; d. Andersonville, 26 Mch., '2.
Chambers, Nathl.; 20; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; d. Patrick Station, 16 Feb., '5.
Clarke, James A.; 61; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; d. Hatteras Inlet, 7 May, '2.

Cowles, Henry A.; 18; K; 150 O.Nat. G'ds; 15 April, '4; d. Fort Saratoga, 14 July, '4.
Crowley, Peter; 22; G; 1 H. A.; 4 Dec., '3; d. of wounds, near Petersburg, Va.
Dow, Chas. H.; 18; I; 23 I; 16 Oct., '1; kld. Cold Harbor, 3 June, '4.
Estes, William A.; 19; I; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; made prisoner Andersonville, 22 June, '4.
Gordon, James; —; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; kld. Spottsylvania, 19 May, '4.
Gray, William; 34; A; 1 H. A.; 17 Feb., '2; kld. 21 June, '4.
Harris, Edward; 27; I; 19 I.; 28 Aug., '1; d. Bolivar hosptl., 27 Oct., '2.
Harris, James.
Hayes, Nathaniel; 34; 2 SS.; 10 July, '3; d. Petersburg, Va., 2 July, '4.
Jewett, John H.; 20; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; d. Getty's Station, 5 April, '4.
Jewett, John J.; 31; K; 2 I; 8 Aug., '2; kld. Gettysburg, 2 July, '3.
Jewett, Lorenzo T.; 19; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; d. Washington of wounds at Spottsylvania, 26 May, '4.
Jewett, William H.; 42; C; 19 I.; 31 Dec., '1; 20 Oct., '2.
Johnson, Nathaniel A.; 43; C; 19 I.; 28 Aug., '1; d. Ipswich, 17 May, '4.
Lavalette, Philip C.; 21; H; 1 H. A; 5 July, '1; d. Washington, 6 June, '4.
Lavalette, Pike N.; 18; A; 14 I.; 6 July, '1; d. Andersonville, 24 Sept., '4.
Linburg, Marcus; 42; D; 48 I.; 23 Dec., '2; kld. 15 Nov., '3.
Lord, Caleb H.; 22; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; kld. by SS., 29 June, '4.
McGregor, Alex. B.; 27; L; 1 H. A.; 11 Mch., '2; kld. New Haven, Ct., 26 Oct., '4.
McGregor, Parker; 24; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; kld. 16 June, '4.
Morley, George W.; 19; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; d. 19 July, '3; wounded 13.
Morris, George; 35; —; Navy; —; drowned "Cumberland," 7 Mch. '2; sailmaker's-mate.
Noyes, James W.; 22; I; 1 H. A.; 20 Feb., '2; kld. Spottsylvania, 18 May, '4.
Otis, George W.; 26; A; 1 B. H. A.; 29 Feb., '2; d. Ipswich, 19 Nov., '3.
Patterson, William; 35; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; d. 16 June, '4, of wounds at Petersburg.
Peatfield, Joseph S.; 18; I; 23 I.; 4 June, '2; d. Newbern, N. C., 31 July, '3.
Peatfield, William P.; 18; I; 23 I.; 5 Oct., '1; kld. Whitehall, N. C., 16 Dec., '4.
Pickard, Samuel R.; —; L; 4 H. A; ——; d. Alexandria, Va., 25 Feb., '5.
Potter, Daniel J.; 21; A, 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; d. Fort Albany, 27 Nov., '1.
Richardson, Alfred; —; D.; 48 I.; ——; d. Baton Rouge, La., 8 Aug., '3.
Schanks, Daniel B.; 25; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; d. of wounds at Baton Rouge, 20 April, '3.
Schanks, John G.; 25; —; 4 N. Y. I.; 1 July, '1; d. wounds at Antietam, 20 Sept., '2.
Schofield, Cornelius; 24; A; 1 H. A.; 2 Aug., '2; d. of wounds, 13 Aug. '4.
Shattuck, W. William; 21; I; 23 I; 16 Oct., '1; 2 Jan., '4; re-enlisted; kld. Petersburg.
Smith, Asa; 31; —; 10 Bat.; 21 Sept., '2; kld. 28 Oct., '4.
Smith, Charles D.; 28; E; 9 I.; 21 Aug., '3; kld. Spottsylvania, 8 May, '4.
Smith, J. Albert; 25; A; 1 Cav.; - Aug., '2; d. 24 Oct., '4.
Thurston, Timothy J., Jr.; 40; A; 1 H. A.; 7 Dec., '1; d. Alexandria, 16 Oct., '4.
Tozer, John M.; 19; I; 23 I.; 10 Oct., '3; d. Newport News, 20 Oct., '3
Turner, Joshua; —; I; 1 H. A.; ——; d. Washington, D. C.
Wade, David L.; 41; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; d. 26 July, '3; wounded Gettysburg, 2.
Wells, Samuel S.; 20; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; d. Andersonville, 4 Nov., '4.
Whipple, Daniel M.; 22; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; d. Washington, 26 Dec., '4.

ADDITIONS.—The following died in the war, and seem to be connected with Ipswich, but are not upon the monument. Conant and Howe, and perhaps others, were natives:

Bailey, George W.; 35; L; 1 H. A.; 20 Mch., '2; d. Portsmouth Grove, 15 Aug., '4.
Conant, Alvin T.; 36; K; 40 I.; 3 Sept., '2; d. 26 Oct., '3.
Fish, Charles W., 32; —; 23 I.; 15 Feb., '3; d. Salem 30 Sept., '6.
Guilford, Hiram; 34; D; 1 H. A.; 17 Feb., '2; d. City Point, 17 Oct., '4.
Howe, Leonard; 21; H; 2 I.; 11 May, '1; d. Seneca Mills, 28 Nov., '1.
Lefflan, Samuel A.; —; I; 1 H. A.; ——; kld. 19 May, '4.
Murray, Patrick; —; F; 2 I.; ——; kld. North Bridgewater.
Shattuck, James; 19; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; tr. V. R. C.

Those Returned to Citizenship.

Akerman, Joseph L.; 41; K; 2 I.; 9 Aug., '2; 4 Feb., '4; disability; d. 6 June, '70.
Andrews, Calvin; 18; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Andrews, Charles O.; 22; C; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 9 June, '3; disability.
Andrews, Daniel H.; 29; H, 24 I.; 27 Nov., '1; close of war; d.
Andrews, Eben A.; 24; I; 1 H. A.; 19 Mch., '2; 4 Oct., '4.
Andrews, George M.; 24; I; 16 I.; 12 July, '1; 27 July, '4.
Andrews, Isaac M.; 38; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Andrews, John J.; 30; E; 19 I.; 23 Feb., '5; 30 June, '5.
Andrews, Luther B.; 31; D; 48 I.; 10 Oct., '1; 2 June '4; d.
Andrews, Prince; 19; F; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 28 May, '4; d.
Atkinson, Samuel D.; 29; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Averill, Ephraim P.; 25; D; 12 I.; 26 June, '1, for three years; en.
Averill, William W.; 20; —; —; 10 May, '4; 11 Aug., '4.
Bailey, Amasa P.; 33; A; 1 B. H. A.; 25 Feb., '2; 27 Feb., '5; en.
Bailey, John; 26; F; 9 I.; 22 Aug., '3; 19 June, '4; en.
Bailey, Oliver A.; 29; C; Engr. Troop, Bat., N. C.; 24 Sept., '1; 11 April, '2; en.
Baker, Charles H.; 31; A; 1 B. H. A; 21 Feb., '2; 27 Feb., '5.
Baker, Francis; —; Navy, master's mate.
Baker, George H.; —; —; 43 N. Y.; ——; ——; discharged for wounds; d.
Baker, George W.; 23; A; 1 H. A.; 26 Feb., '2; 16 Aug., '5; en.
Baker, John R.; 27; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Baker, Samuel Hazen; 24; E; 12 N. H. I.; 26 Aug., '2; 20 July, '5; en
Bamford, Charles W.; 19; L; 1 H. A.; 28 Feb., '2; 16 Aug., '5; en.
Barker, George; 34; I,; 30 I.; 17 Apr., '1; 18 July, '6; en.
Barker, George W.; 23; A; 1 H. A.; 26 Feb., '2; 16 Aug., '5; en.
Barton, John F.; 33; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 28 May, '4; en.
Barton, William R.; 26; A; 1 B. H. A.; 24 Feb., '2; 24 Feb., '5; en.
Batchelder, Hiram R.
Beck, Hardy M; 21; —; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 16 Aug., '5; en.
Blaisdell, Leander M.; 20; L; 1 H. A.; 28 Feb., '2; 28 Dec., '4; tr. Vet. Corps.
Blake, Asher; 55; L; 1 H. A.; 18 Mch., '2; 7 Mch., '5; disability; d
Bodwell, John; —; —; Navy.
Boyd, Neil; 21; F; 9 I.; 27 Aug., '3; ——; tr. 10 June, '4, to 32 I.; 29 Apl., '5, to Navy.
Boynton, Charles; 27; A; 1 B. H. A.; 20 Feb., '2; 9 Oct., '3; disability.
Boynton, Warren; 25; A; 1 B. H. A.; 25 Feb., '2; 20 Oct., '5.
Bowen, George W.; 16; A; Navy and 3 H. A.; 8 Dec., '2; 7 Dec., '5.
Bradstreet, George S.; 21; A; 1 B. H. A.; 25 Feb., '2; 27 Feb., '5.
Bridges, Richard A.; 22; D; 48 I.; 29 Oct., '2; 12 Sept., '5; en.
Brocklebank, Lewis A.; 18; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; 13 Oct., '4; en.
Broderick, Dennis; 30; F; 9 I.; 21 Aug., '3; ——; tr Navy.
Brown, Benjamin; 24; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
Brown, Edward; 22; D; 48 I.; 29 Oct., '2; 3 Sept., '3;
Brown, George A.; 23; A; 1 H. A.; 15 Feb., '2; 16 Aug., '5; en.
Brown, Irving; 19; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
Brown, John B.; 24; I; 16 I; 1 Aug., '1; 31 Oct. 3.
Brown, Jesse F.; 22; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 27 Sept., '5; en.
Brown, Leverett; 21; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept.' '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Brown, Luther C.; 27; B; 7 Cal. I.; 12 Oct., '4; 29 April, '6.
Brown, Tristram; 42; A; 1 H. A.; 1 Jan., '2; 13 Jan., '3; disability; d.
Brown, Walter, Jr.; 20; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 18 Sept., '5; en.
Burnham, Abraham; 53; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; 21 July, '2; disability.
Burnham, Nathaniel; 21; D; 48 I; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.

Burnham, William; 22; D; 1 H. A.; 20 Feb., '2; 6 Jan., '3; disability.
Butler, Alonzo; 21; F; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 30 June, '5; en.
Butler, John F.; 27; A; 1 B. H. A.; 21 Feb., '2; 20 Oct., '5; en.
Buzzell, George; 19; I; 4 Cav.; 31 Dec., '4; 14 Nov., '5; en.
Buzzell, Isaac; 25; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 5 Nov., '5; en.
Coffery, Thomas; 38; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Caldwell, John G.; 28; B; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; 26 Mch., 2; disability; d. 12 Oct.. '81.
Callahan, William; 21; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 16 Aug., '5; en.
Capwell, James; 42; A; 1 H A.; 5 July, '1; 20 Dec., '1; disability.
Carr, Patrick H.; 24; F; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 30 Dec., '3; en.
Channel, Joseph H.; 24; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; 3 Jan., '4; d.
Chaplin, William A.; 16; A; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; 28 Sept., '4; en.
Chapman, Charles H.; 21; A; 3 H. A.; 10 Jan., '3; 18 Sept, '5; en.
Chapman, Moses; 27; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept, '3; en.
Chapman, Thomas T.; 36; A; 1 H. A.; 8 Aug. '1; 8 July '4; en.
Clarke, John F. G.; 30; I; 23 I; 16 Oct., '1; 6 Jan., '2; disability.
Clarke, John W.; 21; A; 1 H. A.; 8 Aug., '2; 5 April, '5; en.
Clarke, Philip E.; 24; A; 1 H. A.; 21 Feb., '2; 20 Oct., '5; en.
Coburn, Clarence; —; —; 19 I; ——; ——.
Cogswell, William; 26; K; 2 I; 8 Aug., '2; 26 April '3; disability; d.
Conant, Cyrus W.; 25; K; 40 I; 3 Sept., '2; ——; disability.
Conant, George W.; 33; K; 40 I; 3 Sept., '2; 6 Feb., '4; en.
Condon, Patrick; 56; —; Navy; 15 Sept., '1; 20 Sept., '3; en.
Condon, Thomas E.; 19; D; Navy, 48 I.; April, '1; 3 Sept., '3; er.; wounded at Port Hudson, 17 June, '3.
Conlace, John; 24; G; 20 I.; 12 July '3; 12 June, '5.
Coombs, Samuel; 13; H.; 31 Me. I.; Apr., '4; 1 July, '5; en.
Cotton, Charles T.; 22; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 30 June, '5; en.
Cotton, John S.; —; —; Navy; ——; ——.
Cotton, Moses; —; C; 53 I.; ——; ——; en.
Coughlin, Patrick; 41; I; 23 I.; 5 Oct., '1; 27 Oct., '2; disability; d.
Cressey, Alvin O.; 28; A; 17 I.; 21 July, '1; 3 Aug., '4; en.
Crane, Silas; 44; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 11 April, '4; disability; d.
Crane, William P.; 43; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.; d.
Crane, William, Jr.; 22; D; 48 I.; 14 Oct., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Cross, William H.; 23; C; 23 I.; 3 Dec., '3; 11 July, '5; discharged by order War Dept.
Cummings, Chas. S.; 23; F; 36 I.; 27 Aug., '2; 19 Nov., '4; disability.
Cummings, John; —; —; —. ——; ——; d.
Dent, William; —; —; Navy; ——; ——.
Dodge, James P.; 25; A; 1 H. A.; 7 Aug., '2; 8 July, '4; en.; of Wenham.
Dodge, Jefferson; —; —; —; ——; ——; of Wenham;
Downes, Thomas J.; 22; L; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 12 Feb., '3; disability.
Dunnels, Henry F.; 25; —; Navy; 22 April, '1; 7 Oct., '5; to reduce naval officers; disabled, Aug., '4, at Deep Bottom, Va.
Dunnels, John M.; 23; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 28 May, '4; en.
Ellsworth, Thomas; F.; 22; K; 55 I.; tr. 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 20 June, '4; en.
Ellsworth, William; 19; D; 1 Bat.; 10 May, '4; 30 June, '5; en.
Ellwell, Alvin F.; 38; B; 50 I.; 15 Sept., '2; 24 Aug., '3; en.
Estes, Charles W.; 28; I; 23 I.; 9 Dec., '1; 13 Oct., '4; en.
Fall, Hamden A.; 21; C; 3 Me. I.; 3 May, '1; 4 June, '4; en.
Fellows, Daniel H.; 20; A; 1 H. A; 5 July, '1; 16 Aug., '5; en.
Felton, Andrew P.; 39; B; 22 I.; 26 Sept., '1; 9 Apr. '3; wounded.
Fields, Chas. H.; 39; A; 5 Cav.; 29 Jan., '4; 31 Oct., '5; en.
Fiske, William.
Flagg, Joseph; 21; A; 1 H. A.; 5 Nov., '3; 16 Aug., '5.
Forbes, Henry; 23; I; 23 I; 1 Oct., '1; 13 Oct., '4; en.; d.
Foss, Jonathan; 24; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.; d. 18 Oct., '77.
Foster, Cyrus; 39; —; 40 I.; 3 Sept., '2; 25 Mch., '4; en.
Foster, Edwin K.; 24; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Foster, Richard R.; 18; C; 19 I.; 26 July, '1; 30 June, '5; re-enlisted 20 Dec., '3.
Foster, Solomon L.; 26; F; 48 I.; 6 Nov., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Foster, Samuel P.; 26; K; 2 I; 8 Aug., '2; 28 May, '4; en.
Foster, Thomas E.; 21; H; 1 H. A; ——, '1; ——, '4.
Foster, Walter C.; 25; I; 23 I; 15 Oct., '1; 30 Sept., '2; disability.
Fowler, Eben E.; 20; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; 13 Oct., '4; en.; d. 24 Mch., '86.
Fowler, John J.; 24; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 2 Jan., '5; en.
Galbraith, John; 18; D; 48 I.; 1 Dec., '2; 3 Dec., '3; en.
Galbraith, Thomas; 15; —; Navy; – July, '1; – July '4; en.; d. 14 Apl., '79.
Goodhue, Nathaniel; 23; D: 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.; d.
Goodwin, George W.; 19; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 16 Aug., '5; en.
Goodwin, Sylvester; 53; A; 1 H. A.; 8 Aug., '2; ——; tr. V. R. C. 3 July, '63; d.
Goss, James W,; 35; H; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 9 Apr., '5; en.; prisoner.
Grant, George F.; 18; —; 3 H. A.; 10 Jan., '3; ——; en.
Grant, James H.; 28; D; 48 I.; 23 Dec., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Grant, James O.; 23; B; 32 I.; 21 Aug., '3; 30 June, '5; en.
Guilford, Samuel A.; 21; I; 8 I.; 15 Aug., '2; 7 Aug., '3; en.
Gwinn, William H.; 26; A; 1 H. A.; 23 Nov., '1; 18 Sept., '5; en.
Hall, William H.; 18; F; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 28 Sept., '5; en.
Hardy, Charles A.; 21; F; 7 I.; 15 June, '1; 27 June, '4; en.; d. 5 Nov., '71.
Hardy, Clarendon B.; 18; A: 1 H. A.; 5 July, 1; 8 June, '4; en.
Hardy, Freeman; 19; A; 1 H. A.; 8 July, '1; 30 June, '5; en.; drowned since.
Hardy, Josiah; 45; M; 3 Cav.; 2 Nov., '1; – June, '2; disability.
Hardy, Joshua M.; 20; L; 1 H. A.; 2 Feb., '2; 31 Mch., '4; en.
Hardy, Otis C.; 16; A; 3 H. A.; 10 Jan., '2; 18 Sept., '5; en.
Harris, Aaron W.; 18; B; 44 I.; 13 Oct., '2; 18 June, '3; en.
Harris, George; z7; K; 2 I; 8 Aug., '2; 30 Dec., '3; en.
Harris, George W.; 23; —; Signal Corps; 29 Mch., '4; 18 Aug. '5; en.
Harris, James L.; —; —; Regular; ——; ——; d. 30 Sept., '66.
Harris, Mark; 21; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 17 Jan., '3; en; died since.
Hart, Andrew J.; 24; H; 24 I.; 5 Nov., '1; 4 Nov., '4; en.
Haskell, Charles; 21; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 5 Oct., '4; en.
Haskell, Henry; 21; L; 1 H. A.; 18 Mch., '2; 18 Mch., '5; en. wounded; d.
Hazeltine, Ira G.; 19: C; 1 Vt. I.; 2 May, '1; 15 Aug., '1; en.
Henderson, George; —; —; Navy; ——; ——; d. at sea.
Henderson, Moses K; 18; —; Regular Navy; 23 Apr., '1; 27 Sept., '70; en.
Hennesey, Peter; 16; E; 3 N. H.; 10 July, '1; 15 July, '4; en.
Hills, Albert P.; 15; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; 13 Oct., '4; en.
Hills, Albert S.; 40; I; 23 I.; 10 Oct., '1; 13 Oct., '4; en.
Hitchcock, Henry; 18; A; 3 H. A.; 10 Jan., '3; 18 Sept., '5; en.
Hobbs, John; 45; I; 23 I; 11 Oct., '1; 22 July, '2; en.
Hobbs, Valorus C; 21; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 20 July, '5; disability; d.
Holland, Charles L.; 27; —; 1 Bat.; 30 Dec., '4; 30 June '5; en.
Holmes, Otis S.; 21; —; 1 B. H. A.; 25 Feb., '2; 27 Feb., '5; en.
Holt, Augustus; 26; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 7 July, '5; en.; disability.
Horton, George; 32; A; 1 H. A.; 6 Aug., '2; 8 July, '4; en; d.
Hovey, J. Thomas; 18; A; 3 H. A.; 26 Apr., '3; 25 July, '4; en.; tr. Navy.
Howard, Frank; 21; I; 23 I.; 10 Oct., '1; 8 July, '2; wounded at Roanoke Island.
Howe, Charles H.; 23; —; 3 H. A.; 12 Aug., '4; 14 June, '5; en.
Howe, Levi L.; 29; A; 1 B. H. A.; 22 Feb., '2; 20 Oct., '5; en.
Howe, Theodore; 18; D; 3 Cav.; 7 Dec., '3; 5 Oct., '5; en.
Howe, Willard P.; 38; H; 50 I.; 19 Sept., '2; 5 Aug., '5; en.; tr. H, 59 I. 12 Mch., '4, and H, 51 I.. 1 June, '5.
Howes, Edwin A.; 26; —; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 24 May, '4; en.
Hubbard, John; —; H; 16 I.; 17 Aug., '3; ——; tr. Vet. Corps.
Hull, Edward G.; 27; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; 27 Sept., '2; en.
Hull, James; 20; A; 5 N. H. I.; 20 Aug., '3; 14 June, '5; en.
Hull, John; 30; A; 3 H. A.; 28 Apr., '3; 12 June, '3 en.
Hurd, Yorick G.; 35; —; 48 I; 8 Dec., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Irving, George W.; 21; I; 23 I.; 17 Oct., '1; 2 Dec., '1; en.
Irving, Leander; 19; G; 3 H. A.; 4 Dec., '3; 18 Sept., '5; en.
Irving, Washington; 23; H; 3 H. A.; 4 Dec., '3; 18 Sept., '5; en.
Jewett, Henry B.; 18; C; 19 I.; 26 July, '1; 28 Aug., '2; en.
Jewett, Thomas L. Jr.; 26; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; 26 Oct., '3; disability.
Johnson, Joseph; 33; H; 3 H. A.; 20 Nov., '3; 18 Sept., '5; en.
Kimball, Daniel B.; 26; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 28 May, '4; en.
Kimball, Joseph E.; 21; B; 1 I.; 23 May, '1; 10 Jan., '4; en.
Kimball, John H.; 18; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
Kinsman, Joseph F.; 18; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3.
Kneeland, Josiah; 36; C; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 30 Dec., '3.
Knox, James H.; 17; —; Navy; 1 Jan., '3; 1 Jan., '4.
Knox, Rufus; 35; K; 2 I; 18 Aug, '2; 11 May, '4.
Lakeman, Asa; 24; A; 17 I.; 21 July, '1; ——; dropped 18 July, '2.

Lakeman, Perley B.; 41; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Lang, Thomas; —; E; 2 I.; ——; ——; tr. to Navy.
Langdon, George W.; 30; —; Fort Warren; 21 Feb., '60; 20 Oct., '5, en.
Lavalette, Charles C.; 25; C; 32 I.; 12 Nov., '1; 29 June, '5; en.; re-enlisted 5 Jan., '4; d.
Lefflan, John M.; 26; —; 3 H. A.; 11 June '3; 18 Sept., '5; en.; d.
Leonard, Isaac M.; 30; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; ——; tr. Vet. Corps; d.
Lord, Charles W.; 28; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
Lord, Henry A; 41; A; 1 H. A.; 23 Nov., '3; 22 June, '5; en.; from Lowell.
Lord, James A.; 21; B; 28 I.; 15 Mch., '4; 22 June, '5; en.
Lord, Moses G.; 42; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; ——; tr. Vet. Corps.
Lord, Nathaniel, 3d; 44; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 9 May, '3; disability; d.
Lord, Robert; —; —; Navy; ——; ——; en.
Lord, William, 4th; 39; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Low, Winthrop; 31; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 22 Sept., '2; disability.
Lucy, Daniel; 33; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 28 May, '4; en.
Maguire, John; 27; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Mallard, Levi W.; 31; G; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 17 June, '5; en.
Mann, Josiah H.; 22; A; 44 I.; 12 Sept., '2; 18 June, '3; en.
Manning, Joseph S.; 18; K; 29 I.; 25 Nov., '1; 15 Aug., '4; en.
Manning, Thomas; 35; C; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 30 Aug., '4; en.
Marshall, John; 35; M; 3 H. A.; 27 Aug., '4; 17 June, '5; en.
McDonal, William; 20; H; 9 I.; 2 Aug., '3; 16 June, '5; en.; disability.
McGregor, Alex., Jr.; 18; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 16 Aug., '5; en.; d.
McGuire, Thomas; 44; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
McIntire, Charles W.; 28; K; 1 I.; 12 Aug., '2; 25 May, '4.; en.
McIntire, Dexter.
McNell, James; 23; I; 9 I.; 11 Aug., '3; 29 June, '5; en.
Merrill, Dennis; 21; I; 23 I.; 9 Oct., '1; 10 Dec., '2; disability.
Merrill, Samuel H.; 21; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
Mooar, Charles A.; 23; G; 2 I.; 13 Aug., '2; 28 May, '4; en.
Montgomery, John H.; 27; I; 23 I.; 9 Nov., '1; 21 Apr., '3; disability; d.
Moore, Richard; 34; E; 9 I.; 1 Aug., '2; 16 Oct., '4; en.
Morris, Charles; d.
Murbey, John; 24; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
Murbey, Thomas; 40; —; 4 Div. Bridge Corps; 2 Dec., '3; ——, '5.
Nason, Joseph A.; 21; G; 3 H. A.; 30 ——, '3; 18 May, '4; disability.
Newman, Benj. B.; 18; A; 3 H. A.; 10 Jan., '3; 31 Mch., '3; disability; d. 12 May, '72.
Nichols, Augustus; 14; —; Navy; 15 Mch., '3; 14 Mch., '4; en.
Nichols, Albert N.; 18; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July '4; en.
Nichols, Edward F.; 22; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
Nichols, William O.; 23; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 2 Apr., '3; disability.
Noland, Malachi; 30; H; 1 H. A.; 3 July, '2; 8 July, '4; en.
Norman, Alfred; 22; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '—; en.
Norwood, Samuel; 22; F; 35 I.; 22 Aug., —; 9 June, '5; en.; d. '85.
Noyes, John W.; 33; L; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 18 Sept., '5; en.
O'Connel, Cornelius, Jr.; 23; A; 1 H. A.; 7 Aug., '2; 28 July, '3; disability.
O'Connel, John; 20; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 31 July, '5; en.
O'Connel, Michael; 18; —; Regular Army; 4 Mch., '4; ——.
Palmer, Rev. Edwin B.; 29; —; 19 Me. I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept. '3; en.
Peabody, Thomas; 36; I; 23 I.; 9 Oct., 1; 16 Aug., '3; disability.
Perkins, Charles N.; 42; A; 1 B. H. A.; 7 Nov., '3; 20 Oct., '5; en; d. 23 Dec., '79.
Perkins, Josiah; 29; I; 23 I.; 9 Mch., '4; 21 June '5; en.
Pickard, David; 44; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., 2; 6 Jan., '4; en.; disability.
Pickard, William G.; 20; D; Frontier Cav.; 2 Jan., '6; 3 June, '5; en.
Pickard, Washington P.; 30; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
Pierce, George W.; 21; K; 40 I.; 3 Sept., '2; 25 Feb., '4; disability.
Pike, Edwin T.; 27; C; 48 I.; 23 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Pinder, Daniel F.; 19; I; 23 I.; 10 Oct., '1; 13 Oct., '4; en.; d. 11 June, '70.
Pingree, David M.; 21; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
Plouff, Edward, Jr.; 22; D; 48 I.; —Sept, 2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Plouff, John W.; 24; D, 48 I.; 23 Dec., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Plummer, Hiram; 19; M; 3 Cav.; 31 Dec., '4; 28 Sept., '5; en.
Plummer, William; 34; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept, '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Poor, Benjamin; 26; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 16 Aug., '5; en.; d. 24 Mch., '80.
Poor, David H.; 32; A; 1 B. H. A.; 9 May, '3; 20 Oct., '5; en.
Poor, George; 23; I; 23 I; 5 Oct., '1; 1 Dec., '1; d.
Poor, Thomas A.; 20; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; ——; d.
Porter, Charles; 18; A; 3 H. A.; 16 May, '3; 18 Sept., '3; en.
Porter, Thomas.
Potter, Asa T.; 29; —; 1 B. H. A.; 21 Feb., '2; 29 Feb., '4; en.; d.
Putnam, Jeremiah; —; —; 40 I.; ——; ——.
Ready, Michael; 30; A; 1 H. A.; 7 Aug., '2; ——; en.
Ready, Thomas; 30; B; 48 I.; 24 Oct., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Reily, Edmund; 38; A; 1 H. A.; 7 Aug., '2; 16 Aug., '5; en.
Richards, Charles.
Riggs, Charles A.
Roberts, Charles.
Roberts, Edward T.; 23; —; 2 I.; 31 July, '1; 16 Aug., '4; en.; L. T. Bat.
Roberts, George B.; 27; G; 1 I.; 23 May, '1; 20 Dec., '2; disability.
Roberts, John S.; 19; C; 19 I.; 26 July, '1; 13 Oct., '3; en.
Ross, Edward; 24; I; 23 I.; 9 Nov., '1; 25 Sept., '2; en.
Ross, William P.; 19; A; 1 H. A.; 27 Feb., '2; 22 Jan., '5; en.
Rowe, George; 18; I; 23 I.; 1 Oct., '1; 25 May, '2; en.; disability.
Russell, Henry F.; 32; —; 3 H. A.; 4 Dec., '3; 18 Sept., '5; en.
Russell, Edward W.; 27; A; 1 B. H. A.; 21 Feb., '2; 20 Oct., '5; en.
Russell, John Ward; 17; F; 14 Me. I.; 11 Jan., '2; 13 Jan., '5; en.
Russell, John W.; 21; —; 3 H. A.; 4 Dec. '3; 18 Sept., '5; en.
Sanderson, James H.; 31; H; 8 I.; 19 Sept., '2; 7 Aug., '3; en.
Sargent, George H.; 38; I; 23 I.; 5 Oct., '1; 8 Aug., '3; disability.
Sargent, Kendall; 42; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July '1; – May, '2; disability.
Saunders, Moses; 21; K; 40 I.; 3 Sept., '3; 16 June, '5; en.
Schaffer, William; 23; K; 9 I.; 21 Aug., '3; ——; tr. 32 I., 10 Jan., '4.
Schanks, Jacob; 20; H; 17 I.; 22 July, '1; 11 July, '5; en.
Schanks, Jacob P.; 44; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 30 May, '5; disability; d.
Scott, James, Jr.; 18; F; 14 Me. I.; 25 Feb., '5; 28 Aug., '5; en.
Scott, John; 24; —; Navy; – July, '2; ——, '7.
Semple, John; 29; —; Navy; – June, '1; – Aug., '1; disability.
Shatswell, Nathaniel; 27; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 18 Aug., '5; en.
Shattuck, Milton B.; 32; A; 1 H. A.; 6 July, '1; 20 Jan., '3; en.; d. 24 May, '84.
Sherburne, George W.; 25; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Sherburne, John T.; 34; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; ——, '3; disability.
Shirley, Reuben W.; 18; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
Smith, Charles W.; 26; B; 1 B. H. A.; 8 Oct., '2; 29 June, '5; en.
Smith, Edwin F.; 18; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 15 July, '5; en.
Smith, Edward P.; 20; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, 1; 1 May, '2; disability.
Smith, George; 22; I; 23 I.; 10 Oct., '1; 13 Oct., '4; en.
Smith, Henry R.; 19; H; 19 I.; 10 Dec., 1; 31 Mch., '3; en.
Smith, John Allen; 22; D; 1 Cav.; 2 Jan., '5; 30 June, '5; en.
Smith, John H.; 20; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July '1; 1 Jan., '4; disability; d. 3 Aug., '5.
Smith, John J.; 27; G; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 16 Aug., '5; en.
Smith, Thomas R.; 24; A; 1 H. A.; 8 Aug., '2; 8 July, 4; en.; d. 11 Nov., '68.
Smith, William H.; 23; A; 1 I.; 7 Aug., '2; 31 July, '5; en.
Spear, William M.; —; —; 38 I.; ——; ——.
Spinney, J. F.; 21; E; 17 Ills. I.; 25 May, '1; 2 Aug., '2; disability.
Spofford, William H.; 30; —; Fort Warren; 7 Apr., '3; 18 Sept., '5; en.
Stacey, John R.; 30; A; 2 I.; 12 Oct., '1; 16 Jan., '3; disability.
Stackpole, William A.; 16; C; 5 I.; 23 July, '4; 16 Nov., '4; en.
Stanley, Francis A.; —; —; 38 I.; ——; ——.
Staten, William H.; 19; F; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 14 July, '5; en.
Stevens, Henry L.; 19; A; 1 H. A.; 2 Aug., '2; tr. Navy, 2 April, '4; d.
Stevens, William; 44; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 22 June, '5; en.
Stevens, William, Jr; 25; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Stone, Daniel W.; 23; D; 1 B. H. A., 30 Dec., '4; 30 June, '5; en.
Stone, Lorenzo R.; 18; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.

Stone, William L.; 24; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
Sweet, Elbridge; 23; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 20 June, '4; en.
Tarleton, Walter; 27; K; 8 I.; 1 Oct., '2; 24 Oct., '4' en.; d.
Taylor, Edmund T.; 21; E; 11 I.; 15 Aug., '3; 14 July, '4; en.
Taylor, Trowbridge C.; —; A; 23 I.; 1 Oct., '1; ———.
Teague, Theodore P.; 21; D; 4 Cav.; 31 Dec., '4; 14 Nov., '5; en.
Tenney, Albert; 21; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 14 July, 5; en.
Tenney, John E.; 20; H; 3 H. A.; 20 Nov., '3; 18 Sept., '5; en.
Terhune, Henry; 33; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 16 Aug., '5; en.
Thomas, Eben; 26; —; Navy; 12 Aug., '1; 26 Oct., '3; en.
Thompson, Charles H.; 21; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; 5 Oct., '2; disability.
Tibbetts, John L.; 39; C; 19 I.; 28 Aug., '1; 23 Apr., '3; disability.
Todd, Thomas M.; 22; F; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; ———; tr. navy 28 Feb., '2.
Tonge, Henry F.; 27; —; 3 R. I.; ———, '1; 7 Jan., '6; tr. Hancock's corps, 30 Dec., '4.
Towle, Jenness; 39; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Tozer, William H.; 27; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 28 May, '4; en.
Treadwell, Henry S.; 20; C; 53 I.; 6 Nov., '2; 2 Sept., '3; en.
Treadwell, Marcus M.; 20; D; 12 I.; 26 June, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
Turner, John; 29; L; 1 H. A.; 20 Feb., —; ———.
Tyler, Colman J.; 18; F; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 28 May, '4; en.
Waite, Charles W.; 16; —; Navy; 4 Dec., '2; 15 Jan., '4; en.
Waite, Joseph, Jr.; 19; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; d.
Waite, Luther; 19; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 5 July, '5; en.; tr. navy 9 May, '4.
Waite, Rogers; 18; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., 3; en.; d. 21. April, '79.
Wallis, Henry; —; D; 48 I.; ———; ———.
Watts, James W.; 23; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 17 Feb., '5; disability; d. 31 Jan., '71.
Webber, Moses; 32; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 28 May, 4.
West, John; 44; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
Whedon, Edward M.; 30; —; 2 H. A.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
Whipple, John F.; 20; L; 1 H. A.; 20 Feb., —; 3 July, '5; disability.
White, W. Charles; —; —; 1 Cav.; ———; ———.
Willard, Benjamin D.; 21; I; 26 I.; 7 Sept., '1; 4 Jan., '4; reenlisted.
Willett, George A.; 30; B; 5 I.; 19 Sept., '2; 2 July, '3; en.
Winslow, James; d.
Winslow, William H.; 35; L; 1 H. A.; 2 Dec., '1; 31 Jan., '4; disability.
Wood, Francis L.; 25; E; 32 I.; 10 July, '2; 2 June, '3; en.
Worcester, Leigh R; 27; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 18 Sept., '5; en.
Worcester, James T.; 20; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 2 Sept., '3; en.
Worsley, Pandon E.; 19; L; 1 H. A.; 26 Nov., '1; 15 Dec., '4; en.
Worth, William K.; 19; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; ———; en; d.

A NOBLE GIFT.—I cannot more fittingly close this chapter than by quoting from the records, page 367, the town's action of June 15, 1863, which is self-explaining and as follows:

"WHEREAS, Mr. Augustine Heard of this town, in conjunction with his nephews, Mr. John Heard, Mr. Augustine Heard, Jr., Mr. Alfred F. Heard and Mr. George F. Heard, have placed in the hands of trustees ten thousand dollars to be applied for the relief of such persons belonging to this town as may suffer from sickness or wounds incurred in the service of their country in the present civil war, and for the relief of such persons as may be deprived of support by the loss of relations engaged in the like service; therefore,

"*Resolved*, That the thanks of the citizens of Ipswich, assembled this day in town-meeting, be tendered to the above named gentlemen, respectively, for their munificent donation to so noble a cause, together with our best wishes for their continued health and prosperity; that we receive with lively sensibility this token of their remembrance of the place of their nativity, rejoice in the anticipation of the relief which in future years will come to many of the suffering poor in Ipswich in consequence of their generous gift.

"*Resolved*, That we sympathize with the gentlemen in their patriotic devotion to the welfare of the country, and that we hope their generous sacrifices will soon be amply rewarded by the restoration of the Union and the Constitution more complete and vital than ever, with every root of bitterness removed, with stable peace and enduring prosperity in all our borders, and with the stars and stripes floating with renewed and increased splendor and power over every American citizen by land and by sea, at home and abroad."

CHAPTER XLVI.

IPSWICH—(*Continued*).

LEGAL AND PENAL.

THE COLONIAL PERIOD.—Our legal policy was, in general, based upon the laws of England, but it was moulded by a wise and cautious exercise of authority, according to our exigencies and circumstances. The royal charter of March 4, 1628, which Governor John Winthrop brought out with him, created a corporation styled: "The Governor and Company of Massachusetts Bay in New England." By this charter the seat of government was transferred to these shores, and the corporators were permitted to make their own laws and to choose their own rulers—to make "laws and ordinances not contrary or repugnant to the laws and statutes of the realm." The charter held the company to be British subjects, and was granted in the hope of increasing the royal domain and of augmenting the national wealth. It, then, conferred only such powers as were necessary to the company's existence, business and business prosperity, other matters being reserved for adjustment at home.

THE GREAT COURT.—Our fathers, however, interpreted the instrument in its freest sense; for they early felt an urgent need of a high and wide range of authority, so great was the tide of emigration, and so many and varied were the interests involved. Under it the colonists turned their prow ocean-ward, and spread their sails for a prosperous voyage upon an untried sea. Their polity of church and State was new and peculiar. Although they based their laws upon the English code, they ignored its authority; in fact, in one instance at least, they denied it—they disfranchised all but members of churches, and the magistrates had power to determine or select what churches. Their laws reached public and private relations, and not only such crimes as were known to common law, but many recognized in the Hebraic code. They proposed a State dependent upon the church, where the elders and clergy were at the head, the reciprocal of their former relation, where the church was dependent upon the State, and the king the head. The entire administration of the government was held or controlled by clergymen, who sought to imitate the regal action of the supreme authority of Israel. They made no distinction in courts or court actions—civil or criminal, at law or in equity, lay or ecclesiastical—all were held and determined in one great and General Court.

This court was at once the great source of law and justice. For the first few years, it consisted of the Governor, Deputy-Governor, eighteen assistants and the freemen, but in 1634 the number of freemen so increased, and the inconvenience and danger, from leaving their homes exposed to Indian barbarities, during their absence, were so great, that the town chose deputies to represent them in all matters, but the choice of officers, wherein the freemen sent their votes by proxy. The court was legislative, judicial and executive. It held quarterly sessions, and enacted the laws. The assistants were chosen by the freemen, and were the magistrates, who with the Governor constituted the *Great Quarter Court.* The Governor and assistants, as council, were the executive head. For about ten years the court exercised discretionary powers, hearing and determining all cases, and "seems," says a writer, "to have been more disposed to punish the religious than the civil offender."

IPSWICH'S INFLUENCE.—During the decade, whatever may have been the methods or results, it cannot be denied that Ipswich was an important factor. Next to the metropolis, she was the seat of wealth and learning, and, therefore, of power. Her voice was potent in every department of the government. There was Winthrop, the son of our Governor, the founder of our municipality, a man of learning and wealth, and a governor in embryo himself; Dudley, who had already been Governor one term; Bradstreet, a man of vast executive and business ability; Saltonstall, a gentleman of business enterprise, of wealth and culture, of pure and just sentiment, the first American abolitionist; Denison, the man of war and continually in the public service; and Ward, a man of polished learning, profound in divinity and law, the compiler of the Colonial *Magna Charta.* The mere mention of these names was like "the sweet influence of the Pleiades," and the sentiment of Ipswich citizenship with such leaders worked like destiny.

THE DEMANDS OF GROWTH.—But the State grew rapidly in population and business interests, and the jurisdiction of the Court as largely and rapidly expanded. The people at length became alarmed at such exercise of courtly power, and cried for a legal code resembling *Magna Charta.* The deputies feared that "great damage to our State" might accrue, if the magistrates should "proceed according to their discretion." Accordingly, committees were appointed at various times to frame a code. They failed to meet the approbation of the Court; even the great Cotton Mather, who reported a "copy of Moses his judicials, compiled in an exact method," did not succeed. It remained for the committee, of which Rev. Nathaniel Ward, of Ipswich, was the leading, active and efficient member to perform the work. The work, however, was not published till 1641. The delay was occasioned by a desire to prepare a code commensurate with the need and adapted to the public temperament and our institutions. It was a herculean task, but Mr. Ward performed a thorough work. His great ability, his broad learning, his legal training and practice and his peculiar cast of mind, made him the fittest, and his work shows it. He embodied one hundred civil and criminal laws. The civil laws were far in advance of English law at the time; they have been adopted in new codifications from time to time since; and some are in force at present, after a period of nearly two centuries and a half. In the criminal code he followed Moses in a great measure, but he distanced England in mildness, and for scope was far in advance of his time. He thus embodies personal rights:

"No man's life shall be taken away, no man's honor nor good name shall be stained, no man's person shall be arrested, restrained or dismembered, nor any ways punished, no man shall be deprived of his wife or children, no man's goods or estate shall be taken away from him nor any ways endamaged under color of law or countenance of authority, unless it be by virtue or equity of some express law of the country warranting the same, established by a General Court and sufficiently published, or in case of a defect in a law in any particular case, by the Word of God. And in capital cases, or in cases concerning dismemberment or banishment, according to that word to be judged by the General Court."

In his "Body of Liberties," it is said, there was "a notable disregard of English law," which had sorely discomforted the Puritan temper, and the work was annotated with chapter and verse in the Bible—their sure palladium of both civil and religious liberty.

OTHER COURTS.—Moreover, as population, business, personal complications and infelicities increased, the necessity for other tribunals became apparent. Accordingly, the General Court March 3, 1636, relieved the Court of Assistants, or "Great Quarter Court," by establishing an *Inferior Quarter Court,* which held four terms annually—one term in each of these places: Ipswich, Salem, Cambridge and Boston. The judge was such magistrate or assistant as lived in or nearest the town where the Court was held, assisted by "Commissioners," as they were called, who were appointed by the General Court from a list of nominations by the several towns. The judge and four commissioners constituted the full Court, and himself and two commissioners a quorum. The jurisdiction of the Court extended to all matters ecclesiastical, and sometimes to family infelicities—divorces—and the settlements of estates; to civil controversies, wherein the damage or debt was less than ten shillings, and to criminal cases not involving life or banishment.

IPSWICH COURT.—The original act establishing this Court was changed June 2, 1641. Four Quarter Courts were held in Ipswich and Salem for this county by all the magistrates of both these places sitting together. This Court exercised the jurisdiction before exercised by the *Great Quarter Court,* except trials for life, limb or banishment, and cases whose damage exceeded one hundred pounds, wherein the *Great Quarter Court* had concurrent jurisdiction.

To this Court was attached, September 9, 1639, a recorder's office, and October 7th of the next year Samuel Symonds, of Ipswich, was appointed for the jurisdiction of the Ipswich Court. Previous to this the records of deeds and the conveyances of real estate were recorded in the records of the town. The office of recorder was, after a while, blended with the office of the clerk of the Court, and Robert Lord, then, by virtue of his office as clerk, succeeded Mr. Symonds. By the first act Newbury was placed in the jurisdiction of Ipswich; by the second, Salisbury and Hampton.

COURT OFFICES.—The first court at Salem June 27, 1636; the first at Ipswich probably soon after, though no records appear "till from the year 1646," when, March 31, Robert Lord, of Ipswich, was clerk. The judges were appointed May 25, 1636, and those for Ipswich were Messrs. Dudley, Dummer, Bradstreet, Saltonstall and Spencer. The sittings of the court at Ipswich were twice a year,—March and September,—till by *Quo Warranto*, 1684, the colonial government was arrested and the courts suspended, to be resumed 1689, after the removal of Andros, and in 1692 superseded by authority of the province charter with Sir William Phipps as Governor.

JURISDICTION.—These courts laid out highways, licensed "taverns," guarded the orthodoxy of the church, admitted freemen, probated estates, recorded deeds and adjudicated upon the most important concerns in the county. During the period, Ipswich enjoyed an eminence, advantage and influence second to none but the metropolis, where the highest tribunals always sat. She was a legal centre, and was the home of lawyers, judges and the colonial law-giver.

COURT-HOUSE.—During this period, it is probable, there was no court-house, and that the meeting-house was used instead. Their civil life was under the patronage of their religion, was subservient to it, and wore a sanctity that gave it a proper place in the house of God. In that house they counseled together "after lecture," they voted the minister's salary, they elected church-officers, they chose the seven-men, the clerk and the treasurer, they raised moneys, and arranged the municipal concerns, they counseled for war, they stored their munitions, they worshipped in arms, they made it a watch-house, they meted out justice and exposed the criminal for punishment. The meeting-house to that practical people was serviceable next to their homes; it was the emblem of righteousness, justice and equal rights —God's proper peerage. They wore out their houses, we remodel ours to conform to fashion.

JAIL.—There was but one prison in the colony before 1652. That year, May 22d, the Court ordered one to be built at Ipswich, and September 26th, the seven-men contracted with Henry Pinder and Thomas Rowell to construct it. It was to stand near the watch-house,—a site near the First Church,—and was to be of the "same hight and wyndes." They were to make three floors of joist thick set and well bound with partition above and below the sides and ends, stud and stud spaces, and to clap-board the house round and shingle it, and to daub its whole wall, all but the gable ends, and to underpin the house and make doors and hinges, and hang the doors and fit on locks, which said house shall be finished with all the appurtenances, drawings, iron-work for the doors and nails by the 15th of May next, at their own proper cost and charges, without allowance for help or diet for their reasing, in consideration of which they shall have for their worth £40 out of country rate by the first of the next March. Theophilus Wilson was keeper in 1656, and received a compensation of £3 a year, 5*s.* for each prisoner, and further, each prisoner was to pay his board if he was able to do so; if he was not able, he was to be kept on bread and water. The prisoners were required to work, and the seven-men were required by law to furnish hemp and flax for that purpose. Another prison, or house of correction, was built about 1684. This was ordered to be built by the Quarterly Court, and the expense was to be borne by those towns that sent juries to Ipswich.

THE CAUSES.—The causes determined in these courts have already been indicated. These may be noticed as illustrative: In 1633 a man was fined ten pounds and to wear a badge marked "Drunkard" during the discretion of the court, for drunkenness and undue familiarity with his neighbor's wife, and she was fined fifteen shillings for drunkenness. In 1637 William Schooler was examined by the magistrates here on a charge of murder. After a year he was convicted and hanged at Boston. In 1639 "lewd attempts" were punished by whipping. In 1663 a woman was sentenced, for perjury, to stand at the meeting-house door on "lecture day," with "for taking a false oath" conspicuous upon her garments. In 1665 a woman was tried for burning Gen. Daniel Denison's house. She was acquitted of arson, but was fined for theft and whipped for lying. In 1667 a man was prosecuted for digging up Masconnomet's bones and sporting with the skull on a pole. In 1677 a highway robber was sentenced to be branded and fined. In 1684 a burglar was sentenced to be branded with *B*, to pay treble damages and receive fifteen lashes. During this period there were several arraignments for witchcraft, but no convictions. This glance of the trials presents a picture not so pleasing to contemplate as we might wish, but still it is such as in the nature of things we might expect.

REPRESENTATIVE MEN.—Among the representative men of the Colony, upon whom we have more or less claim. we note the following:—

Governors.—Simon Bradstreet and Thomas Dudley. *Deputy-Governors.*—Simon Bradstreet, Thomas Dudley, Samuel Symonds, John Winthrop, Jr. *Governor's Council.*—Andros'.—Samuel Appleton, ten years between 1681 and 1692. *Colonial Secretaries.*—Simon Bradstreet and Daniel Denison. *Speaker of the*

House.—Daniel Denison. *Commissioners of the United Colonies.*—Thomas Dudley, Simon Bradstreet and Daniel Denison. *Assistants.*—Samuel Appleton, Simon Bradstreet, Daniel Denison, Thomas Dudley, Sir Richard Saltonstall, Samuel Symonds, John Winthrop, Jr. *Justices Inferior Quarter Court.*—Samuel Appleton, Simon Bradstreet, Daniel Denison, Thomas Dudley, Sir Richard Saltonstall, John Spencer, Samuel Symonds. *Registrar of the Court.*—Samuel Symonds. *Clerk of the Court.*—Robert Lord. *Deputies.*—John Appleton, fifteen years; Samuel Appleton, nine years; William Bartholomew, five years; Thomas Bishop, one year; Thomas Boreman, Sr., one year; Humphrey Bradstreet, one year; Simon Bradstreet, one year; Thomas Burnham, two years; Daniel Denison, ten years: Daniel Epps, three years; George Giddings, twelve years; John Giddings, one year; John Goodhue, one year; William Goodhue, eight years; Thomas Howlett, one year; William Hubbard, eight years; Robert Lord, one year; Richard Lumkin, two years; Joseph Metcalfe, eight years; John Perkins, one year; Moses Pingrey, one year; Robert Paine, three years; Lyman Stace, three years; John Spencer, one year; Samuel Symonds, six years; Jonathan Wade, two years; John Whipple, twelve years; Samuel Whinsley, one year.

Biographical.—Most of the parties named above are sketched in *Early Settlers;* Daniel Denison in *Martial and Military;* Sir Richard Saltonstall in *Business;* here it is proper to speak briefly of Robert Lord, John Appleton, Jr., and Thomas Wade, who were the clerks of the Ipswich Courts for the Colonial period.

No name is oftener met in the Colonial records for this section than Mr. Robert Lord's. His life was occupied in the details of the courts. By virtue of his office as clerk, he was also registrar of probate. His clerkship covered a period of forty-seven years—from September, 1636, to August 21, 1683. He was born about 1602 or '3, and appears to have been son of widow Katherine, who came with her sons to Ipswich as early as 1635. He married, about 1630, Mary Wait, who, with eight children, survived him. He was made freeman March 3, 1635–36, deputy to the General Court March 12, 1636–37, and was on a committee to raise fifteen hundred pounds for the Colony. He fixed the boundaries of towns and private lands, was clerk of court a year in Norfolk before the establishment of that county; was clerk of the Salem Court in June, 1658; in 1649 was town-sealer of weights and measures; March 30, 1652, was empowered by the magistrates to "issue all executions in civil and criminal cases;" was "searcher of coins" in 1654; was sheriff of the Ipswich Court till March 27, 1660, when he was superseded by his son, Robert. He was also clerk of writs, whose duty it was to issue attachments, summons, replevin, etc. He made his last entry July 13, 1683, and on or before August 21st closed his mortal record. He was a good penman and a faithful and correct official. His line has furnished two registrars in the person of Nathaniel and Nathaniel's son George Robert.

Mr. Lord's successor was John Appleton, Jr., who received the appointment August 21, 1683. The appointment was confirmed September 25th, and held till April 18, 1698. Mr. Appleton was born in Ipswich October 17, 1652. He married, November 23, 1681, Elizabeth Rogers, daughter of Rev. John, fifth president of Harvard College. He was lieutenant of a company of foot-soldiers, and rose to colonel, and was feoffee of the grammar school and clerk of writs. He was clerk of the new court established by President Joseph Dudley, 1686, was town clerk, Representative to the General Court, member of the Governor's Council from 1698 to 1722 inclusive, county treasurer many years, Judge of Probate thirty-seven years from October 23, 1702, and chief justice of the Court of Common Pleas from 1702 to 1732. He wrote a bold, legible hand, remarkably modern, and was a superior clerk. He did much to reduce the former practice to the modern and exact form, and was the first to use printed blanks. He died September 11, 1739, wealthy, respected, honored.

His successor as registrar was Thomas Wade, who served from April 18, 1689, to June 18, 1692. Mr. Wade was born in Ipswich in 1650 to Jonathan Wade, one of the wealthiest men in the Colony. He married Elizabeth Cogswell February 22, 1670, who, with nine children, survived him. He was town clerk some nine years, was chosen clerk of writs July 29, 1684. After the Andros revolution, he was chosen, March 25, 1690, "clerk of probate," was made military captain in 1689, and in 1692 was a retailer of liquor—a polite office at that time. He was a justice in the Court of General Sessions of the Peace. His last military service was to lead the Essex Middle Regiment against the Indians in April, 1696. He died October 4, 1696, at the age of forty-six. He was an excellent penman, and a worthy man. "When he fell," says Felt, "death had 'a shining mark.'" Colonel Nathaniel Wade, of Revolutionary fame, is supposed to be a descendant of his.

Resistance to Tyranny.—The Colonial period would be very incomplete without a notice of those noble patriots who "knew their rights and dared maintain them," against the tyrannical measures of Andros. Ipswich at that time was the foremost town in the county; she was wealthy and influential. She could not brook the abolition of the people's government and the usurpations of regal power. She was outspoken and determined, and, therefore, incurred the particular enmity of the regal vassal. Andros and his subservient council ordered that the towns choose "commissioners" who should aid the selectmen in laying a tax of "a penny on the pound—four and a sixth dollars on the thousand. This order sapped the vital principle of the Colonial Government, and was, therefore, extremely obnoxious to the colonists.

They had hitherto paid no taxes but those ordered by their own deputies; but now the House of Deputies, or the General Court, was abolished, and men of adverse tendencies ruled. Ipswich recognized the violation of principle, and sounded the clarion note of resistance. It was not the amount of the tax nor the purpose, in this case, to which it was to be applied—little or much the tax, wise or unwise the purpose, it was all the same; the principle was wrong, and must not obtain. Where there is no representation, there can be no just taxation."

A town-meeting was called for August 23, 1687, and the evening before, a few leading men assembled at the house of John Appleton, located on a site near the depot, to counsel what was best to be done in the trying emergency. Among them was Rev. John Wise, patriotic, pious, learned and very able, who used to assert "Democracy is Christ's government in Church and State." That little *Colonial Congress*, a prototype of the Provincial a hundred years later, perceived the gravity of the situation; they felt its boding, but duty pressed them more. The ancestral lamp, whose light illumined their hearts and minds, burned brightly, their sacrifice in the Indian struggle, their love of home and freedom and the hope of realizing the former in the sunlight of the latter, nerved them to action, strengthened their purpose and armed them with power. They planted; the fruit was gathered in the Revolution, and we are partakers of it. They counseled resistance to the unrighteous demand, and Mr. Wise prepared the sentiment to be presented to the town-meeting the next day. The town voted as follows:

"That considering the said act doth infringe their liberties as free born English subjects of his Majesty, and by interfering with the statute laws of the land, by which it was enacted that no taxes should be levied upon the subjects without the consent of an Assembly chosen by the freemen for assessing the same, they do, therefore, vote they were not willing to choose a commissioner for such an end without such a privilege; and they, moreover, consent not that the selectmen do proceed to levy any such rate until it be appointed by a general assembly, concurring with the Governor and Council."

Immediately and heavily swept the besom of power. Samuel Appleton, sketched in Early Settlers of this town, a member of Andros' Council, was already under a £1000 bond for refusing to concur with the council's action. Rev. John Wise, John Appleton, brother of the above Samuel, John Andrew, Robert Kinsman, William Goodhue and Thomas French, were arrested, cast into prison in Boston and denied the privilege of *habeas corpus*. They languished twenty-one days in prison after the trial, and were fined from £50 to £15 each, including costs, which the town afterwards, in justice and in honor, paid.

To that memorable town-meeting, Mr. Wise, counseling resistance, said: "We have a good God and a good King; we shall do well to stand to our privileges." When the patriots were on trial, a member of the tyrannical council exclaimed, "You have no privileges left you, but not to be sold as slaves." Two years later the iniquitous Andros went home in disgrace.

At the Bi-Centennial Celebration of the town, Aug. 16, 1834, Hon. Rufus Choate, the orator, in speaking of this occasion, said:

"The latter and more stormy spectacles and brighter glories and visible results of the age of the Revolution, have elsewhere cast into shade and almost covered with oblivion the actors on that interesting day, and the act itself,—its hazards, its intrepidity, its merits, its singularity and consequences. But you will remember them and teach them to your children."

The Provincial Period.—During the transition period from colony to province, under both the President and Council and the Governor and Council, the administration of justice was unstable in method. The charter, creating "The Province of Massachusetts Bay in New England," was signed October, 1691, and arrived with Sir William Phipps as Governor in May, 1692. But hardly had the new Governor entered upon his career, when occurred that strangest of delusions, the *Witchcraft tragedy*, making the wildest and saddest chapters in our New England history.

Witchcraft.—For years before this date there had been trials for witchcraft in Connecticut, New York and Pennsylvania; there were trials in Boston, Charlestown and several before the Ipswich courts, but the records of the latter show no convictions. The Rowley ministers, Rev. John Wise, of Chebacco Parish, and, we may presume, the Ipswich ministers generally, opposed the proceedings. But at this time it seems as if a tidal wave from all the seas at once had rolled in upon our "stern and rock-bound coast." It was a terrible culmination. The prisons in Salem, Cambridge and Boston were crowded. It seems as if "the principalities and powers and rulers of darkness" had conspired to reign. The entire populace was delirious and enthralled; society agonized and struggled to be free. Almost everybody suspected his neighbor, and on the slightest provocation was likely to be accused.

At this time, when the delirium was wildest, Sunday, May 29, 1692, Ephraim Wildes, constable of Topsfield, came to the home of James Howe, Jr., whose site was, or was near, the nativity of Rev. Nathaniel Howe, the celebrated divine of Hopkinton, and took into custody the wife and mother as a witch.

She was charged with sundry acts of witchcraft, done or committed on the bodies of Mary Walcott and Abigail Williams and others of Salem Village, now Danvers. She was examined the next Tuesday at the house of Nathaniel Ingersoll, of that place. She plead *not guilty*, denied all knowledge of the matter, and testified that she had never heard of the girls, Mary and Abigail, till their names were read in the warrant. But in the court they fell down, they cried out, they were pinched and pricked, and they accused Mrs. Howe. She was remanded to prison in Boston to await the action of the jury of inquest. Her case was

called June 29th and 30th. The jury heard the testimony of twenty-three persons—eleven for and twelve against her. Of those against her, one quarreled with Mr. Howe about some boards, and his cows, in consequence, gave less milk; three others gave the history of a child that for several years had had "fits," and in them would call "Goody Howe," and cry out, "There she goes, there she goes, now she goes into the oven, etc;" another would not loan his horse to Mr. Howe, and the horse strangely died; another, several years before, had some rails broken by Goody Howe without her approach to them; another refused to attend upon her preliminary trial, and his "pig jumped up and fell dead;" five others opposed her admission to membership in the church, and were concerned in the loss of two mares. Of those for her, Rev. Samuel Phillips and Rev. Edward Payson, gospel ministers of Rowley, had seen the insane girl and the families concerned, and entirely dissipated the theory of witchcraft. Deborah Hadley had been a neighbor to Mrs. Howe for twenty-four years; Daniel, John and Sarah Warner about twenty years; Simon and Mary Chapman, and Joseph and Mary Knowlton about ten years, and they each testified to her neighborly courtesy, to her conscientious dealings, to the faithful observance of her promises, to her Christian-like conversation and character. Her father-in-law, then ninety-four years old, who had known her for thirty years, testified to her daughterly conduct in leading him in his feebleness and blindness, and her loving attention to him, and to her exemplary home character as wife and mother. She was, nevertheless, condemned, and July 19th following executed upon Gallows Hill, Salem. The good Christian woman fell a victim to the prevailing, wild infatuation.

These proceedings, to us who are removed two hundred years, seem at first unaccountable, mortifying and persuasive of disowning our fathers, and of forgetting the period of their folly; but the Hon. Joseph Story, associate justice of the United States Supreme Court, after surveying the field, considering the circumstances, weighing the conditions and balancing the conclusions, wrote,—"Surely our ancestors had no special reason for shame in a belief which had the universal sanction of their own and all former ages, which counted in its train philosophers as well as enthusiasts, which was graced by the learning of prelates as well as by the countenance of kings, which the law supported by its mandates, and the purest judges felt no compunctions in enforcing."

On September 9, 1710, Mrs. Howe's daughters, Mary and Abigail, the only survivors of the family, petitioned the General Court for indemnity, making the cash expenses of the imprisonment £20, yet "yt ye name may be Repayard, are content if your honors shall allow us twelve pounds." The sum was duly allowed and paid in 1712.

The First Court.—The first court provided for in this period was the Probate, which the Governor, by authority of His "Majesties Royal Charter"—authority more implied than expressed and at the time sharply questioned, but fully confirmed in 1760—established for the counties June 18, 1692. Their officers he appointed July 21st, following.

There were during this period eight judges, three of whom were Ipswich men: John Appleton, Thomas Berry and John Choate, and eight registrars, of whom four were Ipswich men: Daniel Rogers, Daniel Appleton, Samuel Rogers and Daniel Noyes.

Judge Appleton is sketched in Colonial Courts.

Thomas Berry was Hon. Thomas Berry, M.D. He was the fourth judge, and officiated from October 5, 1739, to September 14, 1756. He was born in Ipswich in 1695. His father was a graduate of Harvard College, and came to this town in 1687; his mother was Margaret Rogers, who was second daughter of President Rogers, and after the death of her husband about 1697, when Thomas was about three years old, married Hon. John Leverett, F.R.S., President of Harvard College. Thomas was a graduate of Harvard in the class of 1712. He married his cousin, Martha Rogers, second child and oldest daughter of Rev. John, of Ipswich, who was the eldest son of the present. She died August 25, 1727, and he married Elizabeth Turner, daughter of Major John, of Salem.

He rose to great distinction as medical doctor, and "he was eminently distinguished for his energy and activity in public affairs as well as his own." He was colonel of militia, representative to the General Court, justice of the Court of Common Pleas, judge of Probate, and many years of the Executive Council. In 1749 he was active in re-establishing the grammar-school. It is said he kept a chariot, with servants in livery, and made other display of wealth and rank. He died August 10, 1756, at the age of sixty-one years. The inscription on his tomb is,—

"Sic transit gloria mundi."

He lived at first near the site of the depot; afterwards at his farm, now the home for the town's poor. He was interred in Ipswich.

Hon. John Choate was son of Thomas, and born in Chebacco Parish, July, 1697. He was educated at the Grammar School. He married March 3, 1717, Miriam Pool, probably of Gloucester. He lost all his children during the prevalence of throat distemper in 1735. He was a colonel of militia; a representative to the General Court for fifteen years between 1730 and 1761, inclusive; justice of the Court of General Sessions from 1746 till his death; justice of the Court of Common Pleas, and for the last ten years chief justice, successor to Judge Berry; judge of Probate from September 14, 1756, to February 5, 1766. He was chairman of the committee that built the Choate Bridge, which, because of his enterprise, energy and usefulness to the town, was called by his name. He died February 5, 1766. By his will he

emancipated two slaves, and gave £12 for a communion service for the South Church, of which he was an honored and worthy member. His estate was valued at quite £3000. He was a man of sound judgment, enterprising, firm and energetic, and a faithful public officer.

Hon. Daniel Rogers was registrar from October 23, 1702, to January 9, 1723. He was second son of Rev. John Rogers, M.D., fifth President of Harvard College, and was born September 25, 1667, fitted for college under Master Thomas Andrew, of the Grammar School, and graduated at Harvard, 1686. He married Sarah Appleton, daughter of Captain John and sister of Hon. John. He was the fourth teacher of the Grammar School, and succeeded Master Andrew. He fitted fifteen young men for Harvard. He was feoffee of the Grammar School, town clerk, judge of the Court of Sessions of the Peace. He perished on the marshes, in a snow-storm, returning from Newbury, December 1, 1722.

Hon. Daniel Appleton was registrar from January 9, 1723, to August 26, 1762. He was born in Ipswich, August 8, 1692, the fourth child of Judge Appleton, and nephew of Daniel Rogers, registrar. He married Elizabeth Berry, daughter of Thomas Berry, of Boston and Ipswich, and sister of Dr. Thomas, who was judge of probate. He was a colonel, a feoffee of the grammar school, was named in the act of its corporation in 1756, was several years Representative to the General Court, and was justice of the Court of Sessions of the Peace. He died August 17, 1762.

Hon. Samuel Rogers was the sixth registrar, holding from August 26, 1762, to September 29, 1773. He was born in Ipswich, August 31, 1709, the youngest of ten children of Rev. John. He was nephew of Daniel, the fourth registrar, and grandson of President John, of Harvard. His mother was Martha Whittingham, great great-granddaughter of William, who married Katherine Calvin, sister of John the Reformer, and who was a Puritan refugee and compiler of the famous Geneva Bible.

He studied in the grammar school, and graduated at Harvard, 1725, when he was sixteen years old. He studied medicine and had a successful practice. He was town clerk, colonel of militia, justice of the Court of Sessions of the Peace, and Representative to the General Court. His death occurred December 21, 1772, at the age of sixty-three. He employed clerks; his office was well kept. His nephew, Hon. Daniel Rogers, who was son of Richard, a captain in the Revolutionary War, and also a justice of the Court of Sessions of the Peace, was acting registrar, during his last sickness and for some time after his death.

Daniel Noyes, Esq., was the eighth registrar, and occupied the office from September 29, 1775, to May 29, 1815. He was born in Newbury-Byfield, January 29, 1737, to Joseph and Elizabeth (Woodman) Noyes, and was fifth in lineal descent from Nicholas, a brother of Rev. James, Newbury's first minister. He graduated at Harvard in 1758, and adopted Ipswich as his home. He was master of the grammar school from 1762 to 1774 inclusive, and again in 1780 and 1781. He was a delegate to the Continental Congress, 1774–75; Representative to the General Court, 1775; was postmaster, 1775, succeeding Deacon James Foster, and the last under the province and the law of 1711; was on committees of correspondence and safety, during the Revolutionary period; was grantor of permits under the non-importation act; was feoffee of the grammar school; was delegate to the convention that ratified the State Constitution, with Michael Farley, John Choate and John Cogswell; and was justice of the peace and quorum in 1797. He is said to have been "methodical and accurate," and "the faithfulness and ability with which he discharged his various duties deservedly gained for him high and extensive respect." He died March 21, 1815.

Early Records.—The early probate records were kept by the registrar in his private custody, and usually in his dwelling-house, which was his office. After 1722, the office was in the court-house, Ipswich, but the records were kept at the registrar's home. This practice obtained through this period and practically till 1817.

Other Courts.—Other Province Courts were established by act of November 25, 1692,—*High Court of Chancery*, which did not receive regal sanction. *Superior Court of Judicature*, or as it was commonly called "Superior Court," having one chief-justice and four associate justices, taking the place of the Court of Assistants, and exercising appellate jurisdiction from Inferior Court, holding two sessions annually, one at Salem in November, and the other at Ipswich in May, a court which under the constitution became the Supreme Judicial. *Inferior Court of Common Pleas* for Essex County, having original jurisdiction in all actions of real title and all civil actions where the debt or damage was forty shillings or more, an appellate jurisdiction from justices of the peace in civil cases, and presided over by four justices, a court which, in 1859, became the Superior; *Court of Quarter Sessions of the Peace* which June 26, 1699, became *General Sessions of the Peace*, presided over by justices of the peace for the county, "or so many of them as are or shall be limited in commission of the peace," and having original jurisdiction in all cases not given to the Superior Court, and not triable before single justices with appellate jurisdiction from them. This court granted licenses and laid out highways, etc. In 1804 its criminal jurisdiction was transferred to the Court of Common Pleas, and in 1827 it became the County Commissioners' Court. Commissioners of justices of the peace were authorized at the same time.

The Courts of Common Pleas and General Sessions were held simultaneously at Ipswich in March, at

Newbury in September, and at Salem in December. Thus Ipswich during this period retained her courtly prestige, as shown by the frequency of court sessions and the supremacy of their jurisdiction, whereby she was a peer among her sister towns and executed a commanding influence.

Representative Men.—The representative men of the town for this period were among the ablest men of the times. We append as good a list as we are able to obtain: *Justices of the Superior Court:* Richard Saltonstall, twenty years from 1736, and Wait Winthrop twenty-five years from 1692, nine of which he was chief justice. *Special,* Dr. Thomas Berry and Ezekiel Cheever, the famous Ipswich Grammar-school master. *Justices of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas:* John Appleton, Dr. Thomas Berry, John Choate; *Special:* John Wainwright, David Appleton and Samuel Rogers. *Justices of the General Sessions:* Samuel Appleton, Daniel Eppes, Thomas Wade, John Wainwright, Francis Wainwright, Nehemiah Jewett, John Whipple, John Appleton, Ammi Ruhami Wise, Dr. Thomas Berry, Andrew Burley, Daniel Appleton, John Choate, Samuel Rogers, Joseph Appleton and John Baker. *Sheriffs:* Major Francis Wainwright, Major Daniel Denison, John Denison and Richard Saltonstall. *Councilors to the Governor:* John Appleton, twenty-six from 1698; Dr. Thomas Berry, seventeen years from 1735, and John Choate, five years from 1761. Simon Bradstreet, Richard Saltonstall, Ezekiel Cheever and John Wainwright. *Speakers of the House:* Nehemiah Jewett, three years, 1693, 1694 and 1701. *Clerk of the House:* John Wainwright eight years, beginning 1723. *Provincial Congressmen:* Michael Farley and Daniel Noyes. *Representatives:* Daniel Appleton, five years; John Appleton, one; Dr. Thomas Berry, three; Andrew Burley, two; John Caleffe, two; John Choate, sixteen; Stephen Choate, four; Thomas Choate, four; Francis Cogswell, three; Jonathan Cogswell, one; Benj. Crocker, three; John Crocker, one; Daniel Eppes, one; Samuel Eppes, one; Michael Farley, fourteen; Thomas Hart, two; Dummer Jewett, two; Nehemiah Jewett, sixteen; Nathaniel Knowlton, nine; Daniel Noyes, one; Abraham Perkins, one; Richard Rogers, three; Samuel Rogers, three; Nathaniel Rust, one; Simon Stacy, one; Daniel Staniford, three; William Story, two; Francis Wainwright, one; John Wainwright, nineteen; Nicholas Wallis, one; Ammi R. Wise, two; John Whipple, one. *Framers of the State Constitution:* Daniel Noyes, Dummer Jewett, Stephen Choate, John Crocker and Jonathan Cogswell.

Jail.—In 1751 the town voted to petition the Court of General Sessions "that the late prison be effectually repaired and established as heretofore as a prison and a house of correction." In 1760 a committee reported that the town petition the same court to have a house of correction built here, and to permit the dissolute poor of the town to be put in the jail till the house of correction shall be completed. In 1771 a new jail was built on the site of the old one.

It is needless to comment upon notable cases. Since the arch fiend lied to Eve, our first parents stole the forbidden fruit, and Cain killed his brother, neither era nor people has been exempt from crime; one age exemplifies another. Our forefathers had a specific mission, a glorious cause, and they were true to their calling. They wrought nobly and well; but to err is human; we embalm their purpose, their deeds, their renown; we bury their errors in oblivion.

The Constitutional Period.—The constitutional period opens with the adoption of the State Constitution in 1780. The representatives to 1817 were John Choate, five years; John Crocker, one; John Heard, one, Joseph Hodgkins, of Revolutionary fame, seven years; Dummer Jewett, one; John Manning, ten; John Patch, four; Joseph Swasey, another of Revolutionary fame, eight; John Treadwell, two; and Nathaniel Wade, our most noted officer in the Revolution, twenty-two. *Speakers of the House,*—Joseph Story, 1811–12, and Otis P. Lord, 1854. *President of the Senate,* Samuel Dana, 1811–13. *Justice of the Superior Court,* Otis P. Lord, 1859–75, and of the *Supreme Court,* from 1875 till his resignation in 1882.

County Buildings.—A new court-house was completed in the early part of 1795. It cost $7000 of which the town paid half. In 1794, May 1, a committee was empowered to confer with the county, and sell the old court-house. The new court-house served till 1855, when upon the removal of the courts that year, it was sold to the Methodist Society, removed and converted into a chapel. After the erection of their present beautiful and commodious church edifice, they sold it in 1862 to Mr. Curtis Damon, who removed it to Depot Square, where it now stands, and converted it into a store.

A new stone jail was built here by the county in 1809–10, which was occupied February 21st, of the latter year. It cost $27,000, and was a model for security and convenience. It stood on the premises of the present "County-House" and "Hospital," as they are called, and served its purpose well till 1866, when it was sold to the Eastern Railroad Company, who used it to arch a roadway just east of the Merrimac River bridge, at Newburyport. The "County-House," or house of correction, was occupied in 1828, when the old one, at Norton's Bridge, where Messrs. Stackpole's soap-manufactory stands, was discontinued. The "Hospital," or the receptacle for the chronic insane was erected about 1841 or 1842. Some two or three years ago in connection with the reformatory, a workshop, one hundred by thirty feet, was erected.

The first probate repository, as such, was occupied December 15, 1817. It was built of brick and fireproof, forty feet long, twenty-eight wide and one

story high, and cost $3700. During the early part of this period the records were kept in the registrar's private dwelling, while his office was in the new court-house. From 1795 to 1815 the repository was also in the court-house. At the latter date both the records and the office retired to the dwelling of Nathaniel Lord, the registrar, to come forth in 1817 to occupy the safe repository till 1852 when by order of the county commissioners they were removed to Salem. The building is now the property of the Odd Fellows, and contains a drug-store, the post-office and the Odd Fellows' Hall in an added story.

Two of the registrars of this period have been Ipswich men,—Nathaniel Lord, 3d, and his son George Robert, whose biographical sketches close this chapter.

The only court held here now is trial-justice Bell's. The attorneys and counselors-at-law are Hon. Charles A. Sayward, Edward P. Kimball, Esq., John R. Baker, Esq., James Brown Lord, Esq., who are natives here and Hon. George Haskell, is a native of Newburyport.

This decadence is entirely attributable to the country's growth in population, the consequent extension of business and change of business centres.

Biographical.—Nathaniel Lord, 3d, was the ninth registrar, and his service covered a period from May 29, 1815, to June 12, 1851. He fitted for college with Daniel Dana, D.D., son of Rev. Joseph, his pastor, and he graduated at Harvard in 1798. His graduation exercise was a poem, and the subject, "Astronomy." In his class were Dr. Channing, Judges Story and Fay, Dr. Tuckerman and Rev. Prof. Emerson, who may be considered the first to devise and put in practice a curriculum of study and discipline especially designed for and adapted to female education and culture.

He married, at Ipswich, Eunice Kimball, daughter of Jeremiah and Lois-Choate Kimball. His children were Nathaniel James, born October 28, 1805; Mary, born July 17, 1807, died March 11, 1846; Lois Choate, born July 9, 1810; Otis Phillips, born July 11, 1812; Isaac, born July 2, 1814, died April 1, 1816; George Robert, born December 16, 1817,—three of whom were lawyers, of whom one was an eminent judge. His wife died April 9, 1837, and he married, September 6, 1838, Mary Holt Adams, daughter of John Adams, Esq., of Andover.

Mr. Lord was scholarly; he never relinquished the study of the classics. He had the habit of a student; he was mathematically exact, careful in verbal distinctions; also methodical and accurate; and when in Judge White's tenure of office it was determined to improve the old methods, to multiply new and remodel old forms, Mr. Lord's taste, judgment and learning were requisite, and the present practice of the Court attests his good sense and foresight.

Politically, Mr. Lord was a Conservative Whig, and when, in the course of human events, the politics of the appointing power changed, and democracy rules the registrar must be a Democrat.

He had no taste for public life. He delivered a Fourth-of-July oration when a young man; welcomed General Lafayette to Ipswich in 1824; presided at the town's bi-centennial celebration in 1834; he was a justice of the peace and quorum; was one year, 1823, selectman and several years on the school board.

He fell from his chair, at home, and died October 16, 1852. His residence was on High Street; his estate is now known as the "Lord Mansion." The house was built in 1728 by Rev. Nathaniel Rogers.

George Robert Lord, Esq., was the eleventh registrar. He is a son of the last mentioned registrar, and was born as there stated. He was registrar from February 14, 1853, to February 27, 1855, soon after the advent of the American, or Know-Nothing, party to power. He is an excellent penman and exemplary recorder. He has spent most of his life in the service of the courts. He is employed now where he has for years been—in the office of the Clerk of Courts.

CHAPTER XLVII.

IPSWICH.—(*Continued*).

BUSINESS.

The early and leading industries of the town were farming, grazing and fishing. The various trades met, with facility and skill, the demand of home consumption, furnishing the house, and the farm, equipping the mariner and manufacturing the clothing.

Farming.—This may be said to have been the leading industry, the first requisite of which is the soil. The underlying rock of the town, and, of the county, is syenite, or hornblendic granite, an excellent building and flagging stone that has made Cape Ann famous, but is not quarried here. The soil above is light, consisting of gravel, sand, clay, and the product of organic decay, not mixed in a favorable proportion to make a strong, productive land. The soil requires as constant care and judicious handling and fertilizing as the crops need cultivation. The best soil is, of course, between the hills, and it rewards the husbandman as a garden. The hill-sides and plains, of which there are many, are not poor, but are much worn in the lapse of two hundred and fifty years. They were sought and valued by our ancestors. Well might the *Wonder-working Providence* remark: "They have very good land for husbandry, where rocks hinder not the course of the plow." This land was adapted to the growth of the cereals, such as corn, oats, barley, rye, wheat and flax. "The potato was cultivated," says Felt, "in 1733, but was not much used. It was a delicacy, accompanying a roast-beef

dinner and unusual occasions; the turnip, then raised in abundance, took its place on all common occasions." Corn and rye were the principal bread-stuff of our sires. Barley made a nutritive food, a palatable coffee, and a healthful beer; flax was easily converted into linen, which supplied various needs of the household; and hemp, which had been grown by the Indians, was cultivated and converted into clothing and other uses. Their pasturage, which consisted of more than seven thousand five hundred acres, was good. The soil was new and feed abundant, and the numerous large hills were peculiarly serviceable; the best beef could be produced simply at the expense of the herdsman's time. The *Wonder-Working Providence* tells us, "the Lord hath been pleased to increase them in Corne and Cattell of late [1650]; insomuch that they have many hundred quarters to spare yearly, and feed, at the latter end of summer, the Town of *Boston* with good beefe."

The Marshes.—The salt marshes and fresh meadows were an important factor in the agricultural economy. There are more than 3300 acres of the former and some 500 acres of the latter. In the early years of the town these were the only sources of food for the cattle in winter. The grass of either is not very valuable; but when properly mixed and fed out with care it is fairly relished and served particularly well to winter young stock. The fresh meadows have served largely for fuel, furnishing an incipient coal called *peat*. This is an accumulation of half-decomposed vegetable substance formed under water, without pressure, and contains fifty or more *per centum* of carbon. It began to be used at a very early period; so long since was it dug, that some of the ditches thus made had, fifty years ago, grown over and become sufficiently solid to allow the picking of cranberries growing thereon. A hundred and twenty-four years ago it was in great demand. The land sold from $75 to $100 per acre, or in family yearly supplies, at about two dollars per square rod. Coal began to be used about 1830, and has now supplanted peat except in a few instances, in the rural districts, where the families own peat meadow.

Where this formation of vegetable matter has progressed subject to atmospheric action, *muck* has been formed, which has been much used as a fertilizer.

Some of these meadows are more or less valuable for the production of cranberries, yielding from a few bushels to forty or fifty per acre. The berry grows without cultivation, and with little attention.

Wood and Timber.—The woodlands have been very productive; oak and pine wood and timber being the staples. Since the introduction of coal, wood-fuel has fallen in price nearly half; and the price of timber has been greatly diminished since the easy transportation of timber and lumber, by rail from the North and the East. Timber and wood merchants, with heavy teams of oxen or horses, used to do a profitable business, but such teams now are not seen.

The Cultivation.—There are besides the above, probably three thousand acres now under cultivation. The leading productions are fruit, vegetables, corn and milk. Much attention late years has been given to garden productions, especially early vegetables. Hay has been grown with much care, especially the so-called English hay, since its introduction at the first, by obtaining the seed from England. "Grayne seed,"—wheat, rye and barley,—was introduced from England in 1629, with which probably, or soon after, came our fine, English grass-seed. In 1666 those who had taken ground of the town, and agreed to sow four bushels of good English grass-seed, were called to an account for their neglect to do so. In 1694, for the payment of taxes, the town made the following prices: barley, barley-malt and rye, four shillings per bushel; wheat, six shillings; Indian corn, three shillings; and oats, two shillings.

Hay.—Hay merchants from fifty to a hundred years ago made their toil remunerative by purchasing hereabouts and selling in the Salem and Boston markets. They employed teams of from four to six horses, and carried from four to six tons to a load. Hay is now pressed in the East and elsewhere, put up in bales and transported by rail, so that the trade in hay is hardly more than local.

Berries.—The prolific huckleberry and blueberry, the *attatash* of the Indians, demands a notice. It is a delicious little berry, and by its fine palatable quality has ingratiated itself into public favor, and the market demands it. In ripens in July and August, during the long school vacation, and many a family of children earns from twenty to thirty dollars in a season,—an essential help to the poor, and a profitable recreation for the scholars. A hill in the Linebrook District, written "Hurttlebery Hill" two hundred years ago, is now visited from the towns about us, by huckleberry-parties yearly, so plentiful the berry still continues. One of the many market-men hereabouts sold last year nearly three hundred bushels of them.

Fruits.—Apples and pears were introduced from the mother-country. The houses of the settlers were surrounded by "pleasant gardens and orchards," and to-day if you find, in the woods or a pasture, an old cellar that long since was abandoned, there you are likely to find the old wall that enclosed its orchards, and some of the old, old trees. So valuable were the orchards to our ancestors, so late even as a century ago, that the father divided his orchard, by will, among his children, devising or bequeathing certain trees to particular children, while one child only was to possess the land. During the last fifty years orchards have been cultivated with profit in producing the choicest varieties of apples and pears.

Tobacco.—Our early ancestors derived much profit in the cultivation of tobacco. In the Virginia Colony, it was a source of large revenue. Our Legislature frowned upon it as hurtful, and in 1634 attached a fine of 2*s.* 6*d.* to every occasion of its public use, and

in 1635 prohibited traffic in it after September. But in 1682 tobacco-yards were common, and its cultivation was continued for a century, at least. Families had their gardens of "the weed," and their peculiar "mode of twisting it and curing it, with molasses and rum, to make it palatable."

Sumach and sassafras were exported, the former as a dye-stuff, the latter for medicine.

STATISTICS.—The United States Census of 1880 reported 153 farms, 357 persons engaged in farming pursuits, of whom 4 were females, a production of 129,692 gallons of milk, 4806 tons of hay, 43,482 pounds of butter, 375 pounds of cheese, 28,511 dozen of eggs, 17,940 bushels of potatoes on 211 acres of land and 11,355 bushels of corn on 266 acres of land, having a total value of $98,413.

From the latest official statistics of the State we make the following interesting comparison with the State statistics of 1875.

Farms and Appurtenances	1875.	1885.
No. of Farms	450	216
Value of Land	$679,479	$569,646
Value of Buildings	305,790	486,262
Value of Fruit-trees	52,296	51,656
Value of Domestic Animals	90,449	105,738
Value of Agricultural Implements	56,237	48,513
Total value	$1,184,251	$1,261,815
Value of Products.		
Butter	$18,179	$12,842
Milk	35,276	52,075
Corn, Indian	3,310	6,783
Potatoes	14,213	10,815
Vegetables	2,908	9,833
Eggs	6,819	12,453
Apples	17,024	6,123
Hay	101,880	77,328
Other products	44,000	55,653
Total	$243,609	$243,905

The selectmen for 1886 report 495 horses, 845 cows, 312 other neat cattle, 162 sheep, and 744 dwelling-houses.

This tabulated statement shows a decrease in the value of farm lands, fruit-trees, and implements, and of butter, potatoes, apples, and hay; and an increase in the value of buildings and animals, and of corn, milk, eggs and vegetables, clearly setting up in figures the wise departure from the olden time, heavy farming to the easy, more agreeable and profitable traffic in milk and vegetable products. The alluvial river-borders and the mountain districts, however distant, may furnish us with potatoes, and hay, and butter, and cheese; but the morning's milk, fresh eggs and green stuffs from the garden must be produced nearer the place of sale.

Our Essex County Agricultural Society has done a great good in years past, in stimulating a healthful emulation among our farmers by premiums for best farms, fruits, grass and methods; but a greater practical good, in later years, has been done by our miniature or local societies, where the farmers of the town met for practical discussion upon live topics of local interest. This makes a learned, intelligent, practical, diligent, progressive farmer, and gives us the best results with less labor and expense. So we compliment the Ipswich Farmers' Club and the "Ipswich Fruit-Growers' Protective Association."

Fisheries.—There is no doubt that a fishing-station had existed here for a number of years before March, 1633. Gorges and his company had stations all along this coast. Jeffrey, or Burslim, or both managed here. The place was excellent in two respects: The Neck furnished the wharfage, and Ipswich and Plum-Island Rivers, with Plum-Island as a breakwater, the harbor; the shallow water and the high bar forming no impediment to the small crafts or boats then in use. Second, the supply of fish along the shore and in the rivers was abundant. Cod and sturgeon and bass then belonged to our shores and streams. The fishery increased and became lucrative. The town took measures to make the business inviting. In 1641 the fishermen could enclose their fishing-stages, and each crew could plant an acre of ground. In 1670 they could take wood from the common for needed buildings and for fuel, and each crew could feed a cow upon the common. In 1696 Jeffrey's Neck was well covered with fish-flakes on the south side. A committee was chosen to regulate the flakes, which were "to run up and down the hill," so that one party might not interfere with or hinder another. That year there seems to have been an impetus given the business from the fact, that "new flakes" were set up. These were apparently to invite and accommodate new parties "to carry on the fishing design." At this time there was a community of some seven or eight hundred persons doing, in connection with other industries and trades, a large and prosperous business, and still, wise and generous, holding out inducements and inviting co-operation. The business grew, and with it grew its hazards, perils, sorrows, losses; and it was necessary to hedge it in with safeguards and positive law. Accordingly, in 1729, the town provided that owners of vessels should register their names and the names of the crew with the clerk, or forfeit 20*s.* for each and every name omitted. But with all the liberality of accommodation and assistance, the industry waned; better natural facilities led the fishermen away, and only six schooners remained to Ipswich in 1758. From that time Ipswich managed to retain the remnant, so that in "1797 a few vessels were employed in the fishery."

STREAM FISHERIES.—The catches of sturgeon, blue-fish, shad and alewives were of considerable importance in the early days. They were a revenue to the town, of some commercial importance in trade with the West Indies, and "last though perhaps not least" they were of much value to the poorer families. Their importance has been considered so great, that the Legislature has, again and again, been petitioned for fishways by the dams of the manufactories. The

petition of May 25, 1768, says: The Ipswich River has been reported "from age to age one of the best fish streams, particularly for shad, bass and alewives, in the county if not in the country." Within fifty years, several barrels of alewives have been taken, in a season, from a single brook. These fish are now little if at all known in our streams.

Clam-digging, also, has, from the first, been of considerable importance. Measures were early taken to protect the flats. Fishermen and the poor, in early years, had special privileges to them. In 1789 a thousand barrels were dug. They sold for five or six dollars per barrel, and were much used for bait. It is a good paying industry now, the product finding a ready sale in the city markets, and furnishing a dainty relish for poor and rich alike. The Ipswich clams rank in celebrity with the Providence River or Norfolk oyster. Even the shells pulverized find a ready sale, in the country, among poulterers far and near. Shore and stream fishing is all that is left to us now. The dory, the seine and the fork are the chief implements of the industry. In 1875 the capital employed was nine thousand dollars, and the value of fish caught was twenty thousand nine hundred and forty-eight dollars; while in 1885 the capital was only two thousand two hundred dollars, yet the value of the fish was twenty-one thousand seven hundred and eighty-four dollars.

COMMERCE.—*The Wonder-Working Providence* says, that Ipswich, in 1650, "was a very good Haven Town, yet a little barr'd up at the mouth of the River. Some merchants are here." The maritime enterprise of the town long kept up her merchant service, though compared with Boston, it was small. There is no source of information on this topic; the custom-house files are barred by law; and inferences only are left. Ipswich was a port of entry as early as June 28, 1701–2. The port establishments of 1692–93 did not receive regal sanction. The building of wharves began 1641, when William Paine had one for a warehouse. A wharf was built in each of the following years, 1660, '62 and '68. Again in each of these years a wharf was built, 1682, '85, '86, '87 and '93. In 1730 two wharves were built. In 1732 Joseph Manning built one and the town agreed to have one, as a landing-place at six pence a load. In 1750 Daniel and Thomas Staniford were granted liberty for wharfage for a warehouse. In 1756 William Dodge had one, and in 1764 Nathaniel Farley another. The coasting business is said to have begun about 1768. Dr. Morse's *Gazetteer* says that Ipswich, in 1779, "employed few vessels in the fisheries, and a few traded in the West Indies." That year thirteen vessels were enrolled at the Ipswich Custom-House and registered at four hundred and fifty tons. In 1807 twenty-three vessels were enrolled with thirteen hundred and sixty-two tons; in 1817 twelve vessels and seventeen hundred and forty tons; in 1827 twenty-five vessels and thirty-two hundred and seventy-three tons; in 1832 twenty-three vessels and twenty-six hundred and nineteen tons. During the first quarter of this century, Robert Farley built a vessel of three hundred tons, which was about three times the average size. At present there are no vessels belonging to Ipswich enrolled at the custom-house, which compasses all of five tons or more in the district. There are two or three coalers, which supply the coal-wharves yearly with ten thousand tons of the "diamonds," and an occasional sloop, bringing stone for building purposes; but they are owned elsewhere. There is, however, Captain N. Burnham's fine excursion steamer "Carlotta," which, during the summer season, runs her regular trips to the Island, besides making occasional trips to points of interest along the coast. Capt. Moses Treadwell, I am told, owned the last vessel belonging here; and that she lay neglected, for many years in "The Cove," and went to pieces before 1824.

This was made a national customs collection district by act of Congress approved May 7, 1796. By this act a collector of customs was authorized, and the surveyorship formerly existing and held by Jeremiah Staniford was abolished. The first collector of customs was Asa Andrews. The letter informing him of his appointment was dated June 9, 1796. His immediate successor, Timothy Souther, received notice of his appointment, by a letter dated July 22, 1829. Mr. Souther was succeeded by Asahel Wildes, August 2, 1840, who continued in office to and including July 20, 1844, when the office was merged in the Newburyport office, and Essex, which had been a part of the Ipswich District, was joined to Gloucester, according to an act of Congress approved June 15, 1844. At this time Daniel L. Wilcomb was inspector and Issachar Burnham occasional inspector, each at three dollars a day when employed. Daniel Lakeman was revenue boatman, at one dollar a day when employed. Other inspectors have been Reuben Daniels, Philip E. Clarke, James W. Bond. Mr. Andrews was born in June, 1762, and he died January 13, 1856, in his ninety-fourth year. He held the office of collector about thirty-three years. He was a very able man and had honorable mention as candidate for Congress. He had a son who graduated at Harvard, at the age of eighteen years, and was rector at Binghamton, N. Y., for fifteen years.

MECHANICS AND MANUFACTURES.

TRADES.—Herein particularly old Mother Necessity exhibits her large family of inventions. The people of those early days did not live to eat so much as eat to live. Every day's labor, on the whole, must be a positive advance. We of to-day have abundance out of an abundance by means abundant; they lived frugally and healthfully, cheerfully and hopefully, by a poverty of means; and however unpolished and rude may have been the results of their workmanship, it served their purpose, advanced thir State, and we

must accord their meed of praise. In 1638 Thomas Emerson was a baker. Thomas Bridan was granted six acres of land, on which to plant osiers, or willows, for basket-making, in 1639. Mr. Samuel Appleton had a malt-house in 1642. The "mault-kills" may cut walnut trees for drying malt, in 1669; and James Burnam was granted land for a malt-house in 1696; "John Low's," then discontinued, having been beneficial to the neighborhood." John Paine was allowed a brewery and warehouse in 1663, but there has been none since 1800. Andrew Peters might cut trees for a cider-mill in 1668. A distillery for the manufacture of rum from molasses was set up about 1750; the manufacture ceased in 1830. There were two smiths in 1667. In 1682 Thomas Day had a place granted for a brickyard, and Andrew Burley burned bricks on Jeffrey's Neck in 1687. Thomas Howlett was carpenter in 1633; Samuel Boreman, cooper in 1639; William Bulkley, cordwainer in 1664; Nathaniel Bishop, currier in 1638; and Henry Keerle was admitted to citizenship and allowed to set up the trade of currier in 1665. John Brown, Jr., was glazier in 1664; Nathaniel Rust, glover in 1690; William Fuller, gunsmith in 1635; Samuel Wood, hatter in 1692; Simon Tomson, ropemaker in 1648; Moses Pingrey may set up salt-pans and works in 1651, and in 1669 the town voted £8 to James Hudson to set up salt-works. In 1642 each town was to have a house for the manufacture of saltpetre. Henry Russell, of Ipswich, and Richard Woodey, of Boston, were preparing for the manufacture of saltpetre and gunpowder in 1666; and in 1667 the town ordered that each family should provide a hogshead of earth as a urinal, auxiliary to the manufacture of gunpowder. Nathaniel Brown had a grant of land, whereon to make ashes and soap. In 1691 there was an old "sope-house." John Annable was a tailor in 1647; Nicholas Easton was a tanner in 1634; Thomas Clarke, in 1641; Ens. Thomas Hart, in 1700; and Thomas Brown's son, in 1734. In 1832 the tanneries employed ten men, at $1.20 per day, used ninety cords of bark, converted 10,000 hides into leather, which was sold in the county for $25,250. James How was a weaver in 1642, and John Denison in 1647. Richard Kimball, Jr., was a wheelwright in 1638; Thomas Fuller had land for a wheelwright-shop in 1685; in 1671 Freegrace Norton could cut timber for "cogs and rounds and starts for the mill;" Deacon Pingrey built a small lighter; and, in 1691, "Jacob Foster could cut timber for pails, measures, &c." Thus the records record, but of course there may have been other names at earlier dates.

Grist-Mill Machinery.—The first man to make use of machinery was Richard Saltonstall, and, we think, *Sir* Richard. Richard Saltonstall was a man of liberal, advanced and pronounced ideas. He openly and fearlessly denounced the African slave-trade. This man set up a grist-mill in 1635, on the site of Mr. Farley's stone mill. Jonathan Wade was allowed to take timber for a wind-mill, which was built and gave name to the hill where it stood. This kind of motive power was not much resorted to in Ipswich, because of the abundant water-power. Thomas Bishop and Robert Lord might erect a grist-mill, in 1666. In 1671 the town declare one corn-mill insufficient for their use, and as if there were but one in town, a complaint was made against Mr. Saltonstall, with a request that he erect another. In 1686–87 Sergt. Nicholas Wallis might dam the river, not exceeding three feet, and erect mills for the town's use. In 1687 Nehemiah Jewett might erect a mill on Egypt River. In 1691–92 Thomas Boreman desired to erect a tide grist-mill, on Labor-in-vain Creek. In 1695–96 Abraham Tilton, Jr., and Edmund and Anthony Potter asked that they might erect a mill on Mile Brook. In 1696–97 John Adams, Sr. and Jr., and Michael Farley might dam the river, against Adams' land, and erect corn and fulling-mills.

Saw-Mills.—There seems to have been no early saw-mills on the territory of the present Ipswich, Several were at Chebacco. In 1656 sawyers might fell trees in the woods three and a half miles or more from the meeting-house, if they would allow the town one-fifteenth and charge the inhabitants no more than four *per centum*.

Fulling-Mills.—The first fulling-mill seems to have been built about 1675; another was attempted in 1676, on Egypt river, but was not completed in the prescribed three years, and the dam was afterwards removed. Joseph Caleffe might erect one "where it will not prejudice others," if he will full for the town's people "for their pay sooner than for other 'towns' men for money," in 1692. Joseph Caleffe and Thomas and Anthony Potter, in 1692–93, might erect one on Mile Brook. These were mills that received the cloth woven at home and cleansed, scoured and pressed it,—that removed the dirt and grease, and made the material more compact, firmer and stronger, with a soft, glossy nap.

Cloth.—In 1641 children and servants were to be taught the manufacture of cloth from wild hemp, with which the country abounded. In 1645, wool was scarce, and in 1654 no sheep might be transported, and none killed under two years of age. In 1656 the town was divided into classes of five, six and ten, and taught the art of spinning. One person shall spin three pounds of linen, cotton, wool, monthly, for thirty weeks each year, or forfeit twelve pence per month, for each pound short. Half and quarter spinners were required to do the same proportionally. Samuel Stacy was clothier in 1727. Those were the days of the "independent farmer." All his needs were supplied by his skill or care. Even his clothes grew on his own field in the azure-hued flax or the silvery fleece of his sheep. His family converted these into fine, cool thread, or soft, warm yarn, and these latter they wove into cloth from which they made his and his family's garments. Our

childhood's lips delighted to cord with the hum of the spinning-wheel. We have a vivid remembrance of the little wheel for linen and the big wheel for wool, but the clatter of the loom, that so deftly arranged the warp and woof was a home-thrumming hardly so late as our day. The weaver's thrums are now supplanted by a noisy, profitless thrumming of the piano.

Woolen-Mill—Dr. John Manning, in 1792, was granted a lot of land, fifty by thirty feet, at the northwest corner of Choate Bridge, for a woolen factory. In 1794 he had a further grant for the same purpose, and July 8, 1795, a full and complete title was given. The mill went into operation in 1794, and manufactured cloths and blankets. The enterprise was not a success, and the business was closed in 1800. The site was afterwards occupied by "Coburn's Block," the structure now there is called "Caldwell's Block."

Lace Manufacture.—This product was made in families. The manufacture probably had a small beginning,—was confined to a few families, but grew till "almost every family" was engaged in it. It particularly suited the employment of women and children, for profit and leisure. "The lace was formed," says Mr. Felt, "on a lap-pillow, which had a piece of parchment round it with the particular figure, represented by pins stuck up straight, around which the work was done and the lace wrought." Black and white laces, in silk and thread, and of all widths and qualities, were made. It was considerably exported in 1797. In 1790 nearly forty-two thousand yards were made, and the business was then rather increasing. It continued till about 1821 or '22, when a Boston lace company removed to this town and set up their machinery. They located on South Main Street, near the Foot-bridge, and February 4, 1824, were incorporated as the "Boston and Ipswich Lace Company." Joseph Farley, William H. Sumner, Augustine Heard and George W. Heard, were the proprietors; and could hold real estate to the value of fifty thousand dollars, and personal to the value of one hundred thousand dollars, and could manufacture "lace and other articles made of linen, silk, cotton and woolen material." The company, of course, achieved success for a number of years; but the deepest streams are not always smooth. It is said the company "split," and occasioned the formation of another. "Thomas Manning, Ammi Smith, John Clark, their associates, successors and assigns, were incorporated the "New England Lace Company," January 17, 1827, and could hold thirty thousand dollars in real estate, and fifty thousand dollars in personal. The factory was located on High Street, on the site of Mr. Joseph Ross' residence. In some way, by English competition or interference, the business became unprofitable, and the factories closed,—the former in 1828, and the latter soon after 1833.

Cotton Manufacture.—Joseph Farley had leave, June 19, 1827, to close a town way, then used as a watering-place, between the lace-factory and his saw-mill, that he might construct a new dam and erect a factory in the place of the saw-mill. In due time the preparation was completed, and the factory was built of stone in 1828 and '29. Augustine Heard, Joseph Farley and George W. Heard, were incorporated the "Ipswich Manufacturing Company," June 11, 1828, with a capital of fifty thousand dollars in real, and one hundred thousand dollars in personal estate, for manufacturing from cotton and woolen materials. The manufacture was begun in 1830. James H. Oliver, of Boston, was the treasurer, and in 1834 Otis Holmes was superintendent. Samuel Davis was overseer of carding, Barnum Leonard of spinning, Calvin Locke of weaving. Joseph Farley, Jr., was clerk and paymaster, and Joseph Kendall was master-mechanic. "The machinery of the mill," says a correspondent of the *American Journal of Fabrics*, "consisted of one conical willow for cleaning the cotton; one picker twenty-four inches wide, with two beaters, without lapper; fourteen breaker and fourteen finisher cards, eighteen inches wide, with wooden cylinders, thirty-six inches in diameter; four drawing frames with three heads each; four Taunton tube speeders. The most of the warp-spinning were the English live spindle frames,—part of them had circular and some of them straight fronts. The flyers were screwed to the top of the spindles, and must be unscrewed at each doffing. There were two dead spindle frames in the room, built by a Mr. Derby, of Exeter, N. H. Two cradle warpers, two dressers, two pairs of hand mules, sixty Scotch looms, with the crank motion or sweep outside of the ends; speed of the looms one hundred and twenty per minute, speed of the front rollers on the live spindle running fifty per minute, speed of the card cylinders one hundred and twenty. The cotton was weighed and spread on a cloth, about ten feet long by eighteen inches wide, was rolled on a stick, placed on the breaker card, the cloth dropping slowly to the floor, while the cotton, as it was carded, passed on to a light drum thirty inches in diameter, by twenty inches wide. The thickness of one lap was the product of one weighing. The lap was folded when taken from the drum and placed in a box back of the finisher-card, and then fed to the card. The mill ran nearly fourteen hours per day to ten hours of the present time; but the speed of the spinning has been increased about forty turns of the front roller, and looms in many places are now running from one hundred and sixty to one hundred and eighty picks per minute on similar numbers of yarn. In place of card cylinders, eighteen inches wide by thirty-six inches in diameter, may be seen the colossal English carding engine, forty-two by sixty; but cards thirty-six by thirty-six and forty-two by forty-eight inches are generally in use in this country. The doublings of this mill were very limited, and were confined to the drawing. The first head doubled four to one, the

second head the same and the third head two to one, equal to sixty-four doublings. (A mill in Lowell to-day on about the same number of yarn doubled twenty-seven thousand six hundred and forty-eight times.") The cloth they made sold for nine and one-half and ten cents per yard ; the same quality to-day would bring only three and one-half and four cents. Notwithstanding this seeming disparity, the mill was a peer in its day, and was run for many years with a fair degree of success. It was an exponent of the energy and enterprise mainly of Captain Joseph Farley.

The *Census* of 1880 reported three clothing, hosiery, etc., manufactories, employing 452 operatives, 210 males, 241 females, and one child, at a yearly pay of $147,466, and a capital of $254,500, and producing goods valued at $441,312 from stock valued at $204,890 ; two boot and shoe shops, employing 49 persons, 35 males and 14 males, and a capital of $21,000, and producing goods valued at $77,900 ; one box factory, employing eight men and a capital of $25,000, and yielding products valued at $12,000 ; and one brickyard, employing 12 men and a capital of $5000, and producing bricks worth $3000. No woven fabrics were reported. None are reported in the latest official returns. The principal manufactures, in the order of their value, are knit goods (chiefly hosiery), boots and shoes, buildings, isinglass, butchering, carriages and wagons, clothing, bread and pastry. The manufactories use five steam engines, of three hundred and fifty-five actual horse-power; nine water-wheels of 162 nominal horse-power. Of the 631 employes in 1875, 444 were males and 187 were females, of whom six males and five females were under fifteen years of age. Of the nine hundred employees in 1885, 600 worked by the piece and 300 by the day. This tabulation is self-explaining :

Items.	1875.	1885.
No. of manufactories	73	51
Employes	631	896
Wages for the year	$267,216	$264,551
Capital invested	423,004	1,107,203
Value of raw material	435,730	512,473
Goods made	858,532	1,018,532

This table shows a decrease in the number of manfactories of more than thirty *per centum* in ten years. The disparity is due to various causes, but chiefly, probably to the concentration of capital. It shows, on the other hand, a greater number of employes by more than forty-two *per centum ;* but though they do, per capita, the same amount of work, their *per-capita* pay is much less. To be definitely instructed herein, however, would require a complete statement, but the general showing of growing industries, employing a greater number of persons at fair remuneration is interesting and gratifying.

Money.—For about twenty years the town had no money. Trade was carried on mainly by way of barter. The medium of exchange was musket-bullets, wampum and latterly some English coins. In 1652 silver was coined in Boston. Rogues soon began to clip and counterfeit the pieces, which occasioned the appointments of "searchers of coins." Massachusetts coined copper, silver and gold from 1786 to 1789, and the United States began to coin them in 1793 and 1794. Paper money was issued as early as 1690, and has continued meanwhile. The bills at first were expedient to meet the great expense of the government in prosecuting the wars and other necessary expenses. Though serviceable at first, they proved hurtful ultimately. The people lost confidence in government paper, and great and wide-spread distress ensued. In 1781 seventy-five dollars in paper would only equal one in silver. In 1794 a tax of £1 meant £1 17*s.* 6*d.*, in new emission, and 12*s.* 6*d.* in hard money. In this century, besides the national coinage, a system of State banking obtained till the war of the Rebellion. The banks facilitated local exchange. Their service was circumscribed, because their ability was seldom known beyond their respective precincts. In many instances, on the other hand, they continued to serve for the same reason.

An institution of this kind was chartered here March 25, 1833, when Thomas Manning, Michael Brown, Ephraim F. Miller, Charles Kimball, Samuel N. Baker, and Samuel S. Farrington became "the president, directors and company of the Ipswich Bank," to continue till October 1, 1851. The capital was one hundred thousand dollars. It continued a number of years with indifferent success. The banking-house stood nearly opposite the present new Savings Bank building.

"Joseph Ross, Aaron Cogswell, Frederick Willcomb and their associates and successors" were incorporated March 20, 1869, the "Ipswich Savings Bank." It began business in the following year, and has proved very opportune and serviceable. Theo. F. Cogswell is the clerk and the treasurer.

BENEFACTIONS AND CHARITIES.

The Poor.—"The poor ye have always with you," said the Greatest of earth ; and in accordance with the suggestion, the benefactions and amenities of home and neighborhood are commended by the wise and good always and everywhere. "Liberality of disposition and conduct," says Cogan, "give the highest zest and relish to social intercourse." To tithe our incomes, and give as God has prospered us, is a fundamental law of all honest living. The man who does not plan and work with both heart and head is likely to learn in the end that he has ignored the most ennobling zest of labor, and the most ennobling joy of life. Beneficence and charity are business, and a part of business is beneficence and charity. Our ancestors early provided for the needy. There was one such in 1666. Twelve years later there was one, —probably others. In 1688 the bill for doctoring the poor was £2. 1*s.* In 1701–02, was voted some "convenient building for the entertainment of the widow

Dent, or any of the poor of the town." In 1717 a convenient house for the poor was to be built of logs. Its length was forty feet, width sixteen, stud six and its roof "flat as may be suitable." In 1738 the town paid £400 for the poor. In 1740 the poor were let out. In 1742 a hundred bushels of corn were purchased to be distributed among the poor, and there was talk of building a "work-house." In 1760 there was voted £66. 13*s*. 4*d*. to purchase a house for two men who had become reduced to poverty. In 1784 it was voted to sell the old almshouse,—that stood near the county-house, and which in 1770 was much decayed,—for the most it would bring. The same year they talked of erecting an almshouse, and the next year instructed a committee to furnish one. In 1786 the cost of the poor was £300, and in 1792 it was more than £500. In 1795 John Harris' farm was purchased for a poor-farm, for £250. In 1796 the whole number of the poor was twenty-eight, twenty of whom were supplied in part. The present poor-farm, formerly the estate of Hon. Thomas Berry, M. D., was purchased April 10, 1818, of Billy Emerson, of Topsfield, three hundred and twenty-one acres for $9,500. There are fifty acres of marsh. The soil is excellent for hay and grain, yielding one hundred and fifty tons of the former, and six hundred bushels of the latter in a year. The old farm was sold in 1819, and the proceeds were expended in improvements upon the new farm. The present almshouse of brick was built in 1838 or '39.

The town September 3, 1766, instructed Captain Farley, the representative, "to oppose paying money out of the treasury to relieve the suffering occasioned by the riot of the stamp-act, but to move that the Governor call for subscriptions as in case of fire." Such plan was adopted, and Ipswich promptly voted to raise by subscription £100. To the sufferers by fire at Portsmouth in 1803, she gave $100; and to similar sufferers at Newburyport in 1811, she gave $1.000. In 1825 she contributed $200 for the Bunker Hill monument.

As early as about 1640, subscriptions from the province towns were requested in aid of Harvard College. The general court advised liberal contributions. Deputies and elders were enlisted in the cause; grain or money, or both would be gladly received. The rates for Ipswich in 1664–65 were £7. 6*s*. 7*d*., and in 1681 her contribution in grain was valued at £19¾.

Commons.—The town lands were held and managed by the freemen of the town, as if they were a company for that purpose. In 1644, moved by generosity and public spirit, they set apart a tract on the north side of the river, containing by estimation three thousand two hundred and forty-four acres, and gave and granted it "to the inhabitants of the town with themselves, their heirs and successors forever." In 1788 the commoners of Ipswich "make an absolute grant of all their interest, both real and personal, lying within the town of Ipswich unto the inhabitants of said town, to be sold to pay the town debt." The grant yielded £600. 2*s*. 2*d*.

Societies.—The various societies have exerted a powerful influence in collecting resources, assisting the worthy and fostering social amenities. The General James Appleton Post, No. 128, of the Grand Army of the Republic, and the Woman's Relief Corps, connected with the posts, have exercised a watchful and most beneficent care, exhibiting a mutual devotion equal to their patriotism. They meet weekly. The post has about one hundred members, and a fund of some three hundred and fifty dollars. The Relief Corps fund is some two hundred and fifty dollars. Both expend about one hundred dollars a year in money, besides oft-repeated personal attention and assistance. Another earnest worker in the general field is the Woman's Christian Temperance Union. It meets weekly, and conducts a temperance school. Its work upon the pliant mind of our youth is worthy the sincerest prayer of faith and a generous material support. The object of the "Ipswich Mutual Benefit Society" is to render monetary and personal assistance in sickness and death. The society was organized in March, 1879, and has about eighty-five members in full benefit. About a year ago Bay-View Lodge, No. 2, of the International Order of Odd Fellows, was organized. The Masons were represented here more than a hundred years ago. Unity Lodge was organized March 9, 1779. It was the ninth charter granted in the State. It held no meetings after 1829. The present John T. Heard Lodge was chartered August 26, 1864. It meets monthly, and has a membership of about a hundred. It has a fund of a few hundred dollars, and is otherwise a strong society. The Independent Order of Odd Fellows is represented by the Agawam Lodge, No. 52, and the Daughters of Rebecca, who compose Martha Washington Lodge, No. 5, and a Mutual Benefit Association. Agawam has a membership of about one hundred and ten, a fund of a few hundred dollars and is harmonious and efficacious in her peculiar work.

Here, too, we find the church. It is one of her twin fields of labor, and with her powerful ally—the Sunday-school—might crush out error with the force of an avalanche. In seven years, about 1830, the First Church gave $2100 to religious charities, and the South Church more than $1500. The First Church last year gave about $600.

RESULT OF BUSINESS.

Valuation.—The capital invested at the beginning was determination, energy and perseverance. The struggle has been long and vigorous; it has not yet ended and is not likely soon to end. In 1831 the assessors valued the town property at $505,995; in 1886, at $2,120,017, of which $527,621 was personal estate and $1,592,396 real, and $107,426, an increase over the previous year's valuation. The following table of Province taxation is interesting in showing



J. F. Brown

the increase of expense during the periods of war, and the relative valuation and growth of several old towns compared with this:

Years.	Ipswich.	Salem.	Newbury.	Newburyport.	Years.	Ipswich.	Salem.	Newbury.	Newburyport
1694-95	854	579	589	.....	1747-48	1133	1204	1036	.....
1696	290	270	220	.....	1748-49	2560	2709	2380	.....
1697	215	240	150	.....	1752-53	567	746	736	.....
1700-1	267	239	184	.....	1753-54	280	*159	272	.....
1705-6	950	814	698	.....	1754-55	426	305	572	.....
1710-11	1000	814	698	.....	1756-57	1249	887	1593	.....
1715-16	465	378	325	.....	1757-58	1854	1308	2579	.....
1718-19	299	269	232	.....	1759-60	2174	1642	2937	.....
1723-24	171	169	143	.....	1761-62	1406	1422	1937	.....
1724-25	400	372	334	.....	1762-63	1418	1439	1921	.....
1725-26	571	532	477	.....	1764-65	932	948	787	530
1728-29	301	291	224	.....	1770-71	487	517	379	303
1733-34	298	299	177	.....	1773-74	368	675	359	336
1734-35	568	556	418	.....	1775-76	734	1372	681	700
1736-37	908	924	741	.....	1776-77	1651	2985	1489	1544
1738-39	387	391	354	.....	1777-78	4543	8391	4243	4331
1740-41	711	702	649	.....	1778-79	3685	6884	3919	3518
1742-43	588	632	530	.....	1779-80	35573	46685	32530	37816

* Danvers, £80, set off. Before 1765 Newbury included Newburyport.

The town grows as much in five years now as it grew in the first two hundred; and by opening streets along the river margin and inviting the tourists and summer residents to our beaches, and coast, and mounts, unsurpassed for picturesque beauty and interesting mountain and ocean views, we may achieve still greater advances, instill a new and vigorous life, and so ennoble and embalm the cherished, quaint, weird and hoary past.

ABSENT NATIVES.

BIOGRAPHICAL.—"And what shall I say more? for the time would fail me to tell of the Gideons, the Jephthas, the Davids, the Samuels, who," having left their nativity and engaged in other towns, and in cities and other States, "have wrought righteousness, obtained promises, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens, and have obtained a good report." The influence of Ipswich homes is felt abroad for good in the professions and every honorable vocation. We have had opportunities to gather but few names.

REV. WILLIAM ADAMS was son of William, of this town, and born May 27, 1650. For want of funds he was obliged to make several attempts to enter Harvard College, where he graduated August 8, 1671. The first pastor of the Dedham Church died the 26th of the same month, and the society at once determined upon Mr. Adams as his successor. He declined several calls, but at last accepted, and was ordained pastor December 3, 1673. He married, first, Mary Manning, of Cambridge, in 1674; second, Alice Bradford, daughter of Major William Bradford, of Plymouth. He was a devout and fervent man and public-spirited. He died August 17, 1685, at the age of thirty-six years, and after a pastorate of twelve years.

REV. NATHANIEL APPLETON was born December 9, 1693. He graduated at Harvard in 1712, was ordained pastor at Cambridge October 9, 1717, where he died February 9, 1784, at the great age of ninety-one years, and after a pastorate of sixty-two. His daughters married,—Elizabeth, Rev. Jabez Fitch; Margaret, President Holoyke; Priscilla, Rev. Robert Ward, of Wenham, as his first wife.

JOHN B. BROWN was born December 10, 1837, in Argilla District, Ipswich. His father, Manasseh Brown, was a farmer, owning the Castle Hill—or Governor Winthrop—Farm, and here young Brown spent his early years, working upon the farm summers, attending the district school, and High School winters. This, with a few terms at Phillips Academy, comprised his educational opportunities.

At the age of seventeen he entered the employ of Blanchard, Converse & Co., Boston, who were at that time the leading dry-goods merchants. Here, beginning as a boy, he received his mercantile training, and rose through the various departments. At the opening of the war he entered the service, going into the field with the Sixteenth Massachusetts Volunteers, Colonel Powell T. Wyman, as first lieutenant. He was appointed aide-de-camp to General Cuvier Grover, of the regular army (at that time commanding one of Hooker's brigades) while before Richmond, and served upon the staff of that general during the Seven Days' Battles of the "Peninsula Campaign," ending at Malvern Hills; and later through the "Virginia Campaign" under Pope, ending at Second Bull Run; afterwards in the battles of the "Louisiana Campaign" under Banks. In order that he might remain with General Grover, to whom he was greatly attached, he declined all promotions, and leaving the service with the same rank with which he entered at the beginning of the war, he was commended in general orders for gallant conduct in the battles of Burker's Farm, Savage Station, Glendale, Malvern Hills, (first and second battles), Bull Run (second) Irish Bend (La.) and in the battles of the siege of Port Hudson—being one of the officers who volunteered to lead the storming party in the preparation for the last grand assault on the date of the capitulation.

On returning to civil life, he married Lucy, the daughter of George J. Tenney, an extensive shoe manufacturer in Georgetown, Massachusetts, and entering the employ of ex-Governor Gardner, in the dry-goods commission business, he shortly afterwards became a partner with his former employer, James C. Converse, and removed to New York, remaining in charge of the New York branch of that house till 1869.

The rapid growth of railroads in that period affording such an attraction, he left mercantile life, and, with his brother Leverett, was engaged in railroad construction for many years in the Western States.

The most important work accomplished by him was the organizing and building of the Chicago and Western Indiana Railroad (of which he was president), a trunk line road into the city of Chicago, which to-day gives entrance into that city to five or six railways, among the most important of which are the Grand Trunk, Wabash and the Erie.

Leaving railroad-building on the completion of that work, he has since been engaged in the development of the Grape Creek coal-fields in Illinois, and in the construction of an extensive system of docks on the Calumet River, in South Chicago. Though actively engaged in the development of important enterprises in the West, he still retains his interest and affection for his native place, and the Castle Hill

Farm, on which his boyhood years were spent, claims much of his time and contributes much to his pleasure in its improvement.

CHILDREN OF EZEKIEL CHEEVER.—Thomas was born in Ipswich, was minister of Malden from February 14, 1679–80, till dismissed in 1686. He was then at Chelsea, where he settled October 19, 1715. He graduated at Harvard College in 1677. He died November 27, 1749, at the great age of ninety-one years. Samuel was also born in Ipswich, did not lose a single Sabbath in forty-eight years' preaching, and "died without pain, with no disease but mere age," in his eighty-fifth year and the fifty-sixth of his ministry. Mr. Hammatt says he was a student at Harvard in 1656.

DR. JOSEPH GREEN COGSWELL.—John Cogswell, the doctor's progenitor, a merchant in London, England, sailed from Bristol May 23, 1635. The cargo, mostly his own, was shipwrecked off the coast of Maine August 15th, and he lost in cash about five thousand pounds. Chartering a bark, he brought his family, furniture, silver-plate, etc., saved from the wreck, to Ipswich. He left English opulence for a log hut, "that the ancient faith and true worship might be found inseparable companions in their practice, and that their posterity might be undefiled in religion."

Dr. Cogswell was born in Ipswich Sept. 27, 1786. He prepared for college at the Grammar School, and in his twenty-first year graduated at Harvard.

He then made a voyage to India as supercargo. Returning, he practiced law in Bangor, Me., with not much success. He was then called to a tutorship in Harvard. In 1816 he visited Europe with George Ticknor. He was two years at the University of Gottingen a student in literature and bibliology, wherein he ranked with the highest. He spent two years more at various European capitals with the same purpose. Returning in 1820, he was appointed professor of geology and mineralogy in his *alma mater* and librarian. He resigned in 1823, and with George Bancroft, the historian, established the Round-Hill School at Northampton, based upon the most approved English and German systems. Mr. Bancroft retired from the school in 1830, and Mr. Cogswell continued until 1835, when he went to Raleigh, N. C., in a similar institution. He was next editor of the *New York Review*, one of the ablest critical journals of its period, a position he retained till 1842. His intimacy and friendship with John Jacob Astor made him, with Fitz-Green Halleck and Washington Irving, one of the projectors of the Astor Library. He was also one of the trustees.

When Washington Irving was appointed minister to Spain, he wished Mr. Cogswell to accompany him, and accordingly wrote Washington to appoint him as Secretary of Legation. Irving wrote: "He is a gentleman with whom I am on confidential terms of intimacy, and I know of no one who by his various acquirements, his prompt sagacity, his knowledge of the world, his habits of business and his obliging disposition is so calculated to give me that counsel, aid and companionship so important in Madrid, where a stranger is more isolated than in any other capital in Europe."

He was appointed, and Astor finding he was to lose him, made him librarian in embryo. He went abroad to purchase books, and his selections are marked with economy and discrimination.

He gave to the Astor Library his own valuable works in literature, and he presented to *Harvard* a valuable cabinet of minerals. He prepared, in a series of eight volumes, a critical and analogical catalogue of the Astor Library, wherein he exhibited "an extraordinary knowledge of the history, comparative value and significance of the books he had collected." He served the library with industry and fidelity. After 1862 he resided in Cambridge.

He is authority for the statement that Essex County had "given birth to more literary people than any other in the country," and he substantiated the remark by naming a remarkably long list.

He married young, and his wife died young; he never married again. He died November 26, 1872.

CHILDREN OF DR. JOSEPH DANA.—Joseph was born June 10, 1769; graduated at Dartmouth College in 1788; approbated a preacher June 9, 1795; taught school in Newburyport and studied law; removed to Athens, Ohio, 1817; was Professor of Ancient Languages in Ohio University twelve years from 1822; died November 18, 1849, at the ripe old age of eighty years.

Daniel was born July 24, 1771; graduated at *Dartmouth* in 1788; approbated May 14, 1793; ordained and installed over the First Presbyterian Church, Newburyport, November 19, 1794; dismissed to take the presidency of Dartmouth College, November 19, 1820; resigned the presidency in 1821; installed over the Presbyterian Church, Londonderry, N. H., May 31, 1822, and was dismissed in April, 1826; installed over the Second Presbyterian Church, Newburyport, May 31, 1826, and was dismissed October 29, 1845. He died August 26, 1859.

Samuel was born May 7, 1778; graduated at *Dartmouth* in 1796; ordained at Marblehead, October 6, 1801, and installed.

Sarah was born May 6, 1780, and married Hon. Israel Thorndyke, of Boston.

JOHN C. DONOVAN, ESQ., is yet a young man. He was born in Ipswich Village, March 18, 1861. He pursued his studies in the Ipswich public schools, graduating from the academic department and ranking high as a scholar. He then entered the law-office of Hon. Charles A. Sayward as student. He was examined October 1, 1885, for admission to the Essex bar, and was admitted the 15th of the same month. He is now practicing his profession in Newburyport. In 1885 he was commissioned by Governor Robinson a justice of the peace for the Commonwealth. In connection with his other work, he has taken an active interest in politics. He identified himself with the Democratic party at an early age, and has, by voice and action, aided in promoting its welfare. Early in life he was forced to rely mainly upon his own exertions and native ability, through which he must achieve success.

PROF. LEVI FRISBIE, son of Rev. Levi Frisbie, of the First Church, was born September 15, 1783. He graduated at Harvard in 1802; was tutor there from 1805 to 1811; professor of Latin language and litera-

ture from 1811 to 1817; Alford professor of natural religion, moral philosophy and civil polity from November 5, 1817. He died at Cambridge July 9, 1822, at the age of thirty-eight.

Rev. Nathaniel Howe, third son of Captain Abraham and Lucy-Appleton Howe, was born in Ipswich, Linebrook, October 6, 1764. In preparing for college he studied at Dummer Academy, Byfield, then with Rev. George Lesslie, of his native parish, and later with Rev. Ebenezer Bradford, of Rowley. While with Mr. Bradford he made a public profession of faith in Christ, and joined Mr. Bradford's church. In September, 1784, he entered the junior class of Princeton College, New Jersey, a fact which speaks well for his scholarship. He asked and obtained an honorable dismission at the end of the year, and then entered the senior class of Harvard College, where he graduated with the usual honors.

He studied divinity with a Dr. Hart, of Connecticut, and completed his course with Dr. Emmons, of Franklin. He was licensed to preach by the Essex North Association May 8, 1787. His was the first license granted by that association. He preached at Londonderry and Francistown, N. H.; at Hampton, Conn.; and at Grafton, Mass., where he received a call to settle which he declined. In January, 1781, he began to preach at Hopkinton as a candidate, and was unanimously called in the May following. He was settled for life, as was the custom in those days, October 5, 1791, on a salary of £70 and the use of ministerial land—one hundred acres—and a settlement of £200. Rev. Ebenezer Bradford, his old instructor at Rowley, preached the installing sermon. For more than thirty-eight years he was the minister at Hopkinton, and during the time added two hundred and forty-five to the church. He was a preacher of the Gospel for half a century; he died February 15, 1837.

Mr. Howe married, some three months after his settlement, Miss Olive Jones, the sixth daughter of Colonel John Jones, of his parish. She proved a very estimable lady, and adorned her station. One who knew her well says,—"I ever viewed her as a person of superior mind, quick perception, peculiar energy, and an unconquerable fortitude and resolution. She was as distinguished as her husband for unaffected affability, unwavering and affectionate friendship, as well as for correct thinking, keen penetration and sound judgment." She was a careful and judicious housewife, she was a praying mother, and a lady of unostentatious piety. She died December 10, 1843.

Their children were Appleton, born November 26, 1792, a distinguished physician of Weymouth, State Senator by two elections, major-general of militia, a man who possessed a strong character resembling his father's for manly independence, made fast friends and commanded universal respect; Eliza, born June 4, 1794, and died of consumption, December 27, 1815; Mary Jones, born February 2, 1802, married Rev. Samuel Russell, of Boylston, and died November 26, 1836; Lucy Ann, born August 27, 1805, married John Fitch, son of Deacon Elijah Fitch, and is thus honorably mentioned in the *Century Sermons*. "Whose descendants can vie with the descendants of Rev. Elijah Fitch."

Soon after his marriage he purchased the messuage and farm of Deacon S. Kinsman, lying contiguous to the ministerial lands and some half a mile from the church. At that time his status was excellent and his prospects bright. Says Rev. Elias Nason, to whose memorial of Mr. Howe we are much indebted, —

"He had married into an influential family; his pecuniary circumstances were easy, his health good and his church flourishing. His prospects of usefulness were unclouded; and buoyant with hope, he dedicated all his energies to the work before him. But increasing family expenses and the decreasing value of his salary drove him from his study to the field and the woods. He was obliged to adopt a rigid economy; but his economy was not parsimony, for by dint of hard labor and by frugality he was enabled to educate his son liberally, maintain his respectability and keep out of debt. This was his oft repeated maxim,—'The second vice is lying, the first is running in debt.'"

He frequently chided his people, because they neglected to provide fully for his support. He felt that the laborer was worthy of his hire, and that the cause of God suffered from neglect. He chided though "more in sorrow than in anger." His people understood the justice of his demand and respected him, yet replied: "a bargan is a bargain." After years, the rise in real estate and legacies from relatives enabled him to store a few thousand dollars; nevertheless, his legacies at interest till his death would have amounted to three times the value of his estate at that time.

Mr. Howe was charitable and generous. He wanted property for the good he could do with it. One day noticing the need of a family of his parish, he went to his woods, and drew out a load to the door of the needy and offered it for sale. The lady replied, she could not buy for she had no money; he answered, I ask only one cent, and exacting that unloaded the wood. When his parish would settle a colleague, he relinquished a good part of his salary, when with propriety he could have replied, "a bargain is a bargain." One winter he supplied a family with two loads of wood, and left a third near the house and told the family to use it if they had need. Later, noticing it was not used, and perhaps hardly needed, he reloaded it and left it at the door of another that needed it more. Several young men, by his advice and pecuniary aid, obtained liberal educations, and some of them became distinguished. He frequently visited the widow, the fatherless, and the unfortunate and usually took some substantial token of his sympathy. He often carried provisions to the poor by night, that he might "not be seen of men."

He did much to encourage the youth. He always noticed them with a cheering word. He was particular to visit all the schools in town several times each

year. He was very fond of children, and had a rare faculty of interesting them in whatever he said and of winning their respect.

In 1822 he was made a life-member of the American Bible Society; and in 1827 of the American Educational Society.

There was no place in his theology for *isms*, *new measures*, or innovations. Yet those of varying belief from his, he treated with respect and tolerance. He was no bigot; the erroneous views of others he claimed were not suppressed by calumny, but by better action than theirs and by dint of merit.

Mr. Howe practiced in his reading that excellent motto of the great Webster:

Legere multum, non multa.

He *read much*, Baxter, Bunyan, Saurin, South, Hopkins, Witherspoon and Emmons, and *not many* others. He thought much, as the field, the woods and the road offered him opportunity, and many of his thoughts found expression in concise and pointed language. He wrote:

Q. Who are the wise?
A. None but such as are determined to be wiser still.
Q. What is the reason *that man* is so unhappy in his family?
A. Because he keeps a bottle of rum in his house.
Q. What hurt does that do?
A. None at all if he let it alone.
Q. What has the rich man more than the poor?
A. Nothing but what God has given him.
Q. What reason, then, has he to exult over the poor?
A. None at all.
Q. Who are the rich?
A. All such as have health, peace and liberty and none to make them afraid.
Q. What is the reason *that man* is more prosperous than his neighbor?
A. Because he always takes care of little things; he lets nothing be lost; strikes when the iron is hot; and keeps his dish right-side up.

"To *do* nothing is to *be* nothing. Leisure is the time to do something useful. The careless man is seldom fortunate. Would you have a faithful servant and one that suits you, serve yourself. If you will not hear reason, she will rap your knuckles. A dead fish can swim with the stream, but a live one can swim against it. Great minds are always candid. Common sense is the best sense in the world. Who marries for money buys money dear. Many things can be proved by facts that never happened. Whoever does not feel himself to be a sinner cannot become a Christian. We can enjoy nothing but what God is pleased to give us. We can lose nothing but what He is pleased to take away. We can suffer nothing but what He lays upon us."

He was a remarkable man. "The cast of his mind was original and severe; the bent of his genius, to be useful. He was a man of sterling probity; he thought correctly, and said what he thought. In politics he advocated the leading measures of the Whig party. He despised every kind of political artifice. As a citizen he was public-spirited and liberal-minded. As a husband and a father he was uniformly kind and affectionate. He was constant in his friendships, social and amiable in disposition and a lover of good men. His friends at his home have remarked his cordial hospitality. The standard trait of his character was his regard for truth. He was indeed a Nathanael.

His publications were, a sermon on the death of three persons, 1808; a century sermon, delivered December 24, 1815; a sermon on "John's Baptism," preached before the Mendon Association, and published at their request, 1819; a defense of the same, in reply to Rev. Dr. Baldwin, 1820; and a catechism for the children under his pastoral care, 1834. The century sermon was celebrated. It was noticed by the *North American Review*, passed through several editions, and was translated into foreign languages.

As a preacher he was unaffected, plain and impressive. His sermons were often composed during the toil of the day, and written after the family had retired at night. He aspired not to be eloquent, but useful. Perhaps no other man practiced more scrupulously what he taught; his life was a living epistle of his doctrine.

Rev. David Tenney Kimball's Children.—Father Kimball had seven children, two daughters and five sons:—

David Tenney was born September 7, 1808. He graduated at Middlebury College in 1829, at Andover Theological Seminary in 1834, preached at Hartford, Conn., and in the West, but was obliged to relinquish preaching on account of bronchitis. He married, October 10, 1837, Miss Harriet W. Webster; he lived the greater part of his life in Lowell, where for twenty years he was a deacon in the John Street Congregational Church, and where he died in 1886, much respected.

Daniel was born May 25, 1810. He was educated at Middlebury College, from which he received his Master's degree in 1855. He has spent more than ten years exclusively in the cause of temperance—a part of which time as editor of the *Middlesex Washingtonian*, Lowell, and the *Massachusetts Temperance Standard*, Boston. He lectured in all the principal towns in this State and in many in Rhode Island, New Hampshire and Vermont with good results. He excelled as a lecturer. The *Salem Observer* said of his lecture at Ipswich October 16, 1846, before the Essex County Teachers' Association, "It was not only well-written, but in the manner of delivery it was superior. We have rarely listened to a lecture which gave such evident satisfaction." Of a temperance address at Shelburne Falls, July 4, 1847, the *American Republic* said, "It was of a very high character as a literary composition, and very impressive from its matter and manner of delivery. His appeal to young men was full of energy, pathos and power." He was engaged in teaching nine years, one as principal of the Central Grammar School at Woburn, and eight as preceptor of Williams Academy, Stockbridge, in both of which places he was a member of the school boards. He was an officer in the Boston Custom-House twelve years. He resided at Lexington, 1876–82. He now resides at Woburn.

Augustine Phillips was born September 9, 1812. He was a merchant in Boston many years,—a man of enterprise, generous and public spirit. Prosperity at-

tended him in his business for a considerable period, but, his health failing him, he returned to Ipswich and passed his later years in horticultural pursuits. He died August 13, 1859.

Elizabeth, born July 9, 1814, married, August 8, 1839, Eugene F. W. Gray, son of Rev. Cyrus W. Gray, of Stafford, Conn., and some time editor of the *Ipswich Register*.

John Rogers was born August 23, 1816; was for more than twenty years an enterprising and successful merchant in Boston. He married, May 30, 1844, Lydia Ann Coburn, of Dracut. In 1866 he retired with a competency and established his permanent home in Woburn, where he soon became identified with many public interests. He united with Rev. Jonathan Edwards' church, and was afterwards one of the deacons. He was an efficient worker in every good cause; was one of the most prominent and useful citizens. He represented his town in the Legislature one year, during the period of the late war, and did good service. In announcing his death, which occurred in 1859, the *Woburn Journal* said, "Deacon Kimball was a man of marked individuality, influential, of great integrity, commanding the respect of every one. He was active in good works, set a good example—a real Christian, charitable, kind and greatly beloved."

Levi Frisbie was born April 25, 1818, and died May 9, 1818.

Mary Sophia was born August 16, 1820, and, March 25, 1849, married John Dunning Coburn, merchant, of Brunswick, Me. He died, and she married, secondly, John Quincy Peabody, of Ipswich. Both daughters graduated at the Ipswich Female Seminary.

Joseph E. Kimball, son of John Kimball, was born in this town, June 12, 1839. He enlisted in the service of his country, for the war, in April, 1861, and was mustered in May 23d. He entered Company B, First Regiment Massachusetts Infantry, Colonel Cowdin commanding, who reported at Washington, D. C., June 17th.

His brigade, under colonel, afterwards Major-General Richardson, who was killed at Antietam, formed the advance of General McDowell's "on to Richmond" army, and the first blood shed was in the reconnoissance, known as the battle of Blackburn's Ford, July 17th, three days before the main engagement. They took no part in the panic, and so felt no subsequent chagrin, remaining near Centerville till after midnight, when they marched to Washington, covering the main army's retreat.

In the autumn of 1861 he was in Hooker's brigade, afterwards Hooker's division, which won the distinction of "Fighting Joe Hooker's Division." With that, in the spring following, he participated in the operations before Yorktown, the battles of Williamsburg, Seven Pines, and Fair Oaks.

Immediately before the Seven-days Retreat he was stricken down with "Chickahominy fever," yet left his sick bed, joined his company, and engaged in all the battles of that toilsome and distressing retreat. At Harrison's Landing the fever returned, but an effort to join in the expedition, under Hooker, against Malvern Hills, caused a relapse, and he was taken to the hospital and thence to Fortress Monroe, where the fever raged for several weeks.

He next joined his company near Alexandria, and was in the battles of Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville and Gettysburg. On this march his shoes gave out, and he trod more than sixty miles of the mountain roads and macadamized pike with swollen and bleeding feet.

General Hooker, at Harrison's Landing, recommended him to Governor Andrew for a commissioner, and again at Gettysburg to the Secretary of War. While in pursuit of Lee's army his regiment was ordered to quell the draft-riots in New York. While there, 1863, he was commissioned second-lieutenant and ordered to report to General E. A. Wild, at Newbern. That done, he was enrolled in the Thirty-seventh United States Colored Regiment.

In the following spring he joined the Army of the James, which was afterward merged in the Army of the Potomac, under General Grant.

In the September following he commanded a company in the successful assaults upon Deep Bottom and New Market, and was commissioned first-lieutenant in the One Hundred and Sixteenth United States Colored Regiment. Delaying to report to his new command, he was a volunteer commander of a company in the fiasco against Fort Fisher. He then joined his new regiment; was engaged in the operations about Petersburg; was in the final assault that precipitated Lee's flight, whence he was breveted captain, followed by forced marches and intercepted his retreat, and witnessed the final triumph of our arms.

Later in the spring he joined Sheridan's "army of observation," of the Rio Grande, and served till the overthrow of the Imperial Government of Mexico.

He was mustered out in February, 1867, having served five years and ten months, the last campaign being in the regular service. He bears upon his person reminders of many a struggle, yet in all the time, wonderful to relate, he received no disabling wound. He entered the service when bounties and pensions and pecuniary rewards were unsought, and gave a singleness of purpose, a devotion of heart, and a patriotism that found their full reward in the emancipation and the final restoration of his country.

Mr. Kimball was in the rudiments of his trade when the war broke out, and when he returned from the conflict he returned to his trade, and associated himself with his brother in Abington, in the manufacture of tack and nail machinery for boot and shoe manufacturing, and they were enabled so to improve them that they gained an enviable reputation at home and

in foreign countries. Their reputation was such that a powerful combination of tack manufacturers to control these goods in the United States paid them a considerable sum in cash, with the sole right to manufacture their machines and no others.

In 1876 and 1877 Mr. Kimball perfected and patented a nailing machine. This aroused a powerful antagonist,—the McKay Metalic Fastening Company. A hard struggle ensued. His brother retired from the firm. At last the McKay Company offered, on the score of economy, to purchase the surrender of his patents rather than expend more money in litigation. Just then, very opportunely, Mr. James E. Maynadier, a patent lawyer, took the case, cleared the patents, and was instrumental in establishing a company with a capital of twenty-five thousand dollars to utilize them. The capital was soon increased to fifty thousand dollars, then to one hundred thousand dollars, and then to one hundred and fifty thousand dollars, which is now paying good dividends. Mr. Kimball received twenty thousand dollars for his invention and held stock in the company.

Ere long appeared a fastening called the "Estabrook and Wire-clinching screw," which was cheap and possessed other merits, but had to be worked by hand. Mr. Kimball invented machinery to make it a success. He then removed to Milford.

Within the last two years he has invented an improved metalic fastening and all the new machinery for its manufacture. This is now his main product.

Lastly he has invented a machine for sole-fastening, upon which is placed a simple coil of threaded wire from which at each revolution of the machine a clinching screw is completed, automatically governed in length to conform exactly to the thickness of the material to be fastened together at the exact point necessary to be fastened, inserted in the material and securely riveted. By this machine, within a period of about fifteen seconds every fastening is made, inserted and riveted, necessary to fasten the sole to a boot or shoe. The machine is on trial, with apparent prospect of success.

Here is a lively epistle to young men, showing what may be done by energy, perseverance and diligence, and calling upon them to improve their minds, be watchful of their opportunities, husband their energies and work for a purpose. The world needs such, and will amply reward them.

Rev. Samuel Perley was born in Ipswich-Linebrook, August 11, 1742, son of Samuel and Ruth-Howe Perley. He was twelve years old when his father died, and Abraham Howe became his guardian. He prepared for college under Rev. George Lesslie, his pastor, and entered Harvard at the age of seventeen years, where he graduated in 1763. He was invited to a professorship in his *Alma Mater*, which he declined. He studied divinity with Rev. Mr. Lesslie, his former instructor. At the age of twenty-two years he received a call to settle over the Presbyterian church at Hampton Falls, N. H., where he was ordained and installed, January 31, 1765. Rev. Mr. Lesslie preached the ordaining sermon, which was published.

He was preaching in Seabrook in 1771 and '74. He led a company of soldiers to Bunker Hill, on that ever memorable occasion, but they arrived too late to participate in the action. He was next installed October 8, 1778, at Groton, Stafford County, N. H., over the church that had been gathered the year before. He continued but a few months, and was next installed in Moultonborough October 20, 1780, over the church which was organized the previous year. His next and last pastorate was over the Congregational Church, Gray, Me., where he resided till his death. His installation, as their first minister, took place September 8, 1784. He retired from the ministry about 1791.

He was a delegate from Gray to the Convention in Faneuil Hall, Boston, to consider the ratification of the Federal Constitution in 1788. Upon the floor he advocated its adoption and with heartiness gave it his vote. He was for many years the only physician in Gray. For many years also he had an extensive practice in probate law. He was three times commissioned a justice of the peace, covering a period of twenty-one years. He was, then, in his time, the minister, the physician and the lawyer of Gray, and he filled each office with credit, and left a name that is now revered and honored.

Mr. Perley's manners were open and agreeable. His dress was always tidy and plain; he wore a ruffle but once, when he took his diploma at college. He was an easy and interesting talker, and was notably hospitable. As a preacher he has been highly commended. He was a man of good-natured ability, and he had acquired a store of learning. His library was large, and embraced valuable works upon theology, law, medicine, literature and general knowledge. He was tenacious of his opinions, and had just that proportion of self-esteem to give his talents free scope, and make them eminently useful. Preceding the war of 1812, he held a long correspondence with President John Adams, upon State polity, wherein he disclosed a wide knowledge of history and of practical state-craft.

A few months after his settlement at Hampton Falls, May 21, 1765, he married Miss Hephzibah, daughter of John and Mercy-Howe Fowler, of his native parish. She was mother of all his children,—eight in number, now a numerous and influential progeny. She was baptized May 22, 1743, and died Friday, August 28, 1818. Mr. Perley died Sunday, November 28, 1830. A monument, costing from a thousand to fifteen hundred dollars, marks the family tomb. His children regard his memory with pride and affection.

Frederick Chester Southgate, Esq. — Rev. Robert Southgate, the twelfth pastor of the First



Asa Lord

Church here, had five children,—Horatio died at Wethersfield, Conn. A daughter is married and living in Woodstock, Vt.; Charles M. is a gospel minister in Worcester, Mass.; and the subject of this sketch is a lawyer in Woodstock. He is the only one of the family native here, and was born January 28, 1852. He completed his preparatory studies at Phillips Academy, Andover, in 1869, and graduated at Dartmouth College, in 1874. He selected one of the prettiest of New England villages for his future home. He married, August 31, 1877, Miss Anna S. French, of that town; they have two children. He has acquired a lucrative practice, and enjoys the fullest confidence of his people, which is shown in their bestowal upon him of many public offices and important trusts. He has twice declined a candidacy (which as a Republican in Vermont means election), to legislative distinction, preferring the practice of his profession, and the quiet, social amenities of his people and home.

Samuel Symonds' Children.—There appears to be two *Samuels*,—one who was a graduate of Harvard, in 1663, died in November, 1669, and had a will probated Ninth month 30th, 1669; and another called *junior*, who died in 1654; *William* was freeman in 1670, a representative from Wells, Me., 1676, married Mary Wade, daughter of Jonathan, and left no children. He died May 22, 1679. His estate was £3359. 9*s*. 3*d*.; *Harlakendine; Elizabeth* married Daniel Eppes; *Martha*, John Dennison, and afterwards Richard Martyn, of Portsmouth; *Ruth*, Rev. John Emerson, of Gloucester; *Priscilla*, Thomas Baker, of Topsfield; *Mary*, Peter Duncan, of Gloucester; *Rebecca*, Henry Bylie, of Salisbury, England, then John Hall, of England, then Rev. William Worcester, of Salisbury, Mass.; *Dorothy*, Joseph Jacobs; and *Susannah*.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

ASA LORD.

The subject of this sketch was one of six children who were born to Asa and Margaret Lord. On the 25th day of September, 1797, young Asa first saw the light in Ipswich, Mass.

In December of 1804 his father sailed from Newburyport for the West Indies, but was lost at sea, and two years later we find the boy, Asa, actuated by a strong filial affection, eager to assist his widowed mother, on a pleasant autumn day (the 9th of October, 1806), walking to Newburyport in search of employment.

At this early age of nine years commenced the business life of Asa Lord, for here he obtained employment as errand boy in the family of William Titcomb, with whom he remained seven years. Returning to Ipswich he learned the shoemaker's trade with Mr. Jacob Stanwood, and continued in this business several years.

In the spring of 1821, being in poor health, he took a four months' trip to Mount Desert, and returned improved and has been blessed with good health ever since.

Being ambitious and anxious for a larger field for his business talent, on the 16th of May, 1825, he rented a small shop on High Street, Ipswich, for fifteen dollars per year, and purchased on credit a stock of general merchandise at Salem, valued at two hundred dollars.

He still worked at his bench, leaving his shoes to attend to the calls of his few customers. By his fair dealing, prompt payment of all obligations and his pleasant, genial manner, he made firm friends in business circles, and soon found his quarters too limited, and accordingly built a new house and large store upon the site first occupied by him, and has continued there for more than three-score years, and has been successful in winning the respect and love of the community, as well as in accumulating a competency which he has obtained not by dishonest gains, not by failing in business and paying a percentage to his creditors, but by a devotion to business rarely equaled, by an honesty of purpose never tarnished, by making his word as good as his bond, he has steadily gone on from little to much, from much to more, until at life's eventide he reaps the success of a well rounded life.

May he long live to enjoy the fruits of his application, honesty, energy and indomitable will!

On November 3, 1825, Mr. Lord was united in marriage with Miss Abigail Hodgkins, of Ipswich, the daughter of Captain John Hodgkins. Five children blessed this union, as follows: Lucy A., Thomas H., Abbie B., Francis G. and Mary A.; of this number but two survived, namely, Lucy A. and Thomas H., both of whom reside near the old home. Mary A. married John A. Brown on December 8, 1872, and died July 8, 1873, leaving one child, Hattie W.

Thomas H. married Lucretia Smith on November 13, 1859, and has all his life been associated with his father in business, and for several years has had almost entire charge of the large trade established by his father, which he conducts upon the same never-failing principles of honesty and integrity.

DAVID TENNEY KIMBALL.

Rev. David Tenney Kimball, born at Bradford November 23, 1782, died at Ipswich February 3, 1860, aged seventy-seven; married Dolly Varnum Coburn, of Dracut, October 20, 1807, who died his widow December 12, 1873, aged ninety.

He was the seventh child of Lieutenant Daniel and Mrs. Elisabeth Kimball. His mother had a brother, David Tenney (H. C., 1768), a devoted minister of much promise, who died a short time before the birth

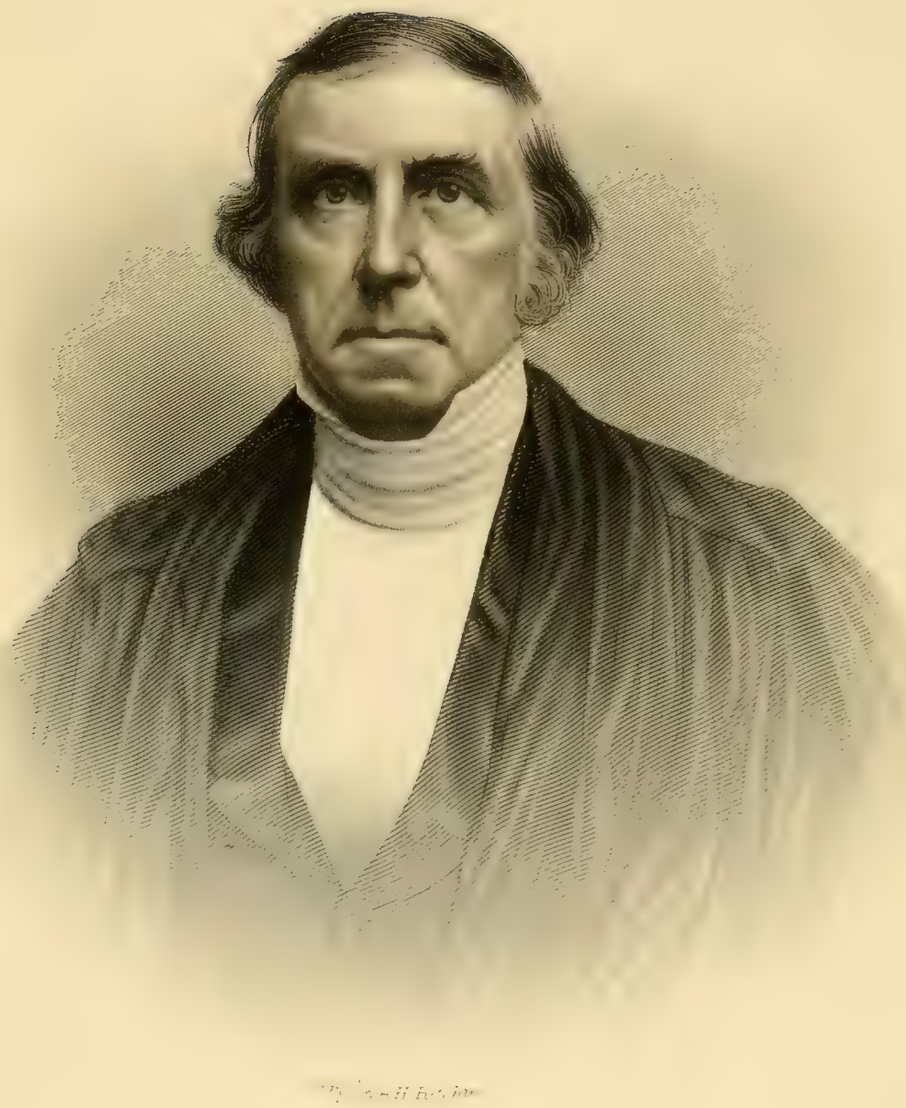
of the subject of our sketch, after whom she named her young son. The home of his boyhood was eminently Christian, and to its influence and that of these parents may be traced the marked and prominent features in the character of their children, ten of whom, all that lived to mature age, entered into covenant with God. Two of the sons became ministers of the gospel and two of the daughters married clergymen. His father was not only one of the best farmers in the town, but one of its most influential citizens,—a man of intelligence and sound integrity, faithful to all his engagements. Born in 1747, he was in early manhood when our Revolutionary struggle commenced. In company with all the hardy, liberty-loving yeomanry of New England, he espoused the cause of the colonies and devoted himself to it, with a courage that never failed and a constancy that never faltered, till his country passed from impending servitude to acknowledged independence. The land which he cultivated descended to him from Benjamin Kimball, through Jonathan and Nathaniel, and was greatly improved under his care; but after his decease, having been in possession of the family more than two hundred years, it passed into other hands.

The house in which he was born was situated in a secluded spot, on a cross-road, more than a mile from the public thoroughfare and a considerable distance from any dwelling. Though retired, it was the abode of intelligence, of manly virtue and gladsome childhood. Here it was that he learned to love his mother, his father and his God. But our records of his childhood are brief. From all we can learn it appears that in every respect,—in character, temperament and manner—the boy was father to the man. His brothers and sisters all spoke of him as a boy of rare seriousness and devotion to books, and of a most amiable and lovely disposition. Said his brother Samuel, "I never knew him to utter a mean or profane word. He was always pleasant in his intercourse with his family and playmates, and beloved by all who knew him. He was a great lover of the Bible, which he read through aloud three times before he was eight years old. His sister Jane wrote: "On the Sabbath he would stand by a table and read the whole day when he did not go to church, except to leave for meals. This was his practice from the time he was six years old till he was too tall to stand at a table and read. I think that, as a child and a young man, he had as many lovely traits of character as I ever knew combined in one. He delighted in the memories and associations of his childhood and youth." In the introduction to a discourse delivered in Bradford, he said, "Everything relating to your town, rather let me say to our town, interests me,—your hills, your valleys, your brooks, your river, your ancient dwellings,—your burial-places, these gray hairs; in short, everything of yours excites in me the tenderest emotions. Here rest my pious and beloved parents, who, in my infancy, gave me up to God for His service in general and for the work of the ministry in particular; and who watched over my youth with the greatest solicitude for my temporal and eternal welfare; and here I first entered into covenant with God."

The education by which his boyhood was instructed was such as could be obtained by attending, during the winter months, the district school, till he was past fifteen. In May 1798, he became a student in Atkinson Academy, an institution then much resorted to by students preparing for college. That he was regarded as one of the most promising scholars appears from the fact that, when a request came to Mr. Vose, preceptor, from the neighboring town of Plaistow, for a Fourth-of-July speaker, he recommended young Kimball, "whose oration, pronounced in the presence of more than one thousand people, was well received."

Leaving the academy August 14, 1799, he entered Harvard College. He had now reached the position in his academical career to which he had been looking with fond desire, and in which his most sanguine expectations were to be fully realized. In after years he was wont to speak with admiration and enthusiasm of college life and the friendships there formed, and of the four years spent there as among the happiest of his life. While here, he was remarkably free from all youthful indiscretions, and was then, as ever after, the decided friend of law and order, of obedience to the powers that be. In sophomore year there was trouble in his class, and one of their number was suspended for insulting a college officer. The censure was resented by his classmates as a great indignity, which they manifested by raising the flag of rebellion and escorting the criminal on the way to the place of his destination. The whole class, with the exception of three, were engaged in this rebellious movement. Among the excepted was Kimball. The honorable course of this trio was considered the result of principle, and not of a desire to procure special favor from the college government, and was subsequently approved by those who were carried away by the excitement of the moment.

As a student, he was noted for the accuracy of his recitations in every department of study, and at once took rank among the best scholars of his class. That he sustained this position during his whole collegiate course is evident from the fact, that in taking his degree of A. M., in 1806, he pronounced the valedictory oration in Latin. He was a member of the Phi Beta Kappa Society, and active and prominent in various other societies for literary and moral improvement. His classmates and college acquaintances bear testimony to his honorable standing. Says Samuel Greele (H. C., 1802), for nearly fifty years deacon of the Federal Street Church, Boston, in a letter to a son of Mr. K., "I believe no one in his class surpassed him as a belles-lettres scholar. His themes were remarkable for their chaste and classic elegance. Pro-



David T. Kimball

fessor Pearson, who had charge of that department, used to distinguish compositions of superior excellence by a double mark. Your father's themes usually had this distinction, and in one or two instances he received a treble mark, a distinction which, I believe, was awarded to no one else during my collegiate life. In Andover we were fellow-students in divinity, and, as we were chums together for some months, I became intimately acquainted with him. I think I never knew one of our sex more remarkable for amiability of disposition. To manliness of character he united a loveliness of temperament that seemed almost feminine. He pursued his studies with conscientious fidelity and became popular as a preacher. His settlement in one of the oldest and most respectable parishes of the commonwealth indicates his professional standing. I take a melancholy pleasure in planting this forget-me-not on the grave of one whom I shall never cease to respect and love as a Christian, a gentleman and a friend."

He took his first collegiate degree August 31, 1803, and, a week from that day, became assistant for one year in Phillips Academy, Andover, Mr. Mark Newman, preceptor.

The time had now arrived when he was to enter upon the study of that profession to which his mother devoted him in her heart when he was a child, for which he had a strong predilection, and upon which he deliberately and prayerfully entered. He commenced his preparatory studies under the direction of Rev. Jonathan French, pastor of the South Church in Andover. In theology he was an Andover student, on what was then called the Abbot Foundation. Mr. French, who was an orthodox minister in the sense of the Assembly's Catechism, had several young gentlemen as students in theology at that time, constituting the Theological Seminary in embryo. On August 6, 1805, he was approbated by the Andover Association for the work of the gospel ministry, induced thus early to engage in preaching at the earnest desire of Mr. French, a step which he always regretted, as it prevented him from prosecuting his studies as he had intended. But from the time of his approbation to that of his settlement he preached every Sabbath but one or two. It was on September 22, 1805, that he preached for the first time in Ipswich, and June 17, 1806, that the First Church, without a dissenting voice, made choice of him as pastor, in which action the parish concurred with great unanimity, only one dissenting, and he a Baptist in principle. On October 8, 1806, he was ordained pastor of the First Church in Ipswich—the ninth in the Massachusetts Colony. He was the eleventh pastor in succession of predecessors, most of whom were men of note in their day, and all of whom maintained the doctrine of the Puritan Fathers. The young pastor, then in his twenty-fourth year, felt no slight degree of diffidence and distrust in regard to meeting the high expectations which he had awakened. But the doctrines which he professed, and the course he had marked out at his ordination, he firmly maintained and steadily pursued during his public ministry. He devoted not only his affections but his time and talents to the service of his Master and the interests of His kingdom. He felt that Paul's charge to Timothy, "Be instant in season and out of season," was addressed also to him; and he acted accordingly. In his visits to the sick he was prompt, affectionate and faithful. When called, at whatever hour of the night, he instantly obeyed the summons, and he not unfrequently passed whole nights in the chamber of the sick and by the beds of the dying. He made many social calls and visits, the object of which was, in part, to promote kind and friendly feelings and to incite in his hearers a deeper interest in his public labors. These visits, which averaged five hundred a year, were in all more than twenty thousand.

In person Mr. Kimball was well proportioned, six feet in height, and in the prime of life weighed a hundred and seventy-five pounds; hair and eyes black, step firm and elastic. He had a pleasing voice, his enunciation was distinct, his manner never violent nor denunciatory, but calm and impressive. In summer he generally appeared in the pulpit in the canonicals presented to him at his ordination by the ladies of the parish, and supplemented by them as occasion demanded.

Though at the time of his settlement he was in delicate health, and thought by some not sufficiently robust to warrant his engaging in the labors and responsibilities of the ministerial office, and though for years he suffered from headache, often for weeks in succession, yet he lived to preach, in his own pulpit and those of his brethren, more than five thousand sermons, having had no vacation and having been prevented from preaching but a few times, when he supplied his place or the people worshipped with other congregations.

He maintained pleasant pulpit exchanges with his ministerial brethren and his labors were highly acceptable. These exchanges were not only with the Congregational and Presbyterian ministers of the county, but occasionally with others more remote. It is believed that his exchanges were never more frequent or more acceptable to his clerical brethren and their societies than at the time of closing his labors at Ipswich, at which time more than sixty pulpits were open to his ministrations.

As a monument of his industry he left above three thousand sermons, written out with remarkable legibility. Indeed, he took a pride in doing with clearness whatever he attempted; he never slighted any trust which he assumed.

The following is a sketch of his more public services:

His Labors among the Young—His labors in behalf of the lambs of his flock were abundant and incessant. For eleven years, in the earlier period of

his ministry, he instructed the children at the church and in his house in the Assembly's Catechism, the number varying from one hundred and fifty to more than two hundred. At the establishment of the Sunday-school, June 18, 1818, he acted as superintendent and took part in its immediate instruction. In December of that year he formed a class of young ladies in Wilbur's Catechism, which continued for a long time. He also taught the youth of both sexes in Sacred History; preached during his ministry more than one hundred sermons exclusively to the young; occupied fourteen Sabbath evenings in one winter with lectures to young men on the text, "Is the young man Absalom safe?" For years the Bible class, composed of the young people and others more advanced, numbered from two hundred to three hundred. With this exercise he went through most of the Pentateuch, the whole of John's gospel, the four evangelists in their connection and harmony, and the Acts of the Apostles.

Education.—Impressed with the special importance of knowledge to the citizens of a country, the stability and permanence of whose institutions rest upon intelligence and good morals, he had no sooner entered on his pastoral duties than he visited the schools, to encourage the children and youth by his presence, his sympathy and friendly counsel. For more than forty years he was a member of the school committee, and no small part of the time chairman, and accustomed to examine the teachers and the eight schools repeatedly every year, to pray with and examine the same. In his fiftieth anniversary discourse he remarked that he had probably made more than two thousand visits to these schools. He was ever the advocate of the most liberal appropriation and of the most complete organization, instruction and discipline of the common schools, and he did much by pen and voice for their improvement. The school board, in their annual report for the year ending March, 1860, thus speak of his services: "As a member of the feoffees of the grammar school for a period of more than thirty years, and as one of the school committee for forty years of his useful life among us, he has done much, both by precept and example, for the moral improvement of our youth, and his active exertions and untiring zeal in the cause of education will long be held in grateful remembrance."

He always took special interest in scholars belonging to the grammar-school, particularly in those contemplating a collegiate course. By the term "grammar-school," we do not mean the common, or public school, as it now exists in our commonwealth, supported by a tax and free of charge, to rich and poor, but a school where Greek and Latin were taught, and where youth could be fitted for college. The Ipswich grammar-school was established in 1650. In six years from its opening there were six young men from this town pursuing at the same time their studies at Harvard College; and all of them undoubtedly pupils of this school. But the grammar-school no longer exists as such; it has been merged in the Manning School, and its funds appropriated, in part, to the support of its teachers. It was a grand old school some sixty or seventy years ago, when Richard Kimball, George Choate, Charles Choate and Stephen Coburn reigned there. In it more than one hundred of the natives of Ipswich, who have received collegiate honors, acquired their elementary education.

Female Education and Ipswich Female Seminary.—He was among the earliest and most earnest to call attention, public and private, to the whole subject of female education, and especially to the more extensive employment of women as teachers. Of so great importance did he regard this subject, that early in his ministry he kept a private school in his own house for several years, to which a goodly number of the young ladies of his society and the town resorted.

The Ipswich Female Seminary was opened for the reception of pupils, April 23, 1828, on which occasion an address was delivered by Mr. Kimball. As president of the board of trustees during the eleven years in which Miss Grant was principal, he delivered the diplomas with an address annually to the graduating class. At no small sacrifice he received Miss Grant and her associated teachers into his family, when she made the so doing the *sine qua non* of her establishment in Ipswich.

His labors in education were not confined to his place of residence. He frequently spoke on the subject by request in other towns. Soon after the organization of the Essex County Teachers' Association, in 1829, the first of the kind in the United States, "when," says one,[1] "few could be prevailed upon to favor the enterprise, Mr. Kimball, who had himself been an able and successful instructor, readily yielded to the request of the society to lecture before it. This he did with ability and peculiar acceptance."

Foreign Missions.—Through his whole ministry he was the earnest advocate and efficient helper of the American Board; was present at its organization at Bradford in 1810, frequently presented its claims to his own people, and occasionally addressed audiences in its behalf in other places. "Among the arguments that the early friends of missions had constantly to meet," says Rev. William Kincaid, at the annual meeting of the Board at Des Moines, October 6, 1886, "was the complaint that the sending out of so much money to the heathen would impoverish the country. So wide-spread and persistent was this objection that in 1826 two prominent ministers, of whom Dr. Lyman Beecher was one" (and Rev. David Kimball the other, see *Proceedings of the Auxiliary Mission Society of Essex County*, April 11, 1826), were appointed by this board to prepare elaborate papers in answer to it. The manner in which Mr. Kimball acquitted himself may be seen in the following remarks which

[1] Rev. Gardner B. Perry, D. D.

he offered on that occasion: "Sir, the resources of our country are not easily exhausted. When I look around this country; when I consider its extent of territory, fertility of soil and salubrity of climate, its agricultural improvements, its extensive and lucrative commerce, the rapidly increasing growth of its manufactures; when I consider the number, intelligence, industry and enterprise of its husbandmen, mechanics and merchants, and its favorable situation in respect to every kind of business tending to the increase of wealth; when I survey the vast resources of my country; I feel as little apprehension that these resources will be exhausted by its charities to the heathen, as that the waters of the Pacific Ocean will be exhausted by natural exhalation. And I would as soon accuse that ocean of a wanton waste of its waters, for suffering them to ascend for the purpose of falling on the pastures of the wilderness, and clothing them with verdure, as charge the friends of missions with profusion for collecting a portion of the riches of this world, and causing it to descend in the dew of gospel charity on the moral wilderness. Were I to surrender the point which I undertook to maintain, I would still hold on to the object to which we are devoted, and say, let the wealth of this world go, if on such terms souls may be rescued from degradation, guilt and death, and raised to that world where they will be praising God, and advancing toward him by new accessions of glory, forever and ever. But I do not surrender the point which I undertook to maintain. I do not believe that the property of the community has been lessened by the interest in foreign missions, nor that it would be lessened, if the object were to interest our entire population, and the contributions to it were increased a hundred-fold."

Anti-Slavery.—He was the uncompromising enemy of oppression and tyranny in all their forms, and early declared himself the friend of liberty, personal and national. In an address in his native town, he said: "I appear this evening, not as a member of any anti-slavery organization, but as an anti-slavery man, independent of all organizations. As to this cause blame me not, my friends, for my love of it; for here, in the days of my childhood and youth, was that love kindled. Yes, between those hills my father taught me, and in these ancient houses, your fathers taught me, and at the house of worship which recently stood there, the pastor taught me, that slavery is a sin, being a transgression of the law which says: 'Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself.' I received it as true; I believed it; and I proclaimed it in this house of prayer, when at twenty-one our fathers called me on the day of our nation's birth, to echo, as I could, the just and noble sentiment, 'all men are created free and equal.' From the first moment, that, as I trust, I began to love God for what he is, for his holiness, justice and mercy; I have felt that slavery is a sin, and that like every other sin, it should be immediately renounced; and I must think and feel so, as long as God's law remains as it is, and as long as God remains what he is."

As he believed he spoke, and unhesitatingly gave utterance, on all suitable occasions, to the sentiments he entertained. Into the structure of his mind,—which was conservative, judicious and catholic,—ultraism, fanaticism and bigotry did not enter. He had zeal, but according to knowledge; he hated oppression, but his hatred was tempered with prudence; he had opinions of his own to which he tenaciously adhered, yet he allowed in others the same freedom of expression that he claimed for himself. Early in the agitation of this subject he took an open and declared anti-slavery position; took it, and held to it, through evil report and good report, and though he did not live to see the day of deliverance and triumph, yet he believed it would come and gloriously too. He identified himself with the enterprise at a time when, through indifference, or cowardice, or selfishness the voice of the pulpit and press was dumb, and few desired to have the subject agitated in the community. The American Colonization Society was then at the hight of its popularity, and it was regarded as almost impious to question the benevolence of its scheme. That dark period of ignorance and apathy, delusion and prejudice should be carefully pondered and properly estimated in order that the amount of moral courage requisite to meet it should also be measured and appreciated. Mr. Kimball though a diffident man and one who shrank from contending with an antagonist in open extemporaneous debate, was yet firm, decided and earnest in the discussion of any question in which he conscientiously believed, whether popular or unpopular with the people. The thing for him to decide was, whether the sentiments he entertained were in accordance with the word of God. If they were he was bold in proclaiming them; and undeterred by the fear of man and the consequences, went straightforward in the discharge of duty, sustained by the belief that, though all men might be against him, the God in whom he trusted would be with him. His name, which stood at the head of the Massachusetts delegation, is among the one hundred and fifty-four clergymen who came before the public in 1834 as the advocates of immediate emancipation, by signing a document giving a decided expression of opinion on these two cardinal points, viz.: 1. That colonization is not an adequate remedy for slavery, and must therefore be abandoned for something else that is; and 2. That the scheme of Immediate Emancipation is such a remedy, and is, therefore, to be adopted and urged.

In the formation of the Essex County Anti-slavery Society he took an active part. At a convention held at Topsfield April 4, 1834, to consider the expediency of forming said society, he was chosen, with others, to prepare a constitution. When the New England Anti-slavery Society met in Boylston Hall, Boston, May 26, 1834, he was on the committee to report on

the District of Columbia and the Territories; and in June of the same year, when the Essex County Anti-slavery Society was organized at Salem, he was one of the vice-presidents. Thus early and openly did he commit himself steadfastly and zealously to this great enterprise.

Temperance.—His mother instilled early into his mind and heart the great principle of brotherly love, including in its wide embrace love of all humanity, thus striking, with her heaven-inspired hand, the key-note of philanthropy in his heart, and laying the foundation of that spirit of benevolence which led him to adopt and proclaim the great reformatory doctrines which in the last half century have so extensively occupied the attention of the more thoughtful of our fellow-countrymen. Hence it was, that war and slavery and intemperance had in him an uncompromising foe, ready on all proper occasions to employ against them "a sling and a smooth stone out of the brook," weapons which, if not mighty, did good service in the cause of humanity. The second sermon which he wrote was on temperance, and during his ministry he frequently discoursed upon it on the Sabbath, and always readily and cheerfully complied with the invitations of his fellow-citizens and others to speak on the subject, lending his influence and giving his labor to promote it at a period when, in popular feeling, attachment to the cause did not add to a man's public reputation.

He was one of the original members of the first State temperance society in the country,—"The Massachusetts Society for the Suppression of Intemperance," instituted in 1813. In 1826, when the American Temperance Society was formed, on the principle of total abstinence, he united with it, as he did with the Washingtonian movement of 1840.

The American Education Society.—While he took a deep interest in all the benevolent and religious enterprises of the day, the American Education Society in particular, whose object was the education of pious young men for the gospel ministry, occupied much of his time and attention. In the preliminary work of the Essex Auxiliary Education Society he bore a prominent part. At its organization, October 30, 1816, he was made secretary. As such he prepared, in December of that year, a circular addressed to the evangelical ministers of the county, inviting them to recommend to their several churches an annual collection for this object; and in 1828 he caused to be printed five hundred copies of the constitution, with a list of officers and an address prepared by himself. Having acted as secretary for twenty-three years, in 1839 he resigned the office. His resignation not being accepted, he continued the secretaryship, attending the annual meetings and preparing the yearly reports to the close of his life, a period of forty-four years. During this time, says Rev. Dr. Perry, "he never failed in an appointment, nor at the annual meeting came unprepared with a report carefully made out. His reports were often extended to a considerable length, were directed to different bearings and responsibilities of the society, and, if brought together, would make a volume filled with important truths and practical instruction; and I must regard it as no small loss to the religious world that they should be hid in the depository of finished business, comparatively unknown and unread."

Essex North Association.—Soon after his ordination he united with this association. Having, as scribe *pro tempore*, kept the minutes and conducted the correspondence of the society for a year, he was chosen permanent secretary, May 12, 1812, which office he held till his death, a period of forty-eight years, during all which time he was punctual in attendance at the meetings, and always ready to contribute his full share of time and labor to its interests. Three times he was called upon to deliver the annual sermon at the conference of the churches in Essex North. He was unanimously chosen to preach the anniversary sermon before the Massachusetts General Association at Woburn in 1844, which discourse was publicly commended as most appropriate and excellent. He was one of four who formed a society separate from the association for the purpose of studying the Scriptures in their original languages, and for making themselves better men and better ministers. "It is a noble example, worthy to be put into the history of our body," [The "Ecclesiastical History of Essex County"], "that Father Kimball commenced and prosecuted the study of Hebrew after he was forty years old." The distinct impression which he left on the memories of his associates was his fidelity and untiring industry. His productions, says Rev. Dr. Pike, were always scholarly and his heart always true to the Redeemer's kingdom.

Church in Linebrook Parish.—This church, organized in 1749, but which in 1819 had been reduced in membership to two women, one of whom was very aged and infirm, was watched over by him with a fatherly eye. For several years he occasionally held meetings for prayer among the people, and for a considerable period conducted a Bible-class exercise one evening a week; visited their sick, buried their dead, and, whenever a religious interest was manifest, however slight, he instantly hastened to their aid. Said a member of that church, "I shall never forget the expression of his countenance nor the tears I have seen flow, when I have been telling him of persons in our parish whom I knew to be anxious about the salvation of the soul." His labors for the church during its struggle for existence knew no abatement. In this he proved himself a wrestling Jacob and a prevailing Israel. When at its lowest point and without a suitable place of worship, the old meeting-house having gone to decay, he urged the people to hold together and make a united effort for the erection of a new house; and, when they had decided to build, he addressed the secretary of the Massachusetts Missionary Society for

aid in support of a minister, and received from him the assurance that the society would appropriate to this object one hundred dollars annually. The continued interest of Mr. K. in this parish was shown by the action of his society, in presenting to it, at his suggestion, in 1848, for its present church edifice, the bell which had formerly hung in the steeple of the old meeting-house in Ipswich. In 1860 the church had increased from two in 1819 to seventy. A bequest of $7000, by John Perley, Esq., of Georgetown, has enabled it to secure the services of a regularly settled minister, and it is in a prosperous condition.

Publications.—While the modesty of Mr. Kimball was such as to prevent him committing to the press the earlier productions of his pen, copies of which had in several instances been requested, and among them an oration delivered in Andover, July 4, 1804; an addresss on education in Bradford Academy, 1805; a sermon on peace in Ipswich, July 4, 1817; and while he declined similar requests in later years, he was the author of sixteen published discourses, which were regarded as valuable contributions to the religious literature of the day,—noticeably, a sermon before the Society for the Promotion of Christian Knowledge, in Park Street Church, Boston, 1821; a Sketch of the Ecclesiastical History of Ipswich, 1821; a Centennial Discourse before the First Church and Congregation in Ipswich, August 10, 1834, two hundred years after the gathering of that church; a sermon on the Utility of a Permanent Ministry, 1839; The Last Sermon in the Ancient Meeting-House of the First Parish in Ipswich, February 22, 1846; the First Sermon in the New Meeting-house of that Parish, February 4, 1847: a Discourse on the Fiftieth Anniversary of his Ordination, October 8, 1856. He also furnished many miscellaneous articles to secular and religious magazines and papers.

Hospitality.—His house was the seat of a generous hospitality. He followed the injunction of St. Paul, "Be not forgetful to entertain strangers," many of whom he cordially received. For most of the time from his settlement to the completion of the Eastern Railroad, his company, in addition to that of particular friends, averaged not less than one person for the whole time, and one horse in the stable. It was not uncommon for strangers passing through the town by stage to come directly to his house to dine, while their companions were being entertained at the public-house.

Revivals.—There were several interesting religious awakenings during his ministry. As the fruit of which there were received into the church in 1808, 16; in 1820, 13; in 1825–26, 35; in 1829, 88; in 1830, 22; in 1838, 16; in 1849–50, 45; an aggregate of 235. "In such seasons of merciful visitations," said Rev. Mr. Fitz in his sermon at the funeral of Mr. K., "he spared not himself, multiplying his meetings and going from house to house to preach repentance, to offer to the inquiring sinner an Almighty Saviour, and to implore, on behalf of every household, the influences of the Holy Spirit."

On July 24, 1851, he withdrew from the active duties of the pastoral office, which he had filled with distinguished ability and faithfulness, and became pastor *emeritus*. After his retirement he preached in various places, and continued to do so till the time of his death, "being never so happy," to use his own words, as "when engaged in this delightful employment." As he drew near "the shining-shore," he must have found comfort in the thought, that by God's blessing, the church, which at his ordination consisted of but fifty-three members, had been quadrupled under his ministry.

The great aim which Mr. Kimball seems ever to have had in view was usefulness. He lived to do good; and although it cannot be said of him, or of any man that ever lived, that he made no mistake in the devising or the carrying out of his plans, yet no one could question the purity of his motives or the integrity of his acts. If he possessed little of what is called genius, he had two of the greatest of all possessions, diligence and perseverance; if not a man of profound erudition, his requirements were more than respectable. He was a careful and cautious thinker, an accomplished writer, an accurate scholar, a forcible and instructive preacher. In every department of duty he was diligent, prompt and faithful, deeply interested in all the philanthropic movements of the day, and zealous for the Lord of Hosts,—a consecrated champion of Christian truth. And having lived a life of faith and obedience, he died the death of the righteous.

His last sickness, pneumonia, was short, but very painful. As he drew near the river's brink, and some thought he had passed over, he revived and exclaimed, "The gates of the New Jerusalem are opening;" and after a pause, "I see within the city." He then took affectionate leave of his family, and breathing benedictions on his people, for whom his last audible prayer was offered, he fell asleep. There was no pang in the dying hour. At the moment of the soul's departure, according to the testimony of his daughter, Mary, there came to his lips a smile of ineffable beauty, and there it remained till he was buried out of sight, never more to be seen till the morning of the resurrection.

The citizens of the town exhibited the most profound respect for the deceased pastor. A man of spotless character, he was universally beloved. From the time the intelligence of his illness spread through the community till his burial the house was thronged. Many children came to see the face of him they loved. At twelve o'clock of the day following his death, all the bells in the town tolled in concert. At his funeral all classes pressed to show their love and express their grief. The people of Ipswich without distinction of sect or party, formed a most honorable

procession and accompanied the remains to the appointed place of burial. He was greatly honored in his death. Many clergymen and distinguished laymen from abroad were present at his funeral. Through the kindness and generosity of his nearest neighbor and ever constant friend, Deacon Aaron Cogswell, an eligible burial spot was secured for him and his family, near the centre of the ancient cemetery in High Street, where he reposes in the midst of a thousand of the people of his charge, and where the sun smiles upon his rest as his Heavenly Father smiled upon his departing spirit.

EDWARD P. KIMBALL.

Edward P. Kimball, son of Hon. Charles Kimball, was born March 22, 1836. Acquiring the rudiments of his education at the common schools of the town and at the old High School, he finished his course there at a time when there sprang up among the young men of the place quite an enthusiastic desire to fit and enter college, and he was one of a class of several who, with that end in view, recited their Latin and Greek before breakfast at an early morning hour to Rev. John P. Cowles, then principal of the Ipswich Female Seminary. Continuing under Mr. Cowles' instruction for a year, he completed his preparation for college at Thetford Academy, Thetford, Vt., and at the Williston Seminary, Easthampton, Mass., and in the autumn of 1852 entered the Freshman Class of Amherst College. Remaining there two years, he was obliged to leave on account of ill health, and staying out a year, entered the Junior Class at Williams College, where he graduated in 1857. The late ex-President Garfield was then a member of Williams, and rooming near him, he there made his acquaintance, as well as that of other men afterwards distinguished in public life and in the various professions. After graduating, he taught in the Shippensburg Collegiate Institute at Shippensburg, Pa., practically having charge of the school.

In 1858 he entered upon the study of the law in the office of Hon. Otis P. Lord at Salem, remaining there till Judge Lord took his seat upon the bench, and then completing his studies in the office of his father, he was, in 1861, admitted to the bar. He practiced his profession in Ipswich for a few years, and afterwards in Gloucester, and then associated himself with his father in business at Salem, and continued it after his father's decease until, in October, 1886, he assumed the duties of postmaster of Ipswich under appointment from President Cleveland. Mr. Kimball has held various public offices, having served upon the school committee of Ipswich for six years, and as selectman of the town for two years, besides being candidate for the House of Representatives and State Senate, failing of election only because his party were in the minority. He has always taken a great interest in music, is a fine bass singer, has given instruction in vocal music, and was leader of the South Church choir for eighteen years. Mr. Kimball was married in 1867 to Sarah M. Kimball, daughter of Rev. Reuben Kimball, of North Conway, N. H., and has four children,—two sons and two daughters. Mrs. Kimball is a lady of intelligence, of a bright, cheerful and sunny disposition, remarkably conscientious, interested in every good work, devoted to her family and a leader in the affairs of church and society which come within the sphere of woman's activities.

It is interesting to notice in families the peculiar traits that descend from father to son, and in Mr. Kimball's case they are especially noticeable.

He has inherited from his father, and possesses in a remarkable degree, a spirit of thoroughness in everything which he undertakes. There is nothing so abhorrent to him as the disposition sometimes displayed of an arrogant, dogmatic assertion as facts of things of which the speaker is profoundly ignorant. Indeed, his exceeding caution in this respect may have sometimes worked to his disadvantage in giving him an appearance of hesitation, betokening ignorance of subjects on which he was really better informed than more flippant and showy, but at the same time more superficial, thinkers.

He is of a kindly and genial disposition, thoughtful of the feelings of others and considerate of the rights of all.

In manner and deportment he is unassuming. His natural reserve has sometimes given the impression of haughtiness, but this is an erroneous view of his temperament.

Though dignified in bearing, he is not distant. He has a quick perception of the humorous. His opinion and judgment are often sought in questions of dispute.

In matters pertaining to the welfare of the town he is deeply interested, and takes pride in her grand historic past and its present growth and prosperity.

In the preparation of legal papers and in advising upon legal subjects, this mental quality of his conspicuously appears, so that whatever is said or done by him can be depended upon without hesitation, subject only to such qualifications as he expressly lays down. Weighing well a subject, and coming slowly and carefully to a conclusion, we cannot wonder that his opinions, once formed, are held with great tenacity; but no one, however much he may differ himself from his views, can but respect the deliberate and careful way in which his judgment is made up or the conscientious fairness and candor with which his views are entertained. At the same time tolerant and deferential to those who are constrained to disagree with him, it is not strange that he commands the undivided respect and esteem of the entire comunity in which he dwells.



Edward P. Kimball



Daniel Filton

REV. DANIEL FITZ, D.D.[1]

The Fitz family ranks among the very early Puritan families of New England. Its first Anglo-American ancestor was Robert Fitz. He was born in 1617, and came to this country from Fitz Ford or its vicinity, near Tavistock, in the county of Devonshire, England, as early, certainly, as 1640. Mrs. Bray has directed attention to this locality by making it the scene of her novel entitled "Fitz of Fitz-Ford." She says of it, in the introduction to her book:

"To the west of the town, by the side of the new road to Plymouth, stand the ruins of the gate-way of Fitz-ford, which, except an old barn, is all that now remains of the mansion and offices of the family of Fitz. This gate-way is spacious, and the label ornaments of its architecture proclaim it to be a structure of the time of Henry the Seventh. Such portions of the carving as appear through the ivy, with which it is amply hung, are well sculptured; and the whole might form an interesting subject for the pencil of a Harding or a Prout. The ancient mansion of Fitz-ford, that once stood in an open court beyond this gate-house, was many years since pulled down, and the materials used to erect the present market-house in the town."

There is a tradition that Robert Fitz was at Ipswich in 1635. The most prominent member of his family at the time of his emigration was Sir John Fitz, a London barrister of position and wealth, whose country seat was upon the bank of the river Tavy on the west side of Tavistock as above stated by Mrs. Bray.

Robert Fitz is said to have been induced to leave his native land by the discomforts to which he was subjected on account of his Puritan principles. Whether he was at Ipswich, in 1635, or not, it is certain that he and his wife Grace D. were among the original settlers of Salisbury, in 1640. From that time the genealogy of his descendants has been carefully preserved.

Rev. Daniel Fitz belonged to the seventh generation of his family in this country, and his ancestry may be traced back in unbroken line through Samuel Currier, of Derry, of the sixth generation; Daniel, of Sandown, N. H., of the fifth; Richard, of South Hampton, N. H., of the fourth; Richard, of Salisbury, of the third; Abraham, of Ipswich, of the second; and Robert, of Salisbury, the Anglo-American head.

He was the second child and oldest son of Samuel Currier Fitz, above named, and of Sarah George Fitz. He was born at Sandown, N. H., May 28, 1795, and in early childhood accompanied his parents upon their removal to Derry, where they ever afterwards lived. He graduated in 1818 at Dartmouth College, then under the presidency of Dr. Francis Brown, and just emerging from its great controversy, finally settled by the Supreme Court of the United States, and since famous as the Dartmouth College case. His class numbered twenty-eight, some of whom subsequently attained positions of eminence. Among these were Prof. George Bush, D.D., of New York University, and Prof. Thomas C. Upham, of Bowdoin College. Not one of this class now survives.

Upon leaving college, Mr. Fitz devoted himself to teaching for a while, as thousands of other New England students before and since have done. By this means he strengthened his resources, both mental and financial, the first by a review of former studies, and the latter by the moderate compensation then allowed for such work. For a single term he was assistant teacher of Pinkerton Academy, established but a few years before in his town of Derry. Soon afterwards, Salisbury, N. H., Academy, then in its palmy days, offered him its principalship, which he accepted and continued to hold for some two years, until he was called to assume that of the Academy at Marblehead in which he continued for about a year and a half.

The objects sought by teaching having been attained, he entered Andover Theological Seminary in 1822, there to prosecute the studies which were to prepare him for the work of his chosen profession, under a corps of stalwart theologians, prominent among whom were Dr. Leonard Woods and Dr. Moses Stuart. It was near the close of the period of the great warfare waged by the theological Titans of New England; a fierce warfare in which no quarter was asked or given by either party, but which, like most religious controversies, was most effective in confirming the combatants in their own cherished views. As was most natural, Mr. Fitz accepted the doctrines of his teachers. These, with slight modifications, he held throughout his whole subsequent life.

Mr. Fitz completed the prescribed course of study, and graduated in 1825. At this time, the health of the venerable Dr. Joseph Dana, who had been in continuous service as pastor of the South Congregational Church, of Ipswich, for sixty-one years, had become impaired by age, and he was wanting a colleague. The position was offered by the church and society to Mr. Fitz, and he accepted it. On the 26th day of June of the next year he was ordained and installed as associate pastor.

The services of this occasion were held in the ancient meeting-house of the society, which stood near the location of the present house, by which it was superseded in the year 1837. The clergymen who took part in the exercises were well known in their day and have been favorably remembered ever since. The ordination sermon was by the Rev. Daniel Dana, D.D., of Newburyport, a son of the senior pastor. His text was the 26th verse of the 20th chapter of Acts. The installing prayer was by Rev. Robert Crowell, of Essex; the prayer of consecration by Rev. Samuel Dana; the concluding prayer by the Rev. Joseph B. Felt, of Ipswich; the address to the church and society by the Rev. Edward L. Parker, of Londonderry, N. H., the home pastor of Mr. Fitz; the right hand of fellowship by Rev. David T. Kimball of the First Congregational Church of Ipswich, and

[1] By Joseph B. Walker.

the charge to his young brother, by the senior pastor. The church had not had an ordination before for two generations, and the occasion was as interesting as it was solemn.

There occur in human life periods of intense interest which exact approbation and move the heart. It is a glorious hour when the soldier, in unselfish defense of his country, buckles on his harness and hies to scenes of peril. So is it when a venerable and able statesman, as regardless of the opposition of rank and numbers as of his own comfort, raises his voice in the parliament house of his nation in aid of the helpless, and spends his last strength in a desperate struggle for right, conscious the while that his tongue will be dumb in death when the pæan of victory is sounded. We follow with bated breath and admiration the modest figure of a Florence Nightingale as it moves noiselessly at midnight through dimly lighted hospital wards, now pausing to moisten the parched lips of the suffering, and anon to gently close the eyelids of the recent dead.

But a nobler than any of these is the sight of a young man, of clean hands and a pure heart, coming to God's altar for solemn consecration of himself to his chosen life-work of aiding his fellows in their efforts for delivery from the curse of sin. The warrior, the statesman, the philanthropist minister to social and physical needs, which are temporal; the priest at God's altar to spiritual wants which are eternal.

At the time of his ordination, Mr. Fitz was thirty-one years of age, in vigorous health and possessed of a sound mind in a sound body. His figure was of medium height, compact and firm. His complexion was dark, and his hair, which inclined to curl, was as black as the raven's wing. His eyes of a hue similar to that of his hair were soft and gave to his face when in repose a mild expression, which changed immediately to one of great earnestness when his mind was roused. He was of graceful manners, and easily and equally accessible to persons of all conditions. His mind, which was strong and well-balanced, working actively and incisively, reached correct conclusions, partly by reason and partly by instinct. His imagination, which was quick and enhanced the interest of his utterances, was kept in subjection to a calm judgment which rarely led him wrong. His quick sympathies made him appreciative of the real character of the person with whom he had to do, and protected him from the impositions to which a minister is often exposed. While naturally inclined to be much guided in his opinion by an abounding charity, he intuitively tempered these by a clear insight into the motive which underlaid proffered professions.

By descent Mr. Fitz was a Puritan. As above stated, the emigration of his Anglo-American ancestor, Robert Fitz, was due to his Puritan principles. Spiritual constraints, rather than physical discomforts, prompted this. In the latter respect he was no gainer by leaving home. No part of England possessed greater attractions than the one he abandoned. Devonshire, the "Emerald County," was a county of small farms, of pastures and cattle and dairies; of numerous streams and water-powers and forests. It possessed a fair soil and a good climate. It was near to the sea, and ever open to the southwest winds which floated over it continually, freighted with the mild winds and moisture of the gulf stream just before it loses itself in the Bay of Biscay—those winds which are a benediction to some of the southern counties of England; securing to them perpetual mildness of climate and a verdure unsurpassed.

The transition from which such a land to one upon which the Arctic current breathed even in summer, as yet in possession of savages and a wilderness, was as disheartening as it was marked. But great moral purposes afford a sustaining power which regards but little, either, hardship or danger or even death itself. So the Puritan left his old home and religious constraint upon the Tavy for a new one and freedom, three thousand miles away upon the bank of the Merrimac.

All the way down the succeeding generations of his family, we find apparent strong religious traits of character. Sarah Thorne Fitz, the great-great-grandmother of the subject of this sketch, displayed these in a very marked degree. She was a member of the first Ipswich Church, but lived in Salisbury, sixteen miles away. Tradition says that to enjoy its Sunday worship, she was accustomed at times, to rise very early in the morning, and, having milked her cows, to paddle across the Merrimac River to Newbury, whence she went on foot to Ipswich, arriving in season for the morning service. This journey was reversed in the afternoon and finished in season for the evening milking.

To anticipate a little, for the sake of convenience, it may be here said in regard to some of the religious opinions which he held in mature life, that Mr. Fitz received his theological training at Andover Theological Seminary, under the distinguished professors who had raised it to an eminent power in the land. He then accepted and ever held the doctrines there taught, which were in full accord with the orthodox branch of the Christian Church. But while he received these and held them firmly, he held them broadly. He had little sympathy with narrow interpretations of great truths, and was free from the uncharitableness which comes from the magnifying of minor points. While as a Calvinist he adopted Calvin's views, he yet took them with such modifications as more quiet times and a wider learning had suggested. But the deep, underlying foundation of his religious faith was the gospel of Jesus Christ. This he read and pondered all his life, and upon this rested his belief that the Son of God had made provision for the salvation of all and not for that of an elect few only. Hence, he urged all men to repent,

inasmuch, as faith and repentance made salvation possible to all.

He had little taste for polemical divinity, not very much for metaphysics, by which almost anything can be proved, and no admiration whatever for hair-splitting theorists. As was usual in his day, he preached doctrinal sermons from time to time for the instruction of his people, but with an unfeigned respect for the views of others from whom he differed upon unessential points. Both the conservative bent of his mind and his wide knowledge of mankind, led him naturally to this, as well as a native courtesy which never forsook him. But this was not the courtesy which weakness or timidity engenders. Fear was an emotion to which he was a stranger. If attacked, he was always ready to encounter heavy blows, and return them if necessary, not, however, from any love of contest, but from loyalty to what he deemed the right. Consequently, like most peace-loving men of like character, he was very rarely assailed.

Such was the ancestry, bent and religious training of the young minister, who, on the 26th day of June, 1826, stood upon the threshold of his career, gazing into a future which his dark eye could not penetrate, with faith and a hearty submission to the will of him to whom he had consecrated his every power.

But, he was not to go on far alone. Protestantism has never favored the celibacy of its clergy. It has rather made prominent the injunction of the great apostle that, "A bishop must be the husband of one wife." Mr. Fitz's parishioners could not consent that he should serve them unaided, and his own loving nature was in accord with their wishes.

The writer of this memorial sketch would be unworthy of his delicate trust, if he omitted a passing tribute to the gifted woman who soon after the pastor's installation became his wife. She was the oldest daughter of the Rev. Moses Sawyer, of Henniker, N. H., who, for nearly twenty-four years, had been the faithful pastor of the Congregational Church of that town, where she was born on the 8th day of May, 1804, and subsequently reared, amid the duties of a country ministerial life.

We omit all record of her earlier years, except to note that she received her higher education partly at Byfield Academy, then in charge of Rev. Joseph Emerson, and partly at Derry Female Academy, of which Miss Grant and Mary Lyon were the instructors.

After her graduation, she was herself a teacher until her marriage to Mr. Fitz, on the 5th day of September, 1826, transferred her from a New Hampshire School to a Massachusetts parsonage.

Mrs. Fitz brought to her new home a thorough knowledge of a New England pastor's wife. This she had acquired in the best of all schools, that of experience; and, from the lips and lives of the best of all teachers, those of her father and mother.

She possessed high mental endowments which had been enhanced in power by thorough training. She naturally took broad views of a subject, and had a ready insight to its vital points. Having the rare power to divest herself of all personal predilections, when her opinion was asked, and to look disinterestedly at the matter under consideration from all sides, she almost uniformly reached correct conclusions. She had common sense—the gift of God—in large measure. Courage she also had, and was undaunted in the presence of obstacles. Possessing executive and organizing ability, she was naturally a leader in her husband's parish; not from choice, but from the demands of her position and of her associates. Skillful was she in dissipating the apathies and in allaying the various frictions, not unfrequently present in society work; mingling love with energy and intuitively comprehending the various forces operating to advance or retard its progress.

Besides these qualities, the power of which time and experience greatly enhanced, to Mrs. Fitz was given great sweetness of disposition and marked comeliness of person. Natural grace of manner, and a charming affability, founded upon innate modesty and brilliancy of intellect, combined to give her presence an unusual attractiveness. Both at home and in society, these marked characteristics secured to her the popularity which usually attends upon the gifted and the good.

She was always accessible to all who would approach her. To the burdened soul which, in its perplexity confidentially sought her advice, she gave wise counsel mingled with the most delicate sympathy. The giddy and the wayward were rebuked so lovingly that they blessed in very gratitude the hand which chastened them. Her ministrations to the sick were abundant, and in her presence there was healing.

At the general assemblages at the parsonage from time to time, she dispensed hospitality mingled with grace and seasoned with love. The kindly glances of her dark eyes and the graceful pose of her attractive figure increased the fascination of her conversation. It was natural for her to be agreeable, and she knew not how to be otherwise. Indeed, Madame Rêcamiêr, in her splendid *salon*, surrounded by the beauty and talent of the French capital, never presided with more grace and sweetness than did she on those simple occasions. We must not be surprised, therefore, at the remark of one who knew her well, "She had never a peer in Ipswich."

For nearly forty years Mrs. Fitz discharged with great ability the double duties which she had assumed with her marriage ring. She was faithful to her family, and faithful to her husband's people, and when, in January, 1862, her pure spirit rose to companionship with "the just made perfect," and her mortal remains were lowered tenderly to their last rest, hot tears fell upon the cold ground, and hearts ached with a sorrow as lasting as life.

In about a year after his settlement, the death of Dr. Dana left Mr. Fitz sole pastor of his church and society. He accepted willingly the increase of labor which this event devolved upon him. He was fortunate in his people who were reasonable, peaceful and intelligent. Part of them resided in the village, and a part upon some of the hay farms for which Ipswich is so celebrated. They were not rich, yet poverty was unknown to them. They were blessed with that golden mean of life's condition for which the Hebrew sage so wisely besought his God.

With the acres of their forefathers, they had inherited the traditions of two hundred years or more. These were influencing and moulding their characters constantly. The generations of many of the families of Mr. Fitz's parish went back in unbroken succession to the foundation of the town. They were good old English stock, with hearts of oak; stock which had been improved by transplanting, and grew better continually. They were a people who feared God, and respected every man entitled to respect. No where outside of New England can such a community be found, a happy society of villagers and farmers which had flourished for two hundred years, without deterioration, upon a fertile tract of coast land, with three thousand miles of ocean in front of them, and three thousand miles of continent behind them. The ocean was, and had ever been, a blank. Over the continent the waves of new populations had been advancing continually, a hundred miles each decade, to meet ere long the great Pacific Sea, whose eastern billows wash the occident, and whose western breakers dash upon the shore of the orient. Yet the Ipswich farms were to change only to increased productiveness, and the village to wider borders and greater beauty.

Among this people Mr. Fitz went in and out, a welcome visitor at every house. He had come among them to stay. For better or worse they had taken him and he them, and the bond which united both in one was to endure as long as he lived. He soon learned their habits of life and thought, and so adjusted his ways to theirs, that he came into their sympathies and gained their confidence and love. Indeed, one of the most beautiful characteristics of his pastorate was the mutual affection and respect which ever existed between him and the people of his charge.

In labors for their good he abounded. He preached a carefully-written sermon the forenoon and afternoon of every Sunday, and conducted a less formal meeting for conference and prayer in the evening. Besides these, he held frequent week-day meetings in the rural parts of his parish, and for many years, as chaplain of the county almshouse, held there a Sunday morning service. Yet his strength failed not, and he never grew weary in his work. He had scarcely a vacation in all his life. His chief recreation was in the variation of his daily duties.

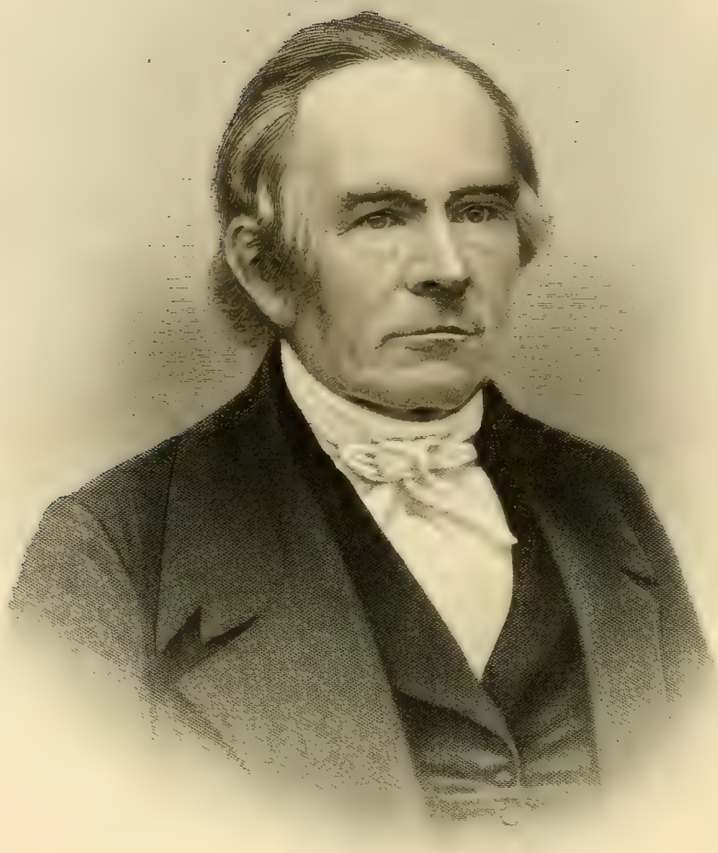
In his pulpit, his full figure clothed with scrupulous neatness, his dark eye and fine face enhanced the effect of his ministrations. His manner was simple and reverential. He never assumed familiarity with the Deity, but seemed to feel that it was a solemn thing to minister at God's altar, and to be deeply sensible of the responsibility of standing between Him and those he sought to aid.

His sermons were logical, lucid, earnest, practical. He drew his illustrations largely from sacred history. Whatever the subject discussed, the application was close and personal to every heart. The commonest individual could understand his message and retain in mind the truths uttered in his hearing. He was always animated, and at times eloquent. His prayers, which were filial, earnest and expectant, were prompted by his nice appreciation of the wants of those for whom he plead. He had a strong, clear, flexible voice, and so read the sacred scriptures that his simple reading became a luminous commentary to those who listened.

He could hardly be called a literary man; yet a perusal of some of his written sermons proves that he wielded a pen of much ability, evidently writing with fluency, and always with clearness and vigor. His reading was more extensive than that of the average minister of his time. Some of his discourses on special occasions, which have been published, and are models of their kind, afford evidence of the possession by their author of broad views and a well-trained mind. But his regular clerical duties absorbed his time, and to these he gave his strength.

Dr. Fitz understood perfectly the character of all his people, and how to influence them for good. Indeed, he measured their several capacities for excellence, and was reasonable in his expectations and patient. He attempted the possible only, but never sought the manifestly unattainable. Like all active clergymen, his course was at times through channels narrow and devious, with Scylla on one side and Charybdis on the other; yet he was never wrecked on either shore. An amusing incident, which occurred one Sunday morning during our late war, will illustrate his skill on such occasions. His people were divided in their sympathies for the two contending parties. As he was going out of church at the close of the service, a good deacon of democratic proclivities whispered sternly in his ear: "You were altogether too outspoken, sir, in your prayer this morning; your plainness of speech will give just offense." Farther down the aisle he encountered a second official of the same grade, who also whispered, as he passed him, "Too lukewarm, sir, too lukewarm, you didn't come come up to the mark." These conflicting assurances which offset one another, were answered by a silent smile, and in a few days both his friends were complaisant again.

Dr. Fitz mingled little in civil affairs, and probably never held a political office in all his life. But he took a deep interest in the general welfare, and with



James Appleton

unostentatious independence exercised his rights of citizenship. He rejoiced in the prosperity of his townsmen, and was always ready to aid, as he could, in the promotion of their interests. He did much for the improvement of the schools of Ipswich, and to the furtherance of all useful local enterprises, he never declined to lend a willing hand.

He possessed courage, and was rarely disheartened. But his was a courage based upon knowledge, guided by wisdom and sustained by activity. He believed that the realization of faith came from persistent effort, and that all hopes of success without this were vain.

But the most marked trait in his character was his abounding love for all mankind. It was the dominant quality of his nature. His appeals in behalf of the effete nations of the East manifested it, and this prompted his earnest calls in aid of the missionaries upon our Western frontier; thus laboring to mould into homogeneity and elevate to a higher manhood the discordant populations which have come to us from the nations beyond the sea. Everything which promised highest good to his fellow-men commanded at once his interest.

Particularly strong was his love for children, who, apprized of this by their unerring instincts, returned it in full measure. With their love they mingled respect, but never fear. Sober Ipswich never enjoyed a more charming sight than that of the sleigh of the good doctor, when carrying his children to their school, into which others had climbed, and piled one upon another, until it was full, and more than full. As he sped along as best he could, buried in this living load of clamorous joy, no heart beat happier than his own. Was all this a little thing and unimportant? It was a significant one, and thoughtful observers saw more than the animated pile, and remembered that childhood would soon grow to youth, and youth in a short time change to maturity, but, that the love then engendered would never grow cold, and the good counsels which it enfolded would never be forgotten.

It was his invariable custom when driving upon the road to invite any chance footman he might overtake to a seat in his carriage. One of his daughters has remarked that, when riding with her father, and up almost to the time when she considered herself a young lady, she had repeatedly been asked to sit in his lap to make room for some wayfarer whom he had never seen before and was most likely to never see again.

The soiled tramp who called at his door, ragged and redolent perhaps of whiskey, was always treated with kindness. He bore God's image upon his face, and that must be respected.

The ministry of Dr. Fitz was a successful one. His active pastorate lasted forty-one years. He and his predecessor, Dr. Joseph Dana, were the sole pastors of the church for a continuous period of one hundred and two years, a fact not easily paralleled. The records show that at the time of his settlement, its members numbered fifty-four and that three hundred and thirteen joined it while he held the sacred office. But the most important acts of his pastorate were not recorded upon the register of the church, but the hearts of his people, to be read only by the eye of Omniscience.

It was impossible that such a life, identified with all that was best in Ipswich, and flowing on for nearly half a century in a channel ever widening and ever deepening, should fail to be a power for good. It was impossible that its beneficent fame and influence should be restricted to the scene of its own labors. As the decades came in and went out, one after another, Dr. Fitz became more and more widely known. Neighboring parishes in their perplexities sought his counsel. To pulpits more important than his own, he was invited for exchanges of ministrations. In 1862 his *Alma Mater*, in recognition of his merit, conferred upon him a degree of Doctor of Divinity. He rose into high esteem among his brethren in the ministry, and became at length an honored father in their midst.

But his heart of hearts remained where it had ever been, and clung closest to the people he was ordained to serve. His settlement had been for life. With the union then formed both parties were satisfied, and never wished it sundered. So it continued on until his strong arm began to weaken, and physical infirmity compelled a surrender of his sacred trust. In 1867 he resigned the active duties of his ministry. For two years longer, in declining health, he went about among those he had loved so long, until, on the second day of September, 1869, "he was not; for God took him." His manly form was laid before the altar at which he had ministered, and his friend, Dr. Pike, of Rowley, comforted as well as he could the sad hearts which had gathered around. From the church it was borne to the cemetery near by, and laid to sleep in the company of dear ones gone on before,—there to rest until "this mortal shall have put on immortality, and Death is swallowed up in victory."

GENERAL JAMES APPLETON.

Among those who have done good and signal service in the cause of temperance, the name of the late James Appleton, of Massachusetts, should be held most gratefully and most tenaciously in remembrance by all who have faith in the expediency and the necessity of a prohibitory liquor law. It was he who first publicly maintained—as most, if not all, who believe in total abstinence now maintain is the logical outcome of the temperance movement—that legislation has nothing whatever to do with moral evil except to aim at its complete suppression. If this is to be the legislative policy of the future as to

the traffic in intoxicating drinks, as it already is that of several of the States, it is interesting to trace that policy to its source, and to learn something of the man who first promulgated it.

James Appleton was born in 1786 on the farm in Ipswich, Mass., granted to his ancestor, Samuel Appleton, in 1636; to this home he returned in his old age, when the work of his life was finished, and there he died in 1862. For many years his home was in the neighboring town of Marblehead, and for twenty years, from 1833 to 1853, he resided in Portland, Me. But wherever he lived he was known and esteemed for his interest and energy in public affairs, and was looked up to as a born leader of men. Though a Federalist in politics, he gave his services, as a colonel of a regiment, to his country when it became involved in a second war with England in 1812. Those old enough to remember the earlier days of the anti-slavery movement, if they know anything about it or those engaged in it, will recall the name of General Appleton as conspicuous in that little band of men and women, who, like their great leader, would not equivocate, who would not retreat a single inch, who would be heard and who were not afraid. Nor was he less earnest in upholding the saving grace of total abstinence from all intoxicating drinks; but that doctrine, even half a century ago, had so grown into popular favor that the most zealous on its behalf were not easily distinguished in the multitude of its apostles, nor has the memory of them been so carefully preserved.

But it was James Appleton, as chairman of a legislative committee to which had been referred a petition in regard to the license laws of Maine, made a report, herewith published, which would in time be recognized as the beginning of a new and auspicious era in the temperance reform. Its argument was that inasmuch as "it is now ascertained, not only that the traffic is attended with most appalling evils to the community, but that ardent spirit is entirely useless —that it is an *unmitigated evil*," the committee, therefore, were "not only of opinion that the law giving the right to sell ardent spirits should be repealed, but that a law should be passed to *prohibit* the traffic in them, except so far as the arts or the practice of medicine may be concerned."

But the legislative report, though the most complete, was not the earliest attempt made by General Appleton for the suppression by law of all traffic in ardent spirits. It is remembered in his family that he dated his convictions upon the subject from the year 1831. It came to him—when listening to an earnest debate in the Massachusetts Legislature, of which body he had been a member—as a sudden revelation, as a discovery in morals, that the way to stop intemperance was to stop it. If the drinking of spirits was always wrong and dangerous, and the source of all the monstrous evils charged to it, then it was not to be tolerated, nor dallied with by license laws, but put an end to. If there was no liquor, there would be no drunkenness; if the sale was made illegal, the traffic in it and the use of it would become disgraceful as well as dangerous. It might not, indeed, be possible to suppress it altogether and at once by act of the Legislature; but, as an argument, this was just as true of the laws against murder, arson, forgery, theft, or any other acknowledged crime, which bad men would still commit in defiance of the law.

Though persuaded in his own mind that he had discovered the true remedy for the monstrous evil, the first application he proposed was tentative and indirect; not that he wanted faith in the perfect efficacy of that remedy, but he doubted if the public mind was yet ready for heroic treatment. Accordingly, he prepared a petition to the Massachusetts Legislature—this was before he removed to Portland, and when he was residing at Marblehead—praying that the sale of liquor in any quantity less than thirty gallons be forbidden by law.

The proposition was clearly meant as the first step toward absolute prohibition; indeed there was no pretence in the petition of concealing the hope of its author that a limitation of the sale of ardent spirits to a minimum of thirty gallons would take from the large majority of drunkards all chance of getting drunk. The purchase of rum in so large a quantity would be beyond their means, while the moderate drinker who could afford it would easily and almost unconsciously abandon a habit, unless very firmly fixed, which called for more forethought and larger immediate outlay than the gratification was worth.

But even this compromise aroused more opposition than probably General Appleton was prepared for. The agent of the Massachusetts Temperance Society, a Rev. Mr. Hildreth, pounced upon it at once as a mischievous measure. His notion evidently was that among the "inalienable rights" of man was the right to rum. He fairly represented the timid public opinion of that day, which in the temperance, as in the anti-slavery, movement, shrunk from any denunciation in "harsh language" of a popular wrong, and from any proposed remedy that would be pronounced "radical." Moral suasion" was the cant phrase of the time, and if there were a few tender souls—Mr. Hildreth may have been one of them—who used the term in its true sense, with the multitude it only meant that they would not tolerate any onslaught upon evil which reflected upon respectable sinners, was likely to open their eyes and bring them to repentance.

The letter of Mr. Hildreth and that of another writer, who signs himself "Danvers," show the spirit in which General Appleton's moderate proposal was met. He was quick to reply whether to argument or cavil, and in three clear and forcible letters signed "Essex," to be found in the *Salem Gazette* of February, 1832, he sets forth his reasons for



Charles Winchell

the faith that is in him, and the real object he had in view in the petition. On one point, however, he acknowledged his error, and accepted, in his own way, the rebuke of his opponents. He ought not, he confessed, to have asked the Legislature for a limitation in the traffic in ardent spirits, whether to thirty gallons or any other quantity. The trade, it was plain to him now, should be not regulated, but prohibited. The opposition he had aroused was an evidence of the foolishness of any proposed compromise between right and wrong. He meant prohibition, and ought to have said so directly, rather than have condescended to an expedient which pleased nobody and would deceive but few. "I made a great mistake," he said to a member of his family—"a great mistake." And this he publicly reiterates, it will be observed, in a postscript to his third and final letter,—"We wish the prayer of the petition had been without any qualification, for its authors, we believe, intended the absolute prohibition of the traffic, as their argument abundantly evinces." But here was the end of the matter. Perhaps he had gained all he had hoped for in provoking some discussion of the subject, and it is doubtful if the petition, which probably nobody but himself would have signed, was ever presented to the Legislature.

Here for the first time prohibitory legislation was proposed, though with no other immediate result, apparently, than to convince its author that the opposition to it would be formidable, if not insurmountable. He may have been for a time discouraged, but he was not defeated. He knew he was right, and he had learned, moreover, a lesson of practical value. If ever again he could make an opportunity to urge his principles upon any legislative body, there should be no mistake of a want of directness in his method.

Meanwhile he had removed to Portland, and in 1836 he was elected a member to the Maine Legislature. The opportunity he had waited for came when a petition on the license laws was referred to a Committee of which he was chairman. He could speak now with a certain authority, and did not need, even were he so minded, to appeal to public attention by the suggestion of an indirect and experimental measure. The whole subject was, no doubt, much clearer in his mind than when he put forth his thirty gallons petition, and he was ready to meet the unbelieving or the timid at all possible points of difficulty or objection. He covers the ground so completely, presents his argument so frankly, confidently and forcibly, that the report might go before any State Legislature to-day as an exhaustive presentation of the whole question of prohibition.

The report, of course, was laid upon the table, and it is not remembered whether it gave rise to any debate. Very likely not; for doubtless to most, if not all, of the honorable members, it seemed as preposterous as it was novel, and not even worth talking about. Nevertheless, "The Maine Law" was born then and there, though it was not till nine years later that the first tentative act was passed as the beginning of prohibitory legislation. The years of agitation and discussion which preceded and prepared the way for legislation also had a beginning, and there is neither record, nor tradition, nor memory of the oldest inhabitant that can trace it beyond the Appleton Report to the Maine Legislature of 1836–37, unless it be to the Appleton petition to the Massachusetts Legislature of 1832. But both came from the same man, and together they leave nothing more to be said as to the question of the origin of this special temperance policy. James Appleton, as a private citizen of Massachusetts, publicly suggested in 1832 the wisdom of a prohibitory liquor law, and in 1837 the same James Appleton, as a member of the Maine Legislature, urged upon that body the enactment of such a law. When at last, in 1851, the "Maine Law," as it now stands upon the statute-books of the State, was passed, it was a fitting recognition of his early devotion to the principle of prohibition that he, among others, should have been called upon to aid in the preparation of the act.

He lived to see ten years of the enforcement of the perfected law in Maine and in other States. It was, in spirit and purpose, of his own devising, and he would sometimes speak at his own fireside with natural pride and profound thankfulness of the result of his work. But he left it to others to show at some future time how much was due to his foresight, his keen moral sense and his courage.

The following is the inscription on the stone over General Appleton's grave in Ipswich:

"A Philanthropist, a Patriot and a Christian."

He served his fellow-men, his country and his God by laboring for the emancipation of the American slave.

HON. CHARLES KIMBALL.

Charles Kimball was born in Ipswich, Mass., on December 24, 1798. His parents were Jeremiah and Lois Kimball. Twelve children were born to them, of whom he was the youngest. His mother was of the Choate family, of Essex, made famous by the "great Rufus." His father was a lineal descendant of Richard Kimball, who came from Ipswich, England, in 1634, the same year in which its namesake on this side of the water began its existence as a body corporate. This ancestor located in Watertown, Mass., but three years later, 1637, removed to Ipswich, and there made a permanent settlement; and from that date to the present the male line in Ipswich has been unbroken. The father of Charles, like his progenitors, was of sturdy mould, and "honest, manly and efficient." Of the twelve children, five of them attained the age of more than eighty years, two of them the age of seventy-five or more, one the age of ninety-one and another the age of

ninety-seven, a remarkable record of longevity for one single family. In 1815, when Charles was sixteen years old, he entered the office of Nathaniel Lord, Jr. (who married his sister Eunice, and who was the father of the late Judge Otis P. Lord), in Ipswich, then register of probate, and at the same time became a member of his family. He began active life with few educational privileges, but the head of the family in which he made his home was a graduate of Harvard College, a man of letters, of exact knowledge and accurate business methods, and of the advantages these afforded he fully availed himself. In 1827 he was elected colonel of one of the militia regiments from the office of adjutant, the latter being equal, only in rank, to the modern lieutenant, a very marked promotion, and the cause of many heart-burnings at the time, but soon forgotten, as his special fitness for the position became apparent. His precision and promptness in the discharge of his duties was readily acknowledged, and his dignified and soldierly bearing and easy and graceful horsemanship won many commendations. In 1830 he voluntarily resigned this office, but the title followed him through life. In 1829 he married Mary Ann Outein. Her father was of French origin; her mother of New England birth. Three children were the fruit of this union, two sons and one daughter. The elder son, Charles A., was a lawyer, and died at the age of thirty-eight; and the daughter died at the age of thirty-five. Both were unmarried. The surviving son, Edward P., is a lawyer, and at present postmaster, and resides at the homestead. The wife and mother was a woman of great intelligence, of remarkable simplicity of character, of earnest, sincere piety, faithful in her conjugal relations and her filial duties, and self-sacrificing to the last degree in her devotion to her family. In 1836 he was elected to the State Senate, and served therein till 1840, the Hon. Edward Everett being then Governor. This was also a marked honor, as he had had no previous legislative experience. From 1841 to 1847 he was county commissioner, and perhaps the highest compliment ever paid him was that of one of his associates on this board who remarked that he "never saw a man so anxious to know and do the right." In politics he was a Whig, but upon the dissolution of that party, he, like many other conservatives, associated himself with the Democracy. In 1851 he was candidate for State Treasurer. In politics, as in everything else, he acted from conviction and principle. He held, at different times, various town offices; was selectman one year, School Committee man and clerk and treasurer of two boards of trustees of educational funds for many years, and for thirty or more consecutive years moderator of town meetings. In 1851, on the retirement of Mr. Lord from the office of register of probate, he established an office in Salem. He had been all this time acquiring a knowledge of probate law, and had become well known throughout the county as a practitioner in the Probate Courts of rare skill and experience. In 1858, at the age of fifty-nine, on the petition of Judge Perkins, Wm. C. Endicott, Wm. D. Northend and others of mark in the profession, he was admitted to the bar, a very high compliment to his ability, learning and personal worth, and unique in itself. Hitherto in all his cases before the courts, except the Probate Court, he had been obliged to call to his aid some member of the bar; but now a wider field of practice was open to him, and from that date to the close of his business career, he devoted himself assiduously to his profession. On the 10th day of December, 1877, at the age of seventy-nine, he suddenly lost, while in his office, all capacity for business. In a moment the power of connected thought was gone. Everything became one confused mass in his mind, and in this condition he remained to the day of his death, November 30, 1880. It was not alone in business that he was active. In 1830 he united with the South Congregational Church, in Ipswich, and to its spiritual welfare gave much of his time and thought. He served on church and parish committees, was superintendent of the Sabbath-school for over forty-five years, and in 1868 was chosen deacon. He *understood* the creed of his church, and could and did stoutly maintain it against all antagonism. He was versed in ecclesiastical law, and was prominent in Ecclesiastical Councils, notably, the famous one at Manchester, in the deliberations of which he took an active and leading part. He prepared a paper on ecclesiastical law, which he read before the Essex Congregational Club, and which was regarded as a valuable contribution to this difficult and occult branch of legal lore. On the occasion of his funeral, which was largely attended by the people of the town and many others, including members of the bar, his pastor, the Rev. T. F. Waters, preached a discourse which was a discriminating analysis of his life and character, and a glowing tribute to his sterling worth.

At the December Term of the Supreme Court, 1880, resolutions in memoriam were offered by the Hon. Wm. D. Northend, seconded by James Gillis, Esq., and responded to by his Honor, Judge Bacon, the presiding judge, and by him ordered to be entered on the records of the court.

Such is the mere outline of this long and useful life. While the record speaks for itself, behind it lies the secret of his success. Slow and patient toil, close application and an absorbing interest in his work, led him, step by step, thro' rugged paths to the standing in his profession which he attained. Unlike the majority of the profession, he entered upon his work without any knowledge derived from the text-books. He learned first in the school of experience, and then he sought the books, and they accompanied him in his labors. His keen observation, quick perception, logical acumen and retentive memory, enabled him to build on a sure basis and to acquire an



John M. Bradbury

accurate and precise knowledge of the law. The bare routine, the mere knowing how to do a thing, did not satisfy him. He must know the theory, the underlying principle of every legal rule, and he delved deep till he found it. With the law relating to real estate, to trusts and matters in equity, with their technicalities and fine distinctions, he was specially familiar. In the drafting of wills and in all matters pertaining to probate law and practice, he was regarded as authority. His clientage included every town in the county. For sound and judicious advice and delicate and intricate business he was sought after. He became an instructor of those who desired to practice in the Probate Courts, and many are they who owe all their knowledge of probate matters to his tuition. His name was frequently mentioned in connection with the judgeship of the Probate Court. The late Judge White, of that court, said of him, "No man was better fitted than Col. Kimball for Judge of Probate." His qualifications for the position were generally recognized, and he probably would have been so appointed if he had urgently pressed his own claim. This his sense of propriety forbade. While his business life covered a period of sixty-three years, during which he never took a vacation, and his professional services were in constant demand he yet found time for other duties. He responded to every call of the church, the parish, the town or larger community. Whatever he did he aimed to do with care and exactness. His standard was of the highest. He allowed no opportunity for mental or moral advancement to escape him. He was of an intense religious nature. As the Constitution was his guide in civil life, so were the Scriptures his guide in moral action. He was true to his convictions, possessed of great moral courage, and when he had once determined upon the right nothing could swerve him from his course of action. He had the confidence of his fellow-men. They felt safe with him.

He was prominent in every public gathering of the citizens of his native town. He presided over their meetings with efficiency, impartiality, ease and dignity. His self-possession never forsook him. He was a natural leader of men.

In temperament he was moderate and cautious. His sense of humor was keen, and in repartee he was always ready.

In disposition he was kindly and sympathetic, generous and liberal in every good cause, and his deeds of charity were numerous and at the same time unostentatious. He loved his family, his home and the town.

In person, he was of large stature, well proportioned, erect figure, commanding presence and dignified bearing.

In the closing years of his life, when the chain of thought was broken, and the affairs of the world which once engaged his attention had become a myth to him, his religious principles had been so firmly grounded, and his religious observances so habitual, that they remained clear and distinct in his otherwise clouded intellect, and still controlled his thought and action. He went regularly to the sanctuary and to the weekly meetings, and often spoke on religious subjects with intelligence and force. During the last week of his life his constant plea was to "go home," and thither he has gone, leaving behind him a fragrant memory and a shining example of fidelity, integrity and worth.

JOHN MERRILL BRADBURY.

John Merrill Bradbury, born in Newburyport October 29, 1818, was son of Hon. Ebenezer and Mrs. Nancy (Merrill) Bradbury. Major Bradbury, the father, was one of the prominent men of the town for many years, noted for his intelligence, public spirit and genial temper, and for his interest in the public schools of the town. He was frequently entrusted with public office, representing Newburyport in the legislature in various years, from 1828 to 1847, at which time he was chosen speaker of the House of Representatives. In 1845 and 1846 he was a member of the executive council, and in 1849 he was chosen treasurer of the commonwealth, which office he held for two years. In 1853 he was delegate from the town of Newton to the Constitutional Convention, and was later judge of the Municipal Court in the town of Milford, filling all the offices with which he was entrusted with ability, and winning the confidence of all who knew him.

The subject of this sketch was a worthy son of such a father, and it was a family which had been prominent in New England. The earliest immigrant ancestor was Thomas Bradbury, who came to New England in the year 1634 as the agent of Sir Ferdinando Gorges, and after a few years' residence at Agamenticus, now York, Maine, settled in Salisbury, Mass., where he was long prominent in the affairs of the town, county and colony. "His hand-writing, preserved in the colony records, has been admired for clearness, elegance and force, having no superior in our colonial archives. In every generation of his descendants there has been one or more prominent in public office." There are strong reasons for believing that Thomas Bradbury, of Salisbury, was a son of Wymond Bradbury, of Wicken Bonant in Essex, of the same family as Sir Thomas Bradbury, who, in 1500, was mayor of London, and that his mother was a niece of Archbishop Whitgift.

Mr. Bradbury's youth was spent in his native town, where he received a good English and classical education at the public schools, and also at the Dummer Academy in the adjoining town of Newbury, while this institution was under the charge of Nehemiah Cleveland, LL.D., recently deceased. In Newburyport he was, at one time, a pupil of Albert Pike, the poet, lawyer and confederate general, who, in his old age, is a resident of the capital of the country.

One of his earliest schoolmates and most intimate friends was Rev. George Wildes, D.D., who was in the same class in the High School, in the Latin Department of which, under Roger S. Howard, they occupied neighboring desks and formed a life-long friendship, and Dr. Wildes said of his friend that the sight of a mathematical problem was to him an inspiration, that he was well grounded in historical studies and had a love for the English classics.

In April, 1835, in his seventeenth year, Mr. Bradbury entered Dickinson College at Carlisle, Penna., where he studied three years, leaving college in April, 1838, after completing his junior year. On leaving college he visited Philadelphia, but soon returned to his native town, and engaged in teaching for several years.

On the 28th of August, 1843, he was married at Gloucester to Miss Sarah Ann Hayes, daughter of Daniel and Abigail (Sargent) Hayes, a lady of cultivated tastes, who appreciated and encouraged his studies, and made his home pleasant and attractive.

In May, 1849, he went to Boston, and soon after received an appointment to the second clerkship in the State Treasury, and on the resignation of the chief clerk, in December, 1850, he was advanced to fill the vacancy. Very soon after this promotion, he engaged with Messrs. Gilmore, Blake and Ward, bankers, as their accountant, which position he held through various changes of the firm to the summer of the year 1868, when his interest in the house ceased, and he retired with a competent fortune. Mr. Bradbury's tastes and attainments fitted him for the banking business, and he applied himself assiduously to its duties, but during his leisure hours he cultivated his literary tastes, his favorite reading, his history and belles-lettres.

Joseph E. Brown, Esq., of New York, who was in the banking-house with him, wrote the following, which characterizes him in his business:

"Mr. Bradbury's mind was eminently of a mathematical and analytical cast; and in almost every conversation and discussion, whether upon literature, art, science, or religion, the tendency to analyze was apparent. Mr. Blake used to say frequently, that Mr. Bradbury understood the relations of figures better than any man he knew; and the facility he displayed in mathematical calculation was surprising. The following incident will illustrate. On one occasion, the State of Massachusetts, being about to issue a new loan, submitted, through the State Treasurer, certain questions, the answers to which involved some very nice calculations. In order to secure accuracy in the matter, Mr. Blake handed the questions to three clerks, Mr. Bradbury, Mr. Harris and myself, and requested that we work out the problems independently. The following morning Mr. Harris and myself appeared each with a formidable bundle of paper containing our calculations. Mr. Bradbury, however, quietly took from his pocket two half sheets of note paper, on which he had worked out, by the use of logarithms, the problems which had cost his junior clerks quires of paper and the midnight oil. He had frequent recourse to algebraic solutions of problems.

"On one occasion, the examination of a foreign account, embracing many hundreds of items, resulted in a discrepancy of just one penny. I think Mr. Bradbury and myself devoted the greater part of ten days to a vain search for the error, so that finally, utterly vexed and out of patience, I threw down the account declaring that I would pursue the matter no further. I remember distinctly the unruffled manner of our friend on taking up the account and saying, "Joseph, the error is somewhere, and can be found." He quietly, and I need hardly say successfully, continued the examinations."

In September, 1868, Mr. Bradbury, accompanied by his wife, took passage for Europe. They travelled in England, Scotland, Ireland, France, Italy, the Tyrol, Switzerland, Germany and Belgium. In London they met his friend and correspondent, the late Horatio G. Somerby, Esq., like himself a native of Newburyport, who was of much assistance in directing them to the points of interest to be visited, and in whose society they spent many pleasant evenings during their stay in that city. Soon after Mr. Bradbury's arrival, he obtained, through Mr. Somerby, a reader's ticket at the British Museum, and, at a later period, to the department of Literary Inquiry in the principal registry of Her Majesty's Court of Probate, commonly called Doctors' Commons. After he had become weary with sight-seeing, he spent much time in historical and genealogical research at these two institutions.

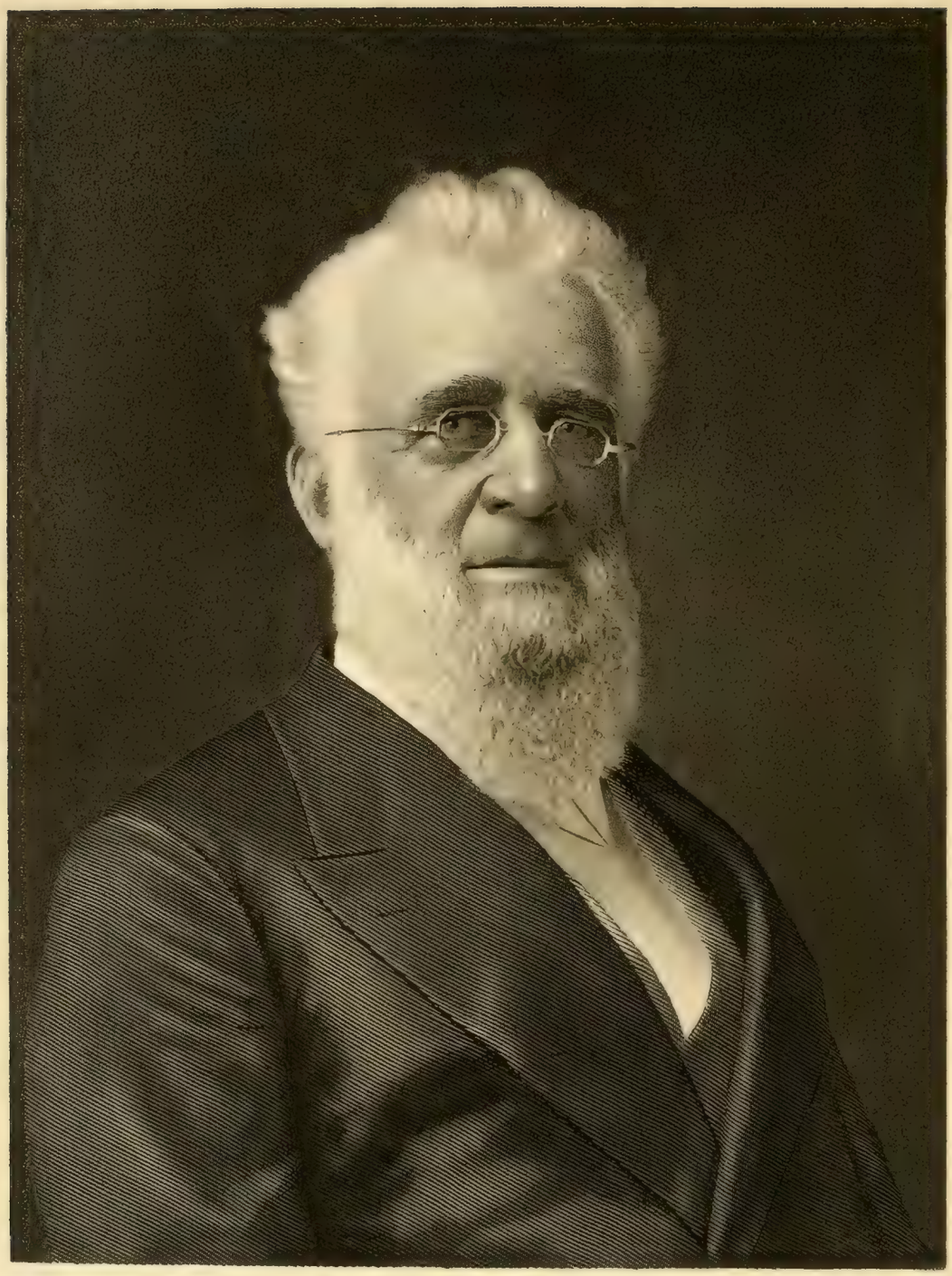
While at London he made several excursions into the country, especially to places where his ancestors lived or which had a special interest to Americans,—Boston, in Lincolnshire, and Wicken Bonant, in Essex, where his emigrant ancestor is supposed to have been born.

On the 18th of November, 1868, Mr. Bradbury left London, and the same evening arrived in Paris, where he remained till the following spring, and then returned to London. On the 31st of August he again left London on a brief tour. After travelling a few weeks in Ireland and Scotland he returned to England, arriving in York on the 23d of September. As several of the early settlers of Essex County, from whom he had descended, came from Yorkshire, he remained there nearly a week, employing much of his time in genealogical researches. From York he went to Hull, and also visited other places in the country of genealogical interest to an Essex man, and on his way to London he spent one day in Oxford.

The following winter he visited the continent and saw Rome and Naples, and ascended Vesuvius, returning to England in the autumn. In the spring of 1870 a lameness came upon him which at first he did not suppose to be serious, but it was more than the sprain which he considered it, and resulted in the necessity of amputating his foot.

He returned to this country in July, 1871, and resided in Boston till the next spring, when he purchased an estate in Ipswich, where he resided till his death. His residence was near the summit of Town Hill, from which the fine view is obtained, which his friend, the Rev. Mr. Nason, paints in such vivid colors. Here he died on Tuesday morning, March 21, 1876, in his fifty-eighth year, leaving a widow but no children.

In his will he left one thousand dollars to his native city, for the benefit of its public library, and two thousand dollars and certain stock securities to the



Yours Truly
R. S. Rust.

New England Historic Genealogical Society. Both these bequests have been funded and named "The Bradbury Fund."

Mr. Bradbury was admitted a resident member of the New England Historic Genealogical Society, April 11, 1853, and in 1863 he made himself a life-member. From 1863 to 1867 he served on the committee on finance, and from 1867 to 1870 was one of the board of directors. In 1860 his eminent fitness for the position induced the nominating committee to tender him the office of treasurer, and he took the matter into consideration, but finally decided that he would not have the requisite leisure to perform the duties of the office. He was also a member of the Prince Society of Boston, and the Essex Institute of Salem.

Mr. Bradbury published "The Bennet Family of Ipswich," and "The Whitgift-Bradbury Family," "A Memoir of Horatio Gates Somerby," and a number of shorter articles in the *Historical and Genealogical Register*. No better summing up of the character and tastes of Mr. Bradbury can be given than that of his friend, Charles W. Tuttle, Esq., who has himself since died, and who was a man of rare discrimination though ardent in his friendships. Mr. Tuttle says:

"I became acquainted with the late Mr. Bradbury while I was living in Newburyport about twenty years ago. His intelligence, frankness, and gentle manners attracted me to him at once; and I saw much of him after I came to Boston, where he was then living.

"While he was familiar with a wide range of subjects, being a constant reader, there were two on which he most frequently discoursed with me. Of astronomy he had considerable knowledge, having been drawn to that science by his early fondness for mathematics. He watched its progress with more than ordinary interest, and was acquainted with the names and discoveries of the great observers throughout the world.

"But his chief delight and interest were in the history and antiquities of New England. He had a keen relish for antiquarian research, and never lost an opportunity to add to his stock of this kind of information. He was as familiar as one could well be with the local history of both banks of the Merrimac River where the early settlements were made. His ancestors for six and seven generations had lived and died there, and he knew the history of each generation with marvellous accuracy and fullness. He had gathered local traditions and examined ancient records till he was master of the history and genealogy of all, or nearly all, of the old families between Haverhill and Plumb Island.

"In these researches he was careful and exact beyond any one I ever knew. A result was carefully weighed, and only the highest degree of probable evidence would satisfy him of its being true. This fastidiousness, the consequence of mathematical training, prevented his quickly arriving at results satisfactory to him, and giving to the world many things he had undertaken. A retentive and exact memory greatly facilitated his investigations.

"While in England, and suffering from severe lameness, he found time to write several letters giving me information which he had copied from ancient records, of persons of my surname who had died there in the fore part of the seventeenth century, and telling me of his wanderings in that merry land. These letters show how ardently he was pursuing his inquiries, and how thoroughly he was enjoying his rambles among the venerable antiquities of England, especially any connected with our New England forefathers.

"Mr. Bradbury was a man of large practical common sense. There was no petty jealousy in his composition. He was serene under all circumstances. He loved peace and minded his own affairs. I remember, with mingled feelings of pleasure and sadness, how cheerful and happy he was in his pleasant home in Boston where he always was when not at his office; how he made every one welcome there, and how like a benediction his politeness and hospitality were. I am sure all who had the pleasure of his acquaintance revere his memory."

RICHARD SUTTON RUST, A.M., D.D., LL.D.[1]

Mr. Rust is one of the most energetic, enthusiastic and successful ministers of the Methodist Episcopal Church; and in the varied official positions to which he has been called has rendered valuable service and exhibited rare executive ability in the administration of affairs intrusted to his care. He was born in Ipswich, Mass., September 12, 1815. His mother, from whom he inherited many of his traits of character, was a woman of deep piety and superior attainments, the daughter of Richard Sutton, distinguished among his townsmen for integrity, independence and intelligence. He was left an orphan, his father dying when he was eight years old, and his mother when he was ten, leaving him no patrimony but a parentage spotless and revered. One of his uncles, residing in Portsmouth, N. H., gave him a year's schooling, where he first formed a taste for study, which never forsook him. Another uncle gave him a home till he was fourteen, during which time he was compelled to work hard upon a farm, with only three months' schooling each winter. He was then apprenticed to learn a cabinet-maker's trade, and at the end of three years, yearning for school and more congenial pursuits, purchased the balance of the apprenticeship, and entered Phillips' Academy, Andover, Mass., to prepare for college.

While at Andover, the distinguished abolition lecturer, George Thompson, of England, visited Phillips' Academy and lectured to the students on slavery. With his wonderful eloquence, wit and logic the students were charmed, and a large number of them became abolitionists and formed an anti-slavery society. The teachers were displeased at this action, and required the students to leave the anti-slavery society or the academy. Nearly one hundred of them, rather than to give up their principles and rights, left the school; some went into the anti-slavery field as lecturers, and others to institutions where freedom of thought and speech could be enjoyed. Young Rust, with several others, went to Canaan, N. H., where an academy had been established upon liberal principles, and where young men and women of color were allowed to enter and enjoy the advantages of culture. So bitter was the opposition to this school, because it extended its privileges alike to all without distinction of color, that the mandate went forth that it must be broken up, and the farmers in the vicinity, with a hundred yokes of oxen, drew the academy more than a mile out of town into the woods and broke up the school!

Our young friend finished his preparatory studies at the Wilbraham Academy, and in 1837 entered the

[1] From the Ohio Encyclopædia.

Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., where he was graduated in 1841, and received the degree of Master of Arts in 1844. In 1859 he received the honorary degree of Doctor of Divinity from the Wesleyan University at Delaware, Ohio. While in college he paid his expenses by teaching and lecturing winters. He was one of the first anti-slavery lecturers in Connecticut, and in New Haven County was mobbed repeatedly while delivering lectures against slavery. He aided the ladies in organizing the First Anti-Slavery Fair at Hartford, Conn., and published for that occasion "Freedom's Gift," an annual of anti-slavery poems and prose. The great anti-slavery struggle reached its height as he came to his manhood, and he did valiant service in the good cause, and was a pioneer in the Methodist Episcopal Church in this grand conflict. In 1842 he was principal of Ellington School, Connecticut; in 1843, principal of Middletown High School. In 1844 he joined the New England Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and was stationed at Springfield, Mass.; in 1846 he was stationed at Worcester, Mass.

During the next five years Mr. Rust passed through one of the most interesting periods of his life. He originated and published the "American Pulpit," was transferred to the New Hampshire Conference, was principal of the New Hampshire Conference Seminary and Female College, and was elected State Commissioner of Common Schools for New Hampshire for three years. He delivered popular lectures on education all over the State, awakened the deepest interest in the schools, assailed with wit, sarcasm and invectives the miserable old school-houses, and did a grand work in introducing into New Hampshire good school-houses, teachers' institutes and an improved system of common-school education.

In 1859 Dr. Rust was transferred from the scenes of his early struggles and triumphs to the Cincinnati Conference. The name and character of the man preceded him in the West, and he was at once welcomed to active service in the leading enterprises of the church. He was four years president of the Wilberforce University, at Xenia, Ohio, after which he became pastor of Morris Chapel, Cincinnati, where he was elected president of the Wesleyan Female College, Cincinnati, where he remained until the old college was sold and vacated, and the school was suspended until the new college could be erected. He was corresponding secretary of the Western Freedmen's Aid Commission, and in connection with Bishops Clark and Walden, aided in the organization of the Freedmen's Aid Society of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and for the last twenty years has been its corresponding secretary, and has discharged its duties with such marked efficiency and ability as to meet the highest commendation of the whole church. The society under the administration of Dr. Rust, has established and sustained in central locations in the South thirty institutions of learning, styled seminaries, colleges or universities, for the training of teachers and preachers for the elevation of this long-neglected race, so lately admitted to all the rights and duties of American citizens. For the successful management of this important educational work, the subject of this sketch, by his deep, long, life interest in this people, his attainments as a scholar, his previous experience as an educator and shrewd business habits, was pre-eminently fitted, and the results achieved by this society have exceeded the highest anticipations of its friends.

Dr. Rust was successful as a pastor, a fine writer and an impressive preacher; pre-eminent as an educator, possessing great power over the young of awakening them to high and noble purpose; and there are but few men in this country who have aided in educating so many of her youth who now fill important positions in society and wield so great influence for Christ and the right. In his boyhood he espoused the cause of the slave, labored for his emancipation, and his mature life, attainments and ample means are consecrated to the preparation of this emancipated people for the appropriate discharge of the important duties imposed upon them by freedom, so that liberty may prove a blessing rather than a curse to them. As a Christian philanthropist, he has done his noblest work, and for this by a grateful people he will be held in remembrance.

The society is now, under the supervision of Dr. Rust, establishing a system of schools for the benefit of whites similar to what it has done for the colored people. Little Rock and Chattanooga Universities and ten seminaries as feeders have been established and superintended by the Freedman's Aid Society, and the venerable Dr. Rust still remains as the efficient administrator of its affairs.

COL. YORICK G. HURD, M.D.

Col. Hurd was the eldest son of Col. Smith and Mehitable (Emerson) Hurd, and was born in Lempster, Sullivan County, N. H., February 17, 1827.

In the early days of the settlement of the town of Lempster, Uzzel (or "Squire," as he was best known) and his brother, Shubael Hurd, made settlement.

Shubael and his wife coming on horseback from Connecticut to the farm, which is still retained in the family. He was the first deacon of the First Congregational Church, organized November 13, 1781, and was widely known as "Deacon Hurd."

As a fruit of the second marriage of Deacon Hurd with Mrs. Smith (*nee* Ames, and one of the Fisher Ames family), two sons were born, viz: Smith and Justus (physician).

The former husband of Mrs. Hurd was Robert Smith, of Peterboro, N. H. (a brother of Judge Jeremiah Smith), to whom were born three sons, viz: Robert, Stephen and Jesse (physician) Smith.





Col. Smith Hurd, son of Shubael, was born in Lempster, N. H., in 1804, and married Mehitable Emerson.

Col. Hurd died in March, 1877, but his wife is still living, at the age of eighty-three and in the enjoyment of good health.

Col. Smith Hurd was very prominent in town affairs, holding various offices of trust and responsibility with marked fidelity. He was captain of a Volunteer Rifle Company, which had quite a local reputation, and he was subsequently colonel of the Twenty-seventh Regiment, New Hampshire Militia.

Yorick G. Hurd, M.D., the eldest son of Col. Smith and Mehitable (Emerson) Hurd, was eminently a self-made man, having in early life attended the District School, when three months of winter teaching was made to suffice for the year.

After one fall term at the academy, at the age of seventeen he commenced school teaching, working upon the farm when not engaged in study.

One term he attended the Hancock Literary and Scientific Institution, and was then employed as a teacher at Dublin, N. H., where he attracted the attention of that ripe scholar, Rev. L. W. Leonard, D.D., who invited him to his residence for study and rendered him every possible assistance.

By the advice of Dr. Leonard Mr. Hurd commenced the study of medicine with Dr. Albert Smith, of Peterboro, N. H., professor of Materia Medica and Therapeutics in Dartmouth College March, 1850, teaching the public Grammar School in the winter and the Pine Grove Academy in the spring and autumn for three years, attending one course of Medical Lectures at Woodstock, Vt., and two courses at Dartmouth, graduating November, 1853, proceeding immediately to Amesbury, Essex County, Mass., where he commenced the practice of medicine, soon securing a large and remunerative practice.

During his long residence here he was for several years a member of the school committee, and by his constant and untiring efforts materially aided in the establishment of the present high state of efficiency and success of the public schools of the town.

On the breaking out of the Civil War the military spirit, inherited from his father, caused him to enter fully into the spirit of the North, and in September, 1862, he was appointed post surgeon at Camp Lander, Wenham, Mass., and in December 8th following, was appointed surgeon of the Forty-eighth Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteers, following its fortunes to New Orleans, where he was assigned to the First Brigade, First Division of the Nineteenth Army Corps, where he remained until June 20, 1863, when by order of Gen. Auger, commanding the First Division, he was detached and sent to Baton Rouge, La., in charge of the division hospitals, and sick and wounded officers in quarters about Baton Rouge.

Returning home with the regiment at the expiration of its term of service, Dr. Hurd was reported to Surgeon General Dale, of this State, as being the best regimental surgeon in the division; certain it is that his regiment had the smallest sick-list and the fewest deaths from disease of any in the corps to which it was attached.

The practice of his profession was resumed immediately on his return from the service of his country, and the various and responsible official positions to which he was successively chosen, attest to the high esteem in which he was held by the community.

In 1865 and again in 1866 he was chosen a member of the Massachusetts Senate, and in January, 1866, while a member of the Senate, was appointed superintendent of the Essex County House of Correction and Insane Asylum at Ipswich.

Immediately upon the assumption of the duties of the responsible position of superintendent of the house of correction he instituted such reforms in its management as secured a state of quiet and good order among those placed in his charge as had never been known in the previous history of the institution, which by his even-tempered management he was able to preserve so long as the institution was under his supervision.

His management of the insane soon attracted attention, and for many years he was the consulting authority in all parts of the country, and was often called in the courts as an expert in insane cases.

Dr. Hurd continued in the position of superintendent of these institutions until January, 1887, resigning his charge at the close of a service of twenty-one years

In 1867 he was appointed medical director of Division Ma-sachusetts Volunteer Militia, with the rank of colonel on the staff of Major General Benjamin F. Butler, serving in that capacity eight years.

In 1877 Bowdoin College conferred upon him the honorary degree of A. M.

In April, 1874, he was appointed a member of the board of trustees of the "Manning School Fund," and on the decease of its president, Otis Kimball, Esq. in 1878, he was chosen his successor, a position which he still retains.

A gentleman whose knowledge of the care of this fund is not to be questioned says of Dr. Hurd: "Dr. Hurd brought to the councils of the board rare advisory and executive abilities, and has ever since discharged the duties of his trust with intelligence and fidelity. Having in early years been a successful teacher, he has by his experience and by his friendly advice and co-operation, stimulated and encouraged the teachers, contributing thereby very largely to the success and usefulness of the school."

In 1879 he was appointed by his excellency, Governor Long, as medical examiner for the Second Essex District, resigning in 1883.

He is at the present time a trustee of the Ipswich Savings Bank and a director of the Ipswich Gas-Light Company—offices which he has held since the date of the charter of these corporations.

Dr. Hurd was married to Mary Ann Twitchell, of Lempster, N. H., May 17, 1853, who died October 8, 1858. He was married again November 5, 1861, to Ruth Ann Brown, of Salisbury, Mass. They have no children as the result of marriage, but adopted one who has since married H. K. Dodge, of the firm of Dodge & Spiller, of Ipswich.

WILLIAM G. BROWN.

Says an old philosopher: "All men, whatever their condition, who have done anything of value, ought to record the history of their lives." Eventful periods occur at rare intervals in the lives of men the most distinguished, but even in their more retired walks of private life, there are few whose lives are not marked by some vicissitudes of fortune, which, however trivial they may seem, are yet sufficient to excite great interest. The events which give the highest interest to biography are of a volatile and evanescent nature, and are soon forgotten. It is the part of the biographer to collect these passing events and fix them indelibly on the page of history, that succeeding generations may know how their predecessors lived, what ideas governed them, what trials and difficulties they encountered, and how they overcame them, and even their domestic relations; for all these teach a lesson that will be serviceable, by pointing out what paths lead to success and what roads are to be avoided as leading to failure. There is none so humble that his life can fail to be an object of interest when viewed in the right light. How much more will this interest be enhanced when we contemplate the life of a man who, by his own heroic struggles, has hewn out his own pathway to success, and compelled the fates to grant him his reward. Most certainly one, who, entirely by his own efforts, has attained affluence and social position, and through all the changing events of life has preserved his integrity unimpaired, is well deserving of the pen of the historian.

William Gray Brown, son of Jacob and Frances Quarles Brown, was born in Ipswich, January 27, 1830. His parents were both born in Ossipee, N. H., from which place they came to Ipswich, and made a permanent home. They had six children, four sons and two daughters. Three died in early childhood. One daughter, Mary F., a young girl of lovely disposition and of bright promise, died in 1846 at the age of fifteen years.

Jacob Franklin, the eldest, was educated in the public schools of Ipswich, and graduated at the State Normal School at Bridgewater, Mass. He had thus fitted himself to be an instructor of youth, and devoted his whole after-life to that vocation. He wrought well in this his chosen profession. His knowledge was exact, his discipline strict, his mode of imparting instruction clear and precise, and he soon gained a reputation which placed him in the front rank of able instructors. For a long series of years he taught in Salem, Mass., and just prior to his decease, April 26, 1877, he was head master of the Brown School in that city.

Jacob Brown, the father, was a farmer, and in addition to his farming did considerable teaming about the village. William G. lived with him and worked for him, when not at school, and at an early age learned the need of industry and frugality, a lesson which he never forgot in after life. His educational privileges were limited to the schools of his native town, but in them he became thoroughly grounded in the elementary principles of a good English education.

In his fifteenth year he left school, and from that time till the present he has been hard at work, either for his father or for himself. At the time the first church was erected, in 1846, William G. Brown, then a mere youth, volunteered to assist in the work, and to him was assigned the duty of drawing the lumber from Salem, and for six consecutive days he drew from that city to Ipswich an enormous load each day, helping to load and unload, and taking the sole care of his horses.

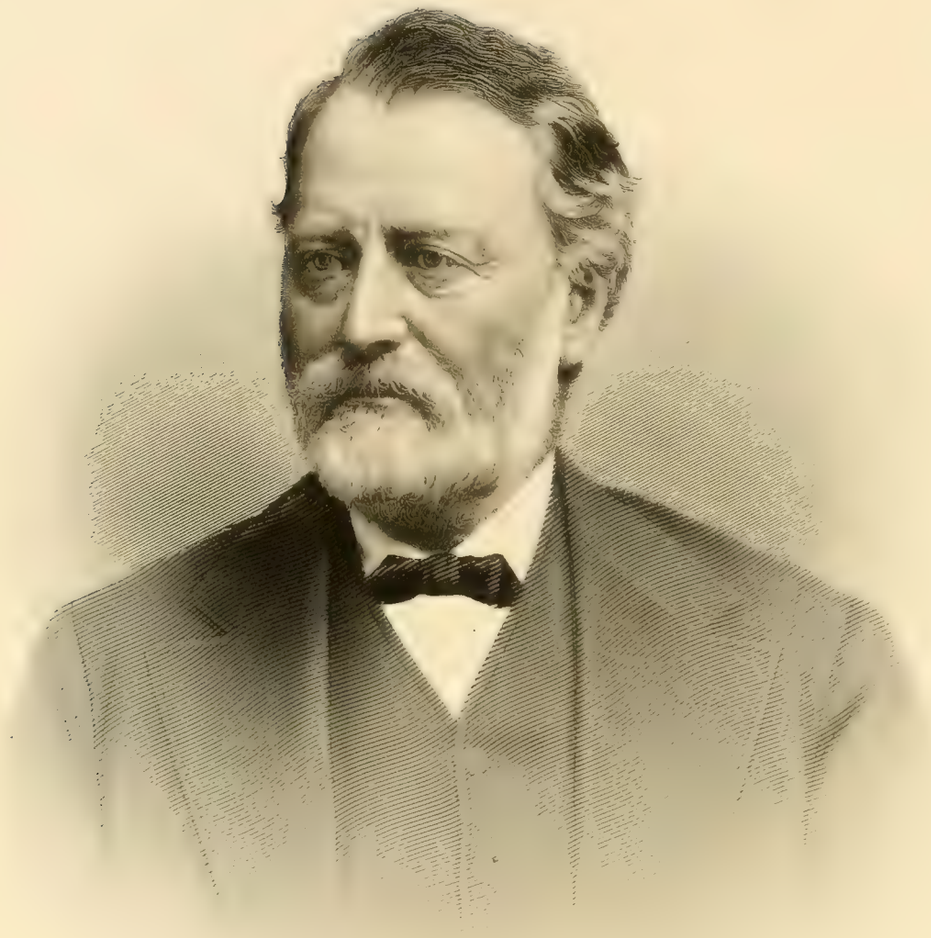
"I well remember," said the subject of this sketch, "the first money I ever earned. It was ten cents paid me by Mr. James Fuller, for drawing home his grist from mill, when I was nine years old. The next was thirty cents earned in planting." These sums were not spent for notions, so dear to the boyish heart, but were deposited on interest, and have never been disturbed. To this principle of economy and the habit of saving and making money may be attributed much of his subsequent success. Hard work, prudence and foresight were the foundation-stones upon which he reared the superstructure of a successful business career. At the age of eleven years he commenced the sale of pastry, made by his mother, to the passengers on the trains that stopped near his father's house for water. One-half the money he gave to his mother, the other half was carefully saved and put away. At the age of eighteen his father gave him "his time," and he began life on his own account, supporting himself and every year adding something to his store. With some of the money he had earned in his various youthful business ventures he purchased a pair of horses and commenced, in a small way, the business of teaming and the letting of horses.

With a steadfast resolution not to go beyond his means, he worked until the increase of his business obliged him to add to his facilities, by purchasing more horses and by employing men to do what he himself could not do. His father was a pioneer in the ice business, and among the first who brought coal (Authracite) into Ipswich. Both the ice business and coal business were then small, the markets being limited.

For many years he was the sole dealer in ice and coal. Jacob Brown died in 1863, and his son William G. succeeded to the business, and since that time he



Wm G Brown



David J. Perley



Nathaniel Shatswell

has constantly and continuously increased it. By close application to the principles laid down and the habits formed in early life, by constant and untiring labor, and by prompt attention to the necessities of the hour, he has established the most varied and the most extensive business in his native town. He deals in ice, cutting and storing annually about four thousand tons. He deals extensively in coal, handling from six to seven thousand tons every year, most of which is sold at retail. He still retains the farm where his father lived and where he was born, and carries it on. He is the owner of the "Agawam House," a famous Ipswich hostelry. This house he has thoroughly repaired, renovated and enlarged, so that to-day it is an ornament to the town and a convenient and agreeable stopping-place for its guests.

At the stable in the rear of this house he conducts an extensive livery business. He employs many men in his various business operations. He is a large owner of real estate which brings him a good rental every month, and is the largest individual tax-payer in the town. By steady application, prompt decision, sound judgment, and carefully looking after everything personally, he has made all his business ventures profitable. He married Elizabeth M. Cogswell, daughter of Ebenezer and Elizabeth B., January 12, 1853.

Mrs. Brown proved a true help-meet to her husband. She is a bright clear-headed woman. Possessing both business tact and energy, she has ably assisted her husband by her advice and counsel, and with a capacity for business possessed by few women, she has made herself familiar with the immense business of her husband, and thus has been able to advise him intelligently. She is a woman of intellect, taste and judgment, she is vivacious and sociable, fond of her home, and a capital manager of her household.

William G. Brown has a generous, charitable disposition, free from every miserly taint. His hand is ever ready, and his purse ever open to assist and aid any one in suffering or want. He is never a harsh creditor, but always ready to extend to the deserving all possible leniency. His manners are kind and affable. He has never sought or accepted any official position, although repeatedly urged so to do by his fellow-townsmen, preferring to give his whole time to the interests of his constantly increasing business.

He enjoys the confidence and respect of the community in which he dwells, and is recognized as a representative business man and a prominent factor in the growth and prosperity of his native town.

DAVID TULLAR PERLEY.

David Tullar Perley[1] was born in Linebrook Parish in Ipswich, January 17, 1824. He is of Puritan stock and a descendant in the seventh generation from Allan Perley, who came from London in the ship "Planter," and settled in Ipswich in 1635, where he died in 1675, aged sixty-five years. His youngest son Timothy, born 1653 and died 1719, married Dorothy ————, by whom he had Patience, born March 28, 1682; Stephen, born June 15, 1684; Allan, born March 1, 1688; and Joseph, born June 3, 1695.

Stephen died 1725, leaving a son Allan, born 1718, who died 1804, leaving a son Allan, born 1763, who died 1843. He left a son Abraham, born 1793, who died 1861, who was the father of David, the subject of this sketch.

Abraham Perley was a farmer and dealer in cattle. He lived in Linebrook Parish, where he owned a large farm, and carried on an extensive business. David was educated in the public schools and at Topsfield and Dummer Academies. He succeeded to his father's business, and owns the largest and best conducted farms in the western part of the town.

He married first Sophronia O. Plummer, of Newbury, June 12, 1851, by whom he had one child, Oscar Wentworth, born March 3, 1853, who now resides in Lincoln, Nebraska. Mr. Perley's first wife died March 14, 1853. His second wife was Abigail Kent Stevens, of West Newbury, whom he married May 16, 1861. They had three children, namely:

David Sidney, born February 21, 1862. He married Annie L. Hart, of Ipswich, February 21, 1887, and resides on the old homestead with his father.

Roscoe Damon, born August 11, 1864. He fitted for college at the Ipswich High School and Dummer Academy, and entered Dartmouth College at the fall term, 1887.

Carrie S., born October 18, 1865. She graduated from the Ipswich High School in the class of 1885.

The mother of these children died June 19, 1879, aged fifty-three years. He married Lizzie, daughter of Nathaniel H. Lavalette, of Ipswich, October 18, 1880, by whom he has had three children, viz: Chester G., born November 13, 1881; Mabel A., born August 19, 1883; Bertha C., born December 18, 1886.

Mr. Perley has never sought or held any public office, but has devoted himself entirely to his business and has been very successful, both as a farmer and dealer in cattle.

COLONEL NATHANIEL SHATSWELL.

Colonel Nathaniel Shatswell was born in Ipswich, Essex County, Mass., November 26, 1834. He was the son of John Shatswell and Anne Shatswell *nee* Lord. The name of his grandfather was Moses Shatswell, that of his grandmother Sarah Lord. His ancestors came from England in 1634, settling in Ipswich on High Street, building the old homestead, still owned by him. Here they have always lived, a sturdy race of thrifty farmers distinguished for their pluck and indomitable energy. All seem to have been imbued with a military spirit and each generation furnished its soldier. In all the campaigns and wars which the earlier settlers waged against the In-

[1] By C. A. Sayward.

dians the name of Shatswell appears among the troops. The great-grandfather of Colonel Shatswell served with distinction in the American army during the Revolution. John Shatswell, his father, was captain of the Ipswich troop, a cavalry company attached to General Low's brigade of the militia of Essex County. The early life of Colonel Shatswell was passed on his father's farm, and did not differ from that of every farmer's son—working on the farm in the summer, attending school in the winter. He received the rudiments of his education at home under the instruction of his mother and afterwards was sent to "the old Pudding Street School" under the famous master, Jonathan Pressey. Subsequently, he attended the Latin grammar school. Leaving school, he remained with his father at work on the farm until the spring of 1855, when becoming a little tired of farming life and with the resistless curiosity of an energetic young man, wishing to see something of the world beyond the limits of his native village, he went to East Boston to live. Here he found employment in a planing-mill and remained two years. The old Shatswell military spirit began to stir within him, and in December, 1855, he joined the old Boston Fusiliers and continued his membership with this company until the breaking out of the War of the Rebellion. In the spring of 1857 he returned to Ipswich and since that time has resided, with the exception of the years spent in the service of the United States, at the old homestead on High Street. During the lifetime of his father he assisted him in the management of the farm and since his decease has had the exclusive control of it. When in April, 1861, news came that Sumter had been fired upon and war began the great tidal wave of patriotism that swept over the country reached Ipswich, and the historic old town not unmindful of her ancient renown at once proceeded to enlist and organize a company. Nathaniel Shatswell was one of the first to enlist and was chosen first lieutenant and commissioned May 14, 1861, by Governor John A. Andrew. June 24th the company left Ipswich for Fort Warren, Boston Harbor, to join the Fourteenth Regiment Massachusetts Infantry. On July 5th the company was mustered into the service of the United States, and Lieutenant Shatswell was commissioned captain. The regiment remained at Fort Warren, drilling and learning the duties of a soldier, until August 4, 1861, when it was transferred to Washington, and went into camp at Kalorama. On the 12th of August the regiment was ordered to Fort Albany, across Long Bridge on the south side of the Potomac. Here it remained two years, doing duty in the fortifications around Washington, and guarding Long Bridge and other bridges across the Potomac. January 1, 1862, the regiment, by orders from the War Department, was changed from an infantry to a heavy artillery regiment, two additional companies were enlisted and the regiment was recruited to its maximum strength and was known as the First Regiment Massachusetts Heavy Artillery. In August, 1862, when General Banks was retreating down the Shenandoah Valley the regiment was hurried to the front and at Fairfax Court-House, Va., met the Union army in full retreat. Captain Shatswell led the advance. Halting his men across the turnpike he afforded an opportunity for the tired Union troops to reform in his rear and boldly charging with his own men he checked the advance of the enemy, and after a sharp skirmish saved a battery from capture which becoming demoralized early in the day, deserted their guns as soon as halted by the skirmish line. As a reward for these services the guns were assigned to the companies under the command of Captain Shatswell. Captain Shatswell was commissioned major December 31, 1862, and for the next year he was with his regiment continuously, building roads, guarding bridges, doing picket duty, drilling and exercising his men and making it one of the best disciplined and drilled regiments in the army. Returning to the fortifications around Washington Major Shatswell remained until May 15, 1864, when the regiment was ordered to the front, and started at once from Alexandria, Va., for Belle Plain with its full complement of twelve companies and each company with full ranks, marching from Belle Plain by way of Fredericksburg, May 18, 1864, it reported to General Meade near Spotsylvania. General Meade assigned the regiment to General R. O. Tyler's division of heavy artillery, placing its Colonel, Thomas R. Fannalt, in command of the brigade. May 19th the brigade while supporting a battery on the extreme right of the Union lines was exposed to a terrible fire from the rebel troops. Leading the advance Major Shatswell's regiment was engaged with Rhode's division of General Ewell's Corps. At the first fire the senior major of the regiment was killed and the command devolved upon Major Shatswell who, from that time till the close of the war, commanded the regiment. All through the terrible fight of that day Major Shatswell held the enemy in check until they were finally repulsed, and the supply train of General Grant, which was the objective point of General Ewell, was saved. In this engagement the regiment lost ninety-one killed and three hundred and four wounded. Major Shatswell was severely wounded in the head by a minnie ball which partially stunned him. He was taken to the rear, and his wound was dressed. Recovering consciousness he returned to the command of his regiment and remained until the retreat of the rebels at dark gave him an opportunity for rest. On the 2d and 3d of June, the major was engaged at Cold Harbor, successfully repelling five attacks made by the rebels on the regimental line of breast-works.

Crossing the James River on June 14th, Major Shatswell arrived at Petersburg in time to engage in the night attack on the rebel works June 16th;

during this engagement his sword was shot away from his side. On June 18th, the major was ordered to charge the rebel lines in front of him. Driving in their picket-line he charged with his whole regiment, the enemy drawn up behind a sunken road, and succeeded in driving them from their position. While leading this charge Major Shatswell was struck in the side by a minnie ball, which prostrated him to the ground. Quickly regaining his horse, he continued to lead his men. After the enemy had been driven from his position the major examined his side and discovered what a narrow escape he had had. He found in the pocket of his blouse a small book filled with papers and orders through which the ball had penetrated, lodging in the cover of the book against his side. The colonel has the book, papers and ball now in his possession. June 22d, while division officer of the day he was ordered to examine carefully the ground in front of his lines and ascertain if it was practicable to advance the picket line. He reported that it was practicable to advance a short distance. Receiving orders to advance five hundred yards he endeavored to carry out the orders. While doing this the rebels attacked his flank with three lines in *echelon* and drove him back. Many of his men were captured and he himself was only saved by the cover of a friendly thicket. At one time the rebel line passed all around him and he was nearly certain of being captured. Keeping closely under cover he remained concealed from nine o'clock in the morning until dark, when he succeeded in gaining the Union lines.

July 27th, the major led an attack at Deep Bottom, charging across an open field and relieving a battery. August 15th and 16th he was engaged in another battle at Deep Bottom. August 25th he was fighting on the Weldon Railroad. From that time till October he was in fort Alec Hays in front of Petersburg. He was at the battle of Poplar Spring Church, October 2d, in which his regiment lost heavily in killed and wounded. The battle at Boydton Plank Road, October 27th, was one of the most desperate of all the battles in which the colonel was engaged. The whole corps was cut off from the rest of the army, and so near were the combatants to each other that each side alternately drew men through the fence that separated the two opposing forces, and made prisoners of them. In this battle the colonel performed one of the most difficult tactical movements which is ever attempted, and then only under the pressure of dire necessity, that is, to change front in line of battle while under fire. The colonel with keen military sagacity seized just the right moment to issue the necessary orders, which were promptly executed, and the movement was a success, the rebel assault repulsed and the day won. Until the middle of December the colonel, with his regiment, was in the field continuously and constantly under fire. January 27, 1865, Major Shatswell was commissioned lieutenant-colonel and the next day received his commission as colonel.

In January, in consequence of a cold, contracted in a raid on the Weldon Railroad, which brought on a serious attack of rheumatism, Colonel Shatswell was granted leave of absence for sixty days, and came to Ipswich. He again reported for duty March, 5, 1865, and never left the regiment again until the expiration of its term of service. The rebels charged the Union lines for the last time March 25th. After that, until the surrender of General Lee at Appomatox, Colonel Shatswell was engaged in one continuous skirmish, closely following the retreating forces of General Lee, and was present when that general surrendered. Major Shatswell was breveted lieutenant-colonel and colonel for meritorious conduct on the field. Colonel Shatswell was mustered out, with his regiment, at Washington, August 16, 1865, and soon after returned to Ipswich, where he immediately resumed the occupation of farming. In April, 1869, Colonel Shatswell was appointed assistant superintendent of insane at the county institution, situated in Ipswich, and continues to hold that position at the present time.

In 1883 he was elected a member of the board of selectmen for the town of Ipswich and re-elected in 1884 and 1885. Colonel Shatswell is a member of John T. Heard Lodge, of F. & A. M., of which lodge he was W. M. five years. He is also a member of Washington Royal Arch Chapter and Winslow Lewis Commandery of Knight Templars, of Salem He is an active member of General James Appleton Post G. A. R. Colonel Shatswell was married, June 15, 1861, to Mary White Stone, and has two daughters, Fannie W. and Annis L. Shatswell. Colonel Shatswell is a man of indomitable will, cool, firm and with a wonderful power of commanding men.

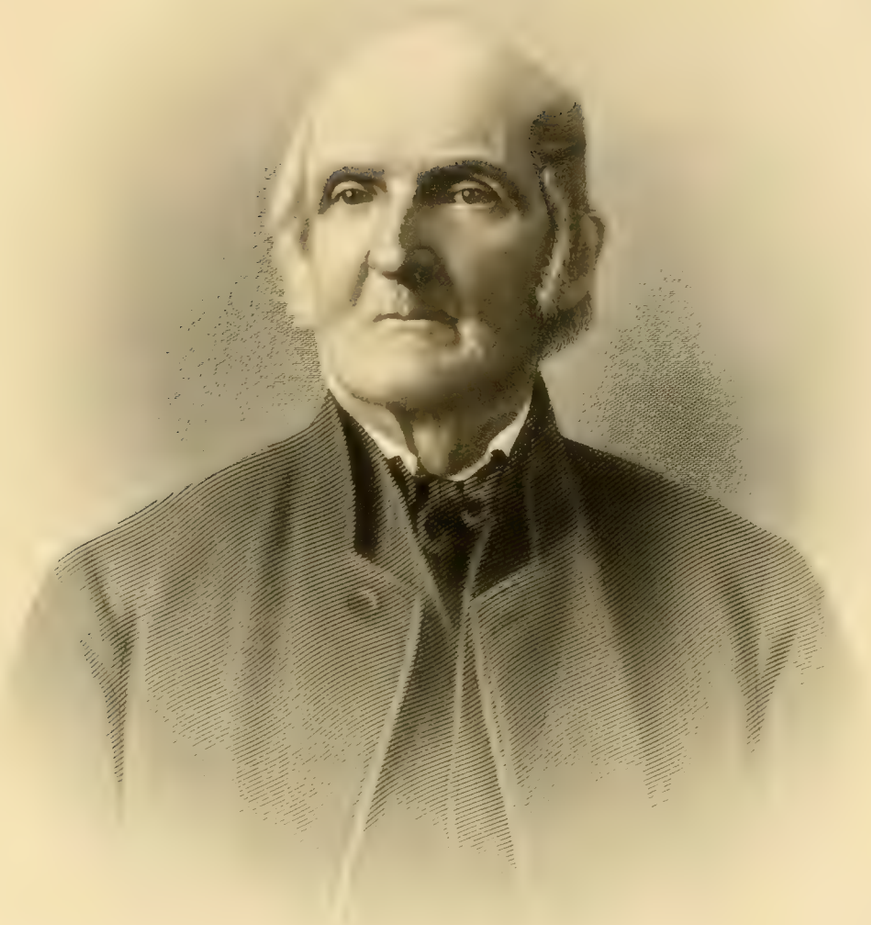
With steady courage, undismayed by repulse or defeat, under fire he never faltered, but was as calm and undisturbed as on dress parade. He carried the same characteristics into civil life. In the administration of affairs of the town and in his position as assistant superintendent of the county insane he was and is an able executive officer, far-seeing, skillful and well versed in the requirements of his position. Steady in his private attachments, his affection is warm and sincere; open and social in his temper, his generosity is limited only by his means; with a lively and delicate sense of honor, neither public trust or private interest was ever betrayed by him. Intellectually strong and vigorous, he weighs carefully every matter, and is firm and tenacious in his opinions without obstinacy. He was a brilliant soldier, and he is an exemplary private citizen. Modest, quiet and unassuming in his demeanor, he has shown himself capable and efficient in every position he has been called upon to fill. In politics he is a staunch Republican without being a bitter partisan. In stature the colonel is rising six feet, his frame of

body is remarkably robust, and his physical strength fully developed.

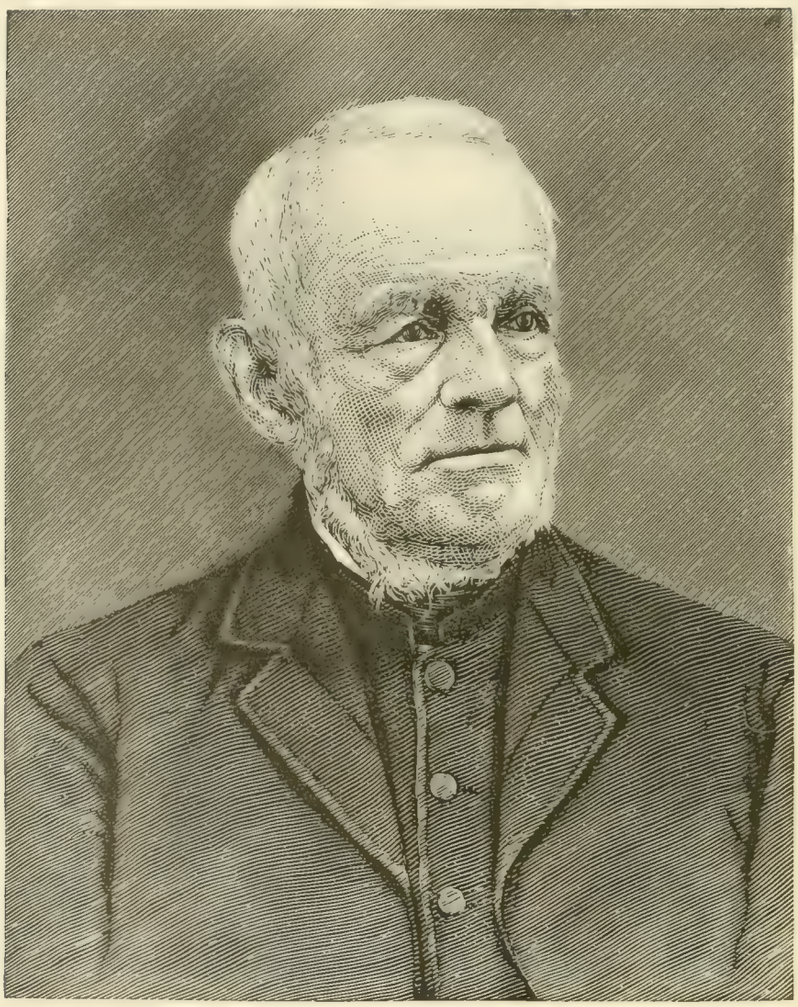
JAMES PEATFIELD.

James Peatfield was born in 1804, at Arnold, a small town three miles from Nottingham, England. He was the son of Joseph Peatfield, a man somewhat remarkable in his day. He was a bleacher by occupation, and carried on an extensive bleachery works at Arnold, doing work for the Nottingham spinners. Afterwards he came to the United States and was one of the first to engage in buying coal lands in Pennsylvania, having firm faith in the enormous coal-fields that were just then beginning to attract the attention of miners and capitalists. Mr. Peatfield did not live to realize the full extent of the immense resources of the Pennsylvania mines, or to see this gigantic industry assume the controlling interest in the United States. He did acquire a competency by his mining operations, and died at a ripe old age in St. Clair, Pennsylvania, where his remains now lie buried. Joseph Peatfield married Jane Spenser. She bore him five children,—James, the subject of this sketch. Mary afterwards married to Jabez Mann, Sandford, Joseph and John, all of whom came to the United States and settled at Ipswich. James Peatfield secured his early education at home, under his mother, and afterwards in the schools at Bulwell and Three Knights Bridge.

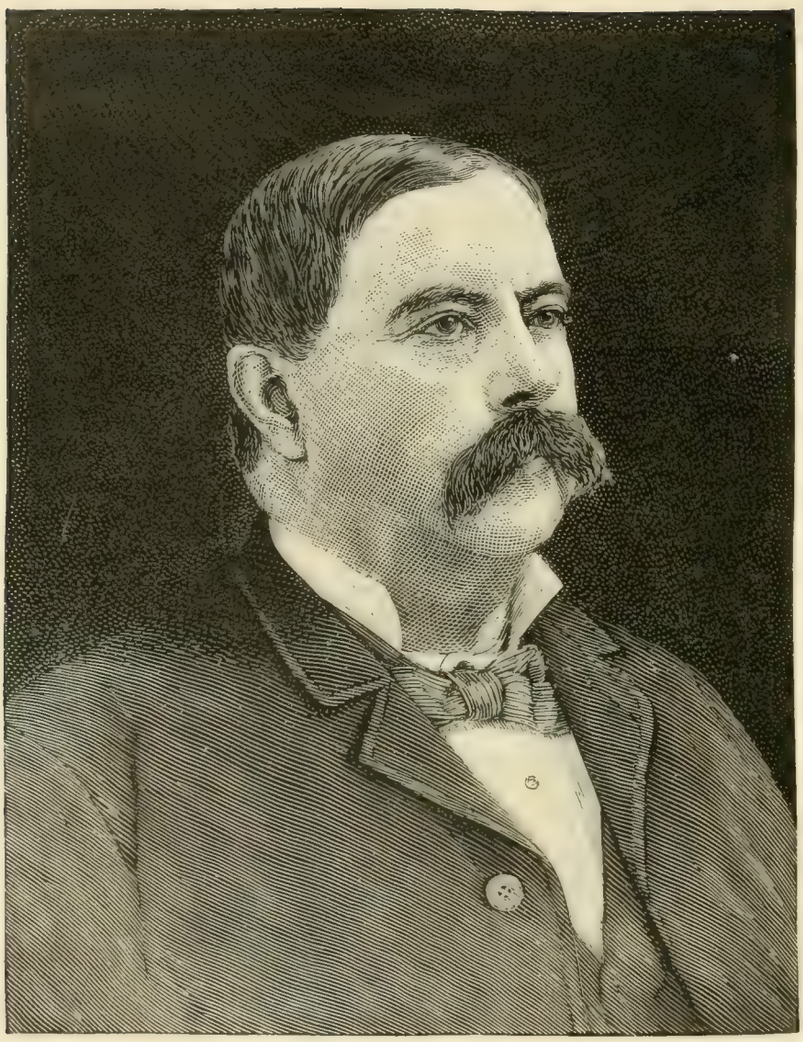
Playing as a boy or helping in his father's bleachery he early became familiar with machinery, and readily understood the principles which govern its construction. He, when a mere youth, showed a strong predilection for mathematics, and even to this day has a strong love for them. He was bound as an apprentice to John Atherly, of Arnold, with whom he remained until his "coming of age," and thoroughly learned the building of lace and woolen machinery. In July, 1827, he came to the United States, landing in New York city. That same month he journeyed to Ipswich, where he took up his residence, and has remained in this town ever since his first arrival. At this time the manufacture of lace was receiving much attention in this country, and at Ipswich were two factories wherein lace was manufactured, one situated on Hight Street and owned by the late Dr. Thomas Manning, and is the present mansion-house of Joseph Ross, Esq.; the other was situated on what is now known as County Street, and is now used by S. F. Canney as a factory for the manufacture of boxes and as a planing mill. This latter was owned and operated by the Heards. When James Peatfield came to Ipswich he at once entered the employ of the Heards, as machinist. He found the machinery then in use old and imperfect. All the machines had been brought from England and had been in use for a long time. Mr. Peatfield immediately went to work to repair these machines and to make improvements, and finally built a new machine, which was one of the first lace machines made in this country. This machine did the work so much better than the old machine, and with a large increase in its productive power that the business rapidly increased and bid fair to become one of the leading industries of the country. Afterwards a heavy tariff was laid on the raw material out of which the lace was manufactured, and this industry began to languish and at length died out entirely. Mr. Peatfield then turned his attention to other fields of manufactures, and in 1839 he invented and built a warp machine, and began the manufacture of woolen underclothing. This was the beginning of that immense business, the manufacture of woolens, which at the present time gives employment to many thousands of workmen and millions of capital, and to James Peatfield belongs the honor of being the first person to manufacture woolen underclothing in the United States. The goods were manufactured in the lace factory of the Heards', the lace machinery was removed and warp machines put in their place. The Ipswich River afforded ample water power to run the machinery, and the business was very successful. A ready sale was found for all the goods that could be manufactured. This mill continued to make woolen goods under the management of James Peatfield until the Heards moved into the stone mill farther up the river, where was greater water-power and increased facilities for manufacturing. Mr. Peatfield was transferred to this mill and continued here for several years, making, repairing and improving machinery. He devoted his time especially to the loom department. In 1842, in company with his brother Sandford, he built the brick mill on Washington Street, near the Boston and Maine Railroad Station, and continued the manufacture of woolen goods, hosiery and underclothing until 1877, when he retired from active labor in the mill to the quiet enjoyments of rural life. Mr. Peatfield always had a great fondness and aptness for mathematical studies, and has pursued them into the higher branches of pure mathematics, and even to this day, at the age of more than four-score years, nothing pleases him more than to find some difficult mathematical problem to solve or some mathematical puzzle to unravel. He at one time constructed a very ingenious labyrinth, which was the wonder and delight of all. He also made a most intricate puzzle which he calls the puzzle of the squares, which has proved a very difficult nut for mathematical scholars to crack. James Peatfield was always a great lover of horticulture. In 1846 he bought some seven acres more or less bounded by the Topsfield road and the Ipswich River, and planted a nursery in a part of this purchase. After leaving the building of machinery and the manufacture of woolens he devoted himself to the care of his nursery and the developing of his lands. He sold, from time to time, small portions of his original purchase to various parties for house lots, but he retained the part which he had planted as



Jas. Seaford



Daniel Potter



Wesley K. Bell

a nursery until 1885. Knowing almost every kind of fruit tree and plant, it has been his great pleasure to cultivate his garden and his orchard, and in the pure enjoyment of watching them thrive and grow, his latter days have passed in peace and quiet. Since 1885 he has not been engaged in any active business. October 2, 1834, he was married to Susan Heard, of Ipswich. Two daughters,—Hannah Moore and Margaret Fox—were born to them, and they are living at the present time. Mr. Peatfield, at the age of eighty-three, has his mental faculties unimpaired. His memory is wonderfully retentive. He remembers every incident of his life, and can give the most minute details of every circumstance and event of his long life. He retains a strong interest in all the affairs of his adopted town, and is interested in every effort to advance its prosperity.

James Peatfield is a man of undoubted probity and honesty, liberal in every sense of the word and interested in every good work. Temperate in all things, simple in his habits, amiable in his disposition, quiet in his manner, conscientious and upright in all his dealings, genial and affectionate, his later years afford him the pleasant consciousness of a well-spent life.

DANIEL POTTER.

Daniel Potter, one of Salem's most respected and honored citizens, was the second of thirteen children of Daniel and Eunice Fellows Potter, of Ipswich, and was born in that historic town on the 24th of March, 1800.

His earlier years were passed in his native town, and here, in his school-boy days, by persevering industry and attention to his studies, he laid the foundation for a life of usefulness and honor, worthy of emulation.

In April, 1815, he removed to Salem and became apprenticed as a blacksmith to David Safford, with whom he remained until he reached the age of twenty-two years, when he commenced in business for himself on Sewell Street, Salem, continuing until 1827, when he removed to Roxbury, Mass.

Two years later, on the 29th of November, 1829, he returned to the city of Salem and took a shop on West Place; he there pursued his trade until 1852 and with marked success.

The industry and integrity of character with which he pursued his business commended itself to the people, and he was repeatedly called to positions of honor and responsibility.

He was chosen a member of the Common Council for the years 1842, '43, '44, '45, '46, '48, '54, '55, '69, and '70, receiving the additional honor of being selected as its presiding officer for the years 1854 and '55.

The ability, faithfulness and dignity which he brought to the discharge of the duties of this high position in these years when to be a member of the government of a city was only attained by men of honesty and integrity, mark him as a man of worth and excellence.

In 1852 retiring from his trade he was appointed to the very responsible position of deputy-sheriff of Essex County by High Sheriff Robinson of Marblehead, which position he continued without interruption to hold, by reappointments, until his resignation in January, 1887, rounding up thirty-five years of almost uninterrupted official life.

In politics a recognized Republican. As a citizen, an upright man, as an official incorruptible. In social life, jovial and witty, and in all those characteristics which go to make up a man to be honored, respected and beloved by his fellows, a man of note.

On the 10th day of March, 1824, he was married to Dolly Newell, daughter of John and Hannah B. Ferguson, of Salem, a union which has been happily continued for more than three-score years.

Of thirteen children born to them one son and three daughters remain to honor and cheer them in their declining years, viz.: Daniel, Jr., resides in South Braintree; Dolly Ann, married to Nathaniel Jackman, of Salem; Ellen, married to George H. Pousland, of Salem; and Margaret F., who resides at home with her parents in Salem.

WESLEY KENDALL BELL.

Wesley Kendall Bell was born in Albany, Oxford County, Me., August 10, 1827.

He was the second son of John and Betsey Kendall Bell, whose farm home was one of comfort and thrift, so that Wesley, after attending the Common District School was sent for one term to Wilbraham (Mass.) Academy, and thence to Greenwich, R. I., where he was fitted for college.

He came to Ipswich in 1850, where he received an appointment as teacher in the Grammar School, in which position he remained for sixteen years, giving eminent satisfaction by his close application to the duties of the position, and retaining the respect of all the pupils who were favored by being under his tuition.

In 1858 he was appointed by his excellency, Governor Banks, a justice of the peace.

Mr. Bell married on the 24th of November, 1863, Kate B., daughter of Isaac and Elizabeth Noyes.

At the town-meeting, in the spring of 1865, he was chosen to the responsible position of town clerk, and the satisfactory manner in which he has performed his duties has assured his re-nomination and election in each succeeding year up to the present time.

In 1866 Mr. Bell was appointed an Assistant Assessor of United States Revenue (Internal), which position he retained for three years.

In the autumn of 1869 he was elected a member of the Massachusetts House of Representatives, and

during the term for which he was chosen did most excellent service as a member of the committee on education.

In 1872 he was appointed by his excellency, Gov. Washburn, as a trial justice for the trial of criminal cases. The terms of appointment to this position are for three years, and so ably has the duty been performed that he has received four re-appointments to this important office.

In 1878 he was chosen treasurer and clerk of the Ipswich Gas-Light Company, which position he continues to occupy with great credit to himself and to the satisfaction of the corporation.

Mr. Bell is a cousin to the Hon. Charles H. Bell, of Exeter, N. H., the genial ex-governor of that State, and, like his relative, is in politics a positive Republican—reliable and true to his party—not the blind partisan, but the well-read, thinking man, able to defend and "give a reason for the faith which is within him."

Mr. Bell has taken an active interest in the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, and has held various official positions in the order. He is a member of Agawam Lodge, No. 52, Naumkeag Encampment, No. 13, and Canton Wildey, No. 2.

It would seem that Mr. Bell, while he has had the fortune to be much in public life, has continued and still continues to have the full confidence of the people of our town.

Said a gentleman who had known of him from the time he first came among us, "For the citizen of good, sound, practical ability, of sterling integrity and undoubted character, his superior cannot be found." Said another, "For a man who has been upwards of thirty-six years in public life as a teacher, as a politician, as a judicial officer, while I am not of his political faith, I believe him to be the same honest, upright citizen as when he first made this place his home,"—and these are but the faint expressions of esteem and confidence which are heard on every hand among the townspeople.

In these days it is a pleasure to note cases where after long terms of official life, the communities where men live are still ready to endorse them as faithful and honest in the discharge of responsibilities, and it is to be hoped that examples like this will be appreciated by the young and that his conduct may be emulated by them.

CHAPTER XLVIII.

BEVERLY.

BY FREDERICK A. OBER.

Its Physical Features.—The township of Beverly is locally bounded on the north by Wenham, east by Manchester, west by Danvers, south by the waters of Massachusetts Bay, and the channel of its own harbor, separating it from Salem.

The centre of this township (which has a length of about six miles and an average breadth of three) is in north latitude 42° 34′ 38″, and west longitude 70° 54′ 5″.

Within its boundaries are included surface, soil and vegetation, in greater variety perhaps than within the limits of any other section of equal area in the State. Though greatly diversified, the general aspect is hilly, with no elevation approaching the altitude of mountains, yet without any considerable tract of level land. The general trend of the surface towards the ocean gives a southerly exposure to its slopes and valley-lands, of material advantage to its agriculturists.

Geologically considered, Beverly lies very close to the primitive rock; diorite in the western portion, and its eastern half the granite structure that forms the hills of Cape Ann, beginning here and culminating in the headlands of Gloucester and Rockport. Its geological structure, then, is granitic, with a few shore strips of older and more thoroughly crystalline rocks.

Some of the numerous out-cropping ledges contain rare specimens of columbite polymignite, green feldspar and ore of tin; but the mineralogical field is necessarily a restricted one, though exceedingly interesting. A peculiar feature of the scenery are these denuded ledges, as well as the great superimposed boulders, giving character to the hills and headlands. These furnish a coarse quality of granite, which has been extensively quarried and utilized in the construction of the best buildings.

Although there is much rocky land, there is very little absolutely sterile within the limits of the town. Even the rocky pastures, though often discouraging to an ambitious ruminant, are rich in multitudinous examples of the indigenous flora.

The soil, in the main clayey, gravelly or sandy, is strong and productive, yielding good returns when fertilized.

Natural elements of fertility, such as peat and seaweed, were formerly found here in great abundance.

Valuable strata of clay give much material for brick and pottery, while even the sand of the seashore has been—anciently, at least—a source of profit to those who engaged in shipping it to other parts. On the beach near Hospital Point is a deposit of "black sand," which was at one time much sought after, for a purpose explained by one of the writers on New England, two hundred years ago, the curious Josselyn:

"There is likewise a sort of glittering Sand, which is altogether as good as the glasse powder brought from the Indies, to dry up Ink on paper newly written."

The only ore which has been discovered in quan-

tity sufficient for export is an inferior quality of bog iron, which was at one time worked in the primitive foundries of Rowley and Lynn.

This deposit lies near the present railroad station of Montserrat, and is to-day only indicated by a chalybeate spring, locally famous as "Iron-Mine Spring," whose waters are sufficiently impregnated to be nauseous without being positively medicinal.

But one other mineral spring is known to occur in Beverly, though the subterranean flow of water is copious and pure, and can be reached by wells with an average depth of thirty feet.

Beverly's woods and water are its chief attractions, although its ponds and streams are few and small. The largest body of water, lying partly within its boundaries, is Wenham Lake, about one-third of which pertains to this township. The purity of its water and the crystal clearness of its ice, have made this beautiful lake famous, even beyond the seas. It is some three hundred and twenty acres in area, lies at an elevation of thirty-four feet above the sea, and supplies Beverly as well as the city of Salem with water. It is known in the early chronicles as the "Great Pond," and figures prominently in deeds and grants. A lesser sheet of water, though in some respects more interesting, is Beaver Pond of twenty acres, which is still secluded within the embrace of the pine woods, not far from the Wenham line.

Its outlet, a small stream, winding through the woods, connects with Norwood Lake, a submerged meadow-tract of some forty acres additional, which gives a large head of available water-power at a point formerly occupied by the old "Conant Mill." Both Wenham and Beaver are stocked with fish, though not to an extent to make them famous. Their shores are in places well-wooded, delightfully adapted to out-door recreation, and hence much frequented by the inhabitants of the adjacent territory. Round Pond, in North Beverly, and Little Pond, not far from Beaver, are the only others, and scarce worthy of mention.

To its abundant supply of pure water and to its perfect surface and subterranean drainage, Beverly owes much of its reputation for healthfulness. Its streams, though neither numerous nor large, are excellently adapted for the carrying away of the surplus water.

In the western part of the township is Bass River Brook, which flows into the arm of the sea known as Bass River. Another, which pursues a course nearly parallel with the main line of the railroad, and empties into Bass River, is Tan Yard Brook, while yet another flows along the Gloucester Branch Railroad, and was formerly known as Job's Pond Brook.

A region lying near the base of Brimble Hill, known as Cat Swamp, and adjacent territory, is drained by a brook variously called Cedar Stand and Sallow's Brook, which enters the extreme head of Mackerel Cove; a meandering stream, forked and branched, running through alder swamps and open meadows, alternate, locally famous for their wild flowers. A tradition of trout lurks about its deeper and gloomier portions, and it was once a stream of importance enough to support a grist-mill at its mouth, though in latter times it is prone to withdraw within itself and disappear almost entirely from sight, during the heated months of midsummer. Farther to eastward is Patches' or Thissell Brook, where one of the earliest settlers, Nicholas Woodbury, had a grist-mill. Some distance beyond is a streamlet, crossing Mingo's Beach and another flowing into Plum Cove, while the largest is near the eastern border of the town; Sawmill Brook, where trout are said to have been caught within the memory of people now living. No one of these streams is of sufficient importance to claim the attention of a stranger, yet, collectively, these watercourses play an important part in giving the coast that diversity of aspect which is its most attractive feature.

Of the elements of the landscape those natural features most prominent are, of course, the hills, which, though of moderate elevation, afford the observer from their summits views unsurpassed of their kind.

One of the finest water views, perhaps, is that spread below and beyond "Josh's Mountain," near and to the west of the bridge connecting Beverly with Salem; from the summit of Brown's Hill (the crown of which, however, is now in Danvers) the most extensive view is afforded, though equally good may be obtained from the crests of Chipman and Brimble Hills, especially from the latter. All, indeed, of the numerous hill-tops favor a visitor with charming scenes, such as are afforded by the contiguity of wooded hills and valleys with the ocean.

Flora and Fauna.—To obtain an adequate conception of this region as it existed prior to the visit of the first settlers, one should become acquainted not only with its geological and topographical features, but with the leading types of its flora and fauna. These are, to a great extent, interdependent, and collectively throw light upon the subsequent actions of the settlers themselves. It was not a barren country, this, when first seen by civilized man; for the primitive rock was covered with a rich soil clothed in an attractive and exuberant vegetation. Many plants and fruits were found here indigenous, while nearly everything brought by the settlers from their own country took root and flourished spontaneously.

The principal native trees and those which give color to the woods and a distinctive tone to the masses of foliage (especially as seen from the sea) are the pines, variously intermixed with oaks, maples, hemlocks and birches. These compose mainly the masses or "bulks" of trees, while there are numerous other natives, such as the elm, butternut, ash, cherry, red and white cedar, and a host of shrubs and bushes of lesser growth.

The remarks of Captain John Smith upon the coast productions of New England in general are particularly applicable here: "First, the ground is so fertill that, questionless, it is capable of producing any Grain, Fruits or Seeds you will sow or plant, growing in the region afore-named; but it may be not eviry kinde to that perfection of delicacy, or some tender plants may miscarie, because the summer is not so hot, and the winter is more cold, in those parts wee have yet tryed neere the Seaside than wee finde in the same height in Europe or Asia. . . . The hearbes or fruits (native) are of many sorts and kinds, as alkermes, currants, mulberries, raspices, gooseberries, plummes, walnuts, chestnuts, pumpions, gourds, strawberries, beans, pease and mayze; a kind or two of flax (wherewith they make nets, lines and ropes, both small and great). Oke is their chief wood; firr, pine, walnut, chestnut, birch, ash, elme, cedar and many other sorts."

Its diversity of surface gives to Beverly a flora equally varied; in the gloom of its most secluded dells and swamps grow plants rare in localities more to the southward, while the southern exposure of its coast slopes offers a congenial habitat for several unknown much farther north. Its fragrant pasture lands breathe the incense of spiciest bloom in the season of inflorescence, and here are found those plants of mystical and medicinal virtues so beloved of the Indian medicine-man and the "yarb doctor" of early times. Nowhere in the world is there a greater variety of berries and native small fruits than may be found in the coast country of New England: such as blueberries, high and low, blackberries of several varieties, barberries, cranberries, whortle or huckleberries, elderberries, strawberries, raspberries, wild currants and gooseberries, cherries, grapes, etc., to which may be added many other kinds and the nuts and fruits of various trees.

In this region, favored of nature, may be found most of the flowering plants belonging to Massachusetts, many of brightest bloom being especially abundant; as the laurel (*kalmia*), occasionally the magnolia (*m. glauca*), on the borders of Manchester; the cardinal flower (*lobelia cardinalis*), the bright *rhodora*, the fringed gentian (*g. crinita*), late in autumn, the fragrant water lily (*nymphœa odorata*), the choicest species of the violet family, the wild rose and clematis; in fact, the entire range of flowering plants peculiar to New England. That early blooming plant of adjacent regions, the mayflower (*epigœa repens*), is rarely found here, but almost cotemporary with it are the saxifrage, dog-tooth violet, anemone and Housatonia, close followed by the columbine (*aquilegia Canadensis*), the "Solomon's seal," "ladies' slipper" (*cypripedium pubescens*), the star flowers and a constantly augmented troop of summer flowers. Certain meadows, in June, are red with that delicate orchid, the *arethusa bulbosa*, and white with the buckbean, while along the water-courses, later, grow the sagittaria (the arrow-heads), the thickets are green with the parasitic dodder, and all the roadsides, later yet, lined with the golden-rod. It would be impossible to merely enumerate the species (in this brief introductory), that fill the months of spring, summer and early autumn, with bloom and fragrance. It was of this (Cape Ann) coast that the reverend Higginson wrote, when on his voyage to Salem:

"By noon we were within three leagues of Cape Ann, and as we sayled along the coast we saw every hill and dale, and every island, full of gay woods and high trees.

"The nearer we came to the shore the more flowers in abundance, sometymes scattered abroad, sometimes joyned in sheets nine or ten yards long, which we supposed to be brought from the low meadowes by the tyde.

"Now, what with fine woods and greene trees by land, and these yellow flowers paynting the sea, made us all desirous to see our new paradise of New England, whence we saw such forerunning signals of fertilitie affarre off."

There is in Beverly, growing wild in the fields, a native grass, peculiarly fragrant; and the odors from these fragrant fields, mingled with the balsamic breath of the pine woods, and borne to a sea-stranger by an off-shore breeze, must, indeed, have seemed to him like favored gales direct from paradise.

Having glanced at Beverly in its aspects topographical, geological and botanical, it only remains now (in order to complete our picture of this region as it existed prior to the European visitation), to view it in its aspect zoological. Its elementary features: rocks, soils, water-courses, vegetation,—these have been described; from them—from their relative arrangements and combinations—it may be deduced that this section was eminently favored by nature, and well fitted to support a numerous population.

Nor was that population lacking, although composed principally of the humbler inhabitants of the woods and meads, in fur and feather. With a few exceptions, the animals found here by the early settlers may be assumed to have existed here from time immemorial. The knowledge acquired by the early planters was necessarily imperfect, but they soon became acquainted with the larger and more obtrusive members of the lower animals that ranged the wilderness around them. Says the inquisitive Higginson, writing at that time, and of it:

"For beastes, there are some beares, and they say lyons; for they have been seen at Cape Anne. Here are several sorts of deers, also wolves, foxes, beavers, otters, martins, great wild cats, and a great beast called a molke (moose) as bigge as an oxe."

Fifty years later, Josselyn writes:

"There are not many kinds of Beasts in New England; they may be divided into Beasts of the chase of the stinking foot, as Roes, Foxes, Jaccals, Wolves, Wild-cats, Raccoons, Porcupines, Squncks, Musquashes, Squirrels, Sables, and Mattrisses; and Beasts of the chace of the sweet foot: Buck, Red Deer, Rain Deer Elk, Marouse, Bear, Maccarib, Beaver, Otter, Martin, Hare."

The larger quadrupeds, such as the bear, deer, beaver, otter, martin, wolf and wild-cat, have long since been exterminated here (though the locality known as Cat Swamp derived its name from the abundance of wild-cats once found there), but several of the smaller yet remain. The fox yet haunts the hills of

the northern part of the township, leading a precarious existence, even though the feeling towards him is friendly, rather than otherwise, as the survivor of a race now nearly extinct.

The hunter instinct still remains in the breasts of our people, and many here would gladly reimburse the farmers the loss of an occasional fowl rather than that reynard should be exterminated, and the spark that lingers from the frontier existence of our ancestors become extinguished. Scarce a clover-field on the forest border that has not still a resident beneath its surface, in the shape of the woodchuck—*arctomys monax*—that gray hermit, indigenous to the soil. This animal, likewise, would be sadly missed and even lamented, though occasionally destructive to clover and early vegetables.

There is another, however, whose presence would be gladly dispensed with ; a small animal of inoffensive habit, generally, but endowed by nature with most pungent possibilities when thoroughly aroused. "The Squnck," says Joselyn, referring to the skunk (*mephitis mephitica*), "is almost as big as a Raccoon, perfect black, white, or pye-bald, with a bush tail like a Fox—an offensive carion." And, of a truth, he is offensive when at his worst; yet, indirectly of great benefit to our agriculturists as he is insectivorous in his habit. "The Musquash," says the same writer just quoted, "is a small Beast that lives in shallow ponds." This is the Indian name for the musk-rat (*ondrata zibethicus*), which still inhabits our shallow ponds, and within a score of years was quite numerously represented.

That the beaver once dwelt in our ponds and built his dams in our waters there yet remain tradition and ocular evidence ; yet none is found here to-day.

Another fur-bearing animal, the mink, is occasionally seen, as also the weasel; the other has long been extinct. But Beverly, even to the present day, constitutes with several adjoining towns, a fine range for the unambitious fur hunter to trap in during the winter months. In the larger swamps the hare is still found, while the rabbit is a denizen of every woodland, and moles, rats and field-mice are in the fields in modern abundance. The squirrels, red and gray, are quite numerous, especially the former; occasionally the flying-squirrel is seen, and the striped squirrels, or "chipmonks," are everywhere in the woods and pasture lands.

Birds of Beverly.—Although the number of ferous quadrupeds is not large, the territory embraced in this township contains nearly every representative genus of the *avifauna*, or bird-life, of the Eastern States. The first settlers, though not particularly observant of animated nature, could not avoid noticing the numerous birds. Captain John Smith (1616), mentioned some of the many birds seen in coasting Cape Ann, as " Eagles,Gripes, divers sorts of Hawkes, Cranes, Geese, Brantz, Cormorants, Ducks, Sheldrakes, Teals, Meawes, Guls, Turkies, Dive-hoppers, etc., and divers sorts of vermin whose names I know not."

Higginson, a decade later, speaks of wild ducks, pigeons, geese, and turkeys, partridges, eagles and hawks. But their attention, though called to the coast species and water birds, and such as from their size or habits were conspicuous, was not drawn to the numerous species resident within the woods and secluded meadow-lands. The species resident in Beverly to-day, and those found here at some season of the year as migrants, number about two hundred, and these were (at least conjecturally) identified with this region three hundred years ago.

Our ancestors, those who first settled here and reclaimed the country from its original wildness, gladly welcomed the birds, especially those harbingers of spring, forerunners of the coming of milder air, and the relaxation of the rigors of winter. Our best literature has celebrated the softening influence of the birds and flowers upon those stern settlers who were compelled to battle with nature for the mere elements of subsistence. Without these free gifts of a beneficient Providence there would be little to cheer them at their toil. That they appreciated the coming of the birds and looked forward anxiously to their presence among them, and encouraged it in every way, is well-known. They drew from the ranks of their feathered friends only such as were necessary for food, and allowed the harmless and smaller members of the fraternity to flit and warble unmolested. But even the savage, the red Indian, equalled them in this, never slaying except for sustenance and the simple demands of ornamentation.

With a few slight additions, perhaps through the introduction of strangers—such as the English sparrow—the avifauna of Beverly is essentially the same as it was when the first settlers landed here. Assuming this, then, they would have found, had they investigated and classified the results, nearly two hundred species. Of the hawks, nine or ten, besides occasional visitants in the bald-headed eagle and the fish-hawk. Of owls, there are eight or nine species, including the great Arctic owl (though rarely seen) and the great-horned.

The cuckoos give us two species, the woodpeckers six, while of the humming bird there is one species as a summer resident (the ruby-throat), whip-poor-will, one night-hawk, and one kingfisher.

The fly-catchers are represented by seven species, which include the "king-bird," pewees, etc.

The thrushes, also, seven species, containing our most delightful songsters: the brown, hermit and wood-thrushes, and the cat-bird, as well as the robin. There is one blue-bird, one gold-crested and one ruby-crowned wren, one of the tit-mice, the chickadee, two nut-hatchers, one creeper, three wrens (including the house-wren), and one titlark. Of that large family termed the warblers, we have at least twenty species. They comprise a considerable num-

ber of our migrants; for not very many birds are resident here throughout the year.

Every season a host of birds may be noted winging their way from woodland to woodland, copse to thicket. This aerial army of invasion comes to us, mainly, from the far South, making its long journey of thousands of miles by progressive stages, never fairly halting at any one place, except for food and short intervals of rest, until its ultimate destination is reached.

The advance pickets of this flying column arrive early in March, their posts continually being occupied by later visitants, and finally succeeded by the army of occupation.

The black-birds, robins, song-sparrows, blue-birds, are among the first arrivals, and these are followed by others of their kind so obscure of coloration (some of them—though others are of beautiful color), and of such secluded habits, that they escape the observation of any but the trained eye of the ornithologist.

These are the warblers,—quiet and unobtrusive tree inhabitants. They take their places amongst the ranks of the winter residents, such as the crows, jays, snow-birds and chickadees, while some of these latter retire yet further north to make room for them.

Thus it is that our fields and forests are occupied by the feathered flocks. The shores are swept by sand-pipers, plover, gulls and terns, while the so-called birds of prey, the hawks, owls and eagles, circle in the ether of the upper air or lie in wait in the dim recesses of the wood.

The interesting oven-bird, or golden-crowned thrush, is included in the warbler group. In the oak woods the scarlet tanager is found. Of the swifts, swallows and martins, there are six species. Of chatterers, one, the cedar-bird, one shrike (the butcher-bird), five vireos and one skylark.

Four members of the finch family, two cross-bills and two red-polls and snow-buntings, sparrows and snow-birds give us twelve representatives; there is one grosbeak (the rose-breasted), one indigo-bird and one towhee-bunting, or "chewink." That most delightful melodist, the bobolink, resides in our meadows after the first week in May, and we are favored with the presence of four species of blackbirds.

The meadow-lark is found occasionally, and two orioles; one, the golden robin, builds its pensile nest in the elms of our principal streets. One species of crow resides here throughout the year; the blue jay, also; and a specimen of the raven may occasionally descend to this latitude.

The wild pigeon once visited our territory in immense flocks, though now rarely found, since the great wheat fields of the West offer it food nearer home. Within a score of years, however, it was very abundant in the month of September, passing over our woods in great flocks.

That it was equally numerous at the opening of the seventeenth century, we have testimony from Higginson, writing of Salem in 1631:

"Upon the eighth of March, from after it was faire daylight until about eight of the clock in the forenoon, there flew over all the towns in our plantacons soe many flocke of doues, each flock contayning many thousands, and soe many that they obscured the light, that passeth credit, if but the truth should be written."

One species of turtle-dove is a visitor here, "partridges" (ruffed grouse) are found in every wood, and quail in the pastures. Of herons and bitterns, five species visit our meadows and marshes; plover, five species, on the shore; one species of woodcock and one of snipe. Ten species of curlew and sandpipers may be shot here, and three of rails and coots.

The Canada goose sometimes alights here, on its way to the far north, and, in olden times, doubtless bred here. Ducks and sheldrakes, to the number of sixteen, swim along shore and sometimes penetrate our creeks; now and then a few remain to breed.

Six species of gulls and terns visit the shore; two breed on the islands in the harbor. Two of the petrels (or "Mother Cary's chickens"), may be detected by the more observant, in the winter. Of loons and grebes five species, the most conspicuous being the great northern diver. To end the list, mention should be made of four sub-Arctic birds; the auks and puffins, which come down from hyperborean regions in mid-winter. That species now extinct, the great auk (*alca impennis*), doubtless existed here in the time of our forefathers; but the only representative of the family to-day is the little auk, or dovekie, which is sometimes blown upon our coast during severe storms.

In the preceding pages are enumerated nearly all the higher forms of animal life indigenous here at the time of which we write. Space will not permit of a description in detail of these, nor even mention of those still lower families, of the insect world, which are numerous; yet, with few noxious, or even annoying, representatives.

Tradition has, perhaps, invested some reptiles with fateful attributes, but it is not known that there are many harmful here, unless they have been introduced from other parts. In a word, then, this territory was amply provided by the Creator with animals necessary to man's subsistence, and even to minister to his æsthetic tastes; but with none noxious so numerous as to cause him excessive apprehension.

THE ABORIGINES.—Mention ought to be made, before this general subject is dismissed, of the original proprietors of this territory, at least, who were found in possession when it was discovered by white men.

There is abundant evidence that this region was looked upon as a favored abiding-place by the red men, the American aborigines. Not alone tradition points to it as the ancient home of the Indian, but the material evidence of his occupation, in the shape of

remains of his feasts, his village sites and specimens of his domestic utensils and implements of war and the chase. Banks of shells, where the wigwam was once pitched, and the refuse of the kitchen deposited, are yet found here. The largest yet discovered was near the head of Galley's Brook, doubtless an ancient estuary, on the slope leading to the cemetery. These ancient encampments were always at or near the head or mouth of some stream contiguous to the sea; for almost the entire subsistence of the Indians, during the summer months especially, was drawn from the sea. "They hunted in the winter," says an ancient writer, "the moose, bear, etc.; for this purpose making long excursions into the interior, but their fishing followes in the spring, summer and fall of the leaf; first for Lobsters, Clammes, Flouke, Lumps or Poddlers, and Alewives, and afterwards for Bass, Cod, Rock, Bluefish, Salmon, etc."

"All these, and diverse other good things," says Captain John Smith, "do heere, for want of use, increase and decrease with little diminution; whereby they growe to that abundance that you shall scarce find any Baye, or shallow Cove of sand, where you may not take many Clampes (clams) or Lobsters, or both, at your pleasure, and in many places lode your boat, if you please; nor iles where you finde not fruites, birds, crabs, muskles, or all of them, for the taking, at low water. And in the harbors we frequented, a little boye might take of Cunners and Pinacks and such delicate fish, at the ship's sterne, more than sixe or tenne can eat in a daie."

They are not quite so plentiful to-day; but in the season our forefathers (like the Indians) only had to go forth with hook and line, or spade, or lobster spear, to be assured of abundant material for a dinner. The shell-heaps of Ipswich sand-hills have yielded many a specimen of Indian relics, and the fields of Beverly, likewise, though not so many as the former, where numbers of the Aborigines were gathered together, for many seasons, to feast upon the products of the sea. Skeletons have been found here, in different places, which were undoubtedly those of the red men, sometimes with various articles of stone in the graves, as arrow and spear heads, stone hammers, pestles and gouges. This was undoubtedly a favorite resort of theirs, but not held in so high estimation as the sand-hills of Ipswich. It was one of the outlying possessions of the Sagamore of Agawam, Masconomo, sometimes known to the settlers as "Sagamore John." His possessions extended from the Merrimac River south to the Naumkeag, and from Cochicewick, or Andover, to the coast of Massachusetts Bay. Being well disposed toward the English who sought settlement here, he freely granted them all the territory they desired. But in the year 1700, when the descendants of the Sagamore were very few in number and without possessions, a claim was set up by his grand-children to the township territory. Although such a claim could not be enforced, and the inhabitants of Beverly were well aware of this fact, yet they exhibited the fairness of their intentions towards the impoverished Indians by settling with them, giving them £6 6*s*. 8*d*., and taking a formal deed of the property.

The fate of the Agawams, who were so closely connected with our earliest history, furnishes an illustration of that of all the Eastern tribes. They were at enmity with the Tarrantines, or wilder Indians of Maine, in conflicts with whom they lost heavily; but appear to have wasted gradually away, even though kindly treated by the English. In 1638 Masconomo, who seems to have been high-minded and generous, sold his fee in the soil of Ipswich to John Winthrop, Jr., for £20. He died in 1658, and was buried on Sagamore Hill, in Hamilton, still known by its original name. His gun and valuables were buried with him; but a certain vandal, a few years later, dug up his bones and paraded his skull through Ipswich streets. For this act he was punished, but the ancient home of the Agawams no longer afforded them more than a mere tarrying-place; the last record of the survivors is in 1726–30, when a few were living at Wigwam Hill, in the Hamlet, or Hamilton.

1626. Earliest White Inhabitants.—A shore so attractive as that subsequently called "Cape Ann Side," could not long remain unnoticed by the first arrivals, and it must have early drawn the attention of those fishermen of Cape Ann itself: Roger Conant and his associates in 1624.

When, in 1626, the fishing station there was abandoned, and these people removed to Naumkeag, they coasted the Manchester and Beverly shore, which previously had seemed so beautiful to Capt. Smith, that he called it "the paradise of all these parts," and subsequently won the admiration of Endicott and Higginson. They passed by its numerous headlands and embayed beaches, seeking a site nearer the head of navigation than these afforded, and landed on a rock on the southwest side of Beverly Harbor.

[1] "Near the extremity of North Point, or at Cape Ann, or Ipswich Ferry, as it was variously called, now a little west of the junction of Beverly Bridge, may be seen the outcropping of a metamorphic rock, as it slopes its checkered surface to the sea, that, with its intersected dikes and veins, fills the mind of the geologist with wondering interest, as he counts the deeply-graven records of eleven of the old earth's eruptions."

To this description, by a son of Salem, a one-time resident of Beverly, adds:

[2] "Well might we wish—and with no irreverence, surely—that the Almighty Being, who, in His wonder-working caused them, had, as a twelfth signature of His divine power, affixed the very footprints of the worthy company that first stepped on that rock, to make here their permanent abode.

"Here on this spot, thus scored by the hand of Deity, we believe Conant and his followers, the pilgrim band of Massachusetts, stayed their wandering feet, and commenced their permanent abode; and here, too, we believe, they welcomed Endicott and his company to their wilderness home; thereby tallying another epoch in the world's history; for here it was that freedom, long confined in the mother country, burst the crust of oppression that bound her and began to overflow the land with its blessings, and spread out the solid foundations on which our republic rests."

[1] "Old Planters of Salem," G. D. Phippen, 1858.

[2] Rev. C. T. Thayer's Bi-Centennial Address, 1868.

Their first settlement, where they began their plantation, living in perfect amity with the resident Indians, was on the peninsula lying between Collins Cove and North River.

[1] "Here they took up their station, upon a pleasant and fruitful neck of land, environed with an arm of the sea on each side, in either of which vessels and ships of good burthen might easily anchor."

Nearly two years, they remained here, courageously clinging to the soil they had won from the forest, and portions of which they cultivated in common with the Indians; then arrived the "Abigail," with Governor Endicott and his colonists, who, at the same time, furnished them succor and superseded their leaders in authority.

The new arrivals were, in point of numerical strength, double those of the original settlers; but the latter were of seasoned stock, and not desirous of yielding up their hard-earned territory and freedom. A controversy followed which, but for the "prudent moderation of Mr. Conant, agent before for the Dorchester planters," might have proved a serious matter. These good people, however, "who came so far to provide a place where to live together in Christian amity and concord,"[1] finally allowed reason to prevail, and, in commemoration of this, changed the name of the place from Naumkeag to Salem, City of Peace.

With the "Old Planters," however, this was but a compromise, for sake of peace; they cast about for another location, where they could be permitted to exercise a portion at least of that freedom they had previously enjoyed.

That they were highly respected by the promoters of the new company, and that their assistance and counsel were desired, is shown by their retention in official capacity for many years, as also in a letter from Matthew Craddock, governor of the company's affairs in London, to Governor Endicott, in April, 1629:

"As to the old planters themselves, . . . wee are content they shall be partakers of such privileges as wee, from his Majesty's espetial grace, with great cost, favor of personages of note, and much labor, have obtained, and that they shall be incorporated into this society, and enjoy not only their lands, which formerly they have manured, but such a further proportion as, by the advice and judgment of yourself and the rest of the council, shall be thought fit for them or any of them," etc.

Certain privileges were also to be granted them, but their leaders concluded to change their residence.

"The legal title was now in the new company, who, strong in wealth and influence, were decidedly aggressive in spirit, and the only alternative for their leaders in the forlorn hope was dispersion, and an abandonment of the now ripening fruits of their labors. They submitted to the lesser evil; but historic impartiality, upon a survey of the facts, will yield a verdict of exact justice, unvitiated by superior interests and prejudices."[2]

We need not to seek for any other cause than this feeling of insecurity and the desire to occupy the fertile meadow lands about the bays of the opposite coast.

1628. As early as 1628 the dwellers at Naumkeag were attracted by the fields of natural grass on Beverly side. Says one of them, Richard Brackenbury, in a deposition:

"The same yeare we came over, it was, that wee tooke a farther possession on the north side of Salem Ferrye, commonly call'd 'Cape An Side,' by cutting thatch for our houses; and soone after laid out lotts for tillage, land on the said Cape An Side, and quickly after sundry houses were built on the said Cape An Side."

"The marshes where thatch grew were reserved for roofing; in 1628, one in Beverly was especially mentioned for that purpose."[3]

Most of the dwellings of that period were cottages, with thatched roofs and wooden or "catted" (mixed clay and stick) chimneys. The first house erected in Salem was, probably, that of Roger Conant; and one he had occupied at Cape Ann was subsequently taken down and removed to Salem, for Endicott's use.

The leaders of the Cape Ann plantation, and the most prominent, men of the first Salem settlement were, doubtless, the founders of the first permanent colony of "Cape Ann Side," later incorporated as Beverly.

Tradition points to a small colony of fishermen at Tuck's Point as early as 1628–'30; but the first substantial house was probably erected farther down the coast.

As nearly as can be determined, the first settlers who came here to stay were the Woodburys. In the spring of 1628, John Woodbury, who had come to Naumkeag with Conant in 1626, returned from England (whither he had been sent for assistance) with his son Humphrey and his brother William. Humphrey (probably with his father's aid), located at or near the Cove, between two rocky points directly opposite the "Willows" of the Salem shore.

William Woodbury settled near the lower point of the name (Woodbury), and here was built (tradition states), the first dwelling, a large, double, oak-framed structure, called the garrison house, about the year 1630. This was, says an old resident, built with loopholes and scuttles, open underneath, and some of its oak timbers are in the lower portion of the house afterwards built there by John Prince. The first settlers were probably as above mentioned, the first great house at William Woodbury's Point and the first town-born child (accepting current tradition), was of the name of Dixey; a William Dixey, who followed Conant to Bass River side, was admitted freeman in 1634, and died, aged eighty-two, in 1690.

It will not fail to be noticed, that the settlement of Cape Ann side, afterwards Beverly, virtually began with the arrival of those sturdy pioneers, Roger Conant and his associates. They were but temporarily located at Naumkeag, the leaders of this band, styled the "Old Planters;" and removed hither as soon as grants of land were secured, though retaining for a while, in Naumkeag, their gardens and improved lots.

1635. In the original "Book of Grants," yet to be seen in Salem, is found the following entry:

[1] Hubbard. [2] Thornton. [3] "Felt's Annals."

"On the 25th of the 11th moneth, 1635." Voted that "Capn Trask, Jno. Woodbery, Mr Conant, Peter Palfrey & John Balch are to have 5 fearmes, viz; each 200 acres a piece, to form in all a thousand acres of Land, togeather lying, and being at the head of Bass River, 124 pole in breadth and soe runne northerly to the River by the great pond side,[1] and soe in bredth making up the full quantitye of a thousand acres, These limits laid out and surveyed by vs.

JOHN WOODBERY,
JOHN BALCH."

Of the same date:

"Mem. the limits of a fearme of ground granted to Henery Herrick, between two and three acres of ground, lying on the north side of Jeffry Mercy's Cove, bounded by the Rock on one side and Woolytons (Porter's) River on the other."

And on the "8th of the twelfth month, 1635."

"That Israel Burnet may have a tenne acre lott at the upp. end of Bass River."

In 1639, "23d day of the 10th moneth,"

"Granted to John Woodbery, John Balch & Mr Connaught 5 acres of medow a piece in some convenient place."

The best lands were then found at the heads of creeks and the margins of rivers, the higher sections being, for the most part, covered with dense forest, while these meadow-lands were open, or, in great part, free from forest.

There were no roads in those days, there being, for many years, but a single Indian trail between Boston and Agawam, or Ipswich; hence all communication between different settlements was by water.

It is related of the origin of the first road in Beverly that it was laid out by a heifer, which, having been driven from Woodbury's Point to the farms at the head of Bass River, by a circuitous trail along the shore, escaped, and made her way back home directly through the woods. This trail was followed, and subsequently became a line of communication between the two places. "Two hundred years," says the historian of Beverly (Stone), "still leave us in possession of many highways whose numerous windings bear ample testimony to the same scientific origin."

Regarding means of travel at that time, a contemporary,[2] writing in 1634 of Salem, says: "Although their land be none of the best, yet beyond the rivers is a very good soyle, where they have their farmes and get their Hay and plant their corne; there they crosse these rivers with small cannowes (canoes), which are made of whole pine trees, being about two foot and a half over, and 20 foot long; in these likewise they goe a fowling sometimes two leagues to sea; there be more cannowes in this town (Salem) than in the whole Patent, every household having a water-house or two."

Of the lives of the planters of that time, the same writer gives us a glimpse: "For all New England must be workers in some kinde; and wheresoer it hath been reported that boyes of tenne or twelve yeares of age might doe much more than get their living: that cannot be, for he must have more than a boye's head, and no lesse than a man's strength, that intends to live comfortably; and he that hath understanding and Industrie, with a stock of an hundred pound, shall live better there than he shall doe here (in England) of twenty pound per annum."

This pioneer life led by our forefathers, passed in felling forests, clearing land and opening roads and trails, is well described in several books treating of that formative period of New England's history.

Of the "Old Planters" who received the thousand-acre grant of land between Bass River and Wenham Lake, three—Roger Conant, John Balch and John Woodbury—soon settled on their respective tracts. Captain Trask's grant went by exchange to Thomas Scruggs, whose daughter, Rachel, married John Rayment (Raymond), by a descendant of whom it is occupied (or a portion of it) to-day.

The two-hundred-acre grant to Peter Palfrey was not occupied by him, but subsequently came by purchase (1644) into the possession of William Dodge, the founder, with his brother Richard, of this numerous family in Wenham and Hamilton. He was known as Farmer Dodge; his son, Captain William Dodge, married a daughter of Conant, a portion of whose grant was sold by one of his descendants, to John Chipman, the first minister of the Second Society, ordained December 28, 1715.

[3] "The grant of a thousand acres, comprising the five farms, was always known as the 'Old Planters' Farms.' The first proprietors of them, and their immediate successors, appear to have arranged and managed them in concert—to have had homesteads near together between the head of Bass River and the neighborhood of the 'Horse Bridge,' where the meeting-house of the Second Congregational Society (or of the Precinct of Salem and Beverly) now stands. Their woodlands and pasture lands were farther to the north and east. . . . . The dividing line between Beverly and Salem Village, finally agreed upon in 1703, ran through the 'Old Planters' Farms,' particularly the portions belonging to the Dodges, Raymond, and Woodbury. It went through 'Capt. John Dodge's dwelling-house, six feet to the eastward of his brick chimney as it now stands.' At the time of the witchcraft delusion (1692), the Raymonds and Dodges mostly belonged to the Salem Village parish and church. They continued on the rate-list and connected with the proceedings entered on the record-books until the meeting-house at the horse-bridge was opened for worship, in 1715, when they transferred their relations to the 'Precinct of Salem & Beverly.'"

It would, perhaps, be well to digress from the following of events in chronologic sequence to glance at three of these "Old Planters," the fathers of Beverly:—Conant, Balch and Woodbury. Roger Conant, one time Governor of the Plantation at Cape Anne and at Naumkeag, was born in Budleigh, England, in Devonshire, in April, 1591. He came to New England (Plymouth Colony) in 1623, removing to Nantasket, where he remained a while, and then went to Cape Ann as superintendent of the Dorchester (England) Company's venture there, being, in point of fact, "the first Governor of the Colony of Massachusetts." Removing to Naumkeag in 1626 (as already related), he was instrumental, through his firmness and constancy of purpose, in keeping his little band together until the arrival of Endicott, in

[1] Wenham Lake.

[2] William Wood; "New England's Prospect," London, 1634.

[3] "Upham's Witchcraft," vol. i., pp. 130, 131.

1628. He proved himself, according to Cotton Mather, "a most religious, prudent and worthy gentleman, always maintaining an interest in the affairs of the town to the last of his life." An original member of the first church in Salem, he was also one of the founders of that of Beverly, was made a freeman in 1630, and represented Salem in the General Court. In addition to the grant of lands in Beverly, he received, in 1671, two hundred acres more, near Dunstable, as a "very ancient planter." He died on November 19, 1679, in his eighty-ninth year, leaving seven children,—four sons and three daughters: Lot, born 1624, died 1674; Roger, born 1626, died 1672; Mary, married John Balch, and afterwards William Dodge; Sarah; Exercise (son), baptized December 24, 1637, died April 28, 1722; Elizabeth; Joshua, died 1659.

The ancestor of the Beverly branch of the family was Lot, some of his descendants yet residing here. The second son, Roger Conant, Jr., enjoyed the distinction of having been the first child born in Salem (in 1626), and was granted twenty acres of land in 1639 in recognition of this.

On the fly-leaf of an old Bible, once the property of the Conants (according to Mr. G. D. Phippen, in his memoir[1]), is this entry by the widow of Roger, Jr., who lost both son and husband within the space of six weeks:

"The 4 day of May, 1672, being Saturday, my dere littel sone Samuel Conant dyed. The 15 of June 1672, being Saturday, my dere, dere, dere husband Roger Conant dyed."

A most pathetic chronicle of the old, sad story.

John Balch descended from a very ancient family of Somersetshire, England, where he was born at or near Bridgewater about 1579. He came to New England in September, 1623, with Captain Robert Gorges and settled at Salem with Conant. He was made a freeman May 18, 1631, and was one of the original members of the first church in Salem, also holding various offices of trust,—an "intelligent, exemplary and useful citizen."

He removed to his Bass River grant in 1638, and there resided until his death, in June, 1648. His will, dated May 15, 1648, was witnessed by Peter Palfrey, Nicholas Patch and Jeffrey Massey, and proved in the same court a fortnight later.

It brings in a vivid manner before us the life of his times to read in his inventory of the "great fruit trees, the young apple-trees, the corn that is growing upon the ground," and two of his cows "Reddie" and "Cherrie." Even at that early time our first settlers were firmly rooted in the soil of Beverly.

Balch's children were: Benjamin, born 1629; John, drowned in 1662, June 16th, at Beverly Ferry during a violent storm. It was his widow, daughter of Roger Conant, who afterwards married Capt. Wm. Dodge.

Freeborn (who, from his name, is believed to have been born the year his father was made freeman, in 1631) went to England and never returned.

The widow of Balch died in 1657.

The most numerous family in Beverly to-day is descended from the Woodburys.

John Woodbury, the first of the name in America, came from Somersetshire, England, to Cape Ann in 1624, afterward removing with Conant to Salem, in 1626. The year following he went to England for supplies, returning in 1628, bringing with him his son Humphrey. He and his wife, Agnes, were of the original members of the first church in Salem, and he was made a freeman May 18, 1631.

It is stated that John and his brother, William, went over to Cape Ann Side about 1630, where the latter settled at what is now called William Woodbury's Point. From them, it is thought, are descended all of the name in New England. After his grant at Bass River, John, or "Father Woodbury" (as he is called), removed thither and there died, "after a life of energy and faithfulness to the colony," 1641, aged about sixty years.

Humphrey, son of John, came to Naumkeag with his father in 1628, and at that time was nineteen years old, having been born in 1609. He was a member of the Salem Church in 1648, and one of the founders of the first church in Beverly, of which he was chosen deacon in 1668.

Other children of John, whose names are recorded, were Hannah, baptized 1636; Abigail, 1637; Peter, 1640. Humphrey is said to have reached the age of three-score and ten, and his widow died about 1689. Peter, son of John, was made freeman in 1668, a representative to General Court in 1689, and died July 5, 1704.

William Woodbury, John's brother, had also grants of land in Salem, and is mentioned in the records of 1639. His children: Nicholas (the oldest), William, Andrew, Hugh, Isaac and Hannah. His will was dated 1st Fourth month, 1663, and he died in 1676. Nicholas died 1686, leaving a widow, who survived till June 10, 1701. His daughter, Abigail, married Richard Ober, and died 1727, aged eighty-six.

It is an honorable as well as ancient family of Beverly. "Few enterprises of 'pith and moment' were set on foot in the colony except a Woodbury was of the party, and they seem to have been ready early and late, whether in humble or conspicuous station, and whatever might betide, to bear a man's part. Two Beverly Woodburys piloted the little fleet in the capture of St. Johns and Port Royal, in the N. E. expedition of 1654. And a full century later a Beverly Woodbury stood by the side of Wolfe as he fell in victory upon the plains of Abraham, and wore that day a sword which is still an heirloom with his family."[2]

Two other names, equally honorable, and linked

[1] Essex Hist. Col., vol. i, No. 4.

[2] Robert S. Rantoul.

with those of the Old Planters, were those of Brackenbury and Lothrop. Richard Brackenbury came with Endicott in 1628, was a member of the first church, made freeman in 1630, and was granted seventy-five acres of land in 1636.

He was an active member of the first church in Beverly, where he lived till 1685, and died at the age of eighty-five. The family long ago became extinct here, though the name is perpetuated in one of our streets, Brackenbury Lane, which runs through his former farm.

Captain Thomas Lothrop was another man of force and integrity who came early from England, and who received a grant of land on Bass River Side in 1636, in which year he became a member of the first church of Salem. He was a representative to General Court for several terms from Salem, assisted in founding the church in Beverly, and was there elected selectman for many years.

The more important events of his history will be narrated in proper sequence, but it will be well to keep in mind this eminent man as one of the leaders of this young and struggling colony. His grant of land was at the Cove, not far from Humphrey Woodbury's, where traces of his house-cellar were shown until a very recent period, and there he lived for forty years, a model of fidelity to all his public and private relations.

"Brave and gentle, generous and just, confiding, yet cautious and wise, of large estate for the time, bountifully as skilfully administered, never sparing of his own exertions, but always ready for every good word or work, he had a rare and remarkable hold on the confidence and affection of the community in which he lived. . . . His house was not only the abode of a liberal hospitality, but an asylum for the orphan and distressed. . . . Among those who shared his fostering care was a sister, Ellen, whom he brought with him on his return from a visit to England. She became the second wife of the veteran schoolmaster, Ezekiel Cheever, who taught for more than seventy years in New Haven, Ipswich, Charlestown and Boston."

Lothrop, in 1654, was lieutenant under Captain Hawthorn, and a captain under Major Sedgwick at the capture of St. Johns and Port Royal. From the latter place he brought home a bell, taken from the "New Friary" there, for the use of the church in Beverly.

We will return now to the chronological narration:

1636.—"It is agreed, December 26, that John Stone shall keep a ferry, to begin this day, betwixt his house on the neck upon the north point and Cape Ann side, and shall give diligent attention thereupon dureing the space of three yeares, unless he shall give just occation to the contrary; and in consideration thereof he is to have twopence from a stranger and one penny from an inhabitant. Moreover, the said John Stone doth engage to provide a convenient boat for the said purpose, betwixt this and the first month next coming after the date hereof."

In 1653 the profits of the ferry "towards Ipswich," were allowed to Richard Stackhouse's family provided he find boats and men. He continued in charge till 1686, when he was succeeded by John Massey, "the oldest town-born child then residing in Salem." Two years later, Massey had charge of the south side, and Rogers Haskins of the north (or Beverly) side. In 1694 the latter was succeeded by Edmund Gale, and he, in 1701, by the widow of Haskins, who, in 1708, leased the ferry for a term of twenty years. In 1742, over one hundred years after the establishment of the ferry, the rates for crossing were "3*d.* for a person, 9*d.* for a horse and 3*s.* for a chair or chaise."

In 1749 it was leased by Robert Hale, of Beverly, at three pounds sterling per annum for seven years. In 1769 B. Waters, of Salem, and Ebenezer Ellinwood, of Beverly, hired the ferry for three years. The rates then were, "1*d.* for an individual, 2 half-pence for a horse, 4 half-pence for man and horse, 5*d.* for a chair, 7*d.* for two-wheeled chaise, and 9*d.* for a four-wheeled."

The building of a bridge over the ferry was agitated in 1787, the principal mover in the matter being an eminent merchant of Beverly, George Cabot. As the proposition gave rise to angry discussion, a certain Mr. Blyth remarked, that he "never knew a bridge to be built without a 'railing' on both sides." The following year, 1788, the bridge was built by a distinguished contractor, Lemuel Cox. It rested upon ninety-three piles, was thirty-two feet span, fourteen hundred and eighty-four feet long, entirely of wood. Its cost was about sixteen thousand dollars, which sum was divided into two hundred shares, worth, prior to 1830, five times the original value, but steadily declining later, after the railroad was built, and in view of its approaching reversion to the commonwealth.

It was called Essex Bridge, as so beneficial to the county, and its cost was to be remunerated by tolls for a period of seventy years, after which it became free to the public.

This, in brief, is the history of the Salem and Beverly ferry and the Essex Bridge. In 1789 General Washington, then on his famous tour, was so interested in it that he dismounted after he had crossed the "draw," which was hoisted that he might examine it.

1638.—John Winthrop, Jr., having settled at Agawam (1633) has leave to set up salt-works at Ryal Side—then part of Salem, now of Beverly—and to have wood enough for carrying on his works, and pasturage for his cows. The name of Salt-house, or Salter's Point, remains to this day, applied to the point between Danvers River and Duck Cove.

1639.—"At genall towne meeting, the 11th month, Granted to Roger Conant, the sonne of Roger Conant, being the first borne childe in Salem, 20 acres of Land."

This individual was Roger Conant, Jr., born 1626, died June 15, 1672.

1642.—"At a particular meeting of the *seven men*, Granted to Samuel Edson 25 acres of Land joyning to Humphrey Woodburys farme in Mackerell Cove,

& 2 acres of medow where he can find yt there about."

1643.—"8th moneth: John Balch, for the Basse River, and William Woodbury for the Mackerell Cove, were nominated to receive donations of corne for a certain John Moore."

"It is ordered that all those that have land granted them at the great pond, shall fence with the rest or els leave theirre Lands. And all that have lotts at Bass River are bound to the like conditions."

1644.—"The 29 of the 2d moneth,

"Ordered that Guydo Bayly shall have soe much of the swamp that lyeth along by his lott over at Cape Ann side as he can ridd within 3 yeares next insuing."

Bayly emigrated to Plymouth colony, and sold his lands to Humphrey, the son of John Woodbury.

These extracts, from the Salem Book of Grants, give us a glimpse of the toiling pioneers and enable us to localize some of those hitherto in doubt.

1646.—"The 26 day of the 8th moneth,

"Ordered, that Willm Woodbury and Richd Brackenbury, Ensign dixie, Mr. Conant, Lieftenant Lothrop, Lawrence & Leech, shall forthwith Lay out a way between the ferry at Salem & the head of Jeffryes creek, and that it be such a way as men may travell on horse back & drive cattle; and if such a way not be found, then to take a speedy course to sett up a foote bridge at Mackrell Cove."

The original roads were merely tracks or trails, over the beaches, and leading from one house or settlement to another, not having a well-defined objective point; hence their meandering courses at the present day. From foot-paths and bridle-trails, those most in use finally hardened into roads, which were ultimately extended so as to connect distant points, or with the great public highways, as between Boston and Ipswich.

Our forefathers came here, primarily, for religious freedom; they accepted the country and conditions of life as they found them, striving hard and always to improve both. They could not, like settlers at the present day, project a town or city in advance, on paper, laying out streets and highways, broad and straight, and defining beforehand the position of every public building, park and station.

A home, first of all, they sought; a farm, where the land was most fertile and its surface most easily prepared for the plough. They found no broad acres of prairie land lying open to cultivation; but were obliged to labor, for many months, at the surface-work of preparation. There was at first a struggle for mere existence; their sustenance was to be drawn from the soil, supplemented by the various products of the sea. Theirs was not a high ambition, yet it was the noblest man can conceive: to have a home of their own for the possession of themselves and their descendants.

This characteristic trait has descended to the present generation: this desire to retain an ownership in the soil; and perhaps explains the thrift and prosperity that has ever attended upon the town.

As the founding of homes was the main occupation of the inhabitants during the first century or so, and as this gave them little leisure for visiting, there was not much attention paid to the means of intercommunication. Thus it was the original trails, with all their sinuous traceries, became indurated, as it were, into the roads of the present day. The cow path of the "stray" from the Woodbury farm at the Cove to the larger farms on the Bass River, is now crossed by portions of Cross and Colon (or Cow Lane) Streets.

It may be well to note, in passing, that the right to traverse the ancient bridle-trail along the shore is still claimed by many inhabitants.

1647.—27th October: The inhabitants of Mackerell Cove (as the coast settlement was called), were released from watching in Salem, except in seasons of danger. They had preaching soon after at Cape Ann Side, and erected a house of worship. Twelve years later, they built a parsonage, as appears from the curious deposition in the Salem Records:

1659.—9th month, 29th:

"Wee whose names are heareunder written being desired to vew and to take notice what work is yet to be done to the house which John Norman built for the use of the Ministrie on Cape An Side, having vewed the same accordinge to our best vnderstandinge wee doe judge that the work yet to be donne is worth att least fiftie shillings, besides the dividing of the rooms.

"The *T* mark *C* of THOMAS CHUBB.
"The *Z* " of ZACHARIAH HERRICH.
"WILLIAM SEARGENT."

This house was built on the slope of the hill opposite the (Bancroft) house at present standing, which was built for the minister's use about 1690.

FIRST CHURCH OF BEVERLY.—The records of the First Church contain a faithful description of the first foundation in Beverly, as follows: "The Lord in mercy alluring and bringing over into this wilderness of New England, many of his faithfull servants from England, whose aymes were to worship God in purity according to his word; they, in pursuance of that work, began to sett up particular churches; and the First Church gathered in Massachusetts colony was in the town of Salem; a gratious beginning of that intended church reformation, which hath beine farther prosecuted and prospered through the Lord's mercy in divers parts of the land. This church of Salem entered church covenant with publique fasting and prayer upon the sixth day of the sixth month, 1629; their number att the beginning very small, was soon greatly increased and inriched with divers worthy labourers in God's vineyard as Pastors and Teachers successively, viz.: Mr. Samuel Skelton, Mr. Francis Higginson, Mr. Hugh Peters, Mr. Edward Norris and Mr. John Higginson, their present Pastor.

1650. "As their church increased, divers of the members came over the Ferry to live on Bass River

side, who, on the 10th of the 12th mo., 1649 (Mr. Norris beinge teacher), presented their request to the rest of the church for some course to be taken for the means of grace among themselves, because of tediousness and difficulties over the water and other inconveniences, which motion was renewed againe the 22d of 1st mo., 1650, and on the 2d day of the 8th mo. they returned their answer, viz.: that we should look out some able and approved teacher, to be emploied amongst us, wee still holding communion with them as before.

"But upon farther experience wee, uppon the 23 of the first month, 1656, presented our desires to be a church of ourselves, and after some agitation about it, wherein our teacher stood for us, it was put to voat and yielded unto, none appeering opposite, we protesting there was no disunion in judgment or affection intended but brotherly communion.

"Our desire being consented unto, wee proceeded to build a meeting-house on Bass River Side, and we called unto us successively to dispense the word of life unto us, Mr. Joshua Hubbard, Mr. Jeremiah Hubbard and Mr. John Hailes; and after almost three yeares experience of Mr. John Hailes, our motion was again renewed the 23d of 4th mo., 1667." The petition follows of Mr. Roger Conant and some eighty others, to be set off from the First Church in Salem to form the First Church of Beverly.

Rev. John Hale was ordained 1667, with John Higginson, pastor of the First Church, Salem, Thomas Cobbett, of the Church of Ipswich and Antipas Newman, of the Church in Wenham, officiating.

The first fast day, or day of humiliation, entered on the parish records is in 1667, 8th day of Tenth month. On the 26th day of First month, 1668, "The Councill of Magistrates apoynt a General Fast, to mourne for prophainess, superstition & herisie, in ceasing to pray for the encouragement of religion, disapoynting of its Enemys, yt the great motions of ye world bee overruled by God's glory. That He would bless & direct ye King, Counsell & Parlament, bless ye peace with Hollend, & sanctifie ye late war, pestilence & burning of ye city of London, & continue to New England peace, liberty & ye gospel, & prevent in ye ensuing yeare blasting mildew & caterpillars, & convert the rising Generation."

1669, 17th day, Ninth month, was a day set apart for Public Thanksgiving, "to bless ye Lord for staying ye immoderate raines wch thretened to destroy ye harvests of corne & fresh hay, & for ye harvests the Lord has given."

Let us now turn to the first records of the growing settlement, still to be found in the custody of the town clerk, and in excellent preservation:

1665.—*1st month.*—"A booke of such publicke concernements as appertaine to the people of Bass river or Cape An side, relating bothe to theire civill & ministeriall affairs, from the first of the first month, 1665.

"*3d mo.* '65.—*Whereas*, we doe, with one consent, invite Mr. John Hayle to come amongst us, in order to setling with us in the worke of the ministry; for his due encouragement in the work of the Lord, amongst us, according to 2 Chron. 31, 4; & that he may attend upon the worke of the ministrie without distraction, we doe promise & engage to pay unto him £70 per annum, & his fierwood raised amongst us by a rate in equall portions, according to our former custome; & for the manner and time of payment, that he may not have to doe with particular men's portions of allowance, the bill shall not be delivered unto him, nor shall he be troubled with gathering of it in; but 2 men shall be chosen yeere by yeere, to take the care of bringing it into his house, and to make up the account at the time appointed. Also, whereas we have built a house for the ministrie, wherein it is defective to be finished by us. And there are 2 akers of home lot (to be fenced in by us) & as much meadow land belonging to it as commonly bears about fower load of hay; we doe agree that he shall have the use of that so long as he continues in the worke of the ministrie with us; yet, because we do acknowledge it his duty to provide for wife and children, that he may leave behind him, and our duty to have a care of him in that respect, we doe therefore promise and engage that in case he die in the ministrie with us, that either the house and two aker house lot forementioned shall be his, or that which is equivalent, to be paid (according to his last will and testament) within the compass of one yeare after his decease, and for the repaire of the house and fenced home lot, to be done by him living thereon for the time being.

"Also, it is agreed that Mr. Hayle shall have the use and benefit of a pasturing, the time he lives with us.

"[William] Dodge & Humphrey Woodbury be chosen to gather the rates for the ministrie.

"May 15th.—There was chosen at a publick meeting, for to make the rate for Mr. Hails maintenance for this yeere ('65), as followeth: Captain Lathrop, Mr. Thorndick, Roger Conant, Samuel Corning, Joseph Rootes.

"Mr. John Haile his year begineth with us for his allowance of £70 and his fierwood."

From this date on, through a long period, the history of the church is that of the community.

1667.—The first meeting-house was erected in 1656, just easterly of the present building; but the first church was organized in 1667, September 20, and the Rev. John Hale ordained as pastor. The names of original members are here given: John Hale, Richard Dodge, William Woodbury, Richard Brackenbury, John Stone, John Dodge, Roger Conant, William Dodge, Humphrey Woodbury, Nicholas Patch, John Hill, Thomas Lothrop, Samuel Corning, Robert Morgan, John Black, Lot Conant, Ralph Ellingwood, William Dixey, Henry Herrick, Peter Woolfe, Josiah Rootes, Exercise Conant, Edward Bishop, Elizabeth

Dodge, Mary Lovett, Elizabeth Haskell, Mary Woodbury, Sarah Leech, Freegrace Black, Eliz. Corning, Eliz. Woodbury, Ellen Brackenbury, Hannah Woodbury, Eliz. Patch, Hannah Sallows, Bethiah Lothrop, Anna Dixey, Anna Woodbury, Eliz. Woodbury, Martha Woolfe, Hannah Baker, Mary Herrick, Bridget Luff, Mary Dodge, Anna Woodbury, Ede. Herrick, Mary Dodge, Jr., Abigail Hill, Lydia Herrick. Mrs. Rebekah Hall was subsequently admitted by letter from the Church at Salisbury, and a month later Humphrey Woodbury's wife, Sarah, Humphrey Jr., John Clark, Jr., Remember Stone and Sarah Conant, were received into full communion. The first sacrament was observed September 29th, and the first infant baptized was Abigail, daughter of John and Hannah Sallows.

1667.—"At a generell meeting of the inhabytants of Cape An side, the 11th of the 9th month, there is chosen to make the rate for Mr. Hale for the year Mr. [I.] Thorndike, Thomas Lowthropp, Robert Morgan, Richard Brackenbury, Ensigne Corninge, William Ramond & John Dodge Sen., to see it brought in."

Four men were appointed for the year, to see that the cutting and hauling of wood were attended to, viz.: "(1) Goodman West, from his house to Cedar Stan (from West Beach to Sallow's Bridge); (2) Humphrey Woodbury, from his house to the ferry (probably from Humphrey Woodbury's point to bridge), and soe to the meeting-house (and from the ferry via Cabot street to the Old South); (3) Ensigne Corning, from his house to Mr. Conant's bridge (or from the Old South to Tan-yard brook); (4) Mr. Conant is for all the rest" (probably all north of Tan-yard brook to the Wenham line).

"Cart wayes. It is agreed that the wayes to the meeting-house & mill be laide out wheare it is most convenient, & those that are damnified thereby shall be satisfied by those that make use of the same."

The first mill was at the head of Bass River, near Balch Street.

THE TOWN INCORPORATED.—The Bass River people were allowed by General Court to exercise some of the powers of a town in 1665, a step preliminary to final separation from the mother-settlement. They were still subordinate to Salem until 1668, November 23d.

"WHEREAS, wee the inhabitants of Basse River and Cape Ann side, after many agitations in publique meetings what might be for our comfortable settleing, made choise of some amongst us to draw upp a writing specifying our desires and deputing messengers to the General Court held att Boston the 29th of Aprill 1668, by petition to our Governor & magistrates to invest them with power to choose yearly a fitt number of persons, who might have power within themselves as Selectmen have in other places, and so to act in the behalfe of the place by imploying others, officers or persons, as the affairs of the place may occasion.

"Att the next General Court att Boston the 14th of October 1668, Wee received this answer; that they judged meete that henceforth wee should be a towneshipp of ourselves, nomanating itt Beverly."

The County (Essex) was incorporated in 1643. The eight original towns were Naumkeag, 1626; Salem, settled 1628; Lynn, 1629; Ipswich, 1633–34; Cochichewic (Andover), 1634; Enon (Wenham), 1639; Rowley, 1639; Newbury (offshoot of Ipswich), 1635; Gloucester (Cape Ann, 1624). 1642; chronologically, the settlements were: Cape Ann, 1624–25; Naumkeag, 1626; Salem, 1628; Lynn, 1629; Cape Ann Side (Beverly), 1630; Ipswich, 1634, etc.

"It was not long," says Cotton Mather, in his *Magnalia Christi Americana*, "before the Massachusetts colony was become like an hive, overstocked with bees; and many of the new inhabitants entertained thoughts of swarming into plantations extended further into the country."

Thus had "Cape Ann Side" and "Bass River" grown from its small beginnings until strong enough to set up a hive of its own, and, in turn, send out the *avant couriers* of conquest and colonization. And regarding the name selected, "As there are few of our towns but what have their namesakes in England, so the reason why most of our towns are called what they are, is because the chief of the first inhabitants would thus bear up the names of the particular places there from whence they came." This may not have been the case with Beverly, though the inhabitants of Cape Ann Side were exceedingly fortunate in the euphonious appellation bestowed by General Court. The name may have been suggested by Beverley in England, in the East Riding of Yorkshire, celebrated for its beautiful minster and as the home of John de Beverley, Archbishop of York, a thousand years ago. The name also, may have been derived from "*Beaver Lea*" or beaver meadow, as we have "Beaver Pond;" and remains of beaver dams have been found here. Notwithstanding the beauty of the name and its associations, some of the settlers were dissatisfied, as appears in 1671 (May 28), in

"The umble petition of Roger Conant, of Bass river, alias Beverly who have bin a planter in New England fortie-eight yeers and vpwards, being one of the first, if not the very first, that resolved and made good my settlement, vnder God, in matter of plantation with my family, in this collony of the Massachusett Bay, and haue bin instrumentall, both for the founding and carrying on of the same; and when in the infancy thereof, it was in great hassard of being deserted, I was a means, through grace assisting me, to stop the flight of those few that then were heere with me, and that my vtter deniall to goe away with them, who would haue gon either for England or mostly for Virginia, but therevpon stayed to the hassard of our liues.

"Now my vmble suit and request is vnto this honorable Court, onlie that the name of our town or plantation may be altred or changed from Beuerly and be called Budleigh. I haue two reasons that haue moved me vnto this request. The first is the great dislike and discontent for this name of Beuerly, because, (wee being but a small place) it hath caused on vs a constant nickname of beggarly, being in the mouths of many, and no order was giuen or consent by the people heere to their agent for any name vntill they were shure of being a town granted in the first place.

"Secondly, I being the first that had house in Salem (and neuer had any hand in naming either that or any other towne) and myself with those that were then with me, being all from the western part of England, desire this western name of Budleigh, a market town in Deuonshier and neere vnto the sea as wee are heere in this place, and where myself was borne.

"Now in regard to our firstnesse and antiquity in this soe famous a colony, we should umblie request this littell priuelidg with your fauors and consent, to giue this name abouesaid vnto our town.

"I neuer yet made sute or request vnto the Generall Court for the least matter, tho' I thinke I might as well haue done, as many others haue, who haue obtained much without hassard of life or preferring the publick good before theire own interest, which, I praise God, I haue done. If this my sute may find acceptation with your worshipps, I shall rest vmbly thankfull and my praires shall not cease vnto the throne of grace for God's guidance and his blessing to be on all your mightie proceedings and that iustice and righteousness may be eurie where administered, and sound doctrine, truth, and holiness eurie where taught and practised throughout the wilderness, to all posterity, which God grant. Amen.

"Your worships vmble petitioner and servant,

"ROGER CONANT."[1]

His petition was not granted, fortunately, though the General Court gave him, in recognition of his services, two hundred acres of land, near Dunstable.

This petition is inserted, at length, owing to its great value in authenticating several facts in Beverly's early history.

1668.—*November* 23.—"Att a generall meeting of the Inhabitants of Beverly, this 23d Nov., 1668, selectmen were nominated, & by vote 5 chosen, to order the affaires & consernments of the town for this yeare following, viz.: Capt. Thomas Lothropp, Wm. Dixey, Wm. Dodge, sen., John West, Paule Thorndike. . . .

"It is ordered, that the selectmen shall call in all old accompts & see them rectified.

"It is also agreed at this present meeting, that Capt. Lothropp, Wm. Dodge, sen., John Rayment, Edw'd Byshopp & Wm. Rayment, shall meet with our neighbours of Salem, to divide the grounds between us . . . in tyme convenient."

A little previous to this time, in 1660, Salem had applied to the Legislature for a grant of the islands lying off her harbor, though nearer the Beverly shore, Baker's Island and the Miserys.

"Whereas there are certayne Ilands neare our towne commonly known by the names of the Miserys and Baker's Iland, fit for fishing employments, etc." In 1662–63 Thomas Tyler, then of Martha's Vineyard, son of Masconomo, the Ipswich sagamore, sold his claim on these islands to Bartholomew Gale; but it was disallowed by Salem.

They were then covered with primitive forest.

The "Misery" was so called from a disastrous shipwreck happening there.

Baker's Island was so-called after one Robert Baker, a ship-carpenter, ancestor of the present families of the name in North Beverly and the Cove, who was accidentally killed while felling timber there.

1669.—*June* 11.—"At a generall towne meeting, legally warned by the Inhabitants of Beverly, it is agreed upon that Mr. John Hailes shall have hold and enjoy that parcell of land being within the generall fence of the field adjoyning unto his pasture which he bought of Wm. Dodge, sen., for him and his heirs forever, hee maintaining the side fence liing against the Common without the field. (This land probably lies along Essex St., adjoining Prospect Hill, which was Hale's pasture). It is allso ordered this present tyme by a generall vote that no man shall fall any timber in the Commons without order, except it be for his own use; but he shall pay the value of twenty shillings for each tree, to him or them, that are deputed to receive it for the publique good of the place."

1670.—29th April.—Ordered and generally voted, "that there shall not be any of the towne land liing in the Commons disposed of uppon any accoumpt; but by the consent of the whole, att a Generall towne meeting, legally warmed."

"*March 24th.* It is ordered that all swyne above 3 month shall be sufficiently ringed and yoaked."

1671.—It is ordered that the country highway from Cederstand up to the meeting-house, as far as the ferry, be made sufficient for horse and cart.

It is agreed with Jonathan Byles to make a pound for the town. "And the said Jonathan is to have for this pound aforesaid & to make a payre of stocks, both to be brought in and sett up in 'Beverly, 50 shillings,' part of it in trees from the Commons.

17th Aug. "It is ordered that their shall be a rate made to make provision for powder & shott & ammunition, according as the law requires, by the selectmen.

13th Sept. "It was agreed that a place for buriall should be provided, and an acre of ground to be gotten,—which was bought of Lieut. Wm. Dixey, lying by the country highway on the one side, bounded on the other side uppon Nathaniel Stone & Josias Rootes." (This land extended from Milton to Wallis streets, between Cabot street and Stephen's hill,) and was not used for burial purposes, but exchanged for land of John Lovett.

1672.—The town contributed (February 14th), £13 to Harvard College.

The bounds between Beverly and Manchester were defined and settled about as they stand to-day. The land bought for a cemetery was "exchanged with John Lovett, Jun., for one acre of Land, on part whereof the publique meeting-house standeth, beginning at the bound tree on the northeast & so to make up the acre compleat towards the house of the said John Lovett." (This latter is the one first used as a cemetery, on a portion of which the present Old South chapel stands, and through which Abbott Street now runs.)

1674.—"It was agreed upon and voted that there shall as soon as conveniently may be, a *school-house built* that shall likewise be for a watch-house; and that the said house shall be set upon the town's land by the meeting-house." Its construction was delayed, and for a time the school continued to be held in the church.

1675.—"It is agreed at a publick towne meetinge, in the two & twentie day of October, that they should have forthwith a forte builte, about the meeting-house, & one at Bass River, & one at Mackrill Cove

[1] Mass. Hist. Collections.

& another at John Dodge's, senior," near the Wenham line.

THE NARRAGANSETT WAR.—These preparations for defense announce that the mutterings of war were beginning to disturb the calm of their peaceful occupations. Philip of Pokanoket, the dreaded sachem of the Wampanoags, broke the peace, which had existed between his tribe and the settlers for fifty years, and began the series of massacres that alarmed every resident in the colonies. No section felt safe from attack; all the towns joined in sending soldiers to the seat of operations in the Connecticut Valley. And even Beverly, though remote from the field of active warfare, felt the necessity for not only defensive, but aggressive action.

Her favorite son, Captain Lothrop, was appointed to the command of a company of infantry in the Massachusetts forces, and with them hastened to the frontier. The town of Hadley was then the headquarters of the troops in that region, and at that place Captain Lothrop was soon found, with his choice company of young men, selected from the best families in the county, and styled the "Flower of Essex."

The provisions and forage of Hadley ran short, but in the near town of Deerfield was a large amount of grain, estimated at 3000 bushels, stacked in the fields, which had been abandoned by the farmers when driven out by the Indians. To thresh this grain and transport it to Hadley, Captain Lothrop and his company were detached, and set out for Deerfield with a number of teams and drivers.

Having secured the grain, Lothrop began the return march to Hadley, on the 18th of September, without apprehension of attack from Indians, as none had been seen. But the wily Philip had marked him for his prey. The following account,[1] published many years ago, describes the terrible event:

"For the distance of about three miles, after leaving Deerfield meadow, Lothrop's march lay through a very level country, closely wooded, where he was every moment exposed to an attack on either flank; at the termination of this distance, near the south point of Sugar-loaf hill, the road approximated the Connecticut River, and the left was in some measure unprotected. At the village now called Muddy Brook, in the southerly part of Deerfield, the road crossed a small stream, bordered by a narrow morass, from which the village has its name; though more appropriately it should be denominated *Bloody Brook*, by which it is sometimes known. Before arriving at the point of intersection with the brook, the road for about half a mile ran parallel with the morass, then, crossing, it continued to the south point of Sugar-loaf hill. On discovering Lothrop's march, a body of upwards of seven hundred Indians planted themselves in ambuscade at the point of crossing, and lay in waiting. Without scouring the woods in front and flank, or suspecting the snare laid for him, Lothrop arrived at the fatal spot, crossed the morass with the principal part of his force, and probably halted to allow his teams to drag through their loads. The critical moment had arrived —the Indians instantly poured a heavy and destructive fire upon the column, and rushed furiously to the attack. Confusion and dismay succeeded. The troops broke and scattered, fiercely pursued by the Indians, whose great superiority enabled them to attack at all points Hopeless was the situation of the scattered troops, and they resolved to sell their lives in a vigorous struggle. Covering themselves with trees, the bloody conflict now became a trial of skill in sharpshooting, in which life was the stake. Difficult would it be to describe the havoc, barbarity and misery that ensued. The dead, the dying, the wounded, strewed the ground in all directions; the devoted force was soon reduced to a small number, and resistance became faint. At length the unequal struggle terminated in the annihilation of nearly the whole of the English, only seven or eight escaping to relate the dismal tale; and the wounded were indiscriminately butchered. Captain Lothrop fell in the early part of the action."

The whole loss, including teamsters, amounted to ninety, and among the slain were included, from Beverly, besides the lamented Lothrop, Josiah Dodge, Peter Woodbury and John (Joseph)? Balch, John Bennett,(?) Edward Trask, (?) Samuel Whitteridge. (?) Unsuspicious of danger, it is said, the soldiers had laid aside their arms and were gathering grapes by the roadside when the destructive volleys were poured into their ranks.

[2] "This catastrophe sent a thrill of terror and dismay through all the New England colonies. Especially did the news of it come with appalling force to this county, from which its choicest flowers, all culled out of its towns, and blooming so lately in manly beauty and strength, had been thus suddenly cut down and withered as by untimely frost. Throughout its length and breadth, scarcely was there a village or hamlet left unscathed by this great calamity. More particularly, and with stunning effect, did the blow fall here, where, besides several that were deeply lamented, the fallen chief was best known, and for that reason most respected, trusted and loved."

In the year 1835 the burial-place of Lothrop and his thirty men was identified, and a monument erected (1838) in commemoration of the battle of Bloody Brook. At the laying of its corner-stone, Edward Everett delivered a memorable address, saying, in conclusion, "The 'Flower of Essex' shall bloom in undying remembrance, as the lapse of time shall continually develop, in richer abundance, the fruits of what was done and suffered by our fathers." In order that the descendants of such 'fathers' should remember one of the most valiant of their deeds, we should acquaint them with the story, and locality, of the famous Bloody Brook. The monument erected may be seen to-day, standing in South Deerfield, overshadowed by the towering mass of sandstone known as the Sugar-loaf, where, beneath a shelving cliff, is shown the hollowed rock known as King Philip's Seat, whence he overlooked the surrounding country and that day noted the movements of Captain Lothrop's command.

The original list of the slain at "Muddy Brook, being y^{e} 18 of Sept.," is in the State-House, Boston: "A List of Men slain in the county of Hamshire, tho' we cannot gett y^{e} names of all, yet as many as wee can gett are here ynserted; also, the time when and place where they were slain."—Mass. Military Records, v. 68, p. 33.

"Ah, gallant few! No generous foe
Had met them by that crimsoned tide;
Vain even despair's resistless blow,—
As brave men do and die,—they died!
Yet not in vain,—a cry that shook
The inmost forest's desert glooms,
Swelled o'er their graves, until it broke
In storm around the red man's homes!

[1] Hoyt's "Indian Wars."

[2] Thayer's Memorial.

"But beating hearts, far, far away,
Broke at their story's fearful truth,
And maidens sweet, for many a day,
Wept o'er the vanished dreams of youth;
By the blue distant ocean-tide,
Wept years, long years, to hear them tell
How by the wild wood's lonely side
The Flower of Essex fell."

In the same year, 1675, in the expedition against the Narragansett Fort, when Philip met his Waterloo, Beverly contributed her quota, nothing dismayed at her previous losses. We find, as the soldiers engaged under the brave Captain Gardner, of Salem, who fell December 19th, the following persons, townsmen of ours: William Allen, William Balch, Wm. Bonner, Joseph Bayley, Thomas Blashfield, Jonathan Biles, Christopher Browne, Lot Conant, John Clark, Wm. Dodge, John Dodge, John Ellingwood, Wm. Ferryman, Samuel Harris, Richard Hussband, Moses Morgan, Jos. Morgan, Elias Picket, Thos. Rayment, Wm. Rayment, Christopher Reed (wounded), John Trask.

At the capture of Port Royal, in 1654, where Lothrop served as captain, he had with him, from Beverly, Lieut. Thomas Whittredge, Lieut. Elias Rayment, Wm. Woodbury, Humphrey Woodbury and Peter Wooden. From the very beginning of their settlement, the people of Beverly furnished their share of soldiers for the common defense and conquest.

In addition to these soldiers, engaged, there were others, in a company on the eastern frontier, under the command of Captain Frost. These were John Ellingwood (who had the fore-finger of his right hand shot away, for which he subsequently received a pen-ion), Thomas Parlor and Samuel Collins.

Previous to the attack upon the Narragansett Fort, when the soldiers were assembled on Dedham Plain, they were promised a reward in land for their services, in addition to their pay, provided they "played the man, and drove the Narragansetts from the fort." This promise was eventually fulfiled, but not until nearly sixty years had passed away, when the soldiers engaged in this campaign were granted several townships of land, each six miles square, in the wild region, now included in the States of Maine and New Hampshire. The township shared in by the Beverly soldiers or their heirs, was known then as Souhegan West, at present Amherst, New Hampshire. The names of the proprietors from Beverly, in 1741, when they met to take possession, were [1] * Henry Bayley, Henry Blashfield and assigns, * Jonathan Byles, * Lott Conant, Andrew Dodge for J. Ellinwood, Jona. Dodge for John Dodge, Wm. Dodge's heirs, * Ralph Ellinwood, Saml. Harris' heirs, Joseph Morgan for his father, Joseph Picket for his father, Elias, * Thomas Rayment, Wm. Rayment's heirs, and * Christopher Read.

1676.—At a public meeting, December 5th, it was voted to employ two constables, in place of one, on account of the extraordinary troubles of the times. And "It is ordered by the selectmen that the hinder site of the olders galery in the meeten house is to be altered, and the Boise ar to seete there, and Robert Hibberd, senior, is to hafe an Eie out for them, and for the first ofense to aquaint thar parants or masters of it, and if they do ofend again to aquante the Selectmen with it, who shall dele with them according to lawe."

1677.—*May 12th*, "It is agreed between the selectmen, in behalf of the towns, and Mr. Samuel Hardie, that the said Mr. Hardie is to begin to teach a scoole, according to the utmost of his ability, . . . and the said Hardie is to have the meeting-house to teach scoole in during the somer tyme, and some other place against winter." He was to receive £20; and it is explained that "by ordinary learning is meant reading, writing, arethmetick, and Latin according to his ability."

June 25th, "In obedians to a law of the honored Jenerall Corte they made choise of ten men to inspecte thar naibours to prevente as much as may be, privet tipling and Drunckenness," whose names be as followeth: Wm. Dodge, Robt. Bradford, Humph. Woodbury, Josiah Root, Robert Heberd, Nath. Hayward, Exsersis Conant, John Hill, Richard Ober, John Dodge.

1679.—*28th April*, "We whose names are underwritten beeing by the apointment of the selectmen of our respective towns, mett to goe a perambulation in the bounds between our said towns from the Rock at the head of Bass River to the pine stump in the swamp that runneth out of Laurence Leach's meadow, have acordingly gone the said preambulation, and renewed the said bounds as neere as one could guess," etc.

Beverly.	Salem.
John Raiment.	John Corwin.
Paul Thorndike.	Thomas Putnam.
John Dodg.	Phillip Cromwell.
William Raiment.	Richard Leach.
Andrew Elliott.	John Putnam.
Peter Woodbery.	Israell Porter.

1679.—*25th November*, "Leftenent Thorndike and William Rayment was chosen to manage the case in ye behalf of ye towne of Beverly at the present corte held at Salem, which controversy is between the town of Beverly and Captaine Moore; about a bell." (This was a controversy on the freight on the bell brought from Port Royal in 1654.)

1680.—*December 10*, The selectmen agreed with William Hoar to . . . "sweep the meeting-house as is necessary and usuall, keep and turn the (hour) glass, & doe in all respects as Goodman Bayly hath done before him; and further, the said Goodman Hoar is to ring the meeting-house bell at nine of the clock every night a sufficient space of time, and as is usuall in other places. In consideration whereof the said Hoar is to have for his pains as goodman Bayley had,

[1] From "Hist. of Amherst." The stars denote the then survivors of the fight.

viz.: of every family in the towne one peck of corne per year."

It is said that the town was troubled by wolves, and in 1678 John Edwards was allowed £3 for killing three of them. These creatures were numerous and troublesome in the neighboring village of Ipswich, so late as 1750.

Beverly resisted the claims of the Mason heirs to their portion of the territory between the Naumkeag and the Merrimac, and memorialized the king.

After reciting their loyalty to King Charles, etc.

1681.—*February 22d*, "So that we can produce quires, yea Rheams of paper, which we conceive it would be presumption for us to desire our dread sovereign to bee diverted from the mighty affairs of three kingdoms for the hearing of; for we had above fifty years possession, & entered upon the place with the good liking of the Indians, the ancient inhabitants of this country. Wee have adventured our lives and estates & worn out much time and strength in the subduing a wilderness for the increasing his Majesties dominions & customs; and in the late wars with the heathen have carried our lives in our hands to defend our possessions, with the loss of about 12 English lives of our towne, & and expended some hundreds of pounds to maintain our lands, & in this time of above fifty years neither Mr. Mason nor any for him did either take possession or disburse estate, or make demand of our lands or expended one penny to defend them."

The testimony of the aged inhabitants of the town, as Richard Brackenbery, William Dixy and Humphrey Woodbury, to the effect that the Massachusetts Company had purchased of the Dorchester Company all their rights and property at Cape Ann, before Gov. Endicott arrived, was regarded as conclusive. They further declared that they had "free lease to build and plant" from the resident Indians, and that the same year, or the next after they had come to Salem, they had cut hay for their cattle on the Cape Ann, or Beverly side, and "had been in possession of Beverly side ever since."

Although the occupants of the soil were never actually molested, it was not until 1746, after nearly a century of agitation, that the Mason claimants abandoned this pretension and left the settlers in peaceful possession.

1683.—Beverly became a lawful port of entry, this year, annexed to the port of Salem.

1684.—*September 1st*, "At a meeting of the selectmen it was agreed with Andrew Elliott Sen., and Samuel Hardie, to transcribe all that is necessary to be transcribed out of the old town book into the new one within two months after the date hereof; & that when the work is completed then the selectmen in the town's behalfe shall pay to said Andrew Elliott ten shillings in money, and unto Samuel Hardie five shillings in money, besides ten already paid him on the same account." The second volume of records begins:

"Third Nov. 1685, then this book was improved for the town of Beverly, as a town book to record the town concerns by the selectmen of said town successively," etc.

1686.—One of Beverly's aged and worthy citizens, John Lovett, died this year; he was born 1610, and was "one of the eight admitted inhabitants of Salem," July 25, 1639. At the "seven men's meeting," Nov. 3, 1665, he received a grant of two acres of marsh land lying near the old planter's meadow, near Wenham Common. He owned much real estate, and his descendants maintain the name in Beverly to this day.

1690.—The town had no regularly-appointed clerk until 1690, hence the fragmentary character of the records, which were begun in 1665, until, in April of this year, Andrew Elliott was elected to the office at a salary of 30 shillings in money and 40s. in "pay," or produce. He was one of the five witnesses, in 1680, taken from Beverly to attend at the execution of the Indian deed of the town of Salem. He was town clerk until his death, in 1703–4, when Robert Woodbury succeeded to the office. His entries in the record were very circumstantial, as witness the following:

"John Tovy, sometime of Winserd in Old England, near Bristow, afterward apprentice with Andrew Elliott, shoemaker, of Beverly, New England, &, nextly, husband unto Mary Herrick (now widdow) was unfortunately drowned coming from Winter Island in a Cannoo unto said Beverly, not to be forgotten, on the 24th day of August, in the year of our Lord God 1686."

"Andrew Elliott, the dear and only son of Andrew Elliott, (whose mother's name was Grace) & was born in East Coker in the County of Somerset in Old England, being on board of a vessel appertaining unto Phillip English of Salem, one Bavidge being master, said vessel being then at Cape Sables, by an awful stroke was violently thrown into the sea & there perished in the water, to the great grief of his said father, the penman hereof; being aged about 37 years on the 12th day of September, about 10 of the clock in the morning, according to the best information, in the year of our Lord God 1688.

"Deep meditation surely, every man in his best estate is wholly vanitie."

The year 1690 was signalized by the unfortunate expedition against Quebec, under Sir William Phipps. The town borrowed money "to buy great guns and ammunition," and a company was raised and sent with the expedition, under Capt. William Rayment. This adventure is said to have cost Massachusetts £50,000, besides many men, and was disastrous from the beginning. Captain Rayment and his command were subjected to great privations, for which they were "subsequently rewarded by a grant of a township of land."

1692. Witchcraft Proceedings.—It is on record that the Rev. Mr. Hale served as chaplain in this campaign, and that on his return he found the country agitated over the witchcraft sensation. Although none of Beverly's inhabitants perished in this diabolical cyclone, yet several were cried out against by the "Salem wenches," the "afflicted" children, and narrowly escaped with their lives. Four, at least: Dorcas Hoar, Sarah Morell, Susanna Rootes and Job Tuckey, were accused, arrested, condemned and imprisoned. Sarah Morell and Dorcas Hoar were arrested by Mar-

shal Herrick,[1] May 2, 1692, on a warrant issued by Capt. Jona. Walcot and Sergt. Thos. Putnam, of Salem Village, which included the well-known merchant of Salem, Philip English. So far as we may judge from the records of the trials, Dorcas Hoar was the bravest and most outspoken of any of that innocent band of accused, penetrating through the transparent deceit of the "wenches," and promptly characterizing the proceedings as infamous. When she was brought into court the afflicted pretended to fall into fits at sight of her. "After coming out of them they vied with each other in heaping all sorts of accusations upon the prisoner; Abigail Williams and Ann Putnam charging her with having choked a woman in Boston; Elizabeth Hubbard crying out that she was pinching her, and showing the marks to the standers-by. The magistrate, indignantly believing the whole, said: 'Dorcas Hoar, why do you hurt these?' She answered,—'I never hurt any child in my life!' The girls then charged her with having killed her husband, and with various other crimes. Mary Walcot, Susanna Sheldon and Abigail Williams said they saw a black man whispering in her ear. The spirit of the prisoner was raised, and she said: 'Oh, you are liars, and God will stop the mouth of liars!' The anger of the magistrate was roused by this bold outbreak. 'You are not to speak after this manner in court.' 'I will speak the truth as long as I live,' she fearlessly replied."

Having ventured to oppose the bigoted and insensate magistrate and those inspired idiots the "afflicted children," she was, of course, sent to prison.[2]

Susanna Rootes was arrested the 21st of May, Job Tookey on the 4th of June. Against Job it was declared that he could "as freely discourse with the devil" as with his accuser, John Lander; that he had afflicted three of the "children," and had caused the death of Andrew Woodbury. Job Tookey is described as a "laborer," and was charged with having said that he would take Mr. Burroughs' (the accused minister's) part, and that "he was not the devil's servant, but that the devil was his." When charged that his shape afflicted persons, he stoutly assumed that in that case "it was not he, but the devil in his shape, that hurt them." The three girls, Susanna Sheldon, Mary Warren and Ann Putnam, then cried out upon him and then were struck dumb; after which performance Mary Warren recovered her speech and exclaimed: "There are three men, and three women, and two children, all in their winding sheets; they look pale upon us, but red upon Tookey—red as blood." Then she saw "a young child under the table, crying out for vengeance," and one of her confederates was struck speechless, pointing in horror to the same shape under the table.

Poor Job may well have been struck with amazement upon hearing himself accused of murdering nearly all who had died at Ryal's Side for the year or two past, and the magistrates—Bartholomew Gedney, Jona. Corwin and John Hathorne—are represented as having been highly incensed at his obduracy in denying the charges, and promptly committed him to jail.

That these people were eventually released does not lessen the guilt of their accusers and of those who lent themselves as accessories to their conviction. Even the revered minister of Beverly, the Rev. John Hale, countenanced the proceedings against the accused Bridget Bishop, at one time a communicant in his church. About the year 1687 there resided at Ryal's Side "A woman in the neighborhood, subject to fits of insanity, who had, while passing into one of them, brought an accusation of witchcraft against her; but, on the return of her reason, solemnly recanted, and deeply lamented the aspersion."[3]

Rev. Mr. Hale had examined into the case at the time and exonerated Sister Bishop from the charge, yet "under the malign influence of his friend, the Rev. Sam. Parrish," he went into court in 1692, "without any pretence of new evidence touching the facts of the case, and related them to the effect and with the intent to make them bear against her." Bridget Bishop, innocent of crime, was condemned and soon after executed, June 10, 1692.

In October of the same year, Mr. Hale's own wife was accused, and then his feelings underwent a change. In a treatise, subsequently written against the "delusion," he says: "I have had a deep sense of the sad consequences of mistakes in matters capital, and their impossibility of recovering when completed; and what grief of heart it brings to a tender conscience to have been unwittingly encouraging of the sufferings of the innocent."

The remarks of Cotton Mather may, not inaptly, be quoted here: "They now saw that the more the afflicted were hearkened unto the more the number of the accused increased; until at last many scores were cried out upon, and among them some who by the unblameableness, yea, and serviceableness, of their whole conversation, had obtained the just reputation of good people among all that were acquainted with them. The character of the afflicted, also, added unto the common distaste; for though some of them, too, were good people, yet others of them, and such of them as were most flippant at accusing, had a far other character." Setting aside this labored apology for the accusers, this admission of Mather's shows that the "afflicted" had overreached themselves, and had struck too high.

[1] "Marshal Herrick does not appear to have been connected with Joseph Herrick, who lived on what is now called Cherry Hill, but was a man of an entirely different stamp. He was thirty-four years of age, and had not been long in the country."—Upham.

[2] Dorcas Hoar was the wife of sexton "Goodman Hoar," and their house was near the Hale parsonage, probably not far from West Dane Street (as it now runs). She was a daughter of John Galley, free of speech and independent in her bearing. A friend of hers had been accused of stealing by Mrs. Hale, and this fact may have led to the accusation of the latter by the afflicted children.

[3] Upham's Witchcraft, Vol. ii., pp. 25, *et seq.*

As the first victim executed, Bridget Bishop, was at one time a resident within the present limits of Beverly, and a member of the first church here; so likewise, the last to be selected was a shining light in this same church and community. But Mistress Hale, of Beverly, was one whose piety and "unblameableness" was known to all.

"The whole community became convinced that the accusers, in crying out upon Mrs. Hale, had perjured themselves, and from that moment their power was destroyed; the awful delusion was dispelled, and a close put to one of the most tremendous tragedies in the history of real life."[1]

It is curious to note, in this connection, that one of the four daughters of the ill-fated Giles Corey, who was "pressed to death," was the wife of William Cleeves, of Beverly. Two of the wretched man's sons-in-law were among his accusers, but the other two remained constant in their belief in his innocence. To them he willed his entire property, and (it is believed), in order not to invalidate their right to it, endured the tortures of a horrible death; since, if he had come to trial, his property would have been confiscated. By refusing to plead, either guilty or not guilty, he obliged the court to stay his trial; but, in order to force him to speak the magistrates imposed upon him the terrible sentence, which he suffered.

Returning to the town records, we find among the entries of that same fateful year, one that will lend an additional interest to investigation; under the head of "births" is recorded: "John, son of Rev. John Hale, and Sarah his wife, December 24th, 1692."

Following along a little later, and without overstepping a strictly chronological record of events, we may note: "Mrs. Sarah Hale, wife of Rev. John Hale, pastor of the church in Beverly, departed this life on the 20th day of May in the year 1695."

A loving tribute to departed worth, is the poem by our townswoman, Lucy Larcom, entitled, "Mistress Hale, of Beverly," in which the life of that troublous witchcraft year, with its local color and environment, is finely delineated. After a description of the proceedings and of the part taken in them by the minister from Beverly, comes the denouement, the accusation of his wife, as the pastor of the first parish enters the court-house. * * * * *

"'Woe! Mistress Hale tormenteth me! she came in like a bird,
Perched on her husband's shoulder!' Then silence fell; no word
Spake either judge or minister, while with profound amaze
Each fixed upon the other's face his horror-stricken gaze.

"But, while the accuser writhed in wild contortions on the floor,
One rose and said, 'Let all withdraw! the court is closed!' no more;
For well the land knew Mistress Hale's rare loveliness and worth;
Her virtues bloomed like flowers of heaven along the paths of earth.

"The minister of Beverly went homeward, riding fast,
His wife shrank back from his strange look, affrighted and aghast.
'Dear wife, thou ailest! Shut thyself into thy room!' said he,
'Whoever comes, the latch-string keep drawn in from all save me!'

"Nor his life's treasure from close guard did he one moment lose,
Until across the ferry came a messenger with news
That the bewitched ones acted now vain mummeries of woe,
The judges looked and wondered still, but all the accused let go.

"The dark cloud rolled from off the land, the golden leaves dropped down
Along the winding wood-paths of the little sea-side town:
In Salem Village there was peace; with witchcraft trials passed
The nightmare-terror from the vexed New England air at last.

"Again in natural tones men dared to laugh aloud and speak;
From Naugus Head the fisher's shout rang back to Jeffry's Creek;
The phantom soldiery withdrew, that haunted Gloucester shore;
The teamster's voice through Wenham Woods broke into psalms once more.

"The minister of Beverly thereafter sorely grieved
That he had inquisition held with counsellors deceived;
Forsaking love's unerring light, and duty's solid ground,
And groping in the shadowy void, where truth is never found.

* * * * * * *

"Truth made transparent in a life, tried gold of character,
Were Mistress Hale's; and this is all that history says of her;
Their simple force, like sunlight, broke the hideous midnight spell,
And sight restored again to eyes obscured by films of hell.

"The minister's long fields are still with dews of summer wet;
The roof that sheltered Mistress Hale tradition points to yet.
Green be her memory ever kept all over Cape Ann Side,
Whose unobtrusive excellence awed back delusion's tide!"

1700. To close the chapter of this eventful century, the last decade of which had been so crowded with sensations and horrors, it remains only to transcribe here the last pathetic entry in the records pertaining to the honored head of the church. "The Rev. Mr. John Hale, Minister of the Gospel in Beverly, & Pastor of the Church of Christ there, aged about sixty-four years, departed this life on the 15th day of May, Anno Domini, 1700." Thus went out with the century a life of piety and broad humanity.

"The storms of fanatical excitement and of war with savages and civilized men had subsided, when, in May, 1700, the primeval epoch of this parish was closed, and Hale, its first minister, sank peacefully—honored, beloved, deeply lamented—to his final earthly rest." The last few years of his life must have been full of sorrow, and, doubtless, the messenger that summoned him hence to join the company of the beloved departed was welcomed and expected. Born in Charlestown in 1636, he graduated at Harvard in 1657, and thus lived through the crucial period of New England's existence. It is a matter of lasting regret, that, with such great abilities as he possessed, with such opportunities for observing the growth of our town from its veriest inception, with such intercourse as he had with the great men of his day, he had not chronicled some of the passing events and preserved for us memoirs of his contemporaries.

In the family enclosure of the old cemetery stands the grave-stone with this inscription:

"Here lies the body of the
REV. MR. JOHN HALE,
A pious and faithful minister of the Gospel,
And Pastor of the First Church of Christ in this town of Beverly,
Who rested from his labors on the 15th day of May,
Anno Domini, 1700,
In the 64th year of his age."

[1] Upham's Witchcraft, Vol. ii., p. 346.

In 1696 four soldiers, John Burt, Benj. Carrill, John Pickworth and Israel Wood, were serving in Captain John Hill's company at Fort St. Mary, near Saco.

1700. A grammar school was established this year, with Mr. Robert Hale as master; and the claim of Sagamore John's grandchildren to the township territory was cancelled, by the payment to them of a sum of money, and a deed taken.

Prior to 1700 something had been done in the way of ship-building and the fisheries, so that with the opening of the new century Beverly was well embarked upon that career of maritime conquest and adventure which so distinguished her during the period of the Revolution. Upon the land, engaged in occupations mainly agricultural, was a steadily-growing community of sturdy proprietors; on the sea, an equally vigorous floating population, with rights in the ships they sailed, as well as an attachment for the soil of their fathers.

Pioneer Families of Beverly.—In reviewing the eventful epoch closed with the 17th century, we should not lose sight of those men and women who labored for the welfare of the community. Theirs was a struggle with elemental forces, from beginning to end. They were sturdy, intense, giving their whole strength to the overcoming of obstacles such as their descendants are unacquainted with. They brought to their administration of affairs the same good sense that characterized their private life. Their object was to live, and live in freedom, in this new land, giving to every man an opportunity equal to that of every other. The excitements of those distracted times they sometimes shared in, but of themselves they provided no fuel for the baleful fires that burned so long in Salem Village. They were ready, with men and weapons, to respond to every call in defence of the frontier towns, and joined every expedition undertaken for the preservation of their territory.

Among the names mentioned in this connection those accompanied by an asterisk (*) have descendants bearing the same name still (1887) living in Beverly.

The "Old Planters," Balch,* Conant,* Woodbury,* and their associates (whose names, doubtless, have not all been preserved), deserve first mention, as having adventured first over at Cape Ann Side. The three above-mentioned have already been noticed at length; as also Brackenbury, Dixey, Palfrey, Trask,* Dodge* and Scruggs.*

John Woodbury* (as already noticed) took possession of the farm granted him in 1635, and from him descended many of the name in Upper Beverly and adjacent territory. William Woodbury,* his brother, doubtless first built upon the headland now known as Woodbury's Point, just east of Thissel's Brook and Patch's Beach. William and his descendants gradually progressed eastwardly, obtaining possession of lands on the shore as far as the Paine estate, at the westerly head of West's Beach. His son, Nicholas, succeeded to his estates, which later fell to the latter's son, Benjamin, whose daughter, Anna, inherited the property now known as the Paine place.

John Woodbury's son, Humphrey,* settled on land extending from the seashore at or below Mackerel Cove, to the region known as Snake Hill, back of the school-house in that district. He probably built on the slope lying between Ober Street and the headland westerly from the light-house. In contradistinction to that owned by his uncle, this should be called Humphrey Woodbury's Point, in order to properly localize these first settlers. Several families of the name, descendants of Humphrey, are still living in this locality, though retaining little, if any, of the original grant made to their ancestor.

The first projection into Beverly harbor, easterly from the bridge, Tuck's Point, bears the name of another early settler in Beverly, Thomas Tuck,* who owned estates in this vicinity. Ellingwood's Point, the bold projection west of the bridges, bears the name of Ralph Ellingwood,* who owned all the land lying along Bass River, westerly of the railroad, as it now runs. The first ferryman, John Stone,* it is said, kept an inn or "ordinary" near the junction of Cabot and Front Streets; and a neighbor of his was William Dixey (who was captain of a military company), and who owned land extending from the present Bartlett and Lovett Streets to the seashore. The land granted Captain Trask (one of the five farms, in 1635) went to Thomas Scruggs, by exchange, but the name is early identified with Beverly's history in the persons of Osman Trask* and his nephew, John. The Trask grant came by marriage into the possession of John Rayment,* whose brother, the distinguished military leader of that period, located farther eastward towards Brimble Hill.

Captain Thomas Lothrop, who fell in the massacre at Bloody Brook, left no direct descendants.

Andrew Elliott* lived in the upper part of the town; his connection with town affairs has already been mentioned. His descendants have made the name distinguished, including a celebrated divine, Rev. Dr. Andrew Elliot; an ex-mayor of Boston, Hon. Samuel A. Elliot, and a president of Harvard College, Charles W. Eliot.

The name of Blackleach occurs in the early annals; John Blackleach was made freeman in 1635, and had a grant of three hundred acres and more at what is now Beverly Farms.

John West,* who came from Ipswich about 1650, bought the large property of Blackleach, extending from the Woodbury (or Paine) estate westerly to Jeffrey's Creek, or Manchester line, and beyond; and also a tract of land towards Wenham granted to Gardner. From him the beautiful West's Beach derived its name, as bordering his property.

Robert Woodbury,* who succeeded Andrew Elliot as town clerk, in 1704, and who held the office many years, married a daughter of farmer West (Thomas,

son of John), and the house he lived in is still standing, near West's Beach, and now occupied by Dr. Curtis. He obtained a large farm by this marriage, as also did Joseph Woodbury, who married another daughter and settled on the Manchester property.

The origin of the Dodge* family has been already adverted to, the first one of the name here being farmer William Dodge,* who purchased the grant to Peter Palfrey, and resided on it during his life-time. He was made freeman in 1637.

Captain William Dodge, son of William, Sr., had an enviable military record; and through him are descended many of the name in Beverly.

A nephew of these brothers, William Dodge, married a daughter of Roger Haskell * of Beverly. William Haskell* married a daughter of farmer West, and settled at the Farms, where the old Haskell house still stands, built about 1690.

An early immigrant into Beverly from the contemporary settlement of Ipswich, was John Thorndike,* whose son, Paul, married Mary, daughter of James Patch.* These two names are perpetuated by Paul's Point and the contiguous Patch's Beach.

Another acquisition from Ipswich was Anthony Wood,* who located in that part of the town known as the "city," or "old haymarket," above the Gloucester crossing.

John Lovett * was the first of this name here, born 1610, died 1686, and who settled, it is said, near the farm at present owned by General Pearsons.

John Lovett, Jr., who died 1727, aged about ninety-one, married a daughter of Josiah and Susannah Rootes, and owned a large lot of land extending from opposite the present Milton Street to beyond Central, and from Cabot Street to the sea.

Peter Pride,* it is said, received his house-lot at or near the present Pride's Crossing, on condition that he direct travelers passing that way.

A group of settlers in that region lying between the town proper and the Farms contained George Stanley,* or Standley, Nicholas Patch,* Jonathan Byles, Richard Thissell,* and Richard Ober.* Joshua Bisson* (from the Isle of Jersey) married the daughter of John Black and grand-daughter of Peter Woolfe. Cornelius Baker,* a blacksmith and grandson of Robert, married Abigail Sallows and settled near or on property adjacent to Bisson. The name Sallows is no longer found in Beverly and has been long extinct.

A name prominent at that time was that of Samuel Corning,* made freeman 1641, whose estates once included land in different parts of Beverly, at one time near the meeting-house, and also near Bald Hill, where his descendants still reside.

The first Wallis * was Nathaniel, from Cornwall, England (who settled first at Casco Bay, whence he was driven by Indians), whose son, Caleb, married a grand-daughter of Corning. A street of this name extends from Cabot to Rantoul.

The names of Stackhouse and Hoskins, who owned easterly of Ellingwood, are now believed to be extinct in Beverly. Another which has shared the same fate is that of Robert Briscoe, brother-in-law of Samuel Stone, who came here between 1680–90, and who held various important offices during thirty years. His house stood nearly opposite the first church, and was taken down in the latter part of the last century, He is remembered for his numerous benefactions and legacies, and the principal school-building of the town now bears his name.

Richard Ober,* founder of the name in New England, and collateral branches in other States, came from "Absburg," Abbotsburg, England (where he was baptized November 21, 1641), to these shores about 1664. In 1671 he married Abigail, daughter of Nicholas Woodbury, by whom he had five children: John, Anna, Elizabeth, Hezekiah and Richard, Jr. The Obers and the Thissells were from the same village in old England, came to this place at about the same time, and their estates joined each other. The Obers' property was between Mingo's Beach and Plum Cove River. In later times Jeffrey Thissell, a Revolutionary pensioner, lived in a house west of the hill, towards town from Mingo's Beach.

Robert Morgan * owned the estate north of and opposite the central fire station, extending thence to the Bancroft estate and to the sea. Many descendants reside here and others are settled throughout the West.

The estate of Robert Briscoe fell to Thomas Stephens * (who came here in 1700), on condition of his paying several legacies. Lawrence Leach,* who died 1662, aged eighty-two, came to Salem in the fleet with Higginson, was proposed for freeman 1630, and a member of Salem church before 1636. The Leach farm was at Ryal Side, and long remained in the family.

Conspicuous among these first citizens was Henry Herrick,* one of the thirty who founded the first Church of Salem, 1629; and, with his sons, joined in establishing the first church of Beverly. He purchased several farms at Cherry Hill and Birch Plain, on which he settled his sons, Zacharie, Ephraim, Joseph and John. His wife was Edith, daughter of Hugh Laskin. In the times of religious intolerance he and his wife were fined by the authorities for entertaining and comforting an excommunicated person. He died in 1671.

The first of the Grover family was Nicholas Le Grove; of the Smiths,* Hazadiah, a large property owner, who came from the eastward, married a daughter of Edmund Grover and settled near the old haymarket.

Of these families of the 17th century, it is not possible to more than enumerate such as the imperfect records have preserved to us; but it is thought that mere mention, even, may be of service to future historian or antiquarian, seeking to trace home some ancestral name.

Of the dwellings erected during the first century of

the town's existence few remain in their entirety. Portions of the original structures, as of the Old Planter's, and of the garrison house on Woodbury's Point, still stand, but incorporated with buildings of later date. The oak frames of these buildings were well-nigh indestructible, but there are few houses in town typical in their architecture of that of those early times. The homestead of Rev. John Hale still remains in the possession of the descendants, the Bancroft heirs; another erected about that time (1690) is the house on Essex Street, lately occupied by Wm. W. Baker, long the Putnam property, and probably the ancient Picton house.

At the Cove, the Rea house, on Hale Street, erected by Thorndike, gives evidence of antiquity beyond any other; at the Farms are two of the past century, the Haskell house and the Robert Woodbury, both dating from 1680–'90. In Montserrat are the Corning and Morgan houses, the former, probably, next to the Rea house in age. In North Beverly the "Dudley Dodge" house, the Cleaver and the Woodbury house, and also the Chipman parsonage (1715), residence of the first minister of the second parish.

Near the town centre, several bearing evidences of age, and having the halo of antiquity about them. At the "city," or near the old Haymarket, are two or three, as the Lovett, the Brown and the Davis houses. Just beyond is the locality of a group of the Old Planters; William Dodge's, on the site of which is the house of Lyman Mason; farther on the house lately owned by Azor Dodge perpetuates the old Balch homestead, within a stone's throw of which was the residence of Henry Herrick.

Houses of a later period, built by our famous merchants of the Revolution, as the Cabot mansions (now owned by Edward Burley, and heirs of Seth Norwood) stand on Cabot Street, fine specimens of the architecture of that time.

That we have so few examples of colonial architecture is because the citizens of Beverly have ever been progressive, lending their efforts to further the aims of advanced civilization, and thus aiding the march of progress, which, while it creates the new, yet effaces the old.

1701. Events of the Eighteenth Century.—Succeeding Mr. Hale in the ministry came Thomas Blowers, "who was highly esteemed for his learning and virtue, and particularly for his devotedness to the duties of his profession." He was born August 1, 1677, graduated at Harvard, 1695, and was ordained here October 29, 1701; his salary, eighty pounds per annum, with an allowance of one hundred pounds for a settlement. His residence was near Charnock Street, which takes its name from that of his married daughter, Emma Charnock. A new meeting-house had been ereeted in 1682, fifty feet in length by forty feet in width, with a tower in the centre from which the bell-rope hung, at a cost of three hundred and seventy pounds in silver.

1703–04. The town-clerk, Andrew Elliott, who was the first to keep the records in a systematic manner, died, aged seventy-six years. He was succeeded by Robert Woodbury, who was equally faithful in the discharge of his duties.

1705. The tract of land known as the training-field or common, was deeded to the town March 13, 1705. "The said town of Beverly are hereby obliged not to convey, exchange, or dispose of the said land unto any particular person or persons whatsoever, but it shall lay and remain for the publick use of said town, especially for military exercise."

1707. A negro slave named Robin Mingo, the property of Thomas Woodbury, was married to Deborah Tailor, an Indian woman. Before the ceremony was performed (says Stone) she agreed to live with her husband's master and mistress during her life, "to be then discharged with only two suits of clothes suitable for such persons." This seems a hard bargain, but the claims of slavery and servitude hung lightly upon the servitors. Fifty years later, in 1754, the number of slaves, so-called, was twenty-eight. On July 15, 1722, Mingo received the rite of baptism and was admitted a member of the church. He died in 1773, by which time, at least by 1776, "public opinion had virtually emancipated the slaves of Massachusetts."

The little bay on our coast known as Mingo's Beach, is supposed to have derived its name from him. There is a tradition extant that his humble cottage was near and above it, and it is also related that his master promised him his freedom when the tide should recede so far as to leave a dry passage between the shore and "Becky's Hedge," lying off the beach harbor. That event occurred, it is said, but once, and that was the year of his death.

1708. The population this year is given at sixteen hundred and eighty. Since the period of King Philip's War, and with the exception of the witch-year, very little had occurred to disturb the peaceful growth of the population.

1710.—Peter Wooden, an able pilot, is sent from Beverly to guide the expedition to Port Royal.

1711–12.—The Ryal's-Side people were allowed to associate, as a religious society, with Beverly; but were not united with them until September 11, 1753.

This year, two people of Beverly, Nihil Sallowes and Joseph Gray, were killed by Indians at Winter Harbor. At Cape Sable, three or four years later, another native of the town, Benjamin Dike, was slain by savages. A curious entry in the town records, throwing a side light upon the customs of the day, is the following: March 24, 1711–12. An order "to pay unto Richard Ober, senr., 9 shillings, money, out of ye town rate, yt being for *half a barrel of sider*, for Laurence Davis his burial (6*s.*) and for 50 feet of bords for sd Davis his coffin (3*s.*)."

1713.—Land was granted by the town to the Farms, on which to erect a school-house.

In October, the Second or North Parish was incor-

porated, and a meeting-house erected, fifty by forty feet.

1715.—The Second Church was organized, December 28th, and the Rev. John Chipman ordained. This good and learned man was born in Barnstable, and graduated at Harvard in 1711. He resided here nearly sixty years, and left a name and posterity yet well-known in the town. The old parsonage in which he resided still stands, not far distant from the church at North Beverly.

The original members of this church, and signers of the covenant, 28th December, 1715, were John Chipman, Edward, Joseph, Jonathan, Elisha and John Dodge, John Cressey, John Brown, Jacob Griggs, Joseph Herrick, John Leach, Nehemiah Wood, Josiah Woodbury, Jonathan Rayment and Moses Fluant. A body of worshippers were afterwards admitted from Beverly and Wenham. There were appointed, to seat the worshippers, persons who were "to show respect to ye aged people amongst us, as allso to have a speciall regard unto persons that have don service for ye benefit of ye precinct, & have contributed high in building of ye hous for ye publick worship of God, and purchasing land for ye use of ye people of sd. precinct, and are likely to pay considerable in ye charge of ye ministry amongst us; as allso not to seat above two-thirds so many persons in any seat as ye seats will comfortably hold." March 29th, same year, it had been voted that the front seat in the east gallery "be parted in ye middle" for the accommodation of the young unmarried women.

1723.—The records of Ipswich, our near neighbor remind us that wolves were so abundant there, and even in the vicinity of the meeting-house, that parents would not suffer their children to attend worship without some grown person as company. A bounty was offered for heads, and many were taken by means of wolf-hooks. These were made by enclosing four mackerel-hooks in brown bread, and dipping them in melted tallow "till they be as big and round as an egg." They were then exposed near some dead carcass, where they were found and swallowed by the wolves.

A noted resort for bears, at that period, was the great swamp along Ipswich River, and one was killed in the Hamlet (Hamilton) so late as 1757. Deer were abundant in Chebacco woods up to the year 1790, but soon afterwards disappeared.

1727.—This year is memorable for the great earthquake, October 29th, which was felt throughout the colonies and "made strong religious impressions on the minds of many in this town and other places."

Twenty-five new members were added to the Second Church, and the pastor, Rev. Mr. Chipman, gave thanks to God who hath shaken, violently, the earth and also poured out his Spirit upon the people. "*Soli Deo Laus, qui et terram violenter exagitavit et super populum suum spiritum suum effudit.*"

The ancient record-book of the Second Parish may yet be seen, at present (1887) in charge of Henry Wilson, now, in his ninety-third year, the oldest male resident of Beverly. Mr. Wilson came here in 1848, from Gloucester; his wife, who died in 1844, was then eighty-eight years of age. The following is the first entry in the record-book: "This book belongs to the Second Church of Christ in Beverly, gathered out of Salem and Beverly, and embodyed into a distinct Society on the 28th day of December in the year of our Lord, 1715. . . . That part of the Precinct of Salem and Beverly which was a part of Salem was by an Act of the Great and General Court annexed to Beverly and incorporated in the one real Town therewith upon the 12th day of Sept., A.D. 1752." A note is added by Rev. Mr. Stone: "In this Book of Records, Salem usually signifies the territory west of Maj. Conant's brook, and embraced Ryal Side, all of which was set off to Beverly in 1752."

1729.—The second minister of the First Parish, Rev. Mr. Blowers, died June 17, and £50 were appropriated for his funeral expenses. In December of this year, the Rev. Joseph Champney was ordained, whose period of service extended until 1773, when he was followed by the Rev. Joseph Willard, who had been his colleague for about a year.

1730.—Very little of public moment occurred to disturb the serenity of the inhabitants at this period, but in 1730, the members of the Second Parish were agitated over the question of psalm-singing. The older members wished to adhere to the practice of "lining out" the hymns, while the more progressive wished to sing by note. A compromise was at first effected, but later on it was voted that they would in future sing "at all times of singing in public worship the psalm tunes by rule, according to the notes pricked in our psalm-books."

1747.—"At a meeting of the proprietors of the Common Lands in Beverly, legally warned and assembled at the First Parish meeting-house in said Beverly, on Monday the Seventh day of September, 1747, Captain John Thorndike was chosen moderator of sd. meeting; voted, Isaac Woodberry, clerk of the property: voted Captain Henry Herrick and Isaac Woodberry, two of the committee in the rume of Captain Robert Woodberry and Deacon William Dodge, deceased; voted that the same meeting be adjourned unto October 13, at 3 o'clock, afternoon.

"At the ajournment, Oct. 13, of the meeting of the proprietors of the Common Lands in Beverly, adjourned the same meeting to Jno. Thorndike, Jun., and there drank two and a half Dubel Boles of punch, and put it to vote if theay act any further and it passed in the negative, and then Desolved the meeting."

1752.—That section known as Ryal Side, though of the first to receive permanent settlers, was not united to Beverly till 1752. At the time Danvers was made a town all that territory between Bass River and Bass River Creek on the east, and Frost-Fish brook on the west, was annexed to Beverly.

One hundred years, or so, later, in 1857, a portion again was set off and joined to Danvers. Within this section so recently detached from Beverly lies Browne's Folly hill, named after William Browne, a native of Salem, born 1709, and educated at Harvard College. This gentleman, about 1750, selected the summit of this high hill as the site for a noble mansion, which he called Browne Hall, a costly structure, with every appointment the wealth of the owner could supply.

The great hall was often the scene of revelry on a magnificent scale, and tradition states that on at least one occasion an ox was roasted whole, for the entertainment of the guests. Mr. Browne died in 1763, and the mansion was disposed of by the purchaser of the estate, William Burley.

The exact shape of the great house may be traced in its sunken cellar-walls to-day. The hill has ever since been known as "Browne's Folly," yet the view from its summit is one of the finest in the county.

1753.—An enumeration of the population gave two thousand and twenty-three; an increase of about four hundred in fifty years. Of this number twenty-eight were negro slaves. Twenty years later, there were sixty less.

The first half of the eighteenth century is pretty well epitomized in the life of one of Beverly's foremost citizens, the physician of the town at this period, Dr. Robert Hale, jr.

Born February 12th, 1702–3, he was at an early age (when between fifteen and sixteen), employed to teach the grammar-school, which was established in 1700. In 1721 he was graduated at Harvard, immediately after which he began the study of medicine with Dr. Manning, of Ipswich. He was married in 1723, and, his wife dying in 1736, leaving him with three children, contracted a second marriage in 1737. His medical practice soon brought him into notice in the neighboring towns, even as early as 1723, and with an estate of above £1000, (part of which was left him by his parents), he was early possessed of independent means. The energy of character, sound judgment and business capacity of Dr. Hale, (says Mr. Stone, from whose excellent history the materials for this sketch are taken), were early appreciated by his townsmen. He was successively chosen to fill the various offices of surveyor, selectman, assessor, town clerk and treasurer; besides the duties of which he discharged those of justice of the peace, and collector of excise for the county. As chairman of the school committee, he took an active and efficient part in the measures adopted to improve the school system of the town. For thirteen years, he represented the town in General Court, during which time he was chairman of several important committees.

In 1726 he united with the first church, and for nearly twenty years was of infinite service in ecclesiastical and parochial concerns.

In 1740, as one of the managers of the "land bank," a scheme for relieving the pecuniary embarrassments of the colony, he incurred the hostility of the famous Governor Belcher, who persistently opposed him until succeeded by Governor Shirley.

In 1745 Dr. Hale received the commission of colonel, and commanded a regiment, in the expedition projected by Governor Shirley against Louisburg. The land force employed consisted of three thousand two hundred men from Massachusetts, three hundred from New Hampshire, three hundred from Rhode Island and five hundred from Connecticut, all under command of General William Pepperell. The co-operating naval force was from England, and commanded by Commodore Warren. A company for this enterprise was enlisted in Beverly under Captain Benjamin Ives, Colonel Hale's son-in-law.

1744.—The soldiers and officers engaged in the expedition against Louisburg were fifty in number:

Capt., Benj. Ives, Jr.; Lieut., Geo. Herrick; Ensign, Josiah Batchelder; Sergts., Job Cressy and Samuel Woodbury; Clerk, Benj. Cleaver, Jr.; Corporals, Barth. Brown, John Picket; Drummer, Jos. Raymond; Privates, Chris. Bartlett, Wm. Badcock, Thos. Butman, Israel and Jona. Byles, Edmund Clark, Samuel Chute, Benj. Clark, Samuel Cole, Edward and Ebenezer Cox, Benj. Dike, Francis and Joseph Elliot, Israel Elwell, Eleazer Giles, John Grover, Ebenezer Hadley, Jona. Harris, Samuel Harris, Andrew Herrick, Benj. Hervey, Benj. Howard, William James, William Leach, John Morgan, Jona. Morgan, Richard Ober, Caleb Page, Elias Picket, John Presson, Joshua Rea, John Roundy, Benj. Smith, Daniel Stephens, Ezra, Benjamin and James Trask, Israel and Josiah Woodbury.

"There were not wanting those in influential stations who, moved with an unworthy jealousy for British glory, sought, in public and private, to undervalue the services of the provincial troops. . . . Col. Hale (who, with his regiment, took a conspicuous part in the dangers and fatigues of the siege) was keenly alive to American honor: and this ungenerous attempt to wrest from the provincial forces the tribute of approbation justly their due, deeply wounded his sensibilities. He repelled the insinuations of the British, and pointed out (in a letter written at the time) that the great error of the British government, in all their provincial enterprises which failed of success, consisted in the appointment of foreign officers to the command of troops raised here, when between the former and latter there was no reciprocity of respect or confidence."

While at Louisburg Colonel Hale enclosed a piece of ground which was long known (and may be still), to our fishermen as "Col. Hale's garden."

"When the government of Massachusetts Bay, in 1755, had determined on an expedition against the French, and the reduction of Crown Point, Col. Hale was selected by Governor Shirley as a suitable agent to lay the subject before the government of New Hampshire and solicit their aid. His commission bears date Feb. 22, 1755, and the same day he received from the governor a series of instructions, by which he was to conduct the negotiation."

These instructions, together with the correspondence between Governors Shirley and Wentworth, are given in the history above cited.

He was successful in his commission, and succeeded in securing five hundred men as the quota from New Hampshire, though, for some reason, he did not himself join in the expedition.

In 1761 Colonel Hale received a commission of sheriff for Essex County. In 1767, after holding nearly every office, civil and political, within the gift of his townsmen, he died, full of honors and lamented by all.

Among the curious memoranda left by Colonel

Hale are several of value to the local antiquarians, as: "A list of deaths in Beverly, 1730–64;" "An account of all the houses in Beverly," 1723–51; "Persons now living in Beverly who have had the small-pox;" "A list of Widows and Widowers in ye First Parish," which begins with the widow of Mingo (the slave); and under date of February 12, 1747–48, is this remark: "This day there are 7 Widows to one Widower in this Parish—63 W., 9 Widowers."[1]

1756.—For the Crown Point expedition, this year, the Beverly soldiers enlisted, in Captain Andrew Fuller's Company, were:

Benj. Balch, William Eborn, Daniel Gloyd, Corporal John Simonds, Joseph Baker, John Clark, Daniel Butman (again in 1759), Eliezer Ellingwood, Robert Matthews, William Moneys, Azor Roundy, Peter Stokes, George Spence (re-enlisted 1759 and 1761), and Andrew Woodbury.

In another company at Fort Edward, Moses Dodge.

1757.—In Captain Israel Herrick's company of Eastern Rangers, are enrolled: Osman Baker, Robert Baker (also in the Canada expedition 1759), Barth. Peart, John Simonds, John Trask, Josiah Trow.

1758.—In Captain John Tapley's company: John Clark (at the capture of Fort William Henry), William Herrick, Wells Stanley and Barth. Taylor.

In various other companies: John Smith, Samuel Tuck, Jonathan Thorndike, Samuel Woodbury, Josiah Woodbury, James Woodbury, Jonathan Corning (seaman), Zebulon Putman, David Hill (drummer), Jonathan Dodge, Nathaniel Woodbury, John Hubbard, Abraham Hix (again in 1761), William Dodge (1761).

1759.—Robert Elliott, James Giles, Jonathan Larcom, Corporal Andrew Woodbury, Benjamin Brown, William Presson, Richard Standley, Barebeel Woodbury, John Wallis, Samuel Bean, Josiah Cressy, Aaron Crowell, Andrew Elliot, Amos Hilton, William Morgan, Robert Picket, Nicholas Standley.

1761.—Benjamin Presson, Ralph Tuck, Wilks West, Robert Standley, Joseph Williams, Benjamin Dike, Jonathan Dodge, Timothy Howard, Jacob Poland, Nathaniel Butman, Samuel Stickney.

1757.—Two families of Acadians, those unfortunate people who were expelled from their homes in Nova Scotia, were quartered upon the town, and a house hired for them. They were partially self-supporting, making wooden-ware and baskets; but their stay was brief, and they soon wandered on and were lost to the view of their Beverly friends.

1765. REVOLUTIONARY PERIOD.—Troublous times were approaching, and the records of the day show that the people of Beverly were alive to every fateful prognostication from over the water.

They anticipated every movement of the home government, and while conditionally loyal to their distant sovereigns, made it appear, by their acts in town meetings assembled, that they would suffer no infraction of their liberties. The odious stamp act was as unpopular here as in Boston, and its repeal (1765) was heralded by bonfires and celebrated by patriotic speeches.

The proceedings of the "Boston Tea Party" were promptly approved, and measures taken for the exclusion of the obnoxious vehicle of taxation. The men, as may be imagined, were more in favor of non-importation than the women, and amusing stories are told, in which some of the latter evaded the strict letter of the law and joined together for private tea-drinkings. Some of these meetings are said to have taken place in the cellars of their respective residences, and, on at least one occasion, an aerial "tea-drawing" was held on the roof-top of a house.

The story of a parallel occurrence, with all attendant circumstances, is pleasantly told in Miss Larcom's poem, "The Gambrel Roof."

. . . . . .

"In this old house, even then not new,
A Continental Colonel true
Dwelt, with a blithe and wilful wife,
The sparkle on his cup of life;
A man of sober mood,
He felt the strife before it came
Within him, like a welding flame,
That nerve and sinew changed to steel;
And, at the opening cannon peal,
Ready for fight he stood.

"Cheap was the draught, beyond a doubt,
The mother country served us out;
And many a housewife raised a wail,
Hearing of fragrant chest and bale
To thirstless mermaids poured,
And Mistress Audrey's case was hard,
When her tall Colonel down the yard
Called, 'Wife, be sure you drink no tea!
For best Imperial, prime Bohea,
Were in her cupboard stored.

"Young Hyson, too, the finest brand;
And here the good wife made a stand;
'Now, Colonel, well enough you know
Our tea was paid for long ago,
Before this cargo came,
With threepence duty on the pound;
It won't be wasted, I'll be bound!
I've asked a friend or two to sup,
And not to offer them a cup
Would be a stingy shame.'

"Into his face the quick blood flew:
'Wife, I have promised, so must you,
None shall drink tea inside my house;
Your gossips elsewhere must carouse;'—
The lady curtsied low;
'Husband, your word is law,' she said;
But archly turned her well-set head
With roguish poise toward this old roof,
Soon as she heard his martial hoof
Along the highway go.

. . . . . .

"But lightly dined the dame that day;
Her guests, in Sunday-best array,
Came, and not one arrived too soon,
In the first slant of afternoon;
An hour or two they sat,
In the low-studded western room,
Where hollyhocks threw rosy bloom
On sampler framed, and quaint Dutch tile;

[1] See Essex Inst. Hist. Collections for details.

They knit; they sewed long seams; the while
Chatting of this and that :—

"Of horrors scarcely died away
From memory of the heads grown gray
On neighboring farms; how wizard John
And Indian Tituba went on,
When sorcerers were believed;
How Parson Parris tried to make
Poor Mary Sibley's conjuring cake
The leaven of that black witchcraft curse,
That grew and spread from bad to worse,
And even the elect deceived.

. . . . .

"Dame Audrey said: 'The sun gets low;
Good neighbors mine, before you go,
Come to the house-top, pray, with me!
A goodly prospect you shall see,
I promise, spread around.
If we must part, ere day decline,
And if no hospitable sign
Appear, of China's cheering drink,
Not niggardly your hostess think!
We all are patriots sound.'

"They followed her with puzzled air;
But saw, upon the topmost stair,
Out on the railed roof, dark-faced Dill,
Guarding the supper-board, as still
As solid ebony.
'A goodly prospect, as I said,
You here may see before you spread;
Upon a house is not *within* it;
But now we must not waste a minute;
Neighbors, sit down to tea!'"

"The women were all liberty men," quaintly remarked a survivor of the Revolution, "and threatened to scald the Tories;" yet they parted with their tea with great reluctance.

A tale was current in town some years ago of an interrupted tea-drinking, caused by the lord of the house happening home unexpectedly and surreptitiously dropping a quid of tobacco in the teapot! But, as a rule, the clandestine meetings for indulgence in the fragrant beverage were winked at by the patriots.

The right of women to hold office was, this year, recognized by the appointment of Widow Priscilla Trask as pound-keeper.

The eager patriotism of our forefathers was tempered by commendable moderation, though they were the very first to apprehend approaching danger and prepare for it.

1765.—*October* 21, The letter of introduction to their representative, Col. Henry Herrick, amply defines this position:

"We cannot" (they write), "without criminal injustice to those glorious princes, King William and Queen Mary, or the memory of our venerable fathers, nor without the highest injustice to ourselves and to posterity, consent to yield obedience to any law whatsoever, which, by its natural constitution or just construction, deprives us of the liberty of trial by juries; or of our choosing meet persons to represent us in the assessing or taxing our estates for his Majesty's service. And we do accordingly advise and instruct you, our representative, to refuse your consent in any such case, and do all that in you lies to prevent any unconstitutional drafts upon the public treasury."

1769.—*May* 22, In another letter to him, they reaffirm these propositions:

"We apprehend that no power on earth can justly deprive us of our essential rights, and that no man can be safe, either as to his life, liberty, or property, if a contrary doctrine should prevail; therefore, we recommend to you a firm but prudent opposition to all unconstitutional measures."

A powder-house was erected on the south side of the common in 1767, to contain the town ammunition, which had heretofore been stored in the basement of the first parish meeting-house. Increasing supplies necessitated this.

1770.—The first parish meeting-house was taken down and a new edifice erected at a cost of about £1300. During its construction services were held near the big elm on the common.

1772.—*December* 21, In town meeting assembled, and in an adjournment of January 5, 1773, they again assert that "the rights of the colonists in particular as men, as Christians, and as subjects, are studiously, rightly, and justly stated by the committee of correspondence for the town of Boston; and Col. Herrick is instructed to "endeavor, as much as possible, in a legal and constitutional way, to effect the redress of the intolerable grievances, and secure the rights, liberties and privileges, both civil and sacred," guaranteed them by the charter.

1773.—A "committee of correspondence and safety" was appointed the latter part of this year, consisting of representative citizens as follows: John Leach, Benjamin Jones, Henry Herrick, Joseph Rea, Samuel Goodridge, Josiah Batchelder, J. Batchelder, Jr., William Taylor, Joshua Cleaves, Larkin Thorndike, Joseph Wood, Isaac and Nicholas Thorndike, William Bartlett, Andrew Cabot, Joseph Orne, Benj. Lovett, Jr., Nathan and Asa Leach, Caleb and William Dodge, Livermore Whitteredge, Benj. Smith, William Longdell, Thomas Stephens, Edmund Giles, John and Jona. Grant, Isaac Chapman and John Lovett, 3d.

The following letter "to the committee of correspondence for the town of Boston," January 11, 1773, is referred to above, and illustrates their alert and active interest.

"Gentlemen: Inclosed you have the transactions of this town, in consequence of the resolves of the metropolis of this province, and the letter of correspondence herewith transmitted, whereby you will perceive the sentiments of this town with regard to the common cause in which we are all concerned. In the name of the town, we return thanks for the early care taken by the town of Boston to communicate the most early intelligence of any alarming circumstances that they have with regard to any infringements on our rights, as Christians, subjects, or colonists.

"And, gentlemen, inasmuch as we are all concerned in one common cause, we shall esteem it as a favor of a free correspondence, that we may have the most early intelligence of any interesting events of a public nature, as you live in the metropolis, that we may concur with you in any salutary constitutional measures for the good of all; and are, gentlemen, with the greatest regards,

"Your most humble servants,

"John Leach, Samuel Goodridge,
Benj. Jones, Josiah Batchelder, Jr.,
Henry Herrick."

1774.—In the town-meeting, January 4, it was resolved:

"That the method of introducing tea into this province in the manner proposed by the British Ministry, for the benefit of the East India Co., is

justly and fairly stated by the inhabitants of the town of Boston; and that it is the sentiment of this meeting, that they will always, in every salutary method, cheerfully join with our brethren of the town of Boston and every other town in this province, in withstanding every unlawful measure tending to enslave us, or to take our money from us, in any unconstitutional manner."

At a county convention held in Ipswich September 6th and 7th, the town was represented by three of its citizens: Benj. Lovett, Saml. Goodridge and Joseph Wood, who subscribed to the report of the committee, which, after asserting their continued loyalty to the crown, continued:

"But though, above all things, slavery excepted, we deprecate the evils of a civil war; though we are deeply anxious to restore and preserve harmony with our brethren in Great Britain; yet, if the despotism and violence of our enemies should finally reduce us to the sad necessity, we, undaunted, are ready to appeal to the last resort of States; and will, in support of our rights, encounter even death, sensible that he can never die too soon who lays down his life in support of the laws and liberties of his country!"

Abundant assurances of their sincerity are found in the minutes of the numerous meetings of citizens.

1775.—*February 27th,* Along with other articles in the warrant for town-meeting this year, are the following:

"To see if the town will have a watch kept for the preservation of the town, and come into such measures relative thereto as may then be thought best; and there was a warrant issued out to the several constables to warn the same, as follows: viz., to Samuel Woodberry 3d, to warn Farms and Bald Hill Districts; to Joseph Woodberry to warn Royal Side and Bass River Districts, and to Wm. Elliott to warn the Ferry District."

It was later voted that a watch, consisting of nine persons, be posted at three different places; and that "if the watch discover that any Hoistilities are likely to be made on the town or any of the inhabitants thereof, they are to make an alarm, by the fireing of three guns and the ringing of the bell."

Voted, also, "that the town will raise fifty-four minute-men, including officers."

Voted, "to give the captain of the minute-men three shillings and four pence for each half day service in larning of the art military; the lieutenants two and eightpence, the ensign two and sixpence, and each private one shilling, eightpence."

Voted, "that the minute-men turn out two half days in a week, and four hours each half day be spent in larning the art military, Col. Henry Herrick was empowered to hire £80, with interest, to pay off the minute-men."

"Boston, Feby. 7th, 1775.

"Received from the town of Beverly, by the hands of Mr. Henry Herrick, a donation, consisting of the following articles, viz.: Two barrels of sugar four hundred one quarter of sugar, one bbl. rum, five and ½ qtls. of fish, 105 lbs. of coffee, two cheeses, eight pair of womens and five pair of mens leather boots, one hide upper leather, and thin calf skins curried, sixteen pounds chocolate, ten pounds of pork, 25 lbs. flax, one barrel flower, & one and ½ bush. corn; for the relief and support of the poor of the town of Boston, suffering by means of the Boston Port Bill.

"Samuel Partridge,
"one of the committee of Donations."

These excerpts from the records of the town, show that our people were ready, with money and musket, to resent the first invasion of their rights. Thus it was, the eventful nineteenth of April, 1775, found them not unprepared. Though every householder had gone forth to his daily occupation, and was peacefully following his duty for the day, yet the arrival of the breathless messenger, announcing the departure of a British detachment from Boston to seize the military stores at Concord, was a spark that kindled into flames their smouldering fires of patriotism. The business of the day was abandoned, each man seized his musket and hastened to the appointed place of rendezvous. The captains of the militia companies, Joseph Rea, Caleb Dodge and others, mounted their horses and posted to the Farms and other districts, arousing the whole population along their routes. By three o'clock that afternoon a large proportion of the male inhabitants of Beverly capable of service were armed and ready for the conflict. No troops engaged in that memorable fight had so long a distance to march, yet they arrived in season to participate in the skirmishes that followed the battle of Lexington, and assisted in driving the British back to Boston. One of their number was killed, Reuben Kennison; and three wounded, Nathaniel Cleaves, William Dodge (3d) and Samuel Woodbury.

These names are given in "George's Almanac" for 1776, though Kennison's name is spelled as Kinnym. The widow of Kennison (it is stated by Stone in 1842) retained in her possession till her death (which occurred October 22, 1842, at the age of eighty-nine), the shirt worn by her husband when killed.

The present historian, learning that a portion of that interesting relic was still in possession of connections of the widow Kennison's family, was permitted to see it, August, 1887, one hundred and twelve years after the fatal bullet had pierced it that deprived Reuben of his life. [1] The fragment is about a foot square, of striped homespun, with a jagged hole in it that may have been made by the bullet. It was wrapped in a sheet of blue paper of ancient manufacture on which was written: "Reuben Kenniston of Beverly, killed at Lexington April 19, 1775. Part of his shirt." It now belongs to Mrs. Huldah Herrick, whose mother was niece to Reuben's wife. Mrs. Kennison was married a second time, to Uriah Wright, and lived at Ryal Side. Reuben lived at Ryal Side previous to 1775, and is said to be buried in the old Leach burial-lot near Brown's Folly Hill.

The house he lived in has disappeared. Tradition states that his body was brought to Ryal Side on an ox-cart. An elm tree which was planted near Keninson's house, April 19, 1775, was blown down a few years ago.

[1] At the seventy-fifth anniversary of the battle of Lexington (April 19, 1850) the president of the day said: "You may see on the table before me the powder-horn of Isaac Parker, of Chelmsford, who wore it at the North Bridge, and a fragment of the shirt in which Reuben Kenniston of Beverly, was killed, which was preserved with pious care by his wife. The holes through it have decayed from the *blood stains*, which were left uneffaced."

A valuable lesson in history might be acquired by tracing the route of our first Revolutionary soldiers, as they so eagerly pressed on to join their brothers-in-arms and that of their return, bearing with them their slain and wounded comrades.

Nathaniel Cleaves, who was wounded in the fight, having had his fingers cut off and ramrod carried away by a bullet, is included in the "list of the names of the provincials who were killed and wounded in the late engagement with his Majesty's troops at Concord." He seems soon to have recovered of his wound, for he was in the Bunker Hill fight of June 17th, and with the troops at Cambridge within a month of the Lexington engagement.

An extremely interesting relic of the times is the journal of this same soldier, which is now in possession of one of our most estimable citizens. It commences:

"*Thursday, May ye* 25, 1775. Captain Low marched from Beverly to Cambridge; took up our quarters at mister bloggets; the 27, *Saturday* (forenoon), plesent; at night a scurmig (skirmish) came on between the regulars and our peopel on the island (?); burnt a house and barn, killed — horses, burnt one schooner and took sum plunder, and lost no lives on our side, but supposed that we killed a number of them. *Sunday*, 28, Some guns fired on our peopel that were getting sum guns out of the racks, but no damage. *Monday, the* 29, brought off the island 27 head of cattel, 20 od horses, 300 sheep and lams, and no damage. *Tuesday, the* 30, great movement made with the troops in Boston, by which means the country was alarmed, and no men to go out of the camp. *Wens.*, 31. Capt. Cimbel's (Kimbal's (?) company came to Cambridge.

"*Thursday, June* 1, 1775. Cloudy morning; cleared of pleasant. Had Mister Willard, Mr. Cutler and Mr. Hichcock in the afternoon. [These were the ministers of First Parish, Beverly, Hamilton, and Second Parish, Beverly. These three also rode to Lexington immediately on receipt of the alarm.] A meeting concerning our field officers adjourned to next day. Cornelos Maurice hanged hisself with his hanchirchif. The next day, pleasant morning; guns were fired, supposed to be at Nodels island (East Boston), and so continued all day by spurts; sent a party of about 200, and 2 field peises, for Chelsea. The day ended with the meeting of the officers; had the mager before us and had a full hearing; so that day ended. The same night a scout went to Dear Island, took of 400 sheap, sum cattel, fore priseners.

"*The* 3*d day, Saturday*, a plesent morning; this day the whole army was mustered on the common to see 2 theives whipped, one 20 stripes, negro 10; one man drumed out of the army with 36 drums and 40 fifes, with the rogues march. *Sunday, the* 4*th day*, fair whether; went to meeting, heard 2 sermons. *Monday, the* 5 *day*, fair wether; nothing remarkibel. *The* 7*th day* set out for Beverly, reached it about 12 o'clock, and ret'd to Cambridge Saturday, the 10th.

"*Monday, the* 12 *day*, a number of the priseners under the main gard ris and abused the captain of the gard, and a gineral cort marshel was ordered to try the same; the common report for this day is that their is 3 rigement and 3 company of horse off in the Bay; this day ended without anything new.

"15 *day Monday*, cool morning; cort marshel continued till Fryday; nothing new.

"*the* 16 *Day*, a pritty hot Fire, said to be at the effege of Hancock. This day the nuse came to Cambridge that Philadelphia had taken a ship with 750 stand fire-arms and quantity of ammunition. This is good nuse for which I am thankful. About 6 o'clock there was mustered about 1000 men to go and take possession of Bunker hill (!), which they did the same night without any disturbance.

BATTLE OF BUNKER HILL.

"Till Saturday morning about sunrise the Lively fired on our men; killed Asa pollerd of Billerica; Orders for our rigement to parade at 5 o'clock with 3 other rigements to relieve those at Bunker hill, but was alarmed at 12 when the troops began to land, which caused a hot fire on both sides, which our side left the ground for want of field peices and powder (!). Soon after the engagement began they set Charlestown on fire; our rigement returned at night to Prospect hill and intrenched all night.

"*The* 18 *day, Sunday*, they fired upon our peopel but did no damage."

In this brief chronicle of the soldier's life in Cambridge is given his share in the important battle of Bunker Hill, which he treats merely as a skirmish of little consequence. His point of view was not sufficiently removed from the scene of conflict for him to appreciate its magnitude. He wastes no words in excuses for their retreat, nor stops for gratulation:

"*The* 24 *day, Saturday*, in the morning was alarmed by a great movement of the regulars on Bunkers hill, supposed to be a coming out, but did not. 25, *Sunday*, in the forenoon stayed at our camp at Cambridge; about 12 o'clock went down to the hill and begun our brestwork. There was a packet of letters came to gineral Putnam from our priseners in Boston and say that they are treated vary wel. Mister Cleveland preached on the hill, from John 20, 22; this day dug up the bones of a man buried about a foot under ground.

"Went up to see Capt. Francessis men Thursday; went to breakfast without butter or cheas; had Capt. Batchelder to dine with us, we had biled vittels and rost veal . . . the sargents went to supper on New England grog, and then went to our logings in peace.

"*Fryda*—this day chool and clowdey; gineral orders to be on the parade at 5 o'clock, and william Anderson to receive 29 stripes and one Russel 80, and one rid the wooden hors and then went down to Prospect hill to work on the intrenchments. A whooman was drumed of the hill for playing the roge with a drummer, and bob Picket was as focksey as the Divel. . . .

"*July the* 3 *Day*, this morning cloudy. There was four cannon fired to Rocksbury and one hous sot on fire. General Washington came to Cambridge about twelve o'clock and was atended with a great number of gentlemen from nabering towns! Captain Low went to Beverly this morning; Ensign Henery Herrick went with him."

Leaves of absence to visit Beverly were frequently obtained, and in one of them Lieutenant Cleaves walked home on a Friday, stopping at Colonel Herricks to "fix up," and "brought up" at Mister Chipmans.

"The next day, 'Saturday,' in the morning went down to Mister Joshua Herricks; in the afternoon to the Hamlet (Hamilton), from there over to Topsfield, to David Perkinses, from there to Beverly, down to the lower perrish (parish). *Sunday the* 9, went to meaten in the forenoon, Mister Hichcock preached; ihen sot of for Cambridge."

The camp-life seems not to have been entirely without its relaxations, as witness the following:

"*Fviday the* 14 *Day*, Cap. —— and Capt. Low went to Watertown after bords to finish our barracks; had a very plesent time; they fel in company with a very butiful Lady and took her into the shay with them; the recompense she gave them is not yet none (known) for carying of her. . . . *Tusday the* 18, this morning warm and clear. I went down to Chelsea with more ofisers and 130 men after a mast for a liberty-pole; had a fine prospect of the enemy, saw 83 horses paraded and near 40 more in the paster. I went into a house, got sum biled sider, and kissed the old whomans Daughter to pay for it, had a fine frolick; at the tavern drove a dog out of the windo, and sum other things worthy of note. Coming back met the chief general aidecamp from Cambridge, who said that there was a great movement with the troops at Rocksbery and had struck a number of tents, supposed to be going somewhere. Arrived a little after sunset very much fatigued, went to bed at ten o'clock, and was under arms by half-past two the next morning. *Wensday the* 19, Captain Low and Lieut. Herrick went to Watertown for bagonets, and this afternoon I secured some powder and ball."

This excerpt gives a fair picture, probably, of the soldier's life at that period, before the hardships of war had begun. The brave fellow, whose diary we have been permitted to glance at, was lost at sea in 1780, so he must have resigned his commission in the army before the war was over.

In the great work of preparation for inevitable war the women of Beverly ably assisted their husbands and brothers—weaving cloth, knitting stockings, making garments—and dividing with the soldiers their household supplies.

1775.—*April* 22, "Col. Henry Herrick, Capt. Benjamin Lovett and Capt. Wm. Bartlett chosen to be a committee in behalf of this town to confer with the committees of the several seaport towns of this county what steps shall be most expedient for them to take at this difficult time, and for to meet at the tavern near Beverly meeting-house on Monday, the 24th instant, at 9 o'clock in the morning."

"Also, Col. Henry Herrick, Capt. Ebenezer Francis, Capt. Edward Giles, Capt. Benj. Lovett, Jr., Capt. Nicolas Thorndike, Mr. Peter Pride, and Lieut. Elisha Dodge, were chosen a committee of safety for this town, for to act in that affair in the best manner they can for the Publick good."

May 19, A town-meeting was warned "to elect and depute as many members as to them shall seem necessary and expedient to represent them in a Provential Congress, to be held at the meeting-house in Watertown, on the 31st of May inst., . . . to consult, deliberate and resolve upon such further measures as, under God, shall be effectual to save this people from impending ruin," etc.

Their representative, Capt. Josiah Batchelder, Jr., was instructed to lay before Congress the exposed situation of the town and ask for soldiers to defend it, as many of their men had enlisted in the army.

October 12, It was voted that the committee of correspondence procure "six peases of cannon;" two six and four four-pounders, mount them on carriages and place in position; to have two breastworks thrown up, one at Woodbury's Point and the other at Paul's Head. It was later voted to place one nine-pounder and one four at Woodbury's Point, the other nine and one four-pounder at Paul's Head, and the two field-pieces wherever the committee should judge best for the public safety.

"After the collision, which extinguished the last lingering hope of reconciliation, the County of Essex, essentially maritime in her habits, launched her thunderbolts on the deep, and trailed the flag, that for a thousand years had braved the battle and the breeze, ignominiously on many a conquered deck, whence went up the pine-tree flag of the rebels in token of victory. The *first flag, under the Continental authority, that ever floated at an American mast-head* in defiance of British supremacy, was hoisted on board the 'Hannah,' from Beverly! The first commander who, under Washington's commission, threw down the gauntlet of maritime warfare, was Capt. Manly of Marblehead. . . . The harbors of Salem, Marblehead and Beverly swarmed with prizes. The same hardy fishermen of the seaports of Essex, driven from the theatre of their adventurous industry by the breaking out of hostilities, trod the decks of these little wanderers of the sea, who afterwards manned the 'Constitution' in the second War of Independence, when St. George's Cross went down before the stars and stripes"[1]

A dramatic episode of the conflict was witnessed in Beverly harbor, this same autumn of 1775, which is graphically described in Stone's "History of Beverly." One pleasant morning a privateer schooner sailed out of Beverly on a cruise. She had not been long out when she was discovered by a British sloop-of-war, the "Nautilus," of twenty guns, which immediately bore down upon her. The superior force of the enemy induced the captain of the privateer to put back; but in the confusion of the chase he grounded on the flats. It being ebb tide, the "Nautilus" came to anchor outside the bar, from which position she opened fire on the town. The meeting-house being the most conspicuous object, several shots were aimed at it, one of which penetrated the chaise-house of Thomas Stephens, destroying the chaise, and another struck the chimney of a house on the opposite side of the street.

The worthy man whose chaise was destroyed did not rest an idle spectator, but seizing his musket he hastened to the beach, returning the fire of the enemy in gallant style. Here he was joined by several other patriotic inhabitants of the town, conspicuous among them being Col. Henry Herrick, an active member of the committee of correspondence, in full military costume. Their fire may not have been very effectual, but it at least showed their good intentions, and warned the commander of the sloop-of-war that he had stirred up a veritable hornet's nest of rebel musketeers. The receding tide soon left the "Nautilus" in an awkward position aground, so that she careened and could not use her guns. In this condition she lay till dark, the target for the cannon of Hospital Point, on Salem side, and of the small arms of the Beverly patriots. The tide rising, after dark, the baffled commander weighed anchor and stood for Boston, "carrying with him no very pleasant recollections of his introduction to the citizens of this town."

Between March and November, 1781, 52 vessels, carrying 746 guns, with crews of 3940 men, were fitted out and chiefly owned in Salem and Beverly.

Beverly has the honor of having sent out the first commissioned privateer of the Revolution. This vessel was the "Hannah," the papers for which were issued September 3, 1775, and signed by General Washington.

The first to commence operations against Great Britain's mercantile marine, Beverly maintained her privateers throughout the war. Our most noted and most successful privateersman was Captain Hugh Hill, who, as early as 1775, brought into port a valuable prize, the British schooner "Industry," the cargo of which was sold and the vessel turned over to the public service. Captain Hill (the first of his family in this town), commenced privateering in the "Pilgrim," of twenty guns, which was built under his superintendence in Newburyport. He captured numerous prizes, and nearly all were sent into Beverly, which was then, as one writer has expressed it, the headquarters for our infant navy. More captured vessels (it is said), were brought into this port than into any other in New England. The first navy agent was William Bartlett (after whom Bartlett Street was

[2] Rantoul's Oration at Concord, 19th April, 1850.

named), who had charge of the captured cargoes, which were of such material aid to the continental army in their time of sorest need.

Many anecdotes are related of our great privateer captain Hill, illustrating his sagacity, bravery and humanity.

On one cruise, while sailing with the English ensign at mast-head, as a decoy, he was boarded by the captain, of a British man-of-war, who, unsuspicious of his host, remarked that he was in search of "that notorious Hugh Hill." Captain Hill, at that moment unprepared for an engagement, answered that he was on the lookout for the same individual, and hoped soon to meet him. The officer departed, but in a few days they met again; the American flag was run up, and an engagement followed, in which the Englishman was captured, and the prize sent into Beverly.

Captain Hill, who was own cousin to General Andrew Jackson, proved himself such a terror to British commerce, that his capture would have been looked upon as a great achievement.

Several other townsmen shared with Captain Hill the honor of successful commanders, among them Captain Eleazer Giles, Elias Smith, John Tittle and Benjamin Lovett. Captain Giles, in 1776, sailed from the port of Beverly in a ten-gun brig, with which he captured four merchantmen out of a large fleet, two of his prizes being ships of four hundred and three hundred tons, respectively, and the other two brigs of lesser tonnage. He was, however, captured on a later cruise by a British vessel of superior force, and sent prisoner to Halifax.

Captain Elias Smith, commander of the ship "Mohawk," of twenty guns, cruised mainly in the West Indies, where, in 1781, he captured a Guineaman (slaver) of sixteen guns, which was sent into Beverly.

Captain John Tittle, when sailing in a letter of marque, was attacked by two cruisers, being engaged with them for three hours. All his canvas above the lower yards was shot away, and his crew, looking upon their condition as hopeless, began to abandon their guns, when the gallant captain drew his sword and threatened to run the first man through who left his quarters. A fortunate shot soon taking effect upon one of the enemy and night coming on, he was enabled to escape.

These meagre gleanings from the annals of our town indicate the spirit of this little community, which sent its citizens forth to battle for freedom, on land and sea.

1776.—In January of this year the town voted to hire twenty-four men as night-watchers on the sea coast, at West's beach and near Benjamin Smith's house at Plum Cove, and one hundred pounds, to defray these expenses. A watch at the fort was maintained by Colonel Glover, with the Fourteenth Regiment of the Continental army.

At a town-meeting June 13, 1776, three weeks before the Declaration of Independence, it was voted that, in event the Continental Congress declare the independence of the colonies, they would "solemnly pledge their lives and fortunes to support them in it." This pledge was fulfilled on almost every battle-field of the Revolution; yet, in 1779, a fine of five thousand four hundred pounds was assessed on the town, by the General Court, for failing to furnish a prescribed number of men for the militia.

In a petition for its remission in 1780 the town appealed to the records in evidence that (which was strictly true) they had "furnished more men, and been at greater expense to carry on the war, than almost any other town in proportion to their abilities."

1776.—Town-meetings were held with increasing frequency, as the exigencies of the occasion demanded the building of breastworks, the purchase of ammunition, instructions to their representatives and protection of the harbor and coast. It was put to vote (November 7th) if the town would stop up their harbor, and it passed in the negative. Voted that "the selectmen be empowered to petition to General Washington, or any other department, for ammunition and men for the safety of this town whenever they shall think it necessary and expedient." They were also empowered to procure two hundredweight of powder, "in the best manner they can."

Interleaved in the volume of records for 1774–83, opposite the entry for July 2, 1776, is a copy of the original proclamation of independence (July 4, 1776,) in accordance with the order accompanying it, that a "copy be sent to the ministers of each parish of every denomination, who, after reading it to their congregations, were to deliver it to the clerks of their respective towns, who are hereby required to record it in their respective town or district books, there to remain, as a *perpetual memorial* thereof."

The town records for 1776 show that the regular business of the town went on uninterruptedly, but their pages throughout indicate active preparation for warfare and defense, and seem to smell of gunpowder and bristle with bayonets.

1777.—Under date of February 17th is a list of men paid for watching at night, comprising twenty-six names. The chief bills of the town are for watching, militia service, bounties to soldiers, etc., as "to time spent in making Brestworks; procuring and hauling cannon; to hauling 500 cwt. of powder from Andover; to going to Danvers to procure intrenching tools;" and finally, as war's bloody returns come in, "to choose a committee to supply the soldiers' families that are in the continental army;" and, "ordered the treasurer to pay the several persons, soldiers in the continental army, the sums annexed to each of their names, they being extremely poor, and unable to procure things of the committee of supply."

1777. The town voted to give fourteen pounds to each non-commissioned officer and private who would enlist in the Continental army for three years, or dur-

ing the war, and four pounds additional to such as had been in the army and would re-enlist. Provision was made for barracks for the sea-coast men at Woodbury's Point. Three hundred pounds was voted for the relief of families of soldiers, and the next year two hundred pounds additional.

In 1779 a "sum not exceeding twelve thousand pounds" was voted for procuring men for the army, and in succeeding years sums varying from five thousand to fifty thousand pounds were provided for the same purpose.

In 1780 the selectmen were authorized to procure five horses for the public service, and a bounty was offered to soldiers enlisting of 100 pounds sugar, 100 pounds coffee, 10 bushels corn, 100 pounds beef and 50 pounds cotton or £1370 in money, to which was later added 67 pounds coffee, and the money bounty increased to £1611. Price of labor on the highway was then fixed at £12 per day. Salt sold for £50 per bushel.

1777. A prominent man in military affairs at this time was Colonel Ebenezer Francis, born at Medford, in 1743, and removed to Beverly in 1764. He received a captain's commission in the Continental Army, July 1, 1775, the year following was colonel, and commanded a regiment on Dorchester Heights. By commission of November 19, that year, he was authorized to raise a regiment in Massachusetts, and at the head of this regiment, the Eleventh Massachusetts, he marched, in January, 1777, for Ticonderoga. His death occurred July 7, 1777, at Hubbardston, N. Y., near Whitehall, where he was shot while leading his troops to battle.

Previous to setting out on this march his company was assembled in the first parish meeting-house, at religious service, and "associated with him on that perilous expedition into the wilderness, were many brave and noble spirits, and some of them highly educated."

His brother, John Francis, fought by his side, an adjutant in his regiment when he fell, and was subsequently in several battles, was wounded at the capture of Burgoyne, and retired with honor. Later, in 1786, he raised a company in Beverly and Danvers, and marched to suppress Shay's rebellion; after his return was captain of the militia company of the second parish, and commanded the Beverly regiment, dying in 1822, aged sixty-nine years. Two other brothers of Colonel Francis, Aaron and Thomas, fought in the Revolution. As chaplain of Colonel Francis' regiment went the minister of the second parish, Rev. Enos Hitchcock, a graduate of Harvard in 1767, colleague of Rev. Mr. Chipman in 1771, whom he succeeded in 1775.

He had been preceded as chaplain in the regiment by the Rev. Mamasseh Cutler, the celebrated minister at Hamilton. Mr. Hitchcock was at Valley Forge, and wrote of the condition of the army in 1778: "Numbers of our brigade are destitute, even of a shirt, and have nothing but the ragged remains of some loose garments as partial covering."

This brave chaplain survived the war; was dismissed from the Second Parish in 1780, and became pastor of a church in Providence, in October, 1783. He is remembered as an eloquent preacher and as the author of a work of fiction and several published discourses.

In this regiment also was Henry Herrick, a graduate of Harvard, and a successful teacher in Beverly after the war, and Moses Greenleaf, captain of a company, whose private journal contained incidents of the expedition.

1777. The women of Beverly "took a hand" in affairs this year, a company of them gathering and leading a raid upon the storehouse of one of the merchants who had a stock of sugar on hand which he refused to sell, on account of the depreciation of the paper money. With the assistance of some of the men one cold November morning, about sixty of them marched down Main (Cabot) and Bartlett Streets to the wharves, where they broke open the warehouse and loaded up two ox-carts with sugar. The foreman of the establishment offering resistance, he was promptly charged upon by the ladies, one of whom seized him by the hair, at which he fled, leaving his wig in her grasp

The sugar was carted to the shop of the leader, who retailed it at a fair price to customers, and rendered her account faithfully to its owners.

1778. Out of a list of ten abatements for taxes, opposite five of the names is entered "on account of being in captivity;" two others were "long absent abroad," and one "dead and left nothing."

Out of seven such abatements in 1779, two were for persons who had been "long in captivity;" one, Andrew Ober, "long missing if alive;" and another, Joseph Ober, second, "died in captivity."

1779. At the March town-meeting it was voted to hire five hundred pounds, for the use of the committee for supplying the familes of soldiers.

Forty men were lost at sea this year, and in consequence the town petitioned to be released from supplying its quota.

As late as 1783, in a list of abatements of taxes, fourteen were on account of the persons taxed then being or having been in captivity.

The following names of soldiers have been mostly copied from the original muster rolls in the State House at Boston:

Captain Caleb Dodge's Muster-Roll of Minute Men.

Captain—Caleb Dodge. First Lieutenant—Jona. Batchelder. Second Lieutenant—Nathan Smith. Ensign—Benj. Shaw. Sergeants—Jno. Batchelder, Saml. Woodbury, Peter Woodbury, Benj. Jones, Jona. Perkins. Privates—Jacob Dodge, Benj. Cressy, Jr., Nathl Cressy, Wm. Cammel, Jos. Raymond, Elisha Woodbury, Steph. Felton, Dea. Wm. Dodge, Wm. Woodbury 3d, Ebenr. Trask, Mark Dodge, Chas. Dodge, Joshua Dodge, Saml. Conant, Israel Greene, Barth. Trask, John Cressy, Nathan Cressy, Aaron Salley (?), Robert Dodge, Joshua Cleaves, Jona. Dodge, Nathan Wyman.

"These may certify that this list above is a true list of the commission officers, non-commission officers and Privates in ye alarm list under my command in ye second Parish in Beverly, wh went to assist at ye alarm at Lexington & Concord, on ye 19th & 20th of April last.

"Beverly, Decr. ye 16th, 1775.

"CALEB DODGE, Capt."

Captain Dodge's company arrived in season to overtake the British at Lexington, and materially retarded their retreat.

A copy of the "Muster Roll of the First Foot Company of Beverly, at the alarm of the Concord fight, on the 19th of April last."

Captain—Larkin Thorndike. First Lieutenant—Joseph Wood. Second Lieutenant—John Dyson. Ensign—Theophilus Herrick. Sergeants—Moses Brown, Henry Herrick, Benj. Leech, John Low. Corporal—Sewal Tuck. Privates—Robert Roundy, Benj. Lovett, Jr., Sol. Loafkin, Benj. Corning, Jos. Larkin, Henry (?) Standley, Wm. Herrick, Benj. Parsons, Andrew Smith, Elisha Woodbury, Josiah Ober, Jos. Lovett 2d, Jos. Herrick, Josiah Woodbury, Steph. Cabot, Wm. Taylor, Joseph Baker, Nathl. Lamson, Ezra F. Foster, Jos. Goodridge, Robert Stone, Jas. Smith, Timothy Leech, John Pickett, Benj. Briant, Henry Thorndike, John Low 2d, Saml. Dane, Richard Ober, John Morgan, Benj. Beckford, Benj. Adams, Wm. Trask, Henery Herrick 3d, Jos. Wyer, Benj. B. Lovett, Hazadiah Smith, George Stephens.

"Then Capt. Larkin Thorndike, aforesaid, personally appeared before me and made solemn oath that the foregoing muster-roll is true and just. Before me,

"BENJ. JONES, J. P."

In Captain John Low's Company, August, 1775; in Colonel Hutchinson's Regiment.

Captain—John Low. Lieutenant—Nathl. Cleaves. Ensign—Jos. Herrick. Sergeants—Luke Roundy, Geo. Steavens, John Low, Henery Herrick. Corporals—Gid. Batchelder, Arch. Dale, John Morgan, Andrew Wood. Drummer—Samuel Cole. Fifer—Hale Hilton. Privates—Benj. Adams, Saml. Arbuckell, Danl. Bunker, Benj. Bootman, Thos. Butman, Jas. Brazill, Jas. Buchman, John Cleaves, Thos. H. Cole, Alex. Carico, Thos. Carry, Sol. Cole, Mat. Furnesse, Jos. Foster, Edw. Foster, Jona. Foster, Wm. Goodridge, Saml. Giles, Geo. Gross, Geo. Gallop, Wm. Hales, Thos. Hogans, John Herrick, Jona. Knowlton, Jos. Lovett, Wm. Lovett, Mark Morse (last survivor), Wm. Lewis (?), Ashael Moore, Andrew Ober, —— Pickett, —— ——, —— Raymond, Robert Stone, —— Standley, —— Symmes, —— Sharley, Jona. Setchel, Eph. Smith, Israel Nash, Moses Trask, Wm. Tuck, Wm. Woddel, Benj. Woodman, Caleb Wallis, Benj. Woodbury, Corn. Woodbury, Jona. Young.

Captain Peter Shaw's Company; sworn to before Henry Herrick, J. P., January 16, 1776.

Captain—Peter Shaw. Lieutenant—Caleb Balch. Clerk—Jona. Conant. Sergeant—Saml. Dodge. Privates—Joshua Corning, Simeon Dodge, Joseph Poland, Israel Woodbury, James Dodge, John Cressy, Abner Smith, Phineas Hovey, Benj. Woodbury, John Conant, Gideon Rea, Jona. Leach, Saml. Conant, Jr., Ebenr. Waldron, Nathl. Raymond, Barnabas Trask, Jona. Raymond, Robt. Baker, Robert Cambel, Aaron Putnam, Ebenz. Trask, Jr., Lot Conant, Wm. Trask 2d, Prise (?) Dodge, Cornelius Dodge, Andrew Eliot, Israel Perkins, Ebenr. Raymond, Benj. Raymond, Wm. Syms, Joseph Serls, Timothy Batchelder, Saml. Nurse, Nehemiah Dodge, Benj. Shaw, Jr., Edward Dodge, Joseph Foster, William Pearce.

Muster-Roll of the Company under Captain Ebenezer Francis, in Colonel Mansfield's Regiment, August, 1776.

Captain—Ebenr. Francis. Sergeants—Nathl. Ober (Wenham) and Benj. Shaw. Privates—Aaron Francis John Smith, Nathaniel Hyat (?), Jos. Raymond, Timothy Batchelder, Jno. Bowles, Wm. Cox, Wm. Cressy, Job Cressy, Edward, Nehemiah, Nathaniel, Richard (?) and Cornelius Dodge, Robert Edwards, Josiah Foster, Israel Greene, Joseph Larkin, Stephen Masury, Joseph Marble, Saml. Nurse, Wm. Parice, Jos. Picket, Jos. Potter, Benj. Raymond, Benj. Shaw, Daniel Twist, William Woodbury, Gideon Woodbury.

From the Mileage-Roll of Captain John Gay's Company, in Colonel Francis' Regiment.

Lieutenant—Hen. Herrick. Sergeants—Edward Dodge, Cornelius Dodge, Jos. Serle (?), Peter Trask, Jas. Thistle, John Austin, Joseph Standley.

1776.—The following list of patriots in Captain Moses Brown's company, raised in August, 1776, is given by Historian Stone:

Richard Ober, Jona. Harris, Freeborn Thorndike, Jona. Foster, Samuel Stone, William Crowther, Cornelius, Luke and Andrew Woodberry, John Cressy, Amos Cressy, Robert Lovett, Thos. Parker, Barth. Smith, Mihill Woodberry, Thomas Cox, Nath. Batchelder, Nathaniel, Joseph and James Ober, Wm. Cook, Abner Stone, Benj. Foster, James Patch, Henry Peirce, Asa Larcom (Salem?), Robert Stone, Esop Hale, Herbert Standley, John Biles, Josiah Woodberry, Jacob Poland, Andrew Elliot, William Herrick, Eben'r Rogers, John Stone, William Cressy, Israel Greene, Benj. Porter, Thos. Morse, Joseph Hall, William Kimball, Daniel Carleton, William Gage, Jona. Gage, Caleb Wallis, Ebenezer Messer, Joseph Cross, Elisha Webber, William Harriman, John Berry, Joseph Foster, John Swain. Officers: First Lieutenant—Wm. Grover. Second Lieutenant—John Wallis. Ensign—John Clark. Sergeants—William Bowles, Richard Ober and Samuel Cressy. Corporals—Wm. Dike, Joshua Ellingwood, Francis Ober and Ezra Ober.

Men enlisted November, 1776:

Sergeants—Richard Butman, Isaac Thorndike. Corporals—Simeon Lovett, Bart. Wallis. Privates—Benj. Leach, Richard Ober (2d), John Porter, Josiah Foster, Nathan Cressy, Benj. Ober, Nathl. Woodbury, Jeffrey Thissell, John Woodbury, Andrew Eliot (2d), George Standley, Ebenezer Rea, Joshua Ellingwood, Nicholas Woodbury, Edward Smith, Obed Woodbury, Wm. Lovett, John Harmon, Ezra Lovett, Benj. Blashfield.

1779.—In Captain Billy Porter's company, and in Colonel Tupper's regiment at West Point (Stone's History):

Lieutenants—Thos. Francis and William Burley. Ensign—Benj. Shaw. Sergeant—John Pickett. Corporal—Jer. Woodberry. Drummer—B. B. Wood. Privates—Asa Batchelder, Jona. Conant, Benj. Corning, Mathias Claxton, Alex. Carrico, Samuel Dodge, Simeon Dodge, George Grose, Andrew Herrick, Claton Jones, Nathan Jones, John Kennedy, Abner Raymond, Benj. Woodberry, Benj. Woodberry, Jr., Israel, Nathaniel and William Woodberry.

In Captain Page's company (of Danvers):

Lieutenant—Samuel Goodridge. Sergeant—Jos. Raymond. Privates—Robt. Edwards, Scipio Bartlett, James Harley, Joseph Poland and Primas Green.

Jonathan Conant, Sr., was paymaster under Colonel Francis, and was in the battle of Monmouth; Joshua Twist was in Gates' army at the surrender of Burgoyne; William and Samuel Cressy were in the battle of Trenton; Luke Roundy, a lieutenant in Captain Low's company, was wounded at Saratoga, and died at Albany, and Nathaniel Cleaves was in the same engagement (says Mr. Stone), who adds further names of soldiers in the service, as:

William and Robert Goodridge, Israel Trask, Benj. Ellingwood, Thos. Lovett, Benj. Bickford, Benj. Bickford, Jr., John Bickford, Nath'l Friend, Isaac Smith, Jona. Woodberry, Zachariah Morgan and Benj. Spriggs.

From the muster roll:

Captain—Billy Porter (of Wenham). Thos. Francis, Jr., Luke Roundy, Aaron Putnam, Jona. Bowles, Robert Twist, Joseph Foster, Jos. Searle, Abner Raymond, Benj. Shaw, Jona. Conant, Edw. Shaw, Sam'l Dodge, Simeon Dodge, Benj. Corning, William Woodbury, Benj. Woodbury, Benj. Wood, Wm. Clark, John Kandy, Job Cressy, Richard Lee, Asa Batchelder, Dan'l Lampson, Philip Grush, Wm. Cook, Wm. Collins, Francis Thompson, Matthias Claxton, John Paris, Peletiah War-

ren, Matthew Tobin, Jona. Standly, Jere. Woodbury, Israel Woodbury, Alex. Carico, Joseph Picket, Jacob Reed, George York, Joseph Freethey (?), Andrew Herrick, John Carter, Wm. Dodge, George Gross, Wm. Cutler, Wm. Webber.

1780.—Men who served for six months:

Wm. Clerk, Weeden Cole, Jona. Conant, Joseph Carr, Richard Craft, Asa Leach, Abner Raymond, Rob't Standley, John Trask, —— Trask, Joseph Wood, Benj. Woodbury.

Beverly's sufferers by sea were not few during the Revolution, and of those committed to Mill Prison are the following:

Benj. Chipman, of schooner "Warren," taken December 27, 1777.

Michael Down, of brig "Rambler," taken October 21, 1779.

Joseph Leach, taken and committed to Pembroke Prison in 1779.

Joseph Perkins, Levi Woodbury, Robert Raymond, Matthew Chambers and Andrew Peabody, of ship 'Essex," taken June 10, 1781; also James Lovett and Benjamin Sprague.

William Haskell, Alexander Carrico and George Groce, of brig "Eagle," taken June, 1780.

John Baker, of brig "Black Princess," taken October 11, 1781.

John Tuck, Thomas Hadden, Josiah Foster, Hezekiah Thissell, Nathaniel Woodbury and Zebulon Ober, of snow "Diana," taken June 15, 1781, and committed January 23, 1782.

William Herrick was killed at sea, off Bermuda, in the snow "Diana," the year before; Benj. Bickford was mate of the "Diana" when Herrick was killed.

The "Diana" was a letter of marque, and a "snow" was a vessel half brig and half schooner.

1780. In the annals of this period the "dark day" (May 19th) held a conspicuous place. The sun, that morning, rose clear, but "soon assumed a brassy hue," and at two o'clock was totally obscured. During three hours time it was extremely dark, the birds and fowls went to roost in silence, and everything portended an awful visitation. The alarm of the people was universal, many supposing that the judgment day was at hand, and one old gentleman, it is said, dressed himself with great care, took his silver-headed cane with him into the field and calmly awaited the event. The darkness became dispelled during the afternoon, but the night succeeding was of such intense gloom, until midnight, that even the horses refused to go out into it from their stables. In explanation of this event, it is said that the smoke from great forest fires in the interior had settled over this region, thus obscuring the sun and necessitating a resort to candle-light by the frightened inhabitants.

From the journal of a resident of Beverly came this quaint record.

"Beverly, Friday, May 19, 1780.

"This day happened something very Remarkable. From 10 o'clock in the forenoon till half after two in the afternoon, there was totale Darkness. But about 1 o'clock the Darkest; the sky was as Red as though the Element had been a Fire. This was Wrote by me in my Bed-chamber in the house of coll. Thorndike, where Joseph Baker keeps Tavern."

The first town-meeting under the new constitution was held September 4th, this year, for the election of governor, lieutenant-governor and councillors, and the first representatives, Larkin Thorndike and Jonathan Conant, were then chosen.

1781. The constables were instructed to receive, in the payment of taxes, one silver dollar instead of seventy-five dollars of the old continental paper, and one dollar of the new emission instead of forty dollars of the old.

1781.—The Rev. Joseph Willard, who had been for eight years pastor of the First Parish, was called to the presidency of Harvard College, a position he held until his death, in 1804, "after the longest term of service, but one, in the series of Harvard's presidents." His loss was deeply felt in Beverly, where he had the respect and love of every inhabitant. It was he, who, during the darkest hour of the dark day, acted the part of the true philosopher, and instead of giving way to fear, calmly made observations of the attendant phenomena. As he was thus engaged, he became surrounded by frightened citizens, whose alarm was soon allayed by his own indifference. When one of them rushed up, breathless, with the announcement that the tide had done flowing, he drew out his watch and quietly remarked: "So it has, for it is just high-water."

It is not very generally known, perhaps, that Mr. Willard was at one time custodian of the literary treasures of a privateer. In 1781, the famous privateer, Captain Hugh Hill, brought a prize into port, containing, among other things, the celebrated Kirwan library, consisting of more than one hundred scientific works, ancient and modern, which, when taken, was in transit from England to its proprietor in Ireland. At the suggestion of Mr. Willard, the owners of the prize generally relinquished their title to it, allowing it to be sold, in compliance with law, to an association of gentlemen resident here and in Salem, for a mere nominal price.

"To the honor of Richard Kirwan it should be mentioned that he declined an offer of compensation for his property in it, preferring to have it pass for an outright gift to the infant cause and scanty means of scientific progress, in a country not yet emerged from the clouds of desperate strife with his own for separate national existence.

"The books, so fortunately secured, were first committed to Willard's keeping, but upon his removal from Beverly they were transferred to Salem, where they were united with other collections, first under the name of the Philosophical Library, then that of the Salem Athenæum, and finally of the Essex Institute, of which flourishing, richly-endowed, greatly-valued and useful institution it may be considered as the possible germ. From that germ alone great advantage has, by not a few, been derived. Our famous mathematician, Nathaniel Bowditch, of world-wide fame, availed himself extensively of the aid of the Kirwan books, especially in the earlier portions of his remarkable career, when such works were rare, and difficult (at least in this country) to be procured; and his sense of indebtedness was freely and gratefully acknowledged by him while living, and testified at his decease by a liberal legacy to the institution in which they are deposited, and of which they form a part."[1]

It will be seen from the above, that Beverly contributed (though perhaps unwittingly yet, not unwillingly), to swell the stream of knowledge that flowed from the early founts.

1783.—French troops passed the night in the Second Parish, on their way to Portsmouth to embark for France.

Beverly received the news of assured peace, promulgated this year, with the greatest satisfaction.

[1] Thayer's Bi-Centennial Address.

Having performed her whole duty in the perilous times, throughout, having lost many of her noblest citizens, and having freely expended of her substance to bring about this consummation, it was with joyful anticipations for the future that she entered upon the era of peace. It was some time, however, before the tangled web of debt and obligations, woven about her by the war, could be unraveled, and her paralyzed commerce regain its wonted activity.

In 1786, especially, the burden of debt and taxation, together with the weight of a depreciated currency, bore heavily upon Beverly, in common with every town in the State. It was in this year that Shay's rebellion occurred, to aid in suppressing which soldiers from Beverly joined the Essex company, under Colonel Wade, of Ipswich, an officer known and trusted by General Washington.

1785.—Rev. Joseph McKean, who was born in Londonderry, N. H., 1757, and graduated at Dartmouth College, was ordained over the First Parish May 11th, on which occasion a large number of churches were represented. His salary was fixed at two hundred pounds and his settlement at three hundred pounds, to which two hundred pounds was added in 1801. He was a man of great piety and learning, honored by all our citizens. In 1802 he received and accepted a call to the presidency of Bowdoin College. Among other papers published in the Rantoul Reminiscences is the following bill, for entertaining the council and delegates at Mr. McKean's ordination:

	£	s.	d.
"30 Bowles of Punch before the people went to meeting	3	0	0
80 People Eating in the morning	6	0	0
10 bottles of Wine before they went to meeting	1	10	0
68 Dinners	19	4	0
44 Bowles of punch while at dinner and after	4	8	0
18 bottles of Wine	2	14	0
6 people drank tea	0	9	0
40 Horses	3	0	0
4 Horses two days and nights	0	16	0
8 Bowles of Brandy	0	12	0
Cherry Rum	1	0	0
3 of the gentlemen's servants, 2 meals each and drink, the day	0	12	0
	43	5	0"

1787.—Beverly cast one hundred and twenty-five votes for Governor, of which seventy-seven were for John Hancock, and forty-eight for James Bowdoin; George Cabot, Joseph Wood and Israel Thorndike were this year chosen delegates to the convention in Boston January, 1788, for considering the framing of a constitution for the United States. For several years later, it was difficult to find people willing to serve the town in official capacity, and fines were imposed upon those who refused offices.

1788.—The first fruits of peace were not long in showing themselves, and the most important step taken in the securing of independence of the mother country was the establishment of a cotton factory. This factory, the first in America, was erected in the Second Parish, near Baker's Corner, at the junction of Cabot and Dodge streets. A company of proprietors was incorporated February 3, 1789; but, the enterprise proving unprofitable, it was afterwards abandoned. The factory attracted much attention at the time, and was visited by General Washington when on his tour through the country in 1789.

A contemporary periodical said of it: "An experiment was made with a complete set of machines for carding and spinning cotton, which answered the warmest expectations of the proprietors. The spinning jenny spins sixty threads at a time, and with the carding machines forty pounds of cotton can be well carded per day. The warping machines and the other tools and machinery are complete, and promise much benefit to the public, and emolument to the patriotic adventurers."

The *Salem Gazette*, of 1790, says: "The wear of the Beverly corduroys is already become very common;" yet the enterprise failed, and, after several other attempts, the proprietors suspended operations.

For nearly thirty years preceding 1800, the town was agitated over the spread of the small-pox, and in 1788, even threw fences across the roads, to prevent the passing of persons infected with the disease, erecting a hospital and smoke-houses for fumigation.

1788.—The Essex Bridge was built this year, one thousand four hundred and eighty-four feet long and thirty-two feet wide, at a cost of sixteen thousand dollars. It was to be a toll-bridge for seventy years, at the expiration of which period it reverted to the State. Robert Rantoul states, in his reminiscences, that (then a Salem school-boy of ten), he walked over the bridge the day it was opened, and again in his eightieth year, in 1858, on the day its charter expired.

Town fire-wards were first chosen in the preceding year: 1787, Moses Brown, Andrew Cabot, George Cabot, Joseph Lee and Joseph Wood.

In October, 1787, the Rev. Daniel Oliver was ordained over the Second Church, continuing here for ten years, when he was succeeded by the Rev. Stephen Dorr, who was ordained in March, 1800.

Several of our inhabitants joined the famous expedition of Dr. Cutler (of Hamilton), that initial migration to Ohio, which resulted in the settlement of our vast Western prairies.

1789.—The event of this year was the visit of Washington, on his tour of the North, when he called on his friends, William Bartlett and George Cabot; the latter then occupying the mansion now owned by Mrs. Seth Norwood. In the Book of Records of the Second Parish is a note by Mr. Stone of the following communication made to him by Isaac Babson March 13, 1835:

"When General Washington came to visit the cotton factory (near Baker's Tavern corner), he rode from Salem on horseback and was greeted by a great number. As he passed the residence of Col. Francis he bowed to Mrs. F., who was at the window. In the factory a number

of females were arranged, holding pieces of cloth in their laps for inspection. The General stopped opposite Miss Francis (afterwards Mrs. Low) and examined the cloth in her lap. On leaving the factory he entered his carriage (his servant riding his horse) and went on to Ipswich."

As recently as 1863 there died, one who was conversant with these details: Mrs. Betsey Grant (widow of Joseph, and mother of Benjamin D. Grant), a lineal descendant of John Balch, one of the first settlers. She was born in the "Upper Parish," February 10, 1772, and was seventeen years old at the time of Washington's visit, which she distinctly remembered in 1861. Washington paused at her side and asked her several questions about the work, "little realizing, perhaps, the reverent affection with which he was regarded by her, and which would embalm his sentences in her heart forever."

The last individual living in Beverly to whom Washington then spoke was Captain Peter Homan (it is said), who died in 1871, at the age of ninety-one. He was then a boy of nine, at work in the factory. As a child, Mrs. Grant "assisted in laboring for the soldiers of freedom at that early day of our nation's history; when a woman, wife and mother, she worked for the sons of America in 1812, and as an aged grandmother, she knit stockings for the soldiers of the Union in 1861."

Her eldest sister was a participant in the famous female riot of 1777, and the mother of Captain Homan was also one of the company.

1791.—The town treasurer was directed to fund the paper money on hand, and in 1793 it was voted that all contracts should be paid in hard money, instead of town orders.

1793.—The proclamation of neutrality, by the President, was warmly approved by the merchants of Beverly.

1795.—A petition was presented to Congress, drawn up by the Rev. Mr. McKean, William Burley, Israel Thorndike, Moses Brown and John Stephens, praying for the immediate fulfilment of the treaty between the United States and Great Britain.

1798.—A health officer was appointed, for the first time, and in 1801 a small-pox hospital was built at Paul's Head. This promontory, where the light-house now stands, and where the breastworks, erected during the Indian wars and the Revolution, may yet be seen, was early the property of Paul Thorndike, one of the first selectmen of the town.

The hospital, built here in 1801, costing four hundred and fifty dollars, was destroyed by fire, and the land is now included within the boundaries of the light-house property. The residue of Paul's Point is now occupied by some of the finest houses on the coast.

1799.—This year, departed one of the least of Beverly's population, in point of size, yet who had a wide-spread provincial reputation,—Miss Emma Leach, sixty-one years of age and but twenty-two inches in height. She was the daughter of William and Tryphosa (Herrick) Leach, and was born here June 27, 1717. She measured nearly as much at the age of two years as at her death, being then twenty-two inches in height.

In the almanac for 1777, published by Nathaniel Ames, on the cover of which is a wood-cut of the "prodigy," is "A short description of the extraordinary person that lately made her appearance in this town (Boston), which may not be disagreeable to our readers, although it may not be so particular as the curious may desire, as she would not admit of an accurate examination." From this it is learned that "she was, at her birth, as well a shaped child as any of the ten which the same mother bore. Her friends early discovered her bones to be in a flexible state, and unable to resist the action of the muscles, which made it very difficult to support her in any other than a horizontal position. After two years the bones acquired some considerable degree of firmness; but they had been so long inflected, by the action of the muscles, that they never recovered their proper figure or function."

"She measured in a right line from the crown of the head to the feet, twenty-two inches. The head was as large as is usual for persons of a common stature, and not at all deformed. The vertebræ of the back were somewhat elevated. Her feet were about the size of a child's of four or five years old, and not at all deformed. She could never walk, but was either carried by her friends, or moved herself about with the assistance of a small chair and stick. She enjoyed a tolerable share of health, free from most complaints except indigestion. In her conversation she discovers a vivacity which very much surprises all who hear her. She now enjoys herself very agreeably at her native place."

The Leach homestead, where she resided, has descended to Benjamin Goldsbury, through the marriage of his grandfather, Nicholas Goldsbury, to Tryphosa Leach, daughter of Benjamin, brother to Emma Leach.

In this, the last year of the century, a schooner of Beverly, the "Alert," was set upon by three French privateers, as she was entering the harbor of Santander, and, after a desperate resistance, captured and sent into Bayonne; an outrage upon American neutrality deeply resented.

1800.—A review of the century past shows a continued advance, since the close of the "primeval epoch," in every native industry and all the elements of prosperity.

The population of the town had doubled in the century: from 1680 in 1708, to 3300 in 1800.

A large area of land had been brought under cultivation, remote districts connected by roads, six school districts were now established, and two flourishing churches; the fleet of fishing-vessels, numbering thirty-two, employed three hundred men, and foreign commerce was in a flourishing condition.

For a short period of the nineteenth century, proximate, even while the inhabitants of Europe were distracted by wars, employing four millions of their fighting men, our people were to enjoy the blessings of peace.

Some Notable Names of the Century.—Many of those who contributed to the prosperity of Beverly, either on land or sea, some who aided in shaping its destinies, and others who acted as the conservators of the morals of the community, have been mentioned in the pages preceding. Yet it is not claimed that many may not have escaped mention, through the incomplete chronicles of the times. A distinguished merchant of the war period, was *Moses Brown*, born in 1748, a graduate of Harvard in 1768, who began business here in 1772. He took an active part in military affairs, raised a company of soldiers in 1775, and in 1776 joined the army as a captain in Glover's regiment, serving in New York and New Jersey, and being present at the battle of Trenton.

Resuming business in 1777, he retired in 1800 with a fortune, and died in 1820, after a life of acknowledged usefulness.

Associated with him in business at one time was another famous merchant, *Israel Thorndike* (born in Beverly in 1755), who owned several large ships, and through extensive trade with China and the East Indies, amassed a fortune (immense for those times), of nearly a million and a half of dollars. He removed to Boston in 1810, and expired in 1832. He subscribed five hundred dollars for the founding of a professorship of Natural History in Harvard, and the same sum for the library of the Theological School. In 1818 he purchased, in Hamburg, at a cost of six thousand five hundred dollars, and presented to Harvard, a large library "thereby securing to his country one of the most complete and valuable collections of works extant in American history."

The *Cabots*, George, Andrew, and John, left an enduring fame as great merchants; the first, who was born in 1751, residing here nearly forty years. He was one of the most enlightened men of his time, a delegate to the provincial Congress in 1779, the confidential friend of Washington and adviser of Hamilton. He removed to Boston in 1793, where he died in 1823; but the foundation of his fortune was laid, and his most brilliant labors performed, while a citizen of Beverly.

Joseph Lee, a brother-in-law of the Cabots, was also associated with them in business. He was born in Salem in 1744, and died in Boston in 1831. During his residence in Beverly, and throughout his life, he gave great attention to the designing of vessels, being of material aid to naval architecture. He gave twenty thousand dollars to the Massachusetts general hospital. His grandson, Henry Lee, who married a granddaughter of Andrew Cabot, resides on a fine estate at Beverly Farms.

In the year 1780, deceased in Beverly, *Henry Herrick*, one of the most active and influential members of the "Committee of Correspondence" in the Revolution, a direct descendant of the first American ancestor of the same name. He was an active agent, says the historian, in all the first Revolutionary movements, and for many years (twenty-four) represented the town in General Court.

From his relative, Joshua, have descended most of the name still residing in Beverly, and others in Maine, including *Horatio G. Herrick*, sheriff of Essex County for many years past; and *Joshua* and *Benjamin Herrick*, of Maine. The Herricks are intimately connected, through marriage, with several of the oldest families of Beverly.

In 1807 (March 27), *Captain George Raymond*, deceased, at the advanced age of ninety-nine years, having been born December 21, 1707. This aged citizen, whose life embraced the greater part of the eighteenth century, was influential in town affairs, and at one time in military, having taken part in the Cape Breton expedition. From generation to generation, and from century to century, as in the Herrick and Raymond families, the military prestige has been kept alive.

Another eminent citizen, who died in 1809, was *Josiah Batchelder, Jr.*, whose father served in the Port Royal expedition of 1707. His early years were passed at sea, and in 1761 he had the misfortune, while in command of a vessel, to be captured by a French privateer. He succeeded in having the vessel released, but was detained for its ransom for some time, in a prison at Martinique. His name appears frequently in the Revolutionary correspondence, and he was actively engaged in privateering; he was several times elected a member of the Provincial Congress, and during his declining years was surveyor and inspector of the port of Salem and Beverly.

William Burley, born January 2, 1751, died December 22, 1822. Was a native of Ipswich, but gave freely of his wealth to the poor of this town, leaving legacies to Beverly and Ipswich to promote the instruction of poor children. He not only aided the American cause, with advice, but took an active part, enlisting as a soldier, and while a lieutenant, under Colonel Thompson, in February, 1780, was taken prisoner near White Plains, remaining in captivity a year and nine months. His son, *Edward Burley*, is living in Beverly, at the age (1887) of eighty-four, and two grandchildren, Mrs. Cabot and Mrs. Susan Howes.

To the neighboring town of Ipswich, the town of Beverly has been placed under deep obligations for some of its most vigorous and brightest intellects. Notable above all his professional brethren of that time was *Nathan Dane*, born in Ipswich, December 29, 1752. He was of English ancestry, the first of the name having settled in Andover, Ipswich and Gloucester. It will be noticed, by one who will closely scan the chronicles of our early settlements and note the achievements

of our foremost citizens, that no Englishman became so truly great as when transplanted to America. All the inherent nobility of character of long lines of ancestors, latent for generations, first finds expression here.

The son of a farmer, Mr. Dane worked on his father's farm till he was twenty-one, acquiring that physical stamina which supported him through the unremitted labors of a long life. He graduated from Harvard in 1778, immediately after which he taught school in Beverly, where, in 1782, he began practicing law. In this latter year, and the three years succeeding, he was a representative at the General Court of Massachusetts; after which for three years he was a delegate to Congress, and for five years, beginning with 1790, a member of the Massachusetts Senate. He was on a committee to revise the State laws, in 1795, and a presidential elector in 1812. His enduring monument is the celebrated "ordinance of 1787," of which Daniel Webster said, in the United States Senate, in 1830:

"We are accustomed to praise the law-givers of antiquity: we help to perpetuate the fame of Solon and Lycurgus; but I doubt whether one single law of any law-giver, ancient or modern, has produced effects of a more distinct and marked and lasting character than the ordinance of '87. . . . It fixed, forever, the character of the population in the vast regions northwest of the Ohio, by excluding from them involuntary servitude. It impressed upon the soil itself, while it was yet a wilderness, an incapacity to bear up any other than freemen. It laid the interdict against personal servitude, in original compact, not only deeper than all local law, but deeper, also, than all local constitution."

The great labor of his life was "A General Abridgement and Digest of American Law," published 1823–'29, the material for which he began to gather as early as 1782; the first general code of American law, and of incalculable value to the country. The private life of Mr. Dane was exemplary, his public life every way to be admired. By his benefactions, as well as by his literary productions, he has caused his name to be remembered. By a donation of $15,000, he established the "Dane Professorship of Law," at Harvard, and was a donor to the Dane Law Library, of Ohio, and other institutions.

His valuable life was prolonged to eighty-three years, during sixty of which he pursued his studies. Although surviving to 1835, well into the nineteenth century, he yet belongs to the eighteenth, the formative period of our political history. His home was opposite the old South Church, in the house (still standing) built by Capt. Benjamin Ellingwood about 1784, one of the first (four) brick houses erected in Beverly, the others being the dwellings of Andrew, George and John Cabot. The monument to Mr. Dane, in the Hale Street Cemetery, bears an inscription by Judge Story.

In the year 1781, *Robert Endicott*, a descendant of Governor *John Endicott*, removed from Danvers to Beverly, where he died in 1819, aged sixty-two years. He was born on the ancient Endicott farm, now belonging to William Endicott, of London. His son, the venerable and well known William Endicott, the only survivor in the seventh generation from Gov. John Endicott, resides in Beverly, at the advanced age of eighty-eight. He began business here as a clerk with "Squire" Rantoul, and for thirty-six years owned and occupied the drug store at the corner of Cabot and Washington Streets. He retired from active business twenty-five years ago, but still maintains relations with several financial and charitable institutions.

We have seen that our town was particularly favored in its ministers, such as *Hale*, *Blowers*, *Willard*, *McKean* and *Chipman*. The medical profession also was adorned with names whose lustre is yet undimmed. The minister and the doctor of early times exerted a greater influence than even the politician; in truth, he who attended to the spiritual welfare of the people, as well as he who ministered to their physical well being, was considered competent also to shape their political affairs.

The first school-master, *Mr. Hardie*, was also a dispenser of medicines, and succeeding him came the *Hales*, Robert and Robert, Jr., the latter already noticed. Robert Hale was son of the *Rev. John Hale*, born November, 1668, died 1719.

A *Dr. John Herrick* was here in 1721, and a resident physician was *Dr. Benj. Jones*, a native of Beverly in the second parish, who had an extensive practice, and died in 1778. He was distinguished for his active interest in public affairs and in the welfare of the community.

Dr. Timothy Clement, who married a daughter of Capt. William Dodge, had a promising practice, but died at an early age. His successor was *Dr. Israel Woodbury*, born 1734, died 1797, who resided on his ancestral estate, and whose life was a blessing to the parish. *Dr. Isaac Spofford*, who died 1786, at the early age of thirty-five, was skilled alike in his profession and in music, and was very popular. His gravestone in the old cemetery is conspicuous for its Latin inscriptions and Masonic emblems. *Dr. Larkin Thorndike*, another native of this town, who died at Norfolk, Va., also practiced here, and was appointed a surgeon in the navy under the administration of President Adams. *Dr. Tucker*, *Dr. Orne* and *Dr. Lakeman* (from Hamilton) all died without achieving the great distinction promised in early life.

A man of prominence was *Dr. Elisha Whitney*, born 1747, graduated at Harvard, 1766, who began practice in Ipswich. After several voyages as surgeon on board the privateers under Captains Hill and Giles, he returned to his profession, removing to Beverly in 1792, where he resided till his death, in 1807, beloved and highly respected.

Dr. Joshua Fisher, who was born in Dedham, 1749, and graduated at Harvard in 1766, came to Beverly in early manhood, after practising a while in Ipswich and Salem. Like Dr. Whitney, he sailed as surgeon in a privateer, but was unfortunate in his maritime experiences, the vessel being driven ashore in the



Abiel Abbot

British Channel, and he with difficulty avoiding capture. Escaping from England to France, after a number of dangerous adventures, he embarked in another privateer for America, which he ultimately reached. He was interested in that first cotton factory in 1788, and his public spirit always led him into similar enterprises for the good of the people. Through his great talent and active pursuit of his profession, he amassed a large fortune, much of which he expended in charitable works. He endowed the Fisher Professorship of Natural History at Harvard, with twenty thousand dollars, and founded the Beverly Charitable Society, now known as the Fisher Charitable Society, which has been so beneficial in ameliorating the condition of the poor.

Of the donation to this society one hundred dollars was to be set aside to accumulate for one hundred years, as an available fund at the expiration of that period. Dr. Fisher died in 1835, aged eighty-four.

From this brief biographical excursion, let us return to the narration of events. It is a matter of regret that we cannot much more than enumerate the names of those departed worthies, whose many virtues adorn the age in which they lived. The best lessons of history are to be drawn from the lives of great and good men and women, who worked with singleness of purpose and high aims for the advancement of their fellows. Many such—though, from the limitations of their environment, unknown to the world at large—we find living in the pages of our local history. Their lives shine with devotion to principle and religion; they had faith in their God, their country and the home of their adoption; and the torch they lighted at the fires of their primitive hearth-stones they have handed down to us, their descendants.

The Mother Churches.—As two new churches were founded in the opening years of this century, and important changes took place in the first and second parishes, at this point it would seem fitting to take a survey of some matters ecclesiastical.

What was the origin of the First Church, has been shown; that its growth was identical with that of the town, and their affairs inseparably interwoven. Its first ministers and officers were the leaders of the community, as the church, indeed, formed the nucleus of the town.

Its ministers, mentioned in order, were: Hale, Blowers, Champney, Willard, McKean, up to the close of the eighteenth century, when the last-named was called to the presidency of Bowdoin College, and was succeeded, Dec. 13, 1803, by the Rev. Abiel Abbott.

The following biographical sketch of Dr. Abbott was prepared by the Rev. Dr. A. P. Peabody, a life-long friend of the family, and is entitled to the reader's thoughtful attention:

"Abiel Abbott, the youngest son of John and Abigail Abbott, was born at Andover, August 17, 1771. Two elder brothers—John, professor of ancient languages at Bowdoin College, and Benjamin, the so widely-known, revered and beloved principal of Phillips' Exeter Academy—had already graduated at Harvard. Abiel was the pupil of Dr. Pemberton, at Phillips' Academy, in Andover, whence he entered college, graduating the second scholar in his class, in 1792. He maintained ever afterwards a close connection with the college, where he was held in high regard, as was evinced in his appointment as Phi Beta Kappa orator in 1800, his being invited to deliver the Dudleian Lecture in 1819 and his receiving the degree of Doctor of Divinity in 1821. On graduating he returned to Andover and became assistant teacher, afterwards principal of the academy, at the same time pursuing the study of theology under the direction of his pastor, Rev. Jonathan French. In 1795 he was ordained as minister of the First Church in Haverhill. In the following year he married Eunice, daughter of Ebenezer Wales, of Dorchester. His ministry at Haverhill was eminently successful. Its precious memory long survived him, and was lovingly recalled by old people who had him for their pastor in their childhood or youth. But his salary was inadequate to the support of his family and he was, therefore, and for that sole reason, compelled to resign his charge.

On his release from his engagement at Haverhill, Mr. Abbott's services were eagerly sought by several vacant parishes. He preached with great acceptance at the Brattle Square Church, in Boston, and, anticipating the probability of his being invited to its pastorate, the First Church in Beverly chose him as its minister, voting him as salary the stipend which (with the addition, however, of a parsonage-house and fuel for its fires, and the education of his sons) would have been offered him in Boston.

This salary throughout his lifetime was larger than was paid by any parish in Massachusetts, except in Boston. The Beverly parish was and continued to be, during his entire ministry, very large, embracing a population at the outset of twenty-three hundred, and never less than fifteen hundred. The town was then the fourth in the State, in point of wealth, with a better harbor than that of Salem, with a great deal of foreign commerce as well as with a large amount of capital lucratively invested in the fisheries. It was the residence of several merchants of distinction, who afterwards removed to Boston, and whose ships sailed thence and brought thither their return cargoes. It was also the home of several professional men of the highest eminence, as Nathan Dane and Joshua Fisher, and the parish comprised many families of wealth and culture. Hence, in a worldly point of view, the place was especially desirable, while its pulpit had been filled by men of superior ability and merit, his two nearest predecessors having been called to the presidency—one of Harvard, the other of Bowdoin College. Such a pastorate made great demands on its incumbent, and in this case they were more than fully met.

No ministry can ever have been more prosperous than Dr. Abbott's, in the full attendance on its services, in the undivided respect and affection of the people, and in the tokens of religious interest and spiritual edification. By those who knew Dr. Abbott best it has been often said that they never knew his like, or, for his peculiar life-work, his equal. His personal endowments were of a rare order. His countenance bore the impress of his character, at once grave and gracious, commanding and winning, with a benignity whose attractions none could resist, yet with a dignity which would keep a flippant tongue in silence. His manners were those of a born gentleman, who could not be otherwise than courteous, meek, considerate and kind. His conversational power was almost unique. In whatever society he might be, without assuming the leadership, he could not bear other than the chief part, and those who were else the most ready to talk, in his presence subsided into greedy listeners. He was unsurpassed in vivid and picturesque description and narrative, and he possessed the rare and precious art of giving religious admonition, counsel or consolation, without seeming to give it—of virtually preaching the gospel without unseasonably interlarding his conversation with conventionally sacred names and phrases, so that all that he meant to say reached the inward ear, only after, sometimes long after, his voice had died upon the outward ear. When Monroe, as President of the United States, was making his northern tour, he breakfasted with Israel Thorndike, and Dr. Abbott was one of the guests. Some time afterward the President said to a visitor that the best talker that he ever heard was a clergyman who breakfasted with him at Mr. Thorndike's. While Dr. Abbott thus adorned the choicest society, he made himself none the less welcome in the poorest homes, and with persons of the lowest standard of intelligence and culture. Without the wretched farce of condescension, he so identified himself with all the people under his charge that he felt, and therefore always seemed, at his ease among them, as belonging with them, and they had no experience of restraint or awkwardness as with one who stooped to them from a loftier plane than theirs. He was the most assiduous of pastors. Of course, in so large a parish he would not be a frequent visitor in every house, yet there was not a family in his flock which he did not know intimately, and in which there was not a corresponding sense of intimacy with him; nor was there a child whom he did not know, or who was not made the happier by meeting him and having his unfailing smile and kind word of recognition. A large part of his time was devoted to the sick, infirm and afflicted, who received his most tender ministries and always felt that he came to them in their need and sorrow as a messenger of divine support and comfort. Nor was he less mindful of the poor, and while generous to them to the utmost of his means, he knew how to stimulate and direct the charity of those who had ability and leisure for the work of Christian love.

Dr. Abbott was, in an important sense, the minister of the town, no less than of his own parish. There was no public occasion on which he did not officiate, nor any public enterprise that tended to improvement or progress in which he did not bear a foremost part. For many years he was chairman of the school committee, and his reading of his annual report was among the first items of business at the annual town-meeting, which he always opened with an impressive prayer. He presided at the school examinations, and the pupils listened eagerly on those occasions to the closing address which he always gave.

In the pulpit Dr. Abbott's manner was impressive to the last degree. He was never impassioned, and never cold; but there was a calm, equable fervor, indicating a full flow of devout feeling, without ebb or ripple, sustaining the unflagging attention of the audience, and adapted to make the entire service to the serious hearer, as it manifestly was to the preacher, a continuous act of devotion. His voice was clear, strong and flexible, and his utterance was perfectly natural, with no pulpit tone, but as it might have been in conversation on solemn themes. Nature shaped him for an orator, and he remained unspoiled by art. What he should say seemed his sole concern; his unstudied saying of it could have been only made worse by the attempt to make it better. His sermons were scriptural, evangelical, in the true sense of the word, in a style elegant without being ornate, sufficiently simple for the receptivity of any person of ordinary intelligence, yet so thoughtful as to command the close attention and strong interest of those of the most advanced culture. They were remarkable for so strict an appropriateness to time and space that many of the best of them could have been preached elsewhere or at a later time only with large omissions or changes. No phase of the passing day, or occasion of public interest, or striking event in the larger or smaller circle, was suffered to pass without being made to yield up its fitting lessons of truth or duty. His sermons for the Sunday service were always carefully written, and such of them as admitted of it, especially his frequent expository sermons, bore the tokens of extended reading and faithful study. He had at the same time a great facility of extempore utterance, or rather, of thorough preparation without writing; and some of his most appreciative hearers thought that he appeared at his very best in the unwritten discourses, sometimes in series lasting through several weeks or months, which he was wont to deliver in a chapel erected expressly for evening services.

Dr. Abbott's devotional services had an indelible and cherished place in the memory of all who listened to them. They were not preaching prayers, but composed wholly of simple and lofty forms of praise and supplication. It was the custom in his church, as in

the New England churches generally, to send in 'notes,' requesting public prayer, or thanksgiving, in case of bereavement, severe illness, or recovery therefrom, the birth of a child, being 'bound to sea,' or return from a voyage.

Dr. Abbott, without ever compromising the dignity of the service, or entering into details unfit for the sanctuary, would so make reference to every individual case, that he would seem to bear heavenward and to lay upon the heavenly altar the burden or joy of each soul in a form denuded of all earthliness, and fully fit to be heard on high. The children of the parish enjoyed his special care. The old institution of 'catechizing' was with him a matter, not of form, but of deep concern, and he made it such a service that no child was ever willingly absent from it. He not unfrequently addressed the children on Sundays, and sometimes had special services for them in the chapel, while they learned very early to listen to his sermons, and many a dull child who carried home no meagre report of one of his discourses, would command neither attention nor memory when any one else filled the pulpit.

The earliest Sunday-school in New England, if not in the United States, was opened in 1810, by two ladies of his church, after the example and method of Robert Raikes. This school, which had, from the outset, their pastor's approval and furtherance, was never discontinued, but was, after a few years, removed to the church, and was the nucleus of a still flourishing Sunday-school, subsidized by a considerable fund, the legacy of one of its superintendents, who was trained under Dr. Abbott's nurture and influence.

Dr. Abbott added to his distinctively professional gifts that of superior musical taste and talent. He had the best voice in the congregation. The old church had no space in which an organ could be erected till it was remodelled after his death, and whenever the chorister was absent, Dr. Abbott led the singing from the pulpit, as he did at the communion service, at the monthly ante-communion lecture, and at the chapel. Dr. Abbott was a Unitarian, of the type commonly, though incorrectly denoted under the name of Arian. But while he explicitly declared and defended his own opinions in the pulpit, he was indisposed to controversy, sought peace among the churches, was at many points in close sympathy with clergymen of a different creed, and was associated with not a few of them in intimate friendship and in the interchange of professional services.

When the disruption of the Congregational body took place, probably no member of that body had so much reason to regret it as he had, nor was there any one with whom his friends of the opposite party were so sorry to part fellowship. In his family and in all the relations and intercourse of society Dr. Abbott, by his sweetness, gentleness, unselfishness of spirit, was constantly diffusing happiness, and in his cheerful, sunny temperament received largely of the happiness which he gave. His home was rich in all that can make life beautiful, and that can render the Christian household at once a centre of refining and beautifying ministries and influences for this world, and a training school for heaven.

In 1818 Dr. Abbott's health had become so far impaired by incessant labor as to make a rest and change of scene desirable, and he spent the winter in South Carolina and Georgia. He performed the return journey alone, in a sulky, driving through regions where he was warned of serious danger from the savageness of the poor whites; but all along his way making friends and receiving civilities and kindnesses.

In 1827 he was again an invalid, and spent the winter principally in Cuba. He seemed in the spring entirely restored, but on his passage homeward, in the harbor of New York, he was seized with a sudden and profuse hemorrhage from the lungs, which proved almost instantly fatal, leaving him but a few moments for some last directions as to his worldly affairs, and for the expression of his cheerful readiness to depart in the full assurance of a blessed immortality. His death occurred on the 7th of June, 1828.

Dr. Abbott published a considerable number of sermons and other pamphlets. The only volume that he gave to the press was of 'Sermons to Seamen,' which in its time was highly prized, especially by shipmasters and sailors.

After his death his 'Letters from Cuba,' a charming record of travel and sojourn in an island then little known at the North, were edited, with a memoir of the author, by his friend, Judge Story.

A volume of his sermons, edited with a memoir, by his son-in-law, Rev. Stevens Everett, was also published.

Dr. Abbott's excellent wife survived him only two years. Of his nine children there remain: Emily, widow of Rev. Stevens Everett, now resident at Cambridge, Anne Wales, a member of her sister's family and Rev. William Ebenezer Abbott, formerly pastor of the First Church in Billerica, now living in the Dorchester district of Boston."

Dr. Abbott was everywhere welcomed in the town, and his good offices as peacemaker were often sought. He had one parishioner who frequently quarreled with his wife, and who, disregarding the figurative meaning of his pastor's advice, to "throw water on the fire," obeyed it literally, drenching his wife with a full bucket, the next time she scolded.

When the good parson chided him, telling him the woman was the weaker vessel, and should be cherished, he retorted: "The weaker vessel, is she; then, blast her, let her carry less sail!"

A gradual divergence from the tenets of the original church took place during Dr. Abbott's ministry, and his successor, the Rev. Christopher T. Thayer, was settled over the first parish as a Unitarian, by a vote of two to one, January 27, 1830. Mr. Thayer, though

coming to Beverly from Lancaster, was a descendant of Andrew Elliot, our first town clerk. He was a graduate of Harvard (1824), always interested in the welfare of the town during his pastorate, and the author of a valuable contribution to its history—a "Bi-Centennial Address," on the two hundredth anniversary of the formation of the First Church. He retired in 1859, followed by the best wishes of all his townspeople, and passed his remaining days in Boston, where he died June 23, 1880, at his residence on Beacon Street, and was buried in Mount Auburn Cemetery. Mr. Thayer served as chairman of the School Committee many years, and at his death left a legacy of five thousand dollars to the church.

He was succeeded by the Rev. John C. Kimball, a native of Ipswich, and graduate of Cambridge Theological School, the period of whose pastorate was eleven years, and who has since preached in Oregon, Newport, R. I. and Hartford, Conn.

In 1872 (March 7), Rev. Ellery Channing Butler was settled over this church, the ninth in the line of distinguished ministers, beginning with Rev. John Hale. Mr. Butler was born in Otego, N. Y., and is a graduate of Meadville College, Pa. Under him the parish continues in a prosperous condition, the present congregation numbering two hundred and eighty families.

The First Meeting-house.—The first house of worship was erected as early as 1656, a rude structure, which answered the needs of the people until 1682, when a new building was raised, fifty by forty feet, which stood on the site of the present church. It was used as a town-house also, and as no fires were allowed in the meeting-houses of those days, it was considered the safest depository for the town ammunition, a powder-room in it having been built in 1727.

In 1770 a third meeting-house was erected, on the site of the second, and is at present standing, having been enlarged in 1785, remodeled in 1835 and again some twenty years ago.

Its first bell was brought by Capt. Lothrop, from Port Royal, in 1656; this was replaced by another in 1685, by yet a third in 1712, the gift of Robert Briscoe, and, by the fourth one, which remains, in 1803, from the foundry of Paul Revere & Son.

The first town clock was obtained in 1796, and has done good service for ninety years. The first parish meeting-house, the "Old South," is one of the landmarks of the town, and around it cluster associations that should never be dispelled. From its bell-tower, these many years, have rung the noon-day hour and the vesper peals, proclaiming the hour of nine and warning the youth of generation after generation of the time for retiring.

The venerable sextons of the church have been, at times, reckoned as personages of almost as much importance as the ministers themselves. The first to be mentioned (1665), is Goodman Bailey, who received for his services a peck of corn annually from each householder; and to the emoluments of this office, in 1680, succeeded Goodman Hoar, during whose term the nine o'clock bell was introduced. An important service of these early sextons was the turning of the hour-glass, as a gentle reminder to the minister that time was fleeting. In 1748 Josiah Woodbury held the office, remaining its incumbent for forty-one years, when he died. Wells Standley came next, in 1790, dying in office 1797, in which year Joshua Wallis fell dead while ringing the bell, and was succeeded by Thomas Barrett. This faithful servitor held the position from June, 1797, to 1844, the year he died. Ezra Woodbury was appointed his colleague, in 1842, and for over thirty years attended to the various duties, dying in January, 1876.

The first meeting-house of the Second Parish was erected 1713, with a turret, but no steeple or bell. The Rev. Mr. Chipman was ordained 1715, and January 11, 1716, the church held its first meeting. As a special mark of honor, in 1759, Lieut. Henry Herrick was invited, when he attended worship there, to "take the second seat on the floor before the pulpit." In 1771 Mr. Enos Hitchcock was settled to succeed Mr. Chipman, who died in 1775, and was buried in the old cemetery of the parish.

In 1787 Mr. Daniel Oliver accepted a settlement here, but resigned in 1797, dying in Roxbury in 1840, at the age of eighty-nine. Mr. Moses Dow, of Atkinson, N. H., was the next minister, called here in October, 1800, ordained March, 1801, resigned 1818.

The Rev. Humphrey C. Perley was settled here in 1818, leaving in June, 1821, and in 1823 Mr. Ebenezer Poor, who retired in March, 1827.

The Rev. Ebenezer Robinson succeeded Mr. Poor, in October, 1830, but was dismissed in January, 1833. Rev. Edwin M. Stone was pastor for thirteen years succeeding. Rev. Mr. Stone is the author of the excellent "History of Beverly," published in 1842, a book of reference to which all writers on the subject must turn for exact information. Mr. Stone's pastorate began March 21, 1834, and ended in 1847. For a period of nearly twenty years, there was no settled minister here, and the church dwindled to less than a score of members. At the end of this time its history was joined to that of the Fourth Congregational, in a curious manner. This latter was organized 1834, and the Rev. John Foote installed as first minister, 1836; who was succeeded by Rev. Allen Gannet, installed December 15, 1847, and dismissed April 26, 1853.

He was succeeded by J. W. Lounsbury, and he by Eli W. Harrington, in 1860. Rev. Mr. Harrington continued pastor until 1866, when the Fourth Congregational was merged in the Second, taking the name of the "Second Congregational Church." Rev. Mr. Harrington continued to reside here till 1884, though with no pastoral charge, active in educational work, when he removed to another town. In 1865 the church celebrated its one hundred and fiftieth anniversary by a re-dedication, and began its worship in

May, 1866, with Rev. Chas. S. Porter officiating. This, the Second Congregational, continues to occupy its original church, though the building has several times been altered and improved.

Rev. Robert Southgate succeeded Mr. Porter, and he was followed by Rev. Wm. Phipps in 1869, Rev. T. D. P. Stone in 1870, the Rev. Alexander J. Sessions, installed as acting pastor, in 1872, and, since 1876, various preachers have occupied the pulpit, it being filled, at present, by Rev. William Merrill. The church now numbers thirty-five persons, the parish twenty, with one hundred in the Sunday-school. The locality of the Second Parish (or North Beverly) is a historic one, with its old house, the parsonage of John Chipman (the first minister) erected 1715, still standing in good preservation, and the old cemetery with its ancient head-stones.

1801.—*March 25th*, the First Baptist Church of Beverly was organized, and a meeting-house erected the same year, on Cabot Street, nearly opposite Elliot, with the Rev. Joshua Young as pastor. He departed in 1802, and in 1803, in June, he was succeeded by Rev. Elisha S. Williams, a graduate of Yale College, who ministered until 1812, when he resigned. In early life, Mr. Williams had served under Washington, on Long Island; in his later years he returned to Beverly, and died here in 1845, at the home of Mrs. Samuel S. Ober, his daughter, at the age of eighty-seven years, four months.

In 1814, the Rev. Harvey Jenks, of Hudson, N. Y., was called to the society, but died before settlement; and the next pastor ordained was Rev. Nathaniel W. Williams, of Salem, whose ministry extended from 1816–24, when he resigned; in 1836 he accepted another call to the church and continued till 1840. His successor, in 1825, was Rev. Francis G. Macomber, a graduate of Waterville College, who suddenly expired July 1, 1827, and there was again no settled pastor until 1830. Then the Rev. Jonathan Aldrich was ordained and served till 1833, during which time twenty-six members of the church were dismissed, to form a new society at Wenham. 1834, September 10th, the Rev. John Jennings was ordained and continued two years, followed by Rev. Nathaniel W. Williams a second time, from 1836–40. On November 11th, this year, Rev. Charles W. Flanders, a graduate of Brown University, was ordained. He remained ten years, but in 1850 resigned his pastorate here and afterwards occupied pulpits at Concord, N. H., Westboro', Mass., and Kennebunkport, Me. Finally returning to Beverly, he built here a home, doing occasional ministerial work, especially at the Farms, in the Second Baptist, and expired here August 2, 1875, at the age of sixty-eight.

In 1852 the Rev. Edwin B. Eddy was ordained, resigning three years later, and in the year following, August 7, 1856, Rev. Joseph C. Foster was settled over the church.

During Mr. Foster's pastorate of sixteen years, which was a highly successful and memorable one, the beautiful church was erected, now occupied by the society, at the corner of Abbot and Cabot Streets.

In 1837 the original church building had been taken down and a new one erected in a more eligible locality on the same street. This was several times enlarged and improved, and a chapel built, but the needs of the society demanded better accommodations, hence the spacious structure now in use. It is the finest house of worship in the town, cost forty-five thousand dollars, and its handsome spire is one hundred and sixty-two feet in height.

It was built by a member of the society, master-builder John Meacom, who also rebuilt the older structure in 1854, and who has followed his honorable calling here for nearly sixty years.

Mr. Foster resigned in 1872, and was succeeded, for one year, by Rev. E. B. Andrews, late president of Denison University, Ohio, and now professor in Brown University, Providence, R. I. The present pastor, Rev. D. P. Morgan, gallantly served (as did Mr. Andrews) in the Union army in the War of the Rebellion.

1802.—The most important offshoot of the First Church was the Third Congregational, subsequently called and now known as the Dane Street Society. The church was organized November 9, 1802, incorporated March 7, 1803, present name adopted in 1837. Their first meeting-house was raised in 1802, finished in December, 1803, and dedicated by the Rev. Samuel Worcester, of Salem. This building was altered and improved in 1831, but destroyed by fire in December, 1832. In 1833 the present commodious building was erected, since, from time to time, enlarged and beautified in accordance with the demands of the times.

The first minister was Rev. Joseph Emerson, born in Hollis, N. H., October 13, 1777, a graduate of Harvard, a teacher and preacher in several places prior to his ordination here, September 21, 1803. After thirteen successful years he resigned, his health demanding a cessation of labor for awhile, and for some time was engaged in educational work, occasionally preaching in various places. He established a literary seminary in Byfield, removing thence to Saugus, and later to Weathersfield, Conn., where he died May 13, 1833. To Beverly, where he was highly honored and esteemed, he frequently returned, delivering here several courses of historical lectures, and writing a memoir of Miss Fanny Woodbury, a missionary from this town.

His successor was the Rev. David Oliphant, installed February 18, 1818, and dismissed, by mutual council, 1833, after a long period of profitable labor. He died in St. Louis, Mo., in 1871. October 13, 1834, the Rev. Joseph Abbot was ordained, an occasion which witnessed also the dedication of the present house of worship. After a pastorate of thirty years, during which his serene and beautiful life was ever a beneficent presence to his people and the com-

munity, this beloved minister was dismissed in December, 1865. He was removed by death April 10, 1867, at the age of fifty-eight years, eight months. Mr. Abbot was born in Philadelphia August 16, 1808, and graduated from Union College, N. Y. In early life he studied medicine with Dr. McClellan, father of Gen. George B. McClellan, but became convinced that the ministry should be his calling, and pursued his theological studies at Andover. He early became aware that he was subject to disease of the heart, and considered himself in the light of a "minute man," liable to call at any moment. This consciousness served to restrict his labors somewhat, and gave to his aspect that repose and serenity which were his characteristics.

Of marked piety (says an obituary), of ripe and rare scholarship and culture, of a peculiarly social, amiable and genial nature, his companionship was a benediction at all times, and our community have been favored indeed in enjoying so much of the blessing of his well-spent life and labors. Able as a writer, and instructive and discriminating as a preacher, yet he published but little, although there were but few if any of his finished productions that would not have well stood the test of severe criticism. Feeling a deep interest in the cause of education, he aided many in travelling those cherished walks of literature in which he was so much at home, doing public service also as chairman, and for about a quarter of a century as member, of our school committee. He was, said his friend, Rev. J. C. Foster, a *true man*. "To this, his whole life was a beautiful testimony. He was genuine and sincere, and his artlessness and truthfulness were uncommonly prominent. He was as unselfish as unpretentious, and he shrank instinctively from publicity. He did not appreciate his own claims to be ranked high among the strong men in the ministry, and his remarkably unobtrusive spirit would not allow him to gain the reputation abroad which he could have easily sustained with his superior abilities."

"Death did not take him by surprise; but he had been looking for the event which at length came unnoticed by him in its actual coming, permitted as he was 'to wake up in glory' from the peaceful slumber of the midnight hour."

It was with difficulty—so attached to their life-long teacher had become his parishioners—that an acceptable successor was found.

In 1866 (February 15th) Rev. Eugene H. Titus was ordained, but dismissed, after an active pastorate, June 16, 1867. He died in Georgetown, Mass., July, 1876.

He was succeeded by Rev. Orpheus T. Lanphear, who was installed October 23, 1867. Dr. Lanphear was dismissed June 3, 1880, but fixed his residence in Beverly, in whose prosperity he has always taken a lively interest. In 1881 (July 7th) Rev. Samuel W. Eddy, a graduate of Union College, N. Y., was ordained, but dismissed April 8, 1887, on account of ill health, to the great regret not only of his own parishioners, but the entire community as well.

The Dane Street Society now numbers about nine hundred and fifty, with three hundred and forty-one in the church, and has a large and constantly increasing membership in its Sunday school. Its oldest living member is Mrs. Adeline, the widow of Rev. Francis Norwood, who united with the church in 1826.

CIVIL HISTORY CONTINUED.

1802.—Having thus outlined the history of the four oldest churches in Beverly, and prepared the way for mention of the others in sequence, attention will now be given again to civil affairs. The Beverly Bank, one of the most important of the town, was incorporated 1802, with capital at $160,000, reduced in 1815 to $100,000, but increased in 1836 to $125,000. Under successive charters it has continued in corporate capacity to the present time, becoming the Beverly National Bank in 1865, with a charter for twenty years, renewed for twenty more in 1885, with a capital of $200,000. Its first president was Israel Thorndike, succeeded by Moses Brown, Joshua Fisher, William Leach, Pyam Lovett, Albert Thorndike, Samuel Endicott and John Picket, names, all of them, synonyms for integrity, and identified with the town's highest interests.

In the course of its long existence, eighty-five years, it has had but three cashiers: Josiah Gould, Albert Thorndike and Robert G. Bennett. Mr. Bennett succeeded Mr. Thorndike, when the latter was elected president, in 1844, and held this position of trust during forty-one years, when he was chosen treasurer of the Savings' Bank. The present cashier, Mr. Augustus Stevens, was connected with the bank thirty-one years, as teller, when he succeeded Mr. Bennett as cashier.

The bank, for a long time, occupied a portion of the brick building at the corner of Cabot and Central Streets, built by John Cabot in the latter year of the last century, and now owned and occupied by Edward Burley. It was, for a period, located in the Masonic building, but in 1885 entered into the beautiful edifice, corner of Cabot and Thorndike Streets, which it now occupies conjointly with the Beverly Savings' Bank, which built it. This latter institution was chartered in 1867, and has deposits to the amount of about a million dollars. Its president is William Endicott, who has held this position since 1867, as also has its treasurer, R. G. Bennett. The bank building, erected in 1885, at a cost of twenty-five thousand dollars, is in the Queen Anne and Colonial style of architecture, of brick, with trimmings of freestone and is considered one of the finest and most complete of its kind in the country. It occupies the site of the former residence of Albert Thorndike (long time cashier and president of the old bank), a house built above one hundred years ago,

and once the home of Joshua Fisher, the third president.

1802.—January 20, a Social Library was started, by subscription, with thirty-two shares at five dollars each, the money raised being invested in valuable books. These were selected by Joshua Fisher, Nathan Dane, Thomas Davis and Rev. Mr. McKean, and the collection steadily augmented by purchase and donation, amounted in 1842 to one thousand volumes. Other libraries, later established, were those of the Mechanics' Association and the "School District." In 1851 the Legislature authorized towns to establish public libraries, and that year John I. Baker introduced a petition for an appropriation in the town-meeting, by which one hundred dollars was voted. It was also voted that the library be located in the Social Library room of the town hall. The first library was in the Briscoe Hall.

Each succeeding year the town appropriated one hundred dollars more towards the library, until 1860, when the amount was increased to five hundred dollars, and since 1870 to one thousand dollars, at which figure it now stands. When the question was first discussed, some of our best citizens raised two thousand five hundred dollars by subscription; donations were later made, and the interest in the subject has increased to the present day.

The first trustees, who were also active in securing the subscriptions (aided by several ladies), were: Dr. Chas. Haddock, Wm. Endicott, Jr., Chas. W. Galloupe, Benj. O. Peirce, Richard P. Waters. The present trustees are: Wm. C. Boyden, president; Franklin Leach, secretary; Joseph D. Tuck, treasurer; Edward Giddings and Wm. R. Driver. A new trustee is elected each year; Mr. Tuck has been re-elected for nearly thirty years, and Mr. Leach twenty-five. Under the intelligent supervision of its trustees the library has prospered exceedingly, containing to-day over ten thousand volumes and proving itself a necessity to all, only limited in its beneficent work by the scantiness of the appropriations. It is open to the public every week day afternoon, and Saturday evenings.

1806.—Miss Elizabeth Champney, daughter of the third pastor of the First Church, and for many years a successful teacher, died, April 23d, aged sixty-six.

1807.—The Beverly Charitable Society (already mentioned), was incorporated. The town was called to lament the death of Dr. Elisha Whitney. The sons of Dr. Whitney became world-famous as merchants and ship owners, and his descendants to-day maintain in Beverly the honorable name of their distinguished ancestor.

An old soldier, in the person of Capt. George Raymond, died this year, aged ninety-nine years, having been born December 21, 1707. He was in the expedition to Cape Breton, and in 1770, as appears by the records, was moderator of a town-meeting assembled for the purpose of condemning the use of tea by patriots.

1808.—Joseph Wood, who died this year, at the age of sixty-eight, was a survivor of the Committee of Correspondence during the Revolution, in 1778 a member of the convention for ratifying the United States Constitution and from 1771 to the day of his death held the office of town clerk, discharging every public duty with conspicuous fidelity.

1809.—The Beverly Marine Insurance Company was chartered, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars. Its rooms were in the building then occupied by the bank.

1809.—*December* 10, Josiah Batchelder, jr., expired, aged seventy-three. From his tombstone standing in the Second Cemetery, we learn that, "The whole assemblage of associate virtues, which so superlatively exalt the Christian and endear him to society, his friends and his God, conspired to portray in the liveliest colors the character to whose memory this stone is sacred."

A curious official paper is preserved by one of our citizens, as follows:

"To Josiah Batchelder jr., Esqr. one of the Justices assigned to keep the Peace in and for the County of Essex.—Ebenezer Woodbury, of Beverly, gentleman, in the county aforesaid, on oath informs the said Justice, that on the first day of February, instant, and on divers other days, in the night time, the following Goods, viz: five pecks of Indian Corn. & one canvas bag, two bushels & one half Bushel of meal, and two Bags (one of said bags being of plain coarse Cloth and marked J. R.) all which were stolen and carried away from the Grist Mill then in the care & occupation of the said Ebenezer Woodbury—the first mentioned corn and bag the property of Benj[a] Butman; 5 pecks of the meal & the bag, marked E W., is the property of Elizabeth Woodbury, widow; & 5 pecks of the meal and the bag mark'd J. R. was the property of Joseph Rea of s'd Beverly, Gentleman,—of the value of twenty-four shillings & nine pence, the property of the said Benj[a] Butman Eliz[a] Woodbury & J. Ray—were feloniously stolen, taken and carried away from the Grist Mill of the said Ebenezer, & others, now in the occupation of s'd Eben'r at Beverly, as aforesaid, and that they, and he, hath probable cause to suspect, and doth suspect, that one JUPITER BUNN, of Beverly, in the county of Essex, labourer, did steal, take, and carry away, the same goods, as aforesaid, and prays that he, the said Jupiter Bunn, may be apprehended, and held to answer to this complaint, and further dealt with, relative to the same, according to law; and the said Eben'r saith that he hath cause to suspect, and doth suspect, that the aforesaid corn, meal, etc., are secreted in the dwelling-house of one Anthoney, and prays for a Warrant to search there for the same."

"Received and sworn to on the seventeenth day of February, A.D. 1794, before me, JOSI. BATCHELDER, JR.,
Justice of the Peace."

And the sheriff of said County of Essex is instructed, forthwith to apprehend said Jupiter Bunn, and bring him before said Josi Batchelder; from which it is inferred that said Bunn *was* apprehended, and had good cause to repent his misdeed.

There are some grounds for believing that Jupiter Bunn was not the guilty party, since he was at one time a trusted servant in one of the first families of Beverly. In the possession of Miss Hannah Rantoul is an antique chair, which once belonged to the family referred to, and which was always called "Jupiter's chair," because this individual always insisted upon occupying it, refusing to sit in any other.

In January, 1852, there died here a native of Africa named Phyllis Cave, aged ninety, who was the sister of Jupiter Bunn. She is remembered as a faithful

and devoted servant, by Mr. Rantoul, in his "Reminiscences," who states that she, when a child, was sold to a Mr. Cave, of Middleton, who paid for her in iron, and took her in his chaise from Salem to Middleton.

She came to this town about the beginning of the Revolutionary war, and maintained herself by labor. "She resided upon that portion of the old Gloucester road, now traversed by the railroad, between Pride's Crossing and West's Beach, and habitually, within a few years of her death, walked by starlight from this point to the town, some four miles distant, whenever she had a day's work to perform, that she might be ready to begin her labors with the sun."

1810.—THE EARLIEST SUNDAY-SCHOOL IN NEW ENGLAND.—At the close of the Revolutionary war, that sturdy privateersman and patriot, Captain Hugh Hill, then in the employ of Messrs. John and Andrew Cabot, sailed for Ireland, with the intention of bringing to Beverly his brother James and family. On the return voyage to Philadelphia, on board the ship "Rambler," in the Delaware River, Hannah Hill was born, September 17th, 1784. And this daughter of James and Elizabeth Hill, in connection with Miss Joanna B. Prince, established, in the year 1810, the first Sunday-school in America, for the religious instruction of the young. Misses Hill and Prince both taught private schools during the week, and in the summer of 1810, they gathered a company of about thirty neglected children, who were accustomed to play about the wharves on the Sabbath, in a chamber of Miss Prince's house, corner of Davis and Front streets, and taught them that knowledge which is beyond all price. This later grew into a school for children of all families. Miss Hill is described by a person who knew her as a woman of great originality, intellectual and scholarly, possessing a lively interest in children. It was said by Dr. Peabody, at the fiftieth anniversary of the school, that he was a pupil in her class in Sunday-school for several years, and that later in life, at her earnest solicitation, he gave her lessons in Greek, so that she had the satisfaction of reading the New Testament in the very language in which it was written. Miss Hill continued her connection with Sunday school work until her death, which occurred in 1838, at the age of fifty-three years. She lies in the Dane Street Cemetery, where her grave-stone may still be seen.

Miss Joanna B. Prince was born in Castine, Me., February 23, 1789, and removed to Beverly, the native home of her mother, with her parents during her childhood. She was a person of entirely different temperament from Miss Hill, but like her, delighted in doing good. In 1819 she married Ebenezer Everett, and removed to Brunswick, Me., where she died, September 5, 1859. Her son, Professor C. Carrol Everett, is now Dean of Harvard Divinity School.

The school, after its formation, was removed to the house of Colonel Abraham Edwards, thence to the brick school-house in the south district, the Dane Street Chapel, the Briscoe School-house, and finally, about 1819, to the First Parish Church. It is probable, says Robert R. Endicott, (from whose report as superintendent of this school in 1885, this account is mainly taken), that the children who attended the school at the start had no church connection, but as the school widened its sphere and increased its numbers it embraced scholars and teachers from the various parishes in town. In the year 1819, the Dane Street and the First Baptist societies organized parish schools, and from that time to the present the various societies have formed schools under their own organizations.

On the 4th of July, 1842, a union celebration was held on the Town-Hall square, 1,123 scholars and teachers being present; and in 1860 occurred the Fiftieth Anniversary, with large floral processions, music, a collation on the common, under a mammoth tent, and addresses by distinguished speakers. The Eightieth Anniversary, doubtless, will find within the limits of the United States, 100,000 Sunday-schools, 10,000,000 scholars, and a million teachers.

1812.—The manufacture of Britannia ware was begun here, the first in America, by Israel Trask.

Throughout the years 1809, '10, '12 and '14, the citizens of Beverly entered frequent and eloquent protests against the embargo, and restrictive laws of that period, which eventually (as they had foreseen) destroyed the commerce it had taken a hundred years of self-sacrifice to found and maintain.

In the petition of 1812, it is stated: "They find themselves totally deprived of their commerce, coasting-trade and fisheries, even in their own bays and harbors within the State, by the restrictive laws of the Union, and another embargo, which, for severity and oppression, is without precedent."

But, though finding themselves plunged into a conflict they could not conscientiously approve, they yet contributed soldiers for the manning of the ancient breastworks and sailors for service by sea.

The surviving sailors, some of them, can be remembered by the present generation, the last having passed away within the past decade.

Under act of Congress, March 9, 1878, pensions were granted to those who had served in the war of 1812; and in June, 1879, the venerable Stephens Baker wrote an account of the militia and the pensioners, from which the following is an extract: In this town, the first coast guard consisted of a sergeant's guard of fifteen men, with a sergeant and two musicians. The place of meeting was in front of the First Parish meeting-house. On the alarm being given, their location was at Hospital Point.

There were three companies of militia in the time of the war, in which were enrolled some three hundred and fifty men. The North Beverly Company was commanded by Abraham Lord, with Israel Trask, second lieutenant; the Cove and Farms Company by

Aaron Foster, with Jona. Foster, lieutenant. The company in the centre of the town, in which were nearly half of all the men enrolled, was commanded by Capt. Nathaniel Lamson, John Davis, lieutenant; James Hill, ensign, Isaac Gallop, Jonathan Stickney, Thomas Farris and Stephens Baker, sergeants, with the latter recording clerk. Ebenezer Trask and Robert Cary were the musicians. This company attended a regimental muster in Danvers numbering one hundred and sixty-five muskets, three commissioned officers, four sergeants, four corporals and two musicians.

They were under excellent discipline and considered one of the best companies in the State. But three of this company were known (by Mr. Baker) to be living in 1879,—Thos. Farris (died 1882, aged ninety), S. P. Lovett (died recently), and Stephens Baker (died 1883, aged ninety-one years, ten months), and four of the company commanded by Capt. Foster,—Eben Ray, Peter Corning, Joseph Russell and Jesse Woodbury. The following persons received pensions under the act of '78: Stephens Baker, Peter Corning, Samuel P. Lovett, Joseph Russell, Eben Ray. Fourteen widows are enumerated as entitled to pensions, several of whom died after application had been made, and several other applications were pending. But two survive. Many sailors from Beverly were taken prisoners in that war, John Bradshaw, who died 1880, aged ninety-three; and James Stone died 1881, aged ninety-one, were both confined as prisoners at Bermuda, and both returned to Beverly to live many years. Peter Homan died 1871, aged ninety-one, Jacob Grace died 1876, aged ninety-six, John Bradshaw in 1880, at ninety-three. Of the widows of 1812 veterans but two are living. One of these, Mrs. Nancy Trowt, who lives at the Farms, is active and cheerful, at ninety years of age.

The Dartmoor prisoners surviving in 1866, from a list furnished at that time by Mr. James Brazil:

James Brazil, died 1872; Joseph Robinson, died 1868; James Briant, died 1867; Nathaniel Roberts, died Feb. 10th, 1874; Benj. Briant, died Oct. 5, 1874; Dixey Woodbury, died 1861.

DECEASED.

John Bridges, Joshua Ellingwood, Joseph Givens, John Udson, Isaac Lakeman, John Wyer, John Dempsey, Moses Green, Benj. Elliot, Asa Andrews, Jas. Andrews, Jedediah Stiles, William Young,[1] John Ayers, Sam'l Bartlett, ——— Hodgdon, Edw. Pousland,[1] Capt. John Giddings, Amos Stickney, Thos. Roberts, Wm. Glover, Edw. Stone, Robert Claxton, Josiah Pickett, Archibald Dale, Larry Osborne, James Burke, Scipio Bartlett, Jos. Wyer, Richard Vickary, Robert Grimes.

There were many veterans and pensioners scattered throughout the town, and of the local "characters," "Uncle" Peter Woodbury is one of the best remembered. He was a sailor on board the "Constitution," and lost his thumb while at the helm during a fight, by having it struck by a splinter. Another veteran was John Crampsey, who had both arms shot off at the shoulders, and who was yet an expert fisherman in later life.

1814.—Of the momentous events of the war-period, a large number of our aged citizens yet retain vivid recollections. The battle between the Chesapeake and Shannon was witnessed from many house-tops, and the excitement in town was intense. An incident that brought the vicissitudes of the war home to our doors, was the chasing ashore of a schooner belonging to Manchester, by a barge load of sailors from a British man-of-war, who destroyed her cargo and set her on fire. The flames were extinguished by the rallying inhabitants of the shore, but vessel and cargo were a total loss. Great alarm spread throughout the country, and a town meeting was promptly called to provide for the protection of our coast. This event is remembered and vividly narrated by several of our venerable citizens.

The arrival of the artillery company from Danvers (which, with others from Haverhill and Methuen, was stationed here for a period), and which he followed to its station at Hospital Point, is distinctly remembered by one. At the alarm, his grandfather hastily entered the room in which he was sleeping, strapped powder-horn and accoutrements, seized his musket and ran out to join with his fellow-citizens in repelling the anticipated invasion. He was followed by the boy of seven, who, now a man of eighty years, gives this narrative to the writer.

The affair is remembered also by William Endicott, now eighty-eight years old, by Richard Clark, eighty-six, and by several others. Mr. Clark was working in a garden above the beach itself when the schooner was driven ashore, and stayed to watch proceedings until the flying bullets drove him behind a house. He saw one of the English sailors climb the rigging and cut a strip of canvas out of the topsail, and remembers that he thought him an excellent mark for a bullet and wondered they had not shot him.

Mr. Clark's father was in a privateer in the Revolutionary war commanded by Captain Herbert Woodbury. Their vessel was taken by an English brig of fourteen guns, which they retook and brought safely to an American port. The first American ancestor of the Trowts—the widow of whose son, Mrs. Nancy, over ninety years old, draws a pension for her husband's services in the war of 1812—came here as one of the prisoners.

Richard Clark, Sr., who was then quite young, took his share of the prize money and went to school. It was just after the War of 1812, says Mr. Clark, that the most money was made by the fishermen, as for so long a period the embargo had kept their vessels in port and prices were high. He went fishing twenty-five summers, beginning when a mere boy, and distinctly remembers landing at "Col. Hale's garden," at Cape Breton.

In the procession on Memorial Day, 1874, walked two veterans of 1812—Thomas Farris and Thomas Pickett,—who were once shopmates with John Smith, a survivor of the Chesapeake engagement, and known

[1] Died in prison.

as "Chesapeake John," who lived in Beverly and worked at cabinet-making.

In consequence of this occurrence (at Mingo's Beach), writes Robert Rantoul, in his "Reminiscences," "a town-meeting was held on Saturday, June 11th, and measures were taken to procure from the State field-pieces of cannon, ammunition, etc., for the defence of the town. A number of persons were associated together as artillery men, and on the 17th of June, at a meeting held for the purpose, Nicholas Thorndike was chosen captain, I was chosen first lieutenant, and Benj. Brown, Jr., 2d lieut. Frequent meetings were held to exercise with the two brass six-pounders, which the State had furnished. The number of persons associated was fifty-four. We turned out twice on alarms that the British were landing, which proved to be groundless, and met frequently for practice until February 13, 1815, when information was received that a treaty of peace had been signed at Ghent, 24th Dec., 1814. In the afternoon of the day of the receipt of this news, the company assembled, and, dragging the cannon to the Watch-house Hill, near Hale St., fired a salute of 18 guns, under my command, Capt. Thorndike being out of town."

1815.—Celebration of the peace, February 22, 1815:

"The town of Beverly, tho' almost bent to the ground by the pressure of the times, has not lost its elasticity. True to their principles, the inhabitants have never engaged in a War which they believed to be impolitic and unjust. They have undergone their full share of suffering in a variety of forms, from the interruption of business and loss of property, to the alarms of threatened attack and actual aggressions on their shores by the enemy. The intelligence of the Peace found them almost in despondency, for that blessing was supposed to be still distant. The change from that despondency to excess of joy can only be described by an appeal to the feelings of every patriotic bosom on the occasion. Individual pleasure was expressed by congratulations, and countenances once more illuminated with smiles, whilst reiterated huzzas were at once the effect and stimulus of their united rejoicings. A large sled fancifully dressed with the national colours was soon manned with a crew of gallant seamen, and dispatched through the street with the intelligence.

"The assembled people flew to the gun-house, dragged the heavy artillery to the top of the highest hill, and, amidst the peals of bells, fired salutes which proclaimed the pleasure they felt. In the evening, the destruction by fire of the dwelling-house of an unfortunate citizen, suspended for a while the natural joy, which had begun to flow from the domestic circle.

"On Wednesday, the 22d inst., when the memory of Washington was again associated with peace, in conformity to previous arrangements, the inhabitants, at an early hour, assembled at the Bank, where, after listening to the official declaration of Peace, read by the first Marshal, they were escorted in procession to the South Meeting-house. A large concourse of people was assembled. The Rev. Mr. Emerson read appropriate scriptural selections, and then addressed the God of Peace with mingled effusions of patriotism and devotion. An elegant and interesting address was delivered by the Rev. Mr. Abbot, with his characteristic energy and propriety of manner, followed by a pertinent concluding prayer by the Rev. Mr. Whiting. Select pieces of music were well performed by an uncommonly numerous choir under the direction of Mr. Isaac Flagg. The bells were rung and salutes fired by the two artillery companies of exempts, at sunrise and during the moving of the procession. The escort honors were handsomely performed by the Light Infantry company, commanded by Capt. Wm. Thorndike, which on this occasion made its first public appearance; and all the proceedings were conducted with the attention and decorum due to the day. After the public performances, a large number of the citizens dined together in the town hall; Moses Brown, Esq., was elected their President, and Nicholas Thorndike, Nathaniel Goodwin, and Josiah Gould, Esqrs., Vice-Presidents. A large number of patriotic toasts circulated with the glass, and the company separated at a seasonable hour, after a temperate foretaste of the blessings of Peace. In the evening, the Bank and several conspicuous private buildings were neatly illuminated."

Among the twenty "patriotic toasts circulated with the glass," at this "temperate foretaste," are a few which, like the above-quoted description, give us an insight of the times, the motives for action, and the prevailing condition of affairs.

"(1.) The Treaty of Ghent—The last seal to a universal Peace throughout Christendom—Woe to its wanton disturbers!

"(4.) The Union of the States—May it be perpetuated by impartial laws, and a communion of rights, and undisturbed by local jealousies.

"(5.) His Excellency, Caleb Strong—May we never forget, that though we have felt the inconveniences of War, it is to him we owe our preservation from its horrors.

"(6.) The Nations of Europe—Our joy at *their* emancipation is no longer clouded by fear for *ourselves*.

"(8.) The Fisheries: the *Grand Bank*—May its charter be perpetuated and its capital unlimited.

"(9.) The American Navy—Its well-deserved glory points to the only field where 'Sailors' Rights' should ever be defended.

"(10.) Our Army—Having gathered a *full harvest* of honor, in defence of our own territory, may it never have occasion to *glean* in the field of our neighbors."

Among the "volunteers," we find:

"By Joshua Fisher: The Fisheries—'Free-trade and sailors' rights'—May they not be abandoned by our Government, although *forgotten* by our Envoys.

"By Col. Francis: May party spirit subside, and true patriotism revive.

"By Eben'r Everett, Esq.: The Emperor of all Elba—We come to *bury* Cæsar, not to *praise* him."

1818.—The town voted to purchase a hearse.

1820.—Four delegates were elected to attend the convention of five hundred met for amending the constitution,—Nathan Dane, Robert Rantoul, John Low and Rev. Nathaniel W. Williams.

1824, August 31st.—The great event of this year was the reception to General Lafayette, who passed through the town (August 31st) on his grand tour through the country. A salute of thirteen guns on Ellingwood Point announced his approach; an arch spanned the bridge, decorated with flowers and flags, and inscribed: "Welcome, Lafayette, the man whom we delight to honor!"

He was welcomed in a brief but eloquent address by the Hon. Robert Rantoul, to which he feelingly replied, and then continued his journey. Many people yet residing with us remember the visit of Lafayette, and all allude to the day as having been exceptionally rainy. The following is Mr. Rantoul's account of the visit, taken from his "Reminiscences," published in the Essex Institute "Historical Collections:"

"A committee of arrangements was constituted to prepare for his reception. This committee invited me to make an address to him. He was so situated, in regard to his stopping at Salem and at Ipswich, that he could not alight here; it was therefore arranged that he should stop with the escort and cavalcade in front of the bank-house on Cabot St., and receive the address in his coach. When he arrived at the proposed place there was a heavy shower of rain; his coach stopped abreast the front door of the house, the door of his carriage was thrown open, and I proceeded in the midst of the heavy rain from the door of the house to

the side of the coach, having first secured Nathaniel Lamson to hold an umbrella over me. I stood in the water with my hat under my arm, and read the address I had prepared, to which he made a reply; but his foreign accent, the excitement of the occasion and my perturbation prevented me from fully understanding it. This being accomplished, the cavalcade moved on for Ipswich, amidst the cheers of those assembled around the bank, and the pelting of a drenching rain."

In 1824 was established the Liberty Lodge of Freemasons, with Colonel Jesse Sheldon as its first master, and Stephens Baker as secretary. This lodge has flourished from the first, and now embraces many of our leading citizens.

In 1867 the Masons erected a large brick building at the corner of Cabot and Washington Streets, which was then considered the finest of its class in town, and cost over twenty thousand dollars. The Amity Chapter of Royal Arch Masons was chartered subsequently, and occupies the hall, while stores and numerous offices absorb the space of the first and second floors.

1826.—May 15th the town lost a valued citizen by the death of Dr. Abner Howe, who was born in Jaffrey, N. H., 1781, and graduated from Dartmouth in 1801. He was eminently successful as a physician, and interested in public and private charities and the schools. The house he lived in, on Washington Street, is now occupied by his son, Captain Octavius Howe.

1827.—Captain John Low, a one-time resident of Beverly, who died in Lyman, Maine, in his eighty-second year, raised a company here for the Continental army at the commencement of the Revolution, and at one time kept a public house near the ferry landing.

1829.—At the Farms, this year, a church was organized, and the Rev. Benjamin Knight ordained pastor, September 2d. It started as a "Christian" Church, but afterwards became, under the lead of Mr. Knight, united with the Baptist denomination in 1834. The cost of its first house of worship, which was built of bricks from the old factory at North Beverly, was one thousand six hundred dollars, and it was dedicated February 23, 1830. In 1831 it was presented, by the First Church, with a silver tankard, as a token of its love and good-will. Mr. Knight severed his pastoral relations with the church in 1834, and was succeeded by Rev. Mr. Gilbert, then by Rev. P. P. Sanderson, March, 1840–42; Rev. Sumner Hale, 1842–47; Rev. C. W. Redding, 1848–56; Rev. Samuel Brooks, 1857–60; various "supplys" from 1860–67; Rev. J. W. Lothrop, 1867–70; Rev. Chas. W. Flanders, 1870–74; Rev. C. W. Redding, 1874–81, when he resigned, on account of ill health, but still resides at the Farms; Rev. E. M. Shaw, 1881–84; Rev. J. D. Smith, 1885–86; Rev. T. R. Reed, stated supply from October, 1886, to present date. The present church was erected in 1843–44, at a cost of five thousand dollars.

1829–30.—About this time, says the annalist of Salem, the spirit for lyceums broke forth, and a convention was held in Topsfield to found a county lyceum. This most valuable method of disseminating knowledge was publicly advocated in this town, and the Beverly Lyceum was one of the very first established, by independent effort of its citizens. As early as 1830, '31 and '32, Robert Rantoul, Sr., delivered before it his lectures on local history, which formed the basis of Stone's work on Beverly. During the twenty years and more of its existence, it was ably supported, and many famous names appear among the lecturers on its platform. It is recorded that Horace Greeley and Elihu Burritt each received fifteen dollars for a lecture, and that the former was very much surprised to receive an invitation to appear a second time. George Bancroft, Wendell Phillips, Chas. Sumner and Theodore Parker, received twelve dollars each. Ex-President John Q. Adams lectured here, as also Miss Lucy Stone, Wilson Flagg, Robert Rantoul, Jr., Mr. Thorndike, Dr. W. C. Boyden, Dr. Augustus Torrey and others of our townsmen.

Owing to the rise of rival associations, the old Lyceum lost support, but the impulse toward this form of intellectual recreation continued, and has been sustained to the present day.

In the Athenæum course of 1860 lectured Nath'l P. Banks, Josiah Quincy, Jr., Dr. R. H. Neale and six others, while invitations were extended to Wendell Phillips, Dr. T. D. Anderson and John G. Saxe.

Of late years, the most active promoter of lectures here have been the officers of the Royal Arcanum, led by Austin D. Whitcomb.

The earliest lyceum lectures were held in the Briscoe Hall, and the later ones principally in the large hall of the town-house.

1830–31.—The introduction of coal into this town began about this time. In October, 1831, Messrs. Pickett & Edwards carted two thousand seven hundred and ninety pounds of coal to the hay-scales near the Old South, to be weighed, and then to the house of Jonathan Batchelder; and also other small lots to a few other individuals. October, 1834, forty-seven tons were landed here from a vessel, of which Capt. Stephen Woodbury was master. This lot was sold to forty-three different persons in the space of eleven and one-half months. It came in large blocks, and had to be broken up with the top-maul or axe, to prepare it for the stove. Many weary, fretful hours (says Mr. Pickett), were spent in trying to make the "strange stuff" burn; some would finally give it up in despair, but others persevered and made it a success. At present, it is estimated, twelve thousand tons are annually consumed.

Fuel at first came (after the home supply became diminished) from the forests of Maine; but even these are now exhausted, and wood is brought from Nova Scotia and New Brunswick.

1833.—The Beverly Academy, projected as a private school by an association of gentlemen became,

although its existence was relatively brief, an important factor in the intellectual development of the town.

In May of this year, the association purchased land on the northeasterly side of Washington Street, and erected a building in which, June 17th, a school was opened, with Abiel Abbott, of Wilton, N. H., as principal, and Miss Mary R. Peabody assistant.

Chas. A. Peabody, of Tamworth, N. H. (since a judge and a prominent citizen of New York City), succeed Mr. Abbott for one term, next year, when Edward Bradstreet assumed the position, retaining it till June 30, 1836.

A year previous, January 30, 1835, an act of incorporation had been obtained by Elliot Woodbury, Josiah Lovett 2d, Michael Whitney and their associates and successors, as the Beverly Academy.

The officers of the Institution elected February 18, 1835, as trustees, were: Robert Rantoul, Josiah Lovett 2d, Elliott Woodbury, Albert Thorndike, William Endicott, with Wm. Endicott treasurer, and Stephens Baker clerk.

Between the years 1836–41, Thos. B. Webb was principal, followed by Edward Appleton, a Cambridge graduate of 1835. Valued assistants under Mr. West were: Miss Ann W. Abbott, Miss Mary Williams and Miss Mary T. Weld.

After Mr. Appleton came John F. Nourse, from January, 1844, to August, 1847, with exception of two terms, taught by James W. Boyden.

From September, 1847, to November, 1854, Issachar Lefavour was principal, with Miss Phœbe E. Abbott as assistant. Mr. Lefavour, a graduate of Amherst College, who began teaching in Beverly, in 1834, in the old school-house at the Cove, purchased the Academy building in 1848. The building was then situated on the corner of Brown and Washington Streets, but was removed thence, and is now occupied as a shoe factory, on Park Street. Mr. Lefavour was the last to maintain the Academy here, and in 1855 accepted a situation as principal of the Ipswich Grammar School, where he taught without interruption nineteen years. He always remained a citizen of Beverly, however, and still maintains, after half a century of valuable service, an undiminished interest in the cause of education. A short-lived academical school was opened previous to the above mentioned, in a building on Washington Street, since removed to Beckford Street, where it was used as the Ryal-Side School-House, but now owned and occupied as a dwelling-house.

1834.—February 21st, the Beverly Anti-Slavery Society was formed. There died in Camden, Maine, December 10, 1834, a native of Beverly, Mr. Robert Thorndike, at the age of one hundred years and five months.

1835.—On February 5th Nathan Dane departed this life, who was born in Ipswich December 27, 1752. Another lawyer of local eminence, who at one time studied in the office of Mr. Dane, closely followed him at his departure,—William Thorndike, born in Beverly January, 1795, died July 12, 1835. He fitted for college at Phillips Academy in Exeter, and graduated with distinction from Harvard in 1813. He was admitted to the Essex bar in 1816, and commenced the practice of law in Bath, Me., but in a few years returned to his native town to engage in mercantile pursuits. Here he was elected to fill positions of trust and honor; he pronounced the Fourth of July oration of 1816, was a representative at General Court in 1826 and '27, and a senator in 1828 and four years succeeding, during the last of which he was president of the Senate. He was for several years superintendent of the First Parish Sunday-school, and at his death at the head of financial institutions in Boston.

A noteworthy celebration of America's independence was that of this year's anniversary, on the occasion of which Edward Everett delivered the oration, taking for his theme the early life of George Washington.

An immense audience greeted him in the Dane Street Church meeting-house, where, for an hour and a half, they had the enviable pleasure of listening to this distinguished orator. After the intellectual feast had concluded, the citizens of the town, with invited guests, repaired to the Common, where a pavilion had been erected, and there sat down to a substantial dinner. Robert Rantoul, Sr., presided, and among the assembled participants were twelve Revolutionary soldiers, probably the last survivors of those gallant sons of liberty our town had provided in such numbers. Although many toasts were drunk, it is related that the president of the occasion and many influential citizens set a commendable example of total abstinence from intoxicants.

Among the toasts was one to the "orator of the day," responded to by Mr. Everett in his happiest vein:—

"The orator of the day: The union of genius, talents and industry, regulated by virtuous principle, will always command respect and esteem from a free and enlightened community. The power of eloquence, when employed to promote harmony, union and peace among friends and neighbors, excites the most grateful feelings and merits the warmest praise."

Josiah Lovett, 2d, was chairman of the committee of fourteen who so wisely conceived and ably elaborated the plan of the celebration, and the Beverly Light Infantry did escort duty on the occasion. There is a tradition current now, at this date fifty years removed from the event, that there was prospect of the festivities being interrupted, early in the day, by the appearance of a "suspicious-looking Southerner," armed with pistols. As this gentleman made earnest enquiry for Mr. Everett, some zealous officials promptly arrested him and took his pistols away from him. But when he was permitted to send a note to Mr. Everett, his identity was established as a reporter for the *New York Herald*, at all events not an enemy

thirsting for his blood, and he was promptly discharged and invited to the dinner.

At a town meeting held August 20, 1835, a committee was appointed to secure the change of location of the Eastern Railroad, from the east side of Essex Bridge (as projected) to the west, and this was complied with in 1837.

The old ways of traveling were now to give way to the new method with propulsion by steam, and at the advent of the iron horse came the edict of banishment for the antiquated coach and stage, with their numerous and interesting retinues of attendants. But various stage and transportation lines were kept up until very recent times, the last (or one of the last) being Trask's stage to Gloucester, terminated within the memory of many of the younger generation.

Even this solitary representative of the past,—this lumbering stage with its four prancing horses and jolly driver, making its daily trips between Salem and Gloucester, awoke great interest all along the line, and gave us a hint of what the stage-coach must have been in the hey-day of its existence.

It is a tradition, firmly believed in by all who were favored with a glimpse of Trask and his "turn-out," that the stage of ancient times was a most glorious thing, bright with varnish, with gorgeous landscapes painted on its panels, numerous straps dangling temptingly just out of reach of the small boy, and mysterious recesses within its spacious interior. And the broad-visaged, rubicund driver, with his expansive smile and hearty ways, his long-lashed whip that could easily reach a "cut behind"—but rarely did—he was a king on a throne, and, if he were conscious of the envy and admiration he excited, would certainly have put on kingly airs.

The last stage coach has now been relegated to the most neglected corner of shed and barn, its only occupants the feathered bipeds of the farm-yard; for, even in regions remote, that were wholly unknown in the days of its glory, such as Texas, California and the highlands of Mexico, it has been steadily pursued and persistently demolished by the iron monster—that first entered our territory as a humble servitor, but now threatens to crush us beneath the steel-shod hoofs of monopoly. The last of the old stage-drivers of the Boston line was Woodbury Page, who was also the first station agent here of the railroad company. His old stage, "The Rambler," was for a long time stored in a barn on the Bancroft estate, which was burned to the ground, with all its contents, about 1850. Woodbury Page, though a native of New Hampshire, was connected, through his mother, with the Woodburys, of Beverly.

1836.—A body of its members retired from the Dane Street Church, and organized as a distinct society, February 8, 1837, by the name of the "Washington Street Church."

A house of worship was erected, and dedicated March 29, 1837, on which occasion religious services were performed by Rev. David Oliphant, formerly pastor of the Third Congregational.

The first pastor was Rev. William Bushnell, installed January 3, 1838, and dismissed May 9, 1842. Rev. George T. Dole was ordained October 6, 1842, and dismissed July 1, 1851.

Rev. Alonzo B. Rich, installed December 8, 1852, was dismissed August 6, 1867. During his ministry the greatest number (one hundred and fourteen) were added to the church.

Rev. Charles Van Norden was installed March 18, 1868, and dismissed April 14, 1873.

Rev. Benson M. Frink was installed October 1, 1873, and dismissed September 30, 1876.

Rev. William H. Davis was ordained July 5, 1877, and dismissed May 1, 1884.

Rev. William E. Strong was ordained July 15, 1885, and is the present pastor.

1840.—The first Universalist Society was organized February 17, 1840, with Daniel Hildreth, Stephen Homans, Jeremiah Wallis, Benjamin D. Grant and William A. Foster as parish committee. Among its early preachers were Revs. John Prince, Henry Bacon, William Hooper and Sylvanus Cobb, but the first settled pastor was Rev. E. H. Webster, in 1843.

In 1846 a church was erected, which was enlarged and beautified in 1863, and every demand anticipated of the increasing needs of its congregation. After Mr. Webster came Rev. W. G. Cambridge, for a year and a half, followed by Rev. John L. Stephens, who remained a year and then withdrew from the ministry and entered political life. He was afterwards editor of the *Kennebec Journal* and subsequently was appointed United States Minister to Uruguay and Paraguay, and later to Norway and Sweden.

Rev. Mr. Washburn came to the pastorate in 1847, and continued till May, 1851, when he resigned, on account of ill-health, and died the same year. Rev. Stillman Barden occupied the pulpit two years, resigned in 1853, and died in Rockport in 1865.

Rev. L. W. Coffin was pastor for two years, between 1853 and '55, then resigned; died in Barnardston in 1879.

September 19, 1856, Rev. John Nichols was settled over the church, and continued in service here for eleven years, impressing the entire community with the purity of his life and sincerity of purpose. The day of his valedictory sermon was also the day of his death, as he was stricken with paralysis of the brain that afternoon, and died the same evening.

Rev. G. W. Whitney was ordained July 24, 1867, and resigned in April, 1872. In November, 1872, the Rev. J. N. Emery was installed, remaining here until 1884, and is now at Bellows Falls, Vt. Like his predecessors, he acquired the confidence of his fellow-citizens and exerted an influence for good. From 1884–85 Rev. E. W. Prebble preached here, and Rev.

Charles S. Nickerson in 1886; but at present (1887) there is no settled pastor.

The present congregation numbers about three hundred individuals. There is a well-attended Sunday-school, of which one of our influential citizens, Samuel Porter, was (until 1886) superintendent for thirty years.

1840.—In the great Whig campaign of this year Beverly partook of the general excitement. The population of the Farms and Cove marched to the Centre in procession, with banners flying, and on the day of the great convention at Charlestown the town seemed almost entirely deserted, so universal was the attendance.

1841.—All town-meetings, previous to 1798, had been held in the First Parish meeting-house, but in this year a building was erected as a town and school-house combined. In town-meeting March 12, 1798, "the committee appointed to view and report the disposition of the rooms in the new Grammar School-house find the large chamber in the upper story in said house (with another row of benches), will accommodate one hundred and forty persons, and therefore recommend that this chamber in future be appropriated to and occupied for the purposes of town-meetings and town affairs, and that the western room be appropriated more immediately for the use of the selectmen and assessors.

"N. B.—In case of a very full meeting it may be adjourned to the meeting-house."

It was then voted that "All future town-meetings shall be warned and holden in the chamber in the new Grammar School-house, known by name of the Town Hall, instead of the place they are now held."

This old town hall stood on the hill back of the present Briscoe school-house, was of two stories in height, with a cupola and bell. In 1842 it was given over to the exclusive use of the Grammar School, and was thereafter known as Briscoe Hall, until 1874. In 1841, with a portion of the United States surplus assigned the town it purchased the Thorndike mansion, which was built by Andrew Cabot some sixty years previously, and fitted it up for the uses of the town officials, with a large hall for public meetings. This edifice was a beautiful example of the best buildings of the period of its construction, and long stood an ornament to the business centre of the town.

It was opened to the public October 26, 1841, with religious exercises and an address by Robert Rantoul, Jr., who, though at first opposed to its purchase, gracefully admitted his mistake. The work of alteration was ably supervised by a committee of citizens, of whom the only survivor is Augustus N. Clark, who has, for nearly fifty years, been prominent in works for the welfare of the town. This hall, at various times enlarged and improved, answered the needs of the community for nearly thirty years. But the growing demands for hall and library space, for rooms in which to transact town affairs, and greater security of property, necessitated its enlargement in 1874. The lines of the original structure were obliterated, but ample accomodations were secured for all the purposes of town business. The cost of the later alteration was about thirty thousand dollars.

The Thorndike property, which included a garden of great attractiveness, and extended from Cabot to Lovett Streets, was thrown open to occupation, at the time of its purchase by the town, and is now covered by some of our finest estates.

A grandson of Rev. Thomas Blowers (second minister of the First Parish) died at Halifax, N. S., in October, 1842, at the age of one hundred years. He was the oldest surviving graduate of Harvard College, and had long occupied an eminent judicial position.

1845–46.—The Mexican war was more unpopular in Beverly than the War of 1812, and there were few enlistments of our citizens. These, it is believed, joined the ranks of the regular army: Thos. J. Pousland (who was among the missing in the last war of the rebellion); Joseph Bradshaw and Charles F. Dodge. Mr. Bradshaw (now seventy-two years old, and Mr. Dodge, who is about ten years his junior, receive pensions from the general government, under the new law. Mr. Dodge, who is still hale and hearty, and who diligently pursues his vocation, as a builder, retains vivid recollections of the most eventful scenes of the Mexican invasion. He enlisted in December, 1846, in the battery of mountain-howitzers which became so famous as "Reno's Battery" in the operations of the Valley of Mexico. As he was with the troops under General Scott, he was at the bombardment of Vera Cruz, where he first landed on Mexican soil, and marched thence up the mountain slopes to Cerro Gordo. In this famous pass of Cerro Gordo the Mexicans, under Santa Anna, were strongly posted, with a numerous force, and guns guarding every possible approach. Contrary to the expectations of the enemy, General Scott did not march directly into the yawning jaws of the gorge, where certain destruction awaited him and his army, but spent several days in opening a road along one of the high and apparently inaccessible hills, in this manner flanking the strongest batteries and forcing the Mexicans to retreat in confusion.

This masterly move won the admiration of all the old soldiers, many of whom had been with the dashing Taylor at Monterey and Buena Vista, and were disposed to murmur at Scott's slow advances. But this was the secret, perhaps of his success, for the lives of his men were precious to him, not only for their own sakes, but on account of the small force with which he was making this invasion.

Mr. Dodge was detailed to go back to communicate with the lieutenant of his company, and in doing so saw the brave General Shields, who was lying on a hillside desperately wounded. He had the pleasure of meeting General Shields thirty years later, in 1878,

on the occasion of a lecture delivered here by the latter, when they spent several hours in recounting the scenes through which they had passed together, and Mr. Dodge occupied a place on the platform, while the General gave his lecture on the war. In the great march up the slopes of the plateau to the table-land, through Jalapa, Perote and Puebla, and in the strategic operations about the Valley of Mexico, Mr. Dodge was in constant service. In addition to Cerro Gordo, he was in the battles of Contreras, Churubusco, Chapultepec and the city of Mexico.

When the brave Reno was wounded the command of the battery devolved upon Beauregard, for whom, as well as Pillow and Scott, he had great admiration. For General Scott, indeed, he had that fervent admiration understood only by one who participated in the desperate conflicts on Mexican soil, when the great general so successfully led that little army of ten thousand against such overwhelming odds and into the heart of a country swarming with enemies. Our townsman was one of the first through the breach in the western wall of Chapultepec, but declares that General Scott was on the castle esplanade almost as soon, looking about solicitously for the wounded and complimenting the boys on their gallant and successful charge.

After Chapultepec had been carried, the city of Mexico was virtually in Scott's possession, for the guns of the castle on its rock-ribbed hill commanded every portion. But the enthusiastic soldiers dashed down the sides of the hill and along the great aqueduct away from Chapultepec to the city, charging in and out its hundred arches, to the very gates of the ancient Aztec stronghold. They carried the gates and overcame some of the barricades, when night fell about them and necessitated a halt; but they held what they had captured, and completed the conquest on the morrow. One of the guns of the battery to which Mr. Dodge was attached was taken by General (then Lieutenant) Grant into the tower of a church, and this mountain howitzer figures conspicuously in the account of the doings of Grant at that time. During the American occupation of Mexico Mr. Dodge twice performed the journey between Vera Cruz and the city of Mexico and return; once in doing escort duty after the Mexican surrender. This is but one episode, briefly sketched, of a single soldier of Beverly; could the history of each one's adventures be given, it would fill a volume.

1848-49.—"The California Fever."—Through the acquisition of Texas, New Mexico and California, a vast territory was thrown open to exploration, as the outcome of the Mexican War. The great excitement over the discovery of gold in California was felt in Beverly as in few other places, the majority of its male inhabitants being fishermen, or connected in some way with maritime affairs.

It was at least twenty years prior to this event that gold was brought from the Pacific coast by Capt. John Bradshaw, who got it of the Indians in trade. It was in the form of gold-dust, of a coarser grain than the African gold, and of a different color. Capt. Bradshaw, who claimed to be the first to hoist the American flag on the Northwest coast, traded there for many years; he used to refit in the Sandwich Islands, and is mentioned in Dana's "Two Years before the Mast." Mr. Joseph D. Tuck was postmaster during this period, and says the great event of this time was the arrival of the first mail across the Isthmus from California. The rate for letter postage was forty cents per ounce, yet some gold-dust and even grains of the precious metal found its way through the mails to expectant friends of the far-distant miners. Although the gold country was on the other side of the continent and in a region almost inaccessible, yet neither distance nor prospective danger deterred our hardy population from making the venture. They had faced the dangers of the seas for years, and a voyage around the Horn was to them a matter of small moment.

Of those who had determined to seek the golden country, many united in purchasing and fitting out vessels. One party started on the overland journey across Texas, but some of them died of cholera at Corpus Christi, and the others were obliged to return and seek a more practicable route.

There was then no railroad reaching out westwardly across the Mississippi, and only the trail was known across Texas and New Mexico opened by American soldiers a year or two previously. Even this was little known, the territory through which it led having then but recently been acquired from Mexico. The first vessel to fit for California, it is said, was the brig "Sterling," Capt. Edmund Gallop, whose residence was at the Cove.

The second party sailed from Salem in the "Elizabeth;" in 1850 the "Metropolis," Capt. John C. Bennett. Various parties were fitted out, in fact, Beverly's population being greatly depleted. If a man could not go himself, he would, perhaps, invest in another's venture, and sometimes two or more would combine to fit out a man who had no capital other than his brain and muscle. A frequent question of those times was: "Don't you want half a man?" meaning a half-interest in some miner's adventure.

The most important venture was made by forty men of the county, thirty-six of whom belonged to Beverly, who purchased and fitted for a long sea-voyage, the new and fine barque "San Francisco," of 320 tons, then just built in Portland.

They chose Capt. Thomas Remmonds as master, John G. Butman as chief mate, and Andrew Larcom second mate. They set sail from Beverly, these later Argonauts in search of the golden fleece, with as little concern for the vast voyage ahead of them as now we of the present generation would take palace-car for "Frisco." They were five months on the voyage, doubled the Horn, coasted the western shore of the two continents, and arrived at their destination without

mishap, for they were sailors all, and nearly every man capable of taking charge of the vessel.

They landed first in San Francisco, and then went up to Sacramento, where they shared out their provisions, sold their vessel at a great sacrifice, and went into the mines. The story of their adventures has been practically repeated a thousand times; in fine, they did not find the golden treasure they had dreamed of, and few of them returned with much to show for their labors. They could have made more in California at labor in the woods and fields, for wood that any one might cut brought sixteen dollars a cord, and labor was from ten to fifteen dollars per day.

Many of them remained two years; some even stayed from ten to twenty years; but the homeward migration soon commenced. Most of them returned *via* the Isthmus, and suffered terribly. One of our citizens, Samuel O. Gallop, broke his leg on the Isthmus, and died of the accident in New York.

Mr. Larcom and a companion came across Nicaragua, in an ox-cart, with two Indian guides, who couldn't speak a word of English. As they spoke no Spanish, their course was sometimes a difficult one and their adventures amusing, as well as sometimes dangerous. Mr. Larcom, who is now living at eighty years of age, and who is one of our keenest sportsmen yet, was on the coast of Sumatra, in 1831, when the ship "Friendship" was taken by native pirates who killed some of the crew and drove the rest overboard. The crew of his ship, the "James Monroe," retook the abandoned vessel after a lively fight with the pirates and brought her home. Mr. Larcom is probably the only survivor who participated in this fight; and there are but seven others, living in town, who went in the "San Francisco" around the Horn; Albert, Charles and Edward Perry, Charles Pickett, Daniel Wallis, Thos. D. Davis and Josiah Bennett. Many of the original "Forty-niners" died on the voyage or at the mines, and but few are left of those who returned.

1851.—Bass River Lodge of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, installed at Bell's Hall, February 21st, by M. W. G. Master Usher. A hall built for its use in 1857 was destroyed by fire 1873, but in 1874-75, the fine block now owned by the Order was erected, at a cost of about sixty-five thousand dollars. It is situated opposite the town-hall, is of brick, with trimmings of granite, and contains, besides the halls used by the lodge, some of the most eligible store-space in town. The post-office occupies the entire rear half of the lower floor, with entrances from Wallis and Thorndike Streets.

The lodge now numbers about four hundred members, its receipts during its existence have been large, and its expenditures for benefits and charities on a generous scale.

The auxiliary Friendship Lodge of the Daughters of Rebecca was installed January 10, 1870, and the Summit Encampment September 20, 1870.

1852.—August 7th, this year, Robert Rantoul, Jr. died, in Washington, a biographical sketch of whom is elsewhere given in this volume. It needs no mention, perhaps, that the greatest in the land brought their tributes here and laid them on Rantoul's grave. In the United States Senate, Charles Sumner sketched his career and pronounced his eulogy:

"He was born August 13th, 1805, at Beverly, the home of Nathan Dane, author of the immortal ordinance by which freedom was made a perpetual heirloom in the broad region of the Northwest. Here, under happy auspices of family and neighborhood, he commenced life. Here his excellent father, honored for his public services, venerable also with years and flowing silver locks, yet lives to mourn his last surviving son.

"The sad fortune of Burke is renewed: he who should have been as posterity is now to this father in the place of ancestor.

* * * * * * * * *

"The death of such a man, so suddenly, in mid-career, is well calculated to arrest attention and to furnish admonition. From the love of family, the attachment of friends and the regard of fellow-citizens he has been removed. Leaving behind the cares of life, the concerns of State and the wretched strifes of party, he has ascended to those mansions where there is no strife, or concern, or care. At last he stands face to face in His presence whose service is perfect freedom. You and I, sir, and all of us, must follow soon. God grant that we may go with equal consciousness of duty well done."

The offering of Whittier has become a part of the permanent literature of our country, familiar to every reader of his poetry; yet we must be pardoned if we quote it here entire; for it belongs to us, who dwell,—

Here, "where his breezy hills of home
Look out upon his sail-white seas—"

this noble poem; a joint legacy of the bard of freedom and its eloquent advocate.

"RANTOUL."

"One day, along the electric wire
His manly word for Freedom sped;
We came next morn: that tongue of fire
Said only, "He who spake is dead!"

Dead! while his voice was living yet,
In echoes round the pillared dome!
Dead! while his blotted page lay wet
With themes of state and loves of home!

Dead! in that crowning grace of time,
That triumph of life's zenith hour!
Dead! while we watched his manhood's prime
Break from the slow bud into flower!

Dead! he so great, and strong, and wise,
While the mean thousands yet drew breath;
How deepened, through the dread surprise,
The mystery and the awe of death!

From the high place whereon our votes
Had borne him, clear, calm, earnest, fell
His first words, like the prelude notes
Of some great anthem yet to swell.

We seemed to see our flag unfurled,
Our champion waiting in his place
For the last battle of the world,—
The Armageddon of the race.

Through him we hoped to speak the word
Which wins the freedom of a land;
And lift, for human right, the sword
Which dropped from Hampden's dying hand.

For he had sat at Sidney's feet,
And walked with Pym and Vane apart;
And, through the centuries, felt the beat
Of Freedom's march in Cromwell's heart.

He knew the paths the worthies held,
Where England's best and wisest trod;
And, lingering, drank the springs that welled
Beneath the touch of Milton's rod.

No wild enthusiast of the right,
Self-poised and clear, he showed alway
The coolness of his northern night,
The ripe repose of autumn's day.

His steps were slow, yet forward still
He pressed where others paused or failed;
The calm star climb with constant will,—
The restless meteor flashed and paled!

Skilled in its subtlest wile, he knew
And owned the higher ends of Law;
Still rose majestic on his view
The awful Shape the schoolman saw.

Her home the heart of God; her voice
The choral harmonies whereby
The stars, through all their spheres, rejoice,
The rhythmic rule of earth and sky!

We saw his great powers misapplied
To poor ambitions; yet, through all,
We saw him take the weaker side
And right the wronged, and free the thrall.

Now, looking o'er the frozen North
For one like him in word and act,
To call her old, free spirit forth,
And give her faith the life of fact,—

To break her party bonds of shame,
And labor with the zeal of him
To make the Democratic name
Of Liberty the synonyme,—

We sweep the land from hill to strand,
We seek the strong, the wise, the brave,
And, sad of heart, return to stand
In silence by a new-made grave!

There, where his breezy hills of home
Look out upon his sail-white seas,
The sounds of winds and waters come,
And shape themselves to words like these:

"Why, murmuring, mourn that he, whose power
Was lent to Party over-long,
Heard the still whisper at the hour
He set his foot on Party wrong?

"The human life that closed so well
No lapse of folly now can stain;
The lips whence Freedom's protest fell
No meaner thought can now profane.

"Mightier than living voice his grave
That lofty protest utters o'er;
Through roaring wind and smiting wave
It speaks his hate of wrong once more.

"Men of the North! your weak regret
Is wasted here; arise and pay
To freedom and to him your debt
By following where he led the way!"

1853.—The Beverly Insurance Company was incorporated, with a capital of fifty thousand dollars. Frederick W. Choate was president for many years. About 1880 the stock was sold at par to gentlemen of Boston, and the name changed to the Merchants' Insurance Company, with Chas. H. Fuller, president, and Elisha Whitney, secretary, doing business in Boston till 1886.

The Last Survivor of the Revolution.—In the year 1854 expired the last (as diligent inquiry, and thorough examination of the records and muster-rolls inform us) of Beverly's Revolutionary heroes.

Mark Morse, who died March 18, 1854, at the great age of ninety-six, was a private in Capt. John Low's Company, in Col. Hutchinson's Regiment, August 1, 1775, according to the muster-roll of that date, which is still preserved at the State House in Boston. Mr. Morse was a respected resident of that part of Beverly known as the Cove, and lived in the house (still standing) on Ober Street, just west of its junction with Woodbury Street. It is within a short distance of the spot on which Humphrey Woodbury (about 1630) built one of the first houses in Beverly; a section rich in reminiscence, and the home of many of the hardy fishermen that once materially contributed to the wealth of Beverly.

It is, the historian is well aware, contrary to the popular opinion that any survivor of the Revolution abode with us beyond 1850. On the occasion of the seventy-fifth anniversary of the Battle of Lexington, in 1850, but two survivors of that fight are mentioned as among the living: Jonathan Harrington, of Lexington, aged ninety-two, and Amos Baker, of Lincoln, aged ninety-four. These honored men sat on the platform, the chief guests of the occasion, and were feelingly alluded to by the speakers.

In the town records, between 1820–30, are many allusions to the demise of Revolutionary veterans, becoming less and less frequent beyond the thirties and forties, and ceasing entirely within forty years of the present time. In 1822 (to cite a few illustrious names) Col. John Francis died, aged sixty-eight; he was wounded in the war and received a small pension. Aaron Francis, his brother, died 1825, aged seventy-four, an officer in the Revolution. The year following died Peter Glover, aged eighty-five. In 1821 Asa Herrick, aged seventy-nine. Capt. Hugh Hill, our famous privateer, deceased 1829, at the ripe old age of eighty-eight. The same year, Jeffrey Thissell, at seventy-four.

In 1833, at the age of ninety-one, departed Sarah Wyer, a sister of the brothers Francis. Sergt. William Taylor Manning, a Virginian by birth, but long a resident of Beverly, died in 1838, aged eighty-one. Sergt. Manning served throughout the war, and at the close received an honorable discharge signed by Washington, bespeaking his worth and merit. In 1842, the year Stone's "History of Beverly" was published, casual mention is made of a Revolutionary soldier, Ebenezer Rea. According to the muster-roll of November, 1776, he was then enlisted. He died November 11, 1843, aged eighty-three. Upon his tomb-stone, to be seen in the second cemetery, is inscribed: "He was beloved and honoured all his life and lamented in death as the true friend, the upright and patriotic citizen, the enlightened and devoted Christian;" but no mention is made of his war record. He lived in the old house at the Cove, on Hale Street, still known as the Rea-house, the oldest

in that neighborhood, perhaps in the town, built by one of the first Thorndikes, and a fine example of the colonial architecture. Ebenezer Rea's father was Capt. Joseph Rea, who was one of the Revolutionary committee of correspondence, and commanded the company enlisted in Beverly and Lynn which went to the aid of Washington in New Jersey. Capt. Ebenezer was fifteen years old at the time of the battle of Lexington, and, it is said, used to relate many anecdotes of events that transpired in town during the war.

After serving in the army, he sailed for the West Indies, in the "Resource," with Capt. Richard Ober, when he was taken prisoner by the British and carried into Jamaica. He was not confined closely, but was transferred with other sailors to the "Pelican," a British man-of-war which foundered at sea, four of the crew being lost. He obtained his liberty in 1782, and arrived safely home, to dwell with his neighbors during sixty years of comparative peace.

Rev. Elisha S. Williams, at one time pastor of the Baptist Church, and who died in Beverly in 1845, aged eighty-seven years, four months, was a soldier under Washington. The last of these patriots, probably, next to Mark Morse, was Josiah Foster, who died, at the age of eighty-nine, in 1849. Mr. Foster was one of the captured crew of the snow "Diana," imprisoned in Mill Prison, England, in 1781. By no means complete, this scattering record of "Revolutioners" is given merely, to indicate the probable survivors, at different periods, of that most important epoch of our history.

1858.—October 24th, Robert Rantoul, deceased, in his eightieth year.

To the faithful portraiture following, from the skilled and loving hand of Rev. Dr. A. P. Peabody, who knew so intimately the departed, little may be added.

"Robert Rantoul was the son of Robert Rantoul (a native of Scotland, who early became an American citizen, was a shipmaster, and was lost at sea in 1783), and of Mary, daughter of Andrew and Mary (Lambert) Preston, of Salem. The subject of this sketch was born in Salem, November 23, 1778. The eldest child of a family left with a scanty competence, it was the ambition of his boyhood to relieve his mother's burdens, and to minister to her support and comfort, and after a short but thorough apprenticeship, at the age of eighteen, he invested his small patrimony in the establishment of a druggist's shop in Beverly. He understood his business, was diligent, frugal and enterprising, obtained the respect and confidence of his townsmen, and remained in his original calling for more than twenty years, till forced to abandon it by the pressure of various public trusts and duties which demanded and filled his whole time, till, in a late old age, he yielded to disabling infirmity. Meanwhile he had acquired not wealth, but property amply sufficient for his comfortable living, and his never stinted charities.

In 1801 he married Joanna, daughter of John and Elizabeth (Herrick) Lovett, of Beverly, whose pre-eminently lovely character gave grace and happiness to his home for nearly half a century, and whose precious memory has an enduring place in the hearts of all that knew her.

Shortly after his marriage he built, on a beautiful site near the seashore, the house in which he lived for more than fifty years, and which is still in the possession and occupancy of his only surviving daughter.

Of Mr. Rantoul's public life the following synopsis is an authentic, and probably a full record. It would hardly permit of being fuller: He was an overseer of the poor of Beverly from 1804 to 1854, when he resigned, having written fifty consecutive annual reports; a justice of the peace and acting trial justice for the town from 1808 until his death in 1858, as well as parish clerk of the First Parish for the same period, and deacon of the First Church, for forty-six years before his death; an original and life-long member of the Massachusetts Temperance Society from its inception in 1812; was, from 1830 to 1851 inclusive, an original trustee, on the part of the State, of the Institution for the Education of the Blind; represented the town in the General Court for the years from 1809 to 1819, from 1823 to 1827 and from 1828 to 1833 inclusive, having been chosen a Senator from Essex County for the years 1820, '21 and '22,—a total legislative term of twenty-five years; was captain of the Light Infantry Company of Beverly from 1805 to 1809; and first lieutenant of the Coast-guard Artillery Company in 1814–15; was for some years one of the county commissioners of highways, and presented, at the invitation of the town, August 31, 1824, an address to Lafayette on his tour through Beverly; was a member of the school committee for forty years; a member of two State Conventions which have been held (1820 and 1853) for amending the Constitution of Massachusetts, and called the latter to order; and, after reaching his majority in 1799, attended every annual town meeting but one, and nearly every town meeting held in Beverly, until 1854, a period of fifty-five years.

It may well be inferred from this list that his was a pre-eminently busy life, especially as it was his uniform habit to do thoroughly to the full measure of his ability whatever he undertook to do. For many years, as justice of the peace, he had probably nine-tenths of the business of Beverly and the smaller adjacent towns, and his office became a well-known and frequented court-room. At the same time, his intimate knowledge of the laws actually in force made him a safe and wise counsellor, and he was constantly called upon for his opinion and advice, which was always given gratuitously, and always with the purpose of settling disputes and superseding litigation. During the greater part of his service in the Legislature he was chairman of the Committee on Accounts, and in that capacity it was his wont to audit the



Wm. Rantoul

entire accounts of the State, and to report against every charge that was not reasonably fair, fully authorized and legally due. In his care of the poor he kept the almshouses under constant supervision, while the merits, claims and needs of outside pensioners were made the subject of careful enquiry. He took great interest in the public schools, and the teachers and pupils found in him a judge of their work equally discriminating and kind. These various offices he bore, not because he sought them, but because they sought him. His public life lay chiefly within the period when fitness was deemed the prime qualification for a public charge. He would not have lifted his finger to obtain the highest place in the government of the State or the nation, and had he been elected to the humblest post of civic duty, he would have accepted it, and have put into it the best work that could be done for and in it. He belonged (as long as it existed) to the Federalist party, and had the singleness and tenacity of aim and purpose which constituted the enduring praise of its leader, yet undoubtedly led to its inevitable defeat and disorganization. In the latter years of his life he voted with the Democratic, then with the Free Soil party, but took no active part in the measures of either. In addition to his public and official duties, Mr. Rantoul had a large and beneficent life-work. Private trusts seemed to gravitate spontaneously in his direction, and no man can have had them in greater number or diversity than he, if we except those who make the management of them a profession. As executor, administrator, guardian or trustee, he had in his hands a large proportion of the estates in Beverly, especially when such a charge was a charity. If there was a small or heavily-encumbered estate from which there was a possibility of saving a pittance for a widow or children, he was almost always solicited to assume its management, and there were many instances in which a family that, but for him, would have been left in utter penury, had their slender means secured, invested and husbanded by him, without cost, and without ever being reminded of their indebtedness to him. His widowed sister and her children were hardly less under his assiduous and generous charge than if they had lived under his own roof. Of the two orphan children of a brother-in-law, he adopted one as his own daughter, and so managed the patrimony of both as to surrender it on their majority with an incredibly large increase. The late Rev. Dr. Anderson and his two brothers were the step-sons of his sister-in-law, and the sons of a clergyman who left them a very scanty inheritance, which Mr. Rantoul, as their guardian, so administered as to make it suffice, so far as they were informed, for their college and professional education. Two of the brothers died young, but the venerable survivor never ceased to speak with the warmest gratitude and affection of his early care-taker and benefactor.

Mr. Rantoul was among the pioneer reformers of his time. When, as a military officer, several years before the existence of the earliest temperance society in the world, he received the company under his command at his own house, he omitted the usual supply of intoxicating liquors, taking care to add to the entertainment more than a full equivalent for their cost. From that time—how long before we do not know—he never tasted such liquors, or had them in his house, and for a long time he found himself, at public tables and on festive occasions, the only water-drinker.

He was the first person in Massachusetts to stir the question of capital punishment, which he kept constantly before the Legislature, and toward the discussion of which he contributed largely by legislative reports and through the public press.

Always opposed to slavery, yet equally opposed to philanthropy of the denunciatory type, he was in full sympathy with the advanced opinions of wise and patriotic men in favor of emancipation.

Of Mr. Rantoul's private character it is impossible that any eulogy should exceed the truth. His firm religious faith and principle were made manifest in a rigid conscientiousness which could not neglect or slight any known duty. His integrity was not only strict and unswerving, but often transcended its own proper measure, so that in what he meant as simple justice he was not unapt to wrong himself, sometimes, indeed, at a very serious loss and sacrifice, assuming responsibilities which no one else would have regarded as in anywise belonging to him. While always ready to meet every legitimate call of charity, he was, in fact, much more generous than he seemed. He obeyed in full the evangelic precept of reticence as to his good deeds, and there were many cases in which funds inadequate for the needs which they were to meet could have been made sufficient only as supplemented by his unostentatious kindness.

In his family, as a neighbor, as a friend, as a citizen, no man could have been more trusted, honored and revered than he was, or more deservedly.

Of church and State he was one of the strong pillars, that are never replaced in the public esteem and confidence till the generation that relied on their support has passed away. Mr. Rantoul was never in vigorous health, but seldom ill; his mind retained its unimpaired vigor till his last illness.[1]

1859.—The first local paper, *The Citizen*, established on a sure foundation was started this year, after several previous but unsuccessful attempts. The first paper to bear this name was published by Andrew F. Wales, now deceased, the first number bearing date of March 17, 1851, with Rev. Ira Washburn as editor.

The later *Citizen* was founded by John Batchelder

[1] Further details of Mr. Rantoul's life, and his connection with town affairs, may be found in his "Reminiscences," published in the "Historical Collections of the Essex Institute."

Cressy, who, during twenty-three years of ownership, wisely maintained it as a valued depository of local news and history. In 1882 it became the property of Irving W. Allen, under whose management it has been enlarged, but with the main features preserved that conduced to its success.

1860.—In the presidential election of this year the vote of Beverly is recorded: for Lincoln and Hamlin, 739; Bell and Everett, 120; Douglas, 72; Jefferson Davis, 23; total, 954.

It must be admitted that the people of Beverly were not unanimously in favor of the Anti-Slavery movement, although its principles had won with the majority. The struggles and triumphs of the friends of the cause are a part of yet unwritten history.

One of them, Mr. A. N. Clark, kindly furnishes the following data regarding the formation of the Beverly Anti-Slavery Society: Although the plan of colonizing Liberia, as a means of civilizing and Christianizing Africa, as well as helping to rid our own country of the curse of slavery, had been earnestly presented to the people of Beverly, in their churches, and contributions sought in aid of that endeavor, it was not till about the year 1832 that immediate emancipation began to be advocated and the rights of the slave to his freedom and citizenship upon the soil where he was born.[1] Lectures were frequently delivered upon this exciting theme and earnest debates held before the Beverly Lyceum.

The universal sentiment was opposed to the extension of slavery, but very few, then, were in favor of complete emancipation. The temper of the public mind at that time is well known. By some, Garrison and his immediate followers were denounced as dangerous to the well-being of the nation; while they, in turn, accused the northern churches of being in fellowship with the South—the "Bulwark of American Slavery"—and declared the Constitution of the United States a "covenant with hell."

There were other advocates who were listened to with more of patience, and who did good service in correcting and moulding public opinion: such men as Pierpont, May, Staunton, Leavitt, Phelps and Phillips.

The church doors, however, had become barred against the Anti-Slavery advocates, and the Old Town Hall became the battle-ground; and this only was secured by some of the citizens giving a bond for its security against violence.

As early as 1833 an Anti-Slavery Society was formed in Beverly, not numerous, for it required courage to "stand up and be counted." The object of the society was to educate public sentiment in regard to the great evil of American slavery and the safety to both races in its immediate overthrow. A library was established for the circulation of tracts and other literature on the question of slavery as was then available. This library, as a matter of convenience, was located at the drug-store of Augustus N. Clark, on Cabot Street, the proprietor of the store acting as librarian. The library case was made by John Tuck, 2d, and by him presented to the society; it has been carefully preserved, while the library, made up as it was mostly of pamphlets and unbound books, has disappeared.

Of the original members of the society, Augustus N. Clark, John I. Baker, Charles Moulton and Eben H. Moulton, still survive.

The society continued during six years, when slavery becoming (1840) an issue in politics, it ceased to exist; but the impetus of the movement could not be arrested; the result the world knows.

BEVERLY IN THE CIVIL WAR.

It has been fully shown, in the pages preceding, that the people of Beverly were ever animated by highest principle, and were never wanting in military spirit. A well-trained militia was always to be found here at call; as early as 1662 there was a foot company under Captain Thomas Lothrop. After his lamented death, at Bloody Brook, Lieutenant William Dixey was appointed to the command, by the General Court, and he was succeeded by Paul Thorndike. A company of horse had been organized previous to 1689, with William Rayment as captain, William Dodge as lieutenant, John Dodge, Jr., cornet, and Thomas West quartermaster.

They were on the point of being disbanded, by order of General Court, in 1690, but at their earnest request were allowed to continue, provided they could furnish "forty able-bodied troopers, equipped according to law," which they did. The services of our soldiers in the various fights with the Indians, and during the Revolution and the war of 1812, have been detailed. Between the peace of 1783 and the end of the eighteenth century the military spirit was at an ebb, but rose promptly with the exigencies of the occasion.

In 1800 (October 17th) the first voluntary association of men as a light infantry company was formed, but not organized under the law till June 2, 1801. They were then regularly enlisted under an order from Lieutenant-Colonel James Burnham, of the Third Regiment. Jonathan H. Lovett was chosen captain, Josiah Gould lieutenant, and Robert Rantoul ensign.

This company was disbanded in 1814, but in 1815 another light infantry company was organized, which has existed to the present time. Its first captain was William Thorndike, and his successors various respected citizens eminent in different walks of life. This organization kept alive the spark that might otherwise have become extinguished during the long period of peace; especially at the annual "May trainings" and "Fall musters."

[1] See, also, Wilson's "Rise and Fall of the Slave Power," vol. i., p. 264. *et., seq.*

During nearly fifty years of peaceful life, the Beverly militia had fought its bloodless battles on the training-field; the monotony of its existence seemed likely to continue unbroken during an equal period, when suddenly there came the occasion for its services.

1861.—It is significant, that, though there were formerly three military companies in Beverly, these had dwindled to one in 1860, and that one a voluntary association. But this one, Company E., Beverly Light Infantry, was alert and prepared for action; its commander had his "ear to the ground" for the first premonitions of war.

In the *Citizen* for January 19th, 1861, is printed the official order by Governor Andrew, for Beverly to be ready at all times to furnish her quota of troops upon any requisition of the President of the United States. The original of this order is now in possession of Colonel Francis E. Porter, then captain of Company E. The paper adds: "In accordance with this order, Captain Porter has notified Company E. to meet at the armory on Monday next, at seven o'clock."

The sequel is thus stated: "Company E. at a special meeting, in response to the order of Governor Andrew, had a full and enthusiastic rally, and *sixty-seven* readily volunteered for any service that might be required of them by the government."

And two months later the following:

"The order for the meeting of the Eighth Regiment was received here on Monday, April 16th, and early on Tuesday morning the flag of the Beverly Light Infantry was waving on their armory. The company mustered in full ranks, and with music, marched to the station to take the 10 50 train for Boston, being frequently greeted by the waving of handkerchiefs by the young ladies in the shoe factories on Railroad Avenue. Some time elapsed before the arrival of the train, during which the company went through the drill exercise quite satisfactorily. Before leaving, each officer was the recipient of a splendid sword and revolver, gifts from friends here."

"After they had entered the train, and as it left, cheer after cheer rose from the assembled multitude who had gathered to witness their departure. The company is composed of young men who are called away from the scenes of home and cherished associations to serve the land of their birth in the hour of need, and most cheerfully have they responded to the call. The wishes of every loyal citizen and lover of his country go with them.

"While the company were drilling at the station, Mr. William J. Smith, not a member, but whose breast was filled with patriotism, and who has experienced some of the hardships of Texan life, hearing the sound of the drum, dropped his axe and hastened to respond to the call to arms. He left with the company and his name appears on the roll.

"On arrival at Boston the company marched to Faneuil Hall, where they quartered until Thursday, when they left for Washington at 6 P. M."

The same paper announcing their departure contained, also, the President's proclamation for 75,000 troops, dated Washington, April 15th, the surrender of Sumter, April 13th, the attack on the Sixth Regiment by the Baltimore mob, and the additional information that the Eighth had safely reached Philadelphia and was quartered in the Continental hotel.

"On the 15th of April, 1861, (says Schouler's 'Massachusetts in the Rebellion') Governor Andrew received a telegram from Washington to send forward at once 15,000 men. The drum-beat of the long roll had been struck.

"On the morning of the 16th the companies began to arrive in Boston, and before nightfall every company that had received its order in time reported at headquarters for duty."

Company E. was the first in Massachusetts to report for duty; Captain Porter received his orders at five P. M., April 15th, when he immediately notified his men in person, reporting ready for duty that night. It was the second to arrive in Boston, and could have been the first, had not Adjutant-General Hinks sent word that the company was not needed before twelve o'clock.

Subscriptions were started for a relief fund for soldiers' families in town, and had reached the amount of two thousand eight hundred dollars on the morning of their departure.

April 20th, a mass meeting was held in the town-hall, and patriotic speeches were made by many citizens. The relief fund, at the close of the meeting amounted to three thousand dollars.

The ladies of Beverly organized a society for the furnishing of clothing and other necessaries to the militia of the State. One hundred and thirteen ladies attended the first meeting; Miss Hannah Rantoul was chosen president, with an able corps of assistants.

Military companies, formed in various parts of the town, received over one hundred members during the first week.

Following Schouler's "Massachusetts in the Civil War," we find that the Eighth Regiment, which had arrived in Boston on the 16th, did not leave the city till the 18th, when it marched to the State-House and was presented with a set of regimental colors by Governor Andrews, who also addressed the soldiers in spirited terms. The regiment left Boston at four o'clock that afternoon, greeted everywhere along the route to Philadelphia "with the same unbounded enthusiasm the Sixth had received. General Butler accompanied it as commander of the Massachusetts brigade. The regiment reached New York on the morning of the eventful 19th of April,—when the soldiers of the Sixth were attacked by the Baltimore mob,—and marched down Broadway amid the congratulations of the vast multitude. This was the second Massachusetts regiment that had marched through that city in advance of all others, while two other regiments were on the seas for Fortress Monroe."

It was in Philadelphia, where they arrived that evening, that they received details of the attack upon the Sixth, that day, in Baltimore.

"This intelligence gave new energy and enthusiasm to the men, and made them more eager to press forward to Washington. They had expected to reach the capital by way of Baltimore; but that route was now closed, and a new one had to be opened, which served as the military highway to Washington for Eastern troops, until sedition was suppressed in Baltimore, and that city assumed a loyal attitude. The new route was by the Susquehanna and Chesapeake

Bay to Annapolis, the capital of Maryland. A branch railroad of seventeen miles connected Annapolis with the Baltimore and Washington Railroad. By this route, Washington could be reached without touching Baltimore. . . . . The railroad from Annapolis to the Junction, where it connects with the Baltimore and Washington Railroad, had in part been destroyed, and the engines and cars partially disabled. After considerable delay, the track was relaid and the engines and cars put in order by the men of the Eighth. To the Eighth Regiment will ever be the honor of having opened the route to Washington by the way of Annapolis, and of having saved from possible loss the frigate 'Constitution,' the 'Old Ironsides' of the War of 1812."

The regiment arrived in Washington on the afternoon of Friday, April 26th, eight days after its departure from Boston.

Referring to the achievements of this regiment at Annapolis, the *National Intelligencer* of the next morning remarked:

"We doubt whether any other single regiment in the country could furnish such a ready contingent to reconstruct a steam engine, lay a railroad track and bend the sails of a man-of-war."

One of the company wrote home that week, that President Lincoln appeared on their arrival in Washington, and said:

"Three cheers for the Eighth Regiment of Massachusetts, who can build locomotives, lay railroad tracks and re-take the Constitution."

On the arrival of the Eighth Massachusetts Regiment at Annapolis, General Butler found the railroad engine-house locked up. He broke it open, and discovered the engine all in pieces. "Who knows anything about an engine?" was the question.

One man stepped out of the ranks and said: "I do, General, I made that locomotive, and can repair her in two hours,"—and he did.

This was Chas. S. Homans, a native of Beverly. When in Washington he was visited and congratulated in person by President Lincoln.

A member of the New York Seventh writing of this event at the time, said that Charles S. Homans, of the Beverly Light Infantry, was the *deus ex machina*, who found his mark written on the disabled locomotive at Annapolis, and superintended its construction.

Mr. William Isaac Smith, who volunteered as fireman on this occasion, was the gentleman who left his labors to join the company in the depot at Beverly.

He is now living at Ryal Side, and Mr. Homans is still living, though an invalid.

A letter from Capt. Porter, dated May 8, 1861, describes the regiment as in good condition, undergoing thorough drill and quartered in the House of Representatives.

The Sixth Massachusetts Volunteers, he adds, were the first to reach Washington, and the Eighth opened the military route from Annapolis. "We should have been the next, had we not received a despatch from General Scott to stop at Annapolis, and guard that post until the arrival of another regiment."

The first man of the regiment injured was Lieut. Moses S. Herrick, of the Beverly Company, who was shot in the foot by the accidental discharge of a musket, in the rotunda of the Capitol. The muskets, loaded with ball cartridges, were stacked around near the wall, and as some men were bringing in mattresses, they knocked a stand down, one of the guns being discharged into Lieut. Herrick's foot, mutilating it terribly. The limb was amputated by the surgeon of the Sixth, and Lieut. Herrick bore his great misfortune bravely, only lamenting that he could not have received the wound while fighting in the field. Attentions of every sort were showered upon him as he lay in hospital, and also *en route* home and in Beverly. He is residing in Beverly today, in the Upper Parish, the house of the Chipmans and Herricks.

1861.—*May* 15, At a town-meeting in aid of the Beverly soldiers, the following resolutions were unanimously adopted:

"*Resolved*, That we tender to the officers and soldiers now absent in the service of the country, our warmest meed of praise for their noble and manly self sacrifice, in so readily responding to the national call, and for the skill, energy, perseverance, courage and ability which they so faithfully evinced in their triumphal progress and march to the nation's capital.

"*Resolved*, That we tender to the far-famed Seventh Regiment of New York, our heart-felt thanks for their many kindnesses to our Eighth Massachusetts Regiment, and especially for their liberality towards our wounded fellow-citizen, Lieut. Moses S. Herrick.

"*Resolved*, That our warmest sympathies be tendered to Lieut, Herrick in his misfortune, and that we pledge ourselves to him and to all his associates in our Beverly company. and our other Beverly soldiers, and to their respective families, to render all the material aid and comfort that we can legitimately bestow."

The last of August, 1861, Lieut. John W. Raymond, who had returned with the Eighth, proposed to recruit a company in Beverly, to be attached to the old regiment, if revived, otherwise to some other Massachusetts regiment.

In less than a month he had raised over sixty men, who were encamped under his command on the common. The name proposed for the company was the "Rantoul Guard." The first of October the company chose as officers: Captain, John W. Raymond; First Lieutenant, Henry P. Woodbury; Second Lieutenant, Daniel W. Hammond.

On the Sunday succeeding (October 5th), they attended, in a body, divine services at the Washington Street Church, in the morning, and at the Baptist in the afternoon.

October 15th the gallant captain, with nearly his full complement of one hundred of the picked men of the town, went into camp at Lynnfield. Before they had fairly departed from the town a new movement was on foot for the recruiting of another company, with the promise of more than members enough to help fill it at the outset.

This Company G was attached to the Twenty-third Regiment, Col. Kurtz, and in November we find them encamped at Annapolis.

The interdependence of soldiers and citizens is well shown in one little incident of this period. A request was sent from Capt. Raymond to Capt. F. E. Porter, at home, for a supply of such shirts as the Ladies' Aid Society had furnished them. The letter arrived on Monday, on Tuesday the ladies were industriously at work, and on Friday they packed and forwarded over one hundred of the required garments to their brave brothers at the front.

The history of the Twenty-third Regiment has been carefully written by Dr. James A. Emmerton, of Salem: "A Record of the Twenty-third Regiment," Boston, 1886.

"Hardly had the year (1862) opened, says the historian, "when these new made soldiers found themselves amid the dangers and privations of Hatteras, and in early February they took a prominent part in the battle of Roanoke Island—one of the completest as it was one of the first of Union victories.

"The capture of Newbern soon followed, and, after that, the regiment, though by no means inactive, saw little of pitched battle for two years.

"In the Virginia campaign of 1864, it was in the forefront of the almost uninterrupted fighting which followed the landing at Bermuda Hundred, and culminated in the stubborn and bloody repulse of Beauregard at Drury's Bluff; it gained the foremost ground reached and held by the Eighteenth Corps at Cold Harbor, and bore its full share of the dangers and privations of the early days of the siege of Petersburg. A remnant of its veterans and recruits was employed in picket and outpost duty till the campaign of 1885, when they shared the fortunes of the column which opened communication with Gen. Sherman."

The first week in May, 1864, the Beverly boys of the Twenty-third lost heavily in killed and wounded. Captains Raymond and Woodbury, of Companies G and F, were captured and wounded, but the former effected his escape by cutting his captor nearly in twain with his sword, while the latter shot his assailant with his revolver. Officers and privates all sustained the honor of their native town at the peril, and many with the sacrifice, of their lives.

An episode of the Drury's Bluff battle (May 16, '64) in which Captain Raymond was a participant, is narrated in the "Record of the Regiment."

"Captain Raymond, of 'G,' following the retreating regiment, stopped to help a wounded man, Bray, of his company. Concluding, from the bloody torrent gushing from his breast, that he could do no good, he rose to leave him, and found the rebel line, with colors, close upon him. His contemptuous refusal to surrender brought a volley upon him which tore his clothes, carried away his sword-belt and almost blinded him with the dust and bits of bark torn from neighboring trees. Yielding to first impulse, he opened a return fire from his revolver, but speedily recognizing the odds against him, he left the field in the hands of the enemy and escaped into the favoring fog."

And again, of the fighting before Petersburg, the regiment historian says:

"About the 1st of July, Captain Raymond, of "G," who, since we had lost Colonel Chambers, and Major Brewster was disabled by his wound, was, practically, in command of the regiment, had another, and perhaps the closest of his escapes from serious injury. I do not forget that the bullet which, hitting him in the head at Drury's Bluff, left him for a time unconscious, or the missile which passed just below his right armpit, grazing his thorax and arm, at Cold Harbor, came very near his life. This time the immediate disability was more lasting, and the remote effects have never disappeared. He was sitting on a trench, reading a letter, when a shot or shell from some rebel gun plunged through the heaped earth, struck the log on which the captain's shoulder rested, and threw him against the sharp-angled abutment of the stairs. Examination showed a rib broken, another bent, and a third bruised; but Captain Raymond would not go to the hospital, insisting that he could not be spared, and that his cure would progress as well in the trenches as anywhere else."

Letters from the front, from our brothers encamped before the enemy throughout the South, from on board men-of-war and gunboats, were for three years prominent in our local papers. They all breathe the same spirit, of fervent patriotism, disregard of danger and high devotion to principle, that infused their ancestors under similar circumstances a hundred years before.

Until the latter part of '61, Beverly had been fortunately exempt from grave casualties, but as the next year opened began the list of dead and wounded that soon lengthened portentously.

The first Beverly soldier who died during the Rebellion, private Levi F. Larcom, was buried with military honors.

The religious services were held in the First Baptist Church by Rev. J. C. Foster, Rev. Dr. Abbott pronouncing the benediction.

1862.—The first soldier killed in conflict with the enemy was private William Wallis, who was fatally wounded in the battle of Newbern, on the 14th of March, and died on the 16th. As a specimen of the thousands of soldiers' letters now speeding back to the north with their sad tidings, the following is quoted; written by a comrade of the deceased to his widow.

"Dear Friend:—I now take up my pencil, with a sad heart, to inform you of the death of your beloved husband. I was close by him when he fell. I carried him back to the rear, out of the range of the shot, and left him in the care of the doctor. He was willing to die, but you and the children were all that seemed to trouble him. He gave me your likeness and his Bible, and asked me, if I lived through the battle, to write to you and let you know all about it. I then had to leave him, as the battle was raging with fury. We drove the rebels out of their dens, and took possession of the city. It was then night; the next morning I made enquiries for him, but he had passed away, with a good faith in God. He gave his life for his country's cause, and he now lies in his silent grave, far from home. May God, in his tender mercy, watch over the little ones he has left behind! I shall send the likeness and Bible to you as soon as I can.

"No more at present, from your friend,

"Wm. F. Early."

The chaplain of his regiment, and also his captain, pausing in the heat of conflict, sent home loving tributes to his worth.

On the 19th of April, just a year from the Baltimore massacre, died, private James Williams, another of the soldiers wounded in the Newbern fight. He, with two other comrades, James Dodge and John Glidden, had been badly wounded, he in the leg, by a ball which passed through the knee and dropped into his boot; Glidden was shot through the thigh, and Dodge through the shoulder. Funeral services were held in the Dane Street Church, Rev. Dr. Abbott preaching an impressive sermon. The coffin was deposited in the church, and upon its lid the fatal bullet.

Thus were we reminded of the terrible consequences of war. Scarce a week passed, now, that some name was not added to the death-roll, or that did not witness the return of some disabled patriot. Williams was the first man, as Dr. Abbott said, who had died among us from a wound received on the field of battle.

At a town-meeting, July 10th, which was a full and enthusiastic one, it was voted:

"That the selectmen of this town be authorized to allow and pay, in addition to the customary allowance for the benefit of the families of volunteers, the sum of one hundred dollars to each person who, as a part of the quota of this Commonwealth, shall within twenty days be duly enlisted in this town into the volunteer service of the U. S.; payable when mustered into service. The selectmen are authorized to use the credit of the town fully to carry this into effect."

At the same time, recruiting was going on vigorously, with the prospect of a full company of one hundred and one men being raised in a short time.

The Beverly company raised at this time, Company K, was attached to the Fortieth Massachusetts, with Edward L. Giddings as captain, John F. Piper, first lieutenant, Leonard G. Dennis, second lieutenant, and left for the seat of war September 4, 1862.

Company E, of the Eighth, was mustered out August 1, 1861. The next call was made May 26, 1862. Banks having been driven back into the Shenandoah Valley, the government called for more men. Ninety men responded in two hours after orders were received. They proceeded to Boston where, after remaining two days, they found they were not wanted at that time and returned home.

On the 19th of September, Company E was again mustered in for nine months, with three officers and ninety-eight men. They departed for Newbern, the day before Thanksgiving, and arrived there on the 4th of December. The next day, before the company received its arms and equipments, it was ordered with Company A of Newburyport to Roanoke Island where it remained till June 28th. It then received orders to join the regiment at Newbern. On reaching Newbern, the company found that the regiment had been ordered to Baltimore and followed on, arriving there July 12th, only to learn that the regiment had gone to Maryland Heights where the company found it finally. The same day, the company started with the regiment for Funkstown Md., where it arrived on the afternoon of the next day, just in season to see the rear of Lee's army across the Potomac. After following it down the Potomac to Bealton's Station on the Rappahannock, the company was ordered to report at Massachusetts, its term of service having expired, arriving about the first of August.

1864.—*April 28th*, another call was made on Company E, this time for garrison duty at forts in Massachusetts. It proceeded at once to Readville. It was mustered into service with three officers and eighty-eight men who served ninety days and were then mustered out and re-enlisted for one hundred days' service. At the expiration of that time they were mustered out and nearly all the men re-enlisted again, for a year, in the Second Unattached Company, Massachusetts Volunteers. The company was reorganized at once in Beverly with three officers and one hundred men and was ready for service during the winter of 1864–65.

On the 21st September, 1887, Company E held a reunion of its surviving members, at which were present many who had served during the Rebellion. With the field music marched drummer George M. Tucker, beating the old drum which he brought from Washington in the summer of '61, with the same sticks which sounded the calls and the long roll, not only for Company E, but for three years in the First Massachusetts Heavy Artillery.

The following is the original roll of the company, stars indicating those who have since died:

Captain, Francis E. Porter.

1st Lieut., John W. Raymond.	2d Lieut., *Eleazer Giles.
3d Lieut., *Albert Wallis.	4th Lieut., Moses S. Herrick.
1st Serg., *Henry P. Woodbury.	2d Serg., *Reuben Herrick, Jr.
3d Serg., Benjamin F. Herrick.	4th Serg, Alfred Porter.
1st Corp., *Samuel Bell.	2d Corp., Hugh J. Munsey.
3d Corp., *George R. Sands.	4th Corp., *John Low.

Drummer, George M. Tucker.

Privates.

Charles B. Allen.	*George H. Goodridge.	Edward H. Ober.
*W. A. Andrews.	*Samuel Goodridge.	*Moses A. Pedrick.
Jesse A. Blake.	Samuel Gordon.	George H. Pickett.
*A. J. Blanchard.	*William E Grant.	John F. Piper.
James Brown.	Daniel W. Hammond.	*George W. Pevier.
Thomas D. Brown.	*Henry A. Hale.	Wm. H. B. Poland.
William E. Choate.	Francis P. Haskell.	*J. S S. Rogers.
*William A. Cleaves.	*Josiah T. Hitchings.	*Godfrey Scott.
Fred. A. Currier.	George C. Holden.	Thomas J. Smith.
*John H. Chipman.	Charles S. Homans.	William I. Smith.
Charles L. Darling.	*Henry P. Larcom.	*Joseph G. Stone.
*John Dean.	Samuel O. Lee.	Charles Story.
John H. Dennis.	Charles A. Lord.	Edwin Southwick.
*Leonard G. Dennis.	John W. Masury.	*William A. Teague.
Alonzo P. Dodge.	Arthur Meldram.	Amos B. Trask.
Chas. H. Ferguson.	Chas. W. Mitchell.	Eben Trask.
William A. Friend.	John E. Moses.	Fred. A. Wallis.
Thomas Gavin.	George A. Mowatt.	William H. Warren.
*Ezra A. Glidden.	John Neville.	William W. Warren.
		*Sheribiah S. Webber.

1864.—On the 26th of April, the Fifty-ninth Regiment left the State, to join the command of General Burnside. In this regiment were thirty-one soldiers from Beverly, in Companies A, B, C, G and H. Company C was commanded by Captain John H. Chipman, who had returned to recruit for the regiment.

The Fifty-ninth went into active service at once, and within a month were coming back the sad returns of killed, wounded and missing.

Beverly Men in Company E, 23d Regiment.

Captain, John W. Raymond.
1st Lieut., Henry P. Woodbury. 2d Lieut., Daniel W. Hammond.

Sergeants.

Wm. E. Choate.	William G. Munsey.	William F. Earley.
Samuel Goodridge, Jr.	Joseph H. Baker.	Charles Friend, 2d.
Charles W. Mitchell.	Charles R. Dennis.	

Corporals.

Charles R. Allen.	Thomas D. Davis.	Edward B. Perry.
Dennis Carney.	James Dodge.[1]	George H. Pickett.
John W. Clayton.	Charles G. Fernald.[1]	Thomas J. Smith, Jr.
John J. Dalton.[1]	Austin Glidden.	Joseph P. Wallis.[1]

Musicians, Alfred J. Hall and Charles H. Webber.
Wagoner, George F. Bragdon.

Privates.

Abbott, Stephen W.*	Dennis, Charles R.*	Maxcy, William.
Agent, Joseph F.*	Dow, John E.	McGrath, Lewis.
Allen, Joseph C.	Dupee, Antoine.*	Morgan, Edmund C.
Allen, Stephen B.	Elliott, Charles, 2d.*	Ober, Edward H.
Arnold, James H.	Elliott, Israel, Jr.*	Parker, Charles F
Ayers, Jacob E.	Ferguson, Alfred W.	Pickett, George A.*
Barry, Patrick, Jr.	Floyd, Joseph M.	Randall, Lewis J.
Bassett, Thaddeus.	Gavin, Thomas.	Reed, Perrin W.*
Batchelder, Ira D.	Goodwin, Joseph D.	Sands, Stephen B.
Berry, Thomas.	Glidden, Austin.*	Southwick, Lakeman.
Blanchard, Andrew J.	Glidden, John.	Stocker, Charles H.
Boden, James W.	Glover, Charles F.	Taylor, Charles W.*
Bray, Benjamin.*	Grush, Addison E.	Taylor, William K.*
Bradbury, Jacob.	Handley, Michael.*	Thissell, Ebenezer.
Brendon, Robert.*	Higginbottom, Joseph.	Thissell, Levi A.
Brown, Robert W.	Holden, Charles.	Trask, Albert.*
Burke, Edward K.*	Jewett, George S.	Trask, Amos B.
Burke, Thomas.*	Johnson, Joseph H.	Trust, Peter.
Caldwell, Augustus.	Jones, Charles W.	Vickery, Joseph F.
Caldwell, Jacob.	Kennison, Benjamin.	Wallis, William, 2d.*
Carrico, Charles.	Lefavour, James A.	Webber, Eleazer A.*
Carey, Robert, Jr.	Leach, John.	Weeks, Stephen L.
Caswell, Joseph W.	Liffin, John.	Whidden, David.*
Clark, Nathaniel W.*	Lufkin, William H.	Williams, James E.*
Clark, William T.	Lull, John.	Williams, Oscar P.
Crampsey, Israel.	Marshall, John D.	Woodbury, Levi J.
Cressy, Benj., 3d.	Masury, George, 2d.	Young, Isaac T.*
Crombie, Enoch.		

* Deceased.

Beverly Men in Company K, 40th Regiment.

Captain, Edward L. Giddings.
1st Lieut., John F. Piper. 2d Lieut., Leonard G. Dennis.

Sergeants.

Reuben Herrick, Jr.*	William H. Brown.*	J. Francis Jenness.
Joseph W Stocker.	David M. Carter.	Varnum S. Pedrick.
John M. Brown.*	Albert W. Haskell.	J. Lewis Preston.*

Corporals.

Alfred Corning.*	Samuel W. Greer.*	George W. Howard.
Benjamin F. Cressy.	Eph Hathaway, Jr.	Edmund G. Josephs.
Dexter H. Fawcett.	Chas. H. Henderson.*	George J. Nutter.
George W. Glidden.*		

Musician, Addison A. Center.*

Privates.

Andrews, Asa.	Holden, Elbridge J.	Prince, George W.
Blanchard, Henry J.	Howe, George F.*	Selfe, William A.*
Blanchard, Wm. H.	Jenness, Charles H.	Seeley, George S.
Bryant, George W.	Lord, Charles W.*	Stickney, Charles.*
Burchstead, John.	Lovett, Francis S.	Taylor, John M.
Butman, William A.	Lovett, Josiah W.	Teague, William A.
Crampsey, Isaac.	Marshall, George W.	Thissell, Jonas.*
Crafts, Samuel O.*	Pickett, Charles H.	Thissell, Nicholas S.
Donegan, Thomas J.	Pierce, George W.	Tuttle, C. Frank.*
Ferguson, Jere. W.	Pierce, George W., 2d.	Webber, Timothy R.
Grush, Joseph.*	Pierce, Thomas L.	Webber, Tristam L.
Hall, Benjamin D.	Poland, William H. B.	Wentworth, Charles A.
Harwood, Francis.	Poor, William H.*	Wilbur, Henry.*
Haskell, George E.	Porter, Nathaniel, Jr.*	Woodbury, Benjamin.*

* Deceased.

[1] Holding this rank on their return.

BEVERLY'S WAR RECORD.[2]—The whole number of men furnished to the army during the Civil War, under the various calls, was as follows:

April 16, 1861.—Three months' men	75
June 17, 1861.—Three years' men (rec. as bounty $17,100)	172
July 4, 1862.—Three years' men (rec. as bounty $9,900)	140
August 4, 1862.—Nine months' men (rec. as bounty $10,000)	101
March 14, July 8 and December 19, 1864.—Three years' men and one two years (received as bounty $24,020)	127
Also three years, including re-enlisted, who received no bounty	118
In addition to the above we have furnished, for ninety days	86
For one hundred days	77

Making a total of 896 men, and $61,120 in bounties, of which the State refunded $18,600.

Besides the foregoing, some hundred at least of the Beverly men have served in the army for other places, and nearly as many more have served in the navy.

The whole number of Beverly men who have died in the army and navy is about ninety, or ten per cent. of the whole number enlisted,—a much less percentage than that of our early California emigration.

A reception to our esteemed veterans was given August 4, 1865, when the day was observed as a general holiday. Soldiers and citizens marched in procession to Standley's Grove (where the tables were spread), marshalled by Col. John W. Raymond, of the military veterans, and Masters' Mates George P. Abbott and George Woodbury, of the navy.

RECAPITULATION.—The number of enlistments from Beverly in the United States army during the Rebellion was 608; in the navy, 74; total, 682. The *whole* number of enlistments, counting re-enlistments for nine months, one hundred days and three years, was 988. The several calls of the government for men were promptly met, and at the close of the war Beverly stood credited with a surplus of 90 men, sufficient to meet her quota on a call of 300,000 men, had it been given. Beverly furnished 32 commissioned officers from the army, most of whom were promoted from the ranks. A large number in the naval service also received commissions as volunteer officers.

Three military organizations represented our town in the army: Companies E, of the Eighth Regiment; G, of the Twenty-third; and K, of the Fortieth, while the rolls of almost every regiment from the eastern part of the State bore the names of Beverly men.

The effects of the war did not cease with the surrender of Lee; indeed, they may be traced to-day in the battle-scarred and maimed veterans yet in our midst.

1863.—The street railway lines of Salem, introduced there in 1862, were extended through the business portions of Beverly.

In July, a mission service of the Episcopal Church was opened at Union Hall, under the charge of the

[2] From the *Citizen*, of August 5, 1865.

rector of St. Peter's, of Salem, the Rev. Wm. R. Pickman. The following year Rev. S. H. Hilliard had it in charge, and in 1865 the church was erected at the corner of Cabot and Bow Streets, with Rev. Mr. Pickman as rector, until his removal to Michigan about a year later. Rev. F. M. Cookson was rector till 1870, and Rev. George Denham till Easter, 1872. From May 13, 1873, to 1878, the Rev. William G. Wells, succeeded by Rev. J. C. Wellwood. In 1885, Rev. Roland C. Smith.

1866.—June 15th, Capt. John H. Chipman died of disease contracted in the service of his country, through exposure, wounds, and the cruelties of the infamous Libby prison. He was scarcely twenty-eight years old at the time of his death, yet had won for himself and the place of his birth the highest honors. He was a descendant in the third generation from the Rev. John Chipman, pastor of the Second Parish Church, 1715–75.

Captain Chipman volunteered with the Eighth at three hours' notice and left behind him a bride of but two months. He participated in the march to the capital, but was prostrated by hemorrhage from the lungs, and returned home. Rapidly recovering, he once more enlisted for nine months, serving which he returned, but was soon commissioned a captain in the Fifty-ninth Regiment, raising a company, and was assigned to Burnside's corps. At Cold Harbor he was accidentally wounded in the hand, came home on a furlough, but soon recovered, resumed his command, and entered the rifle-pits before Petersburg. Soon after he was taken prisoner, and confined in several of the horrible pens in which the rebels kept their captives, and was not released until February, 1865. His constitution was now undermined by sickness, but he reported to his regiment as soon as recovered sufficient'y, only to be honorably discharged. A year later he sank beneath his infirmities and soon was carried to the grave, having been preceded thereto, two months before, by his young and devoted wife.

The school district system was abolished, and an improved order of things educational inaugurated.

The first steam fire-engine was purchased this year.

1867.—The first Methodist Church was organized April, 1867, with Rev. Allen J. Hall as pastor. Services were held in the town-hall at first, but a church and parsonage were built on Railroad Avenue in 1869, during the pastorate of Rev. J. M. Bailey. The church building was enlarged to its present dimensions in 1886, and is a conspicuous feature of the section in which it stands. In 1870 Rev. C. S. Rogers was settled here; in 1872, Rev. S. C. Jackson; in 1874, Rev. M. E. Wright; in 1877, Rev. A. P. Adams; in 1878, Rev. Daniel Waite; in 1881, Rev. Seth C. Cary; in 1883, Rev. John Capen; in 1885, Rev. James W. Barter.

1867.—Ancient and Modern Cemeteries.—An important addition was made to our cemetery grounds in the purchase by the selectmen of about ten acres of the Bancroft estate, known as Walnut Hill. This hill, which commands one of the finest prospects in town, lies immediately east of Galley s Bridge.

Fifty years ago there were eight burial places in the township,—two near the second parish church, one in Dodge's Row, one at Ryal Side, one at the Farms and the three in the town proper. The oldest of which mention is made in the records is that near the vestry of the First Parish and intersected by Abbott Street, in which lie the remains of the first three ministers of Beverly,—Hale, Blowers and Champney. This was the only burial-place within the limits of the First Parish until 1790.

The earliest decipherable dates on stones in the ancient burial-place are 1678, 1686, 1683, the last of which is at the grave of Rebecca, wife of Rev. John Hale.

The old graveyard of the Second Parish shows as its most ancient stone that at the grave of Joseph Herrick, bearing date 1717. It was opened 1715, and the first occupants were a child of John Dodge, Jr., and the wife of John Trask. The second cemetery here was laid out, near the meeting-house, in 1803. In the old Leach burial-lot at Ryal Side, is the unmarked grave of Reuben Kennison, the first Beverly soldier killed at the battle of Lexington.

In 1788 a lot of land was purchased near the common, and the first grave there was that of Mary Allen, widow of Capt. Barnabas Allen, in January, 1790. Other stones here indicate the last resting-places of many famous in the eighteenth century and first part of the nineteenth.

An extension of the second cemetery was made in 1829, easterly towards the beautiful Walnut Hill, with which it was joined in 1867, forming one continuous tract of about forty acres.

Longevity.—It may be interesting, in this connection, to note some of the examples of longevity in the past, as shown by the grave-stones and the records of the town. On one stone in the Dane Street cemetery are the names of five members of the Appleton family, whose combined ages reach four hundred and four years, among them one who died at one hundred and three.

Beverly has had a good many nonogenarians, among those of the past half century being:

Huldah Davis, who died in 1843, aged 96 years; Lydia Appleton, 1845, 103 years, 8 months, 4 days; Amos Trask, 1846, 91; Mrs. Judith Pickett, 1846, 92; Lucy Gage, 1846, 98; Mollie Dodge, 1846, 91; Elizabeth Trask, 1849, 92; Anna Woodbury, 1849, 91; Anna Miller, 1851, 93; Sarah Trask, 1851, 95; Abigail Tarbell, 1851, 96; Phyllis Cane (colored), 1852, 90; Elizabeth Lowe, 1853, 96; Rose Larcom, 1853, 94; Mark Morse, 1854, 96; Susanna Standley, 1855, 93; Joanna Prince, 1856, 90; Asa Osler, 1857, 91; Molly Trask, 1858, 90; Elizabeth Prince, 1858, 90; Miss Judith Pickett, 1858, 93; Chloe Turner, 1859, 95; Susanna Stone, 1859, 91; Hannah Moulton, 1859, 91; Charity Glover, 1863, 93; Betsey Grant (who saw Washington on his visit to Beverly), 1863, 91; Elizabeth Standley, 1864, 92; Moses Howard, 1866, 91; Mary Pierce, 1867, 93; John Falls, 1867, 92; David Tarbox, 1868, 96; John Cressy, 1869, 94; Samuel Thissell, 1870, 92; Catherine Lane, 1870, 94; Peter Homan

(who also saw Washington), 1871, 91; Sally Adams, 1873, 90; Jacob Groce, 1876, 96; Nancy Reynolds, 1876, 91; Mary Heard, 1877, 91; William Dodge, 1877, 92; John Coleman, 1878, 94; Elizabeth Page, 1878, 95; Betsey Morse, 1878, 93; Lydia Stone, 1878, 90; Elizabeth Woodbury, 1879, 90; Nancy Stocker, 1879, 90; John Bradshaw, 1880, 93; Jesse Woodbury, 1881, 94; James Stone, 1881, 91; Mary Connolly, 1882, 90; Thomas Ferris, 1882, 90; Charlotte Smith, 1883, 93; Judith Sands, 1883, 90; Margaret Brady, 1883, 94; Stephens Baker, 1883, 91; Margaret Roundy, 1884, 96; Elizabeth Wilkinson, 1884, 93; Nancy Morgan, 1885, 90; Joseph K. Russell, 1885, nearly 95; Abigail Young, 1886, 93; Lucinda Howard, 1886, 90; Jane Hill, 1886, 90.

There are nearly sixty residents of Beverly, eighty years old and upwards, as follows:

	Age.
Daniel Foster	80
Andrew Larcom	80
Mrs. Louisa Foster	80
Mrs. Elsie Kent	80
John Picket	80
Mrs. Lucy K. Shaw	80
Mrs. Johanna P. Foster	80
Mrs. Adaline A. Wallis	80
Israel Trask	80
Paul H. Ober	80
John Clark	81
Mrs. Eben Smith	81
Mrs. Serena Ingersoll	82
David P. Roberts	81
Mrs. Robert Goodwin	81
Sullivan Brown	81
Francis A. Smith	81
Mrs. Abigail Prince	81
John O. Standley	82
William Ferguson	82
Mrs. Mary Preston	82
Oliver D. Kinsman	82
Samuel Odell	82
Franklin Haven	82
Mrs. Nancy Webb	82
Lyman Mason	82
Mrs. Betsey Lefavour	82
Hiram Preston	83
Mrs. Emeline Caldwell	83
Israel Elliott	84
Mr. Corson	84
Mrs. Nabby Sheldon	84
Edward Burley	84
George Babcock	84
Mrs. Mary Vickery	84
Ebenezer Rogers	84
Mrs. Theresa Haskell	84
Mrs. Sarah O. Perry	84
Mrs. Abby Pedrick	84
Charles Marshall	85
Mrs. Mary Glidden	85
John Porter (died September 7, 1887)	85
Mrs. Sarah C. Tracy	85
Robert Goodwin	85
Mrs. Augusta Goodrich	86
Richard Clark	86
Benjamin Ludden	86
Benjamin Preston (born the last day of the last month of the last century)	87
Mrs. Mary Kendall	87
Mrs. Nancy Sargent	87
William Endicott	88
Mrs Hannah Leach	89
Mrs. Nancy Woodbury	90
Mrs. Nancy Trowt	90
Thomas Hanners	90
Hannah Batchelder	91
Henry Wilson	93
Mrs. Lydia Elliott	nearly 93

1868.—Miss Joanna Quiner, who was born August 17, 1796, and died September 20, 1868, acquired more than local fame as a sculptor, after she was forty years of age. Said the editor of the *North American Review*, July, 1843:

"In a town more remarkable for the sober good sense and unostentatious manners of its inhabitants than for their tastes in the fine arts, the discovery of an undoubted genius is a remarkable event and deserving of record. Miss Quiner, of Beverly, with proper patronage and advantages, would take no mean rank among American artists. Without instruction or cultivation of any sort, her talent for modeling in clay has already attracted much notice."

She died in poverty without having secured that recognition of her genius it so richly deserved. Her portrait, painted by Frothingham, was presented to the public library, and a highly appreciative sketch of her life and work appeared in the *Citizen* of about the date of her death.

Memorial Day, 1868, Post 89, G. A. R., placed iron "markers" at the head of every soldier's grave. They then identified one hundred and fifty in all; a list of names is given in the *Citizen* of November 2, 1868.

1869.—The Roman Catholic Church, organized this year, purchased and remodeled the house of worship formerly occupied by the First Baptist Society, and built a parsonage adjoining. It was dedicated in 1870 by the Very Rev. P. F. Lyndon, Vicar General of the Diocese of Boston, assisted by Rev. Fr. Singer, of St. Patrick's, Montreal, Rev. Fr. Haskins, of Boston, Rev. Fr. Delehanty, Rev. Fr. Higgins and Rev. J. J. Gray, of Salem. The first pastor was Rev. Fr. Shahan, who was succeeded by Rev. Fr. Keiley, he by Rev. W. J. J. Denvir and he by Rev. W. H. Ryan.

At the Farms, in 1887, a handsome church was built for the Roman Catholics in that section, at a cost of eleven thousand dollars. It is one hundred and ten feet long, sixty-five in width, with seats for five hundred people.

It was dedicated October 9, 1887, by the Very Rev. Archbishop John J. Williams, assisted by several others, and is known as St. Margaret's.

1870.—January 14th. This date died Charles Davis, at the age of seventy-four, a prominent and wealthy citizen who, at his death, left bequests to the Essex Institute, of Salem, and to the First Parish Sunday School, five thousand dollars each. He passed most of his life on the homestead farm, inherited through his mother, near the head of Bass River. The old house here has a connection with witchcraft times, as having been the residence, in 1692, of Thomas Gage, who made deposition against one Dr. Toothaker. It is related that during the War of 1812 a brick oven containing rows of bean-pots stored full of Spanish dollars was bricked up, and the treasure there secreted was not disclosed till many years had passed. Not far away lies the homestead farm of Roger Conant, who came here in 1635, one of the "Old Planters."

1871.—Israel Whitney, a son of Dr. Elisha Whitney, died November 12th, aged seventy-four years; one of Boston's most respected merchants, and of Beverly's cherished sons. As a shipmaster, he was

for many years in the employ of Israel Thorndike. His adventures as merchant captain were sometimes perilous, as when his ship "Beverly" was burned at sea, despite his heroic efforts to save her, and when he was exposed to great suffering in an open boat, for several days. Leaving the sea, he became interested in manufacturing, was for thirty-four years director in the Massachusetts Bank and for thirty years a director in the National Insurance Company, besides having other interests in Boston.

He left nine children, six sons and three daughters. His appreciation of the natural beauties of his native place was emphasized by early residence here, after his retirement from maritime life, in one of the most delightful retreats on the shore, near the mouth of Sallow's Brook.

1872.—On the 28th January, died an old and highly-respected shipmaster of Beverly, Capt. Samuel Endicott, for a long time president of the Bank, and for forty years one of its directors.

Capt. Endicott was the seventh in the line of direct descent, from Gov. John Endicott, who came to Salem from England in 1629, as follows:

(1) Gov. John Endicott, (2) Samuel, (3) Samuel, (4) Samuel, (5) John, (6) Robert, (7) Samuel. He was born July 18, 1793, and was the son of Robert and Mary (Holt) Endicott, his mother being a daughter of Rev. Nathan Holt, of Danvers. Capt. Endicott was a fine specimen of the shipmasters of the old school, and sailed for many years in the employ of that eminent Salem merchant, Joseph Peabody. He was for several years in command of the famous ship "George," whose arrival from Calcutta in the spring was as regularly looked for and realized as the recurrence of the months, and which was largely manned by Beverly sailors.

Two worthy citizens, whose lives of probity and industry as mechanics endeared them to all, passed away in January; Deacon Joseph Wallis, at the age of sixty-five, long connected with the First Baptist Church and Sunday-school, and Reuben Herrick, at the age of sixty-seven years. Deacon Wallis lived in the house of Mr. Herrick, who had three sons in the Civil War: Reuben, Jr., who lost his life, and two others, Benjamin T., and Frank S., who served in the Union Army.

The new almshouse was finished in February, which is located on the side of the cedar-covered hill near Essex Street, commanding delightful prospects by sea and land. The main structure is fifty by sixty feet, with three stories, mansard roof and basement. It contains every convenience of the times, thirty-six furnished rooms for inmates, offices, etc.

The town owns real estate adjoining, to the extent of twenty-seven acres, the cost of which, with the buildings, was about twenty-five thousand dollars. Owing to its eligible location, and its natural advantages, this property could, probably, be sold at any time at a price exceeding its total cost.

The town early gave attention to the condition of its poor, and the few paupers lived well, "boarding around" after the manner in which teachers of country schools are even yet entertained. One of the conditions of contract with a pauper, in 1723, was that he should be "kept as a Christian ought to be kept," and doubtless he was. The name of a certain Joshua Turland frequently appears in the town records as the first supported at the town charge, being entertained first by one substantial citizen, and then by another. The first almshouse was built in 1803, though the town voted to provide one nearly a century earlier. This was situated in Charity Court, near Essex Bridge, and during the latter years of its existence its hospitalities were severely taxed by numerous representatives of the genus "tramp." It was a comfortable old house, and gave a pleasant home to the poor and friendless, who had acquired a right of residence.

A notable character deceased January 17, 1872, in the person of a life-time inmate of the almshouse,—Hector Ross. This "child of natural and unbiased affection" was born in the poor-house, October 9, 1809; his mother, Joanna Stoutly, and his father, a French West Indian of color, reported of fabulous strength. Hector himself was of great strength (imagining himself a Hercules), and though a little "off color," and in intellect a "little below the average," he was yet a great favorite with the children. Two or three generations have been amused by his vagaries, his droll stories and his comic songs. He had a quick wit and retentive memory, but his hallucinations possessed him completely. He claimed to resemble the great Bonaparte (and his profile was indeed markedly Napoleonic), although his color was that of rich mahogany. He firmly believed himself the rightful heir to immense wealth, which various citizens of the town, now one individual and now another, retained from him in their possession.

Schools and Education.—There is nothing on record in regard to the education of the young prior to 1656, when a meeting-house was built and used as a school-room, which arrangement continued for eighteen years. In 1674 a school-house was built on the town's land near the meeting-house, twenty by sixteen feet and nine foot stud, which was also used for a watch-house. Samuel Hardie was the first school-master, at a salary of twenty pounds. He kept the school several years.

In 1686 an agreement was made with Corporal Perkins to furnish a school-room, with a fire-room in it, for the space of six months, for ten shillings, and John Perley was engaged for the term ensuing; his salary, twenty pounds "in pay" or ten pounds in money per year.

In 1700 a Grammar School was established, and Robert Hale, son of the first minister, appointed teacher at a salary of ten pounds. In 1701 Daniel Dodge was the teacher, and in 1704 James Hale,

brother of Robert, taught writing, reading, casting accounts, Latin and Greek grammar, at a salary of thirty pounds.

In 1720 this school was kept by Pyam Blowers, son of the second minister.

In 1782 the Grammar School was discontinued, for which the town was presented to the Court of Sessions, when it was resumed and kept till 1825. It was held in various places till 1798, when it was established in a new house on Watch Hill, the second story being fitted up for town purposes.

About the middle of the century the teacher was required to return a list to the selectmen of the names of parents and masters and the number of children and servants instructed by him. The selectmen were to tax the parents and masters for the support of the schools, and the children and servants of persons refusing to pay their proportion of fuel were not allowed to warm themselves by the school-house fire.

In 1749 the sum of thirty-two pounds, old tenor, was granted to the inhabitants of the eastern part of the town, towards a school, during four months, and in 1752 a Grammar School was kept there a time proportionate to the amount of taxes paid. From 1754–1825 various changes were made, until the Grammar School was abolished, and it was voted to divide the school money raised among the ten school districts.

In 1836 these school regulations were revised, and a list of books for study prescribed.

In 1797, "considering the populous and increasing state of the town, and the decayed state of the school-house on the common, the town voted it expedient to build a new Grammar School-house, 43x32½ feet, of two stories, each about ten feet stud, with room below of about thirty-one feet square for the school, and the same above for town-meetings and other purposes, with room convenient for selectmen and assessors, with one below for a library and with a convenient entry and stairway."

The site on Watch Hill was bought of the heirs of Larkin Thorndike, by the building committee, and the next year, 1798, school was opened here under the tuition (it is believed) of Andrew Peabody, father of the Rev. Dr. Peabody, whose successor was Silas Stickney, who was succeeded by Isaac Flagg.

Until 1841, when the town, having bought the Thorndike mansion and fitted it for a town-house, the hall in this building was used for municipal purposes.

Then the district bought the school-house and land and gave it the name of Briscoe, in honor of Robert Briscoe. In 1873 the school-grounds were enlarged by the addition, by purchase, of the lands of several adjoining estates, and the old school-house removed to the lot on the common, where it now stands, but little distant from the site of the original school building of 1674.

In 1875 the Central Grammar School was opened in this building, the name of which was changed to the Hardie School, in honor of the first school-master, Samuel Hardie.

Just after the Revolution a school was established by a few of the citizens in Dike's Lane (now Elm Square). It was in a small, plain building, heated by a large open fire-place, and about forty scholars was the maximum attendance. The price of tuition was four dollars per quarter, and none of the teachers, all of them college graduates, received over five hundred dollars salary. There was a class in Latin and Greek, and the English scholars were divided into three classes. The sexes were about equally represented. This school lasted about thirty years, Isaac Flagg being the last teacher, who, when this was discontinued, took charge of the Grammar School in Briscoe Hall.

Among the early teachers of this school was William Prescott, a son of Colonel Prescott, of Bunker Hill fame, afterwards a distinguished judge, who came to Beverly to study law with Hon. Nathan Dane. He established his first law-office in Beverly; his daughter, Mrs. Franklin Dexter, is one of the oldest sea-shore residents.

The High School was not established until after a conflict of several years, the opposition being not so much against the establishment of the school itself as from a fear that the money devoted to its support would be proportionately taken from the various district schools, all of them being popular local institutions, and each with its special neighborhood attractions.

The towns had become large enough to be liable in law to support a High School, and some of its friends got so far out of patience in waiting for the town to establish it that they had it indicted. This but intensified the opposition, which was then a decided majority, and they at first attempted to defend the town; but eventually yielded, though the school was at first established at the West Farms, at some distance from the centre of population.

It was established in October, 1857, under John R. Baker as master, the scholars mostly going to it by railroad.

In 1860 it was voted to discontinue the school, but in 1861 the subject was referred to a committee of one from each school district, who reported in favor of locating it in Odd Fellows' Hall, then on Railroad Avenue. Afterwards the town bought the present armory building on Cabot Street, where the school was held until the completion of the Briscoe Building, in which excellent accommodations had been provided for it. The principals have been John R. Baker, Joseph Hale Abbott, Leroy N. Griffin, Willard G. Sperry, Edwin C. Colcord, Enoch C. Adams, Benjamin S. Hurd, who have always had the services of valuable assistant teachers.

Within the past twenty years the greatest improve-

ment has been made in the schools and buildings. Anticipating for several years the abolition of the district system in 1866, the school-houses throughout the town had fallen into decay; and this condition of things necessitated vigorous measures when the town took charge. New buildings were erected in every district save one (at the Cove), where the house was enlarged and beautified.

1875.—In January of this year the finest school building in town was dedicated, standing in the place of the Hardie school-house, and known as the Briscoe. The total cost of this brick structure, the architect of which was J. Foster Ober, a son of Beverly, was about seventy-five thousand dollars.

The school census of Beverly recently completed, shows sixteen hundred and eighty-four children between the ages of five and fifteen years—an increase of twenty-eight over last year,—

In the South District about	479
In the Briscoe District about	417
In the Washington District about	364
In the Cove District about	142
In the Farms District about	130
In the Bass River District about	65
In the Centreville District about	52
In the Dodge's Row District about	35

In 1873, at the age of seventy years, Joseph Hale Abbot deceased, in Cambridge. Mr. Abbot was well known to the people of this town through his long connection with the High School, and his marriage with the only daughter of a prominent citizen, Captain Henry Larcom. He was a descendant of the first minister of Beverly, Rev. John Hale, and a relative of Rev. Abiel Abbott. He left a widow, who survived him but a short time, and several children. One of his sons, Edward S. Abbot, is buried here, having died in his country's service.

Of Beverly's place in literature, it is yet early to write. Of the published productions of the earlier writers—Hale (tract on witchcraft, and sermons), Champney, Hitchcock, Willard, McKean (published sermons), Dr. Abiel Abbott and Rev. Joseph Emerson (sermons by the former, and "Letters from Cuba;" scientific and educational essays by the latter)—mention has been made. The greatest contribution to legal lore was by Hon. Nathan Dane, in his "Digest of American Laws," etc.

A daughter of Dr. Abbott, Miss Anne W. Abbott (still living, at nearly eighty years of age), wrote many charming story-books for children, as: "Kate and Lizzie," 1845; "The Tamed and the Untamed," "The Olneys," etc.; and a popular game of her invention forty years ago, "Dr. Busby," is still published for the delight of the youth of to-day.

One of the first books descriptive of the islands of the South Sea was written by a Beverly lady, Mrs. M. D. Wallis, under the title of "Life in Fejee."

One who wrote throughout a long life was Wilson Flagg, whose delightful descriptions of nature are unsurpassed. His first observations were conducted in Beverly, and his first literary productions emanated hence. The books that have made his reputation, as a poetic and thoughtful student of nature, are "Birds and Seasons," and "Woods and By-ways of New England." Besides these, he published other books and contributed for many years to the magazines and papers.

Another eminent author, whom we may claim as a native of Beverly by right of birth, is Rev. Dr. A. P. Peabody, whose valued works on Christianity and Ethics are familiar to all readers. His most popularly-known books, perhaps, are "Conversation" and "Reminiscences of European Travel."

Of America's distinguished women, one who has modestly won an enviable position in the world of letters, is Miss Lucy Larcom, another descendant of Beverly's pioneer families. Miss Larcom began to write verses while running about the fields and hills of Beverly, as a child, and continued to do so during her earlier years, while a mill-girl at Lowell. She was, perhaps, the youngest contributor to the *Lowell Offering*, published by the working-girls of that city, many years ago. She continued to write for publication during the years that followed, while studying and teaching in young ladies' schools.

Her first volume of poems was published by Fields, Osgood & Co., about 1868. This was followed by other volumes of verses: "An Idyl of Work," "Childhood Songs" and "Wild Roses of Cape Ann." A complete collection of her poems has recently been added to their "Household Edition," by Houghton, Mifflin & Co. She has also compiled several works, as, "Breathings of a Better Life," "Roadside Poems for Summer Travelers," "Hillside and Seaside in Poetry," etc.

To travel and history, Frederick A. Ober, a native of Beverly, has contributed "Camps in the Caribbees," a personal narrative of adventure in the West Indian forests, "Travels in Mexico," a "History of Mexico," the "Silver City," and other stories of adventure.

Yet another descendant of the first of his name in Beverly, is George E. Woodberry, author of a "History of Wood Engraving," a "Life of Edgar A. Poe," of a threnody entitled, "The North-Shore Watch," and of other poems, which have won the admiration of scholars and critics.

In 1849 deceased, at West Needham, William B. Tappan, who was born in Beverly, the author of that beautiful hymn, "There is an Hour of Peaceful Rest." Of other writers, mention may be found in the pages preceding; but it is not claimed that the list is an exhaustive one, and the historian craves the reader's indulgence.

In January, 1875, Rev. George Trask, the anti-tobacco philanthropist, died in Fitchburg, at the age of seventy-seven. Mr. Trask did battle for principle throughout a long and active life, and was an honor to Beverly, the town of his birth.

1876.—The oldest inhabitant of Beverly died April 20th, this year—Jacob Groce, who was born February 12, 1780. In early life he followed the sea, making many trips to the West Indies, Europe and elsewhere. In 1800 or 1801, while on a passage to the West Indies in the schooner "Sally," with Capt. Gideon Ray, his vessel was chased by a French privateer, captured and taken into Guadaloupe; sailing thence, on board the privateer, they were again captured, by a British man-of-war, and afterwards sent home on an eastern lumber vessel, after remaining a while in Martinique. In 1812 he was taken prisoner by a British sloop-of-war, carried into Bermuda and thence to Halifax, where he and his companions were nearly starved. Mr. Groce's life was unambitious though serene in his latter years, and his example was one of goodness and charity to his fellow-men.

1878.—*March 17th* passed away the then oldest inhabitant, in the person of Mrs. Elizabeth Whitney Page, at the age of ninety-five years and three months. Her husband was Josiah Page, who was drowned off the coast of Sumatra, 1810; and she was a daughter of Dr. Elisha Whitney, whose wife, Eunice, was daughter of General Michael Farley, of Ipswich, a descendant of the Farley who came from England in 1675.

1879.—Dr. Wyatt C. Boyden deceased, after a long residence in Beverly, at the age of eighty-seven. He was born in Gardner, Mass., in 1794, but reared in Tamworth, N. H., where his early life was passed on a farm. He graduated from Dartmouth in 1819, a class-mate with Rufus Choate, and he was the last survivor of his class. Dr. Boyden came to Beverly Farms in 1823, where he first taught school, and there married and began practice as physician. In 1825 he removed to the centre of the town, and in 1826 succeeded to the practice of Dr. Abner Howe. As citizen and physician he was held in high esteem; he took a lively interest in local affairs, and especially in the cause of education; was a trustee of the Fisher Charitable Society for fifty-one years.

1880.—*November 1st*, Dr. Augustus Torrey, son of Dr. Joseph Torrey, a well-known physician of Salem, and in his later years of Beverly, and a grandson of the famous Rev. Manasseh Cutler, of Hamilton, died, this date, in his seventy-sixth year. He graduated at Harvard in 1824, and from its medical school in 1827. He married a niece of Nathan Dane, and left a family of five sons and two daughters. He is remembered as a worthy citizen, a man of fine literary tastes and a skilled practitioner. In the same profession as his father and grandfather is Dr. Samuel Torrey, son of Dr. Augustus Torrey, who maintains the prestige of the family to-day.

Two physicians long identified with the town were the Drs. Kitteredge, father and son, who are mentioned elsewhere in this volume.

1881.—There died in Philadelphia, March 31st, where he had resided since 1867, Dr. Isaac Rea, at the age of seventy-four. He was a son of Beverly, educated at Phillips Academy and Bowdoin College, and studying medicine at the Harvard Medical College. He practiced medicine in Portland and Eastport, Me., and was appointed superintendent of the Maine State Lunatic Hospital in 1841, and of the Butler Hospital for Insane, at Providence, R. I., in 1846, where he remained till 1867. He won high recognition for his practice and theory of the medical treatment of insanity, and published many valuable books on the subject, which are recognized as authorities. The physicians practicing in Beverly to-day maintain the reputation of their predecessors. The oldest practitioner is Dr. Chas. Haddock, who has had thirty-five years of service here, and with whom is now associated his son, Dr. Chas. W., the next being Dr. Oscar F. Swazey, with thirty years of practice in our midst.

September 28th, James Stone, long prominent in maritime offairs. and a prisoner of 1812, deceased, at the age of ninety-two years.

1882.—*October 13th*, the soldiers' monument was dedicated, which stands on the triangular lot of land at the junction of Abbot and Endicott Streets. It was erected by the comrades of "John H. Chipman" Post 89, G. A. R., from the proceeds of various fairs, during several years, and subscriptions by our townspeople. Four years previously, after advertising for designs for a soldiers' and sailors' monument, the post accepted the design submitted by the Hallowell Granite Company, of Maine, at the price of four thousand eight hundred dollars.

The corner-stone was laid October 10, 1882, and a box deposited beneath it containing, among other papers, a brief sketch of each full company furnished by Beverly for the war: Company E, Eighth Regiment, Capt. F. E. Porter; Company G, Twenty-third Regiment, Capt. John W. Raymond; and Company K, Fortieth Regiment, Capt. E. L. Giddings, as also their memorable battles, etc.

The dedicatory exercises were held on the 13th, and called to Beverly many distinguished people as participants, among them the Governor, John B. Long, and staff, and veterans from other Grand Army of the Republic organizations.

The procession formed was the largest the town had ever witnessed within its limits, containing twenty-six hundred, with delegates from all the county posts, members of the entire Fire Department of Beverly, and no less than fourteen bands of music and drum corps. A section of Battery C, of Melrose, fired the salutes of the day, opening with seventeen guns for the Governor, and closing with a national salute of thirty-eight guns, at the end of the exercises at the monument.

The chief marshal was Col. John W. Raymond, of Beverly, with Col. H. P. Woodbury as chief of staff, and Dr. Chas. Haddock surgeon-general. Col. F. E. Porter commanded the First Brigade, which con-

tained Post 89 with its one hundred and fifty members, led by Wm. H. Morgan, commander. The monument was dedicated by Post Commander Wm. H. Morgan; prayer was offered by Wm. Stafford, chaplain of the post, and an address by Rev. J. F. Lovering, of Worcester. Owing to an accident, by which the platform on which were the invited guests, seventy-five in number, was thrown to the ground and several people injured, the exercises here were interrupted and the procession moved to the common, where a dinner was served in the mammoth tent, and toasts were responded to by the eminent guests of the occasion.

Many buildings along the route of the procession were handsomely decorated. At one point was stationed an old war-horse, thirty-four years of age, from whose back was killed Col. Wells, of the Thirty-fourth Massachusetts Volunteers, and in whose body were several bullets received in battle.

The monument was cut from fine white granite, is thirty-six feet in height, with a square base, twelve by twelve feet. The plinth is six feet six inches square, and on the dies, five feet four inches square, are the inscriptions:

"To the soldiers and sailors of Beverly;
"Erected in behalf of the citizens of the town by Post 89,
'Department of Massachusetts, Grand Army of the Republic, 1882;
"Embalmed in the memories of the succeeding generations, the heroic dead will live on in immortal youth;
"Teaching in eloquent silence the lesson of the Citizen's duty to the State."

The corners of the dies are ornamented with carved cannon. The shaft is surmounted by the figure of a soldier loading at will.

Post 89, Beverly, G. A. R., was organized June 6, 1869, and took its name from John H. Chipman, who went out a second time to the war as captain of Company C, Fifty-ninth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers, which was recruited in town and composed in part of Beverly men.

The Post has a membership of 200, and has paid out, for the benefit of comrades and families of deceased members, in the past six years, over $6,000. On the 1st of November, 1882, the monument was formally presented by the Post to the town, with public exercises in the town hall, presented by Commander Morgan, and accepted by John I. Baker in behalf of the town, and a list was published of the soldiers and sailors who had died in service since the war.[1]

In April, of this year, died Capt. Jona. H. Lovett, a retired sea-captain, and David Lefavour, at the age of seventy-six, one of the first shoe manufacturers of the town.

The *Beverly Times*, a valuable local paper, was established this year by Messrs Morgan & Bates.

1883.—The Rev. Edwin M. Stone, formerly minister of the Second Parish Church, 1834–47, representative 1842 and 1844, and the author of a "History of Beverly," died in Providence December 22d, aged seventy-eight years. The latter part of his life was passed in Providence, R. I., where for some years he was a city missionary. He had done much literary work in the course of his life, his latest and most valuable publication being "Our French Allies in the Revolution."

Miss Elizabeth Manning Hawthorne, the last surviving sister of Nathaniel Hawthorne, died January 1st, aged eighty years and nine months. For the thirty years then past she had lived a very retired life in a farm-house at Monserrat, almost unknown to her neighbors. She was two years the senior of her gifted brother, who, it is said, often declared that she could attain fame if she would devote herself to literary pursuits. Hawthorne's grandmother, daughter of Jonathan and Lydia (Cox) Phelps, was born in Beverly, June 1, 1734, in the house that stood on or near the site occupied by the Roman Catholic parsonage.

In excavating for the foundation of the Lawrence Pottery, to replace the one destroyed by fire, an ancient brick kiln was unearthed. The bricks were somewhat longer and wider than those now in use, and thinner.

November 17, Benjamin O. Pierce, aged seventy-one, died in Beverly, well known as a public educator.

1884.—*January* 9, Lieut.-Col. Henry P. Woodbury died at the age of forty-eight years. One of the first to respond to the call for three months' men, in 1861, as first sergeant, under Col. Porter, he re-enlisted at the expiration of this term of service as first lieutenant under Capt. Raymond, in Company G, Twenty-third Regiment. He fought gallantly to the end of the war in 1865, sustaining injuries from which he never recovered. He left a widow and two sons, and an aged mother, Mrs. Nancy Woodbury, who is now living (1887), in excellent health, at ninety years of age. Colonel Woodbury represented the town in the Legislature in 1877.

May 6, at Cambridge, died Wilson Flagg, aged seventy-eight years and six months. Mr. Flagg was an ardent lover of nature, and the author of several books on birds and trees: "Studies in Field and Forest," 1857; "Woods and Byways of New England," 1872, and other books, as well as many articles in the *Atlantic Magazine*. His rare musical talent he inherited from his father, Isaac Flagg, the school-master and choir-leader of the old South for many years. "One of his most wonderful feats in the musical line was his arrangement of the songs and notes of the birds to music, as given in their grand anthems of May and June, particularly the song of the vesper bird, the peculiar trilling notes of the 'veery' and the solemn tones of the wood-thrush with its strange cadence. One can say, in the words of Emerson, as he wrote of Thoreau: 'His soul was made for the noblest society; wherever there is knowledge, wherever there is virtue, wherever there is beauty, he will find a home.'"

[1] Pub. in *Citizen* of Nov. 4, 1884.

In December, 1884, the South School-house was destroyed by fire with a loss to the town of $2,000. A new building was erected in 1885 at a cost of $25,000.

1885.—In June this year the old mill at the head of Bass River was burned. It is about two hundred and fifty years since the first mill was erected in Beverly, probably by John Friend, who had a grant of land (ten acres) in 1637, and one hundred more in 1638. In 1665, after Friend's death, his heirs granted and confirmed to John Leach, son of Lawrence, "the mill and mill-house standing in Bass River, with all the appurtenances, with two acres of land adjoining and twenty acres a little distance off, all on Ryall's Neck side. "This was reognized as the property of Lawrence Leach by the town of Salem, in 1627, when it decided that the way from the meeting-house to said mill shall be directly in the country way to Edmund Grover's (near the present corner of Cabot and Beckford), etc., substantially as Mill Street to-day, but crossing the mill-pond farther up the stream than the present road over the dam. Relics of the old dam and gateway may still be seen, and the course of the ancient roadway may yet be traced.

The original mill was probably much nearer the head of the stream than the last one. At the point where Bass River Brook meets the tide-water is a high embankment, which once served as a dam and another still farther up. One of these dams was used to confine the water for the cotton-mill erected there in the last century.

The oak frame of the old mill, or a portion of it, is in one of the barns formerly owned by Aaron Dodge, near the mill-dam. In 1669, John Leach, miller, sold to John Dodge, Jr. for two hundred and fifty pounds, all the lands, dwelling-house, mills and privileges. This Capt. John Dodge, Jr., was a son of William Dodge, the first of the name here. In 1702 he deeds to his son-in-law, Ebenezer Woodbury, for two hundred pounds in silver, "all my grist-mill, alias corn-mill, in Salem, with 2 acres of land in Salem & 1½ acres in Beverly, with all streams, water tools, implements, etc."

Bass River was then a boundary between Salem and Beverly. The heirs of Ebenezer Woodbury, in 1798, sold the mill property to Thomas Davis, Jr., who had married a daughter of Israel Woodbury.

This property was purchased in 1848 by Aaron Dodge, who in 1851 enlarged it and added the elevator and tower, said to be the first in the State.

This well-known mill was run by tide-water as a grist-mill until 1882, when it was purchased by a Boston man and used for grinding rubber.

In 1882–83 a son of Mr. Dodge, Israel W., and associates, erected the large structure known as the Eastern Elevator and Mills, four stories in height, surmounted by a tower three stories higher, or ninety feet from summit to basement. This is one of the best establishments of its kind, and is furnished with every known appliance for discharging and loading cars, grinding grain, etc.

In 1885 there were in Beverly nine claimants entitled to reparation for French spoliation, on account of the losses to brig "Nancy" in 1798, and to the schooner "Esther" in 1799.

The oldest person in Beverly, Joseph K. Russell, died at the age of ninety-four years, seven months. He was a soldier and pensioner of 1812, and had lived for seventy years in the same house in Black Swamp, from which he had not been absent a month.

In August one of the most promising of Beverly's daughters, Miss Alice L. Moulton, died in Steelenbosch, South Africa, whither she had gone as a teacher in February, 1884. Miss Moulton was a graduate of Wellesley College, where she had won high honors Her ideals and aspirations were pure and elevated, and her young life was consecrated to the cause of Christianity.

Fire Department and Water-Works.—In August and September, 1885, the town voted to accept the act of Legislature giving it permission to erect water-works and maintain an independent water supply, at a cost, exclusive of land damages, not to exceed one hundred and fifty thousand dollars.

A committee of sixteen was appointed, who made a report in November, recommending a pumping station at Wenham Lake, with two pumps, each of two million gallons daily capacity, a reservoir on Brimble Hill capable of holding three million gallons, an eighteen-inch main to connect with the street pipes already laid, and a twelve-inch main to the Farms. Brimble Hill is one hundred and seventy-seven feet above sea-level, and is thirty higher than the Salem reservoir.

Ground was broken for the reservoir on Brimble Hill, the highest elevation in town, in May, 1886, land having been bought here and on the shore of Wenham Lake, where a pumping-station and a cottage for the engineer have since been erected. The system was completed within the appropriation, and went into full operation on the 1st day of October, 1887, and the town is abundantly supplied with water, both highlands and lowlands, having over fifty miles of pipes extending throughout its length and breadth. Beverly had been served with water from the Salem system of supply, which was established in 1807, its reservoir and pumping-station being within the township limits.

Wenham Lake, from which Beverly and Salem obtain their water supply, is from forty to fifty feet in depth, and is fed by springs beneath the surface. The bottom of the lake is composed of white quartz or sand, and the water, from analysis by our best chemists, has been pronounced remarkably pure. The ice formed here is so clear that it has been used successfully as a lens in igniting powder by the sun's rays.

The pond was once famous among the Indians as

the local fishing-ground of the Naumkeags, a stream flowing from it being a tributary of the Ipswich River, on the banks of which their principal settlement was located.

The first murder committed in colonial times, of which we have any record, was near its shore, on the main road from Salem to Ipswich, and the famous Hugh Peters (who was afterwards executed by Archbishop Laud) preached here from the summit of a conical hill (now removed) from the text, "At Enon, near Salim, for there was much water there."

At a town-meeting in 1774 it was voted that if a number of men, not exceeding thirty-five, would purchase a good fire apparatus and engine, and contract to improve the same for extinguishing fires, they should be exempt from serving in any town office, or as jurymen. This vote was carried into effect, a company formed and engine purchased. The company, in 1795, gave up their apparatus to the town, and in 1805 it was voted to raise $1,000 and purchase a new fire-engine, and in 1828 another.

The fire apparatus, in 1843, consisted of three engines, with hose, buckets, axes, etc., one company in the North Parish and two in the centre of the town.

Fire hooks-and-ladders were placed convenient for use. In addition to these, the Union Fire Society, formed in 1804, had ladders, fire-hooks, sails and axes, each member being provided with two leather buckets, a two-bushel bag, a bed-key and a screw-driver. For furnishing a supply of water for fires, four cisterns had been built. The Union Fire Society had a fund of $4,000, which was divided among its members when they disbanded, their services becoming of less importance as public facilities increased.

The first steam fire-engine was purchased by the town in 1866, and on the introduction of Wenham water into the town, hydrants were established extensively, hose-houses were built and efficiently equipped, and the most approved system of apparatus purchased. In all six hose-houses were erected, so that every section, no matter how remote from the town-centre, was thoroughly protected. In addition to these was the steam fire-engine at the central station; and in November, 1885, the building known as the Central Fire Station was dedicated, which cost nearly $20,000, and is provided with a tower, with perfect apparatus, two engines, trained horses and efficient engineers.

At the Farms, in addition to the hose-house, is a new building containing a fine steamer and appointments equally good with those in the central district.

1886.—An electric fire-alarm was established in February, beginning in the manufacturing district, and extending thence into the outlying sections of the town. It started with ten boxes, two in the manufacturing centre, two on Cabot Street, and one each in the South, Washington, Cove, Montserrat, North Beverly and Farms Districts.

An indicator and a two-circuit repeater was put into the Central Station, a striker attached to the First Baptist bell, and a whistle-blower on one of the factories.

In July, 1886, electric lights were introduced into the town, under the management of the parties controlling the gas company, superseding gas for street lights in the most densely-populated parts.

The Beverly Gas-Light Company was incorporated in 1859, furnishing gas to light the streets and to private consumers.

The street railway system was extended in one direction to Chapman's Corner, at the Cove; in another, through North Beverly, to Wenham.

TEMPERANCE AND OTHER SOCIETIES.—We may say of Beverly to-day, as was said of her by the historian of forty years ago, that, "on the subject of temperance she has kept in the van of enlightened public sentiment."

The customs of early times prescribed "drinks" upon nearly all public occasions, but this town was one of the first to abolish that custom. By a vote of March 9th, 1807, the selectmen were requested "not to approbate or recommend for the renewal of their license any person, in the future, as an innholder, who was not provided with accommodations for entertaining travelers."

Such popular educators as Rev. Joseph Emerson and Dr. Abiel Abbott used their influence in promoting the cause of temperance; but the first temperance society was not formed until about 1830, up to which time nearly every grocer in town was licensed to sell intoxicating liquors.

The Beverly Baptist Temperance Society was organized in 1832, as also was a similar association at the Farms. A Temperance Association was formed in the Second Parish in 1833, the Union Temperance Society in 1835, and a Total Abstinence Society in 1838. In 1840 the Washingtonian movement swept over the land, the beneficial influence of which Beverly experienced.

In 1844 the Sons of Temperance, Franklin Division, organized and contained a large and influential membership, which, after many years of valued service, finally disbanded; the new division of the same name in 1882.

The Young Men's Catholic Temperance Society was organized in 1872, the Woman's Christian Total Abstinence Union organized in 1875, and the Woman's Christian Temperance Union, at the Farms, in 1885.

The Crystal Fountain Lodge of Good Templars was organized in 1882.

Other societies of various kinds, which illustrate the intellectual and industrial life of the town, are numerous, as follows:

The Female Charitable Society was incorporated 1836; Beverly Fuel Society, already mentioned; Seaman's Widows' and Orphans' Friend Society, organized 1833; Fisher Charitable, organized 1810; Old

Ladies' Home Society, organized 1886; New England Industrial School for Deaf Mutes (on a farm of fifty-six acres, at Ryal Side), organized 1876; Woman's Relief Corps, John H. Chipman, Jr., No. 30, organized 1883; Knights of Honor, organized 1877; American Legion of Honor, Reuben Kennison Council, organized 1881; Beverly Gas-Light Company, capital stock, $40,000, par value $100; Light Infantry Company, organized 1814; Beverly Co-operative Association, organized 1879; Grand Army Post, organized 1869; Shoe Manufacturers' Association, organized 1865; Lasters' Protective Union, organized 1882; United Order American Mechanics, organized 1883; Independent Order of Red Men, Chicataubut Tribe, organized 1886; Royal Arcanum, Roger Conant Council, organized 1879; Sons of Veterans, Camp John Low, organized 1882; Thorndike Bicycle Club, organized 1881; Daughters of Liberty, Mayflower Council, organized 1885; Golden Rule Alliance, organized, 1885; Beverly Fireman's Relief Association has a fund of $4,500.

The Post-Office.—Owing to its contiguity to Salem, Beverly did not possess distinct postal facilities so early as some other towns in the county. The first postmaster was Asa Leech, before the building of Essex bridge, who also had charge of the ferry and kept a public-house at the corner of Cabot and Davis Streets. He was postmaster for many years. Previous to the establishment of the office here our citizens, as well as those of some other towns, obtained their mail from the Salem office.

Dr. Josiah Batchelder succeeded Mr. Leech, at his death, and kept the office in a house on the corner of Davis and Front Streets. On his removal to Maine, John Burley was appointed, who resigned, and was succeeded by John Lemon, he by Farnham Plummer, who removed the office to a building next to the Thorndike mansion, now the town-hall. Jonathan Smith was the next postmaster, who held the office nine years, until Stephens Baker was appointed, in 1833. Mr. Baker held office sixteen years, at first in his store, where the Hinkley Block now stands, and during his last ten years in the building he erected on the corner of Cabot and Milton Streets. Joseph D. Tuck, who succeeded him, kept the office in the same place, until another change of administration gave it in charge of Gilbert T. Hawes, who established it at the corner of Cabot Street and Railroad Avenue. Thomas A. Morgan succeeded him, under whom the office was opened in the Masonic Block, where his successor, Thomas D. Davis, continued it. Mr. Davis was a soldier of the late war, whose health was seriously shattered by barbarous treatment in the prisons of Richmond and Andersonville. His successor was another veteran of the war, Colonel Francis E. Porter. Under him and his predecessor the office had been brought into a high state of efficiency; but the accession to power of a Democratic administration caused the removal of Colonel Porter, and the appointment of the present incumbent, Jeremiah Murphy. Within the year past the post-office was removed to the Odd-Fellows' Block, at the instance of the inspector from Washington, and fitted with every appointment, so that it is now second to none of its class in the State.

Beverly's Representatives.—Of the early leading settlers of Beverly, Roger Conant was one of the Representatives for Salem to the first General Court in 1634; John Woodbury in 1635, '38 and '39; John Blackleach and Thomas Scruggs in 1636; Captain Thomas Lothrop in 1653, '62 and '64, and from Beverly in 1672, '73, '74 and '75. The other Representatives from Beverly have been Lieutenant John Dodge, son of Richard Dodge, in 1676, '78, '79, '80, '81, '83, '89 and '90; John West, 1677; William Dodge, Sr., 1680; Lieutenant Paul Thorndike, 1681; Exercise Conant, 1682, '83 and '84; Captain William Raymond, 1683, '85 and '86; Thomas West, 1687 (he was also the first Representative from Manchester); Sergeant Peter Woodbury, 1690; Lieutenant Andrew Elliott, 1691, '92, '94, '95 and '97; Captain John Dodge, son of William, Sr., 1693, '96 and 1702; Deacon Samuel Balch, 1698, '99, 1700, '01, '05, '06, '07, 09, '10, '13, '14, '15, '16, '19; Isaac Woodbury, 1703, '04; Robert Hale, Sr., 1708; Lieutenant John Balch, 1711, '12, '27; Captain Joseph Herrick, 1717, '18, '20, '21; Lieutenant Robert Briscoe, 1721, '22; Lieutenant John Thorndike, 1723; Deacon Jonathan Rayment, 1724, '25; Captain Robert Woodbury, 1726, '30; Andrew Dodge, 1728, '29; Lieutenant (afterwards colonel) Robert Hale, 1731, '32, '33, '34, '35, '38, '40, '41, '42, '43, '44, '45, '46, '47, '48, '54, '56, '57; Captain Henry Herrick (of the French and Indian War), 1736, '37, '39, '51, '52, '53; Lieutenant Daniel Conant, 1749, '50; Captain John Leach, 1755 (who had been Representative from Salem in 1750 and '51, before Ryall's Side was annexed to Beverly); Lieutenant (afterwards colonel) Henry Herrick, son of Captain Henry, 1758, '59, '60, '61, '62, '63, '64, '65, '66, '67, '68, '69, '70, '71, '72, '73; Captain Josiah Batchelder, 1774, '75, '76, '77, '78, '79 (and in the Provincial Congress for three of those years); Jonathan Conant, 1779, '81; Colonel Larkin Thorndike, 1780, '82, '86, '87, '90, '91, '92; Nathan Dane, 1782, '83, '84, '85 (also Senator, 1790, '94, '96, '97, '98. Representative to Congress, 1785, '86, '87; Presidential elector, 1812, in Constitutional Convention, 1820); Joseph Wood, 1786, '87, '88, '89, '92, '93, '94, '95, '96, '97, '98, 1802, '03, '04, '05, '06; Captain (afterwards colonel) Israel Thorndike, 1788, 1802, '03, '04, '05, '06, '08 (also Senator, 1807, '08, '10, and in State Convention, 1788, to consider the Federal Constitution); John Cabot, 1792; Captain Moses Brown, 1799, 1800, '01 (and elector of President, 1808); John Stephens, 1800, '01; James Burnham, 1800, '01; Abner Chapman, 1804, '05, '06, '07, '08, '09, '10, '11, '12, '13, '14, '15; Thomas Davis, 1805, '06, '07, '08, '09, '10, '11, '12, '13, '14, '15, '16, '17, '19, '20, '22, '23; Thomas Stephens, 1808, '09, '10 (and Senator, 1811, '12, '13, '14, '15);

Robert Rantoul, 1809, '10, '11, '12, '13, '14, '15, '16, '17, '18, '19, '23, '24, '25, '26, '28, '29, '30, '31, '32, '33 (Senator, 1821, '22, 23, and in Constitutional Conventions of 1820 and 1853); Isaac Rea, 1809, '10, '11, '12, 13; Nathaniel Goodwin, 1811, '12, '13, '14, '15, '16, 17; Nicholas Thorndike, 1814, '15, '16, '17; Josiah Lovett, 1816, '20, '21; Oliver Obear, 1823, '24, '25, '26; William Thorndike, 1824, '25, '26 (in the Senate, 1828, '29, '30, and its President in 1831); Pyam Lovett, 1823, '37; Henry Larcom, 1827, '28, '29, '30; Thomas Stephens, Jr., 1829, '30; Josiah Lovett 2d, 1829 (Senator 1852); Amos Sheldon, 1829, '30; John Safford, 1833, '34, '35, '36, '38, '39 (and in Senate, 1842, '44); Charles Stephens, 1833, '57; Jesse Sheldon, 1833, '34; Cotton Bennett, 1834, '35, '36; Nehemiah Roundy, 1834, '35, '36; Stephen Nourse, 1835, '36; John Conant, 1835, '36; David Larcom, 1837; Ezra Dodge, 1837; Daniel Cross, 1837; Jonathan Batchelder, 1836, '38; Andrew Ober, 1838; Edwin M. Stone, 1839, '42, '44; Thomas B. Smith, 1839, '40; William Lamson, 1840, '41; Edward Stone, 1841; John Pickett, 1842, '44; Albert Thorndike, 1845, '46, '47 (and Senator, 1850, '51); John I. Baker, 1840, '45, '46, '47, '52, '56, '65, '66, '69, '71, '75, '78, '79, '80, '81, '82, '83, '84 (Councillor, 1860, '61, Senator, 1863, '64); William H. Lovett, 1848, '49, '50; Paul Hildreth, 1848, '49, '50; Levi A. Abbott, 1852, '54; William Endicott and Joseph E. Ober, and the latter in the Constitutional Convention; John B. Hill, 1855, '74, '76; Richard P. Waters, 1856 (and in the Peace Congress of 1861); John Knowlton, 1857; Robert S. Rantoul, 1858; Thomas A. Morgan and James Hill, 1859; Andrew F. Wales, 1860; Augustus N. Clark, 1861 (and Presidential elector, 1880); Elijah E. Lummus, 1861; John Meacom, 1862; Robert R. Endicott and Robert S. Foster, 1863; Benjamin D. Grant, 1864; Charles H. Odell, 1865; John W. Raymond, 1866, '67; Joseph Wilson, 1868; Freeborn W. Cressy, 1869, '72; Henry P. Moulton, 1870; Nathan H. Webb, 1870, '71, '72; Francis E. Porter, 1873, '74; John H. Woodbury, 1875; David A. Preston, 1876; Henry P. Woodbury, 1877; Charles L. Dodge, 1885, '86, '87. Senators who have not been Representatives: Joshua Fisher, 1805; Warren Tilton, 1859, '60; Frederick W. Choate, 1866, '67; Francis Norwood, 1881, '82.

BEVERLY'S INDUSTRIES.—*The Fisheries.*—The earliest industries of Beverly were farming and fishing. From the sea came the principal subsistence, until the meadows and forests were cleared and planted. The first settlements in Beverly were located with special reference to their contiguity to the fishing-grounds, as the houses erected by William and Humphrey Woodbury and their people. After the fisheries were established nearly every male inhabitant old enough, and not too old, went off for the summer's fishing. Few were left at home, except the old men and young boys, women and girls. Even the boys were taken away at a very early age, some at eleven, and nearly all of them at fourteen or fifteen.

At the outset the voyages were greatly prolonged by the custom, then prevailing, of drying the fish before the return of the vessel to port, on the Magdalen or the coast of Labrador, which they afterwards took, in the same vessels, to the West Indies, etc. Later on, and for the past hundred years or so, the fish were salted in the hold and brought home to be "cured." Then it was possible to make two voyages each season, sailing on the 1st of March or April, and returning about the 4th of July,—this was the "first fare;" the "second fare" would keep them out till cold weather had commenced, into November, and sometimes even December. In all, from six to eight months were taken for the two fares; sometimes three fares were made. Every available headland on the coast, from Tuck's Point to Paine's Head, was covered with fish-flakes, where, in the summer and autumn months, thousands of tons of fish were cured for market.

These fish-drying places have now become too valuable as real estate to be used for this purpose, and but a few fish-flakes can be seen on our shores. Most of the fishermen resided on the coast, between the Old South and the Manchester line. When the cod fishery was at its best, which was probably between the years 1840–50, there were seventy or eighty vessels engaged, and all manned by natives of this town. Each vessel carried from six to nine men, and rarely exceeded eighty or ninety tons burthen. The principal vessel-owners were Thorndike & Endicott, Stephen Nourse, Foster & Lovett, Pickett & Edwards, James Stone, Capt. Bradshaw, Ezra Batchelder, Samuel Ober, John Morgan; and some vessels were owned by the crews.

But the co-operative system did not work very well, as all the "combined powers" wanted to be skippers, and could not agree.

The average cost of a new schooner was about four thousand dollars. A good season's receipts, even for the "skippers," was five hundred dollars, and an average of two hundred quintals of fish was considered a "great catch." The fishermen did remarkably well immediately after the withdrawal of the embargo, in 1815, and during the period of the Civil War, as prices were very high in the first instance, and crews scarce in the second.

The fishermen led a hard life at the best, and in the early times lacked the many conveniences that their successors enjoy, some even being subject to piracy. Until within a comparatively recent period they carried no stoves, but in each vessel was a capacious fire-place, in cabin as well as in forecastle. In descending into the fo'castle the sailors were obliged to go "down the chimney," as they expressed it, there being no other aperture for the escape of the smoke than that by which their quarters were reached. But they had "lots of comfort" with their great wood-fires, especially in the autumn months, even though the smoke was annoying. At first, every man was

his own cook, and it is likely that the fare was hard.

With the advent of a special cook, or a man drafted from the crew for that purpose, the "grub" was improved a little, the staple articles of diet being beef, salt pork, beans twice a week, potatoes, bacon, fish, "duff," doughnuts and pies. Duff and doughnuts were great luxuries, however, and "duff day" was always looked forward to with pleasurable anticipations. Although the distance traversed by the fishing schooners was not vast, yet the length of the voyage made it wearisome, especially as land was rarely sighted after Cape Ann had been left astern until it hove in sight again four months later; on the return the government gave a bounty of four dollars per ton for each voyage of four months and over, and even if a full fare was secured in half that time, the requisite numbers of days must be passed at sea before port could be entered. The great event of the voyage was "washing out day," when the fish had been landed and the crew were given a royal dinner. As winter came on, the vessels were hauled up at the wharves and the crews dispersed to seek employment at shoe-making, or to spend their hard-earned money in completing their education. Many a boy, taken from home at an early age, returned to the village school on successive winters, to acquire what learning he could in the time at his command. It was a wholesome discipline they got at sea, and a school in which were reared many who afterwards served faithfully their country when volunteers were needed for the navy.

At the present day our fisheries are of little importance. The great fleet of schooners has disappeared, and scarcely half a dozen vessels sail from our port for the Banks each season; and these are manned by strangers. How far the policy of the National Government has contributed to this result is one of the debated questions.

Between the years 1828–40 there were two full-rigged ships, the "Shamrock" and "Malabar," and nine brigs, making a total of eleven "square-riggers," owned in Beverly, besides one hundred and twenty schooners. In 1859 the schooner "Dove" was sold to Eastern parties. This vessel was built in 1817, and was the last of her class, of half-deck vessels, in Beverly.

In 1860, just prior to the Civil War, fifty-four vessels from Beverly were engaged in the fisheries, with 4072 tonnage, a valuation of $166,800, carrying 457 men, and using 5366 bushels of salt and 1172 bushels of bait. In 1861 the amount of fish bounty paid was $15,000. In 1863, when the greatest number of our fishermen were away, serving in the navy, but thirty-seven vessels were engaged. The value of fish and oil obtained that year was about $200,000. The "catch" was large, but fishermen were scarce. In 1875 some twenty-four vessels were fitted out here; in 1877 twenty-two, besides smaller craft, carrying about 300 men.

But even this small number has been reduced in the past ten years, so that the present year finds but four fishing-vessels employed at the Banks, and one of these is supposed to have been lost, with all on board. A hundred years ago, in 1786, Beverly owned sixty vessels, manned by 492 men; nineteen of these were in the West Indian trade. In 1788 thirty-two vessels, with 271 men.

Shoes and Shoemaking.—For nearly two centuries the industries of Beverly were essentially agricultural and maritime; farming, fishing, coastwise and foreign commerce engaged the attention of its inhabitants, with an occasional digression to repel the Indians or beat off foreign invaders. It has been already shown that the town took active part in every affair of national importance from the Pequod War in 1637 to the Rebellion of 1861. The growth of the town was slow, and resulted more from the natural increase of its native population than from alien accessions. The early industries were few in number, and newer forms of occupation were adopted cautiously. Unlike Lynn, which seems to have been predestined to traffic in leather from earliest times, Beverly did not choose deliberately that which has now become its chiefest industry. Resident shoemakers were scarce within its borders before the close of the seventeenth century. One of the first recorded cordwainers is Andrew Elliot, who was also our first town clerk, who lived in that part of the town known as the "Haymarket" or "City," where also resided another shoemaker—John Smith, son of James, born in 1662. He probably worked upon the low bench, having the "kit"—knives, hammer, lapstone, awls, etc.—on one end and the seat at the other, and with the shoe held by a strap over the knee.

Of those who first carried on shoemaking as a business, Joseph Foster, who removed hither from Ipswich just before the Revolution, is most conspicuous. He supplied shoes to the Continental army and to the various grocery-stores of this town and others, and later shipped shoes to the Southern States and the West Indies. Descendants of shoemaker Foster are still engaged in the business here, in which they were prominent for nearly a century. Others who learned their trade of Joseph Foster's son, Daniel, may be remembered by our citizens as Captain Daniel Cross, Olphert Tuttle and Osman Gage.

A leading manufacturer of a later period was Deacon Nehemiah Roundy, whose three sons assisted him, and who supplied shoes to the trade in Boston and shipped to Africa and other countries. Captain Thomas B. Smith in 1829 built a factory in which he manufactured large numbers of heavy boots and shoes. In 1830 Daniel Lefavour began the manufacture of women's shoes at the Cove, in which also his brother John engaged some fifteen years later. The business established by them has since been continued respectively by their sons. Another manufac-

turer of that period was Ebenezer Moses, who, it is said, first introduced the system of division of labor, and first used tin patterns for the shaping of the soles of shoes. The Herricks and Trasks, fathers and sons, Wm. D. Crossfield, Wm. Larrabee, the Wallises (descended from the first deacon) and the Norwoods, are names prominent in the history of shoe manufacture here. One of the last century Wallises was the aged shoemaker Henry Wallis, well remembered by the middle-aged of our community, who worked at his trade for nearly seventy years in the same shop, which was over two hundred years old when it was removed from its location at the corner of Cabot and Bow Streets.

Real Estate and Improvements.—The era of progress may be said to date from the advent of the railroad, and the largest and most important transaction in real estate took place at the time the railroad station was removed from its original site to its present location on Park Street, about 1852. Nearly all the large section between Cabot Street and Bass River, and extending from the Gloucester crossing to the southerly junction of Cabot and Rantoul Streets, was open field, without house or factory. To-day hundreds of dwellings are seen here, and the numerous shoe factories, in which are conducted the leading industry of the town. An impulse was given to business that has been continued to the present day.

Twenty years ago, or in 1868, a section of territory lying between Lovett, Lothrop and Washington Streets which had, for more than a hundred years, lain undeveloped, and used as fish-yards, was purchased by Israel Lefavour, and thrown open for building purposes. Mr. Lefavour, then quite a young man, divided the property into lots, some of which he sold, and upon others erected houses, and to-day it is covered with some of the most attractive residences in town. He also purchased and improved, more recently, the Wilson land and Pickett fish-yards, on Lothrop Street, and has built thereon houses commanding beautiful outlooks over the sea.

In the past twenty years Cabot Street, which was formerly lined mainly with dwellings, has undergone most radical changes, nearly forty stores and places of business having been erected there.

In 1867 the Masonic Association erected the fine three-story brick block at the corner of Washington and Cabot Streets; in 1875 the Odd Fellows built, at the corner of Cabot and Broadway, the finest block in town; in 1877 Israel Lefavour purchased the Little estate, corner of Cabot and Vestry Streets, and enlarged and altered the house there into a three-story block, with a commodious Opera House more lately added; in 1883 Rich and Newcomb built a very large and convenient wooden block on the property adjoining and extending to Railroad Avenue, and in 1885 Webber Brothers erected a fine brick building of three stories adjacent to the Masonic structure.

In 1881 Augustus N. Clark altered the store and house of the Smith estate, owned by him, on the corner of Cabot and Broadway, into a large block for stores and dwellings, and added much to the beauty of Broadway.

In 1885 the Savings Bank built its beautiful structure at the corner of Cabot and Thorndike; in 1886 Robert R. Endicott reconstructed and enlarged the buildings corner of Cabot and Washington Streets.

George Butman erected a large building of three stories on Cabot, near Essex Street. A dozen years before, Messrs. Lee and Cressy, George H. Southwick and William W. Hinkley had put up fine business blocks. These facts but indicate a steady and rapid growth in the business of Beverly.

Beyond the more densely populated portion also important improvements have been wrought within twenty years and less.

The extension of Central and Abbot Streets, and others, was followed by active building of houses, until nearly all were lined with comfortable and elegant dwellings. The extension of Lothrop Street to Cross Lane, the extension of Ober and Corning Streets, the improving of Common Lane, etc., gave an impetus to building, even in remote places.

In 1874 Andrew K. Ober purchased a portion of the woodland known as Snake Hill, laying out drives and walks, and building there a stone mansion, which improvements were followed by the construction of Lake-shore Avenue, and the elegant station-building at Montserrat. Within ten years past radical changes have been made at Hospital Point, so that this bleak and once desolate promontory is now the abode of some of our wealthiest citizens.

One of the largest land-owners, whose purchases have been made mainly within a few years past, is Henry W. Peabody, who owns about one hundred and fifty acres, principally near the Montserrat Station, and including such fine property as Hibbert and Laurel Pastures, Turtle and Prospect Hills. At the Farms, after the shore margin had been absorbed, summer residents purchased much of the hill property in the interior, especially wherever commanding views were afforded of the sea. Hence it is that, with Beverly's unrivaled possession of hillside and seaside, it is not necessary that land should be of great fertility to command high prices. In truth, the poorest land as to production is often that which is held the dearest.

What is known as the "shore movement," when the manifold attractions of the Beverly coast drew hither an appreciative population, began nearly fifty years ago.

About this time Beverly began to receive accessions in people who came, at first, merely for a summer's stay, but who eventually purchased property here and obtained a foothold as owners of real estate. Attracted by the beauties of the shore, several residents of Salem and Boston sought and obtained board with the farmers of the eastern part of the town, in

the section known as Beverly Farms. This region was always a rural one, and thinly populated, though early settled: the Wests, Woodburys, Haskells, Thissells, Obers and Larcoms being among the first; the Woodburys especially numerous, descendants of the original William and Humphrey, who located at Woodburys' Points about 1630. By direct inheritance, by grants and by intermarriage, they had acquired a great deal of the coast property.

Throughout several generations these farmers and fishermen of Beverly had contentedly tilled the soil and ploughed the sea, leaving their ancestral homes only to participate in the business affairs of the town, or when summoned by the imperative calls of war. By intermarriage, by the ties of constant association, and by family tradition, they were one with the people at the Centre. During the first century of its corporate existence the town relied upon them as upon those who lived in the shadow of the First Parish meeting-house, and they were prominent members of the church itself. The short distance that separated them from the business centre of the town did not prevent a frequent interchange of visits on Sundays, when all gathered at the Old South, and on training days and town-meetings.

"A town becomes a true home for men through its history, not less than by reason of its physical and social features." Every family native to the Farms had historical traditions in common with every other at the Centre, and thus, though in a measure territorially distinct, the people resident here were individually members of one and the same great family; their interests and their traditions were identical. But the time had come when a new element was to be introduced, and this was when the first "summer-boarder" appeared, about the year 1840. It does not appear that our ancestors were heedless of the attractions nature had so lavishly spread around them; but, in the stress of their life of toil, these may have seemed of secondary importance. At all events, though the superlative beauty of their environment may have asserted itself, and they may have unconsciously imbibed that love for nature now inherent in their descendants, yet they did not, perhaps, attach the importance to it that should have prevented them from parting with their priceless heritage. The consequent hardships of successive wars, and the perpetual struggle for existence, inevitably the lot of the pioneer, had impressed upon them rather the value of substantial gain, than that of a beautiful landscape. In a word, this "fatal gift of beauty," which was to them a thing imponderable, attracted strangers to their birthright, and it passed from their possession.

The first, or one of the first, who took up residence at the Farms for the summer season was John G. King, as early as 1840, who bought, in 1844, the John M. Thissell place at Mingo's Cove. He boarded with Isaac Prince, then occupying the farm now known as the "Paine Place." Early in the eighteenth century, this one hundred-acre farm was inherited by Anna Woodbury, daughter of Benjamin Woodbury, who married Rev. John Barnard, of Marblehead. She willed it to the children of her kinswoman, Anna Woodbury, wife of Samuel Swett, who sold it to Josiah Ober, whose heirs sold it to Isaac Prince, and he to Chas. C. Paine, whose wife was one of the Swett family above mentioned. Mr. Paine subsequently bought the entire property, paying six thousand dollars for it. From this farm, it is said, have been sold estates to the amount of two hundred thousand dollars, and with a portion of perhaps equal value still remaining.

Nearly cotemporary with Mr. Paine was Charles G. Loring, who bought the farm of Benjamin Smith, and built the first house thereon for summer residence.

Patrick T. Jackson and Franklin Dexter were other early visitors who purchased shore estates about this time, and in 1846 Messrs. Haven, Neal, Cabot and Lee. A little later the Sohiers, Lowells, Pickmans, Lawrences and Burgesses became dwellers here.

Thus the Beverly shore, says a recent writer, "was probably the first in New England to be sought for summer homes. Its southerly exposure, the coast line trending nearly east and west, gives it a matchless summer climate. The prevailing winds of the warm months—those from the southwest—elsewhere bearing a parching heat, are here wafted across the salt floods of Salem Bay, filled with a delicious and invigorating freshness.

The hills and woods, rising directly from the shore, also break the force of the harsh winds from the northerly quarters. In consequence, many of the summer residents come as early as possible in the season and often linger late in the fall, enjoying the quiet drives amidst the autumnal glories of the Essex woods, until even the rich hues of the oaks have changed to a uniform dry brown, under the blighting touch of the frost.

Sailing along the coast on a pleasant summer day, one sees a moderately high reach of hills sloping gracefully back from the sea. The deep water permits a near approach to the land, so that in the dense foliage masses which often come close down to the water's edge and give to this shore a luxuriant aspect quite exceptional in New England coast scenery south of the spruce-clad capes of Maine, may be distinguished the intermingling hues of pines and oaks and the other deciduous trees, whose light leafage relieves the sombreness of the evergreen masses. Bold promontories jut out into the water, the waves ceaselessly tossing up white greetings at their feet, and between the cliffs stretch intervals of glittering beach, with smooth, green lawns reaching far back into the shadowy recesses of forest glades. All along this shore stand the beautiful villas; not huddled in vulgar promiscuousness, as at popular shore resorts, nor

drawn up in showy dress parade, as at Newport; but disposed in the easy attitudes of a high-bred company, thoroughly assured of its place in the world, and neither eager for prominence nor solicitous about privacy. Embowered in the woodlands, occupying castle-like heights, or standing out amid sunny lawns with the dignified repose surrounding them of broad verandas, there are few of these houses that are not in admirable keeping with their surroundings.

A drive over the beautiful roads that meander in easy grades over the diversified region has a charm equally great with sailing the shore. Not so much is seen of the villas themselves as from the water, for they mostly stand retired from the highways, and only approached by pleasant avenues.

Few places could be found affording such a multiplicity of romantic sites; there might be almost a surfeit of picturesqueness, were not the variety so great that every turn, every new view, reveals a fresh charm. In short, the lavish disposition of nature and the costly efforts of art have together made of the Beverly shore a region that approaches the ideal of an earthly paradise as nearly as is possible in this part of the world.

One rolls over the smooth roads among blooming gardens and wide lawns, with broad reaches of the bay visible between splendid houses. A turn of the way, and the natural forest incloses the scene, and the air, just redolent with the fragrance of blossoming shrubs, is now filled with the tonic breath of the pines. Again, reaching a slight elevation, the sea comes into sight, framed by a wild margin of rocks and trees.

And so the enchanting picture continues in scores of lovely glimpses, until it seems as if nature's portfolio would be exhausted of its novelties. Life on the Beverly shore during the season has a character quite distinctive, and very different from that of the usual summer resort, as may be inferred from the character of its population. This is composed chiefly of leading Boston families, with a few from neighboring Salem, and some permanent residents of Beverly—whose ancestry, like that of the Endicotts, is identified with the founding of the town—nearly all more eminent for social position and culture than for wealth; which, however, needs be considerable to enable residence in such a place."

Census of Town of Beverly for 1885.[1]

(Courteously furnished in advance of publication by the Chief of the Bureau of Statistics.)

Occupations.	Number.
Males.	
Government	32
Professional	53
Clergymen	14
Other "professional"	39
Domestic Service	64
Coachmen and servants (in families)	53
Other "domestic service"	11
Personal Service	44
Trade	356
Merchants and dealers	141
Salesmen	43
Book-keepers and clerks	114
Other "trade"	58
Transportation	208
Drivers of delivery wagons	25
Livery stable keepers and employés	29
Officials and employés of express companies	26
Teamsters	32
Steam railroad employés	61
Mariners (sailing)	23
Other "transportation"	12
Agriculture	355
Farmers	122
Farm laborers	174
Florists	10
Gardeners and garden laborers	47
Other "agriculture"	2
Fisheries	57
Fishermen	55
Other "fisheries"	2
Manufactures	1,569
Shoe-factory operatives	1,001
Carpenters	161
Masons	62
Masons and plasterers	13
Painters	49
Bakers	22
Morocco Workers	30
Blacksmiths	24
Other "manufactures"	207
Mining	2
Laborers	153
Apprentices	7
Children at Work	4
Scholars and Students	798
Retired	136
Afflicted, etc.	20
Unemployed (12 months)	19
Dependents	32
At Home	420
Not Given	20
Total males	4,349
Females.	
Government	1
Professional	64
Teachers	55
Other "professional"	9
Domestic Service	2,751
Housekeepers	39
Housewives	2,009
Housework	475
Servants (in families)	214
Other "domestic service"	14
Personal Service	37
Trade	32
Book-keepers and clerks	25
Other "trade"	7
Transportation	1
Manufactures	514
Shoe-factory operatives	401
Dressmakers	47
Milliners	9
Oil-clothing makers	20
Seamstresses	12
Tailoresses	9
Other "manufactures"	16
Children at Work	1
Scholars and Students	797

[1] This table shows the arrangement by "Classified Occupations" (in *italics*), with detail for certain classes by principal lines of occupation. Also, the "Explanatory Note," defining the distribution of the people into classes of occupations, that is, those having related occupations, as, for Census purposes, all persons are supposed to be "occupied."

Occupations.	Number.
Retired	24
Afflicted, etc.	29
Dependent	38
At Home	436
Not Given	112
Total females	4,837

Explanatory Note.

Government.—Persons engaged in the service of the national, state and city governments, or in the U. S. army and navy.

Professional.—Persons connected with religion, law, medicine, literature, art, music, amusements, education and science.

Domestic Service.—Persons concerned or employed in the hotel, boarding and lodging service, housewives, persons engaged in house work (without remuneration, generally in own family), housekeepers and domestic servants.

Personal Service.—Persons who render personal service, as barbers, boot-blacks, carpet-cleaners, companions, janitors, matrons, nurses, stewards, ushers, valets, washer-women, watchers, watchmen, etc.

Trade.—Merchants and dealers, salesmen, book-keepers, clerks, agents, bankers, brokers, messengers, porters, etc.

Transportation.—Carriers on roads, steam railroads, seas and rivers.

Agriculture.—Farmers, farm laborers, gardeners, persons engaged in the care of animals, etc.

Fisheries.—Persons engaged in the fisheries.

Manufactures.—As specified.

Mining.—Persons employed in mines, quarries, pits, etc.

Laborers.—General day laborers.

Apprentices.—Learning trades.

Children at Work.—Children of legal school age (ten to thirteen) who both work and go to school or work only.

Scholars and Students.—Public and private school scholars, persons at college, or studying special branches, as law, dentistry, medicine, etc.

Retired.—Persons retired from active business.

Afflicted, etc.—Persons suffering with acute or chronic diseases, blind, deaf, dumb, maimed, lame, insane, idiotic, and other afflicted persons and paupers and homeless children.

Unemployed (12 months).—Persons not employed at their accustomed occupation at all during the census year.

Dependents (in Private Families).—Relatives or other persons more or less dependent for support.

At Home.—Children too young to go to school.

Not Given.—Young persons or adults, of working age, who, for some reason, have no occupation.

Manufactures of Beverly, from Census of 1885.

Capital invested (value)	$1,327,218
Stock or material used (value)	2,401,867
Goods made and work done (value)	4,412,647
Males employed (number)	1,727
Females employed (number)	987
Total	2,714
Average hours, day's work, adult male	10.1
Average yearly working time (days)	293½
Day hands (number)	842
Piece hands (number)	1,779
Salaries paid (amount)	$34,954
Wages paid (amount)	$1,174,539
Machinery (value)	122,540

LIBRARIES.

Number and value of books and circulation.

Kind of Libraries.	Number of Libraries.	Number of Books.				Value of Books.	Circulation.
		Manuscripts.	Pamph.	Bound Books	Total.		
Beverly	12	.....	27	16,649	16,676	16,354	54,220
Secular	2	.....	...	11,017	11,017	12,400	25,000
Town public	1	.....	...	10,017	10,017	12,000	22,000
Private circulating	1	.....	...	1,000	1,000	400	3,000
Religious	10	.....	27	5,632	5,659	3,954	29,220
Sunday-school	10	.....	27	5,632	5,659	3,954	29,220

PUBLIC SCHOOLS.

School Buildings.	Number of Buildgs	Value.	
		Buildings.	Property.
Beverly	9	$100,000	$1,000

PRIVATE SCHOOLS.

Kind of School.	Number of School Buildings.			Value.	
	Total.	Own'd	Hired.	Build'gs Owned.	School property
Beverly	1	1	...	5,100	110
Incorporated	1	1	...	5,100	10
Unincorporated	[1]...	...	...	.....	100

[1] One school kept in a hired room.

PRIVATE SCHOOLS.

By name and dates of establishment and incorporation.

Name of School.	Date of Establishment.	Date of Incorporation.
Kindergarten (Fannie R. Kilham)	1881	.....
New England Industrial School for Deaf Mutes	1879	1879

MARRIED WOMEN AND MOTHERS: CHILDREN, ETC.

Native and Foreign Born.	Total married women	Married women without children.	Married Women having Children.							
			Number of women.	Total Number of—			Average No. of			
				Children.	Children living.	Children not living	Children.	Children living.	Children not living.
Beverly	2,319	398	1,921	7,211	5,013	2,198	3.75	2.61	1.14
Native born	1,845	306	1,539	5,553	3,837	1,716	3.61	2.49	1.12
Foreign born	474	92	382	1,658	1,176	482	4.34	3.08	1.26

TOTAL ILLITERACY.

Sex.	Population: Ten years of age and over.			Illiterates.	
	Native.	Foreign.	Total.	Number	Per cent
Beverly	6,401	1,302	7,703	211	2.74
Males	3,082	527	3,609	73	2.02
Females	3,319	775	4,094	138	3.37

DEGREE OF ILLITERACY, ETC.

Age Periods.	Born in Massachusetts.			Other Native Born.			Foreign Born.			Aggregates		
	M	F	T	M	F	T	M	F	T	M	F	T
Beverly	14	21	35	4	5	9	55	112	167	73	138	211
Cannot write	3	3	6	1	1	2	8	27	35	12	31	43
20 to 29 years	2	...	2	1	...	1	...	3	3	3	3	6
30 to 49 years	...	1	1	...	1	1	6	14	20	6	16	22
50 years and over	1	2	3	...	...	...	2	10	12	3	12	15
Neither read nor write	11	18	29	3	4	7	47	85	132	61	107	168
10 to 13 years	1	2	3	...	...	...	1	...	1	2	2	4
14 to 19 years	3	3	6	...	...	...	1	2	3	4	5	9
20 to 29 years	1	2	3	...	...	...	9	8	17	10	10	20
30 to 49 years	1	1	2	2	1	3	16	37	53	19	39	58
50 years and over	5	10	15	1	3	4	20	38	58	26	51	77

AGRICULTURAL PRODUCTS AND PROPERTY.

PRODUCTS.

		Quantity.	Value.
Animal Products.			$13,076
Beeswax (use)	pounds,	5	1
Calf-skins		10	8
Hides		9	14
Honey	pounds,	371	94
Manure	cords,	1,671½	12,955
Pelts		5	4
Clothing, Needle-work, etc.			$7,513
Boots (including "work on")	pairs,	9,070	3,612
Crocheted goods (sale)		...	5
Mats (sale)		2	1
Mittens (sale)	pairs,	15	8
Shoes (including "work on")	pairs,	9,950	3,887
Dairy Products.			$57,729
Butter (sale)	pounds,	2,665	999
Butter (use)	pounds,	2,476	910
Cheese	pounds,	40	4
Cream	gallons,	332	934
Milk	gallons,	303,719	54,882
Food Products.			$2,888
Canned fruit (sale)	pounds,	50	8
Canned fruit (use)	pounds,	49	8
Ice	tons,	500	2,500
Pickles (use)	barrels,	¼	5
Vinegar (sales)	gallons,	1,530	330
Vinegar (use)	gallons,	175	37
Greenhouse Products.			$3,900
Flowers, leaves, and vines, cut		...	700
Plants, flowering and other		...	3,200
Hothouse and Hotbed Products.			$435
Cabbage plants		31,400	191
Tomato plants		733	244
Liquors and Beverages.			$854
Cider (sale)	gallons,	3,848	406
Cider (use)	gallons,	4,017	448
Nursery Products.			$27
Trees, fruit		2	2
Trees, ornamental		100	25
Poultry Products.			$12,291
Eggs	dozen,	37,299	9,115
Eggs, fancy	dozen,	400	400
Feathers	pounds,	14	4
Manure, hen and bird	bushels,	1,607	607
Poultry, dressed: chickens	pounds,	8,841	2,143
Poultry, dressed: other than chickens, geese, and turkeys	pounds,	95	22
Wood Products.			$2,930
Ashes (sales)	bushels,	20	5
Ashes (use)	bushels,	431	209
Firewood (sale)	cords,	214	1,106
Firewood (use)	cords,	325	1,559
Hoop poles (use)		200	2
Lumber (use)	thousand feet	2	30
Posts, fence (sale)		25	15
Posts, fence (use)		40	4
Wooden Goods.			$6
Axe handles (use)		14	4
Ox-yokes (use)		1	2
Other Products.			$951
Hops	pounds,	5	1
Hotbed mats (sale)		6	6
Hotbed mats (use)		90	95
Manure, sea	cords,	370½	790
Seeds, garden, field, and flower	pounds,	62	59
Cereals.			$2,046
Barley	bushels,	87	72
Corn, Indian	bushels,	2,502	1,510
Corn, pop	bushels,	229½	305
Oats	bushels,	127	83
Rye	bushels,	96	76
Fruits, Berries and Nuts.			$6,164
Apples	bushels,	7,401	2,314
Barberries	bushels,	1½	3
Blackberries	quarts,	1,139	174
Blueberries	quarts,	3,390	295
Cherries	bushels,	12½	23
Citron	pounds,	150	15
Crab-apples	bushels,	7	11
Cranberries	barrels,	52½	225
Currants	quarts,	916	87
Grapes	bushels,	48½	54
Grapes	pounds,	2,025	487
Huckleberries	quarts,	671	63
Melons		5,312	601
Peaches	bushels,	5	7
Pears	bushels,	772½	658
Plums	bushels,	3	5
Quinces	bushels,	15½	35
Raspberries	quarts,	4 0	81
Shellbarks	bushels,	2	4
Strawberries	quarts,	8,276	1,012
Hay, Straw and Fodder.			$33,751
Hay, clover	tons,	24	419
Hay, English	tons,	1,308	24,856
Hay, meadow	tons,	139½	1,690
Hay, millet	tons,	64	569
Hay, salt	tons,	43½	401
Hay, not classified	tons,	4	75
Straw	tons,	4	82
Fodder, barley	tons,	34	303
Fodder, corn	tons,	674	2,871
Fodder, dry	tons,	25	274
Fodder, oat	tons,	122¾	1,115
Fodder, rye	tons,	13½	172
Beets (for stock)	bushels,	2,052	481
Turnips (for stock)	bushels,	1,693	443
Meats and Game.			$3,603
Beef	pounds,	8,395	647
Pork	pounds,	29,055	2,895
Veal	pounds,	785	51
Game, wild	pounds,	25	10
Vegetables.			$57,947
Asparagus	bunches,	4,130	471
Beans	bushels,	166	406
Beans, string and shell	bushels,	566	536
Beet greens	bushels,	25	60
Beets	bushels,	1,530	786
Cabbage greens	bushels,	20	10
Cabbage	heads,	379,680	25,061
Carrots	bushels,	3,672	1,122
Cauliflower	heads,	560	116
Celery	bunches,	8,710	714
Corn, green	bushels,	4,382	2,382
Cucumbers	bushels,	86	84
		20,400	388
Dandelions	bushels,	548	418
Lettuce	heads,	1,904	137
Onions	bushels,	3,989	3,638
Parsley	bushels,	37	37
Parsnips	bushels,	293	207
Pease	bushels,	66	72
Pease, green	bushels,	726	684
Peppers	bushels,	30	14
Potatoes	bushels,	21,351	11,364
Pumpkins	pounds,	5,400	29
Radishes	bunches,	100	4
Rhubarb	pounds,	590	40
Spinach	bushels,	336	83
Squashes	pounds,	437,920	4,681
Tomatoes	bushels,	1,109	574
Turnips, table	bushels,	964	445
Not classified		.....	3,384

PROPERTY.			
Cultivated :	*Land.*	acres,	5,512⅞ $585,991
Hay (used for)		acres,	1,405½ 199,635
Principal crops (used for)		acres,	413½ 57,189
Market gardens		acres,	226⅞ 32,365
Nurseries		acres,	1 150
Orchards		acres,	99 15,950
Other cultivated		acres,	96⅜ 17,485
Uncultivated :			
Permanent pasture		acres,	1,581 107,093
Other unimproved		acres,	401⅛ 37,444
Unimprovable		acres,	53¼ 2,700
Mines, quarries, pits, etc		acres,	¼ 25
Woodland :			
Over thirty years' growth		acres,	308 32,300
Of thirty years or less		acres,	927 83,655
	Buildings.		$563,866
Dwelling-houses			184 395,850
Barns			174 124,937
Carriage-houses			34 9,085
Granaries			15 720
Greenhouses			9 7,550
Hen-houses			126 4,011
Outbuildings			113 3,105
Sheds			65 6,765
Shops			42 4,135
Stables			15 5,535
Storehouses			12 1,885
Other buildings			... 288
	Machines, Implements, etc.		$35,479
Carts, wagons, harnesses, etc			... 26,190
Cultivators			104 545
Feed cutters			23 179
Harrows			115 1,126
Hay-cutters			54 267
Hay tedders			12 304
Horse hoes			20 207
Horse powers			4 220
Horse rakes			62 868
Implements			... 1,699
Manure spreaders			4 225
Mowing machines			57 1,920
Plows			208 1,208
Seed sowers			23 164
Other machines			... 357
	Domestic Animals, etc.		$66,516
Bees (swarms of)			39 208
Bulls			11 505
Calves			54 445
Dogs			64 498
Ducks			111 73
Guinea fowls			16 8
Heifers			98 1,936
Hens and chickens			9,174 7,014
Hogs			131 1,858
Horses			250 25,595
Milch cows			580 26,230
Oxen			9 760
Pigeons			250 48
Pigs			168 597
Turkeys			12 25
Other animals			... 806
	Fruit Trees and Vines.		$26,208
Apple			4,865 16,092
Apricot			1 5
Butternut			6 47
Cherry			136 639
Chestnut			2 6
Crab-apple			54 116
Fig			14 140
Hickory			159 161
Mulberry			4 4
Peach			459 496
Pear			2,040 6,954
Plum			102 252
Quince			169 330
Shellbark			2 5
Walnut			10 23
Grape vines			672 938

AGGREGATES.	
Products.	$206,111
Animal products	13,076
Clothing, needle-work, etc	7,513
Dairy products	57,729
Food products	2,888
Greenhouse products	3,900
Hothouse and hotbed products	435
Liquors and beverages	854
Nursery products	27
Poultry products	12,291
Wood products	2,930
Wooden goods	6
Other products	951
Cereals	2,046
Fruits, berries and nuts	6,164
Hay, straw and fodder	33,751
Meats and game	3,603
Vegetables	57,947
Property.	$1,278,060
Land	585,991
Buildings	563,886
Machines, implements, etc	35,479
Domestic animals, etc	66,516
Fruit trees and vines	26,208

POPULATION—VALUATION.—A resume of population gives,—

In 1776, 2754; 1790, 3290; 1800, 3881; 1810, 4608; 1820, 4285; 1830, 4033; 1840, 4689; 1850, 5376; 1860, 6154; 1865, 5942; 1870, 6507; 1875, 7271; 1880, 8456; 1885, 9186.

The assessors' valuation of the public property of the town in May, 1887, was as follows :

School-houses	$145,000
Public library	10,000
Other public buildings	115,000
Public grounds	25,000
Cemeteries	20,000
Other real estate	4,900
Water-works	565,451.85
Fire apparatus	25,000
Trust funds	4,300
Sinking fund	215,947.16
Other assets	25.000
Total	$1,115,599.01

Aggregates for 1887,—

Number of persons assessed	3495
Number paying poll-tax only	1662
Paying property tax	1833
Polls assessed	2725
Total value of personal estate	$5,269,325
Total value of bank stock	144,375
Total value of buildings, excluding land	3,856,645
Total value of land, excluding buildings	5,016,775
Total valuation	$14,287,100
The tax on personal estate	$69,295.36
The tax on real estate	113,579.52
The tax on polls	5,450.00
Total tax	$188,324.88
Rate of taxation	12\frac{80}{100}$

BIOGRAPHICAL.

ISRAEL THORNDIKE.

Israel Thorndike was born in Beverly, Mass., in 1755. He was fifth in descent from John Thorndike, who came to this country in 1633, and returned in 1668 on a visit to his brother, Herbert Thorndike, in England, where he soon after died, and was buried on November 3d of that year in the Cloisters of Westminster Abbey. The Rev. Herbert Thorndike, above referred to, was prebendary of Westminster and a profound scholar and theologian. He wrote many ecclesiastical works in English and Latin, some of which are still of so much interest that they have been recently republished. He died in 1672 and was buried in Westminster Abbey. In his will he left property to his nieces, Martha and Alice, daughters of John, who had accompanied their father on his visit to England, on condition, however, "that they should neither return to New England, their birthplace, nor yet, remaining in England, marry with any who went to mass or to the new Licensed Conventicles."

These brothers, John and Herbert, were sons of Francis Thorndike, who in 1634 signed the pedigree for the first visitation of Heralds recorded in the family, and were fifth in descent from William Thorndike, who lived at Little Carlton, County of Lincoln, in the reign of Henry VII., and died in 1539. The arms borne by the family were "Argent, six guttees, three, two and one, gules, on a chief of the last three leopards' faces, gold."

President Quincy, in his "History of Harvard University," speaks of Israel Thorndike as follows: "He had in youth no advantages of education, except those which the public schools of his native town afforded, but he possessed, in the vigor of his own mind, a never-failing spring of self-advancement. The war of the American Revolution was an event adapted to call into activity his powers and spirit of enterprise. Embracing with zeal the cause of his country, he became part-owner and captain of an armed ship, and the judgment with which he planned his cruises, and the intrepidity and diligence with which he conducted them, were rewarded with distinguished success. Having entered into partnership with his brother-in-law, the late Moses Brown, he engaged, after the peace of 1783, in an extensive and most profitable commerce with the East Indies and China.[1] Sagacity, judgment, industry, strict attention to business, and thorough acquaintance with the details of every commercial enterprise in which he engaged, were the chief causes of his success. He was also an early patron of manufactures, and invested, it was said, a greater amount of capital in them than any other individual in New England.

"Mr. Thorndike was at different periods of his life a member of the convention called for the adoption of the Constitution of the United States, and a Representative and Senator in the Legislature of his native State. He was a generous contributor to all patriotic and charitable objects, and often gave an active agency in their support. In 1806 he subscribed five hundred dollars for the foundation of the Natural History Professorship in the University, and also the same amount in 1818 for the library of the theological school. In the same year, being informed that the library of Professor Ebeling, of Hamburg, was for sale, and that an agent of the King of Prussia was negotiating for it, Mr. Thorndike ordered it to be purchased at the cost of six thousand five hundred dollars, and presented it to Harvard University, thereby securing to his country one of the most complete and valuable collections of works extant on American history."

In 1810 Mr. Thorndike removed to Boston for the greater convenience of carrying on his now immense business in all parts of the world, and until his death resided in Summer Street, in that city. "He was eminently social in his feelings, and none more than he delighted in dispensing a princely hospitality." But he still retained his mansion in Beverly, afterwards the Town Hall, passing a considerable portion of his time there, ever manifesting a warm interest in the welfare of his native town, and the first parish of Beverly received from his estate an addition to its funds of about twenty-six hundred dollars.

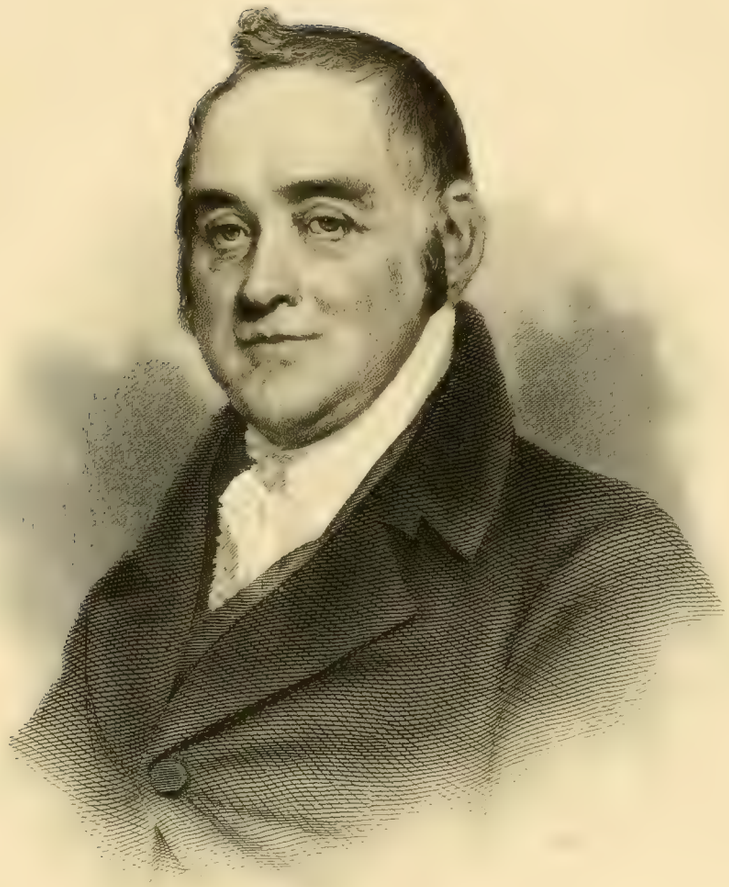
Mr. Thorndike died in May, 1832. He retained to the last his great energy and activity, and left a large fortune. Mr. Quincy, in allusion to an obituary notice of Mr. Thorndike in the *Boston Daily Advertiser* in May, 1832, after referring to his remarkable mental powers, says that "when their influence is united, as was his, with high moral powers, and exerted during a long life on the side of virtue, and in promoting the best interests of society, it is enduring, and serves to give a character to the age in which they live."

Mr. Thorndike was married three times. His first wife was Mercy, daughter of Osmyn Trask, of Beverly. By her he had one son, who died in infancy, and a daughter, wife of Ebenezer Francis, an eminent merchant in Boston. Mr. Thorndike's second wife, the mother of his twelve other children, was Anna, daughter of George Dodge, of Salem. He married thirdly, in 1818, Sarah, daughter of the Rev. Joseph Dana, of Newburyport. She survived him, and died in 1845.

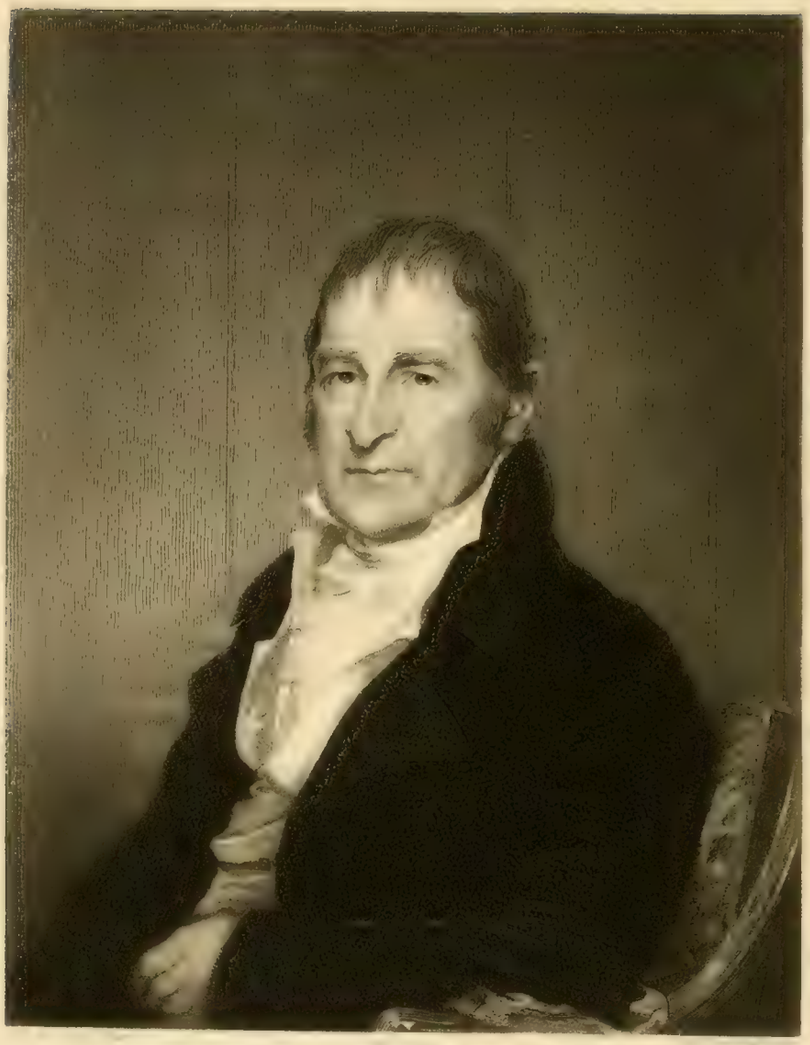
The accompanying engraving of the portrait of Mr. Thorndike was made from the oil painting by Gilbert Stuart, taken towards the end of his life.[2]

[1] This partnership began during the War of the Revolution, and apparently continued till the close of the century. See also the biography of Moses Brown in this work.

[2] For most of the above see "Quincy's History of Harvard University," and "Stone's History of Beverly."

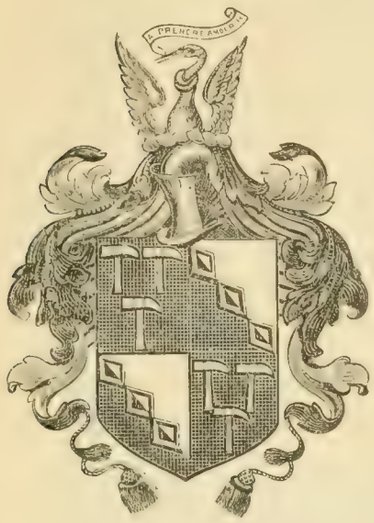


Israel Thorndike



Moses Brown

MOSES BROWN.



"I hereby certify that the above Arms and Crest are those of Christopher Browne, of Stamford, Co. Lincoln, and of Tolethorpe, Co. Rutland, and of his descendants. (Vide c. 23, folio 77, and Grants II., 627.)"

Alfred Scott Gatty
Rouge Dragon

Heralds College London.
30 July. 1886.

Moses Brown, of Beverly, was born in Waltham, formerly a part of Watertown, Massachusetts, April 4, 1748. He was the eldest surviving son of Isaac Brown, a very active business man, who resided on Waltham Plain, and who descended in the fifth generation from Abraham Browne, one of the original settlers of Watertown. Abraham was admitted freeman of Massachusetts March 6, 1631–2, and soon became prominent in the place of his adoption, receiving, as is manifest from the early records of the town, "important appointments and trusts more numerous than "were conferred upon any other person." He was descended, in the fifth generation, through the Brownes of Swan Hall, Hawkedon, in Suffolk, England, from Christopher Browne of Stamford, in Lincolnshire, and of Tolethorpe, Rutlandshire, who, again, was descended, in the fifth generation, from John Browne, a merchant of Stamford, and Alderman, or chief magistrate, of that town in 1376, the office of Mayor not having been created till 1663. Several mortuary brasses of the family, called by Fuller, in his Worthies, "the ancient family of Brownes of Toll-Thorp," still remain on the walls of the Church of All Saints in Stamford, and on the floor of a chapel of the same "proper to the family", and also in the church at Little Casterton, near Tolethorpe. The church of All Saints, itself, was in great part rebuilt about the year 1465 at the expense of John Browne, father of Christopher Browne, above named; and its beautiful steeple was erected by William Browne, uncle of Christopher. This William Browne, under a charter dated 1485, also founded the "Browne Hospital or Bead House" for the support of "twelve poor men," and endowed it liberally by grants of lands. This institution still flourishes in Stamford, and, by the large increase in the value of its land, the scope of its charities has been greatly extended. The Manor of Tolethorpe, near the village of Little Casterton, in Rutlandshire, about three miles from Stamford, was purchased by Christopher Browne, above named, of the Burton family towards the end of the 15th century, and thenceforth continued to be the seat of the head of the family until into the present century, a period of nearly four hundred years. About thirty years ago it was sold, and the ancient stone manor house is now owned and occupied by Charles Ormston Eaton, Esq., a prominent banker of Stamford, who kindly entertained there the writer of this article in the summer of 1886. Mr. Eaton has added wings to the



MANSION OF MOSES BROWN, BEVERLY, MASS.

original mansion, but has otherwise carefully preserved this venerable structure, as nearly as possible, in the condition in which he found it. A wood-cut copied from a photograph of the house, before its recent alterations, is inserted; together with wood-cuts from photographs of the church of All Saints, and of the Bead House. The two large windows, at the further end of the latter building, are those of the little chapel in which the "twelve poor men" are required to attend daily services. The rest of the building is occupied by two large halls, the whole structure forming one side of an interior quadrangle on which are the residences of the beneficiaries.

The three mascles, in the coat of arms given at the beginning of this article, were granted, together with the crest and motto, to Christopher Browne, above mentioned, July 20, 1480; but are here combined with a still earlier grant to the family of the three mallets with a slightly different crest, which latter coat and crest are cut in stone on the walls of the Bead House. The original parchment grant to Christopher still exists, and is in the possession of Frederick Sayres Browne of Norwich, England. It is a curious bit of old French, and is printed in full in the *Heraldic Journal*, Vol. IV., page 146. The herald, Mr. Alfred Scott Gatty, of the Heralds' College, London, stated to the writer that he knew of but one other instance where two grants of arms had been made to the same family.

Moses Brown, the subject of this memoir, was fitted for Harvard College by his maternal uncle, the Rev. Thomas Balch of Dedham, and graduated in 1768. He taught school for three or four years in Framingham, Lexington and Lincoln, and then settled in Beverly as a merchant, in the autumn of 1772. The cause of American Independence was warmly espoused by him, and a commission, dated August 7, 1775, signed by James Warren, President of the Provincial Congress, appointed him Captain of a company enlisted by him in Beverly, under a commission dated July 11th of the same year. In January 1776 he joined the line of the American army as Captain in the fourteenth regiment, Colonel John Glover, under a commission dated January 1, 1776, and signed by John Hancock, President of the Continental Congress. This regiment, of which many of the privates were seamen, and which is accordingly called the "Amphibious Regiment" by Irving in his Life of Washington, did good service at Brooklyn in ferrying over the army to New York when it was obliged to evacuate Brooklyn Heights. It also performed similar service for the army on its crossing the Delaware, preliminary to the battle of Trenton, in which it took a prominent part. Captain Brown's Orderly Book[1] beginning in January 1776, kept with his characteristic neatness and exactness, is still preserved by his descendants, together with his sword, field-glass and commissions. At the expiration of the term of enlistment of his company he returned to Beverly, where he resumed his business with his partner and brother in law, Israel Thorndike, and some of the vessels of "Brown and Thorndike," transformed from their peaceful character as merchantmen into armed ships, continued the patriotic work which Captain Brown had begun in the field, and did good service to his country.

After the close of the war, Mr. Brown continued to be energetically and successfully engaged in commerce until the year 1800, when he retired from active business with what was, for those days, an ample fortune. His house on the main street of Beverly, in which, together with Mr. Thorndike, he resided for several years, and until the latter erected a separate mansion, afterwards the Town Hall, is still standing, is a good specimen of the Colonial residences of the better class. Of this also, a wood-cut, taken from a photograph, is inserted. Here, for many years, Mr. Brown dispensed a generous hospitality, and paid much attention to the cultivation of fruit and flowers in the ample garden belonging to his house. The noble elms, which still adorn the main street of Beverly, were also set out by him. He was largely instrumental in the construction of Essex Bridge, between Beverly and Salem, and also of the Salem and Boston Turnpike, the latter having been constructed under his personal supervision. In both of these enterprises he was among the largest original proprietors. He was a Federalist of the Washington school, was a member of the Massachusetts Legislature, and one of the Presidential Electors in 1808. "His manners were dignified and courteous. He always took an important part in public enterprises." President Quincy, in his History of Harvard University, says of him that "He united integrity with benevolence, was exemplary in all social and domestic

[1] The following extract from this book, in commendation of Col. Glover's command for its gallant attack upon Sir William Howe Oct. 18, 1776, on his march to New Rochelle, may be of interest, as showing the character and usefulness of the Essex troops and the esteem in which they were held.

"Orders for Gen. Lee's Division, Mile Square, Oct. 19, 1776. Gen. Lee "returns his warmest thanks to Col. Glover and the Brigade under his "command, not only for their gallant behavior yesterday, but, for their "prudent, cool, orderly and soldierlike conduct in all respects, he assures these brave men that he shall omit no opportunity of shewing his "gratitude. All the wounded to be sent immediately to Valentine's hill "at the second Liberty Pole, where surgeons should repair to dress them. "They are afterwards to be forwarded to Fort Washington." And, two "days later, Washington issued general orders as follows, "Headquarters 21 Oct. 1776. The hurried situation of the General for the last two "days, having prevented him from paying that attention to Col. Glover "and the officers and soldiers who were with him in the skirmish on "Friday last that their merit and good behavior deserved, he flatters "himself that his thanks, tho' delayed, will nevertheless be acceptable "to them, as they are offered with great sincerity and cordiality. At "the same time he hopes that every other part of the army will do "their duty with equal bravery and zeal whenever called upon; and "neither dangers, nor difficulties nor hardships will discourage soldiers "engaged in the cause of liberty, and while we are contending for all "that freemen hold dear and valuable."



CHURCH OF ALL SAINTS,

STAMFORD, ENGLAND.



A. P. Peabody.

relations, and a generous contributor to public and private charities and associations." In his will he bequeathed two thousand dollars to the Theological School at Cambridge connected with the College, to be applied in any way that "will best promote the cause of Christianity, and the design and utility of this religious establishment." He deceased June 15th, 1820, and his funeral sermon was preached by his friend and pastor, the Rev. Abiel Abbott of Beverly. He married first Oct. 16, 1774, Elizabeth, daughter of Osmyn Trask of Beverly. She died without issue, and he married secondly, May 3d, 1789, Mary, daughter of the Rev. Matthew Bridge of Framingham, Harvard College 1741, and grand-daughter of the Rev. Daniel Perkins of Bridgewater, Harvard College 1717. His children were first, Charles, born in Beverly, May 24, 1793, who graduated at Harvard College in 1812. He then studied law and was admitted to the bar, but never practised his profession. He soon removed to Boston, where, for some years, he was engaged in business. During the latter part of his life he was much interested in genealogical pursuits, and was largely instrumental in tracing his ancestors in this country to their origin in England. He returned to the former spelling of the name by resuming the final *e*. He married Dec. 14, 1825, Elizabeth Isabella Tilden, and died in Boston, July 21, 1856, leaving three children, Harriet Tilden, Francis Perkins and Edward Ingersoll Browne (Harvard College 1855) all now living. The name of the old firm has, of late years, been revived by the association of Edward Ingersoll Browne with Charles Thorndike, grandson of Israel, as partners in the law business, under the name of Browne and Thorndike of Boston, in which city they have long been established.

The second and only other child of Moses Brown, except one who died in infancy, was George, born Nov. 24, 1799. For several years he was a captain in the merchant service. In 1843 he was appointed Commissioner to the Sandwich Islands, and, with his eldest son, was lost at sea on a voyage to China in August, 1846. He married, Dec. 9, 1821, his cousin, Harriet Bridge by whom he had several children, all of whom have deceased, his two sons Samuel and Moses alone leaving issue.[1]

ANDREW PRESTON PEABODY, D.D., LL.D.

Dr. Peabody is descended from Lieutenant Francis Peabody, who was born in 1614 in St. Albans, Hertfordshire, England, and came to New England in the ship "Planter" in 1635, settling in Lynn, and later, in 1638, in Hampton, Old Norfolk County, subsequently to which time he became an inhabitant of Topsfield, where, in 1657, he married Mary Foster, dying February 19, 1697–98. He is the American ancestor of a numerous and honorable posterity in Essex County and elsewhere, among whom the distinguished philanthropist, George Peabody of London, is especially to be named.

Lieutenant [1]Francis Peabody's son [2]Joseph, born in 1644, who lived in Boxford, was the father of [3]Zerubabel, born February 26, 1707, who lived in Middleton, married Lydia Fuller February 21, 1733, and was the father of [4]Andrew, born July 21, 1745, married Ruth Curtis December 13, 1769, lived in Middleton, and died October 14, 1813. His son [5]Andrew, born February 29, 1772, married Mary Rantoul, sister of Hon. Robert Rantoul, Sr., of Beverly, at Salem, May 30, 1808, lived in Beverly, where he kept the grammar school and was a teacher of repute, and died December 19, 1813. The subject of this sketch was born in Beverly March 19, 1811. In a reminiscence contributed to a series of autobiographical articles by eminent men (published in the *Forum* for July, 1887) he has himself unconsciously disclosed the dominant chord in his own character, while describing the Spartan educational methods of the earlier years in this century :—

"I learned to read before I was three years old, and foremost among the books that have helped me I must put Webster's 'Spelling-book.' I knew the old lexicographer. He was a good man, but hard, dry, unsentimental. I do not suppose that in his earliest reading-lessons for children he had any ulterior purpose beyond shaping sentences composed of words consisting of three letters and less. But while I believe in the inspiration of prophets and apostles, I agree with the Christian fathers of the Alexandrian school in extending the theory of inspiration far beyond the (so called) canon of Scripture, and I cannot but think that a divine afflatus breathed upon the soul of Noah Webster when he framed, as the first sentence on which the infant mind should concentrate its nascent capacity of combining letters into words, and which thus by long study and endless repetition must needs deposit itself in undying memory, 'No man can put off the law of God.' When I toiled day after day on this sentence, I probably had no idea of its meaning; but there is nothing better for a child than to learn by rote and to fix in enduring remembrance words which thus sown deep, will blossom into fruitful meaning with growing years. Since I began to think and feel on subjects within the province of ethics, this maxim has never been out of my mind. I have employed it as a text for my experience and observation. It is a fundamental truth in my theology. It underlies my moral philosophy. It has molded my ethical teaching in the pulpit and the classroom, in utterance and print."

From his sixth year until he entered college, he supplied himself "with books from a library of several hundred very good books, the proprietors of which were assessed fifty cents a year." His earliest teacher, to whom he owed much, was Miss Joanna Prince, who later married Ebenezer Everett, of Brunswick, Me., and was the mother of Prof. Charles Carroll Everett. He was also a pupil of Miss Hannah Hill in the first Sunday-school in the United States, which these two ladies had gathered in Beverly, and had the satisfaction later of teaching Miss Hill Greek in her old age, in fulfillment of her desire to read the New Testament in the original tongue. A child of precocious promise, he was on the point of being sent

[1] See Bond's Genealogies and History of Watertown; Stone's "History of Beverly"; Quincy's "History of Harvard University"; the New England Hist. and Genealogical Register for January 1885; the Heraldic Journal, Boston 1865; Wright's "History of Rutlandshire"; Blore's "History of Rutlandshire;" and Drakard's "History of Stamford."*

* By Edward I. Browne.

to Exeter Academy, when the wise minister, Dr. Abbot, persuaded his mother to have him prepared for college at home under the teaching of Mr. Bernard Whitman, who was then pursuing his studies for the Unitarian ministry with that distinguished clergyman, and he was fitted for college in a year, passing the examinations for the Freshman class in 1823, and returning to live in Beverly under the same teaching another twelvemonth, in which he went over the studies of the first two years of the college course, returning again to Cambridge to join the Junior class in August, 1824, and graduating in 1826, in the same class with his cousin, Hon. Robert Rantoul, Jr. No less than fourteen members of this class entered the Christian ministry, among them the theologian Oliver Stearns, the eloquent preacher George Putnam, and Nehemiah Adams, the Calvinistic divine. His father had set him apart for the ministry, as far as it could be done, by a request on his death-bed, but the boy who had graduated at fifteen, finishing his academic course at an earlier age than any other graduate of Harvard College, with the possible exception of Paul Dudley and Cotton Mather, was too young to begin his theological studies, and the following three years were spent, the first in study at Beverly, teaching in the winter the same district school in Middleton where his father had first taught, the second as private tutor in the family of Mr. Huidekoper, of Meadville, Pa., where not a few eminent men have both given and received much, in a home of patriarchal simplicity and manorial beauty, and the third in teaching in the academy at Portsmouth, N. H. In 1829 he entered the Cambridge Divinity School, graduating from it in 1832. The next year was spent as college tutor of Hebrew and mathematics at Cambridge. At this time his first publication appeared, "Address on Taxation," being No. 1, Vol. 1, of the "Workingmen's Library."

President Quincy desired to secure Mr. Peabody for permanent academic service. He had, however, been preaching in various places during the year, being called to settle over churches in Fall River and Framingham, and accepted an invitation to become minister of the South Parish in Portsmouth, N. H., as colleague with the Rev. Nathan Parker, D.D., one of the most honored clergymen of his time in New England, whose lofty character, distinguished alike for wisdom and for goodness, has left an abiding mark upon that intelligent Christian community. Mr. Peabody took charge of that pulpit September 1, 1833. His previous year spent in Portsmouth as a teacher had brought him into such personal relations with Dr. Parker as to make him appreciate, as a special privilege, the opportunity of laboring in such companionship, but the hope was sadly disappointed, as Dr. Parker's rapidly failing health did not even permit him to take part in the ordination of his colleague and successor in October, 1833, and his death a few days later left the young clergyman alone in charge of a most important parish.

The South Church, which was the second in Portsmouth, had its origin, as was the case in many of the older parishes in New England, in a dissension about the best locality for a new meeting-house. It early leaned to Arminianism, while the North Church, long under the ministry of the elder Buckminster, held fast to the more strict theology; and at the separation of the Congregational body in the earlier years of this century, the former had become a leading parish in the "Unitarian movement." Under the serious evangelical preaching of Dr. Parker, it had been strengthened and increased in numbers till not long before his death it had built one of the most beautiful and costly stone churches of the time in New England, which was filled with worshipers. This responsible charge was borne by the young minister, and prospered in his hands. The further increase of the congregation, to the number of two hundred and fifty families, made it necessary to enlarge the church; a handsome chapel was built for the large and flourishing Sunday school, and all the signs of professional success in a high degree were evident.

On September 12, 1836, Mr. Peabody was married to Catherine Whipple, daughter of Edmund Roberts, of Portsmouth, who, as Envoy of the United States Government, negotiated the first treaty between this country and Siam and Cochin China, the journal of whose travels in remote Eastern lands, at that time almost unvisited, was published after his death, which took place in 1837, while abroad on public business. Of the eight children of this marriage, two sons and two daughters died in early childhood, and four daughters are living. Mrs. Peabody died in November, 1869.

The Portsmouth pulpit, as filled by Mr. Peabody, was metropolitan to New Hampshire. While the most important part of a faithful minister's labors is silent and hidden in the endless round of pastoral duty, the calls to public services outside his parish multiplied upon him in the educational and charitable duties which fall in such a community to the minister of a prosperous and influential congregation. He early became a trustee of Exeter Academy, holding that position for forty-three years. One of the earliest of the many addres-es which he gave on academic occasions, that on "Conversation: its faults and its graces," delivered before the Newburyport Female High School, and first printed in 1846, became a classic on the subject. Meantime, in the religious discussions which were being earnestly carried on in the Unitarian Church, Mr. Peabody soon became a recognized leader, in 1845 giving the address before the Senior class in the Cambridge Divinity School on "Anti-Supernaturalism," and being widely known as a preacher of positive spiritual Christianity. In 1844 he published "Lectures on Christian Doctrine," which became a handbook of the belief of the evangelical portion of the religious body to which he belonged, while a wider congregation than his Ports-

mouth parish was addressed by his "Christian Consolations: sermons designed to furnish comfort and strength to the afflicted," of which the first of many editions was published in 1846, and by his "Sermons to Children," published in 1867. He also was an editor of the *Christian Register* for two years.

In 1852 he received from Harvard College the degree of Doctor of Divinity. During all this period he was a frequent contributor to the *Christian Examiner* and the *North American Review*, and in 1852 he became proprietor and editor of the latter publication, which duties he retained till 1863, when he was succeeded by Professors Lowell and Norton.

The invitation to the Plummer professorship of the heart and of Christian morals in Harvard College found Dr. Peabody in a happy and successful ministry at Portsmouth, over a parish to whom he was bound by ties of mutual attachment, such as no other call could have been strong enough to break. He had seen the first generation of his people pass away and give place to children and grandchildren, whose feeling toward him was not lessened by his removal to the large sphere of duties which Cambridge offered. On September 1, 1860, he assumed the Plummer professorship, and when, after a generation had intervened, on September 1, 1883, the fiftieth anniversary of his settlement at Portsmouth was celebrated by his former parish, it was with a joy and sympathy not dimmed by the lapse of time.

The new work on which Dr. Peabody now entered, as successor to the Rev. Frederick Dan. Huntington, D.D., was waiting to be shaped by him into a large and unique opportunity of service and influence. The wise munificence of Miss Caroline Plummer, of Salem, had been led to endow the "Professorship of the Heart and of Christian Morals," by the conviction that the "dry light" and unsympathetic methods of college training needed to be suffused with the warmth and glow of a personal influence, exerted by a Christian minister of wide and ready sympathy, hearty interest in young men and belief in them, not a teacher only nor a preacher only, though both of these he was to be, but one who should find what possibilities existed in Harvard College for the function of pastor to the most difficult class of persons in the world to reach,—youths of the student age. It had been the conviction of this excellent lady that such a place could be created and filled by a wise, devout scholar, in whom the weight of genuine character and the persuasiveness and charm of Christian faith should be a "living epistle, known and read of all men," but no one could have ventured to anticipate the way in which Dr. Peabody was to grow into the place and the place to grow round him, or the degree in which his influence was destined to pervade the Cambridge atmosphere like sunshine, doing more perhaps than any other single cause to soften and change the temper of mutual antagonism and mutual distrust which largely affected the relations of the faculty and the students. This condition of things was, of course, not without shining exceptions on both sides, and as a survival from the semi-medevial conditions of the college in Puritan times. The years of Dr. Peabody's incumbency of the one position which was created to be mediatorial between the two elements, witnessed a change for the better greater than had been wrought in the two previous centuries. This process went on side by side with the great enlargement of the college on all sides, transforming it into a veritable university, with the freedom and opportunity of the elective system; and it is not too much to say that Dr. Peabody's presence and influence at Cambridge did more than any other thing to inspire confidence in the whole community that these changes would only give opportunity for growth in Christian manhood, and leave the college freer to become a training-school in virtue and goodness and faith. The proper official work of the Plummer professorship had included the duties of preacher to the university and some slight teaching of each class at the beginning of the Freshman and at the end of the Senior year, while the pulpit services were lightened by being assumed by the president (when he was a clergyman) on one Sunday of each month. Except during the presidency of Dr. Hill, however, the burden of the University pulpit now fell wholly upon Dr. Peabody, and for twenty-one years was so borne as to keep that distinguished place at the height of its reputation, as the voice in sacred things of the mother and chief of American colleges.

The degree of Doctor of Laws was conferred upon Dr. Peabody by the University of Rochester in 1863.

The publications of Dr. Peabody during the period after his removal to Cambridge may be in part noted here. In 1861 he delivered and published a course of lectures before the Lowell Institute, entitled "Christianity the Religion of Nature," and in 1873 a volume of sermons on "Christian Belief and Life." Besides a multitude of single sermons, lectures, orations, discussions in the influential reviews of great questions of public interest and memoirs of distinguished persons, the following volumes have also been given to the public by him: "Manual of Moral Philosophy," 1872; "Christianity and Science," a serios of lectures delivered in New York, in 1874, on the Ely foundation of the Union Theological Seminary, 1874. The Baccalaureate sermons which he preached to successive classes on the Sunday before commencement, and which were long a marked feature of the academic life, were gathered up in a volume embracing those preached in successive years, from 1861 to 1883, when the emeritus professor might well have supposed that his long service in the interesting duty was ended, but in 1885 and 1886 the graduating classes still felt that from no other could they ask the farewell word in behalf of their *alma mater*. A part of the fruit of his ethical instruction in the divinity school and in the college appeared in his translations

of Cicero's De Officiis, De Senectute, De Amicitiâ, and the Tusculan Disputations, published in 1883, 1884 and 1886, and of Plutarch's De Serâ Numinis Vindictâ, published in 1885. In 1887 he published further fruits of his college teaching in the valuable work on Moral Philosophy, which embodies a portion of the lectures given by him to the senior class in college and in the Divinity School at Meadville, Pa.

The Cambridge life devolved upon Dr. Peabody, beyond the duties of his professorship, not a few such obligations as seek a public-spirited citizen with heavy demand upon his time. On the school committee he gave many years of service, and in other matters which furthered the cause of good government of the city, he was never backward. Only an exceptional endowment of health and a bodily frame strong as iron which was able to bear habitual labor far into the small hours of the night, could have endured the toil.

As a teacher, the work which fell into his strong and willing hands naturally broadened more and more. The subject of ethics belonged strictly to his department as religious teacher to the university, but in addition he taught logic, political economy until the appointment of Professor Dunbar, and had the care of the senior forensics for some years, also filling gaps when they occurred in the college and in the divinity school. A portion of this labor bore fruit in several of his printed works.

Meantime, the friendly and fatherly relation in which he stood to the students had beneficent results. When the wise generosity of Mr. Nathaniel Thayer provided the means for reviving in a better form the old "Commons," furnishing good food to the great mass of the students for a moderate sum, the task of organizing this large enterprise and of its supervision for a considerable time was undertaken by Dr. Peabody until he had proved that it was a wise experiment and had established it on a permanent basis at the public tables of Memorial Hall. The thoughtful and abounding private charities which sought his aid as almoner in finding and relieving needy students who deserved such aid, a form of college benefit which escapes all public record, were very great in amount and were alone sufficient to occupy much of the time of a busy man. It would be impossible to overstate the quantity and quality of his service in personal and private relations as adviser and confidential friend to the multitude of young men who sought his help in any kind of trouble and never sought in vain. For all this the unsolicited reward of a love and veneration, such as it is the privilege of few to win, was poured forth upon him. No one can have heard without a thrill the cheers, ringing with the enthusiasm of youth and of personal affection and rising again and again as if they would never cease, which greeted the mention of his name or welcomed his presence on all public occasions of the university.

The Plummer professorship also offered an opportunity to bring the university into religious relations with the whole community by making its pulpit not the property of a single sect, but hospitable to all branches of the Protestant Church, which Dr. Peabody's large and sympathetic Christian temper fulfilled to the utmost. While himself recognized as a leader in his own denomination, he had the gift of winning the Christian fellowship and conciliating by his own reconciling spirit the friendly respect of churchmen of all names, welcoming them to the college chapel and being welcomed as a preacher in their pulpits, while he was sought to give addresses on the public days of the theological schools of Newton, Bangor and Andover, representing various Christian bodies; and the catholic system of administration of religion in Harvard University, introduced in 1885, in which a group of the ablest preachers of different churches are associated in the care of spiritual interests which are recognized to be so large and various as to demand their united care, is the legitimate outgrowth of the spirit in which Dr. Peabody admitted this great religious opportunity.

The most important part of Dr. Peabody's public services at Cambridge still remains to be mentioned. The death of President Felton, in February, 1862, not only removed his closest personal friend in the college, but devolved upon him most laborious and responsible duties as head of the university, being appointed by the corporation acting president, and discharging the duties of that office until the installation of President Hill late in the following autumn. On the resignation of Dr. Hill, in September, 1868, he was again called to the same responsibility, and continued to preside over the university until the inauguration of President Eliot. His administration as acting president thus covered two periods, amounting in all to about two years, while he was specially associated with the counsels of his immediate predecessors in the office, and in the plans which marked their administrations and which resulted in the abolition of the old "hazing" system and the introduction of a healthier spirit of mutual regard in the instructors and students, and the first broadening out of the college curriculum beyond its narrow limit by introducing the elective system. The success of Dr. Peabody as an administrator was marked, and it seemed natural that he should have been elected to the permanent incumbency of the office which he adorned; the strong secular tendency in college affairs had, however, predetermined that the office should not be held in any event by a clergyman.

In these very important duties Dr. Peabody remained at his post for twenty-one years, with an interval of travel in Europe from June, 1867, to March, 1868, which he accomplished by compressing the work of two terms into that of a single one after his return, and of which he published, in 1868, a record in his "Reminiscences of European Travel." A briefer visit to Russia, and the neighboring countries



Albert Thomdike

in which he shared the hospitalities enjoyed by General Grant, was made by him in the summer of 1876, and a longer sojourn in Europe with his family after resigning the Plummer professorship, from June, 1881, to September, 1882. His resignation had gone into effect after the commencement of 1881, but he was at once appointed professor emeritus, retiring from the burdens of his official position, but in no sense from his place in the heart of the college nor from the opportunities of service which awaited him.

The key-note of Dr. Peabody's public services is given in the paper already quoted, where he mentions three biographies to which he has been specially indebted. The first is that of Niebuhr:

"If I have been able, in things secular and sacred, as to reports of current and records of past events, to steer a safe way between credulity and skepticism, I owe it in great part, not to Niebuhr's 'History of Rome,' but to the virtual autobiography that gives shape and vividness to his 'Memoir.' If I remember aright, he expressed his confidence in the substantial authenticity of our canonical gospels, and, however this may be, I owe largely to him my firm faith and trust in them.

"I would next name the 'Life of Thomas Arnold.' When I read it I was pastor of a large parish, with many young persons under my charge and influence, and I was at the same time chairman of a school-board. I had no need of Arnold to awaken my sympathy with young life, but he has helped me to understand it better, and to minister more intelligently and efficiently to its needs and cravings. His 'Rugby Sermons' have a great charm for me, and while I have not been guilty of the absurd and vain attempt to imitate them, I have felt their inspiration both in the pulpit and in the lecture-room. I have also, in a large and diversified experience in educational trusts and offices, felt myself constantly instructed, energized and encouraged by Arnold.

"My third biography is that of Dr. Chalmers, fruitful of beneficent example in more directions than could be easily specified, but to me of peculiar service in his relation to poverty in Glasgow, with its attendant evils and vices In his mode of relieving want in person and in kind, of bringing preventive measures to bear on the potential nurseries of crime, and of enlisting the stronger in the aid and comfort of the feebler members of the community, I found many valuable suggestions for the local charities which came under my direction while I was a parish minister."

It is allotted to few men to fulfil with conspicuous ability so many and various kinds of public service as have fallen to the lot of Dr. Peabody. As a parish minister, building up his church in the prosperity of numbers and in the better welfare of a spiritual growth, never stronger in his hold on the affections of his people than when he parted from them, and always remaining the pastor of their affectionate regard; as a preacher, devout, earnest, persuasive, a powerful expounder of the truth of the gospel, and never more effective or listened to with more interest than in the years after he had passed threescore and ten; as a theologian, strong in his grasp and luminous in his statement of the central verities of Christianity; as an ethical and moral teacher, lucid, eloquent and convincing; as the incumbent of the most difficult position in Harvard College, turning its difficulties into unrivalled opportunities and creating an exceptional work; as a successful administrator, numbered among the honored heads of the university; it has been his to win the love and reverence of the successive generations among whom his work has been wrought from youth to age.

WILLIAM AND ALBERT THORNDIKE.

The Thorndikes of America are descended from a Lincolnshire family, at one time lords of the manor of Little Carlton. The first recorded signature of pedigree was made at the visitation of Heralds, in the year 1634; but the pedigree itself is traced at least a hundred and fifty years earlier, to the middle or end of the fifteenth century. The ancestor of the American family was John Thorndike, who was one of the twelve associates of John Winthrop, Jr., by whom the first permanent settlement at Ipswich was commenced, in 1633. John Thorndike was the brother of Herbert Thorndike, Prebendary of Westminster, a distinguished clergyman of the Church of England. It is not probable that John Thorndike's emigration proceeded from religious motives. He never joined a New England Church, he sent his only son to England, to be baptized by his uncle, the prebendary, and he himself went back to England to die, and was buried by the side of his brother, in the cloisters of Westminster. He had passed thirty-years in America. From Ipswich he went to "Brooksby" (now Peabody), where he is mentioned in 1636 as a grantee of a hundred acres of land. This grant he relinquished the same year for one of a hundred acres in Beverly, then a part of Salem, and in the following year his holding was enlarged to a hundred and eighty-five acres, extending back from the shore at the point afterwards called "Paul's Head," from his son Paul.

Paul Thorndike was prominent in the town affairs of Beverly, and discharged the various offices of selectman, captain of the military company, deputy to the General Court and the like. But he, like his father, never became a member of a New England Church, and not until ten years after his death did his oldest son, John, the first Puritan in the family, make "public profession." Paul's three sons, John, Paul and Herbert, probably lived upon the land which had come to them through their father from their grandfather. But they all had numerous children, and the parental acres gradually departed from the family under a series of petty subdivisions and alienations. Nothing now remains to indicate the original ownership but the mere name "Paul's Head."

Of the generations which followed the first two in Beverly, most of the members were sailors. As Hawthorne picturesquely says of his own ancestors, "From father to son for above a hundred years they followed the sea; a grey-headed shipmaster in each generation retiring from the quarter deck to the homestead, while a boy of fourteen took the hereditary place before the mast, confronting the salt spray and the gale which had blustered against his sire and grandsire. The boy also, in due time, passed from the forecastle to the cabin, spent a tempestuous manhood and returned from his world-wanderings to grow old and die and mingle his dust with his natal earth."

Nicholas Thorndike, the father of the subjects of the present sketch, was born in 1764. He began his seafaring life early enough to be captured in the Revolution by a British cruiser, and to have a short experience of the Jersey Prison Ship. He passed his youth as a sailor and shipmaster, retired in middle life with a moderate competency and spent the remainder of his days in mercantile pursuits in Beverly. Except that he commanded a volunteer company of artillery during the War of 1812, and that he occasionally represented Beverly in the General Court, he held no public office. He was a man whose strong sense and sound judgment in affairs commanded the respect of the community. He was, moreover, like many shipmasters of his day, not without a smack of literary cultivation. The deck of a ship in the trade winds gives great opportunity for general or special reading, and one is sometimes astonished at discovering the sort of books which accompanied our sailors on their voyage.

Captain Thorndike's wife was Mehetabel Rea, whom he married in 1789. She was the daughter of Captain Joseph Rea, a man of some local note in the Revolution, an efficient member of the Committee of Correspondence and the commander of a company from Beverly and Lynn, sent to the aid of Washington in New Jersey. Mrs. Thorndike passed the quiet, uneventful life of a sailor's wife, occupied at home with the care and education of her children, while her husband was employed abroad. She lived until her youngest son was nine years old, and died at the early age of forty. She was little known beyond her own family, but the remembrance of her pure religious character, her love and her many virtues, constantly appears in the affectionate allusions of her children. Of this marriage there were four children, of whom two were daughters; Hitty, who married Thomas Stephens, Jr. (Harvard 1810), a well-known lawyer and town officer of Beverly, and Clara, the wife of Asa Rand (Dartmouth 1806), a clergyman of some prominence as a preacher and editor, and of more as an early Abolitionist and friend of Garrison and George Thompson.

William Thorndike, the oldest son of Nicholas and Mehetabel, was born in Beverly January 22, 1795. His earliest book learning was obtained in the excellent schools of his native town. In the formation of his character, kindly and manly, and at the same time of a certain strictness which sat upon him not ungracefully in after life, one may trace the precepts and example of his excellent mother. From Beverly he passed to Phillips Exeter Academy in 1807, where he spent three years under the tuition of the famous teacher, Dr. Benjamin Abbot. He entered Harvard College as a Sophomore in 1810, and was graduated in 1813. He was faithful in his studies as in all things, took an excellent rank in his class and was a member of the Phi Beta Kappa Society, whose ribbon was then, as now, a badge of scholarship. But he was also of social disposition, and his name appears on the rolls of several of the clubs devoted to good fellowship and conviviality. On leaving college he entered his name as a student in the office of the eminent jurist, Nathan Dane, and was admitted to the Essex Bar in 1816. While a law student he gave some attention to military art, and was the first captain of the Light Infantry Company, which succeeded in 1814, the Artillery Company, commanded by his father during the war. In 1816, the year of his admission to the bar, he delivered in Beverly, the Fourth of July oration. In the autumn of that year he opened an office in Bath, Me., and commenced the practice, so often discouraging, of a young lawyer. Maine was not a wealthy State, commerce was dull and there were more lawyers than business. But he persevered, and probably had a fair share of what business there was. He also applied himself to the study of politics, history and political economy, wrote articles for the newspapers, delivered, in 1818, the Fourth of July oration at Brunswick and published a series of essays upon the constitutional struggles in the Pyrenæan Peninsula and Italy. The death of his father in 1821 left him in comfortable pecuniary circumstances, and in the autumn of that year he married Nancy Stephens, a sister of his brother-in-law, Thomas Stephens.

His wife, a most lovely person, to whom he was devotedly attached, died in less than two years from their marriage. Her death was followed by a period of depression, during which he was completely unfit for active life. He abandoned his profession, never to resume it, and in the autumn of 1823 returned to his old home in Beverly.

Here his interest in affairs gradually revived. With the means inherited from his father, he pursued with success various mercantile enterprises. He was upon the board of the banking and insurance corporations of the place and active in its charities. He also gave much time to town affairs, as selectman, overseer of the poor, moderator of town-meetings and the like. In matters of education he was especially earnest, did much good work upon the School Committee and was one of the early promoters of the Debating Society and Lyceum, before which he delivered several carefully prepared lectures.

In 1826 and 1827 he represented the town in the General Court. In the House he rarely spoke, but his intelligence, clear judgment and familiarity with business, made him valuable as an adviser and as a member of committees. In 1828 he was chosen Senator for Essex, and was re-elected in the four following years. His popularity in the County, as in his own town, was very great, though he was by no means a good politician in the way of strict party allegiance. In the Senate he joined in debate oftener than in the House, and always spoke and voted from his own judgment and conscience, rather than from regard to the expectations of his friends or his constituents. In

short, as his distinguished contemporary, Mr. Choate, once said of him, "He was not able enough to agree with any set of men to succeed in politics." But his steadfast integrity and purity of motive certainly carried him a great way towards success. In National affairs, which got into the debates and resolutions of the Legislature more frequently than now, he probably would have called himself a Federalist, but still he was heretical upon some of the old Federalist articles of faith. His name was upon the National Republican ticket after that party was formed, but he refused to subscribe to the tenet of protection, which was its criterion of orthodoxy, and remained a free trader to the end. And upon the question of removal of the Cherokees beyond the Mississippi, he drew down upon himself a storm of indignation because he believed, as afterwards proved true, that their removal was not only for the good of the country, but for their own good. In 1830 there was talk in the County of sending him to Congress, but he was too poor a politician for this, and the contest fell between Mr. Choate and Mr. Crowningshield, the former being triumphantly elected and beginning at this time his brilliant public career. In 1832 he was elected president of the Senate, and filled the chair with great ability, dignity and impartiality. His public life ended here. In the same year he was made president of two Boston corporations, the Hamilton Bank and the National Insurance Company, and to the duties of these offices he devoted with his wonted faithfulness and industry the brief remainder of his life. He died of consumption on July 12, 1835, at the early age of forty.

It remains only to speak of his religious character and relations. Brought up by a mother who was a Puritan of the Puritans, he retained through life a certain spirit of that stern faith. His mind always tended towards independence in things spiritual of all human authority, implicit reliance upon Divine Revelation, constant regard for moral and religious principle and the reference of every daily action to the tribunal of conscience. Further than this he was no Puritan, or rather he carried the Puritan spirit to its logical outcome, and threw off the authority of that church in matters of dogma, as that had rejected the authority of its predecessors. On his return to Beverly he took prominent and active part in the affairs of the First Parish, and spent much time and pains in bringing those affairs into a satisfactory financial condition. His interest in the church belonging to that parish was constant and unflagging, and he heartily sympathized with its tendency towards Unitarianism under the pastorate of Dr. Abbot, and its open profession of the Unitarian faith at the settlement of Mr. Thayer. The Sunday-school of that church he found a most congenial sphere of labor and usefulness. His zealous services as teacher and superintendent are gratefully acknowledged in the appreciative memoir of his life, contributed by Mr. Thayer to Reverend Mr. Stone's History of Beverly.

Albert Thorndike, the younger brother of William, was born March 18, 1800. He, like his brother, received his early education at home, and afterwards, in 1813, went to Exeter. He had a desire to go to college, but did not wish to become afterwards either a lawyer, a doctor or a minister. His father had the old notion that college is a place to learn Latin and Greek, and that Latin and Greek are of little use except in the three so-called learned professions. The idea that a college education has less to do with earning a living than with the true life which lies beyond and apart from getting means to live, is of later growth. So Albert spent his three years under Dr. Abbot, and then returned home to commence a business life. At first he assisted his father and kept his books. In 1819 he took a clerkship in the Beverly Bank, and was promoted, in 1822, to the office of cashier, which he retained for twenty-four years. During this time he did many things beside, at first in connection with his brother William and afterwards with the late Samuel Endicott. They owned shares in coasting and fishing craft and in larger vessels for foreign trade, sent adventures to India and the Mediterranean and engaged in the manifold enterprises open to the inhabitants of a thriving sea-port town; for Beverly, as a part of the port of Salem, had then much more to do with the world beyond the ocean than now.

In 1823 he married Joanna Batchelder Lovett, daughter of John and Hannah (Batchelder) Lovett. Her parents had died in her infancy, and she had grown to womanhood in the home and under the paternal care of her uncle, the late Robert Rantoul. Of this marriage there were born nine children, of whom two are still living, Samuel Lothrop Thorndike, of Cambridge, and Charles Francis Thorndike, of Beverly. There are also living three sons of another child, the late Dr. William Thorndike, of Milwaukee. Mrs. Thorndike survived her husband sixteen years, and died in 1874.

In 1846 Mr. Thorndike took the presidency of the Bank, which he kept until 1853. In addition to its local transactions, the Bank did a considerable business with Boston, of which, during his cashiership and presidency, he had entire charge. This carried him often to the city, and after the Railroad made communication easy, he spent much of his time there.

For the routine of the affairs of the town Mr. Thorndike was too busy a man, but he always found time for its charities and for its higher interests. He was an early officer of the Lyceum, and always an active member of the Fisher Charitable Society.

From 1845 to 1847 he represented Beverly in the General Court, and in 1850 was a member of the Senate. He seldom took the floor, except to make a report or a motion. Oratory was not one of his gifts. But his familiarity with commerce and with financial

matters in general, made him an important member of the Mercantile Committee, as well as of the State Valuation Committee of 1850.

During this period he was a director of the Eastern Railroad, and spent much time upon its affairs; and in 1852 he was elected to the presidency. In the duties of this office, which he held until 1855, and that of auditor, to which he was afterwards appointed, he passed the rest of his vigorous business life. Into these duties he put, as was his wont, his whole energy, not content to be simply the head of a board, but familiarizing himself with, and actively directing, all the operations of the road. More than one important reform in railway management was either originated by him or received early adoption upon his line. He was esteemed and beloved by those under him, and with his associates he formed warm and lasting friendships. But a shadow fell upon his term of office from the crime of a trusted subordinate. Honest himself, as a matter of course, and beyond the conception of being otherwise, he had little suspicion of the possibility of dishonesty in another; and the blow which he received saddened the whole remainder of his life.

Mr. Thorndike's religious feelings were strong, his faith liberal, his charity universal. He succeeded his brother William as superintendent of the Parish Sunday-school in 1833, and for several years carried on the good work his brother had begun. From 1842 until his death he was one of the deacons of the church.

His favorite recreation was music. He was a singer from boyhood, and kept his fine bass voice to the end. A pupil of Keller, one of the first German instructors who came to this country, he was no mean proficient upon the organ and piano. He attended all the concerts far and wide, was a member of the various musical societies of the neighborhood and led the parish choir for thirty years.

If space permitted, it would be pleasant to speak at length upon Mr. Thorndike's disposition and tastes, as they showed themselves at home,—his fondness for children, his love of books and pictures, his admiration of the beauties of nature, his skill in horticulture, his deft handiness as an amateur mechanic. But with all this a brief public record has little concern.

He died after a half year's illness, which he bore with patience and fortitude, June 14, 1858, mourned by all who knew him, and affectionately remembered by those who knew him best.

CAPTAIN JOHN E. GIDDINGS.

John Endicott Giddings was born in Danvers, Mass., October 6, 1794. His father was Solomon Giddings, born in Ipswich in 1767, a descendant of George Giddings, who settled in Ipswich in 1635; and his mother was Anna Endicott, born in Danvers in 1769, and a descendant of Gov. John Endicott. His family removed to Beverly when he was about eleven years of age, and he soon after commenced sea life, accompanying his father to the West Indies. During the War of 1812 he enlisted in a privateer, and was captured by an English sloop of war, off Halifax, and he was taken to Dartmoor Prison, in England, where he was confined for nearly two years. After his release he entered the employ of the Hon. Wm. Gray, of Salem, and soon rose to the position of captain. Entering the employ of Joseph Peabody, of Salem, he had command of the noted ships, "Carthage" and "Augustus," making voyages to China and Bombay. After the death of Mr. Peabody he commanded the ship "Duxbury," owned by Mr. John L. Gardner, of Boston, in the Cuba and Russia business until he retired from active sea service.

As a shipmaster he was prudent and skilful, never meeting in his long sea life with any disaster entailing loss upon the Insurance Companies; and he was a worthy representative of that remarkable class of men justly termed "merchant captains."

He married, in April, 1824, Martha Thorndike Leach, descended from Lawrence Leach, one of the first settlers of Beverly. He had five sons,—two of whom died in infancy. His oldest son, Charles Stephens, died February 9, 1856.

Two sons, John E. and Edward L., are still living. Capt. Giddings died April 28, 1849, and is buried at Beverly.

DR. INGALLS KITTREDGE, SR.

Ingalls Kittredge, who was born at Amherst, N. H., on the 10th of December, 1769, and died at Beverly June 17, 1856, was one of the sixth generation in descent from John Kittredge, of Billerica, who received grants of land in 1660, and in 1663 in Billerica, and in 1661 in Tewksbury, where his descendants were located.

He was the son of Solomon and Tabitha (Ingalls, of Andover), who removed about 1766, to Amherst, N. H. (now called Mount Vernon), and was one of twelve children. He married Sarah Conant, daughter of Jonathan and Mary Conant, who was in direct descent (of the sixth generation), from Roger Conant, the first settler and founder of Salem, which at that period (1626) was called Naumkeag, and included the territory between Portsmouth and Salem.

Their children were Ingalls, who was born at Townsend May 30, 1798, and Sarah, born at Townsend October 1, 1800. Ingalls, Jr., who followed the profession of his father, was a graduate of Harvard College of the class of 1820, and studied medicine (in company with Dr. D. Humphreys Storer), with the celebrated Dr. John C. Warren. His children were seven in number (all daughters), the eldest of whom, Sarah, married Charles W. Galloupe, Esq., of Boston (a native of Beverly), and another, Susan, married Captain Edward L. Giddings, of Beverly.

Dr. Kittredge's opportunities of an early education were exceedingly limited, but a hereditary genius for





Ingalls Rutledge

the practice of medicine seems to have existed in the Kittredges for generations, and the tendency is still a remarkable one in the family, the name of Kittredge being almost synonymous with doctor.

Dr. Benjamin Kittredge, of Tewksbury, had eight sons who were doctors, and Ingalls had four brothers who practiced the healing art, the eldest of whom, Dr. Zephaniah, who lived in Mount Vernon, was a man of famous skill, and with him, no doubt, Ingalls studied.

The name of Ingalls Kittredge first appears in the tax list of 1803, but as no poll tax was included, he probably did not become a resident until August 6, 1804, when his first poll tax was assessed, indicating him at that date a citizen of Beverly. It is said that he occupied the so-called "Asa Woodbury" house, lately demolished, which stood upon the site of the house since built, and now owned and occupied by Mr. Mark B. Avery.

In April, 1803, in consideration of the sum of fourteen hundred and fifty dollars, he purchased of "Simeon Brown, Gent," a tract of land consisting of nine acres, bounded by the county road, a portion of the grant of two hundred acres, made by the Colonial Government to the "Old planter," Roger Conant (Mrs. Kittredge's paternal ancestor), upon which he erected a large mansion house, with suitable outbuildings for agricultural purposes. It is a portion of the well-known "Kittredge Farm," and through the present proprietor, Mr. Charles W. Galloupe, still remains in the family.

In the deed of purchase of the nine acres, he is mentioned as "a physician of Townsend, Middlesex Co.," and his superior intelligence and ability soon gained for him in his new home a large and successful practice, particularly in surgery, which extended widely to the surrounding towns, where he was well known, as the most skilful surgeon of the vicinity. His early visits were made on horseback, but a largely increasing practice, soon compelled a more convenient means of communication, and he adopted the so-called "Sulky," a narrow, high-hung, old-fashioned "Chaise," barely two feet in width and only capable of holding one person, furnishing scanty enough accommodation for even a single person of ordinary size. The quaint old vehicle was known as the "Doctor's Sulky," and was soon as familiar to the people of the surrounding towns as was the face of the sturdy doctor himself. After his death the vehicle speedily fell into disuse, and but few of the present day are aware that it ever had an existence.

In his practice Dr. Kittredge did not hesitate to depart from the established regulations of the "Faculty," whenever, in his judgment, the condition of his patients could be improved by such treatment. This course subjected him to the unfavorable, and often unkind criticism of his contemporaries, but his remarkable successes sustained and secured to him the public confidence, which during his whole lifetime, he never forfeited. He was often urged to accept membership in the "Medical Faculty," but his independent nature could brook no rules inconsistent with his own conclusions, and during the length of his active professional life, he declined associating himself with any society. Later in life, however, after repeated solicitations, he consented to permit his name to be presented for membership.

The death of his esteemed wife, which occurred October 7, 1833, and his marriage in April, 1836, induced him to change his residence from the upper part of the town to a more central location, and he purchased the "Chapman Estate," one of the finest and most elegant of the old Colonial mansions, which was situated at the corner of Federal and Cabot Streets. Here, with a constantly increasing practice, he lived until the month of June, 1844, when a most disastrous fire occurred, which reduced the beautiful building to ashes, entailing a heavy and discouraging loss upon its proprietor; but under his indomitable will and perseverance, the ashes were hardly cold before he commenced the erection of the sightly and elegant mansion which still stands upon the same site, one of the finest and best residences within the limits of the town, and a fitting monument to his energy and enterprise.

Dr. Kittredge was a man of ideas greatly in advance of the times in which he lived. A man of deep and penetrating thought, with clear convictions based upon reasonable deductions, upon which he acted so frequently without consulting the opinion of others, that, as a natural consequence, he was often upon the unpopular side of the public issues.

As a temperance man he advocated total abstinence from the first, and devoted his best energies to recover society from the abuses of unlimited liquor selling, which in that day required no small amount of moral courage.

In politics he was an outspoken adherent of the "Anti-Slavery" party, a companion of Sumner, Garrison, Phillips, Whittier and other notable men, and, though not an active public advocate, he was always ready with his purse, and an ever generous contributor to its treasury. He was an indefatigable manager in the so-called "under-ground railroad," and his house as well as his purse, were always open to the unfortunate refugees, in their attempts to escape from the servitude of the South to the freedom of the North.

The well-known escaped slaves, George Latimer and the since famous Fred. Douglas, were both aided by him, and by him introduced to a public audience in Beverly very soon after their escape from slavery. George Thompson, the noted English philanthropist, Member of Parliament and Abolitionist, found in him a friend, who, without fear or favor, espoused his then unpopular cause and gave him substantial support and efficient aid. Actuated by a desire that the citizens of Beverly should hear the distinguished man speak, the doctor applied to a religious society of which

he was a prominent member, for the use of their edifice for a public lecture. The favor was refused. Later on the society had a meeting, and, anticipating some trouble from the doctor, in order to propitiate him, chose him moderator of the meeting. He never failed to improve his opportunities, and before the adjournment he had secured the adoption of a series of Anti-Slavery resolutions, which, much to the chagrin of the officers, but greatly to the satisfaction of the members of the audience, committed the society to the support of the unpopular "Anti-Slavery party."

A descendant of two eminent families, he was a vigorous representative of New England character. Quick in his decisions and as quick to act, fearless in the discharge of all his duties, prompt and punctual in all his professional engagements, exact in his dealings, somewhat imperious in his manner, he quickly decided between the good and the evil, always extending a hearty encouragement to the right, and administering to the wrong a deserving rebuke. He was a man of activity in the pursuits of human life, and reverent in his relations to the Deity. The citizens of the town heartily accord to him an eminent place in their history.

JOHN I. BAKER.

John I. Baker was born in Beverly August 16, 1812. He left school at twelve years of age, and after store-keeping in Salem and Beverly for two years, served a fourteen months' apprenticeship at the trade of shoemaking, and worked thereat for several years thereafter, with a large shop's crew, and did more or less manufacturing on his own account. He was afterwards engaged in rubber manufacturing, and in store trade, and did much as land surveyor, scrivener and in the settlement of estates. His business of late years has been in real estate. He has, during all these years, been much in public life. Chosen town clerk in 1836, he continued in that position for nearly twenty years, serving also nearly half of that time as selectman. He was Representative in 1840, and in seventeen other years between that and 1884; Senator in 1863 and '64; councillor with Governor Banks and Governor Andrew; County Commissioner from 1847 to 1855. He has also held several appointments from different Governors of the commonwealth, serving now as a harbor and land commissioner, to which he was appointed by Governor Butler in 1883, and reappointed in 1886, by Governor Robinson. When, in 1868, the town entered upon the project of building its water-works, in connection with Salem, he was again chosen on the Board of Selectmen, and its chairman for seven years continuously, and when, at the abolition of the school district system, it was found necessary to provide new school-house accommodations throughout the town, he was chosen chairman of the committee to carry out this purpose, and was also chosen on the school committee (a service he had repeatedly declined), and has been chairman of that board to this time. In 1884 he was again chosen on the Board of Selectmen, and made its chairman, and co-operated with others in securing the Legislative right to secure an independent water supply, and is chairman of the large committee that has now those works substantially and successfully completed He has also co-operated in carrying forward other of the important public works in town, and has done something himself to demonstrate the capacity of the town for growth and improvement. He is president of Liberty Masonic Association, which built Masonic Block; was president during its active existence, of Bass River Association, which built Odd Fellows' Block. He is likewise president of the Beverly Gas Light Company, and of Beverly Co-operative Store: vice-president of the Beverly Savings Bank, whose charter he obtained in 1867, and which now has deposits amounting to one million dollars. He was an early Abolitionist and teetotaller, and reported the platform of the first preliminary Republican State Convention in favor of "equal rights" and of "the right and duty of the people to prohibit by law the sale of intoxicating liquors as a beverage." He was an active worker in the Republican party till 1870, when, dissatisfied with the uncertain course of that party on the liquor question, he united in an Independent Temperance Convention, which nominated a full State ticket, on which he was a candidate for State Treasurer, receiving about eight thousand votes. He again united in conventions in 1875 and '76, which put his name at the head of the ticket for Governor, receiving the first year over nine thousand votes, and the second year over twelve thousand votes. In 1877 Hon. Robert C. Pitman, whom Mr. Baker supported, received over sixteen thousand votes. The election of Governor Talbot that year divided the Temperance forces, and this movement was retarded thereby. Since then Mr. Baker has occupied somewhat of an independent position in politics, but has frequently been elected Representative during that time by very flattering votes.

In the Legislature he has served on some of the most important committees, often as chairman, and has always given faithful attention to the work of the sessions. It has been his fortune for eight different years, as the oldest member who had served there before, to call the House to order, and to preside until an organization was effected. He is connected with the First Baptist Society, and was chairman of the committee that had charge of building the spacious and elegant house of worship of that society, and was also actively instrumental in building the former neat chapel of said society now occupied by the Beverly Light Infantry, one of the neatest and best proportioned buildings in town. He was many years connected with the Beverly Light Infantry and with the Beverly Fire Department, and has actively co-op-



John S. Baker



Wm. E. Abbot.



J. M. Pickett

erated with the latter in securing its modern advanced equipment throughout the town, and retains his interest in the military, continuing a member of the Veteran Associates. During the war of the rebellion he was not only in active work with Governor Andrew at the State House, but also did much of home work in co-operation with the Union Committee and all other loyal helpers in the service of their country. And he constantly insists upon the public duty of fulfilling the promises then made, "that as those who went into the perilous service of that war were loyal to the country in their service, so would we be faithful to them and those dependent upon them for all time to come."

REV. WILLIAM E. ABBOT.

Rev. William E. Abbot, seventh child of Rev. Dr. Abiel and Eunice Abbot, was born in Beverly, Mass., May 2, 1810.

He was prepared for college at Phillips Exeter Academy, Exeter, N. H., under Benjamin Abbot, brother of Dr. Abiel Abbot. He entered the sophomore class of Bowdoin College in 1827, and graduated in 1830. In September of the latter year he entered the Cambridge Theological School, where he graduated in 1833.

Mr. Abbot was settled as pastor over the First Church in Billerica, Mass., in 1837, where he remained until 1839, when he resigned and went to Dorchester, Mass.

April 20, 1837, Mr. Abbot united in mariage with Ann S. Wales, daughter of Joseph and Betsey Wales, who still survives.

JOHN PICKETT.

Mr. John Pickett was born on Central Street, in Beverly, November 9, 1807. His father, Thomas, was born in Beverly December 10, 1775, and died at St. Pierre in the West Indies, when master of the brig "Alice" of Beverly, January 4, 1817. He was son of Thomas of Marblehead, born 1720, and lost at sea 1750; and he a son of John, born in Marblehead about 1680, who died in May, 1763, a fisherman and shoreman. The father of John was Nicholas who was of Marblehead, and forty-three years old in 1692. The mother of the subject of this sketch, was Annis, daughter of Benjamin and Thankful (Larcom) Preston: said Benjamin, a son of Nehemiah and Annis (Bradford) Preston; said Nehemiah, a son of Nehemiah and Abigail (Allen) Preston; this Nehemiah, a son of William and Priscilla (———) Preston, whose early home was at Preston Place at Beverly Farms, where some of their descendants still live. One son of theirs was Randall Preston, who married a Stone, and was the ancestor of the Rantouls and other honored posterity. Thankful Larcom was daughter of David and Lucy (Downing) Larcom; he, a son of Cornelius and Abigail (Balch) Larcom; said Cornelius, a son of Mordecai Larcom, who came from Ipswich with John West, when the latter bought his great farm extending from near the present Pride's crossing into Manchester; a portion of which was bought by said Cornelius, who built a home, where F. Gordon Dexter's summer place now is. Annis Bradford was daughter of John and Annis (Lovett) Bradford, whose home was by Essex Street, at the present site of the Hardie School-House. He was a son of William and Rachel (Raymond) Bradford, whose home was at North Beverly, where her parents, John and Rachel (Scruggs) Raymond, resided on the original grant to her father Thomas Scruggs, a leading citizen who had the courage of his theological opinions, and was among those disarmed, therefor, in 1637. This last named Annis was daughter of Simon and Agnes (Swetland) Lovett, whose homestead was on Cabot Street, extending northerly from Franklin Place. He was son of John and Bethiah (Rootes) Lovett, whose home was on Cabot Street, next northerly of Simon's, extending to about opposite Milton Street, and a part of the great estate of her father Josiah Rootes, who owned from the sea, on both sides of Cabot Street, nearly down to Bartlett Street. His wife, Susanna, was one of those accused of witchcraft and lodged in Boston gaol in 1692, where as her grandson, John Lovett testifies, he visited her. After some months her innocence was acknowledged by her discharge from prison. She was manifestly a person of independent character, who would not conform her opinions to those of some of her more illiberal neighbors, and hence came the false accusations against her; but her excellent and numerous posterity may well honor her memory. Her husband, John Lovett, was son of John and Mary (———) Lovett, whose early home was near where now is General Pierson's farm on Boyles Street, and where their son Joseph succeeded to that homestead, which continued to his posterity for many years. Of other ancestry named it is believed that Abigail Allen was of Manchester stock; Lucy Downing, of Ipswich; Abigail Balch, a daughter of Deacon Benjamin, who was son of John Balch, the ancient planter whose home was at the southerly corner of Cabot and Balch Streets. Agnes Swetland may have been of the Swetland family who owned the estate at the corner of Cabot and Hele Streets, now the home of Peter E. Clark.

After the death of his father, John Pickett lived with his uncle Richard Pickett, and before he was thirteen years old began his apprenticeship at sail making, in the sail-loft of the old Bartlett-Haskett store, where his grandfather, Thomas, first established the business, and where, at twenty-one years of age, John joined in partnership with his uncle, who became also largely interested in the coasting and fishing trade, and their partnership ultimately extended so as to include this, as well as the grocery and fuel trade. More or less of anthracite coal was consumed here experimentally, down to 1834, when the first

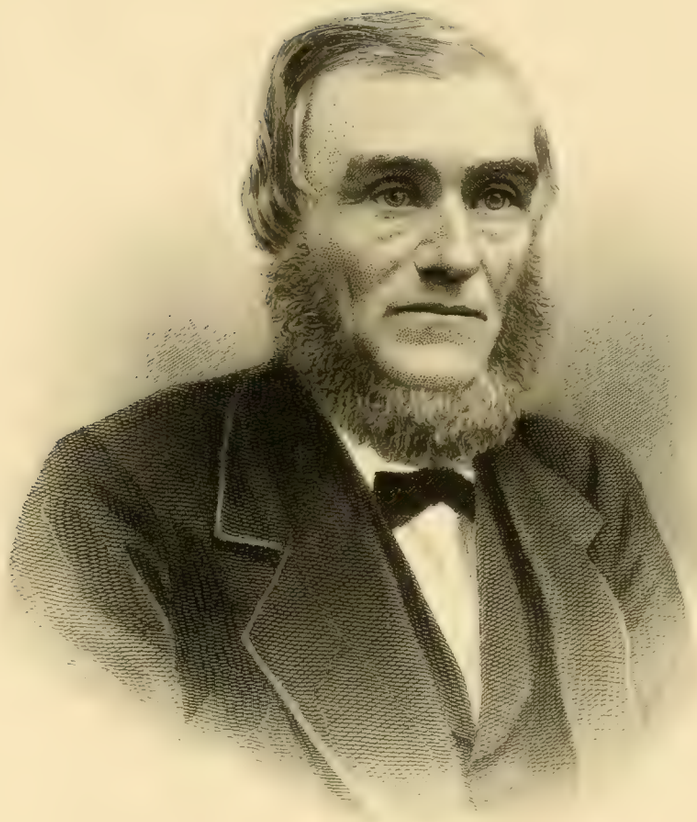
cargo brought to Beverly of about forty-eight tons was landed on the Whittredge wharf, and distributed to forty-three different persons, of whom there now survive, only Edward Burley, Augustus N. Clark, William Lord and Calvin Tuck. The price was eight dollars a ton on the wharf, and all of it had to be carted to the public hay-scales, by the old South Church, to be weighed. At the death of his uncle, Capt. Richard Pickett, in 1865, Mr. John Pickett succeeded to the large business of the firm, and while the coasting and fishing trade, in which he has been owner in twenty-eight different vessels, has been reduced to a pretty small factor, the coal trade has been steadily growing, and the facilities, therefor, have been largely increased. The Whittredge wharf and the old sail-loft wharf have been consolidated into one, and large buildings erected there for the storage of Cumberland coal, the demand for which, for steam, purposes constantly increases. In 1855, the present coal wharf, by the junction of Water, Front and Cabot Streets, was built, and enlarged to its present proportions in 1875.

During all these years, the confidence and respect of his business contemporaries and fellow-townsmen, has been manifested in his election as assessor in 1838 and '39, as Representative in 1842 and '44, selectman in 1845 and '46, and in the war period of 1861 and '62, director of Beverly Bank since 1851, and its president since 1872, and vice-president of the Beverly Savings Bank from its start in 1867, to the present time. He has always been interested in matters designed to promote the public welfare, serving as a fireman with Engine No. 2, when eighteen years old, and many years thereafter, and afterwards of the board of firewards. He was early a member of the Beverly Light Infantry, and in its ranks, in its escort service at the independence celebration in 1835, when Edward Everett delivered the oration in the Dane Street Church. He was a member of the Beverly Young Men's Temperance Society in 1835, and always on the side of good morals and good conduct. Early a member of the First Baptist Society, he took an active interest in its progress, especially in the enlargement of its meeting-house in 1830, and serving upon the committee who purchased the present site of the Catholic Church, and took down the old church, and rebuilding it somewhat enlarged in 1837, and still farther interested in its enlargement. After this, Mr. Pickett connected himself with the Dane Street Society, where he has continued his interest in good works. His memory of the waning days of the ancient commerce of Beverly, is quite interesting, and gives glimpses of what was once a great business. Among the historic events of his day, which he recalls with interest, are his presence when Robert Rantoul, Sr., welcomed Lafayette to Beverly on his journey through the town in 1824; and also being at Bunker Hill when Daniel Webster delivered the oration at the laying of the corner-stone of the monument.

December 13, 1832, he married Martha, daughter of John and Rachel Fornis, who died in 1834, leaving an infant daughter, Martha Preston, who survived her mother only about a month. Mr. Fornis was a builder, whose father was David Fornis, also from Marblehead, who built by himself and his sons a large number of the noted Fornis houses, with their three rooms to a floor, which have made so many of the pleasant homes of Beverly. In 1838 Mr. Pickett married Susan, daughter of Seth Clark, a leading citizen of Salisbury, whose record may be found in that portion of the county history relating to that town. After nearly half a century of happy married life, she passed away in 1882. Mr. Pickett, despite his four-score years, gives his constant attention to his many responsibilities, with the same courtesy, diligence and intelligence which has characterized all of his career.

SETH NORWOOD.

Seth Norwood was born in Rockport, Mass., June 23, 1815, a son of Major Francis Norwood, a deacon of the Congregational Church, and a man of good standing in the community, and of his wife Lucy (daughter of Caleb Pool), whose services in the cause of religion and morality entitle her to remembrance as a "Mother in Israel." She was a descendant of John Pool, a carpenter, who, before 1690, worked near Corning Street at Beverly Cove, with Richard Woodbury, who died that year in returning from the Canada military expedition, and whose widow, Sarah (Haskell) Woodbury married said Pool, and emigrated to Sandy Bay (now Rockport). Major Francis, husband of said Lucy, was descended in part from Edmund Grover, whose early home was in Beverly, near the junction of Cabot and Beckford Streets. When Seth Norwood was five years old, his father died, and two years later he went to live with the family of J. O. Drown, a shoe manufacturer at Rockport, learning of him a shoemaker's trade, and attending school at intervals. At the age of twenty, having mastered the trade, he opened a shoe-shop at Rockport on his own account and secured a moderate success. Here he continued till 1839, when he sold out his interest there, and removed to the wider field of Beverly, where he obtained employment as a journeyman shoemaker, and continued therein for about five years. About 1844, with the small capital thus far acquired, he began the manufacture of American Isinglass, at Warner's Mills, in Ipswich, which business he carried on there until 1855, when he sold it out to the Rockport Isinglass Company. In 1856 he bought out the factory and business of Friend & Lord, shoe manufacturers in Beverly, at the corner of Rantoul Street and Railroad Avenue, where the Norwood family now have their large factory; and here he continued the shoe business, taking in as partner, in 1857, Joshua W. Carrier, who retired from the firm after about two years connection therewith, and Mr. Norwood con-



Seth Norwood

tinued the business in his own name until 1865, when his eldest son Francis became a partner, and the firm name became Seth Norwood & Co. This name is still retained by his sons, who have continued and much increased the business, the factory having been quadrupled in size to supply the necessary room for their trade. A portion of the factory was burned in 1873, but soon restored and enlarged.

Soon after he came to Beverly, Mr. Norwood became interested in real estate, and many marked improvements grew out of his operations therein. He became a prominent citizen of Beverly; was on the board of selectmen for three years when the waterworks were built and other important public improvements were made. He was also a director in Beverly National Bank, a trustee of Beverly Savings Bank, a leading member of the Dane Street Congregational Society, and interested in other good works. Having just about completed sixty years of an honored and useful life, he died of consumption, June 20, 1875, at his home on Cabot Street in Beverly, the former historic homestead of Hon. George Cabot; a mansion hallowed by the belief that George Washington had there sought and obtained rest and refreshment from his trusted friend, Mr. Cabot.

CHAPTER XLIX.

METHUEN.

BY JOSEPH S. HOWE.

THE town of Methuen is situated in the westerly part of Essex County, bordering on New Hampshire, and contains within its limits about twenty-two square miles.

Before the incorporation of the City of Lawrence, it was a section of land on the north bank of the Merrimack River, about nine miles long and three miles wide, following the curves of the river. The north part of the City of Lawrence was taken out of Methuen, on the side next the river, near the middle of the town, thus leaving the two ends three miles wide, and the middle of the town little more than a mile at its narrowest part.

The towns surrounding Methuen are the City of Lawrence and the town of Andover on the South, Dracut and Salem, N. H., on the West, Salem, N. H., and Haverhill, on the North and Haverhill and Bradford on the East. The Spicket River, a narrow and crooked stream, flows from Island Pond, in Derry, N. H., through Methuen, into Lawrence, and empties into the Merrimack in the lower part of the City. The village of Methuen is situated upon both sides of the Spicket, between Lawrence and the New Hampshire line, thus dividing the farming portions of the town into two not unequal sections. The surface of the town is uneven, somewhat hilly and picturesque, though not ledgy and abrupt. The soil in the main is strong, and good for ordinary agriculture, but like most New England land, more or less rocky, requiring much labor to insure agricultural success, but capable of producing excellent crops under judicious management.

There is a strip of intervale land of varying width on the bank of the Merrimack, free from stone, easy to cultivate and excellent for farming purposes. Leaving this level intervale, the land rises into ridges and hills, much of it covered with a growth of wood. There are extensive peat meadows in both sections of the town, which not only contain large quantities of alleged fuel, but when drained and cultivated, prove to be the most valuable lands for the production of many crops.

The hill formerly known as "Bare Hill," near the house of Joel Foster, is the highest elevation in the east part of the town, and affords a magnificent view of the country in every direction for miles around. As many as fifteen towns and cities may be seen from its summit. It overlooks Lawrence on the South, with the two Andovers beyond, and the spires of Haverhill and Bradford may be seen on the East. Far off to the North can be seen the Nottingham Hills, and in the West the Uncanoonucks, the Peterboro' Hills, Monadnock and Wachuset, "Like giant emeralds in the Western sky." The view, besides being extensive, is one of the most beautiful to be found. In the west part of the town, the highest land is the hill on which is the residence of Stephen W. Williams, Esq.

The view from its top is nearly as extensive, and quite as beautiful, as that from Bare Hill, and it is a favorite resort for lovers of fine scenery.

The ponds in Methuen are few in number.

Harris Pond, in the extreme west part of the town, contains about fifty acres, and drains through "London Meadow" into Spicket River. Mystic Pond, a little west of Methuen village, drains into Spicket River. Worlds End Pond, a mile or more north of Methuen village, lies mostly in Salem, N. H., although a very small part of it is within the limits of Methuen, and drains into the Spicket.

There is also a small pond in Strong Water Meadow, known as "Strong Water Pond," which is undoubtedly a small remnant of what was once a large body of water. Bloody Brook runs from Strong Water Meadow southerly into Lawrence, and empties into the Spicket. Hawkes Brook is in the extreme northerly part of the town, rising near Ayers village, in Haverhill, and emptying into the Merrimack, where Methuen and Haverhill join. Bartlett Brook, in the west part of Methuen, runs from Mud Pond in Dracut, into Methuen, and empties into the Merrimack.

There are no stone quarries or ledges that are

worked in the town. A bed of secondary rock for the most part underlies the town a short distance below the surface, and crops out in a few places, particularly in the neighborhood of the village, but the quality of the stone is not such as to make it specially valuable for building purposes. The rocks found in the soil, and on the surface of the land, are mainly boulders, many of them primary rock, and nearly all of a different kind of stone from the underlying ledge, indicating that the mass of gravel and stones, resting upon the ledge, has been brought there from a distance by glacial action.

There are in Methuen some very marked examples of glacial action in the ridges known to geologists as "Kames," and to the unscientific as "Hogbacks." One of these ridges extends from Tower Hill, in Lawrence, through the west part of Methuen village into New Hampshire, and is a continuation of the series of "Kames" running through Andover and Reading, and known in Andover as "Indian Ridge." There is also another line of "Kames," extending from the easterly part of the City of Lawrence through "Germantown" northward. In the early times these ridges were thought by many to be the remains of ancient fortifications, but the investigations of geologists have determined, beyond question, that they were deposits formed in the great ice age, from accumulations of gravel in the melting ice. Methuen contains few natural objects of special interest, Spicket Falls being perhaps the most prominent. The Nevins Memorial, and grounds of Henry C. Nevins, near by, and the extensive grounds of Chas. H. Tenney, are beautifnlly laid out and kept, contain many rare and costly trees and shrubs, and are all places which would attract attention anywhere.

It is not now known who the first white man was who settled within the limits of what is now Methuen, nor exactly when or where he settled. We have no historic record of what occurred here previous to that time. Undoubtedly the land was inhabited for centuries by the red men, who were as familiar with all its natural aspects, and as strongly attached to their favorite haunts, as the native children of the town are now.

When the country first became known to the white race, the hills and uplands were mainly covered by a heavy growth of timber. The meadows were mostly cleared and covered with a thick, heavy growth of grass, which the Indians were accustomed to burn in the autumn. These meadows were favorite haunts of deer, who came there to feed on the young grass in the spring, and could easily be killed by the Indians from their hiding-places on the wooded bushy edges. It is said that some of the hills were bare, and others had only a growth of small wood. This would naturally result from the fires set by the Indians in dry weather, which might spread from the meadows to the upland, and kill the standing wood and timber. It would also appear that the Indians cultivated corn to some extent, and for that purpose selected the lands free from stones, easily worked, on the river intervales or sandy plains. We can easily imagine the appearance of this town as the earliest settlers saw it:

The meadows on Hawke's Brook, in the east part of the town, Bare meadow, Strong-water meadow, Mystic meadows, London meadows, and the meadows on the banks of the Spicket, mostly bare, and producing a heavy crop of grass; the intervale land on the Merrimack, more or less cleared, and a few spots of plain land here and there, bare of trees and grass, and bearing marks of the rude Indian agriculture, the rest of the lands covered with wood and timber. The only paths traversing this wilderness were Indian trails, of whose location we have now no knowledge, though it is not unlikely that some of our oldest roads were developed from an Indian path.

The earliest settlers found very few Indians living in this vicinity. Some years before the first settlement of this country, a violent war broke out among the Indians living in what is now New England, which resulted in the destruction of a large number. This war was followed by a pestilence which carried off many more, and was especially fatal in the eastern part of New England. This destruction of the Indians was particularly favorable to the occupation of the country by the white settlers. The native inhabitants of the valley of the Merrimack, so far as we know, were the Pennacooks or Pawtucket Indians. These were subdivided into smaller tribes or families. The Agawams had their home on the coast from the Merrimack to Cape Ann; the Wamesits, at the junction of the Concord and Merrimack Rivers, where Lowell now stands; the Pawtuckets, at the mouth of Little River in Haverhill.

No historic evidence appears that any Indian tribe had a permanent home in Methuen, but it is known that Bodwell's Falls (at the Lawrence dam), the region around the mouth of Bartlett's Brook, and the shores of the Spicket, as far as Spicket Falls, were favorite resorts of the Indians, especially during the fishing season. There are also strong indications that there were once permanent Indian settlements near Spicket Falls and near the mouth of London Brook. The stone fire-places or hearths of their wigwams were found years ago, before the ground was disturbed, on the hillside where the east part of Methuen village is now built. Arrow-points, spear-heads and other Indian relics were found while digging the cellars of Woodbury's Block, the hotel stable and in other places. A large stone pot was discovered while excavating for the foundation of Tenney's hat-shop, and an Indian grave was found in the fall of 1886, while digging on Union Street, which contained eight very fine spear-heads, besides arrow-heads and pottery, indicating that the occupant of the grave was a person of distinction. The early records of Haverhill speak of an old wigwam near the "foot of far west meadow,"

which was probably what is now known as "London Meadow." The Indian fire-places can be found there now, where the land has not been cultivated and the stones disturbed. These old hearths and graves would seem to show that the spots where they are found were at some time the sites of permanent Indian villages, and not merely a transient place of abode for a few weeks while fishing.

The rivers in those early times swarmed with alewives, shad, salmon, bass and sturgeon. The salmon was the principal fish used as food, and the shad and alewives were used by the Indians to manure their corn. These fish were caught by them around the falls and rapids in the rivers. It would be natural, therefore, for them to settle about such a spot as Spicket Falls, which must have afforded an excellent fishing-place, while the land south and east of the falls was easy for them to cultivate for corn. The neighborhood of London Brook and Policy Brook—up which the alewives and suckers must have run in great numbers—would also have been an excellent place for an Indian village, particularly as there was plenty of land easy to work near by.

Probably the white man first set foot in Methuen about two hundred and fifty years ago. The settlers at Ipswich and other towns along the coast explored the country before its settlement to find the most desirable places to locate. In 1640 about a dozen colonists from Newbury, headed by Mr. Nathaniel Ward, settled at Haverhill, where the city proper now stands. Two years later they purchased from the Indians a tract of land embracing the greater part of what is now Methuen. The original deed is now in possession of the city of Haverhill, and reads as follows:

"KNOW ALL MEN BY THESE PRESENTS, that we, Passaquo and Saggahew, with ye consent of Passaconnaway: have sold unto ye inhabitants of Pentuckett all ye lands we have in Pentuckett; that is eyght miles in length from ye little Rivver in Pentuckett Westward; Six myles in length from ye aforesaid Rivver northward; And six myles in length from ye foresaid Rivver Eastward, with ye Ileand and ye rivver that ye ileand stand in as far in length as ye land lyes by as formerly expressed: that is fourteen myles in length;

"And wee ye said Passaquo and Sagga Hew with ye consent of Passaconnaway, have sold unto ye said inhabitants all ye right that wee or any of us have in ye said gronnd and Ileand and River.

"And we warrant it against all or any other Indians whatsoever unto ye said Inhabitants of Pentuckett, and to their heirs and assigns forever. Dated ye fifteenth day of november Ann Dom 1642.

"Witness our hands and seales to this bargayne of sale ye day and year above written (in ye presents of us) we ye said Passaquo & Sagga Hew have received in hand, for & in consideration of ye same three pounds & ten shillings.

"JOHN WARD,
"ROBERT CLEMENTS,
"TRISTRAM COFFIN,
"HUGH SHERRATT,
"WILLIAM WHITE,
ye sign of (1)
"THOMAS DAVIS.

ye marke of
PASSAQUO (a bow and arrow)
Passaquo. [SEAL]

ye marke of
SAGGA HEW (a bow and arrow)
Sagga Hew. [SEAL]"

It is not easy to determine exactly what the Indians intended to convey by this deed, nor does it appear to have been clear to the early settlers. No regular survey was made until 1666, when a committee was appointed by the General Court to "run the bounds of the Town of Haverhill." They began at the meeting-house which was situated about half a mile east of Little River, near the cemeteries in the eastern part of the present city of Haverhill, and ran due west eight miles, and "reared a heap of stones." Then they ran from that heap of stones due south until they reached the Merrimac River, and due north from the heap of stones until they struck the northern line of the town. The shape of Haverhill, as finally determined, was triangular. Starting from Holt's Rock (Rocks Village), the line ran due northwest until it met the north and south line from Merrimac River, as mentioned above. There is an old plan in the County Records, made previously to 1700, and probably as early as 1675, from which it appears that the Haverhill line started from the little island in the Merrimac, situated nearly opposite the junction of Lowell and North Lowell Streets. From thence the line ran due north, very near the house of A. W. Pinney, across Policy Pond, and struck the Haverhill north line, northwest of Island Pond, including most, if not all, of that fine sheet of water within the limits of Haverhill. Thus it appears that the title to all that portion of Methuen east of the above-described line, came directly from the aboriginal owners.

It is noticeable that the Indian deed conveyed the river and the islands in it, and thus that Haverhill and Methuen are bounded by the opposite shore of the Merrimac, instead of the centre or channel. It will also be noticed that this land was conveyed to "ye inhabitants of Pentuckett," and consequently was owned by the inhabitants of the town or colony in common. Here was an example of the common ownership of land by a community, the practical working of which is interesting to follow now, when so many reformers (?) are holding forth the idea that such ownership of the land would be the chief remedy for the evils of modern civilization. But the early settlers were evidently not possessed with the idea that this would be good for them, and did not long cultivate the land in this way, but took steps to let every man have his own land in severalty. The records of the town of Haverhill show that no one was admitted to the rights and privileges of the colony unless first voted in by the town.

In 1643 it was voted that "there shall bee three hundred acres laid out for house lotts and no more; and that he that was worth two hundred pounds should have twenty acres to his house lott, and none to exceed that number; and so every one under that sum, to have acres proportionable to his house lott, together with meadow, and common and planting ground, proportionably."

The site of these "house lotts" was where the city proper of Haverhill now stands, a short distance east from Little River. Here all the colonists had their houses, from which, as a centre, they sought out the

meadows and planting grounds in the more distant part of the town. The meadow-lands seem to have been the most highly valued, and sought after on account of the grass, which was the principal subsistence for their cattle. They cut and stacked the hay in the summer, and in the winter drew it home on sleds. The planting grounds were probably patches of upland which had been cultivated by the Indians, and were free from trees. An early writer says of Haverhill: "the people are wholly bent to improve their labor in tilling the earth and keeping of cattel whose yearly increase encourages them to spend their days in those remote parts. The constant penetrating further into this Wilderness hath caused the wild and uncouth woods to be filled with frequented wayes, and the large rivers to be overlaid with Bridges passeable both for horse and foot; this Town is of large extent, supposed to be ten miles in length, there being an overweaning desire in most men after Meadow-land, which hath caused many towns to grasp more into their hands than they could afterward possibly hold."

Lot layers were chosen by the town to divide the meadows and planting-grounds among the inhabitants, from time to time, as these lands became accessible and in a condition to cultivate. The records of these divisions show that the lots set off at first were small, often not more than two or three acres in a lot, and the meadow-land seems to have been taken up first. So it happened that a man would own lots in the eastern part of Haverhill, and on Spicket River and might be obliged to travel several miles to his planting-ground in another direction. The distribution of land went on from year to year, and the natural result was that land-owners desiring to have their lands as much as possible in one body, traded with each other until they became possessed of a compact body of land sufficient for a farm. The next step was to build and settle on the farm for greater economy and convenience in cultivation of the land, and so the settlers gradually scattered from the first compact settlements out over the town. The descriptions of the lots as set off by the lot layers are recorded in the Haverhill records, but it is very difficult to exactly locate them now, because the bounds were usually marked trees, stumps or other perishable monuments.

These old descriptions show, however, that some of our local names are of very ancient date. In 1658 five acres of meadow were laid off in "Strongwater," near a little pond. In 1666 a parcel of meadow was laid out to Matthias Button, on the south side of "Spicket Hill." In 1659 there was a division of the land west of the Spicket River, with a provision that "if more than two acres meadow be found on any one lot, it shall remain to the town." In the same year we find a record of the laying off three acres of land in "Mistake Meadow" in the western part of Haverhill, whence we may fairly conclude that our present name "Mystic," was once "Mistake." In 1678 "eleven score acres of upland" were laid off to James Davis, Sr., bounded on the west by Spicket River, Spicket Falls being the southwest bound. In 1683 we find that a lot adjoining, on the southerly side, running from Spicket Falls to "Bloody Brook" on the east was taken up by James Davis, Jr.

These two lots included the land now occupied by the east part of Methuen village. The family of Mr. David Nevins have in their possession a grant from the "proprietors" of the Islands in the Spicket above the falls, to Asa and Robert Swan, for two pounds ten shillings, and bearing the date of 1731. The distribution of the common lands was continued from time to time, until finally, after much contention between the town, and the original settlers and their heirs, the "proprietors" or owners of the common land organized separately from the town, and disposed of the remaining land as they saw fit. Thus it appears that the titles to the land in Methuen, east of the old Haverhill line, have all come from the Indians, Passaquo and Saggahew, through the "proprietors." The strip of land in Methuen, perhaps a mile and a half in width, between Haverhill line and "Drawcut" or Dracut line, seems to have been granted by the General Court to individuals. Major Denison, who had a grant of six hundred acres from the General Court in 1660, owned more than a thousand acres on the river above the Haverhill line, including what is now known as the Bartlett farm, and lands south and west. West of that was Colonel Higginson's farm of over three hundred acres. A little north of these was Marshall Nicholson's tract of three hundred acres. Printer Green had three hundred acres lying on each side of the brook, which runs from "White's Pond, then called "North Pond."

As we have already stated, we can find no record showing when the first settlement was made within the present limits of Methuen, or who made it.

It is certain that the east and south parts of the town near the river, were first occupied, doubtless because they were nearer the villages of Haverhill and Andover. It is said that when repairing the old "Bodwell House," now in Lawrence, some years ago, a brick was found bearing the date 1660, which had been marked upon it before the brick was burnt. This would seem to indicate that a house was built in the neighborhood near that date. It seems doubtful whether there were many settlers in Methuen until near the time it was set off from Haverhill. The Indian troubles which extended over many years previous to 1700, must have seriously checked, if they did not entirely prevent, the settlement on farms. Andover and Haverhill were both made frontier towns by act of General Court, and both towns suffered severely during the Indian War. But we have never seen a record of an Indian attack on settlers living upon territory which afterwards became Methuen. There were many attacks on the scattered settlers in West

Haverhill and in Andover, and if there had been many inhabitants in Methuen, it is hardly probable that the Indians would have passed them by. The incursions of the Indians seem to have come sometimes from the North, by way of Dover and Saco, and sometimes from the West, down the Merrimack valley, as was the case when Hannah Duston was taken captive, and sometimes the depredations were committed by small parties of Indians who had lived among the whites and were acquainted with their victims. In February, 1698, Jonathan Haynes and Samuel Ladd, with their sons, had been to London Meadow from their homes in West Haverhill for hay, each with a team consisting of a pair of oxen and a horse. The path lay along between World's End Pond and what is now Howe Street. When returning home, just northeast of the pond, they were suddenly attacked by a party of Indians who had concealed themselves in the bushes on each side of the path. These Indians, fourteen in number, were returning from Andover, where they had killed and captured several persons. They killed Haynes and Ladd with their hatchets, took one of the boys prisoner and kept him for some years; the other boy cut one of the horses loose, jumped on his back and got away. The Indians then killed the oxen, took out the tongues and best pieces and went on their way. This is the only authentic instance we can find of an Indian outrage happening on Methuen soil.

In 1712 nine persons living in that part of Haverhill which is now Methuen, petitioned the town to abate their rates for the support of the ministry and the schools, "on account of the great distance they lived from the town, and the difficulty they met with in coming," and the town voted to abate one-half the ministry rates.

The names of these persons were Henry Bodwell, John Gutterson, Thomas Austin, Joshua Stephens, Robert Swan, John Cross, William Cross, Robert Swan, Jr., Joshua Swan.

In July, 1719, a petition was presented the Town of Haverhill by Stephen Barker, Henry Bodwell and others "to grant or set them off a certain tract of land lying in the township of Haverhill, that so they might be a township or parish," but this request was denied.

At the next March meeting the following petition was presented: "Whereas there is a certain tract of land in the west end of Haverhill containing fifty or sixty acres, lying on the south and southwest of a meadow commonly called bare meadow, which land, together with a piece of land lying on a hill called meeting-house hill, in times passed reserved by our forefathers for the use of the ministry, might in hard times make a convenient parsonage; if by the blessing of God, the gospel might so flourish amongst us, and we grow so populous as to be able to carry on the gospel ministry amongst us. We therefore humbly pray that you would take into consideration the circumstances we are in, and the difficulty we may hereafter meet with in procuring a privilege for the ministry; and that you would grant and settle and record the above said lands in your Town book, for the above said use, and you will gratify your humble petitioners and oblige us and our posterity to serve you hereafter in what we may." This petition was signed by Joshua Swan and twenty-six others, "was granted according to the proposals therein made," and in July following a committee was chosen to lay out the land.

It seems, from this petition, that the proprietors of the common land had some time previously "reserved for the use of the ministry" two tracts of land in what was afterwards Methuen, but that this land had not been formally laid out. In 1724 Lieutenant Stephen Barker and other inhabitants of the western part of Haverhill, petitioned the General Court for a new town, to be formed by setting off that part of Haverhill above Hawke's Meadow Brook.

The town of Haverhill voted to oppose the petition, and chose Captain John White agent for that purpose. Opposition, however, was unavailing, and the act was passed December 8, 1725, and was as follows:

"An act for Dividing the Town of Haverhill and erecting a new Town there and in parts adjacent, by the name of Methuen. Whereas the West part of the Town of Haverhill within the County of Essex, and parts adjacent not included within any Township is Competently filled with Inhabitants, who labor under great Difficulties by their remoteness from the place of Publick Worship, &c., and they having made their application to this Court that they may be set off a distinct and separate Town and be vested with all the Powers and Privileges of a Town. Be it therefore enacted by the Lieutenant Governor, Council and Representatives in General Court assembled and by the authority of the same. That the West part of the said Town of Haverhill with the land adjoining, be and hereby are set off and constituted a separate Township by the name of Methuen, the bounds of the said Township to be as follows, viz:—Beginning at the mouth of Hawke's Meadow Brook, so called, in Merrimack River, and from thence to run half a point to the northward of the northwest to an heap of stones, or till it intersect Haverhill line; from thence upon a straight course to the head of Dunstable line, and so upon Dracut line about four miles to a pine southeast, from thence six miles or thereabouts upon Dracut line, South to Merrimack River, and from thence to run down said river ten mile and forty pole till it come to the first mentioned bounds. And that the inhabitants of the said lands as before described and bounded, be and hereby are invested with the Powers, Privileges and Immunities that the Inhabitants of any of the towns of this Province by law are or ought to be vested with.

"Provided, That the Inhabitants of the said Town of Methuen, do within the space of Three Years from the Publication of this Act, erect and finish a suitable house for the Publick Worship of God, and procure and settle a Learned, Orthodox minister of good conversation and make provision for his comfortable and honorable support, and that they set apart a lot of Two Hundred acres of land in some convenient Place in the said Town, for the use of the ministry, and a lot of fifty acres for the use of a School. And that thereupon they be discharged from any further payments for the maintenance of the ministry in Haverhill. And be it further enacted by the authority aforesaid, That the Inhabitants of the said Town of Methuen, be and hereby are empowered to assess all the lands of Non Residents lying within the said town, Two pence per acre towards the building of the Meeting House, and settling of a minister there. Provided, nevertheless that there be and hereby is made a Reservation or Saving of the Right and property of the Province Lands (if any there be) within the bounds aforesaid, to this Province."

So far as we can learn, no other town in the country bears the name of "*Methuen.*" How this name originated has been a matter of considerable speculation.

Some have thought that it took its name from a town in Scotland called "Methven," and others have supposed that this town was named in honor of Lord Methven of Scotland. But Methuen was not settled by Scotch, nor does there appear any reason why the town should have received its name from a Scotch town or nobleman. A. C. Goodell, Esq., of Salem, who is engaged in preparing the Provincial Laws for publication, suggests a theory which seems most likely to be the true one. It was a common thing in those days, when a new town was incorporated, for the Governor to give it a name. The act of incorporation was passed by the Legislature, engrossed on parchment and sent to the Governor for his signature, with a space for the name of the new town in blank. When he signed the act, he gave the town its name and inserted it in the proper place. The original act of incorporation of the Town of Methuen, in the office of the Secretary of State, clearly shows that the name was inserted by a hand different from the one that engrossed the bill. The act is written upon the parchment in a large, full hand, while the name "Methuen" is written in a small, running hand, and with ink of a different color, but similar to that used by Governor Dummer, in writing his signature. Had the name been suggested by the petitioners for the act of incorporation, it would have been likely to be inserted in the bill and so copied by the engrossing clerk. But a careful examination of the writing leaves little doubt that Governor Dummer wrote the name with his own hand, when he attached his signature. Of course it is now impossible to ascertain with certainty the reason which suggested the name to him. But at that time there was one Lord Paul Methuen, who was Privy Councillor to the King, and who was for some years prominent in the English Government. It is very likely that Governor Dummer was a personal or political friend and admirer of this nobleman, and so named the town in his honor.

The town of Methuen, as originally set off, must have included more than double the territory now within its limits. Starting from the mouth of Hawke's Meadow Brook, the line ran where it now does, through Ayers Village, and continued on until it met the west line of Haverhill, which must have been somewhere southwest of North Salem Village; thence it ran straight to the "head of Dunstable line," which was in Pelham, "in sight of Beaver Brook," and a little to the west of it; thence it ran southeast about four miles to Dracut line, at a point about six miles from Merrimack River. The easterly line of Dracut has not been materially changed, and therefore the present line, prolonged to six miles, would indicate the old corner of that town. The old plan in the County Records, already referred to, shows that this corner was west of Policy Pond, and must have been in the vicinity of "Spear Hill," almost between the most southern parts of Policy and Cobbett's Ponds. From this, it would seem that Methuen, as originally incorporated, included nearly all of Salem, Windham village and perhaps two-thirds of that town, and a little of Pelham. Cobbett's Pond and Policy Pond were both in Methuen. The old plan referred to gives the name of Policy Pond as "Poliss' Pond," which fact may possibly furnish a clue to the origin of the name "Policy." The lands in the westerly part of Methuen were evidently disputed territory.

Londonderry, settled by the "Scotch-Irish," was incorporated, in 1722, by the General Court of New Hampshire, and the act incorporating that town included quite a slice of land set off to Methuen by the Massachusetts General Court. It is probable, however, that the territory claimed under both acts was not much settled upon, or considered of much value, until after the line between Massachusetts and New Hampshire was established in 1740.

To organize the new town, it was ordered by the Court "that Mr. Stephen Barker, a principal inhabitant of the Town of Methuen, be and hereby is empowered and directed to notifie and summons the inhabitants of the said town, duly qualified for voters, to assemble and meet sometime in the month of March next, to choose town officers according to law, to stand for the year." In compliance with this order, a meeting was appointed for the 9th of March, 1726.

The following is a copy of the record of the first town meeting held in Methuen:

"Att our first annual meeting in the town of methuen, march ye 9th 1725,6 Lieutenant Stephen Barker was leaguly chosen moderator for ye meeting.

"Att the same meeting william whittier was chosen town clerk & sworn for ye yer insewing.

"Att the same meeting selectmen were leaguly chosen for ye yer.

1 John Bailey,	}	Selectmen sworn
2 Ebenzer Barker		to the faithful discharg
3 Asie Swan		of the ofies of assesers
4 Daniel Bodwel,		august ye second 1726
5 Thomas Whittier.	}	before me William Whittier town clark.

"att ye same meeting Richard Swan is leaguly chosen cunstable for the year insewing.

"voted that the cunstable or colector shall be paid one shilling for each twenty shillings of money that he shall colect or gather of the Taxes which shall be laied upon the nonrazedance or people which belong to other towns. March ye 9th 1725,6 the toun voated that Thomas silver should be expected to serve cunstable or colector instead of Richard swan for ye year insewing and ye same day thomas silver was sworn to the faithfull discharge of the office of a cunstable by the selectmen of Methuen. Robert swan is leaguly chosen town treasurer att the same meeting march ye 9th for ye year insewing. town treasurer sworn.

	1 Robert Swan.	} of highwaye
Serveirs of	2 Ephraim Clark,	} serveirs all sworn.
high ways.	3 Benzamin Stephens,	
	2 Thomas Masser.	}

fence vewers John Cross, Samuel Stephens. 2 Both sworn.

Tithen men 1 James How, 2 William Gutterson. Both tithen sworn.

field drivers 1 John Hastings, 2 Zebadiah Austing.

att the same meeting March ye 9 1725,6 } SAMUEL SMITH hog riefs
hoge riefs was leaguly chosen } THOMAS AUSTING Both sworn.

"Att ye same meeting march ye 9 voted yt hogs should go att large according to law.

"Att a town meeting march ye 9 1725,6.

"Voted that the select men should have power to a gree with an athadoxt minester to serve in the work of the minestry for ye year insewing and not to exceed five and forty pownds and find the minester his diat.

The records of the town-meetings held since that time appear to be complete, and the early records quite as full as such records usually are. The first business done by the new Board of Selectmen was to lay out a road "three rods wide, beginning at a white oak tree marked, near Ephraim Clark's land; from thence across Thomas Eaton's, and by the west side of Samuel Clark's cellar; thence by the west side of a white oak tree marked with H, by Hawks' meadow, and so along said meadow, as near as is convenient, to the lower end, crossing the brook between two maple trees marked; from thence, as the trees are marked, to a white oak by Haverhill path, running from the east side of the tree in the path until we come to a stake by James How's well, and thence to a white oak marked with H, the way being to the east." This was undoubtedly the road north of the Taylor farm, on Howe Street, and the above description is a good example of the recorded descriptions of the ancient ways. The records of the town of Haverhill show that previous to this time a large number of town-ways had been laid out in the west part of the town, probably for convenience in reaching the meadows and woodland. At this distance of time it is almost impossible to trace them unless they happen to touch some well-known point. They generally commence at a marked tree by some path, thence to some other tree, thence to a stump marked, and finally come out at another path, and are almost invariably two rods wide.

The roads of those days were probably little better than an ordinary cart-path in the woods. Occasionally we find a record of money paid to the owners of land over which a public way passed, but no money appears to have been paid by the town for building.

In fact, scarcely more than a path was necessary, for there were no vehicles but ox-carts and sleds. People traveled on horseback, and went to market with their goods in saddle-bags. Persons are now living in the town who say they can remember when there were no wagons of any kind, or pleasure carriages, except a few chaises, which were introduced about the beginning of the century.

On the 14th of June, 1726, the second town-meeting was called at the house of Asie Swan, "to prefix a place whereon to build a meeting-house" and make other necessary arrangements for religious service. At this meeting a bitter controversy began about the location of the meeting-house. Votes being called for, the following persons voted for "a place between James Davis' and Samuel Smith's house," supposed to be on what is now known as "Powder-House Hill:"

John Hastings.	Thomas Whittier.
Samuel Clark.	Samuel Currier.
John Messer.	Robert Swan.
Daniel Lancaster.	Ephraim Clark.
Thomas Messer.	James Emery.
Robert Corgill.	Joseph Pudney.
Samuel Smith.	John Rue.
John Cross.	Asie Swan.
William Cross.	James How.
John Bailey.	Abraham Masters.
Richard Messer.	James Wilson.
Thomas Silver.	Abiel Messer.
Nathaniel Messer.	Daniel Peaslee.
Thomas Eaton.	Richard Swan.

The following persons entered their dissent against the meeting-house being carried from the meeting-house land or hill,—

Stephen Barker.	Benjamin Stevens.
Henry Bodwell.	James Barker.
John Gutterson.	Samuel Stevens.
Joseph Morse.	Zebediah Austin.
Henry Bodwell, Jr.	Joseph Gutterson.
Daniel Bodwell.	Zebediah Barker.
Samuel Huse.	Thomas Austin.
James Bodwell.	Thomas Richardson.
John Harris.	Abel Merrill.
John Gutterson.	Ebenezer Barker.
William Gutterson.	Joshua Swan.

It is likely that these two lists comprise the names of about all the persons entitled to vote then living in Methuen. We infer also that this dispute was one concerning convenience of access to the meeting-house, and that the voters cast their ballots for the location that was nearest or would best accommodate them.

On the 26th of August another meeting was called to perfect the arrangements for building the new meeting-house. It was voted that the meeting-house should be built forty feet long, thirty-five feet in width and twenty feet stud.

It was also voted to choose a committee to procure land to set the meeting house on, to provide timber, and hire a carpenter and other workmen, and provide for the raising, "all upon the town's cost and charge." The meeting then adjourned to meet September 6th. At this meeting the dissenters above named presented the following quaint and vigorous protest,—

"We, the subscribers, dissent against the proceedings pursuant to sundry of the particulars as mentioned in the warrant for this meeting, first, for that in the warrant, the day being prefixed, but the year is not. 2. For the bigness of the meeting-house according to the warrant, to this we dissent, for the bigness cannot be known until a committee be chosen and bound out the land, for the particulars being placed in the warrant agreeably to the old saying 'the cart before the horse,' therefore irregular. 3. To choose a committee to procure so much land as they shall think convenient for to set the meeting-house on, to this we dissent, for that there is no land to be purchased. Our fathers in time past, whilst we belonged to Haverhill, voted and granted a piece of land for a parsonage for the west end of said town, which since by an act of incorporation of the General Court, is constituted by the name of Methuen a township; and the aforesaid parsonage being most suitable and convenient for the inhabitants to build the meeting-house on, although in a former meeting of this town, as may be seen by the town

book, and a number of freeholders and other inhabitants, did, by a pretended vote, contrary to law, or rather by a petition, carry the meeting-house to another place, which we then gave our dissent against, and do now dissent against the proceedings consequent upon said vote or petition. For a Committee to have the disposal of our estates after the manner as is set forth in the warrant to purchase any land is unreasonable, for that by the warrant they are invested with a power too great. Our estates ought not to lie at their will and doom. The great Charter of England lately confirmed to us by our sovereign lord, king George, wherein is contained liberty, right and property, reference thereto being had, gives us the disposal and ordering of our estates, all debts and demands to our sovereign lord the king being paid first. What committee then shall assess our lands by tax to pay for the purchase of land without our free consent? 4. That the said committee may procure one acre of land in some convenient place for a burying-place,—to this we dissent. Our right and property that we have in voting and procuring such a place, we deny the giving of it into the hands of a committee in the manner as is expressed in the warrant. For that it is every man's right and property that belongs to the town to have his vote in the choice of a committee, or rather to vote the place where, and not to have them appointed by the Selectmen. 5. The said committee are to provide timber and to draw it to the place, or hire it drawn ; we dissent ; for that there is no need of making a land tax for such a thing, when every man by consent may draw his own proportion of timber, carting, &c. 6. To see whether the town will agree that every man in this town shall have an equal proportion of the common land within this town, according to what rates he shall pay in the town ; we dissent first, for it is unreasonable that an hired servant, who is rated only for his head, and hath no freehold, shall have an interest in our right and property ; and, farther, the Province law provides that all persons that reside in any town for the space of twenty days, if they trade, shall be rated. By this you will give our right and land to strangers. To the particulars as above, and for the reasons annexed, we offer our dissent as freeborn subjects to the Crown of Great Britain having an interest in the wholesome laws and liberties by and from which we expect to be protected."

It seems, however, that this protest failed to convince the obstinate majority of their injustice, but work on the meeting-house went on, and the building was raised on Powder House Hill. As a last resort, the minority then appealed to the "Great and General Court," in a petition that the town be ordered to set the meeting-house on Meeting-House Hill. It seems that a committee of the Legislature was then commissioned to visit Methuen to examine the important question. The only record we find of their visit is, that Richard Swan was afterwards allowed by the town one pound, ten shillings for the entertainment of the visiting statesmen. But the result of it all was, that the town was ordered by the General Court to set the meeting-house on Meeting-House Hill, and, accordingly, in 1727 the town voted to remove the frame to that spot, and the minority triumphed. We find from the town records that nine town-meetings were held during the first year, and that the principal business was locating the meeting-house, and perfecting the necessary arrangements for religious service. At that time, and for many years after, the minister and meeting-house were supported by a town tax, as schools and highways are now. The town records show that the Sunday services, as well as the town-meetings were held at the house of Asie Swan until the meeting-house was ready for occupancy. Asie Swan seems to have been one of the men prominent in town affairs, and his house is said to have been situated a little east of Prospect Hill. The meeting-house frame was moved in the fall of 1727, and raised on "Meeting-House Hill" on the common, a little south of the "Frye place," where it stood for nearly seventy years. It was finished in the spring of 1728, and it appears from the town records that a town-meeting was held in the new meeting-house on Wednesday, August 28, 1728, among other purposes, "To see if the Town will order that the public worship of God should be exercised in said meeting-house," and it was voted "that the meeting for public worship should be removed from the house of Asie Swan, and held at the meeting-house next Sabbath." It strikes one now as a little strange that a community so devout should have begun to use their house of worship without any dedicatory exercises.

The next business of the town was to get a minister To that end a town-meeting was called December 16, 1728, of which the first business was to "appoint a day of fasting and prayer to spread our united supplication before the Lord, for his gracious assistance and conduct in our endeavors to settle a minister amongst us, and to act such things as may be necessary in order thereunto," and Wednesday, January 2d, was appointed for that purpose. A committee was also appointed to agree with the neighboring ministers concerning keeping this fast. The records do not tell us how the fast was kept, but Robert Swan was paid twelve shillings for providing for the ministers on the day set apart for fasting and prayer.

On the third of March, 1729, it was voted "That a committee be chosen to discourse with Mr. Christopher Sargent in order to his settlement with us in the work of the ministry." Mr. Sargent was a young man, then twenty-six years of age, a graduate of Harvard, and had been acting pastor of the congregation for some time.

It is a fact of interest showing how permanent the pastoral office was regarded in those days, that at the annual town meeting, held on March 12th, it was voted to give Mr. Sargent eighty pounds a year for the first four years, ninety pounds a year for the next four years and after that one hundred pounds a year. Mr. Sargent's proposal was, that they should pay eighty pounds a year for the first two years, ninety pounds a year for the next two years and one hundred pounds a year, and also thirty cords of wood yearly from the time he began to keep house. After considerable discussion between Mr. Sargent and the people, the terms of settlement were agreed upon, and he was ordained pastor over the church November 5, 1729. Of the festivities which attended that occasion we have no record, but there is no doubt that the day was celebrated according to the customs of the time, with great rejoicing, and by all the people round about.

The new town now seems to have fairly started on its career, and little is to be found in the records worthy of notice. The town meetings were frequent, and the business transacted in those meetings in the different years much the same. The officers of the

town were chosen then, as now, in the month of March.

The officers were about the same as now, with the addition of tithing men and the exception of School Committee.

Persons were annually chosen "to clear the fish-ways" and "to take care that the fish have a convenient course over Mr. Huse's Mill Dam that is in Spicket River."

Two persons called deer reeves were also chosen annually for many years, to take care of the deer, and a reward was generally offered each year for the killing of a grown wolf, and a smaller one for "a bitch wolf's whelp."

Each bill against the town, however small, seems to have been presented to the town meeting for allowance; and there was, nearly every year, one or more roads laid out by the selectmen and accepted by the town.

The amount of money annually appropriated for town charges, outside of the minister rate, for the first fifty years, ranged from forty to one hundred and seventy pounds. This does not include the highway tax, which was paid in labor, and of which we find the first record in 1736.

In 1735 Henry Saunders and twenty-eight others living in the north part of the town,—probably most of them in what is now Salem, N. H., presented a petition to the town setting forth that

"*Whereas* we, the subscribers, live at so great a distance from the public worship of God in this place, that we cannot attend upon it with our families without a great deal of difficulty, we have therefore been at the charge to hire a minister to preach to us in a more convenient place, which we think is hard for us to do, so long as we are obliged to pay our full proportion towards the support of the public worship of God in this place; and although we have of late made our application to this town for some help under our difficult circumstances, we have been denied any. We therefore pray that you would set us off a distinct precinct by ourselves. . ."

This petition was presented to the town December 15, 1735, and the record says:

"That the town, by a majority vote, manifested their willingness to set off the north part of this town for a precinct by themselves, viz.: Beginning at the north side of the World's End Pond, so running easterly to the south side of Peter Merrill's land, and so to Haverhill line, and from World's End Pond, to a wading place in Spicket River by Jonathan Corliss', and so running with a straight line to a pine tree standing in the line between Dracut and Methuen, on the south side of Porcupine Brook."

The territory north of this line formed what was afterwards known as the North Parish of Methuen, and most of it soon after fell within the limits of New Hampshire.

The relative number of inhabitants in the two parishes at that time cannot be exactly determined.

The nearest approach to a correct estimate may perhaps be made from the statement that the number of highway tax payers in 1736, in the whole town, was one hundred and thirty-six. The number of tax payers of the minister rate in the First Parish in that year was ninety-eight, leaving thirty-eight in the North Parish.

The next important event in the history of the town occurred in 1741, when the State line was run, thereby depriving Methuen of a large part of her territory. Previous to 1740 there seems to have been much controversy between the Province of Massachusetts and New Hampshire about the boundary line between them. The charter first given to the Massachusetts colony granted "all that part of New England lying between three miles to the north of the Merrimack and three miles to the south of the Charles river, and of every part thereof in the Massachusetts Bay; and in length between the described breadth from the Atlantic Ocean to the South Sea." Under the charter the Massachusetts colony claimed that their northern boundary was three miles to the north of the northernmost point of the Merrimack, and they fixed upon a rock near the outlet of Lake Winnipisseogee, as the most northern part of the river. This would have given to Massachusetts a large part of Vermont and New Hampshire, and a large section in Maine. The New Hampshire grantees claimed that under the Massachusetts charter the line could not extend in any place more than three miles from the river. The territory between these lines became disputed ground concerning which there was constant contention.

In 1720 the New Hampshire colonists modified their claim, so far as to propose that the line should begin at a point three miles north from the mouth of the Merrimack, and thence run due west to the South Sea. The Massachusetts colony refused to agree to this, and the contention became more violent, until finally the Legislatures of the two colonies met—the New Hampshire Legislature at Hampton Falls and the Massachusetts at Salisbury—for the purpose of settling the difficulty. They appointed committees of conference, but were unable to agree, and after several weeks of angry discussion by agreement of both parties the whole subject was referred to the King of England for decision. The matter was decided by the king in council in 1740, and it was decreed that the northern boundary of the Province of Massachusetts Bay "is and be a similar curved line, pursuing the curve of Merrimack River at three miles distance, on the north side thereof and beginning at the Atlantic Ocean." The king also decreed that the line should be run and established by the two Provinces, but if either should refuse to act the other might fix and establish it.

Massachusetts was dissatisfied with this decision, and refused to have anything to do about running the new line. New Hampshire appointed George Mitchell to run the line from the ocean to a point three miles north of Pawtucket Falls, and the line was thus established by New Hampshire as it has been recognized by the border towns on both sides of the line ever since. Massachusetts has never formally agreed to this line, and the old controversy has been recently revived. Commissioners were appointed by both

States in 1885 to settle this question, if possible, and they have not yet completed their work. Tradition says that this decision was brought about by sharp practice on the part of the agent appointed by New Hampshire to lay the subject before the king; and it gave to New Hampshire seven hundred square miles more than she asked for. It cut off a large slice of the original territory of the town of Methuen, and nearly a third of the population. The northern and western boundaries of the town have remained unchanged from that time to the present. From 1740 to 1775 we find record of very few important events.

There was no census until 1765, but we judge from the increase in the number of tax-payers, that the growth was simply the slow and steady increase of an exclusively agricultural population. As the land gradually became cleared, it became more thickly dotted with dwellings. The produce raised upon the farms, and food taken from the river supplied nearly all the wants of the inhabitants. The money necessary for their few purchases, and the payment of taxes, was obtained partly by the sale of wood and timber which was rafted to Newburyport, partly by the production of flax which was sold to the inhabitants of Londonderry, and partly, probably, by the sale of some products, such as they could carry on horseback to Salem. We find little information of the part Methuen had in the French and Indian Wars. Two or three extra appropriations for powder and flints, some taxes abated to those who were in the service, and payments of money by the town for "taking care of the French" seem to be all that shows action on the part of the town. Tradition has it that Methuen sent her share of soldiers at that time, but whether there was a company from the town, or whether the soldiers were scattered among different companies from neighboring towns we have no means of knowing.

There seems to have been at this time a remarkable reluctance to hold office, as is shown by the fact that Methuen was fined in 1770, '72 and '73, for not choosing a Representative to the Legislature. Possibly, however, this may have resulted more from a disinclination on the part of the tax-payers to pay for the service, than from a disinclination to serve on the part of the possible candidates. In 1774 the inhabitants of the west part of Methuen petitioned to be set off with the easterly part of Dracut to make a new township, "so that both the above said towns may be better accommodated to attend public worship." The division line of the proposed new town commenced "on the bank of the Merrimack River about four poles to the east of Mr. Daniel Bodwell's ferry (at the foot of Tower Hill), thence running northwesterly to the province line, about one hundred and fifty-six poles to the west of Spicket River, including all to the west of said line," thus cutting off a large portion of the town. There was a strong opposition on the part of Methuen, and the scheme failed. About this time we begin to find indications of the coming contest. The first record we find of any action by the town in relation to the questions then stirring the public mind, is a vote passed in August, 1774, to pay one pound, sixteen shillings and seven pence, lawful money to defray the charges of the Congress held at Philadelphia. In December, 1774, it was voted that Mr. Enoch Merrill, former constable should pay the remainder of the province money to Henry Gardner, and also "that the Selectmen should conduct themselves respecting the Constable's warrants according to the Provincial Congress instructions." At that time the constables collected the taxes, and paid them over under instructions of the selectmen, and the meaning of these votes probably was, that the province tax was to be paid under the instructions of the Provincial Congress rather than the English Government.

No other record of action at that time appears in the regular records of the town, but on one of the last leaves of the book of records then in use, we find the following:

"At a leggel meeting of the freeholders and other inhabitants of the Town of Methuen held by adjournment from the ninth of August, 1774, to the 20th of September, 1774. Taking into serious consideration the State of public affairs, Voted, that a Committee be chosen to consult and Advise with Each other. Likewise with Committees of other Towns, and if need be to communicate to any other Town any measure that may appear to be conducive to the publick Benefite, more Especlay to be Watch-full that no Encroachments are not made on our Constitutional Rights and Liberties, that we may enjoy the Blessing we have Left in peace and not be Deprived of them from any quarter but may Devise prosecute the most vigorous and reselute mesures as far as Lyes in our sphere, retrieve our invaluabl privileges. Voted that this Committee consist of fifteen persons.

"Stephen Barker, Esq.	John Huse.
John Bodwell.	James Malloon.
Nathaniel Pettengill.	John Pettengill.
Samuel Bodwell.	Lieut. John Sargent
Cutting Marsh.	Richard Whittier.
David Whittier.	Ebenezer Colten.
Jonathan Swan.	John Masten.
James Jones.	

"Voted, that the above should be entered In the Town Clerk's office."

That the people began to contemplate the possibility of war with Great Britain is indicated by the following, which is an exact copy of the original now in possession of A. C. Goodell, Esq., of Salem.

"WHEREAS, milartrary Exercise hath been much nelicked We the Subscrbers being the first comptrey in Methuen Do Covenant and Engage to form our sevels in to a Bodey in order to Larn the manual Exercise, To be Subegat To Such officers as the Comptrey shall chuse by Voat in all constutenal marsher according to our Chattaers.

"Methuen ye 6th of octr. 1774

"James Jones.	William Runnels.
Ichabod Perkins.	Asa Currier.
James Wilson.	Nathaniel Messer.
Timothy Eaton.	Ebenezer Messer.
Ebenezer Calton.	Nathan Perley.
Thomas Runnels.	John Keley.
Henry Morss.	Asa Messer.
Samuel Messer.	John Eaton.
Daniel Messer.	John Davison.
Nath[l] Haseltine.	William Stevens.
Richard Hall	Silas Brown.
Samuel Parker.	William Whittier.

Stephen Webster, Jr.	John Marsten, Jr.
Jacob Messer.	Nathaniel Smith Messer.
Daniel R. Whittier.	James Silver, Jun.
Samuel Webber.	Abiel How.
Jacob Hall.	Timothy Emerson.
Amos Gage.	Joshua Emerson, Jr.
John Cross.	Oliver Emerson.
Nathan Russ.	Timothy How.
Richard Jaques.	Isaac Barker.
Robert Hastings.	Simeon Cross.
James Chase.	Francis Swan, Junr.
Nath. Herrick.	James Davison.
Joseph Hastings.	Jacob How.
Kimball Calton.	Elijah Carlton.
Richard Currier.	Joseph How.
Ebenezer Eaton.	Jonathan How.
Simeon Hasttens.	Asa Morss.
John How, Jr.	Nath'l. Clark.
Farnum Hall.	John Merrill.
Ephraim Clark.	Abiel Cross.

Theodore Emerson.

"the ferst Compyney in Methuen meat att Mr. Eben. Carlton's in order to chuse officers, and thay Chose Lieut. Benj'm. Hall Moderator. they chose Mr. James Jones for thar Capt. Mr. Ichobied Perkins furst Leut. Mr. James Wilson Sonent Leut. Mr. Sam^{l} Messer Ens. Mr. Nath^{ll} Messer Jr. Clark for said Compyney.

Clark
"WILLIAM PAGE for sd.
Metten.

"Methuen ye 6 of Octor 1774."

In January, 1775, the town voted to give to the poor of the town of Boston by subscription, and chose a committee to receive donations. At the same meeting it was voted that the minute-men "drawn out or exposed to train, should have eight pence per day for their trouble to the last of March."

Mr. John Bodwell was also chosen at that meeting to meet the Provincial Congress on the first day of February at Cambridge. At the annual meeting in March it was voted to provide bayonets, "which should be brought to Captain John Davis, and after the service was over said Davis is to return said bayonets unto the selectmen of said town." It was also voted that the committee of safety or correspondence should continue a committee for the same purpose, and also that John Masters and Jonathan Barker be a committee to make up the "cartrages" for those persons who were not able to provide for themselves, out of the town stock. Soon after, the town voted to provide guns for all minute men unable to furnish themselves; also to provide blankets and cartridges.

Another interesting document, dated about this time, is also found out of place on one of the last leaves of the book of records, as follows:—

"We, the subscribers, being appointed a committee by the town of Methuen to give some instructions to a certain Committee of Safety and Correspondence, that was chosen by this town in September last or may hereafter be chosen as above, that it is recommended that the above committee do strictly observe and conform to the instructions hereafter mentioned.

"First. That you will be vigilant in this time of public distress; that no infractions, violations be made on the good and wholesome laws of this province, whereby the morals of the people are endangered of being corrupted, and in case you should be unsuccessful in your endeavors in all proper ways, then to publish their names that the public may see and know them to be enemies of their country and the privileges of the same.

"Secondly. That you correspond with committees of other towns, if you see it needful, as may be necessary on all important occasions.

Thirdly. As a Committee of Inspection we recommend to you that you will not buy or purchase any British manufactures or superfluities in your families but such as are of absolute necessity, and likewise that you recommend to others to do the same, for we think that a reformation of this will greatly tend to lessen our private expense and the better enable us to bear the publick charges and prevent those mischiefs that may ensue thereupon.

"Fourthly. That you will suppress as much as possible those persons, if any such there be, who travel as pedlers to introduce British goods and impose on the inconsiderate, which may impoverish us. And whereas, it is said that our enemies are sending out spies in order to get information of our schemes and plans which are contrived for our defence so as they may frustrate them, it is recommended that you take care that they receive that resentment due to their deeds.

"Fifthly. If any trader or other person within this town shall take the advantage of the present distressed circumstances in America and by an avaricious thirst after gain shall raise the price of any commodity whatsoever beyond their usual reasonable price, or shall use their influence by words or actions to weaken the measures advised by the Grand Continental Congress when made to appear to you that he or they persist in the same, you are to publish their names that they may be publickly known and treated as enemies to their country.

JAMES INGALLS,
JONATHAN SWAN, } *Committee.*
JOHN HUSE,

METHUEN, *April 4th*, 1775."

It will be noticed that this paper was dated about two weeks before the battle of Lexington. It shows the resolute, deep-seated earnestness with which our fathers entered the contest, and that the men of Methuen were as fully imbued with the spirit of resistance to tyranny as the more widely known men of the time. As might be expected, the town records are silent in regard to the events at Lexington and Bunker Hill. There was no reason why the town as a body should take action in reference to those battles. Nevertheless the men of Methuen had an active share in those great events, and we are not without an official record of the part they took.

The archives at the State House contain the names of those who went from Methuen on the memorable 19th of April, and also the names of the Methuen Company who fought at the battle of Bunker Hill.

There were four Methuen companies at the battle of Lexington, and the following is a full list of the names just as they are found on the original muster rolls now on file in the office of the Secretary of State:

Captain John Davis' Company in Colonel Frye's Regiment, enlisted Feb. 14th, 1775.

Captain, John Davis.

First Lieutenant, Nathl. Herrick. *Second Lieutenant*, Eliphalet Bodwell.

Sergeants.

Eleazer Carleton.	Richard Hall.
Francis Swan.	Jona. Barker.

Corporals.

Jonathan Baxter	William Stevens.
John Davison	Joshua Emerson.

Privates.

James Campbell.	Daniel Jennings.
Silas Brown.	Wm. Whitcher.
Enos Kings.	Nathan Swan.
Asa Morse.	Peter Barker.
Ebenr. Pingrief.	Joseph Jackson.
Simeon Tyler.	Aaron Noyes.
Amos Harrimon.	Parker Bodwell.

Daniel Morse.	Solomon Jennings.
James Ordway.	Joshua Bodwell.
Ebenezer Herrick.	Dudley Bailey.
Daniel Messer.	James Silver.
Nathan Russ.	Peter Webster.
James Ingalls.	John Swan.
James Davison.	Daniel Bailey.
Amos Gage (drummer).	Thomas Bace.
Joseph Morse.	Jeremiah Stevens.
Dudley Noyes.	Ebenezer Sargent.
Joseph Hibbard.	John Merrill.
Prince Johnnot.	Samuel Barker (fifer).

This muster roll made for seven days, from April 19th. Sworn to

JOHN DAVIS.

Total, 49.

Muster roll of the following number or party of men that belonged to Methuen, in the county of Essex, on the alarm on the 19th of April, 1775, and never joined to any particular commanding officer:

Captain.

James Mallon.

Privates.

Abner Morrill.	—— Bodwell, 2d.
Isaac Austin.	—— Austin, Jr.
Isaac Austin, Jr.	——Parker, Jr.
Benj. Herrick.	Obadiah Morse.
Peter Harris.	Wm. Russ, Jr.
Joseph Griffin.	Wm. McCleary.
Francis Richardson.	Hezekiah Parker.
Elisha Parker.	Jesse Barker.
John Parker, Jr.	Moses Morse.
Isaac Hughs.	James Dennis.
Timothy Chellis.	

Total, 22.

The pay roll of the company under the command of Major Samuel Bodwell, exhibited in consequence of the alarm on the 19th of April:

1st. Lieut., David Whittier.	*2d Lieut.*, Nathl. Pettengill.
Ensign, Enoch Merrill.	*Clerk*, John Hughs.

Sergeant, John Mansur.

Privates.

Wm. Gutterson.	Joshua Stevens.
Nathl. Pettengill.	John Whittier, Jr.
Thomas Pettengill.	Abel Merrill.
Dudley Pettengill.	Joseph Morrill.
Daniel Tyler.	John Richardson.
John Pettengill, Jr.	Wm. Richardson.
Saml. Cross.	Nathl. Hibbard.
John Bodwell.	James Hibbard.
Parker Richardson.	Bodwell Ladd.
Thomas Dow.	John Ladd.
Wm. Bodwell.	Stephen Barker.
Wm. Morse.	Mitchell Davis.
John Barker.	Ebenr. Barker.
Simeon Dow.	Nehemiah Barker.
Samuel Cole.	Saml. Richardson.
Samuel Hughs.	Enoch Cheney.
John Pettengill.	Jona. Barker, Jr.
John Webber.	Benj. Stevens, Jr.
Benj. Mastin.	John Hibbard.
Elijah Sargent.	Wm. Hibbard.

Total 45.

Captain James Jones' pay roll for the campaign in the defence of the country at the battle of Concord, made at the rate of twenty-eight days per month, four days' service.

Captain, James Jones.

Lieutenant, Ichabod Perkins.

Sergeants.

Timothy Eaton.	Nathan Perley.
Ephraim Clark.	Jacob Messer.

Corporals.

Nathl. Hazeltine.	Elijah Carlton.	Simeon Cross.

Privates.

John Kelly (drummer).	John Tippets, 3d.
Abiel Cross.	Oliver Emerson.
William Page.	James Messer.
Moses Sargent.	Henry Mors.
James Fry.	Stephen Webstor, Jr.
Thomas Herrick.	Elisha Perkins.
Joseph Granger.	Job Pingrey.
Isaac Barker.	Joseph Cross.
Day Emerson.	Asa Cross.
Joseph Perkins.	John Morris.
Jona. How.	Kimball Carleton.
Nathl. S. Clark.	

Total 32.

In the Company of Captain Charles Furbush.

Privates.

Theodore Emerson.	James Silver.
Isaac Maloon.	John Hancock.
Jos. Pettengill.	Nehemiah Kidah.
Abraham P. Silver.	Daniel Pettengill.

Total 8.

Grand Total 156.

The number of inhabitants in Methuen in 1776, according to the colonial census, was thirteen hundred and twenty-six.

The tax book of that year gives the names of two hundred and fifty-two poll-tax payers. It is surprising that a town of so small population could have sent so many men at the first call to meet the British. Nothing could more forcibly impress us with the universal, deep-seated determination of our fathers to protect their rights at all hazards, than this simple list of names. When we consider that they were not called out by any order of the authorities, that their enthusiasm had not been stirred by appeals from the daily press or by public speakers, that they only knew from the signal guns and fires on the hills that the British were in motion, and that the war had actually begun, and that nearly every able bodied man in town, more than half the poll-tax payers, must, of their own accord, have shouldered their muskets and marched at a moment's warning to meet the foe, those of us who claim descent from those men cannot help feeling the blood tingle in our veins with an honest pride in such an ancestry. Such facts show better than anything else can, the quality of the Revolutionary spirit, and how it was that the colonies were finally successful. The next important event was the battle of Bunker Hill, on the 17th of June following, in which it is certain that a Methuen company bore an important part. The following is a copy of the original muster-roll on file at the State House.

"CAMBRIDGE, Oct. 5, 1775.

"Return of the men's names, when they enlisted and where they belonged. Belonging to Captain John Davis' Company, in Colonel Frye's Regiment:

Captain, John Davis.

First Lieutenant, Nathl. Herrick. *Second Lieutenant*, Eliphalet Bodwell.

Major, Jonathan Barker.

Sergeants.

Ebenezer Carllton.	Francis Swan.
Richard Hall.	Peter Barker.

Corporals.

Jonathan Baxter.	Joshua Emerson.
William Stevens.	John Davison.

Privates.

Abraham Anness.	Lazarus Hubbard.
John Asten.	Ebenezer Herrick.[1]
Silas Brown.	Joseph Hibbard.[2]
Parker Bodwell	James Ingalls.[3]
David Bailey.	Dudley Noyes.
Dudley Bailey.	Aaron Noyes.
Timothy Chellis.	Peter Webster.
David Corliss.	James Woodbury.
James Ordway.	Ebenezer Sargent.
Jeremiah Stevens.	Samuel Parker.
James Silver.	Thomas Pace.
Simeon Tyler.	Nathan Russ.
Amos Gage (drummer).	John Swan.
Samuel Barker (fifer).	Nathan Swan.
James Campbell.	Ebenezer Pingrief.
James Davison.	Joshua Bodwell.[4]
Mitchel Davis.	Solomon Jennings.[5]
Amos Harriman.	

It is by no means certain that this list includes the names of all Methuen men engaged in the battle; there may have been some in companies from the neighboring towns. It is known that the Methuen company was in the thickest of the fight, that it was stationed in the redoubt, and was among the last to leave it. It is said that it came near being surrounded towards the end of the battle, and that as the enemy came up on each hand a British soldier ran up to Captain Davis, saying, "You are my prisoner."

Captain Davis, who was a resolute, powerful man, replied, "I guess not," at the same time running the soldier through with his sword. The blood spurted over his breeches as he drew back the sword, but he made his escape. It is also said that Captain Davis took one of his wounded men upon his back just after escaping from the redoubt, and carried him out of the reach of danger. As he was crossing the hollow between the hills, which was swept by the fire from a British vessel, he saw before him a board fence. Captain Davis, tired by excitement and the weight of his comrade, said: "I don't see how we can get over that fence." But in an instant after, a cannon ball knocked it in pieces and left the way clear.

Mr. Asa M. Bodwell tells a story of James Ordway, who afterwards lived on the west side of Tower Hill. Mr. Ordway was in poor circumstances in his old age, and had a bad ulcer on his leg. Mr. Bodwell says that his father sent him one day to Mr. Ordway with a gallon of rum to bathe his lame leg, and with it a message saying that the rum was sent to pay for throwing stones at the battle of Bunker Hill. The story being, that when the ammunition gave out, at the close of the battle, Ordway laid down his gun and threw stones at the British until driven out. Methuen lost three men at the battle of Bunker Hill. Ebenezer Herrick was killed in the battle, Joseph Hibbard was wounded and died June 20th, James Ingalls was wounded and died July 8th. It is impossible to ascertain the exact number of soldiers Methuen had in the Revolutionary War. The town records give us no information on this point, and the State records are imperfect, but there is no doubt that Methuen kept her quota in the field. After the evacuation of Boston by the British, the seat of war was so far away, that probably few of the soldiers from this town were actively engaged with the enemy.

There are stories told of Methuen men who went to fight Burgoyne, and helped to conduct the captured soldiers to Cambridge, and guard them while there; other soldiers from this town were stationed at different points on the coast exposed to attack.

During those years, the town business went on as usual. A Committee of Safety and Correspondence was appointed each year, and in February, 1778, the town voted that the Selectmen should supply the families of soldiers in the Continental Army with the necessaries of life. At the same meeting the town was called upon to see what instructions it would give to their Representative, relative to a resolve of the Continental Congress for all the United States of America to join in a perpetual union with one another. The subject was referred to a committee, consisting of Major Bodwell, Captain James Jones, Colonel Thomas Poor, Lieutenant John Huse and Mr. Enoch Merrill. At an adjourned meeting, the question was put whether the town would receive and accept the Articles of Confederation and perpetual union, and "voted in the affirmative."

The currency question seems to have been as troublesome in those days as it has been later. At a meeting held April 2, 1778, there was an article in the warrant "To see what the town will do with those persons who refuse to take our paper currency,—and passed a resolve to treat them as enemies to their country, and voted to publish the same in the Boston newspaper." The rapid decrease in value of this currency is shown by the fact, that while, in 1777, £30 was raised for the ordinary repairs of the highways, in 1781 £6000 was raised for the same purpose.

In 1779, Lieut. John Sargent was chosen delegate to represent the town in the convention to be held at Cambridge, to form a new constitution. In 1780, the new Constitution of the State of Massachusetts took effect, and in that year we find the first record of a vote for Governor and Senators. It is evident that party feeling did not run very high, from the fact that for the office of Governor, John Hancock had sixty-four votes and James Bowdoin two.

In that year the town furnished 8780 pounds of beef for the army, and hired sixteen men. The next year they furnished 6957 pounds of beef, and raised twelve men to serve as soldiers.

We find nothing in the town records to indicate the end of the war, except a vote to sell the entrenching tools belonging to the town, and the frequency of military titles, indicating that the soldiers were at home and active in town matters.

[1] Died June 17th.
[2] Died June 20th.
[3] Died July 8th.
[4] In train June 17th.
[5] In train June 17th.

From the close of the Revolutionary War, there is little of interest to be gleaned from the town records for many years. About this time we find that the town voted "not to give liberty for inoculation for small-pox," and to "choose a committee of five to take care of those persons lately inoculated with the small-pox, and prosecute them, and take effectual care that the distemper spread no further."

In 1793, a company was organized to build a bridge over the Merrimack at Bodwell's Falls. Up to that time ferries had furnished the only means of crossing this river. We find mention of five different ferries, as follows:

Gage's Ferry, near the end of Pleasant Valley Street.

Swan's Ferry, at Wingate's farm.

Marston's Ferry, at the Alms-house, Lawrence.

Bodwell's Ferry, at the Pumping Station, Lawrence.

Harris' Ferry, a little east of Dracut line.

The early inhabitants did not dream that a bridge could be built across so broad a stream, and a common way of expressing the impossibility of doing a thing was to say, "It is as impossible as to build a bridge over the Merrimack River." It seems, too, that some of the inhabitants did not take kindly to the new project, probably deeming it a base scheme on the part of the proprietors to make money out of the public; for a meeting was held soon after to see if the town would send a remonstrance to the General Court against its erection. This proposition was decided in the negative. The opponents of the bridge then called a meeting to see if the town would petition the General Court to order the proprietors to pay the cost of the town roads leading to the bridge. This also was voted down, and the town decided to repair the road over Currant's Hill to the New Hampshire line.

The bridge was built shortly after, and for some years the travel from thence to New Hampshire passed over Currant's Hill, curving around over the old road—now discontinued—on the hill in the rear of the house of James Ingalls.

The "Turnpike" (now Broadway) was built in 1805–6, by an incorporated company. A system of toll was established, but it caused such dissatisfaction that in a few years the "Turnpike" was made a public highway by the County Commissioners.

The town first voted for a Representative to Congress and for a Presidential Elector, December 18, 1788, the highest candidate voted for receiving twenty-three votes. It seems that at the first Presidential elections, the town voted for only one elector; but in 1804 votes were cast for nineteen electors.

The change from the use of English money to Federal currency took place about 1795–96. The last time we find "pounds" used in making up the town records was in 1795.

In 1805, the town voted that the Annual Town Meeting should be held on the first Monday in March, for the future; and, at the same meeting, for the first time voted that swine should not go at large. Previous to that time, the town had always voted the largest liberty to swine, except that for a few years this liberty had been coupled with the condition that they should be "yoaked and ringed."

In the War of 1812 Methuen sent her proportion of men to meet the old enemy. The only reference to that war in the town records, is a vote passed "to give the detached soldiers a sum to make them up twelve dollars a month while in active service with what Government gives them." We have been told by veterans of that war, now dead, that the number of men called for from Methuen was not large. They were mostly stationed to defend the forts along the coast. It is said, however, that a small number of soldiers went from Methuen to meet the British in Canada, and that they were present at the surrender of Hull. It appears from the census returns and the tax lists that Methuen grew but little in wealth and population, during the forty years subsequent to the Revolutionary War. In 1776 the population of the town number one thousand three hundred and twenty-six, and in 1820 one thousand three hundred and seventy-one.

There was no village in the town at that time, and no neighboring markets to induce growth. At the beginning of this century, there were only six houses in the now thickly settled part of Methuen Village. The Miller Cross house, corner of Hampshire and Lowell Streets; Sargent house, where Exchange Hotel stands; Deacon Fry house, Butters farm; Swan place, Nevins farm; Jonathan Cluff house, Mill-yard; John Sargent house, at elm tree by mill-yard.

There was then one grist-mill, a little south of Fisher's grocery store, another on the opposite side of the river, and a fulling-mill just below the foot-bridge at the falls. From 1820 to 1840 the town gained about seventy per cent. in population, with a corresponding increase in wealth. This was in consequence of the building of the cotton-mills, and increase in the manufacture of shoes and hats. During that time there were few events of special interest to this generation. In 1837 it appears that a new town-house was talked about, and a committee was chosen at the March meeting to select a location and prepare estimates. The committee reported at an adjourned meeting, and the town voted to build. A week or two afterwards another meeting was called, the vote reconsidered and committee discharged. The same year the selectmen were authorized to hire the vestry of the Baptist meeting-house for holding town-meetings, and that house continued to be the place for town-meetings until the present town-house was built in 1853. In 1844 rumors began to circulate of a project to dam the Merrimack, and build factories at Bodwell's Falls. The town voted to give Daniel Saunders and his associates a refusal of the town-

farm, which was situated on Broadway, the buildings being on the east side, south of Haverhill Street, at its cost, with an addition of thirty-three per cent.

The terms on which the Essex Company bonded the land now occupied by the principal parts of the city of Lawrence were, a fair cash value, with an addition of thirty-three per cent. The land was bought in due time, and the "New City" as it was then called, grew with wonderful rapidity. When operations first began there were only nine or ten houses standing on what is now the thickly settled part of North Lawrence. There was a paper-mill, operated by Adolphus Durant, on the Spicket, a little above its mouth. In 1847 Chas. S. Storrow and others petitioned for an act of incorporation of a new town to be called Lawrence. There was a strong opposition to this scheme on the part of Methuen, a town-meeting was called, and John Tenney and George A. Waldo were chosen to oppose the petition before the committee of the Legislature. They were unsuccessful in this opposition; Lawrence obtained an act of incorporation, and Methuen lost a large section of her territory. Another small slice was subsequently taken from Methuen and added to Lawrence, since which time the boundaries of Methuen have remained unchanged. Doubtless old residents of the town will recall many matters of much interest in their day, such as the bickerings about the enforcement of the liquor laws, the efforts made to suppress the liquor traffic in Salem, the contests over the dividing lines of school districts, and the disputes over the building of new roads, but they would hardly be of general interest now. From 1850 to 1860 there was little change in population, and few events of general interest. In 1861 came the war which laid its hand so heavily on the whole land. When the first note of war was sounded, and President Lincoln called for seventy-five thousand troops to protect Washington in April, 1861, Governor Andrew ordered the Sixth Massachusetts Regiment, with others, to start at once. Company F of that Regiment, Capt. Chadbourne, had its armory in Lawrence, and eight members of that company belonged in Methuen as follows:

Henry Cummings.	Frank Sanborn.
Albert L. Dame.	George Thurlow.
Amos G. Jones.	James Troy.
George Kent.	Henry Turkington.

They were notified of the call late in the afternoon, and immediately reported for duty, and the next morning they all left Lawrence for Washington. On the 19th they made the memorable passage through Baltimore where they met the first resistance to the Federal troops. Thus Methuen has had the honor of seeing her sons foremost in the fight in both of our great wars; for as Lexington and Concord were the initial events in the Revolutionary War, so was Baltimore in the Civil War.

The first action taken by the town was immediately afterwards on April 30th, when a town-meeting was held, and the sum of five thousand dollars voted for the purpose of arming, equipping and furnishing volunteers. A committee, consisting of the selectmen, Eben. Sawyer, J. P. Flint, John C. Webster and Daniel Currier was appointed "to disburse the money." A company was at once formed, all of volunteers from Methuen and vicinity, and most of them from Methuen, and they were uniformed, equipped and drilled, so as to be ready for action. This company became Company B, Fourteenth Massachusetts Infantry, and for some time were stationed at Fort Warren, and went to Washington in the latter part of the summer of 1861. In August of that year, the town voted to pay State aid to the families of volunteers according to law.

In July, 1862, forty-seven men were called for, and the town voted to pay a bounty of one hundred dollars to each volunteer when mustered into the United States service. On the 2d of August the town held another meeting, in which it was voted to pay two hundred dollars in addition to the sum already voted, making three hundred in all, to volunteers when mustered into the service. Immediately after came another from the President for three hundred thousand nine months' men. A meeting was at once called to adopt measures to obtain the number required from Methuen. It was voted to pay one hundred and fifty dollars to each nine months' man when mustered in and credited to the town.

The next call for recruits came in November, 1863, and the town voted "to fill its quota under the call for three hundred thousand men." A vote also passed to pay the families of drafted men the same State aid that was paid to families of volunteers.

In May, 1864, the selectmen were authorized to pay one hundred and twenty-five dollars bounty to volunteers in anticipation of a call from the President for more men. After this time, however, few recruits were mustered in. The volunteers from Methuen were scattered through several different regiments, but the largest number was in Company B, First Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, which was noted as a remarkably well-drilled and disciplined body of men. When the regiments were detailed for the defence of Washington, the Fourteenth Massachusetts Infantry was selected after a competitive inspection with other regiments, for their excellent discipline, well-regulated camp, good appearance and reliable men.

The name of the regiment was changed from the Fourteenth Massachusetts Infantry to the First Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, and the men remained on duty in the forts in front of Washington, on Arlington Heights, until towards the end of the war, when they were ordered to the front, and performed distinguished service. They were engaged in sixteen to twenty different battles, and at Spottsylvania they occupied an important position in the centre of Grant's army, and held at bay Ewell's force of more than

four times their number, until reinforcements arrived from a distance of five miles, thus preventing Grant's army from being cut in two. For their heroic behavior on that occasion they received the unusual distinction of a special commendation from General Grant. The Methuen men received their heaviest blow in this battle, where fifteen were killed and many more wounded. The news that the company from Methuen had suffered heavily in this battle caused great excitement throughout the town, and a meeting of the citizens was immediately held. Resolutions expressive of sympathy and condolence were passed, and it was voted to send an agent to look after the wounded.

It ought to be mentioned also that the Methuen company held an honorable position in this regiment of eighteen hundred men. At the battle of June 16 the regimental color-bearer was twice shot down. Our well-known townsman, Albert L. Dame, was then given this honorable and dangerous place in the regiment, and had the honor of carrying the colors to the end of the war, and delivering them up to the State. The number of men lost from Methuen during the war was fifty-two, exclusive of those serving in the navy. According to General Schouler, the town furnished three hundred and twenty-five men for the war, which was a surplus of fifty-one over and above all demands. Fifteen were commissioned officers. The whole amount of money appropriated and expended by the town on account of the war, exclusive of State aid, was $\$38{,}651\frac{73}{100}$.

In addition to this amount seven thousand five hundred dollars were gratuitously given by individual citizens to aid soldiers' families and to encourage recruiting. The total amount of State aid, which has been paid to soldiers and their families in Methuen, up to January 1, 1887, is $56,747.03. There were about a thousand dollars in money raised by fairs and levees, and the ladies of Methuen devoted a great deal of time to work for the soldiers.

There were two societies, the Sanitary Commission and Christian Commission, which performed a vast amount of work whose valne cannot be measured in dollars and cents. Thus it appears that there must have been paid out in Methuen, directly on account of the war, considerably more than $100,000.

As we look back over the record of Methuen in the Civil War, on the readiness with which her men mustered in the field, and the heartiness with which they were supported by those left at home, we cannot deny that this generation has proved itself worthy its Revolutionary ancestry.

On the 7th of September, 1876, Methuen celebrated the one hundred and fiftieth anniversary of its incorporation as a town. The day was fine, and the event was observed with great enthusiasm. The booming of cannon in the early morning aroused the slumberers in the valley of the Spicket, and gave the signal for the festivities of the day to begin.

The Town-House and most private dwellings were tastefully decorated, business was suspended and the busy town took on a holiday appearance quite unusual. The exercises of the day began with a procession, composed of a cavalcade of horsemen, a military company improvised for the occasion,—part equipped in the old style and part in the new,—the fire department, carriages representing the different trades and business of the town, school children, distinguished visitors and citizens in carriages, making quite an imposing display. Governor Rice, Surgeon Gen. Dale, Hon. Allen W. Dodge and Hon. Carroll D. Wright, were among the visitors. The president of the day was Hon. Jacob Emerson, orator, Hon. John K. Tarbox, chief marshal, Adjutant James Ingalls, chaplain, Rev. Lyman H. Blake.

The procession, with bands of music, passed through the principal streets of the town to the "Barker Lot," near the corner of Lowell and Barker Streets, where a stand had been erected. Here an eloquent oration was delivered before a large audience, by Hon. John K. Tarbox, a son of Methuen. After the oration a banquet was served under a large tent near by, at the conclusion of which speeches were made by the orator of the day, Hon. Allen W. Dodge, treasurer, of Essex County, Rev. Dr. A. A. Miner, once pastor of a church in Methuen, Hon. Carroll D. Wright, Hon. J. C. Blaisdell, of Fall River, Hon. J. K. Jenners, mayor of Haverhill, Major George S. Merrill, of Lawrence, Rev. Moses How, of New Bedford and several others.

Rev. Moses How was a resident of Methuen in his youthful days, and at this time, though eighty-seven years of age, a hale and vigorous man. After giving his audience many interesting reminiscences of old Methuen, he stated that he had preached eight thousand sermons, attended two thousand two hundred and sixty-five funerals, married one thousand nine hundred and four couples and had distributed five thousand two hundred and eleven Bibles and fifteen thousand Testaments to seamen. The day closed with social and family reunions at the homes of citizens of the town.

The occasion will be long remembered by those who participated in it, for the good fellowship which characterized the day, and the greetings of the sons and daughters of the old town, who had come back to revisit the old homestead, revive the memories of early days and take once more by the hand the companions of their youth.

From the close of the Civil War to the present time, the town has passed through the most prosperous period of its history. The population has increased from two thousand five hundred and seventy-six in 1865, to four thousand five hundred and seven in 1885, and the wealth of the town has gained in like proportion.

The territorial limits have not been changed, although there has been a desire on the part of some

to annex Methuen to Lawrence. The gain has been almost entirely in the thickly settled portions and has been due partly to proximity to Lawrence, but principally to an increase in manufacturing enterprises.

Schools.—The founders of Methuen seem to have provided for the educational interests of the town at an early date. In 1729 it was voted to lay out a school lot and a parsonage lot north of World's End Pond. These were undoubtedly tracts of woodland, whose income should be devoted to the purposes for which they were respectively laid out. In 1731 it was voted to keep school one month in Ebenezer Barker's house, one month in Thomas Eaton's house and a month at Joshua Swan's. In 1733 we find that Ebenezer Barker, Zebediah Barker and Thomas Eaton were each paid £2 10*s*. for keeping school. In 1735 the town voted to build a school-house eighteen by twenty feet near the meeting-house, school to be kept two months at the school-house and one month at Spicket Hill. The school appears to have been kept at the school-house part of the time, but chiefly at private houses until 1792. Reading and writing and a little arithmetic were the principal branches taught, and the latter study was not required. The schools appear to have been taught by male teachers only until 1749, when it was voted "to choose school-mistresses to instruct children in their reading." Also voted "to choose James How, Nathaniel Messer, James Ordway and Ebenezer Hibbard a committee to agree with school-mistresses and appoint convenient places for them to be kept in. . ." In 1775 the town was divided into seven school districts, each of which was to have its proportions of the school money, provided it built a comfortable school-house. It appears from the return made by the committee whose duty it was to build the school-houses, that the building of them was let out at auction to the lowest bidder, and that the houses cost about £29 each. The town also appropriated in the same year £30 for schools, and continued to appropriate that amount each year until 1792. £60 a year was afterwards appropriated for three years, or until 1795, when the first mention of "dollars" appears in the town records. A pound at that time appears to have been equivalent to $3.33. In 1797, $300 was appropriated, and the amount was increased from time to time, until in 1823 the sum appropriated for schools was $600. From that time to the present the increase in the annual school appropriation has more than kept pace with the growth in population until the present year, when the amount appropriated for school purposes was about $11,000.

Up to the year 1775 the selectmen seem to have had usually the sole care of the schools, and from that time to 1798 there was no school committee regularly chosen. It was considered a part of the minister's duty to visit the schools and look after the moral instruction, which in those days formed an important part of the training, as well as to see that the literary instruction did not fall below the proper standard. But in 1798 the town chose a committee of one from each school district, "to inspect the schools in the town the present year." This way of managing the schools seems to have been followed until 1804, when a committee of three was chosen by the town from each of the nine school districts, making twenty-seven in all. It was also voted "that each committee with the minister visit their respective schools." There seems to have been about this time an unusual interest taken in school matters, for we find among the records of 1800, a system of School Regulations adopted by the town, which show what the duties of School Committees and teachers were then supposed to be, as follows:

"Section I.

"Concerning the duty of the School Committee.

"*Art.* 1. It shall be the duty of the school committee to visit the several town schools, in each district twice every year and more if necessary, giving seasonable notice to the Master or Mistress.

"*Art.* 2. It shall be the duty of the Committee to enquire into the regulations, the mode of government, and the method of instruction practised in the school, and it shall be the duty of the committee to use their best endeavors to correct any deficiency in the mode of government, the manner of instruction, or the discipline of the schools.

"*Art.* 3. Should any Master or Mistress appear so essentially deficient in the mode of government, the method of instruction, or the discipline of the school as not to be useful, it shall be the duty of the Committee and Selectmen, a majority of them concurring, to dismiss him or her from the school, and the Committee or the Selectmen, shall provide another who may be more useful.

"*Art.* 4. It shall be the duty of the Committee to close each visit to the school with addressing themselves to the Scholars upon the duty of order, the necessity, respectability and advantages of good education."

"Section II.

"Concerning the duty of School Masters.

"*Art.* 1. It shall be the duty of every School Master to open his school in the morning, and close it in the evening with prayer.

"*Art.* 2. It shall be the duty of the master or mistress to adopt such general regulations as will have a tendency to operate uniformly throughout the whole school, that every one may have an equal chance to pursue and improve in his particular branch of study and be subject to the same rules of government.

"*Art* 3. The instructor shall endeavor to govern his respective school by the skilfullness of his hand, and the integrity of his heart, with using as little severity as he shall judge will be for the best good of the school, bnt when mild measures will not subject the idle to the good order and regulations of the school the instructor shall have a right to inflict reasonable and decent corporal punishment."

The system of management above outlined continued until 1822, when the town adopted the plan usually followed throughout the State until the abolishment of the School District system, in 1869. This consisted of a superintending school committee of three, chosen by the town, to look after the qualifications of teachers and the management of the schools, and a prudential committee chosen by the district to hire the teachers, furnish supplies and manage the finances.

The school districts were abolished by statute in 1869. In the winter of that year the High School was organized, and has since been in successful operation. There are eighteen schools in town besides the High School, all kept open nine months in the year.

CHURCHES.—The fact that strikes one most forcibly in reading over the early town records is the prominence given to religious observances. The chief and only reason given for setting off the new town was that the people might more easily attend the public worship of God. The first business done was to provide themselves a minister and a place of public worship. The principal money tax was for the support of these objects. Nothing could show more plainly that the hardy pioneers of Methuen were of genuine Puritan stock. Whatever we may think of Puritan austerity and fanaticism and intolerance, we cannot help admiring the indomitable energy, the iron will and lofty purpose of those men who braved the dangers of hostile Indians and suffered the privations of the wilderness, that they might worship God in their own way.

The old papers which have been preserved, the town records, and the old traditions all show that the first settlers in Methuen were men of rugged, vigorous intellect, accustomed to think for themselves, and not afraid to express their opinions.

The early history of the town was almost identical with the history of the church and society for many years. We have already related some of the incidents connected with the building of the meeting-house and settlement of a pastor, and it remains to give some account of the organization and history of the church since.

From the "Church Records," which were kept by Rev. Christopher Sargent during his ministry, we find that "the first church in Methuen was founded by Rev. Samuel Phillips, of Andover, October 29, 1729." On that day a fast, preparatory to the ordination of Mr. Sargent was kept, a sermon was preached, Rev. Mr. Phillips gathered the church, and the covenant was consented to by twenty-four persons, and within a month thirty-five others joined.

A week afterwards Rev. Mr. Sargent was ordained pastor, and continued in the pastoral office until 1783, when the town consented to release him from the active duties of the ministry. Mr. Sargent was born in Amesbury, Mass., in 1704 and graduated from Harvard College in 1725. Although he must have had a large influence in moulding the religious and intellectual character of the people of Methuen, there is now very little to be found to show exactly what manner of man he was. He was evidently a man of strong common sense, good talents, a moderate man, and one who could unite and harmonize the church. We should also infer that he was a more broad-minded man than the average Congregational minister of his day, from the fact that he was several times called upon by some of his hearers to defend his orthodoxy, and that his Calvinism was not extreme enough to suit them. The church prospered under his ministrations, and during his pastorate five hundred and nine members were received into it. He died March 20, 1790, and was buried in the old grave-yard on Meeting House Hill, close to the church where he had ministered so long. One of his sons, born in Methuen, Nathaniel Peaslee Sargent, became a prominent lawyer, and in 1790 was appointed chief justice of the Supreme Judicial Court of Massachusetts. The only evidence we find in church or town records of serious trouble in the church during Mr. Sargent's long ministry of fifty-three years, was in 1766, when the "Second Church in Methuen" was formed. This church was composed of those persons, who, to use their own language, "were dissatisfied with the Rev. Mr. Sargent's doctrine and manner of discipline or church government." The records show that church meetings for business were frequent during these times, the discipline strict, and the members closely looked after. It must be admitted, however, judging from some of the entries, that there was need of vigilance, and even then that sin was not always prevented.

After the retirement of Mr. Sargent it was nearly five years before another minister was settled.

The next pastor was Simon Finley Williams, of Windham, N. H., who was ordained December 13, 1786. He was dismissed in 1791, under suspicion of misconduct. The next pastor was Humphrey C. Perley, of Boxford, who was ordained December 2, 1795. The church was not prosperous during his ministry, although he was a man of good repute, and continued in the pastoral office until May 24, 1815, when he was dismissed at his own request.

Jacob Weed Eastman, of Sandwich, N. H., was the next pastor, was ordained December 13, 1815, and remained till July 4, 1828. He was succeeded by Spencer F. Beard, of West Brookfield, who was installed January 21, 1829, and dismissed April 29, 1832.

He was followed by Sylvester G. Pierce, of Wilmington, Vt., who was installed June 27, 1832, and continued in the pastoral office, greatly beloved by his people, until his death, May 8, 1839. John Charles Phillips, of Boston, was installed as the next pastor December 25, 1839.

He was a broad-minded and cultured man, of fine talents, and his pastorate was characterized by peace and harmony in the church. On account of failing health he resigned, in July, 1860, and gave up active work in the ministry. Edward H. Greely, of Hopkinton, N. H., was the next pastor, and was installed over the church in 1861, and dismissed in September, 1866. The next pastor was Thomas G. Grassie, born in Scotland, and installed in Methuen September 10, 1867. He was dismissed August 7, 1873. Lyman H. Blake, of Cornwall, Vt., was settled in Methuen June 25, 1874, and was dismissed September 4, 1877.

Zephaniah S. Holbrook, of Berea, O., was the next pastor. He was installed December 4, 1878, and dismissed June 29, 1881. He was succeeded by Joseph Henry Selden, of Hadlyme, Conn., who was settled May 10, 1882, and dismissed May 16, 1884. Charles H. Oliphant, of Boston, the present pastor, was set-

tled October 29, 1885, having acted as pastor of the church for a year previous to his installation.

The church now numbers about two hundred and fifty members.

In 1796 the old "athadoxt" meeting-house, first built, was torn down, and a new one built on or near the same spot, the congregation worshipping in the meanwhile in the house of the Second Parish. The building of this house seems to have excited much interest through the town, and it is a curious fact, illustrating the habits of the time, that it was voted "That the spectators be given a drink of grog apiece at the raising." As the village sprung up around Spicket Falls, "Meeting-House Hill" ceased to be the most central place, and to better accommodate the congregation, it was decided in 1832, to remove the house to the spot now occupied by the stone meeting-house. It stood there until 1855, when the wooden house was torn down and the present stone house erected. In 1880 the parish received generous contributions from the family of Rev. John C. Phillips, and also from the family of Mr. David Nevins, for the purpose of erecting a chapel. The stone chapel now on the grounds was built shortly after. The grounds have since been tastefully laid out and adorned by Henry C. Nevins, Esq., and the church property of the First Parish, Methuen, is now unsurpassed in beauty by any in the County.

In 1766, April 16, a second church was organized, and Rev. Eliphaz Chapman was installed as its pastor in November, 1772.

About this time the "Second Parish" was formed by act of the Legislature. Under this arrangement every taxable person in town was taxed for the support of the minister, but he paid to the parish to which he belonged, instead of to the town. The meeting-house of the Second Parish stood on the north side of Pelham Street, a little west of the house formerly occupied by Leonard Wheeler. It was afterwards removed to the hill, near the house of Stephen W. Williams, whence it was removed to Lawrence, and afterwards destroyed by fire. We have found no record of the termination of the ministry of Mr. Chapman, but we find that Rev. J. H. Stevens was ordained May 18, 1791, and was dismissed March 10, 1795. Rev. Josiah Hill was settled April 9, 1832, and retired April 9, 1833. The Second Parish existed for half a century,—until 1816,— when it was united with the First Parish. In 1830 it was again organized, but was again united with the old church and parish. At present there is but one Congregational Church in the town.

The next church in point of age is the Baptist.

To an historical discourse prepared by Rev. K. S. Hall, and delivered at the semi-centennial celebration of that church and society, October 18, 1865, we are indebted for much of what follows. For many years there had been persons of the Baptist faith scattered through the town, and Isaac Backus preached here as early as March 30, 1756. It is also known that Baptist sentiments were held by the Messer family in Methuen a century and a half ago, and that Jacob Whittier, of Methuen, was chosen one of the deacons of the Baptist Church in Haverhill May 9, 1765. Sometime during the last century a Baptist Church was constituted in the west part of Methuen, but no record is in existence of its formation or subsequent proceedings. A meeting-house was built about the year 1778, near the burying-ground west of the Bartlett Farm, and simply boarded and supplied with a floor. Services were held in it occasionally for some years, but some of the leading families removed from town, and the church ceased to exist. Religious meetings continued to be held occasionally at private houses, and baptisms were administered at different times, until the formation of the Baptist Society in Methuen, March 1, 1815, when a number of the inhabitants met at the house of "Mr. Ebenezer Whittier, innholder," and chose a committee to draft articles of signature, which were signed by seventy-one members during the first year. The Baptist Church was constituted March 8, 1815, and the recognition services were held in the house of Daniel Frye, now the "Butters Place." During the first year of its organization the church held religious meetings in different parts of the town, the church meetings being usually held at the house of Daniel Frye, afterwards chosen deacon. Charles O. Kimball, a licentiate of the Haverhill Church, commenced preaching June 25, 1815, and was ordained pastor of the church and society May 8, 1816.

In the summer of 1815 steps were taken for building a meeting-house, and it was finally voted to build a "two-story meeting-house" on a half-acre lot given by Bailey Davis, where the Baptist Church now stands. Several other lots were contemplated on which to build the house; one, the "mill lot," embracing a quarter of an acre near where the Town House now stands, and another on "Liberty Hill," a little southwest of the stone church on the opposite side of the street. The house was built and publicly dedicated December 5, 1816. During the long pastorate of Mr. Kimball, the church seems to have been characterized by activity and zeal in its membership, and steadily increased in numbers and influence. For the first ten years all moneys for the support of preaching and other expenses connected therewith were raised by voluntary subscription; afterwards taxes were assessed on members of the society. Mr. Kimball closed his labors October 4, 1835. Rev. Addison Parker, of Sturbridge, was the successor of Mr. Kimball, and was publicly installed February 3, 1836. The church seems to have prospered during his ministry, which closed May 1, 1839. Rev. Samuel W. Field was the next pastor, and was installed April 22, 1840. During the first year of his pastorate the old meeting-house was torn down and a new one built on the old site, the congregation holding services in

the Congregational Meeting-House until their vestry was ready for use. Mr. Field resigned August 2, 1846.

In June, 1847, Rev. Joseph M. Graves became pastor of the church, and remained until May 11, 1850, when he tendered his resignation. Rev. B. F. Bronson was the successor of Mr. Graves, and after a prosperous pastorate of seven years and a half, resigned May 30, 1858.

Rev. Howard M. Emerson was ordained pastor January 2, 1861, and continued in the office until his death, May 16, 1862. Rev. King S. Hall was installed December 23 of the same year, and resigned April 30, 1867. He was succeeded by Rev. N. M. Williams, who was settled February 13, 1868, and left March 31, 1871.

Rev. Lyman Chase became pastor in May, 1871, and remained until the summer of 1876. He was succeeded by Rev. Thomas J. B. House, who commenced his labors January 1, 1877, and left April 24, 1883. Rev. Simeon L. B. Chase became the next pastor August 19, 1883, and resigned May 29, 1887.

On Sunday, March 21, 1869, the meeting-house took fire during the morning service, and was totally destroyed. The society erected the house which is now standing in the following summer on the old spot, and it was dedicated January 13, 1870. This church is strong and prosperous, numbers about two hundred members, and is the only one of its denomination in the town.

The Universalist Church and Society was organized in 1824. At first religious services were held at irregular intervals in the different school-houses in town. As the church became stronger, meetings were held regularly in "McKay's building," on Lowell Street, and later in "Wilson's Hall," Hampshire Street. The present Universalist meeting-house was built in 1835–36, and dedicated in July, 1836. Rev. John A. Gurley was the first settled minister, and was pastor at that time. He left about 1837. The next pastor was Rev. E. N. Harris, who did not remain long. Rev. A. A. Miner was settled over the church in November, 1839, and remained until July, 1842, when he left to settle in Lowell. Rev. H. R. Nye was the next pastor, and remained about three years, leaving in 1845. Rev. Willard Spaulding succeeded Mr. Nye, and preached at this time two or three years. Rev. O. A. Tillotson succeeded Mr. Spaulding, and was followed by Rev. William H. Waggoner in 1851 and 1852. Rev. Willard Spaulding was pastor a second time in 1855 and 1856. Rev. Edwin Davis became pastor in the spring of 1861, and remained until 1863. Rev. John E. Davenport followed Mr. Davis, and continued in the pastoral office about two years. Rev. C. A. Bradley became pastor in 1869, and resigned March 22, 1871.

During the pastorate of Mr. Bradley the church and grounds were remodeled and much improved. Rev. W. W. Heywood became pastor in 1871, and his resignation was accepted by the society March 29, 1875. Rev. R. T. Polk was installed as the next pastor March 21, 1877, and resigned August 31, 1879.

Rev. G. T. Flanders, of Lowell, supplied the pulpit for a year, beginning his labors February 29, 1880, was succeeded by Rev. Nathan S. Hill from November 1, 1881, to March 1, 1883. In October, 1883, the society called Rev. Donald Fraser to the pastorate, and he remained until his resignation in November, 1885. Rev. A. F. Walch, the next minister, was installed October 14, 1886, and is now in the pastoral office. The congregation numbers about one hundred and fifty.

We are informed that the Methodists first held meetings in Methuen in 1833 or '34. They occasionally occupied the Second Parish meeting-house, and held meetings in the school-houses, but after the institution of regular religious services, they occupied "Wilson's Hall." The building now used as a school-house on Lowell Street was built by them for a meeting-house, and occupied for several years, until the establishment of a Methodist Church and society at the new city of Lawrence drew off a portion of the members, and so weakened the society in Methuen that it was thought advisable to sell the building. After the sale of the meeting-house no regular religious services were held in Methuen by that denomination until 1853 or 1854, when a reorganization was effected, and religious services were held in the library room in the town hall. As the society increased in numbers, more commodious quarters were needed, and the society held their meetings in the town hall until 1871, when the present meeting-house was built at the junction of Lowell and Pelham Streets. John Barnes, of Lawrence, was the first pastor after the reorganization, and since then the pastors have been as follows:

Rev. Charles Young, from June, 1856, to April, 1857.
Rev. Elijah Mason, from April, 1857, to April, 1858.
Rev. Nathaniel L. Chase, from April, 1858, to May, 1859.
Rev. John L. Trefren, from May, 1859, to April, 1861.
Rev. Charles R. Harding, from April, 1861, to April, 1862.
Rev. Joshua B. Holman, frem April, 1862, to April, 1864.
Rev. William Hewes, from April, 1864, to April, 1865.
Rev. Nelson Green, from April, 1865, to April, 1866.
Rev. Larnard L. Eastman, from April, 1866, to April, 1869.
Rev. James Noyes, from April, 1869, to April, 1872.
Rev. George I. Judkins, from April, 1872 to April, 1875.
Rev. Charles A. Cressy, from April, 1875, to April, 1877.
Rev. S. C. Farnham, from April, 1877, to April, 1879.
Rev. J. W. Walker, from April, 1879, to April, 1881.
Rev. O. S. Baketel, from April, 1881, to April, 1884.
Rev. H. H. French, from April, 1884, to April, 1886.
Rev. Alexander McGregor, from April, 1886.

The church numbers one hundred and thirty-two members.

In 1833, or thereabout, there was an Episcopal Church formed in Methuen. It seems to have had a short existence as an organized body, and little can be learned about it, except that it held its meetings in "Wilson's Hall." In 1878 another Episcopal Church was organized under the name of St. Thomas'

Church, and a church-building erected on Broadway near Lawrence line. The membership is largely composed of residents of Lawrence.

The first rector was Rev. Belno A. Brown, whose energy and zeal contributed much to the success of the new church. The present rector is Rev. Thomas De Learsy.

The Catholics have a large and prosperous branch of that church in Methuen. For many years there have been a large number of persons in the town, holding that faith, who attended church in Lawrence. In January, 1878, a movement was made by leading Catholics in Methuen, and approved by Father Gilmore, then Parish Priest in Lawrence, to establish religious services. The Town Hall was engaged, and has been occupied for that purpose on Sundays ever since. Father Marsden officiated from the beginning until his death nearly two years afterwards.

The pastors who succeeded him have been Father O'Farrell, about one year; Father Riley, about two years; Father O'Connell, about two years; Father Rowan, about two years; and Father Murphy, who is the present pastor. The congregation numbers about four hundred persons.

Methuen has her full share of social and charitable organizations.

Grecian Lodge, F. A. A. M., was formed in Methuen December 14, 1825, and seems to have prospered until the Anti-Masonic excitement overspread the country. In consequence of this it surrendered its charter in 1838. The lodge reorganized in 1847 under the old charter, but within the limits of Lawrence. Methuen Masons associated themselves with the old lodge until 1860, when John Hancock Lodge was constituted. It holds its meetings in "Currier's Building," where it has a cosey well-furnished lodge-room, and numbers about one hundred and fifty members.

Hope Lodge of Odd-Fellows was instituted in 1844, and for a time held its meetings in "Currier's Building." It surrendered its charter to the Grand Lodge in 1855. The lodge was reinstated in 1869, and since that time has flourished. It has pleasant rooms, well-furnished, in Dodge's Building, and numbers about one hundred and forty members.

A branch of the Royal Arcanum was established here in December, 1877. It commenced with a membership of twenty, and now has eighty-five. It holds its meetings in Corliss' Hall, and seems to be a prosperous society—if we can call an Insurance Association of that size *prosperous*, which has had only one death among its members for ten years.

The United Order of the Pilgrim Fathers also have a strong organization in Methuen. It was formed March 15, 1879, and numbers about one hundred members. They hold their meetings in the hall of the Grand Army of the Republic.

Wm. B. Green Post 100, Grand Army of the Republic, was organized in February, 1877, and has seventy-four members. It has one of the finest Grand Army halls in the region, tastefully finished and elegantly furnished. As the Grand Army is composed only of veterans in the late war, the post cannot expect to increase much in numbers, but the zeal and interest of its members seem in nowise to diminish as time goes on.

In 1873 Minerva Lodge, Daughters of Rebecca, I. O. of O. F., was instituted. It numbers about ninety members.

The "Home Circle," numbering about fifty members, was organized in May, 1880. They hold their meetings in the hall of the Grand Army of the Republic.

A branch of the "United Order of Workmen" was organized January 25, 1886, and has thirty-one members. They meet in the hall of the G. A. R.

The Knights of Labor have a strong and well organized association in Methuen, and hold their meetings in Corliss' Hall.

Methuen does not appear to have been behind other towns of like population and wealth in efforts for literary culture and entertainment. About 1819 a society was formed called the "Addison Literary Society," for purposes of mental culture and improvement. We have been informed by Robert S. Rantoul, Esq., of Salem, that two or three years after, principally through the efforts of Timothy Claxton, an English mechanic and machinist in the cotton mill, this society was transformed into what was afterwards known as a lyceum. And there is some reason to suppose that this was the beginning of the "lyceum" in this country. This society flourished nearly or quite twenty years, had a small library and erected a building in which to hold meetings on Broadway Street near Park Street. But after awhile, a sinful desire for dramatic entertainment entered into the minds of some of its members, and the acting of farces and short plays to some extent took the place of the sober discussions of great questions which formed the staple of the earlier exercises. The sober, substantial people of the town looked on more in sorrow than in anger, and refused to countenance such loose and immoral practices. From this time on the society declined and fell, and utter ruin overtook it with the performance of Richard III by some of its members.

The building was sold and removed to the west side of the river and converted into a dwelling-house, now owned and occupied by Hon. James O. Parker. For many years courses of lectures were given almost every winter, and sometimes a debating club was organized, until the easy access to Lawrence made it possible for Methuen people to attend entertainments there almost as easily as at home.

In 1873, and every year thereafter until 1887, the town voted that the proceeds received from dog licenses should be devoted to the purchase of a public library. From this small beginning the number of volumes increased year by year until in 1886 a library

of about twenty-five hundred well selected volumes was collected, which was much used by the people of the town, until the Nevins Memorial Library was opened to the public—January 1, 1887.

There is nothing in Methuen in which the citizens take so much pride, and for which they are so grateful, as the Nevins Memorial. The design of this institution is so well stated in the "Note by the Trustees," published in the catalogue of the library, that we quote it entire:

"The Nevins Memorial was founded in memory of the late David Nevins, who was born in Salem, N. H., Dec. 12, 1809, and was brought to Methuen by his parents at an early age, and passed here the years of his childhood. In his later years he assumed the duties of a citizen, and here at the family homestead he was seized with the illness which, on the 19th of March, 1881, unexpectedly closed his active and useful career.

"Desiring to promote the intellectual and moral well being of the community whose material interests had been so greatly advanced by his business sagacity and energy, it was his expressed intention to found, during his lifetime, an institution similar in scope to that of this Memorial. His sudden decease prevented his execution of this design, but the purpose he had declared was at once taken up by his widow and sons, and the Nevins Memorial Building was erected upon the site chosen and purchased for that use some years before his death. The building was planned and its construction supervised by Mr. Samuel J. F. Thayer, architect, of Boston; ground for its erection being broken March 27, 1883, and the completed structure first opened to the public June 11, 1884. It contains a public hall, ample in size and beautiful in decoration, a library, waiting and reading rooms, well adapted to their respective uses, and suitable rooms for the trustees and librarian. The government of the Memorial is vested in a board of seven trustees, five of whom, Mrs. Eliza S. Nevins and Messrs. David Nevins, Henry C. Nevins, Jacob Emerson and John H. Morse, were incorporated by the Massachusetts legislature of 1885 as permanent members. The two additional members are chosen by the town of Methuen for the term of two years, Dr. George E. Woodbury and James Ingalls being the present elective members.

"When experience shall have shown what amount is needed for the proper maintenance of the Memorial, it is the design of the founders to make an endowment sufficient to render it entirely self-supporting. The library comprises nearly ten thousand volumes of standard works, carefully selected, and covering a wide range of general literature and special topics. To Miss Ames was intrusted its entire organization, including the selection of the books, the details of classification and arrangement, and the preparation of the catalogue.

"We feel confident that the result of her labors will not only facilitate the use of the library for general readers, but will be found of particular advantage to those pursuing a systematic course of reading, or engaged in special studies. The end crowns the work."

The building is of brick, with freestone trimmings, of beautiful architectural design, and built in the most substantial manner. Every foundation wall and pier rests upon the solid rock, and the walls are exceptionally strong and heavy.

The building is finished in oak throughout, and all the ornamentation, within and without, is in the most exquisite taste, No expense was spared to make it a perfect work, according to the designs of the founders. The library, selected and arranged by Miss Harriet H. Ames, is admirably well chosen, and the catalogue, also arranged and prepared by her, is a well-nigh perfect specimen of the art of cataloguing. It is in two volumes, of nearly five hundred pages each, and is an encyclopedia in itself. The following inscription on the front of the building explains the purpose of the founders:

"This Hall and Library
erected and endowed by
Eliza S. Nevins, his widow
and by David and Henry C.
Nevins, his children,
is a memorial of
David Nevins,
Born 1809. Died 1881."

About three and a half acres of land surrounding the building have been set apart and tastefully laid out and ornamented with rare trees and shrubs. And all this beautiful and costly estate is placed in the hands of trustees, and is to be endowed with a fund to make it self-supporting, for the benefit of the inhabitants of Methuen in all coming time. Surely no more noble or lasting tribute could have been paid to the memory of a beloved husband and father, and no benevolence could have been made wider in its scope or more far-reaching in its influence. The intellectual growth and culture resulting from the use of this library and reading-room will only begin to be seen in this generation; the best results can never be known to those who have established this noble beneficence.

The beautiful and well-kept grounds will be an educator of no small influence, and many a home will be made pleasanter and more attractive from the example there perpetually shown.

The interest already manifested by the young people of the town in the use of the library, and the average high character of the books most sought for, must be to the generous founders a most pleasing feature of the opening of the library to the public.

The first newspaper published in Methuen was the *Iris*, which was removed here from Haverhill in 1833. It was supposed to have been printed as a campaign paper in the interest of Caleb Cushing, and was soon discontinued. The next newspaper was the *Methuen Falls Gazette*, which was first issued January 2, 1835, by S. Jameson Varney. It was "neutral in politics" and not published many years.

The *Methuen Transcript and Essex Farmer* was established in 1876 by C. L. Houghton & Co., and edited by Charles E. Trow, who soon after became its proprietor, and continued to edit the paper until it passed into the hands of Fred. A. Lowell, Esq., its present editor and publisher. It is a weekly paper of excellent moral tone, published every Friday, and the only newspaper now published in Methuen.

The *Methuen Enterprise* was established by Daniel A. Rollins March 6, 1880, and published by him till his death, March 25, 1882, and was a bright, readable, spicy sheet.

After his death it was purchased by Sellers Bros., and published by them until September, 1883, when it was merged in the *Lawrence Eagle*.

In 1826 or '27 a small fire-engine, the "Tiger," was bought, one-half the cost being paid by the Methuen Company, and the other half by Major Osgood, John Davis, Thomas Thaxter, George A. Waldo and J. W.

Carleton. Thomas Thaxter was the first foreman. There is no evidence that the town had any concern in its management. This was the only protection against fire until 1846, when the selectmen were authorized to purchase a new fire-engine and hose, and erect a house. This engine (The Spiggot) was manned by an active and efficient company, and did good service till 1870, when the steamer E. A. Straw, was purchased and the Spiggot laid aside.

Methuen now has an excellent fire department; the E. A. Straw Company of seventeen men, and the Mystic Hose Company of ten men, organized in 1878, all well trained and efficient.

In addition to this there are iron pipes laid through the principal streets, and connected with the powerful engines of the Methuen Company, through which water can be forced, over the principal portion of the village, in case of fire.

One of the first things done by the old settlers was to lay out a place to bury their dead. In 1828 the town voted "that there should be a graveyard provided in the town, somewhere near the meeting-house," and chose William Whittier and Joshua Swan to measure and bound out the said graveyard.

Their report to the town describes the lot as follows:—"Beginning with a small pine tree marked with the letter B, thence running southerly to a pine stump marked with B, twenty rods in length; thence to a pine tree marked with a B, northeasterly about six or seven rods in width, and so to another pine tree marked with a B, northwesterly about twenty rods, and so to the bounds first mentioned." This was undoubtedly the north end of the "old burying-ground" on Meeting-House Hill. In 1803 it was enlarged "on the south side," and a hearse was purchased "for the more convenient solemnization of funerals."

In 1772, the Selectmen were ordered to lay out a burying-ground in the west part of the town. They laid out one-fourth of an acre, on land given for the purpose by Richard Whittier. The lot was afterwards enlarged, and, as the ground became occupied, it was again enlarged in 1876.

The burial-ground on Lawrence Street was purchased and laid out about 1830.

These three burial-places comprise those owned by the town, and are now but little used.

Walnut Grove Cemetery was laid out by an association of individuals, in 1853. It is situated on the high land overlooking the village on the west side, and is a place of much natural beauty, which has been greatly increased by tasteful arrangement of the grounds, and beautiful memorials erected to the dead.

Business.—The Town of Methuen was at first almost exclusively an agricultural community. Still there is reason to believe that there was a variety of occupations in the town at an early day. There are traditions of coopers, tanners, hatters, shoemakers, morocco-dressers, and there is mention of "Iron works" on the Spicket, in that part of Methuen now within the limits of Lawrence. Probably there were persons in the town to make almost everything required for use by the inhabitants. There was no village, and these mechanics were scattered over the town, and at first probably found small market for their products outside of the community immediately around them. The farmers were so far from market that their money incomes must have been very small. They depended on the city of Salem as a market for their produce, and their wood and timber was rafted to Newburyport. Hemp and flax perhaps found a market to some extent in Londonderry.

These places were the only outlets of importance for their surplus products, until after the city of Lowell was founded, when everything, except wood, was carried there, and the farmers found the new market greatly for their advantage. Lowell continued to be the principal market for agricultural products, until the building of Lawrence furnished a more convenient and, in some respects, better market than Lowell, and gave the farmers of Methuen as good facilities for the successful cultivation of the land as can be found in any part of New England. Nevertheless, it is a curious fact that the population of Methuen, outside of the village, is no larger now than at the beginning of the Revolutionary War. It is even doubtful if there is a much greater acreage of cleared land now than at that time. It is not to be supposed, however, that there are no more farmers now than then, or that the value of the agriculture of the town is no greater than it was a century ago. The system of farming is entirely changed, and the product of a single acre now frequently has a greater value than the entire crop of a large farm in the olden time.

From the old traditions, we should judge that the manufacture of hats has been carried on in Methuen from a very early date. There are several places pointed out in the east part of the town, as the site of ancient hatters' shops. The work was done entirely by hand, no doubt in a small way at first, and half a dozen men or less could carry on the whole business of a shop. Within the memory of many hatters now living, the manufacture was done entirely in this way. But, with the introduction of machinery, the business has been concentrated into a few factories, by which the production has largely increased. Nearly all the hats now made in the town, are manufactured at the factories of James Ingalls and J. Milton Tenney.

A similar statement would perhaps be true of the shoe business, which for many years has been an important industry in Methuen. In the early days shoemaking was not carried on to so great an extent as hatting. But within the recollection of many now living, there was a shoemaker's shop in every neighborhood and at almost every house.

Shoes were all made by hand, and the workmen took out the stock, all cut, from the shop of their em-

ployer, and carried it home to make up. In those days to be a shoemaker was to know how to make an entire shoe. Farmers' and shoemakers' wives and daughters "bound" shoes, and the board of the shoemakers formed an important part of the income in many families. It would have been hard to find a spot in Methuen, where in the still summer days, the sound of the shoemaker's hammer did not penetrate. But after the war came on, and labor became scarce, machinery was devised to do the work which had been performed by hand, and the business began to centre into factories, like hatting, where, by the use of machinery, the production is largely increased.

In past times it is probable that more persons in Methuen have been dependent on the shoe business for a livelihood, than on the manufacture of hats. At present the shoe factory of Tenney & Co., is the only one in operation in Methuen.

The first store in town was opened by Abial Howe, at a building on Howe Street, nearly opposite the house of Charles L. Tozier. The exact date is unknown, but it is within the recollection of persons now living. Later, Esquire Russ opened another store a little south of the Russ place, but it does not appear that either of them had an extensive business.

It is not known precisely when Spicket Falls was first utilized as a water-power. A deed is in existence from the widow of John Morrill, dated December, 1709, in which she conveys to Robert Swan, for the sum of thirty pounds, one-fourth of a saw-mill and land "on Spicket River Falls, the mill that was built by and belonged to and amongst Robert Swan, John Morrill and Elisha Davis" Without doubt this was the first mill built. Afterwards a grist-mill was built on each side of the river, and as there was not business enough to keep them both running, it was agreed between them that they should run on alternate weeks. This arrangement was kept up until the cotton factory was built. The first cotton factory was built somewhere near 1812, by Stephen Minot, Esq., of Haverhill, on the north side of the river.

This was burned in 1818, and soon after rebuilt. In July, 1821, the whole privilege and lands connected therewith were purchased by the Methuen Company. The old carding or fulling-mill, which had stood on the south side of the Falls, was moved away and converted into a dwelling-house, which now stands on the north side of Pelham Street. In 1826–27 the brick mill was built as it now stands. In 1864 the property came into the possession of David Nevins, Esq., by whom it was largely increased in capacity and value, and to whose enterprise the town is greatly indebted for its prosperity in recent years. He erected a large addition to the brick mill, and introduced the manufacture of jute, which was continued until his death in 1881. The mill has since been kept in operation by his family. The principal manufacture of the Methuen Company has been cotton goods. "Methuen duck" has been for many years a well-known article in the market, and "Methuen ticking" has always been a principal article of manufacture. After the death of Mr. Nevins the jute machinery was removed, and, in addition to duck and ticking, the Methuen Company now manufacture awning material and light and heavy cotton flannels.

In 1824 a saw-mill and grist-mill were built where the Methuen woolen-mill stands. They came into the possession of Samuel A. Harvey, Esq., by whom the business of the respective mills was carried on for some years. In 1864 the Methuen Woolen Company bought out the privilege, and erected a factory where the manufacture of woolen goods has been since carried on. The Arlington Mills have a large factory in Methuen, near the Lawrence line, built in 1881, devoted to the manufacture of fine cotton yarn. The other mills of this enterprising and prosperous corporation are situated a little below on the Spicket, but within the limit of Lawrence.

The extensive chemical works of Lee, Blackburn & Co. are also situated in Methuen. They produce commercial fertilizers and chemicals used in manufacturing processes.

The variety of manufacturing interests in the town, the nearness to Lawrence, and close connection by the horse-railroad, which has been in operation since 1867, have combined in times of business depression to prevent that utter stagnation in business, which has been so severely felt in isolated manufacturing towns having only one important industry.

We have thus presented such of the principal features in the history of Methuen, past and present, as space will permit. Many details have been omitted, and some subjects altogether neglected, which would doubtless be of interest to those acquainted with the town, but the limits assigned to this paper will not admit of an exhaustive history.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

DAVID NEVINS.

David Nevins was born in Salem, New Hampshire, December 12, 1809. His parents were John Nevins and Achsah Swan, who removed to Methuen, the native place of his mother, while David was quite young. He received such education as could be acquired at the public schools, and in 1824, at the age of fourteen was, apprenticed to Hall J. Howe & Co., of Boston, a dry goods commission house, and selling agents of the Methuen Company, then just beginning business. He remained with this firm until he reached the age of twenty-one years, and there laid the foundation of those business habits and methods which contributed so largely to his subsequent success. Immediately after coming of age he entered into partnership with Philip Anthony, of New



Very Truly Yours

Bedford, and carried on a flourishing business, fitting out whaling vessels and merchantmen for long voyages. During several years of his life he kept up his interest in shipping, in connection with his firm, and managed this branch of his extensive business so skillfully as to make it also one of his most profitable ventures. In 1838 he married Miss Eliza S. Coffin, of Nantucket, an estimable lady who still survives him. After remaining in New Bedford eight years, he left, and formed a partnership with George Baty Blake, in the dry-goods importing business, under the firm name of "George B. Blake & Co.," in Boston, and "Nevins & Co.," in New York.

While a member of this firm, he occasionally visited Europe, where he made the purchases for the house, and thus acquired an extensive acquaintance with the manufacturers of England and the Continent. Mr. Blake retired from the firm in 1845, and the New York house continued business under its old name. Soon after, Mr. Nevins re-established the Boston house under the name of "Nevins & Co." In 1846 he first became engaged in manufacturing, when with E. R. Mudge and others, he built the Victory Mills, at Schuylerville, New York, in which he was always a large owner. After the financial crash in 1857, he, with George Howe purchased the Pemberton Mills, in Lawrence, which had been built and proved a financial failure. Under the new management, the mills were run with great success until their fall on the evening of January 10, 1860. Mr. Nevins then purchased the ruins, formed a new company, and rebuilt the mills, getting them ready for operation early in the spring of 1861, and continued to operate them as president of the corporation and selling agent, successfully and continuously until his death. In 1864 he purchased the entire plant of the Methuen Company, which had suspended operations at the beginning of the war. The mill was not put in operation, however, until the succeeding year.

In 1870 the mill was greatly enlarged, and in 1871 he introduced the manufacture of fine and coarse jute fabrics. When he bought the mills, they furnished employment to about one hundred and fifty persons; when he died they required six hundred and fifty operatives, and his enterprise had been instrumental in largely increasing the population and business of the town. About 1868, the Stevens' Linen Works, of Webster, Mass., came into his hands through the failure of the former proprietors, and by his energy and ability it soon became a successful business enterprise, and continued so until his death. About 1874 he purchased the mills of the India Bagging Company, at Salem, Mass., and two years later, the entire plant of the Bengal Bagging Company, of Salem, both of which had been unsuccessful business ventures. He soon made a success of both, and so increased the production of jute fabrics at these and his other mills, that at the time of his death he was the largest manufacturer of this staple in the United States. His manufacture was not confined to one article, but embraced the four great staples of cotton, wool, jute and flax, and with marked success in all. He carried on his business so successfully that he accumulated a large fortune, and directly employed at his death, probably two thousand people, and indirectly afforded employment to many more.

His extraordinary business capacity was shown in nothing more clearly, than in his ability to take up a broken down business enterprise, infuse into it new life, and make it profitable for himself and the community in which it happened to be located. He was an excellent judge of men, and rarely made a mistake in the selection of those whom he was obliged to place in important positions. So systematically and perfectly had he organized his immense business, that at the time of his death all parts continued to run, like a perfect machine, without a jar or break, a splendid tribute to his foresight and ability, and the capacity and faithfulness of those to whom the details of his business were entrusted. Endowed with an iron constitution he was accustomed from early boyhood to his latest days, to severe and long continued labor, and no task was too difficult for him to undertake. His business career was characterized from the first by an indomitable energy, far-sighted policy and an unvarying attention to all the details. Through all the financial revulsions of over half a century his business credit remained untarnished, and an unvarying success rewarded his strict adherence to rules of probity and honor. In addition to his extraordinary mental powers, keen, quick and accurate in solving the intricate questions presented to him, was a rare taste and love for fine literature which amidst all his cares and duties he found time to gratify and cultivate. He was a devoted student of Shakspeare, Milton and the old English classics, and withal was remarkably well informed on all questions of the time. He delighted in nature, and whether driving his horses over his favorite country roads, or interesting himself in the details of his farm, he manifested a fondness for her beauty and works. He took great delight in the management of his farms, always keeping them in a high state of cultivation, and giving personal supervision to the details. He had a strong affection for the home of his boyhood, and always took an active interest in the affairs of the town. He seldom failed to be present at the town-meetings, and participate in the debates over town matters. Within two weeks of his death he attended the annual town-meeting, and as usual took an active interest in the proceedings. Mr. Nevins was of a social, genial nature, generous in his instincts and liked to entertain his friends. In personal appearance he was nearly six feet in stature, had a superb figure and a remarkably handsome, refined and intellectual head and face, and presented a commanding and patrician bearing.

A few days before his death, he took a severe cold,

which gradually grew worse, and developed heart difficulty, causing his death in the midst of his extremely active and useful career, on the 19th of March, 1881.

He left two sons,—David Nevins and Henry C. Nevins, who with their mother have continued his extensive and varied business enterprises.

CHAPTER L.

GEORGETOWN.

BY HENRY M. NELSON.

INTRODUCTORY AND TOPOGRAPHICAL.

THE town of Georgetown, the twenty-seventh in the sisterhood of Essex County, and numbering three hundred and three in the line of date of incorporation of the towns then existing within the limits of the State, has for its natal day April 21, 1838. Two municipalities besides Georgetown were at that session of the General Court granted permission "to be." One, a poor, feeble child of the commonwealth, on the extreme western border, was, just a week before, in exquisite raillery it would seem, ushered into the family as Boston Corner, and then, after a few brief years, with its square mile of territory and seventy-three inhabitants, was quietly or otherwise disposed of to our New York neighbors. The other, known originally as "Erving's Grant," became the town of Erving, in Franklin County. That town has had a moderate growth in a fairly, fertile agricultural district, and to-day continues with but slight increase from one census point to another. Georgetown is located about six miles northerly of the geographical centre of the county, and on the southern border of the Merrimac towns. It has an outline of five sides known as quinquangular, having that number of rather unequal sides, but bounded, however, by four towns only, viz: Boxford, extending along the west and south; Rowley on the southeast; Newbury on the east; Groveland along the entire north; and without any marked change of boundary line, exists to-day as when set off from Rowley, the mother-territory, nearly a half-century ago. Its greatest length is from west-northwest to east-southeast, nearly five and three-fourths miles. This is from the angle north of the house of Mrs. Edward Poor, on West Street, to a point about one-half mile southeast of the new cemetery in Byfield, and its extreme width, three and one-half miles, is from just north of the Thurlow estate, on Thurlow Street, to the noted boundary-mark where Rowley, Boxford and Georgetown lines diverge a large red oak tree of which the charred stump now remains, known from early times as the "Three Sisters." A Sunday raccoon hunt by some of our local sportsmen is understood to tell the story of its destruction, a score or more of years ago.

The seventy-first degree west, Greenwich, at the Boxford boundary is just west of the B. & M. R. R., across which the railroad diverges to the west of the line near the residence of H. P. Chaplin, Esq., crossing Georgetown village very nearly where the First Congregational Church stands and Main Street a few rods northwest of the centre, having the eastern corner of Groveland and the villages of West Newbury and Merrimac on the same line at the north. Directly south is the most westerly section of Lynn, East Saugus, West Peabody, Middleton and Boxford village. Located within the latitude of 42° 42′ to 45′, this town has exactly on the western line the city of Lawrence, the denser part of Methuen, the river side of North Andover, West Boxford, and eastwardly the entire town of Rowley, the Great Neck district of Ipswich, and along the ocean all that part of Plum Island within Rowley and Ipswich. The nearest point to the open Atlantic, from the village centre on the air line, is across Hog Island and just south of the division on Plum Island between Rowley and Ipswich, about ten and one-half miles. The entrance to Ipswich River, the same distance. In favoring conditions of wind and atmosphere, the beating of the surf on Plum Island, after or during a gale, and Ipswich beach before the storm is upon us, is distinctly heard in this town. The nearest point to Merrimac river, is at the boundary between Bradford and Groveland, distance three and one-fifth miles. Direct line to Haverhill bridge railroad station five and one-half miles. Nearest point to State line, a point about midway of Plaistow, N. H., just north of Kenoza Lake, six and three-fourths miles. City of Lawrence eight and one-half miles; and the factory bells are heard frequently and very clearly. The tide-water at Byfield not quite four miles distant.

The topographical features of the town are first, the Baldpate as the most prominent elevation, extending in its foot hills nearly to Central Street on its western side, and includes the entire southwestern section of the town. It attains at its highest altitude about four hundred feet above the sea, with a broad, level tract at its northeast base, terminating sharply at Rock Pond. This hill was known as Baldpate (or including the hill in Boxford near by, known as Shaven-crown) as the Bald hills from early times. The divisional line between Baldpate and its neighbor is distinctly defined, extending over the town limits just beyond the boundary line. This is a well-watered country, Lake Raynor and a small pond at the head of Raynor with a swampy margin, both in Boxford, absorbing all of the several streams, coursing down the southern slope. The eastern water-shed is into the westerly branch of Pen Brook, while the northwestern flowing into Half-Moon Meadow reaches Parker River just

westerly of Scrag Pond. The Uptake district, in the northwest, has its southern side only in Georgetown, quite precipitous and ragged. This district is principally in Groveland. Another hilly section west of Pen Brook and east of Elm Street, separated from the Baldpate district by the plain at South Georgetown called in early times Fair-face, extends from a gentle upland at the northern end of this section, three-fourths of a mile southerly, to an abrupt and peculiar termination, just in the rear of the residence of S. K. Herrick, anciently the home of Capt. Benj. Adams, designated formerly as "Tanner Adams." This is the "Red Shanks" locality, and has been known as such for at least one hundred and sixty years; why it bears this name is difficult to conjecture, although it may have been from the color of the rock formation. East Street traverses a natural notch up the western slope of this district. This tract at its highest point is not far from two hundred feet above the ocean, and has such singular features, that experienced travellers and scientists as Profs. C. H. Hitchcock and J. H. Huntington have noticed and remarked its peculiarities.

Old Californians have claimed, that this, with the moraines and broken country on the opposite side of Fair-face Plains, had striking resemblances to the mineral districts, with which they were familiar, and as evidences are apparent, mineral deposits have been sought for. The water-shed is toward Pen Brook on the one side, and the branch of Pen Brook which flows west of Elm Street, on the other. Still another elevated locality in this town was designated as the Rocky Hills, from the earliest period, showing that familiarity with the peculiar natural features of the place, which results in a characteristic name. Along the base of this rocky front, may have been an Indian trail, travelled by them while on their inland journeys, and from the southern margin of this ragged ledge, our fathers no doubt first saw the country beyond. From this point, just in the rear of the house of E. S. Sherburne, begins an extended tract of upland of varied character, moderate elevation and of peculiar features, unlike any others in town, more especially in the northern section, or in that part known in modern times as Atwood's Hill. Here is a sharp ascent of perhaps one hundred feet, rising quite abruptly from the narrow intervale of Pen Brook below. The country eastwardly is broken and undulating, rising, however, on the south at the Searl place, to a sufficient height to give an attractive prospect. This upland region extends to Tenney Street on the southeast, with a descent on the northeast, to the indentation known as Spruce swamp, encircling a diminutive pond of the same name. The water-shed from this tract, embracing the country from North Street to Marlborough, or Elders Plain, as formerly called, and Tenney Street, is into Pen Brook along the southwest to the northwest side, and on the northern side into Parker River and also into the brook, which, flowing from Spruce Pond by a northerly course, runs into Parker river.

In the east the waters take a new channel, seeking their level at a branch of Muddy Brook, one of the main feeders of Mill River, that prominent feature in the topography and history of the mother town of Rowley. This same brook also receives the waters of the southerly slope of Long Hill, an elevation having an altitude of two hundred and thirty-three feet, the summit of which is in Georgetown, with its easterly side in Rowley. Here again the water fall of the north is into Parker River, through Wheeler's Brook, and one or two of its branches; but further to the eastward into Great Swamp Brook, another of the numerous feeders of Mill River. Between the eastern branch of Wheeler's Brook (a stream which enters Parker River in Newbury, about one-half mile from the town boundary) and Great Swamp Brook, is a considerable part of the Byfield district, of slight elevation, most of the area being a plain of light soil, known on its eastern side as "Rye Plain," from a very early date.

In tracing the brooks and streams of the town, Parker River naturally becomes the central object. It flows along the northern boundary, at some points so near, as if with an eagerness to cross, and at none of its windings, hardly three-fourths of a mile within the town. Its head waters are but a short distance from Great Pond in Andover, fed by a small pond, and a few streams in West Boxford. Entering Georgetown its first course is through Haselltine's meadow, absorbing the brook from Half-moon meadow, then taking Scrag Pond in its course, now a mere quagmire of bushes, it reaches Rock Pond, a fine sheet of pure water of forty or more acres, and hurrying on by the outlet at its northern end, it enters by a northerly curve, at about eighty rods distance, Lake Pentucket, of perhaps one hundred acres, and passes out at its southeastern margin. At this point, in volume, it begins to show its powers as the servant of the coming man. The Englishman who, on his return home, wrote such a glowing account of Parker River, which he claimed to have explored a score or two of miles into the interior, enlarging upon its great width, making it in resource almost a rival to the Thames, drew on his imagination like a true Munchausen or a modern speculator in Western and Florida lands, and no doubt had a satisfactory sale, for a history so marvelous and entertaining.

One-half mile beyond the outlet, a vigorous brook, it receives through Pen Brook, all the surplus of Lake Raynor and the adjacent country, the water-shed of an area of not less than two thousand acres; this grand tribute added, after receiving a slight stream from the north, and the Spruce Pond Brook near the Hilliard tannery, at a mile beyond, it reaches the territory of our northern neighbor.

While at an early period both of our *ponds* were recorded with the names they now bear; the stream be-

tween Scrag Pond and Rock Pond was named "the brook that runneth from Scrag Pond," simply, that part of Parker River which connects Rock and Pentuckets Ponds was "Rock Pond Brook," and "that which issueth out of Pentucket Pond" was, when designated, recorded as Crane Brook.

Aside from the limited Long Hill section, which is a supply through Muddy Brook for Mill River, wholly a Rowley stream, until in the salt marshes northeast of the ox-pasture it unites with the Parker, and together they journey to the sea; the whole rainfall of this town, besides that which falls on two or three thousand acres of land in West Boxford and North Andover with that along Lake Raynor, seeking its natural level, enters Parker River, either before crossing into Groveland or even after reaching Newbury.

These brooks and streams—seven in number, and their branches, which are of themselves permanent brooks—are bounded by meadows of varying width, in places a mere fringe of intervale, but mostly of a width of many rods, of peaty soil, aggregating not less than five hundred acress. This meadow-land of itself was a prize in the eyes of the first settlers. These brooks, bordered by such extensive natural clearings, had a value then that to-day we can scarcely realize. Rowley had none of these fresh meadows at or near the town. The "large accommodations" offered by the General Court of Massachusetts Bay to Mr. Ezekiel Rogers and his company in the winter of 1638 included these *especially* valuable lands in the territory now known as Georgetown. The location was accepted, however, without any definite knowledge of the land of the interior. Neighbors near enough for aid and assistance when needed, with land sufficient for the support of the plantation, was one requisite; another was water communication with Boston. Both were included in the offered grant. All the seaboard in the vicinity of Boston had been already occupied.

Between Newbury, a compact little village of four or five years' growth, not far from the entrance to the river Parker, and Ipswich, already a plant of strength and vigor, having watchful friends at court, was a nearly level tract of three or more miles in width, and at Boston was probably not under-stood to be included in the privileges of the already-established towns. So near the doors of both towns this pleasant locality became familiar to those who journeyed from Ipswich to Newbury to and fro; and as the limits of the two towns may not have been very carefully drawn, a few settlers, more adventurous or selfish than their associates, had opened up their little clearings, and it is probable had settled here.

The winter of 1638 and 1639, the first winter of Mr. Rogers and his twenty families in New England, was spent in Salem, and was one of suspense and uncertainty. The original company numbered perhaps one hundred persons. One hundred and twenty passengers was the limit at this time by colonial law for a vessel of two hundred tons burden.

Mr. Rogers, according to Johnson, had given Messrs. Eaton and Davenport encouragement, and perhaps a partial promise, that he would join them in the Connecticut colony, and some of the company having relatives there, as Matthew Boyes it is known had, a party were sent around to investigate and report.

A disturbed feeling having for some time existed in the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, at the widespread movement toward emigration to Connecticut, by planters already settled in Watertown and other places, the officials were led to make strenuous efforts to retain the new arrivals, and special inducements were offered.

Mr. Rogers was well known to the Puritans, both here and in England, as a man of marked ability and high moral worth, and to secure him and his company, some of whom were men of education and perhaps of fortune, and all of the best material for the building of the State, was a work which promised good returns. Those who were already settled in these infant colonies were anxiously looking for emigrants. Men and women of any rank or station were welcomed, who, to maintain a pure faith, were ready to forswear all that England, with the ease and pomp of the State Church, could offer. More than once had the General Court ordered public thanksgiving for the "arrival of persons of special use and quality," and for "safe arrival of ships and many passengers." No mere adventurers were wanted; no schismatics; these were returned from whence they came, and shipmasters warned, under penalty, not to repeat the offence.

Some rivalry is manifest toward Connecticut, probably of a fairly friendly nature; but as regards Mr. Rogers and his company with that colony, the inducements to remain were presented so forcibly that on the return of the party sent for investigation, a definite settlement was made, and the location for the plantation fixed. Another moving cause for the intense pressure used to keep them within the limits of the Massachusetts Colony, was the knowledge that this little company were but the pioneers of a grand exodus of "many persons of quality in England, who depended on Mr. Rogers to choose a fit place for them." The privations of the earlier settlers had in a degree passed; the country in the vicinity of Boston, as has been said, was occupied and gradually becoming cleared; roads opened from one town to another; the foundations of a college laid, and a permanent occupation of the country assured. Mr. Rogers had confidential relations with families of influence in England; he came here as their trusted agent, and, in consequence, these especially "large accommodations" were granted him, with the fond anticipation that at an early day many others would follow. These families of wealth and quality, whoever they were, will perhaps never be known by us, and their

names are now locked in oblivion. Late researches in England by Mr. Waters, of Salem, however, show intimate personal relations between the family of Oliver Cromwell and the immediate family of Mr. Rogers, and possibly they might be traced from this distinguished point.

The conflict between the Cavalier and Roundhead soon raged madly, and thoughts of a voluntary exile to New England, for peace of conscience, gave place to hymns of triumph at home. The rise of the Commons,—the people; a change of a kind such as the world never saw before; a king at the tribunal of the people. Like the image seen in vision by the Eastern monarch, unfortunately part was of iron and part clay; yet truly a mighty work was accomplished, which the world will never forget. All this stopped emigration, as in a moment; and "Mr. Ezekiel Rogers' plantation" is believed to have closed the period by which emigrants came here for settlement, as an organized body, before leaving England.

In the spring of 1639, Mr. Rogers and the new planters, their pinnace laden with the household beginnings of a new republic, anchored at the place designated for the plantation. Eight hundred pounds were expended to buy the claims of the few who had preceded them. Thomas Nelson, the deputy, surveyor, road locator, and the agent of the Colonial government in settling boundary lines, gave of his wealth to establish the plantation, and in his will, nine years later, dated in England, where he was at the time, perhaps there to receive the estate of an elder brother, killed at Marston Moor, refers to "goodman Seatchwell" (Shatswell of Ipswich), to whom he "payd eleven pounds & seventeen pounds" for "his fferme," probably one of the settlers who preceded them.

Clearing land, seed-sowing, the erection of a meeting-house, and also several common houses for shelter, occupied their first year. These common houses were the homes of the two hundred or more settlers for perhaps three years. The lands were held and cultivated in commonalty, for at least that length of time.

Now begins the struggle for the means of living. The dependence on the yearly harvest for existence, until the crops of the next season were gathered, is an impressive feature, both of colonial and town legislation. Rarely any surplus carried over, the pressing need of husbanding all their resources, is seen from the beginning of the history of this plantation; and this was but a type of every other.

The General Court passed a law requiring the inspection of corn, to see that none of a quality fit for human food is heedlessly fed to animals. Here at the outset, with a wise foresight, a community-system was established, where careful watch-care could be had, the true spirit of socialism made imperative, and all waste and selfishness prevented.

Here was a true paternal government, and the result was a most symmetrical system. Streets were located and lot-laying, with a care and exactness such as but few, if any, other town in New England had. Without change or alteration, those streets exist to-day, and the same careful system of lot-laying was inherited by the descendants of the first settlers, as will be seen in all town action on the division of lots, down to a late day.

In the fall of 1639, the plantation was incorporated, and "Mr. Ezechi: Rogers' plantation shalbee called Rowley." No controversy or war of words, as in this day; but positive, immediate action. Having a limited harvest that year, the General Court granted exemption from taxation in 1640, because, says the statute, "of their hindrance in planting."

When they forsook their common houses, it was to occupy humble family homes, but located so near each other that close communal relations must for some time have continued to prevail.

With roofs covered with thatch, there was at all times great danger from fire, and one early town ordinance called for ladders of a certain length for every house. But it is with the backwoods with which we have to do.

When the first explorations of their territory in the interior took place, it is of course impossible to tell. Naturally, on arrival, curiosity would be awakened to know what the country eight miles from the settlement had that was of immediate value to them. It was theirs, of that they were assured by a satisfactory title, a grant from the Government of Englishmen. No sagamore had as yet asserted his claim, as was done at a later day. The Indians who were here were evidently a dwindling race, and so little regarded that probably because of the annoyance, at about this time, the sagamore of Agawam was forbidden by Colonial law, to enter a white man's house. Curiosity would, of course, be excited by a tramp through the dense woodgrowth up the hill now called Prospect, and from the summit of that hill, on seeing the delightful and unlooked-for view, one would then very naturally give to the hill the name it has always borne, and then looking westward, see our Georgetown hill, with its top cleared and barren of trees. Conspicuous as it must have been, encircled everywhere by forest, how naturally would the word Baldpate spring to the lips, and ever after this hill bear this peculiar name.

Besides these first attempts to get a clue to the secrets of the wilderness came eager questionings of their Newbury and Ipswich neighbors. Dummer and Spencer, of Newbury, had gone up Parker River to the falls in 1635, and had the right granted to erect a mill. Two years later the attention at Boston was turned toward "Shaweshin, to see whether or not it be a fitt place for a plantacon." This settlement was not granted, however, until 1641, and then to the town of Cambridge on certain conditions.

As soon as settlements were contemplated, there

may have been those who were bound to know for themselves whether "Shaweshin was fitt for habitation," and Newbury men crossed what is now Georgetown. The opening of roads is always an important work in new countries. Most of the towns were summoned by the General Court, once and again, for their delinquencies in the neglect of the highways.

The first roads for Rowley to attend to were with Newbury and Ipswich, and the law required highways to be opened, of six, eight and ten rods width, to avoid marsh and miry spots. Early in the year 1640 the need of accurate knowledge of their grant led to a sufficiently careful survey of the western boundary, now the Bradford and Boxford lines, to show that the eight miles in a direct line from the meeting-house in Rowley would not reach for two or more miles, the boundary line between Rowley and Cochitawick, that Mr. Rogers claimed he and his plantation were entitled to. Mr. Rogers pressed his claim for this land "upon Merrimack, near Cochitawick," with such tenacity, that, after some hesitation, his wishes were granted, and the first step was taken for a corrected line between Rowley and Andover, that fixed the boundary quite eleven miles from the centre of the village at Rowley. This action of the court was at the October session of that year.

The survey and running of the eight mile direct line from the meeting-house towards the western bounds, if carefully done, must have led directly across the central part of the tract now Georgetown.

The experience of Thomas Nelson would probably designate him for the work, and yet inaccurate, perhaps, at the best, for complaints of defects in the running of town lines were constantly coming before the General Court. These defects are explained when we consider that the lines ran through forest and bog rough and untraveled. Compensation for a prior grant of five hundred and fifty acres to Governor Endicott, and found to be within the limits of the grant to Mr. Rogers, was one cause of a change of boundary, beyond the eight mile limit into the interior. Besides, the original grant of May 13, 1640, declared the bounds in the other direction to be a "cross-line diameter from Ipswich Ryver to Merrimack Ryver."

Had this been adhered to it would have included most of the New Meadows, now Topsfield, and perhaps also the country of the Wills-hill men, in Middleton, a district which seems to have been conceded to these settlements without controversy, at an early date. Perhaps, with Endicott, they could also lay claim to prior grants. The concession of all this tract, bordering on the "Ipswich Ryver," when the boundaries of the grant were so definitely and clearly stated, was also compensated for by this extension westward.

Most of the grants of that day, private or corporate, were loosely drawn, with but a vague and indefinite idea of the geographical situation of the locality, and disputes in consequence were rife for a long time afterward. Salem had as its grant all the country, from Ipswich River to the sea on one side, Rowley, all between this river and Merrimack on the other. In 1639 these were adjoining towns by Colonial action, but how few in Essex County realize it to-day. This Rowley territory, thus parting Ipswich and Newbury, turned both at the right and left, a few miles from the sea, effectually closing to both towns any extension of growth in the interior, and doubled in area both of those towns combined. At the rapidity with which emigrants had been flocking here for years, and towns becoming incorporated at that time, such "large accommodations" were unquestionably given to the Rowley grantees, to be held in reserve for the large number who were expected to follow Mr. Rogers.

CHAPTER LI.

GEORGETOWN—(*Continued*).

EARLIEST LAND-GRANTS AND PIONEER SETTLEMENTS.

TWELVE years after the readjustment of the western boundary, Francis Parrot, the town clerk of Rowley, entered in the book of records, under date 1652, this town action, viz.: Thomas Mighill has granted "twenty-three Akers at the place called the pen, where young cattell were formerly kept." The land was said to adjoin Mr. Humphrey Rainers' land, perhaps not attached, but near by. This was stated, evidently to make the record clear. Also laid out "Fifteen Akers meadow commonly called Spruce meadow, and formerly in the possession of John Brocklebank."

The above is the first record on the town books, having a reference to the territory, now the town of Georgetown.

Thomas Mighill, who began at this early day, to show his intentions of making a permanent settlement in this part of the town, was very prominent in the affairs of the church and the town of Rowley from the beginning, and was elected deacon in December, 1639. He was a man of considerable wealth for the time, had many household furnishings brought from England, of which one heavy, leather-seated chair, now owned by some of his descendants in the family of the writer, is said to be a part. Mr. Mighill in everything pertaining to the interests of the town, was active and useful. His death was untimely, occurring March 14, 1664–65. Had he lived, he would probably have made an extensive clearing here at an early day. His will in the possession of Chas. P. Mighill, of Rowley, is an interesting document. Mr. C. P. Mighill and brother, who are direct descendants through Stephen, the youngest son of Thomas (as are all of the name or lineage in this

vicinity), own and reside, upon the original lot on Wethersfield Street in Rowley, laid out to Mighill in 1643, nearly two hundred and fifty years ago. Another fact worthy of mention, is, that this lot in Georgetown at the pen land, has been in the family of the present owner, Mr. Humphrey Nelson (a lineal descendant through a great-granddaughter of Stephen), for many years. Not long after it was laid out, a part of it was fenced, and styled a field. This was done either by the first grantee, or Thomas, the eldest son. In this record, is the first mention of the herding of the young cattle on this common land. Pen Brook constantly referred to, in the land conveyances and allotments of the first hundred years, was the westerly bounds of one piece of meadow, laid out at this time. This is near Union Cemetery. The pasturing of the young stock in these upper commons, began, no doubt, some years before, and had become the established practice. Herdsmen were sent to give the care necessary for the protection of the cattle and sheep. A little later, in a descriptive record, is this, 1661: "Adjoyning vnto the s^{d} Land at the end where the pen house stood."

There was, it is probable, good pasturage here, for while the country generally was heavily timbered, no doubt, much of the area was free from shrub growth and underbrush, the result of the fires set by the Indians, when grasses, of course, would start up abundantly. This firing of the weeds and valueless growth continued later on.

In the list of the charges for the town of Rowley for the year 1666, is this: "Left. Samuel Brocklebank for burning ye young cattle walk, 5 shillings." This is the first record for town labor in Georgetown.

The pen house had been moved further up. The land spoken of was sold in 1661, "to John Brocklebank, by the men appointed to sell Land, to pay the Legacy to Ipswich Rogers," the record rather curtly says. One of the conditions of Mr. Ezekiel Roger's will was, that the church and town of Rowley, on the receipt of the bulk of his property, were to pay eight-score pounds in country pay, to his nephew, Ezekiel Rogers, of Ipswich, two years after the testator's death. Mr. Rogers died January 23, 1661, and this land was by order of the town sold soon after. This same John Brocklebank, was the youngest son of Jane, a widow, who with her two sons, Samuel the eldest being a boy of eight, were among the original Rowley company.

The Spruce meadow may have been at what is now known as such, south of the Hilliard place on North Street, and yet it seems a question whether at that early period, any land in that locality had been entered.

One fact seems apparent, that the earliest movement for a settlement of Georgetown, was east of Pen Brook, on Mr. Humphrey Nelson's farm, and in that locality on East Main Street. The upland along the Rocky hills, with the meadows southerly, was the first to be laid out. That extensive tract of meadow along Pen Brook to its source, had been explored at as early a date as cattle had been herded, and at some time prior to 1652, a grant was made to Elder Humphrey Rainer, of at least, most of the land from Lake Raynor for some distance down, and possibly nearly to the pen-land. All the deeds given in what is now South Georgetown as late as seventy-five years afterwards, which have as a boundary these meadows along Pen Brook, describe these pieces of meadow as the "Elder's," or "Elder Rainer" meadow. It can be safely said that this worthy member of a family, noted in the early church annals of New England, was the first landholder in South Georgetown, and probably in the town.

In describing the land laid out to Mighill, it seems to have been well understood at the time where the Rainer meadows were. It was comparatively easy to secure pasturage and protection for the farmer's herds through the summer, but with so little uncleared land and the entire human food-supply of all dependent on the harvest from the land they had slowly and laboriously cleared, the hay from the Rainer meadows was carefully secured and carted to Rowley. The improvement of their highways began to be necessary; in 1661, says the record, of a ten acre lot of land laid out to John Brocklebank; that, "The Town hath secured a sufficient and convenient highway for driving cattle and carts, as they may have occasion to make use of it." The value of the hay from the salt marshes, tradition says was not understood by the Rowley people, until a bull lost from the settlement in the autumn was caught in the spring after a winter of grazing on the marsh grasses in such fine condition, that ever after, these lands were regarded as their most valuable treasure.

The land, both upland and meadow, now owned by S. K. Herrick, has by the elderly people until lately, been called the Rainer land or meadow. The pond in Boxford, at the foot of Baldpate Hill, had the name of "Elders" in the documents of the early period, but later as "Elders, or Baldpate," finally as "Baldpate." It seems, however, like nothing more than justice to an honored name in the early history of Rowley, one who served as deputy in 1649, and especially in the fact, that he was the original owner of the lands bordering this brook, so noted a locality in the early history of Georgetown, to perpetuate his name here by giving this pond the permanent name of Lake Raynor. The earliest name the plain now known as "Marlborough" had, was "Elders Plain," named for this same Humphrey Rainer. It disappears as a Rowley name early in the eighteenth century, and except to a few who make local history a study, has become unknown and as though it had never existed there. A very sad and pathetic story is revealed, where Jachin Rayner, a nephew, about the year 1700, petitions for right to convey land in the interest of a son, who as a confirmed invalid, needed support. This land thus

deeded was in the middle commons, at some point west of Muddy Brook. Jachin was a Rowley tanner and figures prominently for a time. Rev. John Rayner, a brother of Elder Humphrey, educated at Cambridge, England, was the second minister of Plymouth, Mass., dying in Dover, N. H. He and Matthew Boyes, of Rowley, married sisters. They were ladies from a family of distinction in England.

From a grant of land to Samuel Brocklebank of seventy-five acres in 1661, there were fifty, the record states, which was purchased of William Hobson's widow, who before marriage was Anne Rainer, a daughter of Humphrey Rainer; the balance was his own lot and land previously belonging to Matthew Boyes, who was as we have seen also connected with the Rainor family.

These records show the influence of the Rainers in the earliest times, and the intimate connection, which the family in its various branches had with the earliest history of Georgetown.

This piece of upland so early secured by Samuel Brocklebank, was situated easterly of Elm Street, extending southerly nearly to South Georgetown, the locality known at a later day as Fairface plain. The record says this land was bounded on the north by a highway, where cattle used to go over the brook to the pen land, laid out to Thomas Mighill; the westerly side of the tract adjoined a highway leading to Andover; Pen Brook along the east, and extending unto Mr. H. Rainer's land. This Andover road was unquestionably at that time the way for Newbury and Rowley settlers to visit the Rowley Village (now Boxford) people, also the settlement on the Shawshin, then Andover.

Several families had already settled in Boxford; a road by order of the General Court, had been opened from Ipswich to Andover several years before, and to connect with that along Elm Street, the earliest road opened through what is now part of Georgetown.

East Main Street, from Marlborough Village to Elm Street, was as at present. There was some change at Elm Street, the record referring to a highway now in use, and where it is to run, but probably essentially the same. Leaving Elm, this old way passed along Brook Street, crossing Central, into Chaplin's Court, and over Fairface plain to Mrs. W. M. Shutes' on Nelson Street (known years after as Fairface highway), and along Nelson Street, to the residence of Messrs. Patton and Metcalf, in Boxford. About thirty years later Thomas Palmer, had land set off to him, described as extending on one side, from "Elders pond to ye old high way from Andover to Newbury, on ye south side of ye bald hills; which was a continuation of this ancient road, and crossed the Patton and Metcalf farm to connect with the Ipswich and Andover road. This seventy-five acres of land of Samuel Brocklebank's, also included the present homestead of Melvin G. Spofford, upon which a house was built soon after.

The present mansion-like dwelling-house of Mr. Spofford is, in part, at least, unquestionably very ancient, and tradition has it that some portion of the original house, probably the westerly front, is included in this.

In Humphrey Rainer, Thomas Mighill, Samuel and John Brocklebank, we have the pioneers who opened for settlement, the town of Georgetown. At about this time, the country west of the Pen Brook, including all that territory which in 1685 was incorporated as Boxford, was known as "Village lands." Not long before, in 1649, measures had been taken for a settlement, in that part of Rowley situated on the Merrimac River. These lands became at once known as "Merrimac lands," and the division made between what was later known as the Village lands. The settlement had the name of "Rowley Village on the Merrimac," for a time, but in 1675, was incorporated as Bradford.

Boxford for some time had been known simply as Rowley Village, and so continued, even after it had received its corporate name. Zaccheus Gould, of Topsfield, the ancestor of all the Goulds originating in this locality, comes prominently before us in connection with Georgetown's early history, at a period soon after 1650. From the vast land grants which he held, it would seem as if he had something of the spirit of a land speculator and grabber. By some unknown parties he had been employed as an agent to purchase lands, and an extensive tract of not less than three thousand acres, including nearly all of Georgetown west of Pen Brook, was for some consideration, secured to him. Circumstances preventing its disposal, to the parties for whom it was intended, it was sold to Joseph Jewett, of Rowley, as a deed on record says, "for eighty od pounds." It further says, that this was "one sixt part of village land belonging to Rowley, which the sayd Gould bought of Jewett." Carelessly estimated, this evidently was the tract previously named. Gould adds to the above, "As alsoe, the one half of village land, which I, the sayd Zaccheus Gould, bought of M^{r}. Ezekiel Rogers & Matthew Boyes." This was dated July 2, 1661, and Mr. Jewett had died February 26th of the same year. Jewett had doubtless been the representative of the town of Rowley, in confirming the grants of Village lands.

There are several deeds on record, of these original grants to Peabody, Bigsbye, Stiles, Gould, Dorman and others, bearing dates from May to July, 1661, and in each the grantors are Philip Nelson and others, as the executors of Mr. Jewett, who probably died suddenly, as the wording of each is, "he having departed this life before a legal assurance was made."

It was necessary that this claim, which Gould had upon what is now Georgetown, should be closed, and on the same date, July 2, 1661, we find Jewett's executors, doubtless by authority of the town of Rowley, selling Gould two-sixths parts village land in Box-

ford; the previous day Stiles and Reddington having had their lands conveyed. From the action of the town of Rowley December 20, 1658, more than two years before, it would seem that Jewett had a claim upon this three thousand acre tract at that time. As a persuasive to yield his claim,

"It was Agreed and Voated at a general and Leagull towne meeting, that Mr. Joseph Jewit, Should have a thousand Acres of Land in ye North, beyond ye Haseltines part of ye thousand, in exchange of Three thousand Acres of Land, which is to be laid out as conveniently as can bee, for ye Town of Rowley, in ye village land about ye bald hills, and he to have forty Acres of Medow, as conveniently as can bee with yo towns land."

This town action towards liquidating Mr. Jewett's claim (however his claim was founded), began to look like an attempt for a settlement. It is doubtful whether this proposition was accepted at the time; if it was, then the action of Gould with the executors, the July after Jewett's death, was in the form of an acquittance to any claim he had on this famous tract, so tossed about in shuttlecock fashion. Perhaps, in those early days, having hopes that a more speedy settlement of the wilderness would follow, special privileges were granted to such as Jewett and Gould, that they might be encouraged to stimulate and hasten emigration. In the villages along the sea, there was doubtless a fixed timorousness, from fear of prowling Indians; and settlers in the interior gave a sense of protection, and were, to a certain extent, a safeguard.

The colonial laws forbidding persons journeying alone, receiving Indians into the houses of the colonists, and similar enactments, whether from a troubled conscience, because of known wrong in dealing with the Indian, or whatever the cause, all show a sense of lurking danger. To the herdsmen in their loneliness at the pen-house on the rocky hills, there must have been fear in a special manner continually with them, not probably from their aboriginal neighbors of Pentucket and Agawam, but from the unsubjected tribes of the wilderness beyond. Wild and ferocious beasts, and possibly savage men, made every sense alert, and their life here certainly was no holiday task. The nights may not have altogether been spent here, but the days most assuredly were.

While harvesting the hay on the Rainer meadow one can imagine their watchfulness and their thoughts of probable danger. The frequent stories of frontier life are of death from the Indian arrow or bullet, while at work haying in the meadows. When the men of every household were ordered to have their muskets with them while in the meeting-house on the Lord's or lecture days, there was fear of a subtle enemy, and how numerous and powerful they had no possible means of knowing. We, to-day, know that they were but comparatively few in number, but their methods of warfare were such that imagination vastly magnified the numbers of the foe and greatly increased the timorousness and alarm. Besides, in spite of continual colonial restriction against supplying the Indians with arms or ammunition, there were from the first, those who withdrawing from the settlements, defied the law, and living apart from the white man, fraternized with the Indian to the Englishman's fear and often injury.

At the time the young cattle of the Rowley planters were first herded above Pen Brook, on this tract, which was sometimes called the "Upper Commons," only the few families which were then located at each of the plantations, Pentucket and Cochicowick (Haverhill and Andover), shut off the frontier. All beyond, both north and west, was an untraversed wilderness.

At a later day both of these towns were raided, once and again by Indians, bringing dismay and death to many a peaceful home. The locality, now Georgetown, was doubtless a favorite Indian fishing ground, often visited. Many of the rude Indian household utensils have been turned up by the plough near the brooks and Parker River, and also at a distance from them; by the shores of the ponds; and in Byfield, near Warren Street, quite a large storehouse of cutting instruments and stone points has been uncovered. Perhaps more prolific fields for these coveted relics of a buried past than any other are Parker River, in the vicinity of the woolen-mill, and the southeasterly slope of the foot-hills of Baldpate.

On the warm sunny hillsides near Baldpate, which are sheltered from the driving blasts of winter, the race who got the start and came before us had their frequent camping-ground.

The Indian became extinct in this immediate locality about a century ago; the last representatives were Papahana, a man who died in Groveland, and another who died at Captain George Jewett's, in Rowley.

When our fathers first saw them they were shrunken from their former condition; perhaps they would have rallied and evolved a partial civilization like their New York neighbors, but it was not to be. Another race doubtless preceded them, leaving only faint traces behind.

Professor Putnam, the anthropologist and archæologist, if we mistake not, places the period of the stone age, to which the triangular stones found buried deeply in the gravel belong, as pre-historic and the work of a prior race; the labor of man just beginning to realize his position, his relations to the animal world around him, and his undeveloped power. These peculiar stones are occasionally found here, and of various sizes, but having similar outlines. A furore for collecting Indian curios was awakened here some years ago, and intensified by the *Georgetown Advocate*, through its junior editor, H. N. Harriman, Esq., who is himself an ardent investigator and enthusiastic collector.

Returning to the early land grants, it is recorded that March 23, 1651, Anthony Crosbie had seven hundred acres laid out; the deed says near Elder's Pond, whether in Georgetown or Boxford it is impossible to

say; but in 1672 he had seventy acres laid out in Georgetown, located somewhere between North Street and Marlborough, and recorded in the Rowley book as "Crosbie's farm," adjoining land of Francis Parrot, also Reedy Meadow, and Deacon Thomas Mighill's land. A part of this land was in the right of Philip Nelson.

This Crosbie was the first physician in Rowley and probably a son of Cushins Crosbie, one of the first settlers of Rowley. Perhaps his death or the Indian war of three or four years later prevented his settlement, as there is no record of any occupancy.

In 1661, besides the Brocklebank grant east of Pen Brook, was an allotment of land, near and on the west side of Pentucket Pond, to Mary, the widow of Mr. Ezekiel Rogers. This lot was bounded on the east end by a highway leading to Andover, and as this highway was probably the Andover Street of to-day, the lot must have reached the town centre, and included the land between the two ponds, eastward to the centre. Those who settled on Mrs. Rogers' land, more than half a century afterward, had farms at several points on this very tract, from above Pond Street westward to beyond Main Street. On the south and west it was bounded by common land. This was a grant in the interest of Thomas Barker (the first husband of Mrs. Rogers), who died in 1650. It was to make his lot proportionable to the lower lots, and a large lot at this distance from the town would not exceed in value a small area there.

January 22, 1663–64, another tract, containing three hundred and seventy acres, was laid out to Mrs. Rogers, also in the right of Thomas Barker. This was situated on the north side of the pond known as Pentucket, and also on the north side of the brook running in and out of the pond, westerly to the great rock, and extending easterly to a marked tree, to the brook which "issueth out of the pond runneth into the Crane meadow, so-called."

At this early day these meadows and Parker River were known as Crane Meadows and Crane Brook. Probably the lot previously laid out extended to the south side of Rock Pond Brook.

In 1666 or 1667 the "Three thousand acre" tract, made public domain once more by the clearance of all private claims, was laid out to the town of Rowley.

John Pickard and Ezekiel Northend, appointed by Rowley for this important work, also laid out, as carefully as their appliances and the wildness of the territory traversed permitted, the balance of the Village land to citizens of Rowley and Rowley Village. This covered all of the town of Boxford, excepting the land already settled upon. The system of divisional grants to individuals was based on the size of the house lots as laid out to the first settlers at Rowley. In this village land allotment some of the larger grants covered land previously laid out to individuals, as, for instance, Mr. Philip Nelson's two thousand acres included the meadow previously granted to Joseph Jewett, which had been allowed in extinguishment of his claim on the Georgetown three thousand acres.

As Mr. Nelson's first wife was of the Jewett family, perhaps no difficulty arose. Gould received a large tract in one corner of the territory, and any special claims he may have had were, no doubt, satisfactorily cancelled. The action by the executors of Joseph Jewett in 1661, as shown by the deeds on record at Salem, were of at least one-half of the entire territory, confirmed to Francis Peabody, Thomas Dorman, Robert Stiles, Joseph Bigsbye, Abraham Reddington, William Foster and Zaccheus Gould. That these deeds were recognized as having at least a partial validity can be seen by examining the list of grantees at this final division, for each of these parties are recorded as having a large grant. These parties had probably been buying for years the rights that families at Rowley had in the village lands; so that when the time came to grant private ownership of what the Henry Georges of to-day contend should never be held as private property—the land, all there was for them to do was to show that they had purchased these rights, and these large allotments were secured. There is no other way to account for the striking disparity in these divisions.

One thing to-day is beginning to be recognized, that as from the land all existence is principally maintained, monopoly in land should be condemned, and no man or family, even in the infancy of a settlement, be permitted to mark off or fence in more than may be cultivated or cared for. A part of a lot south of Lake Raynor, laid out by Ezekiel Northend for himself at that time, was through one of his female descendants, owned by the family for about two hundred years.

At about this period the permanent settlement of Georgetown begins. This westerly part of the town, from the centre across Baldpate Hill, to where, twenty years afterwards, the boundary line between Rowley and Boxford was run, was at last unincumbered, and the Rowley people were discussing earnestly the wisest course to take in the encouragement of a settlement.

Northend and Pickard having completed their work, probably in 1667 (a thankless task no doubt, as for many years afterward it was difficult to get men to serve as lot-layers, many positively refusing to serve), a meeting of the town of Rowley was therefore accordingly called for February 23d, 1667–68. At this date "It was agreed and voted that there should be a small farme laide out in the three thousand Acres of Land that was exchanged for the land at the necke, and the rent of the saide farme it is agreed that it shall be for ever for the use of the ministry or the towne's use." Directly beneath this record, apparently written by another hand, and at a later date, is found this,—"Samuell Brocklebank that no line convenient will give Leas on." The principal busi-

ness of the meeting seems to have been matters pertaining to this "farme," as the next record is "Chose John Pickard, John pearson and Ezekiel Northend, to bee Added to the select men, to make a bargon with any who should appeare to take the saide ferme, provided that they Let not above thirty Acres of meddow, or halfe of the meddow belonging to the thre Thousand Acres, provided allso that they put the towne to no charges, provided allso that they lay not out above thre-score Akres of upland to the saide farme." The same parties were made the committee, to lay out the "saide farme," which was done that year.

A partial "bargon" had been made with John Spafford, an original settler in the town of Rowley. He was a Yorkshireman, whose family was one of the twenty who were among the first comers, having a house-lot on Bradford, near Wethersfield Street, and not long before his acceptance of the agreement with the town, had leased and occupied the farm of Samuel Bellingham, of Boston, styled gent; and was living on it at the time of its sale to Joseph Jewett, clothier. This farm in Rowley was a legacy to Samuel from William Bellingham, and probably included the house-lot on Holmes Street, adjoining Mr. Thomas Nelson's. March 17th, 1668, is this record: "Seventeenth day of March, in the year one Thousand six hundred sixty-eight, it was agreed and voated, that John Spofforth, if he would goe to the farme that was granted to be laide out in the thre Thousand Akers, that he should have the benefit of penninge the cattell, for the terme of seven years, he keepinge the herde of the younger cattel as carefully and as cheape, as any other should doe."

So carefully had the surveyors supposed they had examined and classified the land, that the thirty acres of meadow was said to be one-half of this class of land, found within the three thousand acre tract. Their meadow land was our bog of to-day, and thirty years ago was free from trees and bushy growth, but much that was at that time familiar to us as cleared meadow, was in the early days, covered no doubt, in patches at least, with a dense growth of maple, birch, pine and other trees. "March 19, 1668–69, John Spofforth took a Lease of this farm, laid out for the vse of the ministry," in a specific document drawn up at considerable length, and signed in the presence of witnesses by "John Spofard, his mark."

"Twenty and one yeares it extended, without rent or rates for the first five, exceptings three hundred of good white oake two inch planke, some time within two yeares, to be delivered at the meeting-house," the secular as well as the religious centre of the town, and "after five years, ten pounds yearly for the saide land and meddow, and thirty shillings for all stocke and land that he shall improve yearly," not in money payment, either, but with a tenderness which might sometimes be extended to the farmer in our day, its value in farm commodities, as "one-halfe in English corne at price currant, the other half in fat cattell or leane; if he pay in leane cattell, they are not to exceede above seven yeares of age, or in Indian corne if he pleas," however, "what he doth pay in fat cattell, he is to pay at or before Mihilmas" (September 29th). He was restricted to the use of "timber for buildings and other neceessaryes for farminge," and "no saile of timber but to the town of Rowley, and, no hay exceeding above five loads yearly." "All dunge to be laide upon the saide land, none to be given or soulde." "And what buildings he shall erect, he is to uphold them, and leave them tenantable at the end of his lease, and allsoe all fences that he shall make, and he is to pay yearly cuntry rates, at the last yeare to live in the house untill May day, that so he may spend his fother upon the saide land." The mark of Spofard thus attached is the letter *o*, horizontally placed.

In locating the land in the preamble to the lease, it is said to be "at the pen where the young cattell of the towne have beene herded this last yeare, called by the name of gravelle plain."

The cabin or log-hut, known as the pen-house, was near by, and the responsible position of the herdsmen was now to pass into the hands of the Spofford family. John Spofford and his sons may have previously been entrusted with the serious duties of seeing that no harm befell this valuable property of the Rowley farmers seven miles away. Mr. Spofford had charges against Rowley the year before, of £3, 13*s.* for overseeing fences, and of £2, 10*s.* for killing a wolfe. Perhaps this wolfe was killed here, and, accustomed to live in the wilderness, he readily accepted the offer of the town, and, building his home, became a permanent settler. Soon after this date the town of Rowley required Boxford to pay the bounty on all wolves killed in this part of the town.

This family had a love for border life, or they would not so readily have come here. While there was heroism and daring, one can also conceive that thoughts of the Indian must have stalked like a spectre before their cottage as the nightfall gathered, and that the howling of the fierce winter wind brought vividly to memory stories of Indian cruelty, listened to shiveringly, around the fireside at their old home, to which their loneliness here added a tenfold terror. Especially to the wife and mother the danger doubtless clung, with but little to make life buoyant or cheerful. Besides, with all of that day, they firmly believed and looked for the malice of the prince of evil on every hand.

This darkened their lives, and could this family have looked ahead a century or more, and heard and seen the visible manifestations of an invisible and occult force beneath the roof of some to come after them as bone of their bone, but scarcely an arrow's flight from where they then were, they would all have fled from their wilderness home, back to the village from whence they came. They did remain, however, with

nothing to disturb them, beyond the ordinary difficulties that await those who in a new country sow the seed and gather the harvest. At a period some years before a path of blazed trees had probably been opened toward Andover, but for years at least in the long, wearisome winter, as they looked abroad from this elevated country, not a column of smoke from a neighbor's chimney could be seen curling upward as a friendly sign and beacon. Their nearest neighbors were three miles away, with the old primitive forest between. From the records at Rowley it is probable, however, that before the Spoffords came Captain Samuel Brocklebank had a house at his farm on Pen Brook, which he occupied during the farm-season, spending the winters in Rowley.

This was an occasional occurrence, and the Colonial laws exempted the farmers or their servants from certain duties while living on the farms at a distance from the villages. The road which passed this Spofford cottage connected with the highway, laid out at the same time, from Topsfield to Haverhill, leading from the old Ipswich and Andover road, southwest of Baldpate hill, just east of Shaven Crown, past the present Thwing farm, and across what is now the Andover road, over the "Haselltine brook (says the record) where they of Rowley Village have made a bridge over it, near the lower end of Robert Hasilltine's meadow, and soe along as the highway now goeth, to A place commonly called the aptake." This aptake or uptake, was evidently then known, and the path from this point was already a highway. It had been used as such for some time, as trees were said to have been marked at various points, but the road had not been definitely laid out. Now changes were made, and the work was final. A report to that effect was made March 16, 1668–69. Two who signed the report were Samuel Brocklebank and Ezekiel Northend.

The connection with this ancient Salem and Haverhill road was by the three-fourths mile of highway, at the northwest foot of Baldpate Street, known now as Spofford Street. For more than a century and a half this was the great central thoroughfare between Northern and Southern Essex, until the rapid growth of "Georgetown corner" turned the course of travel, and attracted it two miles to the eastward. In later years there were many farm-houses scattered along at frequent intervals, where entertainment for man and beast was provided, and "the sounds of revelry" and tales of good cheer had these old inns but a tongue to reveal them, would fill many a volume.

In March, 1662, Rowley appointed Lieut. Samuel Brocklebank and Richard Swan to join with the selectmen of Haverhill to decide where the road from Haverhill to Rowley should be. The preceding year Lieut. Brocklebank had his seventy-two acre farm laid out by Pen Brook, and as his evident intentions were, at that day, to make this his home, performing this duty for the town, he had more than official duty, for by opening up this road he was making his own property accessible to the Merrimac River settlements, and his own settlement here seemingly an assured thing. The record from the Rowley 1st book, as previously given, is good evidence that this partial settlement actually occurred. The lamented ending of his useful life, may as well be told here.

June 24, 1675, was ever memorable in New England history as the date of the opening tragedy, in that calamity known as King Philip's War. This was followed by an alliance of several tribes, of which some had previously been friendly. This action of the Indians awakened general alarm throughout both Massachusetts and Plymouth Colonies. Soldiers were ordered to be raised, and Samuel Brocklebank, now captain, reports on the 29th of November, 1675, to Governor John Leverett that "This may certify, that we have impressid twelve men according to our warrant, and have given them charge to fit themsellves well with warm clothing, and we hope they will, and doe endeavour to fixe themsellves as well as they can; only some of them are men that but latly come to town, and want arms, the which to provide for them we must press other men's arms, which is very grievous (except they can be provided for upon the country's account, which would be very acceptable if it could be.)"

Writing this kindly note, in behalf of this little company of distressed townsmen, he bids farewell to all those useful labors for the town of his adoption, where, in the forest, he had fixed the highways, since traveled by myriad feet; a lingering look up the long extent of hill and plain, along what is now Elm Street, which he had fondly expected to redeem from the wild reign of Nature, then controlling it; a final farewell to his wilderness home, with the peaceful sound of Pen Brook the only break upon the stillness, and to his village friends, now agitated with many an unwonted fear, and to Boston, and then from Marlborough he makes his report, as a soldier ready for service, if his duty calls.

He wrote to Major Denison, of Ipswich, March 27, 1676, from the place last named. Asks to be dismissed with his men, saying that they can do nothing of advantage where they are. Impatient to escape from this idle waiting, says also "that they have been in the country's service ever since the first of January at Narriganset, and within one week after their return were sent out again, having neither time or money, save a fortnight's pay, upon the march to recruit themselves." The previous day he wrote the Council an interesting letter, with a graphic account of the burning of many houses and barns in Marlborough, ending with a prediction of greater havoc soon to be made.

His premonitions were more than realized. On the 21st of the following April Captain Brocklebank, Captain Wadsworth of Milton, Lieutenant Sharp of Brookline, with about one hundred men, were drawn into ambush by the Indians in the town of Sudbury,

and the three officers and probably upwards of fifty of the men were killed. They were all buried in one grave, in the forest near where they fell. About 1730 President Benjamin Wadsworth, of Harvard College, a son of the captain, erected a plain slab over the burial-place of these men, which, in 1840, was in a good state of preservation. A granite monument was also erected by the State of Massachusetts and the town of Sudbury in 1852, and dedicated November 23d of that year, with an address by Governor Boutwell. The former headstone is placed directly in front of it. Two centuries later, on the anniversary of this sad event, a general observance of the day was had, many visiting Sudbury from the surrounding country. The writer, as a lineal descendant of Captain Brocklebank and as a representative of the town, was invited by the committee of arrangements to be present.

This was the sad ending of the career of a brave and useful man. He had been a deacon of the church in Rowley, probably from the death of Thomas Mighill. His age was but forty-six. Had he lived, undoubtedly his energies and enthusiasm would have been strongly felt in the early history of Georgetown.

Ninety-nine years later, and that same locality was the theatre of events equally bloody, and the descendants of Captain Brocklebank's Rowley neighbors were there by forced marches, too late, however, to join the "embattled farmers as they stood, and fired the shot heard round the world." Coming here a lad of eight, growing up with the Rowley settlement, his tragic ending gives a gleam of story to our history in the seventeenth century such as we get from no other source. But Georgetown in an especial manner can claim his career as her own, for here was his farm, cleared to some extent by him, and here was, we believe, his first habitation looking toward a permanent home. His inventory has this item: "farme toward Bradford, 150 lbs." With house in Rowley is added "kilne." Whole estate, £442 11*s*. His eldest son, Samuel, born November 28, 1653, occupied the farm in 1685, and unquestionably lived here.

November 20, 1686, a committee met at Samuel Brocklebank's house to consider his claim for damage by a highway opened through his farm. This may have been the Elm Street road, now formally opened, and perhaps by a more direct route to the Ipswich and Andover road than before—crossing Nelson Street at the foot of Adams Hill, near Mrs. W. M. Shute's, and so easterly and close beside the sharp range of hills, parallel with the railroad, until we pass Oak Dell Grove and reach the wooden bridge across Pen Brook, just below Lake Raynor. This ancient way, the direct way to Thomas Hazen's, who, two years before, had settled about midway of a large tract south of and adjoining Lake Raynor, and also to Daniel Wood's was opened probably at this time. In 1712 Hazen sold his three hundred acre farm, all lying in one body and south of the lake, with his dwelling-house in what is now the Samuel Perley lot, and removed to Connecticut. Two hundred and fifty acres were deeded to Jacob Perley, and the balance of sixty acres to Timothy Perkins, of Topsfield. This was a Boxford farm, but the connections of Thomas Hazen were so identified with South Georgetown for nearly a century after that a brief mention does not seem amiss. Sixteen acres of land were granted Brocklebank for damage because of highway. This land given him was on the west side of his farm, with one corner on "Widdow Lambert's farme," who was probably the widow of Francis Lambert, of Rowley. This was the same tract which, nearly twenty-five years before, had been laid out to Mrs. Rogers, but at this time, probably, all of Mrs. Rogers' land had come into the possession of the Lambert family.

Returning to our pioneers on the hill, we find John Spofford continuing his labors from year to year. Without any competitors to cheapen the price of his labor, watching over the young cattle, penning them by night, with freedom to roam where they might by day, generally, however, up the slopes and on the summit of Baldpate, where, from some cause, there was a natural clearing, an entire want of the old timbered growth which covered all the upland beside.

With the regularity of the seasons he gathers the hay-harvest from "Half-moon Meadow," still called by the same expressive name. Only at long intervals, and then in settled weather, would a traveler be seen on foot or horse, journeying along the "old path that goeth toward Andover." Eight years passed, and on the 16th of March, 1677, the lease was transferred by Mr. Spofford to his sons John and Samuel, and extended to the new lessees sixty years from date. Perhaps the father thought the town had driven a hard "bargon" with him, or the "gravelle plain" was not as productive as was expected, or, possibly, further encouragement was needed to keep the young men from returning to Rowley village, but from some cause there was an abatement of the rent. Unlike the hard fate of the Irish peasant, who sees his rent rise with every slight improvement on his acre of bog, their rent was reduced to eight pounds, with the results of eight years' labor added to its original value.

Ministry rates to be paid "for what stocke they keep upon the saide land, and for all broke-up land and unbroke land, as the inhabitants of the town doe pay." "Allso they have liberty to pay in porke their rent if they see cause." Acorns and all species of mast (walnuts of every kind) were especially abundant in all the country south of this parish farm, and swine must have been grown at a nominal cost.

To this day the same district south and east of Baldpate Hill is noted for the abundance of its crop of walnuts, making quite an item in the aggregated products of the farms. Included in this supplementary lease is this clause, "And duringe the times of the Indian wars there rent is to be abated accordinge to the iudgment of indifferent men, if they be hindered in carrying on the saide farme." A strong

probability that they might have to return to Rowley with at least pecuniary loss.

This anticipated danger from the Indian fighter, with the fever for blood raging in him just at this time, reveals the cause which had prevented, more than anything else, that rapid settlement of the three thousand acres expected by the town fathers eight years before. One of the most valued citizens of the town, and to a certain extent their only neighbor, had, but a few years before, given up his life to protect such as they and theirs from the bullet and the torch. In Captain Brocklebank's death the realities of Indian war came home to them with a force never felt before. The conclusion of the lease, showing but a faint conception of the opulence which a century later would surround some branches of the family, is this, "At the end of there lease they are to be allowed for all buildings on the saide farme, to be vallued by indifferent men, provided they are not to exceede above twenty pounds." At the date of the lease John Spofford was twenty-nine and his brother Samuel twenty-five years of age. The father probably returned to Rowley village.

The will of John Spofford is on record at the register of deeds' office in Salem. A few bequests are given. He bequeaths a portion to son Francis, and that it may be at his wife's disposal until he become of the age of one and twenty years, and that he may be helpful to her to carry on her husbandry work. Francis to have the small gun and rapier. The long fowling-piece to go to son John. Four acres toward great meadow to go to Francis, and son Thomas his village land. Sons Samuel and John the lease of the farm. Two cows to wife, one cow to each of his daughters. To Francis, two young oxen, one mare and one cart. The gray horse to Thomas. Three sheep to each of his daughters and to sons John and Thomas. One sheep to his wife and one heifer or calf to wife and each of his daughters. The date of this death is not known. Was not living in 1691. His name does not appear in the tax list of that year. Probably owned property in Rowley, on which Francis and the widow lived for a time.

His inventory as valued is recorded as £223 9*s*. Another of the first settlers of Rowley, whose name figures somewhat prominently in the land transfers of the seventeenth century in this section of the town, now Georgetown, was Richard Swan. It is not thought that he lived here, but he had land bounded by Pen Brook, and partly by ye farme granted to Mr. Samuel Shepard, of Rowley, on the northwest, on the southeast by land of Mr. Edward Payson, on the southwest by land in possession of Ebenezer Boynton and partly by land of Samuel Brocklebank, and on the northeast by Benjamin Plumer's land. This was centrally located, between what is now North Street and Main Street, toward the Marlborough district extending from Pen Brook on the west, over or near the land of John Preston eastwardly, to an unknown distance. The bounds of this tract were the same as those recorded in the deed of June 5, 1712, from Hannah Swan, the widow, then of Haverhill, to Joseph Bointon, who was doubtless a son-in-law, Swan having died in 1678. That deed conveyed all the lands and meadows within the town of Rowley, which the said Boynton deeded to her late husband, of date May 27, 1678. These lands were seemingly held by Swan but for a few months only, having been bought of Bointon, who held the office of town clerk of Rowley for thirteen years, from 1679 to '91, and who was the original owner. In 1672 these lands were again in Boynton's hands, and that deed was probably a quit-claim by the widow.

Mrs. Swan was then evidently quite aged and probably living with a son, whose house and family during the Indian attack on Haverhill four years before, were saved. Tradition says that several Indians were about to force an entrance into the Swan house through the partially open door, when the wife with Amazonian courage, seizing her spit, which was nearly three feet in length, collected all the strength she possessed, and drove it through the body of the foremost Indian. This was a resistance they little expected, and thus repulsed they retreated and molested them no further.

This land grant adds the names of Boynton and Swan to the list of early land owners, the Brocklebanks (Samuel and John), Humphrey Rainer and Thomas Mighill, having taken much of the land at the south of this.

Besides the above, there was of the Swan land a piece of meadow at the eastward near Stony Brook so called, perhaps the Hilliard Brook. This was owned by Boynton, and sold by him to Benj. Plumer in 1708.

In May, 1714, Joseph Bointon deeded to Richard Bointon one-half of this land, said to have belonged to Richard's grandfather Swan, Richard not being satisfied with previous gifts, and Joseph also agreed "to defend from Benoni Boynton, who aims to cut off Richard from what my father hath given him." This Joseph was said to be a brother of Richard, but there is some mistake, for he must have been a brother of Richard's father. Swan was deputy for several years, and prominent in town affairs.

In town expenses for 1667–68 we find Richard Swan paid for deputyship £3 9*s*. 6*d*. In those days the towns bore the expense of deputies. Also "for lainge out land and goinge to Salem and horse hire, 13*s*." Swan, with others, was selected for locating highways (a very responsible work), also, "to agree with the sons of John Spofford about ye farm," and was appointed, with Lieut. Brocklebank and Ezekiel Northend, February 21, 1672, to lay out the farm of one hundred acres near Crane Meadows, voted to be laid out to the child of Mr. Samuel Shepard at the meeting on the previous January. This Mr. Shepard, the third minister in Rowley, was a colleague with Rev. Mr. Phillips from

November, 1665, to his death, April 7, 1668, at the early age of twenty-seven years. He left one son, an orphan, the mother dying about two months before the father. The town voted in January, 1672, the before-named grant to the Shepard boy, then past three years old, provided "it did live unto the age of twenty-one years," but March 13th, on re-consideration, it was granted without conditions, probably on the remonstrance of the boy's grandmother, Mrs. Margery Hoar, widow of Rev. Henry Flint, first minister of the old church in Quincy, then in Braintree. Mrs. Flint, then sole executor of the will of her son-in-law, Mr. Shepard, and the education of young Samuel Shepard, the son of her daughter Dorothy, devolving upon her, wrote, like a strong-minded woman, a sharp letter to the town of Rowley, which no doubt brought about definite action. The tombstone of Mrs. Flint informs us that for many years she was noted as an instructress of young gentlewomen, many being sent to her, especially from Boston. This "Shepard farm," as it was named, for many years was quite noted as a boundary point in deeds. Young Shepard was graduated from Harvard College in 1685, at the age of eighteen, and this land continued to be held by him until 1694. August 28th, of that year, he, while living in Lynn, probably with his uncle Jeremiah Shepard, pastor of the first church in that town, sold his "ferme" to Joseph and Jonathan Plummer.

This famous Shepard land was doubtless located on the southerly side of North Street, but, perhaps, included both sides of the street, from Pen Brook at the present causeway, to the residence of S. S. Hardy, then eastwardly for some distance at the south of the street, including what was afterwards known as the "Baptist Parsonage Farm." It is said in the deed to be "on the south side of ye old path called Andover path." At about the same time as this Shepard grant, land was laid out to Mr. Francis Parrot, in the vicinity of what is now known as the Searl place, on the hill. This Parrot was town clerk of Rowley for several years, and is said to have returned to England, and died there. If this is correct, this grant was a freehold to his heirs. It adjoined Anthony Crosbies' land, and was near Reedy meadow and also the Shepard farm. In the farm purchase is the first mention of the Plumer name in Georgetown. Originally a Newbury family, the name of Benjamin Plumer first appears as a Rowley resident in 1678.

Returning to 1665, we find from all the records of the town of Rowley, an eagerness for land-grants in the commons. There were, at least, three divisions prior to the year 1700, the first division being made soon after the establishment of the settlement. In the year 1667 the three thousand acres were surveyed. This tract seems to have been nearly preserved intact, the only diminishing of the town commons being the setting off of the parish farm the following year. Dec. 30th of the same year, with perhaps accusation of favoritism, and complaints of an assumption of authority floating about, "the Lot-layers were ordered by the town not to Lay out any Lands with in the Township of Rowley, but by notis of some Express grant in writing, both for plan and quantity." Envy and detraction were doing its work, and as has been previously said, it was becoming difficult to find men who would perform the duty with the certainty that fault-finding was sure to follow.

The death of King Philip giving a relief from the anxiety of the two years preceding, and renewed courage in back-woods life, it was voted by the town, January 22, 1677:

"That those appoynted to Returne Land or cases, to wit, the old Select men, and the lottlayers of both ends of the towne, Shoulde also Examine the right that men have to freeholds they lay claim to, that they may be Recorded."

Human nature is alike grasping, within the narrow limits of Rowley, as on the broad prairies of the West. In 1679 the town went further and chose a committee at the meeting March 27th, to consider the situation, and endeavor to reconcile energy and ambition, with equity and fair-dealing, a problem equally difficult to solve, then, as well as now.

It is to be hoped that they partially succeeded, for the "men chosen to joyne with the Select men, to consider of questions that may arise about the Division of the Comons, and are to Returne their thoughts about them," were men of the prominence of "thomas lambert, John pickard, Mr. (Philip) Nelson, leonard harriman, John tod and thomas leaver, Junior."

May 20, 1685, "At a Leaguel Towne meeting, it was Agreed and voted, that corporal northend, daniel wicam, Ezekiel Mighill, John pickard and —— Johnson, be a committee to fixe the bounds of the three thousand akers, comonly so-called." Considerable interest began to be felt in roads and other improvements here, and some were considering a possible settlement. It seems to have been feared that this tract might be encroached upon, it having been evidently reserved for a general and careful distribution, and, therefore, this renewed survey was ordered.

For years, the hay on the meadow land, where accessible, had been cut, being the only product of this common land, but at the time of this survey Rock Pond Meadow had been granted temporarily. The meadows were still appreciated so highly, that when Bradford appealed to Rowley in a pathetic letter, dated March, 1680–81 (now in the Rowley records), for an additional grant of land, or aid of some kind, Rowley, a few days later replies, that they cannot grant more territory, but will "give Rev. Mr. Symmes Liberty for Six or Siven Loads of Hay yearly, of that meddow called Rock Pond Meddow, till the towne Shall Se Cause to order it otherwise." It was poor satisfaction for Bradford to ask for a change of boundary, and only get a few loads of meadow hay, with the privilege of cutting it themselves.

But to again continue the earlier land grants.

Before 1687, land was laid out on Long Hill, to John Acie, probably a son of William, who was an original settler of Rowley. This land was inherited by a daughter, who married a Burbank. Acie continued to have land there, as late as 1701. This name seems to be an anomaly among Essex County names. In 1691 Sarah, the widow of John Brocklebank, sold land to a Boynton, probably Joseph. She had been a widow for more than twenty-five years, her husband dying a few years after his grant near Pen Brook, in 1661, perhaps in 1663. The heirs bought some of the Thomas Mighill land. This Brocklebank family had all this land east of the brook, extending to Marlborough, and it is thought, only held it for one generation, when it was probably sold to the Boyntons, perhaps to Ebenezer. What became of them is not known; all of the name in this vicinity are descendants of Capt. Samuel's, eldest and youngest sons. Another name of an early date, is that of David Wheeler, found on a deed of date 1691, on a transfer of land to Nathaniel Browne. He was probably the first to settle in the vicinity of the Goodrich house on North Street. Was the father of Jonathan Wheeler, who a few years later rose to especial prominence. David Wheeler had removed, or was not living in town in 1701, as his name is not found on the list of Rowley men in that locality, petitioning for an abatement of minister rates. He sold June 6, 1693, thirty acres of land to John Spofford, said to adjoin Benj. Goodrich's land.

In 1707 Jonathan Wheeler deeded all the undivided lands in Newbury, belonging to his father, David Wheeler, to a Mr. Coffin.

In 1697 Jonathan Wheeler was said to be of Rowley, and was perhaps living in the town four years before.

August 24, 1693, he deeded about twenty acres of upland and meadow, lying near Crane Pond, said to have been bought previously of Philip Nelson, to the next heirs of the late Benjamin Guttridge (Goodrich), the former deed supposed to have been burnt in the house. This land was granted to Wheeler by the town of Rowley.

"John Spawford's" land was on the northwest; bought the same year of the Brownes. Nathaniel Browne sold Spofford fifty-four acres, his brother, Ebenezer twelve, making with that sold Spofford by Wheeler a tract of ninety-six acres. This land was on or near Thurlow Street, then known as Bradford highway, by which it was bounded, also by the brook (Parker River), and owners of Ox-pasture Hill. The house and land of John Brown is mentioned in David Wheeler's deed; where it was, it is not possible perhaps to tell at this day.

Cornet Parsons' land is said to be on the southwest of the land deeded by Jonathan Wheeler to the Goodrich heirs, and "Three logg bridge" named, was the bridge over Parker River, on Thurlow Street. These three Brownes, John, Ebenezer and Nathaniel, were on the list of parish petitioners in 1701. Nathaniel soon after removed to Groton, Conn. While there, January 8, 1708, he sold for four pounds a freehold in Rowley to Daniel Wood, of Boxford. Ebenezer probably remained; twenty years later land was known by his name. The mention in Wheeler's deed of the former deed being burned in the house of Goodrich, reveals of itself nothing but a barren fact. We have the story, however. It was the year previous to this just act of Wheeler's when the tragedy we are now to relate occurred.

October 23, 1692, was the Lord's day. Mr. Goodrich living in this locality, in a house of small dimensions, doubtless such as were common on the frontier at that time, was at evening prayer with his family, when the house was suddenly attacked by a small band of Indians, and Mr. Goodrich, his wife and several children were killed. One daughter, a girl of seven, is said to have been carried off a captive, but redeemed at the expense of the Province the spring following.

The house, after being sacked, was at least partially burned. It was a common occurrence for the Indians to destroy in wantoness what plunder they could not carry away, and if time would warrant also, to burn the house raided. This family were living here in fancied security, but for some time before there had been frequent Indian raids on the frontier, especially at the eastward. In 1688 the former enmity incited by the French in Canada was renewed, and the expedition of Sir William Phipps against Canada, in 1690, having proved the most disastrous failure New England had ever known, the Indians became daring, and for two years after were busy with carnage.

This tragedy seems to have been an unpremeditated act by a roving band, and tradition says they were so angered at not accomplishing the object of their raid, the death of some one in Newbury, against whom they had a long standing grudge, that accidentally approaching this house, the unprotected inmates were made the mark for their malice and wrath. As one thinks of it the incident seems hardly credible, and that it could have occurred miles from the border and the raiders escape with their captives and booty. We can imagine the horror felt by the Brownes on the Bradford road, by the Wheelers, Plumers, Poors, and especially so by Deacon Brocklebank's family up by Pen Brook, and the Spoffords on the hill, as guided by the burning house, they hastened, only to find a family silent in death, mangled and bloody, with their house-dog howling his agony over his slain friends and playmates. Whether the house was entirely or partially burned may be a matter of controversy and an open question. In 1840, when Gage's "History of Rowley" was written, a wood-cut of the Lull house, then standing a few rods west of the residence of G. D. Tenney, Esq., was inserted as the house where the massacre occurred, and the window pointed out through which the Indians fired. That

the burning was at least partially accomplished, perhaps all the interior, is from the deed of Wheeler made almost a certainty, and that by the efforts of the neighbors the fire was extinguished and a part of the house saved. From this saved part, east of the front door, extensions were made at different times until the spacious mansion we knew as the old Lull house was the result. It seems that such an event would have been so impressed upon the occupants of the Lull house, from one generation to another, that they could not possibly have been entirely in error when the story was brought down from sire to son, that in *this* room and through *that* window the Goodrich family were shot. The one grave in which they were buried is near by, unmarked, however, by any memorial. It should be a pleasing duty for those bearing the name to place something there in recognition of their sad fate. It is doubtful whether they had lived there above a year or two.

From this date to 1700 every movement looking toward a settlement was in this locality or just eastward.

December 1, 1693, Henry Poor bought twenty-eight acres of land of John Pierson, of Rowley. "Miller" Pierson owned the old Nelson Mill on Mill River. This was a part of Pierson's common land in the third division. John Bayley, probably of Boston, owned land near by. The other boundary points named in the deed were "the meadow laid out to Samuel Shepard (not the Shepard farm), Bradford highway, also southwest of Wheeler's and Goodrich land." Perhaps Poor built on the north side of Thurlow Street. The land extended to "Three logg bridge brook," which must then have been the name of Parker River, at the point where Thurlow Street crosses it.

About thirty years later, Henry Poor and his son Benjamin, in a deed to Benjamin Plumer, sold a corner of the land on which (the deed states), "we now dwell," indicating a change of residence in the meantime. Poor was Newbury born. Benjamin, the eldest son, was married about the time of the change of house.

In 1707 Jonathan Wheeler sold to Nathaniel Coffin, one-half of Poor's interest in the undivided lands of Newbury.

Very early deeds imply that Crane Pond was, for some years after the incorporation of Bradford, included in Rowley. Crane Pond, and the meadows near, were known by the present name, as early, it is thought, as 1670. Many of the earlier grants and transfers were of Crane Pond lands, and the records of the locality refer to an old grant, and a new grant; the former line is supposed to have run north and the latter south of the pond. There are deeds on record from John Wallingford, to his brother-in-law, Jonathan Look, of land near Pond Brook (this pond must have been Crane Pond, for Pentucket and Rock were always designated by their names), also Jonathan Wheeler is said to have had a division with the above on the south side of the pond in Rowley. Without the pond being named, it seems to show an apparent knowledge of but one pond, and from the names of the parties, Wallingford, Look and Wheeler, it is conclusive that the pond was Crane Pond, and was then (1694), within the limits of Rowley. Look probably lived in the neighborhood of these Crane meadows. Seven years later he signed the parish petition with the others. His name disappeared from Rowley history soon after.

These owners of lands in Rowley were under the old grant. The new grant was made not long after. It will be recalled that in 1681, a request came to Rowley from Bradford, for an enlargement of their territory, and perhaps after many appeals, the town of Rowley, April 7, 1699, appointed a committee, "to meet with the Bradford Committee, when there may be a convenient opportunity, to settle the line between Rowley and Bradford, and what they shall do (says the record), shall be a valid act." Probably the convenient time did not arrive, for in 1701, nothing apparently having been done, Bradford petitioned the General Court to interfere. Rowley, then forced to definite action, chose on September 22, 1701, a committee "to meet a Bradford committee, at the house of Samuel Hale, and to come to some agreement if possible, but if they could not agree, then to refer it for a settlement by arbitration."

Doubtless a satisfactory agreement was reached at that meeting, and the new line run at the south of Crane Pond, as before stated, making it essentially the line between Georgetown and Groveland, as it exists to this day. About the time that the Wheelers, Brownes, Goodrich, Look, Plumer and Henry Poor were taking the first steps toward clearing the land and establishing homes along what is now Thurlow, North and Jewett Streets, complaints were rife of trespassing on the undivided land, to the injury of those who might follow them.

We have seen Goodrich and his family, by one sharp blow taken from this little band of hardy axemen and pioneers, but this did not deter the others; they held the ground gained, but sometimes, no doubt, entertained bitter thoughts against the Rowley men at the village, that they should fret and fume, over the cutting of a little wood and fencing stuff. These were braving all the danger of opening up the wilderness, while their Rowley neighbors were living in peace and security, and one can imagine that a sense of injustice, sometimes impelled them to a degree of lawlessness. However, in spite of any consciousness of freedom, these few families may have felt, the town saw fit to vote, January 14, 1694–95, for an appointment "of a Committee to prosecute any persons, and especially Benjamin Plumer and Henry Poor, that have trespassed by falling or carting away timber." The forest was preserved with jealous care from the first, one town ordinance following another in quick succession, and making the laws operative over the

whole territory, from Merrimac to the sea. The peat-bogs were as yet unopened, although right at their feet. The coal-fields were waiting for the transportation by steam as the motive power, and the vast lumber districts, were practically almost as far away as if in the moon.

This severe ordinance not proving effectual, and the clamors of some of the people still demanding action, an evidently annoyed citizen, at a meeting March 19, 1699–1700, moved, and it was

"Agreed & Voated, that if any person or persons shall fall, top, or Carry away any tree or trees, or part of any of sd tree, from of any part of the Town's Comon, called the three Thousand Acres, for any use whatsoever, without liberty from the Select men, being mett together, & in writing under hands, they Shall pay for every tree fallen, lopped, or carried away, nineteen Shillings, Six pounds & tree (threepence), the one-halfe of sd penalty to the Informer, the other half to the use of the Towne."

This seemes like a kind of half-waggery, and yet it may be that there was a desperation at seeing one of their dearest laws set at naught. "ffeb. 6, 1694–5, Committee chosen to Issue a Controversie Between the Town and Beniamin Plumer," about some land that it was thought Plumer had fenced in, supposed to belong to the town.

He rebutted the charges of encroachment, by calling the attention of the town to a highway through his farm. Plumer declared himself ready to submit his case to the committee named. There seems to have been no definite settlement reached for many years, for the next record informs us, of date January 2, 1712–13, that Benjamin Plumer is satisfied about the road across his farm. Probably the question of the land encroachment was also settled.

The roads in this locality were becoming more of a question to consider at the meetings of the town. April 12, 1699, the importance of one road at the northwestern corner of the town resulted in this action: "Rock brook meddow to be leased to Robert Haseltine, Thomas Carleton, Jona. Platts (all perhaps, of Bradford) and John Spofford, of Rowley, for seven years, they to maintain the bridge called Haseltines, and in addition, to pay three shillings yearly. This was the bridge near the Edward Poor place, on West Street. Nothing looking toward a settlement in South Georgetown had as yet been done. There were a few land grants, however."

At about 1683 or '84, Thomas Palmer had fifty-six acres laid out near Lake Raynor, and at the westerly end, bounded by the old Newbury and Andover road, on the southerly side of the Bald hills. Others, with acreage not stated, were Deacon William Tenney, Thomas Stickney, John Burbank and Samuel Cooper. Some of these lots, as laid out, are said to have bordered "on the path now used from Samuel Spofford to Jacob Pearly." Spofford was then married, and may have built the house that very anciently was built, on what is now the northwesterly limits of the farm on Baldpate Street, now owned by Henry Kennett. It is possible, however, that this house was built at a later day by Richard Dole.

Not far from this time, Thomas Nelson, of Rowley, and John Rolfe, of Newbury, sold this Samuel Spofford two hundred and fifty acres near Shaving Crown hill, which was one-fourth part of Mrs. Rogers' one thousand acre grant. This immense tract came into the hands of Gershom Lambert, as a gift from Mrs. Rogers. Lambert was a brother of Thomas Nelson's first wife, and uncle of the wife of Rolfe, and presented this land to Mrs. Rolfe with the other children of Thomas Nelson, that it might be sold for their benefit.

In 1712 another fourth part was sold to Moses Tyler. Gershom Lambert was a resident of Salem for some time, but as early as 1691 had removed to New London, Conn.

Cooper, Stickney, and Palmer probably about to be dispossessed of their grants for some unknown cause, perhaps because they were laid out on the reserved tract, petitioned the town of Rowley, March 18, 1700–01, to relieve them, and find them some common land, belonging to the town, on the southerly side of the line, between Rowley and Boxford. All these lots had evidently been laid out north of and near Lake Raynor. Cooper seems finally to have secured his grant, for in 1727 a long narrow tract in Boxford, north of the lake, from the shore to the town line, was sold by a Samuel Cooper, to Nathaniel Perkins and Jacob Pearley. May 22, 1704, Captain John Spofford, had sixty acres laid out to him, also on this north shore of the lake. This was a grant to his father, John Spofford, then deceased. It adjoined Palmer's land.

To return for a brief space to another part of the Byfield district, from that already described, we find just as the seventeenth century was closing the name of Benjamin Stickney, as another of the earlier settlers, and who was a brother of Andrew Stickney, who is supposed to have lived near the Rowley line by the Ewell place. This Benjamin is said to have built a log house on the summit of Long Hill, at as early a date as 1699.

In 1700 a framed-house was erected by him, which as late as 1870 was occupied by Mayor Ira Stickney, a direct descendant in the sixth generation. Some few years later it was accidentally burned to the ground. In 1713 the road over Long Hill and past his house was opened. In the great snow of 1717 he kept a path open by drawing a log every day. A bear is said to have once taken a pig from his pen in the night; he arose, caught a whip and chasing the animal, lashed him until he dropped the pig, when he secured it and returned to the house. Mr. Stickney was never known to be sick until he had passed his eightieth birthday.

CHAPTER LII.

GEORGETOWN.—(*Continued*).

PARISH PETITIONERS AND OTHERS WHO SETTLED PRIOR TO 1730.

At the dawning of the eighteenth century, the question of the validity of the Indian title, to the territory within the original limits of Rowley, began to cause something of a ferment. About 1700 three Indians, who claimed to be grandsons of Musquonomonet, the former Sagamore of Agawam, and were then probably living in this or some town near by, were encouraged by parties, to assert their claim to the territory, on the ground that the aboriginal title had never been extinguished. This claim, if based on precedents, was undoubtedly correct. Many towns had apparently recognized at an early period of their settlement the Indian ownership, and by the payment of some trifle in money or goods, had gone through the farce of a purchase. Rowley, unlike many of her neighbors, had done nothing, however, simply from neglect. At that time, after seventy years of settlement, the claim was made by these Indians, with many precedents in their favor. Late in the year 1700, a committee was appointed by the town, "to treat with the Gentlom Improved and Impowered as Attorneys for the Indians, which make a Demand of our Lands, & Labour to cleare up our Title to s^{d} Lands."

Soon after, by the payment of nine pounds to Samuel English, Joseph English and John Umpee, the title to the territory now included in the towns of Georgetown and Rowley, was made good, to the acknowledged satisfaction of these three claimants. These upper commons were still but a slight remove from the ancient solitude.

In 1705 John Holmes, then of Newbury, and connected in some way with Bartholomew Pearson, deeded fifteen acres west of Rock Pond, to Eldad Cheney, of Bradford, and Nicholas Cheney, of Newbury. The highway now known as Bailey Lane was crossed, and the lot touched on Crag (Scrag) and Rock Pond Brooks. Holmes perhaps permanently settled near the Bradford line about 1731. It is thought that he was living in Byfield in 1730, as his name was not on the list of parish petitioners, but it appears in 1732, as dismissed from the church in Byfield, to the church in the west parish in November of that year. We find him in 1722 deeding land to Jonathan Harriman, and again to Harriman in 1725 several lots on range H, in the vicinity of Rock Pond, and at the same time one-eighth part of the iron works, said to be on the south side of Rock Brook, and the deed adds, "with what provision is now made, and the privilege of the yard and stream, for nineteen years from date." These iron works had probably been opened but a few years at the longest. Gage records that they were worked in 1739, and that a Samuel Barrett lived near by, who it is thought carried them on. Besides the bog ore which was dug near the yard, the farmers carted the ore to be worked at the yard from other bogs in the town.

Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, of Groveland, at a late day, could show places on his father's farm on West Street, where this iron ore had been dug. The remains of these iron works, not far from the embankment of the Georgetown and Haverhill Railroad, were plainly traceable a few years ago.

In 1707, *Benjamin Plumer*, styled clothier in 1718, who had made so much trouble for the town by his trespassing some years before, bought of Mark Prime one-half of the Mrs. Rogers or Lambert farm, for two hundred pounds. Plumer had regained the confidence of the town, for in 1702–3, he was made overseer (the English term) of all the highways in Rowley, above and including "Ry plain bridge" (the bridge near the Georgetown Town farm). This Lambert farm was to a slight extent improved by him, while he is supposed to have been living at the time in the vicinity of Thurlow or Jewett Street, for, in 1713, he bought forty-two acres of land of Jonathan Spofford, where, the deed states, "my house now is." This land, John Spofford, the father of Jonathan, bought of the Brownes in 1693. Joseph and Jonathan Plumer, who had purchased the Shepard farm in 1694, were perhaps brothers of Benjamin, but probably never lived here.

The name of *Jonathan Bradstreet* is seen on the record at about this date, appearing first as an owner of land near Crane pond and brook. This land in Rowley was held in partnership with David Wheeler, John and Ebenezer Browne. Nathaniel Browne, the former owner, had removed to Connecticut. About 1710 or '11, Bradstreet bought of Jonathan Wheeler sixty acres, or a part of the Payson farm. This farm was a special grant of the town of Rowley to Rev. Edward Payson, their fourth minister, and was in harmony with the land-allotment to all the previous ministers. Wheeler had bought this farm not long before this partial sale. The word farm, as used at that time, was misleading, it being in anticipation. The farming operations of the Rowley ministers did not contemplate agriculture in the wilderness, and this grant to Mr. Payson was the last of its class. This land was located near Elder's plain (now Marlboro' district), but on the hilly tract at the north and northeast.

The Bradstreet house may have been that which, for three-fourths of a century, was known as the Kezar house, and was demolished by Dr. David Mighill about 1850. The material was used in enlargement of the Mighill house on Baldpate. The family, in 1739, removed to Lunenburg, Mass. Jonathan Bradstreet, then known as Captain, with his wife, Sarah, and Dorcas Spofford, the wife of his son Sam-

uel, were dismissed to the church in Lunenburg, April 15th of that year.

At the same period when Bradstreet settled, the names of several Boyntons frequently occur. Mention has already been made of Captain Joseph and Richard Boynton, as owners of the Swan lands, extending from Pen Brook north and east of Pen Brook avenue.

Ebenezer Boynton, who may have been a cousin or brother of Joseph, was an early landholder, and owned the house in "Marlboro'," now the property of Mrs. Jacob F. Jewett. The name of this Boynton is found as early as 1714, as the owner of land near that belonging to Samuel Brocklebank.

In 1725, he sold his house and thirty acres of land situated on Elder's plain, to *Joseph Nelson*, for one hundred and forty-three pounds. This farm was a part of the original Elder Humphrey Raynor grant, from which the plain took its name. By inheritance it came to Humphrey Hobson, a grandson, who deeded, in 1709, sixty-two acres to Edward Hazen, said to be an exchange. Hazen, who sold to Boynton, may have built here, intending it for his home. It is supposed, however, that, after selling here, he was the builder and occupant for many years of the ancient house in Boxford, on the Salem road, lately demolished by Thomas B. Masury, upon the site of which the present house stands.

Joseph Nelson, the first of this surname to locate in Georgetown, bought in 1707, the year after his marriage to Hannah, the daughter of Deacon Samuel Brocklebank, the Jonathan Harriman place on Bradford Street, Rowley, and probably lived there until his removal here. There is reason to believe that a part of this house was built by Boynton or Hazen, as early as 1715. Boynton, perhaps, intended after selling to build for himself more to the westward, but was prevented, for we find him selling, the next year, thirty acres more to Mr. Nelson, with a barn upon it. This tract adjoined land he had previously sold to John, the eldest son of Deacon Brocklebank. He also sold Richard Boynton nine lots on range T, in the "Three thousand acres." Nelson had been an owner of land for years in this same Elders plain, buying of Jonathan Boynton and his father-in-law, Deacon Brocklebank.

This *Jonathan Boynton* was, we think, a son of Captain Joseph, and figures prominently in our early history. In 1710 or 1711 Joseph deeds to Jonathan one hundred and twenty acres, located on the east side of the above-named tract of land, then belonging to Hazen. This ran back to the south, reaching the town commons. Doubtless he built on this land; perhaps it included the Tenney estate, on Tenney Street, and that the house occupied by three generations of that name was built by him. Boynton was the first parish clerk, and in office until 1740. A Boynton family removed to Tewksbury from this town about 1738, and a Jonathan Boynton to Lunenburg in 1758. Jonathan Boynton and wife, Elizabeth, were dismissed in June to the church in that town. It is not known whether this was the parish clerk, or a Jonathan Boynton of a later generation. Others of this surname who were not residents, were Caleb, a land-holder in South Georgetown, and Benoni, who married a sister of Nathaniel Mighill, and had a freehold in this part of the town. It is a curious fact, not generally known, that Sir William Phips at one time bought or rented a Boynton house in Rowley and perhaps resided there.

In the spring of 1714 Deacon *Samuel Brocklebank*, the son of the captain, who was killed by the Indians deeded to his son John for £60, to be paid to his eldest son, Samuel S., (then probably deceased), three daughters £20 to each when they come of age, or marriage, which may come first, all the land "then belonging to this farm, west of the brook, which runs midway of the present Elm and Central Streets, known to the present generation as the Brocklebank house, recently taken down by Mrs. G. W. Boynton, and upon the site of which her present house stands. Its demolition removed a distinguishing time-mark from the central village.

At the time this land was deeded to *John Brocklebank*, Main Street, from his father's house, now M. G. Spofford's, to the present centre, was not opened. There is no reference to a highway or a path even, and the land as deeded beginning in the rear of the Chaplin shoe factories, had the brook for a boundary until it came "unto ye great brook" with that for a bounds until the angle is reached, and from that bend across the wooded upland to the "Andover road," now North Street, at some point east of the Baptist Church. The land of Richard Boynton bounded on the east. The course was then westward, with Andover road as the bounds, until near the house of Miss M. A. Sawyer, on Andover Street. "It (says the deed), come to Land that I had allowed for my highway Through my farm." This old proprietors' way, the westerly bounds of this ancient farm, not far from the railroad, is visible to this day, a lane south of the residence of D. C. Smith, on Central Street, being, perhaps, its southern terminus. This road was used by the farmers on Spoffords' hill, until the opening of Central Street from the Brocklebank house to Chaplinville, which was laid out about midway of this farm. The sandy knoll, now Harmony Cemetery, had for some years a watch or block-house on its highest point, built to guard against raids from the Indians. In 1720 Deacon Brocklebank deeded the remaining half of his farm ("where I now dwell," says the deed) to his youngest son *Francis Brocklebank*. The conditions were specified sums, to daughters Elizabeth (Pingry) and Hannah (Nelson), and several granddaughters, with care for himself and wife through life, and Christian burial. The father was living in 1722, and aided in correcting the boundary line west of Baldpate hill.

In January, 1715, *Jonathan Harriman*, the same, who several years before had sold his homestead in

Rowley to Joseph Nelson, bought of Thomas Lambert, one-half of the Rogers or Lambert farm, near Pentucket Pond. The other half, it will be remembered, Benjamin Plumer, had been in possession of, since 1707. This extensive tract of six hundred acres or more, not having been divided, a division was then made by Harriman and Plumer. One Bayley had land near this farm. Perhaps the Bailey road was named for him. On the southwesterly side of the pond, it was agreed, that Harriman should have the easterly, and Plumer the westerly part of the farm.

On the northeasterly side, a line was run at some distance from the pond, Harriman to have the land at north of this line, and *Thomas Plumer*, a son of Benjamin, on the southerly side, or nearest the pond. This part of the Harriman land, must have crossed the boundary into Bradford, but when granted to Mrs. Rogers, before the new line between Rowley and Bradford was run, was all within Rowley limits. Such a division seems to have been philosophical and harmonious. In its primitive aspects, it reminds one of the Orient, and recalls the story of Abram and Lot.

The brook above Pentucket was equally divided between Benjamin Plumer and Harriman, both having seen a mill privilege on the brook, and Harriman included in the division agreement, liberty to "Digg rocks and Gravel to make a Damm, and a convenient yard for a Mill."

This deed to Thomas Plumer from Benjamin, was given on the same day as Harriman's from Lambert, and was for one hundred and forty acres. At about this date (1715), was doubtless the erection of the Plumer house on Mill Street, now occupied by Mrs. J. C. Hoyt and Wm. Day. This house on the end toward the lake, has a facing of brick, and is said to have been so built, as a protection against Indians, and on this end only, because of its nearness to the lake, and that in approaching the house for attack, the builders supposed, the Indians would come along the lake in their canoes. This land of Thomas Plumer, all lay at the left of Parker River, as one descends the stream.

No highways are mentioned, therefore Mill Street, the Jacobs Road and North Street, to its junction with Thurlow Street, at Hale's corner in Groveland, were as yet, unopened. Jonathan Harriman, in 1721, then styled Sergt., deeds to his son Leonard, forty acres of the Lambert farm, and one-eighteenth part of the saw-mill. Afterwards, perhaps on the same day, an equal area, with an eighteenth part of the saw-mill to his son Nathaniel. John Harriman, another son it is supposed, built the house now owned by Flint Weston. He was the ancestor of H. N. Harriman, town clerk and publisher of the *Georgetown Advocate*. At a later date a son of his of the same name, built near by. The house of the father, is said to have been on the north side of the upper end of Pentucket Pond.

This land given to Nathaniel Harriman was bounded on the south by land of *John Adams*. This land of Adams had been bought of Benjamin Plumer, the year before the Harriman purchase, and included, what has been known, since about 1800, as the Jacobs farm. The last of the name to occupy the Jacobs house, supposed to have been built by John Adams, was Israel Adams, known in the parish as "Pond Israel." Mr. Benjamin Jacobs, of Maine, then became the purchaser and lived here. Moses Tenney, the father of State Treasurer Tenney, once lived here.

Nearly a half century ago, the house, a one story building, was removed, and is a part of the Aaron Pillsbury house on North Street.

The deed to Plumer from Prime, in 1707, has no reference to the Bradford road, now Main Street, but this to Adams, in 1714, has and it is so-called. Another of the name of Adams, who bought thirty-five acres of land of Plumer in 1716, was Isaac, who as well as John, was previously of Rowley. This was situated at the southerly end of Pentucket Pond, on both sides of what is now Main Street, and was just one mile in length, on Harriman's line. The deed concludes, that "Whereas there is a road or way laid out over Sd. land, and whereas no Satisfaction has been made for it, Sd. Plumer doth by these Presents, Consign over to Sd. Adams, all that ye towne Shall Allow for it."

This road was Main Street, and the Clark house, now owned by Mrs. Laura Ham, was probably built by him, or *William Adams*, who was doubtless a son, not many years afterwards. This William was living in the parish in 1730. There was an *Isaac Adams*, who, in 1729, bought the homestead of Jonathan Look, in Byfield parish, of forty-five acres, with dwelling-house and barn. This was on the borders of Newbury, and near the brook, called Andover Spring Brook (Parker River), and was in the vicinity of the old Pearson house if not that house itself. The last of the name to live in the Clark house was Capt. Benjamin Adams, known as "Lawyer Ben." He won the title from his pugnacity and fondness for litigation. Capt. "Mirabeau" was another familiar name. He obtained this from a fancied resemblance to the famous French advocate. A family likeness to Isaac, who was probably his grandfather, is seen in the complaint of neglect, and the demand for settlement, of land damages, in the original deed from Plumer. He was captain of infantry in several campaigns during the Revolutionary War, was on duty in Rhode Island, and in New York in 1777. Representative to General Court in 1778 and 1780. He removed to Ohio about 1812, and aged citizens can recall the appearance of the wagons loaded with his household goods as they left the town for the long journey westward. Some years afterwards, a son, who was a physician, returned on a visit, driving a superb pair of horses which created quite a sensation in the town.

Abraham Adams, of Newbury, styled mariner in many deeds of land, began to buy freeholds in 1715.

In 1721, and later, he purchased twenty-eight lots, mostly on Range G, in the "Three thousand acres." He had not less than two hundred acres of land, but whether he ever settled here or not is uncertain. He doubtless had that intention, but, as a mariner, may have been lost at sea. From the name, it is probable that he was the father of *Abraham Adams*, whose name first appears on the parish records in 1755, and who bought the original Chaplin house, which was built about 1723, just front of the present residence of Mrs. W. M. Shute, on the early-named Fairface Plain (now South Georgetown) and Nelson Street. This house was bought of Jeremiah Chaplin or his heirs not far from 1750, and was occupied during the building of the present house, which was erected about 1812. The original building was removed to King Street near Groveland Village and is still occupied. This was a building of two stories, having but one room in width, without a kitchen in the rear.

Rev. Phineas Adams, pastor of Third Church (West Haverhill), was from this house. He had the title of A.M. in 1766, was probably a collegiate graduate, and ordained in 1771. During the investment of Boston by General Washington, after the battle of Bunker Hill, the patriotism of this colonial pastor was shown by a contribution of his entire herd of cattle, numbering twenty or more head, which were driven to Cambridge to be slaughtered for the army. Previous to 1720 there were several other families, settling or buying land preparatory to settlement.

Jonathan Wheeler, a son of Jonathan, then styled merchant, bought in 1715 the balance of the Payson land. This tract was on the southeast of the Shepard farm, and probably included what is now known as the Searl farm, so that Wheeler, as well as Bradstreet, lived near, or on Searl Street. This Captain Jonathan Wheeler and family removed to West Haverhill in 1738, and were dismissed to the Third Church; selling their farm to Samuel Harriman, who was the direct ancestor of Governor Walter Harriman, of Warner, N. H., for Samuel, it has been said, for a time lived in that neighborhood. This Samuel was one of the sons of Jonathan Harriman.

John Hazen, carpenter, son of Edward, of Boxford, built in 1717 a house in South Georgetown on East Street. He was the first to build in that afterwards (for the time) populous locality. He married, in 1715, Sarah, the twin sister of the third Philip Nelson. His house is supposed to have stood on the south side of the street, not far from the Dry Bridge road, and on the road known as the Red Shanks highway. This highway began at what is now Elm Street, near the Deacon Haskell Perley house, and extended along the height of the land, over the farm now owned by John S. Kimball, past the ancient Merrill house at the corner, and southerly to this Hazen house. From this point it crossed the upland to the present Salem road, near Mr. Buckminister's, and then westerly, until it made a junction with the early-opened Salem road, on the plain near Timothy Perkins' in Boxford, not far from the house of Francis Marden. The Salem road, past Edward Hazen's (now T. B. Masury), was not opened, and some one living there had often said that he hoped not to live long enough to see a highway past this house. His wish was realized, for at about the time this road was opened, tradition tells us, his death occurred. There was also a road over the hills to the westward, leading to the Spoffords', probably the path now used by Sherman Nelson, to the hill known as the Vineyard lands. Where the bridge over Pen Brook, on East Street, now is, was then the fording-place. Edward Hazen having used this path in going to Deacon Brocklebank's and beyond, it became the road. John Hazen's land was south of the fording-place or bridge. On meadow bought of Jacob Perley at this time a dam is mentioned in the deed.

Samuel Hazen had land in 1725 below Pen Brook, and in 1729 had settled, or was about to settle, in this locality. He was, it is thought, the first owner of the farm now owned by John S. Kimball. Until 1717, any land sold in this part of Beverly was somewhat indefinitely located. From the date of the third division of common land, which was made at about 1700, any lots disposed of were in the form of freeholds, but in 1717 the "Three Thousand Acres" was laid out in ranges, not, however, beginning at one boundary line of the town and continuing in regular alphabetical order, but on a method understood at the time. It seems to have been attempted to make a highway, or at least a proprietors' way; a boundary on one or both of the sides of these ranges. A and B were located in the Red Shanks Hill district. L was south of Nelson Street. C and D south of and along Baldpate Street. Around Rock Pond the land was laid out as H. South of Andover Street over the Thurston land (now a part of the Samuel Little farm) was range R, with S and T opposite, on the present Samuel Noyes' place, and beyond westwardly. Land grants were often made before this careful mapping of the territory, and afterwards it would be found that the lot was already included in a previous grant or purchase, as, for instance, eleven years after Isaac Adams bought his farm near Pentucket Pond of Plumer, he found that the town had given John Hazen two acres within the same farm. This was made satisfactory by a deed from Hazen. After John Hazen had built his house on East Street, his father was obliged to get his title to the farm, which he had given John, confirmed by the town. Something of the irritation which resulted can be conceived, and yet one can imagine that at an early period a little of the squatter-sovereignty feeling prevailed, and that possession and improvement were at least considered as nine points in the law. After 1717, the disposal by the town of both the upper and the middle commons was by a methodical system of ranges and lots. It will be remembered that the Brocklebank farms, all

the Elder Reyner lands, which had come to the Hobsons, and by them sold to other parties, and the Lambert farm, at this time owned by the Plumers, Harrimans, Holmes and Adams, were by special grants, and already, in some cases, private deeds had been given, not once but twice, at different dates for the same land. This disposal in 1717 was the balance of the common land above and below Pen Brook, and was by lots, and each lot recorded when drawn. The record of the names, as drawn, is missing from the collection of books at the Clerk's office in Rowley. In the deeds of these lots, given by individuals at a later day, this record was called the Book of Commoners. The diagrams of these ranges, of different lengths, with the lots, from two to forty in number, are on record, carefully executed by some draughtsman before the lots were drawn.

The original titles to all the lands in the "Three Thousand Acres" not previously granted, and much of the intervening middle commons, bear date at this important point, 1717. The community, the corporate body, the town, had the power thus delegated to it by the Colonial Government to grant personal titles to all land included within its domains, and the same power that granted, it would seem, could compel a surrender if needful for the public good.

The lots on these ranges were generally of about five acres in extent, long and quite narrow, a minute subdivision which is seen in the numerous division-fences, the stone foundations of which are still visible all over this tract. This division into such small lots led to many purchases by those intending to settle, so as to have acreage equal to the needs of a farm.

Perhaps the first of the early settlers to buy freeholds extensively in the three thousand acre tract was *Richard Dole*, cordwainer, of Rowley. He secured several, and after the division into lots, obtained from one and another by purchase or exchange, lots to the number of twenty-one. His first intentions were perhaps to locate on Red Shanks highway, buying land there in 1722. In 1726, however, he purchased largely south of Baldpate Street, and doubtless built a house there soon after. This house was probably built on land now owned by G. S. Weston, and which had for its last occupant the widow of Captain Moses Dole. Cuffee Dole, an African of ebon blackness, was the servant of this family until the death of the aged widow. It is said, that when but an infant, he was bought by Captain Dole, in Danvers, for about ten pounds. A death-bed confession of the woman who sold him, was, that he was free-born and had been placed in her care by his mother living in Boston. Cuffee, by diligent search, after years of servitude, found the story was true. Still he clung to his old home, until at the demolition of the old mansion, early in the present century, he became a member of the family of Rev. Mr. Braman, where he died. For many years, any invasion of his prerogatives, as caretaker at funerals and other public occasions, met with his wrath and scorn. His grave in Union Cemetery is marked with this, "A respectable man of color." His estate, of one thousand dollars, was left to Mr. Braman.

There was another house, which was probably built on the Dole lands, not far from Baldpate Street, on land now owned by Henry Kennett. It has been thought that this was an early Spofford house, but possibly it was the original house of Richard Dole. It had the reputation for many years of being "a haunted house." Mr. Nathan Perley, John Bettis and others, watching with sick people, told strange stories of what they heard and saw. It was removed before this century and re-built in Sherman Nelson's house on Elm Street. No person now living can give any definite clue as to who, at any time, lived in it when on its former site.

Richard Boynton, perhaps the same, whose land adjoined the farm of John Brocklebank, near Pen Brook, bought thirteen lots on ranges S and T in 1724–25, on the north side of Andover Street, and built there. The house on the summit of Spofford's Hill, now owned by Samuel Noyes, is in part at least quite ancient, and doubtless is the original house. Moses Boynton, carpenter and bridge-builder, was living there less than three-fourths of a century ago.

Another family of some prominence who settled about a mile to the south, was that of *Burpee*. From the fact that *Thomas Burpee*, the west parish settler, sold his dwelling-house at the east end of the Ox-pasture in Rowley, in the winter of 1724, it is probable that he came here soon afterwards. He built on the southerly slope, of what was soon known as Vineyard Hill, on land now owned by Chas. E. Chaplin, and just about midway of Baldpate and Nelson Streets. From its sunny location, and the abundance of choice fruit grown on this sixty acre farm, it obtained the name of the Vineyard. On the height of the hill, just in the rear of the site of the house, on land that is now owned by Sherman Nelson (then Dole lands), stands the walnut tree, which has been a conspicuous mark for sailors, on our eastern coast, perhaps from the time that Thomas Burpee first came here, and it is still fresh and vigorous. There was a cross-way from the parish farm, occupied by the Spoffords, past this house, reaching Nelson Street, near the ancient Elm, at the foot of the hill, by Mrs. W. M. Shute's. From thence it connected with the Salem road past Oak Dell and over Pen Brook. Although this path has not been travelled for nearly a century, it shows in places the marks of the travel of former times. About 1787, this farm was sold, and a part of the house re-built, in the house of L. L. Dole on Elm Street. Amos Nelson who built about 1767, the house of C. E. Chaplin, on Nelson Street, bought the land surrounding this Burpee house, and used a part as a kitchen for his own dwelling. Ebenezer Burpee, who lived here, a carpenter, was probably a son of Thomas, and was parish clerk for twenty-five years.

Nathaniel Perkins, a son-in-law of Edward Hazen, about 1722, began to buy lots on range L, extending from Nelson Street (Fairface highway, then called) to Boxford Line, north of Lake Raynor. Afterwards buying the Cooper land, south of the town boundary, it carried his land to the shore of the lake. He also owned the Raynor meadow, just below and adjoining the lake. His house was about midway between Nelson Street and the lake, and was erected about 1725. This farm was owned by himself and heirs until 1788, when it was sold to Major Asa Nelson, who lived on Nelson Street. Mr. Perkins was not connected with the west parish, and in no wise identified with its interests. In 1766, he aided in the enlargement of the cemetery, near B. S. Barnes' house, in Boxford. In the winter of 1778, there were several sick with the small-pox in the Perkins house and vicinity, the sickness finally became epidemic, and this house being isolated from other habitations was used as the hospital or pest house. Several victims were buried near the foot-path leading to the lake, about forty rods from the house. It was claimed that the smoke, from the chimneys of houses where the sick were, carried the disease from one house to another in this locality. The families of Amos and Asa Nelson, Mr. Perkins' neighbors on Nelson Street, removed, the one to the Burpee, the other to the Brocklebank house, the men only daily returning to care for the barns and farm-stock. This Perkins family, like many others at that time, are said to have removed to New Hampshire. On a little knoll just southeast from Edward U. Nelson's house, who with his sister are owners of this farm, is a hollow, said to have been dug by a member of the Perkins family, as the cellar for an intended house. It is said the death of this young man, during the war of the Revolution, whether abroad or at home, is not known, left this hollow as the only memorial of the house that was to be. This Perkins house had a chequered history, much more than the average New England farm-house. It was taken down in 1856, the material being used in building the house of W. M. Dorgan, on Pond Street.

William Fiske was settled in this town as early as 1727. His father, Samuel Fiske, of Wenham, bought property in Boxford late in the seventeenth century. In 1716 he deeded to his son William the dwelling-house he was then in possession of. In the spring of 1727 William bought of Abraham How, of Ipswich, a lot on range H below Pen Brook. In October of that year, he was in Rowley. It is said that his house was built east of the house of Mrs. Sylvanus Merrill, near the lower end of the garden. He was a constituent member of the First Congregational Church in Georgetown, being one of the eighteen males dismissed from Byfield, and was at once elected deacon. The family seems to have become extinct at his death.

William Searle was an early settler on the Raynor Plain (Marlborough). His father, William, came to Rowley perhaps from Ipswich between 1680 and '90, and doubtless died as a member of Captain Philip Nelson's company, in Governor Phips' expedition against Quebec. William Searle, of the west parish, married Jane, a granddaughter of Captain Philip Nelson, about 1722, and settled here soon afterward. The ancient house, supposed to be built by him, was demolished by Deacon John Platts more than a half-century ago. The house now owned by Mrs. Sylvanus Merrill was built on the same site. Mr. Searle was, like his neighbor Deacon Fiske, a constituent member of the First Church, and was also made a deacon at the organization.

Another house, thought to have been built prior to 1730, and still standing, is on Chaplin's Court, and the property of Miss Jane Edmonds. This was perhaps built by *Jonathan*, a brother or son of *Jeremiah Chaplin*. Here lived Elder Asa, and here was born, in 1776, or early resided, his son Jeremiah Chaplin, D.D., the first president of Colby University, Waterville, Me., and who continued in office fifteen years. It is said that Gen. B. F. Butler was under his instruction for several years. Descendants noted as educators and in the world of letters are his son Jeremiah, a Baptist clergyman and writer, the husband of Jane Dunbar, and the father of Heman L., a lawyer in Boston; Mrs. Hannah, wife of Prof. George Conant, of Hamilton, N. Y., in whose family his last years were spent, and other daughters, who married Baptist ministers. Dr. Chaplin united with the Baptist Church in Georgetown before his eleventh year. He was a graduate of Brown University, 1799. An item in the account book of Benjamin Adams, of South Georgetown, is, "Dr., June, 1799, Elder Asa Chaplin for use of chaise to go to Providence to see Jeremiah graduate."

A name of distinction for about three-fourths of a century was that of Thurston. Sergt. Daniel Thurston, of Newbury, bought freeholds west of Pen Brook as early as 1714.

After the division into ranges and lots, he acquired several lots by purchase or exchange on Range R, south of Andover Street, upon which a house was built. It is not known whether he setttled here, but *Jonathan Thurston*, probably a son, was living here doubtless in 1731. He and wife Lydia were original members of the First Church, and may have been settled here a year or two prior to 1730. Mr. Thurston was the first parish clerk, holding the office eight years. The house, a spacious mansion with eight square rooms, was sold in 1800, with the farm of forty or more acres to Rev. Isaac Braman. Much of the material of this venerated mansion when demolished was used by George J. Tenney in the erection of Tenney's Hall, now the residence of Mr. H. N. Harriman. Three generations of the Thurston family had dwelt under its roof, Daniel and Stephen finally removing, the one to Ipswich the other to Andover. The descendants who visit with

reverence the spot where the house once stood are numerous and influential.

The southerly slope of Baldpate Hill was partially cleared by Nathaniel Mighill, of Rowley, who was a grandson of Deacon Thomas Mighill (the first who cleared land in Georgetown), at an early date. In 1716 Nathaniel began his extensive purchase of land. Later, perhaps in 1724 or '25, having bought lots on ranges D and E, he built the easterly front of the present Mighill house, on Baldpate Street. It is a family tradition that it was not permanently occupied for some years. Some of the family, it is said, spent the summer months here, returning to Rowley in the autumn, and that one son and then another would attempt to settle, only to go back to the old homestead. Finally, *Stephen Mighill*, the eldest, about 1733 or '34 removed here, was elected deacon in 1747, and was quite active in parish affairs. In all deeds he was styled "maltster." This was the partial occupation of the family in Rowley; the malt-house of Deacon Thomas of date 1650, was located just east of the barn of his descendants, the present owners of the estate. The malt-house at their Georgetown estate was standing and continued to bear this name until within the past twenty years. The family of Deacon Stephen Mighill were quite aristocratic, and had negro servants. One by the name of Sabina was afterwards in Rev. Mr. Chandler's family, and was remembered by him in his will. Chloe was another, and is said to have been purchased by Mr. Amos Nelson. He gave her the freedom she coveted. Another of Mr. Nelson's colored friends lived for many years in Boxford, and annually presented her benefactor with stockings and mittens of her own knitting.

David Mighill, a grandson of the Deacon, graduated at Dartmouth in 1809, and was a town physician for about forty years. He had conferred upon him the degree of LL.D. as well as that of M.D. He first practiced in Dunbarton, N. H., where he married Betsy Mills and where his eldest son John (Mills) was born, who now resides on the old farm. He had quite an inventive gift, and one of his devices, a pump, proved very valuable to the party who obtained the patent. Stephen, a son of the above, was in medical practice for several years in Roxbury and Boston. His sister Irene married Dr. Moses Spofford, who for many years divided the practice of the town and parish with Dr. Mighill, his brother-in-law.

Solomon Nelson was another early settler. Soon after his marriage to Mercy, the daughter of Jeremiah Chaplin in 1725, he and his cousins followed their uncle Gershom to what was then the town of Mendon, now Hopedale, where he bought land in the wilderness, and remained there until 1729. Returning to Rowley in April, he bought a lot of five acres on range M, and probably built that year on the spot upon which the house of the writer stands, now occupied by Leon S. Gifford. The original house, with its additions, became quite extensive, and was taken down in 1838. Mr. Nelson was highly esteemed by the parish, was frequently an assessor, and was treasurer and collector for perhaps twenty years.

His descendants of special prominence are Hon. Jeremiah Nelson, late of Newburyport, who was a member of Congress from the Essex North district for several terms; Rev. William B. Dodge, who for years was noted as an educator and philanthropist, the "Master Dodge," of Salem, Mass., and General G. M. Dodge, chief engineer of the Central Pacific Railroad, who was urged by President Grant, it has been said, to take the position of Secretary of War in his first cabinet, but declined the honor. A daughter, Huldah, who married Elder Samuel Harriman, died in March, 1848, aged one hundred years and nearly six months. In native vigor of mind and mental acumen, and although comparatively uneducated, having much of the masculine force of the historian Hannah Adams, she perhaps exceeded any other person of her sex ever born in the town.

CHAPTER LIII.

GEORGETOWN.—*Continued.*

PARISH ORGANIZATION—FIRST CONGREGATIONAL AND BYFIELD.

At the beginning of the year 1700 there were about twenty families settled within the limits of the territory now known as Georgetown. Of this number four-fifths at least were in the easterly or Byfield section of the town. With two possible exceptions, that of John and Samuel Spofford, who went to Bradford meeting, all attended religious services at Rowley. Not less than one hundred and twenty families, with a population of over six hundred, were residents of Rowley at that time. They were liberal toward their ministers. The estate of Mr. Rogers was appraised at fifteen hundred pounds, perhaps equal to twenty-five thousand dollars in our day, while Mr. Shepard, after a pastorate of only about three years died, leaving an estate equal by our standard to nearly ten thousand dollars.

The Rowley farmers were prosperous, and in view of their prosperity there should have been a readiness to aid the weak parishes in the interior. Instead, the people of Rowley village (afterwards Boxford), were to pay *one-half* of their minister-rates to Topsfield.

The Topsfield meeting was the one they attended, and why not have granted them authority to pay all their rates to Topsfield and aid that slow-growing settlement. Communities were isolated, wrapped up in their own local interests, and there was very often manifest, a marked want of breadth and generous feeling. One peculiar feature, shown in documents of the time, bearing on the alliance between church

and State, was that the church preceded the State, the organization of the State being apparently to maintain and perpetuate the church, and therefore we find it made the basis of appeals from communities for incorporation as towns. Under that system the civil law was the source of the strength of the church, and the Boxford petitioners then said to the General Court, when asking for town rights, "now we have no way to compel any person to do his duty, if he will not doe it of himself" and to have the power to compel a person, they asked for separate sovereignty, and it was granted. When town incorporation was not thought advisable parishes were established. This word happily becoming obsolete in the New England signification, and probably in its primal meaning (that of the source of a benefice or supply), was first considered as feasible in what is now Georgetown in 1701.

December 16th, of that year, a religious service having been established, perhaps for a year or more westerly of Rye Plain Bridge, the families located there asked Rowley to have their rates abated. This was partially granted, the vote being to abate one-half of the minister-rates of Jonathan Wheeler, Benjamin Plumer, Samuel Brocklebank, John Browne, Nathaniel Browne, Jonathan Look, James Chute, Andrew Stickney, Henry Poor, Duncan Stewart, Ebenezer Browne, Ebenezer Stewart, John Lull, James Tenney, John Plumer, Richard Boynton and Josiah Wood.

This petition and the partial response implies some action already taken, perhaps a meeting-house raised and covered, in which services were held, and on the completion of it the vote of the town, March 16, 1702–3, was passed, which *verbatim* is this: "The Inhabitants of ye Rowley living on the Northwest side of the bridge called Rye plain bridg, and on the North west side of the hill called Long hill, and Joyned with the farmers of Newbury that doth border on us, in building a new meeting house for the worship of God, Shall be Abatted their Rattes in the ministry Rate in the Towne of Rowley, if they do maintain with the help of our neighbors of Newbury, an Otthoxdoxs ministry to belong and teach, in that meeting-house that they have built, until Such time as it is judged that their is asufishant Number, to maintain a minister in the North west part of our Towne, without the help of our neighbors of Newbury, that doth border upon us, whose names are as followeth:" (The seventeen as above, with Lionel Chute added.) When the population would warrant, another parish was to be formed, exclusively of Rowley families. The first meeting-house in this parish was near where the present house stands. This part of Newbury was the "Falls," and this part of Rowley was "Rowlbery."

In the records of the Rowley church the parish was called Byfield in 1706, and yet that year it was incorporated as "The Falls." Hon. Nathaniel Byfield, of Boston, perhaps connected with some of the families in the parish, may have aided in building the meeting-house, and some proposed giving it his name. After his gift of a bell, it was decided to call it Byfield in his honor. An endeared name to multitudes living and dead.

Rev. Moses Hale, of Newbury, was ordained November 17, 1706, as the first minister. A graduate of Harvard in 1699. Died January 16, 1744–45.

The records of the Church, to the death of Mr. Hale, are lost. Perhaps a search might be successful. In 1707 the parish lines were established. This included from Rye Plain bridge, up an ancient way near Francis Nelson's house, over Long Hill, across Elder's Plain, by Deacon Brocklebank's (now M. G. Spofford's), and to the Bradford line, including within its limits all of the Lambert farm, near Pentucket Pond, being in all one-half of the area now Georgetown. It probably being "judged that there is asufishent Number to maintaine a minister in the Northwest part of our Town," in the language of the Rowley records, steps were taken, perhaps as early as 1727, preparatory to petitioning for incorporation as a separate parish. Since 1700, and especially since 1725, as is seen in Chapter LI, a rapid settlement had gone forward. We can imagine John Spofford and the Plumers, in earnest conversation with their near neighbors on the question, and some strong assertions that the time had come to build a meeting-house here.

There is no doubt such important action was discussed for at least one or two winters around the broad hearth and in the light of their hickory fires, some confident, others doubting, until at a meeting in some one of the old-time kitchens, it was decided that in the coming winter of 1728–29, they would sled to the Harriman & Plumer mill on Rock Pond Brook, logs for the lumber needed for the house. The Brocklebanks were interested, suggested the lot below Pen Brook on Main Street, at the corner of the early opened road, near where David Brocklebanks' house stands, and the heavy oak frame was provided, squared, and in June 1729 was raised, soon boarded in, and the first rude meeting-house completed. This was a proprietors' building; some in the vicinity were not then interested, and the erection of this first meeting-house was not a general affair. There were no dedication ceremonies, that is an innovation of much later times. The name was properly meeting-house, and at that day it meant nothing more. There was no sacredness in the building itself, for that savored of the Episcopacy they abhorred. In most cases there was no burial of their departed friends in the shadow of these New England houses for meetings.

To be nearly central as possible was one thing, to have it open to the public highway for convenience, seems to have been another.

May 27th, 1730, a petition for a distinct parish was signed by forty-two persons and presented to the General Court.

October 1, 1731, it was ordered "That Mr. Benjamin Plummer, a Principal Inhabitant of the precinct Lately set off from the town of Rowley, and parish of Byfield, is Authorized to Notifie the Inhabitants to convene in some publick Place, to Choose precinct officers, to stand until the Anniversary meeting in March next." J. Quincy was speaker and Jonathan Belcher, governor (later a friend of Whitefield), who approved. The names of Captain John Spofford, Benjamin Plummer and Jonathan Thurston do not appear on the petition. They were, doubtless, originally not favorable to the movement.

"By Virtue of the above Precept the Inhabitants of the New precinct assembled togather on the fifth of October, 1731."

Lieutenant John Spafford was elected moderator and Jonathan Boynton clerk, to serve until the meeting in March. Lieutenant John Spafford, Elder Jeremiah Chaplin, Ensign Benjamin Plummer, Mr. William Searl and Mr. Aaron Pengry were elected assessors, and Jonathan Thurston and Samuel Johnson, collectors. These were the first legal officers of most of the territory now known as Georgetown.

Nearly a year before the church was organized, on October 25, 1731, the parish voted "to call Mr. Daniel Rogers, that hath preached with us, to be our minyster." "Nov. 9, 1731, voated that Lieut. John Spafford Should build the Galery Stairs, and Joyce for the Galery flore, and Lay the said flore with Yalow pine boards, and to make three Seats in the frunt Galery, and two Seats on each Side Galierys."

This describes the house in part, a plain building, without steeple or spire, and at this date still unfinished.

"Jan. 4, 1731–32, It was a Greed & Voated to call Mr. Chandler of Andover, the Gentleman that hath preached with us of Late, to be our Minister, and it was Voated by every man then Assembled." Salary to be "one hundred and ten pounds pr. year, to be Stated by the Standard, acording as mony Should Grow better or worse," and "three hundred pounds for Settlement." Five parish meetings had been held.

March 27, 1731–32, First annual meeting "voated Mr. Chandler twenty cords of wood a year." August 8, 1732, voted "By the major part of the Builders of the Meeting-House, that the Rest of the people in said parish should have an Equal prevelige with us, in s^{d}. meeting-house, so Long as it stands in the place where it now is." John Harriman dissented. Some were not satisfied with the location, and the same dissatisfaction continued for several generations.

Mr. Chandler accepted this purely parish call, and it was voted by the parish, September 20, 1732, for the ordination, October 18, 1732. The minister was in this particular instance selected by the parish, which virtually represented the town of to-day.

Three-fourths of a century of independent churches makes it somewhat difficult to have a clear comprehension of the conditions of Church and State, as then existed. The law of the colony recognized but one religious organization, and that equally with all other public interests, was sustained and perpetuated by the "law's strong arm." The church was organized just two weeks before the ordination, for which preparations were going on among the thirty or more families with harmony and enthusiasm.

Perfectly united as the parish was in Mr. Chandler, as Jonathan Boynton informs us in his careful record, we can believe that every housewife did her best to make the important affair something to recall with pride, long afterward. Ten pounds was voted to Jeremiah Harriman to make provision for ministers and messengers and "some other Gentlemen that wates on the ministers," colored servants, probably.

The lofty airs common to their class at this period, on occasions of the importance of an ordination, have often been described. The ministers and their attendants, doubtless assembled at the Deacon Brocklebank house, where his son Francis then lived. It was voted that "William Fiske have ten pounds, to provide for Scholars and other Gentlemen." The churches of Byfield, Bradford, Boxford, Andover, Rowley, and the Second of Newbury were represented. The sermon was by Mr. Rogers of Boxford, from John 21 : 15, 16, 17; and the services were concluded by singing part of the 132d Psalm.

At the church organization, two weeks previously, Mr. Hale of Byfield constituted and Mr. Balch of second Bradford (now Groveland), preached a sermon, afterwards printed.

The records of the church from this date are in the minute and delicate penmanship of Mr. Chandler. "Nov., 1732, a Desent Seat for Deacons and a Communion table ordered to be built." "Mar., 1732–33, Ebenezer Burpee instructed to put up two rails, bools and banisters at the end of the pulpit stairs." "July 17, 1733, voted to Joseph Nelson, twelve pounds, to provide for the raising of Mr. Chandler's house and barn." The house was built just west of the church, on the site of which the house of Humphrey Nelson now stands. This house, built in 1733, was burned on Town Meeting day, April 4, 1825. The cause was a defective chimney. Most of the adult males of the parish were in Rowley at the time.

At this date, 1733, the line between Byfield and this parish was settled "with Leonard Harriman's widow and David pearsons to belong to the west parish of Rowley, and so Jedediah pearsons' Land to belong to Byfield." "Dea. Searl was chosen to go down to the Generall Court, to see what may be gotten of the town rents." December, 1735, the same was chosen to receive the money that the parish is to have of the town, and also the rent of the thatch-bank. This land in Rowley, marsh and upland, was often ditched, leased by the parish every three years, and finally, in 1856, was leased for nine hundred and ninety-nine years. The railroad near the Rowley station was laid

out over it for a considerable distance, and land damage awarded in 1839.

Pews in the meeting-house were not made as yet, but in December, 1736, Mr. Chandler had the "Liberty of a pew at the west end of the pulpit." It was also voted "to lease that part of Spofford's farm that has been set off to the west parish." This division of the parish land had been made in July, 1735.

The northerly side of the farm, then occupied by Samuel Spofford, had come to the west parish, one-half of Half-moon meadow, four lots of land in the upper commons, or two freeholds, and the thatch-bank at Oyster Point. John and Jonathan Spofford, nephews of Samuel, occupied the southerly half. March, 1737, the parish voted to lease the wood lots, and voted again to lease their Spofford farm. The Parish farm at that time had been improved by the Spofford family for nearly seventy years. Samuel was nearly ninety years of age and an extensive landholder, especially in Boxford. He had seen this farm reclaimed from the wilderness by his father, himself and brothers, and now it was, like the parish, to be divided in twain. He had lived to see a meeting-house, with the houses of energetic farmers, scattered all along the easterly slope below him, and forming in themselves and families the west parish of Rowley. At their first coming this family expected others would soon follow, and no doubt, as the years moved wearily on, with a monotonous tread, and they were still nearly alone, it seemed as if Elders and Fairface plains, the Lambert farm, Red Shanks, the Rocky hills and Baldpate would never have the clearings they so longed to see. He had heard from many a lip the thrilling story of Mrs. Dustin and her Indian captors; saw, perhaps, the murdered Goodrich family buried near where they were slain; the smoke from the burning homes of his Haverhill neighbors had spoken a tale of horror on that fateful October morning, 1706—and still he and his kindred had been nearly alone, doubtless only the Brocklebanks to relieve the solitude. Father and brothers, the only companions of his youth and earlier manhood, had long before passed from this wilderness into the "pleasant land," and still he had lived on, and when an aged patriarch, as the last decade in his life draws near, all at once, as it were, there is the stir of human life on every hand. The sound of the axe and the crash of the giants of the forest is heard, and land grants, transfers and allotments is the animated debate that makes it seem like a new world upon which he has entered. This venerable pioneer, soon after the organization of the West Parish Church, was received into membership, being dismissed from the Rowley Church. He died January 1, 1743, aged ninety-one years.

The farm was leased February 22, 1737–38, for nine hundred and ninety-nine years. Five members of the parish objected.

The divisional parts of the meeting-house were early called pens, and in the year 1741 the parish voted "to sell the pencs in the gallery to David Nelson, also to lay out the Rome for the pencs, and sell the Rome for the pencs at the hiest bider." In 1742 an addition to the house of thirteen feet four inches was voted, and Richard Thurston was engaged to build this extension.

In 1744 it was voted that the builders of the house should have the two hind seats of the men and the women's below, they giving a bill of sale of the meeting-house. Until then, the proprietors had the house under their control. The pulpit was to be painted, and Samuel Harriman had twenty pounds for "Reding the meeting-house." A few buildings painted that peculiar shade of red, were to be seen thirty years ago. About that date, the Ipswich farmers (afterwards known as Linebrook), petitioned for some families to be set off to them. The Linebrook parish probably asked for a part of what is now Dodgeville, as the west parish ran easterly of what at present is known as the Phillips' place. To illustrate the spirit of the New England minister at this period, while an improvement was shown in the outward work of the parish, Mr. Chandler suggested, in May, 1747, to prevent profanation of the Lord's Day, and as many live at considerable distance, to have a sermon read between public service, through the summer season. This custom was continued for half a century.

A severe drought in 1749, was a cause for alarm, and a church fast was voted June 4th. The hay crop is said to have been so short, that weeds and almost every imaginable green thing was cured for substitutes. The meeting-house needed repairs, and a vote so passed in 1758. The question of removal to the "senter of the parish," was agitated. "Mr. John Brocklebank's corner, near his house," was suggested, the expense to be raised by subscription. In 1759 a motion was made "to get an artice to mesure and draw a plan, to know where the senter of sd parish is." The above motion was promptly negatived. In 1760 the controversy was such, that as some were for repairs and others for removal, or a new house, that arbitration was voted. The committee were Caleb Cushing, Samuel Phillips and Captain Thomas Dennis. Their decision was to continue the house where it then stood. Dudley Tyler, who then owned the Brocklebank house near the meeting-house, was Innkeeper, and provided for the committee. Only some limited repairs voted, while a pediment over the front door and other attractive improvements had been suggested.

In 1762 it was voted that "those that have taken pains to Learn the art of Singing," may set in the front gallery. The first reference to singing, is in the church records for 1736, viz.: "Mr. Burpee continued to tune the Psalm in Publick Worship."

In 1763 an innovation was made, which was "to admit Dr. Watts' Imitation of David Psalms, but not wholly to exclude ye old Version." In 1765 Mr.

John Cleveland (then of Ipswich, Chaplain at Fort William Henry, in 1757), "and other gospel ministers, not intending on Mr. Chandler's ministry," are invited to "Prech Lectors." About twenty years before, Whitefield had crossed parish lines, and itinerated in the open air if the meeting-houses were denied him, but before this, whatever the opposition to the multitude of others, that were busy in religious service in an irregular way, Whitefield's abilities were recognized, and his special work seemingly approved. Still, at this late date, there were many ministers and churches, so trammelled by the fetters of the period, that their recognition of Whitefield was but half-hearted.

Tradition says that Mr. Chandler was earnest in persuading Elder Asa Chaplin to attend a service in Georgetown where Whitefield was to preach, and that the elder objected, saying that he had no fault to find with his own minister. "But," said Mr. Chandler, with an emphatic gesture, "Mr. Whitefield does not preach as I do; he preaches with power."

As early as 1754 Mr. Timothy Symmes began to preach in private houses, and his perhaps intemperate remarks, had produced a feeling, which at about that time, in this church, was something more than an annoyance. In 1768 again the old debate came up on repairing the old house, or building a new house, with a more satisfactory location.

April 8, 1768, another meeting, to see whether they would build on the southeasterly end of Mr. Solomon Nelson Juna house, as near as may be, with conveniency." Voted in the affirmative. Later in April, met again, to see if the parish would build at Brocklebank's or Burbank's corner, but the former site had the preference. Meetings were frequently called during the haying season that summer, but the party in favor of building, and of building on Mr. Nelson's land, were always successful. In 1769 the parish ordered to be purchased and a deed taken. At this date, with a new meeting-house assured, we close the chapter.

CHAPTER LIV.

GEORGETOWN—(*Continued*).

EDUCATION—SCHOOLS, LIBRARIES AND LECTURES.

THE establishing of schools was of colonial action at an early date. In 1637 the college was located; in 1642 legislation for local schools, and in 1647 it was ordered that every township of fifty families should have a school to teach children to write and read, because, says the act, "It being one chiefe prect of ye ould deluder Satan, to keepe men from the knowledge of ye Scriptures," and "y^{t} learning may not be buried in y^{e} grave of o^{r} fath^{rs}, in ye church & commonwealth."

With few evasions, this law was obeyed. One hundred householders required a Grammar-school, and churches were also urged, to aid any "pore scholler" to get a collegiate education. Under this system, the schools were essentially parochial, the teachers serving in that office and as ministers' assistants. When Mr. Rogers, of Rowley, added as one of the conditions in his will, that the church should always have two ruling elders, or pastor and teacher, his intention may have been to bring the secular instruction of the young, within church limits. The residents of the West Parish, or Georgetown, March 20, 1737, voted to "Bould a Schoal House, & to set it between the Brook by Capt. Bradstreets, and M^{r} ffrancis Brocklebank's Brook."

The dimensions of this first building erected for schools, was twenty feet long, sixteen wide, with a height of eight feet. The proportions were similar, in all buildings for the same purpose, for a century afterwards. This school-house was on the hill near the Searl place, and was placed there to accommodate Byfield, as well as the West Parish. Later, a vote was passed, "to allow seven shillings and a piney for Rhum, at the Raising of the School House." Instruction on the injurious effects of alcohol on the human constitution would seem rather inconsistent in that school-room.

November 6th Samuel Payson was invited to serve as teacher. Mr. Payson, our first "master," was a son of the Rowley minister, a graduate of Harvard in 1716, and taught in the various sections of the town from 1722 to 1756. Ebenezer Burpee, the carpenter, made the furniture at his house in the Chaplin field, under Vineyard hill, for this primitive school-room, where the sires of our grandparents had their first insight into the mysteries of the three "R's." The vote on the bill to pay Burpee, is novel, and was for "meching forms and tables, for said school-house."

The above vote was passed November 3, 1740, and the house was doubtless ready for the boys that month. In November or December was the time for this school to begin, and eight weeks' schooling in winter was the rule for more than a century. Doubtless the methods of Pedagogue Payson were strict discipline as the *summum bonum*, and his Bible as a leading text-book. This was a boys' school; the daughters in those days did not learn the art of writing, and to learn how to read the Bible and catechism merely, could be taught as well at home. One can imagine the Spofford boys coming down from the hill, David Nelson and the Chaplins from Nelson Street, the Harrimans, Stickneys and others, with a few from Byfield, all perhaps eager to get the benefit, of this first school.

December 30, 1745, the parish voted another school-house, and to set it at the south end of Francis Brocklebank's Hill, between Mr. Chandler's house and the brook. This was where Edward E. Sherburne's house now stands, and may partly have been known to the present generation, in the "Poole house," burned many years ago, on the site of which,

Mr. Sherburn built his house. This school-house was to cost forty pounds, and to be completed by May 1st. A relative of the writer, Aunt Huldah Harriman, taught the girls and children of the parish, in this building, the useful lessons of knitting and plain sewing, with the equally useful reading and spelling, in their rudiments. After her hundredth year, she would tell the story of the gigantic black snake, suddenly uncoiling itself from the rafters of that same school-house, and dropping into her little company of pupils below. This was known as the "Parish," and the first one built, as the "Upper School-House" for years afterwards.

For several years there was an attempt made to have a school kept in this Parish-House, and in November, 1750, it was voted "that the winter, or writing and Reading School, Should be kept only one-third part of the time at the uper School-House," or the first house. After the parish had employed Mr. Payson as teacher, for some years the town took action, and Mr. Benjamin Adams taught in 1742 and again in 1746, four months the first year, and six the second, half of the time in Byfield and half in the West Parish.

This is the first mention of a school in the Byfield part of Georgetown, and as a geographical centre, was the first point to be considered, it might be possible to locate it. Perhaps it was near the present location of what might properly be called Cleaveland School or No. 7, possibly, however, in a private house. At a later date, early in the century, this school-house was located not far from Stickney's Corner, opposite the Pike House. The peculiar site of the first house on Searl Street, was, as a probable centre, of the west part of Rowley. This teacher was doubtless from one of the Adams families, of Rowley or Newbury. He was evidently not a professional instructor. March, 1753, the parish again took up the question of schools, and voted that the school be kept one-third of the time each, at the Parish, at the Upper House and at the house at the easterly end and northerly part of the parish. The last named house was built about this time, at some point near the Parker River Woolen Mills.

In 1749 the town voted that each parish have a sum granted for the support of schools, in accordance with the county taxes paid by each, and this apportionment continued down to modern times, only with the difference of a division among the school districts, instead of parishes.

October 30, 1770, a committee was chosen to find suitable persons to keep school, and as was done seventeen years before, the parish voted that the time for the school be equally divided between the parish, upper and easterly end. Mr. Moses Johnson, of Rowley, was offered the school at the easterly end for three months, at seven dollars per month. William Chandler was engaged to keep the parish school.

Master Chandler was a cousin of Rev. James Chandler, somewhat bookish, and may have kept a fairly good school. Not long after this he removed to Salem, Mass., where he died. At that time the selectmen were requested to set up this Second, or Parish School, "ye Monday after Thanksgiving." In the calendar of the New England farm-house, what possibilities have hung on the issues of that day? the beginning of the winter term of the district school. A few weeks of study under the guidance of a skilful teacher has changed the after-life of many a country boy, and made him a man, valuable to himself and the world around him.

November 9, 1773, Mr. Greenleaf Dole was employed as master, for two pounds thirteen shillings per month. Graduated at Harvard 1771, and Georgetown born. Master Dole achieved such greatness as an instructor that his fame has come down to us. His discipline was severe, and it has been said that one swing of his muscular arm, has sent a whole class ignominiously to the floor. We imagine from all accounts that his severity was sometimes scarcely tempered with mercy. He has, however, left behind him a record in the memories of his pupils, such as no other teacher of that age did, and a picture, that needs no fancy to make complete.

March 26, 1776, an attempt was made, to allow the Grammar School to be kept at the South School-House, their proportion of time. This, the first school-building in South Georgetown, was on the corner of Brook and Central Streets, where the brick house of Lowell G. Wilson now stands. The request does not seem to have been acted upon, the war then bursting upon the country with all its uncertainty, drove all other thoughts from their minds. In 1777 the teacher divided his services for the year, with the school at the North, that on Searl Street, the South School and the easterly end of the parish, but not further down than Mr. Phinehas Dodge's house, and that each family signify, what school-house they choose.

The Parish School-House needed repairs, and a year later it was attempted to repair, or sell. Also voted that the school at the easterly part of the parish be kept at Mr. Sanders, or at Mr. Jeremiah Searl's. Three days afterward, agreed to build a school-house on Spofford's Hill, near Benj. Thurston's house. If we are not mistaken, this stood at the right of the road, not far from Nathaniel Marble's. The southeasterly part of the parish seems to have been complaining at this time, of unfair treatment in the school appropriation, and December 17, 1778, it was voted that all below Muddy Brook (now Dodgeville), and also Abraham Foster, Samuel Kezer, Jedediah Kilborn, Nathaniel Kezer and Samuel Johnson, draw their part of the town's money for schools, and for no other use.

In November, 1779, "Master Dole" was engaged, and all below Muddy Brook were, probably by the vote allowed to hire whom they pleased. February

3, 1785, the important vote was passed, to build a school-house "Somewhere near the Centure," but February 8th, the vote was re-considered, and that is the last reference to the noted Centre School-House, in the records of the parish. The last record relating to schools was December 4, 1792, when John Brocklebank had twelve shillings allowed, for the use of his house for a school in 1791. This school-room was at the east end of the house, and until the building of the red "centre school-house, served a good purpose." This same old house opened its doors for a popular singing school, and was a sort of a parish centre. On that December day, the record says, "from nine of the clock in the morning, to nine in the evening, under the direction of the school committee, the assessors are directed to order the several districts or part districts in the parish, their proportion in money or wood."

Before 1795 this red school-house was, by order of the town, built on what was then Andover Street, where the soldiers' monument now stands. It soon became the educational centre of the parish, and teachers like Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, of Groveland, Colonel Edward Todd, of Rowley (a good mathematician) and others, for many years afterwards, would talk with animation about their pupils in this famous old house. In later days, neglected and dilapidated, strolling Indians made it their abode, and with unlatched door it was the temporary home of any passer-by. Finally, becoming an eyesore to some enterprising unknowns of the town, on the night of April 20, 1840, it was mysteriously demolished.

Text-books for schools were almost unknown prior to 1800. Bailey's and Johnson's dictionaries, one or two geographies, an arithmetic or two, with an accidence, covered about the list of popular aids to knowledge, at least in the country towns, and these books were of English make. Lindley Murray's grammar, and Walsh's arithmetic did a good work, and the models of eloquence in the English Reader were as a new inspiration to the young, early in the present century.

In 1789 towns were authorized by law to locate school districts. In 1840, by subdivisions of the original districts, Georgetown had seven, and the same number, when by the law district lines were abolished. Could a truthful history of the action of some of these school-district meetings, from 1830 to 1850, be made a part of the annals of the town, it would give a better picture of the times than could be drawn from any other source. The prudential committee-man during his term of office, was the most important man in the district. He employed the teachers, cared for the house and the property of the district. Without compensation he served wholly with an eye to the public good.

For some years the town of Rowley appointed a committee to secure teachers, as under the parish law, but from 1830, or earlier, this was left to the district. The supervisors, in the person of Father Braman and perhaps Dr. David Mighill, served without pay, because of their interest in the future of the town. Rev. Mr. Pond was paid a small amount in 1843 for school-committee service, and since with but one or two exceptions, the general supervision of the schools has been a part of the expense of the town. The building of school-houses, under the old law, giving districts control, sometimes rent local communities, as with an earthquake. This was the effect in South Georgetown in 1843 or 1844. Frequent meetings were called, and sharp personalities were used. One prominent citizen denounced all who favored the new house as "foreigners," because it happened that those who had just moved into the district were especially prominent in advocating a new house. The present house in District 2 (which it would be well to call the Chaplin District), was built, however, in the summer of 1844, and modelled after the school-house on Topsfield common. Mr. Montgomery, of Londonderry, N. H., was the first teacher. The house in District 5 (which should be called Plumer), was built in 1851, and, if we are correct, was not until after considerable of a contest. The school-house in the central district was situated nearly opposite the Clark house, on Main Street, and began to be inconvenient and at a distance from the centre of population. After much delay and many district meetings, some declared illegal, a vote was secured in 1854 for a brick building. Tristram Brown was a committee. When half built the contractor failed, and the work placed in new hands for completion. The present house, in District 6, (which might properly be called Tenney) was enlarged and improved in 1861, making it almost a new building, and the same work was done, to some extent, in District 1 in 1865. The old house in this district was near the house of Moses Merrill. For this district the name of Chandler is appropriate.

The town High-school, after much opposition and persistent obstruction, was established at the close of the year 1856, in the Town-house (then recently erected), with Wm. Reed as teacher. He is still living, and if we mistake not is the father of Senator Reed, of Taunton, who was a lad at the time, and attended this first term, One or more of the scholars were twenty-two years of age. Dr. D. M. Crafts succeeded Mr. Reed the following year. In 1858 Edwin Parker, of Charlestown, a graduate of Bowdoin, was engaged, and held the position until 1860, when A. J. Dutton was employed, who taught the school until 1862, when the services of S. C. Cotton, of Sandown, N. H., were secured as a teacher. Mr. Cotton taught until 1866, when Edward S. Fickett was engaged, and, as principal, still holds the position. In the year 1868, assistants were employed, Mrs. M. R. Holmes, M. E. Choate and Sarah R. Barnes, serving in that position and the last named part of the following year. Miss Choate was also assistant for 1870 and 1871.

In 1872 there was a change of assistants each term. In

1873 Miss Lizzie N. Bateman, of this town, was engaged and continued as assistant until 1886, when ill health compelled her retirement, and Miss Alfreda Noyes was appointed.

Some years ago an association of graduates and past and present pupils of the High-school was organized, the annual reunion occurring on the evening of graduation day.

Perhaps the teaching of Miss Sarah E. Horner, in her long term of service, has been more productive of good than that of any other teacher in town. Her influence has been felt in every district and about every school-room has been witness to her industry and tact.

One of the teachers of the private schools, J. C. Phillips, of Lawrence, who about 1847 kept a good school in Tenney's Hall, a room on the second floor of what is now the residence of H. N. Harriman, Central Street, was very successful in impressing some love for study on the dullest of his pupils. The hall on the third floor was for years the exhibition room for panoramas and the like. Mr. Thompson, afterwards a physician, also taught a school of a high grade about 1850. Besides, there were two teachers of select schools in the vestry, on the second floor of what is now W. B. Hammond's house, on Elm Street. Miss M. A. Nelson, of Worcester, a direct descendant from the Rowley family of this name, taught there several years, perhaps from 1840 to 1846.

The advantages of a town Library were advocated by Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, then a teacher in the town, in 1806, and a small collection of theological and other books was made, known as the New Rowley Social Library. There were thirty or more shareholders. In 1860 an Agricultural Library was purchased by seventy-five of the citizens of the town, and including with it what remained of the former collection, there had accumulated volumes to the number of about eleven hundred, owned by one hundred and seventeen shareholders, at the time George Peabody, of London, in 1868, made his gift of the Library and building, now known by his name, to the town of Georgetown. The former Library was then by vote given to the town, to be added to the Peabody gift, and the two combined at the opening of the Peabody Library, were about three thousand five hundred volumes. At present there are about sixty-four hundred volumes, excluding duplicates.

The Trustees, by condition of the gift, are the pastors of the churches *ex-officio*, and six others, elected at the annual town meeting in March. This Town or Peabody Library was first opened July 3, 1869, and fifty-five books delivered, with O. B. Tenney, Librarian, who was in office until his resignation, in December of that year. Richard Tenney was Librarian until 1880, when the writer was elected, holding the position until the spring of 1887, when Mrs. S. A. Holt assumed the duties. During the incumbency of the writer, J. Henry Scates was assistant. For the eighteen years since the opening, the combined delivery aggregates two hundred and fifty thousand volumes. The corner-stone of the Library building was laid September 9, 1866, by Chas. Northend, of Connecticut. The hall was added in 1872, and an extension to the hall some years afterward.

The First Congregational Church have a small Library, which was a bequest from Rev. Mr. Chandler. Some of the ancient works are in Latin, and the collection is unquestionably of great value.

About 1830 there was awakened an ardent longing for knowledge and solid reading in many country villages in New England, and to meet this demand in part the Lyceum was founded. Lecture courses were frequent and well patronized. A periodical, called *The Lyceum*, was published in Boston or Salem, illustrative of the Natural Sciences, as shown in practical every-day life, and many of the lectures given were in that field of thought. A familiar talk on the Electric Telegraph, by Professor Morse (then but comparatively little known), in 1843 or 1844, given in Savory's (of late known as Grand Army Hall), was well attended. This oral instruction, so popular at that day, in the elements of Astronomy and Geology (by Dr. Boynton), Chemistry and the like by others, was supplemented by the School District Libraries, which were edited by Alexander Everett, a cousin of Edward Everett. The State of Massachusetts, because of its importance, as urged by Horace Mann, aided in the work by bringing the cost of these standard volumes, which made the bulk of the Libraries, to an extremely low figure. One of the school district officers, annually elected, was the Librarian, and the library was often changed from one house to another.

Most of the districts in Georgetown had these libraries. It was "knowledge under difficulties," but knowledge highly prized. The school district at that time was a little democracy in itself. It was a period of intellectual awakening, and the mental faculties were aroused to grasp at every new feature in mental or physical phenomena. Mesmerism excited more than a nine days' wonder, and Phrenology, as presented by Prof. Fowler, was an accepted truth to many, and his charts Gospel verities.

In 1841, O. S. Fowler was at the house of Benjamin Adams, in South Georgetown, receiving the curious and believers. A general examination of heads, by those who were his disciples and who studied his numerous works, was made, and character and the true path of life mapped out.

These are some of the mental features of the period. They seem contracted to us, who, with the daily paper, have the world at our doors. Mr. John Knapp, now almost a nonogenarian, began the delivery of Boston daily papers in this town about thirty years ago. In his rounds from house to house, the sales from his basket at first were perhaps hardly a score of copies. To-day the sales must average four hundred copies daily.

Before 1850, a Boston daily paper was a rare sight to many. A copy of the *Boston Atlas* or *Times* was occasionally seen. After the erection of Library Hall, the town was annually favored for several years with a course of lectures and concerts of a high standard of merit. Among the lecturers were Chapin and Phillips, whose "Lost Arts" was delivered in the afternoon, also Charles Kingsley, whose only public appearance, with one exception, while in this country, was in this hall. In a letter, included in the volume containing his "Life and Works," is a reference to Georgetown, its inn (Pentucket house), and a pleasant anecdote of George E. Poor, the son of the landlord. Chas. Bradlaugh, Wm. Parsons and others of note, also lectured in this hall, and concerts by the leading musical talent of Boston were frequently enjoyed.

These varied courses were at an annual cost of five hundred dollars. While the town has no gifts as formerly for entertainments of this class, there is included in the gift of Mr. Peabody and his sister, Mrs. Daniels, a fund for the purchase of books, another for expenses of library, and a building fund of about ten thousand dollars, which by the provisions of the gift, can be used at the discretion of the town, in the erection of a new library building, in any location and at any time, after 1889. Georgetown also has in the interest of education, a prospective free school, of a standard above the average high school in country towns, the funds for which, from about thirty-one thousand dollars, at the first report of the trustees in 1865, has now reached nearly ninety thousand dollars. The original sum was the bequest of John Perley and the school when established will be known as the "Perley Free School. Of the original trustees, but one, Geo. W. Chaplin, is now living. The location of this school is not as yet decided upon. To conclude this chapter we record one thing that is noticeable, in the history of the schools of thirty years ago, and that was the frequent change of teachers. Formerly, many were young men from New Hampshire, seeking the means to get a collegiate course. Now permanency in the position, is the rule in this town, rather than the exception. Then the amount of schooling varied, ranging from twenty to thirty weeks in the different districts, now a gradation of classes, and a school year, gives a beautiful system, but whether all the mechanism of to-day, is of especial advantage to the young, is to some minds questionable.

CHAPTER LV.

GEORGETOWN—(*Continued*).

PARISH AND RELIGIOUS MOVEMENTS CONTINUED TO ABOUT 1830.

In March, 1769, it was decided that the new meeting-house should be set on the southerly side of the road, and on Mr. Nelson's land; that the front should be to the south, leaving sufficient room on the north for a roadway; a porch eleven feet square was voted for the east end, with one door and window; and this, says the record, "to be all finished in good workmanship, with good stairs up the Galliery, and well painted, all to be Done in workmanship, answering with the new house." This and more is recorded by Jeremiah Searl, with some pride in his new office, and enthusiam over the prospects of a new meeting-house.

In June, at a meeting of the parish, a committee was chosen to make ready for the raising and provide for the workmen. The stores were to be kept in the school-house, and John Tenney, William Chandler and Jeremiah Hazen were to look after them. A committee was necessary to watch *some* of the stores and see that they were handled properly. The wise fathers of the parish knew from experience, the danger of careless handling, of that part of the stores which doubtless flowed freely. To conclude the meeting with a climax, all votes for repairing the old house were reconsidered. There was some positive opposition, and ten names were recorded, principally from members living at the north part of the parish as dissenting.

Rev. Mr. Braman in his "Centennial Discourse," December 6, 1832, refers to three of those who are named on the record, as declaring that they would never cross the threshold of the new house. Tradition says that they never did, and that before the house was finished, the following year, death had come to each of them. Whether an "ower true tale" we know not; such tales of divine judgment seem frequent at that period. This prospective change from the red barn-like building was so exhilarating that we find the record of the raising given in this precise manner: "Upon the fifth day of July, Anno Domini, One Thousand Seven-hundred Sixty & nine, the Parish Raised their New Meeting-House Fraime & Compleatly raised it in one Day." The expense for refreshment was upwards of twenty pounds, but what the families provided was only told around many a fireside afterwards. The rigging for raising the building was brought from Newburyport by Abraham Foster, and spars were provided by Capt. Moses Dole. Eightpence was allowed John Tenney for two lost mugs.

In October the room was divided, and a committee appointed to "Dignify it, and to sell not below the Dignity, which dignity shall amount to twenty-five pounds old tenor." Family pride and distinction had its votaries here at that time, but better than a flaunting vulgar pride in dollars merely, it had, at least, a certain foundation. Square pews in the gallery and on the floor, twenty-five pews at the right, and twenty-three at the left of the pulpit. On the east end six, and on the west end seven pews. In the old house there were but two or three pews, and these

few, besides plain seats on the men's side and the women's side of the house. The pews in the new house were to be family, and were sold January, 1770, from a plan shown at Mr. Solomon Nelson's house. Two diagrams of these family pews, neatly drawn, are in the ancient book of parish records. They are valuable, as giving us an accurate knowledge of the residents of the parish, in 1770. An eight-square tower and spire was voted, and later a "Wether Cock on ye tops of ye Spindle of ye Spire."

This, the crowning glory, was at one hundred and two feet from the ground, and had an attraction all its own, to successive generations. As it became tarnished, battling with the warring elements, twice, at least, it was regilded. This emblem of courage cost Deacon Thurston four pounds sixteen shillings. Mr. Whitefield made a final visit to this parish, but a short time before his death, and while here preached what the people were pleased to call the dedication sermon. Had it been considered such at the time, with the fame of the speaker, some record, either by the church or parish, would have been made of it, but as there is none, it appears as if it was a little questionable, even then, to recognize Whitefield as exactly regular. The text selected was 1 Kings 8: 11. "The glory of the Lord hath filled the house of the Lord." The meeting-house was unfinished, with unplastered walls, unbuilt galleries and without pews or pulpit. The hearers, however, were many, seated on the timbers, blocks and rough boards scattered through the edifice. It is said the service was in the morning, and probably, either on September 12th or 13th, as he was in Rowley both of those days. A journey of miles seems to have been at any time, but a holiday jaunt for him.

During one of Whitefield's visits to Newburyport, he attended a meeting in west parish, accompanied by a daughter of Deacon Noyes, and dined with "Aunt Jenny Hazen," who lived on East Street, nearly opposite John Hazen's. The cellar of her house is still visible. Her fame as a theologian was widespread. Mr. Whitefield had heard of her, and at this time he came to hear from her. After a pleasant interview with her and the neighbors, he departed, leaving in the memories of those who were present this incident of dining with Whitefield as the most noted event of their lives. During the fatal epidemic among children in 1736, Aunt Jenny lost by death thirteen nephews and nieces in the Hazen neighborhood. About 1770 she removed to New Hampshire, where she died.

Returning to parish action in 1770, a right to erect horse-stables was granted. None were built at that time, and when built were for those coming to meeting on horse-back, but not large enough for vehicles. There were no pleasure-carriages in town in 1771, or even ten years later. Originally, there were two stone horse-blocks, one near the wall on the north of the meeting-house, which was removed at the widening of the road; the other, similar to it, near the east door, for lady riders coming on side-saddles or pillions.

In 1780 the singing question came up, and Jonathan Chaplin was chosen to assist Colonel Daniel Spafford in "Raising the Tune," and, in addition, Lieutenant Moody Spafford, Phinehas Dodge, John Tenney and John Palmer were appointed to invite persons to fill up the singer's seats whom they think best qualified.

The wise system of payment in goods as legal tender not having become obsolete, Mr. Chandler at that time was to have three bushels of Indian corn for taking care of the meeting-house that year. Although the minister was highly respected, a young man as assistant for Mr. Chandler, who was now quite infirm, began to be suggested. Mr. William Bradford was offered as salary ninety pounds yearly, the money to be as good as any year from 1770 to 1775. Continental currency was circulating; it had been issued for a noble purpose, but the government not being strong enough to compel obedience to its fiat, distrust was engendered, and depreciation followed. Mr. Bradford was called elsewhere. The next year the parish agreed to carry on Mr. Chandler's "Husbandry in good Husbandry manner." During the increasing infirmity of the pastor there was some dissatisfaction, and frequent attempts made to have an assistant, but nothing was done. The singing became more popular, and in 1785 women singers were invited to sit in the gallery, and the singing to be performed once on the Lord's day, without the deacons reading the line for one year. It seemed to the deacons as if the world was out of joint. Could they have seen, as was seen about sixty years later, the pupils of Allison Palmer, under the grand leadership of Lowell Mason, in those same galleries, they would have said that the invitation to the women singers had been permanently accepted. A history of the musical conventions which have been held in this grand old house, and the musical talent, both vocal and instrumental, that seems to be a special gift to the citizens of this town, and never more so than at present, or more carefully cultivated, would, if written in detail, make material for a volume.

Sunday morning, April 19, 1789, Rev. James Chandler died in his eighty-third year. He was a native of Andover and a graduate of Harvard, 1728. His wife was Mary, daughter of Rev. Mr. Hale, of Byfield, who survived him. The parish was at the expense of his funeral. The memorial over his grave in Union Cemetery was erected in 1791. The parish ordered a "Decent Monument." Mr. Chandler left his estate to the parish, on condition that his widow and colored servant, Sabina, should be the wards of the parish until the decease of each. Perhaps there were other conditions, but these were the most important. John Tenney, who lived opposite Union Cemetery, was executor of the will. Some difficulty arose between him and the parish, and the conditions

not being satisfactory, a vote was passed to relinquish the gift. Mr. Solomon Nelson accepted the conditions, and the Chandler farm, now in part owned by his grandson, Humphrey Nelson, came into his possession. While "Madam Chandler" lived the parish abated all taxes.

Mr. Tenney had oversight of the property, and was frequently brought in conflict with the parish. At a later date he removed to Northwood, N. H. From Mr. Chandler's death until 1797, when Mr. Isaac Braman, of Norton, Mass., was called as pastor, sixty-four candidates and pulpit supplies made their gifts known to the parish. Samuel Tomb, afterwards of West Newbury, was one of them and popular. Mr. Braman was "voted eighty pounds and ten cords of good merchantable wood, to be delivered at his door, as his yearly salary, and added ten pounds yearly; when corn shall be more than four shillings per Bushel, with two hundred pounds; one-half to be paid in one year; the other half to be paid within two years. Provided he should not remain twenty years, then a part to be refunded; or, if he prefers, one hundred and fifty pounds without conditions; then one-half in one year; the other in two years." Mr. Braman accepted the last amount. Committees were appointed to provide for the council, to shore the meeting-house, to see good order kept, and to keep the parsonage and elders' pews, deacons' and other seats clear for the council and singers. The ordination took place June 7, 1797. It is said to have been a great event; the parish kept open house, and many booths and refreshment wagons supplied the multitude with food. Mr. Palmer, of Needham, preached from Luke xiv. 23. Dr. Dana, of Ipswich, gave the charge; other parts wereby Messrs. Cleveland, of Chebaco (now Essex); Clark, of Boston; Bradford, of Rowley; and Phineas Adams, of West Haverhill. The parish were not perfectly united in Mr. Braman. Eighteen members signed a remonstrance on the ground of suspected Arminianism as understood in the theological terms of that day. One would have seemed wild to have suspected it at a later period. Rev. Mr. Braman's first service in this town was November 13, 1796; the text at the morning service was from 2 Cor. xiii. 5, and in the afternoon from Lam. iii. 27. Soon after his settlement, the question was agitated, whether the parish had a title to the lot on which the meeting-house stood, which led to something of a controversy and litigation at much expense. No deed could be found, and what the result was is not known. There were extensive made repairs on the house in 1816. There is an itemized statement of the cost in the hand-writing of Samuel Adams, in the second book of parish records. There was a bell purchased at that time which was hung in the tower. It was cast at Paul Revere's foundry. Its weight was eight hundred pounds, and its cost about four hundred and fifty dollars. The names of the donors of the bell are on record in the second book of the parish and were seventy-five in number. Capt. Benjamin Adams, father of the parish clerk, headed the list, and Cuffee Dole, with his single dollar, ended it. It is remembered as worthy of note that two men lifted the bell; not a remarkable feat. This same bell now swings in the tower of the new church on Clark Street.

In 1817 there was an attempt to introduce instrumental music into the choir. A bass-viol, bassoon and clarionet were suggested. That year it was negatived; the next year, however, the parish voted that either of the Crombie brothers—Aaron, Benjamin or Nathaniel—were to have five dollars for one year's performance on either of the above-named instruments. In 1819 the parish bought a bass-viol.

At about this time some method of warming the meeting-house was debated, and in 1822 a stove, then just coming into use, was set up, and in 1828 another, on an improved pattern (a gift from Paul Spofford, of New York), was placed in its stead. In 1832 a complete change of the interior was made. The square pews, so familiar for more than sixty years, were all removed, and narrow slips of the modern style built in their room. The pulpit was also removed from the side to the easterly end of the building, and the door where formerly the ladies of the parish had been assisted to dismount from their pillions was boarded up.

Leaving at this point the Congregational Parish in what was then generally called New Rowley in their remodeled house for worship, to commemorate which and the first century of their existence Rev. Mr. Braman, on December 6, 1832, delivered his historical discourse, we return to Byfield, and briefly trace the leading events in the history of that parish, which was apparently of Newbury origin, and yet around which the dearest interests of very many Rowley families have always centred. The pastorate of Mr. Hale was doubtless successful. Rev. Moses Parsons, of Gloucester, the second minister was a graduate of Harvard in 1736, and was ordained in Byfield June 20, 1744. His eminent sons—Eben, the merchant, and Theophilus, chief justice of the Supreme Court of the State—have made Byfield widely known.

In 1746 the second meeting-house, fifty-six by forty-five feet, with steeple and spire, was built. The bell was the gift of Ebenezer Parsons. Its weight was eight hundred and eighty-five pounds. This church and parish were much agitated by the religious excitement that resulted from Whitefield's preaching. A complaint of Benjamin Plumer against Mr. Parsons was that he had never given "Thanks for such an unspeakable favor to the World as Mr. Whitefield."

In October, 1768, "the difficult, perplexed State of our public affairs" called for a church fast. Another fast day was called for in Nov., 1773, "on account of the severe sickness." This sickness was said to have been a malignant fever, perhaps of a typhoid type. Throat distemper was very fatal here in 1735 and '36. From October of one year to the same month in the following year one hundred and four died—said to

have been one-seventh of the population. Nearly one-half of the number are thought to have been from the Rowley families in the parish. Again there was a day of fasting in June, 1774, "That God would interpose for our help, and save this Province and land in this day of perplexity and distress."

Late in Mr. Parsons' life charges were made against him by Deacon Coleman, with Garrisonian vehemence, that he had attempted to sell his colored servant Violet. Coffin, in his "History of Newbury," gives a minute account of this controversy. The third pastor was Rev. Elijah Parish, of Lebanon, Conn., a graduate of Dartmouth in 1785 (Hanover, N. H., then was but little changed from a wilderness) and ordained December 20, 1787. He was remarkable for untiring industry and mental endowments of no ordinary kind. Jointly with Dr. Morse, he published "The Gazetteer of the Eastern Continent" and the "History of New England." "Modern Geography" and the "Bible Gazetteer" are his own works. They were all useful books, and were highly appreciated. At many an American fireside these books were read with deep interest, conveying that information about their own country and the great world without which was never forgotten. After the death of Dr. Parish, which occurred Oct. 25, 1825, a volume of his sermons was published,—a remarkable collection, to have been delivered to a small country congregation. His people strongly objected to his being absent from his own pulpit, and he but rarely exchanged with other ministers. It has been intimated that, to some extent, he was thought to have sympathized with the Unitarian wing of the Congregational body, but his published discourses show that any such ideas were purely imaginary, and born of the agitation of the times.

During the early part of the century, when political spirit ran high, Dr. Parish took an uncompromising stand for the Federalist doctrine, and, in consequence, had some bitter enemies, especially in the Rowley part of the parish. These feuds all died out, however, and this truly noble man left the world lamented by all who knew him. In the religious history of the town we have now to consider the entering wedge of separation from the only legally-recognized, ecclesiastical body of the eighteenth century in New England, viz., the Congregational Church. The thought of any divergence was probably never conceived among the illiterate members of Mr. Chandler's congregation until the awakening caused by the preaching of Mr. Whitefield. Many impulsive men were soon stirred to enthusiasm by his work, and the Middle and Eastern States were alive with itinerants.

The first record of any such irregular work in what is now Georgetown, was, as has been previously stated, early in 1754, when Timothy Symmes was accused of sharp and (as some of the brethren called it) impious criticisms on the preaching of Mr. Chandler at an evening meeting conducted by Mr. Symmes at Ensign John Plumer's on February 10th. These meetings, held perhaps on Sunday evenings, had evidently been going on for some time, and had been opposed by Mr. Chandler, who in his sermon, February 10th, becoming alarmed at the strength or spirit of the movement, openly condemned it. In 1755 so many had withdrawn that the absentees are referred to as in a way of separation (or in a partial state of organization). The families of Brocklebank, Plumer, Adams and Boynton seem to have been the most prominent.

Their meetings were held in the school-house, which stood near the house of Mr. Wood, now James Gordon's. This movement, originally, perhaps, only the result of a dislike to Mr. Chandler for lack of zeal, finally became so positive that those interested declared themselves Separatists, and in 1757 were so named by the parent Church, and the result was they then withdrew from the Church and congregation permanently. After the new meeting-house was built, the old house was sold to the Separatists, taken down and rebuilt at Hale's Corner, in what is now Groveland. At this time, however, probably through the influence of Rev. Mr. Smith and the Baptist Church in Haverhill, organized in 1765, they began to be called Anabaptists.

January 13, 1769, the parish voted, "to abate the People called Annabaptists their Parish rates the year past, those of them that had tendered their Sertificats To the Assessors of said Parish, thereby signifying the Baptist method to be their Purswaision." In the meeting-house thus rebuilt they held meetings for several years, Mr. Eliphaz Chapman, afterwards of Maine, preaching for them more than any other minister. Rowley, Bradford and Newbury were represented in the congregation. The critics of Rev. Mr. Parsons, of Byfield, were perhaps among them. Mr. Smith, of Haverhill, doubtless had preached here before 1769, and in so satisfactory a manner that even at that early day the Separatists began popularly to be known as Anabaptists. Samuel Harriman, afterwards elder in New Rowley, is thought to have been the first Separatist to unite with the Baptists, he being a constituent member of the Haverhill Church. On May 4, 1781, eight males, three of whom were residents of Boxford, who had been baptized, but were not as yet members of any church, petitioned the Baptist Church in Haverhill to become a branch of that church. Some Baptist churches like Newton, N. H., and this of Haverhill, had several branch churches soon after this time. The old meeting-house having come into their possession, was again taken down, and this time was rebuilt within the old parish limits, to the chagrin, it has been said, of some who twelve years before had been highly gratified to see it removed, and those who worshipped in it, across the parish borders. It was set directly in front of the saw-mill then or soon after owned by John Wood. On August 19, 1785, this branch was established as a

distinct church, with twenty-eight members. Rev. Mr. Smith, of Haverhill, preached on the occasion. In May of that year Elder William Ewing, of Shutesbury, became the first minister of this church, and was dismissed to Medfield in March, 1789. Dr. Jeremiah Chaplin became a member at the age of ten years, during Mr. Ewing's ministry. Rev. Charles Wheeler, a few years later, when a mere boy, also became a member. He was afterwards President of Washington College in Virginia. Both of these were from what is now South Georgetown. In July, 1789, Abishai Crossman, of Chelmsford, was called to the pastorate, and was dismissed in 1793. The membership of the church at this time included Salem, Beverly, Wenham and Danvers. In 1793 forty living in these four towns were dismissed to form the church in Danversport. In June, 1797, Shubael Lovell, of Barnstable, was settled as the minister. At this time the Congregational Treasurer required to be shown a receipt from the Baptists that their parish tax had been paid to their own minister, and that all who had signed the Baptist books, so doing, should then have their tax abated. For several years after Mr. Lovell came, rather inharmonious relations between the old parish and the Baptists existed, finally followed by a civil suit entered against the Congregational parish by Mr. Lovell. The law in 1798 required that any public teachers of piety, religion and morality should be entitled to legal support, and the Baptists, under this law, claimed what was due them. In 1802 the difficulties seem to have come to a settlement. Mr. Lovell's pastorate continued until 1810. He was a man highly esteemed. Josiah Converse, of Portland, came in 1810 and remained until 1818. Mr. Converse was deeply interested in improved agriculture, and is said to have introduced the first merino or fine-wooled sheep into town. June 21, 1811, the First Baptist Society in Rowley (now Georgetown) was incorporated, with forty-eight members. Among them were the Pearsons, Larkins, Dummers and Floyds, of Newbury; Harrimans, Hales and Hardys, of Bradford (now Groveland); Perley and Emerson, of Boxford; Smiths, of West Newbury; and Poors, Thurlows, Tenneys, Chaplins, Nelsons, Jacobs and Morse, of Rowley. The amended law gave any property-holders the right of choice as to the religious organization they would support. Some, perhaps partly from a mercenary motive, chose the Baptist Society at that time, because the expense or tax would be less; others because they were believers in the doctrines of Thomas Jefferson, as the friend of religious liberty; and all, because more or less opposed to the spirit which had wholly in theory, if not in practice, ruled in Massachusetts from the first settlement, of compulsion in matters of conscience. First meeting of the society held on February 13, 1812. Solomon Nelson, afterwards deacon, joined the society in 1812, the church in 1816, and soon after was conceded by all to be the chief adviser and wise counselor of the Baptists. His house on Nelson Street was the journeying ministers' home. One of the last nights that George Dana Boardman, the Karen apostle, spent in this country was under his roof. First annual meeting was held April 7, 1812, with Captain Moses Tenney moderator and Timothy Morse, Jr., clerk. From this date to 1823 committees were appointed annually to fill out certificates of membership, signed by the minister and clerk, as the legal method of exemption from paying parish tax to the Congregational collector. After 1823 the law was changed or became obsolete.

January 7, 1823, sixty acres of the old "Shepard farm," then owned by Samuel and Benjamin Plumer, was deeded to this society, for the support of a Calvinistic Baptist Gospel ministry, and the society was to come into possession at the decease of the grantors. Not long after it came under the control of the society. It had been occupied and improved as the parsonage farm from the time of Mr. Lovell, and perhaps from a much earlier date. The fifth minister was Simeon Chamberlain, of Westmoreland, N. H., who continued from July, 1819 to September, 1825, followed by Ezra Wilmarth, of Wilmot, N. H., who came in 1826, remaining until June, 1834. The old meeting-house which had been twice removed and entirely rebuilt, was in January, 1829, by forty yeas to eight nays voted to be too far gone for repairs. Orin Weston bought this relic of the past at auction in 1830 for eighty-nine dollars. It had seen a century of existence, and was from all accounts but a shell. The birds had nested in its interior above, and mice had played on the floor below; and it has been said that one of Mr. John Woods' hens once "stole her nest" under the pulpit, and would come out cackling in service time.

The sounding-board which had echoed the resonant voice of Whitefield, that wonderful voice, which could be heard a mile, might until recently, be seen near the roadside at the house of Mr. Weston's family on Main Street.

In 1829 a new meeting-house, forty-five by thirty-five feet, was built near the old house on the parsonage grounds, at a cost of seventeen hundred dollars.

As early as about 1800, and perhaps earlier, another class of irregular meetings in the line of the Separatists of a half-century before began to be held to the annoyance of the Congregationalist people and as these meetings lessened the Baptist audiences, when services were held on Sunday, perhaps partly to their annoyance also. These school-house preachers, as Mr. Braman called them, were fluent, possibly vituperative, not bound by formal rules or customs, and were attractive to those eager for novelty. A Mr. Foster was one of the first, although Elias Smith was doubtless *the* first to speak here, and meetings were held at the Pillsbury-house, near Edwin Brown's, on Pillsbury Street, then the home of Jonathan Harriman and family. Many traveling preachers, of both sexes followed, all glorying in the name of "free-will" as typical of their faith.

Nancy Toles, not claiming much gift of argument, but abundant vehemence and zeal; Clarissa Danforth, keen and energetic; Harriet Livermore, a rare genius, later a pilgrim to the Holy Land, and other women were active in proclaiming the truth. Scores of converts were baptized in Pentucket pond. Mr. Moses Howe, of Haverhill, a Methodist in belief, but independent of church regulations, often preached, as did all the others in the Centre school-house; a man of superior natural gifts, enriched by thought and reading. He lived to a great age. "Christian" itinerants, creedless, and with but that one name, but Baptists in practice, were frequently here in the interests of their sect; among them, Rev. Benjamin Knight, afterwards a Baptist, who died as the Salem city missionary. Unitarians, as Rev. Mr. Loring, of North Andover, (the father of Hon. G. B. Loring) and Dr. Flint, of Salem, both of whom as another class of Separatists, proclaimed the cardinal principles of their faith in that same school-house.

Mr. Nathaniel Nelson, who built in 1797, the attractive old mansion on Elm Street, now owned by his son, William Nelson, was perhaps more continuously active in sustaining these varied religious movements, than any other of the residents of New Rowley. From some cause, they all found a congenial field here, especially the sects which made immersion the baptismal rite. At a later day a meeting-house was in contemplation for the Christians or Freewill believers, and some material purchased, of which the windows can still be seen in the shoe-shop of Joshua How, on Elm Street. The Universalist doctrine was perhaps first announced in town in the school-house at South Georgetown, by a Mr. Flagg, and Mr. Farnsworth at the Centre school-house, succeeded about 1818. It early took a tenacious hold, presented as it was by the leading spirits of the denomination, such as Hosea Ballou, Whittemore, Otis Skinner and others, who often spoke at the same school-house. Gradually the movement developed, until on March 13th, 1829, at a meeting held at the house of Moses Nelson, now Chas. E. Chaplin's on Nelson Street, ten males signed a call for a meeting, to form a religious society to be called the First Universalist Society in Rowley. On March 26, 1829, they met at the Centre School-house, with Captain John Killam, moderator, and Sylvanus Nelson, clerk. Had preaching five times that year, and six the year following.

In 1830, fifty-two males became members of the Society by signing the Constitution. The Lows, Nelsons, Harrimans, Spoffords and Killams were active and especially Colonel John Kimball, the wealthy tanner and farmer, who then owned the Captain Benjamin Adams' place on the Salem road, and who was afterwards regarded, at home and abroad, as the Universalist leader.

In 1831, the Society had services nine times, and probably all held in the school-house, but in February, 1832, at a meeting at Colonel Savory's hotel, it was decided to build a meeting-house, forty-five by thirty-five feet, which was erected that year at a cost of about twenty-one hundred dollars. The site was on the knoll, much more elevated than at present, where the Town-house now is, and was a part of the old Brocklebank farm. Two stoves were given to the Society, one a gift from John Kimball, the other from David Pingree, Esq., of Salem.

CHAPTER LVI.

GEORGETOWN—(*Continued*).

GENERAL TOWN HISTORY TO DATE OF INCORPORATION.

From 1730 to 1770, there are a few surnames to be added to those which are already given as residents in the west parish of Rowley. One was that of *Daniel Woodbury*, who had doubtless removed here from Beverly, just after the first-named date. Mr. Woodbury, was one of the constituent members of the church in October, 1732, but was not a parish petitioner in 1730. In November, 1732, *Richard Woodbury* was received to church membership from the second church in Beverly. In November, 1734, Daniel Woodbury was dismissed to the church in Townsend. This family while here probably lived in Marlboro'. Early in 1734, Elizabeth, the wife of Richard, was admitted to the church. They must have left this locality soon after this date.

The names of *Moses Cooper* and Phebe his wife, appear on the record in 1735. Several of this surname are buried in Union Cemetery. As the ancestor of this family in Rowley bore the name of Peter, it has been thought that the celebrated Peter Cooper of New York might be a descendant, and attempts have been made to trace the connection, but letters of inquiry were unanswered.

The Pingrees of this date (as did "widow Anne," who was the mother of Job Pingry, a petitioner), lived in the limits of what is now Rowley, on the Bloomingdale road, which was a travelled way as early as 1720.

In 1736, the names of *Robert Grag* and his wife Hannah, were recorded. They lived near Spofford Street, in the vicinity of Lieut. Abel Spofford's house.

In 1737, *Samuel Hazen*, supposed to have settled on the John F. Kimball place on East Street, removed to Groton, Mass. This was afterwards the home of Jeremiah and Moses Hazen. Here on Pen Brook a saw-mill was built about 1750, and was in use as late as 1800. This was the homestead of one of the numerous Hazen families perhaps, until its purchase by Captain William Perley about 1790. About one mile southerly, on land then partially cleared but now forest, was the home of another family of this name, and fifty years ago the barn was still standing.

It is said that in the same locality, in a wood-tract now owned by heirs of W. B. Harriman, there were anciently one or two small houses, one of them occupied by a Crombie family. *John* and *Rebecca Smith* were living in this parish in 1736, supposed to be on West Street, not far from Mrs. Edward Poor's. They removed to Haverhill in 1738. Of this family was perhaps the John Smith who lived in a West Street house, kept an inn or what was so-called, by trade a cooper, and by virtue of a warning of the town of Rowley, sixty years before, was removed to Newbury poor-house about 1800. The house was then demolished.

The *Kilbourne* family were residents for many years. The name of *Daniel* is found in 1730, *Jedediah* and *Samuel* in 1735, and *David* in 1737. Their house or houses must have been on or near Searl Street.

Richard Easty was living here in 1736.

Robert Moors troubled the parish in the spring of 1738. After the death of *Samuel Spofford* he rented the west-parish half of the farm and cut wood contrary to the provisions of the lease, and other delinquencies. Prosecution was threatened.

Before 1740 *Amos Pillsbury* was here. He is supposed to have built the house on the plain near Mr. Humphrey Nelson's. He appears in 1740 as parish clerk and *John Pillsbury* appears in 1743. These two carried on blacksmithing. The buildings were removed, some by Mr. Nathaniel Nelson, to what is now Chestnut Street, and the shop to Boxford more than sixty years ago by Daniel Davis, the father of Mrs. Francis Marden, who converted it into his dwelling.

In 1742 *John Bayley* and *Mary*, his wife, admitted to church. The name of *Stephen Bayley* recorded in 1746. Supposed to have lived on Bailey lane.

In 1747 *Mr. Moses Hale* was treasurer of parish and quite prominent for some years. The constant use of the title of Mr., indicates a man of importance.

Samuel Johnson's name, in 1730, recorded. This family lived on Searl Street, on the Benjamin Merrill place. His son Samuel sold, about 1800, to Dudley Stickney, who again sold to Merrill Johnson, removing to Winthrop, Me.

The first mention of *Crombies* is in 1742, when *Rebecca*, the wife of *Benjamin*, and Peter, a negro servant of Jeremiah Harriman, in Christian equality, owned the covenant (the half-way covenant, so-called) the same day.

On the church records in 1764, the name of *David Tenney* is recorded as a "Student of ye College, aged fifteen years and almost seven months." *Jonathan Searl*, also a student, received to church same year.

In 1760, the name of *Benjamin Wallingford* first seen. He, and a son of the same name, lived on Andover Street, where John Pickett's house now is. The Wallingford house was demolished about 1825 by Benjamin S., father of John Pickett. The junior Mr. Wallingford was a lame man, a maker of saddle bags, etc.

About 1760 *Captain Benjamin Adams'* house on Central Street, now owned by S. K. Herrick, was built. Was the first house in the parish to be painted white, and was considered rather aristocratic. Capt. Adams was a large land-holder, both in this town and Boxford.

Other surnames found are as follows:—*Mary Blaisdell* was received from the Byfield church in December, 1732, and *Elijah Blaisdell* was admitted to church in 1736. Dr. Fowler and Margaret, his wife, were doubtless of Linebrook, Ipswich. Joseph Dickinson, Caleb Foster and his wife Priscilla, James Foster and his wife Anna, in 1737. Stephen Cross, Thomas Cross and his wife Mary, in 1742, and Abigail Jackson, in 1743, were of families living within Rowley or Ipswich limits of to-day.

In 1746 *Eleazer Burbank*, who doubtless built the Burbank house of sixty years ago, which stood where the Samuel Little shoe factory now is, removed into this town from East Bradford, now Groveland. The yard in front of the house at a later day extended into the road and enclosed the corner of the street where the pump is now seen.

Moses Tyler built his house about 1700 on land given to Thomas Nelson's children by Gershom Lambert, of Connecticut. This house was taken down about 1792, and Mrs. Edward Poor's house on West Street built on the same site.

The house of Lieutenant Abel Spofford was on Spofford Street, and built about 1745. Here was born, in 1792, Paul Spofford, a grandson, afterwards of the firm of Spofford and Tileston, New York city. Mr. Spofford, now deceased, was for more than half a century a leading merchant, and amassed a large fortune. He supplied the government with vessels for transportation of troops during the Rebellion. He bought shoes for many years of the manufacturers in this town. His son, Paul Nelson Spofford, is the owner of the summit and much of Baldpate Hill. This house, removed about 1830, is now the original part of Little's shoe factory. The house on West Street, now owned by James McLain, the birth-place of Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, was built about the commencement of this period. The Esquire Moody Spofford house on the same street, was burned about 1780, and the house now owned by James Grimes was built on the same site. The present or the original house, doubtless the original, has associated with it a veritable witch story, in the noted meal-chest which, without hands and apparently possessed with occult power, travelled about the attic of the house, to the horror of all beholders. The "Esquire" was away from home at the time the excitement began, engaged in meeting-house building, and was hurriedly sent for by the alarmed family. Nothing unusual occurring, with some misgivings, perhaps, he started on his journey to complete his unfinished work, and had only reached his brother William's house when a messenger came to inform him that this humble but erratic

chest was again in motion. There was an immediate necessity then for some check to be placed on such Satanic action, and, it is said, that it was only by the prayers of Mr. Chandler that this chest was restored to its normal condition. The story is often ridiculed, but good authority states that the "Esquire," Major Asa Nelson, the great-grandfather of the writer, and another townsman, two of whom were men of unusual weight, placed themselves upon it, and yet, in utter disregard of all known laws of natural philosophy, this chest still continued those gliding, sinuous movements along that attic floor. However, quiet finally came, and the cause, if possible, was then to be unraveled. This, the witnesses and investigators of these uncanny acts, attributed to a young girl living in the family by the name of Hazen who, it was said, had been daring enough to experiment with the black art. To-day, with many, a search for the cause would be in the direction of abnormal, electric or magnetic power. It is claimed that this veritable chest is still in existence, and in the possession of a relative of the original owner. In Mr. Spofford's shop who, besides a carpenter, was a noted bridge-builder, Timothy Palmer, also noted in this same work, aided in constructing the model of the first bridge that spanned the Merrimac, Piscataqua, Kennebec, Schuylkill and Potomac Rivers. The latest mention by tradition of a wild bear in this town was in 1791, when one of the sons of Esquire Spofford is said to have seen one in the forest, not far from his father's house. Wolves, down to a century ago, during some winters were quite numerous. Mrs. Huldah Harriman, who lived on Nelson Street, had known them, as late as 1770, to prowl around her father's barn at night. The swamp easterly of the house was a lair for them, and was then and still is known as "Wolf Swamp." There were several other Spofford dwellings built early in the "Spofford hill" district; some are still occupied and in good condition. Col. Daniel Spofford's, now owned by Charles S. Spofford, a great-grandson, is the most ancient. The venerable-looking cottage where the first Spofford families dwelt, near the Colonel Spofford house, was taken down about 1866. It is said that Dr. Amos Spofford, the first physician to practice in New Rowley, who was a son of "Colonel Daniel," occupied this place, and once, as was an occasional occurrence among farmers, exchanged farms for a time with his brother William, who lived a short distance at the westward. At one time there were ten or twelve houses, occupied by Spofford families, almost in sight of each other. The house of Dr. Moses D. Spofford, a son of Dr. Amos, now owned by J. E. Johnson, was owned a century ago by David Thurston, who sold and removed to Maine.

In Bailey lane there may have been two or three houses built at an early day and demolished before the present century. Weird tales anciently clustered around this locality. One of a dismal nature was told of a negro boy, who was seen in company with several strange men to enter the shadows of the woods near Rock Pond, but was not with them when they again appeared, and from the cries of terror which were heard, it was feared that a foul murder had been committed, and other equally dark and mysterious stories of a later day. A house built on this road by Dr. Amos Spofford, was removed about 1800 by Joseph Nelson to Baldpate Street, and is now owned by Henry K. Kennett.

The Dodge house, where the mother of George Peabody was born, was northerly of the house above named. The mansion of Silas Dole, for many years the home of Major Paul Dole, the millwright, and his brother, Edmund, the inventive genius, almost a recluse, who devised a machine for making shoe pegs, which he kept secluded from mercenary eyes, must have been built, in part at least, prior to 1770. It was taken down with timber still sound by Samuel Little some ten or twelve years ago.

There were doubtless one or more houses built in "Hampshire," or "Federal City," at an early period. About 1800 Stephen Hardy lived there, who removed to Henniker, N. H. This locality has had more than a town fame, rather, has had a sort of immortality conferred upon it by the genius of our native Burdette, the lamented Solomon Nelson. He had the talent which gives prominence in certain fields of literary labor. His descriptive record of war experience when in the southwest with the Fiftieth Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, published in the *Advocate* as a serial was a rare picture. Wit and pathos, with exact fact, were delightfully commingled. Many of the roads were, in 1770, but partially opened. West Street to the old Salem road had four gates as late as 1797. Nelson Street as late as 1770 had its cross fences, and also North Street near the Plumer House. The farmer-boys had many a penny given them by travelers for opening the gates.

The Sherman Nelson house, on Elm Street, was early occupied by William Chandler, who doubtless made it in part what it now is from another house, about 1770. The Sylvanus Nelson house now owned by L. P. Tidd, was built before 1747, by Joseph Nelson, the great-grandfather of the late owner. Other ancient houses are that of James Gordon, on North Street, known as the Wood house, but perhaps originally a Pearson house, and another upon the site on which Eben Poor's small house was built. This was owned early in the century by Paul Stickney, previously by Benjamin Chaplin, and had the reputation in those days of being occasionally haunted. Next was the Peter Clouglin house, now owned by Mr. Virgin. This "Clouglin," from the name, was evidently of the Irish race. Near by was a Cheney house, and beyond was a Pearson house, probably Jedediah's, the parish petitioner. This was owned about 1800 by Henry Hilliard, and was accidentally burned in 1806. Still further eastward, on Jewett Street, there were two or three houses in 1800, built

before 1750, owned by members of the Poor family. The Jonathan Harriman house, on Pillsbury Street, was built by Leonard Harriman, the great-grandfather of Mrs. O. B. Tenney of this town and Jesse P. Harriman, now an octogenarian in his western home Nathaniel, the ancestor of Charles A. Harriman, settled on Pond Street.

In 1713 a road had been granted by Rowley to accommodate the "Weelers and Brownes," and "other inhabitants there about," which is thought to have been North Street, from No. 6 school-house (or Tenney's as it would be fitting to call it), to some point near Newbury line. Some years before Jonathan Look's house had been the only one named. Some of the earlier built houses on Warren Street, and in that part of Byfield near the Jackson and Cheney neighborhood, must have been built before 1750. Several have been leveled within twenty years. The Paul Pillsbury house, with the jutting second story, the only building of this architecture in the town, is unquestionably very ancient. Mr. Pillsbury, nearly related to Parker Pillsbury, until recently the owner, was very ingenious. He made the first shoe pegs ever used in the town.

The Massachusetts Legislature offered, thirty or more years ago, ten thousand dollars to any one producing an infallible remedy for the potato disease. Mr. Pillsbury claimed that he had found it, in the planting of an oyster shell in each hill. For a second wife he married a widow, the mother of the gifted poet and Confederate general of Arkansas, Albert Pike, who visited his old home a few years ago. In 1744, among the surnames in this locality, were Joseph and Josiah Smith. Their home was on Warren Street. Some of this family removed to Hopkinton, N. H., in 1768. An ancient Chute house, perhaps that of James or Lionel, his son, was situated west of the church. The venerable trees which overshadowed it have been felled, and desolation reigns. Ariel P. Chute, a teacher and clergyman, was born here about 1805. One other house of this family, on Chute Street, still exists, with marks of age and the wasting tooth of time. James Chute Peabody, a native of this town, is another in this honorable line of descent. The author of a volume of poetry with the title "Keynotes," which is to be found in the Peabody library in this town, and as a translator of Dante, he is said to have produced a work of rare merit. Dr. Parker Cleaveland occupied, as early as 1775, a house on Warren Street which is supposed to have been built long before that time. Parker, a son, was a graduate of Harvard in 1799, and became a professor of mineralogy in Bowdoin College. He was also an author in his favorite science. A brother, John P., was a Congregational minister of prominence. The descendants of Maximillian Jewett of Rowley have been in this neighborhood since about 1700. A house of considerable age which bears the Jewett name is still standing.

The Pike family, originally of Salisbury, Mass., or Newbury, were in the Rowley part of Byfield, as early as 1750; "they were prominent in military and civil affairs. Nicolas Cheney, Timothy Jackman, Jonathan Thurlow, Nathan and Moses Wheeler, Abraham Brown, Joseph Searl, Daniel Chute, Thomas Lull, Jr., Jedediah, Jonathan and David Pearson, and Amos Pillsbury are supposed to have been all Byfield householders in 1744, in what is now Georgetown.

On East Street the Pingree house built about a century ago, was the birth-place of the Pingree brothers, David, Asa and Thomas, who were the heirs of their opulent uncle, Captain Perkins, of Topsfield. David, who lived in Salem, was rated as the only millionaire in the State, and perhaps in New England, forty years ago. He owned immense tracts of wild land in upper New Hampshire, and the Aroostook, Maine, of which some is being surveyed at present. Very costly agricultural improvements were made by Mr. Pingree on the old homestead, forty years ago, but through neglect everything has relapsed to more than its original wildness. Twenty years ago about five hundred acres of forest, belonging to this estate, were cleared of its wood and timber by Lamprey and Eaton, of Haverhill, employing in the work a large force of French Canadians.

Several houses, then standing, were occupied by the workmen. Now all the houses, excepting the farm-house, are gone, almost dropped piecemeal, and it is indeed a solitude. Here were the Hazen clearings, and here were Nathaniel Burpee, the drummer of the Revolution, returned to New Rowley in the dead of winter, from Lunenburg, about 1795, with an ox sled and his family upon it, a cottage was built, and here they found a home.

At the corner of that part of East Street leading past the school-house, which road was opened in 1829 at a cost of three hundred dollars, was a wide, low house, which crumbled to a ruin one-third of a century ago. This, for many years, was known as a Merrill house, but perhaps built by a Hazen. Here Charles Wheeler lived in boyhood, and went from here South, to the presidency of a college. The house on Nelson Street, owned by Henry C. Perley, was built about 1780 by Nathan Perley, the maternal grandfather of Sherman Nelson. The Dea. Solomon Nelson house was built in 1803. The south roof is still covered with the original shingles laid eighty-four years ago. About 1740 the section of Main Street from the "Corner" to M. G. Spofford's, began to be traveled. Previously the circuit is supposed to have been made over Pillsburys' plain, and the highlands at the east of the village. Where the Pentucket house now stands, and some portion of the hotel, may be of this original house, one of the brothers of John Brocklebank, by whom the Brocklebank house on Central Street was then owned, built a house abou t 1765. Job Brocklebank lived there for some time, and John Pillsbury was living there before 1800, and

blacksmithing near by. His widow kept a tavern there for many years, which became somewhat noted as a halting-place for travelers.

From about 1780 the "Corner," a point of land largely composed of loose sand, and in its subsoil formation the base of the Baldpate district, and but slightly elevated above the adjoining meadows, then in many places covered with a dense growth of maple trees, began to show its probable future, as the centre of the village. Several other localities for a time had the start, like Elm Street, near the meeting-house, but circumstances unthought of, soon turned the tide in the direction of "Burbank Corner." Some years later, it has been said, that Mr. Bartlett, of Newburyport, while contemplating the founding of the theological seminary looked with especial favor on the extended tract of Spofford's hill as well adapted for the site, but the owner could not be induced to sell. Had Georgetown been selected instead of Andover how different our surroundings might have been from what they now are.

David Tenney was living before 1800 in a cottage on Main St. He was the grandfather of Hon. O. B. Tenney, of this town, and of D. B. Tenney, city clerk of Haverhill. This house was doubtless built by him. It was removed some fifteen years ago to the court not far from the Clark house, on Main Street.

Others living at the village in 1800 were Daniel Clark and Samuel Norris, tailor. The house occupied by Mr. T. J. Elliott, and removed in 1843 or 1844, to a site near the corner of Library and Central Streets was then standing at the corner, upon the site of which Mr. Elliiott built his present house.

The Dresser house has for a part of it the building occupied from about 1770 to 1800, by Major Asa Nelson, on Nelson Street, as a grocery, and was situated in front of Deacon Solomon Nelson's house. This, was, perhaps the first grocery store in the west parish. The New Hampshire farmers of those days would make trips in the winter to the sea-board at Salem and elsewhere, with loads of pork, poultry and other farm products, and return with West India goods and other necessaries. Ezekiel, the father of Daniel Webster, made it his stopping-place with Major Nelson when on those journeys, who would often buy his load of meats and sell him other goods in return. Mr. Webster would freqently speak of his boys, and would say, "Ezekiel is smart and I think will be somebody, but of Daniel I am a little doubtful."

An Adams house, owned by "Newtown Ben," was situated at the entrance of what is now Nelson Avenue, and was destroyed by fire under rather mysterious circumstances about 1800. Other surnames in town at about this time were those of Lincoln, and a few years later that of Lowe. At about this date, and for half a century afterwards, many of the farmers owned large tracts of pasturage in New Hampshire, and other land in the northern part of Worcester County. Nathaniel and Jonathan Nelson, in partnership with Captain Chaplin, owned a large pasture in Warren, N. H.; Moses Nelson was an extensive owner in Danbury, N. H.; Deacon Asa Nelson, at a later day, owner in Dunbarton, N. H. Annually, in the middle of May, with a large drove of their own and their neighbors' cattle and sheared sheep, parties would start as drovers on their journey of seventy-five or one hundred miles. In October the fall trip would be made, and the stock returned, often half-wild, but in good condition. The Mighills were possessors of many acres in Lunenburg, Mass., on which Samuel C., the father of L. P. Tidd, who married Ruth Mighill, lived for some years. On returning, he built about 1819 the house on Baldpate Street, now owned by J. A. Hoyt. This land in Lunenburg became in late years very valuable, and sales have been made from it in the aggregate to the amount of forty thousand dollars. The tide of emigration prior to the Revolution was generally to Northern Middlesex and Worcester. The writer has found the names of several West Parish or Georgetown natives, at dates of emigration from 1730 to 1750, recorded in the register of deeds office in the city of Worcester. Sterling, with its Nelson Hill, named for a New Rowley Nelson, Leominster and Lunenburg, in Worcester County, Groton, Townsend and Templeton in Middlesex, and other towns near by, are the localities to trace many of the families of this town. Some at one time, however, removed to Killingly, Conn.

From 1800 to 1810 there was but little change. At about the last-named date, Benjamin and Joseph Little moved into town from West Newbury. They opened a store and shoe factory in a long extension, built eastwardly from the old tavern stand of Dudley Tyler and Solomon Nelson, near the meeting-house, and began, by various devices, one of which was to have the roads opened as soon as possible after a snow-storm, to attract the travel from the old Haverhill road over Uptake to this central road. They kept an extensive stock of salable goods; were ready to barter, taking in exchange odd lots of coarse shoes by the dozen pairs, which the farmers brought from Newbury and other places, some coming a long distance on foot, with the shoes under their arms, the work of their off-hours, rainy days and evenings; they were ready to encourage young men to start business, and made the parish generally lively.

With good roads, better both in summer and winter than in Boxford, and fewer hills to climb, the travel was soon turned toward the centre of New Rowley. We can hardly realize the serious loss the change must have caused to the tavern-stands of Capt. Batchelder, now the summer residence of Mr. Ballou, and of Dea. Spofford's, burned some years ago.

Solomon Nelson, the father of Nathaniel Nelson, who was to a marked extent a central figure in the growth and general life of this community, died in 1821, just as the energy of the people was assuming a

new phase. His second son, Jeremiah, was a member of Congress, and elected as a Federalist, and his father was so unflinching a Republican that he always voted for his son's political opponent.

Everything indicated that the junction of the roads would be the village centre, and a removal was made by the brothers Little from their first locality to this centre, where they built, about 1814, the store building which was used for that purpose about sixty years, and upon the site of which the Odd Fellows' Block was erected in 1871. The house now owned by W. K. Lambert was also built at this time. They carried on a large trade, and continued the manufacture of shoes in a building in the rear.

Three or four years later, Benjamin Winter and William Perley opened a store in a building which was situated near where the new business block now is. This building, which was removed across the street, is thought to be that now occupied by John W. Bailey as a stove store. Mr. Perley went to Virginia, where he died many years ago.

Where now is the Main Street extension of Little's shoe factory, Robert McQuestion kept a store for some years, from about 1820. The whole community was astir. The industries of New Rowley were all sustained, rapidly advancing, and general prosperity prevailed. About 1830, several of the houses on Elm Street, near the meeting-house, were built. In 1836, a bank of issue was established, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars, with Benjamin Little, President, and George Foot, Cashier. It was styled the Manufacturers' Bank of Rowley. The rapid growth after 1830 gave anticipation of a more rapid increase, and separation from Rowley began to be discussed.

Not very many years after the young and rising business men (who, coming here as strangers, were indifferent to the sentiment that made an attachment to the name of Rowley and all connected therewith, a sacred thing), began to demand and even clamor for a separation. The distance between the two parishes disturbed their business interests. Letters intended for New Rowley were addressed to Rowley, and were delayed in the delivery, often resulting in trouble and difficulty. A meeting in 1837 was called to consider the question and arrange for a division. This was the prelude for a succession of meetings, the west parish demanding a division along the parish line, east of the Phillips' house in Dodgeville, and the first parish declaring that if a division must take place it shall be west of Phineas Dodge's house.

A partial compromise was finally made; Muddy Brook being made the easterly bounds of the proposed new town at one point and Rye Plain bridge, near Newbury line, as a prominent bound at another point. The west parish strove hard to include what is now known as Dodgeville in the new town, but failed, and Warren Street, with three-fourths of the Rowley part of Byfield parish, was allowed instead. (About thirty years afterward Dodgeville petitioned the legislature to be annexed to Georgetown, but their request was not granted).

A remonstrance against the division was signed by about three hundred citizens, headed by Dr. David Mighill. It was only after considerable debate, that the decision was reached, to call the new town Georgetown. There were those who, for a long time, felt that the name had too pretentious a sound, and were shy about repeating it. There were several names proposed, as Howard, Littleton, Nelson, and Mrs. Lavinia Spofford Weston suggested Lagrange. In the heat of the controversy and perhaps the babel of voices, one facetious individual proposed the name of Babylon. There has always been a conflict of opinion as to the honorable citizen who first suggested the name finally decided upon. By some it has been said to have been Mrs. Judith Daniels, then Mrs. J. Russell, and that it was named in honor of her brother, George Peabody. Others have claimed that they were the sponsors, and, doubtless, at this day it never will be definitely known, from what source, or why it was so called.

The erection of buildings was going on at a rapid rate. Two churches had been built in the village, the old parish meeting-house modernized in its interior, and the church in Byfield, which is within Georgetown limits, also built. In 1840 an outside observer, in a sketch of the town as it appeared at that date, stated that "Georgetown is a pleasant and very flourishing place. Its growth has been more rapid than that of any village in the county. The greater part of it has been built since 1827. Real estate has more than doubled in value during the last twelve years. More than fifty buildings, including shops, were erected in 1839. The inhabitants are probably more extensively engaged in the manufacturing of boots and shoes than those of any place of the same population in the United States." At that date, Spencer, Mass., and Georgetown, with similar industries, were nearly alike in population, with Georgetown, however, slightly ahead in value of manufactured products, having twenty-seven manufactories of boots and shoes: product, $221,900; invested capital, $99,000. Nine tanneries: product about $60,000; invested capital, $10,300. Carriages: product, $2,500. The aggregate product of boots and shoes in 1880 was about one-half million dollars.

CHAPTER LVII.

GEORGETOWN—(*Continued*).

CONCLUSION OF PARISH AND RELIGIOUS HISTORY—UNION AND HARMONY CEMETERIES.

After the re-opening of the Congregationalist meeting-house in 1832, the parish voted the following

April that the town-meeting should no longer be held there. With the rapidly increasing population, had the town not been divided as was done five years later, a commodious hall would at an early day have been necessary. Town-meetings began to be held in Savory's Hall. In 1836 a church vestry was suggested. The building which is now the dwelling-house of W. B. Hammond, was then owned by Benjamin Winter, the second floor of which had been used for vestry purposes and social meetings for some years. In August, 1840, under the influence of the exciting questions of the day, which were then intensely agitating this community, several members of the parish, with one exception now all deceased, petitioned for the use of the meeting-house for discussions and lectures upon the great moral questions of the day. This request was not granted at the time, the meeting adjourning without any action upon the call. A similar petition signed by twenty citizens asking for the use of the house for debates on slavery was approved at a meeting of the parish in February, 1841, and conditionally granted. At this meeting a colleague pastor was voted, and George Prime Smith, of Salem, Mass., who had assisted Mr. Braman, and with marked acceptance was invited, but declined the call. Mr. Smith, who died in early manhood, was of Rowley ancestry, and on the maternal side by the Primes, was a direct descendant of Solomon Nelson, who settled on Nelson Street, in 1729. In February, 1842, a vote was passed to leave it discretionary with Mr. Braman as to the speakers, who, on the slavery question, are to be admitted to the desk. December 8, 1842, Enoch Pond, Jr., was ordained as colleague, his father, Prof. Pond, of Bangor Seminary, delivering the sermon. Rev. Mr. Pond was a young man of much promise, deeply beloved by the church and people and highly esteemed by the whole community. The zeal and energy he displayed, wasted a perhaps not naturally robust constitution. March 15, 1846, he preached his last sermon and returned to Maine, where at Bucksport he died December 17th, of that year, at the age of twenty-six years. One week later his remains were conveyed to this town and buried in Harmony cemetery. The church and parish erected a monument. During the ministry of Mr. Pond in the autumn of 1844, the meeting-house was widened eleven feet on each side by an extension the entire length of the audience-room, of one story in height. Furnaces were added, and in the early part of 1845 a new pulpit, with furnishings, the gift of George Peabody, and a clock, the gift of Mrs. Apphia S. Tenney. In the evening of February 3, 1847, John M. Prince, Jr., was ordained as colleague, the successor of Rev. Mr. Pond; sermon by Rev. Uriah Balkham, of Wiscasset, Maine; Rev. Isaac Braman gave the charge to the candidate. The venerable pastor was nearing the fiftieth anniversary of his ordination, and on Monday, June 7th of that year, the jubilee was observed with a discourse by the aged man, then almost an octogenarian. The services were held in the afternoon, with assistance from Rev. Messrs. Hartshorn, of the Georgetown Baptist Church, Milton P. Braman, of Danvers (son of the pastor), and Prince, the junior pastor, and original hymns by Mrs. L. S. Weston, of this town, and W. B. Tappan, of Newburyport. A procession was then formed with Dr. William Cogswell as chief-marshal, which marched from the meeting-house to Tenney's Hall, where a collation was served.

There were present as guests,—Drs. Dana of Newburyport, Perry of Groveland, Pierce of Brookline, Cogswell of Boston, Rev. Messrs. Braman of Danvers, Phelps of Groton, Withington of Newbury, Judge Cummings of Boston and A. Huntington of Salem. C. S. Tenney presided.

Several hymns, written by the talented Mrs. Weston, were sung, and a song with music composed by D. B. Tenney, was sung by Messrs. Tenney, Palmer and Holmes, and gifts were presented at the house of the pastor, among them the easy chair from the young men of the parish, so familiar for many years afterwards. The need of a vestry had been felt for years, and during the pastorate of Mr. Pond, the ladies of the church and society were actively engaged in furtherance of the movement. This was especially the work of the "New Rowley Female Benevolent Society," an organization which was begun in November, 1834, with Mrs. Hannah Braman and Miss Susan Nelson (now Mrs. G. J. Tenney), as the first president and secretary. In March, 1849, a committee previously appointed to purchase or build a vestry, reported favorably on the purchase of Adams Hall, now the residence of Jophanas Adams. This building, erected about 1835 by Josiah Adams, had originally a hall used for social purposes on the second floor, a store below, and was bought that year for eight hundred dollars, and used for a vestry until August 25, 1852, when it was sold, becoming the residence of Rev. Mr. Prince, and later the home of Hon. Moses Tenney, the State Treasurer at the time. The chapel, now the Catholic Church, was built in the autumn of 1852, and on completion was at once occupied for vestry meetings. The society under whose auspices this property had been purchased, and held, accepted July 20, 1852, the act of the Legislature of April 23, 1852, incorporating it as the "Woman's Benevolent Society." Rev. Mr. Prince resigned February 8, 1857, and removed to Bridgewater in 1858, where he died the following year. He was born in Portland, June, 1820; graduate of Bowdoin, 1841; Bangor Seminary, 1845.

Rev. Charles Beecher was installed November 19, 1857, as the third colleague pastor with sermons by Professor Calvin Stowe. Other clergymen assisting were Doctors Withington, J. P. Cleveland and Pike, E. B. and Revs. D. W. Foster, McCollum and Willcox.

December 26, 1858, Rev. Isaac Braman died at the advanced age of eighty-eight years. Rev. D. T.

Kimball, of Ipswich, preached the funeral sermon. A suggestive memorial in Union Cemetery marks the grave of the venerated second pastor of this church. Rev. Mr. Beecher continued in active service as pastor until 1870, and nominally for some years afterwards. He is now pastor of a church in Pennsylvania. A daughter, the wife of Mr. G. W. Noyes, still resides in this town, whom he often visits. Mr. Beecher is much beloved by his former charge, and highly esteemed by the community. His presence is ever a benison of peace to many, and the gift of music which God has given him, had its birth in a nobler world than ours. January 30th, 1873, Thomas R. Beeber, now of Pennsylvania, was ordained with sermon by Rev. T. T. Munger, of Lawrence. Ordaining prayer by Rev. Dr. John L. Taylor, of Andover. Doctors Campbell and Fiske, of Newburyport, Rev. Messrs. Marsh, of Georgetown, Voorhees, of North Weymouth, Ecob, of Augusta, Me., and Coggin, of Boxford, aided in the service.

The erection of a new house of worship soon began to be contemplated, and May 16, 1873, the society voted to purchase and build on a lot, then owned by Messrs. Moulton, Chaplin and Noyes, at the left of a court then extending from Central to Middle Streets. Since the erection of the church building this court has been opened beyond to School Street, and to commemorate the Daniel Clark house, which was anciently near by, has been named Clark Street.

December 13, 1874, the final service was held in the old meeting-house, Rev. Mr. Beeber preaching an historical sermon. December 17, 1874, the new church was dedicated, with sermon by Rev. J. H. Ecob, of Maine. Prayer of dedication by Rev. Dr. Seelye. The old house was demolished the following year. August 30, 1876, Rev. Alfred F. Marsh was installed, with a sermon by Rev. Dr. Campbell, of Newburyport. Other parts of the service were by Rev. Messrs. Fulsom, Boyd, Kimball, Childs, Spaulding and Marsh.

The present pastor, Rev. Levi Rodgers, was installed May 4, 1881. The sermon by Professor Smythe, of Andover. Other parts by Doctors Seelye and Spaulding, Rev. Messrs. Kingsbury, Hubbard, Marsh and Barnes. The Sunday-school of this church was begun about 1816. For many years before, exercises in the catechism were sustained on Saturday afternoons by the pastor. This parish have a ministerial fund of seven thousand dollars, a bequest from John Perley.

Should the society cease to have a settled minister, or be dissolved, then the income is to revert to the Perley Free School. This society has a flourishing mission circle. Miss Theodora Crosby, a member, is a missionary in the Pacific Islands.

In the settlement of Mr. Beecher as pastor of the Congregational Church, some positive opposition was manifested by a prominent minority of the parish. The objections, openly expressed at the outset, gathered force, and finally culminated in a public council of ministers and churches, on the ground that the doctrines advocated by Mr. Beecher were not in accordance with the accepted theology of the Orthodox Congregational Church. The result of the council was eventually the withdrawal of those not in harmony with Mr. Beecher, and the establishing by them of a separate religious service in the chapel, as a majority of the members of the society, controlling this chapel property, are said to have been among the ladies who withdrew. They were organized into a distinct church January 27, 1864, Dr. Pike, of Rowley, preaching the sermon on the occasion from Phil. 1 : 27. Rev. Mr. McCullom, of Bradford, gave the fellowship of the churches; Rev. Mr. Thompson, of Amesbury, the consecrating prayer; Rev. Mr. Dogget, of Groveland, read the Scripture lesson; and Rev. Mr. Edgell, of West Newbury, administered the sacrament. This church had the pulpit service of several clergymen, most of them young men, and some of rare gifts.

Rev. Eugene Titus, afterwards settled in Gorham, N. H., and Beverly, Mass., a son-in-law of Mr. George W. Chaplin, of this town, a longer period than any other. Mr. Titus, born November, 1834, died July 21, 1876, and is buried in Harmony Cemetery. During the visit of George Peabody, of London, to this country in 1866, he conferred with his sister, Mrs. Daniels, formerly the wife of Jeremiah Russell, Esq. (the first attorney to settle in this town), who was a member of this church, and the result was the erection of the Memorial Church building, which was made a joint gift from the brother and sister, to this new religious organization. The corner-stone of this attractive brick edifice was laid by Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, of Groveland, in the afternoon of September 9, 1866, the ceremonies preceding those at the Library Building on the same day.

This building, the cost of which, including the grounds adjoining, was not less than one hundred thousand dollars, is a memorial to Judith Dodge Peabody, the daughter of Jeremiah Dodge, who removed with his family from his home on the Bailey Lane road, about 1793, to South Danvers (now Peabody), and who was the mother of George Peabody and Mrs. Daniels. The house was dedicated January 8, 1868, M. P. Braman, D.D., of Danvers, delivering the sermon, and a dedication hymn by John G. Whittier, with an additional service in the evening, and sermon by Mr. Richardson, of Newburyport. Two tablets in the rear of the desk are memorials, one of Mrs. Peabody, the mother of George Peabody, who while living in New Rowley, was a member of the Congregational Church, and the other of Rev. Isaac Braman.

Rev. David Dana Marsh, the first and present pastor, was ordained September 12, 1868; Rev. Mr. Barbour, of Peabody, delivering the sermon. Ordaining prayer was by Rev. Dr. Pike, of Rowley. Other exer-

cises were by Messrs. Tolman, of Wilmington, Kingsbury, of Bradford, and McCullom, of Medford. The Sunday-school connected with this church was established where public services were begun, and has John F. Jackson as present superintendent, and Henry Hilliard as Librarian.

There is also a society of Christian Endeavor, organized at an early period in the formation of these societies, and a flourishing branch of the "Woman's Missionary Society." The original benevolent society, dating back to 1834, of which this church is regarded as the direct sequence still exists with regular meetings, and annual meeting in November. The fine house adjoining, formerly the home of Mrs. Daniels, and a place that in its quiet had more attractions to Mr. Peabody, when in this country, than any other, is now the permanent residence of the pastor. This church is in no wise allied to a parochial, secular body or society, but is incorporated, and controls all its property in its own name.

The Byfield parish were afflicted March 1, 1833, by the loss of the meeting-house by fire. Their third and present house was built the same year, and dedicated November 7th, with a sermon by Rev. Dr. J. P. Cleveland, then of Salem, Mass. Rev. Henry Durant, the fourth pastor, was ordained December 25, 1838. He continued in the pastorate until March 31, 1849. About two years previously, the Trustees of Dummer Academy had urged his acceptance as principal of that institution, but his Byfield parish were decided in retaining him as pastor. Rev. Francis V. Tenney was installed March 1, 1850, and was the pastor until April 22, 1857.

June 16, 1858, Rev. Charles Brooks was settled. Other pastors who followed, are Rev. James H. Childs, who was ordained October 7, 1875, and dismissed December 22, 1880. The present incumbent, Rev. Geo. L. Gleason, of Manchester, Mass., was installed September 20, 1882. The cemeteries of this parish are near, and adjoining the church. The first interment, was that of Mrs. Mehetable Moody, a daughter of Henry Sewall, in 1702. The new cemetery was opened some years ago, and already many have been buried there. All the surroundings of this church are peculiar and English-like, and the parish, in its entire history, is unique and attractive.

This history in Chapter LV. left the Baptists in possession of their new meeting-house. Rev. Ezra Wilmarth, after his dismission from the pastorate in 1834, remained in the town, as several of his daughters were married here, residing here until his death, which occurred November 28, 1846. He was born January 19, 1772. He was buried in Harmony Cemetery. For eighteen months the church was without a pastor, and the pulpit supply for much of the time was Rev. Daniel F. Richardson, afterwards a tutor in Wake Forest College, N. C., and later, for many years, the postmaster of Hanover, N. H., where he died a few years ago.

February 4, 1836, John Burden, of Hampstead, N. H., was ordained the pastor, with sermon by Rev. John Holroyd, of Danvers; Dr. Jeremiah Chaplin, who had not long before resigned his position as president of the college at Waterville, Me., was then the pastor of the Baptist Church at Old Rowley, and counselled the young candidate of this church, into whose fellowship he had been baptized about a half century before. Late in 1837, or early in 1838, the meeting-house was removed from its site near the mill, now the woolen-factory, to where it now is. This removal was in the face of much opposition, largely from the Thurlows, Pearsons and other members of the society, living in the vicinity of Byfield. The founding of the Methodist interest at Byfield Mills can largely be attributed to the removal. Rev. Mr. Burden continued as pastor until the autumn of 1840. He was a warm anti-slavery advocate, and during his ministry much of the moral atmosphere was seething hot with reform movement, and he was not backward about entering the lists. The Grimke sisters spoke from the Baptist pulpit, with Deacon Solomon Nelson, although a Henry Clay moderate, willing listener until Angeline denounced Washington as a man-stealer, then he could listen no longer. The appeal had been made to the Congregational Parish for a recognition of the importance of this slavery question, but at first without a hearing.

The community at large had already become one of the most active in the propagation of the new ideas. The Baptists did not wholly indorse the views of Garrison and his associates on the issue of southern slavery, woman's rights and kindred topics, but were ready to grant them a candid hearing. The *Liberator* was read approvingly by some of them, the abolition almanac was cherished as almost a sacred thing, as the writer well remembers he so regarded it in his boyhood, and many of the most active of the women, who met to pray for the emancipation of the slaves were of the Baptist people. The *Liberator*, that firebrand, was excluded from the United States mails in the South, but the writer and his brother with boyish enthusiasm were agents in sending several copies to Charleston, S. C., in the packing of their father's shoes, for which they received a severe reprimand, when complaints came as they soon did from the Southern consignee. The Moral Reform Society, an organization of ladies, for the lifting up of their unfortunate sisters, was active from 1835 and onward, and was largely under Baptist auspices. For some years after the resignation of Mr. Burden, the Baptist church except for a brief period, when Rev. L. E. Caswell was pastor (afterwards for many years a popular city missionary in Boston, was pastor, was without a settled minister. They had, however, the services of some men of fine talent, especially Rev. Mr. Moody, of England, who not long after he preached here returned home.

Others who supplied were Mr. Freeman, who went

South; Horace Richardson, later noted as an educator in California; Isaac Sawyer, of Deerfield; Stephen H. Mirick, George Keely and his son, Josiah B., of Haverhill. October 9, 1844, Joseph C. Hartshorn, of Chelsea, was ordained the pastor, with sermon by Dr. Barnas Sears, the successor of Horace Mann as Superintendent of State Board Education. Rev. Mr. Hartshorn was scholarly, had a very successful pastorate, and much esteemed in the community. His resignation occurred August 29, 1848. He soon after retired from the ministry, entered into business as a manufacturer of gas-fixtures in Providence, R. I., and acquired an ample fortune. He is now a resident of Newton, Mass., retired, but perhaps retaining an interest in his former business.

The public gifts of Mr. Hartshorn, expressive of his peculiar character, are ten thousand dollars to Dr. Cullis's Consumptives' Home, for a ward which is known by his name, and a very large sum in 1884 to found and endow the Hartshorn Memorial College for females only at Richmond, Va., a gift in memory of his wife Rachel Thurber Hartshorn, who was a sister of one of the leading members of the Gorham Silver Ware Company in Providence, and who died very suddenly, a few years ago. In the summer of 1844, the meeting-house was lengthened, by the addition of about fifteen feet at the easterly end, the pulpit removed from the west, between the entrance doors, to the east end, and the slips reversed, to front the pulpit in its new position. A bell was also hung in the belfry.

In December, 1848, Rev. Arlow M. Swain, of New Hampshire, became the tenth pastor. While he was with the church, a vestry for social meetings was finished in the basement of the house. In July, 1850, Rev. Paul S. Adams, of Newburyport, became the eleventh settled pastor. The rightfulness of capital punishment, was under general debate at the time. Mr. Adams taking the affirmative, had a sharp controversy with Rev. Mr. Baker, the Universalist minister. Mr. Adams was chaplain of a New Hampshire Regiment during the Rebellion, and died not long since in Newport, N. H.

In September, 1850, the Salem Association met with this church. In November, 1851, Rev. Philemon R. Russell, ordained a minister of the Unitarians, and later a Universalist Restorationist, became the pastor, and continued until May, 1853. In the summer of that year he was residing in the Baptist parsonage, where his wife, one Sunday afternoon, just after returning from church, was seated with an infant in her arms, during a violent shower, and was instantly killed by lightning. The child escaped unharmed.

In November, 1855, Rev. William Read, of Raynham, was settled, resigning in March, 1857. Both Mr. Read and wife were of literary tastes, a gift which is inherited by their children. Rev. Joseph H. Seaver, of Salem, Mass., was settled in November, 1858, resigning in April, 1862. Rev. Joseph M. Burtt succeeded, assuming the pastoral office in March, 1863, resigning in March, 1871. During his pastorate the meeting-house was modernized in the interior, with other improvements, at an expense of about one thousand dollars.

The parsonage property was, by permit of the legislature, sold, and valuable property opposite the church building, for some years the residence of Dr. H. N. Couch, bought for a parsonage with the proceeds. Mr. Burtt removed to Buxton Center, Me. He was chaplain of the State Almshouse in Tewksbury for some years previously, was also founder and sole proprietor of the *Christian Era*, a Baptist weekly paper, now merged in the *Watchman*. Rev. R. G. Farley was installed in the evening of May 31, 1871, with sermon by Dr. Bosworth of Haverhill. Mr. Farley was superintendent of the public schools one year during his pastorate. He removed to Maine.

In May, 1874, Rev. E. T. Lyford, of Rowley, was settled and was pastor until May, 1878, when he removed to Billerica, Mass. Mr. Lyford was chaplain of the Eleventh Regiment, New Hampshire Volunteers (Colonel Harriman), during the Rebellion. In March, 1879, Rev. N. B. Wilson, a city missionary in East Boston, succeeded, but resigned, and in the following January removed to Newton, N. H. He was much esteemed in town, and found a congenial field in the active temperance work of the time.

In 1880, Rev. J. M. Burtt again assumed pastoral duties, remaining until the spring of 1881, when he returned to Buxton, Me. W. D. Athearn, a student of Newton Seminary, was pulpit supply until 1883, when he became the pastor of the Baptist Church in Spencer, Mass. Other students followed, among them Robert MacDonald of Boston, who on graduation accepted the call of the church and was ordained pastor, early in June, 1885, Rev. Mr. Braislin, of Newton, Mass., preaching the sermon. Other parts by Rev. Messrs. Gardner, Stetson and Tilson. Extensive improvements on the church building began November 9, 1886.

The Sunday-school was founded in June, 1820, and Deacon Solomon Nelson and wife were especially interested in its organization. The Sunday-school Convention of the Merrimac River Association, with George S. Merrill, of Lawrence, secretary, met with this church in June, 1870, to commemorate the fiftieth anniversary of their school. For many years prior to 1840 the ladies of this church had a mission organization known as the Female Mite Society.

The Universalist Society held services about one-fourth of the time, as speakers could be obtained, until the spring of 1835, when Rev. Joseph B. Morse was engaged for one-half of the time, and this engagement was renewed for 1836. The three following years their meeting-house was opened about one-half of the Sundays of the year, with a frequent change of ministers, until 1840, when Rev. D. P. Livermore, afterwards the husband of the now famous Mrs. Mary A. Livermore, was engaged and the Society had his

services regularly for that year. The next year he preached one-half of the time. In 1842 some improvements in the meeting-house and various speakers as before. In 1843 Rev. George Hastings supplied regularly for that year, but the next year but one-half of the Sundays. Mr. Hastings was a practical machinist, working at his trade when not employed in pastoral duty. He also served as school committee.

James T. Dunbar, then the hotel-keeper in the house now the residence of Dr. R. C. Huse, was quite active in the affairs of this Society at this date, and for several years afterwards. After Mr. Hastings, who had married a daughter of Jonathan Harriman, left town, services were not held regularly, and Mr. Dunbar, who was the financial representative of the Society, had authority to hire whom he pleased. In December, 1849, Rev. Henry H. Baker, from Essex, Mass., was engaged for three months, and the engagement successively renewed for the two following years, retiring in the spring of 1852. He was the representative of the town in the legislature in 1852.

Charles H. Webster, whose name was changed from Kent, born in the Merrill House on East Street, was from 1840 one of the active and talented young men of this Society. He became a Universalist minister, had several pastorates in this State, was once pastor at Dedham, was a chaplain in a Massachusetts regiment during the Rebellion, and died some years ago in Maryland.

Samuel Chase was another Universalist minister who attended service here. So did his brothers, John K. and James Chase, for a time; both afterwards became Baptist ministers of considerable note, of whom John K. is still living. These young men were all shoemakers, working in the cozy home shops and in the old-fashioned manner, debating and studying while their hands were employed. After Mr. Baker left, and Spiritualism making inroads into this Society, the interest in sustaining religious meetings of the denomination gradually lessened, until the Proprietors decided to sell their property.

March 27, 1855, a committee reported the sale of the meeting-house and lot to the town of Georgetown, for two thousand dollars. The church building was sold by the town for about three hundred dollars, removed to land owned by William Boynton, made into a dwelling-house, is at present occupied in part by Edward S. Fickett, Principal of the High School. The Society held an occasional preaching service, and much of the time a Sunday-school. W. H. Harriman, the successor of Sylvanus Nelson as Society clerk, was more prominent than any other person in sustaining the school. After the sale of the meeting-house and erection of the Town Hall on the site, all meetings held were in the hall and those supplying were generally of high denominational talent, as Drs. Patterson, Miner, St. John Chambre, Rev. Willard Spaulding and others equally noted. This appointment of Mr. Fickett as teacher of the High School, with his known religious views, encouraged the members of the school to renewed efforts, and for a time while he was superintendent there was a large membership, but since about 1872 or 73, all meetings of the denomination have been discontinued.

This Society never had a church organization, although at times the question was under favorable consideration. There was fine musical talent among them and the services of the choir were always of a high order. Their observance of Christmas, with decorated house, sermons, songs and choruses, now general in all denominations, was then regarded as a dangerous innovation, almost heathenish even, by the other churches. Perhaps the last service of local importance, held in the church, was that of the funeral of Mr. Nathaniel Nelson, in March, 1853.

The first Roman Catholic service held in this town was in 1849, in Mr. Nathaniel Nelson's house on Andover Street, now the residence of J. P. Jones, Esq., with Rev. Mr. Lannen of Newburyport, as officiating priest. The Newburyport parish included at that time all Northern Essex. This celebration of mass was in the part of the house then occupied by James McLain, now living on West Street. Several Irish emigrant families, antedate Mr. McLain by many years. Mr. Delaney, a Connaught-man, Mr. Dorney, the harness-maker, who it is said began a course of study for the priesthood, Timothy O'Brien, and perhaps two or three others, were in town as early as 1842 or 43, but Nicholas Reynolds, who returned to Ireland and whom L. H. Bateman afterwards visited, was perhaps the first Irish born resident of this town.

From 1840 to 50, Mr. Nathaniel Nelson had several farm laborers of Irish birth transiently employed. In 1850, Father Lannen officiated in the service of the mass several times in the Brocklebank house on Central Street, then occupied by James Molloy. The opening of the Newburyport Railroad, led to the permanent location of several Catholics in town, who had been employed, among them Michael and Dennis Buckley. Three brothers of the same name of Molloy, cousins of James, one of whom had arrived in 1849, were settled here 1852. The families of Hughes, Haley, Barry, with Gauley, O'Doyle, Monaghan, appear at about this date, some before and others a little later, most of whom remained and are permanent residents. Several young men also arrived and located, as Donaghue, Moan, Kane and others, and but little time elapsed before the Catholic population was sufficiently numerous to require a frequent service of their church.

The attic hall, known as Tammany, in the Boynton building, burned in the October fire of 1874, was temporarily engaged, afterwards an upper room in the Masonic building, and at a later date, the Town Hall. Haverhill was then a parish centre, and Georgetown was attached to it, with Rev. John McDonald in charge of the service here, continuing to about 1870. The next appointment was that of Rev.

Richard Cummings, who was recalled from the parochial oversight in 1871, and Rev. John Cummings appointed, who soon located here, living at first in the family of Dennis Donaghue, afterwards renting the house at the head of Clark Street, near the carriage factory. In 1870 the Congregational Chapel which the Memorial Church had vacated four years before, was purchased for the Catholics, of Mr. G. J. Tenney, by Mr. Donaghue, at a cost of one thousand dollars. It was soon made ready for occupancy, and the first mass was celebrated in what was then known as St. Mary's Church, in October of that year. In addition to the original cost, there has been expended on improvements, before and since entering, an estimated sum of not less than another thousand of dollars. Rev. John Cummings was removed about 1876, and Rev. Thomas O'Brien, of Somerville, was the priest, until about 1878, when Rev. Edward L. McClure, who had been very successful in general parochial work in Woburn, Mass., was assigned the care of this parish.

About 1881 the very attractive dwelling-house and grounds of Mrs. G. W. Boynton, on Central Street, was purchased for a parochial residence, at a cost of about four thousand dollars. About one-fifth of the Catholic population at present, are of French Canadian descent. For many years there were but two families of this race in the town, and not until six or seven years ago, were they sufficiently numerous to be noticeable.

Most of the prominent divisions of the religious world have had their representatives in this town. The Mormon faith, while strongly entrenched in Groveland, had an outpost here on Main Street, and some converts. In 1846 Elder Nathaniel Holmes was a firm believer and zealous worker for the doctrines of that church, as preached by the pioneers, but a strong opposer of the spiritual wifehood or polygamy views, as was then advocated. It has been said that they had a church organization for a time.

The opinions of Wm. Miller, and the excitement of 1843, were not popular here. As far as is known, there was but one person in town, who practically acknowledged faith in the speedy closing of all things earthly.

Late in December, 1840, a movement toward Church Union, led to the founding of an organization, composed of some previously connected with both the Congregationalist and Baptist churches, and the engaging of the Universalist meeting-house for services, when it was not wanted by the Universalists. These were known as "Christian Unionists," and regular services were held in Savory's Hall, when the meeting-house could not be had. Their minister who was an "Oberlin Perfectionist," founded a church, and claimed that all the true element in town would eventually rally under their name.

After 1841 or 42, they suspended all meetings. The "Comeouterism" which soon rocked the churches here like a whirlwind, was to some extent the outgrowth of this union movement, and was also the result of the abolition agitation of the preceding year. Shut out from the meeting-houses, as Henry C. Wright, Parker Pillsbury, S. S. Foster, Abby Kelly, Rev. Mr. Beach and the other earnest enthusiasts claimed they began to gather audiences in the open air. Their cry was "come out from the churches," and from this they derived their name. Addresses were made in this town from the Central Street front of Little's shoe factory, the barn belonging to T. J. Elliott, in Little's grove, and elsewhere. The Sunday question was soon brought in, and that all days were alike holy, and that there was no especially holy time. The believers claimed that this Gospel of Liberty, was taught by Jesus, when he plucked the ears of corn on the Sabbath day, and for a sign to their enslaved neighbors, they conspicuously performed unnecessary labor on Sunday, seeking persecution in so doing. One sister carried her knitting to the Baptist Church, the click of her needles, keeping time with the exhortations of the speaker. Practical non-resistant as she was (and as they all were), and refusing voluntarily to leave the meeting-house, she was forcibly carried out, the next day. She was carried up the narrow stair-way at Savory's Hall for trial on the charge of disturbing religious worship. Immensely corpulent as she was she gave another severe burden to the officers, in carrying her to the vehicle which conveyed her to the Ipswich House of Correction.

Physical reforms were also made a religious duty, and a vegetarian and Graham diet with daily ablutions and shower baths were supplemented by open discussions on the delicate questions of Heredity, Marriages and congenital topics.

At one of the grove meetings, while a speaker was fluently denouncing the eating of meat and applauding the use of Graham flour, the audience were electrified by a facetious listener shouting, as a poser, "Peter was commanded to slay and eat. Could he slay *bread?*" It was a queer period, and Georgetown more than most towns in the county was a sort of a battle-ground. There was but little persecution here, only legal correction, when some of the most earnest persisted in invading the churches and interrupting meetings, but much undisguised dislike and scorn. Their radical crusade against Southern Slavery is now endorsed, and the statue of Garrison, their grand pioneer, is one of the glories to-day of that mammon-worshipping Boston, that sought his death. Spiritualism had many disciples in this town at an early period of the manifestations, but while public services are rarely held, there are many who still hold to this belief embraced a score or more of years ago. Frank Baxter has spoken in town, as have several others equally celebrated, and until recently private seances were occasionally held. A Methodist class-meeting was established some twenty years ago, in the hope

that it would result in a permanent interest of that denomination, but it soon died out. The Seventh-day Adventists held a series of tent-meetings in the summer of 1877 or '78, at the easterly end of Lincoln Park. Elder Haskell, prominent in the denomination, was the active spirit. For a time there were a few persons who adhered to the distinctive tenets of their faith and observed Saturday as the Sabbath, but with but one or two exceptions, they returned to their former views. About 1881–82 Episcopal services were held in town; at first in Grand Army Hall in the hotel building and afterwards in Library Hall. These services were the result of the efforts of the Misses De Wolf, young ladies residing in the town. The rectors of South Groveland and Trinity Church, Haverhill, officiated, and the diocesan missionary was here several times, but there was not sufficient interest aroused to give permanency to the movement, and, after a few weeks, meetings were suspended. The Bible-readings of Mr. Charles in 1877 and '78 were popular at Byfield depot village, and several families living on North Street, near the Newbury line, became believers. Dwelling-house services are still held in that locality. A few open-air meetings were held at Georgetown Corner, with but little encouragement. The Salvationists, with Haverhill as headquarters, are the latest attempt of a new religious organization to secure a hold in this town. Two or three short campaigns have already seemed abortive. The present may be more of a success than any that have preceded it.

CEMETERIES.—*Union Cemetery*, for more than one hundred years the only public burial-ground, is locacated in the Marlboro' district. The original part, at the extreme easterly end, of one-fourth acre, was purchased of Joseph Nelson, March 6, 1732–33. Mr. Nelson's wife, Hannah, who was the grand-daughter of Captain Brocklebank, killed, as has been said, many years before, by the Indians at Sudbury, had been already buried there, dying in June of the previous year, and during the following autumn and winter, several others who had also died in the parish, had been buried beside her. In 1755 the first enlargement was made, and the following year, the ground was enclosed by a close board fence, colored with "Spanish brown" (as reads the record) in front, and a substantial stone wall, four feet in height, in the rear. In 1769 a stone wall was built along the road, replacing the fence of some years before. The entire fence was rebuilt in 1783. A further enlargement in 1805, of land bought of Job Brocklebank. Dr. Amos Spofford, one of the committee chosen by the parish to purchase this land, was the first person who died in the parish after it was made. His death occurred December 20, 1805, and he was buried in the new ground. The following year a faced wall was built along the front, which continued until the erection of the present iron fence, which was set upwards of forty years ago, and was a gift to the town by David Pingree, of Salem. A burial-cloth was purchased by the parish in 1836, another in 1800, and a hearse in 1819. Mrs. Huldah Harriman was the oldest person ever buried there. She died March 5, 1848, aged one hundred years, five months and twenty-six days. By the last enlargement, now many years ago, this upland knoll was then entirely enclosed for the purpose for which the first quarter of an acre was selected more than a century and a half ago, and no further increase of suitable land was possible, consequently, nearly a half century ago, the selection of another locality for a cemetery began to be agitated. In 1845, the opening of the "New Yard," as it was at first called, awakened an intense interest throughout the community.

The first interment in the new yard, now known as *Harmony Cemetery* was that of a lady named Mrs. Cram. The father of J. M. Clark was the second person buried. As we think of some who are buried there, we recall events peculiarly painful in the history of the town, as that of the Beecher sisters, Esther and Hattie, younger daughters of Rev. Charles Beecher, who, with their cousin, a son of Rev. Edward Beecher, were drowned by the capsizing of a boat on Lake Pentucket, at noon-day, August 27, 1867. Lieutenant Frederick Beecher, who was killed with General Custer, is also remembered by a stone near by. Here were also laid, during the Christmas season of 1885, George A. Chase and Joseph A. Illsey, the two young men who were almost instantly killed in the service of the town, while battling against the incipient fire that then raged, threatening to destroy the village, and a few weeks later their comrade, Clarence M. Clark, who was spared for but a few weeks of suffering. Captain George W. Boynton, chief constable of the State, who died March 23, 1877, is also buried here. John Perley, who bequeathed the fund for the Prospective Free School, has a memorial of Italian marble, said to have cost upwards of three thousand dollars, an exact copy of that erected to the memory of Sir Walter Scott. This in a central position, and on the highest part of the ground, probably covers the spot upon which the ancient watch-house stood.

The burial of the Catholic dead of the town is in the cemetery at Haverhill. Twice, at least, some steps have been taken by some of that faith towards the purchasing of ground for a Catholic cemetery in this town. At one time the lot at the corner of Mill and North Streets was suggested, and at a later day land of Sylvanus Nelson's, on Elm Street, but nothing resulted, and for some years the matter has not been considered.

The only family burial ground ever in the town was many years ago on North Street. This was used for the interment of several persons. The removal of those buried there to the public cemeteries, was in harmony with the almost universal sentiment in Northern Essex, as regards the burial of the dead.

CHAPTER LVIII.

GEORGETOWN—(*Continued*).

THE MANUFACTURING INDUSTRIES.

THE colonists, at their first settlement in New England, were alive to the importance of encouraging home industries. Burr-stones, for milling use, were shipped here as early as 1628, and the emigration of coopers, millers and all artisans, was especially urged. In 1639, millers, ship-carpenters and others, were exempted from the burden of training-day. As soon as Thomas Nelson had taken a survey of the out-lands around the village of Rowley, he found a good location for a mill; and but a year or two elapsed before a grist-mill was in operation. A fulling-mill and clothiers' works soon followed. Many of the early settlers of Rowley were skilful cloth-makers, having a celebrity throughout the colony for skill in this particular industry.

One of the first mills built to accommodate what was afterwards the west parish, was by Sergt. Jeremiah Pearson. The town granted him authority in 1697, to build a mill, provided a convenient place could be found. In January, 1699–1700, a lot of land, which had been granted to Samuel Platts, Jr., was returned to the town, Platts receiving other land in exchange; and on this convenient site Pearson erected a grist-mill, which was in use about one hundred years. This was situated near the afterwards somewhat famous Stickney mills. How long a time the Harriman mill on Rock Brook was run is not known, but, whatever the length of time, it was unquestionably the first to be built within the limits of Georgetown.

Some, if not all, the earlier-built houses in this west parish, were of logs. Pine trees were scarce down to a late day in this locality. A severe penalty was imposed by special statute, in Massachusetts, for unnecessary injury to pine trees, as late as 1790; and this species were so rare where now they are almost the exclusive growth, that Capt. Solomon Dodge has been known to say that, when a boy, a pine tree was something of which but few could be seen for a long distance around his home in Dodgeville. The boarding of the houses was of oak, as well as the frames, until past the middle of the last century; and whether originally the boards were sawed or split, with a shaved surface afterward, is uncertain. There was a class of mechanics known as sawyers at a very early day, and perhaps the boards may have been worked out by hand with pit-saws. The shingles were split, and the durable ones are said to have been from trees killed by burning, while in a growing, vigorous condition.

The Harriman mill was doubtless a saw as well as grist-mill, for, at the time it was first projected, there were several houses in contemplation, and evidently much enterprise in the eighteen mill-owners. Deacon Abner Spofford had a saw-mill in operation, in 1734, on the stream which finds its outlet at Parker River, above Scrag Pond. Forty years afterward, his half-brother, Col. Daniel Spofford and his sons, run a grist-mill at the same site, and three thousand bushels of grain, grown in the neighborhood, have been ground there in a single year. The same mill-stones, no doubt, had been previously used in another grist-mill, a sort of an improvised affair, on a dry spot originally, the only power being what water was conveyed by several uncertain streams. This mill was in the rear of William B. Howe's house, and was run by John Spofford, another of this Spofford family.

About 1740 Daniel Pierce, perhaps the grandfather of the late Major Daniel Pierce, commenced digging a canal below Pentucket Pond, preparatory to the erection, or possible enlargement, of a mill already in operation, and at the site now occupied by the Parker Woolen Mills. The interest that Pierce had was soon sold by him, the purchaser running a grist-mill, which, for a century, was in use from the middle of October to the middle of April of each year.

In 1807 John Wood, who lived near by, was the owner, and added a saw-mill. Paul Stickney was at one time the proprietor, and also Major Paul Dole, for more than twenty years. About 1851 or '52, money was raised by subscription, land damage paid; the meadow around Pentucket Pond flowed through the year, and the mill was run constantly during the summer months. This made a precedent; the result of which has been the permanent flowage of these lands, or sufficiently so, as to make them valueless.

About 1863 Hon. Moses Tenney bought and enlarged the mills, adding improved machinery at a large expense. Many were hoping when the purchase was made, that the intentions were to remove the entire structure, and thus give unobstructed passage to the vast body of water which flowed, or would flow, if unchecked, through the central and southern part of the town; but their hopes were doomed to disappointment. About five years ago, the property changed owners, and the manufacture of blankets was begun, with an enlargement of the buildings. Under the present competent management, the production is largely cassimeres. There are about fifty employees, with Edward C. Aldrich as superintendent, and the corporation name is the "Parker River Mills." Returning to the last century, we find other industries. The iron works have been referred to, and the Hazen Saw-mill at J. S. Kimball's place. All the little streams, only available for one-half of the year, were utilized.

Eleazar Spofford, the son of Deacon Abner, began about 1775 the work of wire-drawing near his father's saw-mill. Jonathan Chaplin, the father of Captain Eliphalet, built a rope-walk where the road now is, just north of Wilfred S. Chaplin's house. Deacon Stephen Mighill, like his predecessors, manufactured malt. The Burpy family dammed a swift-running

little brook that coursed through their land, and made a rude mill for breaking flax. Jeremiah, the father of Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, had a mill for the making of snuff in operation during the Revolution. Molasses was made from Indian corn-stalks and water-melons during this war. Saltpetre was made from the dried earth found under old buildings. A part of the house of the late Deacon Moses Merrill was the workshop of Deacon Thomas Merrill, in which his eldest sons were employed during the Revolutionary War in making nails with forge and hammer.

Benjamin Wallingford, Sr., and son of the same name, manufactured, in a humble way, articles from leather, as saddle-bags, harness and horse-collars in their house on Andover Street. Mr. Burbank, who lived at the "Corner," was a chaise-maker before 1800. One of the chaises of that period—perhaps of his make—was called the "Ark;" doubtless the name was appropriate.

The old gambrel-roofed shop of Burbank, which stood in front of where Mr. Pettengill's brick blacksmith shop now stands, was on the same site at the "Corner" some years after his death. There were several cooper-shops in the parish. One was where L. G. Wilson's house now is.

Charcoal-burning was common as late as seventy-five years ago. The farmers often find the remains of the charcoal pits turned up by the plough. Philip Nelson had a blacksmith shop near the "Pound" in 1750. He afterwards removed to Haverhill. Several fishing-vessels of eighteen or twenty tons burden were built near the meeting-house by Solomon Nelson and his sons, nearly one hundred years ago. These were for Chebaco (now Essex) parties, and were hauled to the water, either at Rowley or Byfield, to be floated around. Up to about 1860 there have been those at different periods who did considerable business in cutting and roughing ship-timber and plank for the Essex and Newburyport builders.

At one time, when repairs were being made on the frigate "Constitution," some valuable timber cut on Baldpate Hill was used. Captain Eliphalet Chaplin, who kept several pairs of oxen, and employed a number of men, was, in the first quarter of this century, largely engaged in this ship-stock industry, also Mr. William and Ensign Daniel Spofford, and, in after years, Mighill Nelson, father of the writer. The clipper-ship building of forty years ago, drew heavily on the primitive timber-growth, which had been spared up to that time.

Captain Benjamin Adams began the tanning and currying of leather at his home on the Salem road, now Central Street, about 1780. The next to begin this important industry was Captain William Perley, at the Hazen, now Kimball place, where he for some time ground bark by water-power. Deacon Solomon Nelson, on Nelson Street, and perhaps Daniel Clark, on North Street, where Henry Hilliard afterwards carried on the business, continued by a son and a grandson, both of the same name, which at present is the only manufacture of the kind in town. Some domestic or slaughter hides (the skins of cattle killed in the vicinity) with the dressing of skins of some unusual kind, is now the only work performed, and the business is more from pleasure, as one of the past customs of the family, than from necessity or special profit. Another yard opened was that of Noyes Pearson, on a little romantic stream which crosses North Street, near the Newbury line, having its outlet eastwardly, at Wheeler's brook. Others, established at an early day were the Westen and Phineas Hardy yards, on "Rock Brook," or Parker River, very near the site of the Harriman mill of nearly a centnry before. At about the same period Nathaniel Nelson began the same industry near the meeting-house.

In 1815, or near that date, Deacon Asa Nelson, who had served his three years' apprenticeship with his relative, Deacon Solomon Nelson, and had worked at the business for two or three years at the Pearson tannery, on North Street, began operations at his home on Elm St., now owned by his son, Sherman Nelson. He conducted a large business. About 1824 or '25 Major Jeremiah Nelson, a son of Stephen M., who had also learned the trade of Deacon Nelson, began the same business near the meeting-house, and about 1835 was the first to introduce steam as a motive power into town. This engine, with the buildings, was the property of a corporation. Nathaniel Morse had also a yard near by. Most of the young men who learned this trade in New Rowley from 1810 to 1830 served their apprenticeship to Deacon Solomon Nelson. The privileges of the apprentice were to dress for himself two dozen calf-skins, one-half dozen sides of leather, and as many sheep-skins as the apprentice pleased. These were not statutes from the law-books, but were recognized as having equal authority. Colonel John Kimball, about 1825, began an extensive manufacture of leather at the Captain Adams tannery, then owned by him. One year he tanned and curried four thousand South American horse-hides. Many of the imported skins of those days were of Russian red cattle. Besides those in town who had yards and were employers of labor, there were those who, like Amos Nelson, had the use of pits and carried on an independent business of their own, and Benjamin Low, who was a currier, and worked in his own shop for many years. Patented leather splitting-machines, worked by hand, were an awkward thing, but only one could be used in a town. New Rowley manufacturers, to evade the law, had one in Gideon Baker's barn, just beyond the Boxford line. An extensive business in the slaughtering of cattle was carried on in town early in the present century and during the war with England. This was conducted principally by Deacon Solomon Nelson and his cousin, Nathaniel Nelson. Droves of fifty or more head were often

purchased at one time. Cattle were frequently bought of Governor Colby, of New Hampshire. The deacon was also State inspector of beef. The cellar-floor under his house has at times been completely covered with barrels of beef awaiting shipment. The hides were converted into leather, and both industries carried on simultaneously. The shoe business, in its manufacture outside of family use, is thought to have been begun by Deacon Thomas Merrill, father of I. Newton Merrill, at his home in Marlboro'. He used to carry in his horse-cart the shoes which he had made, to Gloucester, Marblehead and Salem, for sale, as four-wheeled vehicles had not then become common.

There were cordwainers from an early day who had their patrons, and going from house to house would, in the corner of the farmer's kitchen, make the shoes needed for the family. John Bridges, in 1775, worked in this way through the west parish. After the shoe industry was started, there were many who had much of the cutting, making, dressing and other parts of the work done in their dwelling-house. It was with most a mixed industry, combined with farming or some other employment. The Brothers Little were at Solomon Nelson's, near the meeting-house, manufacturing in 1810, and were afterwards at the "Corner," but in both places combined the business with trade in general merchandise. Richard Tenney and his son, Amos J. Tenney, began early at their home on Tenney Street. Deacon Nelson on Nelson Street, and Nathaniel Nelson at his home, were both engaged in shoe-manufacturing before 1812. To have, as it were, "many irons in the fire" was the rule with these business men of that day. Benjamin Winter followed a few years later, and is said to have made the first boys' brogans ever made in town. Stephen Little claimed to have made the first pegged shoes; Paul Pillsbury, as has been said, the first shoe pegs. Paul Spofford was the consignee or purchaser of many goods shipped at that early period. A bill of lading before the writer while penning this, is for shoes shipped to Spofford, Tileston & Co., New York City. Deacon Asa Nelson soon added the shoe manufacture to his tanning business. D. M. Winter began a limited business about 1830. Amos J. Tenney and his son, George J., built at the Corner the dwelling-house and factory in 1829, which were burned in the first extensive fire in 1874. The boots made by the Tenneys soon became generally known in the boot and shoe towns of the State as a standard make both in style and quality, and the firm became known as a leading firm in the business centres of the country. Samuel Little began the same business in 1831, establishing a trade with Pittsburgh, and, as the population spread westward, with points beyond Western Pennsylvania, and finally, under the firm name of Little & Noyes (Hiram N.), afterwards Little & Moulton, became the leading business house of the town.

It is a fact worthy of record that Daniel Wood, of Boxford, who worked for Deacon Solomon Nelson as early as 1813, carrying home his stock and returning with his saddle-bag of shoes on horseback, as Mr. Amos Nelson, now an octogenarian, well remembers seeing him, is at ninety-five years of age, still at work on his shoemaker's bench. The business was managed loosely, as it would be thought to-day, the shoemaker sometimes taking the uncut leather, and cut, as well as made, the shoes. About every farm-house by 1830 had its shop near by. The trade was largely with Baltimore, Norfolk and Charleston, as well as with New York City. At first goods were carried over the road to Boston in medium-sized wagons, but as the business became extensive, large baggage-wagons, drawn by six horses, were in use for carrying shoes, with a return load of West India goods for the several stores. After the opening of the Eastern Railroad boots and shoes were sometimes carted to Rowley, and shipped by rail from there. By 1840 thirty or more persons in the south part of the town had been, or were to some extent, engaged in the shoe industry. Besides those already named, there were the brothers C. G. & John Baker, Benjamin Adams, John A. Lovering (continued recently by his son, John H. Lovering), George W. Chaplin, Mighill, Asa and Harrison Nelson, Ignatius Sargent (a partner of the last-named) and many others. There were several in Byfield, as James Peabody, near the Newbury line, the Jackmans and perhaps others. Nathaniel and Major Jeremiah Nelson did an extensive business, and something was done in Marlboro'. Somewhat later there were M. A. Tidd (who removed to Iowa), in what is now C. G. Baker's shop; Henry P. Chaplin, in what is now Mrs. Allen G. Hood's home; G. M. Nelson and Coleman Platts, where A. B. Noyes now is, and where David Holmes, G. H. Carleton and others have carried on business in the past; W. B. Harriman, on Elm Street, continued by his son, Horace E. Harriman, John P. Coker and others. Moses Spofford did a small business in a building where G. S. Harnden's house now stands. Perhaps the first light work made in town was by Alfred Hale, in the building, on Main Street, formerly the residence and private school of the Misses Cross. Besides these there have been Charles M. Stocker, George B. Miller, one or two Haverhill firms, who have had for a time the third floor of Odd Fellows' Block in recent years, and, in a limited way, one or two others. In addition to those named, there are at present using steam-power W. M. Brewster, on Park Street, who makes a specialty of boots, many of high grade, and has had from seventy-five to ninety employed; A. B. Noyes & Co., on Main Street, largely engaged in miners' wear, and George W. Chaplin & Co., on Central Street, who make a varied stock, some miners' goods, and of late are manufacturing new styles. Those not using power are the Boot and Shoe Corporation, with E. S. Daniels, superintendent, in the Samuel Little factory, and took at their organization, 1881, the trade Mr. Little had when business

was suspended by him, H. P. Chaplin, on Central Street; J. B. Giles, who occupies the D. M. Winter factory on Elm Street; H. E. Harriman, also on Elm Street, makes boots for Essex County and home trade generally, and C. G. Baker with a similar product. Mr. George W. Chaplin, now the veteran of this industry, can recall more than fifty persons in this town, mostly in South Georgetown, who have at one time or another manufactured boots and shoes. From 1830 to 1850, there were two harness-shops in town, with several journeymen and apprentices; Robert Savory had one of the establishments. Later this work was limited to one or two persons. At present T. F. Hill conducts a successful business of this kind.

Perhaps about 1843 or 1844, Moses Atwood began the manufacture of "Atwood's Bitters." This has become one of the standard patent medicines of the country. Moses Carter and Lewis H. Bateman afterwards individually continued this same manufacture. These three persons became to some extent manufacing druggists, of which the business of Mr. Carter is continued in that of Luther F. Carter, his son. Mr. Atwood removed West, and the widely known "Bitters," are now it is believed, the product of a New York city firm. A deposit of ochreous earth was discovered by Mr. Atwood at the base of the hill known by his name about 1846 or 1847, and from it many buildings in town were painted. The newspaper printing business and job work were begun in June, 1846, in Little's shoe factory, or the "Phenix Building," as the advertisement reads, and the *Watchtower*, a semi-religious weekly, issued. This paper was also published and mailed from Newburyport; Rev. Allen Garnett was editor, and William Cogswell, proprietor. Volume ten began March, 1848; this was sustained for about three years, when after a brief interim the *Georgetown Reporter*, another weekly or semi-monthly published by a Mr. Green, became the village paper, but of a lower standard than the *Watchtower*. This paper was continued until about 1853 or 1854. In 1867 the town had occasional newspaper ventures in the *Evangelist*, published by Major Moses Tenney & Son, partially for trade purposes, and in 1871 the *Star*, which was issued monthly throughout the year by Calvin E. Howe, and another trade sheet, the *Granger*, in 1874.

September 23, 1874, W. B. Hammond, of Peabody, who had been running a job printing office in Odd Fellows Block for about two years, issued the first number of the *Georgetown Advocate*. The following year he entered into partnership with the present town clerk, H. N. Harriman, who for some time previously had been a member of the State Constabulary, and located at Salem, the firm greatly enlarging the size of the paper. They print a weekly edition of about twelve hundred copies, have a well-appointed office, issue a sheet deservedly popular, from its typography and general make-up, the files of which will, to the future local historian, be invaluable. A steam-power press is used. The making of men's clothing was anciently done by itinerating tailors going from family to family, as women tailors did half a century ago. "Tailor Thurlow" was perhaps the most noted in this town.

Samuel Plumer, of Rowley, who had been living in Haverhill for a year or two, began the manufacture of clothing in town in 1838. Was in partnership with Stephen Osgood for some years, but later with H. L. Perkins. He is still in business, and after some removals, again occupies his old stand of nearly fifty years ago. Mr. Blodgett was in the same industry, from about 1842, for some years. Had some twenty or more employees. Was of an inventive turn and devised the first sewing-machines, but it was only by the aid of a Boston machinist that it was made practical. Afterwards took out patents in England; located in Philadelphia and became wealthy. David Haskell, an ingenious carpenter of this town, invented an attachment to the sewing machine, now in universal use, but others secured the money-value. Stephen Osgood began the clothing business in 1848; afterwards a "Forty-niner" in the early California furore, and for many years has been extensively engaged as a merchant-tailor, having for style and finish of garments a very wide celebrity. He was a member of the Massachusetts Senate. H. L. Perkins, for some years in partnership with Mr. Plumer, but of late in business in Odd Fellows' Building, recently removed to Haverhill. He makes a specialty of particular lines of gentlemen's wear. L. H. Bateman twenty years ago manufactured cigars in the second story of the store which formerly was near Dr. Huse's residence. Shoe-pegs were made by Charles Coburn forty years ago, in a building on Chestnut Street. The tannery of Deacon Solomon Nelson was improved by the father of the writer about 1843, a bark mill, circular saws and lathe added. Shuttle stock for the Lowell mills, carriage, laths and fencing stuff manufactured, grinding bark for the tanneries, then doing business and threshing grain, nearly every farmer growing the small grains at that time.

The first use of steam for manufacturing purposes, was on Chestnut Street, about 1835, as has been stated. Since that time, an engine was run for about two years, near the Pingree farm-house, to saw the timber into lumber, at the time of the extensive clearing of the forest; another, about twenty years ago, on West Street, by Patrick Grimes, in a wool-cleaning business, in a building just in the rear of the James Grimes (formerly the Esquire Spofford place), also one in the building on Main Street, near Pen Brook Avenue, where, a few years ago, parties from Haverhill extracted oil from leather waste and still another in an apple-evaporating business, about five years ago, in the building on Main Street, formerly the residence of the Misses Cross, upon the site of which the Bailey block of stores and tenements now stands. The carriage manufacture was introduced

some years ago, by a brother of Stephen Osgood, in the large and convenient building erected for the purpose, at the head of School Street, but unfortunately did not prove remunerative. Here steam power was also used. George S. Weston has steam power in a cider factory, erected some ten or twelve years ago, near his residence on Main Street. Mr. Weston and his cousin Charles, run in the winter season, the old Spofford saw-mill on Andover Street. Henry Pettengill, has in his old blacksmith shop, the engine formerly used in the Batchelder peg-mill, in Boxford, which was burned about 1848. In 1866 a company of capitalists in Newburyport, began the manufacture of peat at the Raynor meadows, on the west side of Central Street, not far from the Boxford boundary. A building of three stories was erected, machinery and steam power put in, upland graded for drying ground and much expense incurred. The result was not satisfactory, and after a few months, work was suspended. This locality, now owned by Boston parties, is locally known as "Peatville."

During the silver mining excitement, in 1875 and '76, a shaft was sunk by a Dr. Taylor, on Hilliard land, near the Parker River Mills, and much experimenting and land-bonding in that locality, and along Red Shanks and on Nelson Street, was the result. Some galena and silver was found. Recently, further mining operations have been made near C. E. Chaplin's, on Nelson Street, on land then owned by parties in Providence, R. I.

The business of a machinist was carried on for several years by Manly Morse, son of Nathaniel Morse, and by George Hasting, the Universalist minister.

The first wind-mill erected was that of Robert Boyes, about thirty-five years ago, for wheelwright purposes, on the building in the rear of Little's shoe factory, now occupied by J. E. Messenger. Lately modern wind-mills have been in use for stabling purposes by Jophanas Adams and G. H. Carlton.

Soap manufacture has been carried on for some years by Charles Smith, on North Street, and John T. Hilliard, on Thurlow Street. Elisha Hood, of South Georgetown, was at one time in this business.

The shoe-box industry, at present carried on by M. F. Carter at the steam factory near the railroad station, was begun twenty or more years ago on Pond Street, by J. P. Folsom, and continued by William Sawyer, who removed here from Boxford.

The cutting of ice from Lake Pentucket was begun as early as 1853 or 1854, by Messrs. Little and Tenney, and soon after the buildings were erected. This Pentucket ice industry was afterwards the property of Sherman Nelson, but at present, and for some years past, is controlled by John A. Hoyt & Sons.

A few years ago two brothers by the name of Abbott, who are in the business elsewhere, began cutting ice from Rock Pond. They cut and store wholly for shipment, while much of the Pentucket product is for local consumption. Besides the blacksmith shops named there was, as early as 1740, that of Amos Pillsbury, on Pillsbury Plain, near Humphrey Nelson's, later, another Dresser shop near Library Street, afterwards occupied by Captain Asa Bradstreet and D W. Perkins. Fifty years ago South Georgetown had Goodrich and Richards in this industry, and during work on the road-bed of the Danvers Railroad, a shop was built at the corner of Chaplin Court, afterwards burned. Byfield had one or two on Warren Street, and has at present, on North Street, a very enterprising establishment, in the carriage and smith shop of Morse & Poor. At the village there have been the shops of J. A. Illsley, James Cogswell, now Charles Holmes, also that of McKenney, Morrill and the veteran Henry Pettengill, now of nearly sixty years labor in this town. One curious feature of the early times was, that before the use of "slings" when oxen were to be shod they were turned upon their backs, a custom still in use in Syria.

Many of the earlier house-builders have been already named, as several of the Spoffords, eminent in this especially honorable avocation, also two or three of the Hazens, and others. Captain John Kilham was, for about half a century, a skillful artisan, and many of the dwellings in town are the results of his steady and painstaking industry. Isaac Wilson, residing on Spofford hill, William George, who died recently at the age of ninety-six, Sylvanus Nelson, S. Eustace Clark and others, now gone to join the silent majority, were always busy in the duties of their calling.

The Kimball brothers, of which John, survives, were active for many years in their chosen work, and is now repeated in their sons also; also John W. Pingree in South Georgetown, Chauncey O. Noyes, Caleb S. Chaplin, in Byfield, George B. Poor and James E. Messenger, of whom the last-named has a business varied with carriage repair (assuming the work laid aside by Joseph Currier and Robert Boyce) are, with perhaps others not named, the active members of the fraternity in the town to-day. A few contractors have, at times, resided here, but in most cases their labor was not as productive of good to the community, as was anticipated.

One industry to be added to the foregoing is that of heel-making, which is connected naturally with the shoe and leather interests. This business is of considerable importance in towns near by, but from some cause has not been successful in this town. Recently an attempt was made to conduct this industry on a large scale, but all work, after several months of trial, has been suspended. Previously the Cokers, father and son, for a time did a moderate business. Another quite important industry to be added is the manufacture of lasts by Cyrus Dorman, who conducted this business at the head of Mechanics' Court for several years.

A bakery was established by John Hale in a building erected for the purpose, near Peabody Library,

ten years or more ago. The public demand hardly warranted the outlay, and the business was not a success. Later J. S. Hilliard carried on the same business in Little's Block, selling out some three years ago to S. D. Bean. Nearly, or quite, forty-five years ago William Boynton, now of Melrose, conducted quite a trade in, and some manufacture of, furniture on Central Street. He was also undertaker for the town. The Farmers' Mutual Company, of Georgetown, organized about forty years ago, had its office under his roof, an institution of which he was treasurer. This company has been extinct for about twenty years.

CHAPTER LIX.

GEORGETOWN—(*Continued*).

THE MILITARY HISTORY.

In examining the early history of New England towns for their military records, one fact impressed on the mind by all investigators is the frequent use of military titles in the records both of the parish and town, and especially from about 1700 down to 1850, while with us some of the captains, majors and colonels are still living, and are familiarly so called. A pride in military duty parade seems to have been a trait in some families, and in this vicinity, for a century or more, in the Spofford family, more than in any other. Perhaps the first names found in active service as Indian fighters, are those of the Stickneys on Long Hill, one of whom was called out for a short campaign against the Indians at the eastward about 1707. Jonathan Wheeler was on duty at Fort Independence, Boston harbor (then Castle William), at some date not later than 1735. He was probably the Marlboro' resident. Lieutenant Benjamin Plumer, perhaps Ensign Benjamin, who was prominent in parish work, was on the eastern frontier in 1754. Two or three from this part of Rowley were at Lake George in 1755 with the Rowley Company. At this early period of the French war, our soldiers wore their homespun clothing, and carried their own muskets, blankets only provided. The militia was organized, and, in the prospect of a prolonged war, were frequently drilled. In 1757 Ebenezer Burpee, the parish clerk, was lieutenant, and Deacon Stephen Mighill was clerk of Capt. Pearsons' company of cavalry. In the return of militia for 1757 Captain Richard Thurston's train-band, or West Parish Infantry, had fifty-four men. The crisis in our country's history, when the French were victorious in every important encounter, brought the realities of war to the homes of these West parish farmers. The contest at this time had peculiar features all its own. The Fort William Henry massacre soon followed, and as the wearied and disheartened soldier returned after the campaign, it was to tell the story of tortured prisoners and cannibalism, and of a French and Indian alliance, which it seemed the colonies were almost powerless to meet. The alarm list at this period was headed by Mr. Chandler, the pastor, and others on the list were Thomas Merrill, who, about 1750, had removed from what is now the Eldred Parker place in Groveland, and had bought the Joseph Nelson house in Marlboro' district, now the Jacob F. Jewett house; also Dudley Tyler, the inn-keeper, at that time, the owner of the Francis Brocklebank place, near the meeting-house, and seventeen others, equally prominent. Dudley, a son of Mr. Tyler, was in active service in 1757, again in 1759, and perhaps in later campaigns. He was a public charge for the last ten or fifteen years of his life, making it his home most of the time, with Moses Nelson, on Nelson Street.

At Mr. Solomon Nelson's request, the town at the annual meeting, in view of Mr. Tyler's military record, both in this and the Revolutionary war, always granted him liberty of choice (with much opposition, however,) as to the family where he wished to live. The Tyler family becoming embarrassed, Mr. Nelson had bought, about 1765, their place, now owned by M. G. Spofford. This place descended from Mr. Solomon Nelson to his son, Major Paul Nelson, from whose heirs it was bought by Rev. Charles Beecher, and by him sold to the present owner. The sign which swung before this ancient tavern for many a year, with its painted soldier, in the uniform of King George's army, is now the property of Mr. Humphrey Nelson, of this town. During the French, and part of the subsequent war, the enlistments were for a short service or for the campaign, the soldiers usually entering the army in the spring, and returning home in the early winter of the same year.

In 1759, Francis Nelson, who lived near the Long Hill road, was a soldier under Captain Herrick, of Boxford. Amos Nelson, who afterwards built the Charles E. Chaplin house on Nelson Street, was in service in 1757, and was in Colonel Appleton's regiment, in 1759, and Benjamin Winter, the grand-father of Benjamin and D. M. Winter, was in the army the same year, and also in 1760. Other names, in different campaigns, from the West parish and Byfield families, were Richard Easty, Robert Gragg, Abner Moores, Thomas Pike, Ezra Burbank, David Plumer, John Plumer, Jonathan Gragg, Abner Burbank, Moses Harriman, John Jackman, Mark Thurlow, Abel Dodge, Rufus Wheeler, Peter Hardy, John Crombie, and doubtless many others.

In 1756, the Province of Massachusetts called for volunteers, and if there was not the requisite number at the given time, then a conscription was to be ordered. A bounty of six dollars was offered, and pay for privates of one pound, six shillings a month. If the volunteer brought his own gun, a bounty of two dollars extra. Their powder-horns, with figures and

ornamentations on them, the work of these men in their idle hours, are now heir-looms in families, and curios in cabinets.

The Province, as "the combat deepened," increased the supplies, providing in 1756, bullet-pouch, blanket, knapsack and wooden bottle, besides the powder-horn and musket. Later a uniform of breeches of blue and red was added. This forced travel from home by the stern demands of war to the novel sights at distant Louisburg, in Acadia, along Lake George, Oswego and elsewhere, gave an impetus to the peaceful emigration to New Hampshire, Vermont, and New York, which took place at the close of the contest.

In 1764, the West Parish Militia was organized into one company, with Daniel the great-grandfather of Charles Sewall Spofford, as Captain. Dudley Tyler, who married a daughter of Dea. Abner Spofford, was Lieutenant and Eliphalet Spofford, the grandfather of the late Dea. Jeremiah Spofford, was Ensign. Some of this company had survived the dangers of one conflict, with personal experiences of Indian ambuscade, pestilence and all that made the seven years French war, a trial which tested the strength of the country, apparently to the utmost, but another, and a more terrible test of the abilities of the colonies was coming.

In 1770, papers were in circulation, pledging the subscribers to non-intercourse with Great Britain. This Whig covenant was an agreement not to use in their families, any goods of English manufacture or any imported from England, while tea was especially named. The paper which circulated in Byfield had the names of such patriots, as Reuben, Moses, Jeremiah, Enoch, Daniel, Jacob and Noyes Pearson, Jeremiah and Henry Poor, John, Samuel and John Searl, Jr., Benjamin and Amos Stickney, Mark, Jonathan and John Thurlow, Nathaniel and John Tenney, Samuel Northend, William Longfellow, Oliver Dickinson, Amos Jewett, Abraham Sawyer, Israel Adams, Moses Lull, Benjamin Jackman, Samuel Pike, Moses Smith and Abraham Colby. A few of these were, perhaps, not residents of the Georgetown part of the parish. Special enlistments as minute men were voted by the town, as early as January, 1775, and a weekly one-half day's drill was begun. The West Parish voted February 9, 1775, that minute men should be raised according to the advice of the Provincial Congress.

In March military drill, of two half-days in each week, was begun. Daniel Spofford, then colonel, led his regiment to Cambridge, on the report of the Lexington fight. Who were engaged in the battle at Bunker Hill from this part of Rowley, except Dudley Tyler and James Boynton, who was killed (a brother of Moses), it seems to be difficult to ascertain.

The firing of the artillery was distinctly heard here, as we have often learned from aged citizens, and the alarm and anxiety must have been intense. Captain Eliphalet, the grandfather of Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, commanded a company in his brother Daniel's regiment, in which the doctor's father was a private, and some of these Spoffords may have been at Bunker Hill. Jeremiah and William Chandler, the only children of William, the schoolmaster, were in the army in 1775, and again in 1778; one of them never returned to his wife, whom he left behind him, but at the expiration of his term of service, remained in Pennsylvania, and, it is said, married there. Twice, at least, the town was divided into classes, intermixing the poor with the rich, and each class was called upon to procure a soldier.

One of the classes had Lieutenant Benjamin Stickney at the head. Among those who were in this war, was one captain,—Benjamin Adams,—at least five lieutenants, viz.: Thomas Pike, who lived early in this century in the Sherman Nelson house, on Elm Street, and who was a pioneer advocate of Universalism, removed to New London, N. H.; Moody Spofford, the bridge and church builder, who was at Ticonderoga, and commonly known as "Esquire Spofford;" John Tenney, Benjamin Stickney and Rufus Wheeler. Nathaniel Burpee was drummer. David Poor was a corporal. A few names of privates are Abel Dodge, the cooper, who occupied, and perhaps built, the house on Main Street, until recently the Daniel W. Perkins house; Paul Stickney, William Searle, Joseph Nelson, who removed to Wallingford, Me., soon after the war; Jeremiah Dodge, maternal grandfather of George Peabody; Samuel Plumer, supposed to be the father of the Plumer brothers, who gave the parsonage farm to the Baptist Society; Francis Nelson, afterwards drowned in Rowley River; Aaron Crombie, father of the well-known Crombie brothers; John Crombie, probably a brother, who died of smallpox in New York State; Silas Dole, and many others. Some of these were living when the pensioning of aged soldiers, and the Revolutionary veterans in particular, began, which, it is said, was first suggested by President Monroe, because of finding, when on his tour through the North, an army chum, by the name of Barnes, in the Waltham Almshouse, who was a fellow-officer with him in the Revolutionary War. Doubtless the last worn survivor of that war in this town was John Phips, a native of Gloucester, who died in the family of Dr. David Mighill about 1843.

During the Shay insurrection, Joseph Pike of Byfield enlisted for thirty days, the time called for. Militia organization was maintained by careful legislation, after the formation of the new government.

The death of Washington in 1799, caused a general outburst of sorrow and a special recognition from the militia. The writer has an order of January 1800, requiring all the members of the company of cavalry (a company composed of Topsfield and Boxford, as well as Rowley men) then living in the West Parish, to attend religious service in uniform and mourning

emblems for six months. This order came to Stephen M. Nelson, who was sergeant. In 1807 troubles were threatened because of the embargo and other disturbing acts, and volunteers were enlisted.

At that time what is now Georgetown began to be called New Rowley, and from the place were enrolled Joseph Adams, Robert Bettis, John Bridges, Jr., Richard and James Chute, Jr., Andrew Horner, Stephen W. and Moses Nelson, Benj. S. Picket, Paul Stickney, Jr., and Samuel C. Tidd.

In the second war with England, there were but few in service from this town, and these in the sea-coast defence for one month only. From New Rowley were John Bridges, Jr., David Brocklebank, Edmund Dole, Paul Dole, Jr., Ralph Dole, Phineas Hardy, Thomas Merrill, Jr., Daniel Palmer, Paul Stickney, Jr., and Mighill Spofford. During the contest party spirit ran so high and opposition to the measures of the National Government was so general in Massachusetts, that the position assumed was but little removed from an armed neutrality. It has been said that the English naval forces on our coast, received supplies by boats from Rowley River. This may seem to have been rather unpatriotic, but perhaps not more so than supplying the Southern Confederacy with shoes, by the blockade runners, *via* St. John, New Brunswick. Fears of British invasion were so rife at one time, that specie and other valuables were taken for safety into the interior. Several thousand silver dollars, the property of a Rowley man, were secreted for several months in Deacon Solomon Nelson's house.

In the Florida War only one person who was living in Georgetown is known to have enlisted: this was Samuel C. Hood, a native of Topsfield. The northeastern boundary difficulty, known as the Aroostook War, looked threatening for a time, and it was expected that troops would be ordered from this State. These were happily not called for. Charles E. Chaplin, of this town, then living in Maine, was in the detachment of State Militia ordered out, and was in service about three months in the early spring of 1840, at Fort Fairfield, below Houlton.

Before leaving the frontiers, these hastily, half-equipped troops were reviewed and complimented by that stern old martinet, Winfield Scott. At least three residents or natives of Georgetown were in the Mexican War. Laban S. Keyes, who recently died in New Hampshire, was one; also Edward Currier; and a resident of Byfield, was, if we mistake not, another.

To many now living, the excitement and attractions of the "training field" of their earlier days is ever pleasant to recall. Twice the Brigade of Northern Essex mustered on Pillsbury's Plain, near Mr. Humphrey Nelson's house; the first time about 1820, and again in 1822. Several thousand of the militia were present, with General Solomon Lowe, of Boxford, commanding. These October gatherings were made a general holiday, and the principal one of the year. The observance of Independence Day, until 1835 or 1836, was of a quiet, reflective, semi-religious character, very different from what followed for thirty years or more, when it became the chief holiday of the year, and enthusiastic public demonstrations were made everywhere. Until the date named, an occasional address like that of Mr. Braman's or Caleb Cushing's, with possibly the formality of a military escort to the old meeting-house, and calm thoughtfulness on the part of the people, made the day but a slight remove from a Sunday service. They were too near the actual events to encourage the noisy demonstrations of a later day. For this middle period, the Fourth of July, as a public holiday, had the preeminence, but later, under the shadows of our last and greatest conflict, this has been transferred to Memorial Day. Under the old militia law, three seasons for drilling, besides the October muster, were required. Many parades were, for convenience, by detachments or battalions. On the farm of De Witt C. Mighill, in Boxford, about 1814, the New Rowley and the Boxford Militia drilled in companies, having a sham fight, and, as a special feature, a sham ambuscade of fifty or more soldiers dressed as Indians. About 1815, at a brigade training on the Dole or "Esquire Gage" Farm in Byfield, now the Town Farm, Governor Brooks was present, and it was a great day generally for Northern Essex.

When Governor Everett began to express his disapprobation of the general militia system, and the demoralizing influences of muster days, the law soon became obnoxious, and intentionally was made ridiculous by those liable to do duty. Men came to the parade-ground in their working clothes, and these Falstaffian soldiers, in derision, had the expressive name of Stringbeaners flung at them, by the stylish, independent companies, which began to be popular.

Georgetown had, at that time, the La Fayette Guards, a company of infantry highly commended for drill and discipline. By 1843 or '44 most of these military organizations had disbanded.

About 1858 or '59 an independent company, commanded by Capt. Joseph Hervey, known as the "Citizens Guard," was organized, largely through the influence of the gentleman afterwards elected commander, and was in regular drill-practice, when the War of the Rebellion opened. When Company "K," of the Fiftieth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers went into camp at Boxford, this independent corps performed escort duty. This Company K was recruited largely from this town, and several of the recruits were previously members of the Citizens Guard. On the morning in August, or early September, before they entered camp, a public testimonial, in the form of a breakfast, at the Town Hall, was tendered them There was a reception, at a later day, with a parade of the regiment through our streets.

Of this company several never returned to the home of their birth. At Baton Rouge, Island No.

10, and at other points near the broad Mississippi, they lie, far from their friends and kindred. Much indignation was felt that the survivors, while returning from their service of nearly a year in the defence of their country, had in the rude provision made for their journey across the country, only coarse box-cars, filthy from use in the transportation of cattle. Many of the Georgetown soldiers were prostrated by the malarial influences of the Lower Mississippi, and the rough ride still further reduced their strength, so that several crossed the home threshold, but to die. Others lived, but recovery was only after a long and tedious illness.

The funeral services of Spofford, Pickett, Sherburne and others followed in quick succession. With C. W. Tenney, the expressman, S. S. Jewett and others, it seemed for a time, that in an unfavorable moment, they also would be swept on to join their comrades. In March, 1865, Capt. G. W. Boynton visited Louisiana, exhuming the bodies of his son George, and comrades R. D. Merrill and Amos Spofford. On his return a joint funeral service was held in the Town Hall, with a sermon by Rev. Chas. Beecher, from the Scripture which refers to the three mighty men, who drew the water from the well at Bethlehem, for David to drink. The little hamlet at "Marlboro'," sent five of its young men to an early grave in the first years of the war, four of whom were of this company. The names of Amos G. Dole, Charles A. Spofford, M. F. Jewett, R. D. Merrill and Leonard Howe, will ever be held in tender remembrance. The first town action in reference to the War was on April 30, 1861. The meeting was called seven days earlier. It was voted to appropriate the sum of five thousand dollars, to aid enlistments, and further voted, a committee of one from each school district, to see what supplies may be needed by volunteers or their families.

Many of the recruits in Company "C," Nineteenth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers, were from this town.

D. Webster Spofford, of Boxford, now a resident of the town, was a private in Company "A," same regiment, and saw four years of service in this hard-fighting body of volunteers.

The first death in the service from Georgetown, is supposed to be that of Isaac V. Bickford, of Company A., Seventeenth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers, who died in Baltimore, Md., January 29, 1862. He enlisted December 24, 1861.

The Seventeenth Company Unattached Infantry went into camp at Readville, in August, 1864, expecting to do service in the forts around Washington. This company was afterwards assigned to duty in Salem harbor. This was a one hundred-day service, and at the expiration of their term of enlistment many of the men re-enlisted for one year. John G. Barnes, who commanded, had served as captain of Company "K," Fiftieth Regiment, in the South in 1862–63. Many of this unattached company were from Georgetown. The Fourth Regiment of Heavy Artillery had several men from this town. Several of our musicians belonging to the band of the Seventeenth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers were also from this place. One soldier, M. W. Follansbee, suffered in Salisbury, N. C., prison, and returned home but to die. Another, Ariel Peabody, was a prisoner in Andersonville. A few were in the navy. John Spofford and Lewis M. Perley were two of the number. More than two hundred in the different arms of the service enlisted from the town. Memorial day was first observed May 30, 1867. The school children were in the procession, and for many years afterwards, the Fire Department also joined in the observance of the day.

In 1872–'73 the erection of a soldiers' monument began to be discussed, and an aged lady is reported to have offered the sum of one hundred dollars as a basis of subscriptions for the purpose. Finally town action was taken, and after much earnest and perhaps acrimonious debate, the locality was decided upon, and the granite memorial, which very nearly occupies the site of the "Old Red School-house," was erected. The dedication took place May 30, 1874, with an address by W. H. Cudworth, D.D. Thousands of spectators were present. The names of fifty soldiers, dying in the service, are inscribed upon it. The entire cost was about thirty-five hundred dollars.

Post 108, G. A. R., was organized August 18, 1869, by George S. Merrill, of Lawrence, Mass.; Count L. B. Schwabe was largely instrumental in the work. Charter members were C. O. Noyes, E. P. Wildes, G. H. Spofford, J. G. Scates, Solomon Nelson, Isaac Wilson, R. C. Huse, F. M. Edgell, H. N. Harriman and J. O. Berry. The Post was named for Everett Peabody, of Springfield, a son of W. B. O. Peabody. Born June, 1830, he graduated at Harvard University, and was a civil and railroad engineer at the West. While colonel of the Twenty-fifth Missouri Regiment, he was killed at Pittsburgh Landing, April 6, 1862. The Peabody family annually remember this Post by gifts of value.

Past Commanders, C. O. Noyes, F. M. Edgell, J. G. Scates, E. P. Wildes, Cleveland Gould, H. N. Harriman, Patrick Cole, W. E. Day, Charles Smith, D. N. Bridges, C. W. Tenney; present Commander, John Munroe. Other officers are Walter Brown, Plummer Falls, I. S. Dodge, H. N. Harriman, Allen Robinson, Colonius Morse, R. C. Huse, M.D.; chaplain, Rev. C. L. Hubbard; L. G. Wilson, J. F. Harvey.

Relief Corps No. 4 organized April 2, 1883, with Sarah S. Harriman, Emma M. Howe, Emily A. Wadleigh, Jane T. Merrill, Naomi C. Dodge, Susan S. Bickford, Lizzie C. Putnam and others, charter members. The presidents have been Susan S. Bickford, Sarah S. Harriman, Emma M. Howe, Lizzie A. Putnam, Emily A. Wadleigh.

General Burnside Camp, No. 12, S. of V., was organized December 1, 1881, with James R. Smith, captain; relinquished its charter in 1884.

CHAPTER LX.

GEORGETOWN—(*Continued*).

THE LATER HISTORY AND CONCLUSION.

In the general history of the town there were but few events of a marked character, aside from the opening of railway communication with Newburyport, Haverhill and Boston direct *via* Danvers, during the two decades from 1840 to 1860. The first road to be opened was that to Newburyport, about 1849. Previous to the final decision to run this line where it now is, a movement was projected in 1847 to connect Newburyport with Haverhill, nearer the Merrimac River, passing through West Newbury and East Bradford, now Groveland, and later a movement to connect with the Eastern Railroad, at Rowley instead of Newburyport.

At a meeting of the town, when but few voters were present, the town's proportion of the "surplus revenue," the income of which had been used for school purposes, was voted in aid of the railroad. At a later day this fifteen hundred dollars in the town assets was recorded by ciphers. In the early history of the road two accidents, resulting in death, occurred. Both of the killed were citizens of this town. One was Benjamin Hilliard, for some years a stage driver and expressman, who was, while conductor, crushed beneath an overturned car, July 16, 1851; the other was Leander Spofford, killed September 7, 1853, by the bursting of the boiler of the locomotive "Baldpate," at Groveland.

The stage-coaches, with the veterans Pinkham and Carter as the presiding genius of each, one of them making Lowell and Newburyport the termini, had reached the acme of their fame, although the first-named still continued his Salem and Haverhill journeys until the opening of the Georgetown and Danvers Railroad, in October, 1854. The Haverhill branch some time previously had been opened for travel.

George Spofford, an expressman between this town and Boston, was appointed the first ticket agent, and the passenger station was the westerly half of the building at the east of Main Street, which was afterward removed to the site of the present station, and was used as the station until the erection of the present building. The easterly part of the original depot remained, and is now the freight house.

The California fever, in 1849, drew a number of the citizens into its vortex. Among them were Messrs. Osgood, Elliott, Hosmer, and perhaps others at the village, and the brothers Marshall, Nelson, McLaughlin and Follansbee, from South Georgetown.

In the early part of this period the Derry Fair, an assemblage peculiar to some localities, was in active operation in this town, once and again. The Essex Agricultural Society held here its earlier annual exhibitions, several times previous to 1840, and again in 1841 or 1842, and not again until 1862, when, amidst the throes of the War of the Rebellion, this Society continued, under difficulties, to carry forward its chosen work.

The temperance movement began in this town as early as 1815, and was continued in an organized form, as the New Rowley Temperance Society in 1829, with a large membership of both sexes, and Rev. Isaac Braman, president. This broadened and deepened until the Washingtonian movement stirred the country. That in its turn started the Cadets of Temperance, a juvenile body, which existed here about 1844, and the Cold Water Army. The Band of Hope was of later origin, and in the next decade the Good Templars were active for a time.

The Reform Club some years ago did good service here, and Floral Division, Sons of Temperance, although its fortunes have varied, still exists, with a record of much good done.

The stores during the period named did a thriving business. One of the best was that of C. G. Tyler in South Georgetown, who was a skillful buyer, and whose goods were in great variety. This building, now the shoe-factory of C. G. Baker, has had as grocers in trade, Leverett S. Crombie, C. H. Adams, and later John A. Hoyt, M. N. Boardman and T. B. Masury.

Moses Carter in the old establishment, previously kept by his relatives the Bros. Little, did a large business. He made a purchase at one time of one hundred hogsheads of molasses for retail trade, an article used to a much greater extent forty years ago than at present.

Other dealers were Jos. P. Stickney in the Phenix Building. George Spofford, J. Gove Low, and later Nathaniel Lambert, were all in the old store which stood near where Geo. J. Tenney's house now is. Wicom Savory and William Boynton & Son occupied at different times a building further westward, since burned.

The names of Lake, Hathaway, Wilson, Nelson, Tenney, Haley, one can recall in this connection. William E. Wheeler, on North Street, is one of the traders of to-day, as are S. T. Poor, Dennis Donaghue and M. N. Boardman. As a druggist, the name of Bateman has descended from father to son. Wm. B. Dorman had the corner drug-store in Little's Block (now occupied by L. H. Bateman) for some years. He also manufactured colognes and other articles in variety. The telegraph-office is in the drug-store, with Mr. Bateman as operator.

On Jewett Street, at Stickney's corner, the father of Joseph P. Stickney had a grocery in a building opposite his dwelling-house; the latter is now the home of Daniel Dawkins. This store was for many years quite a village centre, for Warren and Jewett Street residents.

This town has never had a celebrity for special agricultural work.

Samuel Little, about 1854, bought the Silas Dole

estate, including the ancient Thurston place, and at once began extensive improvements. He built a barn of an octagonal form, at an expense of not less than ten thousand dollars, the most costly at the time in the county, and expended, it is thought, in varied work, not less than sixty thousand dollars. Since the decease of the owner, and the destruction of this immense barn by fire, in July, 1885, with a succession of peculiar events, much of the expense incurred has to the outward appearance become wasted, and the stimulus to the agricultural interests of the town lost. Byfield at present shows a spirit of advancement and sustains a Farmers' Club. C. W. Nelson, the Superintendent of the Georgetown Town Farm, is president. They meet frequently and are doing a good work. In harmony with this work, was the Village Improvement Society of Georgetown, which existed several years ago, accomplishing as its work an improved condition of East Main Street, in the enclosed square, etc., and the building of several sidewalks in different parts of the town. Deacon Asa Nelson was perhaps in advance of any other farmer at one time, in practically encouraging new and improved farming. Marked changes in methods of farming are, however, taking place. The time was when not less than five hundred tons of salt-hay was carted annually from Byfield and Rowley, for use in this town, while now, perhaps, one hundred tons would be the entire amount. Eight silos have been built, and ensilage is, with a few, a popular food for stock.

Rev. O. S. Butler, of this town, has become quite noted for his public advocacy of the silo, as a necessary adjunct to successful farming.

In July, 1860, the Essex Agricultural Society took the initiative, it is believed, among the kindred societies of the State, in suggesting "Fairs" for the sale and exchange of farm stock and other products, on the English system. A trial day was had in Georgetown, and what is now Lincoln Park, was alive with a practical exhibit of the working of the mowing-machine, then a new invention. The result was very unsatisfactory in the use of the machine, as the grass was wet, and the whole affair was an experiment, not again repeated.

The two lakes, Rock and Pentucket, just on the borders of the "Corner" village, give a peculiar attractiveness to this town, that it seems might be made of advantage to the future growth of the town.

This feature in the natural surroundings of Georgetown is what but few places in the county can show, as most of the ponds and lakes are at an inconvenient distance from the village centres. Both lakes were partially stocked with black bass some ten years ago, but with indifferent success. Experienced anglers say that on the removal of the prohibition against fishing, which was enforced for several years, the "luck" of former times has never returned. Both of the bodies of water are very pure. Rock nestles at the foot of gravelly and grassy knolls, and Pentucket for nearly one-fourth of a mile, has on Pond Street a pebbly beach, as its eastern limit. The maximum depth is doubtless in Rock, and perhaps forty or more feet, while Lake Raynor (although within the limits of Boxford, with South Georgetown so near at hand as to be practically claimed by it as their pond), has at one point at least seventy-two feet depth of water. This lake, three-fourths of a mile in length, has about eighty acres area, is largely fed by springs and nearly enclosed by upland; has a pebbly bottom and water clear as crystal.

From Baldpate Hill near by, with its four hundred feet altitude, and said to exceed in height any land between it and the "Blue Hills" of Milton, almost exactly south, a wide extent of country is visible; reaching from the White Mountain district on the north to Bunker Hill Monument at the south, old ocean and Southeastern Maine on the east to Mounts Wachusett and Holyoke beyond at the west. The present year, Boston and New York capitalists have had in contemplation the erecting of a boarding house or private residence upon the summit, at some future day.

Little's Grove, a part of the Silas Dole farm, situated just west of the B. & M. R. R., was, for Boston parties and for people from other places, a popular picnic resort from about 1850 to '60. The citizens of this town have had several Fourth of July gatherings in this Grove; the last being in 1858, with music by Gilmore's band. A fine floral procession by the public schools, was arranged and partly carried out, but a torrent of rain marred the beauty of the affair. Abolition, Comeouter and Moral Reform gatherings, as has been said, frequently met here on Sundays and public holidays. In August, 1854, a Know Nothing Convention attracted many; but the day of days was October 16, 1856, when the "Fremont Mass Convention" brought together the masses, who formed a procession of one mile or more in length. This Convention was attended by ten thousand persons. All northern and eastern Essex were well represented.

In the political divisions of the past, this parish was largely of the Federal faith, while Old Rowley had many Republicans. The Republicans, or Jefferson party, gradually gained in numbers in New Rowley, absorbing the attendants at the Baptist meeting-house. Anti-Masonry was not organized, although wordy encounters were frequent with Dr. Mighill and others of the craft. After Jackson and Van Buren, Democracy got a small but tenacious foothold, with Major Paul Dole as an active partisan. Harrison and the Whig party, however, swept the town. The great September mass meeting in Boston, in 1840, was never forgotten by the participants. Those living speak of it now with pride.

The Birney party had a few disciples, departing from Garrison's teachings in part. These were mostly young and ardent men. H. N. and his brother A. B. Noyes early embraced this faith, as did Asa Nelson,

Jr., J. P. Coker, Deacon Moses Merrill and others. In 1845, the Native American faith was accepted by several, and the *Tocsin* read. The "Free Soil" stir of 1848 aroused this town, and the third party began to show noticeable strength. Still it was a Whig town, with Colonel John Kimball especially prominent. The State "Know Nothing" movement, as elsewhere, however, left both of the old parties stranded.

The "Republican" party of 1856 embraced all but half a hundred sturdy Democrats, as J. P. Jones, Esq., the brothers J. K. and W. H. Harriman; Dr. H. N. Couch, Seth Hall and others; and a few voters still firm in the "Know Nothing" faith. That year, Hon. Moses Tenney, who had been in the Senate, was elected State Treasurer, and continued in office the constitutional term, until 1861. The Republicans were the powerful majority until 1864, when a slight increase of their opponents began to be seen in the McClellan vote.

The Irish strength now began to be felt as a new factor on the Democratic side, and continued until the Labor Reform, followed by the Greenback party, checked the rapid Democratic growth.

The Greenback ideas were at once embraced by Captain Moses Wright, who, as an abolitionist and a personal friend of Garrison and all the early reformers, remained steadfast to the faith. He died suddenly, September 18, 1887, at the age of eighty-one years. At the last anti-slavery convention ever held in this town, which was of three days' continuance, Captain Wright presided. It was held in the town hall in the summer of 1860, and was addressed by J. Ford Douglas, C. C. Burleigh, Remond, of Salem, and others.

Oak Dell, a grove in South Georgetown, was originally opened, for a Greenback convention, September 8, 1881, with addresses by J. N. Buffum, of Lynn, Wm. Weaver, of Nashua, N. H., and several others. July 4, 1882, at another convention of this party, the fall campaign was opened, in the same grove, with an address by E. Moody Boynton, which was immediately circulated as a key-note by the press of the country. This party for several years, had in this town a large following both in State and legislative action, but of late has become reduced in numbers.

At a few elections in recent years, some members of the leading parties have, on personal grounds, voted independently, and the result has been the partial success of the Democratic ticket; but, on general principles, the Republicans are still in the ascendant. The distinctive temperance vote is usually a very small minority. Besides the groves already alluded to as noted for public occasions, there was held in 1860 a celebration of the 4th of July, in a grove near the Paul Pillsbury place in Byfield, with Rev. J. C. Fletcher as orator, and also a series of religious meetings in the summer of 1868, in a grove on Nelson Street, near the residence of Henry E. Perley. The various clergymen of the town conducted the services.

The town-house, begun in 1855, was completed the following year at a cost of twelve thousand dollars. The cupola, a somewhat unsightly addition, was taken down some years ago, which gave an improved appearance to the building. The engine-house on Middle Street, was built in 1875, at a cost including furnishings, of about five thousand dollars. In this building are rooms for the selectmen and the fire department. Little's Block, at the corner of North and West Main Streets, was erected by a stock company in 1871, at a cost of about forty thousand dollars. This elegant structure for business purposes, has its fourth floor exclusively occupied by Protection Lodge, I. O. O. F. The building covers the site of the humble store and shoe-shop, built and occupied by the brothers Joseph and Benjamin Little, about seventy-five years ago. The Masonic block, a wooden structure, stood near the site where the business block built in 1886 stands, and was erected in 1867. Captain G. W. Boynton was a large owner of stock. This valuable property was always rented, and was of three full stories, besides hall-room above. This block was partially burned in 1874, and completely destroyed by the fire of 1885.

The skating rink on Park Street, opposite the shoe factory of W. M. Brewster, was built in 1883, removed in 1886 to North Street, near the mills, and has been converted into a double tenement dwelling-house. It is understood to have been originally the property of members of the Georgetown Cornet Band. This musical organization, with E. A. Chaplin, leader, is the successor of several similarly organized bodies, but, unlike those preceding it, shows a determination to "stick," and reap the reward due to energy and perseverance. Their efficiency is recognized beyond this immediate locality. The talent of several of the members is such that special engagements are of constant occurrence.

The brick blocks of four and five stories, with the narrow space between them bridged, of which the one fronting on Main Street was destroyed in the fire in 1885, were built in 1875. Steam-power in the Main Street building was supplied to both. These blocks extended from Main, nearly to the corner of Park and Maple Street.

The Pentucket House, as it now is, was built and occupied by Col. J. B. Savory in 1825. For hotel and boarding purposes it was first erected, and has so continued as "Savory's tavern," and under its present name, to this day. The original Brocklebank house, afterwards Pillsbury tavern, a one-and-a-half story structure, was removed to the rear, and converted, it is thought, into the "L." Here was located for many years the Manufacturers Bank, into the vaults of which the noted bank burglar, "Bristol Bill," once arranged to enter, but was deterred from his design. On the second floor of the "L" is the hall, which has been

known at various times as Savory's, Mechanics', and Grand Army hall, where, for many years, Panoramas, Indian shows, learned pigs, etc., were exhibited, *ad infinitum*. This hall was the head-quarters of the Good Templars and Sons of Temperance for a long time.

The town farm was bought of Thomas Gage, Esq., in March, 1822, and, including the outlands, cost three thousand dollars. In the division of the town, this farm was included within the limits of Georgetown. The "pound," an important institution in early times, was voted by the parish, March, 1740. Joseph Nelson gave the land to "set the pound on." The parish were to have it for the purpose as "long as said pound shall stand." Estrays were common, and early colonial action was intense against wandering swine, goats, asses and other domestic animals. The pound-keeper's office, now a sinecure, was, until recently, a position of trust, and the "Field driver" had the authority of an English beadle. Personal piques were sometimes taken advantage of by the field-driver, and the frequent result, here as well as elsewhere, has been neighborhood quarrels.

At the present time there are no public flag-staffs, or "Liberty poles," in town. The Everett Peabody Post, G. A. R., have recently taken such action, that the national flag will float from their headquarters in future on public occasions. One in the square where the Soldier's Monument now stands was blown down in a violent gale, July 4, 1867. This was probably set about 1845. There have also been one or two others placed in front of one of the early engine houses, which stood where the grocery of Dennis Donaghue now stands. The first flag-staff referred to, was in front of the Tenney building, now the residence of H. N. Harriman.

On the ground floor of this building were kept the first machines of the fire department of that town, viz., the Watchman and Pentucket.

The annual firemen's parade, forty-five or more years ago, was always quite animated and enthusiastic. The engine-house on Main Street, just above Little's block, was removed to North Street, near the Mills, and changed into a tenement-house. Another engine-house on Main, very near Library Street, is now owned by J. E. Bailey. This, for about twenty years, was occupied by Empire or No. 2 Company. In 1875, Washington No. 3 house was removed to South Georgetown. For some years from 1863 or before, Warren Street was provided with an engine, which was then known as No. 3; and North Street also, where Erie Company No. 4 is still located; this company now has horses ready at a moment's warning, and has reached, it is conceded, marked efficiency, The Pentucket Hook and Ladder Company was organized in 1872. The Steamer No. 1 Company was organized in 1875. Two or three fall parades, with a visiting company, have been held, the last one in October, 1884.

Since the incorporation of the town, the first fire which occurred was March 4, 1840, when the barn of S. P. Cheney was destroyed by lightning. The second was the house of Nath. Sawyer, in 1841 or '42, then just completed, upon the site of which the brick house now owned by L. G. Wilson was at once built. This was an incendiary fire, and was set by John Sawyer, an insane person. On the night following the 4th of July, 1859 or '60, there was a partial destruction of the stable adjoining, and the rear portion of the store building, then occupied by Nathaniel Lambert's grocery. The Dunbar Hotel, which is now the residence of Dr. R. C. Huse, was in great danger, but escaped harm. The next fire of magnitude, was a stable on the same site, Fast morning, some eight or nine years later. The building and several horses were burned. October 26, 1874, a fire occurred in the stable of G. J. Tenney, soon became uncontrollable, and raged from seven in the morning until about noon, destroying property to the value of about one hundred thousand dollars. It was only by aid from other places that the fire was stayed. The residence and shoe-factory of G. J. Tenney, with the store building in danger in the former fire, were entirely consumed. Stables and other store buildings, the old Boynton among them, met the common fate, and only held in check at the Masonic Block and Pentucket House on the one side, and, as before, the present Dr. Huse house on the other. The fourth and latest fire in that same locality, was on the night following December 25, 1885. Two members of the Steamer Company, Messrs. Chase and Illsley, met their sad fate at the outset, the brick wall of Adams Block falling, and crushing them instantly, and injuring several others, one of whom was E. A. Yeaton, who was after a time restored to health, while another, C. M. Clark, a member of Empire Company, died after amputation and weeks of suffering. This calamity was followed by a conflagration much exceeding the former, twelve years before. The fine brick residence of G. J. Tenney went in a moment, after the burning of the Main Street business block, which had the Banks, National and Savings, Post Office, law office of W. A. Butler and boot and shoe factories of A. B. Noyes and G. J. Tenney. Steam power, supplying the Brewster block on the rear, was also destroyed. Again the Dr. Huse residence was the terminus eastward, and the Pentucket House westward. This fire exceeded in loss the former. In August, 1882, the buildings of Amos Ridley, on Andover Street, were burned from lightning. Other fires have been mostly of barns and out-buildings.

The opening of Tenney's field, now Lincoln Park, for the erection of houses, was in 1868. At about that period, and a few years later, Nelson Avenue was extended and other streets opened. Since 1880 nothing of special note in town enlargement has been attempted.

The Georgetown Savings Bank was incorporated in 1868, with J. P. Jones, president, and W. H. Harriman,

treasurer. The office was at Harriman's drug store, on Central Street, which is now owned by G. L. Metcalf. It was removed about ten years later to the Tenney Block, on Main Street, O. B. Tenney, Esq., elected treasurer, who is still in office. Mr. Tenney is also Trial Justice, has been a member of the Massachusetts Senate, a special commissioner for Essex County, and was for many years one of the selectmen of the town. The Georgetown National Bank has been in existence some fourteen or more years. It had originally a capital of one hundred thousand dollars, with H. P. Chaplin as president, and George H. Carlton, cashier. Lewis H. Giles is cashier at present. Both of these institutions found quarters in Little's Block after they were burned out in the late fire, and are now in Union Block.

Of the fraternal societies the Free Masons are first, in point of seniority. The petition of thirty-four craftsmen was approved, and a Dispensation granted April 5, 1867, to constitute a lodge. This was signed by C. C. Dame, then Grand Master, whose name the lodge afterward assumed. The first officers were elected April 15, 1867, at a meeting in Empire Hall. December 26th of the same year the Masonic building and elegant lodge-rooms having been completed, the lodge was constituted, the officers installed and the hall dedicated. Among the members occupying the chair, have been Stephen Osgood, Sherman Nelson, H. N. Harriman, G. H. Tenney, Isaac Wilson, W. A. Harnden, E. A. Chaplin, M. F. Carter, and others.

The headquarters of the earlier Masons, sixty years ago, was at the old Spofford homestead on Andover Street. Twice Charles C. Dame Lodge, because of being burned out, found in the hall of the Odd Fellows a place for meeting. During Christmas week, 1879, this fraternity had a very successful Fair.

Protection Lodge, I. O. of O. F., was instituted October 7, 1868, by Levi F. Warren, Grand Master of Grand Lodge of Massachusetts, with Paul R. Pickering, N. G. Most of the earlier members had been previously connected with the order in Newburyport. Since the founding, the brothers elected to the position of N. G. have been W. H. Harriman, Jos. E. Bailey, D. E. Moulton, J. P. Stickney, J. G. Scates, H. L. Perkins, E. S. Daniels, G. H. Carleton, W. H. Illsley, Fred. M. Edgell, M. D. Chase, Perley Bunker, John Munroe, H. A. Bixby, W. G. Wadleigh, I. S. C. Perley, G. E. Dawkins (Groveland) S. R. White, Henry Hilliard, J. H. Scates, G. L. Metcalf, J. T. Jackson, A. B. Hull, B. A. Hilliard, W. S. Symonds, Clarence Stetson (Groveland), Charles H. Pingree. Present term, G. L. Mighill. They occupy an elegant hall in Little's Block, with the furnishings and all the surroundings in perfect completeness. This hall was dedicated November 15, 1871, by the Grand Master, A. B. Plympton. The number of charter members, nineteen. Present number, one hundred and sixty-nine. This lodge had a successful Fair the last week in February, 1874. A Rebekah Degree Lodge existed at one time.

Good Will Assembly, 2229 K. of L., was organized in Grand Army Hall, September 13, 1882, by A. A. Carlton, of Lynn, now of the General Executive Board of the Order, with thirteen charter members. This order has had as meeting-places, the hall where they were organized; also Empire Hall, a hall in Masonic building, where they were burned out in 1885, and have met frequently in Town Hall. At present they have rooms in Union Block.

The latest secret order of the town is the A. O. of U. W., organized by Clarence E. Embree, and instituted December 20, 1886. Present officers are P. M. W., S. T. Peakes; M. W., S. K. White. Other positions are held by W. Urquhart, F. V. Noyes, A. B. Comins, E. S. Daniels, F. M. Vining, L. H. Giles, A. C. Hall, M. L. Hoyt, L. F. Carter, T. F. Hill, and M. N. Boardman.

One or two other organizations of a local character have existed here in the past, and perhaps do at present. At the outset of the organization of Patrons of Husbandry, when there were but five Granges in existence—two in New York State, two in Illinois and one in Washington, D. C.—the writer labored to start a Grange in this town. He entered into correspondence with an officer of the National Grange (just organized) then living in Ansonia, N. Y., and hoped to awaken an interest here, but could not arouse sufficient to warrant the founding officers visiting us.

Among the officers of the town, one or two names have special prominence. One is that of Sherman Nelson, who for nearly twenty years was a member of the Board of Selectmen. Another, which may have been already stated, is that of J. P. Jones, Esq., for years deeply interested in the schools and prominent on the school committee; and still another to be named in this connection is Gorham P. Tenney, who, as visiting committee, was greatly beloved by the young people of the town.

The first election of town officers was April 28, 1838. Robert Savory was elected moderator; George Foote, town clerk; John A. Lovering, Sewall Spofford and G. D. Tenney, selectmen and assessors; James Peabody, Moses Thurlow and Jeremiah Clark, overseers of the poor; Robert Savory, Moody Cheney and Charles Boynton, constables; Benjamin Winter, treasurer and collector; Joseph Little, John B. Savory and Amos J. Tenney, fire wardens; Rev. Isaac Braman, Rev. John Burden and Moody Cheney, school committee. George Foote's term of office as town clerk was until 1841; J. P. Stickney, 1841–45; H. N. Noyes, 1845–47; Thomas A. Merrill, 1847–49; J. P. Jones, 1849–50; L. S. Crombie, 1850–51, and died in office; Otis Thompson, *pro tem.*, 1851; L. H. Bateman, 1852–55; J. P. Stickney, 1855–59; C. G. Tyler, 1859–60, and died in office; Chaplin G. Tyler, *pro tem.*, 1860; C. E. Jewett, 1860–71; O. B. Tenney, 1871–73, and resigned the office; J. E. Bailey, 1873–76; Fred. M. Edgell, 1876–77, and died in office; H. N. Harriman, *pro tem.*, 1877–78; J. E. Bailey, 1878–

84; H. N. Harriman, 1884, and also present incumbent.

The post-office in Georgetown, formerly called "New Rowley Post-office," was established in 1824, with Benjamin Little as postmaster, who continued to formally discharge the duties in the old corner grocery until his death, in 1851. The original case of boxes is now preserved in the gallery of Peabody Library. J. P. Stickney, who for some time had performed the principal work, with the office in his store at Little & Noyes' shoe factory, was his successor. Samuel Wilson, who lived in the house now G. L. Metcalf's, was the next incumbent, with the office in what is now the store. This was during the Pierce administration. Captain Joseph Hervey was the official for a time, during Pierce's term, in the corner grocery. During Buchanan's term, J. P. Jones, Esq., was the official, with his brother Cyrus as clerk. The election of Lincoln placed Richard Tenney, Esq., in the office and in a building which was located in what is now the yard of the Memorial Church. The erection of the church caused the removal of this building to North Street, filling a spot now covered by the extreme northerly end of Little's Block. Here C. E. Jewett for a time had the office on the lower floor, and with Johnson as President, C. W. Tenney assumed the duties. Dr. R. C. Huse rented the upper floor on his settlement as physician in town. The next incumbent was Rev. O. S. Butler, holding the office for sixteen years and more, or during the Grant, Hayes, Garfield and Arthur terms. The location of the office under the care of this official was in several places, twice at least in different parts of Masonic Block, and after the 1874 fire temporarily in the Pentucket House. During several later years a convenient room in the Tenney Block on Main Street was provided, which continued as the office under the administration of the present official, S. A. Donoghue, until burned out in the late fire. The office was then hastily set up in the grocery of Dennis Donaghue, and from there removed to the room of the expressman, C. W. Tenney, and but recently has been established in the new (Union) block.

Of the professions, and partially allied thereto, the ministers have been already named. Jeremiah Russell, from New Hampshire, was the first lawyer. He built and occupied what is now the Memorial parsonage. J. P. Jones, who began practice about 1842 or '43, was also from New Hampshire. He married the youngest daughter of Nathaniel Nelson, and resides in the old Nelson home. His eldest son, Boyd B., now of Haverhill, resided in town for some years after his marriage. The office of father and son is in Haverhill. Benjamin Poole had an office in town some forty years ago. W. A. Butler, son of the late postmaster, who studied at Boston University, also practices here.

Of physicians, besides the Spoffords—father and son—and David Mighill, already named, there have been Stephen Mighill, who had at one time an office on the second floor of the South Georgetown grocery, afterwards removed to Boston; William Cogswell, now of Haverhill; George Moody, on Elm Street; H. N. Couch, on North Street (at one time taught the winter school in South Georgetown); Dr. Grosvenor, on Main Street; Martin Root, in Byfield; De Wolf, with an office in the Baptist parsonage, who went West; Spalding, now located near Boston, and Drs. R. C. Huse and R. B. Root, the two last-named having been in practice here since 1866. Others in the past were Rogers, Braman and Perley.

The only practitioners of dentistry ever permanently settled in town were Dr. Reed, about 1856, for a short time, and Thomas Whittle, who removed here from Ipswich several years ago, and is regarded as very successful in his profession. Dr. Howard, however, has for a long time resided in town, but has an office in Haverhill.

Photography was for ten years or more the partial employment of W. H. Harriman, on Central Street, in the rooms of his residence, now occupied by Mrs. Hoyt. About 1872 or '73 S. C. Reed, of Newburyport, an artist of genius, took the rooms of Mr. Harriman, and resided here for two or three years. The first daguerreotypes ever taken in town were by a Mr. Atwood, brother of Mrs. David Haskell. This was in the autumn and early winter of 1847, in the house of T. J. Elliott, and in the room at the corner of Central and Main Streets. It is very easy to recall the mystery that most felt at the report of this new discovery, and the peculiar solemnity experienced in sitting for a picture.

If space permitted, some reference to the changes in country life on the farm, and in the country home generally, might be of interest.

It is said that the first cook-stove used in town was in 1815, and in the house of Thomas Nelson, formerly the Perkins house, near Lake Raynor. This was of the old James pattern, and manufactured in New York State. John Wood, who lived in James Gordon's house, near the mills, was the next to buy this help in the farmer's kitchen. Much fear had been felt that the fuel supply would fail, from the great consumption of wood in the New England States, as population increased, and this invention, greatly lessening the quantity needed, was by many at once taken advantage of. The discovery of peat early in the century, for use as fuel, was much appreciated, and was constantly used in many families.

The first carpet ever brought into the town was of English make; was bought by Deacon Solomon Nelson and wife in 1816, they taking a special journey to Boston for the purpose. This carpet is still in use and in good condition. Those journeys by horse and chaise to Boston, and on visits in New Hampshire, were not then considered at all wearisome by those making them. In 1804, the parties just named, accompanied by friends from Spofford's Hill, journeyed with horse and chaise to the springs at Saratoga, then just

becoming known. At many of the stopping-places in New Hampshire and Vermont, they found relatives of their own or other Rowley families, and an acquaintance was easily made.

As we are about closing this sketch, we will refer briefly to a few special agricultural features, and natural productions of the town.

Apples and pears were formerly largely grown here. A few of those original fruit-trees still remain. Their vigorous growth marks a century from the seed. The temperance reform of fifty years ago checked the manufacture and use of cider, and the old trees which had borne abundant crops of natural fruit, were levelled to the ground. Every farmer, in former days, stored from twenty to a hundred barrels of cider, and some also manufactured many barrels of perry. One hundred barrels of winter pears have annually been grown on a single farm on Nelson Street. There were not less than a dozen cider-mills in town.

Of forest trees of special size there are several in town worthy of mention. The Pickett Elm on Andover Street, and the Chaplin or Shute Elm on Nelson Street, must have attained some growth at the first settlement of the town. Of the last named, Mrs. Huldah Harriman, whose memory went back to about 1750, frequently said that it was as large in her childhood, as in the last years of her life. There is a buttonwood, on Nelson Street, in front of the site of the old Nelson house, which was planted one hundred and thirty-seven years ago by David, the great-grandfather of Sherman Nelson. At Henry E. Perley's there are two immense pasture oaks well worthy of note. There are trees near Humphrey Nelson's said to have been set by Rev. Mr. Chandler, and a very large elm in front of the house of Mrs. Sylvanus Merrill, known as the Searl elm.

Some sections of the town, and especially South Georgetown, are rich in botanical treasures. At the last field meeting of the Essex Institute, held in this town, which was at Oak Dell, June 17, 1883, Mrs. C. M. Horner, a resident of this town, and favorably known to students of nature throughout the State as an enthusiastic botanist, said that more than three hundred species of plants had been collected by her in that locality alone.

A brief mention of several persons who are natives of Georgetown, in addition to those previously named, having more than local celebrity, would not be amiss.

Mrs. A. W. H. Howard is a regular or occasional contributor to the press of Providence, R. I., and Philadelphia, Pa. She and her sister, Miss Sarah E. Horner, have been unwavering advocates for woman suffrage for years, and have invariably voted for school committee at the March meeting, since the suffrage was extended to women.

The Searl and Merrill families, in the village of "Marlboro'," gave to the Baptist and Congregational ministry, early in the present century, six of their sons—three from each family.

George Peabody Russell, a native of the town, was a favorite nephew of the banker George Peabody. He resides in England, and has, it has been reported, a home in the Isle of Wight. He was bequeathed a large fortune by his uncle, and was appointed one of the trustees of the Southern Educational Fund. This mention of Mr. Peabody recalls the famous public reception given to him at the old meeting-house in April, 1867, when, seemingly, the entire population of the town were present with their cordial greetings. Old and young entered heartily into the spirit of the occasion, and none more so than Mr. Peabody himself. J. P. Jones, Esq., gave the address of welcome, and Hon. O. B. Tenney was master of ceremonies and introduced the people to the honored guest.

Augustus M. Cheney, of Byfield, is connected with a leading publishing house in the West. He has recently visited the old homestead on Jackman Street.

Mrs. Lavinia Spofford Weston, having considerable local fame as a poetess, was born in the last month of the last century. Is actively engaged in composition, equaling in vigor the production of her early years.

Milton P. Braman, D.D., a prominent theologian and a close student of history, the son of Rev. Isaac Braman, was a clergyman in Danvers many years. To alleviate the infirmities of her husband in his loss of sight and declining age, Mrs. Braman, whose maiden-name was Parker, and born, as was her husband, on Andover Street, acquired, after she had reached her seventieth year, sufficient knowledge of the Greek language to read it to him with readiness and appreciatingly.

Lyman G. Elliott is a lawyer in California, who is highly esteemed as a citizen in his adopted State, and has achieved success in his chosen profession.

In recent years several teachers of prominence have gone out from this town. F. E. Merrill, now of Utah, was lately nominated as superintendent of schools for the Territory. B. H. Weston recently had charge of an Indian school in the West, and was at one time principal of Atkinson Academy. B. C. Noyes has been for many years principal of the high school in Dayton, Ohio. N. Marshman Hazen is prominently connected with the publishing-house of the Appletons. As a romantic adventurer, Nathaniel Savory, said to have been born in the lately demolished "Brook house" on Thurlow Street, achieved a fame that but few Americans ever equaled. His career as an island king, and his projected confederacy of the Pacific Islands make a unique chapter in a sailor's life.

As we have already given the list of the first officers of the town, we will here record the names of those who are at present in office, at the close of its first half-century: Moderator, O. B. Tenney; Town Clerk, H. N. Harriman; Selectmen and Assessors, J. E. Bailey, James Donavan, C. E. Tyler; Treasurer and Collector, J. E. Bailey; Overseers of the Poor, John A. Hoyt, James Donavan, A. A. Howe; School Committee, G. D. Tenney, O. S. Butler, D. D. Marsh;



Affectionately Your Pastor
Isaac Braman.

Georgetown Mass.
Jan.y 1.st 1852.

Constables, D. M. Bridges, A. B. Hull, Leon S. Gifford, Frank Riley, C. W. Nelson, S. S. Hardy.

The half-centennial of this town and the two hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the arrival of John Spofford with the Rowley emigrants, can each with propriety be celebrated next year by the Spofford family at their proposed gathering, so prominent as the family have been in the early history of the town, and the foregoing historical sketch, written just at this time, seems to be appropriate and in harmony with this event.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

REV. ISAAC BRAMAN.[1]

Rev. Isaac Braman was born of God-fearing parents in Norton, Bristol County, Mass., July 5, 1770. His father died when he was twelve years of age. He always dwelt with peculiar satisfaction upon the fact that his mother continued family worship as long as her children remained with her, and he often expressed gratitude to that Providence that, upon their separation after her second marriage, cast his lot in a family where the voice of daily prayer was heard.

The date of his birth, being but five years before the beginning of the Revolutionary War, his memory was full of the struggles and hardships preceding and following this contest, of which he gave many interesting anecdotes in his jubilee sermon. He had a great desire, in early life, for a collegiate education, but, his guardian refusing, the matter was deferred. At length he says, "I was determined to break through all obstacles, and accomplish my object. I commenced my studies near the close of my eighteenth year, entered Harvard University in the year 1790, graduated in 1794, being, of course, twenty-four years old." Mr. Braman's modesty prevented any allusion to his scholarship and social standing which were so remarkable that the senior class considered it an honor to associate with him while he was still a junior.

"Having, with prayerful consideration," continued Mr. Braman, in his jubilee discourse, "chosen the Gospel ministry for my profession, though sensible of great unworthiness, I did not long neglect to seek a place where I might study to prepare myself for the work. It is doubtless known to most of my hearers that there were no theological institutions, at that day, in which young men might be educated for the ministry. Those who sought the employment were necessitated to put themselves under the tuition of some individual minister for the purpose. There were several clergymen in the vicinity of my residence, who were in the habit of taking pupils. But there was no small difficulty in making a choice. Some were called Hopkinsians, some Calvinists, some moderate Calvinists and some Arminians. Between the last two of these, moderate Calvinists and Arminians, there was no essential difference. They both held that men were to be saved by their virtuous deeds without any radical change except what they could effect in their own strength. The other two sects—Hopkinsians and real Calvinists—held to what are called the doctrines of grace, though there were some shades of difference in their manner of explaining them. But against Hopkinsianism there was a strong prejudice . . . . I freely confess that I partook of the prejudices of the time and place in which I lived, though I am now convinced that the more intelligent part of the Hopkinsian order understood the doctrines of the Gospel as well as did the most who opposed them."

These are noble words of strength and liberality. "In memory's sunset air," the points over which there had been such angry contention, seemed to the good old man only the "prejudices of the time and place" in which he lived. "I did not," Mr. Braman continued, "study with a Hopkinsian, but with several distinguished men who did not harmonize in all things with that denomination."

Mr. Braman was ordained and married the same year, in Georgetown, June 7, 1797, in a new meeting-house, which had the honor, before it was finished, of a dedication sermon by the great Whitefield, from the text, "The glory of the Lord hath filled the house of the Lord." 1 Kings 8 : 11. It was delivered less than a month before his death at Newburyport. It was probably one of his latest efforts, and singularly enough it was preached the very year the future pastor was born. The church was organized in 1732 without a creed, but with a beautiful covenant of duties Godward and manward. This identical covenant is still in use at the present day. The church had but one pastor, Rev. James Chandler, before Mr. Braman's settlement. But in the six years' interval, between Mr. Chandler's death and that event there were sixty-four candidates, Mr. Braman being the last and the final choice of the majority of a divided people.

"Do you inquire," said Mr. Braman, "what got this people into this divided state and led them to think so differently on the subject of religion? I will mention one thing which tended greatly to produce this unhappy effect. There was in the vicinity a theological controversy between two divines of distinction, the one called a Calvinist, the other a Hopkinsian. The dispute was somewhat warm, and the people here, as well as in other places, took sides. Some were Hopkinsians, and some were Calvinists. None of the people were willing to be thought deserving a lower name than one of these; and, having no minister, each party was determined to obtain one of their own stamp. As for myself, I had not studied divinity systematically, and consequently was not

[1] By Apphia Horner Howard.

particularly well versed in the issues which prevailed here, nor in any other theological ism of the day. My object was to exhibit the Gospel in its purity without considering whom it might please or displease. The consequence was that they knew not on which side to place me, and some of the more prominent persons of both sexes favored my settlement, and some of both were opposed. Among the latter, as well as the former, were respectable men and women also."

This candid statement gives a hint of the troubles that met the young minister at the beginning of his career. Indeed, he said in his jubilee sermon that he had "waded through a sea of troubles." Yet they were only the troubles incident to human nature. He survived them all, celebrated his jubilee with honor, lived harmoniously with three successive colleagues, retained his office sixty-one years and died still the senior pastor of the church he loved so well.

There stands in the old cemetery in Georgetown a marble desk, on which rests a Bible open at the words "Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life." On one side are the dates of Mr. Braman's birth, collegiate course, settlement and death, December 26, 1858, and the statement that the monument is erected by his parishioners and friends. On the other side are words which tell the story of his success in the ministry as follows:

"Rev. Mr. Braman was a man of decided piety, of great amiability and much beloved. He possessed a strong mind, sound judgment, uncommon moral courage and remarkable discretion. He was well versed in theological learning, a firm believer in the entire inspiration of the Scriptures, and an able and strenuous advocate of the primitive orthodox institutions and general principles of the New England churches. In his preaching he presented divine truth with clearness and a close application to the consciences of his hearers. In giving counsel, both public and private, he was conspicuous for integrity and wisdom. His love for his people, his friends, his country and the whole church of Christ was strong and sincere."

"In the pangs of his last sickness he was patient and submissive to the divine will, and if not in triumph yet in hope he peacefully yielded up his soul to the God who gave it."

I gained an intimate knowledge of Mr. Braman's blameless and consistent life from the fact that I was born and lived twenty-two years in the house next to the home of his later years, in such close neighborhood that the two families could speak across the small separating yards. Punctually at 2 o'clock every Monday afternoon Mr. Braman, in long flowing gown, left the side door of his house, crossed the yards and appeared at the side door of our house for an informal call on my mother. Great was the awe of the young children on these occasions, often repeated though they were, especially when he was asked to offer prayer.

The engraving accompanying this sketch is a strikingly exact likeness of Mr. Braman, who was a person of very imposing presence, though his clear blue eye always had a kindly gleam for children and young people.

His reticent manner was the result of a shy and sensitive temperament. Those who knew him well found beneath it a fund of wit, humor, appreciation, and all engaging attributes, while his sarcasm, when he considered it merited, was of a fine and keen quality. It obtained for him in college the name of "Razor."

Mr. Braman's punctuality in a neighborly call, to which I have referred, was the habit of his life in all things. It was developed in a severe school.

For many years after his settlement he was without a time-piece. The rigid economy that he was obliged to practice to meet the demands of an increasing family and the hospitality expected in his profession, forbade the possession of such a luxury. Living then as he said, "a large mile" from his church, he was guided by the movements of a neighbor, who was always in season, as to the time of starting, and he was never known to be late at church or on any other occasion. His promptness in opening and closing meetings established a precedent that is still followed in the town, while the tradition of his brevity at weddings and funerals has descended from parents to children.

Mr. Braman was a true conservative. He walked in the safe and beaten paths of the fathers of the church. He disliked controversy. He did not favor speculation. His answer to questions from those who had projected their imagination beyond the written word was, "The Scriptures are silent upon those points." Their silence was to his reverent nature as impressive as were their affirmations.

He shrank from changes. Yet when a new enterprise commended itself to his mind as in the order of Gospel progress he welcomed it. Among the changes of this description in his time was the awakening of interest in foreign missions and the formation of the American Board. The first copy of *The Missionary Herald* was taken in Georgetown. Women, in their zeal, saved money for the cause of missions by denying themselves sugar in their tea and coffee, while little children, before they could speak plainly, were taught to save their pennies for the help of heathen babes.

Mr. Braman, on a farm of about forty acres and on a salary of about three hundred and fifty dollars (then reckoned in British currency) and ten cords of wood, kept his carriage, his cow and other domestic animals.

He gave the three survivors of his five children the best education of the period, and they did ample credit to his care.

One son, James Chandler, named by Mr. Braman with a pleasant bit of sentiment for the predecessor whom he never saw, died in his youth. His father

could never mention his name without emotion. One daughter died in early womanhood. Two sons, Milton P. and Isaac G., became eminent in their respective professions of divinity and medicine. A daughter, the widow of Rev. John Boardman, of East Douglas, returned to her native town, where she became, for many years, an efficient helper in the church, and joined with her step-mother, to whom she was tenderly united by sympathy in the care of her father, whom she survived twenty years. She inherited her mother's beautiful voice and her father's discretion. She was noted for fine conversational powers, and was an ornament to every circle in which she moved.

Mr. Braman was very fortunate in his domestic relations. The wife of his youth, Hannah Palmer, of his native town of Norton, was a woman of beauty, energy, demonstrative manners and great executive ability. She had a high sense of the importance of the pastoral office and gladly assumed all family burdens to allow Mr. Braman time for the preparation of the two sermons a week which were then demanded. Mr. Braman wrote his sermons carefully, and was closely confined to his notes in their delivery, which was with rapid but distinct utterance.

Mrs. Braman's domestic generalship enabled her husband to accomplish in the pulpit, the family, the parish and at his hospitable table great results with small means.

She died in 1835, and in tender appreciation of her worth, Mr. Braman placed on her burial stone the tribute Proverbs 31 : 10, 11, from King Solomon's description of "the virtuous woman," in whom the "heart of her husband doth safely trust."

Mr. Braman married, in 1837, Miss Sarah Balch, a lady of wealth, gentle birth and breeding, from the historic old city of Newburyport. She was as well adapted to the emergencies of his declining powers, when the burdens of life began to fall heavily upon him, as was her predecessor for the pioneer period of his ministry. She was many years his junior, and still lives, after a residence in the town of fifty years, during which her course has been so wise, winning and beneficent, that no person was ever known to criticise her. This unprecedented record makes her jubilee of residence in the town as noteworthy as was Mr. Braman's jubilee of service in the sanctuary.

Her face retains much of the comeliness of her prime when she came to the people. It has also the added charm of that beauty which sometimes comes to the aged. It never passes away, for it is the result of a life of sweetness and purity. It reminds one of the heavenly peace which Tœmer has made to rest upon the brow of the "Lady Abbess," in his exquisite picture of "The Last Hours."

CHAPTER LXI.

LAWRENCE.

BY JOHN R. ROLLINS.

In the autobiography of Hon. Daniel A. White, prepared for his children in 1836, he writes of his early home as follows :

"The situation is upon a broad plain, nearly equidistant from the Merrimac and Spicket Rivers. My father's farm was bounded south on the former, and north on the latter river—a noble farm of nearly three hundred acres, abounding in wood and rural scenery, in fruits, such as strawberries, blackberries, etc., with a fine orchard of apples at that time in the great pasture, now wholly gone. The prospect all around us was far more picturesque and beautiful than since the woods have been cleared away.

"The rural beauty of the farm, especially that part of it lying between the main road and the Merrimack, consisting of almost every variety of meadow and upland, pasture, mowing and woodland, with running brooks, can hardly be imagined by one who sees it now, stripped bare of its grandest folliage, cut up by turnpikes and made a public thoroughfare by the roads passing through it, and the bridge over the Merrimack, which was first built the year I entered college (1773)."

Ten years after this was written, not only the woodland and running brooks had disappeared, but all the concomitants of the farm had given place to large manufacturing establishments and the numerous streets of a bustling town. It was this farm of which Judge White thus pleasantly wrote, which covered what is at the present day a considerable part of the very heart of the city of Lawrence.

The city is situated on both sides of Merrimac River, embracing within its limits somewhat more than four thousand acres taken in nearly equal parts from the towns of Andover and Methuen. The northerly portion, which is the most densely peopled, is very pleasantly situated on a gently sloping plain, partially surrounded by hills of considerable elevation—Tower Hill, on the west, Clover Hill, formerly called Graves' Hill, on the north, and Prospect Hill, on the east—all of which are dotted with pleasant residences and from which are fine views of the town, the river and the adjacent towns. The southerly portion, which is quite rapidly increasing in population, of more level character, was originally covered with pines, and was, in its early days, known as the "moose country." The early settlers seem to have taken pleasure in bandying epithets, the northern people giving to the portion of Andover lying near the river the title of "Sodom," while in turn the north side was "Gomorrah," and as far east as Newburyport Methuen was known as "The End of the World," one of its ponds still bearing the name of World's End Pond.

The town is about twenty-three miles from the mouth of the river, twenty-six miles from Boston, ten miles northerly from Lowell and eight miles west of Haverhill. The Merrimack River passes through it, the Spicket through its northerly portion, entering the Merrimac from the north, within the bounds of the city, and the Shawshean River falls into the Mer-

rimack from the south, forming a part of the south-eastern boundary. The last named furnishes no power within the limits of Lawrence. The Spicket furnishes water to establishments in Methuen, and to the Arlington Mills, Stuart's Dye House, the Wamesit Mill and the Globe Worsted Mill in Lawrence. The Merrimack is the principal source of power, supplemented in seasons of drought by Lake Winnipisiogee, whose waters, as well as those of its many tributary streams, are retained as a reserve.

The total length of the Merrimack, from its origin, at Franklin, N. H., to its mouth, at Newburyport, is about one hundred and ten miles, and the total area drained is about four thousand nine hundred and sixteen square miles, of which three thousand seven hundred and eighty are in New Hampshire and one thousand one hundred and thirty-six in Massachusetts. The average fall of the stream is two hundred and forty-five feet per mile, or two hundred and sixty-nine feet between Franklin and the sea.

Before the river was harnessed to the cars of industry along its banks, it was well stocked with fish. Shad, salmon, alewives and sturgeon abounded in their season, and immense quantities of lamprey eels were to be found—in fact the latter were so abundant that they were sold by the wagon-load instead of the pound.

Hon. R. H. Tewksbury, in his history of Andover Bridge, relates the following story of one of the directors, who was a large farmer and fond of experiments,—"A spring freshet brought up great quantities of eels, and subsiding, left them high and dry in pools and hollows. He considered the idea of boiling them and feeding to swine, of which he had many. His 'hired man' remonstrated, telling him ''twas agin natur to try to fatten pork with fish;' 'besides, Deacon,' he said, 'if you succeed, we sha'n't know what we're eatin', pork or lamper eels.' But the deacon had a cart load of eels drawn up to the barn, and filled the great kettles in the back kitchen with eels, Indian meal and water, kindled the fire, and laid down for a doze. But animals that squirm in the frying-pan would not submit to boiling without protest; the hot water revived them, and each one became an agonizing serpent. They covered the floor of the old room, writhing in their agony and knocking the fire brands about the floor. The deacon nerved himself for the contest and commenced the slaughter of the innocents. An old negro, a newcomer, who lived with a neighbor, and knew nothing of live eels, heard the racket, and, looking in, saw the sea of serpents and fire brands, and the good man 'laying about' him. He ran howling home, saying that more than a thousand devils had the deacon penned up in the kitchen, but he was fighting and prevailing against them, calling mightily on the Lord for help. The deacon owned that though they were not Satanic foes, it was the hardest job of his life to subdue these eels, maintain his standing as a deacon, and at the same time express himself in language sufficiently emphatic."

The eels, however, were not usually given to swine; they formed a staple article of food for the farmers and others all along the river and adjacent territory.

William Stark, in a poem delivered at the Centennial celebration at Manchester, thus speaks of them,—

"The fathers treasured the slimy prize,
They loved the eel as their very eyes,
And of one 'tis said, with a slander rife,
For a string of eels he sold his wife.
From eels they formed their food in chief,
And eels were called the Derryfield beef;
And the marks of eels were so plain to trace,
That the children looked like eels in the face.
And before they walked, it is well confirmed,
That the children never crept, but squirmed.
Such mighty power did the squirmers wield
O'er the goodly men of Old Derryfield,
It was often said that their only care,
And their only wish and their only prayer,
For the present world and the world to come,
Was a string of eels and a jug of rum."

That the territory now embraced in the limits of Lawrence was once occupied either permanently or temporarily by the native Americans (Indians), we have abundant proof, in the multitudes of Indian implements of almost every variety, which have been found in several localities, and of which some fine collections have been made. One, perhaps the largest of these, in possession of Mr. Charles Wingate, includes arrow and spear heads, stone axes, gouges, pestles and other implements, some rudely and others beautifully finished.

One burial-ground of the red men was within the city limits, in the westerly part of South Lawrence, and quite an extensive one was further up the river in Andover. It is quite probable that the land near the river was occupied in many places as a summer encampment, to which year by year the natives returned on account of the abundance of fish and game. Most of the stone implements found, and the chips made in fashioning them, are of material not found in this locality.

While the parent towns, Andover and Haverhill, suffered considerably from Indian raids, Lawrence is not historic ground in that regard. It is said that the Indians once made a foray along the banks of the river, and a man named Peters, who lived about a mile above the dam, refusing to flee with his neighbors, was murdered at his home.

In 1676 a party of savages crossed the river at Bodwell's Ferry (about a mile above the dam), chased the people of Andover, killed a young man named Abbott, and took his brother captive. There is a tradition that old Mr. Bodwell, while standing near the present site of Mr. Davis' foundry, saw one day an Indian prowling upon the other side of the river, evidently bent on mischief. Mr. Bodwell instantly suspected that he was a spy sent to examine the settlement for the purpose of destroying it. Fortunately, the old

man had a gun of extraordinary length and range, and he resolved to let the Indian report go no further. As soon as the savage discovered Mr. Bodwell he made an insulting gesture, thinking himself fairly out of the range of the enemy's gun. Mr. Bodwell immediately fired, and the Indian fell. At dusk the same day Bodwell took a boat, crossed the river carefully, and found the Indian dead, lying in the grass. He rolled the body into the river, having first secured a valuable beaver-skin robe.

Possibly another instance of savage hostility may have occurred here. It is related in "Chase's History of Haverhill."

"Feb. 22, 1698, on return from an attack upon Andover the Indians killed Jonathan Haynes and Saml. Ladd of Haverhill and captured a son of each. Haynes and Ladd who lived in the eastern part of the town, had started that morning with their teams consisting of a yoke of oxen and a horse, each accompanied by their eldest sons Joseph & Daniel to bring home some of their hay which had been cut and stacked the preceding Summer in their meadow, in the *extreme western* part of the town. While they were slowly returning, little dreaming of present danger, they suddenly found themselves between two files of Indians who had concealed themselves in the bushes on each side of the path. Seeing no hope of escape they begged for quarter. Young Ladd who did not relish the idea of being quietly taken prisoner, cut his father's horse loose, and giving him the lash, started off at full speed, tho repeatedly fired upon, and succeeded in reaching here and giving an immediate and general alarm. Haynes was killed because he was too old and infirm to travel, and Ladd who was a fierce stern looking man because, as the Indians said 'he so sour.'"

Young Haynes was carried prisoner to Canada, where he remained several years, and was at last redeemed by his relatives. A cane given him by his Indian master, came into possession of Guy C. Haynes, of East Boston, and is now in the rooms of the New England Historico-Genealogical Society. As Haynes resided in the western part of Haverhill, and his meadow was in the extreme western part, this must have occurred either within our limits or in Methuen, which was set off from Haverhill and incorporated in 1725.

Nearly a hundred years had rolled on after the incorporation of Methuen, and this territory had been converted into peaceful farms, occupied by less than two hundred people. Dams had been built upon the Spicket River, and small paper mills and the mill of the Messrs. Stevens, for the manufacture of piano-forte cases, now the site of the Arlington mills, had been erected, but the Merrimack River flowed in its natural channel unvexed by the arts of man, from its source to the sea.

At this time dwelling-houses were not numerous, and, as in other farming towns, were somewhat remote from each other. Most of those on the north side were located on the road leading from Lowell to Haverhill (now known as Haverhill and East Haverhill Sts), and on the "Londonderry Turnpike" (now Broadway). One of the oldest houses known to have been built within the city limits was situated on the spot which is now the corner of Newbury and Essex Streets. One of the old houses was removed to make room for the High School building; another was destroyed to make room for the dwelling which is now 115 Haverhill Street; this was the house in which Hon. Daniel A. White was born. Another stood on the corner of Haverhill and Amesbury Streets. Another was near the spot where No. 264 Haverhill Street now stands. No. 129 Bradford Street, at the corner of Bradford and Broadway, was originally the farm-house of the Methuen town farm. The oldest of all is No. 34 East Haverhill Street, the old house of the Bodwell family, though not their first residence. This house is more than one hundred and thirty-three years old, perhaps more than one hundred and fifty, and is the only monument of early days that Lawrence can boast. "The building has been much changed by successive repairs and alterations, but the foundations are made as if to last forever. The chimney is of immense proportions, measuring twenty by thirteen feet at the base; a modern chimney in the city, one hundred feet high, measures at the base only seven by seven feet."[1] There stands in the front yard of this house a noble old elm tree, which has braved the storms of over a hundred years, and is to day apparently vigorous. It is said that Mrs. Bodwell employed a man to bring the tree, then a sapling, from the woods, and plant it in front of her door. The man was a soldier of the French War, and had just returned from the capture of Quebec. In return for his service Mrs. Bodwell rewarded him with a quart of molasses. The ancient house was occupied in recent years by the late William B. Gallison, and is perhaps better known to the present generation as the Gallison House, and it is at present the residence of Miss Emily G. Wetherbee, who pleasantly commemorates the ancient tree in verse:

"I love thee, Oh! thou grand old tree,
Thy towering branches rise,
As if they held, in majesty,
Deep converse with the skies.
Could'st thou but speak, how strange a tale
Would be thy theme to-day,
About the many vanished years
That God has rolled away.

"The hand that planted thee is dust,—
Thy nurture was its pride,—
And many generations since
Have played their parts and died.
The peltings of unnumbered storms,
Unnumbered years thou'st braved;
And still we see thee hale and green,
Majestic and unscathed.

"From out your antiquated door,
The children oft have strayed,
And trooped along in merriment,
To gambol in thy shade;
When years had flown, and womanhood
And manhood, brought its care,
Again they came with burdened hearts,
Thy sweet relief to share.

"A trysting place for lovers, too,
Thy arching branches made;
When night was silvered by the moon,
And dew shone o'er the glade,

[1] Rev. W. E. Park.

And often, when yon brilliant queen
Bid thee and them good-night ;
Thou'st heard the parting kiss they gave,
And shared in their delight.

"A bride, with flowing robes of white,
And garlands in her hair,
Came forth to leave the dear old home,
Another's lot to share.
In purity and innocence,
She chose another life,
And beautiful that summer morn,
Appeared the youthful wife.

"The morning fresh and sweet, and clear,
Began the quiet day,
The birds among the swaying leaves,
Trilled out their roundelay.
And gladdened by the glorious sight,
(Thy branches low did bend ;)
Her heart leaped out in ecstacy,
To thee, her childhood's friend.

"From infancy her radiant eyes,—
The reflex of her glee,—
Had scanned each bough and branch and leaf,
Of her familiar tree ;
And now like one who sighs to think
That separation's near,
She turned her saddened face away,
And shed a silent tear.

"Alluring scenes of other climes,
And nature's grand displays,
But made her yearning heart still more
Exultant in thy praise.
Excitement lent its glowing whirl,
Wherever she might roam ;
But with a longing heart she sighed
For thee, and dear old home.

"The aged sire and matron too,
When life was nearly o'er,
Have leaned against thy trunk, and talked
Of memories of yore,
And watched the same old sun go down,
In splendor in the west,
Nor thought how fast the fleeting hours,
Were bringing them to rest.

"Oft have I stretched me here and seen,
With faith's far-seeing eye,
Thy very counterpart old tree,
Implanted in the sky,
And wished, when came the silent voice
From dread eternity,
My failing sight might rest at last
Complacently on thee.

"I love thee, Oh ! thou grand old tree,
Thy towering branches rise,
As if they held, in majesty,
Deep converse with the skies.
Could'st thou but speak, how strange a tale
Would be thy theme to-day,
About the many vanished years,
That God has rolled away."

Roads were still less numerous than the buildings. The prominent ones were the old Haverhill road, before named, the road at the west part of the town leading to Bodwell's ferry, near the pumping station, the road at the easterly end leading to Marston Ferry, near the present gas works, and on the construction of Andover Bridge, a road leading from the bridge to the corner of Amesbury and Haverhill Streets. On the south side of the river were the Salem turnpike and the old road to Lowell. Here was a more compact settlement—the Shawsheen House, the Essex House, converted into a dwelling, the old pioneer store and the brick building occupied by the late Daniel Saunders and a few others yet remaining.

Prior to 1793 communication between the two towns was by means of the ferries. In that year the Legislature passed an act incorporating Samuel Abbott, John White, Joseph Stevens, Ebenezer Poor and associates as a body politic, under the name of "The Proprietors of Andover Bridge," and the act was approved by John Hancock, Governor, March 19th. The charter provided that the building should be completed within *three years*. It was opened for travel November 19th, just eight months from the date of the charter, and the opening was celebrated with great rejoicing—the clergy of the two towns, the stockholders and the prominent men of Essex and Rockingham Counties being invited, and an entertainment furnished by the directors—the militia, infantry and cavalry parading in honor of the event; it was celebrated still further by killing a boy, who was bayonetted by one of the soldiers for attempting to pass the guard. The bridge was a wooden structure, resting on wooden piers, and after a short life of nine years, went down in ruins during the passage of a drove of cattle. It was rebuilt in 1802–03; again travel was interrupted by the fall of the large central span. This was promptly repaired; but four years later, in 1807, a heavy freshet again destroyed it. The discouraged proprietors petitioned the Legislature for leave to raise money by a lottery, but were refused.

The bridge was rebuilt upon stone piers, and moved further up the river, having previously spanned the river where the railroad bridge now stands. In 1837 it was rebuilt by the late John Wilson, of Methuen. It was rebuilt again by the Essex Company in 1848, into whose hands the franchise had then passed, and was raised to its present level by Stone and Harris, contractors, and the piers were thoroughly repaired by Stephen P. Simmons.

In 1852 a great freshet carried away the toll-house, south abutment and fishway at the dam. In 1858 it was again thoroughly reconstructed by Morris Knowles. In 1868, by an act of the Legislature, it became part of the public highway. The bridge was in a peculiarly unfavorable location for durability. Situated near the dam where it was alternately exposed to a dry and then a moist atmosphere, the timbers were constantly decaying, and after many more repairs and partial rebuilding, it was destroyed by fire July, 1881, and a fine new iron-bridge marks the resting-place of almost the only historic structure in the town.

To add to the troubles of the early proprietors, in 1822 other parties petitioned the Legislature for another bridge a little further up the river. In op-

posing this petition the proprietors made a formal statement that the bridge cost originally twelve thousand dollars. In twenty-eight years the cost had been twenty-nine thousand dollars more, with only fifteen thousand dollars of income from tolls; added to this was the loss of interest and their property consisted of an old bridge just damaged by a freshet to the amount of six thousand dollars.

Had the old bridge been charged from the start with accumulations, interest and expense, and credited with income, the actual cost at the time Lawrence was formed would have been upwards of half a million dollars—a practical illustration of the rare economy of building bridges of wood.

The first toll-gatherer was Asa Pettengill, with the enormous salary of $33.33. He was required to give a bond of £400, and both he and his wife were sworn to the faithful performance of their duty. After thirty years, the salary was raised to $9.00 and a gallon of oil per month, and the use of the proprietors' cooking-stove for $3.00 rental yearly. Under the Essex Company, James D. Herrick was collector for twenty-two years, until the bridge became free. Among the officers and directors of the old corporation were Loammi Baldwin, the first President, a noted engineer; Benjamin Osgood, of Methuen; Gayton P. Osgood, of Andover; Abbott Lawrence, and Charles S. Storrow. The Treasurers, after 1845, were Nathan W. Harmon, Jno. R. Rollins and Henry H. Hall.

Lawrence Bridge.—In 1854, for the purpose of better accommodating North Andover and Lawrence, and also for avoiding the railroad crossing, at grade, near the Andover Bridge, a charter was granted for another bridge, at the east end of the city, to George D. Cabot and others. This bridge was built in 1854–55, and remained a toll-bridge till 1868, when this also, with the other bridges across the Merrimac, became free. George D. Cabot was Treasurer, and Nicholas Chapman, toll gatherer, from the beginning. This bridge was destroyed by fire in 1887, and will be replaced by an iron bridge, now under contract with the Boston Bridge Company.

As early as 1820, the Merrimac Canal Company was incorporated for the purpose of building a canal, to extend navigation from tide-water at Haverhill to the new town then forming at Pawtucket Falls (Lowell); their charter was extended, but nothing was done toward carrying the plan into execution. An attempt was made a few years since to render the river itself navigable from Lawrence to Haverhill, and much money was expended by the United States Government in removing boulders and deepening the channel at the rapids between the two cities. The Pentucket Navigation Company was formed ostensibly for the purpose of supplying the Merrimac valley with coal, it being claimed that water transportation could be conducted at much cheaper rates, and consequently that great benefit would ensue to the people from the diminished price of fuel. By the use of light-draught steamboats coal was brought up the river, and a depot for its sale was established in Lawrence; but from the fact that the river remains frozen for four or five months in the year, and that in summer droughts it could not be made navigable without enormous expense, the enterprise was abandoned. The amount of coal actually transported was not sufficient in an entire season to supply the single corporation, the Pacific Mills, which consumes twenty-three thousand tons per year, or little over seventy-five tons per day. It was thought by many that the whole scheme was inaugurated rather for political purposes than with any hope or expectation of benefiting the public.

Nothing had been done toward utilizing the power of Merrimac River, until Mr. Daniel Saunders, then a resident of Andover, believing that valuable power could be attained at this point, took steps to interest capitalists in a new enterprise here.

Mr. Saunders, who "had learned the business of cloth-dressing and wood-carding in his native town, Salem, N. H., removed to Andover in 1817, and after working on a farm, entered the mill of Messrs. Abel and Paschal Abbott, where he ultimately obtained an interest in the business, taking a lease and managing the mill,—subsequently returned to his native town and started a woolen-mill there, but returned to Andover in 1825, settling in the North Parish, for a time leasing the Stone Mill, erected by Dr. Kittredge, and afterward building a mill on a small stream that flows into the Cochichewick. In 1839 or '40 he purchased a mill in Concord, N. H., and carried on manufacturing there, retaining his home in North Andover. About 1842 he relinquished the woolen-mill at N. Andover, sold his house to Mr. Sutton and removed to the West Parish, now South Lawrence, nearly opposite the Shawsheen House.[1]" Here he passed the remainder of his days, ceasing from the labors of a busy life October 8, 1872, æt. seventy-six. It was quite natural that having thus been engaged in manufactures, that the falls in the Merrimac so near to his residence should suggest to him the possibilities and capabilities of the river. To him, therefore, must be credited the foresight and sagacity of securing quietly in his own right the falls above the present dam,—known as Peter's Falls,—which virtually gave him control of the water-power of the river at this point. The development of this power would require a large outlay of money, and further progress must depend upon the willingness of capitalists to embark in such an enterprise. Messrs. J. G. Abbott, a nephew of Mr. Saunders, Samuel Lawrence and John Nesmith, of Lowell, to whom Mr. Saunders had communicated what he had done, readily undertook to interest others, and in 1843 Samuel Lawrence, J. G. Abbott, John Nesmith, Judge Thomas Hopkin-

[1] Sarah L. Bailey, History of Andover.

son, Jonathan Tyler, Chas. W. Saunders, of Lowell, Daniel Saunders, Daniel Saunders, Jr., Gayton P. Osgood, Nathaniel Stevens, Joseph Kittredge, of Andover, Edmund Bartlett, of Newburyport, John Wright, Josiah G. White, Joseph H. Billings and Henry Poor (perhaps others), formed the Merrimac Water-Power Association, of which Samuel Lawrence was chosen president and treasurer, and Daniel Saunders agent.

At the winter session of the Legislature of 1844–45 this company petitioned for a charter, which was granted, and the act was approved by Gov. Briggs in March, 1845.

"CHARTER 1844.

"Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives in General Court assembled, and by the authority of the Same as follows:

"SECT. I. Samuel Lawrence, John Nesmith, Daniel Saunders and Edmund Bartlett, their Associates and Successors, are hereby made a corporation, by the name of the Essex Company, for the purpose of constructing a dam across Merrimack river, and constructing one or more locks and canals in connection with said dam, to remove obstructions in said river by falls and rapids, from Hunt's Falls to the mouth of Shawsheen river, and to create a water-power to use, or sell, or lease to other persons or Corporations, to use for manufacturing and mechanical purposes; and for these purposes, shall have all the powers and privileges, and be subject to all the duties and liabilities and restrictions set forth in the 38th and 44th Chapters of the Revised Statutes.

"SECT. II. Said Corporation may hold real estate not exceeding, exclusive of the expenditure for the dam & Canals, three hundred thousand dollars. And the whole capital stock of said corporation shall not exceed one million dollars, and said stock shall be divided into shares not exceeding one hundred dollars each.

"SECT. III. The said corporation is hereby authorized and empowered to construct and maintain a dam across said river, either at Deer Jump Falls, or Bodwell's Falls, or some point in said river between said falls, and all such canals and locks as may be necessary for the purposes aforesaid; and for the purpose of making said dam, and constructing the main canal for navigation or transports, may take, occupy and inclose any of the lands adjoining said canals and locks, or dam, which may be necessary for building or repairing the same, for towing paths and other necessary purposes, not exceeding twenty feet on each side of said canal or locks, and may blow up and remove any rocks in said river, and dig in any of the lands near the said river, through which it may be necessary to pass said main canal, *provided* that said corporation shall not obstruct the passage of rafts, masts, or floats of timber down said river, earlier than the first day of June, in building said dam, nor keep the same obstructed for a longer time than five months before the opening of said canal for the passage thereof.

"SECT. IV. If there shall be occasion, in the prosecution of the powers and purposes aforesaid, to make a canal across any public highway, or if highways shall hereafter be laid out across such canal, it shall be the duty of said corporation to make sufficient bridges across said canal, and to keep them in good repair.

"SECT. V. The said corporation shall make and maintain in the dam so built by them across said river, suitable and reasonable fishways, to be kept open at such seasons as are necessary and usual for the passage of fish.

"SECT. VI. The said corporation shall erect, and forever maintain such canal and locks as shall be necessary around any dam constructed by them; the lock to be not less than twenty feet in width, and ninety feet in length; and said canal shall be so constructed, that there shall be easy, safe and convenient access to, and egress from, the same, with fastenings and moorings for the reconstruction of rafts or floats, after the egress; and shall be free, and not subject to any charges whatever for the passage of rafts of wood and lumber, masts and floats of timber, and be tended by a keeper employed by said corporation, and opened at all reasonable times, promptly, for such passage.

SECT. VII. The fishways in said dam, and the entrance and exit of said canal, and the moorings and fastenings at the exit, shall be made to the satisfaction of the County Commissioners of the County of Essex, who shall, on application to them by said corporation, after due notice, in such manner as they shall deem reasonable, to all persons interested therein, and a hearing of the parties, prescribe the mode of constructing the same; and any person who shall be dissatisfied with the construction thereof, when the same are completed, may make complaint to said County Commissioners, setting forth that the same, or either of them, are not constructed according to the prescription of said commissioners: and said commissioners, after due notice as aforesaid, shall proceed to examine the same, and shall accept the same, if they shall be of opinion that they are built and made according to such prescriptions: or if they shall be of opinion that the same are not made according to the prescription, may require the same to be further made and completed till they shall be satisfied to accept the same: and the expenses of said commissioners, in such examination shall be paid by said corporation.

"SECT. VIII. Any person who shall be damaged in his property by said corporation, in cutting or making canals through his land, or by flowing the same, or in any other way in carrying into effect the powers hereby granted, unless said corporation shall, within thirty days after request in writing, pay or tender to said person a reasonable satisfaction therefor, shall have the same remedies as are provided by law for persons damaged by railroad corporations, in the 39th Chap. of the Revised Statutes.

"SECT. IX. For the purpose of reimbursing said corporation in part for the cost and expense of keeping said locks and canals in repair, and in tending the same, and in clearing the passages necessary for the transit of boats and merchandise, and other articles through said canal, the following toll is hereby established and granted to said corporation, on all goods, boats and merchandise, except rafts of wood and lumber masts and floats of timber passing down said canal, and on all goods carried up through said canal, namely: on salt, lime, plaster, bar iron, pig iron, iron castings, anthracite coal, stone and hay, eight cents per ton of twenty-two hundred and forty pounds; on bituminous coal, twelve cents per chaldron of thirty-six bushels; on brick, sixteen cents per thousand; on manure, fifty cents per load; on oak timber, thirty-five cents per ton of forty cubic feet; on pine plank and boards, thirty cents per thousand, board measure; on ash and other hard stuff, forty cents per thousand, board measure; on posts and rails, fifteen cents per hundred; on tree nails, thirty cents per thousand; on hop poles, twenty cents per thousand; on hard wood, twenty cents per cord; on pine wood, sixteen cents per cord; on bark, twenty cents per cord; on white oak pipe staves, one dollar per thousand; on red oak pipe staves, sixty-seven cents per thousand; on white oak hogshead staves, sixty cents per thousand; on red oak hogshead staves, forty cents per thousand; on white oak barrel staves, twenty cents per thousand; on hogshead hoops, sixteen cents per thousand; on barrel hoops, twelve cents per thousand; on hogshead hoop-poles, thirty cents per thousand; on barrel hoop poles, twenty cents per thousand; on all articles of merchandise not enumerated, ten cents per ton of twenty-two hundred and forty pounds; *provided* that the rates of toll aforesaid shall be subject to the direction of the Legislature.

"SECT. X. The said dam shall not be built to flow the water in said river higher than the foot of Hunt's Falls in the ordinary run and amount of water in the river, and a commission of three competent persons, to be appointed, one by the said corporation, and one by the proprietors of the locks and canals of Merrimac River; and a third by the two thus appointed, shall, upon the application of either party, fix and determine, by permanent monuments, the point in said river, which is the foot of Hunt's Falls; and shall also, upon the like application, fix and determine the height of the dam of this corporation, and of the flash-boards to be used thereon, whose award and determination shall be final and binding upon all parties forever. And if either party shall refuse, after request in writing by the other, for the space of thirty days, to name such commissioner, or in case of a vacancy in such commission, for any cause, either party may apply to the Governor of this Commonwealth, who is hereby empowered to fill such vacancy. And the said point of the foot of Hunt's Falls shall be fixed within sixty days after such application to the commissioners, and the height of the permanent dam shall be fixed and determined within one year after such application.

SECT. XI. This act shall take effect from and after its passage. (Approved by the Governor March 20, 1845.)"

On the same day that the act received the approval of the Governor, a party of gentlemen, the pioneers in the establishment of American manufactures, visited the Falls at Andover, and before the close of the day had purchased of the Water-Power Association

all their right and interests in the Falls for the stipulated sum of $30,000. This party included Abbott Lawrence, William Lawrence, Samuel Lawrence, John A. Lowell, George W. Lyman, Nathan Appleton, Theodore Lyman, Patrick T. Jackson, William Sturgis, John Nesmith, Jonathan Tyler, and the engineers, James B. Francis and Charles S. Storrow.

On the 22d (two days later), subscriptions were received to the stock of the new company, Mr. Abbott Lawrence heading the list by a subscription to one thousand shares of one hundred dollars each; others followed in varying sums—fifty, forty, thirty, twenty and ten thousand dollars each, and less, until the whole amount of stock, one million dollars, was taken, and with little delay, for on the 16th of April following the company organized by the choice of Abbott Lawrence, Nathan Appleton, Patrick T. Jackson, John A. Lowell, Ignatius Sargent, William Sturgis and Charles S. Storrow as Directors.

At the first meeting of the Directors, Abbott Lawrence was elected President, and remained in office till his decease, with the exception of the time when he was the American Minister to England, when J. Wiley Edmands occupied the position. Mr. Storrow was the Treasurer and General Agent of the Company till 1882, when he was succeeded by the present Treasurer, Howard Stockton.

A very cursory glance at the history of these men will suffice to show that they were eminently qualified for the task they had undertaken of founding a new town.

Patrick Tracy Jackson, the youngest son of Hon. Jonathan Jackson, of Newburyport, was born August 14, 1780; received his early education in the public schools of his native town, and afterward at Dummer Academy, Byfield. When about fifteen, he was apprenticed to Mr. William Bartlett, a merchant of Newburyport. At the age of twenty-eight, he engaged in mercantile business in Boston, his acquaintance with the East India trade (he had made several voyages to India) specially fitting him for that branch of business; and he continued in the East and West Indies trade till the breaking out of the War of 1812. At this time, his brother-in-law, Francis C. Lowell, who had returned from a long visit to England and Scotland, conceived the idea that the cotton manufacture, then almost monopolized by Great Britain, might be advantageously prosecuted at home. We had the raw material; and the character of our population—educated, moral, enterprising—could not fail, he thought, to secure success, though England had the advantage of cheap labor, improved machinery, and reputation.[1] Most of us, at the present day, surrounded as we are with manufacturing establishments, are not apt to realize the boldness of this undertaking, or the obstacles to be overcome. Neither machinery, patterns, nor drawings could be had from England, for we were then at war; and even in time of peace, it would not have been an easy task, since it was but a few years before (1809) that William Hewitt was fined at the Middlesex Sessions in the sum of £500 and imprisoned for three months, for enticing an English artificer, John Hutchinson, a dyer, to emigrate with him to the United States, to be employed in a cotton manufactory; and Hutchinson himself was put under bonds to remain at home. Messrs. Knapp & Baldwin, attorneys at law, in writing of this case, proceed to say: "This is an offence against the law, of which few are aware of the consequences, or of the national loss arising from its infraction; yet it is a statute which—as a nation of trade and agriculture, of the arts and sciences—is highly necessary to the welfare of our country. To have the secrets of our inventions clandestinely carried into foreign countries, must certainly rob us of a part of the fruit of our ingenuity, *and consequently reduce the price of labor*," &c.[2]

At this time there was not a power-loom in the United States—mills for spinning were in operation—but weaving was performed by hand-looms. Mr. Lowell associating with himself his brother-in-law, Mr. Jackson, in the enterprise which he proposed to undertake, gave his first attention to the invention of a power-loom. Partially successful in this, he called to his aid Mr. Paul Moody, an ingenious mechanic of Newburyport, subsequently eminent at Lowell. The loom, after some alterations, was brought to completion, other machinery invented, and in 1813 the "Boston Manufacturing Company," at Waltham, was chartered, and erected the first mill, complete in itself, which converted the raw cotton into finished cloth.[3] Of this company Mr. Jackson became President. In 1817, after Mr. Lowell's death, Mr. Jackson relinquished mercantile pursuits and devoted his attention to manufacturing. In 1821 he purchased the Pawtucket Canal, and secured the water-power of the Merrimack at Chelmsford, and thus laid the foundation for the town, which was incorporated in 1825, under the name of Lowell, in honor of his friend and co-worker, Francis C. Lowell. On the completion of the Merrimack Manufacturing Company's mills, Mr. Jackson became a director. He was Treasurer of the Hamilton Mills, Lowell, 1829 to 1832; also Treasurer of the Proprietors of Locks and Canals, 1838 to 1845.

In 1830, better facilities being needed for transporting the products of the new mills to the seaboard than were offered by the old-time canal and baggage-wagon, Mr. Jackson, in connection with Mr. Kirk Boott, determined upon the new project of a Railway. They had watched with much interest the proceedings of Mr. Stephenson in England, and the apparent suc-

[1] Mrs. E. Yale Smith's History of Newburyport.

[2] See "Newgate Calendar," vol. 5, London.

[3] The first mill for producing yarn by machinery was built at Beverly, 1789, the members of that corporation being John, George, Andrew and Deborah Cabot, Joshua Fisher, Henry Higginson, Moses Brown, Israel Thorndike and Isaac Chapman. This was a brick mill, driven by horse-power, and was assisted by the State.

cess of Stephenson's experiments encouraged the Legislature to grant a charter for the purpose of carrying out the project. Engineers were consulted here and abroad, and the first passenger railroad in New England, the Boston and Lowell, was opened for travel in 1835.

Nathan Appleton was a son of Deacon Isaac Appleton, of New Ipswich, N. H., and a descendant of Captain Samuel Appleton, of Ipswich, who commanded the Massachusetts troops in the Indian war known as King Philip's war, 1675. He was born in 1779, and, after fitting himself at the New Ipswich Academy, entered Dartmouth College at the age of fifteen. He changed his plans and went into mercantile business with his brother Samuel in Boston. In 1810 he made a visit to Europe for the purpose of extending his business relations; and while there met with Francis C. Lowell, and became interested in his plans of introducing manufactures in the United States, and on his return was associated with Messrs. Lowell & Jackson as one of the proprietors of the Waltham Factory. He was also associated with Mr. Jackson and Kirk Boott in the purchase of the water-power at Pawtucket Falls, and was the projector and largest proprietor of the Hamilton Company at Lowell.

Mr. Appleton was in the Massachusetts Legislature in 1815, and served till 1827, and three years later (1830) was elected to the House of Representatives in the United States Congress.

On the expiration of his term he declined a reelection, but in 1842 was again elected to supply the vacancy caused by the resignation of Mr. Winthrop. He was the author of several pamphlets on currency, banking and the tariff.

Robert C. Winthrop wrote a memorial of him, in which he says,—

"Persistent courage and inflexible integrity were indeed the two leading elements of Mr. Appleton's character, and constituted the secrets of his great success. To these, more than to any thing else, he owed his fortune and his fame. He displayed his boldness by embarking in untried enterprises, by advocating unpopular doctrines, by resisting popular prejudices, by confronting the most powerful and accomplished opponents in oral or written arguments, and by shrinking from no controversy into which the independent expression of his opinions might lead him. His integrity was manifested where all the world might read it, in the daily doings of a long mercantile career, and in the principles which he inculcated in so many forms of moral, commercial and financial discussion."

And in 1861 Mr. Winthrop again writes,—

"Not many men, indeed, have exercised a more important influence among us during the last half-century than the late Hon. Nathan Appleton; not many men have done more than he has done in promoting the interests and sustaining the institutions to which New England has owed so much of its prosperity and welfare. No man has done more by example and by precept to elevate the standard of mercantile character, and to exhibit the pursuits of commerce in proud association with the highest integrity, liberality and ability."[1]

A street in Lawrence bears his name, on which are located two of the public buildings, the city hall and court-house.

[1] See "History of New Ipswich," N. E. H. G. Society Biographies.

John Amory Lowell was son of John Lowell and grandson of Judge Lowell of the United States Circuit Court. He graduated (Harvard College 1815) at the age of sixteen, and commenced his business education at the house of Kirk Boott & Sons, to whose business he succeeded in partnership with the eldest son, Mr. John Wright Boott.

In 1827 he was treasurer of the Boston Manufacturing Company at Waltham, succeeding Patrick T. Jackson, and held that position till 1844. In 1835 he built the Boot mill at Lowell, and was treasurer of the Boott Company thirteen years, and, as president and director till his death, contributed largely to its success.

In 1839 he built the Massachusetts Mills, of which he was also the treasurer till 1848 and a director through life; was also a director in the Lake Company and the Lowell machine-shop. He was associated with Abbott Lawrence and others in the creation of the Essex Company at Lawrence and a director of the Pacific Mills until age compelled him to relinquish some of his cares.

Mr. Lowell was also for fifty-nine years a director of the Suffolk Bank, Boston, and in 1824 originated the system of redemption of country bank notes. He was also one of the fellows of Harvard College for forty years, and for a longer period trustee of the Lowell Institute. He was an accomplished classical scholar, an eminent mathematician, an able botanist and a rare linguist. Generous in his impulses, he delighted in aiding younger men, and was always ready to give to any cause that appealed to his generosity. Such a union of business capacity, literary and scientific attainments, unsullied integrity and unostentatious generosity, formed a rare combination, and enabled him in a long life of untiring industry to do much for the advancement of his generation, and to add a lustre to the honored name he bore. Born November 11, 1798, he died October 31, 1881.[2]

Hon. Charles S. Storrow graduated from Harvard College 1829, and subsequently pursued his studies three years in the School of Engineers and Mines, at Paris, France. He was one of the engineers engaged in building our first New England Railway, and on its completion, became its general manager for several years, and until the new enterprise at Lawrence was commenced, when he was appointed agent and treasurer of the new company, and at first its engineer. The first step to be taken was the construction of the dam, and this was planned and its construction commenced under his direction; and if nothing else remained, this alone would be an enduring memento of his thorough and skilful work. On the completion of the Atlantic Cotton Mills, which were built by the Essex Company, Mr. Storrow became the treasurer. On the establishment of the first Bank (the Bay State), he was its first president.

[1] From "Records of Old Residents' Association," Lowell.

And when the town adopted a City charter, he was very appropriately elected its first mayor. In the multifarious duties devolving upon him in the prosecution of the plans of the company, in 1846 he called to his aid as engineer Capt. Charles H. Bigelow, a graduate of West Point Military Academy, who had been captain in the Corps of United States Engineers, and was then employed on the forts in Boston Harbor, and Mr. Storrow gave his attention mainly to the financial and general affairs of the company. Having seen the City grow to its present proportions, and the company fully and successfully established, he removed to Boston. He resigned his office as treasurer and agent in 1882, and was succeeded by Howard Stockton, but retains his interest in the company, being its president at the present time. He was, for a short time, one of the Park Commissioners of the City of Boston, and also consulting engineer at one time of the Hoosac Tunnel, and in 1862, at the request of the Commissioners, made a visit to Europe, to examine the European tunnels,—upon which he made an extremely interesting and elaborate report, which was published, and furnished much valuable information in the prosecution of the work.

Abbott Lawrence, born in Groton December 16, 1792, received his education at the district school and academy in that town, now known in consequence of the benefactions of the family as Lawrence Academy. At the age of sixteen he went to Boston as an apprentice to his elder brother, Amos, and six years later, 1814, at the age of twenty-one, he became a partner in the house of A. and A. Lawrence, which, for a long series of years, deservedly held a very high place in the mercantile community of that City.

Under the influence of the War of 1812 the manufacture of cotton goods in New England had largely increased, but the methods of manufacture were imperfect. The return of peace gave the movement a severe check. It took a fresh start in connection with improved machinery, and made a prosperous advance under the tariff of 1816, which Messrs. Calhoun and Lowndes, of South Carolina, were so prominent in framing into law, and in connection with which Mr. Clay first appeared as the advocate of "a thorough and decided protection to home manufactures by ample duties." The tariff of 1824 still further promoted the manufacture of both cotton and woolen fabrics.

Originally importers of foreign goods, the Messrs. Lawrence engaged early, in the sale of cotton and woolen goods of American manufacture, and became large proprietors in the Lowell Mills, ceasing to import, and becoming for a long period the leading house for the sale of American fabrics. When the new enterprise at Lawrence was projected, Mr. Lawrence, as has been previously stated, took a prominent part, and on the completion of the Atlantic Cotton Mills, in which he was a large stockholder, he became president of that company, and later, in 1853, he was president of the Pacific Mills Company, in which office he continued till the close of his life.

During the year following the organization of the company, and many years afterward, the territory was a scene of intense and phenomenal activity. The dam and canal were constructed, boarding-houses and a hotel erected (the Franklin House), the large machine-shop constructed, saw and planing-mills built, and the entire region cut, gashed and seamed in the laying out of streets, the construction of sewers, building gas-works and water-works, and in sales of land and in planting trees, which now furnish a grateful shade and add so much to the beauty of many of the principal streets.

Their first and most important work was the dam. This was designed by the agent of the company (Mr. Storrow), and at the time of its construction, was the longest of its kind in the world. The whole length is one thousand six hundred and twenty-nine feet; distance between the wing walls nine hundred feet. It is thirty-five feet thick at the base and three or three and one-half feet at the top; built of granite, laid in cement, arching toward the stream fifteen feet; the lower course of stone bolted to the ledge at the bottom of the river. Greatest height forty and one-half feet, mean height thirty-two feet, average fall of water twenty-six feet. Three years were occupied in the construction, and it is, and will remain, an enduring monument of skill, firm as the natural ledges upon which it is constructed.

A serious accident happened during its construction, by the partial destruction of the coffer dam. Two men were killed and five injured by the accident, and the engineer, Capt. Bigelow, barely escaped with his life. He was temporarily disabled, and the coffer dam was repaired by Capt. Phineas Stevens.

The first stone of the dam was laid on the 19th of September, 1845, at five o'clock P.M., near the centre of the river, by John A. Carpenter, of the firm of Gilmore & Carpenter, the contractors, and the last stone was placed on the 19th of September, 1848, at 5 P.M.

The canal on the north side of the river, a little more than one mile in length, runs parallel with the river and four hundred feet distant, and on the space thus enclosed are constructed the large mills which occupy the entire territory as far as Union Street; while below are the Lawrence Woolen-Mills, Lawrence Machine Company, Davis' Foundry, Webster's Grist-Mills, the Wright Braid Company, Dustin & Webster's machine-shop and others. The Everett Mills receive their water from the canal and discharge into the Spicket, as does the Russell Paper Company in part, while below the terminus of the canal other establishments receive water by a penstock carried across the Spicket River, discharging into the Merrimac.

The total cost of the dam and canal, including in-

terest, damages, detention to fisheries and navigation, engineering and general expenses was $525,773.76. The canal is one hundred feet wide at its commencement, narrowing to sixty feet at the waste weir, and 12 feet deep, and is connected with the Merrimac by guard-locks, made of hammered stone laid in cement, ninety-five feet by twenty-one feet each.

A smaller canal on the south side of the river, projected to extend as far as Union Street, has been more recently built, which is sixty feet wide and ten feet deep, furnishing power to the Lawrence Bleachery, the Prospect Worsted Mills, paper-mills, leather board mills and other establishments.

Other larger enterprises of the company were the building of the machine-shop and foundry, the first stone for the foundry being laid July 10, 1846. The main building was four hundred by sixty, and four stories high, built of stone; and the foundry, also of stone, was one hundred and fifty by eighty-six, two stories in height, the two giving employment to six hundred or eight hundred men.

The company also commenced building the Atlantic mills and boarding-houses in 1846, and have since built the Pemberton, Duck and Pacific Mills. They also excavated a lumber-dock, established the lumber-yard, with saw and planing-mills, which they owned and operated till they ceased building mills, when this property was sold.

Among those who were employed by the Essex Company to execute their plans were Hiram P. Curtis and Joseph Bennett, Benjamin and Thomas B. Coolidge, James K. Barker, among the early engineers, and in 1846 Captain Charles H. Bigelow became chief engineer, with the Messrs. Coolidge as assistants. Deacon William M. Kimball had charge of the company's lumber-yard, with Luther Ladd as foreman, the latter of whom after the sale of the yard became agent and treasurer of the Lawrence Lumber Company. The late Abiel R. Chandler had for twenty years the care of the dam and guard-locks (died May 28, 1887), and George Sanborn had charge of the company's repairs from the beginning and is still in service. Among those who as contractors or otherwise were engaged in building were John A. Carpenter, one of the contractors for building the dam, Morris Knowles, Harrison D. Clement and his partner, William R. Page, Levi Sprague, Isaac Fletcher, William H. Boardman, Stephen P. Simmons, William Sullivan and John Hart.

Of these Isaac Fletcher, born in Maine, 1809, was in partnership with William H. Boardman in Bangor till 1846, when they came to Lawrence and engaged in the quarries of the Essex Company, furnishing large amounts of stone for the dam, and continued in that business together or separately during most of the time of their residence. In 1846 Mr. Fletcher established the Monumental Marble Works, now conducted by John Leonard, was one of the building committee of the First Baptist Church, and superintended its construction, and was one of the selectmen of the town in 1849. He died August 20, 1885.

Harrison D. Clement was born in Warner, N. H., May 17, 1809, a lineal descendant of Robert Clement, one of the earliest settlers of Haverhill, Mass. At the age of eighteen he learned the trade of carpenter and joiner at Peterboro', N. H., and in 1830 commenced work on the old town-house on Merrimack Street, Lowell, and at the Merrimac Mills and Lowell Machine-shop. In 1831 he went to Baltimore, and thence to Washington, where he was employed on the old post-office, then being fitted up. Finding the moral atmosphere uncongenial he returned to Lowell in 1832, where he remained five years, assisting in building the Suffolk, Tremont and Lawrence corporations, and ten years longer in repairs on the Lawrence corporation: removed to Lawrence in 1846, where he built for the Essex Company the fifty tenements forming the square bounded by Union, Orchard, Garden and Newbury Streets, and in partnership with Wm. R. Page (who died in Kansas October 19, 1879), also from Lowell, fitted up the shop over the Essex Company's Planing Mill. He continued in partnership with Mr. Page four years, engaged in building principally for the Essex Company, boarding-house blocks, also mechanics' tenements for the Atlantic corporation, the First Baptist Church and dwelling-houses. In 1851 the partnership was dissolved, and for five years Mr. Clement was engaged in building the boarding-house blocks and overseers' tenements for the Pacific, Pemberton and other corporations, a portion of the Oliver School-House, and private dwelling-houses in Lawrence and elsewhere. In 1856 he entered into partnership with Leonard F. Creasy, and continued and extended the building of boarding-houses and tenements for the Everett and Washington corporations, store-houses and tenements for the paper-mills, etc. They also extended their operations beyond Lawrence, building the larger class of buildings, such as churches, school-houses, court-houses, hotels and bank buildings, and government buildings in the navy yards at Kittery, Charlestown and Norfolk, Va. The partnership with Mr. Creasy continued for twenty years, from 1856 to 1876. He remained, however, a silent partner in the firm of Creasy & Noyes, who built the Insane Asylum at Danvers, and a cotton-mill at Dover, N. H. After the dissolution of this late partnership, Mr. Clement engaged in rebuilding a portion of the Old Catholic Cathedral at Cape Haytien, for the Republic of Hayti, which had been in ruins for many years.

He had neither time nor ambition for practical honors, but served one year as an assessor of taxes, and represented the city in the Legislature in 1861 and 1862. Mr. Clement died 1886.

Hon. James K. Barker was born in Londonderry, May, 1817, removed to Methuen, 1838, where he was employed as a teacher in the public schools (and as

master in one of the earliest terms of the grammar-school in Lawrence), studied engineering and architecture, and in 1845 removed to Lawrence and entered the service of the Essex Company, and after remaining with the company several years, opened an office on his own account. Most of the streets and building lots and sewers up to the time of his decease were surveyed and laid out by him, and he was the architect of the Court-house and Central Block. He was several years a member of the school committee, and in 1860 was elected mayor, serving during the first year of the war. Died January 13, 1868.

Morris Knowles, born in Northwood, N. H., came hither, also from Lowell, where he had been employed, and superintended all the wood-work of the large machine-shop buildings, and of all the large mills except the Bay State, and during the past year has been actively at work for the Arlington Company.

Stephen P. Simmons, a native of Rhode Island, came to Lawrence in 1847. He assisted in work on the dam, built the stone chimney of the Lawrence Machine-Shop Company, and other large amounts of stone-work for the Essex Company. He also constructed Grace Episcopal Church, the stone church at Methuen and the foundations of the Lawrence jail.

William Sullivan was contractor for most of the excavation and filling during the construction of the large mills and boarding-houses.

Levi Sprague constructed the brick-work of the Atlantic mills and boarding-houses, and of the fifty brick tenements of the machine-shop, and was largely engaged otherwise in early building.

The first cashier of the company during its earliest and busiest years was Geo. D. Cabot, who resigned in January, 1853, and after a short period of rest became agent of the Lawrence Gas Company. He was succeeded by John R. Rollins who remained somewhat more than eleven years till the summer of 1864, when Henry H. Hall became cashier, succeeded by Hon. Robert H. Tewksbury. Present organization,—Hon. Chas. S. Storrow, president; Howard Stockton, treasurer; Hiram F. Mills, chief engineer.

The first dwelling-houses erected after the incorporation of the company, were built by them on the westerly side of Broadway—one of which was occupied by Mr. and Mrs. Timothy Osgood, who for many years, there and later in another part of the city, kept an exceedingly good and popular boarding-house.

The first sale of land was made in April, 1846, to Samuel T. Merrill, who came from Georgetown, and on this he erected the first dwelling-house in town after those built by the Essex Company—others followed rapidly. But many came without pecuniary means, among them many Irish laborers, who must in some way be provided for—for them the Essex Company furnished a large tract on the south side of the river near the dam on which they might erect shanties, only on condition that liquors should not be sold on the premises. And the settlement thus formed with its quaint narrow avenues and rustic division fences was one of the most interesting spots in Lawrence, one which visiting strangers were always pleased to see.

These shanties were originally erected on the north side, but as the water was raised by the construction of the dam, and the territory west of the railroad was occasionally overflowed, the occupants removed to the south side to higher and dryer ground.

The writer has pleasant recollections of one of these men who was among the earliest to build a tasteful cottage, about which he arranged a pretty flower garden, and surrounded the premises with a neat, well-painted fence; the interior was as well arranged as the exterior, and he took much pride in this effort; some of his neighbors, however, thought he was "putting on too many airs," and annoyed him at first by defacing his work. This did not long continue; their own ambition was stimulated, others purchased, new streets laid out, and the original shanties in a few years gave place entirely to substantial buildings.

The first brick store buildings were erected by J. N. Gage on the south side near the bridge in September, 1846.

The first on the north side by Albert and Joseph Smith and Daniel Floyd, on Common Street, below Newbury.

Among the pioneers was Amos D. Pillsbury, of Georgetown, who came to procure a shop for the manufacture and repair of boots and shoes; but finding no place wherein to commence work, he went to Newburyport, purchased a gondola, thirty-two by twelve feet, on which he built a "State-room," put in a stock of boots and shoes, leather, tools, cooking apparatus and provisions, arrived at the "New City" just before the first land sale, anchored in the river below the bridge, threw out his plank and commenced work. Here he continued till cold weather, when he removed to a store on Essex Street, which was then ready for his occupancy.

He built, in 1847, a building near the lower end of Common Street, and while Mr. H. D. Clement was building a house for his own use near by, he boarded with him for a short time. In a paper read before the Old Residents' Association, Mr. Clement thus speaks of him: "By persistent interviews with the proprietor I learned that the building was intended for the promotion of the arts and sciences, and for the physical, mental and moral improvement of wayfaring men, and was to be called the Montezuma House. The builder himself was a problem past finding out. From his knowledge of ancient lore, and his love of the fine arts, he might have been a pupil of some of the old masters. From his apt quotations of Scripture, his fluency of speech and his broad philosophy, he might have been mistaken for a clergyman, while from his good looks, his pleasing manners and his generous sympathy for all man and womankind, he might have been taken for one of our pioneer physicians; and

from his knowledge of law and politics, and his skill in mystifying the truth, he might have been taken for one of our early Lawrence lawyers. He must have been intended by nature for one of our greatest men, with some unaccountable mistake made in finishing. As the building progressed, I noticed the absence of plan or system, and the eccentric oddity of its owner, conspicuous in all its parts. The frame from its odd appearance, might have done service at some remote age in the past; the usual order of proceeding was reversed by commencing at the top and leaving off at the cellar, it being raised and the roof covered before the cellar was dug, and although I could not understand the principle of gravitation and cohesion that was to keep it up and together, yet he could explain it in the most satisfactory way. After a slight application of Spanish brown paint, and the word Montezuma in large letters somewhere, though not where one would expect to see it, the building was completed.

"I sought shelter there late one night, was kindly received by the proprietor, who seemed to combine within himself the offices of usher, steward, male and female waiters, and sometimes hostler, was shown to a very small room, and was soon asleep, without examining the surroundings. On waking the next morning I found the room had been newly plastered the day previous, the bed clothes wet and slightly frozen, and myself with a cold in the head, but thought myself fortunate in being able to obtain such accommodations, and secured them until my own house should be finished.

"The furniture was of unique style and of ancient date, each piece having a history of its own. The ornaments were numerous and varied, consisting largely of mottoes and emblems, both sacred and profane, usually a mixture of both which none could explain or interpret so well as the host himself. He had also in and about the premises a good supply of cats, dogs, fowls of various kinds, also several kinds of wild animals, whose habits he could explain admirably when he chose to do so, which was not often.

The tables were an important part of the domestic arrangements, as all seemed to be hungry at that time, though there were not so many thirsty ones as appeared later, and although it was a mystery sometimes hard to solve whether our food was flesh, fish or fowl, and harder yet to learn how it was cooked, and though we could find no fault with the tea or coffee, not knowing the name of the liquid set before us, it all served an excellent purpose and was sure to find a ready market.

There was a furnished room in the basement front, but for what purposes it was used were beyond my ability to discover. Some inquiries were made if liquor was not sold there, but I think there could not be, as liquor selling and liquor drinking seemed to be the special abhorrence of the proprietor, and I looked in several times without seeing any signs of the traffic; besides there was an emblem hanging on the wall which forbade such a conclusion: it was a painted circle with a black dot near the lower edge, which by his interpretation signified departed spirits. From some of the religious mottoes on the wall, and the free quotations of Scripture by the proprietor, the company might sometimes be taken for a religious class-meeting; from the pictures of fast horses and rare animals, and the appearance of the company at other times they might have been considered sporting characters; while from the mysterious emblems around, and in connection with remarks and explanations thereon by the owner, they might have been mistaken for a branch of the Concord School of Philosophy.

Horace Greeley visited the new city about this time, and on inquiring for the first class hotel was referred by the hackman to the Shawsheen house, and asking if they sold liquor there was answered "yes." On inquiring for the second class hotel he was referred to the Oak Street House, and repeating his inquiry was again answered in the affirmative, and on inquiring for the next house was referred to the Montezuma, and asking the same question was answered in the negative, and the coachman was ordered to drive him there. I did not witness his reception, but it must have been interesting if the host knew his guest. If this original genius did not know how to keep a hotel he certainly knew many other things, and I feel sure we shall never look upon his like again. After leaving Lawrence he purchased an island near where Rowley River enters Plum Island Sound, where he spends his later days with some congenial spirits and calls it the Isle of Patmos.

The first dry goods dealer on the ground was Artemas W. Stearns (born in Hill, N. H.), who opened a store on Amesbury Street in 1846. Mr. Stearns erected the building on Essex Street in 1854, which he still occupies, actively engaged in business. The building was enlarged in 1877, and is being still further enlarged and improved, 1887, presenting one of the finest fronts on the street.

The oldest clothing dealer in the city is Captain William R. Spalding (born in Milton, N. H.), who came also in 1846, and still continues in the business.

Another early trader was John C. Dow, who opened and conducted for several years a book and stationery store. John Colby opened one a few months previously. Mr. Dow subsequently (1872) changed to his present business, a dealer in crockery and glassware.

Among the early physicians and surgeons the first to settle here was Dr. Moses L. Atkinson, born in Newbury, Mass., July 14, 1814, graduated at Dartmouth College, 1838, and Harvard Medical School, 1844; commenced practice in Lawrence, 1846, and died July 13, 1852, aged thirty-eight. Others early on the ground were J. S. Curtis, E. W. Morse, G. W. Sanborn, J. Brown, Charles Murch, E. B. Allen, A. D.

Blanchard, who relinquished practice for other business; William D. Lamb, who has retired from practice and removed to Southbridge; Julius H. Morse, deceased; Seneca Sargent, born 1803, commenced practice 1826, one of the first settlers of Lawrence, where he died August 7, 1873; Isaac Tewksbury, born 1795, studied with Dr. Robinson, of West Newbury, and Kittredge, of Andover, commenced practice in New Hampshire, 1817, came to Lawrence 1847, was in continuous practice between sixty and seventy years; Aaron Ordway, born 1814, came to Lawrence, 1847, as an apothecary and botanic physician, and continued in the business for about twenty-five years, retiring and devoting himself to other pursuits; David Dana graduated from Harvard Medical School 1847, and after practicing a year in public institutions in Boston came to Lawrence, and is the only one remaining of the early physicians now in active practice. He served in the Civil War two years as surgeon of the First Massachusetts Heavy Artillery; he was the first city physician of Lawrence, and also the first appointed for the jail and house of correction.

Among the early attorneys were Daniel Saunders, Jr., who was on the ground before the Essex Company was formed, mayor in 1860; Joseph Couch, the first trial justice; Henry Flanders, afterwards somewhat prominent in Philadelphia; Charles Stark Newell, who removed to New York City; Dan. Weed, who removed to Washington, where he died September 5, 1884; Perley S. Chase; Joseph F. Clark; Thomas A. Parsons, retired to a farm in Derry, N. H.; David J. Clark, graduated at Dartmouth College 1836, came to Lawrence 1847, removed to Manchester, N. H., 1850, in partnership with his brother, Hon. Daniel Clark, was postmaster at Manchester 1866, deceased; Ivan Stevens, graduated at Dartmouth College 1842, read law with Hon. James Bell and Hon. Amos Tuck, commenced practice in Lawrence 1846, died April, 1880; Thomas Wright, born in Lowell, educated at Harvard University, studied law with his father, a very prominent lawyer in Lowell, came to Lawrence 1846, represented the city in the Massachusetts House of Representatives, and the district four times in the Senate; Wm. H. P. Wright, brother of the preceding, educated at Cambridge, came to Lawrence 1847, continued his studies with Hon. Daniel Saunders and with Wright & Flanders, was in partnership with his brother till 1861, when he was elected mayor and served with earnestness and marked ability during two years of the war, represented the city in the Legislature 1867–68, and was one of the associate justices of the Police Court; Benjamin Boardman; Benjamin W. Ball; Nathan W. Harmon.[1]

None of the preceding now remain in Lawrence except Mr. Saunders and Judge Wright.

The first grocery store was opened in 1845, on the south side of the river, by Josiah Crosby, of Billerica. This was the only store of its kind for nearly six months, and its ledger contained upwards of six hundred names before another store was opened. In addition to groceries Mr. Crosby appears to have been the first ice dealer, offering to supply ice from his two ice houses, one situated on the south side of the river below his store, the other at his farm in North Andover, filled with "lake ice." This store and stock was purchased in 1850 by Joseph Shattuck, who, with his brother, Charles W. Shattuck, have conducted the business since, first at South Lawrence, and later in a new brick building built by them on Essex Street, till 1887, when they retired, and were succeeded by Henry A. Buell & Co., who had elsewhere in the city been long engaged.

Another early dealer was Charles Smith, who came early from Lowell and yet remains here, having also retired after a very active and busy life.

The first lumber dealer, Mr. Hezekiah Plummer, born in that part of Andover now included in Lawrence. He was engaged in the manufacture of sashes and blinds, &c., in 1846, but soon erected a steam mill in South Lawrence for supplying lumber for the growing wants of the new town. Besides those not elsewhere mentioned many others have been prominent, many of them residents for a long period and actively engaged in business, contributing their share to its material growth and prosperity. Among them may be named one of the earliest dealers in dry goods, Joseph O'Hea Cantillon, born in Ireland, 1810, came to Lawrence, 1846, was a leading spirit among his countrymen and popular with all classes; he was a very active man in temperance work and public affairs, and was one of the board of assessors in 1854. He removed to the West, was at one time mayor of the city of Dubuque, Iowa, died in 1879. John J. Doland, born in Derry, N. H., August 29, 1826, came to Lawrence, 1849, from Manchester, where he had been employed in the Amoskeag Mills. He was an overseer in the Atlantic Mills till 1871. Mr. Doland was a descendant of patriotic ancestors, and is the oldest lineal descendant of one who fought in the Revolutionary War. He was a member of the distinguished military order of the Cincinnati. Eben L. Chapman, J. Merrill Currier, Milton Bonney* (mayor in 1865), William P. Clark, Peter Holihan, Patrick Sweeney, Jordan Bros., Henry M. Whitney, J. P. Kent,* William H. Bridgman,* Dana Sargent (afterward mayor of Nashua, died November 23, 1884), John Beetle (died June 20, 1879), John F. Bingham, George B. Smart, John Kiley,* John B. Atkinson,* Alonzo Briggs (deputy sheriff), Martin Bros., Albin Yeaw, Charles R. Mason, E. J. Mason (died December 4, 1880), David S. Swan,* James A. Treat (died April 24, 1886), Henry Barton, Byron Truell (House of Representatives 1875, 1876, Senator 1877, 1878), Simpson & Oswald, Rufus Reed (died 1886), Charles

[1] See Chapter II. Bench and Bar.

* Deceased.

A. Brown (now of Portland), Joseph Norris,* Carney Bros., William A. Kimball* (died March 6, 1880), J. Smith Field, Horatio Smith,* Amasa Bryant,* John Gale,* A. A. Lamprey, James R. Simpson (mayor 1878, '79, '80, '85), J. G. Abbott, J. Clinton White, M. P. Merrill* (many years an assessor, died June 14, 1886), Levi Emery,* George W. Hills, John F. Cogswell, William E. Gowing, Lawson Rice, Robert R. Whittier, Robert M. Bailey, N. B. Gordon. Another of the oldest residents is Samuel M. Davis, who was an engineer on the Boston and Maine Railroad, came to Lawrence in 1847, and ran the first locomotive into town over the new railroad bridge. Captain John Smith, one of the earliest, who came in 1845, died September 19, 1879, aged eighty-seven. Ford Bros., Joseph Stowell, Albert Emerson, G. W. Chandler, Walker* and Freeman Flanders, H. J. Couch, Alonzo Winkley, John Daly, Henry A. Prescott and Moses Wingate.

The first marriage in town took place May 15, 1847. The parties were Mr. James M. Currier of Lawrence and Miss Mary E. Libbey of Conway, N. H. Rev. John C. Phillips was the officiating clergyman. The first public marriage occurred October 17, 1847, at the Baptist Chapel. Mr. Edwin R. Gage of Lawrence and Mrs. Abby B. Richardson of Methuen were married by Rev. John G. Richardson of the Baptist Church.

Mr. William W. Dean of the firm of Dean & Hazeltine, on Broadway, is the first child born of American parents in Lawrence, having been born in April, 1847. Mr. A. Joplin of Hampton comes next, who was born in February, 1848.

To go further into details, or to name even the various merchants and mechanics who have grown with the growth of the town and city would be making a directory, which would be foreign to the purpose of the present article.

During the first years, communication with the outside world was by means of the old-fashioned stage-coaches.

"STAGE REGISTER FOR 1847.

"For Manchester, Tuesday, Thursday and Saturday 8½ A. M., L. W. Currier, Driver.

"For Salem, every day except Sunday at 2½ P. M., Shackley & Clement, Proprietors.

"For Lowell, every day 6 and 10 A. M., 2½ and 4 P. M., and on Sunday 8 A. M., Currier & Abbey, Proprietors, Chamberlain & Charles, Drivers.

"For Andover, 6½, 8, 10 A. M.; 2½, 5½ P. M., Morrison & Lougee, Proprietors & Drivers."

Boston and Maine Railroad was extended into Lawrence early in 1848. Lowell and Lawrence Railroad was opened July 2, 1848, and extended to North Lawrence in 1879. Essex Railroad to Salem opened September 4, 1848. Manchester and Lawrence completed October, 1849. The Merrimack Valley Horse Railroad was incorporated in 1863, charter renewed 1866. The incorporators were George D. Cabot, Wm. H. P. Wright and Wm. R. Spalding, and the road was opened for travel from the Paper-Mills to Methuen, 1867; extended to North Andover, 1868; and to South Lawrence, 1876. Additional facilities for travel have been furnished by further extensions in 1887. The enterprise of doubtful issue at first has proved remunerative, and the stock has advanced materially in value. Wm. A. Russell has been president and James H. Eaton treasurer from the beginning.

HOTELS.—Before operations commenced by the Essex Company, there were two hotels, the Shawsheen House (now called Revere) and the Essex House, since converted into a dwelling-house, situated in South Lawrence, on the old Londonderry turnpike (now Broadway). The first hotel built by the company, the Franklin House, was opened November 1, 1847, by Major T. J. Coburn, previously of the Eastern Exchange Hotel, Boston. It has been since kept by J. L. Huntress, Charles B. Melvin, Jefford M. Decker, Col. Larrabee (formerly of the Merrimack House, Lowell), Thomas W. Huse and is now conducted by Mrs. C. E. Huse.

The Merrimack House was built about the same time at the corner of Broadway and Tremont Street; this was burned in 1849 and was not rebuilt. The United States, another large building in Essex Street, nearly completed but not occupied, was also burned in 1859. It was somewhat imposing in its external appearance, but very cheaply built, and almost as soon as touched by fire fell in ruins, as it deserved, but unfortunately causing the loss of life of three persons.[1] Hotels have since multiplied, and we have now on the main business street the Essex, Central and Brunswick, besides many others of less prominence in other parts of the city.

The Lawrence post-office was opened for the first time September 7, 1846, by George A. Waldo, postmaster. He remained in office three years. William Pierce, of Andover, followed for six months, when Nathaniel Wilson followed and served four years. Mr. Wilson was the first druggist in town, and was for eight years city treasurer. By a change of administration Major B. F. Watson became postmaster, and held the office eight years. He was succeeded by Major George S. Merrill, who retained the position twenty-six years, from 1861 to 1887, when Patrick Murphy, who had been city treasurer from 1883, was appointed to the place.

From the first sale of lands, April 28, 1846, to October 10, 1846, the growth of the new settlement had been so rapid that the population had increased from less than two hundred to about twenty-five hundred, and there had been erected one hundred and thirty-five stores, shops and dwelling-houses. The obvious inconvenience of taxation, education, etc., in two sep-

* Deceased.

[1] George Stanley, a printer; Frank Henry, auctioneer; Lyman H. Larkin, mill-hand.

arate townships led to a petition to the Legislature for a charter for a new town; this petition was opposed by the town of Methuen.

As early as February, 1847, a town-meeting was called to see what action the town would take on the petition of Chas. S. Storrow and others to be set off in a new town by the name of Lawrence. The meeting was well attended, from two hundred to three hundred being present. John Davis was chosen to preside, and the meeting was addressed by George A. Waldo, J. W. Carlton and John Tenney, all in opposition to the proposed division. Messrs. Waldo and Tenney were chosen a committee to take all honorable and legal measures to thwart the design of the petitioners, and to employ counsel if necessary.

The opposition was unavailing, and on the 17th of April, 1847, the Legislature of Massachusetts granted a charter to the town of Lawrence, of which the following is a copy: (Other names had been suggested, such as Essex and Merrimack, but Lawrence was adopted in honor of the original founders.)

"SECTION I. All the territory now within the towns of Methuen and Andover, in the County of Essex, comprised within the following limits: that is to say, by a line beginning at the mouth of Shawsheen River, at its Easterly bank, thence running Southerly by Said Easterly bank to a Stake at the bend in Said River, a few rods westerly of the bridge where it is crossed by the Salem Turnpike, thence in a straight line westerly to a marked stone in the wall at the Easterly corner of the intersection of roads by Jacob Barnard's house: thence Northerly in a straight line across Merrimack River, passing between the house of Asa Barker and that of Ebenezer Barker, on the Tower Hill road, leading from Methuen to Lowell, to a stake about 2150 feet Northerly from where the line crosses said road: thence Northeasterly to a monument on the Easterly side of Londonderry Turnpike, passing a little northerly of the house of Abiel Stevens: thence Easterly in a straight line to a monument at the intersection of Lawrence Street with the old road which runs easterly from Stevens' factory toward Haverhill: thence in a straight line, easterly, passing north of William Swan's house through a monument about 400 feet south of the intersection of the roads near said Swan's house, to the line of the town of Andover in Merrimack River: thence running by the said line of Andover westerly to the easterly bank of the Shawsheen River at the point of starting: is hereby incorporated into a town by the name of Lawrence: and the said town of Lawrence is hereby invested with all the privileges, powers, rights and immunities, and subject to all the duties and requisitions to which other towns are entitled and subject, by the constitution and laws of this Commonwealth.

"SECTION 2. The town of Lawrence shall make and maintain all bridges for public highways over the Shawsheen River, so far as the easterly bank of said river is a boundary of the said town, including the masonry of said bridges on the easterly bank thereof.

"SECTION 3. The inhabitants of the said town of Lawrence shall be holden to pay all arrears of taxes which have been legally assessed upon them by the towns of Methuen and Andover respectively: and all taxes heretofore assessed, and not collected, shall be collected and paid to the treasurer of the towns of Methuen and Andover respectively, in the same manner as if the act had not been passed: and also their proportion of all County and State taxes that may be assessed upon them previously to the next State valuation—that is to say, two-thirds of the State and county taxes that may be assessed upon the town of Methuen, and one-eighth of the State and County taxes that may be assessed on the town of Andover, till the next State valuation.

"SECTION 4. The parts of the said town of Lawrence now belonging to the towns of Methuen and Andover, respectively, shall remain parts of the said towns of Methuen and Andover, for the purpose of electing State officers, senators, representatives to Congress, and electors of president and vice-president of the United States until the next decennial census shall be taken in pursuance of the 13th Article of Amendment to the Constitution: and the meetings for the choice of such representatives and other officers aforesaid, shall be called by the selectmen of said towns, respectively: the selectmen of Lawrence shall make a true list of persons belonging to the territory of each of said towns hereby incorporated into the town of Lawrence, qualified to vote at every such election, and the same shall be taken and used by the selectmen of said respective towns for such elections, in the same manner as if prepared by themselves.

SECTION 5. The said towns of Methuen, Andover and Lawrence shall be respectively liable for the support of all who now do or shall hereafter stand in need of relief as paupers, whose settlement was gained by, or derived from a residence within their respective limits; and the said town of Lawrence shall, within one year from the time of its organization under this act, pay to the town of Methuen one thousand dollars as and for their just proportion of the debts of the town of Methuen, owing at the time of the passage of this Act, exclusive of the amount of the surplus revenue of the United States in the treasury of the town of Methuen: and the town of Lawrence shall also pay two-thirds of the amount of said surplus revenue whenever its repayment shall be demanded by the United States according to law: and shall also pay to the town of Methuen the amount that said town shall pay for building Haverhill Street, so called, within the limits of the said town of Lawrence, as ordered by the County Commissioners for the County of Essex.

"SECTION 6. Any justice of the peace in the County of Essex is hereby authorized to issue his warrant to any principal inhabitant of the town of Lawrence, requiring him to notify and warn the inhabitants thereof, qualified to vote in town affairs, to meet at the time and place therein appointed, for the purpose of choosing all such town officers as towns are by law authorized and required to choose at their annual meetings: and such justice, or, in his absence, such principal inhabitant, shall preside till the choice of a moderator in said meeting.

"SECTION 7. This act shall take effect from and after its passage."

TOWN OFFICERS FROM 1847 TO 1853.

1847. *Selectmen:*—William Swan, Chas. F. Abbott, Nathan Wells, James Stevens, Lorenzo D. Brown. *School Committee:*—James D. Herrick, Dr. William D. Lamb, Dan. Weed. *Town Clerks and Treasurers:*—E. W. Morse, clerk, Daniel Saunders, treasurer, Bailey Bartlett, collector, Ivan Stevens, auditor.

1848. *Selectmen:*—David J. Clark, Chas. F. Abbott, Wm. D. Joplin, Levi Sprague, John M. Smith. *School Committee:*—Rev. George Packard, Rev. Lyman Whiting, Rev. Henry F. Harrington, Nathan W. Harmon, James D. Herrick. *Town Clerks and Treasurers:*—E. W. Morse, clerk, Nathaniel White, treasurer, Parker Smith, collector, Ivan Stevens, auditor.

1849. *Selectmen:*—Chas. F. Abbott, Levi Sprague, Isaac Fletcher. *School Committee:*—Rev. George Packard, Rev. Lyman Whiting, Rev. Henry F. Harrington, Henry K. Oliver, James D. Herrick. *Town Clerks and Treasurers:*—E. W. Morse, clerk, Daniel Saunders, treasurer, N. G. White, collector, Ivan Stevens, auditor.

1850. *Selectmen:*—Artemas Parker, Jr., Wm. Gile, Wm. R. Page. *School Committee:*—Rev. George Packard, Rev. Lyman Whiting, Rev. H. F. Harrington, Rev. Geo. H. Clark, Rev. J. G. Richardson. *Town Clerks and Treasurers:*—Geo. W. Benson, clerk, Geo. W. Sanborn, treasurer, N. G. White, collector, Ivan Stevens, auditor.

1851. *Selectmen:*—Wm. R. Page, Levi Sprague, Joseph Norris. *School Committee:*—Chas. S. Storrow, Nathan W. Harmon, Rev. Geo. Packard, James D. Herrick, Dr. Moses L. Atkinson. *Town Clerks and Treasurers:*—Geo. W. Benson, clerk, Geo. W. Sanborn, treasurer and collector, Ivan Stevens, auditor.

1852. *Selectmen:*—Wm. R. Page, Levi Sprague, Joseph Norris. *School Committee:*—Rev. Geo. Packard, A. D. Blanchard, Rev. Samuel Kelley, Nathan W. Harmon, John A. Goodwin. *Town Clerks and Treasurers:*—Geo. W. Benson, clerk, Geo. W. Sanborn, treasurer and collector, Ivan Stevens, auditor.

During the continuance of the town government the population increased from six thousand in 1848 to nearly thirteen thousand in 1853. And to any one familiar with the routine of town government, it will be apparent that the officers of the new town had plenty of employment,—constant meetings in the early years, for organization, to provide for schools, cemetery, po-

lice and the usual concomitants of advancing civilization, lockups or prisons for the turbulent and unruly, erection of public buildings, building of roads, etc., all expenditures of the public money being voted upon by the people in town-meeting assembled. The inconvenience of this method of conducting affairs led the people to apply for a city charter, which was granted, and the act signed by Governor Clifford March 21, 1853.

Besides the inconvenience of attending frequent meetings, vexatious delays were liable to occur, in consequence of the rancor of party spirit, and the old saying, "in the multitude of counselors there is wisdom," proved not always true. This was amusingly and provokingly illustrated in the attempt to fix the location of the town hall, and in the refusal to accept from the Essex Company the gift of the common. But no meeting of the people was perhaps more exciting than the meeting of 1852 (the last under town government). Mr. Hayes, in his "Sketches of Lawrence," printed in 1868, gives the following account of the meeting: "Early in the day Mr. B. F. Watson, the leader of the Democrats, made some motion intended to give advantage to his party, and was declared out of order. Exasperated at his failure, he planted himself in the way to the polls, and in a loud voice announced, 'There shall be no voting here today,' and called upon his friends to block the passage to the ballot-box. The hall was filled with excited men, who rushed to the point where Watson was standing. A party fight on an extended scale seemed almost unavoidable, when above the din of the angry tumult the clear, calm voice of William R. Page (chairman of the selectmen) echoed through the hall, 'Gentlemen will bring in their votes.' Instantly General Oliver started for the ballot-box, and, after a severe struggle, finally arrived at the object of his aim, but minus his coat-tail.

"The incident operated like magic in allaying the disturbance. All parties regarded it as a joke worth laughing at, and as the two emotions—laughter and anger—cannot exist together, order was far more easily restored than the coat-tail. Probably not a man in Lawrence, who esteemed order as a law of heaven, felt any regret that a town organization, which drew together in one hall all the voters of the place, was to give way to a division of these voters into wards under a city organization."

The first election of city officers was held April 18, 1853, and the new government was inaugurated May 10th. Three parties presented candidates for mayor, Charles S. Storrow, treasurer of the Essex Company, being the candidate of the Whig party, Enoch Bartlett of the Democratic, and James K. Barker of the Free Soil or Anti-Slavery party. Mr. Storrow was elected, and associated with him in the Board of Aldermen were George D. Cabot, Albert Warren, E. B. Herrick, Alvah Bennett, Walker Flanders and S. S. Valpey; and in the Common Council were Josiah Osgood (president), Nathaniel G. White (many years president of the Boston and Maine Railroad), Dana Sargent (subsequently mayor of Nashua), William R. Spalding, Elkanah F. Bean, Daniel Hardy, Isaac K. Gage and others, the members of both boards being selected by the people more with a view to their business capacity than to their political activity, and forming an exceptionally capable government for starting the machinery of the new city.

In 1848 the classification of the population was:

Born in America	3766	Colored, 16.
Ireland	2139	
England	28	
France	3	
Wales	2	
Scotland	9	
Italy	1	
Germany	1	
	5949	

In 1885, according to the State Census:

Born in United States	21,765	Colored, 84.
Ireland	7,043	
England	3,938	
Scotland	832	
Germany	1,499	
Wales	31	
France	31	
Canada (English)	969	
Canada (French)	1,921	
China	9	
Other Countries	234	
	38,862	

Male population, $45\frac{56}{100}$ per cent. Female population, $54\frac{44}{100}$ per cent.

CHANGES IN POPULATION, VALUATION AND TAXATION.

YEAR.	POPULATION.	VALUATION.	SCHOOL CHILDREN.	POLLS.	TAX PER $1000.
1845[1]	150	.....	51	33	.....
1847	3,777	$1,709,240	403	497	$3 50
1848	5,949	3,814,426	620	1,321	4 20
1849	7,225	5,530,710	1,089	2,318	3 90
1850	8,282	5,902,741	1,308	2,249	4 90
1851	9,000	6,407,926	1,593	2,542	5 90
1852	10,500	6,374,385	1,660	2,514	5 30
1853	12,147	6,937,160	1,869	3,066	7 00
1854	11,951	8,842 915	2,167	3,366	7 00
1855	16,081	9,954,041	2,508	3,659	7 80
1856	16,800	10,483,725	2,792	3,525	7 60
1857	17,800	10,228,400	3,021	3,898	8 20
1858	15,300	10,249,009	2,610	2,962	8 40
1859	16,000	10,022,947	2,702	3,057	7 20
1860	17,639	10,584,023	3,171	3,609	8 40
1861	18,400	10,769,615	3,210	3,906	8 80
1862	18,500	10,777,920	3,310	3,378	9 00
1863	19,750	10,939,450	3,384	3,282	11 20
1864	20,500	11,074,430	3,495	3,692	11 60
1865	21,698	12,783,273	3,613	4,147	13 50
1866	23,750	13,738,285	4,026	5,250	13 50
1867	26,000	11,684,000	4,462	5,714	17 20
1868	26,500	15,570,000	4,359	5,960	13 50
1869	28 000	16,647,000	4,665	6,336	13 50
1870	28,921	17,912,507	4,846	6,506	17 20
1871	29,000	18,552,000	4,856	6,625	16 80
1872	31,000	20,763,693	4,847	7,000	15 80
1873	33,000	21,687.732	5,141	7,557	16 00
1874	33,800	22,918,775	5,385	7,728	16 20
1875	34,616	24,117,373	5,648	8,120	17 60
1876	35,000	23,903,598	5,634	8,026	19 00
1877	36,000	23,902,537	6,088	8,139	16 60
1878	37,500	23,744,017	6,668	8,542	15 00
1879	38,600	23,088,897	6,836	8,707	16 40
1880	39,151[2]	21,142,724	6,865	9,024	16 80
1881	....	25 348,620	7,143	10,023	16 00
1882	.....	26,277,223	6,698	10,435	16 60
1883	.....	26,932,560	6,896	10,735	16 60
1884	....	27,369,095	7,177	10,538	16 80
1885	38,862[3]	27,144,050	6,947	9,981	16 60
1886	....	27,165 590	7,277	9,967	16 40
1887	39,299[4]	28,324,373	.....	10,129	17 80

[1] A part of Methuen and Andover. [2] Assessor's estimate.
[3] U. S. Census. [4] State Census.

CITY OFFICERS, 1853, TO THE PRESENT TIME.

MAYORS.	CITY CLERKS.	TREAS. & COLLECTORS.
1853. Chas S. Storrow.....	Geo. W. Benson.....	Brackett H. Clark.
1854. Enoch Bartlett.....	Benjamin Boardman...	Nicholas Chapman.
1855. Albert Warren.....	William Morse	Nathaniel Wilson.
1856. Albert Warren.....	William Morse.....	Nathaniel Wilson.
1857. John R. Rollins.....	Geo. R. Rowe...	Nathaniel Wilson.
1858. John R. Rollins.....	Geo. R. Rowe.....	Nathaniel Wilson.
1859. Henry K. Oliver.....	Geo. R. Rowe.....	Nathaniel Wilson.
1860. Dan. Saunders, Jr....	Geo. R. Rowe.....	Nathaniel Wilson.
1861. James K. Barker.....	Geo. R. Rowe.....	Nathaniel Wilson.
1862. Wm. H. P. Wright..	Geo. R. Rowe.....	Nathaniel Wilson.
1863. Wm. H. P. Wright..	Geo. R. Rowe	Nathaniel Wilson.
1864 Alfred J. French.....	Geo. R. Rowe.....	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1865. Milton Bonney.....	Geo. R. Rowe.....	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1866. Pardon Armington..	Geo. R. Rowe.....	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1867. N. P. H. Melvin.....	Geo. R. Rowe.....	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1868. N. P. H. Melvin.....	Geo. R. Rowe.	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1869. Frank Davis.....	Geo. R. Rowe	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1870. N. P. H. Melvin.....	Geo. R. Rowe.....	Robert H Tewksbury.
1871. S. B. W. Davis.....	Geo. R. Rowe.....	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1872. S. B. W. Davis.....	Geo. R. Rowe.....	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1873. John K. Tarbox.....	Geo. R Rowe...	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1874. John K. Tarbox.....	Geo. R. Rowe	Elihu W. Colcord.
1875. Rob. H. Tewksbury..	Walter R. Rowe.....	Albert V. Bugbee.
1876. Edmund R. Hayden.	Walter R. Rowe	Albert V. Bugbee.
1877. Caleb Saunders.....	James E. Shepard.....	Albert V. Bugbee.
1878. James R. Simpson...	James E. Shepard.....	Albert V. Bugbee.
1879. James R. Simpson..	James E. Shepard.....	Albert V. Bugbee.
1880. James R. Simpson...	James E. Shepard.....	Albert V. Bugbee.
1881. Henry K. Webster...	James E. Shepard.....	Albert V. Bugbee.
1882. John Breen.....	James E Shepard.....	Albert V. Bugbee.
1883. John Breen.....	James E Shepard.....	Patrick Murphy.
1884. John Breen.....	Timothy Kane.....	Patrick Murphy.
1885. James R. Simpson...	William T. Kimball...	Patrick Murphy.
1886. Alexander B. Bruce	Timothy Kane.....	Patrick Murphy.
1887. Alexander B. Bruce.	William T. Kimball...	Edward P. Poor.

Two of the citizens of Lawrence have represented the district in the United States Congress—Hon. John K. Tarbox in the Forty-fourth Congress, and Hon. Wm. A. Russell in the Forty-sixth.

In the Massachusetts Senate the city and Senatorial district has been represented by Daniel Saunders, Jr., Thomas Wright (four terms), Ben. Osgood, N. W. Harmon, John K. Tarbox, Horace C. Bacon, Byron Truell, Edward F. O'Sullivan. Members of the House of Representatives,—Wm. A. Russell, Fred. Butler, George E. Davis, John K. Tarbox, Robert Bower, Patrick Sweeny, Henry J. Couch, William S. Knox, Patrick Murphy, Horace C. Bacon, Byron Truell, Edwin Ayer, Melvin Beal, Morris Knowles, George D. Lund, James K. Barber, Thomas Wright, Charles Stark Newell, Josiah Osgood, E. B. Currier, Enoch Bartlett, David Wentworth, Enoch Pratt, Amasa Bryant, Thomas A. Parsons, John A. Goodwin, Timothy V. Coburn, Benjamin Harding, John Gale, Rev. J. R. Johnson, Thomas W. Floyd, Walker Flanders, Wm. Hardy, N. W. Harmon, Cyrus Williams, Levi Emery, John C. Sanborn, Michael Rinn, Abel Webster, Jesse Moulton, John C. Hoadley, A. J. French, Geo. W. Benson, H. D. Clement, John J. Doland, L. A. Bishop, E. J. Sherman, W. H. P. Wright, Albert Blood, Henry M. McIntire, John J. Nichols.

Hon. John Kimball Tarbox was born in that part of Methuen now within the limits of Lawrence May 6, 1838. In his boyhood he resided for a time in North Andover, and later entered the drug-store of Henry M. Whitney in Lawrence. His tastes led him to the study of law, which he read in the office of Colonel B. F. Watson, and while thus engaged he contributed largely to the editorial columns of the *Lawrence Sentinel*, and was for a considerable period its editor. He was admitted to the Essex bar in 1860, and entered into partnership with Mr. Watson, and conducted the business of the firm while the senior partner was in service in the first campaign of the Sixth Regiment in 1861. In the fall of 1861 Colonel Watson was appointed paymaster in the army, and Mr. Tarbox went with him as clerk, and was engaged in that and the following year in payment in the field of the armies of the Potomac and Gulf Department.

In the summer of 1861 he united with Eben T. Colby and George S. Merrill in raising a company under the call of the President for nine months' troops. A call for volunteers was issued, which appeared on the bulletin boards one Sunday morning, and Tuesday night following one hundred and sixteen men were enrolled. Mr. Colby was chosen captain, Mr. Merrill first and Mr. Tarbox second lieutenants. This company and one other, raised immediately after by John R. Rollins, James G. Abbott and Hiram Robinson, went into camp at Wenham, were attached to the Forty-eighth Regiment, from which they were detached, owing to the exigencies of the service, and sent to complete the Fourth Regiment, which had for the second time volunteered its services to the government. The regiment served about a year in the army in Louisiana, at Brashear (now Morgan) City, at the battle of Franklin and in the siege of Port Hudson, and was among the first to enter the captured works. Mr. Tarbox during this time was once acting adjutant of the regiment, and commanded the company at the battle of Bisland (or Franklin), while Captain Merrill was in hospital with malarial fever.

After the return of his regiment Mr. Tarbox resumed the practice of law, but his taste for political affairs and his ability as a writer and speaker brought him prominently before the public, and he was chosen representative to the Legislature in 1868 and again in 1870. In 1872 he was a member of the Senate, elected mayor of Lawrence in 1873, and re-elected in 1874, and in 1875, '76, '77 he was a member of the House of Representatives in the United States Congress. In 1882 and 1883 he was city solicitor of Lawrence, and in April, 1883, was appointed by Governor Butler insurance commissioner of the commonwealth, and re-appointed by Governor Robinson —a position in which he displayed marked ability, and conducted the affairs of the office so as to win the commendation of all parties.

In public, political life Mr. Tarbox was an earnest partisan; in his business transactions he was a man of strictest integrity and honorable dealing, and in his social relations warm-hearted and genial. Educated only in the common schools of New England, but possessing a refined taste and poetic temperament, he cultivated and improved his powers by ex-

tended reading of the best in literature. The key-note of his short life may be found in his own words in an address delivered before the Old Residents' Association. In speaking of Lawrence, his remarks were as follows: "Lawrence has no conspicuous history to point at for the world's marvel. It came not out from some mystic past of romance and tradition. It had no Theseus or Romulus of divine progeny for its founder. But it is nobler to make a history than to inherit one, to begin than to end an ancestral line, to set up a beacon of fame than to shine in its reflected beam."

Lieutenant Tarbox never recovered from the malarial effects of the Louisiana swamps, and died in Boston May 27, 1887.

Public Buildings and Parks.—In 1848, the year following the incorporation of the town, steps were taken for the construction of a town hall, and the foresight of its projectors was manifested in the construction of a building which should be adapted not merely to the necessities of a township, but the wants of a future city. The plan of the present city hall was prepared by Ammi B. Young, of Boston, and the committee appointed to take charge of the construction was Hezekiah Plummer, Wm. M. Kimball, Capt. Charles H. Bigelow and J. M. Stone. There was an angry controversy in regard to the location, some desiring to place the building at the corner of Lawrence and Common Streets, some on Jackson Terrace, others, who finally prevailed, in its present comparatively central and convenient place. Had it been built on Jackson Terrace our citizens would have been deprived of one of the most quiet and beautiful spots for private residences; the other location would have been a desirable one, but only a few feet farther west, and at this day it is difficult to understand how so much controversy could have taken place respecting the difference 'twixt tweedle-dum and tweedle-dee. The building, which is a very substantial one, of brick, with a basement story of granite, reflects credit upon the architect and builders. It is surmounted by a wooden tower of pleasing style, in which a fine-toned bell for many years summoned the people to church and school, and to fires until the introduction of the fire-alarm telegraph. The tower is crowned with a gilt eagle which is worthy of mention for its symmetry, designed and carved by Mr. John M. Smith, a member of the Board of Selectmen for that year. The eagle measures seventeen and a half feet from tip to tip of the outspread wings, and ten feet two inches from the beak to the end of the tail.

A great defect was found in the acoustic properties of the large hall, rendering it very annoying to public speakers. This was partially remedied in 1858 by hanging the walls with drapery. In 1872 the hall was entirely remodeled by building galleries, and the erection of stage scenery, and now, for its size, it is a pleasant hall for speakers as for other purposes; second only to the opera-house, a private establishment owned by the Lowell Railroad Company, and located over their station-house.

Lawrence Jail was built in 1853 on the southerly bank of the Spicket River, on land purchased by the town, a substantial building of stone in a good location, and as well arranged in sanitary respects for its unfortunate inmates as the dictates of humanity can suggest, while the front portion, occupied by the keeper, opens upon spacious ground and has an outlook upon a public park of an acre in extent. The building has been severally in charge of Sheriffs Thomas E. Payson, James Carey, and the present sheriff, Horatio G. Herrick.

Lawrence Court-House.—For several years the people of Lawrence in civil and criminal cases were obliged, at considerable inconvenience, to attend courts either in Newburyport or Salem; a term of the courts was established here for a time, and the sessions were held for a few years in Lawrence Hall, fitted up for the purpose by the city. The building was not suitable for the purpose, and after considerable opposition from the older parts of the county, a board of county commissioners was formed, who determined that Lawrence furnished a sufficient amount of business to the courts to entitle it to some degree of consideration. Accordingly, in 1858, by united efforts, a court-house was built, the Essex Company giving the land, and the city building a foundation acceptable to the commissioners, and the commissioners erecting the building. The architect was James K. Barber (then city engineer). To two of the commissioners at the time—Mr. Wilson, of Marblehead, and Ebenezer B. Currier, of Lawrence (a majority of the board)—Lawrence is indebted for its construction. A term of court for civil cases is held here in March, and a term for criminal cases in October. The Probate Court also has sessions in January, March, May, June, July, September and November. The court-house was but just finished, when a destructive fire, originating in the new United States Hotel, 1859, destroyed it completely. It was rebuilt in 1860.

Police Station.—The building now occupied by the Police Court and police offices was built in 1867. Prior to this the headquarters of the police was at the city hall, and prisoners were confined in two lock-ups, miserable wooden buildings, confinement in which, before trial, was greater punishment than the guilty suffered subsequent to trial in the vastly better quarters to which they were sentenced. This building is well arranged, having cells in the basement, offices on the first floor, a court-room and offices on the second floor, and a hall which was at one time occupied as an armory; now, convenient for many purposes.

Parks.—The largest of these is the Common, a fine tract of more than seventeen acres in the centre of the city, reserved by the Essex Company while making their plan of streets, and offered to the town, with

the simple restrictions that it should not be diverted from its purpose, or built upon, that the town should expend a small sum, not less than two hundred dollars, annually for its improvement, and that it should be under the care of a committee consisting of the chairman of the selectmen or mayor, the agents of the Essex Company, the Atlantic and Bay State Mills. At a town-meeting in September, 1848, the town, on motion of some scheming politicians, voted not to accept the gift! At a subsequent meeting in October the people, awake to the ridiculous position in which the town had been placed, reversed the decision, for which action all who have since resided here have been grateful. The several committees have taken much interest in improving and beautifying it, and much larger sums of money have been appropriated for the purpose than were required by the terms of the gift. Perhaps no one in the earlier days devoted more time and attention to the planting and rearing of the noble trees which now shade its broad avenues than Levi Sprague, one of the selectmen in 1848, '49, and Gen. H. K. Oliver, then agent of the Atlantic Mills; though others have in various ways contributed their share. The trees around the pond were planted under the direction of Mayor W. H. P. Wright. The unsightly wooden fence was removed during the mayoralty of Hon. John K. Tarbox, and the present curbstone substituted. For the pond on the Common the citizens are indebted to the exertions of the late Dr. J. H. Morse, who obtained by subscription half of the cost, the city appropriating the balance in 1857.

Another tract of ten acres, Storrow Park, on Prospect Hill, was deeded by the Essex Company to the city in 1853. This is in part shaded by trees, young oaks of native growth, is on high land, and commands pleasant views of the busy town below.

"The Amphitheatre," so-called, sometimes named Happy Valley, was dedicated to public use in 1873, by the company. This is a beautifully located tract in the western part of the city, inclosed on three sides by a ridge of hills giving it the resemblance from which it was named. This tract embraces seven acres, and forms a pleasant and quiet retreat for the citizens of that region.

Another park, the finest of all except the Common, now owned by the Essex Company in South Lawrence, comprises eleven and a quarter acres, and is named Union Park; bounded by South Union, Osgood, Salem and Market Streets.

CEMETERY.—In 1847 the town purchased five acres of land in the western part of the city for burial purposes. This has been gradually enlarged until *Bellevue Cemetery* has, by judicious management and constant, but continued, improvement by the city and the good taste of the citizens, become a very beautiful resting-place for the dead, a spot where the grave is robbed of half its horrors by the beauty of the surroundings, and where one, in the language of Bryant, might feel that he "could wrap the drapery of his couch around him and lie down to pleasant dreams." West of this is St. Mary's Cemetery, and still further west, partly in Methuen is the cemetery of the Church of the Immaculate Conception, both of which have much improved.

The city also, in anticipation of prospective wants, has purchased in North Andover about ninety acres, at a spot known in the vicinity as Den Rock. This is somewhat difficult of access, but capable of becoming in the future an appropriate place, and from its natural scenery may be made, by the aid of art, a beautiful ground for the purpose intended.

BANKS.—The first bank, the Bay State, incorporated February 10, 1847, was located at a point very nearly corresponding with the geographical centre of the city, the junction of Lawrence and Essex Streets. Its capital was originally two hundred thousand dollars, increased to five hundred thousand dollars, and subsequently reduced to three hundred and seventy-five thousand dollars, the par value of the shares being at present seventy-five dollars each. The first president was Hon. Charles S. Storrow, who resigned after twenty years of service, and was succeeded in 1867 by Hon. George L. Davis. Nathaniel White, the first cashier, was previous to this cashier of the Powow River Bank at Salisbury, to which office he was appointed on the organization of the bank in 1836. He was succeeded by Charles A. Colby, who had been several years teller of the bank, and on Mr. Colby's resignation and removal to New York City, Mr. Samuel White, then of Haverhill, was elected cashier and is still in service.

Intimately connected with this bank was the first institution for savings in Lawrence, the Essex Savings Bank. This bank was incorporated in March, and organized September, 1847, and for a long period its business was managed by the president and cashier of the Bay State Bank at their rooms. James H. Eaton was appointed assistant treasurer in 1865, and on the decease of Mr. White he became treasurer, 1866. George D. Cabot succeeded Mr. Storrow in the presidency, and after faithful service of about twenty-five years, including eleven years as president, he resigned, and was succeeded by Joseph Shattuck, who has since remained in office. This savings bank is the oldest in the city, its deposits amount to more than four millions of dollars, and it has never omitted a dividend.

The National Pemberton Bank was organized in 1854, Levi Sprague being the president from the beginning to the present time. The first cashier was Samuel C. Woodward, who was succeeded by William H. Jaquith. James M. Coburn followed Mr. Jaquith, and remained till 1879, when he went to a more promising field in the West, and J. A. Perkins has been cashier since that date. The capital of this bank is one hundred and fifty thousand dollars. Number of shares, fifteen hundred.

The Lawrence National Bank was organized in February, 1872. Dr. A. J. French was president till 1878, when he was succeeded by Artemas W. Stearns, who yet retains the office. P. G. Pillsbury was cashier till 1879, when, having been turned from the path of duty by the glittering allurements of Western mining schemes, his connection with the bank ceased. No loss was incurred by the bank, however, as the directors paid personally all remaining deficiencies. John R. Rollins, who had been thirteen years cashier at the Pacific Mills, succeeded Pillsbury, and after a service of nearly eight years was succeeded in 1887 by H. Leslie Sherman. The capital stock of this bank is three hundred thousand dollars, in three thousand shares.

The Pacific National Bank was organized January, 1877. President, James H. Kidder; Cashier, William H. Jaquith, formerly of the Pemberton. Fifteen hundred shares, one hundred dollars each.

Lawrence Savings Bank, organized 1868. Milton Bonney was its first president. Mr. Bonney died, and Hezekiah Plummer has since been president, while William R. Spalding has been the treasurer from the beginning.

The Broadway Savings Bank commenced business in 1872. John Fallon, then agent of the Pacific Mills, was chosen president, and so remains. The treasurers have been James Payne, John L. Brewster and the present treasurer, Gilbert E. Hood.

All these banks have in the main been judiciously managed, and have met with a reasonable share of success.

Fire Department.—Before the organization of the town the Essex Company took early steps to protect themselves against fire by purchasing the engine "Essex," which was manned by persons in the employ of the company. As soon as the town government was fairly started fire-wards were appointed, viz.: William M. Kimball, Josiah Johnson, Nathaniel Wilson, Charles Smith and Samuel I. Thompson; and a committee consisting of William M. Kimball, Nathaniel Wilson and Caleb M. Marvel was appointed to purchase engine and apparatus, and erect a house for the same.

In 1848 the Legislature passed an act establishing the Fire Department of Lawrence. In November, 1847, the committee above named purchased two engines—"Rough and Ready," located on Newbury Street, afterward removed to Garden Street (and at a still later date the name was changed to "Niagara"), and "Syphon," located on Oak Street. In 1850 a fourth engine, "Tiger," was placed in South Lawrence.

In 1851 the Essex Company, the Atlantic and Bay State Mills, for still further protection, built a reservoir on Prospect Hill, holding one million gallons, and connected it by proper pipes with pumps operated by the mills; a company was subsequently formed under the name of the Lawrence Reservoir Association, and operated by associated corporations. The reservoir was designed for the benefit of the corporation solely, not being of sufficient capacity for general use; but the company generously allowed pipes and hydrants in several of the principal streets to be used exclusively in case of fire, and they also allowed the use of water without charge for the pond on the Common. Edward B. Herrick, of the Bay State Mills, was agent for the company from the beginning till his death, November, 1878; he was succeeded by Mr. Rollins, who served till June, 1879, when the care of the reservoir was placed in the hands of Mr. Rogers, the agent of the City Water Works.

The first chief of engineers was William M. Kimball,—others have been James D. Herrick, Samuel I. Thompson, Luther Ladd (who had been connected with the Fire Department from the beginning, and served in all seventeen years as chief), Colonel L. D. Sargent, Benjamin Booth, George K. Wiggin, Albert R. Brewster, Colonel Melvin Beal, Michael F. Collins, Dennis Wholley and William E. Heald. The present chief is Z. Taylor Merrill.

Under the former organization, with the hand engines, about two hundred and fifty men were employed, and in their trials of skill, as well as at fires, there was a friendly rivalry among the companies, each striving to be first on the ground and earnest to get the first stream upon the fire, plenty of noise and fun, not only among the firemen, but from their adherents, who, proud of the "machine" from their own district, usually accompanied in crowds to cheer them on, so that, whether by night or day, with bells ringing and the cheers of crowds, pandemonium seemed to have broken loose.

After the invention and introduction of steam fire-engines, "those fleshless arms whose pulses beat with floods of living fire," all this was changed, and while by no means depreciating the promptitude and efficiency of the older department, fires are now managed with much less confusion, with far greater efficiency, and with less than half the number of men.

The department now embraces five powerful steam-engines (the first purchased in 1860, two more in 1862, the fourth in 1864, fifth in 1871), one chemical engine with double tanks of seventy-five gallons each, built in 1880, two hook-and-ladder companies;—four engines and one hook-and-ladder company in active service, the others held in reserve. The fire-alarm telegraph was introduced in 1859, and the apparatus was put up by Mr. J. H. Stevens, under contract with the Gamewell Fire-Alarm Company, at a cost to the city of eight thousand dollars. This has been gradually extended, until now fifty alarm-boxes warn the department of the locality of a fire, and avoid many fatal delays.

Water-works.—As early as 1848 a plan was formed for supplying the town with water, and a charter was granted that year to John Tenney, of Methuen, Alfred Kittredge, of Haverhill, Daniel

Saunders, of Lawrence, and others, under the name of the Lawrence Aqueduct Company. The plan of introducing water from Haggett's Pond was found impracticable and the enterprise abandoned. In 1858 a petition from prominent citizens was laid before the city government, requesting that steps be taken for a supply of water. The formidable expense that would be incurred led the government to consider the petition as premature, and nothing was done.

In 1871–72 the subject was again agitated, and with good reason; in twenty-five years of rapid growth large numbers of the wells had become mere cesspools, and the water unfit for drinking or culinary purposes, especially in the compact portions of the city. A petition to the Legislature resulted in an "Act to supply the city of Lawrence with water" was passed and approved by the Governor March 8, 1872. This act was accepted by the legal voters, twelve hundred and ninety-eight voting in favor and eight hundred and thirty in opposition. In June a joint committee, consisting of Aldermen James Payne and James A. Treat, and L. D. Sargent, Henry J. Couch and George W. Russell, of the Common Council, was appointed to obtain estimates of cost, etc. An engineer, L. Frederick Rice, of Boston, was consulted, the committee made an elaborate report, and in April, 1873, an ordinance was passed providing for the election of water commissioners, and in May the Board of Commissioners was organized, with William Barbour chairman, Patrick Murphy clerk and Morris Knowles.

Walter F. McConnell, of Boston, was appointed chief engineer and James P. Kirkwood, of Brooklyn, N. Y., consulting engineer.

The water is taken from the Merrimac River at a point about three-quarters of a mile above the dam, where, in a building of brick, are placed two pumping engines, built by I. P. Morris & Co., of Philadelphia (Leavitt's patent), capable of forcing two hundred thousand gallons per hour each, from the river to the reservoir on Bodwell's Hill, about a mile from the centre of the city, the water being conveyed in a pipe thirty inches in diameter and about five thousand feet in length.

The reservoir is constructed in two divisions, either of which may be used independently of the other—both having a capacity of thirty-nine million gallons. From this reservoir cast-iron pipes convey the water to the various parts of the city, on both sides of the river.

In 1875 an ordinance was passed establishing rates and providing for the permanent management of the works; and a Water Board was appointed, consisting of Milton Bonney, Robert H. Tewksbury, N. P. H. Melvin, William Barbour and James Payne—one member retiring each year.

The total cost of the water-works was not far from one million five hundred thousand dollars. The works have proved of great value to the city in furnishing an abundant supply of water for domestic purposes, and in the protection afforded against fire. On January 4, 1886, nearly five hundred hydrants had been placed (Lowry pattern), seventeen drinking fountains established, fifty-two miles of main pipe laid, and a supply of water furnished to about thirty-five thousand persons in families and boarding-houses.

Sanitary Arrangements.—Early provision was made by the corporation for the cleanliness of their premises and the sanitary condition of dwelling-houses. In the construction of sewers the Bay State Mills expended thirty thousand dollars; and in the construction of other blocks, the first thing was to build beneath the cellars a sewer, through which a swift current of water flows, carrying away at once all waste into the Merrimac River. In the construction of sewers, however, some mistakes were made by the different city governments. Several sewers and many drains opened into the Spicket River; this being a sluggish stream, especially between the dams, and oftentimes low, became in time an open sewer, rendering the valley in its neighborhood not only offensive, but dangerous to health. One of our local poets (truly not a very poetical subject) thus wrote of it:

"It is not claimed that power divine
Did wash Cologne's foul river, Rhine;
Nor will benign Supernal powers
Conspire to cleanse this Rhine of ours,
Whose sickening tides, it is well known,
Are foul as ever washed Cologne.—
They scored but two and seventy stenches there,
So the old rhymster in the canto tells;
We count a hundred, with enough to spare
To hold high carnival of extra smells!

* * * * * *

Saints dwelling on the river's bank
Blaspheme its flood like impious Thugs!
With smelling all its impious scents
Our noses all are turned to pugs.
Surely the witches of Macbeth
Ne'er told of caldron's mixture worse,
For blind worm's sting, and adder's breath
Combined, would prove a lighter curse."

A large sewer now receives all these drains, and the river has resumed its nearly normal condition.

For several years the selectmen and Board of Aldermen were the health officers. With all their other duties, proper attention could not be given to sanitary matters. Since the organization of a special Board of Health much more time has been devoted to this subject, and the city will compare favorably in this regard with other municipalities.

Police Department.—In the early years of Lawrence every one was too busy to be engaged in roguery, and in subsequent years a vigilant and efficient police has preserved good order, seldom disturbed by any very notable events. One of the earliest attempts at burglary was an effort to rob the Essex Co.'s safe. The company at that time occupied the one-story

building near the guard locks. The plan was frustrated by Marshal Tukey, of Boston, and two notorious burglars, who for a considerable period had baffled the marshal's efforts, were captured.

In the second year of the city government (1854) a disturbance occurred which came near proving a serious riot. A flag had been discovered, Union down, on a building on Oak Street, *supposed* to have been raised purposely by an Irishman (really by an American) as an insult to the flag. A crowd soon assembled composed of the more excitable element of the Know-Nothings (literal know-nothings, since they had not taken the trouble to ascertain truth); collision ensued, and on Common Street the front of one building (Bangor Block so-called) was considerably damaged. Stones were freely used, and some shots were exchanged; the riot act was read by Mayor Bartlett and the crowd dispersed. Fearing further trouble, about three hundred extra policemen were sworn in, but no further disturbance occurred, and the skies once more shone benignantly over a bloodless field.

Again, in 1875 a small body of Orangemen, returning from a picnic, were assaulted by a crowd of the thoughtless and reckless portion of the people, forgetting (if it ever occurred to them) that it is a free country, where all have equal rights. Seeking protection at the police station, the mayor, R. H. Tewksbury, and some policeman escorted them to their destination. Stones and other missiles were pretty freely used and some pistol-shots discharged. Some were slightly wounded, but nothing of a serious nature resulted.

These items are mentioned merely as incidents in history and not as possessing any serious import. In both instances the collisions were the natural results from the impulses of unthinking and unreasoning men. When serious trouble came in 1861 men of all nationalities—American born and foreign born, Catholics and Orangemen—vied with each other in maintaining the honor of our national banner by land and sea.

The city has been the scene of one deliberate murder. Albert D. Swan was shot by Henry K. Goodwin August 27, 1885. There had been between the two men a dispute of long standing in regard to the use of some invention connected with the telephone in which both were interested, and for the use of which Goodwin claimed that Swan was indebted to him in a considerable amount. Swan claimed that he owed him nothing. On the day above named Goodwin borrowed a pistol, and, going to the counting-room where Swan was seated at a desk, he renewed his demand, and as it was not responded to satisfactorily, he fired with fatal effect.

Mr. Swan was born in Tewksbury May 10, 1845, and came with his father, the late David S. Swan, to Lawrence in 1848. He was educated in the schools of Lawrence and at Comers' Commercial College, Boston; commenced life as a clerk in the banking-house of Hallgarten & Herzfield, New York, and was afterwards gold paying teller and attorney for the firm in the New York Stock Board; entered into partnership with his father under the name of D. S. Swan & Son in Lawrence, 1866, in fire insurance business. The father died 1874, and the business was continued by the son, who was also at the time of his death a director in the Bay State Bank.

Police Court.—In April, 1848, the Police Court was established by act of Legislature. Prior to this, justice had been dispensed by Trial Justice Joseph Couch. The first judge appointed was William Stevens, who, after a service of thirty years, resigned, and was succeeded by Hon. Nathan W. Harmon in 1878. After a service of nine years Judge Harmon resigned on account of impaired health, and was followed by the present judge, Hon. Andrew C. Stone. Associate justices have been Hon. Wm. H. P. Wright, W. Fiske Gile, Charles U. Bell, Gilbert E. Hood. Among those who have held the office of clerk, formerly appointed by the mayor and more recently elected by the people, have been Wm. H. Parsons, W. H. P. Wright, Edgar J. Sherman, Henry L. Sherman, Charles E. Briggs, Jesse G. Gould and the present incumbent, Henry F. Hopkins.

At the first town-meeting ten constables were appointed, who were also field-drivers—Gilman F. Sanborn, Bailey Bartlett, J. N. Gage, Phineas M. Gage, C. N. Souther, H. T. Nichols, E. Bartlett, N. Hazelton, Nath'l Ambrose, W. A. Goodwin.

Of these, three—Gilman F. Sanborn, Nathaniel Ambrose, and James D. Herrick—were successively at the head of the town police. Phineas M. Gage was the owner of a fine farm in the easterly portion of the town, embracing what is now Jackson Court and a portion of the Common,—Orchard Street taking its name from his orchard, and Garden Street from his garden.

The venerable Bailey Bartlett (a son of Hon. Bailey Bartlett, of Haverhill, who was appointed sheriff of Essex County by Gov. John Hancock) resided for several years in Newburyport, afterward in Salem and came thence to Lawrence. He was, as above stated, one of the first constables chosen in Lawrence, and on the decease of Joshua Buswell (the first deputy here), he was appointed deputy-sheriff, an office which he filled acceptably for many years. After this he was appointed a constable for civil service by successive city governments, and was remarkably active till a year or two before his decease, which occurred 1887, at the advanced age of ninety-two. James D. Herrick, educated at Phillips Academy, Andover, entered Dartmouth College, but did not continue a college course; was a teacher till 1846, when he came to Lawrence, and for twenty-two years was in the employ of the Essex Company as toll-keeper at Andover Bridge. He was one of the first members of the school committee and served on the committee at different periods for ten years; was at one time chief engineer of

the Fire Department and a member of the Board of Aldermen.

Under the city government, the various marshals (chiefs of police) have been Harvey L. Fuller, Chandler Bailey, Leonard Stoddard, Joseph H. Keyes, John S. Perkins, George W. Potter, John W. Porter, Edmund R. Hayden (afterward mayor), Noah Parkman, Col. Chase Philbrick, Capt. James E. Shepard, Lyman Prescott, James M. Currier, Moulton Batchelder and James T. O'Sullivan.

Industrial School.—This school was established in 1875, to provide a place for boys "who are growing up without salutary control, or no control at all; who either have no homes or homes merely in name; who lead idle lives and are habitual truants; who may indeed have been guilty of petty offences, but who may be reformed by kind treatment—a place where they may receive useful instruction in books and manual labor." The school opened with two boys July 3, 1875, under the direction of Captain H. G. Herrick, Rev. George Packard, Hon. Milton Bonney, Rev. John P. Gilmore and Frederick E. Clarke as trustees. The school has proved a very wise and useful establishment, and has accomplished much good. Many boys, who would otherwise have grown up to become pests of society, have gone from this school to become useful and industrious citizens. It is really a *home*, and by no means a prison, and is and has been for several years under the charge of Mr. and Mrs. Robert B. Risk.

Of the original trustees, Messrs. Packard and Bonney have died, and Rev. J. P. Gilmore has left the city. Messrs. Herrick and Clarke have from the beginning devoted much time to the interests of the school.

Judge William Stevens was born in North Andover, Mass., 1799; entered Harvard College at the age of sixteen, graduating in 1819; went to Nashville, Tenn., where he commenced the study of law; was admitted to the bar and practiced law in that city till 1826, when he removed to Belfast, Me., and became the law partner of John Wilson. The copartnership was dissolved in 1829, at which time he was elected to represent Belfast in the Legislature of Maine, nine years after the separation of Maine from Massachusetts. During his residence in Belfast he was active in public affairs, and is mentioned in the history of that town as a "distinguished and prominent" citizen; was a leader in the Debating Society, president of the Belfast Lyceum, editor of the *Maine Farmer and Political Register*, and a leading member of the Fire Department. Mr. Stevens removed subsequently to his native town, and soon after was elected to the Massachusetts Legislature, and served several terms. In 1836 he was appointed cashier of the Essex Bank in Andover, a position which he held till November 20, 1847, when the business of that bank was closed, and the cashier was ordered to dispose of the notes and other property. He removed to Lawrence July 3, 1848, at which time he was appointed by Governor Briggs judge of the Lawrence Police Court.

This position he held till May, 1877, and during this period was for three years a member of the School Committee. Failing health, loss of eye-sight, compelled his resignation, and on the 4th of June, 1878, he was stricken with apoplexy and died in a few hours.

Judge Stevens was a gentleman of the olden time, very urbane in manner, kind to a fault to the unfornate and erring; as a judge, sometimas deciding cases according to equity, rather than strict law; a public-spirited citizen and a sterling patriot. Two of his sons, fully imbued with the father's devotion to country, gave their lives to its service in the Civil War.

Newspapers.—The first newspaper in Lawrence was issued in October, 1846, by J. F. C. Hayes, and was called the *Merrimack Courier*. It continued under the editorial management of Mr. Hayes, John A. Goodwin (subsequently of Lowell), Homer A. Cook, Rev. Henry I. Harrington and Nathaniel Ambrose till 1862. In 1848 a Democratic paper, entitled the *Vanguard*, was published by Fabyan & Douglas. The name was subsequently changed to *The Sentinel*. This paper has been edited in the course of its existence by Harrison Douglass, Colonel B. F. Watson, Geo. A. Gordon, Benjamin Bordman, John Ryan, Hon. John K. Tarbox and Abiel Morrison, and is yet issued as a weekly paper.

In 1855 the *Lawrence American* was commenced by George W. Sargent and A. S. Bunker; it was continued by Mr. Sargent alone, and then Major Geo. S. Merrill became associated with him, and has since been the editor. This paper is Republican in politics, and is issued daily under the title of *Lawrence American*, an evening paper, and weekly as the *Lawrence American and Andover Review*. This is believed to be the first newspaper and printing-office in the world where the presses are all run by electric power, introduced in 1884.

In 1867 the *Essex Eagle* was commenced by Merrill & Wadsworth; now published by H. A. Wadsworth. This paper has two editions—a weekly and morning daily.

The *Lawrence Journal*, another well-conducted paper, was commenced by Robert Bower as the organ of workingmen. It was purchased in 1877 by Mr. Patrick Sweeney, one of the earliest residents of the town, Democratic in politics, with a good share of independence.

The *Sunday Telegram* has been more recently established. Several other papers have had an ephemeral existence.

CHARITABLE AND OTHER ORGANIZATIONS.

Masonic.—*Grecian Lodge*, the oldest in the city, was chartered in Methuen December 10, 1825, but in

consequence of the opposition to secret societies in anti-Masonic times, the meetings were practically abandoned. December 14, 1846, the first Masonic meeting was held in Lawrence, and at an adjourned meeting, one week later, it was determined to petition the Grand Lodge for a charter under the name of Grecian Lodge, in which it was hoped the Methuen Masons would join, and it was proposed that they should meet weekly from the 28th of December. Benjamin Boardman was proposed for M., Geo. E. Tyler for S. W., and J. F. C. Hayes for J. W., and a committee was appointed to take steps for procuring a charter, which was granted in February, 1848.

Tuscan Lodge was chartered December 10, 1863; *Phœnician Lodge* November 5, 1870.

Mount Sinai Royal Arch Chapter was chartered October 1, 1861.

Bethany Commandery, Knights Templar, was chartered December 29, 1864.

Lawrence Council, R. and S. M., was chartered December 9, 1868.

Lawrence Masonic Association was formed November, 1871.

Lawrence Masonic Mutual Relief Association was chartered July 20, 1874.

Odd Fellows.—The first lodge of the I. O. O. F. was organized May 10, 1847, and the order is represented in Lawrence by the following: *United Brothers Lodge*, formed in 1847; *Monadnock Lodge*, No. 150, organized 1867; *Lawrence Lodge*, in 1869; *Kearsarge Encampment*, No. 36, September 11, 1868; *Lawrence Encampment*, No. 31, in 1852, and re-instituted 1874. The *Lawrence Odd Fellows' Building Association*, formed in 1874–75, erected the fine brick building at the corner of Essex and Lawrence Streets; the lower floors of this building are occupied by stores; the second floor has been, for several years, occupied by the Lawrence Public Library, and the upper stories have been finely fitted and furnished for meetings and banquet halls of the various associations of the order.

Among the Benefit Insurance Societies are *The Knights of Honor; Knights and Ladies of Honor; United Order of Pilgrim Fathers*, five divisions; *The Royal Arcanum; The Home Circle; The American Legion of Honor; The Northern Mutual Relief Association; Ruth Lodge, Daughters of Rebecca;* all of which are recognized by the State, and their financial standing reported in the Insurance Reports.

Other benevolent societies are the *Knights of Pythias* (a secret order); the *Order of United Friends*, represented by two organizations,—Alpha Council, No. 7, and Bay State Council, No. 162; *Knights of St. John; Knights and Ladies of the Golden Rule;* the *Golden Rule Alliance; United Order of the Golden Cross*, in three divisions,—the Olive, Eastern Star and Loyalty Commanderies; the *Ancient Order of Foresters*; all having for their object mutual assistance to sick and distressed members.

The Ladies' Union Charitable Society, incorporated 1875, has the charge of the hospital for the care of acute cases of sickness and accident; nursery for day care of small children; training-school for nurses.

The German population has two associations of the *Order of Harugari*, known as *Schiller Lodge* and *Freiheit Lodge*, with Masonic features and benefits; also an Aid Society, a Sick Relief Association, and the *St. Aloysius Aid Society* (Catholic).

The benevolent societies of the French population are *L'Union St. Joseph* and *La Societe St. Jean Baptiste.*

Other large benevolent societies are *The Irish Catholic Benevolent Society*, organized October, 1863; Two lodges *Ancient Order of Hibernians; The Protectory of Mary Immaculate*, better known as the Orphan Asylum, as its name implies, an orphan asylum and home for invalids, the first institution ever erected in the city for charitable purposes; and the *Conference of St. Vincent de Paul.*

There are in Lawrence also several social and literary clubs, among which are the Home Club, with handsomely furnished rooms, centrally located on Essex Street; the Caledonian Society (Scotch); Sons of St. George (English); Le Cercle Montcalm (French); the Turn-Verein (German); the Knights of St. Patrick and the Old Residents' Association, to which all are eligible who have resided in Lawrence twenty-five years or more, Miss E. G. Wetherbee, president.

A Natural History and Archæological Society, embracing nearly one hundred members, has recently been formed, R. H. Tewksbury, president; John P. Langshaw, secretary; G. R. Sanborn, treasurer.

Needham Post (No. 39) of the Grand Army of the Republic combines the two objects of good-fellowship and benevolence to needy and sick comrades.

The post was named after Sumner Henry Needham, a member of the old Sixth Regiment, and who was among the first martyrs of the Rebellion. He was killed at Baltimore on the 19th of April, 1861. His remains were brought to Lawrence and interred in Bellevue Cemetery with public honors. Business was suspended throughout the city, and flags at half-mast, with other demonstrations of grief, marked the public respect for his memory.

He was born at Bethel, Me., and had been twelve years in Lawrence when the war broke out. With the name of such a hero as its patron, Post 39 could not help but increase in numbers and usefulness. To-day its membership is one of the largest of any post in the State outside of Boston. Its roll represents over three hundred members in good standing, with fresh accessions coming in at every meeting. It has disbursed for charitable purposes during the last ten years from seven hundred dollars to twelve hundred dollars annually.

The first commander was Major George S. Merrill, and such soldiers as Col. L. D. Sargent, Col. E. J.

Sherman, Major E. A. Fiske, Col. Chase Philbrick, Major L. N. Duchesney, Adjutant Frank O. Kendall, Ex-Mayor Davis, Stephen C. Parsons, James Noonan, Daniel F. Kiley, David Johnson, William H. Coan, Hon. A. C. Stone, John F. Hogan, James J. Stanley, George H. Flagg and Charles H. Couillard were his successors. Of the above, Mr. F. O. Kendall has been appointed and served as adjutant under eleven commanders, this being a longer period than can be said of any other member of a G. A. R. Post in the State. The charter members of Needham Post were Melvin Beal, James G. Abbott, Frank Davis, E. L. Noyes, Chase Philbrick, A. A. Currier, George S. Merrill, E. J. Merriam and S. M. Decker. The charter is dated December 10, 1867. The present commander of Needham Post is Charles U. Bell, Esq.

Musical Association.—*The Oldest Musical Association* in the city is the Lawrence Brass Band, formed in February, 1849, a very patriotic association, which in the Rebellion sent twelve of its eighteen members into the Union army.[1] For many years it was under the leadership of D. Frank Robinson. The present leader is Mr. E. T. Collins.

The Lawrence Cornet Band, F. J. O'Reilly, leader; La Bande Canadienne, J. R. Lafricaine, leader; the Lyra and Glocke Singing Societies (German); the Ladies' Choral Union, under the direction of Mr. Reuben Merrill; two Orchestral Associations, one directed by E. T. Collins, the other by C. J. A. Marier.

Young Men's Christian Association.—Organized October 12, 1876; incorporated January 14, 1880; reorganized February 6, 1883. The association has pleasant and convenient rooms, which are open daily from 8 A.M. to 9½ P.M. The following privileges are free to all persons: Reading-room well supplied with papers and periodicals, parlor games, boarding-house register, employment bureau, song service and facilities for letter-writing. In addition to the above, members of the association are entitled to the use of the gymnasium, bath-rooms, members' parlor and admission for member and lady to the annual course of entertainments. Any young man of good moral character, regardless of religious belief, may become a member on payment of an annual fee of two dollars. Fee for membership, with use of the gymnasium, five dollars.

The building occupied by them was built for and occupied by the Eliot Church. This was sold when the Eliot and Central Churches united, and was purchased by Hon. Wm. A. Russell, who conveyed it to the association, generously deducting from the payment the sum of ten thousand dollars of the actual cost.

Lawrence City Mission. — In the great influx of population naturally attendant upon founding of the new town many came with limited means, who, either from want of immediate employment or illness, needed assistance. Poor, but not by any means paupers, a little aid from those more fortunate would help them on in their struggle for success. Among the first to recognize the importance of system in the distribution of aid was Rev. Henry F. Harrington, then pastor of the Unitarian Church, who said to his people: "If you will place your charity money in my hands, and send your applicants for aid to me, I will look up the cases and help as I shall see help is needed."

December, 1854, seven gentlemen met for the purpose of forming a "Relief Society." These men were Rev. George Packard, John C. Hoadley, William D. Joplin, James K. Barker, Rev. Richard S. Rust, Ebenezer B. Currier and Rev. H. F. Harrington. At a subsequent meeting John C. Hoadley was chosen president, the city was divided in six districts, a division committee of three persons from each ward of the city was appointed, and to each section was assigned a visitor. The first general agent was Wm. D. Joplin (who died August, 1870). Mr. Joplin served one year, and following him Henry Withington, who served more than two years, both devoted to the work without compensation, the last-named giving his entire time during the winter months. The society continued four years, and rendered important aid, particular during the stagnation of business in 1857. In February, 1859, the society voted that a committee of two from each religious society be invited meet in convention with a committee of two from the association to consider the establishment of a city mission. The first meeting was held March 3, 1859, in which twelve religious societies were represented. The meeting unanimously decided in favor of forming a mission, and a committee was appointed with Hon. Chas. Storrow as chairman, who reported that the proposed measure "promises results of a most beneficial character, not only to those who are to be more particularly the object of the labors of the mission, but also to those who, by joining in its support, whatever be their peculiarities of religious opinion, thereby create and strengthen within themselves that bond of truly Christian fellowship which unites all who co-operate in good work." They also reported that Geo. P. Wilson (of the Methodist Church) was a person containing in an unusual degree the qualifications and experience requisite for the proper discharge of the duties of city missionary. The report was unanimously adopted, and the wisdom of their choice was fully proved,—beloved and trusted by all, Mr. Wilson devoted all the energies of his benevolent and unselfish nature to the wants of the unfortunate and suffering, and during thirteen years of service, in the trying times that succeeded the fall of the Pemberton mill, and during the four years of war, in counsel as chaplain at the jail, and in every way in which he could, he was always found ready to do all in his power for the benefit of suffering humanity, and in all his charitable work he had the full sympathy

[1] Tewksbury.

and aid of his equally devoted wife. He resigned in 1872 and went to Boston in the service of the Boston Missionary and Church Extension Society. A plain monument in Bellevue Cemetery, erected by the citizens of Lawrence, marks his resting-place; it bears this simple inscription:

"To the memory of
GEO. P. WILSON
City Missionary of Lawrence for thirteen years
Born Jany 29, 1830
Died July 10, 1873
He lived for others."

April 1, 1872, Rev. Charles U. Dunning was appointed to succeed Mr. Wilson, and for about thirteen years, with the earnest co-operation of Mrs. Dunning, faithfully and judiciously carried on the work so auspiciously commenced, and was succeeded by Francis S. Longworth, the present missionary. The mission is sustained by voluntary contributions, and the salary of the missionary is paid by the different manufacturing corporations, divided in proportion to their capital. The president of the society, Rev. George Packard, died, after eighteen years of devoted service, November 30, 1877, and Gilbert E. Hood was chosen to succeed him.

The mission has from the beginning accomplished much, and by its usefulness in various ways has commended itself fully to the people. In 1885, in the hope of making it still more systematically useful, it became a bureau of charities on the basis of associated charity, having for its objects, "to secure harmonious co-operation between the different churches, charities and charitable individuals of Lawrence, in order to assist the deserving poor, prevent begging and imposition, and diminish pauperism; to encourage thrift and self-dependence, through friendly intercourse, advice and sympathy; to aid the poor to help themselves, and to prevent children from growing up as paupers." Such have ever been the aims of the mission, but whether all the societies will co-operate is a problem for the future.

Independently of the city mission, yet as an auxiliary to it, several benevolently disposed young ladies had for several years maintained a

FLOWER MISSION, the object of which has been to brighten the homes of the sick with flowers, and otherwise distributing among them fruits and delicacies suitable for invalids, and in this work they have been generously aided by the people of Andover and North Andover. Early in October, 1875, at the invitation of the City Missionary, a number of ladies met at the mission rooms to take into consideration the formation of a Day Nursery, for the care of children whose mothers were employed in the mills, and for such hospital work as might be found at hand. And on the 8th of October the Ladies' Union Charitable Society was formed, and organized by the choice of Mrs. Alfred P. Clark, president; Mrs. Wm. A. Russell, secretary and treasurer. The other officers representing the different churches were:

Mrs J. Morrison	Grace Church
Mrs. N. G. White	Lawrence Street Church
Mrs. Wm. Shackford	Second Methodist Church
Mrs. Joseph Shattuck	Unitarian Church
Mrs. G. D. Armstrong	First Baptist Church
Mrs. L. Beach, Jr.	First Methodist Church
Mrs. S. Webster	Parker Street Methodist Church
Mrs. H. F. Mills	Swedenborgian Church
Mrs. A. McFarlin	Universalist Church
Mrs. S. W. Wilder	First Baptist Church
Mrs. Fred. Butler	St. John's Church
Mrs. C. Payson	Second Baptist Church
Mrs. A. C. Clark	Central Church
Mrs. J. Hogg	Presbyterian Church
Mrs. Clark Carter	South Congregational Church

A public meeting was held at City Hall on the 19th, and at this meeting sufficient encouragement was given to warrant the society in commencing work. A building was purchased, completely furnished, and opened to receive children in November. January 4, 1876, the society was incorporated, and the building was removed to land of the Washington Mills, and enlarged by the addition of three rooms in the rear; but as there was no room to be spared for the care of the sick, an invalid's home was opened on Montgomery Street. A few years later the Washington Mills having other use for their land, removal became necessary. It was also essential that the nursery building should be in the vicinity of the mills, and it was determined to purchase a lot of land for the purposes required. This was accomplished, and money raised by subscription for erecting a larger building where the nursery and home should be combined. The different manufacturing companies gave three thousand dollars. Other sums were obtained from citizens, and the front of the building, now used as a hospital, was erected and dedicated February 9, 1882, the old buildings being placed in the rear and used for culinary purposes. The physicians soon began to urge upon the society the necessity of opening the hospital department to men as well as women, as most of the accidents in the mills occurred among the men, and there was no place in town for the care of many of these cases, and, heretofore, it had been customary to send to hospitals in Boston. This movement created the need of a larger building, and the society immediately gave their attention to increasing their accommodations. May, 1885, they succeeded in purchasing a lot adjoining the hospital from Mr. Chas. A. Brown, which was enlarged by the gift of an unknown friend of twenty-five feet front additional, thus giving them a lot of one hundred and thirty-five by seventy-eight feet. In 1885 the home for children was finished, free from debt, and in March, 1886, the hospital ell was completed and dedicated. The hospital, which will accommodate twenty patients, and the day nursery are both still under the charge of the society, and both have proved of great utility.

Not yet satisfied with their earnest and successful efforts, the society, in October, 1882, established a training-school for nurses, which is yet in successful operation. Eight nurses are in constant attendance,

graduating after having passed a successful examination and two years' training in the hospital. A directory for nurses was opened in 1885, aiming to assist persons requiring a nurse, and to aid nurses desiring work in their chosen profession. In these various works the ladies have been materially aided by the physicians of the city, who have cordially cooperated in much gratituous service, and by lectures and aid in the training-school. One pleasant custom has grown up in connection with this enterprise which is worthy of mention. For the purpose of raising funds in support of the nursery and hospital, some one (it is believed Mr. and Mrs. Dunning) suggested having a public breakfast on the 1st day of May ; this has grown gradually in favor, and seems to have become a permanent institution, the City Hall being usually filled from early morning till the middle of the forenoon, where the citizens meet in social intercourse, and no inconsiderable sums are realized from the entertainment.

The present president of the society is Mrs. Wm. E. Gowing, and for the past four years Miss A. E. Andrews has been the efficient head of the hospital.

Public Schools.—Forty years ago, 1845, there were within the present limits of Lawrence three of those small one-story buildings known as schoolhouses, where, as in other district schools throughout New England, the children had the benefit of a few weeks' instruction in the common branches of education in the two terms of summer and winter. They were, no doubt, like their prototypes, plain, rude and neglected, with cold floors, a uniform pattern of desks for pupils of all sizes, and these unpainted, on which, even if not instructed in the art, the male portion of the pupils were self-educated in the rudiments of sculpture.

In 1846 another building was prepared by the Essex Company, and under the direction of the Methuen school committee—Dr. Stephen Huse, James D. Herrick and Rev. Willard Spalding—was opened for pupils, with Nathaniel Ambrose[1] as teacher. This school soon increased in numbers from twenty-five to one hundred and fifty, and was continued till after the acceptance of the town charter.

At the first town-meeting Dr. William D. Lamb, James D. Herrick and Dan Weed were elected members of the school committee. In their report they give the record of five schools, located on Tower Hill, Hampshire Street, Jackson Street, Prospect Street and "Andover side." The rapid influx of scholars rendered active measures necessary, and as future success depends largely on right beginnings, the agent of the Essex Company, Mr. Storrow, requested Hon. Horace Mann (then the best authority in educational affairs) to meet the committee and devise with them some systematic plan adapted to the growing wants of of the city.

The plan then adopted contemplated the establishment of primary and intermediate schools scattered over the territory of the town, one grammar school upon the north side of the river, one grammar school upon the south side and one high school for the town.

At the town-meeting of 1848 five persons were chosen members of the committee,—Rev. Henry F. Harrington (now superintendent of schools in New Bedford), [2] Nathan W. Harmon (since judge of the Police Court), [2]James D. Herrick, Rev. Lyman Whiting and Rev. George Packard.

The plan matured and carried into execution at that early day, and which has continued to the present time, of dividing the schools into primary, middle, grammar and high grades, has proved by time to be the best and most economical. The government, the people and the non-resident owners of our large manufacturing establishments were liberal in the expenditure for schools, as, in fact, they have ever been since. The manufacturing companies paying at that time sixty-five per cent. of all the taxes, expressed their feelings in the language of one of their representatives, "Let the schools be the best that can be made at any cost," fully realizing the importance of early discipline in habits of method and order, of those who are ultimately to be the sovereigns of the State.

This same year the committee called the attention of the town government to the requirements of the statute for a building for a high school ; twelve thousand five hundred dollars was promptly appropriated for the purpose, and the building now occupied by the Oliver Grammar School was erected, and named the Oliver School.

Lawrence High School.—In January, 1849, T. W. Curtis was elected principal of this school, to which seventeen pupils were admitted that month. In September twenty-two more were admitted, and Miss Sarah B. Hooker was elected assistant teacher. Mr. Curtis resigned in 1851, and for the remainder of the term Rev. H. F. Harrington, of the committee, was the instructor. In 1851 Mr. C. J. Pennell became principal. Miss Hooker resigned in January, 1852, and was succeeded by Miss Jane S. Gerrish, of Newburyport, who remained in service till June, 1873. In 1853 Mr. Pennell resigned to accept a professorship in Antioch College, Ohio.

He was succeeded by Mr. Samuel John Pike, then a tutor in Bowdoin College. After a service of three years he removed to Somerville. For a few months the position was filled by Mr. Wm. H. Farrar, and, in May, 1857, Mr. Wm. J. Rolfe was elected principal. Mr. Rolfe remained four and a half years, and removed to Boston, where he became associate editor of the *Boston Journal of Chemistry*, and is widely known as the author of several valuable works. For three

[1] Mr. Ambrose died September 30, 1878, at the age of sixty-seven. He was chosen annually during the continuance of the town a constable and part of the time inspector of police and captain of the watch.

[2] Now deceased.

months after the withdrawal of Mr. Rolfe, Mr. Thomas G. Valpey, an instructor in another institution, spent his vacation as principal of the High School, and in December, 1861, Mr. Henry L. Boltwood became principal. He was succeeded in 1863 by Albert C. Perkins. Mr. Perkins remained till 1873, and resigned to become principal of Phillips Academy, Exeter (and is now principal of the Adelphi Academy, Brooklyn, N. Y.). The subsequent teachers have been Charles T. Lazelle, 1873 to '75; Horace E. Bartlett, 1875 to '79; Edward H. Rice, 1879 to '80; Edwin H. Lord, 1880 to '84 (recently elected principal of the new Brewster Academy at Wolfboro'), and the present principal, Frank P. McGregor.

A second assistant, Miss Harriet C. Hovey, was elected in 1856, and, after a faithful service of seven years, was succeeded in 1863 by Miss Marcia Packard, who left the service in 1881. Other assistants have been Miss Alice E. Birtwell, 1873 till her decease, in 1883; Miss Emily G. Wetherbee, Mary A. Newell, Ada Lear, Katharine A. O'Keefe, Louisa S. Halley and Julia J. Underhill, the six last mentioned being still in service.

A sub-mastership was created in 1872, and the position has been held by Herbert S. Rice, 1872 to '77; Parker P. Simmons, to 1879; Anson M. Richardson, 1879 to '85; Edward J. Sartelle, and Edwin H. Lord, Edward H. Gulick.

The Oliver Grammar School commenced with a little over one hundred and forty scholars in the spring of 1848, in a wooden building where the Unitarian Church now stands, under the direction of Mr. Geo. A. Walton (now of the State Board of Education). It was supposed that this house would accommodate the grammar school on the north side of the river for an indefinite period; but before the walls of the High School building were up it was found necessary to alter the plan, and as soon as finished the grammar school was placed in the upper story, with seats for one hundred and eighty-four scholars. This soon proved too small, and in 1851 the three-story transverse section was built; again in 1867 the front portion of the original building was raised to its present height. Its name, Oliver Grammar School, was given in honor of the late General Oliver. In 1865 Hon. Milton Bonney, then mayor, who had been a member of the school committee for three years previous, and foresaw that the increasing growth of the grammar school would soon demand the use of the whole building, called the attention of the government to the necessity of providing a new building for the High School, and land was secured for the purpose, on which, in 1866, the new High School building was erected; but before its completion the sessions of the High School were held in the vestry of Trinity Church, and the entire original building was given up to the Oliver Grammar School.

During this time twelve other school-houses had been built or enlarged in different parts of the city.

The committee were quite fortunate in securing the services of Mr. Walton, as he served as an able coadjutor in carrying into effect the plan adopted, and being zealous in his chosen profession, he brought the school to a high state of excellence. The Quincy School of Boston was the model on which the grammar school was built, then the only one of its kind in New England. Mr. Walton continued in the mastership of the school from April, 1848, for sixteen years, till the summer of 1864; was succeeded by James H. Eaton, who had been assistant teacher (now treasurer of the Essex Savings Bank), Mr. with Albert F. Scruton as assistant. After Mr. Eaton's resignation, Mr. John L. Brewster was elected (who was subsequently superintendent of schools form 1880 to 1887). Successive principals were James Barrell, Park S. Warren, Barrett B. Russel and the present principal, Benjamin F. Dame.

The school, commencing with two classes in 1848, has now eight grades under sixteen female teachers, with one head master and seven hundred pupils; the building will accommodate eight hundred and forty.

Packard School.—This is at the present time the grammar school of South Lawrence. The building was originally a brick building of eight rooms and was first occupied 1872. In March, 1885, it was destroyed by fire, but has since been rebuilt and contains ten rooms and a hall. The other buildings, the Lawrence and Union Street School buildings, on the south side of the river, are occupied by the primary schools.

The grammar school has been successively under the charge of Isaiah W. Ayer, Jonathan Tenney, John B. Fairfield, Wilbur Fiske Gile, John Orne, Jr., J. Henry Root, Jefferson K. Cole, Edward P. Shute and Albert P. Doe.

It would be impracticable in the limits of this article to give a more extended sketch of the growth of the schools of Lawrence, and mention the various faithful teachers who have been here employed. Suffice it to say that, in addition to the three previously named, Lawrence has seventeen public schools, employing seventy-two teachers, the total number of teachers being one hundred and eight in active employ; the average number of pupils for the year 1886 being nearly five thousand; average attendance, 96.42 per cent.

Free evening schools were established in 1859—for the benefit of those who are unable to attend school during the day—taught at first by volunteer teachers. The evening school started as an experiment, under the direction of Mr. George P. Wilson, the city missionary, in the old Odd Fellows' Hall. It was removed later to the basement of the City Hall. The school gradually grew in favor, has become a part of the public-school system, and the expense

is assumed by the city. There are now maintained one school in the westerly part of the city, one on the south side of the river, and a large one in the Oliver building for ordinary English branches of study, and a High School for instruction in algebra, chemistry and drawing.

Sewing has also become a permanent addition to the work of the middle or intermediate schools, and very creditable work of the pupils has been exhibited.

A sewing-school had been established in April, 1859, by the city missionary, and for twenty-five years was sustained under the care of the mission, charitable and competent ladies volunteering their services as instructors from year to year.

Training-School.—Among the schools a very valuable addition was made in 1869 by the establishment of a training-school for teachers, in which persons who could not perhaps incur the expense of absence from home in the normal schools of the State may have an opportunity to educate themselves for the business of instruction. The object of the school is to fit teachers for the work of organizing, governing and teaching in the public schools. The school has been under able management, and has proved of great value. The first instructors were Misses L. J. Faulkner and Fannie A. Reed, the latter of whom continued in the school for about ten years. In 1879 Miss Lily P. Shepard, a graduate of the Westfield Normal School, a teacher of experience in the training-school at Springfield, was placed at the head of the school, and has continued till the present. Her first assistant was Miss Clara Lear, who served one year, and was relieved at her own request, succeeded by Miss Clara T. Wing. Miss Wing resigned, and was followed by Miss Janet G. Hutchins, who, in 1887, accepted another position in Lewiston, Me.

Private Schools.—In 1847 several private schools supplied the wants of the people, in addition to those under charge of the town. Among these was a school opened near the commencement of 1847 by a Mr. Ward, assisted by Misses Proctor and Chapman, commencing with twenty-four scholars, which in its fourth term numbered forty.

Messrs. Twombly and Judkins had also a flourishing school; another was taught by Messrs. O'Connell and Bresnahan; and still another was opened in February, 1848, by Mr. and Mrs. Silas Blaisdell. This latter school continued for several years and was well patronized.

At the present time the St. Mary's parochial, a private school, embraces about twelve hundred pupils.

The French population also maintain a private school, and the German population also have a small school of sixty pupils. A successful private school is also under the charge of Misses Marcia Packard and Cornelia Harmon. Gordon C. Cannon has for several years conducted a flourishing commercial school.

MANUFACTURING.

The Lawrence Machine Shop was built and owned by the Essex Company, the main building, foundry and chimney being very substantial structures of stone, commenced in 1846 and finished in 1848. The works were operated by the Essex Company until 1852, Caleb M. Marvel being the superintendent. The machine-shop played an important part in the early days of Lawrence, was supplied with every variety of valuable tools and machines, and gave employment to a large number of skillful mechanics. Some of these still remained in Lawrence, though a large number, on the closing of the shop, sought other fields, and other places in various parts of the Union have had the benefit of their skill. Many locomotive engines were built here, the first of which was the "Essex," which was used on the railroad between Lawrence and Boston. Others were the "Welland" and the "Trent," which went to Ogdensburg; others went to the Erie Railroad, and many others later to other roads.

The Hoadley Portable Engine, which acquired extended celebrity, was first built here by John C. Hoadley, who subsequently established his works on the North Canal, whence large numbers of the engines went to the West and California. Here also the steam fire-engine, which, with modifications, is now in so general use, was first brought out by Thomas Scott and N. S. Bean. The first engine built, named the "Lawrence," was purchased by the city of Boston. Mr. Bean subsequently removed to Manchester, where the manufacture of these engines has since been carried forward. Considerable amounts of cotton machinery were also built here.

In 1852 the property of the machine-shop was transferred to a new company—the "Lawrence Machine-Shop Company," having a capital of seven hundred and fifty thousand dollars, the value of shares being fifty dollars each. The officers were Samuel Batchelder, president; J. H. W. Paige, treasurer; Gordon McKay, agent; and John C. Hoadley, superintendent, who, on the resignation of Colonel McKay, became agent.

The company suffered in common with others in the general depression of business in 1857, remained idle two years, and the property was sold to the Everett Mills Company.

The following just tribute to the memory of Mr. Hoadley, written by a gentleman in Boston, appeared in the *Advertiser* soon after his decease:

John Chipman Hoadly, born in Turin, N. Y., 1818, the son and grandson of farmers, passed his youth in Utica, N. Y. At the age of eighteen he was employed in preliminary surveys for the enlargement of the Erie Canal, and his ability as a draughtsman brought him quick promotion and more responsible work. In 1844 he went to assist Horatio N. and Erastus B. Bigelow in the foundation and development of the manufactories and town of Lancaster (now

Clinton, Mass.). Four years later he, with Gordon McKay, formed a partnership for the manufacture of engines and other machinery in Pittsfield. In 1852 he was called to the position of superintendent of the Lawrence Machine-Shop, and soon after reluctantly accepted the position of agent, well knowing that the failure of the company was only a question of time.

After the closing of that company he engaged in the manufacture of portable engines, then but little used in this country. Their skillful design and honest construction soon gained a name and a large market for them all over the country, especially in California. After a number of very prosperous years the crisis of 1873, with its shrinkage of value and bad debts, forced the company to close its affairs. During a part of this time Mr. Hoadley was also interested in the organization of the Clinton Wire-Cloth Company, agent of the New Bedford Copper Company and the McKay Sewing-Machine Association, and was one of the founders and president of the Archibald Wheel Company. Since 1876 he engaged in various interests, especially as an expert in mechanical and engineering questions, serving in important cases in the courts and in responsible positions in the great mechanical exhibitions.

The Massachusetts Institute of Technology, of which he was one of the original trustees, claimed for many years a part of his interest, and as a member of the State Board of Health during more than seven years, he did his part in this most useful work, besides filling other positions, as alderman in Lawrence, a member of the Legislature in 1858, and Presidential elector in 1862. Commissioned by the State during the Rebellion, he visited England to inspect ordnance for harbor defense.

This brief summary comprises, however, only a fraction of Mr. Hoadley's real interest. The unique feature of his life was his intense enthusiasm in many paths of literature and in the higher lines of thought. If mechanics was his pleasure, literature was his delight; no pressure of business could draw him wholly away from his books.

At the age of nineteen supporting a mother and six sisters, in the following year earning a reputation and a fortune, he kept out of the rut of a mere business man; studied French, German, Latin and Greek, and was as familiar with Homer's Odyssey and its translations as with the designs of his engines. Collecting about him a rich and choice library, reading in curious and out-of-the-way lines, as well as in the English classics; of marvelous memory, which seemed to retain everything he ever read, he became a centre around whom a group of inquirers would easily gather, and from whom they could always draw facts most correctly stated and poetry most musically spoken.

But beyond the intelligence and learning of the man, it was the character of Mr. Hoadley that impressed all with whom he came in contact. He was more than honest; there was a touch of ancient chivalry in his sense of honor. He trusted men, and he expected and always acted as if he expected the same honorable sense in others that was found in him; and though at times sadly disappointed and cruelly treated, he never lost his confidence in man.

Many civil and mechanical engineers throughout the country owe to Mr. Hoadley their early enthusiasm, their free lessons in drawing and their present positions.

Politically he was one of the founders of the Republican party in Lawrence, and on the breaking out of the war none were more earnest to sustain the govment, furnishing time and money to the cause of the Union, and had it not been for the unfortunate physical defect of deafness, he would, without doubt, have taken a still more active part in the military service.

Back of all else was the deep religious faith which supported his principles, and was revealed in every word and deed. He was a devout member of the Episcopal Church, and for many years was warden of Grace Church, Lawrence. He died in Boston at the age of sixty-seven years and ten months.

Bay State Mills.—The Legislature of 1845 and '46 granted charters to the Bay State, with one million dollars capital, and Atlantic Mills, with two million dollars capital, the Union Mills, with one million dollars capital, and the Bleaching and Dyeing Company, with five hundred thousand dollars capital. The two latter never went into operation. The Bay State was the first of the manufacturing corporations, commencing in April, 1846, and the buildings were so far completed that the wheel of the River Mills was first set in motion February, 1848, and the manufacture of cloth commenced in June following. The buildings of this company were planned upon a large scale, consisting of three buildings, each of them, including the attics, nine stories in height; and the River Mill, with its wings, from three to five stories high, and fourteen hundred and eighty feet in length; all erected under the superintendence of Captain Phineas Stevens, of Nashua, an experienced engineer. These mills manufactured many varieties of woolen goods, new to American manufacture, and at one time were especially well known as manufacturers of the "Bay State Shawls," made of wool and at a moderate cost, of varied patterns, making in a single year, 1850, three hundred and fifteen thousand. They attracted much attention and commendation at the International Exposition of 1852, and at the Paris Exposition, 1867.

The first treasurer and general manager was Samuel Lawrence, who, as well as his brothers, Amos and Abbott Lawrence, had taken so deep an interest in the development of American manufactures, and had previously acquired much experience from their connection with the mills at Lowell. The first resident agent was M. D. Ross. Samuel Webber was agent

for a short time, and was succeeded by Captain Oliver H. Perry. After a long service he was succeeded by Captain Gustavus V. Fox, the efficient Assistant Secretary of the Navy during the Civil War.

In the general depression of trade these mills failed in 1857, remained idle two years, and the entire property passed into the hands of a new company, formed largely from the creditors of the former one, and took the name of

Washington Mills.—Chartered in 1858 and organized with a capital of one million six hundred and fifty thousand dollars. They introduced several varieties of worsted goods, worsted coatings made of combed wool, heretofore imported and introduced into American mills by Hon. E. R. Mudge; twilled blue flannel coatings and opera flannels. Joseph S. Fay was first treasurer of these mills, succeeded by Joshua Stetson, who was followed by Henry F. Coe.

This corporation was the second in size in Lawrence, furnishing employment for about twenty-five hundred persons. The plant consisted of one cotton mill, 19,000 spindles, 65 sets of cards, 320 broad looms; one worsted mill, 8640 spindles, 885 looms; five woolen mills, weekly product, 100,000 yards cottons, 120,000 yards dress goods, 20,000 yards worsted, 40,000 yards woolens and 1000 shawls. Motive-power, seven water-wheels of 1025 horse-power, and two engines of 1000 horse-power.

The resident agents have been Gustavus V. Fox, previously agent of the Bay State Mills; Edward D. Thayer, William H. Salisbury, who engaged in other business in Chicago; Parker C. Kirk and John H. Needham, who yet remains in Lawrence engaged in trade. Mr. Granville M. Stoddard, for a long time superintendent of the worsted department, removed to Worcester. These mills furnished employment to about twenty-five hundred people, were well equipped with machinery and employed persons skilled in manufacturing, and produced goods of excellent quality; but they, as well as their predecessors, failed of ultimate financial success, and are now in liquidation. The mill property and water-rights have been transferred in 1886 to a new organization.

The Washington Mills Company.—This company is now making a radical change. They have taken down the old buildings and replaced them with buildings of more modern style. One of the old mills took fire and was burned to the ground in 1887, but the new mills were so far advanced that but little delay ensued in continuing the operations of the company. The treasurer of the new company in Frederick Ayer, of Lowell; Manager, Thomas Sampson, of Lawrence; Clerk of the corporation, Sidney W. Thurlow; Paymaster, Alfred P. Clark, of Lawrence, who has been in this position through the various vicissitudes of the Bay State and Washington Mills.

The Atlantic Cotton Mills Company was incorporated in February, 1846. Their original plan was to occupy the entire territory between the Bay State and Pacific Mills. The westerly and easterly wings of the present building were built independently, and at a later date the two were connected by the large central structure; and, as this gave all the room required, the lower part of the territory was relinquished to the Essex Company, and subsequently sold to the Pacific Company for the Lower Pacific Mills in 1864. The first cotton arrived January, 1849, and was manufactured by the Atlantic in May following. Their second mill was manufacturing cloth in October of the same year. The Central Mill was commenced in February, 1850. These mills were built by the Essex Company, under the direction and in accordance with the plans of Captain Charles H. Bigelow, the company's engineer. The brick-work was under the direction of Levi Sprague and the wood-work under the supervision of Morris Knowles. The Essex Company also built at their machine-shop the machinery for the middle building.

These mills were constructed, as was the custom in the earlier days of manufacturing, more with a view to their practical utility than with regard to beauty, and the addition of the central structure, with its flat-roof and little wooden bell-tower in the centre, gave to the passer-by the idea of an enormous square brick bottle with short neck and stopper. The buildings were subsequently raised by the addition of mansard roofs, thereby giving additional working room, and contributing largely to the architectural appearance of the building, further improved by the removal of the old central bell-tower, and the construction of a handsome brick tower at one of the angles.

Financially, the Atlantic Mills have had their trials, as well as the others. This company, in common with all others, felt seriously the depression of 1857, and in 1876 the company was reorganized; the capital stock, which was originally one million five hundred thousand dollars, was reduced to one million dollars, the stockholders surrendering five shares of old stock for one of new and contributing seven hundred thousand dollars in cash, to make up the new capital—looking to a future of promise and hope. In 1886 they were again somewhat embarrassed by the crooked proceedings of their treasurer, Wm. Gray, Jr., and are at the present time moving forward successfully, it is believed, under new auspices. The mills are well-built, substantial buildings, have always been kept in thorough repair, and under the management of local agents have been models of neatness and order. The number of spindles is over 100,000; the number of looms is 1921; the number of persons employed, about 1100; product, 500,000 yards per week of sheetings and shirtings; motive-power, 4 turbine wheels and 1 double Corliss engine, 1000 horse-power.

The president was Abbott Lawrence, and the Treasurer, Charles S. Storrow. Mr. William Gray succeeded Mr. Storrow as treasurer, and held that position for thirty years, resigning in 1877. Henry

Saltonstall served as treasurer for a short period, and was followed by William Gray, Jr., who, by the betrayal of his trust, added one more honored name to the list of criminals that has disgraced American annals.

For the first ten years the resident agent was the late Gen. Henry K. Oliver, well-known and esteemed by all who knew him for his social qualities and for his active interest in whatever pertained to the interest and welfare of the city. He was succeeded by Joseph P. Battles, who had been previously cashier, who served the company with marked fidelity for twenty-nine years, till his resignation in 1887.

The present organization is as follows: President, Chas. H. Dalton, of Boston; Treasurer, William Hooper, of Boston; Agent, William A. Sherman, of Lawrence; Paymaster, J. C. Bowker, who has been in the employ of the company since 1856, succeeding Mr. Battles as paymaster in 1858.

Pacific Mills.—Incorporated 1853, with a capital of two million dollars, increased, since, to two million five hundred thousand dollars. The mills and print-works buildings were built by the Essex Company under the direction and superintendence of Capt. Charles H. Bigelow. Large additions have since been made, and another mill for the Pacific is now in process of construction. This corporation is one of the largest textile establishments in the world, manufacturing, printing and dyeing ladies' cotton, worsted and wool dress fabrics.

The number of cotton spindles is 120,000; the number of worsted spindles, 30,000; the number of looms, 4600; the number of printing-machines, 25; the number of mills and buildings, 23, covering 44 acres of floor space, independently of a new large mill in process of erection. For motive-power and other purposes, there are in use in these mills: 11 turbine wheels of 5000 horse-power, 4 large steam-engines of 3500 horse-power, 42 small steam-engines, 50 steam boilers. The annual consumption of coal, 23,000 tons; the annual consumption of gas in 9000 burners, cost $30,000; the annual consumption of cotton, 15,600 bales; the annual consumption of wool, 4,000,000 pounds. The annual capacity of the mills: Cottons printed and dyed, 70,000,000 yards; worsted goods, 30,000,000 yards; to make this cloth nearly 200,000,000 miles of yarn are required; the pay-roll for the year ending May, 1886, was $1,790,000; the average earnings per day were for men and boys, $1.26; for women and girls, 90 cents.

The Pacific Mills Library (connected with which is a reading-room containing daily papers) contains 9000 volumes, and has a fund of over $13,000.

The relief society has expended annually for several years five thousand dollars for the relief of the sick and disabled. The society has been maintained by a contribution of two cents per week from the people employed, and a weekly contribution of $2.50 from the corporation. The establishment of the Lawrence Hospital has rendered this society less needful, and it has been dissolved.

The library was started by contributions of Mr. Lawrence and other directors, and a donation of one thousand dollars made by the Pacific Mills, and was maintained by a contribution of one cent per week from the people employed. The further increase of this library has also been relinquished, the much larger public library, open to all the citizens, affording larger and more varied opportunities for reading.

There was also a savings bank connected with the mills, the deposits amounting at one time to nearly one hundred thousand dollars. The city having now three chartered savings banks, the company have ceased receiving deposits, and all the accounts have been closed.

Of ten prizes (of ten thousand francs each) given by the Emperor Napoleon III., at the Paris Exposition of 1867, for the care of the material, intellectual and moral welfare of employees, the Pacific Mills received the second prize, out of five hundred applicants; and this was the only prize awarded to the United States or Great Britain.

The first treasurer and agent of these mills was Jeremiah S. Young, who was the lessee and manager of the Ballardvale Mills, at Andover. He brought with him to this new enterprise many skilled workmen, and devoted himself intensely to its development. The immense cost of so large an establishment, and of the expensive machinery necessary for its equipment, exhausted the capital and embarrassed its progress; and the stock, the par value of which was one thousand dollars per share, sold at one time at as low a price as one hundred dollars and less. Mr. Lawrence, the president, resolute and enterprising, had no idea of seeing the word "Fail" inscribed upon its banner. In his own name he raised the amount necessary to carry the enterprise forward, and was actively and earnestly engaged in its interest till his death, in 1855.

The treasurer, Mr. Young, died in 1857, and after a short interval, when the duties of treasurer were performed by Mr. George H. Kuhn, J. Wiley Edmands was chosen treasurer and manager. Mr. Edmands received his mercantile education in the firm of A. & A. Lawrence, and his thorough mercantile knowledge contributed not a little to the subsequent success. Associated with him, William C. Chapin came in 1853 from Providence to superintend the print-works, and subsequently became resident agent, while the selling agents of the manufactured goods, who also furnished the designs and patterns, were Messrs. Jas. L. Little & Co., of Boston, thus combining rare financial ability, excellent power of organization and skill in manufacture and taste in adapting manufactured goods to the wants of the public, combined with forecast and sagacity in sales.

Under this combination the mills enjoyed a period of unusual success, the market value of the stock

more than doubling in value. Mr. Chapin resigned in 1871, having been agent eighteen years, and returned to Providence, and Mr. John Fallen, who was his successor as chemist and superintendent of the print-works, became acting agent. Mr. Edmands died in 1877, and was succeeded by Mr. James L. Little as treasurer. After Mr. Little's resignation and retirement from active business Mr. Henry Saltonstall was chosen treasurer; Mr. Joseph Stone, superintendent of the Lower or new Pacific Mills, and Mr. Walter E. Parker, superintendent of the Upper or old mills.

The present organization is as below,—Henry Saltonstall, treasurer and general manager; Henry Davenport, clerk of the corporation; Walter E. Parker, superintendent of mills; Charles T. Main, assistant superintendent of Lower Pacific; Francis H. Silsbee, assistant superintendent of Upper Pacific; Samuel Barlow, superintendent of print-works.

The cashiers resident in Lawrence have been successively Rev. Alexander H. Clapp, D.D., now treasurer of the American Home Missionary Society, New York; Ebenezer T. Colby, who enlisted in 1862 in the Union Army,—captain and later lieutenant-colonel of his regiment, and since the war in the Custom House at Boston; Benjamin T. Bourne from 1862 to 1866, now of Providence, R. I.; John R. Rollins from 1866 to 1879; and the present cashier, William P. Anderson. Within the past few years extensive repairs have been made, new buildings erected, and new machinery of the most modern and improved kinds furnished, to adapt the mills to the demands of the time, and the mills are in a high state of efficiency and prosperity.

Hon. J. Wiley Edmands was born in Boston March 1, 1809, received his education at a Boston grammar school and entered the High School when it was founded, in 1821. On leaving school he entered the employ of Messrs. A. & A. Lawrence, was gradually promoted and in 1830 became a member of the firm. In 1843 he retired from the firm and for several years was interested in the Maverick Woolen Mills at Dedham. In the fall election of 1852 he was elected to the House of Representatives in Congress and served one term of two years, declining a re-election. He was not politically ambitious, and though often sought for political positions, the only one which he accepted was that of Presidential elector in the election of 1868. In 1855, when the Pacific Mills stock was at its lowest ebb, Mr. Edmands, whose well-known energy and capacity were fully appreciated by Mr. Lawrence and the other owners, was requested to take the treasurership of these mills, and under his management, aided cordially by others associated with him, the value of the stock had advanced, until at the time of his decease it had more than doubled in value.

His counsel was sought by many institutions aside from the Pacific Mills. He was a director in the Arkwright Mutual Fire Insurance Company; the Massachusetts Hospital Life Insurance Company; and of the Suffolk Bank; vice-president of the Provident Institution for Savings in Boston, and director and at one time treasurer of the Ogdensburg Railroad. His position also for several years as president of the National Association of Wool Manufacturers brought his knowledge into requisition and enabled him to exert a powerful influence upon national legislation. Moderate and conservative, he believed that the least protective duties should be imposed that would suffice to make our national industry independent, and it was in consequence of his advocacy of equal protection to agricultural and manufacturing interests that he was as well known in other parts of the country as in New England.

Mr. Edmands was a sterling patriot at the commencement of the Civil War. He gave his time, influence and money to the support of the government, and on the successful termination of the war he was president of the convention at Boston which nominated General Grant for the Presidency.

Resolute and determined, he bore beneath a somewhat stern exterior a very kind and benevolent heart. This was manifest in his management of the people in his employ, all of whom not only respected his great ability, but had equal confidence in his justice, and there were no more sincere mourners at his funeral than in the large delegation from the Pacific Mills.

To the city of Newton, where he resided, he gave toward the founding of a public library ten thousand dollars for the building and five thousand dollars for books, and an annual contribution of five thousand dollars subsequently.

Mr. Edmands died in the midst of usefulness, but not unexpectedly, of heart-disease, January 31st, 1877. His funeral, which took place February 3d, was largely attended by official delegations of all the organizations with which he was connected, and a detachment of the Grand Army Post of Newton; the flags of Newton were placed at half-mast, the bells tolled during the funeral and business was generally suspended,—while at Lawrence the bells of the Atlantic, Pacific and Washington Mills were tolled from one to two o'clock.

Lawrence Duck Company.—This company was incorporated in 1852, with a capital of three hundred thousand; par value of the shares, one thousand dollars. The original owners were Albert Fearing, Isaac Thatcher and David Whiton.

For more than twenty-five years the mill was managed by Isaac Thatcher, the treasurer, and Isaac Hayden as local agent, the latter-named being a man of considerable inventive genius, to whom the company are indebted for improvements and inventions in the machinery used. The company manufactures cotton duck of several varieties, and sail twine, the duck manufactured being of superior quality and finding

ready sale. The quality of the duck for sails has been well tested on some of the favorite yachts,—"Astor's," the "Coronet" and others,—and large amounts of mining duck manufactured here have been used in California and Australia. Harvesting duck for our Western harvesting machines, paper-makers' cotton felts and tent duck are also manufactured.

Treasurer, Aaron Hobart; agent, William A. Barrell; paymaster, W. L. S. Gilchrist.

The Everett Mills Company was incorporated in 1860, and commenced operations in the summer of 1861, having purchased the large stone building formerly owned by the Lawrence Machine-Shop Co. The company was formed through the efforts of Mr. Samuel Batchelder, one of the pioneers in the Lowell enterprise, and who, in the early days of Lowell, was the first agent of the Hamilton Manufacturing Company at Lowell, 1825 to 1831. The capital stock of the company is $800,000; the number of employees, 1050 (male, 400; female, 650); goods manufactured, ginghams and a general variety of colored fabrics of cotton, cottonade, cheviots, denims and dress goods.

The agents have been Daniel D. Crombie, who was subsequently treasurer, 1871–78; John R. Perry; David M. Ayer, who has retired to the independent life of a farmer; Charles D. McDuffie, now in Manchester; and his son, the present agent, Fred. C. McDuffie. The paymaster for a long period was William A. Barrell, who resigned in 1880 to accept the agency of the Lawrence Duck Company. The mill has 33,280 spindles, 1014 looms, 1050 employees, and the product amounts to over 10,000,000 yards per annum, using upwards of 3,000,000 pounds of cotton. Incorporators, James Dana, Samuel Bab and Charles W. Cartwright.

The power is furnished by three turbine wheels driven by water from the Essex Company's canal, the raceway discharging into the Spicket River near its entrance into the Merrimack. The present management,—Eugene H. Sampson, treasurer; Fred'k C. McDuffie, agent; Isaac Wynn, superintendent; George M. Doe, paymaster.

Mr. Samuel Batchelder, a native of Jaffrey, N. H., was born June 8, 1784, died February, 1879, at the age of ninety-four years, seven months and twenty-eight days. For a large part of his life he had been connected with cotton manufacturing interests as a proprietor and inventor. As early as 1807 he helped to establish and took charge of a cotton-spinning mill of five hundred spindles in New Ipswich, N. H., and soon became known as a skillful manufacturer, eager to discover and apply improved methods in what was at that time the infancy of manufacturing in America. In 1825 he was called upon to assist in the establishment of the second factory, on the site of the present city of Lowell, the Hamilton Manufacturing Company, and was agent of the same until 1831. In 1837 he united with gentlemen in Boston in the purchase of the water-power and in laying the foundations of another manufacturing city at Saco, Me. He resigned in 1846 and retired to his home in Cambridge, but not for the quiet retirement that he anticipated. He soon became interested as one of the proprietors in the new enterprise at Lawrence in 1847, and in 1855 again took charge of the York Mills at Saco, and continued treasurer and manager of these mills and of the Everett at Lawrence as long as he was able to attend to active business, after he had passed his eightieth year.

The Pemberton Mill Company was incorporated in 1853, and the mill was built the same year. The architecture of the mill varied from the old style of mill-buildings, and on its completion was considered a model of beauty for a building of that character; it was built, however, at an unfortunate period, and owing to the growing depression in manufacturing interests, which culminated in 1857, its early years were unsuccessful, and it remained idle from 1857 to 1859, when Mr. David Nevins and George Howe purchased the entire property for three hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars, and operated the new organization under the name of the

Pemberton Manufacturing Company. It continued under the new owners until the 10th of January, 1860, when, without a moment's warning, the main building fell, burying beneath its ruins about six hundred persons, of which a fuller account is elsewhere given.

The Pemberton Company, of which David Nevins,[1] George Blackburn and Eben Sutton[1] were controlling owners, rebuilt the mill upon the old foundations in 1860, and commenced operations in 1861. The capital stock of this company is four hundred and fifty thousand dollars.

The resident agent of the original company was John E. Chase, who continued in the service of the company until after the fall of the mill, and was succeeded by the present agent, Frederick E. Clarke, who was the first paymaster. Mr. Clarke was followed as paymaster by Samuel M. Newhall, who died in the service. The present company has been quite successful, interrupted only by a fire, which destroyed the dye-house in 1886.

This mill manufactures a large variety of cotton goods, running twenty-eight thousand spindles, eight hundred and twenty-five looms and employs about eight hundred and fifty persons.

Present organization,—Henry S. Shaw, treasurer; Frederick E. Clarke, agent; Miss E. L. Gleason, cashier.

January 10, 1860, is memorable in the annals of Lawrence for one of the most appalling calamities that had ever occurred in New England—the fall of the Pemberton mill. There were in the employ of the company at this time nine hundred and eighteen persons. In the main mill about six hundred were

[1] Deceased.

industriously employed at their work, when, at about 5 o'clock P. M., in less time than it takes to record the fact, the entire mill was a mass of ruins, with the six hundred buried in the wreck. But very few moments elapsed before the whole city was in commotion; crowds rushing to the scene in an agony of fear and suspense to learn the fate of friends and relatives, and the ruins were as rapidly covered with volunteers equally anxious and earnest to rescue. Many succeeded in working their way out unaided. Others were saved by herculean efforts. As darkness closed in, lanterns and bonfires became necessary (fortunately the gas-lights were all extinguished by the fall of the mill) and the work continued far into the night, and the larger number had either escaped or had been rescued, when the cry of fire in the ruins sent a thrill of horror through all, as it was known that several yet remained, unable to escape. Determined and almost superhuman efforts were made in their behalf; a deluge of water was poured into the ruins from the Washington Mills, the Fire Department and a steam fire-engine from Manchester, even the women taking turns at the brakes to relieve the wearied firemen, but all efforts were unavailing. Fourteen perished in the flames. Eighty-seven in all were killed or died from injuries, forty-three others were severely injured, and of these, two were disabled for life. The remainder escaped unhurt, or with slight wounds.

The City Hall was immediately opened for the reception of the dead and wounded, and not only the physicians of the city, but those of neighboring towns, and others passing through in the cars, volunteered their services and worked with unceasing energy for the relief of the sufferers.

Equally prompt were the tokens of sympathy and pecuniary aid that began to pour in from all quarters. The very next morning the New England Society of Manufacturers started a subscription, and before night two thousand dollars were placed by J. Wiley Edmands in the hands of the mayor, on the next day three thousand dollars more came, and the society continued to send till their donation amounted to over nineteen thousand dollars. Other clubs and citizens of Boston increased the amount to nearly twenty-eight thousand dollars; the chords of sympathy were touched throughout the land, and from many neighboring towns and cities, not only in Massachusetts, but in the New England States, from New York and Philadelphia, and from the distant States of Indiana, Alabama, Georgia, North Carolina and Kentucky, from old and young, from Jew and Gentile, came words of sympathy and contributions of money, until, the thirteenth day after the event, the mayor and trustees issued a circular requesting that no more should be sent. The total amount of gifts sent amounted to $65,579.29.

The committee in charge of the funds were the mayor, Hon. Chas. S. Storrow, Henry K. Oliver, Wm. C. Chapin and John C. Hoadley. They organized on the 15th, with the mayor, Hon. Daniel Saunders, Jr., as chairman; Chas. S. Storrow, treasurer; and Pardon Armington, clerk, appointed an inspector for each ward of the city, who should devote his entire time to looking after the wants of the sufferers in his district, —Sylvester A. Furbush for Ward 1, J. Q. A. Batchelder for Ward 2, Wm. D. Joplin for Ward 3, Henry Withington for Ward 4, Elbridge Weston for Ward 5, and Daniel Saunders for Ward 6.

On the 16th of January the committee requested of the Pemberton Company the use of one of their boarding-houses for a hospital for those who could not be properly cared for at their own lodgings. While they were debating the method of managing this, a letter was received from Mr. James M. Barnard, a Boston merchant, proposing to come with a corps of nurses and physicians at his own expense, and to apply his aid wherever it would be most efficient. Mr. Barnard conducted the "Home" for more than three months, assisted by Dr. J. H. Morse as attending physician, and ladies from Boston and Lawrence, at an expense to himself of nearly one thousand dollars.

In regard to the cause of the fire, but for which fourteen more lives could have been saved, it should be stated, as it has not been, that, at the thoughtful suggestion of the mayor (Mr. Saunders), the kerosene lanterns in use on the ruins had all been carried off and exchanged for sperm-oil lanterns, as less liable to cause accident. Notwithstanding this, a lantern was subsequently broken and probably ignited readily the floating cotton dust, and with fatal results.

An inquest was held, commencing Thursday morning, January 12th, over the bodies of those killed by the catastrophe, and a large amount of evidence was taken, occupying the time of ten days. Much contradictory testimony was brought forward, almost every witness having a theory of his own. Some thought the foundations were not sufficiently strong and that they were not deep enough; but an examination by experts showed that the foundations were in perfect condition and undisturbed, and the mill was subsequently rebuilt upon them. One or two masons testified that the mortar in the walls was not good and that it had too large a proportion of sand; three other practical builders of great experience stated an entirely contrary opinion; others thought the walls were not thick enough, but one of the ablest engineers, who stands at the head of his profession, and who has had a life-time of practical experience, testified that, in his judgment, if the columns had been good, the walls would have been safe, and that the perfect running of the lines (of shafting) (and it appeared in evidence that the machinery had never been running more perfectly during the six years it had been in operation than it was running at the time of the fall) would give him additional confidence, if he felt any apprehension, while it would be a powerful argument that the trouble did not originate in the walls. And still another experienced

engineer testified that if the floors should fall, they would bring down the walls if they were twice as thick.

A large number of witnesses testified to the imperfect character of the cast-iron pillars, the remains of which were found in the ruins; and, in fact, the broken columns exhibited to the jury were the best witnesses of all—very many of them showing great inequality of thickness, some being on one side no more than one-eighth of an inch in thickness. The question was asked, "Why was not as much care taken in the selection of the columns as in the other parts of the mill?" The answer to this may be found in the testimony.

Mr. Geo. W. Smith testified that he was a dealer in general wrought-iron works for store-fronts, &c., and had had a great deal of experience in erecting cast-iron pillars; he never applied any tests.

Mr. Joslyn, superintendent of a foundry in Lawrence and previously at Lowell, testified that the casting must have been badly done: "one so bad as the one exhibited we could have discovered and should have broken it up; all our pillars are tested" (*i. e.*, before they leave the foundry).

Mr. Hoadley, superintendent of the Lawrence Machine-Shop, testified that he had visited the ruins and seen three pillars, which, if properly tested, should have been rejected. "*I should not willingly send out such columns myself.*"

Mr. Hinchley, superintendent of the Merrimac Manufacturing Company, at Lowell, described the pillars used at the Merrimac—they were tested at the machine-shop; "we never used any test ourselves."

Mr. Burke, superintendent of the Lowell Machine-Shop, testified, "No test is employed for pillars, except such as they receive when the core is extracted, the casting being slung up and rapped to loosen the core. The pillar from the Pemberton has the appearance of being defective from want of care in securing the core; never knew of any pillars from our foundry broken after they were set up; have had some returned because they were crooked, caused probably by inequality of thickness of the opposite sides."

Mr. James B. Francis testified, "As far as I know, there has been no method, in Lowell, of testing columns; this is the first time I ever heard or read of an iron column breaking."

From all the above testimony it is very evident that columns of cast-iron receive whatever test is given them at the foundry. The columns used in the Pemberton received the ordinary inspection; no crooked ones were used; they were received in good faith from what was presumed to be a reliable foundry; the result proved far otherwise, notwithstanding the agent's letter to Mr. Putman given in the evidence, stating that they were *first-rate columns*; and a very significant fact in connection with them is, that the founders could not be found, to be summoned before the jury.

The jury found, in their verdict, that the cause of the fall of the mill was found in the defective columns, and then, notwithstanding the preceding evidence, laid the responsibility of the fall of the building upon the engineer, Capt. Bigelow, for not doing what no one else had ever thought of doing before.

On the strength of that verdict (presumably) Mr. Nason, in his "Gazetteer of Massachusetts," published 1874, speaking of the Pemberton Mill, says the "original structure was built by *an incompetent architect*," and then, in speaking of the Pacific Mills, says, "They occupy a vast area and present a very imposing appearance, and taken together exhibit much architectural beauty and in their colossal proportions indicate the vast design, &c." He does not, however, seem to be aware that these colossal mills, as well as the Atlantic Mills, the Lawrence Machine-Shop and the duck-mill, were all built by the same "incompetent architect."

Of the killed by the fall of the Pemberton Mill, thirteen were mutilated past recognition. For these a burial-lot was purchased in Bellevue Cemetery, and they were buried Sunday, March 4, 1860, Rev. Messrs. Packard and Fisher conducting the services.

A plain granite monument marks their resting-place, bearing the following inscription:

"In memory of the
Unrecognized dead,
Who were killed by the fall of the Pemberton Mill,
January 10, 1860."

For the two persons who were permanently disabled annuities in trust were purchased by a deposit of $14,000 with the Massachusetts Hospital Life Insurance Company, in two separate sums of $6500 and $7500, to create these annuities of $350 and $400, to be paid in quarterly payments to the annuitants for the remainder of their lives. The provisions of this trust are best shown in Mr. Storrow's own words in his final report,—

"For persons in the enjoyment of ordinary health, the purchase of an annuity is a very simple matter. The tables of mortality show with sufficient accuracy their chance of life according to their age, and the payment once for all of a certain sum purchases for them an annuity of a stipulated amount to be paid to them for life. But what human sagacity could calculate the chance of life of these two young persons in our charge? Would it be one year or fifty? How could we balance on the one hand the effect of wounded limbs, of consequent disease, of long-continued suffering, and, on the other, the restoring power of youth, of patience and of comfortable homes? It was evidently impossible to purchase outright these annuities, because it was evidently impossible to estimate their duration or calculate their value. The only mode to provide for these persons was by annuities in trust—that is, by deposits, the income of which should be paid to them as long as they live.

"But a difficulty here arose. Upon the death of an annuitant in trust, the sum deposited reverts to the person who placed it originally, or to such persons as he may direct in the deed of trust. This event may not happen for fifty years, and where will the committee be then? The poor patients may outlive us all. To provide for this contingency, it was determined that upon the decease of either of the two annuitants, the principal sum should be paid to the members of the committee, or the survivors or survivor of them, or to the executors or administrators of the last survivor, and by them be appropriated to such charitable purpose or purposes as shall be appointed in writing by the actuary of

the Massachusetts Hospital Life Insurance Company, the mayor of the city of Lawrence for the time being, and the president of the Essex Savings Bank, or any two of them, in such manner as they shall deem most conformable to the original charity for which the moneys were contributed.

"By this arrangement we secure to our annuitants what is necessary for their comfort as long as they live, without paying at the outset an exorbitant price. We provide that upon their decease the amount no longer needed for their benefit shall again be applied to the charitable purposes for which it was intended, and that this shall be done under the direction of three persons who must all be in existence, whatever may be the uncertainty of human life, two of whom, from the offices they hold, must inevitably be persons especially fit to discharge the duties of a trust, and the third of whom is the principal representative of the city whose people were the objects of the original charity. Beyond all this, the Supreme Judicial Court has power to regulate and enforce the execution of this trust if it should ever hereafter become necessary to do so."

The Lawrence Woolen-Mill, known familiarly as Perry's Mill, was projected by Captain Oliver H. Perry, and the company was incorporated in 1864 with a capital stock of one hundred and fifty thousand dollars. This mill contained about three thousand two hundred and twenty spindles and forty-seven looms, and furnished employment to one hundred and twenty-five persons. The product was a variety of fancy woolens, especially cloakings and shawls. Captain Perry, its founder, was a son of Commodore Oliver Hazard Perry, and for a considerable time followed the profession of his father, being an officer in the United States Navy. In the Mexican War he commanded a naval battery at the storming and capture of Vera Cruz. He resigned his position in the navy in 1847, and gave his attention to the peaceful pursuits of industry. In 1848 he accepted the agency of the Middlesex Mills at Lowell, where he remained till he became agent of the Bay State Mills at Lawrence in 1850. In 1856 he became a partner in the house of Lawrence, Stone & Co., the selling agents of the Middlesex and Bay State Mills. On the failure of that firm in the depressed times of 1857, he was retained as manfacturing and purchasing agent of the Middlesex, and in connection with Mr. R. Wendell as selling agent. In 1862 the firm of Perry & Wendell was formed, enlarged by the addition of Mr. S. W. Fay in 1869. Captain Perry continued to operate the Lawrence Woolen-Mill until his death, August 30, 1878. The paymaster and book-keeper was Augustus J. Shove, who continued in the employ of the company till his decease, June 17, 1885. The original company has been dissolved, and it is now a private enterprise, organized 1886, owned by Messrs. Phillips & Kunhardt, of New York. Mr. George E. Kunhardt is the local manager, and the goods are sold in New York by Mr. F. Stanhope Phillips, also the financial manager. Frank E. King, pay-master.

The Arlington Mills, the youngest of the large corporations of Lawrence, is located on the Spicket River, occupying the site of the Stevens Piano-Forte Factory.

The power of the river at this point was used nearly sixty years since by Mr. Abiel Stevens, and a mill built for the construction of piano-forte cases.

After the sale of the property by Mr. Stevens the buildings were used successively for the manufacture of hats, then for the manufacture of flax and for other purposes until 1865, when the Arlington Woolen-Mills were incorporated, the stockholders and incorporators being Robert M. Bailey (formerly in business in Lawrence), Charles A. Lombard, Joseph Nickerson and George C. Bosson.

The original capital of the mills was two hundred thousand dollars. The following year, 1866, the buildings were entirely destroyed by fire. A new mill was built in 1867, and the capital stock was increased to two hundred and forty thousand dollars. In 1869, the company having suffered severe losses, the stockholders paid in the whole amount of two hundred and forty thousand dollars of the then existing capital stock, and changed the management of the mills by the election of Joseph Nickerson for president, and William Whitman treasurer and manager, under whose management the company has made great advances, additional buildings have been erected, and the corporation at the present time is one of the most flourishing in the city. The capital stock has been increased to one million five hundred thousand dollars.

The articles now made by this company are fine cotton and fine worsted yarns for manufacturers' uses, women's worsted and cotton dress-goods, fine all-wool dress-goods and worsted suitings, also black and colored alpacas and mohairs, for all of which the company has established an enviable reputation. Mr. Joseph Nickerson died February 29, 1880, and was succeeded as president by his eldest son, Albert W. Nickerson, who now fills this office. The other executive officers are: William Whitman, treasurer; William D. Hartshorne, worsted superintendent; Charles Wainwright, paymaster; Robert Redford, superintendent cotton department; James M. Beeley, paymaster.

Lawrence Gas Company.—The works of this company were built by the Essex Company, the Bay State Mills and the Atlantic Cotton-Mills, at their joint expense, for the purpose of supplying themselves with light, each company paying towards the expense of their erection in proportion to the amount of their paid capital stock. The company was afterward incorporated in 1849, with a capital of forty thousand dollars; this has been increased from time to time, with the growth and increasing demands of the city, to four hundred thousand dollars, and the works have been proportionately extended. The first agent was Henry G. Webber, succeeded in 1853 by George D. Cabot, to whose thorough and efficient supervision are due the improvements and extension of the original plant. The company has now thirty miles of mains, seventeen miles of service pipe, and two thousand five hundred meters. The retort-house contains one hundred and thirty-seven retorts, capable of producing seven hundred thousand cubic feet

of gas in twenty-four hours, and holders of a capacity of seven hundred thousand feet for storing gas. The amount of coal used per annum is ten thousand tons, and in purifying the gas ten thousand bushels of lime and three thousand bushels of oxide of iron are used. Mr. Cabot resigned the agency in 1884, after a service of thirty-one years, and was succeeded by C. J. R. Humphreys, the present agent.

Lawrence had two electric light companies, one of which, the Lawrence Electric Light Company, has been absorbed by the gas company, who will hereafter furnish the electric light to those who desire it; and the Edison Electric Light Company, by whom all the streets and many private establishments are at present lighted.

The Wright Manufacturing Company.—This company originated in 1864, when Algernon S. Wright, then head mechanic of the Atlantic Mills, proposed to Mr. A. W. Stearns and Dr. A. J. French to become partners in the manufacture of woolen yarn, and a copartnership was formed under the name of the Wright Manufacturing Company, and a mill was leased. The idea of making yarn was abandoned, and instead, at the suggestion of Mr. Stearns, the mill was equipped with machinery for making braids. The building now owned by the company is one hundred and fifty feet long and three stories high, and has increased from fifty braiding machines to eight hundred.

The company was incorporated in 1874, with a capital of sixty thousand dollars, and organized by the choice of Dr. French president, Mr. Wright superintendent, and Mr. Stearns treasurer and selling agent, who continues in that office to the present time. A large variety of braids is manufactured, especially mohair trimming braid, made at first on imported English machinery, but recently by devices which adapt the common braiding machinery to the production of the mohair. These devices have been perfected and patented by the company. Number of people employed, one hundred and fifty. Goods manufactured, five hundred thousand dollars annually. A. S. Wright, president; A. W. Stearns, treasurer and selling agent; William L. Warden, clerk.

The Merrimac Braid Mill has more recently been established, and is under the direction of E. W. Pierce.

The Globe Worsted Mills, taking their power from the Spicket River, manufacture worsted carpet yarns of all description, and employ about one hundred persons—Thomas Clegg, treasurer; Samuel Robinson, agent; Herbert Robinson, superintendent.

The Prospect Worsted Mills, owned by Frederick Butler and Samuel Robinson, formerly located on the Lower Canal, and later on the Spicket River, now grown to larger proportions, occupy a fine mill on the South Canal, employ two hundred hands, and their monthly product amounts to forty thousand dollars; manufacture fine worsted yarns, using about eight hundred thousand to one million pounds of wool per annum.

The Butler File Company, originated by James and Frederick Butler in 1844, and introduced in Lawrence in earlier days, is now owned and operated by G. M. Murray & Co., and manufactures hand-cut files and rasps of every variety. They employ fifteen men, manufacture monthly three hundred dozen files, using for this purpose forty-five tons of steel per annum.

Lawrence Flyer and Spindle Works are situated on the North Canal, and commenced work in 1862, as a private enterprise; organized as a stock company in 1867, with a capital of fifty thousand dollars. They were at first engaged mainly in the manufacture of flyers and spindles, the invention of Oliver Pearl, of the Atlantic Cotton Mills, in addition to which they now manufacture skein winders, card strippers, Jacquard and shedding engines for fancy weaving, and other cotton machinery—Treasurer, Joseph P. Battles; Superintendent, George F. Barker.

The Lawrence Coffee and Spice Mills, G. H. Hadley & Co., proprietors, have been in successful operation for several years.

Downing Rubber Company, L. H. Downing manager, manufactures gossamer clothing, established 1882; monthly product, twelve hundred garments; employing twelve hands.

Stanley Manufacturing Company.—The buildings owned by this company were built by Gordon McKay, for the manufacture of the well-known McKay sewing-machines. The Stanley Manufacturing Company was incorporated 1882, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars. A. P. Tapley, president; F. F. Stanley, treasurer; men employed, one hundred and eighty. They manufacture McKay sewing-machines, the McKay and Bigelow heeling-machines, and the McKay and Copeland lasting-machines, also screw-machines, and a general line of shoe machinery. The agent resident in Lawrence is Mr. M. V. B. Paige; Paymaster, Charles E. Hardy.

Card Clothing.—D. Frank Robinson commenced business in 1857, occupying for many years a wooden building on Broadway near Essex Street. He has recently built a fine brick building in the same street, where are employed eighty-two machines operated by twenty persons. The product of these machines is eighty thousand square feet of clothing per annum. Leather used annually, twelve thousand sides; cloth rubber, two thousand square yards; wire, thirty-six tons. Mr. Albert Warren (mayor 1866) was at one time associated with Mr. Robinson. Card clothing was also manufactured here for many years by Messrs. Stedman & Fuller. The partnership was dissolved, and the business was conducted by the Stedman & Fuller Manufac-

turing Company, since removed to Providence, Rhode Island.

Beside the Lawrence Flyer and Spindle Works, named above, there were other works for similar purposes—James McCormick & Co., manufacturing six to eight hundred flyers and pressers for cotton flyers per month, and employing six men; and Thomas Hall, manufacturer of flyers, spindles and caps, to which are added some specialties and improvements of his own invention.

Lawrence Bleachery, established 1877, by Nathaniel W. Farwell & Son. The bleachery and dye works are located on the South Canal, employ one hundred men, and have a monthly product of one million five hundred thousand yards of bleached goods, and five hundred thousand yards of colored goods—Kirk W. Moses, superintendent.

Spicket Mill, operated by John W. Barlow, manufactures belt-lacing, picker straps, rawhide baskets, worsted aprons and worsted rolls.

Wamesit Mill, situated on the Spicket River, was formerly used for the manufacture of leather board by George Ed. Davis, who removed to Maine, and was succeeded by W. B. Hayden & Co., who carried on similar business. It is now used as a shoddy mill operated by Tower, Wing & Co.

The Lawrence Machine Company was incorporated 1882. Their works are located on the North Canal, where are manufactured printing presses, dynamometers, centrifugal pumps, etc. Eighty persons are employed here, and the monthly product is about fifty thousand pounds of machinery. Treasurer, A. A. Brooks; Superintendent, William O. Webber.

The Merrimac Machine-Shop is a private enterprise; Albert Blood, proprietor; commenced business in 1853. From twelve to twenty persons are employed here in the manufacture of heavy iron-work, dye-house machinery, steam-engines, steam fire pumps, etc. This is an outgrowth of the old Lawrence Machine Shop, Mr. Blood being formerly in charge of the building of woolen machinery in that establishment.

Other private establishments for the manufacture and repair of machinery are those of,—

Stedman & Smith, established 1882, manufacturing worsted machinery and employing twenty men; monthly production, twenty-five hundred dollars.

Webster & Dustin, located on the North Canal, manufacture shafting and gearing and all varieties of mill work.

Joseph E. Watts, machinist and brass finisher and manufacturer of steam and water-pressure regulators of his own invention, which are extensively used.

Edward McCabe, boiler-maker and manufacturer of bleachers and oil tanks, employing twenty men.

Williams & Smith manufacture many varieties of mill and other machinery.

John H. Horne & Sons, have recently erected a large shop in South Lawrence for the manufacture of paper-mill machinery, in which they have been engaged many years.

Lawrence Line Co., manufacturers of braided and laid cotton lines, and silk fish-lines; bleached and unbleached chalk-lines. Established 1881; employ twenty hands. Hiram F. Mills, president; L. S. Mills, treasurer; J. Marston, clerk.

Archibald Wheel Co. manufactures iron-hubbed wheels by Archibald's patent process. Nine-tenths of the wheels in use on steam fire-engines in the United States are of this manufacture, and have been adopted to a certain extent after severe tests by the United States government. D. Arthur Brown, president; Hezekiah Plummer, treasurer; E. A. Archibald, superintendent. Capital, $60,000.

Lawrence has three iron foundries,—the Merrimac Iron Foundry, founded early by Elbridge Joslyn and Alvah Bennett, at present managed by William H. Joslyn; the foundry of Edmund Davis & Son on the North Canal, now managed by George E. Davis, and the foundry of Webster & Joslyn, located on the Spicket River.

Here are also two brass foundries, one established by James Byrom and one of more recent date by E. T. Davis.

The L. Sprague Shuttle Co., established by Levi Sprague & Co. (1864), for the purpose of making bobbins and spools for textile manufacturing purposes. The business was commenced in a small wooden building, which has given way to a two-story brick building, one hundred by fifty feet, in which shuttle manufacturing has been added to the other business. From one hundred and fifty to two hundred men are employed.

The Union Shuttle Co. manufacture power-loom shuttles of every description, also bobbins and spools and patent expanding cop-spindles. F. G. Page, agent; George F. Barber, treasurer.

Other manufacturers of bobbins are Samuel E. Bass, William E. Bass and Messrs. T. J. Hale & Co.; the latter, established 1881, employs twenty to thirty hands and manufactures from one hundred thousand to three hundred thousand bobbins monthly.

Loom harness is also manufactured here by Thomas Clegg, employing fourteen hands and with a monthly product of two thousand dollars; Emmons Loom Harness Co. (T. A. Emmons, treasurer), employing sixty men; and Joseph Sladdin.

Leather belting is manufactured by Charles L. Place and by E. F. Page & Co.

Roll covering is also carried on by F. W. McLanathan, who employs thirty men, and by Robert P. Burnham.

The car-shop of the Boston & Maine Railroad employs one hundred and forty men in the manufacture of freight and passenger cars.

Lawrence has one brewery, owned and operated by Messrs. Stanley & Co., for the manufacture of ale,

porter and lager beer, and has a capacity of three hundred and fifty barrels per day.

Several cracker bakeries, the largest that of Kent & Bruce, sending out four thousand barrels of crackers per month.

The brush factory of John H. Stafford produces twenty gross of brushes per month.

A broom and basket factory is operated by Collins Brothers (T. F. and J. H. Collins).

Beach Soap Co. (Lurandus Beach, proprietor) is one of the oldest establishments in Lawrence, furnishing employment to twenty men, manufacturing family and toilet soaps, also scouring and fulling soaps. The monthly product amounting to twelve thousand dollars monthly. This business was originally established by Beach & Varney.

Briggs & Allyn Manufacturing Co. manufacture doors, sashes, blinds, mouldings, frames and all descriptions of house finishings, also counters, tables, furniture, etc. The company is thoroughly provided with tools for the manufacture of every variety of wood-work, employing from forty to seventy men, and turns out monthly about seventy-five hundred dollars' worth of finished work.

Lawrence Lumber Co.—The territory occupied by this company was originally owned and the mills operated by the Essex Company. After the company ceased building mills the property was sold to George W. Ela and others, and by them sold to others who organized a company for furnishing lumber and manufacturing packing cases for the large mills. The monthly sales of the company are a million and a half feet of manufactured lumber and half a million feet made into packing cases. They employ ninety men. While owned by the Essex Company, William M. Kimball (afterward of Minneapolis) was the superintendent. When the new company was organized Luther Ladd, who had had long experience with the Essex Company, became agent and treasurer. The present treasurer is Alfred A. Lamprey. The other lumber yards are those of Hezekiah Plummer (one of the earliest settlers in Lawrence), J. H. Prescott & Co., and Luther Ladd, who, since his retirement from the Lawrence Lumber Co., has established a yard of his own in South Lawrence.

The Lawrence Flour Mill, situated in South Lawrence, was built by Davis & Taylor, and had machinery for producing two thousand barrels of flour and one hundred thousand bushels of corn meal per month, and was operated for several years. Improved methods of manufacturing flour have rendered the old machinery useless. The mill has passed into the hands of Frank E. Chandler, of Medford, and is now fitted entirely for the production of corn meal, with Joseph Chandler as superintendent. One other grain mill (built in 1868) is situated on the North Canal and is owned and operated by Henry K. Webster & Co., who conduct an extensive business.

The earliest grain and flour mill in Lawrence was located near the mouth of Spicket River, built and owned by Messrs. Furness & Giles. This mill later passed into the hands of the Russell Paper Co., and Mr. Giles was subsequently foreman of Davis & Taylor's flour mill.

Besides the various dye-houses connected with the large mills, there are in Lawrence—Trees' Dye House, established by John Trees, Spicket River, Lawrence Street; The Essex Dye House, by William Stuart & Co., Spicket River, Vine Street; The Lawrence Dye Works, by L. Sjörström & Son and J. H. Melledge, South Canal.

Paper making is one of the most important branches of industry in Lawrence and has grown to large proportions. By Tewksbury's "History of Lawrence," published in 1878, it appears that "soon after the Essex Company's Machine Shop started, experiments were made in the building of paper machinery under the superintendence of John L. Seaverns; a building was erected by the Essex Company in the machine shop yard, and the Charter Paper Company was organized, several directors of the Essex Company forming the Association. The company did not manufacture but printed and embossed papers. William B. Hurd was the local agent; the principal direction being in the hands of Samuel H. Gregory. The capital was fifty thousand dollars. The mill furnished fancy velvet, cloth, gold-leaf, bronze and silver-leaf papers—paper hangings from six and a quarter cents to seven dollars per roll, and bordering of every grade; the enterprise proved unprofitable and was abandoned." Several persons have at different times operated paper mills for the manufacture of paper. Among them A. & A. Norton commencing in 1853; Samuel S. Crocker, Salmon P. Wilder, Joseph L. Partridge, Daniel P. Crocker and others. Prior to all these and before the incorporation of the Essex Company the late Adolphus Durant operated a small mill for the manufacture of paper—the mill being located on the Spicket River.

The Merrimac Paper Company, in South Lawrence, was organized in May, 1881, the incorporators being A. N. Mayo, Charles S. Mayo, of Springfield, and S. I. Stebbins, of Holyoke (deceased). The company employs two hundred hands and manufactures engine sized cap paper, book and envelope paper, producing about eleven tons daily. The monthly pay roll is four thousand dollars. Agent, Charles S. Mayo; Superintendent, W. G. Finlay; Paymaster, G. E. Miller.

The Bacon Paper Company, founded by Jerome A. Bacon, is located on Marston Street, receiving water from the North Canal. Manufactures machine and super calendered flat cap and book paper. No. one newspaper and colored paper. Daily product about six tons. Jerome A. Ripley, Superintendent; George S. Sherman, Paymaster.

The Monroe Felt and Paper Company.—This company is located in South Lawrence; was incor-



Wm A Russell

porated 1881 with a capital of sixty thousand dollars. They manufacture ingrain wall-papers of their own invention, which have found an extensive sale; carpet, manilla and roofing paper—turning out twelve tons daily. William T. McAlpine, Agent; Henry T. Hall, Treasurer and Paymaster.

At the present time, by far the largest paper making establishments are those of the Messrs. Russell.

William Russell, the oldest living paper maker in the United States, nearly thirty years ago was compelled by ill health to retire from active business: but he had laid the foundation of the paper manufacturing establishment, whose principal mills are at Lawrence, and which, under the ownship and management of his son, Hon. William A. Russell, has become one of the most extensive manufactories of the kind in the United States.

William Russell was the son of a farmer, and was born in Cabot, Vt., in 1805. He received his education in the district school of his native town. When quite young he went to Wells River to learn the trade of paper manufacturing and served an apprenticeship of seven years. He was then employed as a journeyman in Wells River and Franklin, N. H., until 1848, when he removed to Exeter, N. H., and engaged in business for himself, operating two mills until 1851. At this time, his son, William A. Russell, having attained his majority, leased one of the mills, operating it on his own separate account. In 1853 they formed a copartnership, purchased grounds and power, and built a one-machine mill in Lawrence, removing thither their entire business. Shortly after this Mr. Russell withdrew from active business and retired to a farm which he had purchased in North Andover, retaining however a small interest in the establishment which was thenceforth carried on by his son, William A. Russell. The elder Mr. Russell from early life was characterized by untiring industry and acquired a thorough knowledge of his chosen pursuit. Throughout his business career he was esteemed for integrity and uprightness in all his transactions.

After the retirement of his father, William A. Russell purchased the mills of Curtis & Partridge on Marston Street, and subsequently the A. & A. Norton Mill and Hoyt Mill on Canal Street, and later on the Crocker Mill. These mills are all operated by the Russell Paper Company, a corporation organized in 1864. W. A. Russell, President and Treasurer, and George W. Russell, Superintendent. The company employs some three hundred hands and produce about twenty tons per day of book, news and blotting paper. Connected with the paper mills is a large plant for the production of chemical wood pulp both by the soda and sulphite processes.

Hon. William A. Russell was born in Wells River, Vt., April 22, 1831. His education was regularly pursued in the public schools of that town, and at the Academy at Franklin, N. H., applying himself assiduously to his studies and acquitting himself with credit. He occupied his vacation with labor in the paper-mills in Franklin.

Subsequently some time was spent at a private school in Lowell, Mass., where his education was completed. In 1848 he commenced work in his father's mill, and remained there until 1852, when he attained his majority.

By diligence and marked forethought he at once established his reputation as a successful manufacturer. Two years later the father and son formed a copartnership, and moved their works to Lawrence, Mass.

The senior Mr. Russell's health soon failed, and he was then compelled to retire from active life, leaving the entire business in the hands of his son.

After the retirement of his father from the business he found it necessary to enlarge his facilities for manfacture in order to meet the demand for his products. With this view he leased and put in operation two mills in Belfast, Me., and subsequently purchased another, in the same city.

During the ensuing five years the business was successful, and in 1861 he purchased a mill contiguous to his former one in Lawrence, from parties who had failed in business as manufacturers, and the same year received his brother, George W. Russell into partnership.

A year later two other mills in Lawrence had stopped for the same reason, and, though business was to some extent prostrated on account of the Civil War, Mr. Russell, looking to the future, availed himself of the opportunity to purchase them. His confidence proved well founded, and after a short period the business received a fresh impetus and continued to increase each year in importance.

In 1869 he established a wood-pulp mill in Franklin, Vt., with the view of supplying the manufacturers; but they, fearing the prejudice against paper manufactured from wood-fiber, shrank from the undertaking. Finding it impossible to sell the pulp, and believing that the prejudice could be overcome, the following year he bought what was known as the Fisher & Aiken mill, in Franklin, for the purpose of manufacturing the paper himself.

His expectations were fully realized, and the same year he purchased the Peabody & Daniel mill, the oldest in the country, and employed it for the same purpose, the manufacture of paper for printing, especially of newspapers. In the same year, to secure better attention and more sure success for this department of the business, he organized the Winipiseogee Paper Company, of Franklin, being himself its treasurer and principal owner. It now employs about 250 hands and produces about twenty-five tons of news paper per day.

The same year he extended his interest to Bellows Falls, building there, also, a wood-pulp mill. The water-power was held at that place by a "lock & canal

Co." In the winter of 1870 the dam which had been built some eighty years previously, suffered serious injury, and Mr. Russell availed himself of the oportunity to secure a controlling interest in the entire water-power. Since that time he has been president of the company and let power to others.

In 1872 he built and put in operation a large paper-mill himself. In these various establishments in Vermont, Massachusetts, New Hampshire, and others in Maine, are employed an aggregate of upwards of 1400 hands, producing no less than eighty-five tons of paper per day; book paper, printing paper, for newspapers, manilla and blotting paper.

Mr. Russell, during his residence in Lawrence, has been a very active and public-spirited citizen, was a member and very large contributor to the Eliot Church, and when the society united with the Central to form what is now Trinity Church, he purchased the building and conveyed it to the Young Men's Christian Association.

In politics an earnest Republican. In 1868 was a member of the city government; in 1869 represented the city in the Legislature. He was sent, in 1868, as one of the delegates from Massachusetts to the National Republican Convention at Cincinnati. In 1878 he was elected Representative of the Seventh District, to the Forty-sixth United States Congress. He was appointed a member of the committee on commerce, and became chairman of the sub-committee to investigate the causes of the decline of American commerce, with the view to investigate some plan to restore the same and bring about closer commercial relations and more extensive trade with other countries.

His report showed a thorough investigation of the subject. It set forth clearly the difficulties to be overcome, and through the presentation of these facts Massachusetts led off in removing one of the greatest obstacles to incorporated maritime investments by the change of the laws in relation to the taxation of property in ships.

He was renominated by acclamation and elected to the Forty-seventh Congress, and promoted to service on the Ways and Means Committee, a position which he was so well qualified to fill through his long and careful observation of and experience in the industrial interests of the country.

The tariff question being prominently before Congress, he gave to the house and country one of the most carefully prepared and exhaustive presentations of this subject that was submitted from the protective standpoint. Mr. Russell's interest in and close application to business have characterized his political life.

His well established and well organized business he confided to others, giving his whole time and energies to new duties. Yielding to a very general demand of his constituents, he accepted a third nomination which was made by acclamation, and he was elected to the Forty-eighth Congress. Though earnestly solicited by his constituents to accept a renomination to the Forty-ninth Congress, he felt compelled to decline, and upon the close of his three terms of Congressional life turned his attention to improving and enlarging the various paper-mills in which he is interested, necessitated by the increasing demand for their products, and to developing the water powers at Bellows Falls, Vt., and Franklin, N. H.

Another manufacture, operated by machinery similar in character to that of paper mills, has been successfully conducted here, the manufacture of leather-board. Messrs. Clegg & Fisher, employing twenty men and producing monthly fifty tons. Seth F. Dawson, employing about the same number of men and producing eighteen to twenty tons per week.

PUBLIC LIBRARY.—The history of the library dates, in one sense, from the beginning of the town of Lawrence.

The Franklin Library Association was chartered by the Legislature of Massachusetts April, 1847, and the following letter to Captain Charles H. Bigelow, its first president, gives in very concise terms not only the wishes and motives of the donor of the first valuable gift to the library, but is also a key to the motives which inspired its founders:

"BOSTON, July 5, 1847.

"MY DEAR SIR.—I was gratified to notice an act passed by the last General Court incorporating the Franklin Library Association in the new Town. Subsequently I have seen in the newspapers an account of its organization, and that you were elected President. I am happy in the knowledge that there exists among the people a just appreciation of the value and importance of early attention being given to schools, churches and public libraries. It is no less the duty than the privilege of those who possess an influence in creating towns and cities, to lay their foundations deep and strong. Let the standard be high in religious, moral and intellectual culture, and there can be no well-grounded fears for the results.

"There will soon gather around you a large number of mechanics and others, who will desire to obtain a knowledge of the higher mechanical arts. You will probably receive into your large machine-shop (now under construction) a number of apprentices, who are to be trained to the use of tools. The more thorough the education you give them, the more skilfully the tools will be used when placed in their hands.

"If you possess a well-furnished library, containing books, drawings, etc., with the mechanical and scientific periodicals of the day, to which the whole body of those engaged in all the varieties of mechanics have access, you will, I am quite certain, at an early day send forth into the community a class of well-educated machinists, whose labors and influence will be felt throughout the country.

"I feel a deep interest in this question of educating men who can take care of themselves and do something to develop the mental resources of the present and future generations, as well as to make contributions to the common stock of practical knowledge and national resources of this great Union.

"The supply of well-educated, scientific mechanics in our community is entirely inadequate to its wants.

"I wish to live long enough to see the experiment fairly tried, whether this deficiency may not be remedied, and am therefore in favor of placing in the hands of those who are or may be residents in the new town, all the appliances to obtain such an object.

"In furtherance of the plan proposed by your society, I offer, through you, for the acceptance of the Franklin Library Association, the sum of one thousand dollars, which the government of the institution will please invest in such scientific and other works as will tend to create good mechanics, good Christians and good patriots.

"Accept the assurances with which I remain

"Your friend, ABBOTT LAWRENCE.

"TO CAPT. CHAS. H. BIGELOW."

Eight years later, in 1855, Mr. Lawrence "rested from his labors," but he had not lost his interest in the new city to which so much of his attention had been given; nor did he forget his protegé, the Franklin Library, leaving by his will the generous sum of five thousand dollars for the purpose of increasing its value and utility.

Other gentlemen had made some valuable presents of books, but these gifts of money to be invested in books were, it is believed, the only ones received.

The expenses, rent, librarian's salary, etc., must, of course, be defrayed from the income received from the sale of shares and from annual assessments. The price of shares was at first fixed at ten dollars each, the annual assessment at two dollars per annum, and the library was open to any person willing to unite with the society and purchase a share. As the price of a share proved a bar to many, in 1850 the association amended the constitution, so that the use of the library might be granted to persons not members of the association, subject to the regulations thereof, on payment of an annual definite sum, not less than the annual assessment of members.

The membership and the number of readers still remaining comparatively small, and the association being still desirous of enlisting the public more fully, early in 1853 the value of the shares was reduced to five dollars and the assessment to one dollar per annum. In 1857 a vote was passed, authorizing the government to open the library to any persons not members for the nominal sum of one dollar per year.

Other efforts had been made, from time to time, by organizing courses of public lectures, by popular lecturers, at low rates, for the purpose of attracting attention to the library and reading-room, with indifferent success,—the association in some instances sustaining pecuniary loss.

The library had increased to nearly four thousand volumes; the reading-room connected with it contained several of the newspapers of the time and many of the valuable scientific, mechanical and literary periodicals; but the main object of the original founders was not attained.

The number of members and readers was still small, and the annual income only sufficient to pay the current expenses.

In 1867 it was thought advisable, for the purpose of extending the usefulness of the library, to offer the property to the city, under suitable conditions, for a free library. A proposition was made to the city government of 1868, but it was not accepted, a difference of opinion among the members of the government at that time existing as to the expediency of the step.

Four years later aid came from an unexpected quarter. Hon. Daniel A. White, of Salem, placed certain property in Lawrence in the hands of trustees, the income from which should be appropriated to maintaining a course of lectures, free "to the industrial classes" of Lawrence, and for the purposes of a library.

The income from that fund had furnished a course of lectures for several years, from the best talent of the land, and had reached a point where it was more than sufficient to defray this expense and could furnish a considerable sum annually for books.

In 1872 the Franklin Library Association appointed a committee consisting of George S. Merrill, John R. Rollins and John C. Dow to confer with the city government, and also with the trustees of the White Fund, and this conference (the necessary authority to surrender their trust having been previously obtained from the Legislature) resulted in a renewed offer to transfer the property, consisting of over four thousand volumes and nearly three thousand dollars in money, to the city. The trustees of the White Fund proposed to contribute the first year the sum of one thousand dollars for the purchase of books, and to make an annual contribution thereafter. These propositions were accepted, and an ordinance was passed, 1872, establishing the Free Library of the city.

Soon after the transfer of the property the Agricultural Library, numbering one hundred and fifty-seven volumes, and owned by an association residing in Lawrence and Methuen, was also placed at the disposal of the city, and the circulating library of Messrs. Whitford & Rice, twenty-two hundred and fifty-seven volumes, was also purchased and transferred.

At a meeting of the board of trustees, held August 29, 1872, Mr. William I. Fletcher, whose experience in the Boston Athenæum and in the Bronson Library, of Waterbury, Ct., rendered him peculiarly fitted for the position, was unanimously elected librarian.

Mr. Fletcher remained with the library, arranging it for public use, and preparing a catalogue, till 1874, when he resigned to accept a more favorable position in Hartford, Ct., and he was succeeded by Frederick H. Hedge, Jr., of Cambridge, the present librarian. The library now embraces twenty-five thousand five hundred volumes, or, including duplicates, twenty-eight thousand seven hundred volumes. Connected with the library is a reading-room, where may be found many of the leading newspapers, and a room for books of reference, where the people may freely study upon almost any subject which they desire to investigate.

The various boards of trustees have ever kept in mind the object of the founders, considering the library an educational institution "rather than a medium for the circulation of light literature."

The mayor and president of the Common Council, together with the trustees of the White Fund, are permanent members of the board.

The library now occupies the entire second floor of the Odd Fellows' building. It needs more space and greater security against fire.

Daniel Appleton White (LL.D., Harvard, 1837) was of the sixth generation in descent from William White, who emigrated from Norfolk, England, one of the leading men in the colony at Ipswich, and of the founders of the ancient town of Newbury. He removed to Haverhill in 1640. Judge White was born in 1776, in that part of Methuen (now Lawrence) educated at Atkinson Academy and graduated from Harvard College 1797. He returned to Cambridge in 1799, and pursued the study of law, remaining four years, during which time he was tutor in the college; finished his legal studies in Salem; was admitted to the Essex bar in 1804; opened an office in Newburyport, soon became successful in his profession and advanced to honors; was Senator in the Massachusetts Senate from 1810 to 1815; Presidential elector, 1816; was elected to Congress by an almost unanimous vote in 1814, but having been offered by Governor Strong the position of judge of Probate, he resigned and accepted the more quiet path, which was more congenial to his taste and feelings; this office he held for thirty-eight years, resigning in 1853. He died at Salem in 1861, having removed to that city in 1817. An excellent account of his life may be found in a memorial by Rev. Henry W. Foote, of Boston, published by the New England Historico-Genealogical Society in their series of memorial biographies, who concludes his sketch in these words: "To those who, in the city which was his home for forty-four years, use the treasures of his library, or who, in the other city which covers his native fields, shall receive the benefit of his noble foundation, the value of his gift would be enhanced if the memory of the giver, as he was, could be impressed indelibly upon it, and it would be his best gift if his character could be transmitted. He was a patriot of the lofty type of the founders of the Republic; a Christian in the deepest spirit of the New Testament; a man ruled by justice, tempered with mercy, generous, high-minded, true, with a Puritan conscience and a heart of love, the faith of a disciple and the trusting soul, simple and pure as a little child."

Another and fuller memoir may be found in the Historical Collections of the Essex Institute, Vol. VI. Nos. 1 and 2.

As the history of the White Fund is misapprehended by many, the following account is repeated here, taken from Tewksbury's "History of Lawrence," which was obtained from the original sources of information:

The first conveyance by Judge White embraced the whole of his lands without restrictions. He soon after became aware that provisions in old deeds retained a portion of the lands for a family burial-ground, and to preserve the graves of his ancestors from any possible future desecration, at his earnest request, the associates, in taking their absolute deed, March 28, 1845, relinquished all claim to a lot of about six acres nearly in the centre of the tract they had purchased. It was provided, however, that the six acres accepted and reserved should be restricted as to use, or reserved as a public or private burial-grounds, a reservoir or some other public work.

Immediately after the organization of the Essex Company the associates conveyed to that company all lands they had purchased; consequently their deed contained the reservations and restrictions.

Judge White seems to have had little enjoyment of this property, yet being in possession; constantly increasing taxes became a burden; there was no income from the property; sanitary considerations prevented its use for a cemetery; no one could purchase any part of it in the condition in which it then stood, and it became evident that the lands could only be utilized by the *joint action of both Judge White and the Essex Company.*

There were upon the land but three graves (now undisturbed and surrounded by dwellings), occupying together a space not larger than an ordinary burial-lot. This left nearly six acres of unoccupied land in the heart of the city.

Joint action of the two parties might give this land a value of many thousand dollars to be divided between them. Happily, at the suggestion of Judge White, cordially acceded to by the Essex Company, both joined in devoting this property to a purpose which would benefit not a class or a single generation, but all who might dwell here in time to come. The indenture conveying the land to trustees, with power to sell, and invest proceeds in a fund for a purpose clearly defined, is a model of precise wording and clearness of detail. So far as it relates to the character of the lectures and use of the fund for that purpose, the language is that of Judge White.

The original proposition of Mr. White, as explained in his letter to Mr. Storrow, June 19, 1852, which first opened the subject, proposed simply the establishment of an annual course of lectures, the special subjects being specified in the deed of trust. These subjects were: 1st. "The importance of good character to success in life;" 2d. "On the unsurpassable value of the riches of character to the young of both sexes;" 3d. "On the virtues, habits and principles most essential to good character;" 4th. "On the best means of intellectual and moral improvement."

Being confident that the value of the lands and the sum eventually derived from them would far exceed the expectations of Mr. White, Mr. Storrow suggested that while the original object which he had in mind should first be fully provided for, precisely as Mr. White intended, it might be well to allow the trustees to select other modes for promoting morality and education, especially to authorize liberal appropriations from the income, in aid of a free library, and provide for the gift of a building-site for such an institution.

Judge White readily assented to this, and the indenture of August 23, 1852, is intended to carry into effect the original and enlarged purposes of the trust. This indenture was signed by Daniel A. White, of the

first part, the Essex Company of the second part, and Charles S. Storrow, Nathaniel G. White and Henry K. Oliver as trustees accepting the trust. Messrs. Storrow and Oliver removed from the city, and George D. Cabot and James H. Eaton, the present trustees, succeeded them.

RELIGIOUS DENOMINATIONS.

In the beginning of Lawrence the directors of the Essex Company, true to the policy of the early settlers of the country, gave their attention to the moral condition of the new town, as might be expected from their well-known character. The president, Mr. Lawrence, writing on one occasion to W. C. Rives, of Virginia, said: "All intellectual culture should be founded on our Holy Religion. The pure precepts of the Gospel are the only safe source from which we can freely draw our morality;" and in the letter which accompanied his gift to the library,—"it is no less the duty than the privilege of those who possess influence in creating towns and cities, to lay the foundations deep and strong. Let the standard be high in religious, moral and intellectual culture, and there can be no well-grounded fear for the result."

Accordingly, governed by no sectarian bias, they gave to the first churches of several denominations a lot of land on which to erect their building, and to others later they made a discount of one-quarter from regular established prices.

The first building devoted to public worship was the Episcopal Chapel; this stood on the ground now occupied by Grace Church, and was so far completed that services were held there on the second Sunday of October, 1846. By the quarter-centennial address of Rev. George Packard, who was the founder of the church and its rector till his lamented decease, November 30, 1876, it appears the first building, a temporary structure of wood, was completed and consecrated November 19, 1846. The cost of the building was estimated to be one thousand three hundred and fifty dollars, of which sum Mr. Samuel Lawrence contributed one thousand dollars, and the balance was obtained from friends in Boston, the proprietors of the different manufacturing companies who were interested in the moral welfare of the new town. A lot of land, one hundred feet square, was presented to the church by the Essex Company, on condition that in five years from the time it was given, a church of stone or brick should be built upon it. At the close of the first year the number of families worshipping was twenty-five, the number of communicants twenty-six; in 1849 the number of communicants fifty-three; in 1850, seventy-eight; and in 1857 the growth of the church had increased so much as to require better accommodations, and the substantial stone building which now occupies the ground was erected, one-half the amount of the cost being pledged by the members of the parish, and the other half by friends in Boston, Andover, Lowell and Salem. The building committee were Capt. Oliver H. Perry, Caleb Marvel and Geo. D. Lund. May 5, 1852, this building was consecrated by Rev. Manton Eastburn, bishop of the diocese.

In 1864 the Sunday-school statistics were,—superintendent, librarian and assistant; teachers—male, ten; female, nineteen; scholars, two hundred and seventy. The chapel, the first place of worship removed to Garden Street, was crowded, and in October of that year a mission Sunday-school and service were commenced in the western part of the city, under the charge of Rev. A. V. G. Allen, then a candidate for orders, pursuing his studies at Andover. In 1865 the parish school-teachers numbered twenty-four; scholars, one hundred and eighty; mission school-teachers, twenty-two; scholars, one hundred and seventy-five. The success of this mission work led to the establishment of a Second Parish, under the name of St. John's, which, in 1867, was admitted to union with the convention.

Dr. Packard, who was so long the rector of the church and devoted to its welfare with untiring zeal, was also during his useful life interested and active in every enterprise conducive to the general good of the town and city. Early and for twenty years a member of the school committee and superintendent of schools, his efforts did much to the establishment of our present system of schools and the promoting of their usefulness. He was, besides, an earnest worker in the City Mission for the relief of the poor and unfortunate, and his wise counsel was always valued. He, as well as three of his brothers, were graduates from Bowdoin College,—one brother, the late Rev. Charles Packard, a Congregational clergyman at Lancaster, Mass.; and the Rev. Alpheus Packard, many years professor and later president of Bowdoin College; and Rev. Joseph Packard, for fifty years professor at the Theological School of Virginia, at Alexandria, one of the American members of the commission for the recent revision of the Bible, who survives them. During the later years of Dr. Packard's residence here, owing to failing health, Rev. William Lawrence, of Boston, was appointed to assist in parochial duties, and succeeded as rector in 1876. Mr. Lawrence remained here till December, 1883, when he resigned to accept a professorship in Harvard University, followed by the love and respect, not only of his own people, but of the entire community, and was succeeded by Rev. Augustine H. Amory, of Boston, the present rector.

The Lawrence Street Congregational Church was formed April 9, 1847. A society called the Merrimac Congregational Society was organized August, 1846, previously, at the house of Nathaniel B. Gordon, its founders being Dr. Moses L. Atkinson (formerly of Newburyport), W. S. Annis, Nathan Wells, Hiram Merrill, Timothy Osgood, Joshua Buswell (deputy sheriff), A. Dickey, Phineas M. Gage

and E. C. Bartlett. The society commenced building, October, 1846, a small chapel in the rear of the present church building. The cost of the building was one thousand dollars, Mr. Abbott Lawrence contributing one hundred dollars, other friends in Boston three hundred and thirty-five dollars. This building was dedicated in January, 1847, and seated two hundred and seventy-five persons. After the organization of the church Rev. Lyman Whiting, who had preached to the society, was invited to become the pastor. He remained here from June 16, 1847, till January 16, 1850. During his ministry the present edifice was completed, and dedicated October 11, 1848. The church remained without a settled pastor till January, 1852, when Rev. Henry M. Storrs was ordained. He remained till March 1, 1855, and, resigning, went to Cincinnati. The pulpit was then supplied by Rev. Alexander H. Clapp, D.D. (now treasurer of American Home Missionary Society), and Rev. Charles Beecher. The former of these declined an invitation to become their pastor, and Rev. George B. Wilcox, of Fitchburg, was installed in September, 1856. He resigned in 1859, and was succeeded by Rev. Caleb E. Fisher, a very sincere and earnest man, of warm sympathies, devoted not only to the spiritual welfare of his parish, but interested in all that pertained to the welfare of the city, especially in educational affairs. Mr. Fisher's pastorate continued more than fourteen years, till October, 1873. Rev. Joshua Coit was installed May 13, 1874, remained till February 25, 1885, when, after repeated solicitations, he accepted the position of secretary of the Massachusetts Home Missionary Society, and was succeeded in February, 1885, by the present pastor, Rev. William E. Wolcott.

The Central Congregational Church (now known as Trinity Congregational Church) was organized December 25, 1849, commencing their public services in the City Hall, which they continued to occupy till August, 1854; removed to their new building, a substantial brick building, at the corner of Essex and Appleton Streets, the second story being occupied for religious service and the lower story for stores,—a union of sacred and secular matters, which, happily, does not at present exist in the city. A similar structure once existed in the neighboring city of Lowell, and it is said that some wag chalked the following couplet upon the door:

> "A spirit above and a spirit below,
> A spirit of weal and a spirit of woe;
> The spirit above is the spirit divine,
> The spirit below is the spirit of wine."

On the 12th of August, 1859, the Central Church building was destroyed by fire, and the society returned to the City Hall, where they remained a few months, evening services being held in the chapel of Grace Church, on Garden Street. On the second Sabbath in January, 1860, the congregation met for worship in the basement of the new stone building erected on Haverhill Street. The building was finished and dedicated June 8, 1860.

From March to November, 1850, Rev. Lyman Whiting, previously of Lawrence Street Church, supplied the pulpit, and Rev. E. C. Whittlesey, afterwards prominent in military affairs and the Freedmen's Bureau, from February to October, 1851. The first pastor was Rev. William C. Foster, installed January 16, 1852, a very earnest preacher, and well remembered for his fearless and bold advocacy of anti-slavery sentiments. His successor was Rev. Daniel Tenney, installed September 2, 1857. After a service of five years Mr. Tenney removed to the Springfield Street Church, Boston, and Rev. Christopher M. Cordley became pastor, and remained with the church till his death, June 26, 1866.

The next pastor was Rev. William E. Park; after a service of nine years,—1866 to '75,—he resigned, and removed to Gloversville, N. Y., and was succeeded by George M. Ide.

Eliot Congregational Church was formed September 28, 1865. Services were held at first in the City Hall and in Grace Church chapel. The formation of this church resulted from a joint meeting of the Lawrence Street and Central Churches held in August, at which meeting it was unanimously resolved that a third church was needed; and a committee, consisting of William C. Chapin, George A. Fuller, Benjamin T. Bourne, Benjamin Coolidge and William A. Russell, was appointed to consider the matter and report. Thirty-two persons constituted the original organization of the society,—twelve from Lawrence Street, sixteen from the Central Church and four from other towns. The church and society immediately took steps for the erection of the building located on Appleton Street, near Essex. This building, erected at a cost of thirty-five thousand dollars, is very conveniently arranged, and, architecturally considered, it would be an ornament to the city, but, unfortunately, it is surrounded by tall brick buildings, among which it is hidden. It was dedicated September 6, 1866.

The first pastor was Rev. William Franklin Snow, born in Boston in 1838; at the age of nine he went with his father's family to the Hawaiian Islands, was there fitted for Harvard College at the Royal School and the Oahu College, of Honolulu; entered Harvard in 1857 and was distinguished as a classical scholar; graduated with high rank in 1861. In August, 1862, he enlisted as a private soldier in the Fifth Massachusetts Regiment, was elected captain and served one year. After the expiration of his service in the army he made a visit to his father's family in the islands. In May, 1864, he became acting pastor of the Congregational Church in Grass Valley, Cal., returned to Andover in 1865 to complete his studies and was installed pastor of the Eliot Church September 13, 1866. Mr. Snow was a thorough scholar, an indefatigable student and thoroughly devoted to the work of

the Christian ministry, and during his five years of service in the Eliot Church the number of its members increased from thirty-two to one hundred and twenty-nine. He died in the midst of his usefulness, at the age of thirty-three, January 11, 1871.

On the 14th of June, 1871, Rev. Theodore T. Munger, of Haverhill, Mass., was installed pastor. He resigned his charge January 20, 1875, on account of ill health of himself and family, and removed to the western part of the State. His resignation was a source of regret to his people and many others, who prized his companionship for his intellectual power and attainments. He has become widely known by several volumes which have issued from his scholarly pen.

March 14, 1875, Rev. John H. Barrows commenced his work at the Eliot, and was ordained April 29th; remained with the church till September 12, 1880. Rev. Edward P. Hooker was installed January 12, 1881, and resigned, after a short residence, to become president of Rollins College, in Florida. The Eliot and Central Churches united to form Trinity Congregational Church in the summer of 1883. The Eliot Church building was sold to Hon. Wm. A. Russell, who afterward conveyed it to the Young Men's Christian Association. The present pastor of Trinity Church is Rev. John L. R. Trask.

The Methodists.—The first preaching was in June, 1846, at Boarding-House No. 5, kept by Mr. Charles Barnes, who built on his own account, about twenty years before, the meeting-house on the corner of Lowell and Suffolk Streets, Lowell. Their house of worship, at the corner of Haverhill and Hampshire Streets, was dedicated in the spring of 1848. Their first pastor was Rev. James L. Gleason. Since the erection of the church building the pastors have been Rev. L. D. Barrows, D.D., 1847–48; Rev. James Pike, D.D., 1849; Rev. Moses Howe, 1850; Rev. Samuel Kelley, 1851–52; Rev. R. S. Rust, D.D., 1853 and '54; Rev. Jonathan Hall, 1855 and '56; Rev. W. A. McDonald, 1857; Rev. F. A. Hughes, 1858; Rev. J. H. McCarthy, D.D., 1859 and '60; Rev. S. Holman, 1861 and '62; Rev. R. S. Stubbs, 1863; Rev. George Dearborn, 1864; Rev. L. J. Hall, 1865–66; Rev. D. C. Knowles, 1867–69; Rev. F. Pitcher, 1870 and '71; Rev. L. D. Barrows, D.D., 1872–74; Rev. D. Stevenson, D.D., 1875–77; Rev. D. C. Knowles again, 1878, who was succeeded in April, 1881, by Rev. E. C. Bass, who served three years; Rev. ——— followed from April, 1884, to April, 1886, when the present pastor, Rev. Madison A. Richards, commenced his labors. The church is in a flourishing condition, and the Sabbath-school contains about two hundred scholars. Rev. D. C. Knowles has been for several years principal of the New Hampshire Conference Seminary at Tilton, N. H., and Rev. Daniel Stevenson is principal of a seminary at Augusta, Kentucky.

The Garden Street Methodist Episcopal Church was organized in 1853 by young men and women residing in the easterly part of the town. Meetings were at first held in a school-house and then in Pantheon Hall, but in 1855 the brick church at the corner of Newbury and Garden Streets was erected. The members were few, and the task they had undertaken was a difficult one to complete, and no doubt ultimate success depended largely on the efforts of George P. Wilson, then a layman, a man of indefatigable energy, who was for many years the beloved and devoted city missionary. The first settled minister was Rev. Albert C. Mansur, 1853. Since that the church has been under the pastoral care of Rev. John McLaughlin, 1854 and '55; Rev. Calvin Holman, 1856 and '57; Rev. Warren F. Evans, 1858; Rev. Henry H. Hartwell, 1859 and '60; Rev. Cadford M. Dinsmore, 1861; Rev. Albert C. Mansur, 1862; Rev. Andrew J. Church, 1863 and '64; Rev. A. P. Hatch, 1865; Rev. Charles U. Dunning in 1866, '67 and '68 (who, after an absence of three years, returned to Lawrence and succeeded Mr. Wilson as city missionary, resigning that service on his appointment as one of the presiding elders of the New Hampshire Annual Conference); Rev. Truman Carter, 1869 and '70; Rev. Lewis P. Cushman, 1871–73; Rev. George W. Norris, 1874–75, and again 1880–82; Rev. William E. Bennett, 1876; Rev. A. E. Drew, 1877–79; Rev. Charles Parkhurst, 1883–85; Rev. Jesse M. Durrell, 1886–87.

First Baptist Society.—The First Baptist Society was formed in 1847. Their first temporary house of worship was a small building in the rear of the present one on Haverhill Street, and was occupied the first time in April, 1847, although meetings had been previously held at private houses and in an old school building near the present First Methodist Church. In November following the building was enlarged to accommodate the increasing number of members. The increase of numbers was so great that it was soon found necessary to build a larger and more permanent building. Consequently, in 1849, the construction of the present edifice on Haverhill Street was commenced, and so far completed that services were held in the basement in January, 1850. The first pastor of this church and society was Rev. John G. Richardson, who remained with them till 1853; he was succeeded in December by Rev. Artemas W. Sawyer. In 1856 Rev. Frank Remington followed, resigning in 1859, and subsequently was installed over the Second Baptist Church. For several months the pulpit was supplied by Rev. J. Sella Martin, formerly a slave. Rev. Henry F. Lane was the next pastor, who remained but a short time, leaving in 1862 to accept the chaplaincy of the Forty-first Massachusetts Regiment. Rev. George Knox was next installed, but the same year became chaplain of the Twenty-ninth Maine Regiment. He was killed in Washington by being thrown from his horse. In September, 1865, Rev. George W. Bosworth, D.D., be-

came the pastor. Dr. Bosworth remained three and a half years; removed to Haverhill.

Rev. John B. Gough Pidge was ordained in September, 1869. After laboring with marked ability and popularity for about ten years, he accepted an invitation to Philadelphia, and was succeeded by Rev. Richard Montague, now of the Central Congregational Church, Providence, R. I., who was followed by the present pastor, Rev. O. C. S. Wallace.

Free Baptist Society.—This was one of the early societies formed in Lawrence. A small number held a meeting in the first boarding-house erected by the Essex Company, on Broadway, in the fall of 1846, at which meeting Rev. Silas Curtis conducted religious service. In January, 1847, twelve persons were duly organized as the Free-Will Baptist Church of Lawrence, with Rev. Jairus E. Davis as pastor. Their services were conducted in public halls and private houses, until a small plain building was erected at the corner of Haverhill and White Streets, on land given them by the Essex Company. Money was not abundant among the members of this society, and for many years they had a hard and patient struggle against adverse circumstances, sustained only by Christian faith and determined perseverance. It was not till 1857 that their new church of brick, at the corner of Common and Pemberton Streets, was dedicated. During the ministry of the first pastor, who remained with them three years, sixty-four members were added to the church. October 1, 1849, Rev. Jonathan Woodman, sometimes known as "Father Woodman," a prominent and influential man in that denomination, became pastor, remaining three years, during which time the church had an accession of sixty-six members. The succeeding pastors were Rev. G. P. Ramsey, two and a half years; addition to the church during his time, sixty-seven; Rev. A. D. Williams, remained two and a half years, from the spring of 1855, and during this time one hundred and eighty members were added to the membership. Mr. Williams resigned in consequence of failing health, and Rev. E. M. Tappan succeeded him in 1857, and died in service, December 12, 1860. In May, 1861, Rev. J. Burnham Davis became pastor, and closed his connection with the church January 1, 1866, one hundred and twenty-four members having been added to the church during his ministry. The next pastor was Rev. E. G. Chaddock.

Other pastors of this church have been Rev. John A. Lowell and Rev. Alphonso L. Houghton.

The Parker Street Methodist Church is located in South Lawrence. This has grown gradually from a Sunday-school or Bible-class formed in 1869, through the instrumentality of Rev. D. C. Knowles, of the First Methodist Church. The class commenced with five members, but as the number increased a society was organized September 16, 1870, and on the 20th a small lot was purchased on Blanchard Street, and a building twenty-two by forty feet was erected—Rev. Messrs. Tilton, of Derry; Keyes, of Woburn; and Sargent, of Malden, supplying the desk. The first pastor was Rev. W. J. Parkinson, 1873. July 9th of that year the corner-stone of the church on Parker Street was laid. Rev. Mark Trafton and Rev. D. C. Knowles delivered addresses on the occasion. Succeeding pastors of the church were Rev. Garrett Beekman, Rev. Allen J. Hall, Rev. Converse L. McCurdy, Rev. J. T. Abbott, Rev. W. A. Braman, Rev. —— Hambleton, one year, Rev. C. M. Melden, three years, followed in 1887 by Rev. Lewis P. Cushman.

First Unitarian Church.—This church was organized August 30, 1847. They met at first in Odd Fellows' Hall, but soon erected a small chapel, in which services were held till May, 1860, when the present church building was dedicated. This building had originally a tall and graceful spire, but in the fire of 1859 it was set on fire by sparks carried across the Common from the fire which consumed the United States Hotel and court-house, and damaged to such an extent that it was taken down and the tower finished in its present form.

The first pastor of this church was Rev. Henry F. Harrington, the present superintendent of schools in New Bedford. Mr. Harrington remained seven years devoted not only to his pastoral duties to the church but active in the early history of the schools of the city and in philanthropic service among the poor. He resigned in 1854. Rev. William L. Jenkins was pastor from 1855 to 1865; then Rev. James H. Wiggin, who, after one year of service, was succeeded by Rev. James B. Moore, a gentleman of much forensic ability, who remained for several years until his decease, from disease contracted in the military service. Rev. Charles A. Hayden was settled here from 1873 to 1876. Rev. Edmund R. Sanborn was the next pastor, and after his resignation the pulpit was supplied from time to time until the present year, when, on its fortieth anniversary, Rev. Edwin C. Abbott was installed.

The First Universalist Society (now known as the Church of the Good Shepherd) was formed November 15, 1848. Some of the gentlemen active in its formation were George Littlefield, Sullivan Symonds, William D. Joplin, Heaton Bailey and Fairfield White. Meetings were held for public worship for four or five years in various halls, until 1853, when services were held in the vestry of the new church which was erected on Haverhill Street and dedicated June 30th of that year. The first pastor was Rev. George H. Clark, of Lockport, N. Y., who died in Lawrence, December, 1851. The succeeding pastors were Rev. J. R. Johnson, 1852–55; Rev. J. J. Brayton, 1855–58; Rev. Martin J. Steere, 1858–60; Rev. George S. Weaver, 1861–73; Rev. George W. Perry, 1873–77; Rev. A. E. White, 1877–86; followed by the present pastor, Rev. W. E. Gibbs. The church building was remodeled in 1866 and dedicated 1867.

The South Congregational Church.—This

church originated from a Sunday-school convened in a school-house on Andover Street, by M. C. Andrews and J. B. Fairfield, in 1852. The school was continued by its founders till 1857. At that time George A. Fuller became interested in it, and it was removed to the engine-house and Boston and Maine passenger station until friends, prominent among whom were Mr. Fuller, Deacon Benjamin Coolridge and others, erected a small chapel in 1859, enlarged 1861. In 1869 the present building was erected and dedicated, the ceremony occurring on Christmas day. Regular services were held in October, 1865, and the pulpit was supplied for three years by Professor E. A. Park, of Andover. This church was organized May 18, 1868, but thus far there was no settled minister. Rev. James G. Dougherty supplied the pulpit one year, October, 1869, to March, 1870, and Rev. L. Z. Ferris two years.

January 30, 1873, the present pastor, Rev. Clark Carter, was installed. The church comprises about one hundred members, and the Sunday-school one hundred and forty-five.

Presbyterian Church.—In June, 1854, Rev. A. McWilliams, of the Presbytery of Boston, organized a church in Lawrence of forty-seven members. Services were held at first in a school-house, but in 1856 a church was built on Oak Street, and Mr. McWilliams continued with the church till 1857. The general depression of business at that time and the stoppage of mills, weakened the congregation, and for a time the church was left without a pastor. In 1859 Rev. James Dinsmore was installed, and remained till 1862. Meetings was suspended and the building was rented to the city for a school-house. In 1867 the building was re-dedicated, and Rev. John Hogg became the pastor, remaining eight years, and during his ministry the present church building on Concord Street was built. Rev. John A. Burns succeeded him, and he in turn was succeeded by the present pastor, Rev. Robert A. McAyeal, D.D., from Ohio.

St. John's Episcopal Church.—The first meetings of this church were held in Essex Engine-House, on Morton Street, while building a church on land adjoining. The building was first opened for service in May, 1866, and was capable of holding four hundred and fifty persons; three years later it was removed to Bradford Street. The rectors have successively been Rev. A. V. G. Allen, Rev. James H. Lee, Rev. Charles C. Harris, Rev. Belno A. Brown, Rev. William G. Wells.

The Second Baptist Church was organized in 1860 by sixty-seven members from the First Baptist Church, a natural outgrowth from the parent stock. Their first pastor was Rev. Frank Remington, who had been previously settled over the original church. Services were held for a time in the City Hall, then in the wooden building erected by the "Christian" Society, on Common Street, west of Lawrence, which the society purchased in 1861. This was removed and enlarged in 1865, rebuilt and further enlarged 1874, and is on the south side of Common Street, a little east of Lawrence Street. The pastors of this church have been, in succession, Rev. Cyrus F. Tolman, Rev. Henry A. Cooke (1865, afterward settled in Boston), Rev. L. L. Wood (1870, since pastor of a Boston church), Rev. George W. Gile (who, after a pastorate of over six years, was called to the Baptist Church in Pittsfield), Rev. R. B. Moody (from January 1, 1880, who remained nearly four years), and the present pastor, Rev. Frederick M. Gardner (settled in April, 1884). D. Frank Robinson was superintendent of the Sunday-school for twenty-four years, succeeded in 1887 by Deacon S. F. Snell.

The Riverside Congregational Church was organized March 9, 1878. This church has grown from a Mission Sunday-school, established in April, 1862, with thirty-eight scholars. In June, 1875, a church was formed under the name of the Union Evangelical Church, and recognized by a council representing Congregational, Methodist and Presbyterian Churches. This church continued as a Union Evangelical body for nearly three years, the church and mission-school being independent of each other in organization and government. In February, 1878, at a meeting called for the purpose, the members voted that the church should take charge of the Sunday-school, and that it should become Congregational, and in March, 1878, it was formally recognized as the Riverside Congregational. The acting pastors of the Union Church were Mr. F. H. Foster, J. H. Fowle and C. A. Dickenson, and of the Congregational, Mr. F. S. Adams, D. H. Colcord, William E. Wolcott.

Bodwell Street Methodist Church.—After the dissolution of the Union Evangelical Church the Methodists, who had formed a part of that body, with others increasing their number, formed, in 1880, this new church. This was formed mainly through the instrumentality of Mr. Seth F. Dawson, who had been previously a superintendent of the mission-school and of the Union Church. Present pastor, Rev. William C. Bartlett.

A little prior to 1872 the German population who had found their home in Lawrence had increased so much that it was thought desirable to have a church of their own, in which services could be held in their own language, and a school for teaching the children in the elementary branches; and to this end the German Catholics, as well as Protestants, had planned a building for this purpose; but, as might have been expected, the plan of union of two conflicting beliefs did not succeed. In May, 1872, a meeting of German Protestants was held in what was then the Free Evening School Room, in the City Hall, and at the meeting a resolution was adopted establishing a church and school. Mr. F. M. Vietor was chosen chairman of the society, Mr. Herman Bruckmann secretary, and Mr. William Wiesner treasurer. The

Eliot Chapel was rented, and Rev. Mr. Schwartz, of Boston, preached, June 23, 1872, for the first time to a Lawrence audience in German. A preacher was engaged and held services every second Sabbath, and taught the school twice a week till the close of the year.

June 5, 1873, the society was incorporated as a German Church and School Society. The society met at first in Scott & Vietor's Hall, and services were conducted by Rev. M. Schwartz, of Boston, monthly, till May, 1874, when services were discontinued for want of a suitable building. In August following a lot was purchased on East Haverhill Street, a church building erected, which was dedicated December 12, 1875. Here regular Sunday services was conducted by Mr. Vietor till April, 1876, when the Methodist Conference designated Rev. F. F. Hoppmann as pastor, who remained till April, 1878, when a meeting was held by the society, and it was voted thereafter to dispense with the services of a minister sent by the Methodist Conference.

November, 1878, Rev. A. Herman Hager, of Chicago, was invited to become the pastor of the church, and he was installed January, 1879. The church building was enlarged in the summer of 1881, and reopened for worship December 4th.

Mr. Hager resigned June 15th (became pastor of Norfolk Street Church, New York City), and died in New York City, October 21, 1884, and was succeeded by Rev. Ferdinand O. Zesch, of Carlstadt, N. J., who was installed October 24, 1883; the intermediate time the pulpit being supplied by a gentleman from the Theological School of Bloomfield, N. J., and Rev. Fred. Erhardt, of Manchester. Mr. Zesch resigned in August, 1885, to take charge of a German Reformed Church in Cincinnati, Ohio, and was succeeded by the present pastor, Rev. Frederick C. Saure. Number of Sunday-school scholars, one hundred and eighty.

German Methodists.—The Methodists, who up to this time had associated with the other Protestants in the Kirchenverein, formed a separate congregation, and services were held with Mr. John Lutz as preacher, the society numbering eighteen members at the end of nine months. Mr. August Wallon (student) preached two years, and the third was settled as pastor, and the society commenced the erection of a church on Vine Street. The building was dedicated December 11, 1881, and at this date there were sixty-eight members. Mr. Wallon was followed by Rev. G. Hauser, two years; Rev. Aldin Wolff, two years; Rev. Philip Stahl, the present pastor, who commenced his service in April, 1886. The church has now one hundred members.

St. Thomas (Episcopal) Church is located in Methuen, though its members are mainly from Lawrence. Their first pastor was Rev. Belno A. Brown.

There are also in Lawrence several smaller societies.

The United Congregational Church organized 1877, Rev. John T. Whalley.

The Primitive Methodist, the Olive Baptist, the Second Advent, a small Swedenborgian Society and a Society of "Friends."

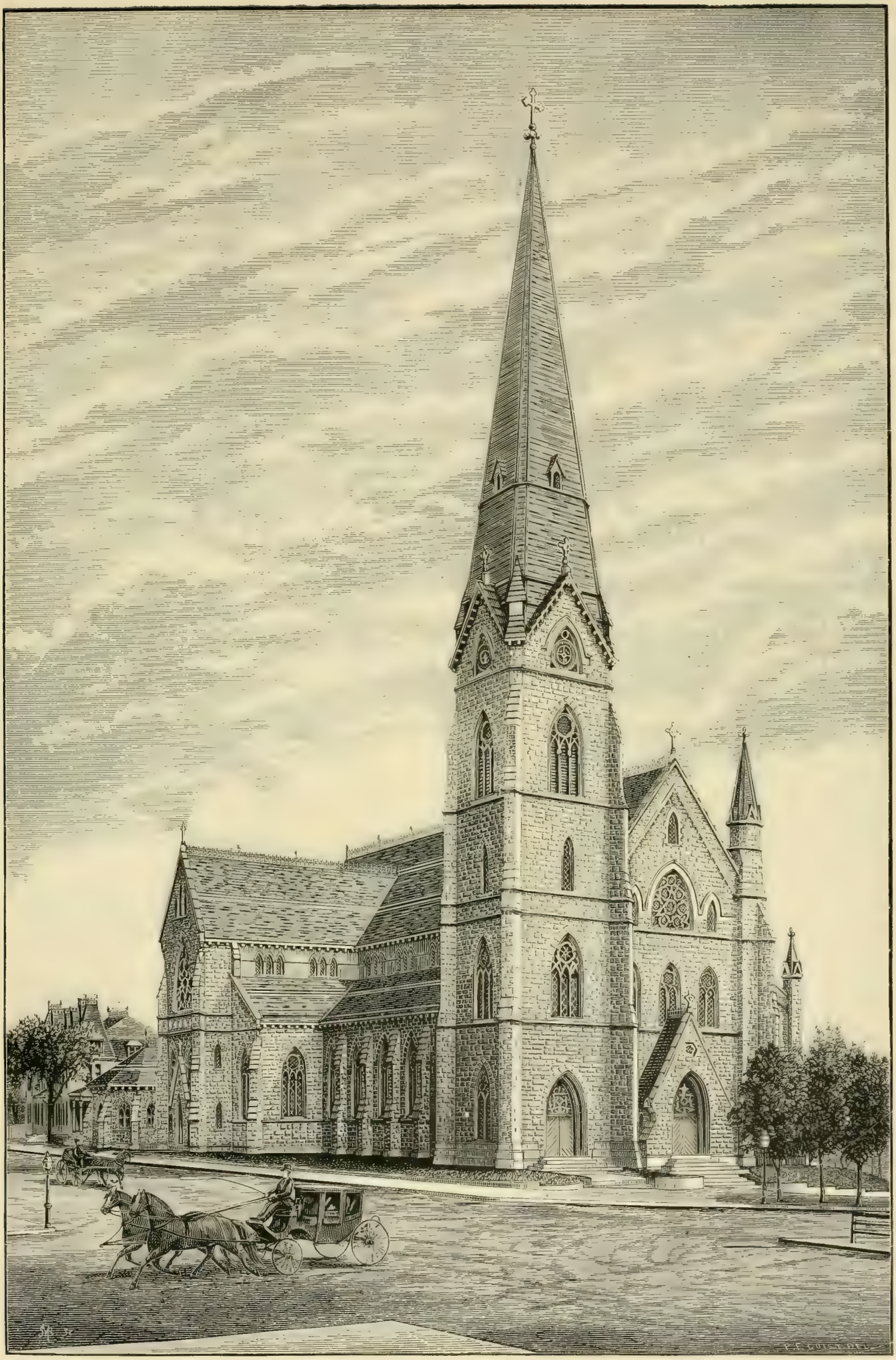
Roman Catholics.—In 1846 Rev. Charles D. French came to Lawrence, conducting his religious services in private houses at first, but very soon after in a small wooden church building, thought to be sufficiently large for the purpose, but which, in 1848, would hardly contain half of those who sought entrance. From a valuable work, entitled "Catholicity in Lawrence," written by Miss Katharine A. O'Keefe, and published 1882, the information which follows is compiled. Father French was the son of a Protestant clergyman, in the county of Galway, Ireland; shortly after his father's death he came to this country, early in the present century, and after laboring more than forty years in organizing congregations and building churches, in various places, came to Lawrence in 1846. He died in 1851, having, during his short residence, established the First Church and organized a school, the church being known as the "Church of the Immaculate Conception."

Father French was succeeded in the ministry by Rev. James H. D. Taaffe, born about 1800, in the county of Mayo, Ireland. When ten years of age he went with an uncle, who was an officer of high rank in the British Army, to India, where he remained several years. Before his return to Ireland he entered upon a collegiate course of study at Mauritius, in the Isle of France. At the age of twenty-seven he again took up his studies in the Jesuit College at Carlow. Here he remained a short time, when he went to Tuam, and was ordained a Dominican friar; was superior of a monastery in that neighborhood eight years, came to America in 1849, and in October, 1850, to Lawrence.

During Father Taaffe's ministry the wooden church building gave place to the large brick church of the same name. He also built the "Protectory of Mary Immaculate," an orphan asylum and home for invalids, being aided in this latter work by the "Catholic Friends' Society," a society organized by him in 1856. This asylum was completed and dedicated February 9, 1868, and on its completion it was placed under the charge of the Sisters of Charity, or "The Grey Nuns."

On the 29th of March following, Father Taaffe closed his earnest life after a service here of eighteen years.

Some time before the death of Father French, and two years before the arrival of Father Taaffe, the Catholic population had so far increased that another priest was needed, and in 1848 the want was supplied by the advent of Rev. James O'Donnell. Father O'Donnell was born in Cashel, Tipperary County, Ireland, April 13, 1806, was ordained to the priesthood in New York, 1837, was soon after stationed at



REV. JAMES T. O'REILLY, RECTOR

ST. MARY'S R. C. CHURCH,

LAWRENCE, MASS.

St. Augustine's Church, Philadelphia, which was burned by a fanatical mob in 1844, and Father O'Donnell was obliged to flee for his life. He went, for a time, to Europe, visited France and Italy, returned, after a short absence, to America, and was located in Lawrence.

On the first Sunday in January, 1849, services were held in a wooden building (unfinished), which gave place later to the old St. Mary's Church, a stone structure on Haverhill Street, commenced in 1851 and finished in 1853; this building was subsequently enlarged sufficiently to contain one thousand more persons, and was dedicated January 10, 1861.

Father O'Donnell was a very active and zealous man in the discharge of his duties to his church, establishing schools for the education of the children, and encouraging associations for intellectual improvement. The Catholic Literary and Benevolent Society was formed in August, 1853, with the following officers: President, John Ryan; Vice-President, J. T. Tancred; Treasurer, John Kiley, Sr.; Secretary, Patrick Foster; Librarian, Dan'l C. O'Sullivan.

A second society of similar nature was formed in 1858, the St. Mary's Young Men's Society. The first year's officers of this society were John Hayes, President; Patrick Goodwin, Vice-President; James T. O'Sullivan, Secretary; Michael O'Callaghan, Treasurer; James Kiley, Librarian. To this society Father O'Donnell made a donation of one hundred volumes, —the nucleus of what became a fine library.

The societies continued for several years.

Father O'Donnell also introduced the Sisters of Notre Dame in August, 1859, who, in September following, opened their school for girls (yet in existence), where, independently of religious teaching, they have, no doubt, in a quiet, unostentatious manner, exerted a favorable influence over the moral character of the girls committed to their charge and in charitable work among the needy and unfortunate.

But it was not alone in his religious works that Father O'Donnell was conspicuous; he was a public-spirited citizen and an excellent man of business, interested in whatever pertained to the welfare and good order of the city, of a benevolent disposition and ever ready to help the deserving poor; he had no sympathy for the drunken and lazy. He was a liberal friend to the Lawrence City Mission, contributing to its relief fund and aiding its investigations in behalf of the poor; especially was this the case in the winter of 1857, when the mills were idle and thousands of people were unemployed. At this time Father O'Donnell and Father Taaffe were both earnestly engaged in collecting funds and personally disbursing the necessaries of life; and at this time also the former rendered very valuable service in stopping a senseless run upon one of the city savings banks.

Father O'Donnell died April 7, 1861, aged fifty-five, much lamented, not only by his own people, but by those of all denominations, and bearing with him to his long home the respect and esteem of the entire community. The successor of Father O'Donnell was Rev. Ambrose Mullen, who remained four years, assisted, at different times, by his brother, Rev. Edward Mullen, and Fathers Gallagher and Daley. He left in 1865 to assume the presidency of Villanova College, near Philadelphia, where he remained till 1869, when failing health compelled his retirement from its active duties, and in August of the same year, on the death of Father Gallagher, he was sent to St. Augustine's Church in Andover, where he spent the remainder of his life. He died July 7, 1876.

Father Mullen was succeeded at St. Mary's by Rev. Louis M. Edge, assisted by Fathers William Hartnett, John P. Gilmore and M. F. Gallagher.

Under his administration the corner-stone of the new St. Mary's Church was laid and the building, which is an ornament to the city, and one of the finest buildings in the country, was partially completed. Father Edge was born in 1825, came to America at the age of twenty-two and, shortly after his arrival, joined the Franciscans at Loretto, Pa., and was five years professor in the Catholic College there; went thence to Philadelphia and entered the order of St. Augustine and spent two years at Villanova College in the study of theology and qualifying himself for the priesthood. Being particularly fond of mathematics, he was retained at Villanova as professor of mathematics for six years, and then went to Mechanicsville and Schaghticoke, N. Y., at which latter place he built fine church, coming to Lawrence in 1865. He was interested in the cause of general education, and at the time of his decease was a member of the school committee of Lawrence. He went to Philadelphia to make arrangements for raising the cross on St. Mary's on the following July 4th, and there was thrown from his carriage, receiving injuries which resulted in his death February 24, 1870.

Very Rev. Father Galberry, superior of the Augustinian Order, and later Right Rev. Bishop of Hartford, was the successor of Father Edge; and under him the church (St. Mary's) was completed, and dedicated September 3, 1871. The length of the building is two hundred and ten feet; width, eighty feet, except at the transept, where it is one hundred and two feet. The steeple is two hundred and twenty-five feet high and the top of the cross is two hundred and thirty-five feet from the ground, which makes the building fifteen feet higher than Bunker Hill Monument. It is in Gothic style and built of light granite from Westford (Mass.), Salem (N. H.) and Hallowell (Me.), and is capable of seating over three thousand persons.

On the departure of Father Galberry Rev. John P. Gilmore become pastor, during whose administration a fine chime of sixteen bells (from the foundry of William Blake & Co.) was placed in the tower and consecrated with imposing ceremonies on Sunday, December 13th. The cost of the chime was

ten thousand dollars—three thousand of the amount having been bequeathed by the will of the late Hugh Rafferty and the remainder raised by contributions from the members of the church.

Returning to the first church, the successors of Father Taaffe in this church were Rev. M. J. L. Doherty and C. T. McGrath, the former of whom removed to Millbury in 1859 and Rev. William Orr took his place. Father McGrath removed to Somerville in 1869 and his successor was Rev. Father McShane. During Father Orr's pastorate St. Patrick's Church, in South Lawrence, was built and dedicated March 17, 1870, and St. Lawrence's Church, at the corner of Union and Essex Streets; this church was dedicated by Archbishop Williams in July, 1873.

The French Catholics began agitating the subject of gathering a church in 1871, holding meetings at first in Essex Hall and soon after in a small building purchased on Lowell Street. They commenced building the present church on Haverhill Street in 1872–73, but it was delayed until 1875, when, under the pastorate of Rev. Oliver Boucher, it was sufficiently completed to be used for divine service, and received the name of St. Anne's.

The limits of this article will not admit of sketches of the many able and earnest clergymen who have been active in the different churches. A full record may be found in Miss O'Keefe's work, above referred to. The various Catholic Churches in 1875 were committed by the Most Rev. Archbishop to the spiritual care and direction of the Augustinian Order, and Rev. D. D. Regan, who had been stationed at St. Mary's since his ordination in 1874, became pastor of the Immaculate Conception Church, succeeded in 1877 by Rev. John H. Devir.

The present head of the Augustinian Order here is Rev. James T. O'Reilly.

Lawrence in the Great Rebellion.—From a Lawrence newspaper, published in the early days of Lawrence, 1846, is the following extract: "If the enormity of a man's sin is just cause for an equal enormity of punishment, the monster who, for the pay of a common soldier, will consent to turn 'human butcher' deserves the punishment in its fullest and broadest extent."

This sentiment did not, however, seem to be very deeply seated in the minds of the people, for no sooner had the echoes of the first guns fired upon Fort Sumter reached their ears, than Lawrence was ready to respond. The Sixth Massachusetts Regiment, of which two companies belonged in Lawrence, was at this time commanded by Col. Edward F. Jones, of Pepperell; the lieutenant-colonel was Walter G. Shattuck, of Groton, who resigned because of age and infirmity; and the major was Benjamin F. Watson, then of Lawrence, now of New York City. Major Watson was elected lieutenant-colonel on the 17th May, 1861, and was promoted to the command of the regiment, and held that position till the close of the campaign, Capt. Josiah A. Sawtelle, of Lowell, being elected major.

The President's first call for troops to defend Washington was issued on the 15th of April, 1861, reached Boston on the 16th, and the entire regiment, scattered through the towns of Stoneham, Lawrence, Lowell, Acton, Groton, Worcester and adjoining towns, reported in Boston on the 17th, the larger portion of the regiment having arrived there before sunset of the 16th; arrived in New York on the morning of the 18th, at Philadelphia in the evening of the same day; on the 19th made their memorable passage through Baltimore, having lost four killed and thirty-six wounded; but not without inflicting a heavy loss upon the opposing force; and arrived in Washington on the afternoon of the 19th. Company I, of Lawrence, was under the command of Capt. John Pickering, and Company F, under Capt. Benjamin F. Chadbourne and, subsequently, Capt. Melvin Beal.

Of the four killed in Baltimore, Sumner H. Needham, of Lawrence, was, according to Hanson's "History of the Sixth Regiment," the first to fall mortally wounded. He was born in Bethel, Me., March 2, 1828, and had resided in Lawrence about twelve years, was corporal in Company I, having been a member of the company about five years. His body was brought to Boston on the 2d of May, and conveyed to Lawrence May 3d, by a committee of the city government, and placed in the city hall, where funeral service was held. The hall was appropriately draped, and every inch of room occupied. On the rostrum were the clergy of the city, and an eloquent sermon was preached by the pastor of the deceased, Rev. G. S. Weaver, of the Universalist Church—assisted by Rev. Caleb E. Fisher, of Lawrence Street Congregational Church; Rev. W. L. Jenkins, of the Unitarian Church; Rev. Henry F. Lane, of the First Baptist Church; Rev. C. M. Dinsmore, of the Garden Street Methodist Church; Rev. Daniel Tenney, of the Central Congregational Church; and Rev. George Packard, of the Episcopal Church, in the devotional exercises.

The text was in Hebrews xi. 4: "*He being dead, yet speaketh.*"

"He speaks from that scene of conflict, with a silent yet terrible eloquence, which is heard all over our great country, and which stirs the moral indignation of twenty millions of freemen at home, and ten times that number abroad. That blow that broke in upon his brain struck upon the conscience of a nation. That wound has a tongue, speaking with a trumpet of thunder among the Northern hills and along the western prairies. The blood spilt from it is the seed of a mighty harvest of patriots, who will pour upon rebels the indignation of their outraged souls. His shattered form calls from its coffin upon an outraged country, to arouse in its might and crush out the reckless and imperious spirit of treason which has reared itself against our prosperous land and our benignant form of Government. Yes, being dead, our brother calls upon us, his neighbors and friends, to stand up in our patriotism and manhood, and maintain and defend the honor of that country for which he gave his life. He calls upon our State to prove that her sons are worthy descendants of the blood of Plymouth Rock and Lexington; upon our country to prove that her people are worthy of the institutions under which they live."

A granite monument in Bellevue Cemetery marks his resting-place, and bears the following inscription:

"By the City Government this monument is erected, to endear to posterity the memory of Sumner H. Needham, of Co. I, 6th Regt. M. V. M., who fell a victim to the passions of a Secession mob during the passage of the Regiment through the Streets of Baltimore, marching to the defence of the Nation's Capital on the memorable 19th of April, A.D. 1861, Aet. 33. A loyal north in common with his widow and an only child, mourn his loss.

A.D. 1862."

On the base of the monument is this word

"NEEDHAM."

At a later period of the war the Sixth Regiment was again among the first to respond to the call for nine months' troops, and in this campaign Lawrence furnished one company (Company I); Company F was partially recruited (many of the members having enlisted in other organizations for three years), and consolidated with Company I, under the command of Capt. Augustine L. Hamilton.

Again, between the expiration of service of the first three years' regiments and the organization of new, the government called for regiments for one hundred days' service. A third time the Sixth responded, and Lawrence again furnished one company (Company K), under command of Capt. Edgar J. Sherman, who had previously served in the nine months' campaign.

Prior, however, to the commencement of actual war, when General Anderson, in consequence of the hostile attitude of South Carolina, had removed his small force of sixty men from Fort Moultrie to Fort Sumter, in January, 1861, Captain Gustavus V. Fox who had been an officer in the navy, but was then resident in Lawrence, originated a plan for carrying provisions to the beleaguered garrison; this was rejected by President Buchanan, renewed and carried into effect by President Lincoln, but failed of accomplishment for reasons too well known to be related here. Captain Fox gave himself thenceforward to the cause of the Union and became the Assistant Secretary of the Navy, where, by his energy and thorough knowledge of naval affairs, he rendered most valuable service to the end of the war.

While the three months' troops (the Third, Fourth, Fifth, Sixth and Eighth Regiments, Deven's Rifles and Cook's Battery) were in the field, it became apparent to the government that greater effort and a longer struggle were before them, and on the 3d of May, 1861, a call for troops for three years' service was issued. Under this call Lawrence had representatives in the First, Second, Ninth, Eleventh, Twelfth, Thirteenth, Fourteenth, Sixteenth, Seventeenth, Nineteenth, Twentieth, Twenty-second, Twenty-fourth, Twenty-sixth, Twenty-eighth, Thirtieth, Thirty-second, Thirty-third, Thirty-fifth, Thirty-ninth, Fortieth, Forty-first, Fifty-sixth, Fifty-seventh and Fifty-ninth Massachusetts Infantry.

Of the ten men enlisted in the Second, three were killed in battle or died in service. Of the forty men enlisted in the Ninth, five were killed or died of wounds. In the Tenth Regiment we were represented by Lieutenant-colonel Jefford M. Decker. In the Fourteenth Regiment, which became the First Heavy Artillery, were more than three hundred from Lawrence; of these forty-seven were killed or died in the service. In the Seventeenth Lawrence had sixty men, Company I being largely recruited from Lawrence, and of these nine did not return. In the Twenty-sixth, Companies F and I were mainly composed of Lawrence men; the loss in this regiment being twenty-one. To the Thirtieth Regiment Lawrence furnished sixty-seven men, the majority of Company G; of these twenty-two were killed or died in service. To the Fortieth Regiment Lawrence furnished a full company (C) of one hundred men, of whom nineteen were killed or died in service. In the Forty-first, which became the Third Cavalry, Company B was largely composed of Lawrence men, ninety-five in all, with a loss of sixteen, nine of whom were killed in action. In the Fortieth New York (Mozart Regiment), one company was recruited by Captain William Sullivan, of Lawrence. This regiment suffered severe loss and Captain Sullivan was killed at Fredericksburg.

In the nine months' troops Lawrence was again represented by two companies in the Fourth Massachusetts, one in the Forty-eighth, and a few in the Fiftieth and in the Sixtieth Infantry, one hundred days' service; also in the First, Fourth, Sixth, Seventh, Ninth and Fifteenth Light Artillery, in the Second and Third Heavy Artillery, three years' service; in the Fourth Heavy Artillery, one year's service, fifty men; in the First Battalion Heavy Artillery, three years; in the First and Second Cavalry; in the Fifth Cavalry (colored) by one representative bearing the honored name of George Washington; and in the First Battalion of Frontier Cavalry attached to the Twenty-sixth New York Cavalry for service on the Northern frontier. Besides these, one hundred and seventeen men enlisted in the regular army and a considerable number in the navy, and some in other State organizations, supplying to the Union force twenty-four hundred and ninety-seven men, or two hundred and twenty-four more than were required by all demands of the government.

While men were eager and earnest to do their duty to their country the ladies were no less patriotic. Meetings were immediately formed for supplying the wants of those who had sprung to arms at the shortest notice, and who had sacrificed all the comforts of peaceful homes for the uncertain and unaccustomed life of the soldier.

Some regular associations had been formed on the day that the President issued his first call for seventy-five thousand men. Sewing circles were formed all over the Northern States to prepare clothing, bandages, lint, havelocks, &c., and to furnish delicacies for the hospitals. Lawrence was not behind others in these patriotic efforts. But, as the armies increased

in numbers and the war assumed its gigantic proportions, system became necessary. The ladies of New York City early formed the Woman's Central Relief Society, which was the germ of the Sanitary Commission. Then branches of this association were formed in different parts of the country, the New England Branch having headquarters in Boston with Miss Abby W. May as chairman, and it was as an adjunct to this society that the Lawrence Soldiers' Aid Society was formed. Early in 1862 some Boston friends applied to Mrs. George D. Cabot to inaugurate the movement here, a work which she would have been glad to undertake but for physical inability. Mrs. Cabot called to her aid Mrs. George A. Walton, a lady full-charged with the feeling of the time, and of marked executive power. After consultation with Mrs. Daniel Saunders a call was issued for a meeting of ladies at the City Hall Council Room; the room was filled and an organization at once effected with Mrs. Walton for president, Mrs. Saunders for vice-president and Miss Annie Garland (now Mrs. C. N. Chamberlain), secretary and treasurer. Mrs. Walton and Mrs. Saunders served till the end of the war; Miss Garland till October, when she was succeeded by Miss Ella Payne, who continued in office till the disbanding of the society.

Their first act was to levy an assessment on each member of twenty-five cents; in this way fifty-two dollars was raised with which to purchase materials and to commence work. Contributions from individuals followed, contributions from the various churches and contributions from people employed in the mills. A public entertainment and a Union Fair yielded good results. Without going into minute details, the results of the society may be summed up as follows: Forwarded to the Commission, 2630 articles of clothing, 964 handkerchiefs, 774 articles of bedding, 54 boxes of lint and bandages, 2 boxes of books, besides canned fruit, jellies, old cotton and linen, sponges, soap, &c. Financial statement: received from churches, $359.26; from individuals, $414.28; proceeds of entertainment, $227.45; proceeds of Union Fair, $6293.32; ten cent contributions, $795.64; total, $8089.95. Of this amount, $2447.32 was expended for materials, $3500 was given to the Sanitary Commission, $500 was given to the Christian Commission, and the balance to Rev. George P. Wilson, the city missionary for soldiers or their families in Lawrence.

The finance committee of the Union Fair were Dr. William D. Lamb, Rufus Reed and William R. Pedrick. The executive committee consisted of the above-named, with George P. Wilson (city missionary), Patrick Murphy, Mrs. Daniel Saunders, Mrs. George R. Rowe, Mrs. George A. Walton and Mrs. A. J. French.

The city government was prompt in appropriating money to meet all necessary demands, expending during its continuance, exclusive of State aid, over $115,000, and for State aid to the families of volunteers, afterward repaid by the State, more than $192,000.

It would be invidious to attempt an account of the services of individuals or companies, of their bravery in battle, or the hardships endured in the prisons of the South. These alone would make a volume, interesting as a novel, and which would prove the saying that "truth is stranger than fiction."

It may be pardonable, however, to mention one regiment which, for the extent of its travels and the number of its engagements, was somewhat notable. The Forty-first Infantry was mustered in November 1, 1862, and served under General Banks in Louisiana. In April, 1863, at Opelousas, they were converted into mounted riflemen, drawing their horses from the surrounding country. June 17, 1863, they were joined by three unattached companies of Massachusetts cavalry, and the whole body of thirteen hundred were organized as the Third Cavalry and served in the Red River campaign. June 24, 1864, they were dismounted by special order, armed as infantry again, left Louisiana July 15th with orders to report to General Grant at Fort Monroe, Va., serving six months as infantry in Virginia. February 15, 1865, remounted as cavalry, and May 23d went to Washington and took part in the grand review of the army by the President. June 14th were sent to St. Louis and thence to Fort Leavenworth, Kansas, on account of the Indian troubles on the Western plains, and on the 25th turned over their horses to the Fourth Michigan Cavalry. On the 21st of July the regiment was consolidated into six companies, Captain Charles Stone, of Lawrence, commanding Company D. On the 23d horses were drawn for the regiment and orders were received to report at Fort Kearney, Nebraska. August 23d received six months' pay and on the 24th were ordered to report to Major-General Connor, at Julesburg, Colorado, reaching Cottonwood Springs August 28th. They returned and were mustered out of service October 8, 1865, having marched fifteen thousand miles and having fought in more than thirty engagements.

Roll of Lawrence Volunteers in the Army and Navy, who were killed in battle or died while in service in the Civil War:

Adams, Walter T.....killed Nov. 9, 1863, White Plains, La.
Adams, James..... died April 4, 1863, Baton Rouge, La.
Alison, Charles.....died April 16, 1863, Baton Rouge, La.
Ames, Thomas C.....killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
Archibald, William.....died February 21, 1863.
Armstrong, Thomas.....died October 3, 1863, Baton Rouge, La.
Atkinson, Robert J.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Aylward, William.....died Dec. 12, 1862, Philadelphia.
Baker, Edward..... .....died Aug. 12, 1863, Baton Rouge.
Barr, Robert G.....killed Dec. 12, 1862, Tanner's Ford, Va.
Barker, Asa.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Barry, Michael S... .....died in prison at Danville, Va.
Bateman, Samuel.....died Aug. 22, 1862, Carrollton, La.
Bean, Chas. T.....died May 22, 1864, Richmond, Va.
Berry, Charles.....died Nov. 14, 1863, New York.
Berry, Horace S.....died Oct. 28, 1862, Miner's Hill, Va.
Bingham, James.....died April 25, 1863, Baton Rouge.
Blood, Milton H..... .....missing in battle May 16, 1864.
Bodwell, Leonard..... .....died Dec. 26, 1862.
Branch, Geo. L. F.....died Jan. 14, 1864, Beaufort, S. C.
Breen, Timothy.....died in the hands of the enemy.
Brown, Moses.....died March 12, 1863, New Orleans.

Brown, Stephen.....died Nov. 26, 1863, Folly Island, S. C.
Buckley, James.....died of wounds July 25, 1862.
Burns, James F.....killed September 1, 1862, Chantilly, Va.
Bullen, Joseph W.....died Oct. 26, 1864, Andersonville.
Bushel, Francis A.....killed May 11, 1861, Ashland, Va.
Carlton, Edward.....killed June 3, 1864, Cold Harbor, Va.
Carr, Geo. W.....died Feb. 19, 1864, Richmond, Va.
Chandler, Gustavus A...drowned July 3, 1864, Mississippi River.
Clarendon, Edw. H..died of wounds Oct. 17, 1864, Winchester, Va.
Clark, Miles.....died Oct. 3, 1863, Franklin, La.
Clifford, Lucius.....died May 2, 1865.
Clines, Patrick.....killed Dec. 13, 1862, Fredericksburg, Va.
Cogger, John.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Collins, Wm. H...died of wounds June 17, 1864, Washington, D. C.
Connor, Thomas.....died
Connors, John...died of wounds June 17, 1864, Washington, D. C.
Cook, George.....died Aug. 24, 1863, Fort Monroe, Va.
Cooper, Thomas H.....died Dec. 5, 1862, New Orleans.
Crawshaw, Richard.....killed June 14, 1863, Port Hudson, La.
Creaden, John.....missing in action July 2, 1863, Gettysburg.
Craffy, Chas. H.....died Aug. 8, 1862, New Orleans.
Crosby, Robert.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Cummings, Geo. P..died of wounds Sept. 9, 1864, Alexandria, Va.
Cune, Thomas.....missing in action Dec. 13, 1862.
Curry, John.....died July 14, 1862, Baltimore.
Curran, Patrick.....killed June 27, 1862, Gaines' Mills, Va.
Cushing, William.....died of wounds July 16, 1864.
Cutter, Chas. H.....died May 30, 1864.
Cutter, Geo. S.....killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
Dacey, Jeremiah.....killed April 8, 1864, Sabine Cross-Roads, La.
Danahy, Patrick.....died Jan. 20, 1863, New Orleans.
Davis, Albert A.....died of wounds June 21, 1864, Washington.
Davis, Thomas B.....died May 31, 1864, Andersonville.
Davis, Benjamin.....killed May 10, 1864, Laurel Hill, Va.
Davis, George.....died Oct. 4, 1862.
Donovan, John.....died of wounds Sept. 17, 1862, Antietam.
Donnelly, Patrick.....died Jan. 20, 1863, New Orleans.
Dow, Wesley W.....died Aug. 11, 1863, Port Hudson, La.
Doyle, John.....killed May, 1864, Yellow Bayou, La.
Drew, Israel L.....died Nov. 6, 1861, Annapolis, Md.
Driscoll, John.....died June 12, 1865, New Orleans.
Duffy, Owen.....died
Durgin, Alexander.....died May 21, 1863, New Orleans.
Durgin, Geo. C.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Edmundson, James.....died Aug. 18, 1863, Cleveland, Ohio.
Emmons, Charles L.....died
Farrington, Geo.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania, Va.
Farren, Joseph.....died Aug. 16, 1863, Baton Rouge, La.
Finnessey, Thomas.....died Alexandria, Va.
Foye, John C.....died June 12, 1862, New Orleans.
French, Chase C.....died Aug. 1, 1863, Port Hudson, La.
Frazier, Geo. C.....killed June 1, 1864, Cold Harbor, Va.
Freeman, John B.....died
Gallagher, Hugh...died of wounds June 13, 1862, South Carolina.
Gallison, John B.....died Jan. 6, 1865, Lawrence.
Garland, James S.....died Jan. 20, 1862, Fort Albany, Va.
Garrity, John.....killed June 27, 1862.
Gauffy, Charles M.....died Aug. 18, 1862, New Orleans.
Gilleland, James.....died Oct. 19, 1864, in rebel prison.
Glidden, Jasper F.....killed Sept. 19, 1864, Winchester, Va.
Golden, Michael.....died Nov. 17, 1863.
Golden, James.....died
Goodall, George.....died Jan. 6, 1865, Philadelphia.
Goodwin, Chas.....missing in action.
Gray, Timothy, Jr.....died Dec. 2, 1862, Sharpsburg, Md.
Gray, Alonzo.....died July 16, 1862, New Orleans.
Greenwood, Paul.....killed June 27, 1862, Gaines' Mills, Va.
Griffin, Jas. R..went down with his vessel before Vicksburg, Miss.
Gunning, Thomas...ship "Congress;" killed in action with the "Merrimack," Hampton, Va.
Hale, John.....died Oct. 18, 1864, Andersonville Prison.
Hall, Chas. A.....died Feb. 12, 1865, Fort Reno, D. C.
Hall, Wm. S.....died Sept. 30, 1864, Andersonville.
Hall, Cornelius.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Ham, Timothy.....died Feb. 11, 1865, Salisbury Prison, N. C.
Harding, Dennis.....missing in the battle of Chattanooga, 1864.
Harding, Michael.....died of wounds July 3, 1863, Gettysburg.
Haskell, Charles.....died of wounds June 19, 1864.
Hayes, William.....died March 1, 1865, Lawrence.
Hayes, Patrick.....killed June 15, 1862, John's Island, S. C.
Hayes, John F.
Helmer, John.....died of wounds, Lawrence.
Henderson, Roderick.....died Aug. 16, 1864.
Hickey, John.....killed 1862, Bull Run.
Hill, Patrick.....died May 5, 1865, Morehead City, N. C.
Hinman, Frank.....died June 17, 1863, Aldie, Va.
Hogle, Wm. H.....died Sept. 5, 1863, Fort Albany, Va.
Holland, Thomas.....died June 15, 1864, in rebel prison.
Holt, Alfred A.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Holt, Wm. T...died of wounds July 12, 1863, in the hands of the enemy.
Horton, Geo.....died May 9, 1863, New Orleans.
Houghton, Geo.....died July 30, 1862, Baton Rouge, La.
Howard, Chas W.....died Oct., 1862, Davis Island, N. Y.
Hughes, Michael.
Huntington, Stephen D.....died July 28, 1862, New Orleans.
Hutchins, John M.....died June 30, 1862, Savage Station, Va.
Irish, Chas. S.....killed March 25, 1865, Petersburg, Va.
Jackman, Frank D.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Johnson, Elisha B.....died May 17, 1862.
Jones, Fred. O.....died May 10, 1864, Davis Island, N. Y.
Joy, William H.
Joy, Henry G.
Jones, Irwin W.....died Mar. 2, 1865, Annapolis, Md.
Jones, Thomas.....died Mar. 18, 1865, Philadelphia.
Kelley, Timothy.....killed in action.
Kelley, Edward J.....killed June 3, 1864, Cold Harbor, Va.
Keefe, John.....died in prison, Andersonville, Ga.
Kenny, Edward.....killed Oct. 19, 1864, Cedar Creek, Va.
Kenny, John.....killed Dec. 13, 1862, Fredericksburg, Va.
Kenny, M. B.....killed in the battle of the Wilderness, Va.
Kent, Geo. G.....killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
Killoran, Michael.....died Apr. 2, 1864, Andersonville.
Kimball, Joseph W.....killed June 22, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
Knox, James R.....died Nov., 1864, Florence, S. C.
La Bounty, Franklin.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Lamphere, Wm. N.....died Oct. 13, 1863, Folly Island, S. C.
Lane, Wm. A.....died May 16, 1863, Fort Monroe, Va.
Langley, Geo. W.....died July 4, 1864, Baltimore, Md.
Lavally, Joseph.....died Newbern, N. C., June 24.
Learned, Jonas G.....died Sept. 2, 1864, Andersonville.
Learry, Simon.....died May 22, 1862.
Lovering, John.....killed July 3, 1863, Gettysburg.
Lovejoy, James K.....killed Sept. 19, 1864, Winchester, Va.
Makin, Thomas.
McBride, Felix.....died Nov. 8, 1863, New Orleans.
McCabe, James.....died Oct. 8, 1863, New Orleans.
McCarthy, Dennis, accidentally killed Jan. 27, 1863, Suffolk, Va.
McCarthy, Timothy.....died Oct., 1862, Philadelphia.
McCormick, Patrick.
McDonald, Michael.....died Sept. 29, 1863, Port Hudson, La.
McDonald, John.....died Aug. 19, 1862, New Orleans.
McGowan, Alden T.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
McKean, Wm. J.....died Nov. 28, 1863, St. Augustine, Fla.
McNamara, Jeremiah....died of wounds Nov. 28, 1864, at home.
McNamara, Patrick.....died Apr. 13, 1864, in rebel prison.
McFee, Angus.....died Oct., 1864, Fort Delaware.
McQuade, John.....killed June 27, 1862, Gaines' Mills, Va.
Melvin, John H.....died Oct. 13, 1863, Fort Albany, Va.
Melvin, Samuel.....died Sept. 20, 1864, Andersonville.
Merrill, Geo. W.....died Apr. 29, 1862, New Orleans.
Merrill, Frank H.....killed May 16, 1864, Drury's Bluff, Va.
Merrow, Geo. W.....died of wounds May 24, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Merrow, George O.....died June 28, 1862, New Orleans.
Mills, James H.....died June 16, 1863, Brashear City, La.
Minnehan, Michael.....died Nov., 1862.
Moore, Joseph W.....killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
Morgan, William.....died Aug. 24, 1863.
Morgan, Geo. W.....killed Apr. 8, 1864, Sabine Cross-Roads, La.
Moriarty, Daniel.....killed July 13, 1863, Donaldsonville, La.
Morrison, Alexander.....died May 11, 1864, New Orleans.
Morse, Roswell E., died of wounds July 9, 1864, Fairfax Seminary, Va.

Munger, Fred.....died Mar. 9, 1864, Hilton Head, S. C.
Murdock, Buchanan.....killed Oct. 19, 1864, Cedar Creek, Va.
Murphy, Stephen.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Murphy, Jeremiah.....died May 9, 1865, Raleigh, N. C.
Murphy, James.....died Oct. 18, 1863, New Orleans.
Murphy, Philip.
Nason, Hiram P., died of wounds Aug. 12, 1864, at New Haven, Ct.
Needham, Sumner H.....killed in Baltimore, April 19, 1861.
Newton, Edwin E....killed Apr. 8, 1864, Sabine Cross-Roads, La.
Nichols, Wm. W.....died Oct. 26, 1863, New Orleans.
Noonan, Patrick.....killed May 27, 1863, Port Hudson, La.
O'Brien, James.....died Oct. 8, 1864, Winchester, Va.
O'Brien, Henry.....died Dec. 6, 1863, Baton Rouge, La.
O'Brien, Thomas.....killed July 2, 1863, Gettysburg.
O'Learry, John.....killed May 12, 1862, Newbern, N. C.
O'Doyle, Michael.....killed June 17, 1865.
Packard, Henry.....died Jan. 29, 1862, off Warsaw Island, Ga.
Page, Herman L.....died of wounds July 7, 1864, Washington.
Parker, Dennis M.....died Oct. 10, 1862, New Orleans.
Parks, John.....died Oct. 30, 1864, Newbern, N. C.
Parshley, Joseph K.....died at sea Jan. 20, 1863.
Peaslee, Alpheus, died of wounds Sept. 18, 1862, Gaines' Mills, Va.
Phelps, S. G.....died July 22, 1864, Andersonville.
Pierce, Turner E..... .... died Oct 21, 1862.
Pike, Wm. H.....died of wounds June 5, 1863, Baton Rouge.
Pray, Oliver L.....died July 5, 1862, New Orleans.
Quimby, Chas. W.....drowned Apr. 2, 1862, Ship Island, Miss.
Quimby, Orin J.....died Apr. 25, 1865, Baltimore.
Quinn, Thomas.
Rafferty, Frank.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Rawson, Orlando.....died Aug. 16, 1863, Indianapolis.
Reed, John.....died of wounds May 18, 1864.
Reed, William.....killed May 16, 1864, Drury's Bluff, Va.
Remick, C. H.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Reno, Chas. J.....died at sea, Jan. 22, 1863.
Richardson, J. Milton.....missing in action May 16, 1864.
Richer, Geo. W.....died Dec. 8, 1862, New Orleans.
Richer, Noah C. .....died Feb. 6, 1863, Acquia Creek, Va.
Riddell, Walter S., drowned Dec. 27, 1862, Long Island Sound.
Ripley, Thomas K.
Roaf, Thomas.....died Nov. 17, 1862, Fort Warren, Boston.
Rolfe, Frank A.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Rowe, Asa.....died Aug. 10, 1864, Andersonville.
Russell, Ziba H.....killed May 16, 1864, Fort Darling, Va.
Ryder, Stanley.....died of wounds June 12, 1864, Washington.
Searles, Warren P.
Shea, Thomas.....died May 31, 1865, Portsmouth Grove, R. I.
Shepard, Augustus.....died Aug. 3, 1863, Port Hudson, La.
Short, James.....killed Sept. 1, 1862, Chantilly, Va.
Simonds, Benjamin W.....died Jan. 29, 1863, Harper's Ferry, Va.
Slattery, John.
Slattery, Jeremiah.....died of wounds July 15, 1863, Gettysburg.
Small, John F.....died of wounds June 29, 1864.
Smith, Stewart.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Smith, C. Allen..... killed in action Aug. 3, 1863, Jackson, La.
Smith, Geo. W.....died July 18, 1862, New Orleans.
Smith, Michael S.....died July 17, 1862, New Orleans.
Smith, Charles W.....died Oct. 18, 1863, Folly Island, S. C.
Spaulding, Wm. H... .....killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
Stafford, Geo. W.....died Nov. 10, 1862, Washington.
Stead, James.....died June 4, 1863, Baton Rouge.
Steele, Wm. H.
Stevens, Geo. F.....died at sea Sept. 16, 1866.
Stevens, Gorham P., died of wounds received at Chancellorsville, prisoner.
Stevens, William O.
Stoddard, Haverly A.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Strong, Henry G.....died at sea Mar., 1864.
Sullivan, Wm.....killed Dec. 13, 1862, Fredericksburg, Va.
Sullivan, John.....died of wound May 22, 1864.
Sullivan, George.....died Aug. 30, 1864, Andersonville.
Sullivan, Michael, died of wounds June 29, 1862, Savage Station, Va.
Sullivan, John.....died Oct. 20, 1862, New Orleans.
Tainter, William H.....killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
Taylor, James H ..... died Oct. 22, 1863, Beaufort, S. C.
Thompson, Andrew G.....died Oct. 30, 1862, at home.
Thompson, John B..... killed June 3, 1864.
Thorne, Francis R.....died June 28, 1864, New Orleans.
Thyng, Daniel G.....died Aug. 19, 1863, Laconia, N. H.
Varnum, Isaac S.....died Mar. 5, 1863, Carrollton, La.
Wallace, Webster W., died of wounds July 26, 1864, at Ashburnham, Mass.
Walsh, Martin..... died Oct. 1, 1864, Danville, Va.
Walsh, Michael.
Washburn, Eleazer.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Webb, James.....killed May 3, 1863, Chancellorsville.
Webster, Justus W.....killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
Welsh, Patrick.....killed Aug. 29, 1862, Bull Run, Va.
Wheeler, Geo. W.....died July 25, 1862, New Orleans.
White, Thomas.....died Dec. 12, 1862, New Orleans.
White, Calvin M..... died Aug. 27, 1862, New Orleans.
Whittemore, Daniel.....died June 8, 1864, Philadelphia.
Whitten, Joseph L..... ... died Aug. 10, 1863, Baton Rouge.
Wiggin, Mayhew C.....died Nov. 8, 1864, Andersonville.
Wing, Thomas A.....died June 2, 1863, Brashear City, La.
Withington, James..... killed in action May 15, 1864.
Yeaton, Daniel S.....died Nov. 28 1862, New Orleans.
Yeaw, Leonard..... died Aug. 25, 1862, New Orleans.
Yore, Patrick.....died Sept. 13, 1862, New Orleans.

SOLDIERS' AND SAILORS' MONUMENT.—A monument to the memory of the soldiers and sailors of Lawrence was erected on the Common in 1881. The initiatory steps for this purpose were taken by Post 39, of the Grand Army of the Republic, in September, 1879, and five hundred dollars were contributed by the members; but it was early evident that the government or the citizens must be enlisted in the enterprise, in order to build a structure that should be appropriate and worthy of the city. At a meeting of citizens held November 13, 1879, a committee of eleven, consisting of Hon. William A. Russell, Charles D. McDuffie, Emily G. Wetherbee, Corp. J. Clinton White, David C. Richardson, Thomas Cornelie, Robert H. Tewksbury, Frederick T. Lane, H. Francis Dunning, Everard H. Kelley and Captain Daniel F. Dolan, was appointed to consider the subject and report. This committee reported to a largely attended meeting of citizens November 24th that a monument of granite to be placed in some central position on Lawrence Common was the only memorial structure for which funds could be readily obtained, and the only form that would not involve questions of location and future management. Their report was very generally endorsed, and it was further decided that it would be desirable to ask for contributions in very small sums, that the monument might be literally the people's monument to the memory of their dead. The committee were authorized to add to their number the names of other citizens, and an association was at once formed under the name of "The Monument Association;" President, Robert H. Tewksbury; Vice-Presidents, John R. Rollins and Thomas Cornelie; Secretary, Frank O. Kendall; Treasurer, Henry F. Hopkins; Trustees to receive and invest the funds, Hon. James R. Simpson, Hezekiah Plummer, Waldo L. Abbott, Joseph Shattuck, Frederick E. Clarke, James S. Hutchinson, Byron Truell, John Hart, Hon. Edmund R. Hayden.

General Committee, consisting of the original eleven members and Major Edward A. Fiske, Major George S. Merrill,* Hon. John K. Tarbox, Joseph Walworth, Dr. David Dana, Rev. John P. Gilmore, Granville M. Stoddard, John Fallon, Joseph P. Battles, Robert Scott, James A. Treat, William R. Spaulding, Colonel Chase Philbrick, James H. Eaton, William R. Pedrick, Hon. Henry K. Webster, J. C. Bowker, John L. Royer, Colonel J. D. Drew, John H. Gilman, Hon. Caleb Saunders, Captain Horatio G. Herrick, Dyer S. Hall, James E. Shepard, Adolph Vorholz, Rev. E. R. Sanborn, David C. Crockett, James Lane, Patrick Donahue, R. A. Harmon, Lewis G. Holt, D. F. Riley, Albert Emerson, Michael Carney, James Noonan, Colonel L. D. Sargent, W. H. Coan, D. F. Robinson, Hon. John Breen, Miss Brassil, Mrs. C. U. Dunning, Mrs. E. P. Poor, M. B. Townsend, John Shehan, R. H. Seaver and E. J. Leonard.

Subsequently a society of ladies was organized in aid of the association, with the following officers: President, Mrs. A. J. French; Vice-President, Mrs. E. P. Poor; Treasurer, Mrs. J. D. Drew; Secretary, Mrs. J. E. Shepard; and active work was at once commenced. The several corporations, by their agents and treasurers, generously contributed three thousand dollars. The school children, through the efforts of Captain Herrick, by a penny and dime contribution, raised over two hundred dollars. A concert by the Ladies' Choral Union, under the direction of Mr. Reuben Merrill, added about two hundred dollars more, and the remainder was contributed by the citizens generally, in the mills, work-shops, stores, and in the post-office, police and other departments of the city, the Grand Army members raising their donation to seven hundred dollars. The total cost of the monument was $11,111.75,—the total number of subscribers being nine thousand one hundred and thirty-six, and in this list may be found the names of three of the Chinese residents.

The sub-committee finally appointed, to select the design of a monument and carry out the work were Major George S. Merrill, Major E. A. Fiske, Hon. R. H. Tewksbury, Hon. E. R. Hayden, Dr. David Dana, Colonel Chase Philbrick and Captain John R. Rollins.

The sub-committee received many plans from some of our best builders and artists, many of them beautiful, but far exceeding the means at the disposal of the committee. Three important matters were considered: 1st, To select good and durable material; 2d, To agree upon a design acceptable in itself, proper for the locality and not exceeding in cost the amount of funds actually at their disposal; 3d, To place the work in reliable and responsible hands.

The contract for the stone was finally awarded to Messrs. Frederick & Field, of Quincy, Mass., and for the bronze to Maurice J. Power, of New York City, and both parties executed their work in a very prompt and satisfactory manner. The crowning figure of the monument representing "Union" was designed by David Richards and modeled at the foundry of Judge Power. The figure was cut from Concord granite by Mr. Theodore M. Perry at the granite works in Quincy, who also executed the carved work on the capital. The shield bears the legend of the Lawrence municipal seal, "Industria," and the emblematic bee.

On the buttresses, at the base of the column stand three figures in bronze; the first, representing an infantry soldier, is nearly a duplicate of one in Albany, N. Y., was designed and modeled by Henry Ellicott, of New York. Two others, one representing a sailor, the other a dismounted cavalry officer, were modeled by William R. O'Donovan, at the foundry of Mr. Power, where all were cast.

The monument was dedicated and transferred to the city on the evening of November 2d, amid a brilliant display of fire-works and calcium lights, and was accepted by the mayor, Hon. Henry K. Webster, in a short but very appropriate address.

The monument bears the following inscriptions:

"Erected in 1881 by the people of Lawrence
in honor of Soldiers & Sailors
who fought for Liberty & Union.
1861–1865."

The northeasterly space has the following lettering in bronze:

"Time brightens the record of patriotism
Establishes justice
And honors sacrifice."

The easterly tablet bears the following:

"In memory of brave men
Whose sacrifice and death
preserved the Union."

Three bronze tablets contain the names of those who died in service or were killed in battle.

LIST OF LAWRENCE SOLDIERS, (as compiled from the Adjutant General's Reports).

Abercrombie, John.....Co. C 50th
Abbott, James G.....Lt. Co. H 4th
Abbott, Geo. A.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Abbott, Wm. H.....2d H. A.
Adams, John R.. .....Co. K 6th & 3d Cav.
Adams, Walter T., Co. B 3d Cav.; killed Nov. 9, 1863, White Plains, La.
Adams, James, Co. B 4th ; d. Apr. 4, 1863, Baton Rouge.
Adler, Christian..... .....Co. I 6th
Aiken, Danl. C.....unassigned
Ahearn, Wm.....8th Unat Co.
Airgood, John.....V. R. C.
Alison, Charles, Co. H 4th ; d. Apr. 16, 1863, Baton Rouge.
Aldred, James.....Co. B 4th
Allen, Henry H.....Co. F 6th
Allen, Wm.....Co. F 26th
Ames, Charles J.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Ames, Thomas C., Co. K 1st H. A.; killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg.
Ambrose, David.....Co. B 3d Cav.; dead
Annan, Frank.....1st Lt. Co. K 1st H. A.
Anderson, Currie.....Co. B 4th
Archer, Geo. N., 1st Sergt. Co. K 6th & 8th Inf.
Archibald, Wm .....d. Feb. 21, 1863, Lawrence
Armstrong, Thos., Co. D 30th ; d. Oct. 3, 1863, Baton Rouge.
Ashworth, Thos.....8th Unat. Co.
Ashworth, Chas.....Sergt. Co. K 1st H. A.
Ashworth, Ralph, Co. C 40th ; d. Sept. 29, 1872.
Askland, James A.....3d U. S. Inf.
Aspell, Patrick K.....1st U. S. A.
Atkinson, Robt. J., Co. K 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Atkinson, Saml. W.....8th Unat. Co.
Aylwood, Martin.....8th Unat. Co.
Ayer, Augustus S.....Co. I 26th
Aylward, Wm., Co. K 40th N. Y.; d. Dec. 12, 1862, Philadelphia.

Babb, Joseph A.....Co. K 6th & Co. H 4th
Bailey, Geo. F.....Co. F 6th & Co. D 1st Cav.
Bailey, Romanzo .....Co. F 6th
Bailey, Wm. A.....Co. F 6th & Co. B 3d Cav.
Bailey, Marcus M.....Co. G 11th
Bailey, Warren.....8th Unat. Co.
Bailey, Ambrose.....Co. I 26th
Bailey, Geo. B.....Co. C 40th
Bagley, Thomas.....Co. K 6th
Bagley, Wm. M.....Co. C 40th
Baker, Edward, Co. B 3d Cav.; d. Aug. 12, '63, Baton Rouge.
Baker, John A.....2d Lt. 6th L. Bat.
Ballard, Geo. W.....8th Unat. Co.
Barrie, Alexander.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Barr, Robert G., 2d Lt. Co. I 6th ; killed Dec. 12 1862, Tanner's Ford, Va.
Barr, Danl. A.....8th Unat. Co.
Bardsley, Wm. E .....Co. I 6th
Barber, Asa, Co. B 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Barry, Joseph.....Co. I 9th
Barry, Dennis.....Co. F 26th
Barry, James.....Co. H 4th
Barry, Michael, Co. F 57th ; d. in prison, Danville, Va.
Barry, James.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Barry, Thos.....Co. F 48th
Barrett, Robt.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Barlow, Alfred.....Co. C 50th
Barnes, Timothy P ....Co. F 26th
Barnes, James E.....Co. F 26th
Barnes, Wm.....Co. B 4th
Bartlett, Alonzo M.....Co. B 1st H. A.
Bartlett, Marcus M.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Bartlett, Geo. A .....Q. M. S. 1st H. A.
Bates, Henry C.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Batchelder, Moulton W., 1st Lt. Co. K 6th & 2d Lt. Co. C 40th.
Batchelder, Henry W..... .....Co. C 40th
Bateman, Saml., Co. G 30th ; d. Aug. 22, 1862, Carrollton, La.
Baxter, John.....Co. B 4th
Beadle, Bodwell D.....Co. H 4th
Beal, Henry.....Co. F 6th
Beal, Melvin, 2d Lt. Co. F 6th, Capt., Lt. Col. & Col.
Bean, Josiah.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Bean, John.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Bean, Jeremiah R.....Co. B 22d
Bean, Charles T., Co. C 40th ; d. May 22, '64, Richmond, Va.
Beardsley, John B., 2d & 1st Lt. & Capt. 1st H. A.
Beattie, Wm.....Co. E 3d H. A.
Belrose, Geo.....Co. K 3d H. A.
Bell, Anderson..... .....Co. I 11th
Bell, Thos.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Benson, John F.....1st Sergt. Co. H 4th
Bennett, Geo.....Co. H 4th
Begley, Wm. H.....V. R. C.
Begor, Lewis.....Sergt. Co. K 1st H. A.
Belcher, Chas. I....Co. F 6th & Co. K 1st H. A.
Berry, Chas , Co. K 1st H. A.; d. Nov. 14, '63, N. Y.
Berry, Chas., Jr.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Berry, Horace S.....Co. 16th
Berry, Horace S , Co. C 40th ; d. Oct. 28, 1862, Miner's Hill, Va.
Bessner, Albert.....3d U. S. Inf.
Bethel, Joseph, Jr .....Co. C 40th
Bethel, Joseph.....Co. B 3d Cav.; dead
Binns, Cyrus..... Co. M 1st H. A.
Bingham, James, Co. H 4th ; d. Apr. 25, 1863, Baton Rouge, La.
Birch, Thos.....Co. F 48th
Blaisdell, Ralph.....9th Lt. Bat.
Blake, Uriah.....Co. K 3d H. A.
Blake, Richard.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Blake, John.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Blanchard, Geo .....Co. I 6th
Blood, Milton H., Co, I 6th & Co. C 40th; missing in battle May 16, '64.
Blyth, David H.....8th Unat. Co.
Blyth, Wm.....Co. K 6th
Blyth, Jonathan.....Co. F 48th
Boardman, E. K.....Sergt. Co. K 1st H. A.
Boardman, James.....Co. B 4th
Bodwell, Stephen B., Co. C 50th & Co. F 1st H. A.
Bodwell, Leonard, Co. B 48th ; d. Dec. 26, '62.
Bodwell, Geo. A.....Co. G 30th
Bohonnon, Michael.....Co. F 16th
Booreman, Fredk.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Boston, Gorham P .....Co. F 26th
Boyle, John.....Co. K 6th & Co. B 4th
Bower, Robert.....Co. C 50th
Bonney, Darius.....V. R. C.
Boswell, James.....1st D. C. Inf.
Brachett, Darius G.....Co. A Frontier Cav.
Bradley, Geo. V.....Co. I 1st H. A.
Brachett, Danl. G.....Co. I 6th
Brady, Frank.....Co. I 17th
Brady, James.....Co. I 17th
Brady, Hugh..... .....3d U. S. Inf.
Bradbury, James.....Co. C 40th
Bradshaw, Enoch.....Co. B 4th
Branch, Geo. L. F...Co. C. 40th ; died Jan. 14, 1864, Beaufort, S. C.
Brannon, Hugh.. ....Co. C 40th.
Brannon, John.....Co. K 6th and Co. B 4th
Breen, Timothy...Co. G 2d H. A.; died in the hands of the enemy.
Brigham, Stephen H.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Briggs, Solon..... Co. B 22d.
Briggs, Simeon.....7th Lt. B.
Brierly, John B.....Co. K 6th
Brisbois, Gabriel A .....2d U. S. Cav.
Brennan, Kyron.....8th U. S. Cav.
Brennan, James.....Co. F 26th
Brock, Leonard.....Co. C 40th
Brown, Ambrose A..... .....Co. K 1st H. A.
Brown, Otis D.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Brown, John B..... Co. B 3d Cav.
Brown, Moses...Co. B 3d Cav.; died March 12, 1863, New Orleans.
Brown, Francis E.....Co. A 16th
Brown, James H.....Co. I 17th
Brown, John.....Co. D 20th
Brown, John.....Co. C 40th & V. R. C.
Brown, Frank.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Brown, James P.....Co. H 4th
Brown, Chas. S.....Co. F 48th
Brown, Joseph R.....9th Lt. B.
Brown, Stephen...Co. C 40th ; died Nov. 26, 1863, Folly Island, S. C.
Brown, Elias.....V. R. C.
Bruton, Robert.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Bryant, Dan'l.....V. R. C.
Bryant, Henry.....Co. I 17th
Bryant, James L.....8th Unattached
Buckley, James...Co. D 20th ; died of wounds July 25, 1862.
Broughton, Sam'l...Co. K 6th, Co. C 40th, Sergt. Co. D Frontier Cav.
Buckley, James.....Co. B 4th
Buckley, Robert.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Buckley, Joseph.....Co. K 6th
Bunby, Joseph.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Burbank, Geo. W.....Co. G 12th
Burbank, Nathan.....V. R. C.
Burnham, Edw'd F.....8th Unattached
Burnham, Joseph A.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Burnham, Wm. H.. .....Co. C Fr. Cav.
Burke, Philip..... .....Co. F 26th
Burke, John..... .....Co. F 28th & V. R. C.
Burke, David.....Co. B 57th
Burke, Edward.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Burke, Patrick.....Co. F 48th & Co. B Fr. Cav.
Burns, James C.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Burns, Peter.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Burns, Wm. .....Co. I 9th & V. R. C.
Burns, Michael.....1st Lt. 17th
Burns, James F...Co. K 40th N. Y.; killed Sept. 1, 1862, Chantilly, Va.
Burns, Patrick.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Burns, Patrick.....1st U. S. Cav.
Burns, Patrick.....8th U. S. Cav.
Bullen, Joseph W...Co. C 40th ; died Oct. 26, 1864, Andersonville Prison.
Burbank, Nathan.....V. R. C.
Burrill, Augustus.....Co. F 6th & Co. F 26th
Bushee, Francis A...Co. F 1st Cav.; killed May 11, 1864, Ashland, Va.

Buswell, James C...Co. F 1st H. A., 2d Lt., 1st Lt. & Capt.
Butler, Geo. F...Co. K 1st H. A., Sergt., 1st & 2d Lt.
Butler, Edward.....Co. A 1st H. A.
Butler, Timothy.....Co. K 2d H. A.
Butler, Austin S...Co. H 4th, Co. I 60th & Co. D Fr. Cav.
Butler, Henry.....Co. B 4th
Butler, Thomas M.....Co. B 4th
Butler, Chas. W.....Sergt. Co. H. 4th
Butler, Coleman.....Co. H 4th
Butterfield, A. J.....1st Sergt. Co. F 6th
Butterworth, Wm.....Co. C 50th
Byrnell, Wm C.....1st U. S. Cav.

Cadmus, Wm. B.....Co. F 2d H. A.
Cahalan, Dan'l.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Cahill, Maurice.....Co H 9th
Cain, John.....Co. I 6th
Cain, Michael.....1st U. S. Cav.
Callahan, Patrick.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Callahan, Thos.....Co. H 4th
Callahan, Thos.....Co. G 59th & 57th
Callahan, Bernard.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Caffrey, Dan'l.....Co F 48th
Campbell, Joseph.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Campbell, Duncan.....Co. H 4th
Campbell, Solomon, Jr.....Co. G 30th
Canfield, Michael.....Co. K 11th
Cargill, Thomas M.....3d Lt. B.
Carlton, Edward .....Co. F 6th
Carlton, Edward...1st Lt. Co. I 40th; killed June 3, 1864, Cold Harbor, Va.
Carlton, Frank C.....Co. K 6th
Carlisle, Orin S.....Co. I 6th
Carpenter, Geo. B.....Co. E 1st H. A.
Carpenter, George.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Carr, John.....8th U. S. Cav.
Carr, Charles.....8th Unattached & K 1st H. A.
Carr, Geo. W...Co. B 3d Cav.; died Feb. 19, 1864, Richmond, Va.
Carraway, Tallas F.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Carroll, Patrick.....Co. I 9th
Carroll, James .....Co. I 17th
Carroll, John J.....Co. I 6th
Carruthers, John.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Carter, Austin F.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Carter, Levi H...Co. K 1st H. A.; died August 1, 1880.
Carter, Wm. S.....Co. K 1st H. A. & 8th Unat.
Carter, Sam'l.....Co. F 26th
Casey, John.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Casey, John.....Co. B 4th
Casey, John...Co. H 4th, re-enlisted 9th Maine, served through the war.
Casey, Wm.....Co. I 6th
Casey, Wm. E.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Cassidy, Peter.....Co. D 9th
Cass, Michael.....1st U. S. Cav.
Cate, T. J....2d Lt. Co. F 6th & Lt. U. S. Army.
Cauffy, Edward.....Co. F 6th
Cavanaugh, James.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Cavanaugh, Michael.....Co. I 17th
Cavanaugh, Joseph.....Co. I 17th
Chadbourne, B. F.....Capt. Co. F 6th
Chadwick, Fitz Henry.....Co. H. 4th
Chaffin, Willard.....Co. F 6th & 1st Lt. B.
Chamberlain, Forest B.....Co. I 6th
Chandler, Gustavus A...Co. B 3d Cav.; drowned July 3, 1864, Mississippi River.
Charnock, Thomas.....Co. A 1st H. A.
Chard, John.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Chard, Edw. F.....Co. F 26th, tr. 1st U. S. Art.
Charlesworth, Emanuel.....Co. C 50th
Chapin, Milo J.....Co. H 4th
Chapman, Wm. H.....Co. C 2d H. A.
Chapman, Adelbert O.....V. R. C.
Chase, Silas M.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Chase, Edwin E.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Chelly, John.....Co. K 6th
Cheney, Bradford.....Co. G 30th
Chinock, Wm. W.....Co. F. 26th
Clarendon, James A.....Co. B 8th
Clarendon, Edw. H..Co. H. 4th and Co. I 26th; d. of wounds Oct. 17, 1864, Winchester, Va.
Clark, Alvin S.....8th Unat.
Clark, Herbert T.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Clark, John.....Co. I 17th
Clark, Enoch G.....Co. G 30th
Clark Miles.....Co. G 30th; d. Oct. 3, 1863, Franklin, La.
Clark, Wm.....Co. F. 35th
Clark, Alonzo B.....Co. C 40th
Clark, Seth F.....Co. I 6th
Clark, Rufus B.....Co. C 40th
Clark, Edward.....Co. F. 40th
Clark Geo. H.....4th Lt. Bat.
Clair, Robert.....Co. D 20th
Clary, James.....3d U. S. Inf.
Cleary, Timothy.....Co. B 4th
Cleworth, Aaron.....7th Lt. Bat.
Clifford, Wm.....Co. D 56th
Clifford, Lucius.....Co. I 1st H. A.; d. May 2, 1865.
Clifford, Alonzo...Co. I 16th Wisconsin; killed April 6, 1862, Shiloh, Tenn.
Cline, Patrick.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Cline, Patrick.....Co. H 4th
Clines, Patrick.....Co. K 40th N. Y.; killed Dec. 13, 1862, Fredericksburg, Va.
Clough, Wm. H.....Co. G. 12th; trans. to V. R. C.
Clough, Wm. H...Co. C 40th; d. Aug. 21, 1882
Cobert, Richard.....1st U. S. Cav,
Coburn, Wm. A.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Cochrane, Thomas.....Co. I 6th
Cochrane, Daniel B.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Cocanech Charles.....Co. H. 4th
Cogger, Eugene.....8th Unat.
Cogger, John...Co. K 9th; killed May 8, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Colcord, Daniel.....Co F. 1st H. A.
Collins, Wm. H..Co. K 1st H. A.; d. of wounds June 17, 1864, Washington, D. C.
Collins, Timothy H.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Collins, Timothy .....Co. H. 4th
Collins, John W.....Co. A 33d
Collins, Timothy.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Colby, Stephen M.....Co. I. 6th and 8th Unat.
Colby, Edwin H.....8th Unat.
Colby, Eben. T.....Capt. Co. B 4th and Lt.-Col.
Colby, Wm. K.....2d and 1st Lt., and Capt. Co. C 40th
Colbert, Edward.....Co. I 2d H. A.
Colby, Stephen J.....D. 1st N. H. H. A.
Colburn, Geo. W.....Co. I. 6th
Coleman, Thomas.....Co. B 4th
Collopy Michael.....Co. I 19th
Condon, James.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Condon, John.....Co. H. 4th
Conant, James H.....Co. I 2d
Conant, James H.....Co. H 4th
Conant, Albert G.....Co. I 26th
Connor, Chas. G.....Co. I 2d H. A.
Connor, Jeremiah.....Co. H 1st Cav.
Connor, Timothy.....Co. G 1st
Connor, John.....Co. G 30th
Connor, Chas. G.....Co. I 6th
Connors, John...Co. K 1st H. A.; d. of wounds, June 17, 1864, Washington, D. C.
Connors, Matthew.....Co. I 6th
Connors, Thomas.....8th Unat.
Connolly, John.....8th Unat.
Constable, W. M.....1st U. S. Cav.
Converse, Gilbert P.....Co. F 6th
Connelly, Michael.....Co. C 9th
Cook, Benj. C.....Co. H 4th
Cook, Thomas N.....Co. I 26th
Cook, George..Co. K 40th N. Y.; d. Aug. 24, 1863, Ft. Monroe, Va.
Coolidge, Baldwin.....Co. K 6th
Cooney, Dennis .....1st U. S. Cav.
Cooper, Thos. H....Co. G 30th; d. Dec. 5, 1862, New Orleans.
Copp, Joseph F..Co. C 40th; trans. to V. R. C.
Copp, Geo. E.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Corey, Chas .....8th Unat.
Corcoran, James..Co. H 9th; trans. to V. R. C.
Corning, Samuel.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Corrigan, Andrew.....Co D. 28th
Coughlin, James.....Co. I 9th
Coupe, Theophilus.....Co. G 30th
Cowdrey, Oliver W.....Co. F 6th
Coyne, Patrick.....Co E. 59th and 57th
Crawford, Geo. W.....V. R. C.
Crane, Peter.....8th Unat. and Co. I 6th
Crawshaw, Richard.....Co. B 4th; killed June 14, 1863, Port Hudson, La.
Creaden, John.....Missing in action, July 2, 1863, Gettysburg.
Creaden, John.....Co. F 26th
Craffy, Chas. M.....Co. G 30th; d. Aug. 8, 1862, New Orleans.
Creighan, John.....Co. K 6th
Crocker, Frank T.....Co. I 6th
Crocker, Fred. W.....Co. I 6th
Crockett, Nelson D.....Co. F 26th
Crockett, Geo. E.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Crockett, Leander F .....Co. C 4th H. A.
Crosby, Robert.....Co. K 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Crosby, Alonzo.....8th Unat.
Crosby, Patrick.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Crosby, James.....Co. G 2d H. A.
Crosdale, Patrick.....Co. I 30th
Crouse, Wm. E.....2d Lt. 1st H. A.
Crouse, John F.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Crowell, Daniel D.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Crowley, Dennis.....Co. I 2d H. A.
Crowley, John.....Co. E 19th
Crowther, Wm.....Co. D 20th
Cruicksbanks, Thomas.....Co. H 4th
Cummings Geo. P.....Co. K 1st H. A.; d. of wounds Sept. 9, 1864, Alexandria, Va.
Cummings, Chas. E.....1st Lt. Bat.
Cumnock, John.....Co. B 4th
Cune, Thomas.....Co. K 40th N. Y.; missing in action Dec. 13, 1862.
Cunningham, Michael B.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Cunningham, John.....Co. I 17th
Cunningham, Edw.....Co K 40th N. Y.
Curry, Patrick.....Co. K 6th
Curry, John.....Co. I 17th; d. July 14, 1862, Baltimore.
Curtin, Patrick.....Co. I 6th
Curtin, John.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Curran, Patrick.....Co. I 9th; killed June 27, 1862, Gaines' Mills, Va.
Currier, Aaron A.....Co. B 4th
Cushing, William.....Co. K 40th N. Y.; d. of wounds July 16, 1864, Mt. Pleasant Hosp.
Cutler, Chas. H....Co. M 1st H. A.; d. May 30, 1864.
Cutter, Geo. S.....Co. F 1st H. A.; killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
Cutter, James M.....Co. K 6th

Cutting, Chandler.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Cutting, Silas H.....Co. B 3d Cav.

Dacey, Jeremiah.....Co B 3d Cav. ; killed Apr. 8, 1864, Sabine Cross Roads, La.
Dacey, Timothy.....1st Lt. Co. I 9th ; d. Dec. 10, 1880.
Dacey, Cornelius.....Co. I 9th
Dame, Albert L.....Co. B. 1st H. A.
Daley, Maurice.....Co. I 17th
Daley, John.....Co. F 26th
Daley, Patrick C.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Dane, Sylvanus W.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Dane, Richard G.....Co. F 26th
Danforth, Vespasian.....Co. C 40th
Danahy, Patrick, Co. F 26th ; died Jan. 2[illegible], 1863, New Orleans.
Dana, David, M.D.....Surgeon
Darrell, Geo. G.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Darlisle, Timothy.....Co. F 48th
Daulton, John H.....Co. K 2d H. A.
Davis, Albert A., 2d Lt. and Capt. Co. K 1st H. A. ; died of wounds June 21, 1864, Washington.
Davis, Daniel.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Davis, Richard H.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Davis, Thomas B., Co. H 1st Cav.; died May 31, 1864, Andersonville.
Davis, W. H. H.....Co. K 6th
Davis, Solomon N.....Co. K 6th
Davis, Wm. F.....Co. C. 16th
Davis, James L.....Co H 4th
Davis, Isaac S.....Co. H 4th
Davis, Frank., Sergt. to Capt. Co. K 1st H. A. and Major ; died May 19, 1875.
Davis, John F.....Co. G 3 4th
Davis, Benjamin, Capt. Co. B 22d Regt. ; killed May 10, 1864, Laurel Hill, Va.
Davis, George.....Co. B 22d ; died Oct. 4, 1862
Dawson, Firth.....Co. H 4th
Decker, Daniel.....V. R. C.
Decker, Peter.....Co. H 1st H. A.
Decker, Jefford M.....Lt.-Col. 10th
Decker, Smith M.....Capt. and Col. Co. K 6th
Dean, Simeon P.....Co. I 6th
Degnan, Matthew.....Co. G 60th
Dearborn, La Roy.....Co. I 6th
Delaney, Dennis.....Co. F 30th
Dennett Ira B.....Co. G 30th
Dennis, John.....Co. B 4th
Devoy, Lawrence.....Co. B 1st Cav.
Deforce, John.....V. R. C.
Denton, Alfred M.....V. R. C.
Dill, Knowles.....3d U. S. Inf.
Dillingham, Perley L.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Dilworth, John.....8th Unattached
Dilley, David.....Co. I 17th
Dinneen, John.....Co. G 33d
Dinneen, Patrick.....Co. H 4th
Dinneen, Jeremiah.....Co I 6th
Dionne, Remi.....Co. K 6th
Dixon, Alanson.....Co. C 40th
Dodds, Henry.....1st Dist. Columbia Inf.
Dodge, Joseph W.....8th Unattached
Dolliver, Thomas H.....Co. M 1st H. A.
Doeffler, John.....Co. I 2d
Dodge, John A.....Co. B 11th
Dolan, Barnard.....Co. F 26th and Co. G 30th
Dolan, James.....Co. E 30th
Dolloff, David C.....Co. B 4th
Dogan, Meusar B.....Co. C 40th
Donellan, Michael.....1st U. S. Cav.
Donovan, Jerry F.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Donovan, John.....8th Unattached
Donovan, John, Co. H 2d; died of wounds Sept. 17, 1862, Antietam.
Donovan, Florence.....Co. I 17th
Donovan, John.....Co. I 17th
Donnelly, Thomas..Co. C Fr. Cav. and Co. K 6th
Donnelly, Patrick, Co. F 26th ; died Jan. 20, 1863, New Orleans.
Donnelly, Frank.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Donahue, Thomas.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Dooley, Morris.....Co. G 28th
Dorsey Michael.....Co. H 4th
Dougherty, John.....3d U. S. Inf.
Dougherty, Patrick.....Co. I 6th
Dougherty, John.....Co. I 26th
Dow, John M.....2d Lt. Co. K 1st H. A.
Dow, Charles E.....8th Unattached
Dow, Wesley W., Co. B 3d Cav. ; died Aug. 11, 1863, Port Hudson, La.
Dow, Albert I.....2d Lt. Co. B 4th
Dow, Albert.....Co. C 40th
Dowd, Dominick.....Co. I 17th
Doyen, Franklin E.....Co. K 6th
Doyle, Wm. M.....Co. F. 6th
Doyle, Michael.....8th Unattached
Doyle, John.....Co. I 17th
Doyle, Michael O., Co. H 59th ; killed June 17, 1865.
Doyle, John, Co. B 3d Cav. ; killed May, 1864, Yellow Bayou, La.
Drew, Israel, 1st Lt. Co. H 4th N. H. ; died Nov. 6, 1861, Annapolis.
Drew, Edgar.....Co. H 4th N. H.
Drew, Clarence E.....Co. B 4th
Drew, Jeremiah D.....Lt.-Col. 4th N. H.
Drew, James W.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Drew, Charles E.....Co. I 6th
Drew, George A.....Co. I 6th
Driscoll, John.....Co. I 3d Cav.
Driscoll, John, Navy ; died June 12, 1865, New Orleans.
Drummey, Patrick.....Co. F 20th
Drummond, James.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Duchesney, Lawrence N., Co. F 6th ; Sergt., 2d and 1st Lt. Co. H 1st Cav. ; in Libby ; Capt. 26th N. Y. Cav. ; Capt. 1st Batt'n Frontier Cav.
Duchesney, Felix.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Dufly, Owen.....
Dufly, Wm.....Co. D 26th
Duffy, Patrick.....3d U. S. Inf.
Duffin, Richard.....Co. D 20th
Dufresne, Edward.....Co. B 4th
Dugal, Charles E.....1st U. S. Cav.
Dugan, Dennis.....Co. D 9th
Dugan, Jeremiah.....V. R. C.
Dunby, Cyrus F.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Duncan, James.....Co. B 11th
Duncan, Edward.....8th Unattached
Duncan, James.....8th Unattached
Duncan, Wm.....Co. B 4th
Dunn, John M.....3d U. S. Inf.
Dunn, John.....8th U. S. Inf.
Dunn, Edward.....Co. I 6th
Duputrine, Calvin W.....Co. M 1st H. A.
Durgan, Jacob R.....Co. H 4th N. H.
Durgin, Geo. C., Co. A 1st H. A. ; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Durgin, Charles C.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Durging, Chase C.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Durgin, A. E.....Co. K 6th
Durgin, Alexander, Co. H 4th ; died May 21, 1863, New Orleans.
Durrell, Geo. G.....Co. I 6th
Dwyer, Thomas.....Co. I 9th
Dwyer, Patrick.....Co. D 28th
Dyer, Wm. H.....Co. F 6th
Dyer, Lewis R.....Co. D 12th
Dyer, Joseph.....Co. B 4th
Dyson, Thomas.....Co. K 6th

Eames, James.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Earl, Robert B.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Eastman, John F., Co. M 32d, from 2d Co. Sharpshooters.
Eaton, J. Frank.....Co. B. 4th & Co. K 6th
Eaton, Wm. C.....Co. E 8th
Eaton, Willis G.....7th Bat.
Eddy, David.....Co. I 9th
Edgerly, Chas. A.....Co. C 4th H. A
Edgecomb, James..8th Unattached & Co F 48th
Edmonds, John.....Co. A 3d H. A.
Edmundson, James, Co. B 4th ; died Aug. 18, 1863, Cleveland, O.
Edson, Calvin H. N.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Edwards, Wm.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Edwards, Frank A.....Co. K 6th
Eldridge, Hezekiah.....Co H 4th
Eldridge, James.....8th U. S. Cav.
Eliot, Alvin D.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Eliot, Russell C.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Ellenwood, Eben H., 3d Lieut. Co. 6th (3 months) ; 1st Lieut. Co. I 6th (9 months) ; 1st Lieut. 8th Unattached.
Ellenwood, Chas. T.....Co. I 6th
Ellis, Oliver.....Co. H 30th
Ellis, James.....Co. B 4th
Ellsworth, Wm. M.....8th Unattached
Elmerwold, Dearich.....8th U. S. Cav.
Emerson, Horace.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Emerson, Walter F.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Emerson, John D..Co. I 6th ; 2d Lieut. Co. K 6th
Emerson, Moses W.....Co. D. 47th
Emery, Solomon D.....Co. M 3d Cav.
Emory, David N.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Emory, John W.....Co. I 26th
Emmons, Wm.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Ennis, Wm.....Co. F 26th
Ephraim, Joseph H.....Co. K 31st
Ewings, Samuel.....8th Unattached
Eylward, William.....see Aylward

Fahey, Nicholas.....8th Unattached
Fales, Henry C.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Fagan, Lawrence.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Fagan, Christopher, Co. I 17th ; also 10th N. H. and Navy.
Fannon, John K.....Co. M 3d
Faris, Allen C.....Co. I 26th
Farrell, James.....Co. F 26th
Farrow, Robt.....Co. F 48th
Farrington, Geo., Co. B 1st H. A. ; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Farmer, Joseph B.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Farquhar, James, Co. B 4th ; died Feb. 25, 1882.
Farwell, Fred. M.....Co. I 6th
Favor, Joseph W.....8th Unattached
Faul, Herman.....U. S. Reg. Band
Fearnley, John.....U. S. Reg. Band
Ferns, Frank.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Ferren, Joseph, Co. H. 4th ; died Aug. 16, 1863, Baton Rouge, La.
Fernald, Edward I.....Co. D 22d
Finn, John.....3d U. S. Inf.
Fineral, Patrick.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Finnessy, Thomas, Co. K 40th N. Y. ; died Alexandria, Va.
Fish, John.....Co. F 1st H. A
Fisher, James A.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Fish, Chas.....Co. B 4th ; died Nov. 15, 1884
Fisher, John M.....Co. K 6th
Fitts, James W.....Co. I 6th
Fitzgerald, John.....Co. H 4th
Fitzgerald, Chas.....Co. M 4th Cav.
Flagg, Charles H.....Co. F 1st H. A.

Flanders, Geo. F., Co. F 26th; trans. to 1st U. S. Art.
Flanders, Chas. W .....Co. C 40th
Fletcher, Wm. F.....3d U. S. Inf.
Flavin, Thomas.....Co. B 1st H. A.
Flemming, James.....Co. I 6th
Flynn, John.....Co. H 4th
Flynn, Thomas.....Co. H 4th
Flynn, James, 2d.....Co. D 12th
Flynn, Henry.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Flynn, Patrick.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Foster, Edward.....U. S. Ordnance Corps
Forbes, Wm. W.....Co. I 26th
Follansbee, Geo. S.....2d Lieut 1st H. A.
Folsom, Chas. H.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Foran, John.....Co F 1st H. A.
Forth, Morris.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Forsyth, John.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Ford, Martin.....Co. D 2d Cav.
Foster, Chas. H.....Co. H 1st H. A.
Foster, Maurice.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Foster, Wm. K.....Co. G. 3d H. A.
Foster, Chas. H.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Foster, H. Willard.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Foster, John D.....Co. C 30th
Foster, Richard H.....Co. F 26th
Foster, Charles.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Foss, Gilman P.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Foy, John, Co. G 30th; died June 12, 1862, New Orleans.
Fox, Henry L.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Frederick, Chas.....3d U. S. Inf.
French, Allen T.....Co. B 4th
French, Horace E.....Co. F 1st H. A,
French, Chase C., Co. H 4th; died Aug. 1. 1863, Port Hudson, La.
French, Henry F.....Co. B 3d Cav.
French, Geo. W.....Co. E 19th
Fredericks, Theodore.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Fremmer, Geo.....Co. H 4th
Fremmer, Jacob.....Co. H 4th
Freeman, Timothy.....Co. F 26th
Froom, Mark.....Co. B 4th
Frost, Orin P.....8th Unattached
Frazier, Geo., Co. C 40th; killed June 1, 1864, Cold Harbor, Va.
Frye, Ira.....Co. I 6th
Frye, Geo.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Furbur, Lyman V. B., Co. D 1st Cav.; died Oct. 16, 1862.
Furbush, Chas. H., Co. F 6th and navy, the "Brooklyn."

Gallagher, Patrick.....Co. I 6th
Gallagher, Felix.....Co. C 40th
Gallagher, Hugh, Co. D 28th; died of wounds June 13, 1862, South Carolina.
Gallagher, Patrick.....8th U. S. Inf.
Gallagher, John.....Co. B 50th
Gamon, Archibald, Co. B 50th; trans. to V. R. C.
Gallison, John B., Co. C 40th; died Jan. 6, 1865, Lawrence.
Gardner, Joseph W.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Garland, James S., Co. F 1st H. A.; died Jan. 20, 1862, Fort Albany, Va.
Garrity, John.....Co I 9th; killed June 27, 1862
Garrity, Peter M.....Co I 26th
Garvin, Michael.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Gatley, Wm. A.....U. S. hospital steward
Gauffy, Chas. M., Co. G 30th; died Aug. 18, 1862, New Orleans.
Gearin, Wm. F....Co. B 4th; died March, 1887.
Geary, John.....3d U. S. Inf.
George, John H.....Co. D 1st Cav.
George, Daniel D., Co. D 1st Cav.; trans. to Navy.

Gessing, Wm E.....Co I 2d H. A.
Geureaux, Edward.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Giddings, James H.....Co. K 2d Cav.
Giles, Geo.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Geluk, Martin.....V. R. C.
Giles, Geo.....Co. D 9th
Giles, Chas. H.....Co. F 26th
Gilgan, James.....Co F 26th
Gilleland, James, Co. D 17th; died Oct. 19, 1864, in Confederate prison.
Gilford, Henry.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Gilmore, Robert.....Co. K 2d H. A.
Gilman, John H.....Co. B 4th
Gilmore, Peter.....Co. D 9th
Gilson, Alpheus L.....Co. F 26th
Gilloran, Patrick.....Co. I 17th
Gingras Victor G., Co. I 6th; wounded in Balmore April 19, 1861.
Gleason Michael, Co. A 3d H. A.; trans to Navy.
Glover, John H.....1st Lt. 1st H. A.
Glidden, Jasper F., Co. B. 3d Cav.; killed in action Sept 19, 1864, Winchester, Va.
Golden, James.....Co. C. 1st Bat. H. A.
Golden, Michael, Co. D 17th N. Y.; died Nov. 17, 1863.
Goldsmith, Melvin H.....Co. I 1st H. A
Goldsmith, Chas.....8th U. S. Inf.
Goodrich, Stephen W.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Goodrich, Edward.....Co. B 30th
Goodall, George, Co. F. 26th; died Jan. 6, 1865, Philadelphia.
Goodwin, Thomas.....Co. C 50th
Goodwin, John J.....Co. B 30th
Goodwin, Edward.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Goodwin, Chas., 1st H. A.; missing in action
Goodwin, Ephraim L.....Co. F 48th
Gordon, Frank A.....Co. I 6th
Gordon, Asa C.....Co. H 4th
Goulding, Daniel.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Gould, Isaac W.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Gould, Erastus.....Co. H. 3d Cav.
Gould, Israel.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Gower, John W.....Co. E 3d H. A,
Grady, James.....3d U. S. Inf.
Graffum, Samuel.....Co. L 3d Cav.
Graham, William.....Co. I 6th
Graham, William.....Co K 40th N. Y.
Grant, Albert H.....Co. B 1st H. A.
Grant, Lewis.....Co. I 6th
Gray, Timothy, Jr., Co. A 2d; died Dec. 2, 1862, Sharpsburg, Md.
Gray, Alonzo, Co. D 26; died July 16, 1862, New Orleans.
Gray, William.....Co. F 30th
Gray, Otis W.....Co. C 57th
Greenlaw, Chas. E., Co. F 6th, and Co. H 4th
Green, Michael, Co. I 6th; wounded in Baltimore.
Green, Michael J.....Co. I 26th
Green, M.....8th U. S. Cav.
Greenough, Wm. S.....Co. B. 4th
Greenwood, Paul, Co. I 22d; killed June 27, 1862; Gaines' Mill, Va.
Greichen, William.....Unassigned
Griffin, James R., Navy; went down with his vessel before Vicksburg, Miss.
Grimshaw, John.....Co. B 4th
Grogan, James.....1st U. S. Cav.
Gurney, Horace M.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Gurney, John.....Co D 1st Cav.
Gurney, James M.....Co. D 1st Cav.
Gunning, Thomas, Navy; (ship "Congress"), killed in action with the Merrimack, Hampton Roads, Va.
Gustin, Almon D.....8th Unattached

Hackett, Jeremiah.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Hackett, Jeremiah.....Co. E 1st Cav.
Hager, John.....1st U. S. Cav.
Haggerty, John.....Co. C 40th
Haggerty, Wm.....Co. F 35th
Hale, John, Co. F 1st H. A.; died Oct. 18, 1864, Andersonville.
Hale, Joseph F.....Co. G 30th
Hall, Chas. A., Co. B 1st N. H. H. A.; died Feb. 12, 1865, Fort Reno, D. C.
Hall, Wm. S., Co. B 1st N. H. H. A.; died Sept. 30, 1864, Andersonville.
Hall, Abraham.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Hall, Gilson A.
Hall, Cornelius Co. K 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Hall, Samuel A.....Co. I 26th
Hall, Wm. O.....V. R. C.
Halton, Wm.....Co. I 6th
Ham, John F.....8th Unattached
Ham, Federal B.....Co. B 4th
Ham, Timothy, Co. I 26th; died Feb. 11, 1865, in prison, Salisbury, N. C.
Hamilton, John.....Co K 40th N. Y.
Hamilton, Wm.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Hamilton, A Lawrence; 2d Lt Co. I 6th; and Capt; also Capt. 8th Unattached; died.
Hamilton, Oliver B.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Hammond, Frank E.....Co. C 40th
Hanks, John.....8th U. S. Inf.
Hannegan, John.....Co. D 28th
Hannegan, John.....Lt. Co. K 40th Inf.
Hanning, Obadiah.....V. R. C.
Hannon, Elias.....Co. G 33d
Hannon, Robt. A.....Co. F 35th
Hanscomb, Wm. A.....Co. C 40th
Hanscomb, Ivory P.....Co. I 26th
Hanson, James W.....2d Lt. 1st H. A.
Hardacre, Aaron.....Co. C 50th
Harding, Dennis, Co. H 33d; missing at the battle of Chattanooga, 1864.
Harding, Michael.....Co. K 40th N. Y
Harding, Michael.....Co. H 33d
Harding, Michael (2d), Co. K 40th N. Y.; died July 3, 1863, of wounds, Gettysburg.
Harkins, Daniel.....Co. I 6th
Harmon, John M., Co. I 6th, 3 months, and Co. I 6th, 9 months.
Harmon, Rollin E.....Co. B 4th
Harmon, Edward.....Co. I 17th
Harper, Charles.....Co. K 1st H. A.; colored
Harper, Robt., Co. H 19th, and Co. E 2d H. A.
Harper, James.....Co. B 11th
Harper, James.....Co. E 59th
Harper, James.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Harriman, John E.....Co. I 6th
Harriman, Chas. M.....8th Unattached
Harrinton, Daniel.....Co. B 1st H. A.
Harrington, Thomas.....Co. E 2d H. A.
Harris, Henry A.....Co. H 13th
Harrison, Wm.....Co. I 6th
Harrison, John.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Hart, Jeremiah.....Co. G 28th
Hart, Michael.....Co. G 28th
Hart, Daniel.....Co. H 4th
Hathaway, Chas. C.....Co. B 2d H. A.
Haskell, Chas., Co. C 1st H. A.; died of wounds June 19, 1864.
Haskell, John G.....Co. B 4th
Haskins, John.....Cos. B and I 17th
Hayes, Chas. H., 1st Sergt. Co. K 1st H. A.; 2d and 1st Lt. Capt. and Major.
Hayes, Gustavus D.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Hayes, William, Co. H 1st Cav.; died Mar. 1, 1865, Lawrence.
Hayes, John F.....Co. B 4th

Hayes, Patrick, Co. H 1st Cav.; killed June 15, 1862, John's Island, S. C.
Hayes, Robert S.....Co. H 4th
Hayes, James L.....Co. C 40th
Hayes, Michael.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Hayworth, Robt.....Co. F 26th
Heap, William.....Co. B 4th and Co. K 6th
Heath, Edwin C.....Co. I 6th
Heath, Caleb W.....Co. F 35th
Heavy, J.....3d U. S. Inf.
Helmer, John...16th N. Y.; died of wounds; buried in Lawrence.
Heenan, John C.....Co. D 9th
Henderson, Robert.....2d Lt. Co. F 1st H. A.
Henderson, David.....Co. K 6th
Henderson, Roderick...Co. F 24th; died Aug. 16, 1864.
Henderson, Wm. V.....Co. H 4th
Henderson, Fredk.....Co. F 28th
Henderson, Wm. Co. F 28th, tr. to 15th V.R.C.
Heffernan James F.....Co. B Fr. Cav.
Henthorne, Chas.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Herlihy, Dan'l.....Co. G 30th
Hernon, Thomas.....Co. K 6th
Hersom, Isaac L.....4th Lt. Battery.
Hewes, Robert.....Co. H 1st Cav.
Hickey, Edward.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Hickey, Richard.....8th Unattached.
Hickey, Simon P.....Co. D 9th
Hickey, Thomas.....Co. F 26th
Hickey, Simeon P.....Co. A 32d
Hickey, Michael J.....Co. B 32d
Hickey, John...Co. K 40th N. Y.; killed 1862, Bull Run.
Higgins, Abner.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Higgins, Sylvester.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Higgins, Patrick.....Co. I 26th
Hildreth, Seth C...Co. B 4th, Co. K 6th and Co. B Fr. Cav.
Hill, Enos T.....Co. F 6th and Co. G 30th
Hill, Joseph.....Co. M 2d H. A.
Hill, Nelson.....Co. B 4th
Hill, Patrick...Co. I 17th, died May 5, 1865, Morehead City, N. C.
Hill, Thomas.....Co. I 26th
Hinman, Frank...Co. F 6th & Co. D 1st Cav.; died June 17, 1863, Aldie, Va.
Hinman, David M.....8th U. S. Inf.
Hobbs, Augustus R.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Hoar, Thomas.....Co. H 22d
Hoar, Maurice.....Co. H 22d
Hodge, Andrew L.....Co. I 6th
Hodgdon, Benj. F.....Co. K 6th
Hodgdon, John M.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Hogle, Wm. H...Co. K 1st H. A.; died Sept. 5, 1863, Fort Albany, Va.
Hogle, Lucius E.....8th Unattached.
Hogle, James R.....Co. I 6th
Hohendal, Joseph.....1st U. S. Cav.
Hoit, Martin D.....8th U. S. Cav.
Holland, Thomas...Co. I 17th; died June 15, 1864, in rebel prison.
Holland, William.....Co. H 4th
Holden, Wm. G.....Co. B 30th
Holmes, Wm.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Holmes, Stephen.....Co. M 1st H. A.
Holroyd, Henry.....Co. I 6th
Homans, Arthur L.....Co. B 4th
Hommelsburg, Wm.....1st U. S. Cav.
Holt, Sam'l.....Co. A 1st H. A.
Holt, Amos L.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Holt, Sam'l A.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Holt, Alfred A...Co. K 1st H. A.; killed Aug. 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Holt, Wm. T...Co. I 26th; died of wounds July 12, 1863, in the hands of the enemy.
Holt, Arthur M.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Holt, Jeremiah.....Co. G 3 th
Holt, Albert E.....Co. F 48th,
Holton, Wm. M.....Co. A 3d H. A.
Horne, Damon G.....Co. C 40th
Horne, Joseph.....Co. I 6th
Horne, Geo. F.....8th Unattached.
Horne, Paul.....8th Unattached.
Horner, John.....3d U. S. Inf.
Horner, Wm. S.....Co. C 40th
Horton, Geo...Co. B 4th; died May 9, 1863 New Orleans.
Horrocks, Thomas.....Co. B 4th
Hosmer, Elbridge E.....Co. H 4th
Houghton, John W.....8th Unattached.
Houghton, Geo...Co. G 30th; died July 30, 1862, Baton Rouge, La.
Howe, Dennis W.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Howard, Richard.....Co. F 1st H. A
Howard, Chas. E.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Howard, Charles W.....Co. G 12th
Howard, Charles W...Co. B 2d U. S. Artillery; died Oct., 1862, Davis Island, N. Y.
Howard, Eli.....Co. I 6th
Howard, Bernard.....Co. C 50th
Howard, Leander F.....1st Battery Lt. A.
Hudson, James F.....Co. D 26th
Hughes, Patrick.....Co. M 1st H. A.
Hughes, Thomas.....4th H. A.
Hughes, Michael
Hulford, John H.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Humphrey, Henry.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Hunt, John.....3d U. S. Inf.
Hunter, Joseph.....V. R. C.
Hunter, Wm.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Hunter, Wm. A...Co. B 3d Cav.; tr. to V. R. C.
Huntington, Wm. A...Co. I 6th & Co. I 26th, tr. to V. R. C.
Huntington, James N.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Huntington, Stephen D...Co. I 26th; died July 28, 1862, New Orleans.
Huntington, David.....Co. G 30th
Hurley, Wm. H.....Co. B 40th
Hussey, Woodbury.....Co. C 40th
Hussey, Walter.....Co. C 40th
Hutchins, John M...Co. I 22d; died June 30, 1862, Savage Station, Va.
Hyde, Wallace.....Co. C 50th

Iles, Wm.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Irish, Chas. S...Capt. Co. F 1st H. A.; killed Mar. 25, 1865, Petersburg, Va.
Ivory, John.....Co. I 17th
Ivory, William.....Co. K 40th N. Y.

Jackman, Frank...Co. B 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Jackson, Joseph.....Co. B 4th
Jackson, Samuel.....Co. B 4th
Jackson, William.....Co. C 50th
Jager, Edward.....3d U. S. Inf.
Jenkins, Edmund P.....Co. C Fr. Cav.
Jerald, Chas. H.....Co. C 40th
Jerald, Albert.....Unassigned, 22d Regt.
Jewell, Harry J.....Co. I 6th
Johnson, Elisha B...Co. F 1st H. A.; died May 17, 1862.
Johnson, Augustus.....Co. F 26th
Johnson, Samuel.....Co. B 4th
Johnson, Alfred.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Jones, Lorenzo.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Jones, David.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Jones, Irving.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Jones, Charles.....Co. A 2d Cav.
Jones, Charles O.....Co. B 22d
Jones, Amos G.....Co. F 26th
Jones, Josiah N.....Co. F 6th
Jones, Fred. O.. Co. B 30th & Co. L 3d Cav.; died May 10, 1864, Davis Island, N. Y.
Jones, Irwin W., Co. D 30th; d. March 2, 1865, Annapolis, Md.
Jones, Edward...Co. C 40th; trans. to V. R. C.
Jones, Thomas, Co. C 40th; d. March 18, 1865, Philadelphia.
Jordan, Wm. G.....Co. C 40th
Joslyn, Elbridge N. B.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Josselyn, Wm. N.....8th Unat.
Joy, Alonzo.....Co. I 6th, 1st Serg't Co. G 30th
Joy, William H.
Joy, Henry G.
Joyce, James W.....Co. I 6th
Judge, Bernard.....Co. I 2d H. A.
Judge, James.....8th Unat.
Judge, Mark.....Co. K 6th

Keating, Mortimer.....Co. F 26th
Kearnen, Michael.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Kearns, Thomas.....Co. I 22d
Keely, Michael J.....1st U. S. Cav.
Keeny, Patrick.....8th U. S. Inf.
Kellett, Francis.....8th U. S. Inf.
Kelley, Wm. B.....Co. B 2d Cav.
Kelley, Henry.....Co. H 2d
Kelley, Timothy, Co. I 9th; killed in battle—the first to fall in his regiment.
Kelley, Edward.....Co. G 33d
Kelley, Edward J., Co. C 40th; killed June 3, 1864, Cold Harbor.
Kelley, William.....Co. E 1st H. A.
Keefe, John, Navy, "The Preble;" d. Andersonville, Ga.
Kennedy, Timothy.....Co. — 4th H. A.
Kennedy, Michael.....Co. H 2d
Kennedy, James.....Co. D 20th
Kennedy, James.....Co. K 30th
Kennedy M.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Kennedy, James.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Kennedy, Timothy.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Kenny, Thomas.....Co. F 26th
Kenny, Edward, Co. E 30th; killed Oct. 19, 1864, Cedar Creek, Va.
Kenny, Matthew.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Kenny, John, Co. K 40th N. Y.; killed Dec. 13, 1862, Fredericksburg, Va.
Kenny, M. B., Co. K 40th N. Y.; killed in battle of the Wilderness, Va.
Kenny, Stephen.....Co. G 6th
Kent, Geo. E.....Co. B 1st H. A. and Co. F 6th
Kent, Geo. S., Co. F H. A.; killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
Kent, Justin H.....Co. B 3d Cav. and Co. F 6th
Kent, Charles E.....8th Unat.
Kemp, Thomas P.....Co. H 4th
Kennison, Geo. W.....Co. B 1st H. A.
Kerin, John.....Co. F 26th
Kerr, Peter.....Co. H 4th
Kerrigan, Henry.....1st Lieut. Co. G 2d Cav.
Kerton, Levi, Co. F 1st N. Y. Cav. and Navy, "The Sabine."
Keyes, Maurice.....3d U. S. Inf.
Keyser, Charles W.....Co. D 6th
Kiley, Dan'l F.....Co. B 4th
Killen, Arthur J.....8th Unat.
Killoran, Michael, Serg't Co. I 17th; d. April 2, 1864, Andersonville.
Killoran, Patrick.....Co. I 17th
Kimball, Joseph W., Captain Co. F 1st H. A.; killed June 22, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
Kimball, Stephen P.....Co. B 4th
Kimball, Charles G.....Co. H 4th
King, Oliver.....Co. C Fr. Cav.
King, Walter S.....Navy, "The Sassacus."

King, Patrick....8th U. S. Cav.
Kingston, Jeremiah....1st D. C. Inf
Kirk, James E....Co. B Fr. Cav.
Kirsch, Dan'l....3d U. S. Inf.
Kittredge, David....Co. I 6th
Klem, Anthony....3d U. S. Inf.
Knowles, Geo. F....Co. F 1st H. A.
Knowles, James W....Co. K 1st H. A.
Knowles, Charles E....Co. G 12th
Knowles, Geo. H....8th Unat. & Co. I 6th
Knott, Wm. G....Co. F 26th
Knott, Wm....Co. I 6th
Knowlton, Wesley W....Co. F 6th
Knowlton, Jas....8th Unat. Co.
Knox, James R., Co. C 40th ; died Nov., 1864, Florence, S. C.
Knights, Jas. S....Co. I 6th ; 3 mos. & 9 mos.
Kohler, Leo....3d U. S. Inf.
Kraaslich, Fred....8th U. S. Inf.
Kremer, Adam....3d U. S. Inf.

La Bounty, Franklin, Co. K 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864. Spottsylvania.
Laffin, John....8th Unat. Co.
Lahan, Michael....Co. I 59th & 57th
Lahlan, John....Co. I 17th
Lahlan, Patrick....Co. C 40th
Lakey, Benj....Co. B 4th
Lalley, Thos....Co. F 1st H. A.
Lalor, Frank....Co. C 9th ; Sergt. & 2d Lt.
Lamphere, Wm. N., Co. C 40th ; d. Oct. 13,'63, Folly Island, S. C.
Lamprey, Geo. H....Co. K 1st H. A. & Q. M. S.
Lamson, Ira P....Co. C 4th H. A.
Lane, Wm. A., Co. C 40th ; d. May 16, 1863, Fort Monroe.
Lane, Jesse P....Co. H 4th
Lane, Parker W....Co. K 1st H. A.
Langley, Geo. W., Co. I 59th ; d. July 4, 1864, Baltimore.
Langmaid, Samuel....Capt. Co. —1st H. A
Lannegan, Andrew....Co. I 6th
Lannon, Walter....Co. B 3d Cav.
Lapp, Wm....3d U. S. Inf.
Larrabee, Jas. H....Co. I 6th ; d. Aug. 31,'73.
Larson, Carl P....3d U. S. Inf.
Lavally, Joseph, Co. I 17th ; d. Newbern, N. C., June 24th.
Laveny, Andrew....3d U. S. Inf.
Lawler, Joseph....Co. B 4th
Lawlor, Jas....Navy, "The Marion."
Lawless, Nicholas....3d U. S, Inf.
Lawrence, Wm....1st U. S. Cav.
Lawry, Uranus....Co. I 6th
Lazelle, Albert E....Co. K 6th
Leach, Jas....Co. K 6th
Learned, Jas. N....Co. K 1st H. A.
Learned, Jonas G., Co. K 1st H. A.; d. Sept. 2. 1864, Andersonville.
Learry, Daniel....8th Unat. Co.
Learry, Simon....Co. I 17th ; d. May 22,'62.
Leavens, Geo. H....8th Unat Co
Leavitt, Lorenzo S., 23d Maine Regt. & Co. K 6th.
Leech, Daniel....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Lever, Jas....Co. H 4th
Levoch, Danl....Co. F 1st H. A.
Lewis, Geo. W....Co. F. 1st H. A.
Leighton, Geo. P....Co. F 6th
Libbey, Jos....8th Unat. Co.
Lindsay, Thos. L....Co. F 28th
Linn, Hugh....Co. C 40th
Lithgow, John....Co. I 2d H. A.
Littlefield, Chas. H....1st Sergt. Co. F 48th
Livingstone, Chas....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Locke, Chas. E....Co. I 6th & Co. D 3d H. A.
Logan, John....3d U. S. Inf.
Long. Richard....8th Unat. Co.
Looby, Edward....Co D 11th
Looley, John....Co. F 48th & Co. G 2d H. A.
Looney, Patrick....Co. K 40th
Lorenzo, Gotfried....3d U. S. Inf.
Lord, Wm....Co. C 40th
Lord, Benjamin E....Co. C 40th
Lord, Eben....8th Unat. Co.
Lord, Hiram F....Co. B 4th
Lord, John C....Co. A 3d H. A.
Lovering, John, Co. D 20th ; killed July 3,'63, Gettysburg.
Lovejoy, Jas. H., Co. B 3d Cav.; killed Sept. 19, 1864, Winchester, Va.
Lowe, Geo....Co. G 9th
Lowe, John....Co. G 9th
Lowe, Henry....Co. F 26th
Lowe, Jas....Co. C 4 th
Lowe, Edward....Co. E 3d H. A.
Lowrie, Jas....8th U. S. Cav.
Lundy, Mark....Co. I 6th
Lunney. John....Co. I 17th
Lyle, Wm. H....Co. K 1st H. A.
Lyle, Wm. C....Co. H 4th ; d. Feb. 12, 1876.
Lynch, John....8th U. S. Inf.
Lynch, Patrick....1st U. S. Cav
Lynch, Timothy....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Lyons, Chas. A....Co. B 4th
Lyons, Patrick....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Lyons, Jas....Co. K 40th N. Y.

Mace, Geo....Co. K 1st H. A.
Madden, Michael....Co. H 4th
Madden, Cornelius....Co. C 28th
Madden, Dennis....Co. A 32d
Madden, John....Co. G 30th
Mahoney, Thos....Co. K 48th
Mahoney, Michael....Co. F 48th
Mahoney, Thos....Co. I 2d H. A.
Maken, Thos....Co. C 40th
Makinson, Wm. G....Co. C 11th
Malone, John....8th U. S. Cav.
Malone, Danl....Co. G 28th
Maloney, Danl....Co. B 1st H. A
Maloney, John....Co. B 1st H. A.
Maloney, John F....Co. B 3d Cav.
Mallen, Jas. E....Lt. Co. K 40th N. Y.
Maragan, Michael....Co. B 4th
Manning, Thos....Co. I 6th
Mansfield, Wm....Co. H 11th
Marlin, Wm. T....Co. C 40th
Marchamer, John J....V. R. C.
Marron, Philip....Co. K 1st H. A.
Marsh, Aaron B....Co. F 1st H. A.
Marshall, Robt....Co. K 1st H. A.
Marshall, John....Co. K 1st H. A.
Martin, John W....Lt. Co. H 1st Cav.
Mason, Cyrus....V. R. C.
Mason, Eugene J., Lt. 40th & Lt. Co. I 6th ; dead.
Masterson, Thos....3d U. S. Inf.
Masterson, Wm....Co. F 26th
Marston, Henry W....Co. I 26th
Mathes, Isaac....Co. H 4th
Matthews, John D....Co. C 40th
May, Alonzo....Co. A 1st H. A.
May, Wm. W....Co. G 3d H. A.
May, Henry....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Maynard, Geo. H....Co. K 1st H. A.
Maynard, Foster....Co. D Fr. Cav.
Maynard, Amos F....Co. I 6th
Maynard, Frank W....Co. G 12th
Maxwell, Loammi...Co. B 1st H. A. & Co. A 28th
McAlpine, Fred....Co. K 40th N. Y.
McAloon, James....Co. I 6th
McAlear, Patrick....Co. I 6th
McAlear, John....Co. I 17th
McBride, Felix...Co. F 26th ; died Nov. 8, 1863, New Orleans.
McBurke, Edward....3d U. S. Inf.
McCabe, James...Co. F 26th ; died Oct. 8, 1863, New Orleans.
McCaffrey, John F....Co. C 9th
McCarthy, Charles....8th Unat.
McCarthy, Patrick...Co. G 3d H. A. & Co. I 6th
McCarthy, Dennis...Co. I 6th ; accidentally killed Jan. 27, 1863, Suffolk, Va.
McCarthy, John....Co. I 6th
McCarthy, John....Co. F 29th
McCarthy, John....Co. G. 19th
McCarthy, Timothy...Co. K 40th N. Y.; died Oct., 1862, Philadelphia.
McCarthy, Patrick....1st U. S. Art.
McCarthy, Patrick....3d U. S. Inf.
McCarthy, Charles....Co. K 40th N. Y.
McClary, James S....Co. H 4th
McCragin, John H...Co. C. 1st B. H. A., tr. to Navy.
McCracken, John H....2d Co. Sharpshooters
McCragin, John A....Co. C 40th
McCrillis, Calvin....Co. I 6th
McCormick, Patrick.
McCullough, Michael....Co. B 4th
McCullough, John....Co. B 3d Cav.
McCune....Co. E 2d H. A.
McDade, John....Co. C 50th
McDonald, Robt....Co. K 1st H. A.
McDonald, Michael...Co. B 3d Cav.; died Sept. 29, 1863, Port Hudson.
McDonald, Michael....Co. I 9th, tr. to Navy
McDonald, John...Co. G 30th ; died Aug. 19, 1862, New Orleans.
McDonald, James....Co. K 40th N. Y.
McDougal, Archibald....Co. I 2d H. A.
McDuffie, Henry C....Co. K 1st H. A.
McElfroy, John....Co. K. 32d ; tr. to Navy
McFarlin, Geo. H....8th Unat.; dead.
McGoldrick, James....Co. K 40th N. Y.
McGovern, Lawrence...Co. H 4th & Co. M 2d H. A.
McGovern, John....Co. F 26th
McGowan, John A. S....Co. I 6th & 8th Unat.
McGowan, Alden T...Co. K 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
McGowan, Thomas....Co. K 40th N. Y.
McGuire, Edward....Co. B 4th
McGuire, Francis....Co. F 26th
McGuire, Daniel....Co. G 30th
McGuire, John....1st U. S. Cav.
McGuire, Joseph....Co. C 4th H. A.
McIntyre, Henry M....Lt. Co. K 1st H. A.
McKean, Wm. J ..Co. I 24th ; died Nov. 28, 1863, St. Augustine, Fla.
McKay, Geo....Co. C 50th
McKay, Edwd....Co. K 1st H. A.
McKenzie, M. M....Co. K 6th
McKering, John....Co. H 4th
McKnight, John....Co. A 1st H. A.
McLaughlin, John....Co. C 1st
McLaughlin, James....Co. G 19th
McLellan....Co. H 4th & Co. G 3d H. A.
McMahan, Thos....Co. I 17th
McMullen, Warren...Co. K 40th N. Y., tr. to V. R. C.
McMurray, James....Co. F 20th
McNamara, Jeremiah...Co. F 1st H. A.; died of wounds Nov. 28, 1864, Lawrence.
McNamara, Patrick...Co. I 17th ; died Apr. 13, 1864, in rebel prison.
McNaughton, Alexander.
McParlin, Robt....Co. F 26th

McPhee, Angus...Co. K 6th; died Oct., 1864, Fort Delaware.
McPoland, Wm.....Co. I 9th
McPoland, Bernard.....Co. E 9th
McQuade, John...Co. B 9th; killed June 27, 1862, Gaines' Mills, Va.
McQuade, James.....Co. I 6th
McQueeny, John.....Co. B 3d Cav.

Meadowcroft, Jos...Co. H 4th & Co. K 2d H. A.
Mears, Peter C.....Co. F 26th
Meagher, John.....Co. F 26th
Meaney, James. .....Co. F 28th
Melvin, John H...Co. K 1st H. A.; died Oct. 13, 1863, Fort Albany, Va.
Melvin, Saml...Co. K 1st H. A.; died Sept. 20, 1864, Andersonville.
Merrill, Wm. F.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Merrill, Chas. G.....Co. F 6th
Merrill, Carleton E.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Merrill, Geo. S .....Capt. Co. B 4th
Merrill, Wm..... .....Co. B 3d Cav.
Merrill, Geo. W...6th Lt. B; died Apr. 29, 1862, New Orleans.
Merrill, Frank H...Co. C 40th; killed May 16, 1864, Drury's Bluff, Va.
Merrill, Albert W.....Co. C 40th
Merrow, Wm. H...Capt. Co. K 1st H. A. & Q. M. S.
Merrow, Geo. W...Co. K 1st H. A.; died of wounds May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania, May 24, 1864, Bell Plain, Va.
Merrow, Joshua C.....Co. H 4th
Merrow, George O...Co. G 30th; died June 29, 1862, New Orleans.
Messer, Chas. F.....8th Unat.
Miller, Wm .....3d U. S. Inf.
Miller, Joseph.....1st Dist. Columbia Inf.
Miller, Geo. L..... .....Co. F 1st H. A.
Miller, Thos.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Miller, Patrick.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Miller, Wm.....Co. I 6th; dead
Miller, Conrad.....Co. B 4th
Miller, Wm. S.....Co. A Fr. Cav.; dead
Miller, John.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Miles, Chas. H.....Co. C 1st Bat. H. A.
Mills, John A.....Co. F 6th
Mills, James H...Co. B 4th; died June 16, 1863, Brashear City, La.
Mitchell, Michael.....Co. C 50th
Minnehan, Michael...Co. B 30th; died at Lawrence Nov., 1862.
Moegel, Christian.....Co. C 20th
Monroe, Jesse.....Co. C 40th N.Y.
Moore, John O.....1st Dist. Col. Inf.
Moore, Wm. H.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Moore, John .....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Moore, Joseph W...Co. F 1st H. A.; killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
Morache, Joseph.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Morache, Omer.. .... Co. C 4th H. A.
Moran, Patrick...Co. K 1st H. A., tr. to V. R. C.
Moran, Francis.....Co. F 26th
Morgan, Joseph H.....Co. B 4th
Morgan, James.....Co. E 2d H. A.
Morgan, Henry.....Co. B 4th
Morgan, Wm...Co. B 4th; died Aug. 24, 1863, Lawrence.
Morgan, Geo. W...Co. B 3d Cav. & Co. F 6th; killed Apr. 8, 1864, Sabine Cross Roads, La.
Morgan, John P.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Morgan, Zachariah..... .....Co. H 4th
Morgan, Wm.....Co. G 11th
Morgan, Robt.....Co. C 40th
Morey, S. S.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Moriarty, John, Jr.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Moriarty, Danl...Co. F 30th; killed July 13, 1863, Donaldsonville, La.
Morrill, Franklin H.....Co. I 26th & 8th Unat.
Morrill, Nathaniel H.....Co. C 1st H. A.
Morrill, Ralph H.....Co. C 1st H. A.
Morrill, Oliver E.....Co. C 40th
Morris, William.....Co. C 2d Cav.
Morris, John.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Morrissey, James.....Co. C 59th & 57th
Morrison, Samuel L.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Morrison, Hiram S.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Morrison, Alexander, Co. I 26th; died May 11, 1864, New Orleans.
Morrow, Wm.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Morse, Benj. G.....Co. F 6th
Morse, James A.....Co. F 6th & Co. A 3d Cav.
Morse, Roswell E., Co. K 1st H. A.; died of wounds July 9, 1864, Fairfax Seminary, Va.
Morse, Charles E.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Morse, Geo. W..Co. B 4th; trans. to 48th Co. E
Morse, Wm. H. H.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Morse, B. H.....Co. K 11th
Morse, Wm. M.....Co. C 40th
Morse, Julius H., M.D.....Surgeon San. Com.
Moylan, Philip.....Co. I 6th
Moynahan, Michael.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Mudgett, Horatio R.....Co. H 4th
Mudgett, Thomas.....Co. H 4th
Mudgett, Geo. C.....Co. H 4th
Mudgett, Wm. H.....Co. F 22d
Mulcare, John.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Mulhare, Joseph H.....Co. H 4th
Muller, Albert.....8th U. S. Cav.
Mulineaux, Patrick.....Co. B 1st H. A.
Mullowney, Michael.....1st U. S. Cav.
Mulqueeny, Patrick.....V. R. C.
Mullaney, Dominich.....Co. C. 40th N. Y.
Munger, Fred., Co. C 40th; died March 9, 1864, Hilton Head, S. C.
Munsey, Jacob W.....V. R. C.
Murdock, Buchan, Co. E 30th; killed Oct. 19, 1864, Cedar Creek. Vt.
Murphy, Patrick..... ..6th Regt
Murphy, Stephen, Co. K 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Murphy, Dennis.....Co. F 2d H. A.
Murphy, Daniel.....Co. L 2d H. A.
Murphy, James.....Co. I 9th
Murphy, Jeremiah, Co. H 17th; died May 9, 1865, Raleigh, N. C.
Murphy, James, Co. F 26th; died Oct. 18, 1863, New Orleans.
Murphy, Patrick.....Co. A 28th
Murphy, Philip.....
Murphy, Hugh... .....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Murray, James.....3d U. S. Inf.
Murray, Patrick.....3d U. S. Inf.
Murray, James.....Co. D 9th
Murray, John.....Band 9th
Mutharb, Casper.....8th U. S. Cav.

Nason, Hiram P., Co. F 28th; died of wounds Aug. 12, 1864, at New Haven, Ct.
Needham, Sumner H., Co. I 6th; killed in Baltimore April 19, 1861.
Newbert, Charles H.....Co. I 6th
Newton, Edwin E, Co B 3d Cav.; killed April 8, 1864, Sabine Cross Roads, La.
Nichols, Wm. W., Co. F 26th; died Oct. 26, 1863, New Orleans.
Nichols, Joseph T.....Co C 40th
Nichols, James.....Co. H 4th
Nicholson, James.....Co. K 4th N. Y.
Noble, Herbert A.....Capt. Co. F 1st H. A.
Noble, George H..... .....Co. K 1st H. A.
Noble, James A.....Co. G 30th
Nolan, Thomas.....Co. C 1st Batt'n H. A.
Noland, Charles.....Co. I 26th
Noonan, Patrick, Co. F 48th; killed May 27, 1863, Port Hudson, La.
Norris, Alonzo S.....Co. E 16th & Co. E 11th
Norris, Joseph H..... Co. A 17th
Norris, William.....Co. B & I 17th
Norris, Thomas..... .....Co. K 6th
North, James D..... .....Co. D 62d
Norton, John H.....Co. I 6th
Norwood, John K..... .....9th Light Battery
Noyes, Edward L.....Co. A 8th

Oakes, Edward F...Co. F 48th & Co. D 3d H. A.
O'Brien, Jeremiah..... .....Co. B 1st H. A.
O'Brien, Patrick.....Co. B 1st H. A.
O'Brien, Cornelius.....Co. C 4th H. A.
O'Brien, Dennis .....Co. B. 3d Cav.
O'Brien, Thomas .....Co. B 3d Cav.
O'Brien, James, Co. I 26th; died Oct. 8, 1864, Winchester, Va.
O'Brien, Henry, Co. G 30th; died Dec. 6, 1863, Baton Rouge, La.
O'Brien, Thomas, Co. K 40th N. Y.; killed July 2, 1863, Gettysburg.
O' Connell, Daniel.....3d U. S. Inf.
O'Connor, William B .....Co. I 17th
O'Connor, John.....Co. I 6th
O'Connor, Daniel.....3d U. S. Inf.
O'Donald, Thomas.....Co. K. 40th N. Y.
O'Donnell, John.....Co. M 1st H. A.
O'Donnell, John.....Co. I 17th
O'Donnell, John.....Co. D 28th
O'Donnell, Patrick.....3d U. S. Inf.
O'Learry, John, Co. I 17th; killed May 12, 1862, Newbern, N. C.
O'Shea, Michael.....Co. C 50th
O'Neil, Charles.....Co. H 4th
O'Neil, Michael J .....8th, Unattached
Oliver, John.....Co. I 6th, and Co. B 4th
Ordway, Aaron P...Co. H 4th N. H. and Co. K 6th.
Osgood, Eldridge B...Co. H 4th trans. to Co. E 48th

Packard, Henry, Navy, "Isaac Smith;" died May 29, 1863, off Warsaw Island, Ga.
Paddock, James.....V. R. C.
Page, Herman L., Co. K 1st H. A.; died of wounds July 7, 1864, Washington, D. C.
Page, Frank.....8th Unattached
Page, John A., 4th Lt. Bat. and 2d Lt. 1st Louisiana Native Guard.
Page, Warren.....Co. C 40th, trans. to V. R. C.
Parant, Peter Ed.....Co. M 2d H. A.
Parant, Daniel M .....Co. D 3d H. A.
Paine, Albert H .....8th, Unattached
Parker, Warren.....Co. C 9th, tr. to 32d Co. H.
Parker, Dennis M., Co. B 30th; died Oct. 10, 1862, New Orleans.
Parkman, Noah.....Co. B 4th
Parr, Charles J..... .....1st U. S. Cav.
Parks, John, Co. I 2d H. A.; died Oct. 30, 1864, Newbern, N. C., and Co. I 6th.
Palmer, William A..... .....Co. I 9th
Parrish, Thomas D.....Co. F 26th
Parmeter, La Forest.....Co. I 6th
Partington, James.....Co. H 4th and Co. K 6th
Parton, James.....Co. I 6th
Parshley, Joseph, Co. F 48th; died at sea Jan. 20, 1863.
Parsons, Philemon C.....Co. B 4th
Parsons, Thomas A.....Co. B 4th
Parsons, Stephen C.....Co. C 40th
Patch, Albia..... .....Co. C 4th H. A.

Patrick, James O.....Co. L 3d Cav.
Patterson, David.....Co. M 2d H. A.
Patterson, Wm. J., Co. F 6th 3 and 9 mos. Co. I and Co. G 3d H. A. Died Nov. 24, '79.
Payson, John C.....8th Unattached
Peabody, Selwin W.....Co. C 40th
Peaslee, Alpheus, Co. I 22d, died of wounds Sept. 18, 1862, Gaines' Mills, Va.
Peasner, Wm.....1st U. S. Cav.
Pearl, Lloyd W.....8th Unattached
Pearsons, Edwd. G., Co. B 3d Cav., died Oct. 4, 1876.
Pendiz, John.....Co. I 17th
Perham, Leander.....Co C 4th H. A.
Perkins, Wm....Co. A 3d H. A., trans. to Navy
Perkins, Elbert G.....Co. D 61st
Peters, Christopher.....8th U. S. Inf.
Perry, Franklin.....V. R. C.
Pettigrew, Jno. S.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Pfeiffer, John.....1st D. C. Inf.
Phelps, S. G., 1st Conn. Cav. died July 22, 1864, Andersonville.
Phillips, Horace M.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Pickles, John.....Co. F 26th
Pickles, Robert.....Co. B 4th
Pickering, John...Captain Co. I, 6th and 26th.
Pierce, Frank B.....Co. K 1st H A.
Pierce, Saml. B.....Co. I 6th and Co. F 26th.
Pierce, Turner E., Navy, Ship Preble, died Oct. 21, 1862, Lawrence.
Pierson, Joseph N.....1st Lt. Battery
Pike, Wm. H., Co. G 30th, died of wounds June 5, 1863, Baton Rouge.
Pilling, Chas. A .....Co. A 11th
Place, J. Frank.....Co. B 4th
Plummer, Geo. W.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Plummer, Walter S., Co. K 1st H. A. and Co. M 2d H. A.
Pond, Aaron B.. .....Co. K 1st H. A.
Poor, Benj. I.....Co. B 2d H. A.
Poor, Geo. W., Co. L 4th Cav. 1st Lt. & Q. M. S.
Poor, Thos. G.....Co. A 17th
Poor, Alonzo B.....Co. B 22d
Powell, Alfred G.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Powers, James.....Co. F 19th
Powers, Wm. H..... .....Co. I 17th
Powers, Frank.....Co. I 17th
Powers, Thomas.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Powers, James H.....8th Unattached
Pratt, Edgar G.....Co. B 4th
Pray, Oliver L., Co. I 26th; died July 5, 1862, New Orleans.
Preston, Wm., Captain.....1st H. A.
Priest, Freeman H.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Pulverman, John.... .....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Purcell, Patrick.....Co. C 11th
Purcell, Patrick.....Co. G 30th
Putnam, Hezekiah L..... .8th Unattached
Putnam, John C.. ....Co B 1st H. A.

Quarrell, Geo.....V. R. C.
Quinn, Wm.....1st U. S. Cav.
Quinn, Wm.....3d U. S. Infantry
Quinn, Daniel.....Co. H 4th
Quinn, John..... .....Co. I 9th
Quinn, Patrick.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Quinn, Thomas, Co. K 40th N. Y.; died June 9, 1861.
Quimby, Charles W., Co. G 30th; drowned April 2, 1862, Ship Island, Miss.
Quimby, Orin J., Co. F 33d Maine; died April 25, 1865, Baltimore.

Rachel, Michael.....Co. F 26th
Rafferty, John.....8th U. S. Infantry
Ramsden, Joshua C.....Co. F 6th
Rafferty, Frank, Co. K 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Rankin, Peleg L.....Co. C 40th
Rawson, Orlando, Co. B 4th; died Aug. 16, 1863, Indianapolis.
Rea, William.....8th U. S. Inf.
Reagan, Timothy.....Co. F 26th
Reagan, John.....3d U. S. Inf.
Reardon, Timothy.....Co. F 26th
Redman, James.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Reed, Wm. H.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Reed, John, Co. D 9th; died of wounds May 18, 1864.
Reed, Wm., Co. C 40th; killed May 16, 1864, Drury's Bluff, Va.
Regan, Matthew.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Remick, C. H., Co. B 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Reno, Chas. J., Co. F 48th; died at sea Jan. 22, 1863.
Reynolds, John F.....Co. I 6th
Reynolds, Wm. B 2d Regt. U. S. Sharpshooters; promoted to surgeon.
Rice, Perry M.....Co B 4th
Rice, Warren E..... .....Navy
Richards, John A.....Co H 4th
Richards, Simeon W.....Co. C 40th
Richards, Charles.....Co. B 1st H. A.
Richardson, Morton W.....Co. F 6th
Richardson, Abraham.....8th Unattached
Richardson, J. Milton., Co. C 40th; missing in action May 16, 1864.
Richardson, Samuel.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Ricker, Geo. W., Co. G 30th; died Dec. 8, 1862, New Orleans.
Ricker. Noah C., Co. G 33d; died Feb. 6, 1863, Acquia Creek, Va.
Ricker, Oliver A., Co. C 30th; died Aug. 2, 1881
Ricker, Geo. A.....8th Unattached
Riddell, Walter S., Co. B 4th; drowned Dec. 27, 1862, Long Island Sound.
Rines, John G.....Co K 6th
Rines, Geo. W.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Rinner, Johan.....Co. C 20th
Riley, Wm.....1st U. S. Cav.
Riley, Patrick.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Riley, John.....8th Unattached
Riley, Judson.....1st H. A. hospital steward
Riley, Charles.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Riley, James.....1st Dis. Col. Inf.
Ripley, Thomas K., Co. A 20th; died April 9, 1864.
Roach, Patrick.....Co. I 17th
Roaf, Thomas, Co. B 1st Bat. H. A.; died Nov. 17, 1862, Fort Warren, Boston.
Roberts, James S. Co. I 6th and 8th Unattached
Roberts, Thomas.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Roberts, John.....Co. H 4th
Robinson, Horatio G., Co. B 3d Cav.; died April 13, 1874.
Robinson, Alexander.....Co F 16th
Robinson, John G., 8th Unattached and Co. I 6th
Robinson, Nathaniel D.....2d Co Sharpshooters
Robinson, Leander A..... Co. K 6th
Robinson, Hiram.....2d Lieut. Co. H 4th
Rogers, Geo. A.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Rogers, Saml. D., Co. D 1st Cav. and Co. F 6th
Rogers, Peter.....Co. I 17th
Roddy, Edward ....Co. F 48th
Rolfe, Henry A.....Co. I 6th and Co. F 26th
Rolfe, Frank A., Capt. and Maj. 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Rollins, John R..... Capt. Co. H 4th
Rose, Wm.....8th U. S. Inf.
Ross, James.....1st U. S. Cav.
Rossiter, Patrick..... .....Co. I 6th
Rostron, John.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Rostron, Samuel.....Co. H. 4th
Rowe, John.....Co. B 4th
Rowe, Danforth M..... .....Co. C 40th
Rowe, Asa, Co. K 1st H. A.; d. Aug. 10, 1864, Andersonville.
Rowell, James H.....Co. K 6th
Rowton, John W.....Co. M 2d H. A.
Rudloff, George .....8th U. S. Cav.
Runck, George.....1st U. S. Cav.
Russ, Frank W.....Co. B 4th
Rushworth, Wm.....Co. K 6th
Russell, Frank.....Co. F 6th
Russell, Ziba H., Co. C 40th; killed May 16, 1864, Fort Darling, Va.
Russell, Edward J.....1st Lt. Co. B 1st Cav.
Rutherford, Allen, Co. H 4th; died Nov. 9, 1883.
Rush, Louis.....Band U. S. A.
Ryan, John.....8th U. S. Inf.
Ryan, James.....8th Unattached.
Ryan, Patrick.....26th Regt.
Ryan, William.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Ryder, Stanley, Co. F 1st H. A.; d. of wounds June 12, 1864, Washington, D. C.
Rymes, Albert J.....8th Unattached

Safford Joseph H..Co. I 6th, 3 mos. and 9 mos.
Sampson, Patrick.....Co. B 56th
Sanborn, Silas M.; Co. G 30th and Co. F. 2d H. A.
Sanderson, Robt .....8th U. S. Inf.
Sanderson, Joseph A.....Co. F. 1st H. A.
Sands, Edward.....Co. I 17th
Sands, James.....Co. H. 30th
Sandquist, Andrew..... .....Co. F 26th
Sanford, Joseph A.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Sargent, Albert.....V. R. C.
Sargent, Chas. F..... .....8th Unattached
Sargent, Geo. W., M.D.....Surgeon Co. K 6th
Sargent, George I.....Co. K 6th
Sargent, Warren.....Co. B 4th
Saunders, Geo.....Co. B 59 and 57th
Saunders, Caleb.....Co. I 6th & Lt. 1st H. A.
Sawyer, Chas. H.....Co. C 40th
Sawyer, Frank J.....Co. C 40th
Sauft, John.....1st U. S Cav.
Scheyler, Arthur T..... Co. C 54th
Schofield, Joseph.....Co. H 4th
Schofield, Henry.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Scott, Henry.....Co. H 4th
Searles, Caleb S., Co. F 1st H. A.; died Feb. 3, 1878.
Searles, Warren P.....Co. C 40th
Seifert, Hermann.....Co. C 40th
Seaver, D. Owen.....Lt. Co. C 40th
Scanlan, Matthew.....3d U. S. Inf.
Scanlan, John.....Navy
Scully, Wm.....Navy
Shackford, Wm.....Co. H 4th
Shackleton, Roger.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Shannahan, Joseph.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Sharkey, Chas.....Co. F 19th, trans. to U. S. A.
Sharkey, Barnard.....Co. F 26th
Sharrock, Wm.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Shattuck, Chas. M.....Co F 6th
Shavers, John.....1st U. S. Cav.
Shaw, Charles..... .....Co. B 4th
Shaw, John.....Co. B 4th
Shea, Thomas, Co. K 1st H. A.; d. May 31, 1865, Portsmouth Grove, R. I.
Shea, James.....Co. D 9th, trans. to 32d
Shea, Daniel .....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Shehan, John.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Shehan, John.....Co G 30th
Shehan, John.....Co. K 1st H. A.

Shehan, John E.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Sheldon, Moses.....Co. E 2d H. A.
Shepard, Augustus, Co. B 4th; d. Aug. 3, 1863, Port Hudson, La.
Sherman, Carlos D.....8th Unattached
Sherman, Edgar J., Capt. Co. K 6th & Co. F 48th.
Sherman, George W.....Co. H 1st Cav.
Sherren, Patrick.....V. R. C.
Sherwood, Wm.....Co. B 1st H. A.
Shevenall, Wm. H.....Co. C 4th
Shorey, Geo. W.....Co. I 6th & Co. I 26th
Short, James, Co. H 28th; killed Sept. 1, 1862, Chantilly, Va.
Shields, John.....V. R. C.; dead
Sibley, Kneeland.....Co. I 6th
Simmons, Stephen A., Co. B 4th; died Dec. 16, 1883.
Simonds, Benj. W., Co. B 1st H. A.; d. Jan. 29, 1863, Harper's Ferry, Va.
Simonds, Solomon.....Co. B 1st H. A.
Simonds, Richard.....8th Unattached
Simpson, John.....V. R. C.
Simpson, Danl. L.....Co. I 6th
Siner, Wm. H., Co. A 36th; wounded and discharged, re-in. Co. K. 6th.
Sisson, John J.....V. R. C.
Slattery, Jeremiah, Co. K 40th N. Y.; d. of wounds July 15, 1865, Gettysburg.
Slattery, John.....Co. C 40th Mass.
Slavin, Wm.....Co. H 4th
Sline, Richard.....Co. H 20th
Smadley, Valentine.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Small, John F., Co. B 1st H. A.; d. of wounds June 29, 1864.
Smart, Geo. H.....Co. B 20th
Smith, Henry.....1st U. S. Cav.
Smith, James B.....8th U. S. Cav.
Smith, Hiram H.....V. R. C.
Smith, John.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Smith, Robert I.....Co. F 6th
Smith, Geo. W.....8th Unattached
Smith, Chas. F. G.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Smith, Stewart, Co. K 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Smith, Charles.....Co. F 2d H. A.
Smith, Charles.....Co. G 2d H. A. & Co. I 6th
Smith, William.....Co. A 1st Cav
Smith, Wm. C.....8th Unattached
Smith, Wm. P.....8th Unattached
Smith, Wm. P. Jr.....8th Unattached
Smith, Melvin E.....Co. K. 6th
Smith, C. Allen, Co. B 3d Cav.; killed in action Aug. 3, 1863, Jackson, La.
Smith, Jason.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Smith, Patrick.....Co. I 2d; transfd. to V. R. C.
Smith, William.....Co. F 19th
Smith, Geo. W., Co. I 26th; died July 18, 1862, N. Orleans
Smith, Michael S., Co. I 26th; d. July 17, 1862, N. Orleans.
Smith, Russell.....Co. I 26th
Smith, Frank L.....Co. I 6th
Smith, Barney.....Co. G 30th
Smith, Charles W., Co. C 40th; d. Oct. 18, 1863, Folly Island, S. C.
Smith, Austin S.....Co. F 48th
Smith, James.....Co. F 48th
Smith, John.....Co. F 48th
Smith, Thomas.....Co. C 50th
Smith, Geo. R.....1st Lt. Battery
Smith, David.....Co. D 61st
Snell, Henry L.....Co. H 4th
Snell, Smardus F.....Co. H 4th
Soper, Edmund H.....Co. F 26th
Sorton, Wm.....Co. K 6th
Soule, John.....Co. K 6th
Southwick, Amos.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Spaulding, Wm. H., Co. F 1st H. A.; killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
Spicer, Christian, Co. H 20th trans. to V. R. C.
Spilane, John.....Co. I 9th
Spofford, Edwin F., Co. I 6th & 19th Regt. Band & Lt. Co. M 1st H. A.
Sprague, Edwin D.....Co. I 6th
Spring, Pichard.....Co. I 17th
Springer, Saml. B.....Co. G 12th
Springer, Chas. S.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Spruch, Ralph.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Stackpole, Tobias, Co. K 1st H. A.; trans. to Navy.
Stafford, Geo. W., 9th Lt. Batt.; d. Nov. 10,'62, Washington.
Standing, Geo.....Co. F 28th
Stanley, James.....8th Unat. Co.
Stanton, John.....Co. D 59th & 57th
Staples, Herbert T., Co. H 32d & Co. D 3d H. A.
Stead, James, Co. H 48th; d. June 4, 1863, Baton Rouge, La.
Stebbines, John.....8th U. S. Cav.
Stearns, Elbridge G.....6th Lt. Batt.
Stearns, Hiram A.....Co. B 4th & Co. I 6th
Steele, Geo.....Co. H 4th
Steele, Wm. H.
Sterling, Jas.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Stevens, Gilbert.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Stevens, G. Frank.....Capt. Co. B 3d Cav.
Stevens, Isaac, Jr.....Co. B 4th
Stevens, Joseph B.....Co. I 6th
Stevens, Chas.....Co. C 4th
Stevens, Anthony.....Co. F 44th
Stevens, Geo. F., Co. B 3d Cav.; died at sea Sept. 16, 1866.
Stevens, Gorham P., Co. C 70th N. Y.; d. in the hands of the enemy from wounds at Chancellorsville.
Stevens, Wm.....73d N. Y.
Stewart, Chas.....Co. I 17th
Stokes, Stephen D., Co. I 6th & Capt. 40th; dead.
Stoddard, Haverly A., Co. K 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Stoddard, Alphonso.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Stone, Joel F.....Co. F 1st H. A.; Co. F 48th
Stone, Chas.....Co. F 6th
Stone, Hood A.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Stott, Geo. H.....Co. I 17th
Stout, Jas.....1st U. S. Cav.
Strafford, Wm P.....Co. B 1st H. A.
Straw, Danl.....Co. F 26th
Strong, Henry G., Navy, "Cambridge;" d. Mar., 1864, at sea.
Sullivan, Wm., Capt. Co. K 40th N. Y.; killed Dec. 13, 1862, Fredericksburg, Va.
Sullivan, John, Co. M 1st H. A.; d. of wounds May 22, 1864.
Sullivan, Geo., 2d Co. G 2d H. A.; d. Aug. 30, 1864, Andersonville.
Sullivan, Michael, Co. E 9th; d. of wounds June 29, 1862, Savage Sta., Va.
Sullivan, Michael F.....Co. B 4th
Sullivan, John S.....Co. F 26th
Sullivan, John, Co. I 26th; d. Oct. 20, 1862, N. Orleans.
Sullivan, Simon.....Co. F 48th
Sullivan, Jerome.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Sullivan, Jeremiah.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Sullivan, Leonard.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Summers, John.....Co. K 6th
Swaine, Chas. M.....Co. I 6th & Co. I 26th
Sweeney, Edward.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Tainter, Willard H., Co. A 1st H. A.; killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
Tarbox, Walter S.....Co. C 5th H. A.
Tarbox, John K.....Lt. Co. B 4th
Tarrant, Peter A.....1st U. S. Cav.
Tasker, George W.....Co. G 30th
Taylor, John.....Co. C 50th
Taylor, Isaac L.....Lt. Co. K 40th N. Y.
Taylor, James H.....Co. C 40th Mass.; died Oct. 22, 1863, Beaufort, S. C.
Taylor, Abraham.....Co. K 11th
Taylor, Edwd. B.....Co. K 6th
Terrio, Alexander.....Co. B 3d Cav.; tr. to V. R. C.
Terrio, Edwd.....Co. B 4th
Tetler, James.....Co. D 20th
Thayer, Richard F.....Co. C 30th
Thomas, James.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Thomas, Richard.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Thomas, John.....Co. F 26th
Thomas, John.....Co. K 59th & 57th
Thompson, Robert.....Co. I 1st H. A.
Thompson, Andrew G.....Co. B 3d Cav.; died Oct. 30, 1862, Lawrence.
Thompson, John B.....Lt. Co. F 19th; killed June 3, 1864.
Thompson, Sumner.....Co. H 4th; died March, 1880.
Thompson, Wm. L.....1st Lt. Co. C 5th (previously same Co. So. Danvers).
Thompson, James.....V. R. C.
Thorne, Francis R.....Co. I 26th; died June 28, 1864, New Orleans.
Thornton, Geo.....V. R. C.
Thornton, Thos. V.....Co. F 1st H. A., tr. to V. R. C.
Thyng, Dan. G.....Co. B 4th; died Aug. 19, 1863, Laconia, N. H.
Tibbetts, Edw'd.....Co. H 60th
Tibbetts, Sewall F.....Co. A 1st
Tiernay, Wm.....Co. D 3d H. A.; dead
Tiernay, John.....Co. K 2d Cav.
Tilton, Jonathan D.....V. R. C.
Tobey, Austin B.....Co. H 4th
Towey, Thos.....Co. C 30th
Towey, Geo.....Co. B 30th
Towey, Lewis.....Co. B 30th
Towle, John W.....Co. H 4th
Towne, John A.....Co. E 30th
Travilla, Robert.....1st D. C. Inf.
Travis, Sam'l.....Co. C 40th, tr. to V. R. C.
Tredick, Chas. E.....Co. G 30th & 8th Unat.
Trees, Fred. G.....Co. H 4th & 8th Unat.
Trombly, Cyprine.....Co. G 2d H. A., tr. to 20th Inf.
Trueworthy, Chas. H.....Co. I 6th
Tuck, Chas.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Tufts, David.....Co. F 6th (3 mos.), Co. K 6th (100 days).
Tuthill, Geo. H.....Hosp. Stew. U. S. A.
Tuttle, Thos. P.....Co. F 6th
Twomey, Dan'l.....8th U. C.
Tyler, Fred. G.....Co. I 6th (3 mos.), Lt. Co. I 6th (9 mos.), Lt. 8th Unat.
Tyrrell, Elias.....Co. K 40th N. Y.

Ure, Dan'l.....Co. H 6th N. H.

Valery, Jas.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Vallencourt, Jules.....Co. C 32d
Varnum, Chas. O.....Co. C 4th
Varnum, Jos. C.....8th Unat.
Varnum, Isaac S.....Co. B 4th; died March 5, 1863, Carrollton, La.
Varnum, Ralph.....Co. B 4th
Vogel, Henry.....Co. C 20th

Vaughn, Smith...Co. I 6th & Co. G 59th & 57th
Vaughn, John.....Co. F 48th
Vatter, Henry.....Co. I 26th

Waddington, James.....Co. K 6th
Wadlin, Gardner E.....Co. B 4th
Walker, Warren G.....Co. K 1st H. A
Walker, Robert.....8th Unat.
Walker, Wm. G.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Walker, Edwd. K.....Co. I 6th
Wagner, Augustus.....Co. I 6th
Wagner, Ernest.....Co. I 6th
Wagner, Ferdinand.....Co. I 6th
Wallace, Webster W., Sergt. Co. K 1st H. A.; d. of wounds July 26, 1864, Ashbunham, Mass.
Walsh, Wm. M., Co. K 1st H. A.; trans. to V. R. C.
Walsh, Joseph.....Co. B 4th
Walsh, John.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Walsh, Martin, Co. B 59th ; d. Oct. 1, 1861, Danville, Va.
Walsh, James.....Co. I 6th
Ward, Peter.....Co. I 26th
Ward, Peter.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Warner, Alex .....Co. F 26th
Warner, Frank.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Warren, Andrew.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Washburn, Eleazer, Co. F 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Washburn, Alden....1st H. A. Band & 2d H. A.
Washington, Geo.....Co. H 5th Cav. (Col)
Waterman, Arthur O.....Co. I 6th
Watson, Benj. F.....Lt. Col. 6th Regt.
Watts, Francis.....8th U. S. Cav.
Weare, John F.....Capt. 40th
Webb, Saml.....Co. F 48th
Webb, James, Co. I 2d ; killed May 3, 1863, Chancellorsville.
Webster, Justus W., Co. K 1st H. A.; killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
Webster, Chas. O.....Co. B 4th
Webster, Henry A., Co. H 4th & Co. B Front Cav.
Webster, Walden W., Co. B 3d Cav.; trans. V. R. C.
Webster, Henry K., Co. B 12th ; trans. Co. E 38th.
Webster, Geo.....Co. I 26th
Wermers, Frank.....Co. H 4th
Welch, Geo.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Welch, Wm.....Co. G 3d H. A.
Welch, Patrick, Co. K 40th N. Y.; killed Aug. 29, 1862, Bull Run, Va.
Welch, Michael.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Wells, Wm. H.....Co. H 4th & Co. C 4th H. A.
Wentworth, Horace.....Co. F 6th & Co. G 30th
Wentworth, Edwin H. C., Co. I 6th & Co. F 22d.
Wentworth Russell.....Co. K 6th
Wentworth, Geo. F.....Co. E 2d H. A.
Wentworth, David.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Wentworth, Merrill.....Co. L 3d Cav.
West, Edward.....Co. C 40th
West, Geo. W.....Co. F 26th
West, Chas. E.....Co. H 1st Cav.
Westall, Solomon .....Co. F 1st H. A.
Weston, Geo.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Weston, Chas. H.....Co. H 1st Cav.
Weston, John G.....Co. C 40th
Weston, Justus P.....Band U. S. A.
Weymouth, Chas. J., Co. I 6th & Co. I 26th & Lt. 14th La. Vol.
Whatmore, Robert .....Co. B 4th
Wheeler, Fredk.....Co. G 2d H. A.
Wheeler, Austin E.....Sergt. Co. I 2d
Wheeler, Geo. W., Co. I 26th ; d. July 25, '62, N. Orleans.
Wheeler, Leonard O.....Co. I 26th
White, Josiah C., Sergt. Co. G 30th & Lt. U. S. C. T.
White, Thos., Co. F 26th ; d. Dec. 12, 1862, N. Orleans.
White, Calvin M., Co. F 26th ; d. Aug. 27, '62, N. Orleans.
White, Henry L.....Co. F 26th
White, Clarence.....8th U. S. Inf.
White, Patrick.....8th U. S. Inf.
Whitehill, John F.....Co. K 6th
Whitfield, Angus...Co. A 3rd H. A. tr. to Navy
Whitley, John .....Co. F 1st H. A.
Whitney, Charles C .....8th, Unattached
Whittaker, Samuel G., Co. C 4th H. A. and Co. E 30th.
Whittemore, William.....Co. B 4th
Whittemore, William F.....Co. C 3d H. A.
Whittemore, Daniel, Co. K 1st H. A. ; died June 8, 1864, Philadelphia.
Whitten, Joseph L.....Co. H 4th
Whittier, Charles.....Co. I 7th
Wholla, Christian.....3d U. S. Inf.
Wholla, James.....Co. E 30th
Wicks, James.....Co. H 7th
Wiggin, Mayhew C., Co. K 1st H. A.; died Nov. 8, 1864, Andersonville.
Wiggin, Gilman P.....Co. H 4th
Wilde, Joseph B .....Co. H 4th
Wilde, R. Allen.....Co. K 40th Mass
Wilder, Henry A.....Co. B 1st H. A.
Wiley, John W.....Co. C 40th
Wilkin, Joseph A .....Co. C 40th
Willard, Benjamin D.....Co. I 26th
Willey, Eben. .....Co. C 40th
Willey, Celestine G.....Co. F 1st Bat. H. A.
Williams, John T.....Co. F 6th, and Co. F 26th
Williams, Elias.....1st N. J.
Williams, Albert M.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Williams, George H .....Co. F 20th
Williams, Charles S .....Co. B 32d
Williams, William O.....V. R. C.
Willoughby, Lamont C.....Co. K 8th
Wills, Thomas P.....Co. B. 4th
Wilson, William J.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Wilson, Charles.....Co. F 16th
Wilson, William.....Co. I 17th
Willson, John .....Co. E 3d H. A.
Wing, Thomas A., Co. H 4th ; died June 2, 1863, Brashear City, La.
Winn, William B.....Co. B, F. Cav.
Winn, Ambrose S.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Winning, James, Co. B 4th ; died Nov. 1, 1885.
Winslow, Almon M.....1st U. S. Cav.
Withington, James, Co. B 3d Cav., killed in action May 15, 1864.
Wolfe, John.....Co. I 6th
Wolfe, Richard.....Co. E 59th
Wood, William.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Wood, Duncan.....Co K 6th
Wood, Philander.....Co. G 30th
Wood, Henry.....Co. I 6th, and Co. H 1st H. A.
Woods, Peter .....Co. K 2d H. A.
Woodbury, Charles .....Co. I 6th
Woodhouse, James.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Worthing, John B., Co. A 1st H. A., tr. to V. R. C.
Worthley, Daniel E.....Co. I 26th
Wright, Levi P.....Col. 1st H A.
Wright, Dexter.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Wright, William H.....Co. K H. A.
Wright, David .....Co. B 3d Cav.
Wright, George A .....Co. B 3d Cav.
Wright, Clinton M.....Co. H 4th
Wright, Nathaniel .....Co. C 40th

Yates, Eugene S., 8th Unattached, and Co. D ; Fr. Cav. ; died July 28, 1886,
Yeaton, Daniel S., Capt. Co. I 6th ; died Nov. 28, 1862, New Orleans, and Capt. Co. G. 30th.
Yeaw, Leonard, Co. G 30th ; died August 25, 1862, New Orleans.
Yerrington, George E., Co. I 6th and 26th and Major 13th corps D 'Afrique.
Yore, Patrick, Co. G 30th ; died Sept 13, 1862, New Orleans.
Young, Nicholas.....Co. D 9th
Young, James L.....Co. D 22nd tr. to V. R. C.
Young, William .....Co. K 40th N. Y.

Zeitter, John F.....1st U. S. Cav.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

ARTEMAS W. STEARNS.

Artemas W. Stearns was born in Hill, N. H., March 11, 1816. He was left fatherless at a tender age, and supported by his widowed mother, who was the village milliner.

When, at the age of six, his mother married again, he still remained at home until the death of his stepfather, who was accidentally drowned. Mr. Stearns was now ten years of age. His mother, being left with two other children, was unable longer to support all her family with her needle, and he was bound out to a prosperous farmer in Bridgewater until he became of age. At the expiration of the time he was to have one hundred dollars and a freedom suit. He was treated by the farmer as one of his family, attending the district school during the winter months. Mornings and evenings he chopped firewood and took care of the stock of cattle. Being a trustworthy boy, the farmer often sent him to market from Bridgewater to Bristol, a distance of six miles, with an ox-team, carrying butter, cheese and sometimes ashes, which were used in the manufacture of potash. Finally, becoming dissatisfied with his occupation, he bought the remainder of his time, paying five dollars, for which he still carries the receipt.

In August, 1833, in his eighteenth year, he went to Nashua, N. H., and entered the cotton factory, remaining there and in Lowell, Mass., for several years. This occupation not being suited to him, he decided to get a better education, and to this end he attended the academy at Newmarket, N. H., during the fall months, washing dishes and ringing the academy bell for his board. When he left the academy he taught in the district schools of Dracut and Andover, Mass., and Windham and Salem, N. H. In Windham he had a class in algebra, a branch which he had not yet taken in his course of studies, and he was on this account in a dilemma, but his will came to the rescue, and he determined to conquer by studying evenings and keeping ahead of his class, which he did, and no one ever mistrusting that he was not a thorough master of the higher mathematics. Thus it has been all through life by hard labor and close application he has overcome obstacles, and success has crowned his efforts.

In 1840 he began peddling through the country, selling silverware, spectacles, razors, dress silks, &c., from two tin trunks. He always carried the finest goods to be found in the market, and would also take orders for shawls or anything the buyer wanted, and bring it with him on his next trip. He also did the engraving on all the silverware which he sold, doing it evenings, denying himself all pleasure until his work was done.

March 5, 1843, he married Lydia, daughter of James and Abi (Duren) Searles, of Nashua, N. H., and settled in Methuen, Mass., continuing his peddling until the fall when, after buying his stock for the fall trade, he was taken with lung fever and his physician forbade him travelling during the winter. He then put his goods in a small shop quite near his house and hung out his sign. Success attended this venture and his small store soon became the scene of so much activity that the village people gave it the name of the *Bee Hive*. Here he remained about eighteen, months, when, finding his business had outgrown his accommodations, he sought a larger place for it.

In 1846 he started a branch store in the new city of Lawrence, remaining in a store on Amesbury Street two years, when he removed to Essex Street to get more room. In three years he was forced to move into a still larger store, and another three years found his business so much increased as to require still larger accommodations.

He now resolved to buy land and build for himself which he did on his present site. In 1877–78 he enlarged and beautified his store, and the present year he has again remodeled and enlarged his building, which is unquestionably the finest business structure in Essex County. It is thirty feet wide, ninety feet deep, four stories and basement, the whole being occupied by him. The new building has a massive front of brown stone, with heavy plate glass windows. Mr. Stearns is justly proud of this building, which stands as a monument to crown the long years of untiring devotion to business.

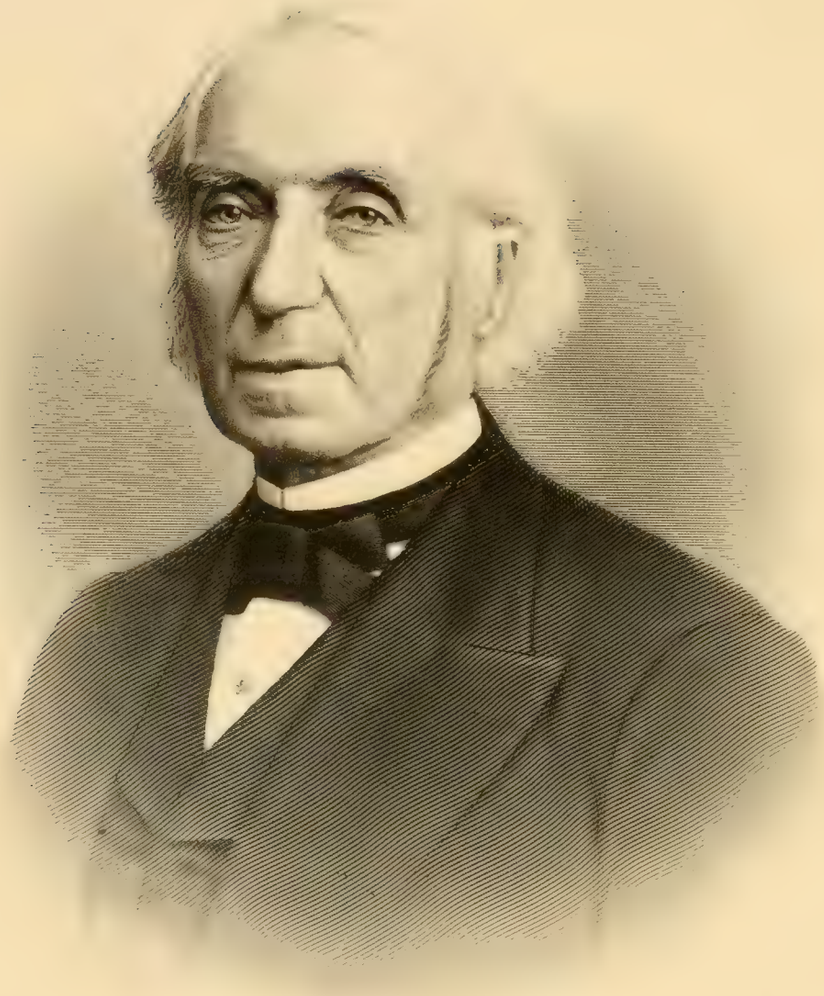
When a young man Mr. Stearns united with the Orthodox Church in Methuen, Rev. John C. Phillips pastor. On coming to Lawrence he formed one of a new church, called the Central Congregational (now Trinity), and has always been one of its most liberal supporters. He has been chairman of the Board of Assessors for many years, but has never sought public office, being of a retiring nature. He was, however, in the Board of Aldermen in 1861, and has been very generous in donations for public enterprises.

In 1864 A. S. Wright, the head mechanic of the Atlantic Mills, proposed to Mr. Stearns and A. J. French to become partners in the manufacture of woollen yarns. At Mr. Stearns' suggestion the machinery for yarn was sold, and the mill equipped with machinery for making braid; and a co-partnership formed under the firm-name of the Wright Manufacturing Company. At first fifty braiders were used. In 1874 the company was incorporated with A. J. French, president; A. S. Wright, superintendent; Mr. Stearns, treasurer and selling agent. The company are now running more than one thousand machines, being one of the largest and most complete works of the kind in the United States, a large proportion of their product being goods of high class, heretofore imported. But for Mr. Stearns' pluck and effort this venture would not have been a success.

Mr. Stearns was chosen one of the directors of the



A. W. Kearns



Aaron Ordway

Lawrence National Bank, upon its organization in 1872, and in 1878 he was elected its president, and still holds the position. He is also one of the trustees and first vice-president of the Broadway Savings Bank.

He is one of the original stockholders of the Merrimack Valley Horse Railroad, and has been one of its directors since its organization, and is at present the largest stockholder.

AARON ORDWAY.

Among men who, during a long residence in Lawrence, have exhibited strongly marked individuality and intense activity in business and in general affairs, Dr. Aaron Ordway is a prominent veteran. A powerful ally in any cause he espoused, he has been, also, a wily and determined enemy to schemes and plans that he found well-grounded reason to oppose.

He came to the city in 1847, having previously been a trader in general merchandise at Springfield, Mass., and a practicing physician in Rumney, N. H. For twenty years, after coming, he was one of the busiest physicians of the city, and, for a long time, added to professional duties a thriving retail drug business. Faithful care of these interests called for uninterrupted action, and the doctor's temperament and physique fitted him to throw a vast amount of energy into the conduct of his private business, and yet continue active in matters of public concern, as a private citizen and as an alderman during two terms of service. So active was his life that his fellow-citizens wondered when he slept and rested, for he was the last man seen on the street or at business at night and the first abroad in the morning. Later in life he became financially interested in timber-lands and in the manufacture of lumber, and was at one time president of Brown's Lumber Company, of Whitefield, in Northern New Hampshire, and also of the Whitefield and Jefferson Railroad, in the same locality.

In religious matters Dr. Ordway has never been committed to any form of doctrine or wording of creeds, because of others' declaration, having well-grounded faith and opinion of his own, but he has liberally assisted many a struggling church and society in time of financial strait. He has also been a persistent and unswerving friend of the City Hospital.

In politics Dr. Ordway has been a party man of the intensest kind when he believed his party right, holding that right cannot be too boldly asserted or vigorously advocated; nevertheless, he could see a party desert its principles without joining in the stampede. He was a pioneer among early Abolitionists and an active sympathizer with the boldest reformers, whether in the anti-slavery or woman's suffrage cause. Long-continued intensity of action has undermined and broken a strong constitution and hardy physique, and, at the the age of seventy-four, he is an invalid, yet his courage is unabated and his mind unclouded.

In his active days his favor was much courted and his opposition feared by aspirants for political honors. Never on the fence or slow to declare himself, he was, in politics, as in all else, a determined opponent and a fast friend. It was said by some, that, when he appeared in a political contest as a cavalryman with a sorrel charger there was terror in the host he opposed.

He was born in Hebron, N. H., May 4, 1814. His father, Stephen Ordway, went from Amesbury, Mass., in childhood, to Dunbarton, N. H. From thence, at nineteen years, he removed to the northern plantation of "Cockamouth" (afterwards called Hebron), there founding a home, where he lived to the age of ninety-three years. John Ordway, brother of Stephen and uncle of the subject of this sketch, was the clerk and historian of the Lewis and Clark Exploring Expedition, an enterprise that opened up hitherto unknown regions of the West in the early years of the century and made the participants therein famous in American History.

Dr. Ordway married, for his first wife, Mary M. Kelley, of New Hampton, N. H., and four children survive her; for his second wife, he married Mary Ann Kelley, of Franklin, N. H., and with her he is enjoying as much of rest and quiet as broken health allows.

CHAPTER LXII.

MIDDLETON.

BY DAVID STILES.

FROM THE FIRST GRANT OF LAND BY THE GOVERNMENT TO RICHARD BELLINGHAM, ESQ., IN NOVEMBER, 1639 TO 1887.

In compiling this work (for I do not claim to be author), I have selected material according to my best judgment. If no fault is found I shall accomplish that which no other one to my knowledge has ever done before in a town history. Nearly every town in the county has a published history by some qualified author, but nothing worthy of such a title has ever been produced of this town, therefore I am left without any help, and your charitable judgment I implore.

In making up chapters some repetitions occur of persons and places, which are unavoidable; some mistakes in dates no doubt have been made, though not very far away from the truth. In many cases it has been almost impossible to find the exact times and places of even some of the most important events. —. —.

THIS town is about five miles long from north to south, and about three miles wide, bounded north by Andover and North Andover, west by North Reading, south by Danvers and east by Topsfield and Boxford. The larger part of the town is on the left bank of Ipswich River, which runs from southwest to northeast. Another principal stream is Beech Brook, named from the original beech trees along its bank. Its rise is in Andover, and its mouth is near the box-mill of J. B. Thomas, into Ipswich River. Pout

Pond Brook is an outlet of Swan Pond, in North Reading; its mouth is near the knife-factory buildings, into Ipswich River; and there are other small streams of less note.

The largest body of water has always been called Middleton Pond, which now supplies Danvers as well as our village, with the best of water. Pout Pond is on Pout Pond Brook, a sunken hole said to be the centre of the town. There are also other small bodies of water.

The most elevated land, Will's Hill, named from the last Indian inhabitant, who lived and died upon its summit, and whose squaw survived till after the town was incorporated,—and Bear Hill, near Topsfield line.

The town is well diversified by hills and valleys, and has many productive farms.

In population the village has largely increased within the last fifty years, while other portions have remained nearly the same, and in some parts gone back.

The wild beasts of the early years have disappeared. A few of the smaller varieties still remain.

This town was settled sixty-eight years before the act of incorporation. After passing those years, both the civil and ecclesiastical history commence. We then take up the latter and pursue it up to the present time, and then resume the civil history, after which, items of interest.

1639. This town was an unbroken wilderness, save an Indian plantation near the great pond. Richard Bellingham's grant, dated November 5, 1639, says: "in it is a pond[1] and an Indian plantation." This grant contained seven hundred acres. Some years previous to this time it is supposed that there were two other large Indian plantations, one at the east side on the plains, and one east of the house of H. A. Stiles; at these locations many Indian implements from time to time have been found.

Other grants followed that of Bellingham's; of Major General Daniel Dennison, of Ipswich, east of Bellingham's, running north, followed by Henry Bartholomew, near New Meadows, now Topsfield. These grants from General Court covered the larger portion of the present town.

The very first settler within the present limits of the town was William Nichols, in 1651, near William Peabody's, then New Meadows, from whom came two of our church officers; and all, so far as we know, by that name, many of whom have blessed the world and bear an honor to the name.

This William Nichols bought two hundred acres of Henry Bartholomew, mostly beyond the "six-mile extent" (meaning the circuit or swing-round bounds of Salem, which reached a half-mile south of our present village). William Nichols lived to the age of one hundred and two, and for many years his posterity were quite numerous in town; all of that name have now left town.

Bray Wilkins came from Wales and was among the first to land in this State. He was a very enterprising man, and of great vigor of constitution, and for many years was licensed as boatman on Naponset River, and to charge a penny a person. He subsequently moved to Lynn, Mass., and was engaged in some way in the iron business. Then, in 1659, he entered upon the bold operation (with his brother-in-law, John Gingle), of buying out the claim of Bellingham, amounting to seven hundred acres, paying therefore two hundred and fifty pounds and a ton of bar-iron. But with a strong constitution and six stout sons, with the help of Gingle, a tailor by trade, and two trusty kinsmen, Aaron Way and William Ireland, conveyed to them good farms. Aaron Way's houses were on the site of the old Estys tavern, now standing; subsequently Mr. Wilkins purchased more than he had sold, and yet, in 1676, the mortgage given to Bellingham was discharged, and his sons had bought out Gingle, and the work was done, says Upham.

It is curious to note that Bellingham inserted in Wilkins' deed that if minerals were found on this claim he was to pay him, or his heirs, ten pounds per year more.

Bray Wilkins' father was Lord John Wilkins, of Wales, and the family had borne many honorable titles and is traced back to 1090, or nearly eight centuries. Wilkins died 1702, aged ninety-seven.

On Dennison's claim was found iron-ore, and a mill was erected on the site of the knife-factory; and Thomas Fuller, an Englishman, who came over about 1638, and had resided in Cambridge, was engaged by Dennison to run the mill, and subsequently became owner in 1663, and erected his dwelling on the site of the house now owned by Charles O. Frost; and his little blacksmith-shop stood across the brook, called Piercies Brook, near the present tomb—the foundation can be now seen.

This iron-puddling mill remained in the Fuller family, in company with the Cave family, who lived on the farm now owned by Mr. O. L. Carleton for many years, and was subsequently set on fire, as is supposed, and destroyed by one of the parties to the ownership, then in a quarrel.

The wealth of this Thomas Fuller and his enterprising spirit and sound judgment gave to his posterity good positions in society, which have been sustained wherever they have been scattered over the world.

He had three wives. He died June 3, 1698. He came to this country on a tour of observation, intending to return in one year, but was converted under the preaching of Rev. Thomas Shepard, of Cambridge, Mass., on account of which he wrote some verses, the last of which is as follows:

[1] This pond was subsequently called Wilkins' Pond, and may now rightfully belong to Bray Wilkins' heirs.

"Christ cast his garments over me,
And all my sins did cover;
More precious to my soul was He
Than dearest friend and lover."

Augustus Shepard, of this town, is a descendant of this Rev. Thomas Shepard. This information was obtained in Boston.

The farms of the earlier settlers for some years were but imperfectly fenced and their cattle and flocks were watched by herdsmen, assisted by boys and girls. The court decreed that in every town the chosen men are to take care of such "as are sett to keep cattle that they sett some other employment withall, as spinning upon the rock, knitting & weaving tape, &c., that boyes and girls be not suffered to convers together."

Thus the watchers had to be watched.

Before the incorporation of this town, which was sixty-eight years after Wilkins bought Bellingham's claim, several occurrences took place which we shall mention. Wilkins, and those owning under him, were, in 1661, annexed to Salem Village, which gives the long and peculiar shape to the village boundaries, and there, where the witchcraft delusion began, they attended church and were identified with that people.

The families of Wilkins and Fuller increased rapidly, and with others who had moved in, it is supposed that in 1692 the population had increased to nearly three hundred. At the above date Francis Elliott lived a little west of the red house near the cemetery, and William Way who, with his wife Percy, united with the church at Salem Village May 12, 1680, lived in a house, the remnant of the cellar of which is seen just opposite the house of the late Addison Tylor. These houses, however, came within the bounds of Rowley Village, now Boxford, but nearly all the settlers as far away as William Nichols' farm came under the name of Will's Hill men. The line of Rowley crossed the river forty rods above Indian Bridge on a northwest course, passed in front of William Way's house, thence by Pout Pond to Beech Brook, where two brooks meet below the house of Mr. Ogden.

This little settlement became greatly disturbed by the witchcraft delusion, and one man of no little note was selected as a victim and hung on Gallows Hill, Salem, and here we insert the proceedings from Upham's work as a part of our own history:—

TRIAL OF JOHN WILLARD.

"May 10, 1692, a warrant was issued against John Willard, 'husbandman' to be brought to Thomas Beadle's house in Salem. On the 12th John Putnam, Jr., constable, made return that he had been 'to the house of the usual abode of John Willard and made search for him, and in several other places and houses, but could not find him,' and that his relations and friends said 'that to their best knowledge he was fled.' On the 15th a warrant was issued to the marshal of Essex, and the constable or constables within this their majesty's colony or territory of Massachusetts, in New England, requiring them to apprehend said Willard 'if he may be found in your precincts, who stands charged with sundry acts of witchcraft, by him done or committed on the bodies of Bray Wilkins and Samuel Wilkins, the son of Henry Wilkins, and others, upon complaint made by Thomas Fuller, Jr., and Benjamin Wilkins, Sr., yeoman, who, being found, you are to convey from town to town, from constable to constable, . . . to be prosecuted according to the direction of Constable John Putnam, of Salem Village, who goes with the same.' On the 18th of May Constable Putnam brought in Willard, and delivered him to the magistrates. He was seized in Groton. There is no record of his examination, but we gather from the papers on file the following facts relating to this interesting case: It is said that Willard had been called upon to aid in the arrest, custody and bringing in of persons accused, in acting as deputy-constable; and from his observation of the deportment of the prisoners, and from all he heard and saw, his sympathies became excited in their behalf, and he expressed in more or less terms his disapprobation of the proceedings. He seems to have considered all hands concerned in the business—accusers, accused, magistrates and people—as alike bewitched. One of the witnesses against him deposed that he said in a 'discourse' at the house of a relative,—'Hang them; they are all witches.' In consequence of this kind of talk, in which he indulged as early as April, he incurred the ill-will of the parties engaged in the prosecutions, and it was whispered about that he was himself in the diabolical confederacy. He was a grandson of Bray Wilkins, and the mind of the old man became prejudiced against him, and most of his family connections and neighbors partook of the feeling. When Willard discovered that such rumors were in circulation against him, he went to his grandfather for counsel and the aid of his prayers. He met with a cold reception, as appeared by the deposition of the old man, as follows: 'When John Willard was first complained of by the afflicted persons for afflicting of them, he came to my house, greatly troubled, desired me, with some other neighbors, to pray for him. I told him I was then going from home and could not stay, but if I could come home before night, I should not be willing. But it was near night before I came home and so I did not answer his desire, but I heard no more of him upon that account. Whether my not answering his desire did not offend him, I cannot tell, but I was jealous afterwards that it did.' Willard soon after made an engagement to go to Boston on election week with Henry Wilkins, Jr. A son of said Henry Wilkins, named Daniel, a youth of seventeen years of age, who had heard the stories against Willard, and believed them all, remonstrated with his father against going to Boston with Willard, and seemed much distressed at the thought, saying, among other things,—'It were well if the said Willard were hanged.' Old Bray Wilkins must go to election, too, and so started off on horseback—the only mode of travel then practicable, from Will's Hill to Winnesimit Ferry—with his wife on a pillion behind him. He was eighty-two years of age, and she probably not much less; for she had been the wife of his youth. The old couple undoubtedly had an active time that week in Boston. It was a great ovation, and the whole country flocked in to partake in the ceremonies and services of the anniversary. On Election day, with his wife, he rode out to Dorchester to dine at the house of his brother, Lieutenant Richard Way. Deodat Lawson and his new wife, and several more, join them at the table. Before sitting down Henry Wilkins and John Willard also came in. Willard, perhaps, did not feel very agreeably towards his grandfather at the time for having shown an unwillingness to pray with him. The old man saw, or imagined he saw, a very unpleasant expression in Willard's countenance. To my apprehension, he looked after such a sort upon me as I never before discerned in any. The long and hard travel, the fatigues and excitements of election week, were too much for the old man, tough and rugged as he was; and a severe attack of a complaint, to which persons of his age are often subject, came on. He experienced great sufferings, and, as he expressed it, 'was like a man on a rack.'

"I told my wife immediately that I was afraid that Willard had done wrong; my pain continuing, and finding no relief, my jealousy continued. Mr. Lawson and others there were all amazed, and knew not what to do for me. There was a woman accounted skilful came, hoping to help me, and after she had used means, she asked me whether none of those evil persons had done me damage. I said I could not say they had, but I was sore afraid they had. She answered she did fear so, too. As near as I can remember, 'I lay in this case three or four days at Boston, and afterward, with the jeopardy of my life (as I thought), I came home.' On his return he found his grandson, the same Daniel who had warned Henry Wilkins against going to Boston with John Willard, on his death-bed, in great suffering. Another attack of his own malady came on. There was great consternation in the neighborhood, and throughout the village. The devil and his confederates, it was thought, were making an awful onslaught upon the people at Will's Hill. Parris and others rushed to the scene. Mercy Lewis and Mary Walcot were carried up to tell who it was that was bewitching old Bray, and young Daniel, and others of the Wilkinses who had caught

the contagion and were experiencing or imagining all sorts of bodily ails. They were taken to the room where Daniel was approaching his death agonies; and they both affirmed that they saw the spectres of old Mrs. Buckley and John Willard upon his throat and upon his breast, and pressed him and choked him; and the cruel operation, they insisted upon it, continued until the boy died. The girls were carried to the bedroom of the old man, who was in great suffering; and, when they entered, the question was put by the anxious and excited friends in the chamber to Mercy Lewis, whether she saw anything. She said, yes; 'they are looking for John Willard.' Presently she pretended to have caught sight of his apparition, and exclaimed, 'there he is upon his grandfather's belley.' This was thought wonderful, indeed, for, as the old man says in a deposition he drew up afterwards, 'At that time I was in grevious pain in the small of my belly.' Mrs. Ann Putnam had her story to tell about John Willard. Its substance is seen in a deposition drawn up about the same time, and is in the same vein as her testimony in other cases, presenting a problem to be solved by those who can draw the line between semi-insane hallucination and downright fabrication.

"Her deposition is as follows:

"'The shape of Samuel Fuller and Lydia Wilkins this day told me at my own house by the bedside who appeared in a winding-sheet, that if I did not go and tell Mr. Hathorne that John Willard had murdered them, they would tear me to pieces. I knew them when they were living, and it was exactly their resemblance and shape. And, at the same time, the apparition of John Willard told me that he had killed Samuel Fuller, Lydia Wilkins, Goody Shaw and Fuller's second wife, and Aaron Way's child, and Ben Fuller's child, and this deponant's child Sarah, six weeks old, and Philip Knight's child, with the help of William Hobbs, and Jonathan Knight's child and two of Ezekiel Cheevers children with the help of William Hobbs; Anne Eliot and Isaac Nichols with the help of William Hobbs; and if Mr. Hathorne would not believe them,—that is, Samuel Fuller and Lydia Wilkins, perhaps they would appear to the magistrates. Joseph Fuller's apparition the same day also came to me, and told me that Goody Covey had killed him. The spectre aforesaid told me that vengeance, vengeance, was cried by said Fuller. This relation is true ANN PUTNAM.'

"It appears by such papers as are to be found relating to Willard's case, that a coroner's jury was held over the body of Daniel Wilkins, of which Nathaniel Putnam was foreman.

"It is much to be regretted that the finding of that jury is lost. It would be a real curiosity. That it was very decisive to the point, affirmed by Mercy Lewis and Mary Walcot. That Daniel was choaked and strangled by the spectres of John Willard and Goody Buckley is apparent from the manner in which Bray Wilkins speaks of it. In an argument between him and some persons who were expressing their confidence in that John Willard was an innocent man he sought to relieve himself from responsibility for Willard's conviction by saying, 'It was not I, nor my son Benjamin Wilkins, but the the testimony of the afflicted persons, and the jury concerning the murder of my grandson, Daniel Wilkins, that would take away his life, if anything did.'

"Mr. Parris, of course, was in the midst of these proceedings at Will's Hill; attended the visits of the afflicted girles when they went to ascertain who were the witches murdering young Daniel Wilkins and torturing the old man; was present, no doubt, at the solemn examination and investigations of the sages who sat as a jury of inquest over the former, and, in all likelihood, made, as usual, a written report of the same. As soon as he got back to his house he discharged his mind and indorsed the verdict of the coroner's jury by this characteristic insertion in his church records: 'Dan Wilkins, bewitched to death.' The very next entry relates to a case of which this obituary line in Mr. Parris' church book is the only intimation that has come down to us. 'Daughter to Anne Douglas by witchraft I doubt not.' Willard's examination was at Beadle's, on the 18th. With this deluge of accusations and tempest of indignation beating upon him, he had but little chance, and was committed. While the marshals and constables were in pursuit of Willard, the time was well improved by the prosecutors."—UPHAM.

This is a part of our town history, and gives a very good idea of the prevailing sentiment on the public mind in regard to witchcraft at that time.

John Willard appears to have been an honest and amiable person, an industrious farmer, having a comfortable estate, with a wife and three young children. He was called grandson of Bray Wilkins, but whether by marriage or blood relation we know not. He came from Groton; and whether he was a brother or relative of Rev. Samuel Willard, of Boston, it is for the local antiquaries to discover. If so it would add still greater interest to this narrative. Margaret, the widow of John Willard, married William Towne.

1700. - Ebenezer Stiles (son of Robert, who married Elizabeth Fry October 4, 1660, came from Yorkshire, England, with Rev. Ezekiel Rogers), came from Boxford (born on the site of Deacon Cowles' house), and bought a tract of land of "Lawrence Lacy, of Andover, and in the township of Andover, four-score rods long and three-score rods wide." Lacy, in deeding it to Stiles, says it is the same that I had of the town of Andover for "quality." Duality, a state of being two, most of the land is still owned by his dscendants. He was the first of the name settled here (his house stood on the left bank of Beech Brook, cellar now seen), and with his son Ebenezer, Jr., helped form the church here in the new town in 1729, his house just coming within its bounds. This son Ebenezer married Sarah Howe April 23, 1733, and built the house now standing, owned by H. A. Stiles, brother of the writer.

In this same neighborhood, soon after, was Timothy Perkins, now G. H. Tufts' place (this house perhaps the oldest in town), and further down that of Joseph Fuller, grandson of Thomas—house now standing called the old Fuller farm-house, and quite ancient.

As this town belonged in four parts to other towns before incorporated, it is only by great labor that these far away days' doings can be brought to light, mixed as they are, with the records of other places and people. The house of Bray Wilkins stood near the end of the walk, as it comes down the hill near the Emerson house, on Pond Road. An old house was taken down by Maj. Solomon Wilkins (near the Weston place), supposed to have been very old, and for many generations the home of Bray Wilkins' descendants, also the Thomas house, near by, belonged to this Wilkins family, and is very ancient.

The house in which Mr. George A. Currier now lives was built about 1710, by a son or grandson of the first Thomas Fuller; also the gambrel-roof house near by was the home of Timothy Fuller's son, and is older than the town. There was an old house a little south of the Esq. Daniel Fuller house, occupied by the Fuller's descendants of the first Robert.

The Peabodies and Symonds families resided in the east part of the town. Three brothers (Peabody's), as follows: Samuel M. Peabody place, Augustus Curtis place and John Averill place. Samuel Symonds was on the box-factory place many years before the town was incorporated, and remained in the family till within forty years. Samuel H. Wilkins' house belonged to the Elliot family, and east of this was John Willard's, the victim of witchcraft.

The Asa Howe farm has long been in the family, and the house was the residence of John Howe,

father of Esquire Asa Howe, who was the grandfather of said Asa, now upon the place. Just beyond this place (the cellar is now seen) was the residence of Isaac Berry, brother of Nathaniel Berry, grandfather of the late Deacon Allen Berry.

On the cross-road, a little east of the farm of David Richardson, (whose house and building were recently burned), was a farm owned by a Berry family, all of whom died of small-pox; the buildings tumbled down; no one cared to go near the place. Their remains were buried in the corner of the field on the other side of the road. The disease was conveyed to them by their dog from Andover, at the house of Peter Towne, (the house is now standing); whose wife died with the small-pox, which is supposed to have been given her in a pinch of snuff by a rejected lover. The Berrys owned a wood-lot a little beyond this house and the dog, in company with the team, rolled as is supposed, on some of the waste thrown out at the back-door. This occurred more than a century ago.

The original home of the Esty family was across the railroad, east of the house of Mr. Walden Batchelder.

The town records of Topsfield, July 2d, 1728. To see what the town will do concerning the families that have petitioned not to be set off to Will's Hill, (their names), Thomas Robinson, Job Averill, John Cummings and Daniel Towne (the latter probably was the one chosen for schoolmaster), which might have a good influence at that time, to bring them into the town limits, though for some years Topsfield pretended to claim to the foot of the hill, by the road below the house of Mr. George P. Wilkins. All these families resided in the neighborhood of Nichols' Brook. There are quite a number of cellar holes now seen in this portion of the town.

North and west of this Nichols Brook settlement, was Boxford, which lost by the setting off of Middleton, six hundred acres of land, and one hundred of their population. Incorporation of Middleton, June 20th, 1728.

The original charter has recently been found, though in three pieces, can yet be read; it is written in a bold and elegant hand. After briefly stating the boundary lines, two years are allowed "to procure a suitable place for the worship of God, and likewise to settle a learned orthodox minister, and hire a school-master to instruct their young."

The town met (as they then had a suitable place), at the house of Dr. Daniel Felch, (cellar now seen opposite house of the late Addison Tyler). (Formerly this place was owned by William Way).

This charter was presented to the people by Jonathan Fuller (a grandson of Thomas). Two years previous to this time the bounds of the town had been contemplated, and probably made for the action of the court to grant their prayer for to be organized into a town, and had mutually engaged in putting up an oak frame building for a place of worship forty feet square and about twenty-two feet post; the frame stood several years before being covered, as the location did not give entire satisfaction, but subsequently "voted to finish our meeting-house where it now stands," yet it was in bad condition till 1731, and even up to 1802, the house was in the form of a barn with only a few windows, with no inner doors, or porches, or plastering, save the walls, which were plastered to the gable-ends, with no plastering over-head, till the latter date. During this time the great braces of oak timber remained, which went from the floor to the posts about midway up, then another long brace from the same mortice in the post up to the great beam overhead, and these beams or plates were only eight feet distance apart, which with all these braces must have caused the interior of the house to look like a dense wood lot. Doubtless a small boy could lay close upon one of these braces undiscovered by the tithing man through the service. The wall pews were sold when the house was first occupied, and the seats in the body of the house gave way to pews in 1802, when there were added, the porches, new windows and a sounding-board or canopy, and all was newly painted, even the roof, after which it went to decay, and was bought by the writer forty years ago, and taken down.

The First Minister.—A meeting was called Tuesday, the 16th day of November, 1729. Lieutenant Thomas Fuller was chosen moderator, and the answer of Rev. Andrew Peters to the town accepted, and the second Wednesday in November appointed for ordination. A committee was chosen to join with Mr. Peters in the choice of some neighboring elders to assist in the ordination.

Mr. John Berry, Lieutenant Thomas Fuller and Joseph Wright composed the committee.

"*Voted*, to support the charges of ordination by a free contribution. *Voted*, to raise seven shillings upon single votes to a hundred-pound vote. Mr. Peters' salary was a hundred pounds per year in province bills or passable money so long as he should continue his work among us, and that his salary shall rise or fall as money shall."

The town met again the 23d of October (1729), and chose David Kenney moderator; Francis Eliott, Sargeant Jonathan Fuller, Isaac Wilkins and Daniel Kenney to receive both money and provisions for the ordination; the house of Jonathan Fuller appointed for entertainment of ministers and messengers, and the house of Francis Eliott for the scholars.

The next thing in order was to form a church. This took place October 22, 1729, with fifty-two members; eleven more were added the following year. From this we judge the population to have been about four hundred or four hundred and fifty. The November 26th following, Rev. Andrew Peters, a graduate of Harvard College, and son of Samuel Peters, of Andover, was settled as minister, and Daniel Towne as schoolmaster.

Of those who formed the church, twenty-five came from Salem Village, nine from Topsfield and eleven from Boxford.

The ordination of a minister, which was for life, was a great event in those days. From all the towns around they flocked to Middleton for a feast; all doors were opened, and tables loaded with the best of good things, and it was not an uncommon thing for individuals to boast that they had called at every house on the way home, and took something to eat or drink at each, and in some cases they rested on the way till their stomachs were relieved of its unwonted burden.

As near as can be ascertained, the ordination took place on the 26th day of November, 1729. Mr. Peters was then twenty-nine years of age. He remained twenty-seven years. He was a devoted minister, and the church prospered under his ministry. He died October 6, 1756, aged fifty-five years. His remains were interred in the Fuller burying-ground, and a stone marks his last resting-place. For nearly five years before his death he was unable to supply the pulpit from sickness. What his complaints were we have not learned. Very little is recorded of his wife Hannah; her name is not found on the church records. Mr. Peters was of a very social nature, and perhaps a little eccentric.

It is said that Mr. Peters had a negro servant that drove his master's cows to pasture up by the pond, and at that time the road went round by the old Timothy Fuller house (now standing by the graveyard). Fuller was rather a lawless man, and often loved to bother people, especially those whom he could intimidate. The negro complained to his master of these insults, and forthwith Mr. Peters undertook to drive the cows, and he found the hectorer of his negro and expostulated with him, but without satisfaction. Then Mr. Peters took off his coat and laid it upon a stump, saying, "Lay there divinity, while I whip a rascal," and gave him a sound thrashing. At another time, when looking after his cattle near Will's Hill, he entered the hut of old Willis, the Indian (the last of his race in town), and his squaw asked him to take dinner with her. He first asked what she had; she answered, "Skunk." Well, he thought he would not stop then, but perhaps some other time would. Not long after he again found himself under the cover of her tent or shanty, and, knowing that he loved eels, she had prepared a most tempting dish, which he did not decline, and ate heartily; after which the old, cunning squaw came to his side and said,—"You say you no eat skunk, but you eat rattlesnake," and so he had, but without any harm, as all Indians know they are good eating.

Mr. Peters was born near the old North meeting-house, and the cellar of his old home is now visible, and still in the Peters possession up to a late death. Mr. Peters bought the Dr. Daniel Felch place, took down the house, and built a new one back of the meeting-house, which was taken down about fifty years since; cellar now seen.

We will now follow the succession of pastors and the ecclesiastical history up to the present time.

After the death of Mr. Peters, for nearly three years several votes were passed by the town to supply the pulpit with some young gentleman from month to month (Dana, Brown and others preached in turns); and finally gave a call to Rev. Elias Smith (I think he was from Baintree; not sure). Mr. Smith was then thirty years of age, and was a graduate of Harvard College and a successful pastor. He was settled January 10, 1759.

We notice a vote passed to give Mr. Smith one hundred and sixty pounds lawful money for his settlement (a sort of bonus in those days), and then voted sixty-five pounds, thirteen shillings and four pence for his salary; and at a subsequent meeting the town voted thirteen shillings, and another meeting soon after thirteen shillings more; and, to add more attractiveness to the old meeting-house, voted two pounds for repairs, and this clinched the bargain, and the ordination went on, and money was voted to be taken out of the town treasury to pay its expenses.

Mr. Smith once had a call from Marblehead, which he refused, saying,—"I would not leave my little flock in Middleton for all Marblehead." He was one of the trustees of Philips Academy, and so remained till his death, which took place October 17, 1791, aged sixty-one years. His was a ministry of nearly thirty-three years. His remains were placed in the tomb near his house.[1] Two of his daughters were school-teachers, and one of them taught in the old Fuller house, which stood a little south of the house now occupied by Jeremiah Fuller, referred to before.

Rev. Elias Smith owned the farm which belonged to the late Abijah Fuller, but his house was moved about sixty years ago to the turnpike road, and now owned by George A. Currier. This, however, is but half of the house; the other half was the same size, and stood at right angles with the other, one facing south, the other west. Timothy Fuller owned a mill just below Smith's farm (the old dam is yet visible), which flowed the meadow in front of his house. Few men dared to tackle Fuller in the law, as he was almost always successful, and he was very often in the law, in which he had plenty of money to spend to gratify his overbearing spirit. But Mr. Smith beat him this time, to the great satisfaction of the people. Smith employed as counsel John Adams. Probably this trial took place before Adams was President of the United States.

Perhaps it would be well here to state that it was the practice in those early times in New England to seat the meeting-house (so-called) once in a year; or

[1] This tomb was built about a century ago by Captain Joseph Peabody, of Salem (the millionaire), and Mr. Smith in company. Peabody married two of Smith's daughters, whose remains rest in the tomb with their father.

twice, at most. While the wall pews extended all around the house, and were sold to some of the first families in town (and occupied by their descendants till since the remembrance of the writer), the body of the house contained seats, and a committee was chosen to seat the meeting-house. First, regard was had for old age, and they were probably seated up towards the pulpit. Next in order were those who paid the highest rates. The question as to who was the richest, and, by good rights, deserved the higher seat, when so little care was taken in assessing taxes, for which no compensation was made (till within sixty years), was a most difficult question, and many were dissatisfied; and on some dark and stormy night the seats were all torn down, and so found on the following Sabbath morning. Says an old lady (who first entered the church on Sunday morning and the first to discover the wanton act), "If judgment begin at the house of God what will the end be?" The town met and voted to build them up; again they came down; now they voted to build them up, and if they come down again, each man should build up his own seat. After this they stood till 1802.

After the death of Mr. Smith, the town hired, from month to month, preachers till October 23, 1793, when they settled Rev. Solomon Adams, a graduate of Harvard College, who remained twenty years. He died September 4, 1813, aged fifty-two years. His remains rest in the tomb with his predecessor, and the last of our ministers, whose remains are found among the people of their charge.

The health of Mr. Adams failed some few years before he gave up preaching, and with great difficulty he ascended the high pulpit, by reason of a palsy shock, and an extra rail was spiked on to the great protruding timbers near the pulpit to raise himself up step by step. He would often forget the order of exercises, and put the singing in where it did not belong. During this time Deacon Benjamin Peabody (brother of old Captain Joseph, the millionaire of Salem) would read a sermon while Mr. Adams would offer the prayers and, with the help of Peabody, would conduct the other exercises.

Adams owned the farm of his predecessor, which, with school-teaching and his little salary, gave him a comfortable support.

"There is an intention of marriage, entered with me, between the Rev. Solomon Adams, of Middleton, and Miss Abigail Fiske, of Waltham, July 14th, 1794.

"BENJAMIN PEABODY, *Town Clerk.*"

Mrs. Adams and her young family the writer well remembers; their pew in the church was the first at the foot of the pulpit stairs, which was at its right-hand side. Some ten years after Mr. Adams' death the widow sold the farm to Mr. Abijah Fuller (a descendant of the first Thomas who had located on this very site one hundred and sixty-one years before), who took down half of the old house and sold the other half to be moved to the turnpike, as before mentioned, and built the house now standing, owned by Charles O. Frost. Mrs. Adams, in conveying the house and farm to Fuller, sold also the old eight-day clock, supposed to have been bought by Adams soon after his marriage. This clock remained in the family till after Mr. Fuller's death, when Mr. Edward Page, of Boston (who married a daughter of Rev. Solomon Adams, of Boston, and granddaughter of the old minister), and moved the clock to Boston, where it now gives the correct time, as it did nearly a a century ago.

Then again the town was without a minister about three years, when Rev. Ebenezer Hubbard was settled November 27, 1816, and dismissed April 30, 1828, —he remained twelve years. His salary was five hundred dollars. He owned a farm near the church, now the Richardson place. Mr. Hubbard was a very pleasant speaker, and gave great satisfaction, especially to those who liked liberal views of Christian doctrines. Long sermons were listened to by a full house, discontented ones who had signed to other places of worship out of town (for, by the law then, all all must pay a minister tax somewhere), came back, and there was a great show of prosperity outwardly, but soon the storm came, by the unwise speeches and words dropped by Mr. Hubbard, a meeting was called, and, as Mr. Hubbard was settled for life (and the last of our ministers so settled), they voted him five hundred dollars to relinquish the bargain between them.

We well remember his farewell discourse, in which he said "you would have plucked out your own eyes and have given them to me, but now you are offended because I have told you the truth."

Mr. Hubbard was born in Marblehead, and a graduate of Harvard College of the class of 1805. He resided for some time in Ipswich, had a call from Boxford in 1808, which he refused on account of insufficient salary being offered, and subsequently settled in West Newbury in 1811. After leaving Middleton he was settled in Lunenburgh, Mass., and remained but a few years. He made the last call on us in Middleton in the spring of 1835. He had an interesting wife and family. While here he lost a son about fourteen years of age, whose remains were laid in the old tomb, with the consent of old Captain Peabody; and when the latter's widow died, a few years ago, at an advanced age, and, by her son George, her remains were brought to this tomb as the last to be laid therein (before the last great slab was to cover it forever), the body of Mr. Hubbard's child was discovered, and great inquiry was made as to who it was, this inquiry was soon settled by the writer, as this young man was an intimate friend of his.

Then for the fourth time the three years again elapsed before the call was given to Rev. Forrest Jefferds, in 1831. Meanwhile, students from Andover, and a Rev. Mr. Farley and others, had sup-

plied the pulpit, and but little interest was taken in religious matters, except by a few who had, with the Andover students, re-established the Sabbath-school, we say re-established, because Solomon Adams, son of the old minister, had started the school as early as 1819, but it was soon run down when he and David Russell, its main supports, left town.

This call, however, was subsequently voted down by one majority (after one or two meetings of tie votes) of those who desired unevangelical preaching. When the last vote was made known, Deacon Joseph Peabody said, "Those of you who approve of such preaching as we have had for the last four Sabbaths, please to withdraw to the southeast corner of the house," and leading the way, they then and there resolved to leave the house of worship occupied by them and their fathers a hundred years. Till within a few years the house had no warming apparatus; now the stove, Sabbath-school library, church furniture and the old tankards and cups, together with the church funds and even the church records must be given up. The records were subsequently returned, though not for twenty years, and after the death of one of the two male members who did not go with the church. There were only four of the church members left behind. Such fidelity in bearing testimony to the truth, as shown by these now outcasts, was a wonder after such unevangelical doctrines had been preached by the two last settled pastors. Such occurrences, however, took place in a large number of towns in New England about the same time.

Those few left behind soon died; none were even added to their number; the parish held now and then a meeting on the Sabbath; never organized a Sabbath-school, or held a meeting, and subsequently passed a vote calling themselves the First Universalist Society, by which name they now are known. The old house stood some fifteen years longer and became very dilapidated, and was sold to the writer for sixty dollars and taken down and sold for fire-wood. A few of its boards and timbers are still preserved as relics.

This was the saddest day the Church had ever seen. They hired the Centre school-house for a place of worship. Mr. Jefferds cast in his lot with them, and was settled May 2d, 1832. The same year the new meeting-house was built; the builder was Jacob Dodge Wenham, (which is now occupied as a dwelling-house by Mr. Samuel Peabody, son of Joseph, before mentioned), costing two thousand dollars, of which only about seven hundred dollars could be raised on account of the poverty of the people. The balance was given by outside parties, through the intercession of Mr. Washington Berry, (God bless their memories), whose sympathies were enlisted in our behalf, and for many years the Home Missionary Society aided us in the sum of two hundred and fifty dollars per year. In twenty-eight years the society had not only become self-supporting, but had out-grown their house of worship, purchased the land on which the ancient church had stood, and erected the present beautiful place of worship, and thus, after an exile of twenty-eight years returned to the spot once dedicated by their ancestors to the worship of God.

Mr. Jefferds was dismissed May 15th, 1844, and died a few years since, in South Boston, about 75 years of age. Mr. Jefferds was a most faithful pastor, proclaiming the doctrine of evangelical truth without fear of man and church discipline was kept up by him, without which, little good can be expected of its influence. Mr. Jefferds spent the best of his days here and laid well the foundations under which we have prospered. His memory should ever be held by this people in grateful remembrance.

Mr. Jefferds was settled in Epping, N. H., before coming to Middleton. He married President William Stearns' sister, by whom he had a very large family of children.

Rev. Thurston Searle settled May 8, 1845; dismissed December 23, 1846. Mr. Searle married a daughter of Colonel Jesse Putnam, of Danvers, Mass., and died in that town a few years since.

Rev. J. Augustin Hood, ordained January 2, 1850; dismissed May 17, 1854. Mr. Hood was son of Rev. Jacob Hood, who died a few weeks since in Lynnfield, Mass., aged ninety-four years.

Rev. A. H. Johnson, ordained January 1, 1857; dismissed April 5, 1865. Mr. Johnson is now a practicing physician in Salem, Mass.

Rev. James M. Hubbard, installed April 8, 1865; resigned December 28, 1868. The same council that dismissed Mr. Johnson settled Mr. Hubbard.

Rev. Lucien H. Frary, ordained October 7, 1869; dismissed March 16, 1875. Mr. Frary went from here to Weymouth, and is now settled over a large and flourishing society. Mr. Frary is a very interesting preacher, and commanded a larger salary than this people could pay. The church and society prospered under his ministry.

A sad event took place just before Mr. Frary left, which was the partial burning of the church by an incendiary. A fire was kindled, as is supposed, in a cabinet organ standing at the right of the pulpit, which spread to the adjoining pews, twelve of which were consumed; and if it had not been for the woolen carpet, the fire would have spread all over the house. When discovered the blaze reached the plastering overhead, and so great was the heat that all the paint, even to the entry, was blistered, and the desk, table, chairs and the organ in the gallery, that cost some five hundred dollars, was destroyed. The damage was about two thousand dollars.

This fire was discovered Saturday morning after Thanksgiving, 1873, about half-past six o'clock, by Benjamin Parker, who was at that time on his way to work at J. B. Thomas' box-mill. It is thought that in less than ten minutes more the heat was so great that the flames would have flashed all over the

house. The house was closed tight; otherwise it would certainly have been burned.

After Mr. Frary left several candidates preached, among them Kingsly F. Norris, of New York, who received a call which he declined, it being his intention to go West.

Rev. A. H. Tyler was settled October 24, 1877; dismissed April 29, 1880.

For the last three years the pulpit has been supplied by Rev. S. K. B. Perkins, who is a scholarly preacher and faithful, devoted pastor. Mr. Perkins[1] was born in Braintree, Mass., where his father, Rev. Jonas Perkins, was pastor for more than forty-five years over the same church where Mr. Frary is now settled.

The present house of worship was erected in 1859 by Abel Preston, of Peabody, Mass.; cost about five thousand dollars. Building committee, Wm. A. Phelps, David Stiles and Francis P. Merriam.

LIST OF DEACONS.

1729. John Berry.
Samuel Symonds.
1738. Edward Putnam, Jr.
1749. Samuel Nichols.
1756. Francis Peabody, Jr.
1778. John Flint.
1780. Samuel Symonds.
1794. Benjamin Peabody.
John Nichols.
1820. Joseph Symonds.
1821. Joseph Peabody.
1829. David S. Wilkins.
1831. David Stiles, Sr.
1840. Allen Berry.
1859. William A. Phelps.
1868. James N. Merriam.
1874. Edward W. Wilkins.

About eight years since a Methodist Society started here, built a neat chapel, and are now in a flourishing condition. A new house of worship has also been erected by the Universalist Society.

We will now resume the civil history. The first town clerk was Mr. Edward Putnam, son of first deacon of Salem village, and lived near the Crawford house, the site of which was his father's house. This son Edward's house came within the new town, which stood just a little down the hill, south of Mr. J. J. H. Gregory's present farm-house.

The first selectmen were, Thomas Fuller, Thomas Robinson, John Nichols, Samuel Symonds and Edward Putnam.

The second pew from the front door on the west side, was sold to Joseph Fuller, for ten pounds more than what he hath recently done, (this Joseph was the grandson of Thomas), and his descendants occupied this pew, so long as it was used as a place of worship.

Soon after incorporation the town was fined for not maintaining a public-school.

"SPECIMEN OF TOWN ORDERS.

"Mr. Robert Bradford (Bradford lived on the Maj. Elias Wilkins place, east side), Sir, ples to pay unto Joseph Symonds two pounds eight shillings, it being for Miss Betsey Bixby, keeping School three weeks, and charge the same to the town.

"MIDDLETON, January ye third day, 1772.

"Andrew Fuller, Joseph Symonds, Archlaus Fuller, Selectmen. Andrew Fuller was called Capt., and built the house near the church in 1775, and also the same year built the Porter Gould house, for his son David. Archlaus Fuller, grandfather of Jeremiah Fuller now occupies the old house of his ancestors."

1732.—There was a long and bitter contest in regard to the common lands with Salem village people, and General Court was appealed to. These lands lay along Nichols Brook, called Stickey meadows, (a proper name certainly). Afterwards this territory was called the disputed lands between Topsfield and Middleton, and so laid down in maps. Notwithstanding our charter laid the bounds by the northerly branch of said brook, yet as it could not be found, and that the other branches had been cut out as a nearer course to the river, to drain the meadows, many years before, had caused the northerly branch to grow over in bushes and nearly obliterated; but finally traced out, and the heap of stones found on the meadow completely covered with soil, that was placed there by those who run the line probably two years before the act of incorporation was passed.

In the early settlement of this place, the highways were not fenced, and gates or bars to be opened or taken away and again replaced on going through every man's farm. They however were to be in good condition. The roads were not only crooked, but in many places dangerous to travel, and so narrow in raised places that it was often with great difficulty that teams passed each other.

Soon after incorporation, alewives were taken from Cochitwick Brook, Andover, and placed in Middleton pond; then again in 1764, and at several times subsequently till within a few years, all to little purpose; and black-bass at last, of which few of the people who paid for the operation have ever seen one.

A clerk of market for many years was annually chosen, and a vote passed each year, whether the hogs should go at large, if well yoked and ringed; this vote came up at March meeting till 1814.

Also "the chooseing of a man to take care of ye Deer, and see that they were not killed in an improper time." Mark Howe filled this office several years. He was the father of Esquire Asa, who was grandfather of Mr. Asa Howe, now living on the same farm, and in the same house.

1736.—Another specimen showing the condition of the old church.

"To seee if the town will grant ye petition of Hannah Nichols, wife of Joseph Nichols, and Abigail Burton, wife of John Burton, Jr., to build a back pew over the womans stairs from ye womans back seet in the front gallery to ye east corner of ye meeting-house and from thence to ye womans sets in the east gallery" (same meeting), "3d to see if ye town will grant the petition of Joseph Wilkins and Ebenezer Nichols for their two daughters, viz.: Mary Wilkins, and Keziah Nichols, and others with them to build a back seat in ye east gallery of our meeting-house."

1739.—Two men were sent to Boston to present a petition to General Court, to get a grant passed to abate a fine imposed for not sending a representative.

[1] The home of the Perkins family was Ipswich, Mass.

Till within almost eighty years the expense of a representative to General Court was borne by the towns, and for *eleven* years after incorporation voted not to send every year, and only five times in the first sixty years. Timothy Fuller three times, and Archalaus Fuller twice. Subsequently Dr. David Fuller offered his services gratuitous at an informal town meeting, the Court refused him a seat, and afterwards the town called a meeting and disowned him as its representative. Dr. Fuller lived on the B. P. Richardson farm.

1740.—"To see if ye town will vote Land-Bank money, to pay town rates," and was unanimously passed, "that Land-Bank money or manufactory bills should pay the town rates for time to come," was also passed.

In the scarcity of money in those days, this scheme to make paper money was devised by leading wealthy men in nearly all parts of the State, one of whom lived in Worcester. Cornet Francis Peabody of this town, a wealthy man, and of much influence in the county, entered deeply into it, and pledged his property to defend it, and the scheme went so far that Parliament had to take notice of it and pronounced the scheme unlawful, and in the name of the Crown they were all prosecuted, were heavily fined, and made to redeem every particle of it.

"Cornet" stood for "Captain of the troop of Horse;" for the county, and the original commission issued by the officers of the Crown of England are still in existence.

1744.—"*Voted* Rev. Andrew Peters fifty-three pounds, six shillings and eight pence lawful money for his salary this present year."

1745.—"Isaac Wilkins and Timothy Fuller chosen to keep the way clear for fish to pass to the great pond."

1749.—Ezra Putnam was given liberty to cut a window in the back part of his pew on his own charge and cost.

1750.—"*Voted* to pay Asa Foster, of Andover, twenty pounds lawful money if he would keep the long cassway in good repair, that it may be good passing at all times in the year for twenty years to come." This was Foster's offer, because, in his route to Salem, he had either to turn off and go by Emersen's Mill, or turn to the left and pass over at the outlet of Pout Pond, and go out by the Roger Eliott's place, thence over to John King's place and thence to Indian Bridge. Four years before the town had voted to discontinue this crossing, and an appeal had been made to the county for help, and even a lottery scheme was asked for from the State, to raise funds to fill up this sunken vale, and not till 1808 was it safe at "all times of the year" for public travel. In building the railroad across these meadows one morning it was found that during the night the road, which was nearly fitted for the rails, had gone down out of sight. As early as 1688 the people of Andover had petitioned court to fill up this swamp as the diverging roads, before named, were hilly and rocky at that time, and for many years subsequently the crossway hill was avoided by a road east of it now seen.

1752.—"Isaac Kenney and Andrew Fuller were chosen to go to ye General Court held at Concord with a petition to get ye town in a regular way or method by reason of the warrants granted by the selectmen have been deficient in time past."

1755.—"*Voted* to raise forty pounds lawful money in raising the long cassway with timber and gravel."

1756.—"*Voted* to supply the pulpits of those ministers who were bearers at Mr. Peters' funeral."

1757.—"Rev. Mr. Ames preached part of the year also Mr. Dana one month, and tried to settle him on a salary of sixty pounds a year."

1758.—December 7th "*Voted* to pay charges of ordination, also charges for ministers, messengers and gentlemen to dine" (Mr. Smith's ordination).

1759.—"To see if the town will vote to have Mr. Nathaniel Peabody's rates abated, that is to say, what he was rated for his negro servant."

"*To the town of Middleton.*

"BRETHREN—By your committee I am informed of your desire that I might begin my salary the first of January, which I now tell you is very agreeable to me, and then there can be no difficulty in after time relating thereunto, and if you comply I expect you to give me an order upon the treasurer for eighty-two pounds, old tenor, which is what will be due to that time. So, brethren, I wish you peace and happiness and that you will not forget to pray for your unworthy pastor,

"ELIAS SMITH.

"Middleton, March 20, 1759."

1762.—"*Voted* to repair the school-house that stands by the meeting-house, provided proper papers be given of the house to the town." Said house was moved to Danvers in 1819 by John Fuller.

The schools were often kept in private houses or buildings erected by individuals, for which they received a small income besides accommodating their own children near home, and do some work while being instructed, as at an early age they were required to be almost self-supporting.

1764.—"At a vendue at John Estys' tavern the town sold vacant places for pews in the west end of the meeting-house to Captain Andrew Fuller for ten pounds and ten shillings."

1769.—Jonathan Knight, Benjamin Peabody, Joseph Symonds, Eunice Hobbs, Elizabeth Hobbs, Sarah Fuller, Phebe Peabody, Margaret Peabody, Sarah Russell, Elizabeth Peabody, Mercy Knight, Susannah Wilkins, Mary Wilkins, Rebecca Holt and Lucy Kenney were appointed to say how the seats should be moved to build the pew as mentioned in the petition of Jonathan Knight and others, and met March 13, 1770, and agreed that the seats should be moved to the pew built in the same manner as they are done in the men's gallery.

1771.—"*Voted* to give liberty to sundre persons be-

longing in towne to set in our school-house on Sundays between meetings."

1775.—"Captain Archealus Fuller was chosen to represent the town in the Provincial Congress to be holden at Cambridge Feb. ye first day, 1775."

Same year, on account of the oppressive Post Bill to the people of Boston, the people met at Estys' Tavern and subscribed for their relief. Then follows the names of one hundred and four who contributed from four pounds ten shillings to three shillings nine pence. The sum total exceeded five hundred and sixty pounds. This was headed by Rev. Elias Smith, and among them were the names of several prominent ladies.

The killing of those volunteer farmers, the 19th of April, by the order of the British commander, produced a thrilling effect all over the United States. The blood of the patriots was stirred as never before; all rushed to the rescue with guns or no guns, and with whatever weapon or by whatever means they were intent upon driving the invaders from the soil. As the news reached this town, old Tim Fuller with his characteristic energy and bold spirit started on his old white horse for the scene of action; he overtook the army on the retreat, and with his gun blazed away at their rear; returning a short distance was furnished with a fresh loaded gun, then, again, putting spurs to his horse would overtake the fast retreating army, and at each shot would produce a startling effect in their ranks. They called him death upon the white horse. But the long ride and the chafing he received in such active exhibitions, when cooled off caused such a soreness that he walked home, and a boy from Danvers, who was there by the name of Daniel Brown, was induced to take the horse home.

Again, at the battle of Bunker Hill, the old man's blood was stirred up, and mounting his old mare rode to the scene of action, pushed his way in among his countrymen to aid them in the fight. How many "red-coats" he killed or wounded will never be known. One creature, however, bit the dust, and this time it was his old mare.

Mr. Fuller's widow died in 1824; she was many years younger than her husband. As the story goes Mr. Fuller when at work on his land, near where the old road crosses the turnpike at Danvers Centre, went into an ordinary (Tavern) and called for a drink of cider. Mrs. Smith said "you rock the cradle while I draw the cider." When she returned Fuller asked for the gift of the child; this request was granted, provided he would wait till she was eighteen years old. True to his promise he appeared at the expiration of the time, and took her to Middleton and exhibited her before his forty negroes which he then owned, little and great, and in all conditions, and said "you are mistress of them all." "What can I do with such a black, dirty-looking company?" The answer came quick as lightning, "get one nigger to lick another." These slaves were domiciled in the house now owned by Mr. George A. Currier, and was built in 1710. Fuller lived in the gambrel-roof house, now standing near the burying-ground. We have no reason to doubt the above statement. The dates upon their grave stones show the disparity of their ages.

1776.—A company of Minute-Men were immediately formed, and the town voted unanimously "if the Continental Congress declares Independence upon the Kingdom of Great Britain, that we the inhabitants of Middleton solemnly engage with our lives and fortunes to support the measure so far as we are able."

Colonel Benjamin Peabody was in command of his company at West Point, and assisted in laying the second cable, the first having been broken. This second cable was made in the form of a clevis instead of welded links as before.

Col. Peabody was a leading man in the county, and caused the widening and straightening of the road between the present village and Danvers Plains, in 1811. He was a brother of Joseph, the merchant of Salem and the older of a large family; he was the son of Francis, and born August 9, 1741.

Dr. Silas Merriam, of Middleton, married his sister.

Captain Andrew Fuller was an officer, and his son, John Fuller, also served in the war of the Revolution. We can give only a few names of those patriots, in the absence of the muster rolls which cannot be found, and these mostly come from those, now living, who have heard of their serving from their own lips. Samuel Gould, Robert Picket, Abner Wilkins, Jonathan Lemons, David Fuller (sons of Andrew) were taken prisoners, carried to England, and remained some time in prison; Capt. Andrew died in the year 1802.

One man when he heard of the battle of Lexington, was on his way to Salem with a load of wood; he immediately threw off his wood and, with his team started for home in great haste, stopped on his way at Joshua Wright's blacksmith shop, (in our present village, which stood just north of Grothe's blacksmith shop), and ordered a spear and hook combined, made to use against the invaders. This circumstance indicated the scarcity of fire-arms. This man lived on a farm now owned by H. A. Stiles. When he arrived home his wife told him that he had more courage than conduct, and bid him wait till he was called for. What became of the savage weapon he had ordered we never knew. Certainly if it had ever been seen in his home, tradition would have made it known to us, as it was, the fact that two of his family went to the war and had died, and when the procession with his remains were near the burying-ground just below the captain Ephraim Fuller house they met the other soldier on his way home upon a litter borne on the should-

ers of men. He lived for some years, but had so long slept on the ground and floors, that for a long time he would not sleep on a feather-bed.[1] This story was related to the writer more than sixty-five years since by an aged aunt. An old French gun of the best make was a few years since in the family, and had been for many years, the history of which if known, we think would be very interesting.

1777.—In June

"The town made prices for grain of all kinds, produce and merchandise of every kind, for days' work, prices for shoeing horses, tapping boots and shoes, for dinners, supper and breakfast. For liquor not over one-fourth part water.

"By order of the Selectmen.
"ASA STILES, Town Clerk.
"Stiles lived on the Upton farm."

In war time, Washington took a large number of prisoners, and eight of them were boarded in this town as their portion. By some reason or other one of them by the name of Joshua Daniels, a Frenchman, was never exchanged, became a resident, lived in a hut a little east of the house of John Smith; in the pasture the cellar hole is now seen. Daniels was a weaver, and wove twilled cloth. The art was then unknown by the girls here, and as a good recommendation for house-keepers they must be good weavers, and young girls eagerly sought to acquire all they could in this line of business.

1779.—"*Voted* to raise Sogers if any are called for, and provisions if any are called for."

1780.—Now they vote "to see if the town will procure the Beef called for by the great and General Court, or pay the money in Lieu of said Beef. Fourth to see if the town will make good to the committee that was chosen to procure the Beef that was called for by the Court, the money that was condemned to be counterfit."

Among the state papers of New Hampshire on the muster rolls of those who served, in 1776, are found thirty-eight pages of highly interesting diaries and memoranda of Lieutenant Jonathan Burton, of Wilton.

Lewis Burton was born in Middleton, September 18th, 1741, a third of a mile south of William Peabody's, near Topsfield line. He married Hulda Nichols, (a near neighbor as is supposed), February 29th, 1764, by whom he had nine children. He was appointed Captain in 1786, by president John Sullivan, and Brigade-Major August 5th, 1798. Mr. Burton filled all the important offices in Wilton, and often represented the town in General Court. He died April 30th, 1811.

In 1764, Mrs. Burton united with the church in Middleton, just before she and her husband left for New Hampshire, (under the ministry of Mr. Smith). The late Rev. Warren Burton, once chaplain of the Senate in Massachusetts, and a grandson of this Jonathan Burton, informed us of this fact himself, more than forty years since. The father of Jonathan Burton was the adopted son of William Nichols, and the land on which this Jonathan was born, was given by said Nicholas to his father, which was a part of the large claim from Henry Bartholomew.

1779.—The town voted to choose a committee to take under consideration the frame of government agreed upon by the delegates of the people of the State of Massachusetts Bay, in convention began and held at Cambridge the first day of September, 1779, and continued by adjournment to the second of March, 1780. This committee were Rev. Elias Smith, Lieut. Isaac Kinney, Lieut. Amos Curtis, Mr. Israel Kinney, and Lieut. Jonathan Lemon.

The above committee subsequently laid before the town the doings of this convention or in other words our State Constitution, and each article voted on with the following results: First article, 35 for, 12 against; second article, 42 for, 5 against; third article, 36 for, 9 against; fourth article, 32 for, 6 against; fifth article, 35 for, 5 against. Then all the articles from the fifth to the thirtieth stood 31 for, 7 against. Then all the articles together 33 for, 7 against.

This meeting was held May 30, 1780. Benjamin Peabody was moderator; selectmen,—Asa Stiles, Samuel Wilkins, Andrew Eliott, Asa Howe.

1780. "To see if the town will pay the school-master to learn the youth the rules of Psalmody."

1781. "*Voted* to raise nineteen thousand pounds in old Continental currency to procure beef now called for by the Great and General Court." We find that Stephen Richardson paid a marriage fee of one hundred and seventy-five dollars in this currency about this time.

A week's board then cost $105, but in gold $2. People were greatly in debt; there was but little coin in circulation; those taking this emission money in payment for sales were ruined. Asa Stiles sold his farm (the Upton place) and took his pay in this money, and lost it all. Said Stiles was the father of the late David Stiles, Esq., of New Hampshire.

At the close of the Revolutionary War, the muskets that were brought home, that were furnished by the town, were sold at auction to the towns people.

1783. Whoever took in people without knowing their financial standing were required to have their names recorded on the town-books, that the town officers might, at their discretion, warn them out, so as to prevent their gaining a residence.

"MIDDLETON, May 13th, 1783.

"Mr. Benjamin Berry and his wife, Sarah, with the following children, came from Andover to live in the house of the Rev Andrew Peters, late of Middle-

[1] These soldiers might have served in the French and Indian Wars, instead of the Revolution, which took place some twenty years before.

ton,—Mehitable, Timothy, Phebe, Peabody, Lucy, Betsey and Nancy Robinson Berry.

"BENJAMIN PEABODY.
"One of the Selectmen.

"Middleton May 9th."

"Nov. 13.

1787. "To the selectmen, Gentlemen this is to inform you that on the second day of November, Instant, I hired Frank Francis into my house as a labor, and he came last from Danvers, his circumstances I am unacquainted with.

"REBECCA HOBBS. "BENJAMIN PEABODY.
"One of the Selectmen.

1787. The town "*voted* to joine in a petition with George Cabot and others that a Bridge be Bult over the River near Beverly Ferry, if done without cost to this town." This, we think, must be beween Salem and Beverly, near railroad bridge.

1791. "*Voted* to allow on the highways a team of three good creatures, Four Shillings per day, and a greater or less team in proportion, and a man two shillings per day." Same meeting, "*Voted* to keep the school at the schoolhouse by the meetinghouse this season, and voted to repair said house."

This school-house stood a little east of the church, on the site of Mrs. Gillingham's house, and from the first had been the principal school in town. Schools had been kept in other parts of the town in private houses.

1792. Not till this year was the town divided into districts. Even after that date private individuals for some time furnished places for the schools. At the Dean Fuller place, on the North Road, was a schoolhouse afterwards used by said Fuller for a carriage-house, and now said building is used for a dwelling-house by Mr. Coleman, near the depot.

The few opportunities afforded the children of a century ago to obtain an education, were well improved by some of them. Self-education was more practiced then by those who really desired an education than now.

1793. "*Voted* to supply the pulpit, Mr. Smith being unable by sickness. Subsequently "*voted* to be at the cost of burying Mr. Smith and find mourning for Mrs. Smith."

1798. "*Voted* to sell the common lands. A great part of these lands was in the southwest corner of the town, near the old Hutchinson house, and part on Nichols Brook (Stickey Meadows).

1786. Up to this date the red deer were still in our forests, and were protected by law so as not to be killed in an improper time, a deer rief being chosen annually with all other town officers.

"MIDDLETON, Sept. 10th 1786.

"Mr. Timothy Farnum of Andover made application to be cryed to Miss Susannah Berry, of Middleton, and was cryed."[1]

The method of crying was to pass round the meeting-house, outside on Sunday, three times, stop and ring the hand-bell and declare the intention of marriage, and make a record of that fact.

1796. The town voted unanimously that it is the opinion of the inhabitants of this town that the treaty negotiated between Great Britain and the United States is for the honor and interest of our country.

1798. "*Voted* to allow Capt. Solomon Wilkins for powder at sixty cents per pound for General Muster."

1802.—About thirty persons petitioned for a town-meeting to choose an agent or agents to confer with the petitioners for the turnpike road leading from Newburyport to Boston, and use their endeavors to have said road lead through this town by or near the meeting-house. Same meeting voted to paint the pulpit and canopy or sounding-board. Voted that the negroes shall have the north end of the second seat in each end gallery. (These seats were occupied by colored people till since the writer's remembrance).

1803.—New road by Asa Howe's. The road formerly went a third of a mile west of this place.

"*Voted* to pay for the powder used by Captain Roger Flint's company at the regimental muster (date 1805)."

The long crossway was made safe at all times of the year 1808, when about seventy men from Andover and Middleton gave from one to three days' work each to build it up. Those who did not choose to work themselves were to give seventy-five cents, which would then secure a good day's work.[2]

1800.—Theodore Ingalls moderator. "2d, *Voted* to take notice of the 22d of February agreeable to the recommendation of Congress and our General Court which was the birthday of General George Washington." "3d, *Voted* that it be the desire of the towne that our reverend pasture, Solomon Adams, deliver an oration on the 22d Feb. Instant, Beginning the exercises at eleven o'clock on said day." "4th, *Voted* that it be the desire of the town that the melitia of said town meet at half past ten o'clock at the 'pasture's house with their badges of mourning & escort him to the meeting-house & back a gain after the solmnity of the day.'" "5th, *Voted* that the melitia take the body seats in the said meeting-house." "6th, *Voted* that the solemnity of the day should be opened by prayer & musick, then an oration and close with prayer and musick suitable for the oration." "7th, *Voted* to choose a committee to require the Rev. Solomon Adams to deliver an oration and also desire the melitia to attend a greable to the vote of the town." "*Voted* Samuel Small, Lieu. John Flint and Chaplain Joseph Symonds a committee to arange musick on said day."

1802.—The meeting-house was thoroughly repaired,

[1] This couple were the grandparents of the writer.

[2] Never heard of any one of them striking for higher wages.

porches added, new windows, pews took the place of seats in the body of the house and hewed stones for underpinning instead of rough stone, which were removed and the ground lowered about the sides of the house, leaving the floor upon the timbers that lay upon the ground. Stumps of a heavy forest were cut away to lay down these timbers, and still sound above ground when the house was taken down more than a century afterward.

A committee was chosen to repair the house, and tradition says that John Fuller undertook the job without specifications, and before he was able to satisfy the committee had expended more than the appropriation, and lost money. Subsequently his farm was sold to Rev. Ebenezer Hubbard.

1806.—The Essex Turnpike was built through town; toll-gates were placed, according to law, at each end of the town—one stood near the house of Daniel G. Berry, Andover, the other below Ipswich River, on the hill. This road, we think, never paid a dividend. After trying to keep it in good repair for a little over twenty years, the stockholders asked the town through which it passed to take it off their hands. This town voted to take the gift of it, but some voted against it. Daniel Fuller, Esq., was a director and had the management of the section in this vicinity. It was intended to take the principal part of the travel from Canada, and along its route to the great markets of Salem and Boston. At the former town were the heavy merchants and a large foreign trade, and this market had a wide reputation. The small crafts of that day could land their cargoes at their wharves with ease; subsequently larger vessels were employed, and they were obliged to seek ports with deeper water.

1811.—"*Voted* to build a powder-house." It was built of brick by John Fuller, and on his land, on a hill southeast of the present church.

"Sold the right to take Alewives for the season to Samuel Wilkins for one dollar and seventy-five cents," also "the right to take shad in Ipswich River for three dollars and fifty cents."

1811.—"*Voted* that the commanding officer shall provide for the company when called out of town on muster days at the expense of the town, not to exceed two shillings each." At this date there were a few over one hundred voters.

1812.—"*Voted* to give soldiers 35 cts. a piece on muster days when called out of town to 'git' dinner, and one dollar and a half to drafted men if they train more than the other part of the company, and when in actual service fifteen dollars per month more than the continental pay."

1812.—William Estey was chosen clerk of market.

War of 1812–14.—In 1814 some British men-of-war lay off Salem harbor and old Parson Stone, of North Reading, preached one Sabbath. He drawled out his words (a habit of many preachers in the early days, and talked a little through his nose) and is said to have used in his prayer these words, "We pray, Lord, that there may come a storm and sink them all in the deep." It is said that soon a storm did come, and they moved off, and many thought Stone's prayer was answered. This old divine was the father of Deacon Giles, of Deacon Giles' distillery of Salem.

The presence of these men-of-war was the cause of an alarm (the firing of three cannon in succession at Montserrat), which thrilled this whole community. The alarm came about by a little misunderstanding and bickerings between Colonel Jesse Putnam of Danvers, and Captain Jedediah Farnham of Andover. When the news reached this town the minute-men rushed to arms. Captain Samuel Wilkins (father of S. H. Wilkins) was in command, but was a long time, it is said, in putting his company in marching order; it was at last accomplished, and the command given "forward march." Just at that moment had come "fals alarm."

At this time politics ran very high, and the town was about equally divided between Republicans and Federals; the latter, in a close vote, secured an old Republican, a negro by the name of Charles Snow, and kept him secreted till election, in the cellar at the house of John Fuller, near the meeting-house. The Federal party was what is now called the Democrat party, and were opposed to the war. When the alarm took place before-mentioned, many of the enrolled militia did not appear, and when the word came that it was a false alarm the soldiers were jublant, and felt like accomplishing something, and it being then in the evening, but probably moonlight, as Ezra Bradstreet, a soldier that did not respond, though living close by, and in the house now standing, occupied by Mr. Benjamin McGlaughlin, was seen to run into the swamp in his night dress as a soldier came into his yard, which very much frightened him, not knowing but that he was about to be dragged before the British muskets and cannon. However, his mother, an old woman, came to the door and asked what the matter was, when a rather excited soldier, by name of James Wilkins, said: "I will let you know," and then fired off his gun near her feet, at which she screamed and ran into the house; how long her son (whom we well remember) remained in a nearly nude state in the swamp was not told.

Others of these soldiers started for some who did not respond that lived in the east part of the town; but George Drakes (a colored man), had been sent by John Fuller (before named), to warn them of the proposed raid by the soldiers; they, however, caught Drakes, and while some held him, others went on and gave them an awful fright, broke in some windows by firing off guns close to the houses and so spent nearly the whole night in this kind of sport.

These facts were told the writer by one of these raiders, whose word was never doubted.

1813.—"To see if the town will defray the funeral

expenses of Rev. Solomon Adams." "*Voted* to continue the salary of Rev. Solomon Adams untill the first of January, admitting Mrs. Adams will supply the Desk."

About this time an intention of marriage was posted on the meeting-house, and if one of the parties lived in another town, a duplicate had to be pasted in that town. These notices had to be pasted a specified number of days before the marriage was to take place.

In the early history of New England it was the duty of the sexton to ring the bell at noon and at nine o'clock in the evening, and keep and "turn the glass," meaning the hour glass, that stood on or near the pulpit, and it was understood that the sermon was to be one hour long. Whether the glass was used or not in this town we are not informed, but certainly there were but few clocks and watches among the first settlers, and the glass and sun dials were their dependence, the former in stormy weather, the latter as a regulator when the sun shone. This town was without a bell till 1835, when the writer drew up a subscription paper and obtained about two hundred dollars, with which a bell was purchased, of the Hollbrook make, weighing five hundred and twenty-seven pounds. After the present church was erected the present bell was purchased (and the former broken up and sold for old metal). Present bell was bought in Westboro, Mass., where it had done service on a Unitarian Church, which had become weak, and to strengthen themselves, offered their house of worship to the orthodox society (then without a place of worship), provided they would repair the house. This offer was accepted, and the bell was taken down and put upon the cars, to be transported to Boston, to have the wooden yokes removed and replaced with one of cast-iron. The former society being in debt, a few of its leading men depended on the sale of the bell to discharge the same, but the orthodox claimed the bell with the church, and a dispute arose, which threatened a suit and disruption, whereupon a delegation of the Unitarians, with a good team, boarded the cars, and by force, removed the bell and secreted it in an old shoemaker's shop; then, after the other society had purchased a new bell, and peace preserved, the old bell was advertised for sale in the *Plowman*, and the writer being employed to go and see the bell, found it, as before-mentioned; it was raised up a few inches, and sounded, and found to be perfect; the price paid was the same as for old metal. The bell is one of Henry N. Hooper's, of Boston, best make, and they claim that it would injure the tone of the bell to have a cast-iron yoke placed upon it, and the old yoke of wood still remains upon it.

The bell weighs about twelve hundred and fifty pounds, and the people of Westboro claimed that the bell was the best of the six bells that had been hung in that town. Its present location is unfavorable on account of the falling away of the ground near the church, causing the sound to rise in the air, and therefore is not heard at so great a distance.

1814.—"Let out the care of the meeting-house; to be swept twelve times a year; to be unlocked and locked on all occasions, both public and private; shovel snow from the doors when necessary. Set up and struck off to John Fuller, Jr., for seventy-five cents." The usual price paid was about $2.50. Probably there was a little steam on at this time.

Trouble began about religious matters, and large numbers flowed into a new society, called the Christian Society. Others joined themselves to neighboring societies in Danvers and other places, as the law at that time compelled all to pay minister rates somewhere. Asa Howe, Esq., signed to Danvers under the ministry of Rev. Jeremiah Chaplin (Baptist); Dr. David Fuller to St. Peter's Church, Salem. But in 1816, when Rev. Ebenezer Hubbard commenced preaching here, he was liked, and they all came back, and things went on very smoothly till near the close of his ministry.

1817.—All the poor were put up at auction at the annual meeting in March, and struck off at the lowest bidder, none of which received over $1.50 per week. Some of the most feeble, who were nearly helpless, were bid in by their relatives for seventy-five cents per week, rather than have them go into the hands of unfeeling strangers. However, this was the custom in all towns where there was no poor-farm. A century ago there were a smalller number of poor people here than before or since; also more independent farmers according to the population. The lands had not begun to be exhausted, and they had large flocks and herds, and everywhere these families were distinguished, not only by their social acquirements, but by their dress and daily deportment, from the poor and unfortunate.

1832.—The first manufactory started here (except the little grist and saw-mills, of which there were a number) was the paper-mill on Ipswich River by Colonel Francis Peabody, of Salem, Mass. (and son of Captain Joseph Peabody, a man who was born here, and married first and second daughters of Rev. Elias Smith), and has continued in operation since by other proprietors. A few years later the shoe business was started by Elias T. Ingalls (father of Senator John James Ingalls, of Kansas), who soon after removed to Haverhill, the home of his wife, and continued in the business with success.

About 1835 Francis P. Merriam began the shoe business here, and has continued the same. At the present time, under the firm of Merriam & Tyler, employing at times more than a hundred hands. Other smaller manufacturers have done business here, and are now employed in other business. A knife-factory was started here a few years ago by S. A. Cummings on the site of the old iron-works, which was started by Major-General Daniel Dennison, of Ipswich, about 1665, who employed Thomas

Fuller as foreman, who afterward bought Dennison's claim, which was bounded south by Pierce's Brook, and near this brook, on the site of the house of Charles O. Frost, was his dwelling, and just over the stream is seen the foundation of his blacksmith-shop.

The box-mill of J. B. Thomas was started a few years since, and has done a large business, employing quite a number of men and teams.

With the business of the firm of Merriam & Tyler, which gives employment to a large number of hands, the village has grown up and many tasteful dwellings erected, and bears favorable comparison with many other places. Churches and schools are well maintained, and prosperity seems to pervade the whole community; and peace follows the wars, privations and contentions that have troubled past generations.

If those who complain of low wages would look over the pages of history written by past generations, they would not only feel contented, but thank God that their lines had fallen to them in so pleasant places. As I cast my eyes upon the portraits of those long since passed away, who sacrificed so much to lay the foundations of religious and civil society, I cannot but feel to maintain and perpetuate these blessings.

Graduates of Colleges.—This town compared with others about the same size in the county, has produced as many distinguished men as any. Little or no labor has been employed to bring their names and deeds to notice, and we feel that we shall fail to do them justice.

Rev. Daniel Wilkins, the first minister of Amherst, New Hampshire, was born here, (and the house is now standing in which he was born). His labors in that then frontier town are beyond calculation. Once or twice the people were about to abandon the settlement on account of the depredations of the Indians, but Wilkins with true courage, again and again rallied the people in calling on the government to sustain them, and finally lived to see the town in a flourishing condition, (grandson of Henry Wilkins).

Rev. Daniel Fuller born here was settled over the second church in Gloucester, Massachusetts, more than a century ago. His wife was a member of the church here in 1770.

When Phillips' academy was established a century ago, fourteen young men from this place entered, and their names stand upon this catalogue. All but one left town in early life to bless other places. Among this number was Andrew Peabody, born here, father of Rev. Andrew P. Peabody, LL. D., graduate of Harvard College, class of 1826, editor of the *North American Review* from 1853, to 1863; Plummer, professor of Christian morals. Also sons of Benjamin P. Richardson,—Hazen K. and Benjamin Richardson.

Margaret Fuller, the noted authoress, whose tenantless grave is now seen in Mount Auburn, (she was lost at sea, having refused to be saved unless with her husband and child), sprang from this Fuller family we have so often mentioned.

The father of Dr. Andrew Peabody was born here, and many of this distinguished family of Peabody's are still among us. "Cornet" Francis Peabody and Col. Benjamin Peabody, afterwards chosen deacon, (and died since my remembrance), a leading man in the county who took an active part in the Revolutionary War. Other names deserve honorable mention, for which space cannot be had. But I would not forget the matrons and maidens of that early day, who spun and wove to clothe the family, but the skilled weavers went further, and made cloth for the market. These were the pioneers in manufacturing industries of the country And the beautiful maidens who were not afraid of work. Hear what the poet says.

"Then as he opened the door, he beheld the form of the maiden
Seated beside her wheel, and the carded wool like snow-drift
Piled at her knee, her white hands feeding the ravenous spindle,
While with her foot on the treadle she guided the wheel in its motion.
She rose as he entered, and gave him her hand in a signal of welcome,
Saying, I knew it was you, when I heard your foot-step in the passage.
For I was thinking of you as I sat here singing and spinning."

Charles L. Flint, late Secretary of the State Board of Agriculture, and a large contributor to the Flint library was born here.

Honorable John Haskell Butler of Somerville, was in the state legislature, is a lawyer, and was born in Middleton, August 31st, 1841; a graduate at Yale College in 1863; in 1880 and 1881 was a member of the House of Representatives, and in 1884, was elected by the Legislature to fill a vacancy in the Council, caused by the death of Honorable Charles R. McLean of Boston. He was elected in the district at the ensuing election.

Benjamin Peters Hutchinson, now a Chicago grain dealer, estimated to be worth twelve million dollars, was born here in 1829.

Dean Peabody, lawyer, now Clerk of Courts in this county, was born here, his father having filled the office of deacon here for many years.

Franklin O. Stiles, graduate of Amherst College, class of 1856, died the same year.

Rev. Henry J. Richardson, graduate of Amherst College, now in his twenty-fifth year of pastorate at Lincoln, Massachusetts. Rev. Daniel W. Richardson, brother of the above graduate at Union College, New York, late pastor of the Congregational Church in Derry, New Hampshire.

Jesse Fuller, graduate of Amherst College, now residing in the west.

Rev. Jesse Wilkins now residing in Connecticut.

Rev. Solomon Adams, son of Rev. Solomon Adams was born here; died in Boston a few years since.

Dr. Archelaus Fuller, a college graduate, son of Daniel Fuller, Esquire, died a few years since in the State of Maine, aged about eighty years.

Edwin Berry, son of Jonathan Berry, now a lawyer in New York city, was born here.

William Weston, son of Samuel W. Weston, graduated at Amherst College about 1868, and is now in the employ of the United States government.

Sumner B. Stiles, born January 13th, 1851, graduated at Phillips Academy, Andover, Massachusetts, in 1872, at Harvard University in 1876, and at the Harvard Law school in 1881; admitted to the New York Bar, in May, 1883; married September 10th, 1884.

James H. Flint born 1852, graduated at Phillips Academy, Andover, Massachusetts, 1871, at Harvard University in 1876, at Boston University Law School in 1881, admitted to Suffolk Bar, Boston in 1882.

Andrew Preston Averill, a graduate of Harvard College class of 1882.

Scholars at Phillips Academy.—The following is a list of the first scholars at Phillips Academy, Andover:

1778. Benjamin Fuller, aged twelve years. Died in Norway, Maine, son of Archelaus; Elias Smith, aged twelve, son of the minister Smith.

1779. Andrew Fuller, aged thirteen.

1780. Samuel Symonds, aged twenty-four, son of the deacon; David Putnam, aged ten.

1785. Daniel Fuller, aged fourteen, son of Archelaus; Silas Merriam, aged fifteen, son of Dr. Silas, died in Norway, Maine, at a great age.

1786. John Lamon, aged twenty, moved to and married in Danvers, Mass.

1790. Andrew Peabody, aged sixteen, father of Dr. Andrew P. Peabody, of Harvard College.

1791. Benjamin Smith, aged fourteen, son of the minister.

1792. Simon Kenney, aged twenty-five, moved to Milford, N. H.

1795. Israel Fuller, aged seventeen, son of Timothy.

1812. Solomon Adams, aged fifteen, son of the minister.

1820. William Johnson Curtis Kenney, aged eleven, now superintendent of the freights on the Boston and Maine Railroad.

This list might be continued up to the present time, but space is not allowed.

Post-Office.—It is now only a little more than fifty years since a post-office was kept in this town. Now we receive and discharge two mails per day. When Abraham wished to send a message to Lot he put a man upon a running horse and it was conveyed with a speed of twelve miles an hour, and since the writer's remembrance we could do no better than that; and this mode of sending letters was the only way practiced by the early settlers of New England. At a later day stage routes carried the mail bags to the principal cities and towns, for which they received large pay, while the small out of the way towns had no post-offices, and this town was one of them. As a sample, while in Hallowell, Me., in 1834, we sent a letter to Middleton; after a week or two it was found in the South Danvers (now Peabody) post-office, and the one who took it out paid twenty-five cents postage; another from the same place arrived at Danvers Plains, and some one informed the one to whom it was directed that a letter in one of the grocery stores was waiting for him. The postage on that letter was eighteen cents.

It seems that all the improvements for two thousand years have been crowded into the last half century.

In the late rebellion, this town did more than its full share, more than one-tenth part of the whole population (one hundred and four) enlisted in the army for a longer or shorter time, and fifteen of their number either fell in battle or died of disease contracted in the war.

Justin Flint, died of disease; Henry A. Smith, died of disease; Joseph M. Richardson, died of disease; Lemuel F. Esty, died of disease; George W. Peabody, died of disease; Asa W. Brooks, killed in skirmish near Richmond; George S. Esty, died of disease; Charles Manning, killed in battle at White Hall, N. C.; Joseph A. Guilford, killed in battle at Fredericksburg, Va.; Jeremiah Peabody, died of disease; Charles H. Guilford, killed in battle of Gettysburg; Solomon Richardson 2d, killed in battle in front of Petersburg, Va.; George J. Danforth, died at Andersonville Prison; Abishai A. Higgins, died at Andersonville Prison; Samuel O. Wilkins, died at Andersonville Prison. And many others returned with disease, and were soon laid in a soldier's grave like their fallen comrades. Others still now linger among us, unable by reason of impaired health (due to exposure in the war) to enjoy the blessings their labors have helped to purchase.

Public-Houses and Stores.—The old tavern stand was purchased from a man by the name of Goodale by John Estey, about 1760; how long this Goodale had been in possession is not known; but eighty years previously was in possession of Aaron Way, and bought by him of Bray Wilkins, Sr. Estey was proprietor till 1816, when his son-in-law, Daniel Fuller, with others, bought him out and sold about 1824, to Capt. Joseph Batchelder, of Topsfield (grandfather of our postmaster, Joseph A. Batchelder, Esq.), who subsequently let it, among whom was William Goodhue; afterwards Mr. Batchelder's son Joseph was proprietor for a few years, and then his son Amos, and since his death it has ceased to be a public house.

After Mr. Estey sold out, his son William erected across the way what is now the Fuller house, which was used as tavern and store for a few years only, and, subsequently, this place was purchased by Ephraim Fuller, who lived in it for many years and kept a store in a building, now standing south of the house where now a little store is kept.

1795.—About this time, a tavern was kept in an old house taken down some years ago by Samuel F. Estey, a little south of his present dwelling. This

was then owned by John Stiles, who also kept a little store across the way under the hill, the foundation of which is now seen.

Francis Peabody kept a few groceries in the house, now occupied by Mr. Witham, in the east part of the town; this was a century ago.

Daniel Fuller, Esq., when a young man (nearly a century ago) kept a little store in his mother's house, or rather the lean-to, now occupied by his daughter, Sophronia Fuller.

1780.—Dr. Silas Merriam, about the same time, kept groceries for sale, as well as corn-meal and rye, and run the grist-mill the year round to accommodate the people, so say the town records as they gave him liberty to put on flash boards for this purpose.

1821.—Mr. Daniel Richardson built a grocery-store, and continued in the business about twelve years. This building is now standing and is a part of the dwelling-house of the writer.

1838.—Capt. Stephen Wilkins, Amos Batchelder and Francis P. Merriam & Co. kept groceries for sale in the Ephraim Fuller store, but only a few years.

1845.—Daniel Emerson and Hiram Moore carried on the store business in a building, since burned, that stood on the site of the present Merriam & Tyler's shoe-factory.

1848.—Elisha Wilkins bought out the above store, and it took fire and consumed the following year.

1850.—A large store and shoe-factory was run by F. P. and James N. Merriam for several years, and then sold to W. A. Merriam, who continued the grocery-store. The building was enlarged, and the previous firm of Merriam & Co. continued the shoe business exclusively, which was nearly the first shoe-factory in town, and subsequently W. A. Merriam moved to the new building which was erected by Joseph and John A. Batchelder for a grocery and shoe manufactory (and occupied by them for a short time), and continued the general store business for about twenty-five years, and then sold to M. E. Tyler, who soon after sold out to Capt. Thomas Hoyt and John Beckford. Beckford soon died, and the business was continued by Hoyt for some years, and for the last eight years the building has stood unoccupied.

After selling out to Hoyt & Co., M. E. Tyler erected a new building at East Middleton, and continued the grocery business there a few years, and subsequently turned the building into a dwelling-house, and put up another store building near the old grist-mill in the village (which building has recently been moved to near the parsonage), and built a little store near his present stable, and continues both the store business and livery stable.

1856.—Henry Wilkins and Ruel Phelps carried on the shoe business and grocery store in the same building, now occupied by Wilkins & Sons.

1812.—A store was kept by John Fuller, Jr., located on the site of the carriage house of the late Daniel Richardson. A dance hall in the upper story, and in 1812 a school was kept for a short time by the Rev. Jacob Hood in this hall. (Mr. Hood died a year since, aged ninety-four years.) This building was moved across the way about 1820, and was used for a dwelling-house. The last owner was Richard Green, and the house was burned about 1872.

Some fifteen or twenty years since there were several small manufactories of shoes here. Edward and A. A. Averill, near the town hall; Wm. H. Hutchinson, in the village; and Augustus Hutchinson, near Howe Station.

In the early days there were no butchers in town; each farmer killed and salted his own meat, and when fresh meat was wanted a neighbor killed and lent it around, to be paid for in the same way. The first butcher to set up here was Abraham Shelden, about 1830; and six years subsequently he carried on a larger business and extending into other towns. He had several good double teams and a large number of men employed. He owned the farm now owned by Jesse W. Peabody, and built the large barn now on the place. Subsequently J. Augustus Estey carried on the business in the same place. Since, the business has been carried on by Jesse F. Hayward and A. W. Peabody.

CEMETERY.—The land was bought and laid out by the town about 1858, at which time several lots were sold.

Subsequently the remains from many of the old burying-lots in town were removed to the new cemetery, and stone monuments erected or the old stones reset. There are yet known to be not less than forty-five old family burying-lots in town, many of which are indistinguishable, being hid in the forests and jungles. Among these now unknown graves must be those who when alive, were the leading men in our early history.

PUBLIC LIBRARIES.—A social library was formed here in 1772 (just forty years after the first library in the city of Philadelphia). The Constitution was drawn up by Rev. Elias Smith, and contained twenty-two articles. The officers were chosen annually and the committee were required to meet once a quarter. Library to be kept within a mile of the meeting-house. No book to be kept out more than three months, after which time a fine was imposed. The library at first contained seventy-one volumes; some of these were given. These volumes were mostly sermons of old divines, Morse's Geography, History of South America and other histories, Mason on "Self-knowledge and Family Instruction," etc. Elias Smith, librarian; Archelaus Fuller, Silas Merriam and Elias Smith, committee. Admission fee, six dollars, according to the value of money of that day. Proprietors could sell or give away their right, but all were, if able, required to be present at the annual meeting, or not allowed to take out a book for three months. All through the years from 1772 to 1826 this library was run with remarkable success.

The last records were made by Rev. Ebenezer Hubbard, who left town two years subsequently, and the library was put into the hands of Daniel Fuller, Esq., and a few years ago handed over to the Flint Library. A few of these old volumes are still well preserved.

In 1838 Dr. E. S. Phelps started a social library organization with forty six members and eighty-four volumes of books, which had only a short run, as but little interest was taken in it.

In 1865 an association was formed, of which John M. Peabody was president. Three dollars was required to become a member, and one dollar annually. This gained in importance till 1879, when it was given to the town and valued at upwards of one thousand dollars, at which time Charles L. Flint made a donation of about one thousand dollars and four hundred volumes of books, and the library was made free and called the Flint Library. Since that time Mr. Flint has made other donations, aggregating more than fifteen hundred dollars. Many other individuals have contributed valuable volumes to this library, which is now in a very prosperous condition, and numbers three thousand one hundred and thirty-seven volumes, and supported by the town. By the will of Benjamin Franklin Emerson, who died in Boston April 5, 1887, the Flint Library receives the interest of ten thousand dollars after the decease of his mother. This sum is to remain in a fund to be called the B. F. Emerson Trust Fund, with six trustees. Mr. Emerson was the son of Stephen and Sarah Emerson, born in this town, received his early education here, and subsequently in Oxford and Townsend (Vt.), academies. For fifteen years he was superintendent of the Copper Falls Mining Company, Mich. His death was caused by falling from a coal bridge while giving directions for extinguishing a forest fire that was fast approaching their quarters. In this fall he received a fracture of the spine, after which he lived seven months, some of the time in terrible agony. His age was forty-nine, unmarried and highly esteemed by all who knew him.

N. B.—Since writing the above, Mrs. Emerson, the mother, has died.

Schools.—A century ago there was but one schoolhouse owned by the town, and that stood by the church, and was moved to Danvers in 1810 by John Fuller. Subsequently the town owned three, and they were located at the east side, on the north road and in the centre, or present village. For a short time private enterprise maintained, in part, a school at the Paper Mill Village. This same state of things prevailed before the three districts were set off as before mentioned, at which time the east side of the town was the most thickly settled, and the school there and at the North District had double the scholars of the present day. The manufacturing of shoes at the village and the accommodation of the railroad, stores, churches and a higher grade of teaching in the schools had caused many to abandon the farm and move to the village; and the people have spent their money freely to make these schools at the centre what they should be, while the others have not been neglected, and the advantages to gain an education here are as good as in any town in the county of the same size.

The following are the physicians of the town, with the date of their practicing as near as can be ascertained: Dr. Daniel Felch, 1728; Dr. Silas Merriam[1] came from Lexington, Mass. (his birth-place still standing in that town), about 1759; Dr. David Fuller, an old resident, 1815; Dr. Smith, 1816; Dr. Wallis, 1818; Dr. Ezra Nichols came here about 1830, left about 1837; Dr. E. S. Phelps came here about 1837, died 1882; Dr. Odlin, 1870; Dr. Metcalf, 1874; Dr. Knight, 1880; Dr. Henry T. Batchelder came here 1884.

The following are a few persons known to have held the office of Justice of the Peace: Captain Ephraim Fuller, 1777; Asa Howe, 1815; Daniel Fuller, 1825; Ezra Nichols, 1835; E. S. Phelps, 1850; W. A. Phelps, 1880; Joseph A. Batchelder, 1880.

The following are the blacksmiths, with date and place of location: Thomas Fuller, shop between Pierce's Brook and the tomb, 1663; Joshua Wright, shop on the street just north of Grothe's shop, 1760; Kenney and his brother's shop on the John B. King farm, 1780; Asa Stiles, shop on west side of the road at Upton place, moved to New Hampshire 1785; Eben Putnam, grandfather of Mrs. Henry Wilkins, his shop on the corner by the house of Mr. Augustus Hutchinson, 1790; Theodore Ingalls, shop at Ingalls' place, 1798; Silas Lake, of Topsfield, shop at shoe factory corner, 1824; Hammond Berry, from North Andover (same shop as the latter), 1825; Moody Ingalls, son of the above T. Ingalls, shop moved down to front of Captain Hoyt's house 1829, and subsequently sold to Timothy Sanders, who left town 1833; John Richardson, shop in the Bush Corner (so called), 1820; George W. Winslow, shop as above stated, 1834; David Stiles, shop of the above, 1835; George Webb, shop now the house of Mrs. Timothy Wilkins, 1837; Cushing, the same shop, 1839; followed by Whitney, Shaugnessy and Grothe, 1875.

Roads.—The oldest road entered town over the hill by the Allen Porter place, thence near William Peabody's and Nichols' house to the corner east of Box factory, thence to the corner, as the road now traveled, below Samuel H. Wilkins', and so on to North Andover, by Asa Howe's. This road is supposed to have been traveled by Richard Bellingham, Esq., and the first settlers on the Cochichawicke (Andover) in 1639; some writers put it five years earlier.

The next road through town is the old north road, as now traveled till it came to the sunken hole called the long causeway, then it diverged, part of the travel

[1] Dr. Silas Merriam was born in Lexington, Mass., and the house in which he was born is still standing. He came to this town about 1759, died suddenly in 1812.

going to the left, by what is called Black Pole, coming out at the Roger Eliott place, thence across the road and by John B. King's to the Indian Bridge; the other to the right, going by Emerson's Mill and across Andover road towards the great pond, and coming out by the William Berry place. In 1802 this road was straightened above William Berry's place, and not till 1808 was the long crossway made perfectly safe for travel. As the country began to be settled further in the interior the South Andover road (so-called) was opened, and settlements along its route made. The Essex turnpike in 1806. It may be well to state that the west branch of the old North road, in its earliest travel, passed the present village to the house of Benjamin P. Richardson, where it turned a short angle to the left and forded Ipswich River, coming out at J. J. H. Gregory's Seed Farm, and thence over the hills, on nearly a straight line, by Mr. Gregory's two other farms, to the road first mentioned by the Allen Porter place. This old ford-way and the entire route is now visible.

The road from the village to Danvers Plains was widened and straightened in 1811, and took most of the travel to Salem; before this time the most traveled was by the old log bridge and Danvers Centre, and strike the great traveled at Felton's corner and avoid the toll gate on the turnpike just over Ipswich River.

The first town road was laid out, beginning at the Symonds' place and Averill's, thence across Beech Brook at Wilkins' mill and knife factory, coming out by the house of John Gage. The Paper Mill road is much older than the town, and was used by the first settlers. No records are anywhere to be found of its being laid out. Probably it went through the common lands, and for its commerce, no one cared to disturb the public title.

A town way was laid out in 1744 for Joseph Foy, then living in Charles Mason's house across the woods to come out on the Andover road by ye saw-mill lately erected. This mill was near the Dempsey place. Subsequently a road was laid out through the land of Ezekiel Stiles to the old highway to North Andover, by Asa Howe's. Many such cart ways were laid out by the early settlers to shorten distance from house to house, all the roads being mere cart paths.

The Paper Mill road to North Reading, as now traveled is much older than the incorporation of the town.

The Essex Railroad was opened September 5, 1848.

Mills.—There has been but one mill on Ipswich River, though it runs nearly the length of the town, and that is where the paper-mill now stands, and for several generations a saw and grist-mill was owned by the Flint family, and must date back further than the mills at North Reading, as the latter were obliged to hoist their gate when short of water at the former. A mill once stood near the woodshed of Mr. Sylvanus Flint's. On the stream from Middleton Pond two mills were erected, one owned by Silas Merriam and the other a little below the Abijah Fuller place, owned by Timothy Fuller. Dr. Merriam's was a grist-mill, and highly valued by the towns people to purchase grain for food, and about 1770 the town voted that "Dr. Merriam be allowed to put on flash boards and raise the pond three feet that he might be able to grind throughout the year to accommodate ye people."

M. J. Emerson's mill stands on Swan Pond Brook and the privilege is an old one and formerly belonged to John Estey, and subsequently to his son-in-law, Daniel Fuller, Esq. On the same stream was the Nichols grist-mill, and last owned by Stephen Nichols in 1820, and soon after taken down. On the same stream a little below stood the ancient iron-works owned by Major Daniel Dennison, of Ipswich, of which Thomas Fuller was foreman and subsequently owner.

A saw-mill was erected in 1740, on a little stream that empties into Beech Brook near the Dempsey place, owned by Timothy Perkins, who lived on G. H. Tuft's place.

Only one mill on Beech Brook, and that on the site of E. W. Wilkins' mill, and was owned by a Peabody family; here more than a century ago two brothers quarrelled and one lost his life; the survivor said he threw him a crow-bar which his brother failed to catch, and it struck him in the head and killed him; they were alone, but soon it is said that the women folks appeared upon the scene, but too late; they feared there would be trouble between them; tradition says the survivor hastened to the brook and filled his hat with water and threw in his brother's face, but without effect.

A man by the name of Gray set up a carding-mill about 1810, near Dr. Merriam's grist-mill, but other mills in larger places, with better machinery, took the business. Mrs. Sarah Conlan's house was formerly a saw-mill which had been moved from Bald Hill woods.

Earthquakes.—On June 1, 1638, about two o'clock P. M., was an earthquake throughout New England, which caused the pewter in many places to be thrown off the shelves, and tops of chimneys in some places to be shaken down.

Sabbath day, October 29, 1727, a little more than half past ten o'clock in the evening, the first and great shock was felt, when the heavens were most serene and the atmosphere perfectly calm, and it was repeated several times that night, and afterwards to January 6th, next following, when about two o'clock in the afternoon there was a very great shock, which exceeded any other since the first night. This day was warm and calm. This has been denominated the great earthquake in New England. The tops of many chimneys were thrown down.

On November 18, 1755, was another great earth-

quake, doing much damage to property. On March 12, 1761, between the hours of two and three P. M., there was a slight shock. On Sabbath, March 1, 1801, about half past three o'clock, P.M., was a slight shock, resembling a coach passing over frozen ground. (Gage's "History of Rowley.")

The dark day took place May 19, 1780, accounted for by a peculiar state of the atmosphere and passing clouds.

The rude appliances for the performance of female labor in generations past severely taxed their energies and patience, yet their loveliness still remained to bless their households and hand down to us the fruits of virtuous lives.

"From the early history of New England up to within a little more than half a century, the wearing apparel for the family was manufactured by the females. The daughters were early taught to run the spinning wheel, and as years and strength increased mounted the loom and drove the cloth together with the great swinging beam; such exercise produced a muscular frame and was transmited to their posterity. They enjoyed the labor and ate the fruit thereof with joy; nor were these active beings content only with household work and manufacturing, but were often seen in the field doing the most rugged work with a cheerfulness that made life all about them most pleasant; the gentle cow was still more gentle when the young maiden sat by her side."

All good farmers kept sheep, sufficient to produce wool for clothing and bedding, raised beef, mutton and poultry, with plenty of grain for subsistence. The cordwainer once a year came round with his bench and tools, sat down in the kitchen, took the measure of the feet of not only the little ones but the stalwart sons and daughters, and made shoes which were supposed to last from November to November, from leather either tanned from the hides of their own cattle or purchased from the leather store, and should they not last a whole year, even the great girls often went barefoot till the time when the shoemaker again appeared on his yearly rounds. The sandy floor of that day was no friend to shoe leather, but many a maiden had rather go barefoot a part of the year than to lose the chance of a good dance now and then.

People of Color.—A few wealthy farmers owned servants, of which Timothy Fuller, Sr., had the largest number (about forty); other families, numbering perhaps half a dozen, had from one to five each, all of which were liberated when the State Constitution was adopted, a little more than a century ago.

By a vote of the town, the second seat on the east gallery was set apart for the colored people. This was a long seat that would accommodate perhaps ten or twelve persons. The last of this old stock of colored people, by the name of Snow, lived in a hut on the spot now occupied by the house of Isaac Gates.

It was no unusual occurrence seventy years ago to see an Indian tramp on the road, begging bread in broken English language, and presenting by no means a pleasant appearance.

Burial Grounds.—The oldest in town is near the box-factory of J. B. Thomas, which was a part of Rowley Village (now Boxford), and contains the remains of those who lived beyond the Ipswich River. The latter town was incorporated fully forty-three years before Middleton. The one known as the "Granny Tim's," named from Timothy Fuller's widow, is near the centre of the town, and contains the remains of many of this ancient family, and also of the first minister—Rev. Andrew Peters. There are forty-five places where the dead have been deposited, at least. Almost every old farm has its burying-ground. About 1860 the present cemetery was laid out, and very few are now buried elsewhere. The tomb near the residence of Charles O. Frost was built a little more than a century ago by Rev. Elias Smith and his son-in-law, Joseph Peabody, of Salem, who married two of Smith's daughters, both of whom were interred in this tomb. This tomb also contains the remains of Rev. Mr. Smith, Rev. Solomon Adams and several others. This tomb was finally closed about fifteen years since.

These partial genealogies are inserted to give the different names of families who have resided in this town. A full genealogy of a single family would fill a larger volume than we have now written.

Averill.—Of the Averill family there appears to have been two brothers—Paul and Samuel. Paul had a family of eight children, and was the ancestor of the family by that name now living in town. His oldest child was born in 1738, and the oldest child of Samuel was born about the same time, and his children numbered seven, and we think that this family soon left town. Joseph, born 1757 (son of Paul); Benjamin, born 1781; Hannah, 1808. This family doubtless settled here about the time the town was incorporated, while the Wilkins and Fuller family were here sixty-eight years before that date. The Averill family does not appear to be so numerous as many others found on the town records.

Adams.—Rev. Solomon Adams and Abigail, his wife, had six children; the oldest was born in the year 1795.

Berry.—Joseph Berry and Sarah, his wife, had eight children. His oldest son, John, was born in 1721; Bartholomew, born 1734, whose daughter Betty married Oliver Perkins 1796. Samuel Berry appears to have been a brother of this Joseph, as his oldest daughter was born in 1721, whose children numbered eight, and among them was Nathaniel, who was the grandfather of the late Deacon Allen Berry. Who their father was is not known, but Joseph names his oldest son John, and perhaps was named for his grandfather John, who was the first deacon chosen when the church was formed eight years after. Bartholomew Berry lived in a house now standing on the turnpike, near Andover line, now owned by

Mr. Charles Mason. This house was built by Joseph Fry in 1742, and sold to Joseph Berry in 1750.

Nehemiah Berry, son of Bartholomew, was drowned March 5, 1811, by falling from a stringer (the bridge being gone) on going in the night across Beech Brook, just above the mill-pond of Wilkins' saw-mill, and near the James Wilkins' house. Mr. Berry's son Nehemiah, a well-known citizen of Lynn, Mass., died there two years since, eighty-four years of age, and of his children was A. Hun Berry, late of the Governor's staff.

BURTON.—John Burton lived in the east part of the town, on the side of the large hill near Topsfield line, and a little west of Conant's house in that town. This family were here when the town was incorporated, but left for New Hampshire about 1750. The late Rev. Warren Burton, chaplain of the Senate, was a descendant. One of the family is referred to in another part of this history as filling an important position at the time of the Revolutionary War from New Hampshire.

BATCHELDER. — Captain Joseph Batchelder, of Topsfield, bought the old tavern-stand here about 1824, which was subsequently owned by his son, Colonel Amos, father of Joseph A. Batchelder, Esq., who for many years has been postmaster here, and continues to occupy the old tavern house.

CARROLL—CROWE.—John and James Carroll, brothers, as we suppose, were here before the incorporation of the town, both of whom had families. The last was born in 1745, and all records of them cease. Also about the same time John Crowe and his wife Mary had three children. The parents were members of the church here, and that is all we know of the family.

CUMMINGS —John Cummings, and Mary, his wife, had eight children; the oldest was born in 1717. His son, John Cummings, Jr., had a small family, but all the family left town before 1740.

CURTIS.—Israel Curtis, and Abigail, his wife, eight children, the oldest born in 1744; some of their descendants are still living here.

COD.—William Cod, and Abigail, his wife, had two children, date, 1743 and 1745, a name long forgotten.

CASE.—Humphrey Case (he was born November 17, 1753), and his wife, Elizabeth, had five children; the first was born in 1781, and named Elijah, and was with Nehemiah Berry when he was drowned, near Wilkins Mill, before named, but was unable to save him. (Case married Berry's sister.)

CRISPAN.—Richard Crispan, and Seviah, his wife, had four children; the last was born in 1809. He moved to Derry, N. H., more than fifty years since. John W. Dempsey is a grandson (now of this town).

CRANE.—The Crane family lived here in 1834, and run the paper-mill.

DWINEL.—In 1786 Jonathan Dwinel had three children, and subsequently William Dwinel, having four children, in 1818 to 1828.

DEMSEY.—Samuel Demsey and his wife had five children, of whom John Wyman Demsey is now in town.

DANIELS.—Lucy Daniels had six children from 1820 to 1832. Her father was a Frenchman, and taken by Washington in time of war, and never returned to his country.

DALE.—Osgood Dale, and Susannah, his wife, had two children, 1831 and 1832.

ESTEY.—Jonathan Estey was the son of John Estey, who was the son of Isaac, whose wife, Mary, was hung for witchcraft, in 1692. This John came here from Topsfield, a few years after the execution of his mother. The blood of the family has been quite generally diffused throughout this town, and they are well known as a long-lived race. The larger part of the family moved to Framingham after the execution of the wife and mother, hoping they had escaped the laws of Massachusetts, but subsequently found that they were still in the hated State; but they had cleared away too many fields to take up stakes again, and have remained, some of them, there to the present day. (This also has been referred to elsewhere).

ELIOTT.—Francis Eliott was one of the original purchasers of land here, and the birth of his eldest son dates 1717, and though the name does not appear now upon our town records, yet the blood of the family is still here; the family was once quite numerous.

Stephen Emerson, father of Stephen, Daniel, and Darius, and others, seven in all, died many years ago; a grandson now owns the saw-mill above the present village. Stephen, Jr., died some two years since, aged seventy-five years.

The Fuller family have always been quite numerous here, and among the leading people in town, and it would be quite interesting to trace them down to 1663.

FELTON.—Amos Felton and Sarah, his wife, had eight children from 1790 to 1804. Felton lived on the old Samuel Gould farm, now owned by Mr. Gregory.

FULLER.—In the early history of this town this family were quite numerous, and held important trusts in society. All of this name in town can be traced to Thomas Fuller, who was the second man to settle in this village. The Abijah Fuller family sprang from a son or grandson of Thomas, named Joseph, and the family of Daniel Fuller sprang from Benjamin, grandfather of Daniel Fuller, Esq.

FLINT.—Stephen Flint and Hannah, his wife, had five children, the youngest of whom was Hannah, born in 1727, married John Estey about 1773, whose family of ten children averaged eighty-three years of age. This Flint family were first known in Salem Village; the original one known there built the first church at Salem Village, and of his descendants several large families were residents here in our

early history, of whom quite a number still live in the neighborhood of the paper-mill, where Charles L. Flint, late secretary of the State Board of Agriculture was born.

FAIRFIELD.—Moses Fairfield married Polly Russell, had ten children, married about 1828 or '29. He and his wife died some years since in Kansas.

FRANCIS.—Charles Francis (a man of color) and his wife, Betsy, had ten children, the youngest of whom was Edmund, who was born in 1811; he wore a fourteen size shoe, and is remembered by some now living. All the family have passed away.

EAMES.—John Eames, 1820, had three children to 1826; moved away.

FISH.—Levi Fish married Nancy Wilkins, had two children born in 1839 and 1840; moved to Danvers.

GOODEL.—Thomas Goodel and Hannah, his wife, had one child born here (Joseph) in 1745.

GAGE.—Abraham Gage and Mary, his wife, had four children; oldest born 1767.

GIDDINGS.—Zaccheus Giddings and his wife, Hannah, had ten children; oldest born in 1783. He built the red house, so called, near the cemetery.

GRAY.—William Gray and his wife, Sarah, had five children; oldest born 1791. He built a carding-mill near the Merriam grist-mill. A son of this man came here in 1845, and erected stones at his parents' graves in the Fuller lot.

GOULD.—Nathaniel Gould and Lydia, his wife, had three children, oldest born 1796, one of whom was Henry Lawrence Gould, born in 1798. The home of this family was on Bear Hill, now owned by Mr. Gregory.

Andrew Gould and Pamela, his wife had seven children, one of whom was born 1805, and is now living in Topsfield, viz., Andrew Gould, now eighty-two years of age, and is yet quite a smart man. Two other families by the name have lived in this place since this Nathaniel's day, supposed to be distant connections.

GOULDTHWAIT.—Benjamin Gouldthwait and Lucy, his wife, had three children—date of the birth of the oldest 1824—none of the family now are in town.

GOODHUE — HADLOCK. — William Goodhue and Sally, his wife, had one child born here 1829; none by this name are here now. Samuel Hadlock and Prudence, his wife, had one child born 1731.

HOBBS.—Joseph, Benjamin, William and Humphrey Hobbs had respectively four, four, seven and four children, all born from 1735 to 1750. William built the house now standing, owned by John Wallis Peabody. They were probably brothers; all the family left more than a century ago.

HOWE.—The Howe family sprang from James Howe, of Ipswich, Mass. He married Elizabeth Dane, 1637; John Howe (1st), John Howe (2d) and Mary, his wife, (the oldest child born 1737,) seven in all; Joseph Howe and Sarah, his wife, had also seven children about the same ages, and must have been a brother; also Mark Howe and Dorothy, his wife, had eleven children, and all born from 1732 to 1756. From this family we have those of that name now in town. These families lived in the north part of the town, house of Mark, now standing. Joseph and Hannah Hutchinson had five children from 1747–57.

HOPPIN.—John Hoppin and Abigail, his wife, one son, John, born in 1797.

HUTCHINSON.—Joseph and Hannah, his wife, had four children, the oldest born in 1781. This family lived in a house now standing in the south part of the town, and came from Danvers Centre. The well-known singers by that name, the sons and daughters of "Jesse" sprang from this family.

HOLT.—Timothy Holt and his wife had one child 1804. Rev. Ebenezer Hubbard and Charlotte, his wife, had four children,—Charles Augustus Peabody, born 1818; William McKean, 1820; Catharine Elizabeth, 1823; Ebenezer Augustus, 1825.

HASKEL.—Daniel Haskel and his wife had two children born here in 1824 and 1826.

HAYWARD.—Octavius Hayward and his wife had two children born here in 1831 and 1833.

IRONSON.—John Ironson and Tabitha had two children, 1767 and 1769; same name by wife Sarah, seven children from 1790 to 1800.

INGALLS.—Edman Ingalls was born in 1627, and died 1719, aged ninety-two years. He was a tanner by trade. His son Henry Ingalls, of Lynn, moved to Andover in 1653, married Mary Osgood, and in 1689 married again, the widow of George Abbot, and died at the age of eighty-three. (These wives were Andover women.) His descendants owned a large tract of land in the neighborhood of the Farnham District, and not far from the residence of the late Jonathan Ingalls, whose brother, Theodore Ingalls, commenced blacksmithing at this place, Middleton, and continued business here till his death about 1814. In the early days of manufacturing edged tools Mr. Ingalls stood very high; his axes were sent to Maine to cut down those great forests; his scythes also were very good, though clumsy, compared with those made at the present time. The writer's father well remembered these scythes. Mr. Ingalls also made hoes and shovels, etc., and these tools were made in a common blacksmith-shop which stood on the north side of the long crossway.

This Theodore Ingalls was the grandfather of Senator John James Ingalls. He was married three times. His first wife was a Berry, by whom he had two sons, and subsequently married two sisters of Deacon Addison Flint, of North Reading, the latter of which was the grandmother of the Senator.

The home of the Ingalls family was Lynn, from whence they scattered over the land, some remaining still in Lynn. In early history they were tanners, and a few years since an old tan vat (in Lynn) was unearthed, belonging to them, containing a few hides, which were still somewhat preserved.

JEFFERDS.—Rev. Forrest Jefferds and Sarah Caroline had eight children from 1828 to 1839.

Jonathan Knight, and Phœbe, his wife, had seven children from 1751 to 1777. But Benjamin Knight, and his wife, Ruth, appear to have been here before the act of incorporation; we find him with a family of seven children born from 1720 to 1734. Though the name has passed from our books, yet some of their descendants remain.

KENNEY.—The Kenney family date 1735. They lived on the left bank of Ipswich River, known now as the King place. The family of Simeon numbered nine from 1767 to 1789. Moved to Milford, N. H.

MERRIAM.—Dr. Silas Merriam, by his first wife, who was a Deal, or Dale, had four children from 1767 to 1772; and by his wife Peabody, sister of Capt. Joseph, the millionaire of Salem, eight children, born from 1776 to 1790. The Merriam house is still standing.

MCINTIRE.—The McIntire or Mackintire family lived in the northwest part of the town. Benjamin and his wife, Experience, had three children born from 1751 to 1755.

MOORE.—Thomas Moore and Betsy, one son, born here, Hiram, 1811.

NICHOLS.—William Nichols and Elizabeth had four children, from 1704 to 1714. The origin of the Nichols family dates from this William or his father of the same name, who settled in the east part of the town, near Nichols' Brook, as early as 1652, then known as New Meadows, Topsfield; none of this family now in town.

PERKINS.—Timothy Perkins and Phebe, his wife, had five children, from 1744 to 1754. This man lived on the Tufts place, where the house still stands, one of the oldest in town. Timothy, Jr., had ten children, from 1760 to 1782; the family not numerous here.

PUTNAM.—Ezra and Lucy had six children from 1751 to 1757; lived in the southeast part of the town.

PERRY.—Jonathan Perry and Mehitable three children, from 1836 to 1840.

PEABODY.—This family has always remained one of the largest since the town was incorporated.

Francis Peabody, of St. Albans, Hertfordshire, England, born 1614, who came to New England 1635, and traced as follows: from his second son, Joseph, born 1644; Samuel, born 1678; Moses, born 1708; Samuel, born 1741; Joseph, born Aug. 3, 1770; the last named was the deacon here for some years, and father of Samuel J. Flint, Ann, Joseph and Dean, the latter now clerk of court.

All the others bearing the name of Peabody in this town can be traced to the first named Francis.

The original name was Boadie, who made a raid upon the tyrant emperor Nero, of Rome, in the year of our Lord 61, in defence of the Queen of the Britons, who had been publicly whipped before her grown up daughters, by the order of this noted ruler, and for this exploit and others of like character the Pea, which means the big hill, or mountain, was added, "Big man, or mountain man—Peabodie." In the expedition named above Boadie entered the emperor's palace and carried away a miniature picture of Nero's wife, which was retained in the family till the eleventh century.

ROBINSON.—Daniel Robinson and Elizabeth had six children born from 1730 to 1747.

ROLF.—The families of Daniel and Jesse Rolf had respectively one and two children from 1726 to 1756.

RICHARDSON.—Solomon Richardson and Elizabeth had three children from 1730 to 1735. The Richardson family have lived mostly in the southeast part of the town. Several of them had large families.

RUSSELL.—Joseph Russell and Mary, his wife, had thirteen children born from 1793 to 1821, one of whom was David, born in 1795, late of Amherst, N. H.

RAY.—Fry Ray and Mary had four children from 1801 to 1810.

STILES.—The Stiles family came from Rowley Village (Boxford) in 1700; commenced settlement in the north part of the town on land now owned by John Brown. The cellar of the house is now seen across the meadows east of the Demsey place.

SYMONDS.—First settled in Boxford, subsequently near the box factory in this town (then a part of Boxford). There were several families from first settlements till the commencement of the present century.

SMITH.—Rev. Elias Smith and Catharine, his wife, had nine children from 1760 to 1777.

SMITH.—Aaron Smith and Mary had eight children from 1766 to 1781.

STEARNS.—Samuel Stearns and Dorothy, his wife, had fourteen children from 1739 to 1757; moved to Salem, Mass.

SAUNDERS.—Timothy Saunders and Rhoda, his wife, had two children from 1831 to 1832.

SHELDEN.—Herman Shelden and Angeline, his wife, had four children from 1836 to 1841.

TOWN.—Daniel Town and Dorothy, his wife, had eight children from 1722 to 1739; he lived in the east part of the town once belonging to Topsfield, and was chosen schoolmaster when the town was incorporated. He opposed the annexation to Middleton.

THOMAS.—Rowland Thomas, and Margaret, his wife, had eight children from 1708 to 1731.

TOWN.—Richard Town, and Margery, his wife, had three children from 1752 to 1756.

Lewis Tyler, and Sally, his wife, had three children from 1834 to 1837.

UPTON.—Jeremiah Upton, and Elizabeth, had six children from 1788 to 1804.

WILKINS.—This family has always flourished here from the first. The children of Joseph and Margaret date from 1710 to 1728. This man was doubtless a son of the original Bray Wilkins, whose pos-



Charles L. Flint

terity exceed in numbers any families found on our town books.

WOODMAN.—Moses Woodman, and Olive, his wife, one son, Moses, 1811.

WHITE.—Perley White, and Eliza, his wife, had three children from 1827 to 1836.

WRIGHT.—Hiram Wright, and Lydia, his wife, had five children from 1830 to 1838.

WINSLOW.—Washington W. Winslow and Phœbe Ann, his wife, two children from 1833 to 1835; since moved away.

WESTON.—Samuel W. Weston and Polly, his wife, four children from 1836 to 1842.

WAKEHAM.—Samuel G. Wakeham and Lucy, his wife, three children from 1837 to 1840.

"Trio," a negro servant to Jonathan Wilkins, and "Cute," servant to Benjamin Fuller, of Middleton, married by Rev. Peter Clarke (of Salem village), November 22, 1757.

The number of deaths since the first settlement, and that have been buried here, is estimated at about two thousand. The average for the last sixty-five years has been a little over eleven a year, or about seven hundred and fifty. During the last named period the death rate remained about the same, while the population nearly doubled.

COPIED FROM ACCOUNT BOOK OF COL. BENJAMIN PEABODY.

"March 2d, 1785.—Lent Brother Joseph have 12 lbs." (This Joseph was subsequently the millionaire of Salem, Mass.)

"Feb. 8th, 1793.—Lieu Joseph Wright took the Jack (mule we suppose)."

"Apr. 16th, 1788.—Archelus Kenney took a cow for a year at one pound."

"Andrew Peabody, Dr., to two days' work at the sawmill, 8 shillings, killing a calf 8 pence."

"1789.—Killing cow for Mr. Robert Bradford 1 lb. 4 shillings."

"Nov. 20th, 1798.—Making a coffin for Mr. Robert Bradford that day he died, 3 shillings, 6 pence."

"Nov. 22d.—To a quarter of tea & 2 lbs. shugar. Same day one shilling's worth of bread and two quarts Rum."

"Nov. 19th & 22d, 1792.—To killed two cows and two hogs, three shillings, 6 pence."

"1789.—Bought 2 bushels Rie, gave 8 shillings."

"1789.—Bought one bushel corn, gave 6 shillings."

"William Wright to mend plow share, one lb."

"1797.—Hoeping cyder Barrels, 4 shillings."

"1786.—Went two days to Salem after sherif, did not find him; my two days 10 shillings; expenses 9 pence. To one day setting glass in Meeting house and making Old Debory's coffin."

"Joseph Symonds, Dr., to making Coffing 8 shillings; to putting in axle and drafts 3 shillings."

"1799.—Making small coffing 3 shillings; also his making cyder at my mill."

"Dr. Silas Merriam, Dr. a long account for work at the Dr. grist mill embracing almost every part of the machinery."

"Nov., 1790.—To sitting on arbitration three times and expenses 7 shillings & 6 pence"

"My oxen 4 hours & ½ 8 pence."

"Simeon Kenney to killing a lamb 3 pence."

"To building back to chimney 3 shillings."

"To putting nosle to pump for Amos Felton 33 cts."

"Bimsely Peabody, Dr., 1799. To half bushel apples and running four spoons, one shilling 6 pence." (We find a long account against the town, some of the charges for important business. Through his influence the road between this village and Danvers' Plain was widened and straightened in 1811.)

"Oct. 28, 1799.—Mark Avrill borrowed my wheelbarrow, brote it home, one shilling.

Asa Howe to putting in 4 felloes & 4 spokes in cart wheel, 4 shillings."

"1797.—To a day a shoeing oxen at Kimbal's." (This was Moses Kimball; his shop was Howe road.)

"1797.—Collering chimney & other things 4s. 6p."

"Dec. 12th, 1809.—Laying hearth in his oven and plastering, one pound (account with David Peabody)."

"May 8th, 1800.—Archelus Kenney, Dr., to 24 spokes in cart wheel, 8 shillings."

"Feb. 20th, 1802.—To making coffin for Wd. Jerusha Nichols $2.66 cts., also wrighting her wi l 66 cts."

"Oct. 17th, 1802.—Dr. John Merriam, Dr., to one and half days work on his barn 9 shillings; to a cannow (b at we suppose) 6 shillings"

"1802.—Building stages round the meetinghouse for John Fuller $1.50; Sept. 25th making coffin for his father $3.75."

"1804.—Dr. Silas Merriam, three days on his new house, $3.00; one day and half stoning sellar, $1.50.

"1805.—Bloading and Roweling his horse, 33 cts. Aug. 19 & 20, going to see his cow that was shot, and another journey, & taking of her hide & my boys coming to Symonds for me $100.

("This cow was accidentally shot by the Docters son Jonas, who was driving his father's cows on the pond road to pasture tradition says.)

"May 10th, going to his piggs, 25 cts. Sick one, we suppose.

"Oct. 16, 1804.—Anne Jane and Martha Nickson came to board with me 19, the horse and cart to move their goods 50 cts. These children and their parents came from Ireland about this time in consequence of the Rebellion. Anne subsequently became the wife of Dr. Merriam's son, Andrew, and now their posterity, are among our most honored people.

"Dr. Merriam married Col. Benjamin Peabody's sister, whose daughter is now 102 years old, living in Danvers.

"1801.—Paid $4.75 and cost in Mr. Capt. Thomas Cushens office to Mr. Appletons for the Salem Gazette and discontinued the paper."

This most wonderful old account book and memorandum runs through about thirty years, and is full of historical events, to say nothing of what this man undertook, as a jack of all trades, and in filling important offices. He must have made nearly all the coffins, repaired and built buildings, mill machinery, blacksmith, wheelwright, mason, cow, and horse doctor, etc. He was an honest and just man. He died since our remembrance, at an advanced age. His height was full six feet (we should judge), and walked very erect. Had a long queue that reached half way down his back.

Till within sixty years the sexton chosen must be a carpenter, at least enough to make a coffin, for which and digging the grave and attending the funeral, he received a fee of five dollars.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

CHARLES L. FLINT.

Charles Louis Flint, born in Middleton on the 8th of May 1824, was the second son of Jeremiah and Mary (Howard) Flint. His father was a farmer, and occupied a part of the estate that had been the ancestral inheritance for several generations.

The first American ancestor of this branch of the Flint family, Thomas Flint, is reported to have come from Wales about the year 1640, and to have settled soon after in what was then known as Salem village, now called Peabody. The farm he then acquired by purchase was held till recently by one of his lineal descendants. Charles L. is of the seventh generation by direct descent from this agricultural colonist.

Like most farmers' sons, his early years were spent on the farm and in the district school, and were, of course, quite uneventful, given to acquiring the first rudiments of an education, and to the innumerable chores and lighter kinds of farm work which usually

fall to the lot of country boys. These occupations, though often irksome and gladly shunned as distasteful by most boys on the farm, really constitute by far the best foundation for the practical education of life. The influences of the farm are healthful, mentally, morally and physically. Other things being equal, that is with equal natural gifts, equal advantages for education, and equal opportunities for advancement and mental discipline, the boy on the farm will in the long run come out ahead of the boy in the city.

At the age of twelve, when scarcely able to realize the loss, came the great misfortune of his life—the death of a devoted mother. This led to some change in the family, and at the age of fourteen he went to live with an uncle, who was a large farmer, in the town of Norway, Oxford County, in Maine. There too, he enjoyed a few weeks of schooling in the winter, and for the rest of the year worked diligently on the farm. The experience then acquired enabled him to speak and write with clearness and intelligence on the practical as well as the scientific elements of agriculture in subsequent years of public and official toil.

Among the few judicious friends with whom he there came in contact, and who inspired him with a desire to obtain a liberal education, was an excellent teacher, who had been unable to realize his own wishes in that direction, and by his advice, at the age of seventeen, young Flint repaired to Phillips Academy at Andover, a town adjoining his native town of Middleton, to prepare for college. Here, almost unaided, and in the midst of many obstacles arising from the want of means, and the necessity of relying wholly upon his own resources, he fitted for college in little over three years, and entered Harvard in 1845. It required a brave heart, a clear brain, a strong will and a high hope and trust in the future, with a stubborn determination to enter upon the activities of life with all the advantages of a thorough intellectual training, to lead a young man wholly dependent upon his own energy to enter upon a long and expensive course of education like that at Harvard College, but with native vigor, self-reliance and indomitable persistence, obstacles are apt to vanish as we approach them, and it is a question whether the very effort required to triumph over them does not result in a firmer, more compact and more complete manhood. "Where there's a will there's a way," and the energy that finds it has much to do in moulding the character, and gives increasing self-confidence to meet and overcome future difficulties which lie in the way of success in life. A busy brain can devise many ways to meet emergencies, and to work one's way through college, though hard and unpleasant enough at times, is not without its compensations. By writing for the press, by utilizing the vacations in framing essays, stories, poems, anything that the reading public was willing to pay for, the object was accomplished and he graduated, not without honor and free from debt, in 1849.

In 1850 Mr. Flint entered the Dane Law School at Cambridge, and spent two years there in preparing for the profession of the law. Previous to this time he had competed for the Bowdoin prize of forty dollars for the best dissertation, open to the senior class in college, and had won it triumphantly against the strongest competition in his class, the subject assigned being "The Different Representations of the Character of Socrates, by Plato, Xenophon and Aristophanes." This essay, prepared under difficulties, gained for the earnest student the highest commendations from a wide circle of friends.

About the same time in his senior year in college, he had competed for the Boylston prize in declamation, and in this effort had come off second best, receiving a second prize. While connected with the Law School he also competed for the post-graduate prize of fifty dollars for the best essay upon the "Representative System at different Times and in different Countries," and won it.

At the end of two years in the Law School, a part of which time he was connected as computer with the American Nautical Almanac office, then located at Cambridge, under the superintendence of Commodore, afterwards Rear Admiral Charles Henry Davis, he entered the office of a lawyer in New York City, studied the New York code of practice, and was admitted to the New York bar on examination in October, 1852.

The Massachusetts State Board of Agriculture was organized, as a department of State government by the Legislature of 1852. It was designed as a representative body, but ultimately connected with the civil government, having the Governor, the Lieutenant Governor and the Secretary of the Commonwealth as members *ex officiis*, three members to be appointed by the Executive for the purpose of bringing, so far as possible, a scientific element into the Board, and one delegate elected by each of the County Agricultural Societies, each member, when elected, to hold his office for three years. Since the original organization of the Board, the members *ex officiis* have been increased by the addition of the president of the Massachusetts Agricultural College, and the State Inspector of Fertilizers, both which positions were created subsequently to the establishment of the State Board of Agriculture.

After the organization of the Board, the first effort was to secure the services of a competent secretary. The position was thought to be of great importance, as the character, reputation and usefulness of the department would depend very largely upon its executive officer.

Mr. Flint had previously become somewhat identified with agriculture, and had gained some reputation from having written for and received two prizes for "Essays from the Essex County Agricultural Society," a diploma and a silver medal from the New York State Agricultural Society, etc., and the attention of

the Board was thus naturally turned to him. A member of the Board having written to ask for his opinion as to what the duties of such a position ought to be, he replied at considerable length, without having the slightest idea that he had been thought of as a candidate. He was asked, soon after, to become a candidate, when he promptly and positively declined, on the ground that it would involve a complete and radical change of his plan for life, and that his education had not been designed as a preparation for such a life's work as its acceptance would involve, and that his prospects in his position were too flattering to be given up for any salaried position. These objections were finally overcome by the committee appointed to consider and report upon a candidate, and after much persuasion and a full consultation of many judicious friends, he finally accepted the responsibility, and entered upon the performance of his duties as secretary on the 14th of February, 1853, spending the first few months, however, in the laboratory of the Sheffield Scientific School at New Haven, Conn.

Agricultural science and literature were then, as they always had been, in comparative neglect. Few agricultural works had been published in this country at that time, and most of those were reprints of English works, with little pretension to finish or beauty of style. The literature of the farm was highly discreditable as compared with what it is at the present time, and as compared with what it was in other departments of labor and of thought, and Mr. Flint determined to bring both the science and the literature of the subject into due prominence.

To accomplish this he planned a series of consecutive reports, with some special subject to be developed in each, and the scheme was carried out with only such modifications as were necessary to keep the reports within proper limits.

The fourth Report, for example, contained a practical treatise upon "Grasses and Forage Plants," which was subsequently made the basis of a separate work, which has passed through several editions, and had a wide distribution throughout the country. Hon. P. A. Chadbourne, President of the Massachusetts Agricultural College, said of it: "Mr. Flint's treatise embodies the most practical and scientific information on the history, culture and nutritive value of the grasses and the grains. His style of writing is plain, simple, forcible and judiciously adapted to the ends he has in view. The large number of illustrations of the different species of grasses are drawn with great care and accuracy, and greatly facilitate the study and identification of unknown specimens." A revised edition of the work appeared in 1887.

His next publication was a work of over 450 pages on "Milch Cows and Dairy Farming," which also passed through many editions and received the most intelligent praise for its practical and scientific value. At the request of the State Board of Agriculture he, with George B. Emerson, prepared a "Manual of Agriculture for the use of Schools and Colleges," each writing one-half of the work. This has also passed through several editions.

In 1859, pursuant to a Resolve of the Legislature, he issued a new edition of Dr. Harris's admirable treatise on "Insects Injurious to Vegetation," with very numerous additions and illustrations. Neither pains nor labor was spared to secure the nearest possible approach to perfection, and the work commanded universal admiration as the finest specimen of printing and word-engraving ever produced in this country. All the illustrations were prepared under Mr. Flint's careful supervision.

In 1878, after holding the office for twenty-five years, Mr. Flint thought it desirable to tender his resignation, and, thanking the Board for the entire cordiality, confidence and unanimity with which the members had always co-operated with him, he did so. The resignation was referred to a committee consisting of Hon. P. A. Chadbourne, president of Williams College; Hon. William S. Clark, president of the Massachusetts Agricultural College; and Messrs. Moore, of Concord and Phinney, of Barnstable, and Wakefield, of Palmer; who, after full consideration, submitted the following preamble and resolution:

"Whereas, Hon. Charles L. Flint has presented to the Board a statement concerning his connection with the same during the past twenty-five years, and has offered his resignation as secretary:

"*Resolved*, That the Board desires to express its high appreciation of the valuable services of Secretary Flint, and hereby earnestly requests him to withdraw his resignation and continue the good work in behalf of the agricultural interests of the commonwealth, in which he has achieved so enviable a reputation."

Hon. Marshall P. Wilder also submitted the following resolutions:

"*Resolved*, That the thanks and gratitude of the Massachusetts State Board of Agriculture are eminently due to the Hon. Charles L. Flint for the ability and fidelity with which he has discharged the duties of secretary for the last twenty-five years in a manner alike honorable to the commonwealth and beneficial to its people.

"*Resolved*, That we tender to Mr. Flint our personal acknowledgment for the courtesy and kindness which have ever characterized his intercourse with the Board, with the sincere desire that the remainder of his days may be as happy and prosperous as the past have been honorable and useful."

The resolutions, after a full expression of opinion, were unanimously adopted, and Mr. Flint withdrew his resignation.

In May, 1879, Mr. Flint was unanimously elected president of the Massachusetts Agricultural College at Amherst, but without relinquishing his duties as secretary of the Board. He held the office one year, during which the college was freed from a burdensome debt.

But the annual reports to the Legislature, twenty-seven of which Mr. Flint prepared, constituted an essential part of the work of the office. They were necessarily written and prepared out of regular office hours, and were chiefly the result of night-work, the constant calls at the office and the very extensive correspondence making it impracticable to do any connected literary work in office hours. Of these re-

ports Col. Marshall P. Wilder, in a History of the Progress of the State Board, said:

"These annual volumes, embracing in all an issue of more than two hundred and fifty thousand copies, have gone forth not only to the farmers of this commonwealth, but have been distributed throughout our own and foreign lands. They constitute a comprehensive library in themselves, embracing essays, reports and discussions on almost every subject in agriculture, and are eagerly sought for with every issue. These reports have greatly promoted the objects for which the Board was established, and extended its influence far and wide. No similar publication within my knowledge contains more practical and useful information for farmers. Complete sets have already become very valuable, and are more and more appreciated. By these reports young men have been stimulated to become farmers and by the example of the Board and the correspondence of its members, other States have been led to establish State Boards of Agriculture on the plan of ours."

Twelve thousand copies of these reports were published annually for many years and distributed throughout the State, while by a system of exchange with other States and countries, they have reached nearly every farm-house in New England, and found their way to almost every part of the civilized globe.

A few years ago the Chilian Government, in connection with an International Exposition held at Santiago, awarded and sent Mr. Flint a magnificent diploma and a beautiful bronze medal, in recognition of the high quality and value of his reports.

The salary attached to the office was never liberal. For the labor required and the responsibility of the position it was extremely meagre. In 1880, having had a much "louder call," Mr. Flint resigned the office to assume the presidency of the New England Mortgage Security Company, a business corporation established to loan money upon real estate securities at the west and south.

Mr. Flint was married on the 14th of February, 1857, to Ellen Elizabeth, daughter of Joseph and Charlotte (Merriam) Leland, of Grafton, Mass. His children are,—1, a daughter, Charlotte Leland, born December 1, 1858; 2, a son, Charles Louis, born March 9, 1861; 3, a second son, Edward Rawson, born September 8, 1864.

Mrs. Flint died on the 25th of September, 1875. She was a direct descendant of Edward Rawson, secretary of the colony of Massachusetts Bay from 1650 to 1686, a period of thirty-six years.

DANIEL FULLER.

Daniel Fuller, son of Col. Archelaus and Betty Dale (Putnam) Fuller, and grandson of Benjamin and Mary Fuller, great-grandson of Benjamin and Sarah (Bacon) Fuller, great-great-grandson of Thomas Fuller, who came to this country in 1638, was born November 14, 1771; died April 5, 1855. He was a man of superior natural abilities, honest, upright and conscientious in his dealings. He was a farmer and or many years a town officer, and ever manifested a lively interest in its welfare. From time to time he held every office of importance which a town can confer on a citizen.

In 1820 he was constituted and appointed to be one of the justices of the peace, within and for the county of Essex, for the term of seven years, by Gov. Brooks, by and with the advice and consent of the Council. Commission renewed by Gov. Levi Lincoln, by and with the consent of the Council in 1833. Commission renewed by Gov. Marcus Morton, by and with the advice and consent of the Council in 1840. Commission renewed by Gov. George N. Briggs, by and with the advice and consent of the Council in 1847.

In politics he had been a Whig—died a Republican. He was a firm believer in the final restoration of all mankind to holiness and happiness.

At the age of fourteen he was a student at Phillips' Academy in Andover. His opportunity for a more full development of his mental energies was lost by the sudden death of his father, who was born May 4, 1727, in that part of Salem which was incorporated as a town and called Middleton in 1728.

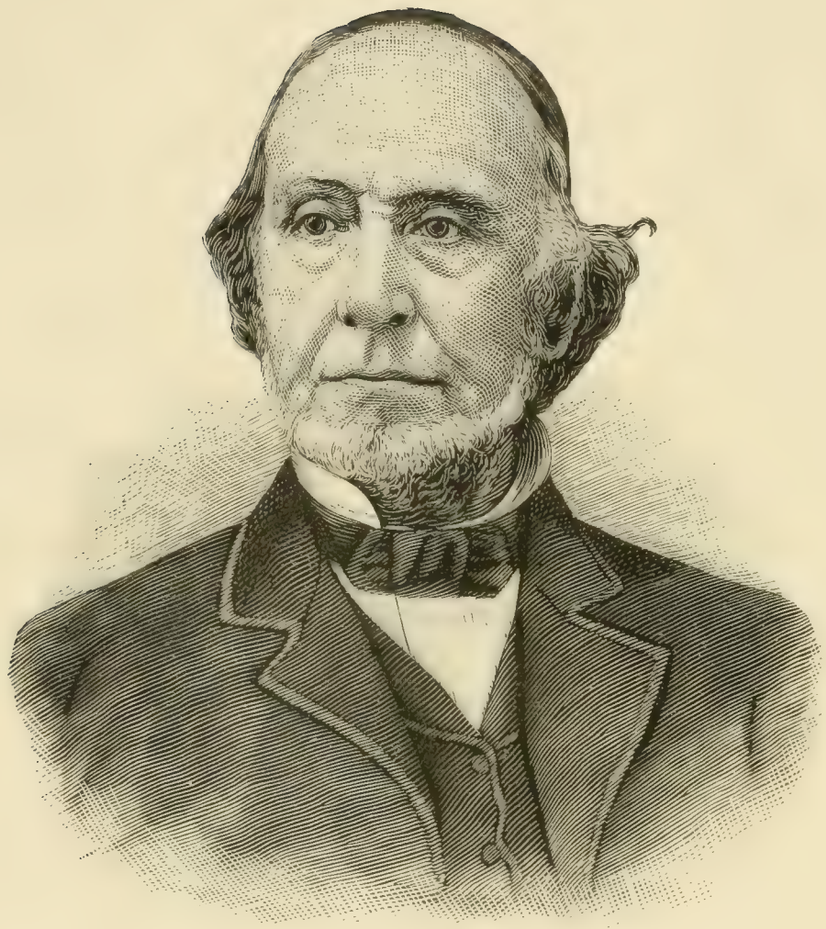
His father (Archelaus) was a member of the first, second and third Provincial Congress. From the journal of the Provincial Congress it appears that he was a member of a committee over sixty times. In the Revolutionary War he served in the capacity of colonel, and while connected with the army was attacked by a disease of which he died, and was buried at a place in Cheshire County, N. H., called Charlestown No. 4, through which at that time the road from Boston to Quebec passed. He had been much honored and was much lamented. His earthly mission was comparatively short, ending in forty-nine years, three months and twenty-one days.

Daniel Fuller married Sally Estey, daughter of John and Hannah (Flint) Estey, and granddaughter of Samuel Flint and Lydia (Andrews) Flint.

Their children were,—Archelaus, born February 12, 1799, received a medical education, settled as a physician in the town of Fairfield, Me., practiced in several towns in Kennebeck County. He married Elizabeth A. Craig, of Fayette, Me. She died May 6, 1874. They had seven children, all of whom died before the close of the year 1863. None were married. He passed away October 6, 1880; was buried in Albion, Me. Daniel, born February 2, 1801; died May 19, 1801. Nancy, born March 29, 1802; married Joseph W. Batchelder, of Topsfield, Mass.; died August 6, 1842. He died May 19, 1887, in Topsfield. Sophronia, born December 19, 1803. Thomas, born November 29, 1805; was offered the command of a ship about to sail from Boston, Mass., but declined the office, and sailed in the capacity of mate for Rio Janeiro, December 4, 1830; since then his relatives have never heard from the ship nor from any who were on board; he was unmarried. George W., born October 4, 1807; removed to Galena, Illinois, and became a wholesale grocer. He married, first, Emeline Fowler, of Guilford, Ct. All their children died in infancy; married, second, Sarah W. Putnam, of Danvers. Their child, Jessie P., is totally blind. He died February 1, 1884.



Daniel Fuller



David Stiles

Jeremiah, born June 17, 1809, cultivates the homestead acres which have descended through a long line of Fullers to him and his sister, Sophronia. He married Eunice L. Pike, of Ossipee, N. H., who died June 30, 1886. Sarah P., born August 23, 1811, married Nathaniel H. Johnson, of Haverhill, Mass., October 6, 1836; died August 6, 1838. He died July 29, 1864. Samuel, born November 25, 1814; died August 16, 1848. His integrity and kindness endeared him to those who made his acquaintance; unmarried. Caroline, born May 17, 1817; died October 8, 1821. Elbridge, born August 11, 1816; died February 12, 1847; unmarried. Beloved and respected, he gave promise of a useful life.

Sisters and brother of Daniel Fuller. Betty, born February 6, 1760, married, first, Nehemiah Putnam, born October 14, 1753; died December 14, 1792. She next married Samuel Wilkins, November 13, 1796; he died September 11, 1803. She died August 25, 1838. Sarah, born February 27, 1762; married Eleazer Putnam, Esq., who died May 31, 1836; she died December 21, 1802. Mary, born January 6, 1764; married William Symonds, son of Joseph Symonds and Lucy Kimball; she died September, 1833. Benjamin, born September 13, 1767; married Abigail, daughter of Dr. Silas Merriam, of Middleton. They removed to Norway, Me., and both ended their days there, she in March, 1838; he in March, 1850. In 1794 no roads had been located, but settlers cut down trees so that they could get from one to another. They went with an ox-wagon, one yoke of oxen and two horses.

Mr. Fuller built a house twenty by thirty-eight feet, and a story and a half high, and a barn thirty-two by fifty feet. His was the largest establishment in that place.

DAVID STILES.

David Stiles, son of the deacon of the same name, was born in Middleton, Massachusetts, June 19th, 1813. He received a common school education, and afterwards chose the profession of farrier, which he has pursued for fifty-three years in his native town. He has lectured on the subject in various places in Essex County, and once before the New England Agricultural Society in Boston. He has also written for the press on various subjects for more than fifty years, many of his articles being marked with originality of thought, and the one on "The Decay of Iron" being extensively copied. He has been especially interested in genealogical, historical and agricultural matters. In 1850 he obtained a United States patent on a hay and stalk cutter. He married Miss Rebecca Perry, of Danvers, by whom he had five children. He passed his golden wedding, April 21, 1886, and his wife died February 2, 1887. Mr. Stiles is more than ordinarily well acquainted with the history and interests of Essex County, and especially of the town of Middleton. He is a man of firm convictions, has always maintained a lively interest in public and church affairs, and is a good representative of our steady, New England country life.

In December, 1887, Mr. Stiles was appointed a Justice of the Peace by His Exellency, Oliver Ames, Governor of Massachusetts.

ACME
BOOKBINDING CO., INC.

JUL 28 1993

100 CAMBRIDGE STREET
CHARLESTOWN, MASS